His brother compelled him into propriety, and carried him along within the lines of the oligarchy.

“Just so, sir. Now, Miss Thoroughbung is a very nice lady.”

I do not blush to be converted with the whole world in my old age.

Nay, who has not been made an adulterer?

Gibson.

Here, my brother, you may surely see how men such as they, men of holiness, men of courage in the midst of tribulation—from which, however, they were delivered, the flame itself fearing to consume them, were not silent about their sins, but confessed them, knowing that because of these sins they were deservedly and justly brought low.

And they felt it to be the harder because Dorothy Stanbury was, as they thought, so poor a creature.

So it is also with humility.

He had but an uneasy ride of it that morning, and little good did he do at St. Ewold’s.

Now round dinner-tables are generally of oak, or else of such new construction as not to have acquired the peculiar hue which was so pleasing to him.

If it is on account of the recollection of the deed, either he will not perceive it if souls shall perish, or, if he shall perceive it, he will gain nothing from it.

And then, at last, that future day was absolutely brought on the tapis as though now to be named.

Chapter 24. Out of the Many True Things, It is Not Asserted Confidently that Moses Understood This or That.

The first in date is Bunyan’s Pilgrim’s Progress, — as to which, were I to claim it simply as a work of English Prose Fiction, I think you would blame me.

But the matter is brass.

But this would be possible,—ah, so deliciously possible,—if only her father and mother would assist!

Incline unto me Your ear.

She did not believe it.

In the first place there had been a word or two between the lovers about that going up of St. Peter’s, and Augusta had refused to join them.

What means this haste?

“Is it what I said to you last night?” asked the Countess.

She was no longer in a dream, but words and things bore to her again their proper meaning.

And their one study is, to pluck up all chastity from the foundations, to disgrace our nature, to satiate the desire of the wicked demon.

For in deeds the sin is often of infirmity or of negligence, but in purposes it is always of malicious intent.

But perhaps you imagine, fool, that we shall contradict these texts of yours, and so deny that there is one true God.

And they will be pleased not more with other things than with what is like themselves.

But let them take care that they did not go beyond that.

He was kind enough to call me a blackguard (!!!)

[Matthew 23:3] Where is that, Whether in truth or on occasion Christ be preached?

To those who have regarded Cicero as a philosopher—as one who has devoted his life to the pursuits of philosophy—does it not appear odd that he should have deferred his writing on the subject and postponed 279his convictions till now?

And when you ate and drank, did you not eat for yourselves, and drink for yourselves [Zechariah 7:5 seq]?

For had it been His pleasure to require an account of the things we had transgressed in, we should all have perished; for all died.

A young pig roasted (for your ideas on this subject force us to discuss good and evil with you as if you were cooks and confectioners, instead of men of reading or literary taste) is bright in color, and agreeable in smell, and pleasant in taste.

Now the estate was his, and what was he to do with it?

He certainly did bring him, and as certainly intended to make him his heir.

For even should the King forgive him, and release him from the charges against him, still he will live in shame; for surely not even will others admire him: since in such forgiveness, we admire not those who receive the gifts, but those who bestow them.

But as he was on the landing by the drawing-room door, descending quickly, conscious that, in obedience to his orders, the chops had been already served, he was met by a servant who, with disturbed face and quick voice, told him that there was a lady waiting for him in the hall.

The Lords having carried their resolution showed no purpose of going any further.

When Thady reached the end of the avenue, where the fracas had taken place between himself and Keegan, he met Pat Brady.

But that, having become man for our sakes, He endured to suffer and to be dishonoured, and that He shall come again with glory, hear the prophecies which relate to this; they are these: Because they delivered His soul unto death, and He was numbered with the transgressors, He has borne the sin of many, and shall make intercession for the transgressors.

“That is just what Mr. Eames has gone abroad to learn.”

Too Many, and Too Few

I found Father Giles sitting up in his bed, while Mrs. Kirwan was rubbing his shoulder diligently with an embrocation of arnica. The girl was standing by with a basin half full of the same, and I could see that the priest’s neck and shoulders were as red as a raw beefsteak. He winced grievously under the rubbing, but he bore it like a man.

And if, again, you answer sophistically, 'O, my friend, by those who come not to perfection I understand being perfected in Christ-taught righteousness; 'he will say, 'But, indeed, my worthy friend, very many who are begotten of unrighteous seed are not only numbered among those who are gathered into the flock of the brethren, but are often called even to preside over them.

With the same zeal.

They do not, however, devote attention to prophets, but neither do they to any other sages, except to the law of Moses only, in regard of which, however, they frame no interpretations.

V. The blessedness of the meek

I was travelling through the country by a mail cart, and had to stay at a miserable wayside but which called itself an hotel, with eight or ten other passengers.

“Why is she to be called Miss Dormer?”

And one may say to them, O reckless men, is He a work, who is 'the First-born of every creature, who is born from the womb before the morning star ,' who said, as Wisdom, 'Before all the hills He begets me [Proverbs 8:25]?'

He then proceeded to Antioch in Syria, where the emperor was then residing.

That was the mood in which Mrs Mackenzie found her late in the afternoon on the day of Sir John Ball’s visit.

He sets the example of drinking this cup, then hands it to His followers, manifesting thus, both in word and deed, the grace of patience.

Chapter 34.— The Church is Not to Be Blamed for the Conduct of Bad Christians, Worshippers of Tombs and Pictures

[Acts 12:6] Yet he rejoiced and was not diverted from his right mind and he fell into deep sleep which could not have been, had he been in any great anxiety.

And then he had walked over his land, having a farming man at his heels, thinking that he could turn his mind to the actual and practical working of his land.

In whom are all the treasures.

He told me that Bathanarius, once count of Africa, when the bishop was dining with him, produced a magnet, and held it under a silver plate on which he placed a bit of iron; then as he moved his hand with the magnet underneath the plate, the iron upon the plate moved about accordingly.

You walk in pride and madness,

It was not surprising that Nina should be so hard to him — to him who had as yet offered her nothing in her poverty but a few cold compliments.

“It is a little odd about Ayala,” said Gertrude, resuming her confidential tone. “It is so hard to make papa understand about these kind of things. I declare I believe he thinks that I never ought to speak to another man because of that scoundrel Frank Houston.”

Perhaps a rougher manner, with some little touch of marital self-assertion, might be a safer commencement of married life,—safer to the wife as coming from her husband.

For the quality of the drink is correspondent to that of the eating.

At one time he had fully resolved to do that by which he would have proved to himself his conviction that honesty is the best policy, and then he sat doubting again—declaring to himself that honesty itself did not require him to do this meditated deed.

“To torment you, George!”

[1 John 1:8] No doubt, though this book is called the Apocalypse, there are in it many obscure passages to exercise the mind of the reader, and there are few passages so plain as to assist us in the interpretation of the others, even though we take pains; and this difficulty is increased by the repetition of the same things, in forms so different, that the things referred to seem to be different, although in fact they are only differently stated.

And from this it follows that, since the nature of this reason which is in man has within itself the power of distinguishing between good and evil, and while distinguishing possesses the faculty of selecting what it has approved, it may justly be deemed worthy of praise in choosing what is good, and deserving of censure in following that which is base or wicked.

There had been Beltons of Belton living there for many centuries, and now he was the Belton of the day, standing on his own ground,—the descendant and representative of the Beltons of old,—Belton of Belton without a flaw in his pedigree!

All men, then, must admit that it is the course of nature for water to be supported on the earth, and not the earth on the waters.

In front and around the ground is broken, but immediately before the door there is a way up to a lateral valley, down which comes a nameless stream which, just below the house, makes its way into the Ivil, the little river which runs from the mountain to the inn, taking its course through that meadow which lies between the hill and the house.

And hence it does not follow that an object of faith is not an object of sight.

But they not only knew Him not: they also insulted in another way, by their idol making.

“Mamma, has George done better than Arthur?” said one of the younger girls. “George always does do better, I think; doesn’t he?”

Who could doubt the injustice who knew that he had been summoned thither from London to take his place at Llanfeare as heir to the property?

Not mind, sir, being dragged before the criminal tribunals of your country, and being punished as a felon,—or rather as a misdemeanour,—for an outrage committed on a public platform!

As the meet on the next morning was in the park the party at Rufford Hall was able to enjoy the luxury of an easy morning together with the pleasures of the field.

She could not but love him better, in that he had loved her so well; but yet she could not love him with the love which he desired.

Augustine shows that not only the increase, but the very beginning also of faith is in God's gift.

But lest any one should think that the God of glory appeared then to the eyes of any mortal in that which He is in Himself, he goes on to say that an angel appeared to Moses.

This He said also unto Paul: My grace is sufficient for you, for my strength is made perfect in weakness. [2 Corinthians 12:9] It is I, now mark it, who have caused you so to be. For in saying, I send you forth as sheep, He intimates this. Do not therefore despond, for I know, I know certainly, that in this way more than any other ye will be invincible to all.

‘Indeed, ma’am, he is then; the worst of misbehaviour; for he’s gone and got hisself married.’ And poor Susan gave vent to a flood of tears.

“I must speak to you as we go away,” said Phineas, whispering a word into Fitzgibbon’s ear.

Who has considered them more attentively?

These things are not my conjectures, but are affirmed constantly by the apostle, with an emphasis sufficient to rouse the careless and to silence the gainsayers.

In this sense Elias has come: but if you would seek the Tishbite, he is coming. Wherefore also He said, Elias truly comes, and shall restore all things. All what things? Such as the Prophet Malachi spoke of; for I will send you, says He, Elias the Tishbite, who shall restore the heart of father to son, lest I come and utterly smite the earth.

“I dare say not; I dare say not,” said the Duke. “Gatherum is always thought to be dull.”

Thenceforward let matters see to themselves.

He was feared, and, as he thought, detested by his wife.

But lest the objectors should think that the Apostle was in error, let them learn whom he followed as his authority for his belief.

“So you shall, papa, and I’ll bring her here on purpose. As soon as ever the thing is settled, we mean to ask her to Plumstead.”

[John 1:3] He so speaks here, as if he would make us say, that there is a something in man's substance which was created by the devil.

There is not one of us can hold a candle to him.

But surely the faithful prayed then, surely the Apostles prayed then, for this Lord's Prayer was given rather to the faithful.

“I have not thought much about that.”

I know all this as well as you; none shall gainsay it, and if you like I will form an image of the things now taking place so as to present the tragedy yet more distinctly to you.

And last of all, as unto one born out of due time, he appeared to me also.

The park itself is spacious, but is flat and uninteresting, being surrounded by a thin belt of new-looking fir-trees, and containing but very little old or handsome timber.

Why had she not taken advice when she was younger?

For to a Paul it is becoming to say I think also that I have the Spirit of God, [1 Corinthians 7:40] and again, that good thing which was committed to you keep by the Holy Ghost which dwells in us.

For them there was never more than ninepence in a shilling, if so much.

The shop would then be again opened for a week, and, after that, there would be an end of Brown, Jones, and Robinson.

The days of the no-rent manifestation had not yet come, as the obnoxious Members of Parliament were not yet in prison; but no-rent was already firmly fixed in the minds of many men, about to lead in the process of time to “Arrears Bills,” and other abominations of injustice.

And if we justly place so high a value upon chastity, what offense have we taken at truth, that, while no prospect of advantage to another will lead us to violate the former by adultery, we should be ready to violate the latter by lying?

This was done early in 1858.

Therefore the desire of wisdom brings to a kingdom."

And (the topic of this fifth nature) constitutes a distinct investigation in philosophy.

He could not violently dislike a man and yet not wish to do him any harm.

The first belongs to the soul alone, the second to the soul making use of the body, the third to the body animated by mind, and the last is the effect.

I know that many of the philosophers, who defend providence, are accustomed to be disturbed by this argument, and are almost driven against their will to admit that God takes no interest in anything, which Epicurus especially aims at; but having examined the matter, we easily do away with this formidable argument.

So she told herself, with much misery of spirit, as she was preparing the breakfast-table for William Belton.

When she was twenty, she had studied the subject more deeply, and had told herself that though her spirit was prone to rebel against her aunt, that though she would fain have been allowed to do as did other girls of twenty, yet she knew her aunt to be a good woman, and knew that it behoved her to obey.

This transformation certainly is to be looked for, according to the order which we have taught above; and in it, undoubtedly, it becomes us to hope for something worthy of divine grace; and this we believe will take place in the order in which the apostle describes the sowing in the ground of a bare grain of grain, or of any other fruit, to which God gives a body as it pleases Him, as soon as the grain of grain is dead.

But the relationship worthy of honors, is that which does distinguish us from the wicked.

It may perhaps help to sell an edition, but can never make an author successful.

For the heretics, who are most profane in all things, have sharpened their tongue against the Holy Ghost also, and have dared to utter impious things; as Irenæus the interpreter has written in his injunctions against heresies.

The annexation, distasteful as the idea is at home of a measure so highhanded and so apparently unwarrantable, has been well received.

Whether you speak of the roof, or of the walls, or of any other part whatsoever, He it is supports the whole.

But the journey now before me, from the capital of Natal to the capital of the Transvaal and thence round by Kimberley, the capital of the Diamond.

So then the work of salvation consists not in doing evil, but in suffering evil.

For when they have assumed anything false in the commencement of their investigations, led by the resemblance of the truth, they necessarily fall into those things which are its consequences.

And now that Caroline had lost her lover, she confessed to herself that she did love him.

That very frantic energy which induced her to appeal to her mother was, in itself, proof of her imprudence.

He couldn’t do it for the sake of his family.

“And who brought that crowd to the house?” demanded Robinson. “Who has filled the shop below with such a throng of anxious purchasers?”

And if they marvel and say as in Isaiah's drama Who is this that comes from Edom and from the things of earth?

Whether bond or free, whether Greeks or barbarians or Scythians, unlearned or learned, female or male, children or old men, in honor or dishonor, rich or poor, rulers or private persons, all, He says, are deemed worthy the same privilege; for faith and the grace of the Spirit, removing the inequality caused by worldly things, has moulded all to one fashion, and stamped them with one impress, the King's.

And since no passage of the inspired Scripture uses the terms 'out of the non-existent,' or that 'there was a time when He was not,' nor indeed any of the other phrases of the same class, it did not appear reasonable to assert or to teach such things.

But the race of darkness, say the Manichæans, excepting the part which was evil to the light which it bordered on, was also evil to itself.

Again, when these did not obey, you have come.

He had fallen into these feelings and could not now avoid them, or be quit of them;—but he could have been silent respecting them.

[Isaiah 6:11] For full of affectionateness is the whole race of the saints.

“Where am I to stay, Tom?”

I have said nothing difficult, nothing burdensome.

He knows all the while that the hypostasis of God the Word was perfect before the ages; and that the form of the servant which was assumed by It was perfect; and this is the reason why he said hypostases and not hypostasis.

For while they spoke, because they could not help it, of the God whom we worship, they either taught their fellow-countrymen to worship idols and demons, or allowed them to do so without daring to protest against it.

For lest by these words he should seem to accuse them, see how he seals up all.

His toilet, I have said, was not elaborate; but in this I have perhaps wronged him.

Lady Glencora, leaving Alice’s side, at once stepped up and deposited a piece of gold on one of the marked compartments.

The Misses Macmanus were very worthy women, and earned their bread in an upright, painstaking manner.

For his preaching is set forth to all alike, it knows no distinction of rank, no preëminence of nation, no other thing of the sort; for faith alone does it require, and not reasonings.

With widows, indeed, it has become a common practice to trifle, and to rail at one another, to flatter or to be impudent, to appear everywhere in public, and to perambulate the market-place.

“I suppose you are.”

“Lady Grant is here at this moment,” Miss Altifiorla said in one of her letters.

But I say it must.

On this account virgins are less honored than women of the world.

On the fourteenth of May, the day previous to the opening of the house, Robinson was seated upstairs alone, still at work on some of his large posters.

Steinmark. A free pardon, burgomaster; say a free pardon. Madame Brudo.

“I don’t like Captain Aylmer at all,” said Will, after a pause.

A Howard is nowhere lovelier than in America, or a sweaty nightcap less relished.

The Platonists do not deny their existence, but prefer to call them good demons.

Again, Aristophanes having written:—

A Double Pledge

For so will you reap the wages of his love also.

“I will do my best,” he said; “but as for telling them about this woman and that, I cannot do it.

And there was a fleeting brightness of colour which went about her cheeks and forehead, and ran around her mouth, which gave to her when she was speaking a brilliance which was hardly to be expected from the ordinary lines of her countenance.

“You cannot be surprised that I should be angry and indignant at the treatment I have received.”

George would not become soft and mild-spoken even by a deathbed side, and it would be likely enough that the Squire would curse his heir with his dying breath.

For not to go far away, this we are; and it is manifest he, too, was this, and that his soul joined to his body lived after the manner of mortals.

You know how we all strove to cross back into La Vendée, first at Angers and afterwards at Ancenis; and how M. Henri got divided from the army at Ancenis.

For that man is more abundantly possessed by the devil who is not only alienated from God, but also gratuitously hates those who serve God.

“No; I am sure he did not. Had he done so it could not have been found among Mr. Usbech’s papers; for, as far as I remember, the poor man never attended to any business after that day.”

Or, if any think this also to be sin, thinking that it comes not to pass save from some lust of this kind, which without doubt is false; what?

St. Diddulph’s, October 8, 186—.

Wonderful was the devotion of the faithful!

By no means, but the not having these riches, this procured him Heaven.

There are earths there deep, capacious, full of nurseries; but these, on the present occasion, were debarred from the poor stranger by the wicked ingenuity of man.

Texts explained; Sixthly, Proverbs 8:22.

She was seated in an easy bedroom chair, clothed from head to foot in a pale pink dressing-gown, from which the colour was nearly washed out; and her hair as I have said was “half done.” But in her trouble to collect her thoughts she became quite unaware of all accessories.

So that I am reduced to the alternative of repeating exhortations which seem superfluous or of omitting them to the serious injury of this treatise.

Short, broad and snuffy—Well, now I call it a very good nose. The nose is certainly much altered, if it be the same nose at all.

Such a thing should never take place with his consent, and Harry Handcock had ceased to speak tenderly.

And for this very reason there is also a word of the Saviour to prepare us for that day, in these words: Be ready and watch, for He comes at an hour you know not.

You have deceived only those who were not on the spot, and your letters flatter the ears of strangers only.

In the first place, because free will itself, on which I have said that the possibility of the soul's sinning depends, is here sufficiently expressed, when sins are mentioned, and it is said that our reconciliation with God takes place through Jesus Christ.

What is more wonderful among God's wonderful works, than the raising the dead?

It may be imagined how very unpleasant all this must have been to Miss Neefit herself.

Observe this also in that testimony which was given by the prophet on this subject in the clearest way: Behold, the days come, says the Lord, that I will consummate a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah; not according to the covenant which I made with their fathers, in the day that I took them by the hand, to bring them out of the land of Egypt.

It was not surprising that he should be anxious to keep in his own hand some small remnant of his own property.

“I wish it would come from ten thousand buckets,” said the master.

He could shoot well without wanting to shoot best.

To have pardoned the man because he was his father, and then to have treated him with insolent disdain, as some dying old man, almost entirely beneath his notice, was what he felt the nature of the circumstances demanded.

Miss Mackenzie found that the carriage arrangement had been fixed upon a new and more settled basis since her last visit.

Different magistrates, or the officers of different magistrates, frequently contended for the right of levying the tax from the same persons.

A sort of message had reached her, through Frank Greystock, to the effect that Lord Fawn thought it as well that they should not meet till the matter was settled.

“Won’t you make me known to your sister-in-law!” said he taking off his hat, and bowing to Lucy. “I have never yet had the pleasure of meeting her, though we have been neighbours for a month and more.” Fanny made her excuses and introduced them, and then they went on till they came to Framley Gate, Lord Lufton talking to them both, and Fanny answering for the two, and there they stopped for a moment.

I hardly know which was the worst, the lecture, the kiss, or the present.

For a time, no doubt, British “tenderness” will prevail.

What is, he shows contempt?

While God may supply a man with all that is according to his mind, and deprive him of no object which may in any manner appeal to his desires, whether it be wealth, or honour, or any other of those things for which men distract themselves; yet the man, while thus prospered in all things, as though the only ill inflicted on him from heaven were just the inability to enjoy them, may but husband them for his fellow, and fall without profit either to himself or to his neighbours.

They intended to be there by the middle of August, and would hurry there sooner, if there was any intermediate difficulty about finding a home for Nora.

It rejoiced her heart to think that her son was anxious to meet Griselda—that he should perpetrate this little ruse in order to gain his wish.

Lucius had replied haughtily, that he and his mother would know how to protect themselves, and the apothecary had retreated, resolving to spread the report everywhere.

“Let it be odd. I most certainly shall not be there.” But he remembered the occasion, and showed that he did so by sending to the bride the handsomest of all the gems which graced her exhibition of presents, short of the tremendous set of diamonds which had come from the Duke of Merioneth.

17. May the unseen guardians of all sects be favourable to your Graces, and may they especially, who in old time assisted your ancestors, defend you and be worshipped by us. We ask for that state of religious matters which preserved the empire for the divine parent of your Highnesses, and furnished that blessed prince with lawful heirs. That venerable father beholds from the starry height the tears of the priests, and considers himself censured by the violation of that custom which he willingly observed.

“I’ve got to move slower, Mr. Heathcote, as I grow older. That’s about it. And the beast I’m on is not much good.” Now Mr. Bates was always complaining of his horse, and yet was allowed to choose any on the run for his own use.

When he is destroyed we shall be able to do homage to one another in letters of peace while we live in peace.

She rejected the two first offered to her, and herself dictated the epithets with which the third was loaded.

Further, to enlarge their border is to extend abroad the fame of their reputation.

There were the four horses at the Moonbeam;—and he could ride them to hounds as well as any man.

When she was little more than a child they married her to that reprobate Morton.

Go, therefore, to the Virgin Mary.

Then, His face being revealed, we shall be allowed to look upon the glory of God, which now our souls, involved in the compacted dregs of this body, and shadowed by some stains and filth of this flesh, cannot clearly see.

She had intended to say nothing of her love, but he knew that it had all been told.

[Romans 5:12] Now from these words it cannot certainly be said, that Adam's sin has injured even those who commit no sin, for the Scripture says, In which all have sinned.

But to a Being absolutely in need of nothing, no one of His works can contribute anything to His own use.

“So far do I differ from you,” he says, “that not only do I not think that any relief in age is to be found in the crowd of them who may come to me for advice, but I look to its solitude as a harbor.

“Oh, Mr Crumb! Everybody is going on about Mr Crumb. I don’t like Mr Crumb, and I never will like him.”

Girls whose mouths will water unduly for the fleshpots of Egypt must in after life undergo such penalties as these.

I will not say that she had forgotten herself, and her own love in thinking about John Bold, and while conversing with Mary: she certainly had not done so.

“I suppose so,” said he. “But you do do it sometimes.”

Hilary declares ( 17) that his purpose is to refute these heresies and to demonstrate the true faith by the evidence of Scripture.

In this work he showed both from his own argument and from the testimony of Sacred Scriptures that the Lord Jesus from his conception by the Holy Spirit and his birth of the Virgin through which true God in true man himself also man made God was born, always beheld with his eyes of flesh both the Father and the Holy Spirit through the special and complete union of God and man.

“Mr. Bunfit, I’m not saying as I’ve got the truth beyond this,—that Benjamin and his two men were clean done at Carlisle, that Lord George and his lady brought the jewels up to town between ‘em, and that the party who didn’t get ‘em at Carlisle tried their hand again and did get ‘em in Hertford Street.” In all of which the ingenious Gager would have been right, if he could have kept his mind clear from the alluring conviction that a lord had been the chief of the thieves.

Or the transgressor at Corinth?

“No, but—he’d draw up a deed, wouldn’t he, Blake? It’s a sort of a marriage settlement.”

But now since he whom Thou fillest is the one Thou liftest up, I am a burden to myself, as not being full of You.

For the wife of Herod earned and obtained the boon by means of her daughter, that the head of John should be brought to table in a charger.

And such is ever God's way of dealing; as Paul also implies when he says, Who comforts us in all affliction.

“Why did you not take them?”

“Women are accustomed to that, and do not feel it as you would. However, I will walk with you if you’ll take me.”

[John 17:18] And as you sent me into the world, I [37] [Arabic, p. 180] also send them into the world.

“If you will look at the contests throughout the world,” said Sir Ferdinando, “you will generally find that the highest respect is paid to the greatest battalions.”

[1 Corinthians 8:11] Let us not, in opposition to these precepts, and to a wholesome fear, pretend to argue, saying, Well, let evil communications corrupt good manners, and let the weak brother perish.

When prepare what our scholars buy from us?

Now tell me why is wealth an object of ambition?

Therefore, O fool, be instructed by this, that each of the seeds is clothed in its own body.

[Matthew 10:34] And when there was an assault made both of the Gentiles, and also of the Jews with their rulers, to use them despitefully, and to stone them, they were aware of it, and fled unto Lystra and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and unto the region that lies round about: and there they preached the Gospel.

These are the bones of contention, which you are perpetually gnawing!

I think, however, there is nothing useful in the other branches of learning that are found among the heathen, except information about objects, either past or present, that relate to the bodily senses, in which are included also the experiments and conclusions of the useful mechanical arts, except also the sciences of reasoning and of number.

Kate was no coward.

Her friend was untrue to her and cruel in those allusions to tinkling cymbals.

I had written some time ago a letter to you on this subject, which was not delivered to you, because the bearer to whom it was entrusted did not finish his journey to you.

“I do not know. I cannot remember. But he behaved very well.”

I have received your letter, my beloved, and when I read it, it greatly gladdened me that you have turned your thoughts to these investigations.

[1 Corinthians 7:36] And he adds another passage from the Epistle to Philemon, where, speaking of Onesimus, [St. Paul says]: 'Whom I would have retained with me, that in your stead he might have ministered unto me in the bonds of the gospel.

“Mr Stumfold is very good, and so is she.”

“They’ll console themselves with skating,” said Mrs. Dale.

“If it be so, my feelings will be the same as they have always been since I first knew her. That is all that I have got to say.”

He was convinced by this divine dream, and fled the danger.

Mr. Greenwood endeavoured to be sprightly, and the parson, and the parson’s wife, and the parson’s daughter were uncomfortable.

As well might they say, Flesh is wounded by some body, for in itself it is invulnerable.

But if any one, finding this inadmissible, answers, But how then, if no one rose before Christ went down into Hades, are several recorded as having risen before Him?

“Bah, Auguste,” said his mistress; “the gentleman does not care to hear of your La Petite Vendée; it is of M. Henri—that is, of the young Marquis de Larochejaquelin, and of Madame and of Mademoiselle Agatha, and of M. de Lescure, and of Charette, and the Prince de Talmont, that Monsieur will want to hear!”

He even went so far as to maintain that this would be gratifying to the most merciful and clement Valens Augustus.

If I would remain there with my gun cocked and ready, a buck would surely come by almost at once so that I might shoot him.

At that time it was not raining, but the clouds looked as like rain as the Secretary of Legation could have desired.

On this principle, a man may say, much more must we rebaptize after a drunkard, because John was sober, and yet baptism was repeated after him.

Chapter 13. The Beggar Woman.

And some, in worshipping God, make a representation of heaven containing the stars; and so worship, although Scripture says, Let Us make man in Our image and likeness.

Of so much fame, in Downing Street—expect the meed.

The specially clerical clubs,—the Oxford and Cambridge, the Old University, and the Athenaeum,—were black with them.

“He is a lout,” she said; “a stupid lout!” thus casting her scorn upon the mother as well as on the son, and, indeed, upon the whole family.

For they regard their momentary bloom, they imitate them, and wishing to flourish with them for a time, perish for evermore: this is, That they may be destroyed for ever.

He was unlike other masters of hounds in this, that he never carried a horn; but he spoke to his hounds in a loud, indistinct chirruping voice, which all County Galway believed to be understood to every hound in the park.

‘They don’t kill him, too?’

But in this matter I hold him to be blameless.

Stand not upon the order of your going but go at once,—seeing that it is necessary that you should go.

And yet he had known the times in which his dear friend had been very sharp in her memory with reference to a few pounds.

A serious illness, in addition to other causes, prevented S. Gregory from being present at his funeral (Epist.

She would talk to her own mother, and perhaps his mother might relent.

Afterwards Anaximenes, and then Diogenes of Apollonia, decide that the air, infinite and unmeasured, is God.

Glory to You, O Lord, glory to You, O Holy One, glory to You, O King, that You have given us meat to make us glad.

Because this it is that is admirable, that in those times double doors and veils made the seclusion: but now, though doing your sacrifice in public view, you may do it as in the holy of holies, and in a far more awful manner.

“It will be better that you should give them into the keeping of some one whom you can both trust, till the law has decided to whom they belong.”

[1 Timothy 3:2] So then he who is without blame the husband of one wife comes within the rule for undertaking the priestly office; he, however, who has married again has no guilt of pollution, but is disqualified for the priestly prerogative.

Will the Americans honestly wish to pay the bill; and if they do so wish, will they have the power to pay it?

Though he had purposed to destroy himself in taking that leap, and now hoped for nothing better than that they might both perish together, he yet struggled to keep his head above the waves.

In 1842 were commenced The Confessions of George Fitz-Boodle, which were continued into 1843.

But if you tell me of the pleasure of vice, tell out its end too.

“It is you that are cruel,” said Lady Rowley.

We have known each other now somewhat intimately, though indeed not very long, and I have sometimes fancied that you were almost as well pleased to be with me as I have been to be with you.

I don’t know how I am to say any more, but anybody can see with half an eye that she will simply go on losing money year after year.

So then, the same force which the expression One has, applied to the Son, it has also, applied to the Father.

The chaste wife doing the will of God, is a good reminiscence of His first creation; for God, being one, created one woman for one man.

It was, however, before all things necessary that she should put Mr Slow right as to the facts of the case. She had, no doubt, condoned whatever Mr Rubb had done. Mr Rubb undoubtedly had her sanction for keeping her money without security. Therefore, by return of post, she wrote the following short letter, which rather astonished Mr Slow when he received it—

feeling clearly that others had failed, but by no means certain that the right man was yet discovered,—England said, ‘ Try Palmerston.’ It was on the 8th of February, 1855, that the Earl of Derby withdrew, and that he took the helm.

For he wishes to show that the Son is something different from eternal life, while, unless eternal life is found in the Son, our faith will be proved to be idle, and our preaching to be vain, baptism a superfluity, the agonies of the martyrs all for nought, the toils of the Apostles useless and unprofitable for the life of men.

Those that are in the light shall be glorified, and those that are in the darkness shall groan that they may moisten their tongue.

Mr. Toogood, in spite of his asseveration that he would not budge from Barchester till he had seen Mr. Crawley through all his troubles, did run up to London as soon as the news reached him that John Eames had returned.

Everybody knows it, and Jones, who likes popularity, grieves at the unfortunate publicity.

For if a will should simply exist, but not be able to do what it wills, it would be overborne by a more powerful will.

Matters having been brought to this issue with regard to Arsenius, the contrivers of this imposture were reduced to perplexity; and Achab, who was also called John, one of the principal accusers, having slipped out of court in the tumult, effected his escape. Thus Athanasius cleared himself from this charge, without having recourse to any pleading; for he was confident that the sight only of Arsenius alive would confound his calumniators.

He had before seen himself little in his own eyes, but, when propped up by temporal power, he no longer saw himself little.

If you give thanks to God, if you dost not wail bitterly, if you utter the words of Job, The Lord gave and the Lord has taken away.

“But we must fix a day, you know,” said Peter.

They must go to the same house, and Mr Vavasor felt that it would be better that they should be on speaking terms when they reached it.

Count up then cities, and places, and nations, and peoples, not those under the Romans only, but those also under barbarians.

“Oh laws;—so he is. I always put my foot in it. Well;—he has lost a lot. And so have Silverbridge and Tifto. Perhaps you don’t know Tifto.”

I can name no colour in describing the soft changing tints of Madeline Staveley’s face, but I will make bold to say that no man ever found it insipid or inexpressive.

For thus at length He may be called the common Father of all, and the best and greatest, which His divine and heavenly nature demands.

“I suppose he can do it. The law will allow him. But the injustice would be monstrous. I did not ask him to take me by the hand when I was a boy and lead me into this special walk of life. It has been his own doing. How will he look me in the face and tell me that he is going to marry a wife? I shall look him in the face and tell him of my wife.”

Let me state the greater results.

Not many perhaps wore pink coats, and none pink tops.

For be well assured that this very fact marks in you the nature of vipers, that you have not in your mouth the foundation of truth, but the poison of slanderous abuse, as it is written, "The poison of asps is under their lips."

But Valentinus is not disposed to affirm what is thus generated to be primal Deity, but speaks in detractive terms both of Him and the things made by Him.

And in seeking this we love God, we love also our neighbour: and the love within us has but one Object, since we desire the bond-servant to serve and the Lord to have rule.

Some people called him the dormouse.

He shows you together with these this selfsame publican also, that was grievously oppressed by the fever of covetousness, quickly set free from it.

Let us also pass over this fire of lust, fearing which Paul— but fearing for us, inasmuch as by buffeting his body he had come no longer to fear for himself— says to us: Flee fornication.

Again God gave him the commands about the Amalekites, but he transgressed these too.

In truth, the champagne, and the imprisonment, and Ayala together, had altogether altered his appearance.

Therefore it is in vain that it is prescribed to me from that old book of mine, that I may not argue the case as I ought to argue it in respect of infants; and that thence I may not persuade my opponents by the light of a manifest truth, that God's grace is not given according to men's merits.

Ought I not so to have arranged matters that I myself should have been the first,—to have postponed the use of the college till such time as I might myself have been deposited?

But when you have come as far as Egypt, although it is justly proud of the numbers and virtues of its own saints, yet let it not disdain to hear how Europe will not yield to it, or to all Asia, in having only Martin.

Are but mementoes of the past.”

He firmly believed now, that that had been the object of his constant ambition; though could he retrace his thoughts as a young man, he would find that in the early days of his forensic toils, the silent, heavy, unillumined solemnity of the judge had appeared to him to be nothing in comparison with the glittering audacity of the successful advocate.

It was not by reading that the Greshams of Greshamsbury had held their heads up in the county, but by having high blood and plenty of money.

and when that?

For some must marry, and a man must be in some condition, and he must marry some one in some condition.

the part which is fixed in the ground, represents the occult nature of the holy mystery.

“No, I ain’t,” shouted Ruby.

But if the things which are to be spoken by us are manifestly impregnable on every side, we shall have confidence in entering upon the examination.

Ver. 8. Wherefore, though I might be much bold in Christ to enjoin you that which is convenient [befitting].

But he was never convinced that Mr. Kennedy had carried out the purpose with which he rose from his chair.

I have spoken my opinion very plainly, and I hope not too confidently of the affair, and I will only add to that now an assurance of my conviction that had I been in Sir T. Shepstone’s place and done as he did, I should have been proud of the way I had served my country.

For that very thing which had immersed Adam and Eve in death, taught their son, too, to begin with murder.

“I wonder whether you would be angry with me,” continued the major, “if I told you that I wanted to speak a word to your father and mother alone?” To this Jane made no reply, but was out of the room almost before the words had reached the ears of her father and mother.

But when the fullness of time came for the revelation of the New Testament, which was hidden under the types of the Old, clear testimony was to be borne to the truth, that there is another life for which this life ought to be disregarded, and another kingdom for which the opposition of all earthly kingdoms should be patiently borne.

For from the body in what follows, and from the unity thence arising, he proceeds to the actual comparison of the members, a thing on which they were especially seeking to be instructed.

Little as she agreed with him when he spoke of the necessity of retiring into private life because a man had written to him such a letter as this, incapable as she was of understanding fully the nature of the irritation which tormented him, still she knew that he was suffering, and acknowledged to herself that she had been the cause of the agony.

What says Democritus?

“Then I’ll go out to Winslow’s about the lamb at once, ma’am.”

Lastly, what said He, his Neighbour, as it were, to him drawing near?

It was then past six, and the night was very dark.

And when I came to my sermon, I made a few remarks suitable to the occasion and the happy and joyful feeling, not desiring them to listen to me, but rather to consider the eloquence of God in this divine work.

they don’t give an animal a chance of a mouth.” In this he alluded only, I presume, to saddle-horses.

But they are defended, and pronounced good; therefore their fruit is proved to be innocent.

These men, seeking a weak point in the Christian doctrine, select for attack the eternity of the body, as if it were a contradiction to contend for the blessedness of the soul, and to wish it to be always resident in the body, bound, as it were, in a lamentable chain; and this although Plato, their own founder and master, affirms that it was granted by the Supreme as a boon to the gods He had made, that they should not die, that is, should not be separated from the bodies with which He had connected them.

There are rejected lovers who, merely because they are lovers, become subject to the scorn and even to the disgust of the girls they love.

But if he both believes and loves, then through good works, and through diligent attention to the precepts of morality, he comes to hope also that he shall attain the object of his love.

But I am glad they are gone,—thoroughly glad.” This was all very well, and was not without its effect on Frank Greystock.

This was not to be borne. “I’ll tell you what it is, Mr. Neefit,” said Ralph, “you’d better let me alone, or else I shall be off.”

For men enjoy all these good things which the world contains in itself.

Let such an one as this draw near, and touch the royal cups.

And to-day, are there not many who are telling us that we are losing the liberties which our forefathers got for us, and that no judgment can be passed on us “save one of inexorable and remorseless condemnation?” We are a great nation, and the present threatenings are probably vain.

Eusebius, Theognius, Patrophilus, the other Eusebius, Ursacius, and Valens.

The romance of the thing, and not the pity of it, was the general subject of discourse, so that she could not fail to perceive that she was generally regarded as the future wife of Sir John Ball.

For there is nothing, he means, against your living with another husband, now the former is dead; for how should there be, since when the husband was alive it allowed this to her who had a writing of divorcement?

Come, my friend, and discourse with me.

I come now to the point which (is urged both by our own brethren and by the heretics).

When George had been living at Granpere, Urmand had only been an occasional sojourner at the inn, and had not as yet fallen into habits of friendship with the Voss family.

For how can we suppose that while a written schedule of debts is more binding than a verbal acknowledgment, yet a written oath is something other than an oath?

Gerard Maule, as he sat upstairs half undressed in his bedroom that night didn’t like it.

And this was no little advantage to the multitude. Therefore also unto them does He henceforth direct His word, having removed the wolves, and having repulsed their plots.

“As soon as you are gone. As soon as we are alone together. I will;—and then I will follow you to London. Now shall we not say, Goodbye?”

If she did not keep it all, might she still keep something—enough for decent life—and yet comfort herself with the feeling that she had expiated her sin?

In whatever you do, you have too much enthusiasm.

And thus running through the examples of all good men, by always imitating those who were better than others he made himself also worthy of imitation.

Chapter 3. Concerning His Father, a Freeman of Thagaste, the Assister of His Son's Studies, and on the Admonitions of His Mother on the Preservation of Chastity.

I will pass even beyond this power of mine which is called memory— I will pass beyond it, that I may proceed to You, O Thou sweet Light.

He was received with solemn respect by the old servants who, as he observed, abstained from calling him by any name.

Having done his work there, he had felt that he would now only be in the way.

“I doubt whether people do know,” said Hampstead. “She is twenty-one, and as far as the law goes might, I believe, walk out of the house, and marry any man she pleases tomorrow. You as her father have no authority over her whatever;”—here the indignant father jumped up from his chair; but his son went on with his speech, as though determined not to be interrupted,—”except what may come to you by her good feeling, or else from the fact that she is dependent on you for her maintenance.”

It was all true, and Clara knew that it was true. The putting right of mistakes is never pleasant; and in this case it was so unpleasant that she could not bring herself to acknowledge that it must be done. And yet, I think, that by this time she was aware of the necessity.

And unite with those before you in an earnest desire for the same glory of chastity, caring little for the things of this life.

She said to me, Whatsoever ought to be revealed, will be revealed; only let your heart be with God, and doubt not whatsoever you shall see.

Cast away the things which you have already in your hands; for so long as you grasp them you will not be able to seize the other.

She persuades her father that it would be both unjust and injudicious to banish his young friend because of his politics; she cares little to go to houses where she will not meet him, and, in fact, she is in love.

We also believe that the Son reigns with the Father, that His reign has neither beginning nor end, and that it is not bounded by time, nor can ever cease: for that which always exists never begins to be, and can never cease.

II. Christians are essentially participators in the nativity of Christ

Orion, Presbyter

It was sly, fraudulent, false, extremely courteous, and thoroughly unEnglish.

“I’ll tell you what,” said Toogood; “I’ll pay half.

But very likely he might have understood the Scripture as testifying that God gave Eve this name through Adam, as His prophet.

Poor Anty.

Again, I reckon it is the part of law and of right reason to assign to each one what is appropriate to him, and belongs to him, and falls to him.

She said to me, Lo!

All were righteous, all living in virtue, all were witnessed to by God.

Doodles proved to demonstration that the thing was not done, and that seventy pounds was too much for mere preliminaries.

Now we do not ask of you who have come to age such toil as you require of your children; for not every day, but two days only in the week do we exhort you to hearken to our words, and only for a short portion of the day, that your task may be an easy one.

You can’t have anything to do yet, and of course you’ll come.

Often has he cried out against me in the streets from late one night till early the next.

That whole halo which encircles the Church is represented (as consisting) of holiness.

The king was troubled because these women seemed to have fed not merely on human bodies, but on the bodies of their own children; and being moved by an example of such awful misery, threatened the prophet Elisha with death.

“And now that brute will reappear, and everything will be wrong again,” he said to himself.

For the moon in its increase receives the virtue which is separated from matter, and during the time of its augmentation comes forth full of it.

And would she have been so much inferior to Miss Forrester?

“In what way, Rachel?” Mrs. Ray’s voice was not quite pleasant. Now that Mrs. Prime was gone, she would have been glad to have had the dangerous subject abandoned for a while.

They became weak, and fell.

The path proposed lay right across the field into which Lily had taken Crosbie when she made her offer to let him off from his engagement. Could it be possible that she should ever walk there again with another lover? “No, John,” she said; “not to-day, I think. I am almost tired, and I had rather not go out.”

Du Boung was a man rapidly growing into provincial eminence, and jumped at the offer.

It must not be tender.

They think somewhat too much of their granduncles, who have not hitherto returned the compliment by thinking much of them.

For wells are also gathering places for water, made by the hand of man to receive the moisture diffused in the hollow of the earth.

And it is surely a happy circumstance that the punishment of such persons as I have described should have been publicly manifested in our own times.

Bishops would be bishops indeed, when they were no longer the creatures of a Minister’s breath.

It was done in the most primitive manner.

All but a small part of it is taken up with discussions tending to the praise of particular Bishops, and adds nothing to our knowledge of facts.

The prophets, indeed, foretold what Christ should suffer, and set forth the reason why He should suffer.

In the exquisite misery of her troubles, she had told him the truth about herself and her son, and he had responded, not by compliments, but by real aid and true counsel.

The signora was carried head foremost, her head being the care of her brother and an Italian manservant who was accustomed to the work; her feet were in the care of the lady’s maid and the lady’s Italian page; and Charlotte Stanhope followed to see that all was done with due grace and decorum.

Nina had brought out her necklace and had asked Souchey to take it to the shop and do the best with it he could; but Souchey had declined the commission, alleging that he would be accused of having stolen it; and Nina had then prepared to go herself, but her father had called her, and he had come out into the sitting-room and had remained there during the afternoon, so that both the sale of the trinket and the search in the desk had been postponed.

“How was it different, Nora?”

The warning of the gospel has been all but fulfilled in me, for I did not sufficiently count the cost of the tower I was about to build; [Luke 14:28] accordingly I have been constrained to send my brother Paulinian to Italy to sell some ruinous villas which have escaped the hands of the barbarians, and also the property inherited from our common parents.

There are some who are calling the gods to assist them in court.

And then Luke reports how the Lord rose up from the synagogue and went into the house of Simon, and rebuked the fever in his mother-in-law, and cured her of her disease; and after this cure, when the sun was setting, he says, all, as many as had persons sick with various diseases, brought them to Him, and He laid his hands on each one of them and cured them.

the qualities which carry him through it and give the halo to his head may after all be very ungodlike.

Beholdest thou the Spirit living, separating, calling, and with authority sending forth?

To these turn this disease of yours with some advantage.

Ver. 4. Who for my life have laid down their own necks.

Lo, obedience must be paid to your precepts, that such a one may be made a priest as authority approves; and such a one as is sought is not found.

Bessy had been despised at first all around Launay.

For the irrational animals have their food provided for them, because there is not in them even an impulse towards the invention of the arts.

After what you have heard, are the Melmottes people with whom you would wish to be connected?

Although the name of Christian was not at that time in the world, yet truth was always suffering condemnation.

Orth.— If then the grace of the Incarnation is real, and what we call Incarnation is the divine Word's being made man, then the name man is real; for after taking man's nature He is called man.

“There’s nothing I do hate so much as them lowbred Old Bailey attorneys,” said Mr. Dan Stringer to the waiter, in a voice intended to reach Mr. Toogood’s ears.

Nor must we ask why the Word of God is not such as our word, considering God is not such as we, as has been before said; nor again is it right to seek how the word is from God, or how He is God's radiance, or how God begets, and what is the manner of His begetting.

Diamonds were found, and the Diamond Fields had to be reached through the Free State.

55. And again further on He says: He that despises Me, and receives not My words, has one that judges him. [John 12:48] Does he seem to you to have received Christ's words who has not corrected himself? Undoubtedly not. He, then, who corrects himself receives His word, for this is His word, that every one should turn back from sin. So, then, of necessity you must either reject this saying of His, or if you cannot deny it you must accept it.

“Of course; I always misunderstand everything. I know that. I misunderstood it when I told you how you would distress yourself if you took those nasty hounds.”

[Matthew 10:9-10] What then?

And Thestius:—

On these passages it is probable that our opponents will take their stand.

If he did not foresee the evil, he must have been in the darkness of ignorance.

[Daniel 12:3] You can see, therefore, how great is the difference between righteous ignorance and instructed righteousness.

“Is it likely that I should jest on such a subject;—or that if I had a mind to do so I should tell you? You must keep my secret. You must not tell your uncle. It must come to him from myself. At the present moment he does not in the least know me,—but he will.”

As they were fatigued with their journey, he led them to the episcopal dwelling, made them sit down at table, and gave them to eat of such things as he had.

[Exodus 20:5-6] For He who placed some on the right hand, and others on the left, conceived as Father, being good, is called that which alone He is— good; [Matthew 19:17] but as He is the Son in the Father, being his Word, from their mutual relation, the name of power being measured by equality of love, He is called righteous.

For the change which is to come in at the resurrection is, in truth, not only not to have death incidental to it, which has happened through sin, but neither is it to have mortality, [or the very possibility of death,] which the natural body had before it sinned.

“Wasn’t she the daughter of an ironmonger?” asked the elder Miss Godolphin.

Understand that the Monad was; but the Dyad was not, before it was in existence.

Then adding to these a few more words on his answer and his hymns, he declares that he is not disobedient, that the Emperor is a son of the Church, and that Auxentius is worse than a Jew.

[John 14:12-13] For if the Son cannot give what the Father can give, the Truth has lied, and cannot do what the Father has been asked for in His name.

And now there was this aggravation to her misery,—this horrid suitor, who disgraced her by making those around her suppose it to be possible that she should ever accept him; who had probably heard of her quarrel, and had been mean enough to suppose that therefore there might be a chance for himself!

But if you assert that because you cannot comprehend it, therefore He cannot have been begotten, it will be time for you to strike out many existing things which you cannot comprehend; and first of all God Himself.

No, not even so.

De Wynter. Two loving hearts grow nearer to each other by daily intercourse.

“It will be gone,” she said, “long before they reach their destination.”

Dearest Lily,

The testimony of Abbot Antony in which he teaches that each virtue ought to be sought for from him who professes it in a special degree.

For Moses speaks thus: Dan is a lion's cub, and he shall leap from Bashan.

Lord Grex had been very badly treated by his son, whom he hated worse than any one else in the world.

From the thraldom of this execrable dominion they are liberated, to whom the Lord Jesus gave power to become the sons of God.

Was that a husband’s usage?

To whom the old man: You should know, said he, that in the world to come also you will be judged in the lot of those with whom in this life you have been affected by sharing in their gain or loss, or joy or sorrow.

The prophets also, when they speak as in the person of God, [saying,] I am God, the first [of beings], and I am also the last, and besides Me there is no God, [Isaiah 44:6] concerning the Father of the universe, do also speak of our Lord Jesus Christ.

But as his wife did not accompany him on these fitful journeys, she was able to give her time very much to the Duchess.

I observe, however, that the chief advent of the Holy Spirit is declared to men, after the ascension of Christ to heaven, rather than before His coming into the world.

Judith, in no way moved by the luxurious banquet of Holophernes, carried off the triumph of which men's arms despaired, solely in right of her temperance; delivered her country from occupation and slew the leader of the expedition with her own hands.

They held their peace, it says, saying, The will of the Lord be done.

But languishing looks, and ogling, which is to wink with the eyes, is nothing else than to commit adultery with the eyes, lust skirmishing through them.

[Genesis vi.-viii] At one time the Church was in Abraham alone, and we know what he endured from the wicked.

I am told that I am to be reelected triumphantly at Tankerville without a penny of cost or the trouble of asking for a vote, simply because I didn’t knock poor Mr. Bonteen on the head.

I was afraid that you would ask me.

Chapter XXXVIII. Is There Cause or Just Impediment?

For myself, I declare in the presence of God that, after reading each of these opinions, I am unable to hold any of them as certain and absolute: the determination of the truth in this question I leave to God and to any to whom it shall please him to reveal it.

The blessed Paul had already lived on earth the life of heaven for a hundred and thirteen years, and Antony at the age of ninety was dwelling in another place of solitude (as he himself was wont to declare), when the thought occurred to the latter, that no monk more perfect than himself had settled in the desert.

But, since a shaking of various kinds is extending itself everywhere, in the midst of a common need one should grieve less for one's own, but study rather, by patiently enduring, to overcome what we cannot altogether avoid.

The martyr then was moved, but the demon not even then enjoyed freedom from fear, but straightway learned that it is possible to move the bones of a martyr, but not to escape his hands.

He puts life before the light of men, even if life and the light of men are the same thing; in thinking of those who have part in life, though that life is also the light of men, we are to come first to the fact that they are living the divine life spoken of before; then we come to their enlightenment.

It was also added that if any one should admit the condemned persons to communion, he should understand that the same sentence would be pronounced against himself.

“If you play that game, my poor girl, the police will take you.”

Thus they spoke before the king.

“Then have them all packed up,—as small as you can; never mind about wool and cases and all that. Have them close to your hand so that if you have to move you can take them with you. Do you understand?”

And then the Honourable George returned thanks.

Shall he carry a flag, too, hostile to Christ?

The archangel heard these things, and considered them within himself, as was reasonable, and said: Strange is this matter; passing comprehension is this thing that is spoken.

Strive and be thou like him.

We will leave Chapeau and his new friend still standing in the passage, for Plume could not invite him in, as none of the rooms were his own except the little garret upstairs; and we will follow Henri as he went in search of the Mad Captain, merely premising that all Plume’s efforts to find out the name of his superior officer were unavailing.

Nor would that fire, as it seemed to be, or thunderbolt, as it has been considered, have fallen upon the sheep of the patriarch, until the devil had said to God, Have You not made a hedge about all that is without and within his house and around all the rest of his property?

He is, as I have said, a peer of Parliament.

Never admit a swallow into the family, that is, Do not admit chatterers and talkative persons under the same roof with you.

And mark them, how in another respect also they are carried about into contradictory opinions. For whereas they had said of John, he has a devil, [Matthew 11:18] they stopped not at this, but said the very same again concerning Him, taking as He did the opposite course; thus were they forever carried about into conflicting opinions.

“No, T.; you would not give up anything; quite the other way. You would have every comfort round you that any man can possibly want. You can’t go on at it always, toiling and moiling as you’re doing now. It’s quite dreadful for a man never to have a moment to himself at your time of life, and of course it must tell on any constitution if it’s kept up too long. You’re not the man you were, T.; and of course you couldn’t expect it.”

Such were Tom Daly’s sad outlooks into the world. And sad as they were, they seemed to be justified by circumstances as they operated upon him. There could be no hunting in County Galway next session unless things were to change very much for the better. And there was no prospect of any such change. “It’s nonsense talking of a poor devil like me being ruined. You ask me what property I have got.”

There in the silent hours of the night, while the old man lay near his death in the adjoining chamber, had she with infinite care and much slow preparation done that deed, to undo which, were it possible, she would now give away her existence,—ay, her very body and soul.

But the whole question, as it then stood, was this, that although the God of the law was the same as was preached in Christ, yet there was a disparagement of His law.

But three hundred a year goes a long way at Munich, and Isa’s parents were willing that she should be Herbert’s wife if such an income should be forthcoming.

Our friend had taken his seat, and was already resolving, with his eyes fixed on the table, where he would make his first plunge.

“I hope she will not come again.”

The church was distant, but nevertheless the tones came sharp upon him with their clear music.

I don’t have you home to dinner not one day in the week through the year.

He makes in men the beginning and the completion of the faith in Jesus who made the man Jesus the beginner and finisher of faith; [Hebrews 12:2] for thus, as you know, He is called in the epistle which is addressed to the Hebrews.

[Romans 16:1-2] But in this instance he bore witness to her of her zeal so far as help went (only:) but Priscilla and Aquilla went as far even as death for Paul's sake; and about them he thus writes, saying, Aquila and Priscilla salute you, who for my life's sake laid down their own neck; [Romans 16:3-4] for death clearly.

She talked about the scenery, and the charms of the old place, and the dullness of the people around them, and the inexpediency of looking for society in country places; till after awhile Mr. Belton was once more at his ease.

Then Mrs. T. and the girls would have had a merry time of it; and the Tappitts would have come out of the contest with four or five hundred a year for life instead of the thousand now offered to them, and nobody would have blamed anybody for such a result.

Nor does he solace only, but also shows what he says to be trustworthy.

‘That would not have been civil,’ said Aunt Polly; ‘and as you insist on my asking him, I do not wish to be rude.’ And so the letter was sent as it was written.

“If Jack isn’t old,” said Mrs Neverbend, “I, at any rate, am older, and I say the same thing.”

Suppose Nicobulus to be the worst of men:— though his only crime is that through me he is an object of envy, and more free than he ought to be.

“She is so very arrogant,” said Bella,—”and so domineering.” To this Mr. Gibson made no reply.

But he would urge that his books were all in London; and that, even were he willing to move them, there was no room for them in Popham Villa.

Then Simon said: [But what if souls are from him, and do not know him, and he is truly their father?]

Of the accusations made against herself she would certainly tell her father, unless they were withdrawn as far as her own husband could withdraw them.

“Oh, Mr. George!” he said, just before they went to the churchyard, “we are grass of the field, just grass of the field; here to-day, and gone tomorrow; flourishing in the morning, and cast into the oven before night!

Is this the man those people mutilated after his murder by cutting off his right hand?

Seeing, then, that you know the integrity of our faith from my plain utterance and profession, it is right that you should have no further scruple of doubt with respect to the Church of the blessed Peter, Prince of the apostles: but persist in the true faith, and make your life firm on the rock of the Church; that is on the confession of the blessed Peter, Prince of the apostles, lest all those tears of yours and all those good works should come to nothing, if they are found alien from the true faith.

That, of course, which shall be given.

“You mustn’t let him go on with this lawsuit,” Mr. Honyman had said.

Mr. Masters had made a claim upon him since he had been in England for £127 8s.

“Again, ma’am?”

For ourselves who are His Body He has willed to prefigure also in that His Body wherein already He has both died and has risen again, and into Heaven has ascended, in order that whither the Head has gone before, there the members may be assured that they shall follow.

And yet ye had seen water at the marriage turned into the marriage wine; one nature becoming another nature, whether it were by change, or by development, or by creation.

To Undy a warmer reward must surely be due: he had been placed fairly on the world’s surface, with power to choose between good and bad, and had deliberately taken the latter; to him had, at any rate, been explained the theory of meum and tuum, and he had resolved that he liked tuum better than meum; he had learnt that there is a God ruling over us, and a Devil hankering after us, and had made up his mind that he would belong to the latter.

“And yet there was somebody!” She pouted her lips at him, glancing up into his face for half a second, and then again hung her head down. “Mary, do not grudge me my delight.”

Hitherto Major Grantly had never even spoken to Mr. Crawley.

That young lady had been very sick and very selfish; and Miss Viner had been very sick also, and perhaps equally selfish.

From the beginning, he means, you have had this excellency. You received from your forefathers the faith unfeigned. For the praises of our ancestors, when we share in them, redound also to us. Otherwise they avail nothing, but rather condemn us; wherefore he has said, I am persuaded that in you also. It is not a conjecture, he means, it is my persuasion; I am fully assured of it. If therefore from no human motive you have embraced it, nothing will be able to shake your faith.

Were he once the father-in-law of the eldest son of a marquis, he thought he might almost be safe.

“Well, signora, I am here.”

Long may it remain so.

If an Angel appearing took away the Prophet's voice and strength, would the appearance of God have allowed him to breathe?

Is he speaking of fleshly, bodily birth, or of the formation of inanimate objects?

For thence one may learn with certainty that the commendation is given not from favour, nor of necessity, nor from repute, but in accordance with truth and an unflattering judgment.

Know, O man, whose breath it is that you have to keep you in life, and you shall not wish that it be polluted.

For what grasping of the hands is to the body, that is interchange of language to the soul.

[John 12:13] And the blind men also say, Son of David, have mercy on us.

“Yes,” said he, “I hope to make you my wife.” She tossed her head, and told him that with all the will in the world to sacrifice herself, such sacrifice could do him no good if he persisted in making himself a drunkard.

It would be a lengthy matter were I to pass in review each several place where we read of His being made, not indeed by nature, but by way of gracious dispensation.

Against all that she must guard herself, without thinking of the diamonds.

But observe carefully and learn in what sense Scripture says that any man may give his body to be burned.

How then, say you, do they not suffer punishment?

Chapter 30 [XXVII.]— Sin is Removed by Sin

“No, Biddy; why should I turn Protestant? but you see there’s rasons why we couldn’t be married here; we’re to be married in Dublin, tomorrow.”

And then he saw what there was before him.

John 8:16

It was declared that good taste required that he should be addressed as he chose to be addressed.

The people that had a heart of stone, by a Stone He set at nought, [Matthew 21:42] for lo, a stone hears words. Witness its work that has reproved them; and you, you deaf ones, let the pearl reprove today.

When he thought of what it might be to be Squire of Llanfeare in perhaps five years’ time, with the rents in his pocket, he became angry at his own feebleness.

And is not, on this account, philosophy rightly called by Socrates the practice of Death?

Thus having shamed them from those that are without, he next brings forward himself also, which kind of thing is a most excellent method of teaching: and accordingly we find him every where doing so.

You fancy that you are a teacher and a Bishop, while (O wretched blindness) you are denying His Divinity, His Divinity (I repeat it) whose priest you claim to be.

For it was spoken from the beginning to those only who understand.

[Matthew 19:28] For as that is called the regeneration of washing whereby we are renewed from the filth of sins washed away, so that seems to be called a regeneration by which we are purified from every stain of bodily materiality, and are regenerated in the pure sense of the soul to life eternal; so that every quality of regeneration may be purer than of that washing, so that no suspicion of sins can fall either on a man's doings, or even on his very thoughts themselves.

The matter was altogether so distasteful to Lord George, that more than once during the interview he almost made up his mind that he would withdraw altogether from the work, and at any rate appear to take it for granted that the child was a real heir, an undoubted Popenjoy.

Thou badest me, he says, eat upon dung, and I ate upon it.

He had been told by that false one that her tidings had been sent to her friend.

The works which My Father has given Me, the same bear witness of Me.

Sir Magnus Mountjoy, the late general’s elder brother, had been for the last four or five years the English minister at Brussels.

They charge us with betrayal of the sacred books; they charge us with persecution; they charge us with false baptism: to all their charges make the same answer about the followers of Maximianus.

We have seen this Tribune of the people carried through the town on a British war-chariot.

No, he says; for I am not now regarding what he deserves to suffer, but what it behooves me to do.

If those debts only were meant which are forgiven by Baptism, it would befit catechumens rather to say, Forgive us our debts.

As for thinking about it, that was altogether beyond her.

[Genesis 28:10-19] This is prophetic.

Nevertheless, he has deemed it expedient to take the advice of a certain friend as to turning the tumbledown house into profitable shape.

If he be not on the spot there is no one to whom misfortune can appeal or whom iniquity need dread.

Do you think John Hiram intended to give a hundred a year to old single men, who earned perhaps two shillings or half-a-crown a day for themselves and families in the best of their time?

those who are then left.

This is the office of the Commissioners of Internal Navigation.

Chapter IV. Zoroaster

He had assumed an assured face and a confident smile while declaring to his mother that no power on earth should stand between him and his promised wife,—that she would be able to walk out from her father’s hall and marry him as certainly as might the housemaid or the ploughman’s daughter go to her lover.

Neither, then, the poor, nor the mean nor even the diseased, nor the slave, can be one of them.

But if it is absurd to say that a man is in death before he reaches death (for to what is his course running as he passes through life, if already he is in death?

We do not disdain to look upon bodies which are defective in beauty, especially seeing that our souls themselves are not yet so beautiful as we hope that they shall be when He who is of ineffable beauty shall have appeared, in whom, though now we see Him not, we believe; for then we shall be like Him, when we shall see Him as He is.

“Why should you suppose that, Mr. Bertram?”

“It is very generous,” she said.

“Almost immediately.”

If any one lives in chastity or continence, let him not be lifted up, lest he lose his reward.

But how about her mother when she should have thus thrown herself overboard from the ship and cast herself away from the pilotage which had hitherto been the guide of her conduct? Why—why—why had her mother deserted her in her need? As she thought of her mother she knew that her plan of rebellion was nothing; but why—why had her mother deserted her?

The devil stands grinding his teeth, watching to destroy you every way, and you remain unconcerned, or concerned only about this satanic ornament.

Your son would tell me that he understands it a great deal better than an old fogie such as I am.

The chastisement of our peace was upon him, and by his stripes we were healed.

But still some softness was there; and when she heard that Miss Trefoil had gone, and that her visit had not, in Mrs. Hopkins’s opinion, “led to much,” she wrote to say that she would return.

He went to the Earl’s house just at eleven, not wishing to seem to avoid the Earl, but still desirous of seeing as little of his friend on that occasion as possible.

Quæautem viro subjecta est, turris est mortis iis, qui ea utuntur.

“You flatterer! You dear, bonny lover. You whom I had always loved and prayed for, when I knew not where you were! You who had not left me to be like Mariana, but had hurried home at once for me when your man’s work was done,—doing just what a girl would think that a man should do for her sake. But it had been all destroyed by the necessity of the case. I take no blame to myself.”

How, therefore, will a leader be born from Judea, and how far will he proceed from Bethlehem, as the divine volumes of the prophets do plainly announce; since none at all is left there to this day of (the house of) Israel, of whose stock Christ could be born?

For there are certainly among us many weak and sickly, and many sleep.

What is more fearful than this tribunal?

And if remarks injurious to his conduct were made by the Stantiloups and the Momsons, they did not reach his ears.

And if He did not hinder Aaron, because of his offense, from entering upon the High Priesthood, will He hinder you, who has come out from the Gentiles, from entering into salvation?

Sir Felix had not the courage to say that he expected to get the girl he loved. But as the man waited for an answer he was obliged to say something. “I suppose it’s the old story,” he said.

Because it was not with pain that He bore these things.

“Ah, sir, but you will have words,” said she; “you must have words. Why have you had so many words with that Signora Neroni? Why have you disgraced yourself, you a clergyman, too, by constantly consorting with such a woman as that—with a married woman—with one altogether unfit for a clergyman’s society?”

And we say, that if those persons have any resemblance to robbers, who on account of their piety towards God suffer all kinds of injury and death, that they may keep it pure and unstained, according to the teaching of Jesus, then it is clear also that Jesus, the author of such teaching, is with good reason compared by Celsus to the captain of a band of robbers.

and sent it off again on its journey.

She was afraid to allow herself to think that such a thing could happen, and put the matter away from her,—uneasily, indeed, but still with so much resolution as to leave her with a conviction that she need not give any consideration to such an hypothesis.

He speaks again of another Spirit of the Lord Who is the Spirit—that is to say, according to your interpretation, of another essence.

So the lessons had been given,—and had gone for more than had been intended.

It is inscribed, Unto the end, a Psalm of David, a song of Jeremiah and Ezekiel, on account of the people of transmigration when they were beginning to go forth.

“Yes, father; I have known my own mind always in this matter. It was not fitting.”

For the Omnipotence of the Son of God, whereby He is by the same Essence equal to the Father, might have rescued mankind from the dominion of the devil by the mere exercise of Its will, had it not better suited the Divine working to conquer the opposition of the foe's wickedness by that which had been conquered, and to restore our nature's liberty by that very nature by which bondage had come upon the whole race.

The Germination of the Earth.

But that passage also, where it says: I have given you as a God to Pharaoh, shows the power of the giver rather than the Divinity of him who receives the title.

Then follows, Give thanks to the God of gods, for His mercy endures for ever [Psalm 135:2].

“I will do anything that you can dictate short of that,” he said again to Father Marty.

Well now, for my own part, I shall resort to no affected protestation, but simply reply that was may be predicated of everything— even of a thing which has been created, which was born, which once was not, and which is not your Matter.

The story of any incident, to be realistic, will admit neither of sesquipedalian grandeur nor of grotesque images.

John Eustace and the bishop had combined in demanding them on behalf of the heir, and a lawsuit had then commenced!

Are you a king then? Jesus answered, You say that I am a King. To this end was I born.

It was still the voice of a raven!

For men ought to fear and to tremble, both because of conscience, and because of the burden of the office; and neither when dragged to it should they once for all decline, nor, when not dragged cast themselves upon it, but should even flee, foreseeing the greatness of the dignity; and when they have been seized, they ought again to show their godly fear.

Yes, sir, you know that not one of the party would have dared to propose to Mr. Macdermot to have a share in murder.

For having come out, some of them from the worship of idols, and others from the senate, or from the first civil offices, for the sake of the miserable exemption from duty and for the patronage they gained, and having bribed the Meletians who preceded them, they have been advanced to this dignity even before they had been under instruction.

What peace?

Therefore, after so many things, He asks these questions, secretly leading them on to confess Him also to be God. And the disciples He asked first what the others say, and then themselves; but these not so; for surely they would have said a deceiver, and a wicked one, as speaking all things without fear. So for this cause He inquires for the opinion of these men themselves.

It was too notorious that the Civil Service was filled by the family fools of the aristocracy and middle classes, and that any family who had no fool to send, sent in lieu thereof some invalid past hope.

You set holy things in the front, in order to persuade men of what is untrue: and by means of your confession of God you contrive to deny Him whom you are confessing.

For Joseph, says he, her husband, being a just man.

Are not then the gifts of ministration Christ's, while they are also the gifts of God?

Have they run backward over the passages, and then gone on, not quite sure what the author has meant?

That career could not have been open to him; but a sufficiency of the sweets of the peerage would be his own if he could see his daughter a Marchioness.

Nothing to her was so distasteful as failure.

The evil lusts profess that they know God, but in works they deny Him.

“But how? The man comes here and proposes himself; and is accepted, and then breaks away from his engagement without reason and without excuse. It is a thing to be thankful for, that he should have done so; but we have also to be thankful that the fault has not been on our side.” Miss Altifiorla had almost brought herself to believe that the man had made love to her, and proposed to her, that she in a moment of weakness had accepted him, and that she now had been luckily saved by his inconstancy.

It was a face, she said, such as I know not that I had ever seen, awe-inspiring, yet tempered with gentleness and mirth; for it was wholly unadorned by art, and had nothing counterfeit.

No father who had thoroughly done his duty by his son, could speak in a more fixed and austere manner.

But as for loving you, you don’t even believe that she loves you.

Thus when she found herself riding alone in Rotten Row with Siph Dunn, she was neither disconcerted nor displeased.

For let us suppose, by way of illustration, that a great mass were torn from a high rock, and cast down headlong, and when clashed upon the ground were broken into many pieces, could it in any way happen that, among that multitude of fragments, there should be found even one which should have any perfect figure and shape?]

Why do they look upon them?

But this man had been true to her to the last in spite of her treachery!

And I will explain, as I shall be able, here also, how this was done, as much as may seem sufficient.

Therefore this blind movement of chance is to rule the whole of life, and no Providence is any more to pervade the world.

I had much to tell also of those Bedouins; how they were essentially true to us, but teased us almost to frenzy by their continual begging.

Not therefore, says he, by display of eloquence, neither armed with arguments from without, do I declare the testimony of God.

“We are not allowed to appoint those gentlemen ourselves.”

For lust strength is required.

If, then, he had not heard the law, nor conversed with the Jews, how could there be wrath, indignation and tribulation against him for working evil?

We have no word of their deaths, as would have been the case had they all fallen.

What crime could be worse than that committed by Caldigate against the young lady he had betrayed, if Caldigate were guilty?

I beheld then the voice of the great words which the horn speaks: and the beast was beat down, and his body destroyed, and given to the burning flame.

There remains one reason for suicide which I mentioned before, and which is thought a sound one—namely, to prevent one's falling into sin either through the blandishments of pleasure or the violence of pain.

He instantly went to the writing-table and took up paper and pen. “Come along,” he said. “You are to dictate it.” But this she refused to do, telling him that he must write his letter to his father out of his own head, and out of his own heart. “I cannot write it,” he said, throwing down the pen. “My blood is in such a tumult that I cannot steady my hand.”

Let him surpass the desires, let him conquer the lusts of the flesh.

I had to undergo an agonizing revulsion of feeling, during which Mr. Green’s behaviour to me was at first so considerate and then so kind that it has gone far to cure the wound from which I have been suffering.

“It’s a deuced good thing for him, and he ought to be very much obliged to me for putting him in the way of getting it. But he told me to tell you that if he didn’t call, you were not to be angry with him.”

That custom of the country was good and valid, and wise.

It was written then, but was published a few months afterward.

[Exodus 22:20] And again: They worshipped them whom their fingers made; and the mean man has bowed down, and the great man has humbled himself, and I will not forgive them.

For nothing could perish on earth save what they would be ashamed to carry away from earth.

“Oh, do you name the day. We never have many engagements, you know.”

In those early days, when the Constitution was being framed, there was nothing to force the small States into a union with those whose populations preponderated.

But now I have sent you the very wool and the purple from the Lamb, by whom we were redeemed and quickened; which, when you have received, you will make into a coat for yourself according to your own will, and the rather that you will rejoice in it as your own private and special garment.

The influence of the brother and the uncle sat heavily on them.

Since that I have learned to look at the business with eyes less enthusiastic.

Meantime there is one thing which we see, from which I think it was said, "He that regards the day, regards it unto the Lord," [Romans 14:6] for God judges every day.

D., The Evil One prevails not over all those that revile him: but for me he that has cursed me and he that curses me, come into my hands.— 8.

She would have wished to justify this supposed confidence, and was almost sure that Mr Palliser expected her to do so in this instance.

Then there came words—into his mind, not into his mouth—”The Lord sent the thorn, and the Lord has taken it away.

For the sea is this world, but God made also the sea: nor can the waves rage save only so far as to the shore, where He has marked their bounds.

“Well,—yes; if she is one. It is very easy to see the difference. Some people are of use and are always doing things. There are others, generally women, who have nothing to do, but who can’t be got rid of. It is a melancholy sort of feeling.”

But even that, bad as it would be, might be preferable to the meeting!

But a great portion of this again has lost all its volcanic appendages; except, indeed, that lumps of lava are scattered over the whole of it, as they are, though more sparingly, over the mountain beyond.

Suspect him of common vile dishonesty!—’You will never ask me to see her again —will you, Alaric?’

[Luke 15:11-32] So, then, in wanton, that is to say, in darkened affections, lies distance from Your face.

Chapter 8.— Of the Method to Be Pursued in Catechising Those Who Have Had a Liberal Education

But if, says he, you call yourself a Jew, and restest in the law, and makest your boast of God, and know His will, and triest the things that are different, being instructed out of the law; and art confident that you are yourself a guide of the blind, a light of them that are in darkness, an instructor of the foolish, a teacher of babes, which hast the form of knowledge and of the truth in the law.

The salmon with the hook in its throat was in a position certainly not intended by Nature.

Nay, all the dearly-prized blisses, and transports, and comforts of marriage end in these agonies of grief.

Such is the language of Libanius the Sophist.

Chapter 36. The Saracens, under Mavia their Queen, embrace Christianity; and Moses, a Pious Monk, is consecrated their Bishop.

Crassus, too, was dead, whom, on account of his wealth, Caesar had admitted as a colleague.

Up, man, and at her with a constant heart.

'Wherefore if they pretend to foretell the future, let no one give heed, for often they announce beforehand that the brethren are coming days after.

And here he makes excellent regulations with respect to them.

That the ruler should be a near neighbour to every one in compassion, and exalted above all in contemplation.

A comparison of persons must be decided, not by vigour of eloquence, but by the excellence of the works which they have done.

He means not only His flesh, but the virtues of the Son, like the sunbeam which penetrates to the lowest places—this sunbeam coming in the flesh became palpable to the disciples.

But they were deceived in this foolish expectation: for the friends of the slain, while they rejoiced at the faithfulness of the deceased, deeply lamented the loss of the corpses, and spread abroad a full account of the cruelty that had been perpetrated.

And thou, therefore, who hast undertaken to wage a complete combat with the devil, think not to pursue a life without danger, and full of luxury!

“I see all that,” said Cousin George.

To all this Florian made very little reply; but Mr. Jones remembered that he could not expect to do much at a first attempt.

They could agree that the wickedness of the wicked was very wicked.

Chapter LXVIII. The Squire Is Very Obstinate

In this condition any real exercise of the mental faculties becomes an exertion too great to be endured, — a labour too severe for the strength.

For although we see that the city is in the world, we do not see that it follows that any things belonging to the city pertain to the world.

To live for thee shall satisfy both my heart and my ambition.

A man speaks to the things within him, that they may bless God, and says unto them, all that is within me bless His holy Name!

Besides, this was said in respect of the Jews.

[Matthew 11:25] And the Lord spoke of Himself, as we read in the Gospel: You call Me Master and Lord, and you do well, for so I am.

What skill has been attained in measures and numbers!

“Then I’m contented, and will leave the moral of it for Mr. Cornbury. I’ll tell you something further if you’ll let me.”

For it is a passion, as the children of the physicians say, already exceeding the bounds of nature.

“I suppose you’re in earnest about that girl,” said Poppins. Poppins had an offhand, irreverent way of speaking, especially on subjects which from their nature demanded delicacy, that was frequently shocking to Robinson.

What magnanimity in his executors!

And this Proserpine herself, he says, signifies the fecundity of seeds.

The fool loves in vain.

“Yes,—you have been friends! She’s diddled you out of your money, and that’s the beginning and the end of it. And now, if you go on showing off your friendship, you’ll be done out of more money. You’re making an ass of yourself. That’s the long and the short of it.”

So, my dear friends, shall we say that you too, during this fast, while celebrating the mysteries of Christ's passion, live after the manner of devils, and are deluded by a seducing spirit, and speak lies in hypocrisy, and have your conscience seared with a hot iron?

Everywhere, in your public pursuits and private duties, antiquity is repealed; all the authority of your forefathers your own authority has superseded.

They seem to be so, but that, I take it, arises from the exceptional mental depression of those who have to listen to them.

Had he intended to ask her to love him?

[Psalm 116:15] These things do thou say continually: by these be instructed.

You too have this treasure if you look into yourself: For we have this treasure in earthen vessels.

“Love her! what a bother there is about loving! Well;—I’ll look in. What time do the animals come to feed?”

He’ll never explain the sugar-duties to you, and there’ll be no Mr Bott at Nethercoats.” They sat together the whole morning,—while Mr Palliser was seeing to the springs and cushions,—and by degrees Alice began to enjoy her happiness.

Letter 64

I.— From the Latin Translation of Cassiodorus.

But our rivals, and especially heretics, if they see different opinions maintained by us, will assail us with the calumny that our differences are due to mutual jealousy.

The Christ was twofold— the visible man, the invisible God.

Till he was my own, I never even pressed my lips upon his.

“But I tell you, they won’t be there at all tomorrow, unless you come down to them tonight,” answered Pat.

The things which are in heaven are gathered together when what was lost therefrom in the fall of the angels is restored from among men; and the things which are on earth are gathered together, when those who are predestined to eternal life are redeemed from their old corruption.

And Dorothy herself, when she had concluded her speech, was frightened by her own energy and grew red in the face, and showed very plainly that she was half ashamed of herself.

It was very long, and as it repeated all the details of the evidence for and against the verdict, it shall not be repeated here at its full length.

We of course demanded two rooms,—but as to that she was stern.

I choose to have an answer, sir.

To be returned as a bad shilling, which has been presented over the counter and found to be bad, must be very disagreeable to a young woman’s feelings.

The phrase If so be that here is put for because, which we also use, in speaking of things that are quite evident and not to be denied; instead of saying, Because it is exceedingly righteous.

But I confess that a force of sorrow strikes through my soul from contemplation of this order of ministry.

Then the reviewer went on in favour of the artist of whom he was specially speaking, making a comparison which must at the time have been odious enough to some of the brethren.

“There be a mon there who be a’most dead,” said the boy, hardly able to speak from want of breath.

But I will briefly state my subject, and afterwards most fully pursue it, promising that God neither could have been, nor ought to have been, unknown.

Night has passed away; the light reigns.

‘Send what you want,’ said J.B.; ‘but pray don’t send what you don’t want.’ I wanted two great coats, a rug, a blanket, two or three changes of linen, a suit of clothes, a pair of boots, a pair of slippers, a brush, a toothbrush, a bit of soap, two towels, a mosquito net, and a big stick.

When I read this, and reflected that I must somewhere or other have made a slip in my words (for if any man does not go wrong in word, the same is a perfect man) and was expecting that he was about to expose some of my faults; all of a sudden I came upon the words: Two days before the carrier of this letter set out your declamation against me was put into my hands.

“And what could they do to me?”

36. This the more striking, if we consider the opposing forces out of which this order is produced.

This alludes, perhaps, to what he said to them in the Acts, that he had some knowledge that the Gentiles also were called.

This seems to me altogether incongruous.

He perceived that George’s thoughts on this subject were by far too transcendental, that he was childishly indifferent to his own interests, and that if not brought to a keener sense of his own rights, a stronger feeling as to his position as the only nephew of a very wealthy man, he might let slip through his fingers a magnificent fortune which was absolutely within his reach.

Lord Palmerston spoke on the last day; and as he went down to the House, day after day, all the people cheered him.

It had been decided that the trial must be postponed at any rate till the summer assizes, which would be held in Cambridge about the last week in August; and it was thought by some that even then the case would not be ready.

But whether brute or no, he was an honest man, and had no remotest dream, either then, on that morning, or during the following days on which such thoughts pressed more quickly on his mind—of breaking away from his pledged word.

Chapter 28. More Recognitions.

“I believe Mr. Crawley is a cousin of yours?” said the major.

So far they were right, no doubt.

But the poor man, you will say, is insulted by him that is rich. Again you are declaring to me the praise of poverty. For who, I pray you, is blessed, the insulter, or the insulted? It is manifest that it is the insulted person. But then, the one, covetousness, urges to insult the other; poverty persuades to endure. But the poor man suffers hunger, you will say. Paul also suffered hunger, and was in famine. But he has no rest. Neither had the Son of Man where to lay His head. [Matthew 8:20]

She was bound not to subject him to the sorrows which would attend him were he to become her husband.

Since these things are so, because it were too long to treat thoroughly of all that in that Pound of Dictinius are set down as precedents of lying, meet to be imitated, it seems to me that this is the rule to which not only these, but whatever such there be, must be reduced.

The parlour and the bedroom over it had been papered;—but the paper was torn and soiled, and in sundry places was hanging loose.

You are like steersmen in the vast sea.

And there were some joking questions asked and answers given as to Miss Altifiorla’s presence.

And one has attempted to establish this, and another to establish that.

He now threatens me with publicity.

Chapter 3 [III.]— The Catholics Praise Nature, Marriage, Law, Free Will, and the Saints, in Such Wise as to Condemn as Well Pelagians as Manicheans.

“Ah;—that’s because you’ve never above half spirit enough for a big thing. You nibble at it instead of swallowing it whole,—and then, of course, folks see that you’re only nibbling. I thought that Melmotte would have had spirit.”

This is the man of divine understanding, so influential, and of such dignity in gait and dress, that, like a spiritual Hippocrates, he is able by his presence to relieve the sickness of our souls, provided, however, we are willing to submit to his treatment.

Reproach is like the application of medicines, dissolving the callosities of the passions, and purging the impurities of the lewdness of the life; and in addition, reducing the excrescences of pride, restoring the patient to the healthy and true state of humanity.

The latter claims Paul in its own support more than the former Moses; if, indeed, it is claiming him in its support when it catches at his indulgence, (but) refuses his prescript— eluding his more deliberate opinions and his constant wills, not suffering us to render to the apostle the (obedience) which he prefers.

He had wanted her,—and it is so painful a thing to miss what you want when you have done your very best to obtain it!

“And all old port?” said Jones.

And to show that it is still future, in case it should be thought that what is spoken of as accomplished in hope has been accomplished in reality, he adds, "that He might show in the ages to come the exceeding riches of His grace in His kindness towards us in Christ Jesus."

“But there’s a clergyman there, I’m told.”

None at all, but loss to the utmost, and avoidance of all that had been gathered together with much labor.

Appian tells us that in the Senate Cicero hastened to congratulate Cæsar, assuring him how anxious he had been to secure the Consulship for him, and how active.

“I have commands to lay upon him all the same,” said Clara; “and if he will give me half an hour this morning he shall have them.” To this Captain Aylmer, of course, assented,—as how could he escape from such assent,—and a regular appointment was made.

“Yes; why not? She’ll come, I’m sure, when she knows that my back is turned.”

He was very anxious, therefore, to see “her leddyship’s” cousin.

Thus, although, when spread out in several hands, supreme authority seems to be multifarious, yet in its own powers, nature, and condition, it is unique.

That poetic turning of the sword into a sickle, which gladdened our hearts ten or twelve years since, had been clean banished from men’s minds.

Had all the country called me thief, and did I know myself to be clear, I too could bear it.

Besides, Fanny thought that Lord Kilcullen had behaved generously to her when she so violently repudiated his love: she believed that it had been sincere; she had not even to herself accused him of meanness or treachery; and she spoke of him as one to be pitied, liked, and regarded; not as one to be execrated and avoided.

And I say the same.

Let us not then cherish the love of the present life beyond what is necessary.

The love of money is a good and useful love.

Ver. 3. When they are saying peace and safety, then sudden destruction comes upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall in nowise escape.

These things might be treated at very great length, and our knowledge of the subject might be brought to greater certainty and fullness by a large induction from relevant facts.

In those days I read a little, and did learn to read French and Latin.

And much fruit truly did Samuel reap from his children!

I have never desired to win money, and I have lost none.

He having gone out and found another servant owing him a hundred pence, seizing his throat demanded them with great cruelty and inhumanity.

“I dare say you did, sir.”

Tea and bread-and-butter were her luxuries, and her tea and bread-and-butter had been enjoyed three hours ago.

From which it is evident that the soul is something like God.

It came to have a terrible aspect to me, as did that proposition that I should sit out all the May meetings of a season.

All things in nature are good in their own order; and no one sins in using them, unless, by disobedience to God, he transgresses his own order, and disturbs their order by using them amiss.

That poor cripple who can scarcely drag himself along, owes his support to the help of a tender girl.

Who represented him as having watched over Alcmena for nine nights without ceasing?

“Very well, Johnny,” said the earl, talking to his young friend with the bedroom candle in his hand, as he was going up to dress.

Surely fear to die, if you can avoid dying.

“I don’t care about money,” said Tom.

I speak not my own words, but those of the Spirit of God.

But the fear of God contains both these requisites.

Chapter 117

Such also was Cicero.

He was afterward employed by Cæsar, who, when in power, may have recalled him from banishment.

Sir Thomas was well aware that such words had been spoken, but he knew his wife, and knew how little such words signified.

[John 21:16] asking it, knew He not so much as this?

He too is cast down to the ground.

But to the Dean the triumph was a triumph indeed and the joy was a joy!

The Apostle then looking in us for the righteousness which is of Faith, cuts at the root of incredulous doubt and godless unbelief.

That might be fancy, but it certainly was a fact that Mr. Monk only nodded to him.

Menivolus, being firmly attached to the Catholic Church, refused to write the document, and the empress tried to bribe him by promises of greater honors.

Starting, then, from this rudimental form and prop, as it were, he applies a covering of clay, and so gradually completes the limbs, and forms the body, and covers the cross within with the shape which he meant to impress upon the clay; then from this design, with the help of compasses and leaden moulds, he has got all ready for his image which is to be brought out into marble, or clay, or whatever the material be of which he has determined to make his god.

Africanus found his triumphs not among the altars of the Capitol, but among the lines of Hannibal.

The former persecutor.

One prohibited slavery in the new Republic,—a clause so easy to put into a treaty, but one of which it is so impossible for an outside power to exact the fulfilment!

If there was in his country any tradition, any custom, any law hateful to him, it was such as had reference to the preservation of game.

We stayed at Newcastle over a Sunday and went up to service in the camp.

How many edifices there shall then be, of gold or of hay, built on the best foundation, Christ Jesus, which that fire shall prove, bringing joy to some, loss to others, but without destroying either sort, because of this stable foundation!

With the Cherubim, with the Seraphim!

The Serapiqui is a fine river; very rapid, but not so much so as to make it dangerous, if care be taken to avoid the snags.

[1 Corinthians 15:10] O mighty teacher, confessor, and preacher of grace!

She felt that she could not leave her husband without other cause than now existed, although she felt, also, that to go back to him was to go back to utter wretchedness.

She knew to what a man turning himself might probably lead.

He desired, unconsciously, to fill up the void made by the death of his son with as little trouble as might be.

So also are the greedy of gain: or rather not so, but in a much worse condition.

Indeed, it is the soul which is principally affected by casualties of such a kind.

The Jews are wont to glory in this Psalm which we have sung, saying, Known in Judæa is God, in Israel great is the name of Him: and to revile the Gentiles to whom God is not known, and to say that to themselves alone God is known; seeing that the Prophet says, Known in Judæa is God.

If then you will listen to me, this is what you will do, and I claim to be listened to, for this is justice.

But though Lord Palmerston must resign also with his chief, and appeared for the time as the second in command of a beaten army, it was to him a moment of great triumph.

For it is written: But God has revealed them to us by His Spirit, for the Spirit searches all things, yea the deep things of God.

A legion of demons having been, as I believed, cast out of me, I wished to forget those whom I had known, and to rest at the feet of the Saviour; and lo it is said to me, so as to compel me against my will, Return to your house, and declare how great things the Lord has done for you [Mark 5:19].

“I think you hardly understand just what I feel,” said Roger, “and I know very well that I am unable to explain it. But I wish to act exactly as I would do if she were my daughter, and as if her son, if she had a son, would be my natural heir.”

When the prefect and Macedonius arrived at the gates of the church, the soldiers endeavored to force back the people, in order to make way for these dignitaries, but as they were so crowded together, it was impossible for them to recede, since they were closely packed to the farthest point, or to make way; the soldiers, under the impression that the crowd was unwilling to retire, slew many with their swords, and a great number were killed by being trampled upon.

For long ago to the faithful the trumpet of the Gospel lesson sounded, warning them that at the approach of the end of the world wars and many other things, which, as you know, are now feared, would come to pass [Matthew 24; Luke 21].

For it is also capable of sleeping, or, when the objects of sensation are not present, of not exercising the power of sensation.

“That is nonsense, aunt. It is indeed, for neither of us wish it.” A lie on such a subject from a woman under such circumstances is hardly to be considered a lie at all. It is spoken with no mean object, and is the only bulwark which the woman has ready at her need to cover her own weakness.

“Well, I for one never approved of the hounds coming to Greshamsbury. When a man has once involved his property he should not incur any expenses that are not absolutely necessary. That is a golden rule which Mr Gresham ought to have remembered. Indeed, I put it to him nearly in those very words; but Mr Gresham never did, and never will receive with common civility anything that comes from me.”

None can serve two lords.

That seat in the House of Commons was to him nothing.

Again I put this question to our author.

“Nothing more than that, Mr Griffith.”

They have had their chance on this occasion, and they have not done any good with it.

But there are some people for whom the pretended mystery of initial letters has a charm, and who love the darkness of anonymous letters.

But Captain Dobbin does become the hero, and is deficient.

Such was Katie Woodward, whom Charley was not to marry.

I cannot be your wife, if you will not have me; can I?

Whether the labour be economically used is another question; but at any rate the fifteen hundred rogues are disposed of, well out of the way of our pockets and shop windows.

Chapter 12. Praise of the Ephesians

If there were no hell, if there were no punishment, yet, after those contracts, those marriage torches, the lawful bed, the procreation of children, the intercourse, how couldest thou bear to join yourself to another?

For neither do the remaining heresies present much difference of aspect from this, having a mutual connection through (the same) spirit of error.

Take the will and take Llanfeare, and let me escape from my misery,” then surely they would not force him to appear in reference to a matter which would have been already decided in their own favour.

In what manner was God working within?

This had happened in the winter and spring previous to the opening of our story,—and both Patience and Sir Thomas had been well disposed towards the young man’s suit.

During this period he saw Owen Fitzgerald; but he did so in the presence of Mr. Somers, and not a word was then said about Lady Clara Desmond.

I beg that it may not be considered from this that I would propose to Canada to set up for itself at once and declare itself independent.

Are all the bishops to be considered not only sacrilegious, but silly into the bargain, because they carried that most worthless thing, dust and ashes, wrapped in silk in golden vessel?

Of course I think they are bad, and of course I think that they must go.

As for that cheerfulness, that reconciliation to his fate which she desired, he knew it to be impossible.

“Mary is a very nice young person,” said the Marchioness.

“The long and the short of it is, Mrs Baggett, that I am going to be married.”

But even at Hamersham the glory of the Dales had, at most periods, begun to pale, for they had seldom been widely conspicuous in the county, and had earned no great reputation by their knowledge of jurisprudence in the grand jury room.

Of the Honourable George we may further observe, that, having been a spendthrift all his life, he had now become strictly parsimonious.

He was making out some such solution, when Lizzie returned with the morocco case in her hand.

Mr. Webb presents his compliments to Mr. Brown. Mr. Webb regrets that he cannot comply with the request made in Mr. Brown’s letter of yesterday’s date.

And this God has well ordered, that from excess so much mischief should arise; that when of your own will thou dost not practise self-restraint, at least against your will, for fear of so great ruin, you may learn to be moderate.

For even this is a gift of His visitation; viz., that he receives and commends the grateful one, and looks for and censures those who are thankless.

Other women again tie about them the names of rivers, and venture numberless things of like nature.

Sing praises to our God, sing praises [Psalm 46:6].

As Madame Staubach thinks that you should accept them, you must know that you are wrong to answer me with scorn and ribaldry.

“And you won’t come in time for church?”

And why should she refuse him?

“I’m sorry they ever tried, M. Chapeau; but I remember when you came back, after taking Saumur, you told me the war was over then. You used to think that a great thing.”

What does one say then?

“And how will you answer it?”

But the persecution was continued in such a manner as to show him that all opposition on his part would be hopeless unless he were to proceed on some tour as prolonged as that of his future brother-in-law.

“If it is to be so, there can be no good in not saying so at once.” Then she thought, also, that if this were to be her destiny it might be well for Mr Grey that all his doubts on the matter should be dispelled.

“I dare say not. I have been reading about it in that woman’s travels. Oh, here they are, and I mustn’t make any more faces. Duchess, do come to the fire. I hope you’ve got warm again. This is my cousin, Miss Vavasor.”

Perhaps then, too, this one, the debtor of many talents who was brought to the king, has, as we have said, a wife and children, whom at first the king ordered to be sold, and also all that he had to be sold; but afterwards, being moved with compassion, he released him and forgave him all the debt; not, as if he were ignorant of the future, but, in order that we might understand what happened, it was written that he did so.

And then God shall send a king from the sun, who shall cause all the earth to cease from disastrous war.

In all other respects your tailor is a very pleasant man with whom to wile away a quarter of an hour in chance conversation.

She says that you never write to them, and she supposes that I have the advantage of all your energy in that way.

“Fancy a girl like Emily Wharton,” said he, not condescending to notice her little joke, “throwing over a fellow like Arthur for a greasy, black foreigner.”

Chapter V. George Hotspur

Not a word was said about Margate on that occasion, till the little pecuniary transaction was completed.

How with a strong wind?

how I do so wish you had stayed at Bullhampton!

“The threat means nothing, Mary. People who make such threats don’t carry them out. Of course I shall go on and endure it. The worst of all is, that the whole thing makes me so unmanly,—makes such a beast of me. But I’ll try to get over it.”

At the gates is the beginning: begin with confession.

You may therefore pluck up your courage and be confident.” From this we perceive that he had already formed the idea that he might perhaps be required to fight for his position as a Roman citizen; and it seems also that he understood the cause of the coming conflict.

And that which follows contains at once accusation and love, though the more abundantly I love you, the less I be loved.

Whence also it is well added, And all the idols of the house of Israel were portrayed upon the wall [Ezekiel 8:10], inasmuch as it is written, And covetousness, which is idolatry [Colossians 3:5].

If it be the case that this monument be of the date named, it proves to us, at least, that the notion of erecting such monuments was then prevalent.

But as Fussala is forty miles distant from Hippo, and I saw that in governing its people, and gathering together the remnant, however small, of persons of both sexes, who, not threatening others, but fleeing for their own safety, were scattered here and there, my work would be extended farther than it ought, and that I could not give the attention which I clearly perceived to be necessary, I arranged that a bishop should be ordained and appointed there.

He is not a bad man, or a hypocrite, because he denounces heresies and lax doctrines in a loud voice, instead of endeavouring to teach his people simply that they should not He, or get drunk, or steal.

“Then it will be put off for another year or two, and you are both of you as old as Adam and Eve already.”

But not even this induces us; more foolish are we than any, putting golden necklaces about our servants and mules and horses, and neglecting our Lord who goes about naked, and passes from door to door, and ever stands at our outlets, and stretches forth His hands to us, but often regarding Him with unpitying eye; yet these very things He undergoes for our sake.

But then, should the money not be forthcoming, the consolation coming from the possession of Gertrude herself would hardly suffice to make him a happy man.

Hence it naturally happened that the disaffected in Africa reached such a pitch of violence as even to venture on overt acts of audacity; some evil spirit, as it seems probable, being jealous of the present great prosperity, and impelling these men to atrocious deeds, that he might excite the emperor's anger against them.

with them that know Me

And he had, but that morning, instructed his lawyer to stand out against the ponies.

But the brethren were in haste who came to us from your company.

Chapter V. Difference Between the True Religion and Philosophy

“Very well; now you have been explicit with a vengeance, and you may heave a-head. Let’s hear the story, and if I can help you I will. When I’ve said that, you may be sure I mean it. I’ve heard something of it before; but let me hear it all from you.”

Do they not abuse your gods to make to themselves gain, and do not the others find enticing pleasures in the wrongs and insults offered to the gods?

For He gained life for us by overcoming death. No hope, therefore, of gaining immortality is given to man, unless he shall believe in Him, and shall take up that cross to be borne and endured.

And so too in the case of those whose separation from the Church is open; for neither these nor those are as yet among the members of the dove, but some of them perhaps will be at some future time.

Stoned, suffering unnumbered cruelties, yet did he all things for their good.

Before this the hosts of his enemies have disappeared: by this the powers of the unseen spirits have been turned to flight: through this the proud boastings of God's adversaries have come to nought, and the tongues of the profane and blasphemous been put to silence.

But if by clouds are understood good and true prophets only; by these too it is clear that God rains snares upon sinners, although by them He waters also the godly unto fruitfulness.

“No, she’s not. How should she be well? She’s anything but well. She’ll be in directly, but she thought I ought to see you first. I suppose this wretched man is really mad.”

He was wretchedly thin and gaunt; indeed, his hollow, yellow cheeks, and cadaverous jaws, almost told a tale of utter starvation.

How then were those in unity who were not at peace?

In the gospel clay was placed on the eyes of a blind man and when it was washed off eyes were produced.

“Don’t be afraid; I’ve got him; he shan’t desert you; I’ll hold him here till you have told me how your father does.” The young lady looked as if she didn’t like it, and the sight of her misery gave rise to a feeling that, after all, mammas perhaps may be a comfort.

Victor Constantine Maximus Augustus, to Eusebius of Cæsarea.

“My dear, they’d know as well as I do, that you would give way after three months.”

And also Cleanthes, the Stoic, who writes thus in a poem on the Deity: —

“Oh, yes. The truth is, ma’am, that he has offered himself to my girl, and that she has accepted him. Whether it’s for good or for bad, the open truth is the best, Mrs. Tappitt.”

By Him the Lord has willed that we should taste of immortal knowledge, who, being the brightness of His majesty, is by so much greater than the angels, as He has by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they.

“But are they not good and kind?” she said, pleading for her friends.

And now, having narrated this interview in a manner which does not make it redound very much to that gentleman’s credit, I must add to the narrative his apology.

But as for that good and honest instruction which they speak of, it was given in such secrecy, and to so few (if indeed given at all), that they seemed rather to fear it might be divulged, than that it might not be practised.

“I suppose he is a goose,” said she to her mother, “and I hope there won’t be any more of this kind running after them while they are with us.”

She had known too well what had been the nature of her brother’s life, but she had not expected or feared any such termination to his career as this which had now come upon him—to the terrible affliction of all belonging to him.

During this week he saw nothing of Medlicot, and never mentioned his name but once.

Tormented [or ill-treated], he says; that is, suffering distress, in journeyings, in dangers.

“Then we shall do very well at Brussels.” After this she waddled off again, and was stopped in her waddling by Sir Magnus, who sternly desired her to prepare for the august ceremony of going in to dinner. The one period of real importance at the English Embassy was, no doubt, the daily dinner-hour.

I will believe no man who tells me that he would not sooner earn two loaves than one—and if two, then two hundred.

Even more voracious bites take nothing away from the credit of such as are initiated, whether servants or masters.

If Scripture is uncertain, Nature is manifest; and concerning Nature's testimony Scripture cannot be uncertain.

Even this is not without the supporting evidence of a preceding figure.

“I mean to say,” said she, speaking loudly, and with her arms akimbo, “that William Brisket is a very respectable young man, with a trade,—that he’s got a decent house for a young woman to live in, and a decent table for her to sit at.

In about a quarter of an hour, a knock came to the breakfast-parlour door, and Mrs. Jones, having been duly summoned, entered the room with a very clean cap and apron, and with a very low curtsey. “Good morning, Mrs. Jones,” said Mr. Prendergast; “pray take a seat;” and he pointed to an armchair that was comfortably placed near the fire, on the further side of the hearthrug. Mrs. Jones sat herself down, crossed her hands on her lap, and looked the very personification of meek obedience.

O what listlessness!

He is actuated by a sense of honesty, but he certainly has no desire to be incommoded by relatives who would, as regards the family, claim to be superior to himself.

In nothing therefore, he says, whatever happens, whether dangers— whether plots.

But to what can this be due save to the rational soul, in which man thinks of and perceives things beyond himself?

And smoking flax shall He not quench. Here he sets forth both their anger that is kindled, and His might that is able to put down their anger, and to quench it with all ease; whereby His great mildness is signified.

The First Apology

The Englishman, on the other hand, will have no ballot-box, and is by no means inclined to depend exclusively upon voters or upon voting.

(for the two shall be (made) into one flesh): but whoever is agglutinated to the Lord is one spirit?

Him want to take all him money to the grave; but no, no, no!

Mrs. Proudie kept Mr. Slope and her daughters in close conversation, resolving that he should not be indulged, nor they polluted.

The second Bill of 1881 was passed, which, with various additions, has given rise to Judge O’Hagan’s Land Court.

I did not myself make any special visit to the Old De Beer mine.

It was settled, however, before dinner, that they should both go down the Wheal Mary Jane on the following day. Neverbend had done what he could to keep this crowning honour of the inquiry altogether in his own hands, but he had found that in this respect Tudor was much too much for him.

In the first place, because that which has pleased God is fulfilled.

“And what does Colonel Osborne say?”

You, who so much reproached those who take in hand to write without logical skill?

But it seemed to her that she could not rouse him by conciliation.

For this reason, no one can possibly now share with you the reward that will follow your generosity, since the good deed has been entirely your own.

“But he has been faithful. And you can’t expect him to look at these things as you do.”

He made a thousand resolutions as to reading, writing, and employment for his mind.

For as men, upon receiving some great good, ask themselves if it is not a dream, as not believing it; so it is with respect to the gifts of God.

On this occasion he built a good dining-room, with a drawing-room over it, and bedroom over that; and this portion of the edifice was slated.

“Well; and what of Haby? What’s the matter now?”

But the Greeks make no mention of the histories which give the truth: first, because they themselves only recently became partakers of the knowledge of letters; and they themselves own it, alleging that letters were invented, some say among the Chaldæans, and others with the Egyptians, and others again say that they are derived from the Phœnicians.

[John 1:17] For the law was given through the mediation of Moses, but truth and grace were through Jesus Christ.

On what points have you borne with us, that you should adduce your patience?

“I had some faint hope,” continued the Earl, “while Laura could always watch him; because, in his way, he was fond of his sister.

For as we assert that it is impossible for God to be evil, or not to exist-for this would be indicative of weakness in God rather than of strength-or for the non-existent to exist, or for two and two to make both four and ten, so it is impossible and inconceivable that the Son should do anything that the Father does not.

Not that the Scriptures always speak in a strict sense; but where it is necessary, they so keep a word to its perfectly strict meaning, that they do not allow anything else to be understood.

Bonteen and Finn left the club within a minute of each other.

“Nor would I have you,” shouted Tribbledale, leaning out over the door of the cab.

For in some monasteries where they are not so careful some who have been received unreservedly have afterwards tried most sacrilegiously to demand a return of that which they had contributed and which had been spent on God's work.

“It don’t much signify. Well;—I’ll go on with Mrs Hurtle, if she’ll have me.”

As, however, the opportunity is presented to us we must not pass this by.

And what can be plainer than that the righteous also are not spared, but chastised with manifold afflictions, as is clearly implied in the words, "If the righteous scarcely are saved"?

While then in the other cases which I have mentioned above, I employed much labour in supplying what Origen had omitted, in this work on the Epistle to the Romans the labour that fell on me for the causes described in the Preface was immense and full of complexity.

Seek not then more than is needed.'

“That you did not consent to your own ruin and disgrace?”

Would that he had been as careful to preserve grace, as strong to overcome the beast!

I do hope they’ll hang ‘un,” said Mr. Runce quite out loud from his crowded seat just behind the attorney’s bench.

He replies, If I make (Myself anything,) My honor is nothing.

Among the farmers one pound nine and eightpence had been collected.

One of these is, that he refuses to infants the sacrament of baptism, and promises the kingdom of heaven to some, independently of Christ's redemption.

Acting in accordance with his fixed and conscientious rule in this respect, Undy Scott had struck up an acquaintance with Alaric Tudor.

This was, in truth, the case.

The Holy Life is open to all, men and women alike.

But he could not go down from being Prime Minister and serve under some other chief without acknowledging himself to have been unfit for the place he had filled.

Refutation of All Heresies (Book VIII)

And yet she could scrutinise his features, form, and garments, so as to carry away in her mind a perfect picture of them.

Horrors heaped on horrors, which are horrors only in themselves, and not as touching any recognised and known person, cease even to horrify.

On its summit is a castle, having its own legend, and professing to have been the residence of Charles VII., when little of France belonged to its kings but the provinces of Berry, Auvergne, and Le Velay.

Among her plans the first in order was a resolution to see Lord Mistletoe whom she knew to be in town.

Next, while the Jews sought to kill the Lord, because He said that God was His own Father and made Himself equal to Him, as working what the Father works, the Arians also, not only have learned to deny, both that He is equal to God and that God is the own and natural Father of the Word, but those who hold this they seek to kill.

But on this account God willed that virtue itself should be concealed under the character of folly, that the mystery of truth and of His religion might be secret; that He might show the vanity and error of these superstitions, and of that earthly wisdom which raises itself too highly, and exhibits great self-complacency, that its difficulty being at length set forth, that most narrow path might lead to the lofty reward of immortality.

“Oh such a beautiful place. The Temple of the Winds, I think they call it, or Venus;—or—or—Mrs. Arthur de Bever.”

Amelia left the culprit, feeling that no good had been done, and Lady Fawn did not see the delinquent till late in the afternoon.

Before he will face the danger with his army he sends over a trusty messenger, to look about and find out something as to the coasts and harbours.

He was thus in a measure compelled to accede to the request made to him, and Lord Carstairs was received back at Bowick, not without hesitation, but with a full measure of affectionate welcome.

On her arrival she went at once to her room, and there she continued to live as she had done for the last few days till the morning of her departure came.

And she was angry with herself at allowing herself to be turned out of the house before the crisis had come. She felt that she ought to have been present at the crisis, and that by the exercise of her own powers she might have hurried on the crisis. In this respect she was by no means satisfied with herself.

“My head not cool!” said Rowan. “It’s as cool as a cucumber. I wasn’t drinking last night.”

So far is he from terrifying you, he says, that he even praises you: so far from being a hindrance to you, that he even works with you.

For the Saviour had a body neither without soul, nor without sense, nor without intelligence.

If any further assistance were required from him, he would probably be called on, and should be again happy to come forward.

Linda and Katie had been so hurried off, that they had only been just able to shake hands with Harry and Charley. There is, however, an old proverb, that though one man may lead a horse to water, a thousand cannot make him drink. It was easy to send Katie to bed, but very difficult to prevent her talking when she was there.

And their sin is much less who strive to understand well and fall, than that of those who do not at all strive after good things.

“But he is a man,” said the father to the son, “who always does a rude thing if it be in his power.

And yet, notwithstanding, we say that he is not at himself.

7. The men of speech who keep not silence, from praising continually—who have kept me in the midst of waves, and supported me that I fell not, let them give praise in my stead, O my Lord!

“Of course you do. You don’t suppose that I expect anything else. But if you mean to tell me that there would have been all this row if she had been decently prudent, I tell you that you’re mistaken.”

And this we say, excepting, of course, the man understood to be in Christ Jesus, who did no sin.

You loved me then, Emily.

“I wish you wouldn’t think about it,” the son would say to the father;—and the expression of such a wish would contain the whole accusation.

It is this I suppose, that I said that souls should cherish their bodies as men cherish their wives, so that this corruptible may put on incorruption, and that, being lightly poised as upon wings, it may rise more easily into the air.

Faculties of the human body, if denied their exercise, will lie dormant.

No; it was his step on the stairs, and there he was in the room with her.

And the case is one the origin and end of which can hardly now be discovered, so densely are they enveloped in Zulu customs and past Zulu events.

The Marquis’s lawyer had ventured to express a doubt; but the Marquis had determined to persevere.

Phineas had been to Mr. Slide an enemy of enemies, and by all his ideas of manliness, by all the rules of his life, by every principle which guided him, he was bound to persecute Phineas to the last.

Eran.— They did.

But, nevertheless, Mr. Toogood might be wrong; and Mr. Harding succeeded in satisfying himself at last that he could not be doing harm in thinking that Mr. Toogood was wrong.

It was nearly six in the evening on a wet December night, and although cloaks and shawls had been supplied to her, she was wet and cold when she reached her home.

Chapter 25. Christ Thanks the Father for Revealing to Babes What He Had Concealed from the Wise. This Concealment Judiciously Effected by the Creator. Other Points in St. Luke's Chap. X. Shown to Be Only Possible to the Creator's Christ.

For I was an hungred, and you gave me to eat, and so forth.

Let virtue alone please us, whose reward is immortal when it has conquered pleasure.

“George,” said Kate, speaking before she quite got up to them, “will you tell me whether you have been preparing all your things for an open sale by auction?” Then she stole a look at Alice, and having learned from that glance that something had occurred which prevented Alice from joining her in her raillery, she went on with it herself rapidly, as though to cover Alice’s confusion, and give her time to rally before they should all move. “Would you believe it? he had three razors laid out on his table—”

He certainly has known her.

Chapter V. My First Success

If he has believed anything less in the Son or in the Holy Spirit than in the Father, he has suffered an offense in God; he is scorched by the sun.

She knew now that she might safely walk with him, being sure that he was no more likely to talk of love than would have been old Dr. Nupper had she accepted the offer which he had made her of a cast in his gig.

Therefore, when these times also were completed, and the Jews subdued, there afterwards ceased in that place libations and sacrifices, which thenceforward have not been able to be in that place celebrated; for the unction, too, was exterminated in that place after the passion of Christ.

He thought a moment how he would act, and then he spoke boldly to both of them. “I have hurried home from Kimberley, Mr Whittlestaff, on purpose to find Mary Lawrie.”

For this is He who forgives our sins.

From that to this present day Mrs. Carbuncle had seen nothing of Mrs. Hanbury Smith, nor of Mr. Bunbury Jones, but she was not the woman to waste the return-value of such a transaction.

Had she not consented to take everything from Mr Whittlestaff; her bread, her meat, her raiment, the shelter under which she lived, and the position in the world which she now enjoyed?

Hitherto the artist had not said a word, and had hardly known what part it would best become him now to play.

If he were destined to represent Percycross in Parliament, it must be by the free votes and unbiassed political aspirations of the honest working men of the borough.

[1 Samuel 1:13] Ask, says the Scripture, and I will do.

How senseless?

Also in Esdras, it was not sufficient for God when the Jews were laid waste, unless they forsook their foreign wives, with the children also whom they had begotten of them.

“The Conservatives, of whom I take the liberty to call myself one.”

It may be doubted whether grief or pain ever does of itself produce tears, which are rather the outcome of some emotional feeling.

Hill.]

Of course there has been anger and sorrow,—anger on her part and sorrow on mine.

Such was Plaistow Hall, and such was its mistress.

Was David born of adultery; being born of Jesse, [1 Samuel 16:18] a righteous man, and his own wife?

Do not think he has done this out of contempt: not as of contempt has he sent, but so he was ordered.

On the present occasion Mr. Glascock as he sat next to her almost proposed to her.

It may be as well to speak first of the faults which were attributed to it.

It was not any reason of that kind which had kept her silent.

[1 Corinthians 8:10] And shall he diligently protect by night those whom in the day-time he has put to flight by his exorcisms, leaning and resting on the spear the while with which Christ's side was pierced?

[Luke 10:41-42] Be then like Mary; prefer the food of the soul to that of the body.

“Certainly not by speaking to me,” said Lucy, blushing ruby-red through every vein of her deep-tinted face. But though she could not command her blood, her voice was still under her control—her voice and her manner.

When this controversy, indeed, first began, I am unable to say; but one thing I know, that even the holy Jerome, who is in our own day renowned for great industry and learning in ecclesiastical literature, for the solution of sundry questions treated in his writings, makes use of the same most certain assumption without exhibition of proofs.

The old women do the same.

All the things are good, when, in them, certain set over by way of pre-eminence, certain made subject in a becoming manner, observe the beauty of order.

It was for this that the persecutors sought after the saints, that there might be no one to teach, as the Jews charged the Apostles; but for this cause they endured all things, that the Gospel might be preached.

But one does see clearly enough, that as they are French in language and habits, and Roman Catholic in religion, they would make even a worse hash of it than the Jamaicans do in Jamaica.

The nature of this latter was susceptible of destruction, while the power of the former raised what was being destroyed.

[Matthew 26:60b] But at last there came two lying witnesses, and said, We heard him say, I will destroy this temple of God that is made with hands, and will build another not [26, 27] made with hands after three days.

“Who is the young lady?” asked Stubbs.

Chapter 12. — Second Day's Discussion.

Section 36

Neither did she feel abashed in coming to an assembly of men.

The Wakeful one wishes to sleep and will not hearken to the Saviour's words, What, could ye not watch with me one hour?

That was the thorn that stuck fast in her woman’s bosom.

She had wished for his advice; and at the instigation of his niece he had visited London and given it.

MRS. C. I wish you knew my heart towards you, with everything that is in it.

“Oh, Adolphus, for mercy’s sake don’t say so!”

Manes, however, received information of the king's intention, having been warned of it in sleep, and made his escape out of prison, and succeeding in taking to flight, for he had bribed his keepers with a very large sum of money.

It is therefore for the promotion of us, the assumed humanity, that God shall be all in all.

Chapter XX. Divorced for the Faith

“What did that fellow mean,” said he, “by saying in his letter to Mrs.

He knew that if every bullock and horse about the place had been struck dead it would not enhance his misery.

For they reject the mystery of man's salvation and refuse to believe that Christ our Lord in the true flesh of our nature was truly born, truly suffered, was truly buried and was truly raised.

Emily came forward and offered her hand, and was the first to speak.

Now God's plan seems to me to have been the same as that which prevails among ourselves.

I gave cheque to Mr. Crawley.

He knows The deep things of God; [1 Corinthians 2:10-11] the creature receives the manifestation of ineffable things through the Spirit.

And he had come to love the woman with excessive affection, day by day, ever since the renewal of their intimacy at Broughton Spinnies.

For so, by this comparison, the approved, who are known to God, are made manifest among men.

Some whispers had come to her that Fitzgerald still dared to love, as married, the woman whom he had loved before she was married.

When he was speaking concerning those Jews, he said, When, meanwhile, the customs of that most accursed nation have gained such strength that they have been now received in all lands, the conquered have given laws to the conquerors.

But count the tent-maker as well as your brother, as him that is borne upon a chariot and has innumerable servants and struts in the market-place: nay, rather the former than the latter; since the term brother would more naturally be used where there is the greater resemblance.

And then the worst of it was that he also would judge her as others judged her.

And then what was revealed was but a type; but now the truth has been manifested.

But these things are small when compared with what follows.

Let there be a thief, void of all shame, who knows not what blushing is, but steals openly in public.

“But I certainly would not employ a tradesman just at your elbow who has directly opposed what was generally understood in the town to be your interests.”

People of each sex and of all ages joined with alacrity and fury in this atrocious proceeding.

Peregrine and Augustus Staveley were walking on in front, not perhaps as well satisfied with the day as the rest of the party.

[Genesis 22:15-18] In this manner is that promise concerning the calling of the nations in the seed of Abraham confirmed even by the oath of God, after that burnt-offering which typified Christ.

“I am very glad that this affair has been settled between us amicably,” said Luke, while he still held the hand of the abdicating brewer.

“You are quite wrong in your ideas about the dance,” said Jack to his cousin.

Each one reaps the fruit of his opinions about the faith.

If we cannot endure threats, injustice, poverty, how shall we overcome the flames of Babylon?

There will at that day be no resumption of voluptuous disgrace between us.

‘Of course I am nervous,’ said Mr Philip Hughes next morning to the banker. ‘I hope you will excuse me, if I venture to ask for one word as to Miss Greenmantle’s health.’

[Romans 15:18] And again, For what is there wherein you were made inferior to the rest of the Churches?

And his wife was, as far as he knew, all that he desired.

So the remaining things carried in and heaped up by the other senses, I recall at my pleasure.

“I like you so very much,” he had said; “why should we not be friends?” She had gone away from him then, fleeing along the path, bewildered, ignorant as to her own feelings, conscious almost of a sin in having listened to him; but still filled with a wondrous delight that any one so good, so beautiful, so powerful as he, should have cared to ask for her friendship in such pressing words.

And yet she had liked it, and felt some little triumph as a conviction came upon her that she had not conspicuously disgraced herself.

How can a girl be angry with a man whose love is so good, so true?

But what of those things also which we see on the earth, or in the sea?

Why, then, do we not resort to that far more reasonable opinion, which has clear proof of being derived from men's common sense and unsophisticated deduction?

how much advice she had received during these creepings, and how often had she listened to inquiries as to the schooling of the gardener’s children.

She was almost sorry that it was so.

[Acts 27:24] But whatever the Son commands, this he considers to be the commandment of the Father, as those of the Spirit are the commandments of the Son.

Paul did go into the hotel, and did eat his dinner.

At last she determined that she would write a letter to M. Urmand, and show a copy of the letter to her uncle when the post should have taken it so far out of Granpere on its way to Basle, as to make it impossible that her uncle should recall it.

Her daughter usually spoke of her with affectionate regret as being unable to appear on that particular occasion on account of some passing malady.

Observe how wisely it is ordered that Paul should not preach at Jerusalem: the very hearing that he has become a believer, this of itself is enough for them; for him to preach, they never would have endured, such was their hatred of him: so he departs far away, where he was not known.

And he shows that this came about by God's ordering, who knew how to make a good use even of evil things; not that the vessels of wrath might be of advantage to Him, but that by His own good use of them they might be of advantage to the vessels of mercy.

For since this they sought earnestly, to find some handle against him, it is necessary to remove this also.

For the Word of God is not creature but Creator; and says in the manner of proverbs, 'He created me' when He put on created flesh.

But then the sister-in-law and the children disappeared, and it was incumbent on Lucy to fix herself somewhere.

And this is universally the case with matters referring to the body, inasmuch as when men are spiritual, there will be peace.

[Romans 2:6] And not only in hell, but also in the kingdom one will find many differences; for He says in my Fathers house are many mansions; [John 14:2] and, there is one glory of the sun, and another glory of the moon.

It cannot be held as astonishing, that that last decision on the part of the giants in the matter of the two bishoprics should have disgusted Archdeacon Grantly.

3. But what is, If such be the case of a man with his wife? That is, if to this end he is joined with her, that they should be one, or, on the other hand, if the man shall get to himself blame for these things, and always transgresses by putting away, it were easier to fight against natural desire and against one's self, than against a wicked woman.

He has reminded them of how many good things peace is the cause; on account of this He called you, for this He called you, so as to receive a worthy prize.

Max Bogen handed Linda over to his wife, and then disappeared. “Oh, Linda, what is it? Why are you here? Dear Linda.” And then her old friend kissed her, and within half an hour the whole story had been told.

For there is often one who, while he puts no restraint on his gluttony in food, is presently pressed hard by the stings of lechery, which is on the point of overcoming him, and who, when, terrified by the fear of this struggle, he strives to restrain himself through abstinence, is harassed by the temptation of vain-glory: in which case certainly one vice is by no means extinguished unless the other be fostered.

He therefore consoles by His promises your toil, your labours, your troubles, saying to you, He will not always be chiding.

But if ill, we can hardly salve our consciences by that little corner.

For God cannot be forced to do anything against His will, so that He should not be pleased with His own work; nor can He do anything by mistake, so that He should regret having done it.

Without this, nothing can be done of what we have already spoken of.

For if it be necessary to fear death, it is necessary to fear it when it comes upon us justly; since he indeed who dies unjustly, is by this very means made a partaker with all the saints.

She asked old Mr. Caldigate after his soul, and when he replied to her less seriously than she thought becoming, she told him that he was in the bad way.

Elizabeth left the room with her slow, graceful step, hiding her tears,—hiding all emotion, as latterly she had taught herself that it was feminine to do.

He did not know it for a fact, but he was in hopes of meeting the expiring Lord Chancellor.

[Euboulios] . Whether is it he that saves his vessel in great and perplexing storms, or is it he who does so in a breathless calm?

The Transvaal is said, and I believe correctly, to be very rich in other minerals besides gold;—but the travellers in new countries are always startled by sanguine descriptions of wealth which is not in view.

It would be, he had said to himself, a great thing for a man to do.

He excused himself saying that he was not particularly fond of big dinners, and that he did not like standing in the way of other people.

Nobody else came to the house then, or on the following morning, or on that afternoon, though Clara did not fail to tell herself that Captain Aylmer might have been there if he had chosen to take the journey and to leave home as soon as he had received the message; and she made the same calculation as to her cousin Will,—though in that calculation, as we know, she was wrong.

Either we pray always and are virgins, or we cease to pray that we may fulfil the claims of marriage.

This is the common rule and custom of those who undertake to explain books in commentaries: They give at length in their exposition the various opinions, and explain what is thought by themselves and by others.

The Apostle says, Do you not know that your bodies are the temple within you of the Holy Ghost, Whom you have of God?

He was not speaking of a bodily manifestation, of perception by the eye of flesh, but by that eye of which He had once spoken— Say not ye, There are yet four months, and then comes harvest?

“Sir Felix Carbury!” he said.

It will be remembered that this gentleman was the son-in-law of Larry Macdermot’s creditor, Mr. Flannelly; and it had been arranged between the two worthy relations that if, by some law-craft or other means, Keegan could obtain possession of the estate of Ballycloran in payment of the debt due by the proprietor, it should become his, Keegan’s, property.

But yet, as many said, it was power working only for evil.

She had resolved that she would not even ask herself a question about M. D., and yet she could not divert her mind from the inquiry.

For these reasons, then, the taxes had ceased to be paid.

However, though the Major wouldn’t join in a handicap, others would—and McKeon wasn’t baulked of his amusement. Men soon had their hands in their pockets, waiting the awards of the arbiter, which were speedily pronounced; and various and detailed were the descriptions given of the brutes which were intended to change hands; but not in general such as made those who got them satisfied with their bargains, when they afterwards became acquainted with their real merits.

Or what ears can hear it?

Nor are there two first principles; but the Father is the head of the Son [1 Corinthians 11:3 the beginning is One.

For just as material wealth increases if the lovers of it do not despise even the smallest gains, so is it also with the spiritual.

And thus the Manichean besets human nature with his detestable censure, and you with your cruel praise.

Forgetful of her sex, unmindful of her frailty, and only desiring to be alone she was in fact there where her soul lingered.

She would fade and fall to the earth like a flower with an insect at its root.

For it is of necessity that there be one most excellent of all, on whose account also every creature keeps its rank.

Why then does He condemn?

there should have been ice, sir, but I suppose they forgot it.” Where had Mrs. T. procured all that wine?

You shall therefore again be taught what is requisite, if God so will; with how great devotion and order you must enter in when summoned, for what purpose each of the holy mysteries of Baptism is performed, and with what reverence and order you must go from Baptism to the Holy Altar of God, and enjoy its spiritual and heavenly mysteries; that your souls being previously enlightened by the word of doctrine, you may discover in each particular the greatness of the gifts bestowed on you by God.

“Going to marry one of the girls, isn’t he?”

In Egypt and Antioch upon journeys xv months and xxii days: upon the property near the new river iv months.

If words ever convey to my ears a positive contradiction of the assertion which they affect to make, it is when they are grandly antethetical and magnificently verbose.

For no one, after going hence, shall arrive at fullness of righteousness, unless, while here, he shall have run his course by hungering and thirsting after it.

And so Ralph went back to town without again seeing the breeches-maker.

But if we hope for that we see not, then do we with patience wait for it [Romans 8:24-25]), his language even in that case would not be correct to the effect that to avoid sinning would be of us alone, although to sin would be of us, for even then there must be the help of God, which must shed itself on those who are willing to receive it, just as the light is given to strong and healthy eyes to assist them in their function of sight.

Quomodo etiam res est libera, intemperantia et turpis sermo?

They are fearful lest this birth of the Son from Him should deprive Him of His glory, and therefore come to God's rescue by styling His Son a creature made out of nothing, in order that God may live on in solitary perfection without a Son born of Himself and partaking His nature.

But though Sir Hugh was thus uncourteous to the rector and to the rector’s daughter, he was so far prepared to be civil to his cousin Harry, that he allowed his wife to ask all the rectory family to dine up at the house, in honor of Harry’s sweetheart.

But Mary was shy of acceding to such invitations, and at last frankly told her friend Patience, that she would not again break bread in Greshamsbury in any house in which she was not thought fit to meet the other guests who habitually resorted there.

And the stamp used in 1870 will certainly have varied its form in 1871.

“And why didn’t you ask her;—that is, if she stands upon asking to come to her old home?”

But that the Spirit in the inspired Scriptures is not speaking mainly of rivers to be seen with the eyes, may be gathered from Ezekiel's prophecies against Pharaoh, king of Egypt: Behold I am against you, Pharaoh, king of Egypt, the great dragon, seated in the midst of rivers, who sayest, Mine are the rivers, and I made them.

Nothing had been done to him.

“And then he is such a low beast,” said Peregrine.

Here was that poor Crasweller, belying himself and all his convictions just to gain one year more of it, and then when the year was gone he would still have his deposition before him!

For on this account, though an evil man, he here received good things, that there he might receive evil things more fully, because here even by good things he had not been converted.

And we may rightly, in my opinion, apply to them the saying of Solomon: There is an evil which I have seen under the sun, [Ecclesiastes 10:5] a man wise in his own conceit; [Proverbs 26:12] and a still greater evil is to charge with the instruction of others a man who is not even aware of his own ignorance.

Where are we to find the accommodation, or how are we to begin to look for it?

“I am sure they are very good; but I think their mamma will prefer their being put by for the present.” This was very discouraging to Lucy.

If you are exposed to public infamy, says he, it is for your good; for he who is not exposed to dishonour among men is sure to be so before the Lord.

The self-restraint of the religious should not be gloomy, but sincere; no murmurs of complaint should be heard from those who are never without the consolation of holy joys.

He was there, close to her, with his arm still round her, and her fingers grasped within his.

But if souls, as you call them, are prevented and hindered by their fleshly members from recalling their former knowledge, how do they remember what has been arranged in these very bodies, and know that they are spirits, and have no bodily substance, being exalted by their condition as immortal beings?

The squadrons of the two leaders must drag me in different directions, for I acknowledge both as my masters.

Wherefore he says, And instil into them the word of truth, so that it may be inwardly learned ; for as yet they know not the word of truth as they ought to know.

He might have sold her to some lord who would have scorned her after a while and despised himself.

She shall be my daughter.

Julianus Augustus IV.

“You like our institutions, ma’am?” “Yes, indeed,” said my wife, not with all that eagerness of assent which the occasion perhaps required.

“But he’s a man that always loses his money at cards.”

Now I have told you.

Mr Ball, on his return home to the Cedars, had given no definite answer to his mother’s inquiries as to the day’s work in London, and had found it difficult to make any reply to her that would for the moment suffice. She was not a woman easily satisfied with evasive answers; but, nevertheless, he told her nothing of what had occurred, and left her simply in a bad humour. This conversation had taken place before dinner, but after dinner she asked him another question.

Do you see how he condemns God in you, who rejects the voice of the heavenly oracle: Hearken unto Me, My people, says the Lord.

In his emergency the barrister went to his attorney and told him everything. The two lawyers were closeted together for an hour, and Mr. Wharton’s last words to his old friend were as follows:—”I will risk the money, Walker, or rather I will consent absolutely to throw it away,—as it will be thrown away,—if it can be managed that he shall in truth go to this place without his wife.”

Her first and second days in her aunt’s house were very quiet.

For whosoever would save his own life shall lose it.

“For two reasons,” said Mary, slowly, and then she paused, as though doubting whether she would continue her speech, or give the two reasons which now guided her. But he stood, looking into her face, waiting for them. “In the first place,” she said, “I think you are untrue to another person.” Then she paused again, as though asking herself whether that reason would not suffice. But she resolved that she would be bold, and give the other. “In the next place, my heart is not my own to give.”

Nevertheless, the lover of man, though they acted with so much madness, both against themselves, and against their children, so far from confirming their sentence upon their children, confirmed it not even on them, but from the one and from the other received those that repented, and counts them worthy of good things beyond number.

Each man comes to God and brings before Him what he has said and thought about Him.

The little house in Brook Street,—for the house was very small and very comfortless,—a house that had been squeezed in, as it were, between two others without any fitting space for it,—did not contain a happy family.

[Luke 12:49] This was the fire which, when it was kindled in the disciples' hearts, constrained them to say: Did not our heart burn within us while He talked with us by the way, and while He opened to us the Scriptures?

It is asked, then, whether the Father also by Himself is wise, and is Himself His own wisdom itself; or whether He is wise in the same way as He speaks.

But at that time even mercy itself shall be allotted in righteous judgment in accordance with the merits of good works.

At the present moment she was inclined to be very positive, but he had hardly as yet given her an opportunity of speaking out.

But she would bear no more.

Disgrace yourself by marrying her, and your brother shall have everything.

Unless the engineers go seriously to work I shall be the last stranger that will ever visit the Cango Caves in a carriage.

“Ballycloran doesn’t belong to Thady, and he can’t tell him not to come.”

As he did so, he asked Alice to say a word to him out in the garden, having already explained to them both that it might be some time before he would be again down at Beetham.

He knew that she was bait with a very visible hook.

How should He glorify the Son with His own self, and with that glory which He had with Him before the world was made?

But in Natal military matters have had a stir given to them by the necessity of marching troops up to Pretoria,—at a terrible cost, and now an additional stir by Zulu ambition.

“I never do smoke cigars here, Gerard. I’ll offer you a cigarette.” The cigarette was reluctantly offered, and accepted with a shrug. “But you didn’t come here merely to smoke, I dare say.”

One present there was,—given not to the bride but to the bridegroom,—which he showed to no one except to her.

Of the same from his discourse about the Son:—

“Oh yes; he is always there. He’s a nice young fellow; a very fine young fellow; but—”

This assumption by the government of an unconstitutional power has, as I have said, taught many lookers on to think that the Americans are indifferent to their liberties.

But perhaps you will have heard it already, as everybody is talking of it here.

Whenever, therefore, any sheep separate themselves from this fold, which is expressly pointed out and shown to us by the unmistakeable declaration of the Lord,— and that, I will not say because of charges falsely brought, but on account of charges brought, as no one can deny, with great uncertainty against their fellow-men, and consequently slay those sheep which they have torn and alienated from the life of unity and Christian love— is it not evident that they are ravening wolves?

Verily all the inhabitants of earth do die, young men and old, little children and adults, for no age or bodily stature is exempt from death.

But the Lord our God, who is compassionate and merciful, who comforts them that are cast down, nourishing the infants, and cherishing the infirm, permitted him to gain in some measure success in this design, only to make us rejoice more over the prevention of the calamity than we grieved over the danger.

Tatian, the patriarch of the Encratites, who himself rejected some of Paul's Epistles, believed this especially, that is [addressed] to Titus, ought to be declared to be the apostle's, thinking little of the assertion of Marcion and others, who agree with him on this point.— Hieron.: Præf. in Com. ad Tit.

‘Of course, I learned it at school, but when one can only read words very slowly one can’t talk them at all.

Moreover, as we know that it is not demons, but angels, who have been set over the fruits of the earth, and over the birth of animals, it is the latter that we praise and bless, as having been appointed by God over the things needful for our race; yet even to them we will not give the honour which is due to God.

“And in the mean time your money has been enough?” said the doctor, after a pause.

And hence, since the marriage tie was from the beginning so constituted as apart from the joining of the sexes to symbolize the mystic union of Christ and His Church, it is undoubted that that woman has no part in matrimony, in whose case it is shown that the mystery of marriage has not taken place.

For not only was He Himself saved, but became to others also an abundant supply of salvation.

Cast me not away from Your face, and take not Your Holy Spirit from me.

Alaric, when he heard the wheels roll off, shook from him his lethargy.

But in creation nothing exists without a reason.

Two or three peers were absent, and so also was that editor who had been chosen to fill Mr Alf’s place.

He is subjected to qualifications which in truth debar him from the poll.

For verily I say unto you, Till Heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all come to pass.

But if these gods, who were worshipped specially in this behalf, that they might confer happiness in this life, either willed or permitted these punishments to be inflicted on one who kept his oath to them, what more cruel punishment could they in their anger have inflicted on a perjured person?

Carnlough was not above three Irish miles from Ballyglunin; and Mr. Jones started on the little journey without a misgiving.

For surely a rational being such as man has a higher rank in the nature of things than irrational ones, such as birds.

For, we are pressed on every side, yet not straitened, says he; perplexed, yet not unto despair; that is, 'we do not quite fall off.

But we have spoken sufficiently on the subject of providence in the first book.

In truth Marmaduke at this time was so expensive that Sir George was obliged to be a little hard.

And then he was sure that the Dean would be loud against any such arrangement.

But the question is one for the lady to decide,—and you must decide it now.

, could think and express himself clearly in what was to him a living and a cultivated language.

But He is God of God, and therefore God the Father stands to God the Son as God of His birth and Father of His nature, for the birth of God is from God, and in the specific nature of God.

And he well says, You have obeyed from the heart.

He says, For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the Gospel, not in the language of wisdom, lest the cross of Christ should be made void.

In this case, however, though the crime was one of unexampled wickedness, the man who was the victim of it was alive, and present in the flesh; and the hostile faction could be convicted and brought to punishment, when their tricks became known and their machinations were exposed.

“Nobody supposes the Duke did that,—or even the Duke’s servants, I should think. But Lord Chiltern will hear us if we don’t take care.”

He was somewhat of a bon-vivant, and a man who thoroughly understood dinner-parties; and with much good nature he took Frank under his special protection.

Mr Polwarth, the clergyman, who, as the old man could not come to him, went down the rocks to the old man, did make some hint on the matter in Mally’s absence.

Of his pupil Vandyke we possess a portrait — the portrait of Gevartius, whocver Gevartius may have been — that can hardly be surpassed.

After these remarks of Celsus, which we have endeavoured to answer as we could, he goes on to say, speaking of us: Again they will ask, 'How can we know God, unless by the perception of the senses?

As to Lord Chiltern,—he believed that Lord Chiltern had obtained his object by violence.

And this was no light consolation to them too.

The path was indicated to us, and off we started with high hopes.

The eighth was addressed to the people the day after Catiline fled.

It was Christmas, and her father’s presence would surely have justified them all!

I own I do like people who have got people belonging to them; you feel sure, in a sort of way, that they’ll go on living in their own houses.

You shall not die the death, says he for God knows, that on the day on which you eat, your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as Gods.

He would have been much pleased to talk about his nephew Lord Peterborough, and he loved his niece dearly.

For thus speaks the blessed Micah: The house of Jacob provoked the Spirit of the Lord to anger.

Chapter XVII. The Nature of God

Here again she acted in the more spiritual manner.

Parson John shrugged his shoulders, and shook his head, meaning to imply that it certainly was a bad case, but that as Colonel Marrable was a Marrable, he ought to be spared, if possible.

What then, it may be said, ought we not to pray in church? Indeed we ought by all means, but in such a spirit as this. Because everywhere God seeks the intention of all that is done. Since even if you should enter into your closet, and having shut the door, should do it for display, the doors will do you no good.

He, moreover, who shows attention to an admired and illustrious man, does it often for ostentation among men, but he who tends the abject and despairing, does it only because of the command of God.

He had blundered since, in saying that the dean had given it to him.

“Not a dollar,” said Peacocke, turning away and leaving the room. As he did so he heard the wretch laughing loud at the excellence of his own joke.

Thanks then be unto You, O Christ.

“That is all very grand, and I am perfectly willing to respect him. But I do not know that I should care to talk very freely in his company.”

“And if among you all, that are so set up against him because he’s not one of your own set, you dhrive him out of Ballycloran, I can tell you, I’ll not remain in it!”

For Death prevailed and devoured; and again, God wiped away every tear from off every face.

Frank then remembered that he could not tell openly the story of Mrs. Beelzebub. Rachel had told him in pure simple-minded confidence, and though he was prepared to disobey her, he would not betray her. “She is on the stage,” he said.

He considered upon the right hand, and saw: whoso considers upon the left hand, is blinded.

And that all this should have been kept under so long by policemen and right-thinking individuals, and then burst out like a subterranean fire all over the country, because the hope has been given them of getting their land for nothing!

If I ascend into heaven, You are there; if I go away even to the uttermost parts of the earth, there is Your right hand; if I make my bed in the abyss, there is Your Spirit.

After what had taken place any compromise between him and the lady was impossible.

I know she’ll have a place in the fly, and she’s very goodnatured.” In answer to this Rachel had written a separate note to Cherry, telling her friend in the least boastful words which she could use that provision had been already made for her coming and going.

“Mr. Moss, you are a brute,” said the lord.

I will make what I assert plain by an example.

So I was frightened, and only sent thirty shillings.

He kept himself to himself, and kept his opinion very much in the dark.

“All right,” he said; “I’m sure you didn’t mean anything.

“I hope to be able to keep her before long, and to do it much better than it has ever been done before. The truth is, Roger, you know nothing about it. If you’ll leave me to myself you’ll find that I shall do very well.”

“Then you may go away, Mr. Bozzle,” said Mr. Outhouse, impatiently. “You may as well go away at once.”

11. The Lord will give strength to His people [Psalm 28:11]. For the Lord will give strength to His people fighting against the storms and whirlwinds of this world, for peace in this world He has not promised them. [John 16:33] The Lord will bless His people in peace. And the same Lord will bless His people, affording them peace in Himself; for, says He, My peace I give unto you, My peace I leave with you. [John 14:27]

A few minutes after four, in a House from which hardly more than a dozen members were absent, Mr. Daubeny took his seat with that air of affected indifference to things around him which is peculiar to him.

Therefore let us keep him as a debtor bound, and release him not until he has paid.

Uzzah, when he touched the ark which it was not lawful to touch, was struck down suddenly by death.

Was He not seen on earth?

1 John 4:12-16

[Psalm 50:21, Septuagint] But may it not come to pass that any one of us hear this voice, but having wrought pure almsdeeds, and having our lamps burning, so may we enter into the bride-chamber by the grace and lovingkindness of our Lord Jesus Christ, to whom with the Father and the Holy Ghost be glory for ever and ever.

To Virgilius and Syagrius, Bishops.

Her face below her nose was very short.

And though I could say much more, brethren beloved, I purposely omit to do so, as deeming it to be burdensome at great length to call these things to the remembrance of teachers who are of the same mind with myself.

“Miss Waddington is a beautiful girl; and variable—as beautiful girls sometimes are.”

But the novelist will be assisted by no such feeling.

Miss Amazon will do it.

23. When she comes before Him who is rich,— she will show the treasure of the first—when she comes before the Saviour, she will show the saved ones of the next—when she goes forth to meet the Bridegroom,— she will show the oil of her lamps.

Now pray do not think this of me, if you wish to think of me aright.

But people who are fond of this style are apt to think that men who do not use it, but employ a more chastened style, do so because they cannot attain the former, not because their judgment teaches them to avoid it.

Had he loved her, and yet spoken evil of her to all their friends?

It is thou, forsooth, that travailest with a fresh one.

The showing of the works is an aid, not to ignorance in Him, but to faith in us.

“If she took it, she’d take me too. If she didn’t,—why I should still have the diamonds. I mean to try any way.”

“The Italians. They are already saying that you are not fit to be alone; and if once they get you into their hands,—under some Italian medical board, perhaps into some Italian asylum, it might be years before you could get out,—if ever. I have come to tell you what the danger is. I do not know whether you will believe me.”

Mrs. Carbuncle Goes to the Theatre

If Mr. Harding would not give way to Dr. Grantly, it was not likely that he would give way to Dr. Gwynne, more especially now that so admirable a scheme as that of inducting Mr. Arabin into the deanery had been set on foot.

Foolish, therefore, is every husband who separates his wife from the fear of God; for she who does not fear God is not afraid of her husband.

But he had worked his way back into his father’s good graces by his determination to stick to Neefit’s girl.

But they are much deceived, who think that we believe in Christ without any proofs concerning Christ.

There was nothing in the prospect which would frighten Lucy, though there might be a question whether he possessed the courage needed for so violent a change.

To them the coming of Cousin Henry, and the death of the old Squire, and then the departure of their young mistress, had been as though the whole world had come to an end for them.

And Owen did come.

For when Paul the apostle also was saying something concerning God before the Athenians, he adduced as a proof of what he said, that certain of them had said something to the same effect, [Acts 17:28] which certainly would not be condemned but recognized in them if they should come to Christ.

Whatever be the misery to be endured, get it over.

“Oh, I couldn’t leave Mr. Comfort; indeed I couldn’t,” said Mrs. Ray in alarm. “I couldn’t go away from my own parish church was it ever so.”

To Martin, Scholasticus .

The Sixth Commandment.

For, as we have said, the heart of the flock is, even as it were of right, set against preaching, if the care of external succour be neglected by the pastor.

“Do you mean that Captain Scarborough would pay all his debts?”

And yet he may probably be one who at College did not come near to the place which I had won.

I am learning every day how best to stand fast on my own feet.

See how by his bare words he exhorts them, on that side naming sin and on this God.

“And remember this; it is the deuce of a thing to have rheumatism in your loins. I wouldn’t go to sleep under a tree, if I were you,—not in October. But you’re always welcome to go anywhere about the place.”

But if you suffer no grievance, whence are you angry with him that has done you no harm, but has even benefited you?

“Mr. Green knows that we expect a great deal from him this evening.

But everything is changed now, since the railroads came up.

She is not the worse for not having children, but He fills up her need with consolation, in that she is without children.

These absurd and perverse errors have grown in boldness and godlessness till they assert that Jesus Christ was not Christ until He was born of Mary.

At Boston, and indeed elsewhere, I found that there was even then— at the time of the capture of these two men—no true conception of the neutrality of England with reference to the two parties.

[Luke 11:20] For in the same place in another book of the Gospel He named the Spirit of God, as you find: But if I by the Spirit of God cast out devils.

We maintain the answer given by piety.

‘My child, my own one, can I, your mother, think aught else of you? Do I not know your heart? Do not I know the very thoughts within you?’

And when he had thus spoken, one of the officers which stood by smote Him with the palm of his hand.

So it was with Augusta Gresham, when, with careful brow, she whispered to her mother that there was something wrong between Frank and Mary Thorne.

Orth.— How then do you say, God the Word tasted death? For if that which was created immortal is seen to be incapable of becoming mortal, how is it possible for him that is without creation and eternally immortal, Creator of mortal and immortal natures alike, to partake of death?

89. Can men indeed be loved by God as the Son is, in Whom the Father is well-pleased? [Matthew 3:17] He is well-pleasing in Himself; we through Him. For those in whom God sees His own Son after His own likeness, He admits through His Son into the favour of sons. So that as we go through likeness unto likeness, so through the Generation of the Son are we called unto adoption. The eternal love of God's Nature is one thing, that of grace is another.

But it is said Providence, from above, from what is of prime importance, as from the head, reaches to all, as the ointment, it is said, which descends to Aaron's beard, and to the skirt of his garment (that is, of the great High Priest, by whom all things were made, and without whom not even one thing was made [John 1:3]); not to the ornament of the body; for Philosophy is outside of the People, like raiment.

I’ll Sir Felix him some of these days.

But if you would know wherein we have the advantage, I save you by believing, but it is by stumbling that you have afforded us an access before yourself.

“Take his coral, my dear,” said she, “and rub it well with carrot-juice; rub it till the juice dries on it, and then give it him to play with—”

The whole symbol, then, when put together, appears to teach this: Oh you who are born and die, God hates impudence.

But the Word of God alone is visible, while the word of man is audible.

Hence in the traitor the Lord found this the worst point on which to condemn his treachery, namely, that he gave no sign of gratitude and had mingled the poison of malice at the table of friendship.

For he will not come so bending his knees, but exalting himself against all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he sits in the temple of God, setting himself forth as God.

Perhaps Mr. Prendergast had intended that such should be its effect.

Take up the epistle of the blessed Apostle Paul.

To all this a great deal of attention had been given by the hostess.

For I feared that, if I were to write to you without first hearing from you, you would consider me not so much a conscientious as a troublesome correspondent.

And in another place, [2 Chronicles 15:2] The Lord is with you so long as you are with Him: if you forsake Him, He will also forsake you.

“Poor fellow,—poor fellow! It would have been better for him to stay away.”

It is amusing to watch how a passion will grow upon a man.

She had found that the man’s ways were in no wise like her ways,—and she had found also that were she to become his wife, he certainly would not change.

“Felix,” she said, “you won’t mention that to Mr Montague!”

[Matthew 10:13-15] And how becomes it worthy?

“How could I tell you? Would it not have seemed that I was vain enough to have thought of putting you on your guard?”

[John 7:34] And you shall seek me, and shall not find me: [52] and where I shall be, you shall not be able to come.

Then shall be opened the eves of the blind, and the ears of the deaf shall hear.

Some say it was Eratosthenes of Cyrene who was first so called, since he published two books which he entitled Grammatica.The first who was called a grammarian, as we now use the term, was Praxiphanes, the son of Disnysophenes of Mitylene.

I have seen the foolish taking root, but their habitation was presently consumed.

He apologised for the necessity of some delay, arguing that he could not endure to see his young wife without the comfort of a home of her own, and that he was now, as he always had been, afraid of incurring debt.

The burial is a long and wearisome ceremony.

“Do you call that beer?” said a second.

But then there was the girl at his elbow, and he no more dared to tell her to her face that he meant to give her up, than he dared to tell Melmotte that he intended to stick to his engagement.

wall of the brewery opposite.

Should she leave the diamonds, or should she take them with her?

“He told me so.”

Examples are not far to seek.

Nay, for yourselves are to blame for this folly, who do not so much as think it is a sin, and hereby constrain us to enter upon the reproof of this extravagance.

My Dear Niece,

Chapter XIV. A Lover’s Perseverance

Therefore it gathers itself, as it were, into a sound state, and says, Praise the Lord, O my soul And then the soul, weighed down, as it were, and unable to stand up as is fitting, answers the mind, I will praise the Lord in my life [Psalm 145:2].

When falsehoods of that kind are told you can’t meet them in a straightforward way.

Lastly, why should we not confess that in spiritual men the Church is subject unto Christ, but in carnal men yet lusts against Christ?

And I keep His saying.

In the next place, remember that he, who came among you for the purpose of offering disinterested counsel, now enjoys the reward which is due to him in the judgment of heaven; for he has received no ordinary recompense in the high testimony you have borne to his equitable conduct.

And yet I do not know but what it would have been better that you should have stayed away.

Whence redeems He David His servant?

If any now takes offense at the existence of heretics, let him remember that it was so from the beginning, the devil always setting up error by the side of truth.

“I won’t pretend to understand how that may be, Colonel Osborne; but I think you must be aware, after what took place in Curzon Street, that it would have been better that you should not have attempted to see Mrs. Trevelyan. Whether you have seen her I do not know.”

And again, when they were hungry, a shower of heavenly nourishment descended.

“Where is the letter? Let me see it.”

And who would not say that the promise, Follow Me, and I will make you fishers of men, had been accomplished by Jesus in the history of His apostles by a sort of divine power?

Farewell, you lovers of my discourses, in your eagerness and concourse, you pencils seen and unseen, and thou balustrade, pressed upon by those who thrust themselves forward to hear the word.

For thus, even though one should grant that the soul is the creation of a good deity, it will be found to be but an idle work so far as the man is concerned, unless it also takes to itself the body.

Now the statements of the false witnesses, recorded in the Gospel according to Matthew and Mark towards the end of the Gospel, and the accusation they brought against our Lord Jesus Christ, appear to have reference to this utterance of His, Destroy this temple, and I will build it up in three days.

It was not by your own pains that you found out God, but while you continued in error, He drew you to Himself.

His cheeks had fallen away; his nose was contracted; his mouth, which he could hardly close, was on one side.

After the death of this bishop, however, the people became divided into two parties, and disputes and contests concerning doctrines were openly carried on.

When he had been, for this reason, excommunicated by the heterodox, he feigned a refusal to hold communion with them, because, they had unjustly admitted Arius into communion after he had perjured himself by declaring to the Emperor Constantine that he maintained the doctrines of the council of Nicæa.

There is one God, who sends rains, and winds, and earthquakes,

And just as, with the body, it is not so much the nature of the air, or the things it meets from without, as its own internal condition, that either injures or assists it, so also it is in the case of the soul; and much more so; for in the one case, there is the necessity of nature; in the other, the whole is seated in the power of choice.

[Ephesians 1:13] Of what promise?

Who compelled God to come down to earth, to take flesh of the holy Virgin, to be wrapped in swaddling clothes and laid in a manger, to be nourished with milk, to be baptized in the Jordan, to be mocked of the people, to be nailed to the tree, to be buried in the bosom of the earth, and the third day to rise again from the dead; in the cause of redemption to give life for life, blood for blood, to undergo death for death?

And thus, voyaging all the universal course of life without the rudder of reason, they know not how to shun the hurricane which is impending over the world.

And the stone which struck the image became a great mountain, and filled the whole earth.

In one case holiness of conduct merited the communion of equality; in the other avenging zeal brought out to view the just claims of authority.

What is, in the grace of God? Displaying the wisdom that is from Him, the power from Him given unto us, by the signs wrought, by overcoming sages, rhetoricians, philosophers, kings, peoples, unlearned as we are and bringing with us nothing of the wisdom that is without. No ordinary comfort and glorying, however, was this, to be conscious to themselves that it was not men's power they had used; but that by Divine grace they had achieved all success.

This teaching the apostle knows as truly divine.

It is, therefore, no monstrous thing partly to will, partly to be unwilling, but an infirmity of the mind, that it does not wholly rise, sustained by truth, pressed down by custom.

“Why not, Priscilla?”

This was the kind of thing which young ladies without dowry, but with hearts to love, are doomed to suffer.

“Why not?” said the sick man, who was sitting up in his bed.

A letter so sent would, as you have been informed, bear two postmarks, those of Sydney and of Nobble.

When the man had asked him that question,—Is there any secret you can tell?—Cousin Henry did, for half a minute, make up his mind to tell the whole story, and reveal everything as it had occurred.

If now you consider the question in connection with the advocates of different views, you will find the Epicureans and Stoics most keenly contending with each other, and the Platonists, on the other hand, endeavouring to decide the controversy between them, concealing the truth which they held, and devoting themselves only to prove and overthrow the vain confidence with which the others adhered to error.

Speak then after His manner, and you have become in this respect such as He, so far as it is possible for one who is a man to become so.

‘Because I do not care for him. Why won’t you let me remain with you, uncle?’

And so a certain part of our reason, not separated so as to sever unity, but, as it were, diverted so as to be a help to fellowship, is parted off for the performing of its proper work.

Is it because it follows, that whenever we name One who cleaves to One by a harmony so great that through this harmony both are one, this harmony itself must be understood, although it is not mentioned?

For I ask, why He compares His tongue to the pen of a writer writing rapidly?

And Katie—her sweet bonny Katie—she, at least, should be protected from the wolves.

God, they say, created all things out of that which was non-existent, and they include in the number of creatures, both rational and irrational, even the Son of God.

“Yes; Archie Clavering. I think Archie is a worse fellow even than Hugh. He makes more attempts to be agreeable, but there is something in his eye which I always distrust. And then he is a man who does no good in the world to anybody.”

Through the knowledge, then, as appears, of a bad and good life is the Gnostic saved, understanding and executing more than the scribes and Pharisees.

“Write her a letter—eh?” said George, who did not altogether dislike the advice, for it seemed to take from his shoulders the burden of preparing a spoken address. Though he was so glib in speaking about the farmers’ daughters, he felt that he should have some little difficulty in making known his passion to Miss Dunstable by word of mouth.

Mr. Bonteen, in his troubled spirit, certainly did misbehave himself.

And this perfect and absolutely complete virtue bestows on those who conquer, the crown and reward of immortality.

Therefore, from the Folking side there was no one but John Caldigate himself and John Jones.

But they bring preoccupied by legal observances threw impediments in the way of faith.

“You will find, I trust, that the churchwarden has everything in readiness. I have notified to him expressly your coming, with the purport that it may be so.”

There was a reality in the tone of sorrow in which this was spoken which melted him at once, and the more so in that there was so much in her grief which could not but be flattering to his vanity. “Do not say that, Lady Ongar,” he exclaimed.

It is indeed a weighty question, whether Nicolaus, being already severed from the Church, [Revelation 2:6] or Simon, who was still within it, [Acts 8:9-24] was the worse—the one being a heretic, the other a sorcerer.

The bee takes care not to make one vast cavity, for fear it might break under the weight of the liquid, and allow it to escape.

Yea, and after the Cross itself, what did He not do for their sakes?

But, since we are hindered by the devil from obeying God with our thought and deed in all things, we pray and ask that God's will may be done in us.

Chapter 18 Of the Date of His Departure into Galilee.

Was it because of our name, that that mad-cap Xerxes let the ocean in upon the land, and that he marched over the sea on foot?

“Let us all play,” said Mrs Conway Sparkes, “and then it will be nicer,—and perhaps warmer, too.”

“I’ll just step up to Lady Arabella now,” said the doctor.

“Yours most faithfully, “ JONATHAN BROWN.

“And when I found that you always travelled with ten thousand pounds’ worth of diamonds in a box, that surprised me very much. I thought that you were a very dangerous companion.”

Wherefore, brother, if ever you consider any action ought to be taken to uphold the privileges of the church of Antioch, be sure to explain it in a letter of your own, that we may be able to reply to your application completely and appropriately.

Apology for himself against the Books of Rufinus

“And we shall have none,” said Alice, smiling.

The Arverni, or at least their chief men, fear to oppose the Romans; but Vercingetorix obtains a crowd of followers out in the country, and perseveres.

May God Almighty forgive him all that he did amiss!

But what does he want with a wife like her?—making innimies for himself.

Whatever narrative of note, therefore, meets us in these 1020 years, shall be given in its proper place.

As if it could possibly hurt a good widow, if either she had not sons, or if those whom she had did not choose to continue in good works.

It might be that such real belief had never been hers.

She was not quite sure how far it might be her mission to reclaim such a man as Sir Lionel—this new Sir Lionel whom Miss Todd had described.

It was said to Christ in His own nation, a sinner is this Man: we know not whence He is: we know Moses, to him spoke God; this Man is a Samaritan.

Mr. Saul and Fanny remained long together on that occasion, and when they parted he went off about his work, not saying a word to any other person in the house, and she betook herself as fast as her feet could carry her to her own room.

For even if it is so, as indeed it is— nor would you yourself deny it after what you have done to me— yet it is well to hide our misfortune from the outside world, and persons who entertain but a moderate opinion of us.

And still the venerable dean went backwards and forwards slowly before them, urging them on, and still urging them on.

2. In his Hypotyposes he speaks of Pantænus by name as his teacher. It seems to me that he alludes to the same person also in the first book of his Stromata, when, referring to the more conspicuous of the successors of the apostles whom he had met, he says:

This judgment of yours, O Urbicus, does not become the Emperor Pius, nor the philosopher, the son of Cæsar, nor the sacred senate.

He had told her how he suffered when they two did not stand well together, and she feared to be accused by him of unkindness and ingratitude.

The very pith and marrow of life is baked out of their young bones by the hot-air chambers to which they are accustomed.

[Jeremiah 6:30] Again he said:— He will not again regard them.

On the 20th of the month all the guests came rattling in at Matching one after another.

Nor do I risk contradiction in saying that the very Scriptures were even arranged by the will of God in such a manner as to furnish materials for heretics, inasmuch as I read that there must be heresies, [1 Corinthians 11:19] which there cannot be without the Scriptures.

In the covenant of Moses is Your brightness shadowed forth: in the new covenant You dart it forth: from those first Your light shines even unto those last. Blessed be He that gave us Your gleam as well as Your bright rays.

For in the former charge, as there were many who kept (the ordinances), he began otherwise, saying thus: Now I praise you that you remember me in all things: but here contrariwise, But in giving you this charge, I praise you not.

[1 Corinthians 11:31] Think not, then, that thus to act comes of cruelty and inhumanity; nay, but of the highest gentleness and the most skillful leechcraft and of much tender care.

Where did you get your copy of the letter?

I will not speak of the ants' storehouses and storekeepers, and of their treasurings of wood in quantities corresponding to the time for which it is wanted, and all the other details which we know are told of their marches and leaders and their good order in their works.

Though he was thus instigated to haste he stood a few minutes with his back to the warm stove that he might be enabled to think of it all.

But gradually his heart had become softened towards her; in his illness he had repented of his harshness; he had not borne her continued absence easily, and had of late looked about for an excuse for accepting her lover.

And let no one think it strange that we call by the name of life a continuance of being which is interrupted by death and corruption; but let him consider rather that this word has not one meaning only, nor is there only one measure of continuance, because the nature also of the things that continue is not one.

They left the house together at about eight, and Polly at that time had not reappeared.

But now he was revengeful rather than despondent.

He would so much have preferred that she should not exist at all!

The burly barrister himself was not so sanguine.

The house was theirs till Christmas; between this and then he would think about it.

“No right! No right to ask a lady who sits under Mr Stumfold whether or not she is engaged to Mr Stumfold’s own curate! Think again of what you are saying, Miss Mackenzie!” And there was in Mrs Stumfold’s voice as she spoke an expression of offended majesty, and in her countenance a look of awful authority, sufficient no doubt to bring most Stumfoldian ladies to their bearings.

The hugging and kissing to which Katie was subjected when she was carried up to the inn, near the boat-slip on the Surrey side of the river, may be imagined; as may also the faces she made at the wineglassful of stiff brandy and water which she was desired to drink. She was carried home in a fly, and by the time she arrived there, had so completely recovered her life and spirits as to put a vehement negative on her mother’s proposition that she should at once go to bed.

Mr Stumfold and Mr Frigidy were at the other table, and Mr Maguire was occupied in passing promiscuously from one to the other.

“To tell you the truth, I think you should change your trade. This is the third attempt, you know. I dare say they are very good in their way; but if the world liked them, the world would have found it out by this time. ‘Vox populi, vox Dei’—that is my motto—I don’t trust my own judgment; I trust that of the public. If you will take my advice, you will give up Iphigenia and the rest of them. You see you are doing nothing whatever at the bar,” &c., &c.

“I think it’ll be right to say one thing first,” said Kenneby, with a solemn and deliberate tone.

Then as she sat there she began to reflect that it might be that she herself was not of the elect.

All this Charley’s heart and instinct fully understood, and he was not ungrateful.

And yet it is plain to every one who has given any attention to the uses of words, that the word incorruption denotes by the privative particle that neither corruption nor birth appertains to God: just as many other words of like formation denote the absence of what is not inherent rather than the presence of what is; e.g.

Her daughters were around her.

Do you see how he has cleared it of all blame?

Why then said He, 'As I said to the Jews'?

But it will be said, The gods that are in them take no care of their images.

How she would be his wife with all her heart and spirit!

But, through it all, she appreciated Grace; and they who knew her well and heard what she said upon the occasion, understood that her favour was not to be withdrawn.

He had put his arm round her waist and kissed her lips and pressed her to his old bosom.

What wonder is it, beloved brethren, if such is the prayer which God taught, seeing that He condensed in His teaching all our prayer in one saving sentence?

[Colossians 1:21, 22]

If then we pray with humility, smiting our breast as the publican, if we utter what he did, if we say, Be merciful to me a sinner [Luke 18:13], we shall obtain all. For though we be not publicans, yet have we other sins not less than his.

“To have a lot of money to look after is more plague than profit, my dear,” she said to Dorothy one day; “particularly when you don’t quite know what you ought to do with it.” Dorothy had always avoided any conversation with her aunt about money since the first moment in which she had thought of accepting Brooke Burgess as her husband.

I have dependents.

And if you be willing, and hear my voice, you shall eat the good of the land.

I know not with what heart a theory like this can be maintained, if the friend of the Count, who had in the Count a god for his companion, is said to have been in unity, and the friend of the Bridegroom to have been excluded from it.

But after that the soul became bound, not with material fetters but with sins, and thus was rendered impotent to act, then it left its body in the ground, and being cast down to the lower regions, it was made the footstool of death, and despicable to all.

He who thus flames a body out of what is vile, cannot He raise the fallen body again?

See, then, whether we ought to yield to one who, holding such opinions, calumniates the Christians, and thus abandon a doctrine which explains the difference existing among bodies as due to the different qualities, internal and external, which are implanted in them.

The believers therefore, and the obedient, He charges to have peace among themselves.

Or was Your fury against the rivers?

The Duke did not approve of Mr. Bonteen.

Be the gifts as distinct as they may, yet the Giver is one, for it was fitting that our Maker should be our Redeemer.

The careful reader may say that my words are an invective rather than an eulogy.

Words have lost their old significance, and to deserve only is not meritorious.

Moreover Christ is described in the Gospel as having appeared in white, and Moses and Elias manifested themselves to the apostles in robes of white.

There was a tacit understanding among them that everything should be done to make the journey pleasant to the young mother who was in search of her son; and, in addition to this, Lady Rowley had her own little understanding, which was very tacit indeed, that in Mr. Glascock might be found an escape from one of their great family difficulties.

The Creator?

“He is my equal in all things,” said Lady Anna, “and he shall be my lord and husband.”

He desired indeed to teach him even by the first words, but when he continued in his vehemence, He did not indeed throw or force him into the denial, but left him alone, that he might learn his own weakness.

“You see he’s such a fellow that you don’t know where to have him,” continued Honyman. “It’s not only that he don’t mind ruining you, but he don’t mind ruining himself either.”

A junior clerk in the secretary’s office was always told off to sleep upon the premises, and he was supposed to be the presiding genius of the establishment when the other members of the Secretary’s department had left the building.

The result of her communication to her father and her relatives in the Windberg-gasse had been by no means so terrible as she had anticipated.

“There could only be one decision,—unless you were man enough to earn your bread.”

For if you are assured that the gods exist whom you suppose, and that they live in the highest regions of heaven, what cause, what reason, is there that those images should be fashioned by you, when you have true beings to whom you may pour forth prayers, and from whom you may, ask help in trying circumstances?

“The lunch is on the table, sir,” said the Groby Park footman in the Groby Park livery.

And I fear that it will anger him, for he loves to have his own way,—especially in doing good; and he thinks that our marriage would rescue me altogether from the danger of this trial.

Then said Peter, What then?

In pointing then to the incurable and unchangeable character of their spirit, he calls it a spirit of slumber.

“Don’t wait for me, aunt; I’m not going,” said Arabella boldly.

Some have thought that this is said of women generally, but it is not so, for why should he introduce anything about women to interfere with his subject? He is speaking of those who hold the rank of Deaconesses.

Everywhere make yourself safe, and your friends also; you have conquered.

Next, he declares also the mode in which God took them, adding another testimony:

“A morsel of jelly, or a little soup. But, Anton, I must tell you — I tell you everything, you know — where do you think the things that he takes have come from? But perhaps you know.”

And Simon said: I should like to know, Peter, if you really believe that the shape of man has been moulded after the shape of God.

Matt. IX. 27-30.

Omnibuses which run over two miles charge some fraction over sixpence for each journey.

There was still ample time for arrangement before the bill would come due, and he would not tell Fanny till he had made up his mind what that arrangement would be.

Gertrude was a stout, healthy girl; and, having £120,000, was entitled to such a husband as himself.

At the first the man was a German; a singularly handsome and dirty individual, who never shaved or washed himself, and lived there, ever alone, on bananas and musk-melons.

Sir Edward showed that the Coolies themselves—for the Anti-Slavery Society is as anxious to prevent this immigration on behalf of the Coolies, who in their own country can hardly earn twopence a day, as it is on the part of the negroes, who could with ease, though they won’t, earn two shillings a day—he showed that these Coolies, after having lived for a few years on plenty in these colonies, return to their own country with that which is for them great wealth.

“Is yours stern, my lord?”

Be angry, and sin not, says David, teaching us that we ought not to assent to the impression, and not to follow it up by action, and so confirm wrath.

Liberius .— I have already taken leave of the brethren who are in that city. The decrees of the Church are of greater importance than a residence in Rome.

Calenus and Piso had given the Senate to understand that Antony was desirous of peace.

But we, little fishes, after the example of our [ΙΧΘΥΣ] Jesus Christ, are born in water, nor have we safety in any other way than by permanently abiding in water; so that most monstrous creature, who had no right to teach even sound doctrine, knew full well how to kill the little fishes, by taking them away from the water!

But those who are over others should show themselves to be such that their subjects may not blush to disclose even their secrets to them; that the little ones, vexed with the waves of temptation, may have recourse to their pastor's heart as to a mother's breast, and wash away the defilement they foresee to themselves from the filth of the sin that buffets them in the solace of his exhortation and in the tears of prayer.

The love which he had seen in her eyes and had heard from her lips had been so sweet to him, that their savour had overcome whatever strength her words possessed.

For John was of noble birth and known to the high priest, yet was so little appalled by the plottings of the Jews that he introduced Peter into his court, and was the only one of the apostles bold enough to take his stand before the cross.

He had been a prophet from the womb, and needed not the commandment, Hear Him.

And besides what I have said, his credit also among the many, and his fall from glory so bright, would cause no ordinary perplexity. For the purple did by no means so much adorn him, as the stain of his sin disgraced him. And ye know of course what a great thing it is for evil deeds to be exposed, and how great a soul is required in such an one, not to despond after the censure of the multitude, and when he has so many witnesses of his own offenses.

Fishermen and tentmakers they were; but they had in a moment mounted even to the height of heaven, and had become more honorable than all earthly kings, being deemed worthy to become the companions of the Lord of the world, and to follow Him whom all beheld with awe.

Another Mrs Bellfield was not impossible; and what, if instead of being a real captain at all, he should be a returned ticket-of-leave man!

He then comes to Samuel, another Nazarite of the Lord, who from infancy was brought up in the tabernacle and was clad in a linen ephod, or, as the words are rendered, in linen vestments: he, too, we are told, begot sons without a stain upon his priestly purity.

“I should like to be a mermaid and catch it,” said Lord George.

Even if you marry the daughter, that won’t give you the mother’s money.

“I cannot say that it will be broken off.”

I confess, then, that being raised by these so great and excellent benefits to a kind of mental ecstasy, I had ceased to fear that I might be the survivor, because I thought him more worthy to live, and therefore received the blow which I am unable to endure, for the wounds of such pain are more easily borne when dwelt upon beforehand than when unexpected.

The vast expanse of heaven, like an azure veil, is interposed between those without, and those who inhabit his royal mansions: while round this expanse the sun and moon, with the rest of the heavenly luminaries (like torch-bearers around the entrance of the imperial palace), perform, in honor of their sovereign, their appointed courses; holding forth, at the word of his command, an ever-burning light to those whose lot is cast in the darker regions without the pale of heaven.

Even the gouty old lord shuffled up out of his chair, and tried, with a grin, to look sweet and pleasant.

Eran.— These things are thus written, but I do not think that you will be able to show that the body, after the ascension into heaven, is called body by the inspired writers.

It was not such a room as one would wish to see inhabited by a beneficed clergyman of the Church of England; but they who know what money will do and what it will not, will understand how easily a man with a family, and with a hundred and thirty pounds a year, may be brought to the need of inhabiting such a chamber.

Now if, looking to the magnitude of his own iniquities, he had despaired of restoration and repentance, he would have missed all which he afterwards obtained: but as it was, looking to the boundlessness of God's tender mercy instead of the enormity of his transgressions, and having broken in sunder the bonds of the devil, he rose up and contended with him, and finished the good course.

“Oh, papa, that’s done and past. Pray let that be among the bygones.”

But with Lucinda Roanoke the accustomed change did not seem to take place.

For since the god is said to have been summoned for this purpose, that he might drive away utterly all the causes by which pestilence was excited, it followed that the state should be safe, and should be always maintained free from pestilential blasts, and unharmed.

There was not much about Mary in this; but still, the little that was said made him again declare that neither father nor mother should move him from his resolution. “I will write to her and say that she may send her present when she pleases. Or I will run down to Malvern for a day. It will do me good to see her.” And so resolved, he rode away to Mill Hill, thinking, as he went, how he would put the matter to Harry Baker.

There seems to be a keener relish of life than among our steadier and more fastidious folk at home, with much less to give the relish.

But why might it be, that then His disciples said, Send away the multitude, but now they said not so; and this, though three days had past? Either being themselves improved by this time, or seeing that the people had no great sense of hunger; for they were glorifying God for the things that were done.

Wherefore all parents who do not beget children with this intention, this will, this purpose, of transferring them from being members of the first man into being members of Christ, but boast as unbelieving parents over unbelieving children—however circumspect they be in their cohabitation, studiously limiting it to the begetting of children—really have no conjugal chastity in themselves.

For on whose account should we do these things?

When he had, in a very few words, declared that the anger he felt towards me was owing to many injuries done him, I for my part answered him thus: Lies possess an immense power among mankind to deceive: but in the Divine Judgment there will be no place for the misunderstandings thus arising.

This is seen more in the physiognomy than in the colour, and is specially to be noticed in the hair.

“There is no offence;—there can be no offence. I am a tailor, and am in no sort ashamed of my trade. But I did not think, sir, that you believed in lords so absolutely as that.”

“You are fit;—none could be fitter; none others so fit. You are as well born as he, and you have the wealth which he wants. You must have it, if, as you tell me, he says that he will cease to claim it as his own. There can be no question of fitness.”

“She’d never have sent for me again,” said the lady, “if it wasn’t all right.”

At that moment he was more in love than ever.

Three or four of the morning papers were of opinion that though Sir Orlando had been a strong man, and a good public servant, the Ministry might exist without him.

“As you are living at present, you are alone in the world!”

The old ferryman took the horse, and went out under the boy’s guidance in quest of the shepherds.

The difficulties which met us on the part of those who were cast out of the temple by Jesus meet us here in a still greater degree.

That was the idea that first took possession of her brain.

Hence it is that there is no restoration of peace granted by the Churches to idolatry or to blood.

now this insignificant breath of Greek laudation raises you to heaven.

[Isaiah 53:2] But He says, that waters have come in even unto His soul; because those multitudes, which under the name of waters He has pointed out, were able so far to prevail as to kill Christ Whence then does He so cry out, as though He were suffering something against His will, except because the Head does prefigure the Members?

We received the former at our birth we attain to the latter by striving, that immortality might not exist to man without any difficulty.

And then will my children be most dear to me, while you are affectionately disposed towards me.

Again, he might call Christ greedy of the blood, not of beasts, but of men, because he said, "He that loses his life for my sake, shall keep it unto life eternal;" [Matthew 10:39] as Faustus reproaches God in reference to those animal sacrifices which prefigured the sacrifice of blood-shedding by which we are redeemed.

“Why should she be wretched?”

And I said, O Lord God, You know.

By degrees, however, her heart became anxious for another object, and, before its birth, the stranger was expected with all the eagerness of a longing mother. Just eight months after the father’s death a second John Bold was born, and if the worship of one creature can be innocent in another, let us hope that the adoration offered over the cradle of the fatherless infant may not be imputed as a sin.

To Cælius it was play—play in which a man might be beaten, or banished, or slaughtered; but it was a game in which men were fighting each for himself.

Whence it is manifest that even now there are many who show forth the life; like as the three thousand then, and the five thousand.

“But Honyman thinks you’d better settle with him,” pleaded Mrs. T. “Then I’ll go to another lawyer,” said Tappitt.

No one ever attempted to gouge me in Kentucky or drew a revolver on me in California.

“Well, it’s getting late,” said Colligan, “and I don’t think I’ll be coming back tonight.”

What, then, is the righteousness by which the devil was conquered?

She turned it all over in her mind, as she sat there watching him in his sleep.

But, as it is written, Eye has not seen nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which God has prepared for them that love Him.

This frowardness also appertains to men—to discard what is wholesome, to accept what is baleful, to avoid all dangerous cures, or, in short, to be eager to die rather than to be healed.

“She is an object of pity,” he said.

But they who dwelt in that earthly Jerusalem, have been moved; first in heart, afterwards by exile.

To Diana, whom they call Proserpine, they hand over the air below.

And therefore it is not to be imagined that there is a kind of blasphemy, as it were, in the words, There is none good save one only, God the Father, as if thereby it may be supposed to be denied that either Christ or the Holy Spirit was good.

Consus, as we have mentioned, lies hidden under ground at the Murcian Goals.

[Genesis 28:12] Who are they that ascend?

It is of a natural endowment that you observe it, since if you were chaste from fear of punishment, and did violence to nature in submitting to so severe a rule, much more ought thou to do alms.

“All went merry as a marriage bell,” at any rate as far as Patience was concerned.

But she never spoke to her child with little tender endearing words, never embraced her,—but was to her a careful nurse rather than a loving mother.

[Acts 15:22] And observe, the more to authenticate the decree, they send men of their own, that there may be no room for regarding Paul and his company with suspicion.

“And perhaps not always that,” said John Eames.

It says also by Esaias, Here am I, and the children that God has given me.

I have done something in the world.

Basil: I acknowledge indeed that the matter is one of deep concern to me, and that I endeavor most earnestly to keep this commandment, but that I have not even half succeeded in so doing, even you yourself would bear me witness if you would leave off talking out of partiality, and simply respect the truth.

They sever the Son of man from the Son of God: you do the same.

Celsus next assails the doctrine of the resurrection, which is a high and difficult doctrine, and one which more than others requires a high and advanced degree of wisdom to set forth how worthy it is of God; and how sublime a truth it is which teaches us that there is a seminal principle lodged in that which Scripture speaks of as the tabernacle of the soul, in which the righteous do groan, being burdened, not for that they would be unclothed, but clothed upon.

“Don’t mention such nonsense, Winifred,” said her husband, “trying to frighten the boy. There isn’t a human being between this and Ballyglunin for whom I won’t be responsible. Till you come to a mile of the station it’s all my own property.”

Mr. M’Ruen always did keep Charley waiting fifteen minutes, and so he was no whit surprised; the doing so was a part of the tremendous interest which the wretched old usurer received for his driblets of money.

How is it that though he nowhere else writes to the Clergy, not in Rome, nor in Corinth, nor in Ephesus, nor anywhere, but in general, to all the saints, the believers, the beloved, yet here he writes to the Clergy? Because it was they that sent, and bare fruit, and it was they that dispatched Epaphroditus to him.

“You can say that I’ve got a headache,” said Trevelyan. So Mr. Glascock returned to his friends, and did say that Mr. Trevelyan had a headache. It was the first time that a name had been mentioned between them.

“God forbid that there should be any permanent separation. If he be obstinate, it may be well that you should be away from him for a week or two. Why can’t a man wash his dirty linen at home, if he has any to wash. His, at any rate, did not come to him with you.”

“Does Dorothy know anything of this?” asked Stanbury.

For do not look to those who are begirt with the golden girdles, nor those who are borne on horses, nor those who shine in kings' palaces on account of their fathers, nor those who have footmen and tutors.

“But he’s idle. Isn’t he idle?”

And in like manner, the husband has not power over his own body, but the wife.

Here upon the earth in this life He shall smite many heads.

You can do the same, and I shall not say a word to you.” Then she withdrew her arm from him, and, leaving him, walked across the room and joined her mother.

Why, they are absolutely the same marriages as God made at the very first.

Mr. Greenwood knew well that this was only the beginning of his troubles.

And in my discourse I shall use a certain order and consecution, such as those who are very expert in these matters employ towards those who desire to investigate any subject intelligently.

The story of his murder by those who had the young King of Egypt in their keeping is well known and need not detain us.

Let all bitterness, and anger, and wrath, and clamour, and blasphemy, be put away from you.

On this occasion, Proclus the bishop preached a sermon in the church in which he applied a prophecy out of Ezekiel to the deliverance effected by God in the late emergency, and was in consequence much admired.

John 11:16

George said nothing further that night to his uncle about Caroline, but he sat longing that the old man might again broach the subject.

With care o'erpowered it succumbs to death.

Ah yes;—it was indeed too late.

Nevertheless after such great calamities of this kind he was not petulant, but what does he say— The Lord gave, the Lord has taken away; as it seemed good unto the Lord even so has it come to pass, blessed be the name of the Lord for ever.

“He’s a friend of mine,” said the Colonel. “You must let him come with me.”

That hero must have wings tinged with azure, whereas Hamel had a not much more ætherealised than ordinary coat and waistcoat.

But Sir William knew it, and those who remained close to him got over that trouble.

For more blessed, says Christ, are they who have not seen, and yet have believed; [John 20:29] since, even if the resurrection of the flesh must be denied to them, it must at any rate be a fitting boon to us, who are the more blessed.

Richard had been told, both by Herbert and by Aunt Letty, that he had better remain and live on a small patch of land that should be provided for him.

Do we not see the physicians acting thus: how, when it may be done, they humor the whims of their patients, but when the gratification does harm, then they will not spare?

Furthermore, the Egyptians whom I have now mentioned are divided in their objects of worship.

Well indeed was this admirably wise and accomplished man acquainted with the cruel character of the times. He proceeds:

It was now some years since he had declared that though Mr. Carroll,—or Captain Carroll, as he had then been called,—was an improvident, worthless, drunken Irishman, he would never see his sister want.

But the numbers are by no means equal, showing instead a vast preponderance in favor of the States.

Wherefore we are also the same body.

You mustn’t stay long, because Miss Gauntlet and I am going out.

Dear Duke of Omnium,

What then is the charge they bring against us?

Therefore, says the holy Methodius, by this earthly house must metaphorically be understood our short-lived existence here, and not this tabernacle; for if you decide to consider the body as being the earthly house which is dissolved, tell us what is the tabernacle whose house is dissolved?

Or do you think otherwise?

For man to discover the divine nature, and to make it, surpasses the wonder of all other wonderful things.

Early in July, Frank was to come home.

He himself was dying at the moment, as he thought.

Nevertheless, on the day but one after this, Camilla French did go to Gloucester.

Their first edict had been, Whoever shall confess himself a Christian, let him be smitten.

Revelation is his word; implying that although He be not seen, yet He is, and is present even now, and then shall appear.

In doing all this he by no means acted in perfect concert with Lord George, nor did he often stay or even dine at the house in Munster Court.

His yellow trousers and the manners which accompanied them were not generally acceptable in merchants’ offices and suchlike places.

“The quarrel is made up,” said Cradell.

Well has inspired David discoursed of our frailty, and again in these words, Let me know the shortness of my days; and he defines the days of man as of a span long.

This he may occupy or not as he pleases; but when he is not there it is expected that his place shall be filled by the Government Secretary.

And then the slaves had been manumitted.

“That is so good of you! I told her that I was sure you were goodnatured, because you answered so civilly. It was a kind of experiment of hers, you know.”

She said that she would, but the tone in which she said it, hardly gave confirmation to her promise.

But such a view is both foolish and impious, since the other Scriptures testify against this interpretation and declare that, when we are somewhat more advanced, we shall be equal to the angels.

And she brought forth, he says, a man-child, who is to rule all the nations; by which is meant that the Church, always bringing forth Christ, the perfect man-child of God, who is declared to be God and man, becomes the instructor of all the nations.

To guard against this, he has not only charged them not to strive about words, but to render his discourse more alarming, he adds, to the subverting of the hearers.

Madeline Neroni, when she was left alone, could not help pondering much on the singular interview she had had with this singular man.

He, as being the governor of the temple, learns the ten books called Hieratic; and they contain all about the laws, and the gods, and the whole of the training of the priests.

She was not, she thought, fit to be the wife of a very poor man; but she conceived of herself that she would do very well as a future Lady Peterborough in the drawing-rooms of Monkhams.

When he told her that Annesley had been the last in London to see his brother Mountjoy, and had described the nature of the scene that had occurred between them, he had no doubt forgotten that he himself had subsequently seen his brother.

He had been a poor sickly creature, always ailing, gifted with an affectionate nature, and a great respect for the blood of the Mackenzies, but not gifted with much else that was intrinsically his own.

John 11:15

What are the waters?

She did not even begrudge Mr. Benjamin the diamonds,—or Lord George, if in truth Lord George had been the last thief.

[1 John 2:19] But what shall become of the little ones?

This was the only disturbance which took place, and it passed off altogether to the credit of the Frau.

It had seemed to him that there was no possible reason why he should not fall in love as well as another.

It is indeed a happy circumstance, that most of their doctrines, including even the harshest, accord to our God the entire formation of man.

“Of course she is,” said Plantagenet, lifting up his hand to his hair.

Quod autem ex consensu ad tempus orationi vacat conjugium, doctrina est continentiæ.

Or why may we not hope that, as some of the laity are likely to survive, some of the clergy may also be spared, by whom the necessary ordinances may be dispensed to them?

But the mouth that lies slays the soul.

Therefore reflection itself, advancing by regular order, and weighing everything, leads us to that excellent and surpassing good, on account of which we are born.

“Coming here, is he?” said Sir Magnus. “Then he will just have to go back again as wise as he came.”

“Crushed him!”

Why do you busy yourselves with words, while you keep aloof from deeds, puffed up with praise, but cast down by misfortunes?

He has removed the greater part of your burden.

Are we to measure our wisdom by the Persian Schœne, or by the cubits of a child, and to write so imperfectly as not to write at all but to copy the midday shadows, or lines which meet right in front of you, whose lengths are foreshortened and which show themselves in glimpses rather than plainly, being recognized only by certain of their extremities?

‘Does that mean to say that you are not to be here for my marriage?’ This she said with her sweetest smile, making all the effort in her power to give a gracious tone to her voice. It was better, she knew, to plunge at the subject at once.

The common term, again, for all the intellectual world, is with the Apostle that which is not seen [Colossians 1:16]: by withdrawing all idea of comprehension by the senses he leads the mind on to the immaterial and intellectual.

What shall we have therefore?

The pressure against the stream was so great, owing partly to the weight of the raft and partly to the fact that its flat head buried itself in the water, that it was almost immovable against the stream, although the mortar was not yet on it.

When does he slumber?

While she was yet speaking, he brought her back into the room, supporting her with his arm round her waist; and when the door was closed he stood over her still holding her up, and looking down into her face, which was turned up to his. “Why do you not speak to me, Anton?” she said. But she smiled as she spoke, and there was nothing of fear in the tone of her voice, for his look was kind, and there was love in his eyes.

The gentleman who paid him forty-five shillings a week,— the manager, in short, of the “ Penny Dreadful,”—might tell us something of him.

And by the expression, till it, no other kind of labour is implied than the observance of God's command, lest, disobeying, he should destroy himself, as indeed he did destroy himself, by sin.

“I don’t know where it is she’s lame,” said that very clever man, Captain Boodle, who had lately reappeared among his military friends at his club, “but she don’t go flat all round.”

Let us then be very thoughtful both for our wives, and children, and servants; knowing that we shall thus be establishing for ourselves an easy government, and shall have our accounts with them gentle and lenient, and say, Behold I, and the children which God has given me.

Therefore in the eyes of the Lord each thousand of years is ordained, for I find that the Lord's eyes are seven.

But when we suffer anything of tribulation, of trials, of offenses on this earth (as we suffer only from the inferior part of ourselves; i.e.

And 'going through the midst of them, He went His way,' and 'so passed by [Luke 4:30].'

This thing only I consider, that I may in truth advance.

Under the present household arrangement of Groby Park all the servants lived on board wages.

Therefore He suffered even the chief apostle to fall, both rendering him more humbled in mind, and training him thenceforth to greater love.

He had been born of a virgin, from cradle and childhood He had grown to man's estate, through sleep and hunger and thirst and weariness and tears He had lived man's life: even now He was to be spitted on, scourged, crucified.

For he that comes unto Him must not deck himself out with such garments, but be clothed with virtue.

But it can hardly be called fashionable, as is Piccadilly; or central, as is Charing Cross; or commercial, as is the neighbourhood of St. Paul’s.

[Gregorion] . I certainly do.

And they do not say, Angels have told us; but, We have seen.

And in her heart of hearts she believed that the waltzing had been stopped because she had waltzed with Jack De Baron.

For every soil shall every product bear.

He had come to the war with 120,000 armed men and with 32 elephants, which glittered and gleamed with the sheen of arms like a line of burning lamps, as the sun rose upon them, marching along one by one, like very mountains for size.

For the next day’s dinner the clergyman of the parish, with his wife and daughter, were secured.

For this is what he everywhere especially seeks; the chiefest of good things.

I can fancy you stretching your poor neck over the dyke, longing to fly away that you might cease to be at rest, but knowing that the matrimonial dragon was too strong for any such flight.

I don’t see why all enterprises should not be open to them.

“That’s just what I’m coming to. What’d your lordship advise me to do?”

“I have,—and I do love you, though you won’t believe it. But I am sure I oughtn’t to remain to make you unhappy. I shall never forget all that you have done for me; and though you call me ungrateful, I am not. But I know that I ought not to stay, as I cannot do what you wish. So, if you please, I will go back to Nuncombe.”

At last, a little after seven, she allowed dinner to go in, and following it herself, she sat down and made as good a meal as she could, and endeavoured to answer Thady’s questions about the races and the ball with some appearance of having taken interest, at any rate in the latter.

Or he means this; after God say ye and do everything, do not introduce the Angels besides.

For in this you do not attribute to the Lord Jesus Christ the glory of Deity, but you deny it.

If Jemima thought it right I’m sure she wouldn’t complain.

“I did consult him, sir,” said George, turning red in accordance with that inveterate and stupid habit of his.

But liberal politics had gone on and had left Dr. Harford high and dry on the standing-ground which he had chosen for himself in the early days of his manhood.

But that would not have settled the question, as England could not have ceded what she did not possess.

III. Fights are necessary to prove our Faith

Doomed himself to such a fatal necessity, the part of himself which he has given over to condemnation might pardon him, if he were as humble as he is miserable.

According to the form of God, He and the Father are one; according to the form of a servant, He came not to do His own will, but the will of Him that sent Him.

This abstinence will by no means be able to benefit us as much as the participation in spiritual instruction conveys to us benefit and advantage.

What’s the use of my loving you, and thinking that you are everything, only that you are to love me?

The true [Thesaurus to wit, the Disputation conducted in Carchar, a city of Mesopotamia, before Manippus and Aegialeus and Claudius and Cleobolus, who acted as judges.

Sir Francis Travels With Miss Altifiorla

1 Corinthians 15:10

[Matthew 24:40-41; Luke 17:34-35] What will be the state of their souls, when they see some indeed taken up, but themselves left behind?

There we shall see, and our heart shall rejoice.

But why were so many allowed to occupy sacred tenements without interference, unless because supplication had long been addressed in vain to such a crowd of gods, and so by degrees the sacred places were deserted of worshippers, and being thus vacant, could without offense be put at least to some human uses?

Who were they then, who prophetically named this spot Golgotha, in which Christ the true Head endured the Cross?

Mr. Scott intended, when the present session was over, to retire from the labours of parliamentary life.

He owned houses in London from which he still got some income.

Shall I not visit for these things?

[Mark 10:11] And he said unto them, Every one who puts away his wife, and [39] marries another, has exposed her to adultery.

And here, in England, history, that nursing mother of fiction, has given hunting men honours which they here never fairly earned.

During the translation a blind man was healed.

How is it that there is no unrighteousness in Him?

And when he wrote his Epistle to them, it was as signifying this that he said, For you became imitators of the Churches of God which are in Judæa, for you also suffered the same things of your own countrymen, even as they did of the Jews.

“It would be better to leave them near her on the table.”

If he had come before Mr Crosbie it would have all been well with her.

Such were always his thoughts as he sat idle, silent, moody, over the fire; and his wife well knew their currents.

Et adhuc similiter:—

By a falsehood Joseph in love to his brethren deceived them; and that too while swearing 'by the life of Pharaoh [Genesis 42:15 but his brethren had really lied to him, in their envy plotting his death and then his enslavement.

We must take care, however, to understand, that the anger of God is free from any turbulent emotion; for His anger is an expression for His just method of taking vengeance: as the law might be said to be angry when its ministers are moved to punish by its sanction.

They had brought with them a piano and a few books, mostly French;—and with these it seemed to have been intended that the two ladies should make their future lives endurable.

That the strength of Christ may rest upon me. Here he hints at another thing also, namely, that in proportion as the trials waxed in intensity, in the same proportion the grace was increased and continued.

[1 Corinthians 15:10] It is no contradiction that they who are mountains be also valleys: for as they are called mountains because of their spiritual greatness, so also valleys because of the humility of their spirit.

[Luke 22:44] What is this flowing of sweat from His whole Body, but the suffering of martyrs from the whole Church?

And then it was decided that Jane should go home with him—for there was a brother squire who, it was thought, might have an eye to Jane;—and Lucy, the younger, should be taken to Framley parsonage.

And all this was found in Christ who, by virtue of the mystery of the manhood and Divinity joined together in Him who ever was, could say that He already was.

And not even that did they reap as they deserved.

I do not mean to say that he omitted to notice misconduct among his clergy, immorality in his parish, or omissions in his family, but he was not anxious to do so where the necessity could be avoided.

If you acknowledge the authority of the mistress, you will own it also in the disciple.

“Then, when the deuce will you pay me what you owe me?” Sir Felix was driven to this plain expression of his demand by the impassibility of his debtor.

For when you strive individually to excel each other in reputation for more recondite knowledge, you both overthrow the very gods in whom you believe, and replace them by others who have clearly no existence; and different men give different opinions on the same subjects, and you write that those whom general consent has ever received as single persons are infinite in number.

[Philippians 3:13] The Lord Himself says: "No man that puts his hand to the plough, and looks back, is fit for the kingdom of Heaven."

But taking the numerous chemists’ shops which we see from street to street, we believe that modest comfort is more often attained than great wealth.

But then in faith we have both seen and known.

Everything that the late lord had possessed was left, in one line, to his best-beloved friend, the Signorina Camilla Spondi; and it was stated, and very fully explained, that Camilla Spondi was the Italian lady living at the Grange at the date on which the will was made.

In the Epistle of Paul to the Romans: The sufferings of this present time are not worthy of comparison with the glory that is to come after, which shall be revealed in us.

That men in high places should be dishonest, and that the people should be cheated by their rulers, is very bad.

For from Sion shall proceed the law, and the word of the Lord from Jerusalem; and He shall judge among the nations, and shall rebuke much people; and they shall beat their swords into ploughshares, and their spears into pruning-hooks, and they shall no more learn to fight.

Everything had now gone as the Duke wished; and he was prepared to celebrate some little ovation with his young friend before he left the house in Park Lane.

Treatise XII (Book 3)

But, if you like, let us discuss this point, and I shall show that God foreknows.

And these I think are to be found in the intentional motions of the soul, whereby it separates itself from its old customary life, and enters on a newer way of conversation, and will clearly teach those acquainted with it that it has become something different from its former self, bearing in it no token by which the old self was recognized.

Be, He says, wise as serpents, and harmless as doves.

Let us call to mind how the Magi of the East worshipped and paid tribute to the Lord; let us estimate the weariness of that long pilgrimage to Bethlehem of Judah.

The Epistle of Ignatius to the Magnesians

It was a new light to me.

Could he have kept from spirits, this man would have made a large fortune and would have deserved it; for he was indefatigable and never-ending in resources.’ Such was the history of poor Mick Maggott.

And straightway he added, Yet count him not as an enemy, but reprove him as a brother [2 Thessalonians 3:15].

But the Lord grant that the Truth and a sound faith in our Lord Jesus Christ may prevail among all, and especially among those to whom you read this.

But if we hold to the succession according to the flesh, we shall be compelled to say that the oracle was false.

There was an order to that effect, and other orders came.

But in order that the wall may not fall, the Lord will support: for He that gives power to the tempter, does Himself to the tempted extend mercy.

That had been early in May, and Ralph Newton had called, and, though there had been difficulties, he had received the money before three days had passed.

This is the God who is Lord of all.

He would be too much moved to think of his timber, and too angry to desire to remain a minute longer than he could help in company with his son.

The not sorrowing would be a sign of love.

“Mary, I have done it all for the best,” said Mrs. Thomas, driven to defend herself by the obdurate silence of her pupil.

He had his high mission to complete, his great duties to perform, and doubtless would find some noble lady as a fit mother for his children.

She was not sure as to the law, and asked herself whether it would be possible for her to consult an attorney.

98per month, or forty-eight per cent.

Cricket requires appendages which are troublesome and costly, and by which the minds of economical fathers are astounded.

“Certainly I think that I could. He has exerted himself this morning, whereas I have advised him not to exert himself. He could have given himself the same counsel, and would certainly live longer by obeying it than the reverse. As there is no difficulty in the matter, there need be no conceit on my part in saying that so far my advice might be of service to him.”

I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service.

And in another passage: Behold, the days come, says the Lord, that I will make a new covenant with the house of Jacob, and with the house of Judah; not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day when I arrested their dispensation, in order to bring them out of the land of Egypt.

And when she has learned these things, she so conducts herself, in all respects, that her service, her cheerfulness, her diligence, and her whole mode of life, may be in harmony with the character of her betrothed.

Chapter 6.— Presumption and Arrogance to Be Avoided.

But by adding yet now we know Him so no longer, he manifests His power when weakness is laid aside.

But you believe whatever you please; and for the rest, you appeal to nature.

And again Saul persecuted David, and he fell by the sword of the Philistines.

In this way, therefore, as we have said, they teach that Chronos, who is Saturn, is allegorically time; Rhea is matter; Aides— that is, Orcus— is the depth of the infernal regions; Neptune is water; Jupiter is air— that is, the element of heat; Venus is the loveliness of things; Cupid is desire, which is in all things, and by which posterity is propagated, or even the reason of things, which gives delight when wisely looked into.

Now, has what was said become clear to you, or must one make it still clearer?

Again when Leontius bishop of Ancyra in Galatia Minor, who had taken away a church from the Novatians, was on a visit to Constantinople, Sisinnius went to him, and begged him to restore the church.

Chapter 3. Testimonies to a future judgment

No one examines these matters, no one busies himself about them.

Why do you not rather on this, the side of constancy and trust in God, say, I do my part; I depart not; God, if He choose, will Himself be my protector?

“You thought there was no obstacle but what you might become man and wife legally?”

[Job 1:11] At other times it allows something strange to be done in order that something great and marvellous might be accomplished through the seemingly-strange act, as when the salvation of men was brought about through the Cross.

For how does flesh return, a spirit walking and not turning back, while a weight of evil deserts does weigh it down unto the lowest and far places of evil, save through the election of grace?...For thus also is solved this no unimportant question, how it is written in the Proverbs, when the Scripture was speaking of the way of iniquity, all they that walk in her shall not return.

No dangling strings gave them an appearance of senile imbecility.

Chapter II. The Existence of the Devil Affirmed

“Of course she’s innocent,” said Snengkeld; “from the very moment the words was spoken by the foreman. If any newspaper was to say she wasn’t she’d have her action.”

And in like manner Gabriel says: To blot out transgressions, and make reconciliation for sins.

Nourish yourselves up in the words of faith. Exercise yourselves unto godliness: for bodily exercise profits little; but godliness is profitable for all things, having the promise of the life which now is, and that which is to come. [1 Timothy 4:6-8]

No doubt that he should suffer for the name of the Lord, not that he should be bought off.

Now the former, indeed, whom we have described as being of better morals, if a true faith be his, surpasses the second one, although both will be in heaven; yet if the faith be wanting to him, he is so surpassed by him that he himself is not there at all.

He was obliged to say that he would, but it did seem to him that Scarrowby was a sort of penal servitude to which he was about to be sent with his own concurrence.

Through how many heavens will it not pass?

Why, he’s thirty, and has been eating soup, they tell me, all through the journey.” These young men had brought a doctor with them, Dr MacNuffery, to prescribe to them what to eat and drink at each meal; and the unfortunate baronet whom Jack had nearly slaughtered, had encountered the ill-will of the entire club because he had called for mutton-broth when he was seasick.

For ye, he says, compelled me.

“What, old Sarcinet?”

“I wouldn’t have her if she owned every fox-cover in the county. No, by Jove! I know a trick worth two of that. It’s jolly enough to see them going, but as to being in love with them—in that sort of way—”

Neither did the apostle scruple to go on to say, For this cause God shall send upon them the working of error that they should believe a lie.

She had done nothing for her own pleasure.

Do you see that to suffer for one's enemies is a sweet-smelling savor, and an acceptable sacrifice? And if you shall die, then will you be indeed a sacrifice. This it is to imitate God.

“Excellent. I know no one whom I esteem more than Lady Cantrip.”

At the period of which I am speaking—January, 1862—the health of the army of the Potomac was not as good as it had been, and was beginning to give way under the effects of the winter.

All the world knows that it is but a very little distance from Hampton Church to Hampton Court Bridge, especially when one has the stream with one. They were very soon near to the bridge, and as they approached it, they had to pass a huge barge, that was lazily making its way down to Brentford.

After the refutation and rejection of such perverse opinions, we shall show, at the proper time and place, how those passages which they quote from the sacred Scriptures ought to be understood.

Some people thought him too old for me, but I never found him so. You know I was but a child when he married me, and love has been so mingled with esteem, and esteem so strengthened by respect, and respect so heightened by veneration, that—that—heigho!— Poor Brudo—poor, poor Brudo!

I will not do so.

She could sympathize neither with her relative’s faults or virtues.

“His Royal Highness is an old fool,” said Mary, laughing.

thing but composure to the inevitable, happily inevitable day, when Australia shall follow in the same path.

[Exodus 3:6] The voice came from the fire, and the voice was in the bush, and the fire did no harm.

She had lost the dearest husband that a woman had ever worshipped.

For our one Father, God, lives, and our mother, the Church; and neither are we dead who live to God, nor do we bury our dead, inasmuch as they too are living in Christ.

“Think of you, sir?” ejaculated Frank.

[Proverbs 8:22-23] Then that the Word was produced, through whom all things were made, and without whom nothing was made.

Love him!

With what grace must the soul be equipped, and the mind trained and taught to stand firm, so as never to be disturbed by any fears, to be broken by any troubles, or to yield to any torments!

But we have said already that it must be something that we cannot lose against our will.

For only thus they thought they would be enabled to constitute some one who held their own sentiments bishop of Alexandria.

Ralph the heir did indeed think that he would be accepted, and he went on to discuss the circumstances of their future home, almost as though Mary Bonner were already employed in getting together her wedding garments. His companion said nothing further, and Ralph the heir did not discover that anything was amiss.

So let us smite their heart.

Now, lest I seem to accuse him without reason, let me make a digression to tell who this Manes is, and in part what he teaches: for all time would fail to describe adequately the whole of his foul teaching.

The mother last, as round the nest she flew,

For after the Persians, Alexander of Macedon obtained the sovereign power on subverting Darius, as is also shown by the brass on the image.

But are there many, think you, among us who would find the question so unanswerable as yourself?

“I do not wish to be uncourteous,” said Trevelyan, “but if you have no assurance to give me, you had better—leave me.”

His steps lagged behind his will.

“They are very hard to manage,” said Mrs. Harold Smith to herself, thinking of her own sex.

He got it into his head that the girl had merely written to ask the permission of her former suitor to marry this new lordly lover, and, though he did love the girl, with a passion which the girl could never feel for the lord, he wrote back and refused the offer.

Mr. John Smith would be sure to have a larger balance at his banker’s than Charles Smith or Orlando Smith,—or perhaps than any other Smith whatever.

It is said that they have quarrelled.

This thing therefore this Asaph has understood.

Show forth therefore a life worthy of His grace; that even as it is everywhere preached, so this light may everywhere accompany the same.

“Hunting is not one of your amusements.”

“It won’t do, nohow, to unbar the door.”

Whenever Thady’s trial was spoken of;—and Mary, by continually recurring to the subject, had made the old man at last comprehend that his son was to be tried;—but whenever it was spoken of now, he merely expressed his approbation, and a wish that Thady might be punished, for making friends with such a reptile as Keegan—for deserting his father, and planning to cheat him out of his house and his property.

These men were all warmly clothed, but clothed apparently with an endeavor to contract as much mud as might be possible.

But since your mother has judged so faithfully concerning baptism, let her fast only one day before baptism.]

“Sir Lionel is undoubtedly a very pleasant man; no one, I fancy, could help liking his society.”

For God has raised up princes to rescind the impious and sanguinary edicts of the tyrants and provide for the welfare of mankind; so that now the cloud of past times is dispelled, and peace and serenity gladden all hearts.

23. But this did not seriously injure the church, for Theodotus restored their affairs, being straightway made bishop of that parish by God himself, the Saviour of all. He justified by his deeds both his lordly name and his office of bishop. For he excelled in the medical art for bodies, and in the healing art for souls. Nor did any other man equal him in kindness, sincerity, sympathy, and zeal in helping such as needed his aid. He was also greatly devoted to divine learning. Such an one was he.

“Her friend!” he said to himself.

Captain Clayton’s First Triumph

He grew thin, and still thinner.

Nay, they openly overthrow your gods, and in their writings they attack your superstitions; and you applaud them for it.

But even if you could not have thought of the explanation, that one was his own father, and the other adopted, you should not have been so ready to put yourself in opposition to such high authority.

The elements of the world are either without life, or have issued out of this stage into life, but Christ is life, born to be living God from the living God.

She should not have expressed the idea that her order for Mr. Slope’s expulsion could be treated otherwise than by immediate obedience.

Stoffle.SO here we are, neighbour Souch, guarding our own city like three warriors; subject to no one; our own lords and masters; the worthy guardians of the liberty of Flanders! Those were Captain Steinmark’s own words, and proud words they were for us to hear. ‘Twas fear of us that made the Austrians run away. Think of that, Gabby Souch!

[Matthew 6:8] Therefore do we make known unto You our love, in confessing unto You our own miseries and Your mercies upon us, that You may free us altogether, since You have begun, that we may cease to be wretched in ourselves, and that we may be blessed in You; since You have called us, that we may be poor in spirit, and meek, and mourners, and hungering and thirsty after righteousness, and merciful, and pure in heart, and peacemakers.

Every one knew that a tocsin bell to be duly rung, should be rung long and loud—not with a little merry jingle, such as befitted the announcement of a wedding, but in a manner to strike astonishment, if not alarm, into its hearers; and on this occasion great justice was done to the tocsin.

If any one should be tempted to unbelief, let him look at what occurs now near the tomb and the statue of Constantine , and then he must admit the truth of what God has said in the Scriptures, Them that honour Me I will honour, and they that despise Me shall be lightly esteemed.

And as regards the number seven, the case is similar: if, for example we divide 28 into 7, we have nothing over; for seven times four are 28, and nothing remains; (wherefore) they say that seven is the root.

It is a thousand pities that, in that matter, Brisket could not have seen his way.

“Oh, yes; very much. Nothing could be nicer. Only I am afraid it’s expensive.” This was a subject on which Caroline could talk to him.

“And where on hearth has the twelve hundred pounds gone?” asked the son, looking severely at the father.

Again He convicts them by a parable, intimating both their unreasonable obstinacy, and the submissiveness of those who were utterly condemned by them.

It was the solitude of her position which maddened her: its solitude, or the necessity of breaking that solitude by the presence of those who were odious to her.

And he wore no other beard, no tuft, no imperial, no moustachios; but when he was seen before shaving on a morning, he would seem to be black all over, and his hair was black, short, and harsh; and though black, round about his ears it was beginning to be tinged with grey.

“Well, as you ask me, I will. We’ll have nothing more said about the duke, either now or when he comes back; not a word. Let me see—he’s to be back;—when is it?”

For the Son is in the Father and the Father in the Son; since such as is the latter, such is the former, and such as is the former, such is the latter; and herein is the Unity.

[Acts 5:40] How were they persuaded?

Lady Mason remained at The Cleeve for something more than a week after that day on which she made her confession, during which time she was fully committed to take her trial at the next assizes at Alston on an indictment for perjury.

But the Squire had answered that he hadn’t got his Sunday face on, and had persevered.

It is hard to say why a good story should not have a fair chance of success whatever may be its bent; why it should not be reckoned to be good by its own intrinsic merits alone; but such is by no means the case.

“I’ve just been at the mill, and I didn’t see him.”

To Christ, as having glory, God is Father: to Christ, as being Jesus, God is God.

The chief stumbling-block in the passage is that the Son is said to be subject to the Father.

“I should hope not that, Walter.”

If he have any softness of heart, it will be necessary to him that love should bear a part in all these interests.

As says the prophet, Heaven is my throne, and earth is my footstool: what house will you build for me?

He would have to give up his friendship with the signora, his resistance to Mr. Harding, his antipathy—no, he found on mature self-examination that he could not bring himself to give up his antipathy to Dr. Grantly.

And in another place he says, forbearing threatening [Ephesians 6:9], wishing to make them more gentle; for those were perfect men; that is, with what measure you mete, it shall be measured unto you.

For if it be that a man seeks to find his rest in wealth, he is rendered proud rather than at ease.

Let us not then speak at random what comes into our mind.

Christ is illumined, let us shine forth with Him.

And now the more benevolent God is, the more impious men are; for He desires us from slaves to become sons, while they scorn to become sons.

Even though thou believe the body of the Christ to be real and bring it to the altar for transformation, and fail to distinguish the nature of the body and of the Godhead we shall say to you, 'If you offer rightly and fail to distinguish rightly, you sin, hold your peace.'

These instructions, concerning the building of churches were sent by the emperor to the bishops in every province: but what he wrote to Eusebius of Palestine respecting the preparation of some copies of the Scriptures, we may ascertain from the letters themselves:

Was he not willing to give up his fellowship, and the society of Lady Ongar, and everything else, for her sake?

He did not know on what footing, with reference to each other, his son and Lady Harcourt now stood; but he did know that they had loved each other, and been betrothed for years; he did know, also, that she had left her husband, and that that husband and his son had been the closest friends.

For frequent instruction to those who give heed, is salutary and profitable; but to those who are listless, it is injurious, and exceedingly perilous; for the oftener any one hears, the greater punishment does he draw upon himself, if he does not practise what is told him.

For since he had said, What have I to do with judging those without; lest any one should think that these were left unpunished, there is another tribunal which he sets over them, and that a fearful one.

But he, Mr. Western, had caught it altogether, and had believed it.

And, even at his age, Sir Henry might have been said to have done this had his aspirations been in any way moderate.

Is it not contrary to duty to take knowingly what has been got by a thief, so that he who has lost it is cheated out of it?

Look not at the poor man, that he comes to you filthy and squalid, but consider that Christ by him is setting foot in your house, and cease from your fierceness, and your relentless words, with which you are even aspersing such as come to you, calling them impostors, idle, and other names more grievous than these.

They got on to Baden,—with very little delay at Strasbourg, and found half an hotel prepared for their reception. Here the carriage was brought into use for the first time, and the mistress of the carriage talked of sending home for Dandy and Flirt. Mr Palliser, when he heard the proposition, calmly assured his wife that the horses would not bear the journey. “They would be so out of condition,” he said, “as not to be worth anything for two or three months.”

He was roused, and was disposed to make her know that, old as he was, and bald, and forced to wear awkward shoes, and to stump along heavily, still he could force her to become his wife and to minister to his wants.

But I know what many will retort to all that I have said; they will say, Why did you not lay down this rule for yourself as well?

Or whither shall I flee from Your presence?

And observe how logically He has joined together the spirit and the truth: He called God a Spirit, that He might distinguish Him from bodies; and He named Him the truth, to distinguish Him from a shadow or an image.

Lizzie regarded all this as romance.

129. Lastly, to prove that He spoke as man, He says: The Father that sent Me, He bears witness of Me. [John 8:18] But His testimony as God is true, as He Himself says: My record is true: for I know whence I come, and whither I go, but you know not whence I come, and whither I go. You judge after the flesh. [John 8:14-15] They judge then not after the Godhead but after the manhood, who think that Christ had not the power of bearing witness.

“I needn’t bring you with me, you know,” she said to Fitzgerald. “You can get over the stones easily, and I can go very well by myself.”

[1 Peter 3:22] And the Apostle Paul, writing to the Romans, says, It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God.

He that has seen me has seen the Father.

Then, lest this should seem to be laying down a law, he subjoins, [1 Corinthians 7:28] but if you marry, you have not sinned. He next alleges the existing state of things, the present distress, the shortness of the time, and the affliction. For marriage draws along with it many things, which indeed he has glanced at, as well here as also in the discourse about continence: there, by saying, the wife has not power over herself; and here, by the expression, You are bound.

How this had come to pass she did not think to inquire.

Then the gentleman thought that Miss Melmotte would be able to get through her troubles without much suffering.

Hence seeking is called sucking; for to those babes that seek the Word, the Father's breasts of love supply milk.

He was a short, stumpy man, with red cheeks and a round face; who was usually to be seen till dinnertime dressed in a very old shooting coat, with breeches, gaiters, and very thick shoes.

And the one indeed sits as judge of things that are open; yea, rather, not of all these even, but of such as can be fully proved; and ofttimes moreover, even in these deals treacherously , but this court instructs those that enter it that He that judges in our case, will bring forward all things naked and laid open, [Hebrews 4:13] before the common theatre of the world, and that to be hidden will be impossible.

Her mouth had all the richness of youth, and the full enticing curves and ruby colour of Anglo-Saxon beauty.

The gallant beast went at it bravely, slightly swerving from the fatal spot to which Peregrine had endeavoured once more to guide him, leaped with a full spring from the unworn turf, and, barely touching the bank, landed himself and his master lightly within the precincts of the wood.

Nor had I now any longer my wonted excuse, that as yet I hesitated to be above the world and serve You, because my perception of the truth was uncertain; for now it was certain.

He had become certain that her mad love for the man had perished.

Chapter 16. The Privation of Memory is Forgetfulness.

“And that was the truth?”

“Yes, I will. If it costs me an extra £50 I shan’t begrudge it. It shall be a sort of memorial building, a farmhouse of thanksgiving. I’ll make it as snug a place as there is about the property. It has made me wretched for these two years.”

For not only by leading into fornication can he destroy, but even by the contrary, the unmeasured sorrow following on the repentance for it.

This was effected by means of a few obscure bishops of that sect convening a Synod at the village of Pazum, which is situated near the sources of the river Sangarius; for there they framed a canon appointing its observance on the same day as that on which the Jews annually keep the feast of Unleavened Bread.

Enough!

But an Arian has no faith but this (close your ears, my hearers, that you may not be defiled by words so grossly impious), that the Father alone is very God, and that Jesus Christ our Saviour is a creature, and the Holy Ghost the Servant of both.

“Well, yes; lovely is a very strong word.”

I console and comfort him as best I can, by making myself surety for your mind, and assuring him that you will not continue thus to grieve us.

There was the great porter question still unsettled.

And it should be always remembered that Cicero spoke as an advocate, and that the praise and censure of an advocate require to be taken with many grains of salt.

But he mixed up this information with so much medical Latin, and was so pompous over it, and the bishop was so anxious to be rid of him, that his words did not have much effect.

But as soon as he found that his hopes were vain, that the Cheshire Cheese had been no steppingstone to such honour, and that his money had been spent for nothing, his mind reverted to its old form.

What are eternal years?

Therefore he says, And I, brethren, (again he uses the word brethren, to smooth down the harshness of the utterance,) came not with excellency of speech, declaring unto you the testimony of God.

“I have dined really. If I had remembered that you were going to display your cookery, I would have kept some of my energy, but I forgot it.”

But slavery has not caused it, seeing that other points of difference are to be found in every circumstance and feature of the two people.

You need not fear that.

Euhemerus relates that the same Uranus was the first who reigned on earth, using these words: In the beginning Cœlus first had the chief power on earth: he instituted and prepared that kingdom for himself together with his brothers.

At last they went;—but then, just as she was escaping, he put his hand upon her and reminded her of her appointment.

Some say that when he was about to depart, he said to John, 'I hope that you will not die a bishop': to which John replied, 'Expect not to arrive at your own country.'

‘Why not? Why should you not go out to Folking?’

If to swear is of the evil one, how great the penalty which false swearing will bring!

When he became Consul then he became a politician, and after that there was certainly no vacillation in his views.

But as for these answers which we have made to him, with the help of God, I admonish your Christian love, that you not only communicate them to those who seek for them, but also force them on those who show no longing for them.

”GENERAL POST OFFICE,

Had he been elected a member of the municipal corporation of Loughshane, instead of its representative in the British Parliament, Laurence Fitzgibbon could not have made less fuss about it.

“Who’s the oldest man in the parish?” asked Mr. Quickenham; “the oldest with his senses still about him.” The parson reflected for awhile, and then said that he thought Brattle, the miller, was as old a man as there was there, with the capability left to him of remembering and of stating what he remembered.

Mary assured her that she would not be provoked, and of course asked no more questions about Mary Scatcherd; nor did she think much more about it. It was not so however with her ladyship, who could not keep herself from reflecting that the old clergyman in the Close at Barchester certainly had but two sons, one of whom was now the doctor at Greshamsbury, and the other of whom had perished so wretchedly at the gate of that farmyard. Who then was the father of Mary Thorne?

“Josiah,” said his wife to him, when they were alone, “you will not refuse it?”

This, then, they doubted, and desired to know if John and Elijah were the same.

It seemed to him as though nothing but a spider could creep down that perpendicular abyss.

Now as to this abuse, we ourselves, after we had by God's permission acceded to the dignity of the episcopate, forbade it entirely in our Church, and by no means permitted the evil custom to be taken up anew, remembering that, when Abraham demanded for a price a sepulchre for the burial of his wife's body from the sons of Emor, that is from Ephron the son of Seor, the latter refused to accept a price, lest he should appear to have made profit out of a corpse [Genesis 23].

Hebrews 12:18-24

Had it not been that with a half obedience to his wife’s hints Michel said little about Adrian, there must have been an explosion.

Behold, you shall conceive, and shall bring forth a son, and shall call His name Jesus.

Containing an Answer to the Love Letter

What I called Timothy, that I call him also.

For he did not leave those of his own kind, and waste his labor on the irrational creatures, (an act of excessive vainglory and extreme folly,) but being clear of this as well as of other passions, he was earnest on one point only, that all the world might learn somewhat of the things which might profit it, and be able to translate it from earth to heaven.

He talked in such a way that there was no appearance of whispering, and yet the person to whom he spoke, and she only, could hear what he said.

“When you had found your diamonds, you thought of me,—was it not so?”

I am so stiff that I can’t sit upright, and everybody is cross to me, and everything is uncomfortable.

“That she shall do.”

His accusation of Verres was made on the same side in politics, and was carried on in opposition to Hortensius and the oligarchs.

It was quite in vain that Mr. Damer, at the top of his voice, shouted out something about “three dozen corruptible demagogues.” Mr. Ingram found it quite impossible to restrain his donkey so as to listen to the sarcasm.

“You told me he had been here but a minute.”

It is for her sake that I have been struggling from the first moment in which I knew that I was to be a mother.

I admitted to you formerly, that I and many others are of this opinion, and [believe] that such will take place, as you assuredly are aware; but, on the other hand, I signified to you that many who belong to the pure and pious faith, and are true Christians, think otherwise.

“I will take it for everything in all the world, Papa.”

In the first place, they conceived it to be good policy to abandon the custody of a man whom, if kept a prisoner, they were sure the Republic would make a great effort to liberate; and who, if he ever again served against them at all, would, as they thought, be less inclined to exercise barbarity than any other man whom the Convention would be likely to send on the duty.

“How long?”

Therefore, this irregularity must be corrected, in order that we may no more have any thing in common with those parricides and the murderers of our Lord.

At the head of the other party, from which through various denominations have sprung those who now call themselves Republicans, was Alexander Hamilton.

But then I have had my game of rounders.

Try, try to soften that hard heart.

I’m told they haven’t at all given it up,—only, unfortunately, they’ll never get back the necklace.” She sat there for about a quarter of an hour, and then, as she took her leave, she whispered a few words to Lizzie.

But Charity, when it shall have made itself perfect, will have destroyed this little trade of giving, which makes the giver vain and the receiver humble.

You will come.

Yea rather, let her hence feel confident, rather, that there is prepared for her a palm of greater glory, who feared not to be condemned, in case she were married, but desired to receive a more honorable crown, in that she was not married.

“But, dear aunt, the world will think it so odd, just at present.”

“De manifest infairiority of de tyrant saix——.”

And do we not rather love, because He has heard, or that He may hear?

A friend You have put far from me: and mine acquaintance from my misery [Psalm 87:18].

Life is a dream, and a scene; and as on the stage when the scene is shifted the various pageants disappear, and as dreams flit away when the sunbeams rise, so here when the end comes, whether the universal or that of each one, all is dissolved and vanishes away.

For this certainly they will not controvert nor impugn what we see with our eyes: so that when they say that no miracles took place, they inflict a worse stab upon themselves.

“Yes; the husband, Ferdinand Lefroy, the elder brother;—he of whom I had been told that he was dead; he was there standing before us, talking to us,—half drunk, but still well knowing what he was doing.”

what was she to do?

The young Squire should marry his daughter, or the whole transaction should be published to the world.

You’ll see, Martin; we’ll have the wake, and the funeral, and the docthor and all, on us—mind my words else.

How, then, did the image of Minerva remain standing?

I shall perhaps best describe a little incident that had occurred in Burton Crescent during the absence of our friend Eames, and the manner in which things were going on in that locality, by giving at length two letters which Johnny received by post at Guestwick on the morning after Mrs Dale’s party.

Or if, again, (the pseudo-prophetic spirit) has been eager to affect this (sentiment) in accordance with the Spirit of truth, it follows that the Spirit of truth has indeed the power of indulgently granting pardon to fornicators, but wills not to do it if it involve evil to the majority.

And besides these, how many monks were scourged, while Gregory sat by with Balacius the 'Duke!'

Just as in the legions of the army there are generals, tribunes, centurions, javelin-men, and light-armed troops, common soldiers, and companies, but once the battle begins, all distinctions of rank are dropped, and the one thing looked for is valour: so too in this camp and in this battle, in which we contend against devils, not names but deeds are needed: and under the true commander, Christ, not the man who has the highest title has the greatest fame, but he who is the bravest warrior.

Tailors, robemakers, and booksellers gave him trust, and did believe that they would get their money.

'According as we received from the bishops who preceded us, both in our instruction [in the knowledge of the truth], and when we were baptized; as also we have ourselves learned from the sacred Scriptures: and in accordance with what we have both believed and taught while discharging the duties of presbyter and the episcopal office itself, so now we believe and present to you the distinct avowal of our faith. It is this:

That we may be counted worthy, then, to be the habitation of our Redeemer, let us abide with the whole desire of our heart in His love.

Lady Carbury saw the danger, and turned over the affair on every side in her own mind.

Chapter 29.— Of the Coming of Elias Before the Judgment, that the Jews May Be Converted to Christ by His Preaching and Explanation of Scripture.

For when they drew near the edifice, they fancied that they saw a multitude of heavily armed men of immense stature, and they returned to inform Gaïnas that fresh troops had just arrived.

If then they agree with Asterius, let them never ask again, 'Is the Unoriginate one or two,' or they will have to contest the point with him; if, on the other hand, they differ even from him, let them not rely upon his treatise, lest, 'biting one another, they be consumed one of another [Galatians 5:15].'

For in the Sanctuary what is presented to you, in order that you may solve this question?

“I have got something to tell you, Anton,” she said, as soon as he had put the jeweller’s paper into his purse.

Stemm had never been favourable to the cause of young Newton, and had considered from the first that Sir Thomas should have declined the trust that had been imposed upon him.

“But,” said he, laughing, “I shall be greatly shorn of my ancient glory.”

“Very pretty; very beautiful.”

And as you fear him, even so does he another, and he has no advantage over you in this.

For then even they that neglect the pursuits of learning, shaking off their slumber, are stirred up to a diligent hearing, in order that their opponents may be refuted.

He would probably have paid no attention to the rumour, beyond that which necessarily attached itself to any tidings as to a matter so full of interest to him, had it not been repeated to him in another quarter.

She paused a moment before she replied. ‘I have no reason to doubt it,’ she said.

You are neither killed by the smells, nor drowned by the water, nor destroyed by the weather.

Perhaps some are even disgusted and laugh.

There is nothing like going to the root of the matter at once when one has on hand an unpleasant piece of business.

And the word 'hitherto' shows His eternal existence in the Father as the Word; for it is proper to the Word to work the Father's works and not to be external to Him.

Again, what so difficult as to place one's decision on fixed grounds, and to despise what one has decided to be worthless, as of no good?

Accordingly, those who worship God must not serve demons.

“I have called,” said he, taking his seat, “hoping to be allowed to speak to you on a subject of extreme delicacy.”

Harry, when he had written this letter, considered that it had been cold, calm, and philosophical. He could not go to America for three years without telling her of his purpose; nor could he mention that purpose, as he thought, in any language less glowing. But Florence, when she received it, did not regard it in the same light.

Lord Rufford, Sir George Penwether, his Lordship’s agent, and Mr. Gotobed, had been summoned as witnesses,—the expenditure of money by the Senator having by this time become notorious; and on the morning of the trial they all went into the town in his Lordship’s drag.

But those persons who say, If the death of the body has happened by sin, we of course ought not to die after that remission of sins which the Redeemer has bestowed upon us, do not understand how it is that some things, whose guilt God has cancelled in order that they may not stand in our way after this life, He yet permits to remain for the contest of faith, in order that they may become the means of instructing and exercising those who are advancing in the struggle after holiness.

We have told our tale of La Vendée; we have married our hero and our heroine; and, as is usual in such cases, we must now bid them adieu.

“And what about Harry? You don’t mean to say—”

That our ministration be not blamed.

Things were purchased by which the poor girl, unaccustomed to such finery, was astounded and almost stupefied.

And thus the devil, the prince of the impious city, when he stirs up his own vessels against the city of God that sojourns in this world, is permitted to do her no harm.

If the flesh is to be repaired after its dissolution, much more will it be restored after some violent injury.

Here, however, he will be convicted of dishonesty by all who have ears to hear.

But all this was as nothing to her compared with the loss of honour to her son.

For this cause we salute one another at the Mysteries, that being many we may become one; and in the case of the uninitiated, we make our prayers common, supplicating for the sick, and for the produce of the world, for land and sea.

The landlord let out horses and kept hunting stables, and the house was generally filled from the beginning of November till the middle of April.

Let us not dry up a fig tree which may yet bear fruit, [Luke 13:7] nor condemn it as useless and cumbering the ground, when possibly the care and diligence of a skilful gardener may yet heal it.

Think what words your mouth uttered—of what table these words are worthy.

Clara was angry with herself, and angry with all the world.

6. Different Accounts of the Call of Peter, and of the Imprisonment of the Baptist. The Meaning of Capernaum.

A just man, he is put to death by adulterers, and the penalty of a capital crime is turned off by the guilty on to the judge.

For neither was he an obscure person, nor of the unnoticed; but one of the council, and highly distinguished; from which circumstance especially one may see his courage.

There he saw Hiarcas sitting upon his golden throne and drinking from his Tantalus-fountain, and heard him instructing a few disciples upon the nature, motions, and orbits of the heavenly bodies.

Chapter XLII. The Second Day

A little exercise after an early dinner was, he had been told, good for his wife; and he agreed therefore that, on their second evening at Baden, they would all walk up and see the play.

For, He has raised up a testimony, as far as I can judge, has been said because by it something has been raised up; For without the Law, says the Apostle, sin was dead: but I lived sometime without the Law: but at the coming in of the commandment sin revived.

“No, sir; I think not,” said Alice.

“Of what are you sure?”

Ayala, she had thought, might thus be decoyed into a state of submission.

It was then just the middle of June,—Saturday, June 15,—and Sir Thomas had considered, at the most, that there would be yet nearly two months before Parliament would cease to sit and the time for Glenbogie would come.

If all things that are born must also die,

Hond. Sir,

For it is proper that the three things, Nature, and Fate, and Freedom, should be continued in existence until the procession of which I before spoke be completed, and the appointed measure and number of its evolutions be accomplished, even as it seemed good to Him who ordains of what kind shall be the mode of life and the end of all creatures, and the condition of all beings and natures.

But it is not safe to make any innovation before judgment is given, especially in a matter of such importance, and connected with so great issues.

When Abraham, struck with fear among a foreign nation, said that Sarah, his wife, was his sister, it is said that Abimelech, the king of the country, abducted her for a night's enjoyment of her.

“I can get over the steppingstones, too, Patrick,” said she.

“Yes; he and Dr. Slotacher. Slotacher is to read his paper the day after tomorrow.”

“Mother,” said Mrs. Prime, very solemnly, “is this young man such a one as you would have chosen for Rachel’s husband six months ago?”

If you find one of them weak in the faith, be attentive to her, comfort her, caress her, and make her chastity your treasure.

“What’s the use of my consenting or not consenting? If you had been anxious to oblige me you would have taken your cousin Will.”

What means, being a Greek? Of Greek extraction, and not circumcised; for not only did I so preach but Titus so acted, nor did the Apostles compel him to be circumcised. A plain proof this that the Apostles did not condemn Paul's doctrine or his practice. Nay more, even the urgent representations of the adverse party, who were aware of these facts, did not oblige the Apostles to enjoin circumcision, as appears by his own words—

I am he.

What then, while thou were here, were thou not Christ's?

“Birth! I hate such pretence. What was—but I won’t talk about it. Mother, I tell you my word is pledged, and on no account will I be induced to break it.”

Accordingly I wrote down the commandments and similitudes, exactly as he had ordered me.

Why do you cast yourself down a precipice?

For the fight was not equally maintained, but he conquered with great ease.

Now he had succumbed at the bidding of heaven and Lady Eardham, and he was about to be provided with a wife exactly suited for him.

For also malign spirits were not so wanting to their own business as not to confirm noxious opinions in the minds of men by converting them into sport.

Let us therefore unveil to Him our life by confession, not praise it with a vindication.

Say, I became even as it were a beast before You.

Nothing seemed to wake her either to joy or sorrow.

Such conduct, you will object, is for him who would emulate the apostles, for the man who aspires to be perfect.

Chapter XXIV. Mrs. Dobbs Broughton’s Dinner-Party

“And The Jupiter?” said the warden, stopping suddenly.

By means of these you will attract angels not human beings to be your lovers.

You call God to witness: this is to swear, to call God to witness; and for this reason there must be anxiety, that you may not call God to witness anything false.

[Matthew 18:15-16] What, then, will happen to him who has been censured for the second time, after every word has been established by two or three witnesses, He has left us to conceive.

On the other side of the lake, four miles up from the gates, on the edge of a ravine, down which rushed a little stream called the Caller, was an inconvenient ricketty cottage, built piecemeal at two or three different times, called Drumcaller.

What an ass had he made himself, coming thither in quest of adventures!

Chapter 10. Birth of Valentinian the Younger.

They oughtn’t to be there; and as your self-sacrifices, after all, are very insufficient to prevent distress, there certainly seems to be a question open whether some other mode should not be tried.

They are very careful not to be caught in marriage, and talk about women much as a crafty knowing salmon might be presumed to talk about anglers.

I cannot go through all these.

On Baptism, Against the Donatists (Book I)

In adversity, I desire prosperity; in prosperity, I fear adversity.

But when a liberal-minded clergyman does come among us,—come among us, that is, as our pastor,—we feel not unnaturally a desire to know what it is, at any rate, that he disbelieves.

The philosophers of the Greeks say that the universe is a great body ; and rightly so.

What are you to do?

Since then he has uttered great things of himself, he urges this objection against himself, Are we beginning again to commend ourselves?

And whatever other such statements they advance respecting this (Aeon), these they allege to hold good of the animalish (one), whom they assert to be creator of the world.

“What—to Mat Round?” said Dockwrath. “Certainly not, Mr. Mason. It wouldn’t be our game at all.”

Harry felt that he did not like to drive a bargain for the Countess, who would probably care very little what she paid, and therefore assented.

Now as there are some to whom Christ is a shepherd, as we said before, because of their meek and composed nature, though they are less guided by reason; so there are those to whom He is a king, those, namely, who are led in their approach to religion rather by the reasonable part of their nature.

He would endeavour to make his father perceive that he had appreciated that letter.

He was angry, but not quite so much angry as proud.

Therefore he has continued, Because of mine enemies deliver me.

Thus, as to your saying that we ought not to give occasion of offense for no cause at all, this is what your son, our most pious lord (for whose life we ought continually to pray) has already written repeatedly; and what he says out of power I know that you say out of love.

She gave him some short account of the party, and told him that she had talked with Marie.

“Very hard,” she echoed, shaking her head.

The hatred of the king towards him increased daily, under the influence of jealousy, for the wicked always persecute the good.

But Severian preaching in the church, and thinking it a suitable occasion to declaim against John, said: 'If John had been condemned for nothing else, yet the haughtiness of his demeanor was a crime sufficient to justify his deposition.

But since our thoughts are not fixed on the present, we are not concerned when men cut us off; since also death is a debt which must at all events be paid.

He had come back as a rich man to his own country, while Dick was a miserable Queensland shepherd.

But they are again satisfied.

Cicero was quartered at Lilybæum, on the west, whereas the other Quæstor was placed at Syracuse, in the east.

Aiunt non tantum maribus inesse semen, verum etiam fœminis, et inde plerumque matribus similes procreari; sed earum semensanguinem esse purgatum, quod si recte cum virili mixture sit, utraque concreta et simul co-agulata informari: et primum quidem cor hominis effingi, quod in eo sit et vita omnis et sapientia; denique totum opus quadragesimo die consummari.

“She is very beautiful,” said Charlotte.

The origin, then, from which Plato derived his theory in the Timoeus, is (the) wisdom of the Egyptians.

I daresay Benjamin was as bad as Smiler, or worse.

“All that is past and gone. The danger is that such an engagement would be long.”

‘Of course Hester must come back now.

“No, I by no means intend that; but I would rather that you should not refer to his feelings toward me. I think he did not quite understand the sort of life that I led while my husband was alive, and that he judged me amiss. Therefore I would have bygones be bygones.”

There was a fissure in the rock so great that at the top it formed a narrow ravine, and so complete from the summit to the base that it afforded an opening for a steep and ragged track from the top of the rock to the bottom.

Who gives to the heart its unceasing motion?

Shall it not?

I shall be home by half-past five.

a refuge, to us which He had not been before, not that He had not existed before He became our refuge: Before the mountains were brought forth, or ever the earth and the world were made: and from age even unto age You are [Psalm 89:2].

For every first-born is the first-born not of another kind, but of its own: as Reuben, having precedence in respect of birth of those who are counted after him, was the first-born, a man the first-born of men; and many others are called the first-born of the brothers who are reckoned with them.

But if the Word were a work, then certainly He as others had been made in Wisdom; nor would Scripture distinguish Him from the works, nor while it named them works, preach Him as Word and own Wisdom of God.

For he wishes to solace their down-stricken souls, and his meaning is about this.

Anathemas are more suitable than arguments to such contradictions.

For how very few, after they have bound themselves with the bonds of marriage, are not drawn and driven to and fro by these feelings?

[John 6:44] Wherefore also the word of those who by the grace of God are ambassadors of the gospel, and their preaching, is not in persuasive words of wisdom, but in demonstration of the spirit of power, to those for whom the words of the doctrine of Jesus were finished.

And then if she could be made really to see how base was the clay of which had been made this image which she believed to be of gold, might it not be that at last she would hate a thing that was so vile?

The Apostle, by that most excellent knowledge that was granted him, speaks of the Son of God as true.

“And must you be at Silverbridge all that time?”

“What am I to do with him?” Lady Carbury said to her cousin. “It is no use telling me to leave him. I can’t do that. I know he is bad. I know that I have done much to make him what he is.” As she said this the tears were running down her poor worn cheeks. “But he is my child. What am I to do with him now?”

He had been strong enough to escape, and had, upon the whole, got the best of it in the slight skirmish which had taken place between him and the Scotchman; but poor old Lady Fawn could not escape.

Early in February Captain Marrable went to Dunripple to stay with his uncle, Sir Gregory, and there he still was when the middle of March had come.

Opposite to the fireplace there was a small piece of carpet, without which the stone floor would hardly have looked warm and comfortable.

Your most humble and faithful servant,

That the Lady Anna should throw herself away upon Daniel Thwaite did not occur to her as a possibility.

3. Worship Him who is alone the ruler of the world, who alone was and is from age to age.

And it is said that, having taken silver and gold, he went to the king of Israel.

What is our aim?

Peter seeing this, said: Are you Faustus, the husband of this woman, and the father of her children?

Do not they order their whole lives to afford rest to their masters, and is it not their work and their life to take care of their concerns?

Trypho: Certainly; but you have not proved from this that there is another God besides Him who appeared to Abraham, and who also appeared to the other patriarchs and prophets. You have proved, however, that we were wrong in believing that the three who were in the tent with Abraham were all angels.

For who would think that His birth, passion, cross, and death were incredible or a difficulty?

In one and the same person he both found a monk to imitate and a bishop to revere.

If He does evil, who shall do good?

The bearer of these letters was no less illustrious a personage than the mother of the emperor, even she who was glorious in her offspring, whose piety was celebrated by all; she who brought forth that great luminary and nurtured him in piety. She did not shrink from the fatigue of the journey on account of her extreme old age, but undertook it a little before her death, which occurred in her eightieth year.

He charged both to hold fast to the true religion, for by its means, said he, peace is preserved, war is stopped, foes are routed, trophies are set up and victory is proclaimed. After giving this charge to his sons he died, leaving behind him imperishable fame.

Nevertheless we, according to His promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwells righteousness.

They sauntered on for a while together, and then Norman left them. He said nothing, but merely stole away from the lawn towards the drawing-room window. Mrs. Woodward well knew with what object he went, and would have spared him from his immediate sorrow by following him; but she judged that it would be better both for him and for her daughter that he should learn the truth.

And yet he will not call the Jews a learned nation in the same way in which he does the Egyptians, and Assyrians, and Indians, and Persians, and Odrysians, and Samothracians, and Eleusinians.

Just at this time, towards the end, that is, of November, we made a party to visit the tombs which lie along the Appian Way, beyond that most beautiful of all sepulchres, the tomb of Cecilia Metella.

In the book On the Avoidance of the World, he says: The law could stop the mouth of all men; it could not convert their mind.

To My Lord Quintianus, My Most Beloved Brother and Fellow-Presbyter, Augustine Sends Greeting in the Lord.

And the dear fame of him reached the king: who in great rage,

24. The Offending Hand, or Foot, or Eye.

“No, by Jove,” said Sir Felix, “you may say that, Lady Pomona. It’s like a prison to me with that moat round it.” Then he jumped up and joined Marie Melmotte and Georgiana. Georgiana, glad to be released for a time from performance of the treaty, was not long before she left them together. She had understood that the two horses now in the running were Lord Nidderdale and Sir Felix; and though she would not probably have done much to aid Sir Felix, she was quite willing to destroy Lord Nidderdale.

“Nor against you. I am simply here now to let you know that—I retire.”

Blessed are you among women, and blessed is the fruit of your womb.

Then he got up from his chair, and took a turn across the room.

The archbishops, as the heads of the endowed clergymen of the Church of England, are possessed of freeholds, and that freehold cannot be touched.

It were a tedious process to refute these opinions point by point: we prefer proceeding to show how that passage of Scripture should be understood.

Mr Ball, the future baronet, had also been there.

“So the almanac tells us; but if the almanac did not tell us I should never know. We are all older, of course. Twenty years does not go by without leaving its marks, as I can feel myself.”

Again he wishes to travel abroad, and he does not say, I wish, but he puts his hand to the work.

He had hitherto never left her for a moment since that man had again appeared before their eyes.

For that he was not naturally so infirm a person, but had overthrown the strength of his stomach by fasting and water drinking; you may hear Paul himself carefully making this plain.

Where did He find the sacrifice?

From water is earth, and what comes from earth is again water,

This was said with so quiet a voice and so placid a demeanour, that the words, though they were too plain to be misunderstood, hardly at first brought themselves home to her.

For the race of men is of such a nature, that it needs to be ruled by God with a rod of iron.

And what is the advantage of his coming, if it takes place for the ruin of our race?

She is staying at the house of that Mrs. Carbuncle, but all the same I shall go and call on her.

“Your bidding shall be done,” she said,—”of course.”

[Matthew 25:40] The voice then of this Man is known to be of the whole man, of Head and of Body: that need not often be mentioned, because it is known.

But he does not mean this to be the time of Antichrist, and the whole day, because that will be a sign of the coming of Christ, but Himself will not have a sign, but will come suddenly and unexpectedly.

In spite of his night’s work Lopez was in Manchester Square before nine on the following morning, and on the side of his brow he bore a great patch of black plaster. “My head is very thick,” he said laughing, when Everett asked after his wound. “But it would have gone badly with me if the ruffian had struck an inch lower. I suppose my hat saved me, though I remember very little. Yes, old fellow, I have written to your father, and I think he will come up. It was better that it should be so.”

Here again he seasonably interposes a rebuke; time, he says, should have brought improvement; but, so far from advancing, you have even retrograded.

Mrs. Houghton’s beauty, such as it was, depended mainly on style; on a certain dash and manner which she had acquired, and which, to another woman, were not attractive.

However well her heart might be inclined to such a feeling, it was her duty to repress it.

“Had he done anything to encourage this, it would have been very base.” And then there was another short period of silence.

Nevertheless, we have not used this power, but tolerate all things that we may not cause any hindrance to the Gospel of Christ.

For some have said that it is blood, others that it is fire, others wind, from which it has received its name of anima, or animus, because in Greek the wind is called anemos and yet none of these appears to have spoken anything.

Chapter 25 Of the Man Sick of the Palsy to Whom the Lord Said, Your Sins are Forgiven You, And Take Up Your Bed; And in Especial, of the Question Whether Matthew and Mark are Consistent with Each Other in Their Notice of the Place Where This Incident Took Place, in So Far as Matthew Says It Happened In His Own City, While Mark Says It Was in Capharnaum.

For should the former enjoy repose, he remains illustrious, even as gold is when immersed in water; and though he falls into trial, he becomes the more illustrious, like gold when subjected to the test of fire; but the sinner, if he obtains rest, is enervated and corrupted like the grass and the clay, when they come in contact with water; and should he undergo trial, he is burnt up and destroyed, in the same way as the grass and the clay are by the action of fire!

Therefore this is not so; but this corruptible, that is to say the body, must put on incorruption.

What a dreadful thing is it to kill Christ!

This will bequeathed the whole of the property to Cousin Henry.

Every definition of an essence looks to the specific quality of the subject in hand; and whatever is outside that speciality is set aside as having nothing to do with the required definition.

“About the lawsuit? Oh yes. It has certainly been spoken of at The Cleeve.”

These are the persons to whom it was proved that Caldigate had paid the enormous sum of twenty thousand pounds a few days before the trial.

You’ll hear of him, may be, up at Henniker’s.

“You may be quite easy about that, Mr. Mason. It will be necessary.”

Such ought not to have been the case with Fred Neville now;—but in such light he regarded it.

Now therefore live well.

“But you have given me all your money, dearest.”

“Mr. Fitzgerald,” said the countess, “I will thank you to let Lady Clara leave the room. She has given you the answer for which you have asked, and it would not be right in me to permit her to be subjected to further embarrassment.”

But if some were to ask the meaning of the Apostle in this utterance, what is one to say? Would you remove all signification of place from the passage?

“About your brother?”

Moreover, I have learned from those same letters that, in defiance of the authority of Paul, nay, rather of Peter, John, and James, who gave the right hand of fellowship to Paul and Barnabas, and commanded them to remember the poor, you forbid any pecuniary relief to be sent to Jerusalem for the benefit of the saints.

It follows then that no one can be deceived by the devil but one who has chosen to yield to him the consent of his own will: as Ecclesiastes clearly puts it in these words: For since there is no gainsaying by those who do evil speedily, therefore the heart of the children of men is filled within them to do evil.

Throughout the autumn the Duke had been an unhappy man.

Wretched Paris, though in form so fair,

But where have we heard Him?

But he is about to make a reckoning with them in order that it may be manifested how each has employed the tried money of the householder and his rational coins.

Of all this John Eames himself had an inkling which had often made him very uncomfortable.

‘To think of his coming just now!’

“It is absurd that you should do so in your present position. You should be here, and learn the circumstances of the property before it becomes your own. There can hardly be more than a year or two left for the lesson.”

Some considerable portion of it consists in bad spelling.

Origenasserts Christ to be a creature, and maintains universal restitution. Where has he contradicted this?

Did he appoint them?

[2 Corinthians 5:17-18] We are framed, therefore, that is, formed and created, in the good works which we have not ourselves prepared, but God has before ordained that we should walk in them.

“I’m saying nothing about how she came here, but here she is, poor creature!”

Looking at it even here, in the expanse which forms itself over the greater fall, one feels sure that no strongest swimmer could have a chance of saving himself if fate had cast him in even among those petty whirlpools.

Lady Baldock Does Not Send a Card to Phineas Finn

I shall ask him nothing about it, but no doubt after a bit he will make permanent arrangements.” Everything in the business wounded her more or less.

At these words Let the earth bring forth, it did not produce a germ contained in it, but He who gave the order at the same time gifted it with the grace and power to bring forth.

However, the very misrepresentations which they now are making do but convict their former statements of being falsehoods, and a mere conspiracy against him.

Hath it not enmities, and wars, and accusations?

If you do not dissolve Jesus, and deny God, no one may call you Antichrist.

He knew well enough that a girl betrothed is a girl already half married.

It came to the highest point that Cæsar took away the gold.

The Way We Live Now

“Exactly. It is so long ago that you cannot depend on your memory.”

Yet not straitened.

And again, I, says He, make peace, and create evils: [Isaiah 45:7] For neither in this place does He speak of wickedness, but of famines, and pestilences, things accounted evil by most men: the generality being wont to call these things evil.

If, therefore, you be the sons of Zion, join in the dance together with your children.

While sitting there an idea, almost amounting to a conviction, had come upon him, that Mr. Fenwick had himself been privy to the murder of old Trumbull.

“How could I tell, George? I thought you had promised that you wouldn’t scold any more. Nasty fat old woman! I’m sure I didn’t want to hear her.” Then Lord George went back to town with the medical certificate in his pocket, and Mary, being in her present condition, afraid of the authorities, was unable to stay and be happy even for one evening with her father.

And she is a genius.

This too with difficulty is understood, to what is joined the and they shall not be.

This, then, is our answer to the question, How is it that God created evil?

Now as the image bears in all points the semblance of the archetypal excellence, if it had not a difference in some respect, being absolutely without divergence it would no longer be a likeness, but will in that case manifestly be absolutely identical with the Prototype.

“And to Uncle Thomas,” Lucy had demanded, with an imploring embrace.

A few days afterwards his sister-in-law attacked him. “Are we to understand, Mr. Wharton, that Emily is not to meet Mr. Lopez again? It makes it very unpleasant, because he has been intimate at our house.”

There had never been a word of explanation with Seppel; but he was late and early about the carts and the furniture, and innumerable little acts of kindnesses made their way up to the mother and her many children.

Nor was he contented with this even, but added, as we obtained mercy.

Psalm 69

Therefore in his Timæus Plato's God is by His very name the parent of the world, the artificer of the soul, the fabricator of heavenly and earthly things, whom both to discover he declares is difficult, on account of His excessive and incredible power; and when you have discovered Him, impossible to speak of in public.

As Frank Jones passed through Dublin he learned that Morony Castle had been boycotted; and he was enough of an Irishman to know immediately what was meant.

[Hebrews 3:16-19] For some when they had heard did provoke, howbeit not all that came out of Egypt by Moses: And with whom was He grieved forty years?

[2 Corinthians 12:7-8] For all other sins only prevail in evil deeds; pride only has to be guarded against in things that are rightly done.

“You!” exclaimed the bishop in a manner that Mr. Slope could hardly have considered complimentary.

For out of clay man has been made.

“And so has Nokes done with him.”

‘It is Peter who always hands the soup to the young men.’

The apostle, moreover, says, Even unto this day, when Moses is read, the veil is upon their heart: nevertheless, when it shall turn to the Lord, the veil shall be taken away: and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.

Had the Senator not been there the two gentlemen would have been allowed to take their places without a word on the subject.

“Not for that reason,—not if I know myself. Oh no! I would not be so selfish as that.”

It was impossible for her to do so now, because she had sworn to him that she would be guided altogether by him in his present troubles.

Many too have fallen in with wild beasts, while pursuing their way through desert places, and removing to untrodden spots; and not men only, but also little children and women; free born, and of good condition; hiding themselves many days and nights in caves, and ravines, and holes of the desert!

For though I cannot comprehend it, I still suspect that there is some deeper sense underlying the words.

The sixth part of it, then, is one; the third part, two; the half, three.

“You don’t mean it?”

“They may change, Miss Palliser.”

Nor did he like to give any hint to his friend that he was desirous of further immediate intimacy with Marion.

But the Father is not said to be sent, when from time to time He is apprehended by any one, for He has no one of whom to be, or from whom to proceed; since Wisdom says, I came out of the mouth of the Most High, and it is said of the Holy Spirit, He proceeds from the Father, but the Father is from no one.

The rule, however, which has been from the beginning established for every case, gives its prescription against the later assumptions, as indeed it also does against the fewer.

Mrs. Burton did speak to her husband, and it was arranged that Florence should go up to Onslow Crescent. But Mrs. Burton, though she had been always autocratic about her unmarried daughters, had never been autocratic about herself. When she hinted that she also might go, she saw that the scheme was not approved, and she at once abandoned it.

All the others I have paid in full, and have freed myself from all their pressing claims; but one I cannot satisfy even by a daily payment.

Let your Fraternity, then, so acquit yourself in observing them as both to shut out all occasion of disturbance, and also to persuade others to carry these things out, while you show yourself careful and devoted, as becomes you, in observing the most pious will of the departed one.

R. The mind's act of looking is Reason; but because it does not follow that every one who looks sees, a right and perfect act of looking, that is, one followed by vision, is called Virtue; for Virtue is either right or perfect Reason.

If this love be not kept, the not holding it is at once a grievous sin, and the root of all sins.

But if you pay no regard to our prayers and frank explanations, we shall suffer no loss, since we believe (or rather, indeed, are persuaded) that every man will suffer punishment in eternal fire according to the merit of his deed, and will render account according to the power he has received from God, as Christ intimated when He said, To whom God has given more, of him shall more be required.

For since the Word is the Son of God by nature proper to His essence, and is from Him, and in Him , as He said Himself, the creatures could not have come to be, except through Him.

No doubt the house in Carlton Gardens had been thrown open as the house of no Prime Minister, perhaps of no duke, had been opened before in this country; but it had been done by degrees, and had not been accompanied by such a blowing of trumpets as was sounded with reference to the entertainments at Gatherum.

“I will not press you to say anything, Mr. Rowan,” she continued, “and I am much obliged to you for having listened to me. I’ve known Rachel Ray for many years, and that must be my excuse.”

I’m always eloping with some one.

For if it was not right according to the law of the Jews [Exodus 23:4-5] to slight the beast of one's enemy; he who despises not the beast of burden nor yet the soul of an enemy perishing, but that of a friend, what pardon shall he obtain?

After all he did love her.

If any one, then, desires to make use of this example, let him keep to it in all particulars; let the cause be the same, the person the same, the service the same, and the entertainment the same—and let the thing occur once only in one's whole life.

And, Alice, I hope that you are proud of your lover.” Poor girl!

“No, no; but a year makes so much difference. You were all but a child then. You do not love him now, Clara?”

Now Adela Guantlet is no more than my donna prima.

Let us not then aim at this, how we may be in places of power, and honor, and authority, but that we may live in virtue and self denial.

It is related of the blessed Constantine, that on one occasion, when a statue of himself had been pelted with stones, and many were instigating him to proceed against the perpetrators of the outrage; saying, that they had disfigured his whole face by battering it with stones, he stroked his face with his hand, and smiling gently, said, I am quite unable to perceive any wound inflicted upon my face.

And this is no alms.

But mark also the exactness of the prophecy. For it does not say, He will abide in Bethlehem, but He will come out thence. So that this too was a subject of prophecy, His being simply born there.

For these three are one, and each one is God, and all three together are one God, unchangeable, eternal, without any beginning or ending of time.

Consider the eternity of God.

But you’ll see that Sir Timothy will have to go.

For a man cannot possibly be deceived, who lives not by his own judgment but according to the example of the elders, nor will our crafty foe be able to abuse the ignorance of one who is not accustomed from false modesty to conceal all the thoughts which rise in his heart, but either checks them or suffers them to remain, in accordance with the ripened judgment of the elders.

Chapter L. The Archdeacon Is Satisfied With the State of Affairs

But how was it, one may ask, that not at the beginning, but afterwards, He said, 'Go, and make disciples of all nations'?

He is appealing from Atticus to Atticus.

“She promised me positively that she would break it off.”

But there was added to this a gentle word of rebuke at the morbid condition of the author’s mind which had prompted him to indulge in personalities,—the personalities in question having reference to some editor or manager of the Times newspaper.

“I declare you will make me quite afraid of Mr. Mason.”

Then there had been a great scene.

Why do you pour the clouds of your perverseness over the clear (sky) of truth?

I am aware it is myself, but if we attend to it, it has its advantage; because this it has not, the quality of an address to please—nay more, nor ever shall have, but ever those topics which may avail to humble and to chasten the soul.

The passage they employ most is that in the Psalms, My heart has produced a good Word; and they imagine the Son of God to be the utterance of the Father deposited, as it were, in syllables, and accordingly they do not allow Him, if we examine them farther, any independent hypostasis, nor are they clear about His essence.

I understand it all, of course.

Mr. Western had sent to ask the question.

“But I thought there would be half-a-dozen carriages at least.”

“I never saw anybody look so altered in my life,” said Mrs Mackenzie, when Margaret, apparelled, appeared in the Cavendish Square drawing-room on the morning in question. “Oh, dear, I hope Sir John Ball will come to look at you.”

Of course it will be very dull for you, but it will be so much better that we should all be reconciled, and that everyone should know that we are so.’

I say this now, because these are the rules by which I have lived, and these are the causes which have instigated me to work.

“Yes, aunt; Anton Trendellsohn, the Jew. I am engaged to him as his wife.”

This Jew of Celsus continues, after the above, in the following fashion: Although he could state many things regarding the events of the life of Jesus which are true, and not like those which are recorded by the disciples, he willingly omits them.

Had he been three parts ruined in trade, she would have gone back to Conduit Street and made beefsteak puddings almost without a murmur.

“Well; of course what I did at Oxford made him unhappy; and now there is this affair of Gerald’s.”

The Father that dwells in Me, He does the works.

Practice, industry, study of literature, cultivation of taste, and the rest, will of course lend their aid, will probably be necessary before high excellence is attained.

One word they changed and a few letters, in order to support their false testimony.

Mark how free from flattery his speech is.— I pray that this day they may be all such as I am, except these bonds.

Those days were terrible both to him and her.

[John 3:16] If, then, you wish to reclaim any one of the lapsed, do you exhort him to believe, or not to believe?

But, that your Fraternity may know what was decreed at that time, we have seen to the written orders of our aforesaid predecessor being added to this letter.

“Mrs. Ellison! Yes; we all know Mrs. Ellison. The bitterest tongue in Devonshire, and the falsest! There are some people at Lessboro’ who would be well pleased if she paid her way there as well as those poor women do at Nuncombe. I don’t think much of what Mrs. Ellison says.”

This way they knew not, and they think themselves exalted with the stars [Isaiah 14:13] and shining, and lo!

They adorn our prosperity and give a refuge and a solace to our troubles.

It was said that the widow herself actually changed her cap,—which was considered by some to be very unfair, as there had been an understanding that there should be no dressing.

For perfect charity would make perfect righteousness, and he would have nothing to fear: nay rather he would have something to desire; that iniquity may pass away, and God's kingdom come.

“I know that I am intruding,” said Miss Palliser, as though she were almost afraid of Alice.

For, as regards Himself, He seeks no cessation, because He feels no labor.

“And yet I cannot help it. Indeed, I am endeavouring to do what is right by you and by the children.”

It was by preaching, and not by wealth, that he must make himself known in the world!—but for a preacher to have a pretty wife with a title and a good income,—and a castle in Scotland,—what an Elysium it would be!

At last, the son seeking how to make satisfaction, devises this means: Arietem nobilem bene grandibus cum testiculis deligit, exsecat hos ipse et lanato exuit ex folliculi tegmine.

For being charmed with that saying of God to Moses, I am the really existing, and accepting with a great deal of thought the brief participial expression, he understood that God desired to signify to Moses His eternity, and therefore said, I am the really existing; for this word existing expresses not one time only, but the three— the past, the present, and the future.

He alluded, of course, to Lord Fawn, and poor Lord Fawn, sitting up there on the seat of honour, visible to all the world, became very hot and very uncomfortable.

How much more readily then would he have chosen a lie, if by a lie he might ward off from a holy body so shocking a disgrace?

To Mrs. Ray the prospect of the visit had not been pleasant, for she also remembered how grand and distant the lady had been when she came to the cottage on that former occasion; but Rachel observed, as she entered the room, that her mother’s face did not wear that look of dismay which was usual to her when she was in any presence that was disagreeable to her.

No;—he certainly would give himself no further trouble by going to the cottage in Park Lane.

Hence the apostle says, Not as if I had already attained, either were already perfect.

Let us glorify the supreme Artificer for all that was wisely and skillfully made; by the beauty of visible things let us raise ourselves to Him who is above all beauty; by the grandeur of bodies, sensible and limited in their nature, let us conceive of the infinite Being whose immensity and omnipotence surpass all the efforts of the imagination.

Home affairs, and not foreign affairs, were dear to him.

The soul of a Bishop is for all the world like a vessel in a storm: lashed from every side, by friends, by foes, by one's own people, by strangers.

he states also the reason why these things were so done.

He might be dead, because he was always in trouble, and generally drunk.

Some of the peers departed, and it was observed that a bishop or two left the House; but among the strangers in the gallery, hardly a foot of space was gained.

For a great door and effectual is opened unto me, and there are many adversaries.

“Nonsense,” said Lady Aylmer.

In money matters his father had been liberal, but not very definite.

For how absurd, and in truth how unjust, and in both respects how unworthy of God, for one substance to do the work, and another to reap the reward: that this flesh of ours should be torn by martyrdom, and another wear the crown; or, on the other hand, that this flesh of ours should wallow in uncleanness, and another receive the condemnation!

I have said that the cross-mail conveyances in Canada did not seem to be very closely bound as to time; but they are regulated by clockwork in comparison with some of them in the United States.

There was a malignity of satire intended in this; for the young man in his wrath, and with a full conviction of what was coming upon him, had intended to include his betrothed in the catalogue of things of Granpere not worthy of inspection. But Michel Voss did not at all follow him so far as that.

“So you think, sir, of going down to Herefordshire on the 15th,” he said in a very cheery voice.

Literary merit will hardly set a magazine afloat, though, when afloat, it will sustain it.

Though the thing stifle you, let it be your choice; though all that meet you spurn you, though they smear your face with mire, though they drive you away as a dog, bear all.

“I am not going to flatter you, Mr. Eames. Mamma will be well by that time, I hope, and I do not mind telling you that you are a favourite with her.” Johnny thought that this was particularly kind, as he had seen so very little of the old lady. “If you choose to call upon her,” said Madalina, “of course she will be glad to see you.”

But nothing could be more grandly courteous than the old man’s manner, or kinder than that of his wife.

In short, were butchered rather than dissected,

Had we fallen into the hands of Spaniards we should probably have received less even than we expected.

Trevelyan had hinted, moreover, that if Bozzle would make the application in person, that application, if not obeyed, would act with usefulness as a preliminary step for further personal measures to be taken by himself.

‘Oh, indeed I have not,’ said Katie, fully appreciating the purport and cause of her companion’s remark; ‘not near enough.’

“Who shall go, then?”

It was a rule at the Beargarden that men might smoke all over the house except in the dining-room;—but there was one small chamber called the library, in which the practice was not often followed.

Eusebius: the Same, VI. 14.

They even pretend that, if it could find suitable earth and moderate temperature, it might return to its first form.

And from this chiefly they have come to know God, Whom they fear through the dread which they have of me.

“But Eva isn’t one of the wise,” she replied, “and would be laughed at without having any of your philosophy to support her. However, I don’t suppose the man is thinking of it.”

“All that has to be taken for granted, George.”

We should by force compel him.

But that the providence and ordering power of the Word also, over all and toward all, is attested by all inspired Scripture, this passage suffices to confirm our argument, where men who speak of God say : You have laid the foundation of the earth and it abides.

For no one runs to the remission of sins, except he who is dissatisfied with himself; no one runs to the remission of sins, but he who confesses himself a sinner; no one confesses himself a sinner, except by humbling himself before God.

Only know this; that all that you say, especially at that most thrilling hour, is written in God's books; when therefore you do any thing contrary to these promises, you shall be judged as a transgressor.

“Sweetest angel, be not so cold,” said he, and as he said it the champagne broke forth, and he contrived to pass his arm round her waist.

Doubtless there was a law in respect to the custody of the insane; and it was admitted that if Trevelyan were dangerously mad something could be done; but it seemed that nobody was willing to stir in such a case as that which now existed.

Immediately those schemes failed, they were prepared to throw the nation overboard.

Are there not with good reason ten thousand punishments?

But you may say: We have lost those whom we used to love.

“Mother never knows anything that other people know. But he has gone now, and I don’t suppose we shall hear of him or see him again.”

Neither did they consecrate any goddess Mannia when they received manna from heaven; nor, when the smitten rock poured forth water to them when they thirsted, did they worship Nymphs and Lymphs.

And surely when I remember that our own victorious emperor renders praises to this Mighty Sovereign, I do well to follow him, knowing as I do that to him alone we owe that imperial power under which we live.

The daughter of one of his own prebendaries!

After a rapid march he arrived in the Gauls with a numerous army, where Eugenius awaited him, also at the head of an immense body of troops.

Macedonius contemplated the removal of the coffin of the Emperor Constantine, as the structure in which it had been concealed was falling into ruin.

“But, why—why—why?—” She could not speak further, for her voice was choked with tears.

He admonished them that their confidence should not rest in their spears, or armor, or bodily strength, but that they should acknowledge the supreme God as the giver of every good, and of victory itself; to whom they were bound to offer their prayers with due regularity, uplifting their hands toward heaven, and raising their mental vision higher still to the king of heaven, on whom they should call as the Author of victory, their Preserver, Guardian, and Helper.

During the ten minutes that were allowed to them, they put their heads together, and with much forethought made Mr. Persse their spokesman.

“You are not married, then?”

It amounted to wealth in lieu of poverty,—to what would be comfortable wealth even for an earl.

For wisdom is the grey hair unto men.

Mr. Bertram had not been a good man, nor had he been a wise man.

Lucy came up to her and knelt at her feet. “If you knew how unhappy I am because I have vexed you!”

In such a transaction there would be nothing dishonest; but as this place had been bought for the great man’s own family use, and not as a speculation, even this report of the mortgage tended to injure his credit.

And He did not say, your Master, the Lord, your benefactor; but He said simply, the Son of man, that is, the tender and meek one: as if He meant to say, Even supposing that I was not your Master, or Lord, or benefactor, do you still betray one so guilelessly and so tenderly affected towards you, as even to kiss you in the hour of your treachery, and that, too, when the kiss was the signal for your treachery?

[John 5:39] Shall we then say that He is inferior to the Prophets, because He draws testimonies from them?

“Sir,” said he; “sir:” and he could hardly get his lips open to give vent to the tumult of his heart. Perhaps he was not wrong; for it may be that his lips were more eloquent than would have been his words.

For you would have stood in awe of God's wrath, and would not have been lawless, wandering sons; being much afraid of hearing God always say, 'Children in whom is no faith.

“I know you will excuse me, Fawn,” Lord Mount Thistle said, “but people seem to think that you are not behaving quite well to Lady Eustace.”

And there was not only the disgrace of the prison, but also the flight from prison.

For say, how comes it that nobody ever drags the brethren of the hills into courts of law?

“I don’t think I shall allow myself to be taken up to London,” said Bell, laughing. “But one can never tell. If I do you must follow us, mamma.”

By the entire Cabinet the decision was come to that England would not interfere, and would not recognize the South.

As Mrs. Dobbs Broughton’s dear friend, Madalina Demolines had said, Mrs. Dobbs Broughton liked a fevered existence.

For it is one thing to judge the orphan, another to judge for the orphan.

[John 1:1-3] Now, since we have here clearly told us who the Maker was, that is, God, and what He made, even all things, and through whom He made them, even His Word, would not the order of the narrative have required that the source out of which all things were made by God through the Word should likewise be declared, if they had been in fact made out of anything?

Let your countenance remain in you incorrupt, your neck unadorned, your figure simple; let not wounds be made in your ears, nor let the precious chain of bracelets and necklaces circle your arms or your neck; let your feet be free from golden bands, your hair stained with no dye, your eyes worthy of beholding God.

And I will add that you are continually rendering God more propitious to you.

For we truly who are alive are the souls which, with the bodies, having put them on again, shall go to meet Him in the clouds, bearing our lamps trimmed, not with anything alien and worldly, but like stars radiating the light of prudence and continence, full of ethereal splendour.

“He must know that best himself, Grace;—but what did he say more to you?”

And since he has nothing wherewith to repay God for so great benefits, what remains for him but to give Him thanks, not to repay Him?

It may therefore be understood that in spite of his defence of the bishop’s present proceedings as to the commission, he was anxious that the bishop should fail, and anxious to put impediments in the bishop’s way, should it appear to him that he could do so with justice.

On that evening the Countess sat late with her daughter, purposing that on the morrow nothing should be said before the interview calculated to disturb the girl’s mind.

How he struggled, and in struggling perished, we shall see by-and-by.

For many years it has been considered a great thing both in the House and out of the House to “catch” Roman Catholic votes.

As Socrates, so renowned for his wisdom, Aristides for his justice, Themistocles for his warlike genius, Alexander for his sublimity of soul, Polycrates for his good fortune, Crœsus for his wealth, Demosthenes for his eloquence.

Faustus allows that the inner man is made by God, when, as he says, it is renewed in the knowledge of God after the image of Him that created him.

“And if the wife earns it instead of the husband;—isn’t that honest? And then you know,” she said, looking up into his face, “you can kiss me right away. Isn’t that an inducement?”

“Very likely;—but she is something more than a very good young woman. A young lady with her gifts will be sure to settle well in life some day.” The attorney shook his head. He had lived long enough to see many young ladies with good gifts find it difficult to settle in life; and perhaps that mysterious poem which Reginald found in Mary’s eyes was neither visible nor audible to Mary’s father. “I did hear,” said Reginald, “that Mr. Surtees—”

And instead of showing penitence for this, instead of begging mercy with tears, he exulted as if over virtuous actions, rejecting your holiness' letter and resisting all the dogmas of the Truth.

The more he thought of it the more convinced he became that, should it be known that he had received two such notes from a lady and that he had not answered or noticed them, the world would judge him to have behaved badly.

22. And that we may know more completely that the Spirit is Power, we ought to know that He was promised when the Lord said: I will pour out of My Spirit upon all flesh. [Joel 2:28] He, then, Who was promised to us is Himself Power, as in the Gospel the same Son of God declared when He said: And I will send the promise of the Father upon you, but do you remain in the city until ye be endued with power from on high. [Luke 24:49]

He is not God: let us slay Him, He is not God.

But it was her present object to induce her cousin to agree with her, that her son should permit himself to be called by his father’s title.

It is to be observed, however, that the first testimony asserts the divinity of the Saviour, while the second disposes of the suspicion of those who were in doubt whether John could be the Christ, and the third declares one who was already present with men although they saw Him not, and whose coming was no longer in the future.

They say that God is without beginning; and yet this is far more wonderful than the [creation] out of things that are not.

The two ladies remained at the cottage for about an hour, and during that time Rachel was sequestered in the garden, hardening her heart against all enemies to her love.

[John 16:9] And they exasperated the Most High in drought, which other copies have, in a place without water, which is a more exact translation from the Greek, and does signify no other thing than drought.

From the reports sent to us by your Fraternity it appears that Andrew, our brother and fellow bishop, undoubtedly had a concubine.

—Mrs. Tappitt would occasionally so designate her lord, and her doing so had been a joke between Luke and Rachel,—

“Oh, no doubt; when the world has to make money it is always wide awake. But men sometimes may be wide awake and yet make no money;—may be wide awake, or at any rate think that they are so.”

We confess that the Only-begotten God, while He abode in the form of God, abode in the nature of God, but we do not at once reabsorb into the substance of the divine unity His unity bearing the form of a servant.

Thus it is that the Jews also have continued Jews; for which cause Christ rebuked them and said, How can you believe, which receive honor from men?

Why, he that is grown old, and has travelled over much country, reports to us with all exactness the number of stadia, and the situations of cities, their plans, and their harbors and markets; but we ourselves know not even how far we are from the city that is in Heaven.

Accordingly, in faithful obedience to the emperor's commands, he received the assembly with courteous hospitality, and entertained them with feasts and banquets on a scale of great splendor.

And let no one think that I am fabricating, but I will tell you what I have really heard.

As it all became clear to his mind, he thumped his table partly in triumph,—partly in despair.

13. And having made such confessions, as if he had received some benefit on account of them, he suffered perhaps less than he ought to have suffered, and being smitten by a sudden scourge of God, he perished in the second campaign of the war.

Tomorrow, very early in the morning, she was to leave Venice for Trieste,—so early that it would be necessary that she should be on board this very night.

Now nothing on earth can be more difficult than bringing up well a young man who has not to earn his own bread, and who has no recognised station among other men similarly circumstanced.

Very small she was, but she carried in her grey eyes and sharp-cut features a certain look of importance which saved her from being considered as small in importance.

She had studied her geography, and she walked from thence to Islington.

He had also declared that he would do anything in his power to make her happy.

Even the most rabid Dissenter would hardly wish to see a structure so nearly divine attacked and destroyed by rude hands.

It follows that by how much the more evident and overpowering the course of events, by so much is the part of faith abridged.

“I do think of you, and I forgive you. Now go up to Brisket, for he will want his answer. I can assist you no further. My name is still left to me, and of that you may avail yourself. But as for money, George Robinson has none.”

Oh, Madame Brudo, how shall I express my gratitude for this condescension!

For, since after Samson as judge, there came Semigar, and a little later the history certifies that the people lived without judges, Eli the priest is related in the Books of Kings to have also been a judge, but the Scripture has not stated how many years there were between Eli and Samson.

Chapter XXXVII. an Old Man’s Complaint

For it is possible to have a grace that does not consist in works of healing: For to one is given the grace of the Spirit [1 Corinthians 12:8-9] in such and such wise ([τοιὣσδε]).

As then she traverses all the meadows that she may prepare a banquet for another, so also, O man, do thou likewise; and if you have accumulated wealth, expend it upon others; if you have the faculty of teaching, do not bury the talent, but bring it out publicly for the sake of those who need it!

This we also do; when we see any one listening carelessly, and when with much entreaty we cannot persuade him to attend, it remains for us to be silent.

“Nothing,” he would say to her, “nothing but personal dislike can justify you in refusing to heal so many wounds.” As he fixed on these words he failed to remember how little probable it is that a lover should ever be able to use the phrases he arranges.

But the bounds of that position are written in no book, are defined by no law, have settled themselves not in accordance with the recorded wisdom of any great men, but as expediency and the fitness of political things in Great Britain have seemed from time to time to require.

There was an animal courage about her, and an amount of strength also, and a fire in her eye, of which he had learned to be aware.

And they have slain them which showed before of the coming of the Just One; of whom you have been now the betrayers and murderers.

“It is Captain Scarborough,” said Dolly. “Seeing that his father is a very rich man indeed, and as far as I can understand gives you a great deal more trouble than he is worth, I don’t see why you should lend a large sum of money to his son.”

The judgment, therefore, shall come, that sinners may wither, and the faithful flourish.

When the dance was over he was allowed to escape after the ceremony of a single glass of champagne drunk in the presence of the hostess.

Whence did he gain that great joy except that he greatly wept, and, as it were, at the price of his tears obtained the grace of future glory for himself.

The letters were to be written from the rectory by aunt Julia, and the Earl was to add what he pleased for himself.

For if we love by faith that which as yet we see not, how much more shall we love it when we begin to see!

“You are to be paid. I have come here to pay you.”

But Ayala, who had not a penny in the world,—who never would have a penny unless he should give it her,—would not be purchased, and would have nothing to do with Tom!

As to that she would take further thought.

But in the case of God we cannot suppose any such thing; for, being unchangeable and always existing, whenever He wishes to send forth, there is an absolute necessity that what is sent forth should be in all respects in the same position as that which has begotten, I mean in regard to substance and disposition.

Rachel’s cheeks and forehead were now suffused with red.

To him his uncle’s death would be a great blow, as in his eyes to be Chancellor of the Exchequer was much more than to be Duke of Omnium.

Ten lines earlier in the apocalypse it is written: Rise and measure the temple of God, and the altar, and them that worship therein.

“Orders have been given that they shall be packed.”

How he hates it!

guilty always!

About the same time those barbarians the Sarmatians and Goths made incursions on the Roman territory; yet the emperor's earnestness respecting the churches was by no means abated, but he made suitable provision for both these matters.

After that he could not condescend to send her gifts.

A few years since all the Mildmays in England, one after another, would have had a shot at the young nobleman.

He possesses the confidence of self-knowledge when He demands credit for His words from the operations of His power.

Question your heart.

And on the day appointed the two young men again went to Silverbridge, and after he had been declared duly elected, the new Member of Parliament made his first speech.

They were men who have left their marks behind them.

Your silence leads me to conjecture that the judge has given sentence of condemnation, but is unwilling to hurt my feelings by telling me so.

“If he thinks it ain’t enough, who’s to say that it is,—unless a jury?” said Mrs. Masters, becoming quite eloquent. “And how’s a poor man to get a jury to say that, unless he comes to a lawyer? Of course, if you won’t have it, he’ll go to Bearside. Bearside won’t turn him away.” Bearside was another attorney, an interloper of about ten years’ standing, whose name was odious to Mr. Masters.

Receive him, as you are wont to receive every one, in a suitable manner, and, using his advocacy as your succour in your prayers to God, endeavour to preserve continually that unanimity and peace according to the order of the Church which is at the same time becoming in you, and most advantageous for us.

But he was not often there, and kept his kennels at Ahaseragh, five miles away from Daly’s Bridge.

And no times are co-eternal with You, because You remain for ever; but should these continue, they would not be times.

“But he has seen these men do it, and now refuses to tell you. They have terrified him.”

Therefore, after this present festival , I mean this which is on the twentieth of the month Pharmuthi, the Easter-day following will be on the vii Id.

“You think, then, that he should have it?”

'In the likeness of a shepherd he made Mnemosyne mother of the Muses.

The faithful and religious spirit, therefore, must desire the things which are heavenly, and being eager for the Divine promises, lift itself to the love of the incorruptible Good and the hope of the true Light.

For what hindered them, when they said to him, See thou to that, themselves to forbear the criminal act?

“I had better go.” And she hurried away towards the door.

The son said again: My father, and thus pierced his father's heart, though without weakening his devotion to God.

I mean, it consists not in a multitude of servant, or of chariot, nor in costly garments.

You seemed perhaps at that time to be doing everything out of respect to me, and from a principle of shame, but that is no longer so; if then ye make it evident that you now strive more earnestly, it is also made evident that neither then was it done out of consideration to me, but for God's sake.

His elder brother was still a hearty man, walking in thick shoes, and constant in his saddle; but the colonel, with nothing beyond his wife’s title to keep his body awake, had fallen asleep somewhat prematurely among his slippers.

Yet they might have alleged that, but they show their right feeling.

Justin: I wish, sirs, to learn from you what is the force of the name Israel.

We have a few from Quintus, but not of special interest unless we are to consider that treatise on the duties of a candidate as a letter.

But the golden race is with the gods, who are in heaven, in the fixed sphere, who chiefly hold command in the providence exercised towards men.

If he really loved this girl, and if it had been his intention to try and win her for himself, why had he taken his father at his word and gone away from Granpere?

He exhorts us to imitate Himself: we see that He ate with the proud; how does He forbid us to eat with the proud?

And on that day, after the fourth, which is the sixth from the beginning of those we have enumerated, the marriage takes place in Cana of Galilee, which we shall have to consider when we get to the passage.

She is the exact ditto of her brother, who of all human beings gives himself the finest airs.

11. If Elisha, who was of small power, was great in might in the midst of Sheol, and if so be he brought one dead to life therein, how many dead then will be raised therein, by the death of Jesus the mighty! Hence even from this consider how much greater therefore is Jesus, than we my comrades. For lo! By His craftiness He deceived you, and you sufficed not to determine His greatness when you compared Him to the prophets.

Whereas, if a person tell a lie which if any believe he will be an heretic against the doctrine of Christ, by so much is he who tells the lie more hurtful, by how much he that believes it is more miserable.

For I hear, indeed, many saying, that the Emperor, out of his reverence for the Holy Passover, will be reconciled to the city and will pardon all its offenses.

In order to parry the charge of falsehood, it is your humour to become quite exacting.

I shall briefly state that the number of men and women whose names have been ascertained, and who were martyred at this period, have been computed to be sixteen thousand; while the multitude outside of these is beyond enumeration, and on this account to reckon off their names appeared difficult to the Persians and Syrians and to the inhabitants of Edessa, who have devoted much care to this matter.

Thence dashed down we lost our wings, and were, so to speak, imprisoned in the power of the fowler; thence He redeemed us with His Blood, whom we fled from to be caught.

There was an heiress, a ‘doosed fine girl’ as Undy insisted, laying peculiar strength on the word of emphasis, with £20,000, and there was Charley Tudor, a devilish decent fellow, without a rap.

[Colossians 2:13-14] Why, then, do we hold the bonds of others, and desire to exact the debts of others, while we enjoy our own remission?

Then Linda left the room, and went to her own apartment.

But if he had said, You all will to be blessed, you do not will to be wretched; he would have said something which there is no one that would not recognize in his own will.

For he speaks thus, when that which is said is not understood; since it cannot even be said, unless the images of the corporeal articulate sounds anticipate the oral sound by the thought of the spirit.

For when a man hearing a bad name given him, does not requite the giver in the same kind, but praises and admires, he does not praise the other, but himself.

But then I acknowledge also that I prefer Miss Tringle, with £100,000, to you with nothing; and I do not think that I ought to be called unmanly, disgraceful, and a coward, because I have courage enough to speak the truth openly to a friend whom I trust.

Whence John the Evangelist also says, Before the feast of the Passover, when Jesus knew that His hour had come, that He should pass out of this world unto the Father.

And the younger widows he says refuse; and then he adds the reason: for when they have waxed wanton against Christ they will marry.

And now at this most trying period of his life, poor Kenneby had upon his mind all the cares of a lover as well as the cares of a witness.

Mr. Glascock, as he went, declared his conviction that the unfortunate man was altogether mad, and that it would be necessary to obtain some interference on the part of the authorities for the protection of the child.

It’s a romance as shall be wrapped inside my own bosom.

The locality of Benton Barracks must, from its nature, have been the more healthy, but it had become by art the foulest place I ever visited.

(g) These things, not less than the miracles, both made them more illustrious, and prepared for them a greater rejoicing.

[Acts 17:5-6] Tell me, is this a slight labor, when the seed had not yet taken root, to endure so great a storm, so many trials?

For in stating why you did not hesitate to burden us with those questions which you wish to have solved and explained, you said that this was the reason, and that this was the end, and an end so necessary in your estimation that you said it was of overwhelming urgency—lest, forsooth, if you were posed with these questions and gave no answer, you should be regarded as illiterate and stupid by men prone to censure.

Accordingly, when you ask why a Christian is not circumcised if Christ came not to destroy the law, but to fulfill it, my reply is, that a Christian is not circumcised precisely for this reason, that what was prefigured by circumcision is fulfilled in Christ.

Since you last were considerate enough to call upon me I have resolved to take a step in my affairs which, though it will rob me of my only remaining gratification, will tend to lessen the troubles under which Mrs. Trevelyan is labouring.

The others, who now lay dead at a shebeen house in the neighbourhood, consisted of an old woman and her son, and his wife and a grown daughter, and a son.

“A profession!” said Frank making a slight unsuccessful effort to get his hand free.

I always say ‘My dear Lord Hampstead,’ in return.

[Acts 6:15] And this which we have verified in a few cases is to be understood of all, that what is written may be fulfilled.

Is Eve then born out of a man's side without a mother, and is a child not to be born without a father, of a virgin's womb?

I need hardly say that I do not wish my name to be mentioned in the matter.

And there was a third difficulty: Herr Steinmarc, though he had no knowledge on the subject, though his suspicions were so slight that he had never mentioned them to his old friend the widow, though he was aware that he had barely a ground for the idea, still had an idea, that Linda Tressel’s heart was no longer at Linda’s own disposal.

[1 Corinthians 15:53] In the resurrection, the Lord tells us, they neither marry nor are given in marriage but are as the angels...in heaven.

Are there on the mountains of the stars, forests, woods, groves, that Diana may be esteemed very mighty in hunting expeditions?

For my yoke is excellent, and my burden is light.

“Yes; Greshamsbury. But he and Thorne didn’t hit it off; and so since that he has had no one but myself.”

But if it save you, by means of Faith, though it brings you under the curse, you suffer nothing from it, gain no harm, in that Faith comes and sets all right.

4. And Agabus, one of the prophets who was with them, uttered a prophecy concerning the famine which was about to take place, and Paul and Barnabas were sent to relieve the necessities of the brethren.

The reader will hardly suppose that Cousin Henry will return after the trial to laugh in his sleeve in his own library in his own house.

The man’s idea is that the mercer should sell cloth, and the silk-merchant silk, and the upholsterer tables.

The reason why He says that none knows Him but Himself, is that He is from the Father.

This is what I wish, that other is nothing.

For then that which is like Him is His own; that which is compared with Him is born from Himself; the Power that can do His own works is not external to Him.

“Come, Caroline; am I wrong in supposing that now at least you must know your own feelings? Or shall I tell you again how dearly, how truly I love you?”

“Your first supper you pay for,” my informant told me, “because you eat that on your own account.

As the interview was becoming unpleasant, Lady Ongar took her candle and went away to bed, leaving the twenty pounds on the table. As she left the room she knew that the money was there, but she could not bring herself to pick it up and restore it to her pocket. It was improbable, she thought, that Madam Gordeloup would leave it to the mercy of the waiters; and the chances were that the notes would go into the pocket for which they were intended.

Who does not know the false mixture of excuse and defiance which such a letter is sure to maintain; the crafty words which may be taken as adequate reason if the receiver be timid enough so to receive them, or as a noisy gauntlet thrown to the ground if there be spirit there for the picking of it up?

For which Paul also blames them, saying, Behold you are called a Jew, and restest in the law, and makest your boast of God, and know His will: Who then are these men?

But I should like if those who worship idols would tell me if they wish to become like those whom they worship?

Goodbye, Annesley; I am sorry you are going, for I like to have some honest fellow to talk to.

You have been false to me, and have broken my heart.

What she proposed was this.

If they belong to the North, they will become rich as the North is, and will share in the education of the North.

Harry knew very well that the entail was fixed, and could not be put aside by Mr. Prosper, though Mr. Scarborough might have succeeded with his entail; but yet he was aware that his present income was chiefly dependent on his uncle’s goodwill.

Your desire for information, my right well-beloved and most deeply respected brother Amphilochius, I highly commend, and not less your industrious energy.

He should do so, at any rate; and on this point Sir Lionel was willing to be just.

Now the soul of all the Gentiles says what?

Because, since He has not any beginning, so consequently He is not conscious of an ending; unless perchance— and far from us be the thought— He at some time began to be, and is not above all things, but as He began to be after something else, He would be beneath that which was before Himself, and would so be found to be of less power, in that He is designated as subsequent even in time itself.

“She knows that I have come here to make love to her—to repeat my offer; and she will at any rate be chagrined if I am slow to do so.” But it had no effect.

“Oh, Lord Rufford! Nobody has ever condemned you to anything so terrible as that.”

But if you say in your heart, How did he do that sign or wonder?

Let us not therefore suppose that anything relating to doctrine was spoken imperfectly.

1 John 3:19-4:3

In the Park

137. Who would not gladly climb and hold the heights of this virtue, were it not that greed weakens and lessens the power of such a virtue? For as long as we want to add to our possessions and to heap up money, to take into our possession fresh lands, and to be the richest of all, we have cast aside the form of justice and have lost the blessing of kindness towards all. How can he be just that tries to take from another what he wants for himself?

I have it now: he wrote what he thought would be most gratifying to me, because he had been gratified by what I had written in those treatises; and he wrote in a joyful mood, without accurately weighing the sentiments entrusted to his joyous pen.

There are such men: men who can endure no taint on their personal self-respect, even from a woman; men whose bodies are to themselves such sacred temples that a joke against them is desecration, and a rough touch downright sacrilege. Mr. Slope was such a man, and therefore the slap on the face that he got from Eleanor was, as far as he was concerned, the fittest rebuke which could have been administered to him.

He was not a man that made himself really popular in any social meetings of men.

He who made us to live, taught us also to pray, with that same benignity, to wit, wherewith He has condescended to give and confer all things else; in order that while we speak to the Father in that prayer and supplication which the Son has taught us, we may be the more easily heard.

She was full of regrets,—almost of remorse; but, nevertheless, she was proud.

What further does the Catholic light say?

“Why don’t you stay? But I suppose Mr. Finn wants you to be back in London.”

And this he had also said before.

So she wrote to him.

Since the business had been completed she had spoken of it to no one but to Lady Glencora Palliser, who had forced herself into a knowledge of all the circumstances while they were being acted.

“Not a word about you.”

Afterwards, when she had believed that there would be a sum of money coming to her from her uncle’s will, there had been room for possible doubt.

But the misery of the man had its effect upon her, and at last she proposed to be the bearer of a message to his wife.

BOOK 12

On this follows another, or ordinary duty.

Then Mrs. Outhouse went.

“But you love him, Nina?”

Then the Doctor broke away into the general subject, with special allusions to the special matter of female architecture, and went on for twenty minutes without dropping a word.

Hear what the Scripture says, Give strong drink unto him that is ready to perish, and wine unto the bitter in soul.

“Well, old fellow,” said he, “how are you now?” and he was particularly careful so to speak as to show by his voice that his affection for his friend was as strong as ever. But in doing so he showed also that there was some special thought still present in his mind,—some feeling which was serious in its nature if not absolutely painful.

He works the hardest and gets the least pay for it; but then, as he says, he does not run so great a risk of being turned out.

And when the day begins to dawn they will long for the night, in order that they may find rest from their labours; and when the night descends upon them, by reason of the continuous earthquakes and the tempests in the air, they will desire even to behold the light of the day, and will seek how they may hereafter meet a bitter death.

For men were before us, are with us, and shall be after us; and so all living things and all plants.

Always pursue the virtues, for the gods

It is in our power to recover ourselves.

[Matthew 7:14] It is necessary therefore to be self-collected, and well girt on every side.

But now everything was over with her.

And what he says is of this nature: even from persons of the grosser sort ye may be instructed that they who eat the sacrifices, have communion with the altar.

Why, O man, do you accuse your own children?

[Romans 6:10] So Peter understood that Christ was to be crucified again in the person of His servant.

Now and again we hear the voice of a thoughtful or earnest man raised against this popular recreation.

“Can he manage that men shall have half the babies?” said Mr. Glascock, thinking to escape by an attempt at playfulness.

How comes it, then, that you fail to see that the whole conception of your argument on the subject is being overthrown, and go on making yourself ridiculous with your childish web of sophistry, saying that, if we believe that He who was apparent to the senses has been made by God to be Christ and Lord, it necessarily follows that the Lord once more emptied Himself anew to become Man, and underwent a second birth?

The young man who had just returned home had on a flannel shirt, a pair of moleskin trowsers, and an old straw hat, battered nearly out of all shape.

These things, I say, let us firmly hold; but as to the question propounded by you from the words of the Apostle Peter, since you now perceive the difficulties which I find in it, and since other difficulties may possibly be found if the subject be more carefully studied, let us continue to investigate it, whether by applying our own thoughts to the subject, or by asking the opinion of any one whom it may be becoming and possible to consult.

This he does to take down the objector's unseasonable inquisitiveness, and excessive curiosity, and to put a check upon it, and teach him to know what God is, and what man, and how incomprehensible His foreknowledge is, and how far above our reason, and how obedience to Him in all points is binding.

“I do,” said Lady Glencora.

Is diseased in itself, and needs skilful medicines.

I should say that in the neighbourhood of Ilrynberg there are various hotels and boarding houses so that accommodation may always be had.

“Of course she is entitled to make you a present if she pleases.”

Those passages in Rome had been very disagreeable to every one concerned.

The archdeacon knew his subject and really understood the business of bishoping, which the others did not, and this was his strong ground.

And what were Marion’s thoughts?

He wounds the flesh but preserves the life.

For the word being is a witness that interprets to us the Son's continuity and eternity and superiority to all marks of time.

How was I to know she didn’t know nothing about it!

Moreover, the word of the Lord came forth from that very Jerusalem, that it might be disseminated through all places, and might judge in the midst of the heathen, selecting those whom it sees to be submissive, and rejecting the disobedient, who are many in number.

“But,” said she in dolorous voice, all but overcome by her cares, “it was specially signified that there were to be sports.”

You cannot ask me to become his murderer!

All these things are henceforth to be recorded, if you do the same now after having been baptized; for your former deeds are blotted out.

That was easily enough written.

If, however, it seems to enjoin a crime or vice, or to forbid an act of prudence or benevolence, it is figurative.

Anty herself, in the original draft inserted “ladies,” but the widow’s good sense repudiated the term, and insisted on the word “females”: Jane suggested that “females” did not sound quite respectful alone, and Martin thought that Anty might call them “female friends,” which was consequently done.

But human error insinuates itself in other forms than in erroneous opinions concerning the indivisible Trinity.

Nor can, as I think, Lowell be taken as a type of the future manufacturing towns of New England.

At present it is enough if we live without crime; and he who thinks he lives without sin puts aside not sin, but pardon.

You were perchance going to enquire, what is bless us?

“I tell you fairly what are my feelings and my wishes,” he continued. “Nothing, in my opinion, would be so deplorable and ruinous as such a marriage. You tell me that you have made up your mind to take him, and I know well that nothing that I can say will turn you. But I believe that when he has spent all your money he will not take you, and that thus you will be saved. Thinking as I do about him, you can hardly expect that I should triumph because he has got himself into Parliament with your money!”

For, to grant the possibility of one being offended by the sense of sight, how, when there are two eyes that see, should the blame be laid upon the right eye?

“You can’t think how it grieves me,” she said, “to bring all this trouble upon you.” She emphasised the word “you,” as though to show him that she cared nothing for his mother and sisters.

Had a light been seen but for a moment in Linda’s room they were to start; and would certainly reach the spot where the carriage stood before any followers could be on their heels.

For He appointed them for seasons, and signs, and days and years.

Chapter 22. Of Martyrs, and Their Intercession on Behalf of Scandalous Offenders.

“Of course I’ll do it,” said Sir Felix. “I’m not afraid of him. Why should I? He and I are very good friends, you know.”

But this man even barbarians attend to, and even foolish and ignorant men.

Flee fornication.

“It will be very dreadful,” she said, “but it will soon be over.

“You had better not. Now look at these two signatures;” and he handed to her two deeds, or rather made one of the servants of the court hold them for him; “which of those signatures is the one which you did not sign?”

If they had not come, they might have deemed that they saw a vision, or one man in place of another.

I am, dear Sir, Your faithful servant,

I must confess that I myself do not always understand what you write, and think that I am reading Heraclitus; however I do not complain, nor lament for my sluggishness; for the trouble of reading what you write is not more than the trouble you must have in writing it.

Thus they, while contending that the Father and the Son are one and the same, do in fact begin by dividing them rather than uniting them.

You see, Mr. Finn, your being a Roman Catholic gives them a handle, and they’re already beginning to use it.

“I intend no rebuke, as you well know. What I mean is this; if you do not stay in Yorkshire till you are married, let the time be when it may, where do you intend to go in the meantime?”

Death leads away to himself the brave and the warriors.

“Honest and generous!”

It was to be made by appointment, and there had come to be an understanding between them that Phineas should tell her on this occasion what was his resolution with reference to his future life.

He says that he did object, you deny it; he brings forward witnesses, you will not listen to them when they are produced; he even relates that another besides yourself was arraigned by him: you refuse to admit this in the case of either; he sends a letter to you by one of his clergy, and demands an answer: you are silent, dare not open your lips, and, challenged in Palestine, speak at Alexandria.

Let every prayer of ours, then, be accompanied with thanksgiving.

I am the Light of the world: he that believes in Me, shall not walk in darkness.

Do you see the abundancy of Christ's grace?

For this is a kind of love that does not reach its aim; and the longer journey you have gone, the further off you keep from the end.

Certain passages from Scripture, urged against the Omnipotence of Christ, are resolved; the writer is also at especial pains to show that Christ not seldom spoke in accordance with the affections of human nature.

If this be so, we ought to be contented with what our Government has done.

In the time of the tempest he piloted the assembly of his fellows in the faith supported by the worthy Stephanus.

She would go to the encounter boldly and accept him honestly.

They will live on 70l.

My own efficacy for my present task depends entirely on the cooperation of others, and unfortunately upon that of some others with whom I have no sympathy, nor have they with me.

For while Moses stood before God in the mount, the people were worshipping a calf instead of God.

Such persons could not refrain from thinking Melmotte to be mighty because he swaggered; and gave their hinder parts to be kicked merely because he put up his toe.

Tractate 123 John 21:12-19

Wherefore Paul also says, I am a Pharisee, of the strictest sect among us.

All things that the Father has are the Son's; and for this cause whatever He Who is to be sent shall receive, He shall receive from the Son, because all things that the Father has are the Son's.

But there follows in the Creed: Very God of Very God; Being of one substance with the Father; by whom both the worlds were framed, and all things were made.

Let her beautify herself, who is on the stage or the dancing platform.

[Proverbs 5:16] For it is not many who understand such things as they fall in with; or know them even after learning them, though they think they do, according to the worthy Heraclitus.

But believers were the more added unto the Lord, multitudes both of men and women: insomuch that they brought forth the sick into the streets, and laid them on beds and couches, that at the least the shadow of Peter passing by might overshadow some of them.

For how do you know what feelings he entertains towards you whom you suppose to be cruel?

But (the sorcerer) produces a burning demon, by tracing on the wall whatever figure he wishes, and then covertly smearing it with a drug mixed according to this manner, viz., of Laconian and Zacynthian asphalt,— while next, as if under the influence of prophetic frenzy, he moves the lamp towards the wall.

At breakfast the next morning nothing was said for a while about the new arrival. At last Mr Palliser ventured to speak. “Glencora has told you, I think, that Mr Grey is here? Mr Grey is an old friend of yours, I believe?”

For all things are done to the believer, nothing to the unbeliever.

Well;—I have done my duty.

He deserves from you that you should love him well, for he has proved to you that he loves you.

Here He seems to me to be hinting at the Jews also, who were exhibiting such fruits. Wherefore also He reminded them of the sayings of John, in the very same terms delineating their punishment. For he too said the very same, making mention to them of an axe, and of a tree cut down, and of unquenchable fire.

According to his idea of things, he had altogether got the better of the attorney upon that subject.

Through faith (he says) he kept the Passover and the sprinkling of blood, lest he that destroyed the first-born should touch them.

It is success that creates success, and decay that produces decay.

Chapter 4. The Absurdity and Shamefulness of the Images by Which the Gods are Worshipped.

Wherefore there is no reason why we should give so much honour to philosophers as to fear their eloquence.

We are to fulfil the wish of a friend, to unfold to him our secrets which we hold in our own hearts, and are not to disregard his confidences.

Would that I could know on what passages these great men rested their opinion that souls are transmitted!

It would indeed be a vain oath, if there had been no persons who believed that there were other Gods, like the worshippers of idols then, and the heretics of the present day.

[Luke 2:48] In order, however, that He might show them that He had a Father besides them, who begot Him without a mother, He said to them in answer: How is it that you sought me?

“I must be at Capel Court by half-past twelve;—I must, indeed. If it wasn’t real business, I’d stay.”

And if Mr. Greystock were such as Mrs. Hittaway had described him to be,—if there were to be no such coming as that for which Lucy fondly waited,—then there would be reason tenfold strong why she should not leave Fawn Court and go to Lady Linlithgow.

Have there come men, and not come women?

At this moment he did not know how far his father was prepared to yield, or how far it was expected that he should yield himself.

“But your Uncle Oliphant’s income is permanent.”

“She will think better of it, Madame Staubach. She will not be so foolish nor so wicked as that,” said the burgomaster.

And hence the Word, with a view of conveying to Abraham the idea of 'Only-begotten,' says, 'Offer your son your well-beloved [Genesis 22:2 but it is plain to any one that Isaac was the only son from Sara.

But all this it seemed well for the Saviour to do; that since men had failed to know His Providence, revealed in the Universe, and had failed to perceive His Godhead shown in creation, they might at any rate from the works of His body recover their sight, and through Him receive an idea of the knowledge of the Father, inferring, as I said before, from particular cases His Providence over the whole.

Now the appurtenances of the heaven and the earth, made then in the beginning, were the darkness and the deep, and the spirit, and the waters.

The taken enemy must needs be pain'd.

California and Oregon have been very much farther from Washington than the Canadas are from London.

It was certainly a blunder to take him from Ireland—into which I was led by the circumstance that I created the scheme of the book during a visit to Ireland.

Nor, I think, will that reader grasp the way to see the truth who cannot teach himself what has in Cicero’s case, been the effect of daring to tell to his friend an unvarnished tale.

But as He by His own act assumed a body from the Virgin, so He assumed from Himself a soul; though even in ordinary human birth the soul is never derived from the parents.

For this is the utmost of things desirable, and they who arrive at it find an entire rest from speculation.

Comparing efforts, which is greater, to mould from the beginning a statue which did not exist, or to recast in the same shape that which had fallen?

“I think he lives, and that he wrote it, Mr. Neville. I’ll tell you God’s truth about it as I believe it, because as I said before, I think you are entitled to know the truth.”

When Mr. Peacocke had been gone for nearly a month she had fallen into a habit of going across every day after the performance of her own domestic morning duties, and remaining in the school-house for an hour.

Epistle 80

But whether John's deposition was just, as his enemies declare, or Cyrinus suffered in chastisement for his slanderous revilings; whether the hail fell, or the empress died on John's account, or whether these things happened for other reasons, or for these in connection with others, God only knows, who is the discerner of secrets, and the just judge of truth itself.

After lunch she spoke to her aunt with great courage,—as the Duchess thought with great effrontery.

Instead of longing for the time when she should be summoned to meet Sir Peregrine, she dreaded its coming.

Ver. 12. I beseech you, brethren, be as I am; for I am as you are.

Nevertheless, as I said, this expression nakedly considered may easily prove a snare and offense to many hearers.

Thus you may freely give to a poor man what you have, and in this way help him who is your brother and companion.

2. And not for this only does He call him Elias everywhere, but to signify His perfect agreement with the Old Testament, and that this advent too is according to prophecy.

And as for their letters I had them not at hand, to dispatch them to you; else I would have sent you copies; but, if the Lord will, this too I will do, when I get possession of them.

The effort has been well made, and the service is of great use.

He Who is by nature Father of existent things, from Whom all things have their birth, has been proclaimed as one, by the sublime utterance of the Apostle.

However, even in that case, the Apostle has guarded the matter, by saying, in the Lord; that is, wherever you will not be offending against God.

It was not only that Lady Ongar’s history was so terrible, and her life so strange, but that he himself was called upon to form a part of that history, and to join himself in some sort with that life.

In the evening two or three girls came in with their younger brothers, the children of farmers of the better class in the neighbourhood, and the usual attempts were made at jollity.

Opposite to the door of the church and on the other side of the road, was a cross erected on a little mound; and at its foot a Capuchin monk in his arse brown frock, with his hood thrown back, and his eyes turned to heaven, was always kneeling: the effigy at least of one was doing so, for it was a painted wooden monk that was so perpetually at his prayers.

“But as it is,” continued the Dean, apparently not observing his daughter’s remark, “everybody must feel that it would be better for the family that he should be out of the way. Nobody can think that such a child can live to do honour to the British peerage.”

That and other similar doings have stamped his character too plainly.

And now say in what hope?

The Jewish people, again, had established their dominion in the land of Palestine.

For he first of all makes a distinction: It is one thing, says he, to inquire whether a thing can be, which has respect to its possibility only; and another thing, whether or not it is.

“My dear,” her father said to her one evening, “it is a matter which we cannot forget, but on which it is well that we should be silent.”

In doing this he showed no lack of spirit, for it might be his duty; but where was his spirit when he submitted to be thanked for such work?

The latter party was supported by George, bishop of Laodicea, in Syria; by Eleusius, bishop of Cyzicus; by Sophronius, bishop of Pompeiopolis, in Paphlagonia; with these the majority agreed.

Mountjoy Scarborough was, he declared, undoubtedly legitimate.

For you the sea offers its service, that all things may be subject to you, ungrateful as you are.

Now, then, tell me why it is that which cannot bear even to feel the heat of the sun, but withers up under it unless it be sprinkled with water, is not consumed when beset by such fiery heat, but both lives and thrives?

But the poor authoress, though utterly crushed, and reduced to little more than literary pulp for an hour or two, was not destroyed.

It so happened that the day fixed for the election in this division of the county was quite at the close of this period of political excitement.

I will not promise anything myself.

I have only one wish in the world, and that is, to be your wife,—to be able to share everything with you.

Evius comes up from the lower regions, and learns that his guide is dead.

This constant putting off of the day of work was a great sorrow to me.

Let him speak then, and let us hear the parables and propositions.

A terrible retribution had fallen upon her enemy—for as her enemy she had ever regarded Hugh Clavering since her husband’s death.

5. Evil, then consists essentially in the choice of what is lower in preference to what is higher.

“You seem so. I at any rate am unhappy.”

And observe whether it is not with great authority that this declaration is uttered: Whosoever therefore shall confess Me before men, him will I confess also before My Father who is in heaven.

“I couldn’t give you up. I almost thought that I ought to refuse you because I can do nothing,—nothing to help you. But there will always come a limit to self-denial. I couldn’t do that! Could I?”

But when the adversary of the race of the righteous, the envious, malicious, and wicked one, perceived the impressive nature of his martyrdom, and [considered] the blameless life he had led from the beginning, and how he was now crowned with the wreath of immortality, having beyond dispute received his reward, he did his utmost that not the least memorial of him should be taken away by us, although many desired to do this, and to become possessors of his holy flesh.

They say that, taking advantage of this power, Valens compelled some of the bishops to sign the formulary, and that he drove many who refused compliance, from their churches, and first of all Liberius, bishop of Rome.

“Yes; I found the tomb. Here is a photograph of it. You can keep a copy if you like it.”

By heavens!’ He had a stick in his hand, and as he went he struck it angrily against a post.

Miles was aware that Philip and Bessy were lovers, and from the dependents of the house the tidings spread through the parish.

1 Corinthians 15:41

I ask, O you heretic, nothing unfair, and nothing hard.

But, then, why should she refuse him?

After these leaders there were judges, when the people were settled in the land of promise, so that, in the meantime, the first promise made to Abraham began to be fulfilled about the one nation, that is, the Hebrew, and about the land of Canaan; but not as yet the promise about all nations, and the whole wide world, for that was to be fulfilled, not by the observances of the old law, but by the advent of Christ in the flesh, and by the faith of the gospel.

They could not screw themselves up to the necessary pitch of courage to enable them to enter in among loaded pistols and black-visaged murderers.

The kings of Tharsis and the isles shall offer gifts, the kings of the Arabians and of Saba shall lead presents [Psalm 71:10].

As for the writer of this verse, there seems to be no religion which favors his opinion.

Although this prediction of Athanasius appeared to be absurd, it was fulfilled; for the following day edicts were transmitted to the governors from the emperor, by which it was commanded that the pagans were not to be permitted to assemble in the temples to perform their usual ceremonies, nor to celebrate their festival; and thus was abolished the most solemn and magnificent feast which the pagans had retained.

If he who attaches himself to a thief, and consents with him, is subject to punishment, what hope shall he have, who offends against the Holy Ghost?

“My cousin Ludovic—who is a good-for-nothing, a spendthrift, a fellow without a florin, a fellow that plays cards on Sundays.”

Thus it is blasphemy to search into divine things by our own reasonings.

The Constitution has decreed how such care should be exercised, but the Constitution has not been able to maintain its own decree.

Much as he wished to trust her, anxious as he was that she should be his real friend he could hardly bring himself to tell her all that had taken place at Rudham Park during the last day or two.

“Dear me! Chop half-a-dozen foxes! Do they like to be chopped? I thought they always ran away.”

‘Thankee, sir. Well, grandmamma, go on; but if there be anything very bad, give me a little notice, for I am nervous.’

For, if we were able to do everything, we should ourselves be everything; and, if we had not the power to do anything, we should be the tools of others.

For this reason In Hell there is none that makes confession; in death none that remembers God, because the succour of the Spirit is no longer present.

“Oh, no; they don’t actually hurt me. They’ll do very well for to-day.” And then there was a short pause, and they got on the green grass which runs away into the chase in front of the parsonage windows. I wonder whether wickets are ever standing there now on the summer afternoons!

“I daresay that I had mentioned it.”

“Yes, from me. My coronet is at your feet. If you will allow me to raise it, I will place it on your brow.”

The traitors he caused to be executed by being sawn asunder, disregarding the oaths he had sworn to them.

A thousand remembrances flashed across Eleanor’s mind all in a moment—how Charlotte had talked about and praised her brother, how she had continually contrived to throw the two of them together, how she had encouraged all manner of little intimacies, how she had with singular cordiality persisted in treating Eleanor as one of the family. All this had been done to secure her comfortable income for the benefit of one of the family!

“Upon my honour, aunt, I am very much obliged. I shall be all right, you’ll see.”

For both Cyprian records that there were such men in the Church in his day, and we ourselves experience and lament the fact.

He, before being initiated in the more perfect mysteries, being in danger of shipwreck when the ship that bore him, dashed upon rocky shallows, was being broken up by the waves tossing it hither and there, fearing not death but lest he should depart this life without the Mystery, asked of those whom he knew to be initiated the divine Sacrament of the faithful; not that he might gaze on secret things with curious eyes, but to obtain aid for his faith.

But I know that my opponents when their turn comes will appoint their friends to the Lieutenancies, and that so the balance will be maintained.

Time is the best touchstone of this wisdom, and the hoary head is a crown of glory.

There is also another species of generation besides these, in which the cause is immaterial and incorporeal, but the generation is an object of sense and takes place by corporeal means—I speak of the word which is begotten by the mind: for the mind, being itself incorporeal, brings forth the word by means of the organs of sense.

There may be a dozen Violets after her, and you will be none the worse.” Then she walked away from him to the window, and he stood still, dumb, on the spot that he had occupied.

Now, if this is to be the principle of the divine virtue or goodness, to be unwilling indeed that a thing be done and to prohibit it, and yet not be moved by its commission, we then allege that he has been moved already when he declared his unwillingness; and that it is vain for him not to be moved by the accomplishment of a thing after being moved at the possibility thereof, when he willed it not to be done.

“What a blessing for them! But then, perhaps, they’d be very poor.”

The kind of thing I mean is this: to fly up and be borne towards heaven, having a heavy body, is even simply impossible.

Explain also the words of the psalmist: you cause toil by your law, and because of the words of your lips I have kept hard ways.

For the upright man regards nothing but what is consistent and virtuous.

For God made nothing unwittingly; not even a human workman can be said to do so.

There is extant an ambitious scheme for carrying on the line from Pieter Maritzburg to Ladismith, a town on the direct route to the Transvaal, and from thence across the mountains to Harrismith in the Orange Free State, with an extension from Ladismith to the coal district of Newcastle in the extreme north of the Colony

“And now I must introduce you to Miss Forrester,—Kattie Forrester,” said Mr Blake, who was beginning to think that his own young lady was being left out in the cold.

What compels them to come forth?

He will answer you, that these also are for you, That causes the grass, he says, to grow for the cattle, and the green herb for the service (or retinue)of men.

It seemed to me that these passes were so numerous and were signed by so many officers that there could have been no risk in forging them.

Just as if one who had come of an illustrious race but had chosen a philosophic life, should see others priding themselves greatly on being well-born; and being desirious of taking down their vanity, should be compelled to speak of his own distinction; not to adorn himself, but to humble them; so, truly, does Paul also do.

And whom do we admire, tell me; is it not those who despise it?

For He foreknows that some are to be saved by repentance, some even that are perhaps not yet born.

For so it is reasonable for me to speak of you, seeing we are commanded to be patient when injuries are inflicted on us.

For the reapers will come, and will gather the wheat into the barn, and will bind the tares together, and cast them into the fire.

“So she ought,” said Mrs. Fletcher.

Chapter 56.— The Pelagians Allow that Christ Died Even for Infants; Julianus Slays Himself with His Own Sword.

I, therefore, not unmindful of your promise, but insisting on its fulfilment, beseech you to write, on the questions submitted, treatises which will be of incredible service to the Church, especially at the present time.

“Poor Harry!” sobbed Fanny, for it was a relief to cry again, though her tears were more for her lover than her brother. “Poor Harry! they were very fond of each other. I’m sure he must have been sorry—I’m sure he’d feel it”—and she paused, and sobbed again—”He had heard of Harry’s death, then?”

The Apostle Peter says, God made this Jesus, Whom you crucified, Lord and Christ [Acts 2:36] .

You may snub Spicer as much as you please, because he’ll expect to get something out of you.” “He’ll be very much deceived,” said Sir Thomas.

[Luke 22:15] In our own cases, accordingly, the irascible and the concupiscible elements of our soul must not invariably be put to the account of the irrational (nature), since we are sure that in our Lord these elements operated in entire accordance with reason.

[Jeremiah 10:11] He is not such a god: for our God is above all gods.

Preface.— The Knowledge of God is to Be Sought from God.

“Do not go at any rate to-day, Lord Hampstead. Let me beg at least as much as that of you. Consider the importance of the step you will be taking.”

On that occasion he could only call as he passed through London without delay; but he received such encouragement as induced him to spend a night in town on his return, in order that he might accept an invitation to drink tea with the Furnivals.

Only let us leave the strange and foreign land; for this is what sin is, drawing us far away from our Father's house; let us leave her then, that we may speedily return to the house of our Father.

And moreover, with evil purposes, you put on false medicaments, on your pure eyes the stibium, with painted beauty, or you dye your hair that it may be always black.

His garments smelt of industry, and his awkward gait told tales of his humble trade.

The apostle forbids me for he speaks of dead Christians as them which are asleep.

Steinmark. As you say, principle of course is paramount; but when high principle and self-interest point the same way, decision seems to be easy.

Verily they must be mad or drunken to talk so.

Or why should he carry on war, and mix himself with the passions of others, when his mind is engaged in perpetual peace with men?

‘How can I unless he tells me?’

Each (nature desires this), however, after a different mode.

And so enough concerning meats.

“Does papa want to be—alone here?”

But they who are moved by this consideration forget to take into account that the writer of the sacred history does not necessarily mention all the men who might be alive at that time, but those only whom the scope of his work required him to name.

His master’s ignorance had killed him.

“And so I will come, Pat; but there’s all the rint I have, and Mrs. Mulready, I think, ‘ll have the best part of that,” and he jingled a few halfpence in his pocket. So ended the meeting previous to the conversation in Macdermot’s rent-office.

“And who’s the other letter from?” asked Moulder. “But, dash my wigs, it’s past six o’clock. Come, old girl, why don’t you give us the tobacco and stuff?”

Was there any torment ever so cruel, ever so unjustifiable as this!

He had intended to stay but one day after the funeral, but at the end of a week he was still at the rectory.

Quid non mortalia pectora cogis, Auri sacra lames?

“Jem,” he said to the boy, “there’s half a crown lying there on the looking-glass.” Jem looked and acknowledged the presence of the halfcrown.

“No, indeed. What on earth would your aunt do with her broiled turkey and the cold pie? I have got no cold pie for you.”

She came to him late in the evening when his sister and father had just left him, and sitting with her hand upon his, spoke one word, which perhaps had more weight with Harry than any word that had yet been spoken. “Have you slept, dear?” she said.

Within a week of that time my friend was taking quinine, looking hollow about the eyes, and whispering to me of fever and ague.

I don’t know much about smart, Muster Fenwick.

He does not say it will come, but it abides on him.

I am anxious to know about the monks of Egypt , whether they have regained their peacefulness and their faith, and about the church of Alexandria, what trustworthy tidings reaches you: I wish you to know what I wrote to its bishop or his ordainers, or the clergy, and have therefore sent you a copy of the letter.

No man thought that the sun in those days did rise and set, moving round the earth, because a prolongation of the day had been described by the sun standing still upon Gibeon.

Similarly, too, in sending a rescript on (the subject of) divorce, he demonstrates that some had been thinking over that also, chiefly because withal they did not suppose that they were to persevere, after faith, in heathen marriages.

However angry you may be with your Bessy, you will not think that she can appear even to be ungrateful without a pang.

[Revelation 19:10] What then, my brethren?

All this Sir Alured knew and the barrister knew it,—and they feared her indignation the more because they sympathised with the old lady’s feelings.

She was among those who seized with avidity on the novels, as they came out, of the then unknown Scott, and who could still talk of the triumphs of Miss Edgeworth.

The daughter’s husband would be in the Northern ranks, while the son was fighting in the South; or two sons would hold equal rank in the two armies, sometimes sending to each other frightful threats of personal vengeance.

Again we read in Esdras, that Neemias, a cup-bearer and eunuch of the king, of Hebrew race, made a request about the rebuilding of the temple, and obtained it; so that it was granted to him, with many more, to return and build the temple again. Why then should we wonder that one Joakim had garden, and house, and property, whether these were very expensive or only moderate, for this is not clearly told us in the writing?

Tappitt was in this frame of mind, and was seated on his office stool, with his hat over his eyes, when he was informed by one of the boys about the place that a deputation from the town had come to wait upon him;—so he pulled off his hat, and begged that the deputation might be shown into the counting-house.

“And I don’t drink it. I hardly ever take above a glass or two of brown sherry. By George! when I think of it, I wonder at my own courage. I do, indeed.”

And they say, Where will You that we prepare for You to eat the passover? So even from this it is manifest, that He had no house, no place of sojourning; and I suppose neither had they. For surely they would have entreated him to come there. But neither had they any, having now parted with all things.

This may seem strange to those who will remember that Eleanor was once accused of partiality to Mr. Slope, but it is no less the fact.

And this affords a confirmation that Christ belongs to the Creator, who followed the Creator in promising the salvation of the whole man.

Others settled in Arabia, of whose posterity some also have spread into Egypt.

“I am no man’s laquais, ma’am.”

Mary at the time was more than twenty-one, and was thus able, with all the romance of girlhood, to pour her eight thousand pounds into the open hands of her thrice-noble and thrice-beautiful lover.

And being brought on their way, etc, they caused no small joy to the brethren.

Yet shall we be able to bring her back again, if we will put away pride and boasting, and whatsoever things stand in her way, and will follow this temperate and frugal life.

The first was black as soot; and the second bare, without grass; and the third full of thorns and thistles; and the fourth with grass half-withered, the upper parts of the plants green, and the parts about the roots withered; and some of the grasses, when the sun scorched them, became withered.

114. That one ought to make confession while he is in the flesh

Caesar at any rate was ready.

Therefore also it is needful we should be naked, so as to offer nothing that the devil may take hold of, while he is wrestling with us; and to be fully armed at all points, so as on no side to receive a deadly blow.

Of course then in the woman's case also exactly the same thing will happen.

But if it will be seemly in that new kingdom to have some marks of these wounds still visible in that immortal flesh, the places where they have been wounded or mutilated shall retain the scars without any of the members being lost.

He ventured, he said, to represent to the Prime Minister that for generations past the Marquises of Mount Fidgett had been honoured by the Garter.

Having begun the history of his connection with Alice, he found himself obliged to go with it to the end, and as he described the way in which the man had vanished from the sight of all who had known him,—that he had in truth gone, so as no longer to be a cause of dread, he could not without dissimulation, keep back the story of that last scene.

“I can tell you then. You have that, and you’ve drawn nearly a thousand pounds since Fisker came over, in one shape or another. That’s not bad interest on your money.”

The walk back to the house was not of itself very exciting, though to Clara it was a short period of unalloyed bliss.

Her curiosity had been satisfied, and her love of revenge had been sacrificed.

“I knew it,” said Tom.

But the learned and wise Greeks have by no means been silent about an interpretation so holy and so illustrious.

But the countess had a worse time with the earl than any of her children.

“But it’s yes, Father John, and I’m not saying what you’d rather do, but showing you your duty; so at five, Thady, you’ll be down, and see what sort of a mess Judy makes of the goose.”

The Prophet recites five kinds of caution as continually present in the mind of the happy man: the first, not to walk in the counsel of the ungodly, the second, not to stand in the way of sinners, the third, not to sit in the seat of pestilence, next, to set his will in the Law of the Lord, and lastly, to meditate therein by day and by night.

This is not necessary for the holder of any other office or for a

“I don’t know whether it is rubbish. Those are the kind of things that must fall upon a woman so heavily. Suppose I were to beat you?”

There was nothing that he could do but to go away and chafe at his suffering in some part of the world in which nobody would know that he was chafing.

But the scales of fishes— for instance, the seahorse— cause the stars to appear to be; the scales being steeped in a mixture of water and gum, and fastened on the ceiling at intervals.

For such are the loving.

I think, therefore, that this is good by reason of the present distress, namely that it is good for a man to be as he is.

Let us not then tempt the Lord, so as to say, If we belong to You, let us work a miracle.

This both opened the mouth of Paul and enlarged his heart.

Did she remain loyal, or did she secede, that was equally her fate.

“It’s along of you that he’s a-starving of us,” said the old woman.

For why should Jubaianus be disturbed by the question of novelty, so as to require to be satisfied by the authority of Agrippinus, if this was the continuous practice of the Church from Agrippinus till Cyprian?

3. After this, that we may not be confident in the gospel merely preached, nor think that faith only suffices us for salvation, He utters also another, an awful parable. Which then is this? That of the net.

I shall be so anxious to get news from Trafford, and to hear how you found papa. I cannot but think that were he very ill somebody would have let us know the truth. Though Mr. Greenwood is crossgrained and impertinent, he would hardly have kept us in the dark.

The latter Commentary relates the circumstances of the civil war in which he contended for power against Pompey, his former colleague, with Crassus, in the first triumvirate, and established that empire to which Augustus succeeded after a second shortlived triumvirate between himself and Lepidus and Antony.

For love of the glory that may be had from men?

And observe the care of God in this instance.

Mrs Dale, as she would see him from her own window while she was tying on her bonnet, would feel that she knew what was passing through his mind, and would regret that circumstances had forced her to be beholden to him for such assistance.

And— not to rove through individual cases— there was no instance in which it was not by failing in duty through impatience that they perished.

“They are dishonest, and rotten at the core,” said Miss Petrie, trying to make her friend understand that a free American should under no circumstances place trust in an English aristocrat.

“I’ll cut that cock’s comb before I have done with him,” said M’Gabbery to his friend Mr. Cruse, as they rode up towards St. Stephen’s gate together, the rest of the cavalcade following them.

Mr. Slide has, however, expressed his intention of seeking his fortune in New York.

It was not that Lady Laura Kennedy ever confessed to herself the existence of a vicious passion.

On the day following Mr Harding’s return, the archdeacon reached Plumstead full of Mr Cummins’s scheme regarding Puddingdale and Mr Quiverful.

My cousin, who is a brother rather than a cousin, has known how to protect me from the injuries done to me,—or, rather, has known how to take my part when I have been injured.

“Oh, yes, you are. Half of your life has gone; you have settled down into the cares and duties of married life, none of which had been so much as thought of when I took you.”

After a short pause, Captain Green pursued his discourse. “You said salary.”

Who is that priest, save Him, who was at once Victim and Priest?

Why in this case, when it is not Xerxes marching, but the devil with the whole world, and his evil spirits innumerable assailing these twelve men, not at one crisis only, but throughout their whole life, they prevailed and vanquished; and what was truly marvellous, not by slaying their adversaries, but by converting and reforming them.

Demonstration XVII

For, he says, if any one states that the flesh of the Lord is not proper flesh of the very Word who is of God the Father, but that it is of another beside Him, let him be anathema.

A judge is independent;—that is, he is not subject to any penalty in regard to any exercise of his judicial authority; but we all know that a judge would soon cease to be a judge who should play pranks upon the bench, or decline to perform the duties of his position.

But if I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin.

Not if you only look at Him in a bodily fashion.

God admitted the tempter, not in order that He might Himself know that which He did know, but in order that to us to be known and imitated He might set it forth.

And under the name of God, I now held the Father, who made these things; and under the name of the Beginning, the Son, in whom He made these things; and believing, as I did, that my God was the Trinity, I sought further in His holy words, and behold, Your Spirit was borne over the waters.

“Success in your profession I thought you said was your object. Of course you must do as you please. If you ask me for advice, I advise you not to try it. But certainly I will not help you with money. That ass Everett is quarrelling with me at this moment because I won’t give him money to go and stand somewhere.”

A good deed has God as its debtor, just as an evil has too; for a judge is rewarder of every cause.

Do you think there are some good men?

Mrs. Askerton told the history of her life,—of her first foolish engagement, her belief, her half-belief, in the man’s reformation, of the miseries which resulted from his vices, of her escape and shame, of her welcome widowhood, and of her second marriage.

There is, then, no natural efficient cause or, if I may be allowed the expression, no essential cause, of the evil will, since itself is the origin of evil in mutable spirits, by which the good of their nature is diminished and corrupted; and the will is made evil by nothing else than defection from God—a defection of which the cause, too, is certainly deficient.

Nothing will sanctify tyranny or justify injustice, says the philanthropist in his wrath.

The hounds had gone away in the direction of Trumpeton Wood, and it was agreed that it would be useless to follow them.

“Look here, madam, do you mean that you want money from me?”

But since then every cook has learned the strength of her position, and will not allow her master to deal with any butcher except on receipt of the tax as above named.

“He isn’t hard up. Why doesn’t he have his own horses? I’ll tell you what, Carbury, I’ve made up my mind to one thing, and, by Jove, I’ll stick to it. I never will lend a horse again to anybody. If fellows want horses let them buy them.”

Unjust, (however He would be,) were He to exclude from reward the flesh which is associated in good works; and idle, were He to exempt it from punishment, when it has been an accomplice in evil deeds: whereas human judgment is deemed to be the more perfect, when it discovers the agents in every deed, and neither spares the guilty nor grudges the virtuous their full share of either punishment or praise with the principals who employed their services.

Consider how you were born, of what things you have been counted worthy, what manner of garment you have received, how you were built a temple without a breach!

Then I will endeavor to tell something of the story of Verres and his doings.

“You do not?”

If, also, he could have perceived and understood the light in which an alliance with the de Courcy family was now regarded by Crosbie, I think that he would have received some consolation from that consideration.

Is it not a good thing that grapes should become sour which hang out of reach?

If our reader will go to Billingsgate, — for we are at present dealing with the fishmonger, — he will find the carts of these energetic tradesmen at an early hour in the morning, — say, between six and seven, — drawn up in line, with the tails of the carts to the pavement, in all the streets for nearly half a mile round the market.

If you have not faith, do not fear beasts so much as your faithlessness, which renders you susceptible of all corruption.

Though I am going to dine with him I don’t know why he has asked me;—for he and I are on very bad terms.

“You must let me see him alone, dear Mrs Kelly!”

Beatrice’s marriage with Mr Oriel is different; though, remember, I am by no means defending that; it may be good or bad, and I have had no opportunity of inquiring respecting Mr Oriel’s family.

And he did not say, I will, which would have been expressive of the authority of a teacher, but what is expressive of the affection of a father, and what is more than willing, we desire. All but saying, Pardon us, even if we say what is distasteful.

[Psalm 63:1] Moreover, this language teaches that each individual justly owes as a great debt of gratitude to Christ, as if He had come for his sake alone, for He would not have grudged this His condescension though but for one, so that the measure of His love to each is as great as to the whole world.

Or how could the inchoate spiritual creature deserve of You, that even it should flow darksomely like the deep—unlike You, had it not been by the same Word turned to that by Whom it was created, and by Him so enlightened become light, although not equally, yet conformably to that Form which is equal unto You?

There was another period of silence, after which the bishop asked, with a degree of irritable energy, very unusual with him, whether this “pestilent intruder” (meaning John Bold) had any friends in Barchester.

Therefore if He plainly testifies that He is the Son of God, and not the Father, it is an instance of great temerity and excessive madness to stir up a controversy of divinity and religion, contrary to the testimony of the Lord Christ Himself, and to say that Christ Jesus is the Father, when it is observed that He has proved Himself to be, not the Father, but the Son.

Dolly, when questioned by Squercum, quite admitted his propensity to be “tight”.

Let not a man, set perchance in temptation, in body seek that Tower, and when he shall not have found it, be wearied, or faint in temptation.

Is He perhaps to be sought even when found?

Of course he was only too glad to drink tea with Miss Todd.

My object has been simply that we might all act together to punish a vindictive and infamous outrage.

Guardhouse at the Gate of the City Stoffle, Souch and Weazle, soldiers in charge of the gate of the town

Let it be granted us to be approved in Heaven, and all things [are] endurable.

“Well, Kelly,” said Lord Ballindine, “how does Dublin agree with you?” And, “I hope I see your lordship well, my lord?” said Martin.

(No salutation at the beginning of the letter.)

For to the just all the evils imposed on them by unjust rulers are not the punishment of crime, but the test of virtue.

Admonish, he says, the disorderly, not of imperiousness, he says, nor of self-will rebuke them, but with admonition.

For indeed even this establishes the resurrection, the fact I mean of their saying, that the disciples stole Him.

Since, then, even to husbandmen— to use a homely comparison— approbation of the labours which they have already accomplished is a strong stimulus to those which follow, bear with us if we treat what you have yourself given as so much seed, and if we write that we may provoke you to write back.

We shall present Him in such wise that the Only-begotten, Who is of the substance of the Father, shall be known as indivisible and inseparable in nature, not in Person.

On their route to Hogglestock our two travellers had passed Framley without visiting the village, but on the return journey the major asked Mr. Toogood’s permission to make the deviation.

“And now the snow is melted?”

But if there was one man he hated more than another, it was his neighbour Mr Primero; and if one woman, it was Mrs Primero.

Mr. Camperdown knew that she had stolen them, and was a wretched man.

“They thought we were to be here a day sooner, and so they came on the Wednesday morning. They were to come, you know.”

“Yes, he is a lucky fellow; he will get more than he has any right to expect. First and last she will have six thousand pounds. I have not heard him say what he means to settle on her; but perhaps he was waiting till you had come home.”

Let therefore an enemy be so loved as that the Lord's justice whereby he is punished displease us not, and let the justice whereby he is punished so please us, as that the joy is not at his evil but at the good Judge.

As says also great David, with a true insight into human weakness, Mine age is as nothing unto You , not saying that it is absolutely nothing, but signifying, by this comparison to the non-existent, that what is so exceedingly brief is next to nothing at all.

Chapter 2. Justice demanded

A few parrot words had been learned as to the expediency of fitting the great and increasing Church of England to the growing necessity of the age.

“Not the least. What ought we to do? It will break mamma’s heart to be turned out again.”

“Is it not so when he stigmatizes me in this way merely as an excuse to himself? He wants to be rid of me,—probably because I did not sit and hear him read the sermons. Let that pass. I may have been wrong in that, and he may be justified; but because of that he cannot believe really that I have been a liar,—a liar in such a determined way as to make me unfit to be his heir.”

Showing that he also was guilty of sin. Then, to pull down his pride and arrogance, He says,

Wherefore let the hypostasis of the Father be discriminated by the appellation of God; but let not the Son be cut off from this appellation, for He is of God.

She did not know Pope’s famous line, but it all lay in that.

[Acts 20:32] That is, these things will not be unprofitable to me.

Daniel, indeed, after the prayer which he poured out before God, actually says respecting himself, Whilst I was praying and confessing my sins, and the sins of my people, before the Lord my God.

And thou indeed in the words makest mention of a resurrection of the dead; but the priest, as in a kind of image, signifies to you by very deed the things which you have believed and confessed in words.

Wherefore he obtained the same abode as he, this wonderful man being no vain imitator, as it seems, of the martyr.

Her assessor will be the Roman matron who, having— albeit it was through noctural violence, nevertheless— known another man, washed away with blood the stain of her flesh, that she might avenge upon her own person (the honour of) monogamy.

He had been seen by Barrington Erle and Fitzgibbon to pass that turning.

He who confuses this order will be no less guilty of transgressing the law than are the impious heathen.

The next day was what Kate called the blank day at the Hall.

Who is there that says that to Him Who has no beginning ungeneracy is added as an acquisition through comparison with something else?

Addressing himself to the rival of Plancius, he tells Laterensis that, even though the people might have judged badly in selecting Plancius, it was not the less his duty to accept the judgment of the people.

But all the world understood that all the world was to be gathered together at Miss Dunstable’s house on the night in question—that an effort was to be made to bring together people of all classes, gods and giants, saints and sinners, those rabid through the strength of their morality, such as our dear friend Lady Lufton, and those who were rabid in the opposite direction, such as Lady Hartletop, the Duke of Omnium, and Mr. Sowerby.

She got up at once, having glanced at the name upon the card, and seemed to know all about him.

By the woman then clothed with the sun, he meant most manifestly the Church, endued with the Father's word, whose brightness is above the sun.

She had made for herself a great reputation, and she did not scruple to tell herself that this had come from her singing.

It may also be thus: If you being the wings of a dove silvered, sleep in the midst of the lots, with snow they shall be whitened in Selmon, so as that those men be understood who through grace receive remission of sins.

“My Priam filly, three-year old, out of Gallopade’s dam, has won the only two races she has started for: one at Storkbridge, and the Queen’s Plate at Guildford; and she may win a stake this week at Southampton.”

We can’t arrange anything for her.

And why have they not reckoned them as gods, I do not say among those select gods, but not even among those, as it were, plebeian gods?

“You won’t, won’t you?”

Yes, she could live without going to Greshamsbury; but for some time she had but a poor life of it.

“But then she knows everything so well,” said Clara.

“He asked my father once, and my father flatly refused him.”

[Matthew 5:20] For that the righteousness of the catechumens might not feel secure, it is written, "Unless a man be born again of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God."

For no one would take any hurt from them, if they are gods, as our opponents say, and do nothing for hurt, but rather all things for good.

'Come, you children,' says the Lord, 'hearken to me, and I will teach you the fear of the Lord.

but replied to them, He is a Prophet.

“I’m not quite sure you’ll like him,” said Miss Baker.

Apollo therefore, remedying one evil by another, ordered twice seven youths to be executed on his account.

The duel with Lord Chiltern had been about another lady, and the seat at Loughton had been conferred upon Phineas chiefly on account of his prowess in extricating Mr. Kennedy from the garotters,—respecting which circumstance it may be said that as the meeting in the street was fortuitous, the reward was greater than the occasion seemed to require.

[Acts 20:34] These are his words who says, As having nothing, yet possessing all things.

“Oh! Adela,” he said, “if you knew what it is to have an empty heart—or rather a heart not empty—that would fain be empty that you might again refill it. Dear Adela!” And he put out his hand to take her own. She hardly knew why, but she let him take her hand. “Dear Adela; have you never sighed for the comfort of an empty heart? You probe my wounds to the bottom; may I not search your own?”

No evil certainly was known of her, but then nothing was known of her; and the Quins were a very cautious people where religion was called in question.

What means receiving, and what had fellowship?

But, nevertheless, he strove to do his duty, and remembered that the excitement of official life was still open to him.

Money had given him nothing, nothing but the mere feeling of brute power: with his three hundred thousand pounds he had felt himself to be no more palpably near to the goal of his ambition than when he had chipped stones for three shillings and sixpence a day.

When you open Your hand, they shall all be filled with good [Psalm 103:28].

But to the last Ralph Holt was uncomfortable and dismal, foretelling miseries.

“Oh; she is, is she?”

And this He does, that He may touch them home: and therefore He has also added, shall He not much more clothe you?

Mr. Grey was a thoroughly respectable man, and Mr. Scarborough, though upright and honorable in many dealings, had not been thoroughly respectable.

She was sure that she would hold by her purpose, and yet she feared that her purpose was wrong.

And nevertheless God imparts relief to the oppressed by the tender kindness and earnestness of the brethren.

And when I silently ignored his request and made my petitioner blush by blushing to reply, he put forward his uncle to enforce his suit, knowing that as the boon was for another he would more readily ask it, and that as I held his episcopal office in respect he would more easily obtain it.

He had an idea that it might be better for him if he could engender some closer intimacy between himself and Madeline before he absolutely asked the fatal question; but the closer intimacy did not seem to produce itself readily.

Cicero’s description of what took place is as follows: “About the sixth hour of the day, when I was defending my colleague Antony in court, I took occasion to complain of certain things which were being done in the Republic, and which I thought to be injurious to my poor client.

As it had for many years been my ambition to be a thoroughly good servant to the public, and to give to the public much more than I took in the shape of salary, this feeling has sometimes annoyed me.

Whom do they wish to represent as coming from the south?

To his thinking, it was not in human nature that a man should pay such a sum as twenty thousand pounds to such people as Crinkett and Euphemia Smith,—a sum of money which was not due either legally or morally,—except with an improper object.

These streets were not rectangular, .straight, and ugly, but ran crookedly here and there, up and down hills, round the little indented bays of the sea, with houses standing sometimes angularly, sometimes with gables to the roadway.

For how can the covetous man be thankful?

For as unless He had taken the form of a servant, He would not have been easily received, so had He not by the voice of a servant prepared the ears of his fellow-servants, the many (at any rate) of the Jews would not have received the Word.

[Isaiah 59:2] How then comes this removal, how comes this separation?

Since, however, the subject is an important one, it will not be unsuitable, if with a view to its illustration, we linger over the many testimonies which again and again meet our view.

“Because he’s an ass and a cur,” said Mr Melmotte with an assumed air of indignation. “Alf and his people had got hold of him. There was ever so much fuss about it at first,—whether he would accept the invitation. I say it was an insult to the City to take it and not to come. I shall be even with him some of these days.”

Mary’s fortune was no doubt her own; but the furniture had been in a great measure supplied by the Dean, and the Dean had paid the necessary premium on going into the house.

Sir Orlando Drought was sounded, and he for a while did give ear to the suggestion.

[Luke 23:34] For he did not say, Father let them live long, me indeed they kill, but let them live.

For they are not only impossible to be comprehended, but even to be searched.

He was the last man in the world to adopt a system of sacerdotal interference.

Is it possible that he who was of so severe a morality, that he used his influence as a Roman senator to prevent the building of a theatre in that city dedicated to the manly virtues, would wish his mother to be propitiated as a goddess with words which would have brought the blush to her cheek when a Roman matron?

People were beginning to believe that there would never be a bit more to eat in the land, and that the time for hope and energy was gone.

But Alice had kept herself aloof from her grand relations on her mother’s side, choosing rather to hold herself as belonging to those who were her father’s kindred.

If they have divided their functions among themselves, the matter comes back to the same point, that any one of them is unable to supply the place of all.

After that, would she not be treacherous to betray him?

Are you young?

For the refutation, which is based on experience, is entirely trustworthy.

They all went to the dining-room, and drank each a glass of sherry.

But Lady Rowley and Sir Marmaduke had then been present also; and that man on that occasion had been the old friend of the old father, and not the would-be young friend of the young daughter.

[Luke 5:20] For it was so that He made the inner man whole of his palsy, by loosing his sins, by binding fast his faith

No thought of Thady entered her mind; but some indefinite, half-conceived idea respecting Ussher—that he had not been killed—that he had come to life again—that some mysterious miracle, such as she had read of in novels, had taken place; and that Father John had come with some blessed news, which might yet restore her to happiness and tranquillity.

Now, Miss Letty Fitzgerald was strong on this subject, and little inklings had fallen from her nephew which robbed her of much of her peace of mind.

His oats are too tame for me rather than too wild.

[John 13:10] For perfect cleansing is by the baptism, not of John, but of the Lord, if the person receiving it be worthy; if, however, he be unworthy, the sacraments abide in him, not to his salvation, but to his perdition.

The canes are passed between two, an outside one, say, and a centre one; and the refuse stalk, or trash (so called in Jamaica), or magass (so called in Barbados and Demerara), comes out between the same centre one and the other outside roller.

For nearly two years the little household in Curzon Street went on well, or if anything was the matter no one outside of the little household was aware of it. And there was a baby, a boy, a young Louis, and a baby in such a household is apt to make things go sweetly.

There was a stationary sofa—they called it there a divan—which was fixed into the corner of the room, and on one side of the angle sat Mahmoud al Ackbar, with his feet tucked under him, while I sat on the other.

, That was true.

Accordingly I wholly approve of the tragedy, when it says:—

But the mercy of God is rich toward us, who are in no respect related to Him; I say either in our essence or nature, or in the peculiar energy of our essence, but only in our being the work of His will.

What fruit had I then, [Romans 6:21] wretched one, in those things which, when I remember them, cause me shame— above all in that theft, which I loved only for the theft's sake?

They have fled, they have disowned your friendship, they are providing for their own safety by means of your distress.

[Luke 1:34] Mary said unto the angel, How shall this be to [36] me when no man has known me?

But there he sets that down as wishing to show that virtue is easy, [Romans 7:8?]

“You will be better at Castle Richmond, my dear: you will be much happier there, of course. There can be no reason why you should come again into the gloom of this prison.”

“And therefore despises it.”

“Tact, tact, tact,” as he was in the habit of saying to himself when walking along the paths of his Putney villa.

[Matthew 7:23] Then shall I say unto them, I never [44] knew you: depart from me, you servants of iniquity.

Chapter XII. His Exile

If I avoid, you say, the curse pronounced by the law on the worshipper of the sun, I incur the curse pronounced by the same law on him that hangs on a tree.

The ravens fed him, whom that royal and noble race were persecuting.

But if this was in accordance with its nature, it was altogether surely and always with matter.

“But she does not like Lord Chiltern?”

“Women,” he said, “are so fond of mystery that one can never quite know what they intend to do.” He corrected himself at once however, perceiving that he had seemed to say something against his wife, and explained that his general accusation against the sex was not intended to apply to Lady Laura.

“I will tell you all that happened another time, love,” said he; “we will not talk of these things now. A day or two at Durbellière will restore you to your spirits, and then we will rejoice over our escape.”

For in these natures there is nothing which has the force of memory, of mind and reflection, which both retains the past and foresees the future, and is able to comprise the present; which things alone are divine.

But prophecy does not employ figurative forms in the expressions for the sake of beauty of diction.

Neque vero Gymnosophistæ, nec qui dicuntur [Σεμνοί], utuntur mulieribus, hoc enim præter naturam et iniquum esse existimant; qua de causa seipsos castos conservant.

That which He Himself has not produced is not pleasing to God, unless He was unable to order sheep to be born with purple and sky-blue fleeces!

But since, if God be for us, [Romans 8:31] no one, however that way minded, can be against us, the more they humbled themselves the more they grew, and they prevailed exceedingly.

At any rate he arrived in Curzon Street with his mind fully resolved, and had spent the minutes in the cab considering how he had better perform the business in hand.

He chastens for a season, He condemns not for ever: the others He spares for a season, and will condemn them for evermore.

“But you see what they say.”

Having come to one of the cities not far off (the name of which some give ), and having put the brethren to rest in other matters, at last, looking to the bishop appointed, and seeing a youth, powerful in body, comely in appearance, and ardent, said, This (youth) I commit to you in all earnestness, in the presence of the Church, and with Christ as witness.

“These western cocks have crowed loudly,” we said; “too loudly for the comfort of those who live after all at no such great distance from them.

1. To Minucius Fundanus. I have received an epistle, written to me by Serennius Granianus, a most illustrious man, whom you have succeeded. It does not seem right to me that the matter should be passed by without examination, lest the men be harassed and opportunity be given to the informers for practicing villainy.

For if the saying be brief, yet is its virtue great.

“Because,—I hardly know how to tell his story. There have been things about Oswald which made it almost necessary that Mr. Finn should explain himself to me.”

as a slave) by a certain Christian to a Samaræan , which is an atrocious thing to be said.

[Luke 15:2] And the scribes and the Pharisees murmured, and said, This man receives sinners, and [3] eats with them.

“Let us look out for a husband for this girl, so that we may get her married,—out of the way of her lover.” It is not nice.

There was nothing on any one of those up on the shelves that attracted him.

And Himself too, when He was making laws for His own disciples, what said He?

No doubt she was handsome.

[Galatians 6:9] Do you see how that just as He led them, so also He leads us?

Of the three with whom Mrs. Proudie was blessed one was already in a position to exercise that will in a legitimate way over a very excellent young clergyman in the diocese, the Rev.

Chapter 26. Of Honorius the emperor and Telemachus the monk

Here again fulfilling a prophecy.

Let us thus act with respect to each point in which we have offended, and let us not carelessly pass by our sins, for there awaits us hereafter, there awaits us a season of account.

Moreover, although the motion of Matter was not prone either to good or to evil, it would still, of course, oscillate between good and evil; so that from this circumstance too it is obvious that Matter is contained within certain limits, because its motion, while prone to neither good nor evil, since it had no natural bent either way, oscillated from either between both, and therefore was contained within the limits of the two.

To this Simon answered: [This is a good joke: behold a fellow who offers to teach me!

Well;—might it not be best for him that it should be so?

He hunted, though he could not ride.

For he does not always do so with the harp, nor always with the psaltery.

She wished to rebel against them, but by no means wished to oppose him. She was aware, as though by instinct, that her life would be very bad indeed should she fail to sympathise with him. It was still the all-paramount desire of her heart to be in love with him. But she could not bring herself to say that she sympathised with them in this direct attack that was made on her own mode of thought.

By such grace it is effected, not only that we discover what ought to be done, but also that we do what we have discovered—not only that we believe what ought to be loved, but also that we love what we have believed.

Upon this, his enemy immediately vanished out of his sight; and thus, as he had intended in his heart and mind, he set free his mother from the errors of heathenism, though his father continued to cleave to its evils.

She had perceived, with a mother’s anxious eye, that her second daughter was not indifferent to Alaric Tudor.

It would be very nice, she thought, to love him.

All in all, He is at once sight, and hearing, and knowledge; and there we stop, for it is not permitted us to ascribe the more animal perceptions to that refined nature.

He had abandoned everything that he valued in the world, and had made himself wretched in every affair of life, because he could not submit to acknowledge to himself the possibility of error on his own part.

It is so little flattering to be loved when such love is the offspring of gratitude.

My husband!

For I certainly prefer a man to smile who has a stern countenance than the reverse; for so his laughter will be less apt to become the object of ridicule.

What was he to do when his office hours were over?

She did not want anything to eat, and would not take anything.

“John,” she said, “if you have condemned me, say so. I shall defend myself for the sake of my character, but I shall not ask you to come back to me.”

[2 Corinthians 11:14-15] And again our Lord said to His disciples:— Lo, I have given you authority to tread upon the power of the adversary.

But when he, in turn, inquired of God the name of God, he was told that that should not be asked after because it was wonderful.

But why establish at greater length what needs no demonstration?

Nihil amplius istos appellare possum, quam implos et parricidas, quibus non sufficit sexus a Deo datus, nisi eliare suum profane ac petulanter illudant.

Necessity before inclination caused her to sleep, and yet when her body was sleeping her soul was awake, and often in sleep either went again through what had been read, or went on with what had been interrupted by sleep, or carried out what had been designed, or foresaw what was to be carried out.

Nothing could then prevent the acquitted murderer from resuming his seat in the House, and gentlemen were already beginning to ask themselves after what fashion it would become them to treat him.

And that he had not even set foot on the water, nor was that possible for man, but for the Lord alone and those whom He permits, as He did for the great apostle Peter.

“Do not be so inconsiderate as to ask Reason for reasons,” said Marie.

“Wholly by me?” said Eleanor, astonished at, and not quite liking, his altered manner.

Of them who fight with wild beasts the very bones are ground to powder, and consumed by bears and lions.

She would walk with him and ride with him, and take a lively interest in the performances of all his horses, and listen to hunting stories as long as he chose to tell them.

It was, at any rate, a fact that there must be some woman designated by the letters,—some woman who had, at any rate, chosen to call herself M. D. And John Eames had called her M. There must, at any rate, be such a woman.

She would talk to him, coax him, implore him, reason with him, forgive him, love him, and caress him.

‘And because she loves you.’

“All I ask of you now is to pause. This is no time for marrying or for giving in marriage.”

Now I thought at that time that all men were judged worthy of the same things.

All the day long Your Salvation: at all times.

A man, therefore, becomes guilty of all by doing what is contrary to that on which all hang.

But we are still on the tower; and here I must declare that though I forgive the tower, I cannot forgive the horrid obelisk which has latterly been built opposite to it, on the Canadian side, up above the fall; built apparently—for I did not go to it—with some camera-obscura intention for which the projector deserves to be put in Coventry by all good Christian men and women.

For what happiness can be more fallacious and false than that in whose blaze of truth we yet remain ignorant that we shall be miserable, or in whose most secure citadel we yet fear that we shall be so?

And would it were only making ourselves ridiculous.

She was led into the room which her father had been allowed to enter through the window; and here she sat, in her husband’s house, feeling that in no position in the world could she be more utterly separated from the interests of all around her.

Before he left me, I believe I found my voice to tell him that he should certainly have the money which he required.

I mean to.

And if these madmen in their godless folly do not know with what spirit they reject the sound, and yearn after the corrupt doctrine, let them hear the words of the same Apostle to the same Timothy, But the Spirit says expressly that in the last days some shall away from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils through the hypocrisy of lying talk.

Be persuaded by me then, and come; both on this account and on account of the bad times; for a conspiracy of heretics is assailing the Church; some of them are here now, and are troubling us; and others, rumour says, are coming; and there is reason to fear lest the Word of Truth should be swept away, unless there be stirred up very soon the spirit of a Bezaleel, the wise Master builder of such arguments and dogmas.

For let the best artificer be himself the critic of his own designs, and let his performances be determined to be good or poor, according as the mind which designed them gives sentence upon them.

But if you scoff at hearing of hell and believest not that fire, remember Sodom.

“She wouldn’t do it at all;—joke or anyway.”

“Oh, indeed!” said Alice.

The other was soft, and unused to much bodily exercise.

He now held in his hand a letter written by the protégé of the honourable member for Limehouse; he would not read it—’ (cries of ‘Read, read!’) ‘no, he would not read it, but the honourable member might if he would—and could.

Here he is most fatally mistaken; here, however unwittingly— here he hinders us from being watchful, and from praying that we enter not into temptation, since he maintains that it lies entirely in our own control that this should not happen to us.

He would always endeavour to explain to her that there was no other way under the sun for keeping Labour from being sent to the wall;—but he would do so hopelessly and altogether ineffectually, and she had come to regard him as a lunatic to the extent of that one weekly shilling.

Miss Brown Pleads Her Own Case, and Mr. Robinson Walks on Blackfriars Bridge

About this, however, we will say nothing: but we will take up again that argument that he does not grant essential being to Him to Whom he does not leave the title of the Existent.

“But he is though; that very young man! He’s come over to make it up with her. He’s told me so with his own mouth. You may be as sure of it as,—as,—as anything. You leave ‘em to me, Mrs. Ray; I wouldn’t bring them together if it wasn’t for good. It’s my belief our pet would a’ died if he hadn’t come back to her—it is then.” And Mrs. Sturt put her apron up to her eyes.

He appreciated the depth of the darkness.

But at the same time the Duke was arranging his autumn movements, or at any rate those of his daughter.

See the other things of which he speaks.

“Well;—you know what I mean, Lady Margaret.”

And they who have trampled upon all laws human and divine, and condemned me in my absence, have not sentenced me for what I have done wrong, for my secret deeds are not made manifest to them; but they have contrived false witness and calumny against me, or rather in their open attack upon the doctrines of the Apostles have proscribed me for my obedience to them.

“Upon my word,” said the Duke, “I can’t understand that there should be any reason strong enough to make you throw your party over.”

The journey, like everything else in Egypt, was sandy, hot, and unpleasant.

If, then, according to Plato, it is only possible to learn the truth either from God or from the progeny of God, with reason we, selecting testimonies from the divine oracles, boast of learning the truth by the Son of God, prophesied at first, and then explained.

But as the underlying parts sympathize with the head, and the head with the underlying parts, so also things terrestrial with superlunar objects.

Well, then, if one thinks so with regard to the matter now before us, one will not fail to gain a proper conception of it.

At the end of a fortnight there came out to her from Timaru a young man, who declared himself to be the clerk of a solicitor established there, and this young man brought with him a letter from the manager of the bank.

Plainly, He Who speaks is the Lord Almighty, and He Who has sent is the Lord Almighty.

But Jones is relieved from a burden which would have broken his poor shoulders, and which even Ferdinand Lopez, who is a strong man, often finds it hard to bear without wincing.

IT was in the month of August.

Such mercy would in itself be a sin.

And to each seed a body of its own. Where then is the alien matter which they speak of? For He gives to each his own. So that when he says, You sow not that which shall be, he says not this, that one substance is raised up instead of another, but that it is improved, that it is more glorious. For to each of the seeds, says he, a body of its own.

[Exodus 1:13-14] It was for the sake of those who were in a bondage, corresponding to the bondage of the Hebrews, that the Son of God took upon Him only the form of a slave, [Philippians 2:7] doing no work that was foul or servile.

‘But you have made anything but a fool of yourself since,’ she replied triumphantly; ‘you have gone out into the world like a man, and have made your fortune, and have so returned that everybody is proud of you. Now you can take a wife to yourself and settle down, and be a happy goodman.’

For, when the holy women, as the Gospel-story has revealed, brought word of the stone rolled away from the tomb, the sepulchre emptied of the body, and the angels bearing witness to the living Lord, their words seemed like ravings to the Apostles and other disciples.

“Thank God;—yes. I was looking at Brownriggs to-day,—and Ingram’s. I don’t think we’ll sell either. I have a plan, and I think we can pull through without it. It is so much easier to sell than to buy.”

For all these belong to the destroying power; though some may prefer even in this place to take a more merciful view of this fire, worthily of Him That chastises.

At any rate, for the present, all trace of them was lost.

“There is one of the lessees there,” said M. Le Gros, pointing back to the gentleman on the top of the steps, “who has been to hear you and to look at you this two times—this three times at ‘The Embankment.’ He do think you will become the grand singer of the age.”

in the eleventh book, to lead on the slowness of readers by means of outward sensible things which are seen by the eyes of the flesh; and that I then proceeded to enter with them upon that power of the inner man whereby he reasons of things temporal, deferring the consideration of that which dominates as the higher power, by which he contemplates things eternal.

There were days on which she could not,—cr at any rate did not go to her office.

Who, while his body joints were wrenching ([ἀνασκαπτομένων]) asunder?

In matters wherein they harm you not, he means, give them no handle; as he says also, when writing to the Romans, Render to all their dues: tribute to whom tribute is due, custom to whom custom, honor to whom honor.

[1 Corinthians 15:46] Therefore the former city is greater by age, because first was born Cain, and afterwards Abel: [Genesis 4:1-2] but in these the elder shall serve the younger.

I will not lengthen my letter by quoting the many instances of the like virtue which you can read to your profit in my first book against Jovinian.

“Well, go on—at laist—”

No sooner do they rise from the baptismal font, and by being born again and incorporated into our Lord and Saviour thus fulfil what is written of them, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven and whose sins are covered, than at the first communion of the body of Christ they say, Forgive us our debts, though these debts had been forgiven them at their confession of Christ; but you in your arrogant pride boast of the cleanness of your holy hands and of the purity of your speech.

Doubtless it is that truly good part, the grand and lasting character of which is thus described by the Lord, when Mary disregarded the duties of hospitality and courtesy and chose it: Martha, Martha, you are careful and troubled about many things: but there is but need of but few things or even of one only.

Lopez had expected the attack and had endeavoured to prepare himself for it. “I should have thought, sir, that you would not have paid much attention to such statements in a newspaper.”

Chapter VII. Western Province.-Enysna, George, and Tiie Cango Caves

That name became hers when she was married, but the reader must first know her as Catherine Baird.

But to men who meditate on God's law day and night, it is indeed needless to write all the proofs of this kind; the above are sufficient to persuade even the most obstinate opponents not to divide the divine titles.

“And the Lord Chancellor, of course, is tinsel.”

It was a comfort to him to have someone to whom he could speak, and he much preferred Nidderdale to Miles Grendall.

I take Christ to fight on my side, and to aid me, His injured and insulted Name.

As New York is the most populous State of the Union, having the largest representation in Congress—on which account it has been called the Empire State—I propose to state, as shortly as may be, the nature of its separate constitution as a State.

Entreat the common master of us all, to prolong your life to the old age of Isaac.

From his mouth proceed burning lamps and hearths of fire are cast forth.

This man had been publicly sent by the city of the Philippians, who had come as minister to Paul, and perchance bringing him some contribution, for toward the end of the Epistle he shows that he also brought him money, when he says, Having received of Epaphroditus the things that came from you. [Philippians 4:18]

How can you be understood to stand in the courts?

Therefore surely, it is, that Paul, permitting even a second marriage, demands in the case of money great strictness, saying, Why not rather take wrong?

But, on account of my sins, by whose suggestion or counsel I know not, in the past year he has promulged such a law in his republic that whoso loves him sincerely must lament exceedingly.

He is king over all things that are in the waters— that is to say in the seat of pleasure and luxury, of propagation of children, and of the fertilisation of the marriage bed.

And Crispus, the chief ruler of the synagogue, believed on the Lord with all his house.

Who can deny it?

He did not throw himself out, neither did he break off from his purpose; far from it: but he still keeps to it.

[23] [John 20:30] And many other signs did Jesus before his disciples, and they are they which [24] are not written in this book: [John 20:31] but these that are written also are that you may believe in Jesus the Messiah, the Son of God; and that when you have believed, you may have in his name eternal life.

[Genesis 19:32-33] So, too, the sons of Noah going backward covered their father's nakedness, which he who was wanton saw, he who was modest blushed at and dutifully hid, fearful of offending if he too saw it.

[2 Timothy 2:20, 21]

So the partridge gathers what it has not brought forth.

On the next morning early Ralph was in the square.

For as to those who have altogether denied the existence of God, I should not only refuse to call them philosophers, but even deny them the name of men, who, with a close resemblance to dumb animals, consisted of body only, discerning nothing with their mind, and referring all things to the bodily senses, who thought that nothing existed but that which they beheld with their eyes.

Then Lady Mountjoy spoke to her. “You have heard of M. Grascour, my dear?”

It is the nature of boys to be cruel.

Then he had believed that she would soon marry, if not Silverbridge, then some other fitting young nobleman, and that all would be well.

This virtue then let us emulate, this let us pursue, that we may both enjoy present honor, and attain unto the glory to come, by the grace and love towards man of our Lord Jesus Christ, with whom be unto the Father glory and might, together with the Holy Ghost, now and always, and world without end. Amen.

This, however, is in general to be noticed, that if any are evil, not so much in their mind as in their doings, and are not borne to sin under the incitement of purpose, upon them punishment is inflicted more speedily, and more in the present life; for everywhere and always God renders to every one according to his deeds, as He judges to be expedient.

Intreat your slave, that is the word: flatter the person bought with your money, supplicate the captive; even if he reject you with disgust, again besiege him: even if you speak to him oftentimes, and he consent not, watch for his being alone, and force him, and become an object of derision.

But her tears—though they were there in the corners of her eyes—were not painful tears.

“Not there!” said I. “How about the consul’s tariff, if they don’t keep their part of the engagement?” But Joseph explained to me that their part of the engagement really amounted to this,—that we should ride into their country without molestation, provided that such and such payments were made.

Eran.— What promises?

And He who gives life bountifully to all, has His side pierced with a spear.

But you’re his wife, eh? Madame Brudo.

As God on the other hand threatens hell, and made hell ready, that by coming to know of it you might so live as not to fall into hell.

He received strength from his toil, new life from his zeal, presided at the function, took his place in the conflict, enthroned the Bishop, and was conducted home, no longer borne upon a bier, but in a divine ark.

Their marvellous subtleness and tenuity give them access to both parts of our nature.

The clergy are holy men and their lives are always worthy of praise.

I need only go before the executive of which I myself was the chief, desire that the established documents should be searched, and demand the body of Gabriel Crasweller to be deposited in accordance with the law as enacted.

“Let me pray you. Let me implore you. Let me beseech you.”

Wild beasts snatch away, men share with others.

Therefore have we especially need of prayer early and by night.

Mrs. Valentine, or Mrs. Val Scott as she was commonly called, was a very pushing woman, and pushed herself into a prominent place among Gertrude’s friends.

Well, better one man that does the will of the Lord, than ten thousand transgressors.

The man to whom he was now thinking of applying as his friend, was a certain Mr. Butterwell, who had been his predecessor in the secretary’s chair, and who now filled the less onerous but more dignified position of a Commissioner.

S.); for in truth we do not pay the same penalty for public and for hidden faults.

Have you forgotten their own words.

That it would behove her, on her own account and that of her daughters, to take care of her own little fortune in contracting any such connection, that she felt strongly.

Had Florian told the truth when the deed was done, Pat Carroll would have been tried at once, and, whether convicted or acquitted, the matter would have been over long ago.

For the earth, unaccustomed to mere human contact, rejected all the appliances laid upon it, and often threw back the blocks of marble in the faces of those who were seeking to place them.

Chapter 27

What wrong then is done it, which was made for my sake, when it suffers these things for my correction?

Mr Flatfleece had spent a considerable portion of the day at the club, and it was now suggested that he and Herr Vossner were in partnership.

That Bertram had flung her from him because she had been cold to him—that he believed.

For, in truth, if we think of the visible sun, it burns by day: does the moon burn by night?

That was all, but it was enough to make her word to Beatrice true. She did send it to Frank enclosed in a letter from herself. We must reserve to the next chapter what had taken place between Frank and his mother; but, for the present, we will return to the doctor’s house.

And there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies.

All this irritated the Captain. He was intensely averse to any law proceedings by which the story should be made public.

“Two pair of horses! It’s more than we ought to keep.” He should not have said “we.” He felt, when it was too late, that he should not have said “we.”

For when he denies that Matter was born or made, I find that, even on these terms, the title Lord is unsuitable to God in respect of Matter, because it must have been free, when by not having a beginning it had not an author.

“The horse has crushed him.”

But to whom should she be married? To this question the capitaine had answered in perfect innocence of heart, that La Mère Bauche would be much better able to make such a choice than himself. He did not know how Marie might stand with regard to money. If madame would give some little ‘dot,’ the affair, the capitaine thought, would be more easily arranged.

Nevertheless the reason why I admire those youths, and pronounce them blessed, and enviable, is not because they tramped on the flame, and vanquished the force of the fire: but because they were bound, and cast into the furnace, and delivered to the fire for the sake of true doctrine.

How most readily might he take himself off from Llanfeare and have nothing more to do with the tenants and their rents?

Now he would have to tell Florence of this meeting; and he thought of the comparison he would make between her bright young charms and the shipwrecked beauty of the widow.

But there came to be a difference between the Rector and Fanny on one side, and Mrs. Clavering and Mary on the other.

Observing such things in the human race (for they abound), impatient and weak minds are perverted, as if they were good in vain; since God averts, or seems to avert, His eyes from the good works of the pious and faithful, and to promote the wicked in those pleasures which they love.

In no respect does (such procrastination) pertain to an age which is already running its own assigned course, and paying its own dues to maturity.

So that the flesh, which is accounted the minister and servant of the soul, turns out to be also its associate and co-heir.

And this indeed contains much ambiguity.

“Did he tell a lie about it afterward?”

“Thank ye, sir,” said Jeannette, with a curtsey.

St. Paul, indeed, was called upon to bear stripes, was flung into prison, encountered terrible dangers.

But when Antony had prayed and called upon the name of Christ, the child was raised whole, for the unclean spirit had gone forth.

And, again, who does not see that no exception is made of any one as a person to whom the offices of mercy may be denied when our Lord extends the rule even to our enemies?

The increasing value of the estate might bear that without being crushed.

First of all, favour with God was given to the Jews.

Chapter 15.— The Pelagians Profess that the Only Grace Which is Not Given According to Our Merits is that of the Forgiveness of Sins.

Every one must feel anxious to discover the typical significance of this action.

The door was closed, and John Gordon and Mary were alone together.

“Stop, Mr Armstrong; stop,” said Barry.

But who says it, and to whom says he it?

Now, to what sin do infants die in their regeneration but that sin which they bring with them at birth?

A sect troublesome to nobody so dealt with!

The House of Commons and the Whigs determined to keep Palmerston in his place.

[Wisdom 7:9] And neither does he who loves himself above measure, and eagerly considers that which is expedient for himself alone, regardless of the necessities of his neighbour, honour chastity, but he also dishonours it.

And the intelligent man will acquire rule, and will understand a parable and a dark saying, the words and enigmas of the wise.

He had at any rate rescued himself out of the hands of Neefit, who had become intolerable to him.

58. When Ursacius and Valens saw all this, they immediately condemned themselves for what they had done, and going up to Rome, confessed their crime, declared themselves penitent, and sought forgiveness , addressing the following letters to Julius, Bishop of ancient Rome, and to ourselves. Copies of them were sent to me from Paulinus, Bishop of Treveri.

As these were the first words which the squire spoke to Mrs Dale as they walked together up to the Great House, after church, on Christmas Day, it was clear enough that the tidings of Johnny’s visit, when told to him, had made some impression.

“Here you are with all your boasting,” is what we say.

Again we went on by rail to Buffalo.

For the applause showed that they were instructed and de lighted, but the tears that they were subdued.

Father, speak to us and bless us both. We are again your children.

But although he was endowed with so many exalted qualities, he could not escape the jealousy of those who are irritated by witnessing the virtues of others.

Jeremiah [Jeremiah 15:9] also speaks of the city of Jerusalem, in which He suffered: Her sun is gone down while it was yet day; she has been confounded and reviled, and the residue of them will I deliver to the sword.

Yes; why not women as well as men?

But he probably fails.

The Commissioner was answered by Governor Hicks, who was placed in a somewhat difficult position.

Chapter 4. Men and Women Alike Under the Instructor's Charge

Belleroach. Why don’t you place a chair for the burgomaster? Don’t you know that age and station expect such services? Why, child, he is one of the sworn triumviri of Bruges… .

All things are strange, all inimical, all condemned; aimed by the Evil One for the attrition of salvation!

The precious Blood of Christ, if it be received with full assurance, (for this will have power to extinguish every disease); and together with this the divine Scriptures carefully heard, and almsgiving added to our hearing; for by means of all these things we shall be enabled to mortify the affections that mar our soul.

“Because,” he added, “strangers, I know, are sometimes suspicious about money; and I would not, for worlds, have you think that I would put you to expense.” I assured him that I did not think so, and then the subject was dropped.

Now let us select some instance from among those statements which you allege to be on your side; so that if these be once found to have been properly dealt with, other questions may also be held to rank with them; and if the case goes otherwise, I shall come under the condemnation of the judges, that is to say, I shall have to bear the shame of defeat.

Lily was very nice, very nice indeed.

So then we need exercise.

And those who rule over us well are under the constraining influence of the great King, whom we believe to be the Son of God, God the Word.

He was introduced to Mrs. Carbuncle and Miss Roanoke and Sir Griffin.

Expounding the reason of the incessant plotting of the devil against us, he declares: Before the advent of the Lord, the devil did not so plainly know the measure of his own punishment, inasmuch as the divine prophets had but enigmatically announced it; as, for instance, Isaiah, who in the person of the Assyrian tragically revealed the course to be followed against the devil.

Chapter XI. Vale Valete

“Yes, mamma. Patrick saw him the other day, and I think it is better that I should see him also.”

This is the reason why here He declares Himself.

He had posted down and posted back again, and, crowded as the court had been, he had contrived to make his way in, using that air of authority to which the strongest-minded policeman will always bow; till at last the very policemen assisted him, as though he were in some way connected with the trial.

Now, to assail your fever, you are two, thou and the Physician.

Yea, I say unto [47] you, and more than a prophet.

“No fear, Myles; no fear,” said the laughing girl, running round the table. “It won’t be left on your hands; I’ll wear it tomorrow at Mary Brady’s wedding.”

Sir Thomas, when he was thus left, stood for awhile with his hands in his trousers’ pockets, contemplating the condition of his son.

And leaping and praising God; not admiring them, but God that wrought by them.

And there being no rule nor law by which a solution may be obtained of the things which are called in question, but, as in other matters, this ambitious rivalry running out into excess, there is nothing to which it does not cause damage and injury.

In everything, says he, and in all things I have learned the secret, i.e.

The first who appeared on this the second morning of the trial was Corney Dolan, who unfortunately came prepared to swear anything which he thought might benefit the prisoner.

“And why not? A bet is the only way to decide these things.”

And he appears to make himself of the Corinthians' party throughout, although caring for all alike.

“But it is by no means certain. Will you go back to Ireland tomorrow morning, and undertake not to see me again, until you come prepared to marry me? If not we must break it off.”

No, by heavens!

She desired some adherent to her cause who would with affectionate zeal resolve upon washing Phineas Finn white as snow in reference to the charge now made against him.

He certainly would not wish to be “nagged” by his wife.

And then Instantius, Salvianus, and Priscillian set out for Rome, in order that before Damasus who was at that time the bishop of the city, they might clear themselves of the charges brought against them.

What’s a woman?

For we are running, and running to our own country; and if we despair of attaining, by that very despair we fail.

And then as to her whistling him down the wind. Did she wish to do that? In what state did her heart stand towards him? Might it not be that, let her be ever so much on her guard, she would show him some tenderness,—tenderness which would be treason to her present affianced suitor? Oh, why had her mother desired her to go through such an interview as this!

“And I may trust to your honour?”

That they bear children; [1 Timothy 5:14-15] for what reason?

“What I can’t understand is, how you let them do it, with such a command as you have in the place, or should have with such a man as Bunce. I cannot understand why you let them do it.”

“Brisket will not be there?” he asked, as he walked across Finsbury Square with the old man.

You O Jew, say that it is Jesus; but he who accuses you as liable to the same charges, will transfer this himself to the person of Moses.

She must not also be a coward!

Then the apostle subjoins a notable difference between these two men, saying, The first man is of the earth, earthy; the second man is the Lord from heaven.

The frost lasts hardly beyond a month, and the harbours are seldom icebound.

Mr. Outhouse began by declaring that no consideration should induce him to see Trevelyan, and commissioned his wife to go to the man and tell him that he must leave the house.

“But, Emily,—do you mean to say then that, let you set your affections where you might,—however wrongly, on however base a subject,—your mamma and I ought to yield to them, merely because they are so set?”

And this he pointed out above when he said, Though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved.

In the course of the day two such telegrams were sent, in the latter of which the Thompson family were assured that the Browns would arrive, probably in.

You say indeed that God grieved over His image as an Emperor over his statue, and repaired the shattered image, and formed without generation a nature from the Virgin, like that of Adam who was born without generation, and raises up man's nature by man, for as by man came death, so also by man came the resurrection of the dead.

If with the voice only it is not well, because the hands are slow; if only with the hands it is not well, because the tongue is mute.

Let all men understand that you will choose to suffer anything rather than transgress the law of God; and they will abstain from compelling you.

Stein.

Wherefore Christ also repaid him who was about to betray Him with everything opposite.

“No!” she exclaimed, avoiding him with the activity of a young fawn; “not again. I had to beg your pardon, and it was so I did it.”

For it has often chanced to me, that when I believed I was open to nothing else, something nevertheless would come into the mind which stung me otherwise than I had presumed.

“I suppose I shall have to go into residence almost immediately,” said Mark, recurring to the more agreeable subject of the stall.

Thus, then, the statues disputed with each other concerning Juno and Pege, and [at length] with one voice they said: When the day is finished. we all, gods and goddesses, shall know the matter clearly. Now, therefore, master, tarry for the rest of the day. For the matter shall certainly come to pass. For that which emerges is no common affair.

Exposition on Psalm 34

In the meanwhile it can be understood that Lady Midlothian’s praise would gall her.

And let the priest take one as a burnt-offering for sins.

Mr. Thorne and the countess had left her too abruptly; she had in vain looked about for an attendant chaplain, or even a stray curate; they were all drawing long bows with the young ladies at the bottom of the lawn, or finding places for their graceful co-toxophilites in some snug corner of the tent.

No tenderer word can be spoken.

So then the 120 Olympiads make up 480 years: for the other three years remaining are perhaps taken up in the interval between the first and fourth years.

“It will be yours now without coveting,” replied Herbert; and then there was another pause, during which Herbert sat still, while Owen stood leaning with his back against the mantelpiece.

But he had already made some money out of them, and, though he would find himself sometimes trembling before he had taken his daily allowance of port wine and brandy-and-water, still he was buoyant, and hopeful of living in a park, with a palace at the West End, and a seat in Parliament.

But having examined a great number of passages from the Holy Scriptures, I find it written in the Book of Job, that holy man being the speaker, Behold, piety, that is wisdom; but to depart from evil is knowledge.

She had not seen him for months, and his letters were short, unsatisfactory, and rare.

(They affirm,) however, that the dodecade is indicated by what is termed the zodiacal circle.

But how would his father look at him?

With true feminine love,

“You are thinking about yourself, aunt Sophie; and I must think for myself.”

But it does not subvert nor consume him; for he is protected by his immoveable and incorruptible foundation.

And especially as besides, they were ill-disposed towards him, and this is to be seen from many places. For hear what James says to him, "Thou see, brother, how many thousands of Jews there are which believe . . . and these all have been informed of you that you teach men to forsake the law." And oftentimes he had many disputings concerning this.

By no means; but that certain of these appellations are used more sacredly in an allegorical sense, which, as the discourse proceeds, we shall explain at the proper time.

Even Mrs. Clavering could not deny that this would be so, and then they reverted to matters which more closely concerned themselves. “I suppose Harry will marry at once now?” said the mother.

Still there is only a moderate amount of mischief in these words: one intending no impiety at all towards Christ might sometimes use them: we will therefore omit at present all discussion about our Lord, and reserve our reply to the more open blasphemies against Him.

“And when that woman talks about brewery chimneys, I know what a comfort it is that there should be chimneys, and that they should be near. Brewery chimneys are better than a do-nothing scamp that can’t earn a meal for himself or his children. And when I see Joe with his pink coat on going to the meet, I thank God that my Molly has got a lad that can work hard, and ride his own horses, and go out hunting with the best of them.”

He felt severely the loss of the excitement to which he had been accustomed, but the thing was too important to him to be slurred over.

“No one could defend you as well as yourself, Mr. Chaffanbrass.”

“I have no doubt he would,—or does, for I am aware that they have met. But why should he not admire her?”

But, in fact, he did not indulge either in food or sleep, except in so far as the necessities of nature required.

Yet I will not fail you altogether, if you will accept this offer.

Now we saw that He is called the true light with reference to the sensible light of the world, and that the light of the world is the same thing as the light of men, or that we may at least enquire whether they are the same.

[Philippians 3:20] To these three sorts of renunciations the three books of Solomon suitably correspond.

For a moment she felt disposed to go and confront him there before her aunt.

It was almost a summer evening;—so much so, that some of the party had been sitting on the garden benches, and four of the girls were still playing croquet on the lawn, though there was hardly light enough to see the balls.

In fine, governors themselves, when they urge men to deny, say, Save your life; and, Do not lose your life.

He pillaged every place he approached, and pulled down or burnt the granaries and storehouses.

Our Artist made a wonderfully correct sketch of the place, which the reader will see.

There were five gentlemen besides Phineas Finn himself,—Mr.

Then their conscience becomes elastic; and as the trial is a fair one between man and man, they will do their best to cheat you.

She was cautious not to say a word of Frank Tregear, understanding something of that strange jealousy which could exist even when he who was jealous did not love the woman who caused it.

Why was He baptized?

But here again poor Bessy was made to understand how terribly difficult was this experiment of entertaining on a footing of friendship a lover with whom she had quarrelled only a month or two before.

“Oh, Fanny! my poor Fanny!” said Kilcullen; “if such is the case, you are really to be pitied. If this be true, your condition is nearly as unhappy as my own.”

There was very great doubt and there was much deliberation over that note at Humblethwaite.

“Is it true, Miss Mary, that he didn’t steal it?” Jane asked imploringly.

Of course there would be duties to perform to the dear children; but I don’t think so ill of you, Margaret, as to suppose for an instant that you would shrink from that.

In answer to this, Margaret said that she was much obliged, but she hoped that her aunt had put herself to no trouble. Then she said a word or two about her uncle,—a word or two that was very difficult, as of course it could mean nothing.

So, I calls out, as loud as I could, as how Miss Anty war wanting in the kitchen: and wid that he come to the door, and unlocks it as bould as brass, and rushes out into the garden, saying as how Miss Anty war afther fainting.

Not considering that it is declared, They who please men are put to confusion, because God has despised them; and that Paul also has gloriously and sublimely uttered, If I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.

Therefore she wrote to him an answer, much longer than his letter, in which she explained to him that the more than ten years’ interval which had elapsed since words of love had passed between them had—had—had—changed the nature of her regard.

But he knew that such a letter would go for nothing with her,—that she would regard it simply as an excuse on his part.

If, however, neither animal which I predicate of all individual animals, nor accidents which are discoverable in all things of which they are nonessential qualities, can subsist themselves by themselves, and (yet if) individuals are formed out of these, (it follows, therefore, that) the triply divided Substance, which is not made up out of other things, consists of nonentities.

A Dreadful Communication

76. To him we answer: But this is not the judgment which the Church pronounces, to which also God has now revealed in a plenary Council the point in which you were then still otherwise minded, [Philippians 3:15] but because saving charity was in you, you remained in unity.

“I am glad to find you are able to be out,” said the Colonel.

For by this way of acting, he not only renders himself, but the other also, more charitable.

But hence the heretics derive a pretext for catching in their traps simple and ignorant men: what was spoken by our Lord in accordance with His manhood they falsely assert to have been uttered in the weakness of His divine nature, and since one and the same person spoke all the words He used they urged that all He uttered He uttered about Himself.

Nothing of manual work seems ever to be done by an European.

“I don’t think that with her it will make much difference where the house is, or what the circumstances.”

For sons of them that were put to death he has called them who were not only not terrified by the sufferings of those that went before, but in Him for whose name they knew them to have suffered, being inflamed with their glory which did inspire them to the like, in most ample hosts they believed.

She never had a great appetite.’ And so the doctor went his way.

Who has opened the mouth of his mind and drawn in the Spirit, so as by Him that searches all things, yea the deep thing of God, [1 Corinthians 2:10] to take in God, and no longer to need progress, since he already possesses the Extreme Object of desire, and That to which all the social life and all the intelligence of the best men press forward?

I know the difference, Mr. Morton, and of course I know how you feel it.

This is the mouth, the dust whereof I would fain see, through which Christ spoke the great and secret things, and greater than in His own person, (for as He wrought, so He also spoke greater things by the disciples, ) through which the Spirit gave those wondrous oracles to the world!

But here there is no order of nature, where is the excellence of grace.

“And you said you were.”

When Greek Meets Greek, Then Comes the Tug of War

Chapter 7. Grief of the Faithful at the Admission of Idol-Makers into the Church; Nay, Even into the Ministry

From Ballytowngal to Moytubber was about a mile and a half.

For if He is worthy in the case of those attributes, He is surely not less worthy in this.

They did not know what had occurred, and probably thought that their best hope of safety lay in compliance.

“Very sad indeed,” said the lawyer. “I never pitied a man so much in my life, my lord.”

Ver. 10. He that loves his brother abides in the light; and there is none occasion of stumbling in him.

Was it not because the word of Jeremiah was fulfilled in him?

All things, therefore, he says, when unbegotten, are in us potentially, not actually, as the grammatical or geometrical (art).

I,— for I will now speak of myself as I,—I had wished to call it by the name of a very respectable young publisher who was then commencing business, and by whom we intended that the trade part of our enterprise should be undertaken.

Chapter LXVI.

Ask your heart; see whether it has love.

But he had been firm, and could now walk along with a light heart.

As he stood holding his horse by the rein while he rang the bell, a side-door leading through the high brick wall from the garden, which stretched away behind the house, was suddenly opened, and a lady came through with a garden hat on, and garden gloves, and a basket full of rose leaves in her hand.

See God also doing the same with the Jews.

“I am very glad it was not me, that’s all. I don’t think I could shake hands with Father Barney.”

But impiety against Him is, in the matter of religion, to die saying there is another God, whether superior or inferior, or in any way saying that there is one besides Him who really is.

In speaking of principalities and powers, he speaks both of those above and those beneath.

And thus the first-born of all creation, who is the first to be with God, and to attract to Himself divinity, is a being of more exalted rank than the other gods beside Him, of whom God is the God, as it is written, The God of gods, the Lord, has spoken and called the earth.

“I did not mean that. I think one likes a contrast. But I must go, say on the first of January, to pick up Miss Cassewary.”

Well-to-do Colonies find no difficulty in borrowing money for their own purposes at a moderate rate of interest,—say 4 per cent.

In like manner it seemed impossible that sins should be forgiven through repentance, but Christ gave this power to His apostles, which has been transmitted to the priestly office.

It was good coal, burning clearly and without much ash.

Let us cleanse our heart from iniquity, that we may see the Lofty One in His honour.

There was no squalor about the place, but it was melancholy, light-coloured, and depressive.

I make no accusations, and am content with answering for myself.

But when once they began to distribute them, though the wants of so many thousands were satisfied, they filled baskets with the fragments that were left.

Are they troubled by the loathings of their stomachs, and is variety of flavours sought for to get rid of their aversion, so that there is set before them meat at one you roasted, at another raw, and at another half cooked and half raw?

There are things which a man knows, but he cannot bring himself to say so even to himself.

“I’m an innocent man, Mr Armstrong. I am indeed.”

I could wish that men would consider these three things that are in themselves.

I considered its horns, and, behold, there came up among them a little horn, and before it there were three of the first horns plucked up by the roots: and, behold, in this horn were eyes like the eyes of man, and a mouth speaking great things.

But you are not thus to be persuaded to cease from gluttony, but though it is but as far as the throat, and as long as the hour of eating, nay not even so long, that the pleasure abides, you continue in your indulgence.

Although they had previously differed on doctrinal subjects, yet the evil had attained no great height, for they had still held communion together and were wont to have kindred feelings.

For often people under the influence of wine, after laughing immoderately, then are, I know not how, by some impulse of intoxication moved to tears; for both effiminacy and violence are discordant with the word.

Mr. Seely seemed to be opposed to any great effort,—would simply trust to the chance of snatching little advantages in the Court.

But as he repeatedly entreated an audience, and I had not only refused it, but almost ordered that he should be removed from my presence, he said with greater boldness, that he petitioned for nothing more than that you might be summoned hither, in order that in our presence, he, driven by necessity to such a course, might have a fair opportunity afforded him of complaining of his wrongs.

It contained but two lines.

[Ezekiel 18:4-9] These words contain a description of the conduct of Christians, a notable exhortation to the blessed life, which is the reward of a life of goodness— everlasting life.

“It is the party of your countrymen who went up before us,” said she.

Deservedly then, very excellent things are spoken of you, thou city of God: for not only is the Jewish nation, born of the flesh of Abraham, included therein, but all nations also, some of which are named that all may be understood.

Is the difference between falsehoods so very trifling, that one can think it matters nothing whether the falsehood is palpable in this way or in that?

Chapter 14. Exhortations to faith and love

At all times I have esteemed your Blessedness with becoming reverence and honour, and have loved the Lord and Saviour dwelling in you.

All that is done by attorneys.

Yet I cannot but remark that it is not only said, As one taken away from milk, such may be my soul's reward; but with this addition, As one taken away from milk when upon his mother's breast, such may be my soul's reward.

They practise as statesmen, as lawyers, and as doctors in the colony; and, though o they have not as yet shone brightly as divines in our English Church, such deficiency may be attributed more to the jealousy of the parsons of that Church than to their own incapacity.

If then He be not a Son, let Him be called a work, and let all that is said of works be said of Him, nor let Him and Him alone be called Son, nor Word, nor Wisdom; neither let God be called Father, but only Framer and Creator of things which by Him come to be; and let the creature be Image and Expression of His framing will, and let Him, as they would have it, be without generative nature, so that there be neither Word, nor Wisdom, no, nor Image, of His proper substance.

“I have supposed so,” he said, in answer to her last assertion.

“Go on;—go on. Let me hear it all, and I shall learn something.”

For the compound nature cannot be of the same essence as either of the natures out of which it is compounded, as made one thing out of others: for example, the body is composed of the four elements, but is not of the same essence as fire or air, or water or earth, nor does it keep these names.

Psalm 131/130

“You will have delicious weather,” continued Mary. “September, and the beginning of October, is the nicest time of the year. If I were going honeymooning it is just the time of year I would choose.”

“You told me, just before my cousin came here, that if I asked any question you would answer me.”

So they, being sent forth by the Holy Ghost, departed unto Seleucia; and from thence they sailed to Cyprus. And when they were at Salamis, they preached the word of God in the synagogues of the Jews: and they had also John to their minister.

“I know my mind well enough.”

Such conduct, however, may be tolerated in some degree.

For this very power of distinguishing, whereby the false suggestions made to time are repelled, is a certain part of recollection.

Yes, George Hotspur was married: and, as far as any love went with him, had married the woman he liked best.

I shall be bound to expose his conduct.

For his sake she had done her best to separate Alice and John Grey, and George had shown himself to be unworthy of the kindness of her treachery.

What if, at stated intervals, changes take place in the universe, and, as in the tides of the sea, prosperity at one time flows, at another time ebbs, evils alternating with it?

[Hebrews 6:4] But those who were not baptized into the Holy Trinity, these must be baptized again.

But some one of you will say, 'They do love them, and care for them.'

And then again he reverted to the injustice which had been done to him in the matter of letter-writing—as if that consideration were of moment in such a state of circumstances as was now existing.

The Squire himself was a very handsome man, tall, broad-shouldered, square-faced, with hair and whiskers almost snow-white already, but which nevertheless gave to him but little sign of age.

Professors and professed students, of whatever special school, frowned, shook their heads, and were inclined to think that their mysteries were being trifled with and their trade undermined.

Your baths do but make the peasants less hardy, your taverns give them a taste for luxury, and yet you provide these for credit's sake.

He is Your best servant who does not so much look to hear that from You which he himself wishes, as to wish that which he hears from You.

But Herbert was inexorable; and Mrs. Jones, feeling herself overcome by the weight of the misfortune that was oppressing them all, obeyed, and descending to her master’s study, knocked at the door. She knew that Mr. Prendergast was there, and she knew that Sir Thomas was not; but she did not know that any stranger was in the room with Mr. Prendergast. Mr. Mollett had not heard the knock, nor, indeed, had Mr. Prendergast; but Mrs. Jones having gone through this ceremony, opened the door and entered.

And thus the blessed man, having received, through another woman, her praiseworthy apology, joyfully departed from the doors of her who had not permitted herself to be seen or saluted.

This also was convenient, and taught our young prebendary to look on his new preferment more favourably than he had hitherto done.

For this nature demands; and nature is not fully and perfectly blessed till it attains what it seeks.

I don’t know any young woman in London would like it better than I should.

At the end of a fortnight the boys had gone back to school, and Lord Lovel was to reach the rectory in time for dinner that evening.

For the divine wisdom foreknew that some would trifle and name a multitude of gods that do not exist.

“I’m sure I couldn’t draw a disparaging picture of anybody you would really call your friend. But indeed I pity you, living among so many such people. There can be nobody here who understands you.”

“Of course, they are a little older than I am,” she said, hoping to get out of the difficulty.

At that moment dinner was announced. “Will you give Lady Amelia your arm?” said the husband.

The handsome sheets, hoods, and rollers, in which they had hitherto appeared, and on which the initial B was alone conspicuous, were carefully folded up, and they were henceforth seen in plainer, but as serviceable apparel, labelled W. B.

Some of these things indeed the disciples of Plato and Pythagoras enquired into.

Of this decade, the perfect number, there are termed four divisions—namely, number, monad, square, (and) cube.

“Is it all over?” asked Lady George.

He commences his story of the goodness of Plancius by describing the generosity of the towns on the road to Brundisium, and the hospitality of his friend Flavius, who had received him at his house in the neighborhood of that town, and had placed him safely on board a ship when at last he resolved to cross over to Dyrrachium.

“He is to come and see you;—isn’t he?” Lizzie assented with a smile, but without a word.

Hence it is necessary, dearest son, that you, as becomes sons, should show him the reverence due to a priest, and not provoke his spirit to anger.

The conversation was interrupted by Miss Colza, who came and stood opposite to them.

Therefore he attacks them then first, when all hope that they should be saved was taken away: that none may say, Nothing has come of it.

The system needed for men might probably be different.

They who were most inclined to be charitable in their judgment, such as John Griffith of Coed, thought that the document was still hidden, and that it might not improbably be brought to light at last.

And if He knows, what matters what men say that I have done to her.’

If one who had practiced fasting to such an extent, and used only water, so long that he had brought on infirmities and frequent infirmities, is thus commanded to be chaste, and does not refuse the admonition, much less ought we to be offended when we receive an admonition from any one.

The whole thing lies in a nutshell.

Then the gentleman from the hotel retreated down the hill, but Mr Palliser, during the rest of the interview, frequently fancied that he heard the man’s footfall at no great distance.

how impoverished, if one might judge from outward appearances.

Chapter 5 [III.]— Rebuke Must Not Be Neglected.

He fears the water; he is choked with the cleansing, as the Legion were in the sea.

Here, indeed, He did not name the judgment or the day of judgment, but indicated it much more clearly by describing the circumstances, and foretold that it should take place in the end of the world.

And to those who are expert only in the technical methods of proof a mere demonstration suffices to convince; but as for ourselves, we were agreed that there is something more trustworthy than any of these artificial conclusions, namely, that which the teachings of Holy Scripture point to: and so I deem that it is necessary to inquire, in addition to what has been said, whether this inspired teaching harmonizes with it all.

in correspondence with the Homeric line:—

But as the matter is simply one of my own pleasure, I shall give it up.” After that Mr. Clavering hunted no more, and never spoke a good word to any one of the bishop of his diocese.

As he sat in his place, conscious of the work that was before him, listening to the presentation of petitions, and to the formal reading of certain notices of motions, which with the asking of sundry questions occupied over half an hour, he looked back and remembered accurately his own feelings on a certain night on which he had intended to get up and address the House.

Archdeacon Grantly would certainly not come to such a place for his dinner.

For his sake had she not given up her uncle and her aunt, and St John and St Nicholas — and the very Virgin herself, whose picture she had now removed from the wall beside her bed to a dark drawer?

“Why, Lucy; I did not know that you and her ladyship were such friends.”

His father had again offered it, and he had accepted it.

What do you say, O man? Have you cast your whole soul into the mire through this extravagance, and do you overlook it trailing on the ground, and are you so anxious about a pair of shoes? Mark their use, and respect the verdict you pass on them. For to tread on mud and mire, and all the spots on the pavement, for this were your shoes made. Or if you can not bear this, take and hang them from your neck, or put them on your head.

“If Mr Palliser changes his mind of course I shall come home,” said Alice, with a little attempt at a smile.

So he got into a cab and had himself driven to Porchester Terrace.

She had, at least, never been so much under the water as to be out of sight.

He was sick of fair faces, and fat arms, and free necks.

For if the expression is used thus, salvation does not depend on external things, whether they be many or few, small or great, or illustrious or obscure, or esteemed or disesteemed; but on the virtue of the soul, on faith, and hope, and love, and brotherliness, and knowledge, and meekness, and humility, and truth, the reward of which is salvation.

Of whom— to pass over the long list of his virtues, which it would take a long time to unfold— I will say but this one thing.

Up they went, and Mr. Manylodes was not long in following them.

And in the mother’s breast there had been a sad, unrepressed feeling of regret that young people should so often lose their chances in the world through over-fancifulness, and ignorance as to their own good.

But Spain is not a first-class power, and like the other weak ones of the earth must either perish or live by adhering to and obeying those who will protect her Though too ignoble to be strong, she has been too proud to be obedient.

Who will set me free from the business of this world?

Indeed he could have no chance if the girl were disposed to take Roger for her husband.

Did any man in love ever yet find himself able to tell the lady whom he loved that he was very much disappointed on discovering that she had got no money?

For the heaven and the earth are parts of the whole bulk of the world; and the earth alone, and the heaven alone, is composed of innumerable parts; and its third part is less than the remainder, and the half of it is less than the whole; and the whole body of the world, which is usually called by its two parts, viz.

And we must say a word or two about this friend.

It was clear, however, that nothing could be done till the Englishmen were gone, and as I had a day at my disposal I determined to walk up to the college and meditate there on the conduct which it would be my duty to follow during the next two months.

Wherefore, if Holy Scripture proclaims that God is love, and that love is of God, and works this in us that we abide in God and He in us, and that hereby we know this, because He has given us of His Spirit, then the Spirit Himself is God, who is love.

In his wretchedness and anger he would have indicted this newspaper also for a libel, had not his lawyer assured him that, according to law, there was no libel in stating that a man was going to be married.

She would use all her influence to attain that position,—if only she could bring herself to feel assured that the thousand a year would be forthcoming.

From all the towns around, from Peterborough, Oundle, Stilton, and Thrapstone, there came mounted messengers, with expressions of hope and condolence as to the young lord’s broken bones.

That it is which we mean when we declare that a scrupulous man is impractical in politics.

Those, she said, which go into the building without being polished, are those whom God has approved of, for they walked in the straight ways of the Lord and practiced His commandments.

“Mr. Amedroz is dead.”

It is a new thing to give remission of sins to men.

This position had been accorded to him of course through the Burton interest, and it was understood that if he chose to make himself useful, he could rise in the business as Theodore had risen.

“He wishes that we should take ourselves off,” said Lord George, hoarsely.

Chapter 7. Let us stand aloof from such heretics

In London, in Paris, in Florence, in Rome, in the Havana, or at Grand Cairo, the cab-driver or attendant does not merely drive the cab or belabor the donkey, but he is the visitor’s easiest and cheapest guide.

He had told Alaric of his rejection, because he had already told him of his love, but he had whispered no word of it to anyone besides.

“Time and tide wait for no man, Mr Magruin, and my friend wants his money tomorrow.”

It was understood that the boy was to be buried at Headford, on Saturday, the 3rd; but, nevertheless, the father was in the assize town on the Friday.

“He has told us all so, just as he was leaving us. After his things were packed up he told us.” Cecilia stood still and looked into her friend’s face. Maude she knew could say nothing to her that was not true. “He has made a mystery of it, but that has been the impression he has left upon us. At any rate there has been a quarrel.”

And yet the circumstances were so terribly suspicious!

“What is the trouble?” The man’s voice was now changed, and so was the glance of his eye. There was no expression of anger—none as yet; but the sweetness of his countenance was gone—a sweetness that was unusual to him, but which still was at his command when he needed it.

Between Sicocoeni and Mr. Burgers, the last President of the Republic, it would have been impossible for abstract justice to have drawn a true line so confused had the matter become.

“If I were to let them go, Mr. Camperdown would get them. There’s nothing he wouldn’t do to get them. Oh, Frederic, I hope you’ll stand to me, and not see me injured. Of course I only want them for my darling child.”

When this captain should have taken himself and his vessel back to England, I would retire to a small farm which I possessed at the farthest side of the island, and there in seclusion would I end my days.

And let the men, fixing their eyes on the couch, and leaning without moving on their elbows, be present with their ears alone; and if they sit, let them not have their feet crossed, nor place one thigh on another, nor apply the hand to the chin.

And Simon said: It is most unjust that he should give the same things to the just and the unjust.

Then he knew that it behoved him to set some altered course of life before him.

“Well, sir, it won’t be long,” said Bertie, “for I shall be starved to death in about three months.”

After all, with her aunt’s love and care for her, with her mother and sister near her, with the respect of those who knew her, why should the lands have been barren, even had there been no entrance for her into that elysium?

They would be more likely to introduce contention and disturbance into the other cities and into the Church of Rome.

So too, assuredly, they who sin, and day by day wallow in the same wickedness, are unwilling to know it, although their consciences pluck at them.

“Good night, Sir Thomas,” said Stemm, retiring slowly, “but I didn’t know, Sir Thomas,—nor I couldn’t know.” Then Sir Thomas unlocked the box, and gradually surrounded himself with the papers which he took from it.

Therefore that He was given could not be a sign of subjection in the God-head.

Yes, you can.

‘Dr Freeborn mustn’t quite have it all his own way. Of course Dr Freeborn is everything in Plumplington; and when I’m Jack’s wife I’ll do what he tells me again.’

George Hotspur smiled, looking up at the red nose of the malignant old man as though it were a joke; but that which he had to hear at this moment was a heavy burden. Captain Stubber probably understood this, for he repeated his words.

For in it I see a triple allusion, to the Maker, to the being made, and to the image.

He salutes you warmly, and tells us tidings concerning Gabinianus which give us joy, namely, that having by God's mercy obtained a prosperous issue in his case, he is now not only in name a Christian, but in sincerity a very excellent convert to the faith, and was baptized recently at Easter, having both in his heart and on his lips the grace which he received.

For you do not, as we have often said before, wash with a true baptism; but you bring on men an ill repute by your empty name of a false baptism."

These ten little books that I have written for you, they borrow one from another, and depend one upon another.

Years were stealing over her.

“Emily,” exclaimed Nora Rowley, “how can you say such things,—on purpose to provoke him?”

Perhaps that your enemy might die.

Soon shall you come.

Well, well; we will not name him. Yes, Count Upsel must yet again renew his passionate vows, and seek the bride he loves. Go to him, sir, and bid him not despair.

And if all that was done among them was related, it would be seen that they openly outraged nature, and there was none to restrain them.

Answer the points, one by one; follow the footsteps of this letter; leave not a single jot or tittle of the slander unnoticed.

Or at least, let My judgment go forth, not in deceitful lips, from Your countenance, that is, that I may not in judging utter anything else than I understand in You.

Warrington, and Pen’s mother, and Laura are our hero’s better angels,—angels so good as to make us wonder that a creature so weak should have had such angels about him; though we are driven to confess that their affection and loyalty for him are natural.

“But if you could learn to love me—”

“I didn’t know,” said Lady Frances, blushing.

The history of the world contains six periods marked by the dealings of God with men.

Therefore God does come when invoked.

Isaiah also points out their deed, and says: In His humiliation His judgment was taken away.

Whosoever, then, desires to obtain priesthood, not for the pomp of elation but for doing good, let him first measure his own strength with the burden he is to undergo, that, if unequal to it, he may abstain, and also approach it with fear, even if he thinks himself sufficient for it.

He was his father’s only child, and his father had left him great wealth.

Are merely men our enemies?

“He has lied about Mountjoy,” said Augustus.

Kelly’s Court was restored to such respectability as could ever belong to so ugly a place. It was a large red stone mansion, standing in a demesne of very poor ground, ungifted by nature with any beauty, and but little assisted by cultivation or improvement. A belt of bald-looking firs ran round the demesne inside the dilapidated wall; but this was hardly sufficient to relieve the barren aspect of the locality. Fine trees there were none, and the race of O’Kellys had never been great gardeners.

But the wicked Laban was not acquainted with the word symphony in his saying to Jacob, And if you had told me I would have sent you away with mirth and with music and with drums and a harp.

We are a very singular people.

But nevertheless, when the time came for him to go down into the drawing-room he did make the effort which his friend had counselled, and walked into the room with less of that hang-dog look than the earl and Lady Julia had expected. They were both there, as was also the squire, and Bell followed him in less than a minute.

For if it be false which he teaches, who would care to give heed to false doctrine, in which both he deceives that teaches and he is deceived that learns?

These, then, who are sealed on their foreheads [Revelation 7:3-4] from every tribe of the children of Israel, are a hundred and forty-four thousand in number; and these hundred and forty-four thousand are afterwards said in John to have the name of the Lamb and of His Father written on their foreheads, and to be virgins, not having defiled themselves with women.

And they indeed are sent forth to minister [Hebrews 1:14], but He searches even the deep things of God, according as the Apostle says, For the Spirit searches all things, yea, the deep things of God.

Here there were no Kafirs, the Kafirs not having as yet made their way in quest of wages as far west as Worcester.

But we suffer from such disturbances as we did not see even in the beginning of the dispute.

“You don’t mean to say that you don’t think he did make a mess of it?”

So that a mighty Cabinet Minister, or a duchess in great repute, or any special wonder of the season, could not fail of entering her precincts and being seen there for a few moments.

It is not for the Lord's sake, but for the sake of the man's kind speech that you do it.

For to the persecutor Saul He said from on high, Saul, Saul, why do you persecute me?

But what reply need be made to him who, while professing to bring foreward credible statements, thinks himself bound to make use of calumnies and slanders against Jesus, as if He were a wicked sorcerer?

For, if the pure faith is to be found in his exposition, and there is no suspicion of unfaithfulness, I am not so foolish as to seek an occasion of accusing him, and while I wish to censure another for his fault be myself censured as a slanderer.

“A marquis, duke, and a’ that”?

(The following letter is sometimes attributed to Basil, and is found in his works as well as in those of Gregory. The mss. however, with only a single exception, give it to the latter.)

When it occurred to him, he said, that there might be a hope of doing anything towards such an object, he could not go to Ireland leaving the good work behind him.

There was not a wheel to be seen in the town.

This he had learned from Him whom the holy angels, with the accompanying witness of miracles, presented as the sole object of worship.

Everything was troublesome.

He abstains from mountain talk as a scholar abstains from his grammar, or a chemist from his crucibles; but we feel that he is abstaining because of our ignorance; and when, at our instigation, he does speak of mountains, we feel that he talks of them as though they were naught, out of pity to our incompetence.

Setting himself on fire, he married Semele, the daughter of Cadmus, of whom he begot Dionysus.

We are then no longer under a tutor, for you are all sons of God.

Whence, then, the soul's natural fear of God, if God cannot be angry?

They despaired of Him when dying—he hoped when joined with Him in dying; they fled from the author of life—he prayed to his companion in punishment; they grieved as for the death of a man—he believed that after death He was to be a king; they forsook the sponsor of their salvation—he honoured the companion of His cross.

“There would be no difficulty, because no one need be consulted but us two.”

‘It or miss.’ If any shentleman chooses to talk to me about ready money I’ll take two thou’ off.

“That is because you do not know her.”

Whatever things, then, the Holy Scriptures declare, at these let us took; and whatsoever things they teach, these let us learn; and as the Father wills our belief to be, let us believe; and as He wills the Son to be glorified, let us glorify Him; and as He wills the Holy Spirit to be bestowed, let us receive Him.

If therefore He partakes not of the nature of the Father, He is not a Mediator, but is separated.

Herbert Onslow has as yet done neither, and therefore he is not entitled to take a wife.

But when we assert that Christ was crucified, we do not malign Him with a curse; we only re-affirm the curse pronounced by the law: [Deuteronomy 21:23] nor indeed did the apostle utter blasphemy when he said the same thing as we.

Do certain signs shine forth by the motion of the body, by which this or that man is manifested to be righteous?

One may see that all these self-inquiries tended Rubb-wards.

The whole secret would be screwed out of him by the first turn of the tormentor’s engine.

“I hope you have understood,” he continued, “that while all this was going on I could propose no arrangement of any kind.”

In their self-communings they admit their being impelled by sinful dispositions, but they lay the blame either on fate or on the stars.

Sallust rejected this opinion altogether, as though invented by the poets, and wished to give an ingenious explanation of the reasons for which the Curetes are said to have nourished Jupiter; and he speaks to this purport: Because they were the first to understand the worship of the deity, that therefore antiquity, which exaggerates all things, made them known as the nourishers of Jupiter.

I suppose my character as a Protestant gentleman stands higher than his—a dirty Papist apothecary.

“Oh, I don’t know;—but young people together, you know? Mightn’t it be dangerous?”

Or what is, shall belong?

When he began to perceive that her condition was not as that of other young women, he became aware of a great danger,—of a danger to himself as well as to her, to himself rather than to her.

Van Hoppen. One day’s advantage isn’t much. He can’t marry her to-day, and he’ll find I’ll spoil sport before tomorrow night. [Exit.

“No;—not in the least. She knows it is impossible.”

Hence, too, with that same end of perverted knowledge we consult magical arts.

What would his mother say when she heard of Amelia Roper?

On this account you need it, because you think that you have no need.

How much must he cut out!

‘A plate of bread and butter and a purse are a very poor return for saving one’s life,’ said she, half laughing, half crying.

What in me do they hate, what in me do they persecute?

But to states, death, which seems to emancipate individuals from all punishments, is itself a punishment; for a state should be so constituted as to be eternal.

“I think it has,” said Mr. Crawley, who might perhaps be a little sore on such a subject.

[Matthew 1:18] Of what kind of birth are you telling me, I pray you, since you have already mentioned His ancestors?

“He might marry a wife, and have a house full of children, for all that; that’s the difference between being a saint and a priest; there’s no harm in being in love with a saint, and I am very much in love with Cathelineau.”

But, alas, not one of them was likely to become Marquis of Kingsbury.

But how shall we draw down grace upon us?

And this He has made quite evident from what follows; for there it is said, If you forgive not men, neither does your heavenly Father forgive you.

At the clubs it was said by many that Mr. Monk had been with Mr. Mildmay; but it was also said very vehemently by others that no such interview had taken place.

Do not frighten me with the name of the Paraclete.

Chapter XXXVII. Mont Cenis

There was no place so fitting as a lawyer’s chambers.

So thinking, he went again to his sister-in-law, determined to explain his views, even though it might be at the risk of some hard words between them.

“Do not let that be mentioned,” said I.

Again, there is the greatest folly and absurdity in allowing your followers to eat animal food, while you forbid them to kill animals.

Lord Nidderdale also got quickly through his legislative duties and went to the Beargarden. There he found Grasslough and Miles Grendall dining together, and seated himself at the next table. They were full of news. “You’ve heard it, I suppose,” said Miles in an awful whisper.

“I have wanted no one to tell me. Thinking of it has told it me all. My own heart which is full of gratitude and love for you has told me.”

If these things are not so shown to be clear, as that the eyes of enemies find not in what direction to turn aside, where the same clearness strikes them not, so as by it to be obliged to confess what is evident: you perhaps assert with reason, that no proofs are shown to you, by seeing which you may believe those things also which you see not.

They endured to be considered but as the outside personages of an indifferent outer world, whereas Cecilia herself with her lover were the only two inhabitants of the small celestial empire in which they lived.

But if you are not heard, you have profited your own soul only.

What shall I say?

In the last book we treated of the indistinguishable nature of God the Father and God the Son, and demonstrated that the words, I and the Father are One [John 10:30], go to prove not a solitary God, but a unity of the Godhead unbroken by the birth of the Son: for God can be born only of God, and He that is born God of God must be all that God is.

“About three months since—in London,” said Harry, going back in his memory to the last meeting, which had occurred before the squire had declared his purpose.

He was not a ravening wolf going about seeking whom he might devour, and determined to devour whatever might come in his way; but he liked that which was pleasant; and of all pleasant things the company of a pretty clever woman was to him the pleasantest.

I had determined to make him know that everything between us must be over, but I failed.

What is the Power of the Highest but Christ Himself, Who is the Power of God and the Wisdom of God?

Silverbridge had been supposed to be a Liberal as a matter of course,—because the Pallisers were Liberals.

Then he shows that he had himself done nothing, albeit he is a minister.

Mrs. Trevelyan was dressed in black, and she wore a thick veil.

Where the Son is spoken of as being before all, it is to be understood of creatures.

Lizzie listened to it all with a strange fascination.

Chapter 14.— The Opinions of All Controversialists Whatever are Not, However, Canonical Authority; Original Sin, How Another's; We Were All One Man in Adam.

In Syria Seleucus was the first king after Alexander, Persia and Babylon being also subject to his sway.

“That’s so like Pheely Gledd,” said my friend. “ She always has her own way.”

9. Before I enter upon the subject matter of this passage, I must stand in admiration of words worthy of Theophrastus:

Now there are some who say that three hundred cubits are the symbol of the Lord's sign; and fifty, of hope and of the remission given at Pentecost; and thirty, or as in some, twelve, they say points out the preaching [of the Gospel]; because the Lord preached in His thirtieth year; and the apostles were twelve. And the structure's terminating in a cubit is the symbol of the advancement of the righteous to oneness and to the unity of the faith.

Let us therefore seek something which is held forth to all.

I have heard that you are suffering from certain oppositions.

She had told him that it was all the world to her, and had begged him to let her know her fate as quickly as possible.

But what the most blessed Cyprian thinks of the Catholic Church, and how the heretics are utterly crushed by his authority; notwithstanding the much I have already said, I have yet determined to set forth by itself, if God will, with somewhat greater fullness and perspicuity, so soon as I shall have first said about his Council what I think is due from me, which, in God's will, I shall attempt in the following book.

Of late, since the miller had become old, and Sam had grown to be too restive and self-willed to act as desired for the general welfare of the family, but little of pleasure, or profit either, had been forthcoming from the patch of ground.

But the marriage would be at any rate respectable.

But there is none to hear.

[2 Corinthians 11:2-3] The Manichæans are so fond of this serpent, that they assert that he did more good than harm.

And then Hart did sign the document with altered figures: only that so much was added on to the sum which he agreed to accept, and a similar deduction made from that to which Mr. Tyrrwhit’s name was signed.

He took delight in elections, served on committees, opposed tooth and nail all projects of university reform, and talked jovially over his glass of port of the ruin to be anticipated by the Church and of the sacrilege daily committed by the Whigs.

Testimony of the Holy Flavianus, bishop of Antioch. From his sermon on John the Baptist:—

But I will to glory concerning Your grace In that same grace I glorying literature have not known: that is, men on the letter relying, and from grace recoiling, with whole heart I have rejected.

Whatever mind can conceive or speech can interpret of human gladness was seen then.

And now, Captain, when’ll you come out and see Polly?” Ralph would give no definite answer to this,—on account of business, but was induced at last to send his love to Miss Neefit.

But them men, when they get on at money-making,—or money-losing, which makes ‘em worse,—are like tigers clawing one another.

For indeed the work is by nature great, and is shown so by this, that neither under the old dispensation was it fulfilled by these ancient and holy men, nor under the new was it brought under the compulsion of the law.

But you are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwells in you, and so on to where he says, So then, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh: for if you live after the flesh, you must die; but if by the spirit ye mortify the deeds of the body, you shall live.

Do these things then still require any interpreting?

To secure, however, the combined efforts of the Christian zeal of all men for the destruction of this preposterous heresy, it will be proper, most dearly beloved father, that the authority of your Holiness be applied to the correction of certain bishops, who either support the evil reasonings of these men by their silent consent, or abstain from assailing them with open opposition.

“Who does all the work?”

And how are these the deeds of friends?

His blood shall be required at your hands.

Nothing, I should say, could be more certain than that he went to Cilicia in obedience to new legal enactments which he could not avoid, but which, as they acted upon himself, were odious to him.

She felt that her husband was dead but still, till the fatal word was spoken, there was hope enough within her heart to feed the agony of doubt which was tormenting her.

“No, Hetta, I was not engaged to her then.”

Does He strike upon my mind today?

4. He shows the falsehood of Eunomius' calumnious charge that the great Basil had said that man was emptied to become man, and demonstrates that the emptying of the Only-begotten took place with a view to the restoration to life of the Man Who had suffered.

“I don’t believe that Toff knows anything about it,” she said.

And Mrs. Bunce, who came to see Phineas in his prison, swore that she would tear the judge from his bench if he did not at once pronounce a verdict in favour of her darling without waiting for any nonsense of a jury.

evidently meaning the righteous.

“But no,” he said, as he continued to pace the room, “I have done everything,—more than everything that honour demands.

We plowed our way gallantly through the mud to a little shanty, at the door of which we were peremptorily commanded by the landlord to scrub ourselves, before we entered, with the stump of an old broom.

In his own country a reference to the lady’s father is taken as indicating a full consent on the lady’s part, should the stern paterfamilias raise no objection.

“I do not see why you should feel it so much,” she said, speaking of the trial at Durham.

He would have been the hero of our tale had not that place been preoccupied by the village doctor.

“So I perceive.”

Amulius was succeeded in the Latian kingdom by his brother Numitor, the grandfather of Romulus; and Rome was founded in the first year of this Numitor, who from that time reigned along with his grandson Romulus.

And that sight is face to face, the very sight that is promised as the highest reward to the just, and which will then take place when He shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; and in this kingdom He means the sight of His own form also to be understood, the whole creature being made subject to God, including that wherein the Son of God was made the Son of man.

“Perhaps we might go out into the street?” he suggested.

But the old enemy of salvation of man did not long remain quiet and look on these things with favouring eyes.

Greshamsbury, the seat of Francis Gresham, Esq., who was a great man in these parts, was about twenty miles from Silverbridge, and the tedious work of canvassing the electors could not therefore be done from thence;—but he spent a couple of pleasant days with his old friend, and learned what was being said and what was being done in and about the borough.

At any rate, many have displayed gifts, and yet on becoming vicious have been punished: as those who prophesied in His name, and cast out many demons, and wrought many mighty works; as Judas the traitor: while others, exhibiting as believers a pure life, have needed nothing else in order to their salvation.

This also He taught, with sufficient plainness, in the parable of the Feast, in which the master of the house, after He had sent a message to the invited guests, and they had refused to come, said to his servants: Go out quickly into the streets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind.

My dear Miss Altifiorla,—I think that I am bound in honour without a moment’s delay to make you aware of the condition of my mind in regard to marriage. I ain’t quite sure but what I shall be better without it altogether.—

The Lord will cut off the man who does this, and he shall be made base in the tabernacles of Jacob.

Let us then make full use of this delay, in order to have a full deliverance from the dangers that press upon us.

We were eager to give to him, as being our father, what we ourselves deemed to be good.

We declare to you, he says, the life eternal which was with the Father, and has appeared to us.

“You will do nothing unjust, archdeacon,” said his wife.

[Luke 15:25] And they began to be merry.

He orders Laurentius to renounce Christ, and prepares to ply the deacon's stout courage with frightful tortures: and, when the first elicit nothing, fiercer follow.

I remember, then, that Simon said yesterday, in his discussion with you, that the evil one, if he was born of God, possesses in consequence the same substance as He does who sent him forth, and he ought to have been good, and not wicked.

Claim merit if you please by willing the better things.

In reference to this statement, it would be profitable for us to take up and clearly explain the whole passage of the first Epistle to the Corinthians, in which Paul treats of offerings to idols.

And not only so, but the military officers of highest rank, and those who had the control of public business, were professors of the same faith: for the emperor placed confidence in the fidelity of men devoted to the service of God, as in a strong and sure defense.

“I never heard of such an idea to come from a clergyman of the Church of England,” said the bride. “I declare Montagu never seems to think that he’s a clergyman at all.”

He had never seen Plaistow Hall, and had never been in Norfolk; but so much he could take upon himself to say, “They call all the farms halls down there.” It was not wonderful that he should dislike his heir; and, perhaps, not unnatural that he should show his dislike after this fashion.

There are many, he says, who, although of no name, with the greatest facility and on the slightest occasion, whether within or without temples, assume the motions and gestures of inspired persons; while others do it in cities or among armies, for the purpose of attracting attention and exciting surprise.

There is not a page in Sterne’s writing but has something that were better away, a latent corruption,—a hint as of an impure presence.

Writing to the Ephesians he thus gives praise— Now unto Him that is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that works in us, unto Him be glory in the Church by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, world without end.

At about eleven Lady Ushant was with her patient when a message was brought by Mrs. Hopkins.

It is disparaging to his pride that the black man should be so fat master of the situation as to be able to fix his own wages.

But this is convenient for use, in wonderful ways, that one separated from the rest rises together with the hand itself, and is enlarged in a different direction, which, offering itself as though to meet the others, possesses all the power of holding and doing either alone, or in a special manner, as the guide and director of them all; from which also it received the name of thumb, because it prevails among the others by force and power.

“B.”

“I care nothing for my cousin. If he be false, I am true. Though all the world be false, still will I be true. I do not ask her to marry her cousin. I simply demand that she shall relinquish one who is infinitely beneath her,—who is unfit to tie her very shoe-string.”

Is it not for you that the winds blow, that the earth, conceiving by them, may bring forth fruits?

So you will make the party a Church, by hymning, in the room of ill-timed shouts and cheers, the Master of all things.

I will not say that Harry’s invitations had been of exactly that description; but he too had considered himself to be popular, and now greatly felt the withdrawal of such marks of friendship.

The writer implies, not any ordinary person, or one of the common sort, but only a man of excellent life and of singular merit.

But let us come out of the depths of the sea and take refuge upon the shore.

“I know you have just come home from Switzerland,” said Charlie.

Did you see Ratler going in?

He had seen that Alice’s cheek had been smirched by the greasy crumbs from her little brother’s mouth, he had seen that the tips of her fingers showed the mark of the needle; he had seen fragments of thread about her dress, and the mud even from the children’s boots on her skirts.

Lady Ball had passed a day with her in the house without speaking to her, except when that man had come, and then she had taken part with him!

The wicked put prophets to death; prophets also put the wicked to death.

‘If it costs me all I have in the world I will expose them,’ he said up in London to his brother William, the London barrister.

For as it is wicked for you to undertake secular cares, and to omit the doing of what you have been commanded to do, so it is sin for every layman, if they do not stand by one another even in secular necessities.

Since in this number are included robbers, violaters of tombs, thieves, men laden with untold crimes; and yet we pray on behalf of all; perchance they may turn.

And it was a triumph to him now that the time had come in which he might remove him.

And besides, I should render my country poor service if I suppressed the account of the sufferings which she endured.

Let him suffer wrong and not do wrong.

And so, as long as I might, I enjoyed the loan entrusted to me, now He Who deposited the pledge has taken it back.

Lady Augustus did say that she supposed that Goarly was a low vulgar fellow, which of course strengthened the Senator in his purpose.

But, lo, on the third day there a was a sudden shock of earthquake, and the stone which sealed the sepulchre was rolled away, and the guard fled off in terror: without a single disciple near, the grave was found empty of all but the clothes of the buried One.

And therefore we no longer know Christ according to the flesh, because when bodily infirmity has been absorbed by Divine Majesty, nothing remains in that Sacred Body, from which weakness of the flesh can be known in it.

Chapter 12. The Excellent Answer of the Bishop When Referred to by His Mother as to the Conversion of Her Son.

But our wrestlings are such as to be worthy even of angelic contemplation.

And, Arthur, do not come again to me.

If they had been ordered to be put to death, they would not have suffered as much as they do now, living as they have done so many days in fear and trembling; and when the evening approaches, not expecting to behold the morning; nor when the day arrives, hoping to reach the evening!

Don’t you see?

For behold, not because of us has He come to be, as the irreligious men say, nor is He out of nothing (for not from without did God procure for Himself a cause of rejoicing), but the words denote what is His own and like.

There was no Mr. Crabtree there, and no Miss Thoroughbung.

For they lifted up themselves from the fires of their hatred unto the vapouring of pride, and against Heaven setting their mouth, and shouting, Crucify, Crucify, [John 19:6] Him taken captive they derided, Him hanging they mocked: and being soon conquered by that very Person against whom they swelled victorious, they vanished away.

And to them, accordingly, was this seal preached, and they made use of it that they might enter into the kingdom of God.

The gate can be left, you know.

As he thought of his own life during the past year or fifteen months, he could not but tell himself that his present suffering was due in some degree to his own fault.

Miscellaneous Fragments from Lost Writings

“I believe, papa,” said Mrs. Traffick, on the afternoon of the day on which this was written, “that Gertrude is thinking of doing something wrong, and therefore I feel it to be my duty to bring you this letter.” Augusta had not been enabled to read the letter, but had discussed with her sister the propriety of eloping.

“Do as I bid you;—get a doctor and send up the landlord immediately. It is not a fit, but his lordship has been much hurt. I knocked him down.” The Dean made the last statement slowly and firmly, under a feeling at the moment that it became him to leave nothing concealed, even with a servant.

And he does not stop here, nor does he draw the whole to a conclusion at their rejection, but at their having mercy shown them again.

Much of his time he did devote to hunting, but there were half hours devoted in company with Lady Albury to Ayala’s perfection and Ayala’s obstinacy.

She had given him an answer, and he ought to have taken it.

But all do not obey the Gospel.

setting himself to meet this even further above, and disposing of it beforehand , he said what he said, namely, I do not regret, though I did regret.

When I was informed after your departure that some were becoming openly violent, and declaring that they could not submit to the prohibition (intimated while you were here) of that feast which they call Lætitia, vainly attempting to disguise their revels under a fair name, it happened most opportunely for me, by the hidden fore-ordination of the Almighty God, that on the fourth holy day that

On the following morning he said nothing before he left home, but as soon as he had opened his letters and spoken a few sharp things to the two men in Conduit Street, he went off to Mr. Moggs senior.

Mr. and Mrs. Jones are the dearly-beloved friends of my family.

That therefore will be additional matter which is placed over the bare body; nor is that at all destroyed on which the superimposed matter is put—nay, it is increased.

“Come, Mrs. Askerton, I will not stand this. I thought you had done with the subject, and now you begin again. I had come here on purpose to tell you something of real importance,—that is, to me; but I must go away without telling you, unless you will give over abusing my cousin.”

The son of peace ought to seek peace and ensue it.

If you will remain here, Mr. Fitzgerald, for a minute or two, I will send Lady Clara to wait upon you;” and then curtsying with great dignity she withdrew, and the young earl scuffled out after her.

When he told me that he had been up to town and paid that money, I knew it was all up with him.

As regards the words, "Though we have known Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we Him no more," the context shows what is the apostle's meaning.

I thought, Mr Armstrong, that your young friend appeared wedded to a style of life quite incompatible with his income—with his own income as a single man, and the income which he would have possessed had he married my ward.

But, not the less, judging of it by the entirety of the work that it has done, I think that we are bound to own that it has been successful.

I wish you now to consider the matter well, and to tell me whether you can pardon me and still love me.

For when any one suffers anything of this kind, in order to avoid submitting to something which is unbecoming or unworthy of this dignity, he procures punishment for those who wrongfully depose him, and a greater reward for himself.

“What am I to do? You tell me, and I can’t altogether hold my tongue.” Then there was a pause. “Well, my dear, as for my consent, of course you may have it,—if it’s worth anything. I don’t know that I ever heard anything bad about Captain Aylmer.”

But here it is not so, but those who reap not what they sowed rejoice alike with those who reap; whence it is clear that they too share the reward.

Now, if it is local, it is within locality; if within locality, it is bounded by the place within which it is; if it is bounded, it has an outline, which (painter as you are in your special vocation) you know is the boundary to every object susceptible of outline.

“I understand it too well, Miss Rowley.” The stick was still going, and the eyes more intently fixed than ever on something opposite.

Wherefore here also He can say, You have enlarged me, for one of the least of His, holding converse with God, whose love he has shed abroad in his heart by the Holy Ghost, which is given unto us.

[Acts 7:34] It is itself a saving medicine, and has power to prevent sins, and to heal misdeeds.

She went down across the churchyard, leaving the path to the brewery on her left, and that leading out under the elm trees to her right, and went on straight to the stile at which she had stood with Luke Rowan, watching the reflection of the setting sun among the clouds.

How could Jesus Christ, the Son of God, have been born of Mary, except by the Word becoming flesh: that is by the Son of God, though in the form of God, taking the form of a slave?

“He is always doing things new—that is more beastly—one day than the day before.”

Under such circumstances the old gentleman married his young wife,—to the great disgust of his four children.

He says that if I bring my action she must pay me for my expenses.

Do you understand what you read?

It is thus that Christ perfects the great abundance of His sweetness to them that hope in Him.

The Lord is the strength of my life; of whom shall I be afraid?

But the second [temple] was a more glorious building, both on account of its beauty, and in all other respects.

But if He is confessed to be Father (now), I will recur to the same argument, that, if He is so now, He always was so; and that if He always was, He always will be.

While Frank Gresham was thus misbehaving himself, and going on as though to him belonged the privilege of falling in love with pretty faces, as it does to ploughboys and other ordinary people, his great interests were not forgotten by those guardian saints who were so anxious to shower down on his head all manner of temporal blessings.

‘I dare say not. Well, did the idea ever occur to your guilty mind?’

By the unrighteous judge, who fears not God, neither regards man, he means without doubt Antichrist, as he is a son of the devil and a vessel of Satan.

Now, that nature which is not made and yet is out of Him, is either begotten by Him or proceeds from Him.

Question them, therefore, in this way: of whom in the beginning was Eve begotten?

Orth.— How then do you advance the statement in the gospel the word became flesh, and predicate mutation of the immutable nature?

Yea, there is another way in which, when any one has it, he is happy; and some there be that are happy in hope.

It was rumoured at the time that Sir John Joram and Mr. Brown, having met each other at the club after the order for Caldigate’s release had been given, and discussing the matter with great interest, united in giving praise to Bagwax.

Of course she did not intend that Mr. Chadwick should leave the palace without having heard what she had to say, but she thought that it would be well that he should be made to conceive that though the summons had been written by her, it had really been intended on the part of the bishop.

John himself invites me to take this view of him, for to those who asked who he was, he answered, I am the voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare the way of the Lord!

An instance suited to the third kind is, if one, after having read in the books of Epicurus some place wherein he praises continence, were to assert that he had made the chief good to consist in virtue, and that therefore he is not to be blamed.

“No, upon my soul I did not; but if all I hear be true, I believe you did. You have been exceedingly generous to him, George—and to me also.”

At length the Basutos were so crushed that they were driven to escape the wrath of their Dutch enemies by imploring the British to take them in as subjects.

Saul's easing himself, then, means rulers extending the wickedness conceived in their hearts to works of woeful stench, and their showing the noisome thoughts within them by carrying them out into deeds.

Why had he trusted any man as he had trusted Cohenlupe?

But Miss Todd was not a bad woman.

And it is for this reason that the Apostle calls it false witness, if a man tell a lie about Christ, yea, one which may seem to pertain to His praise.

“Would not that be very dreadful?”

Now it is not unknown to us of what gravity, of what holiness, of what gentleness our above-named brother is.

Chapter 31. Events which occurred in Alexandria after the Death of Arius. Letter of Constantine the Great to the Church there.

“We brought but a very small quantity,” the skipper says.

[47] [Luke 14:5] And he said unto them, Which of you shall have his son or his ox fall on the sabbath day into a well, and not lift him up straightway, and draw water for [48] him?

Up to this point there is room for controversy, until Matter is brought to the test of the Scriptures, and fails to make good its case.

For if you apply more thorough attention to the passage, perhaps you will see it much more readily than I have done.

And if it be alleged that it suffers anything from the body when united with it, or from the place to which it has come, then what inconvenience can happen to the Word who, in great benevolence, brought down a Saviour to the human race?— seeing none of those who formerly professed to effect a cure could accomplish so much as that soul showed it could do, by what it performed, even by voluntarily descending to the level of human destinies for the benefit of our race.

Phineas had been thinking of making this sudden visit to Loughton ever since he had been up in town, but he could suggest to himself no reason to be given to Lord Brentford for his sudden reappearance.

He so frees them from accusations: for the prophets, he says, say this.

“You saw The People’s Banner, Mrs. Bonteen, on Monday?” Lady Eustace had been reading the paper in her friend’s drawing-room. “They seem to think that Mr. Bonteen must be Prime Minister before long.”

“So very quiet, my dear, and just like other people,” said Mrs. Callaghan, meaning to pronounce a strong eulogium on the Cabinet Minister.

To slights from men, unless they were of a nature to provoke offence, he was indifferent.

“I suppose he will not come,” said the bishop.

Yet why now bring the Prophet only as a witness?

You will come to, Forgive us our debts, as we also forgive our debtors.

Chapter 135. Christ is king of Israel, and Christians are the Israelitic race

In the whole world our redemption is received; Amen is answered.

“I should have been nearer to him in blood, but not truer to him as a partner.”

[Matthew 11:12] There be thou violent!

I have been at it now about two years.

Moreover your Fraternity knows well what the canons say about bishops who desire to inspire fear by blows.

But when I had already entered upon my journey, and had passed through the desert , a report suddenly reached me , which at first I thought to be incredible, but which afterwards proved to be true.

By him who to our head quaternion gives,

And marvel not when you hear these things.

But these men, in denying the equality of honour, really lay down the comparative absence of it; and so also when they follow out further this same line of thought, by a diminution arising from comparison they divert all the conceptions that devotion has formed of the Holy Spirit; they do not own His perfection either in goodness, or omnipotence, or in any such attribute.

He had bought property in Baslehurst.

A human being, on the contrary, at his birth is furnished neither with feet fit for walking, nor with hands able even to scratch; and unless their lips were actually applied to the breast by the mother, they would not know where to find it; and even when close to the nipple, they would, notwithstanding their desire for food, be more able to cry than to suck.

There were a few stunted trees around it, but timber had not prospered there.

During the last two years, however, there had been enough of discussion about Mary Lawrie to convince Mrs Baggett that, in regard to this “interloper,” as Mrs Baggett had once called her, Mr Whittlestaff intended to have his own way.

Whence also our Lord Himself says with His own lips, For whosoever exalts himself shall be abased; and he that humbles himself shall be exalted.

And this again he proves not by means of the teachers, but by means of the disciples themselves.

“And a very nice young gentleman is Mr. Stanbury,” said Bozzle.

But do not mistake my meaning.

And I declare, and take God as my witness in this matter, that of none of the things which they have stated, do I know you to be guilty.

He listened, and thought that he would try it; but his heart failed him.

One or two elected members take up their hats and walk out, and all business is at an end for the day.

If any one denies the cross, and is ashamed of the passion, let him be to you as the adversary himself.

There was, however, one comfort clearly left to him.

That’s out of the question.

He had at first been decently submissive, with the view of obtaining increased supplies of ready money; but he had been sharp enough to perceive that, let his conduct be what it would, the doctor would keep him out of debt; but that the doing so took so large a sum that he could not hope for any further advances.

Six weeks passed over them at Bragg’s End, and nothing was heard of Luke Rowan.

From creatures, with which as God he was indeed so closely connected (and the closer this connection was, the greater was his goodness), he ought never to have been hidden.

Notwithstanding all this, it is with deep regret that we consent to their so soon leaving us, even to return to you.

“Never again to clasp her hand in mine?”

[1 Corinthians 3:16] And our Lord said:— I and My Father are one.

Her own birth had not been high, and that of her husband, we may perhaps say, had been very low.

The plantations are there, increasing every day, and are occupied if not by owners then by managers.

In the belief that I should be wronging them were the warmth and sincerity of their faith to lack commemoration in my history I shall now proceed to describe it.

Many such instances still occur.

And yet this is a work of nature, but the other not or rather both the one and the other are contrary to nature.

No doubt she had, in consequence partly of her conduct on that occasion, been turned out of her Uncle Tom’s house; but of that she did not think at the present moment.

He Who is God and also Man is one Christ, Who was born and died and rose ( 22).

And why should I not go?

Let them come, then, and see my attendants.

The Scots have no wives of their own; as though they read Plato's Republic and took Cato for their leader, no man among them has his own wife, but like beasts they indulge their lust to their hearts' content.

When she saw him again in the evening, of course she asked him some farther questions.

[Romans 5:12] Now they will have it, that the death here meant is the death, not of the body, but of the soul, on the pretence that another thing is spoken of to the Corinthians, where they are quite unable to understand the death of the soul, because the subject there treated is the resurrection of the body, which is the antithesis of the death of the body.

‘And half that sum has been lent to you.’

This, however, might have been comparatively inefficacious to inflict the amount of punishment intended by Sulla.

Dorotheus in the first Pandect relates that Mopsus was the disciple of Alcyon and Corone.

Be not therefore idolaters, but even now beware of the threatenings; for the graven images and the works of men's hands shall wail, or rather they that trust in them, [Isaiah 10:10-11] for matter is devoid of sensation.

Just at this moment the earthquake occurred, and many perished.

Among these were the two grammarians Helladius and Ammonius, whose pupil I was in my youth at Constantinople.

The city is called both Babylon, and daughter of Babylon: just as they speak of Jerusalem and the daughter of Jerusalem, Sion and the daughter of Sion, the Church and the daughter of the Church.

When, then, he ascends into your heart, know him by his works.

“I’d be happy to pay for a pint,” said Mrs. Demijohn, fingering a fourpenny bit so that he might see it.

“She interrupts him constantly as he comes from the office,” she said to Mrs. Duffer; “I call that downright unfeminine audacity.” Yet she knew that Mrs. Duffer knew that she had intercepted the young man.

You think that no one can go up to London but yourself, Mr Whittlestaff.

And therefore those who admit that these are evils, as the Peripatetics do, and the Old Academy, the sect which Varro advocates, express a more intelligible doctrine; but theirs also is a surprising mistake, for they contend that this is a happy life which is beset by these evils, even though they be so great that he who endures them should commit suicide to escape them.

But I should have been so through ignorance and prejudice, and actuated by that love of existing rights and wrongs which men call loyalty.

I like justice, and that would be just.

For, my brethren, the habitation of our heart is a holy temple to the Lord.

I have told him so, and you had better repeat it.” So saying, Mr. Wharton went upstairs to dress, and Everett, having received his father’s instructions, went away to the club.

For since, as I before said, there are various proclamations, listen, as in a figure, to the prophet blowing the trumpet; and further, having turned to the truth, be ready for the announcement of the trumpet, for he says, 'Blow the trumpet in Sion: sanctify a fast [Joel 2:15].'

I could not defend you.’

Compared with this sentence of Pierius, all that I have ever written is mild indeed.

We were cast out because we transgressed.

In the same way, the Cataphrygians said that they had received the promised Paraclete; and so they fell away from the Catholic faith, forbidding what Paul allowed, and condemning second marriages, which he made lawful.

For no one was ever so foolish as to materialize into human tears those which were shed by the angels who had come down from heaven.

“Ah;—indeed.” And Miles enveloped himself from head to foot in smoke.

So have I.” It would have been impossible;—was impossible.

She, as soon as he had left her, got up, and taking the cushion off the sofa, threw it to the further end of the room. Having so relieved herself, she walked up to her own chamber.

But whence shall we be able to know this?

Lady Fawn, however, had—not complained, but just said a word.

Overcome by these and other arguments, Alaric at last consented to ask from Captain Cuttwater the loan of £700.

"For as regards the fact that to preserve the figure of unity the Lord gave the power to Peter that whatsoever he should loose on earth should be loosed," [Matthew 16:19] it is clear that that unity is also described as one dove without fault.

For what is there belonging to God which is not eternal and divine?

But no one else has made that place illustrious or eminent, excepting Him alone.

And what he means is this, 'He is readily listened to.'

It did not eat “humble pie;” it did not give him the full satisfaction of a complete apology; and yet it left no room for a further rejoinder.

“He’s a great big naughty boy,” said she to the child, “and we must send him away to a great big rough romping school, where they have great big rods and do terrible things to naughty boys who don’t do what their own mammas tell them;” and she then commenced another course of kissing, being actuated thereto by the terrible idea of sending her child away which her own imagination had depicted.

Then there was an opinion expressed by Walker that Tolleyboy, the huntsman, had on that special occasion stuck very well to his hounds, to which Watson gave his cordial assent. Walker and Watson had both been asked to dinner, and during the day had been heard to express to each other all that adverse criticism as to the affairs of the hunt in general which appeared a few lines back. Walker and Watson were very good fellows, popular in the hunt, and of all men the most unlikely to give it up.

It was in that way that he regarded Florence’s pertinacity.

A long array of distinguished persons,—of women as well as men,—was brought up to give to the jury their opinion as to the character of Mr. Finn.

He requires the sky, he requires the air, he requires these waters, to prevent his doing harm, to be as bridles to curb the fierceness of his power, and to restrain him from letting loose his rays over the world, like some furious horse.

Return to this most manifest unity of the whole world; and let all things be restored to their former position, not in accordance with the words of the apostate Julian, but in accordance with the words of our Saviour Christ.

Father, save Me from this hour; but for this came I unto this hour.

Partridge and pheasant shooting on a gentleman’s own grounds, and an occasional day’s hunting with the hounds in his own county, were, in Lady Scroope’s estimation, becoming amusements for an English gentleman.

But the words as they came from his mouth had a weight which seemed to ensure their truth, and many men in Tankerville thought that Mr. Browborough was eloquent.

Chapter XXVIII. The Duchess Is Much Troubled

[Daniel 7:26] For the judgment came upon Antiochus, a judgment from heaven; [2 Maccabbees 9:5-12] and he became sick with a grievous and evil sickness, and on account of the smell of him as he rotted, no man could approach him, for worms were crawling and falling from him and eating his flesh because he oppressed the worm Jacob.

He has Himself put in that which you are to give.

And then the special attributes of Kenneby and Bridget Bolster were discussed between them, and it was manifest that Aram knew with great accuracy the characters of the persons with whom he had to deal.

Exalt not yourself, lest you fall: think upon those things only which have been commanded you.

You say: what is the lovingkindness of God, if He is not about to save the bad?

When her eldest daughter was going to marry a man of fortune, and a member of Parliament, she had thought nothing of demanding a thousand pounds or so for the extraordinary expenses incident to such an occasion.

But that it may be plainer still to all my readers, I will repeat that statement of the Master word for word, and then confront Eunomius' words with it.

And everything went pleasantly, with perhaps a little too much noise;—everything except the hostess, who was allowed by general consent to be sad and silent;—till there came a loud double-rap at the door.

Bringing them out, one by one, from the hollow of the rock, she laid them down at the feet of the anchorite.

Germanus: This passage very clearly shows the freedom of the will, where it is said If My people would have hearkened unto Me, and elsewhere But My people would not hear My voice. For when He says If they would have heard He shows that the decision to yield or not to yield lay in their own power. How then is it true that our salvation does not depend upon ourselves, if God Himself has given us the power either to hearken or not to hearken?

He who honours the Son, who is the Word and Reason, acts in nowise contrary to reason, and gains for himself great good; he who honours Him, who is the Truth, becomes better by honouring truth: and this we may say of honouring wisdom, righteousness, and all the other names by which the sacred Scriptures are wont to designate the Son of God.

On hearing about Diana, and about their source of gain.

“But come in, Peregrine;” and he shut the door, anxious rather that the servants should not witness his own anxiety than that they should not hear tidings which must now be common to all the world. “They have begun it?”

With them families do not go abroad because it is the thing to do.

[Nondum omnia castitatis officio exsecutus sum: quam Deus fion modo intra privatos parietes, sed etiam præ scripto lectuli terminat; ut cum quis hobeat uxorem, neque servam, neque liberam habere insuper velit, sed matrimonio fidem server.

If He were little, how would he also be God?

And then, as he stood leaning against a ladder which still kept its place against one of the hayricks, and filled his second pipe unconsciously, he had to realise to himself the probable condition of his future life.

Surely, Mr. Eames, my word may be taken as going for something?

But in marrying Mr. Kennedy she had maintained herself in her high position, among the first of her own people,—among the first socially and among the first politically.

Now, since these two objects, the occupant and the structure, are both consecrated together, how can any antagonism or contrariety be found between them, and how should it not rather appear that they have both been the products of subjects that are in amity and of one mind?

And then again before we fired a shot, he bade all the soldiers kneel down, and down we went, the republicans firing at us all the time.

After saying what return must be made for the service of the above-mentioned feast, various reasons for repaying kindness are enumerated. Then he speaks in praise of good-will, on its results and its order.

Chapter 5. Opinions of Homer and Hesiod Concerning the Gods.

One could not imagine a better subject for such discourses from Thackeray’s mouth than the latter.

Do you perceive of how devilish a nature your pride is?

14. And when many were fully convinced and gloried in the testimony of James, and said, 'Hosanna to the Son of David,' these same Scribes and Pharisees said again to one another, 'We have done badly in supplying such testimony to Jesus. But let us go up and throw him down, in order that they may be afraid to believe him.'

It would be I think impossible to overrate the value of his services to the country which adopted him.

For there are four modes of reward: either evil for evil, as God will reward everlasting fire to the unrighteous; or good for good, as He will reward an everlasting kingdom to the righteous; or good for evil, as Christ by grace justifies the ungodly; or evil for good, as Judas and the Jews through their wickedness persecuted Christ.

“I have no doubt she does. I did not tell her, nor would I tell her daughter; but I told Captain Aylmer.”

On this occasion she made changes in her dress which were not usual, and therefore she was careful to avoid being seen as she went; but had she been interrogated she would have persevered.

“I trust it is.”

The New Smithy

The President can dismiss him; but it generally happens that the President is brought in on a “platform” which has already nominated for him his cabinet as thoroughly as they have nominated him.

For Mrs. Arkwright’s house was Mount Pleasant Villa, and therefore was entitled to a sweep.

And those who are virgins rejoice at all times in becoming like God and His Christ, and are imitators of them.

“Well, yes. I have written to Lady de Courcy and said Wednesday. It wouldn’t do for me exactly to drop everybody, and perhaps—”

On the Trinity (Book XIII)

“It does not signify, M. Henri, whether it be likely or unlikely: that man was Adolphe Denot; I’d wager my life on it, without the least hesitation. Why, M. Henri, don’t I know him as well as I know yourself?”

The captivity lasted for seventy years, and ended in the second year of Darius Hystaspes, who had become king of the Persians, Assyrians, and Egyptians; in whose reign, as I said above, Haggai and Zechariah and the angel of the twelve prophesied.

By no means!

Let us love, because He first loved us.

It has been reported to us that our most reverend brother the bishop Basilius is occupied in legal suits as though he were one of the last of the people, and unprofitably attends the courts.

But even if we were to say that you are the party of Optatus, which of you can say that he is unacquainted with Optatus, unless in the sense that he does not know him personally, as perhaps he does not know Donatus either?

Electioneering

I do,—with a doubting belief.

From this despair arose that confession of Socrates, in which he said that he knew nothing but this one thing alone, that he knew nothing.

Sitting then in the prison he wrote the letter to the Philippians from that so great distance.

Of course I wish you to be full of joy;—of course I wish with all my heart that you may be happy if you marry your cousin; but the thing has come so suddenly that we cannot bring ourselves to look upon it as a reality.

It must not, however, be supposed that Miss Grantly had not thought about Lord Lufton, or that she had not considered how great might be the advantage of having Lady Lufton on her side if she made up her mind that she did wish to become Lord Lufton’s wife.

I don’t know what he was not going to do.

For as a letter-writer you are almost as good as Tully.

Out of one waistcoat pocket came a large round kettle, - out of the other a spirit lamp, a bottle of spirits, tea, sugar, and a tin of preserved milk.

I have heard that you have said that you could to some extent discuss the statements in that record with us if we would omit these words of your bishops: No case forecloses the investigation of another case, and no person compromises the position of another person.

“Like you! I always liked you. I do like you.”

Behold, however, this event, which was so contrary to expectation, has been realized!

“You ask me questions which I cannot answer. I do not think that under any provocation a woman should use a horsewhip.”

He was pressed on this point by the magistrates, but would say not a word further.

“Butterwell,” said Crosbie, “I’m eternally obliged to you. It’s hardly too much to say that you’ve saved me from ruin.”

And that which is said, In the beginning was the Word, means that the Word was in the Father.

The Barchester roughs called him a dumb dog that could not bark, and sometimes sarcastically added that neither could he bite.

For if to mention one's own good actions is to upbraid, what do you think it is to publish them even to many others.

And why did he willingly die?

She remained alone for a long time.

“I told the Earl,” he said, “that I could not undertake to say what you might do; but that as you had come forward at first with my sanction, I could not withdraw it now.

For haughtiness is a vice of the soul, of which, as of other sins, He commands us to repent; by adjusting our lives from their state of derangement to the change for the better in these three things— mouth, heart, hands.

And the reason is because he did not say it by way of setting off himself; but because he was going to appoint a king, he wishes under the form of a defence [of himself] to instruct him to be meek and gentle.

Eran.— The real.

But whenever he may have lived, Minerva was already worshipped as a goddess when Cecrops reigned in Athens, in whose reign the city itself is reported to have been rebuilt or founded.

He would, therefore, give her another chance, and resolved before he went to bed that night that he would allow a fortnight to pass away, and would then write to her, renewing his offer with all the strongest declarations of affection which he would be enabled to make.

Paul, bishop of Constantinople, Athanasius, bishop of Alexandria, the entire multitude of monks, Antony the Great, who still survived, his disciples, and a great number of Egyptians and of other places in the Roman territory, firmly and openly maintained the doctrines of the Nicæan council throughout the other regions of the East.

For whatsoever is not of faith is sin.

“Why not take it?”

He had been a hunting man, and he had shot also; but not with that energy which induces a sportsman to carry on those amusements in opposition to the impediments of age.

But as we say the Father is incorporeal, invisible, and eternal; so we say the Son and Holy Spirit are incorporeal, invisible, and eternal.

But as when we have entered into that apartment, we see all bound with chains; so now if we withdraw ourselves from outward show, and enter into each man's life, into each man's soul, we shall see it bound with chains more grievous than iron: and this most especially if you enter into the souls of them that are rich.

Wherefore it is appropriately said, 'No one knows the Father,' since, instead of God, they affirmed David to be His father; and the additional remark, that no one knows even the Son, is quite correct, since they did not know that He was the Son.

The Cango Caves are 2-1 miles distant from the place, and are so called after the old name of the district.

Assuredly, these men, when they sacrifice to the gods and pray to them, hope that they shall obtain something in opposition to genesis, and so they annul genesis.

Faustus explains the Manichæan denial that man was made by God as applying to the fleshly man not to the spiritual. Augustine elucidates the Apostle Paul's contrasts between flesh and spirit so as to exclude the Manichæan view.

Why do you not make accurate enquiry?

He said nothing of yesterday, and almost succeeded in looking as though yesterday had been in no wise memorable.

“Promises like that are mere piecrusts,” said Ralph.

She stood almost gasping till he was out of sight, and then she passed on upon her usual round.

His tactics, however, were very different from those which had been practised in La Vendée.

They who do not now recognise the Son of God in the flesh will one day recognise Him when He comes as judge in glory, though now in an inglorious body suffering wrong.

“Oh dear, no; no one thinks of loading now-a-days till he has got out of the house. Directly after breakfast I am going across with Godfrey to the back of Greystock, to see after some moor-fowl. He asked me to go, and I couldn’t well refuse.”

How’s a girl not to think of a man day and night when she loves him better than herself?

This, my opponent says, is the temple of Mars, this that of Juno and of Venus, this that of Hercules, of Apollo, of Dis.

Suffice it here to say, that three is the first whole number that is odd, four the first that is even, and of these two, seven is composed.

They went out from us, says (St. John,) but they were not of us.

For you have the poor always with you, but me you have not always.

But yet, when magic is punished, of which astrology is a species, of course the species is condemned in the genus.

For to consent and to refuse are functions proper to will.

But drink had been necessary to give him courage for his violence, and now as he lay miserable in bed, his courage was very low.

Chapter 23 The Devil is well practised in falsehood, by which Adam having been led astray, sinned on the sixth day of the creation, in which day also HE has been renewed by Christ.

There was not a word about Violet.

The inspection of the site for the mill was not their only employment.

As for me, I shall never care for any other woman. A soldier can get on very well without a wife, and I shall always regard myself now as one of those useless but common animals who are called “not marrying men.” I shall never marry. I shall always carry your picture in my heart, and shall not think that I am sinning against you or any one else when I do so after hearing that you are married.

Then since He had answered, He asks also in turn, What think ye of Christ, whose Son is He? They say unto Him, The Son of David.

“If you are my wife you must be her daughter; and how can you better take a daughter’s part?” pleaded Lucius.

Treatise V

Why then should this Jewish girl come to her and throw in her teeth the shortness of her intimacy with the man who was to be her husband?

“All that kind of thing vanishes when a man is in office.”

But, if we therefore sin not in telling a lie, for that, while covering no man's sin, we hurt nobody and do good to somebody, what are we about as concerning the sin itself of a lie?

So I tied on addresses to the tabooed receptacles of my remaining comforts, and started on my way with a very limited supply of wearing apparel.

And now the pine-tree began to totter, and to threaten its own ruin by falling.

She felt that if he were present she could almost fly at him as would a tigress.

“From Colonel Osborne! How very wrong!”

That evening, as soon as Jane was in bed, she resolved to ask him some further questions. “You will have a lawyer, Josiah,—will you not?” she said.

Seek peace, and pursue it.'

Epistle to the Trallians

A fortnight elapsed, and then we were called upon to meet Mr. Sharp in Paternoster Row.

“I should hope not,” said Mrs. Holt.

It never occurred to him to think of the agony with which those few lines had been written; of the wretchedness of the young heart which had hoped so much and failed so greatly; of the misery which the son felt in disappointing the father.

But in this they failed: you would not listen to them as they desired, but patiently gave me an opportunity to make my defence.

1. As for the rulers of the Church that suffered martyrdom in the principal cities, the first martyr of the kingdom of Christ whom we shall mention among the monuments of the pious is Anthimus, bishop of the city of Nicomedia, who was beheaded.

“She has made a bargain, mamma,” said Bell, “that she is to say whatever she likes till she gets well.”

It is not therefore true that "by baptizing first, the heretic obtains the right of baptism;" but because he did not baptize with his own baptism, and though he did not possess the right of baptizing, yet that which he gave is Christ's, and he who received it is Christ's.

For, while to say only 'Like-in-essence,' does not necessarily convey 'of the essence,' on the contrary, to say 'Coessential,' is to signify the meaning of both terms, 'Like-in-essence,' and 'of the essence.'

You cannot see what is behind you, but you see what is before.

But as they emerged from the darker shadow into the light that was near, she saw that it was not so, and she told herself that she was glad.

For if we are the Body of Christ, and severally members thereof, [1 Corinthians 12:27] and in this way He is our head, He cannot be the head of them who are not in the Body and rank not among the members.

He had been obliged to sell out of the army, because he was unable to live on his pay as a lieutenant.

Chapter VII. Miss Prettyman’s Private Room

“I am sure we should be very glad to see you at Rufford if you remain long in the country,” said Lady Rufford, a little time afterwards.

And the fire which is un-quenchable and without end awaits these latter, and a certain fiery worm which dies not, and which does not waste the body, but continues bursting forth from the body with unending pain.

The elder lady kept her countenance admirably, and the younger one had no occasion for blushing.

He, again, who has learned has already turned his preconception into comprehension.

Let us then acknowledge, beloved brethren, the wholesome gift of the divine mercy; and let us, who cannot be without some wound of conscience, heal our wounds by the spiritual remedies for the cleansing and purging of our sins.

Though certainly turned thirty, and probably nearer to forty, she would wear her jet-black hair streaming down her back, and when June came would drive about London in a straw hat.

No doubt he would not have made this special attempt had she not pleased his eye, and his ear, and his senses generally.

Lucy Robarts in her heart did not give her dismissed lover credit for much more heroism than did truly appertain to him;—did not, perhaps, give him full credit for a certain amount of heroism which did really appertain to him; but, nevertheless, she would have been very glad to take him could she have done so without wounding her pride.

“Don’t you, Mrs. McKeon!—then it’s little you know the advantage your own girls have in yourself. Don’t you think a man would prefer taking a girl from a house where a good mother gave signs that the daughter would make a good wife, than from one where there was no one to mind her but a silly old man, and a young one like Thady?—a very good young man in his way, but not very fit, Mrs. McKeon, to act a mother’s part to a girl like Feemy.”

“Mr. Finn won’t care. Men are so heartless. They write about each other just as though it did not signify in the least whether anybody were dead or alive. I shall go to him.”

“That’s a flea-bite. Let her keep it. You’re in for it now, and you’d better say nothing about money. He has a decent solicitor, and let him arrange about the settlements. And look here, Jane;—get it done as soon as you can.”

Yes, Sir Abraham, one does question it,—the most important of all witnesses against me;—I question it myself.

It not only does not bear eternal fruit but it even hinders those who wish to gain it.

“Lady Ball is in the drawing-room, Miss,” a servant said at that moment, and there she went to fight her last battle!

As a burnished mirror, so ought man to have his soul pure.

[Acts 5:8] And yet she might have perceived even from this that Peter knew the secret.

“Don’t say that, dear, because there is in it something that annoys me. I don’t think of myself in such matters, but I do hope to see you the happy wife of some happy man.”

‘You think?’

Once more, if you desire to be a catholic, do not believe, or say, or teach that some of those persons who have departed this life without Christ's baptism, do not in the meantime go into the kingdom of heaven, but into paradise; yet afterwards in the resurrection of the dead they attain also to the blessedness of the kingdom of heaven.

Thus you assign to God the bestowal of blessings, and take from Him the infliction of judgments, as if He of whom Christ says that He has prepared everlasting fire for the wicked were a different being from Him who makes His sun to rise upon the evil and the good, and sends rain on the just and on the unjust.

Are they not like fastenings, which help it to bear easily the weight of the ear, when it is swollen with fruit and bends towards the earth?

One ought, moreover, to recognise that it is one thing to look at a matter as it is, and another thing to look at it in the light of reason and thought.

Now that son would be his only creditor.

Thus, at once he signifies both that the whole is of God; and that this most of all is Grace, viz.

If, then, a statement, wherein it is declared that God's grace is given in proportion to our deserts, to such as are worthy, was rightly and truly condemned by Pelagius, how could his heart permit him to think, or his mouth to utter, such a sentence as this: We say that God gives to the person who has proved himself worthy to receive them, all graces?

Ill-usage and illness together falling into her hands had given her such power, that none of the other women were able to withstand it.

Where it is signified that each concur in a common object, not in the surface of the history, but in the depth of prophecy, the objects of both being united in this one, the title of which is, A Song or Psalm of David: resembling neither of the former titles, otherwise than in the word David.

It was a vast edifice; irregular in height—or it appeared to be so—having long wings on each side too high to be passed over by the eye as mere adjuncts to the mansion, and a portico so large as to make the house behind it look like another building of a greater altitude.

And when the disciples had quoted an example from this Elias, mentioning to the Lord what had been done by him, in order that He might give to themselves also the power of calling down fire from heaven to consume those who would not show Him hospitality, the Lord reproved in them, not the example of the holy prophet, but their ignorance in respect to taking vengeance, their knowledge being as yet elementary; perceiving that they did not in love desire correction, but in hated desired revenge.

All this we have said to show how capricious and baseless is the procedure of those who, when so many names are given to Christ, take the mere appellation the Word, without enquiring, as in the case of His other titles, in what sense it is used; surely they ought to ask what is meant when it is said of the Son of God that He was the Word, and God, and that He was in the beginning with the Father, and that all things were made by Him.

For the fruit of an earthly harvest profits not to life eternal, but to this which is for a time; but the spiritual fruit to that which has neither age nor death.

We are apt to call bad men cowards without much consideration.

[1 Corinthians 15:47-49] So he elsewhere says, As many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ; [Galatians 3:27] but in very deed this shall be accomplished when that which is animal in us by our birth shall have become spiritual in our resurrection.

The population is great, and the houses, built very like the houses in Gaul, are numerous and very thick together.

“She had better not. She must be told. He may come for a week. I won’t have him here for longer. Write to him and say that we shall be happy to have him from the second to the ninth. Emily must be told that I disapprove of him, but that I can’t avoid opening my house to him.”

“You naughty girl! Don’t you know that my brother-in-law is brokenhearted about you?”

But the unity of God by no means excludes the Godhead of the Three Persons, and therefore it is His Nature that is extolled.

At this period, Athanasius, who governed the see of Alexandria, and some of his friends, deemed it requisite, as the emperor was a Christian, to repair to his court.

By His body; for then first was a body shown, immortal, and destroying the tyranny of death.

She had all the disadvantages of the Brehgert connection and none of the advantages.

Thus the Jews, for their part, heard from the wise men, that a star also had proclaimed Him in the land of the Persians; the wise men, in their turn, were informed by the Jews that this Man, whom the star proclaimed, prophets also had made known from a long time of old.

And I do not think that he will obtain pardon, though he be misled by spurious scripture to think dreadful things against the Father of all.

“She’s one of the cripples,—not but what she’s as sound as a bell, and as good a hunter as ever I wish to ride; but she makes a little noise when she’s going.”

But I know no one of men perfect in all things at once, while still human, though according to the mere letter of the law, except Him alone who for us clothed Himself with humanity.

But in these days Mr. Brown displayed a terrible activity.

O how good is charity, which through love exhibits absent things in an image to one's self as though they were present, unites things divided, sets in order things confused, associates things unequal, consummates things imperfect!

And lest He should be regarded as the likeness of the form and not of the nature, He is styled the likeness of the invisible God in order that we may understand by His exercise of the powers (not the invisible attributes) of the Divine nature, that that nature is in Him.

For if it were not a good that evil should exist, its existence would not be permitted by the omnipotent Good, who without doubt can as easily refuse to permit what He does not wish, as bring about what He does wish.

For he gave no room for their anger to be roused, and darken their judgment, but by means of humility he dispersed, as it were, the mist and darkness of their indignation, and then pointed out to them the daring outrage they had committed.

Gold, silver, precious stones!

He has been always mindful of His covenant [Psalm 104:8].

As I once wrote a chapter to prove that the Queen of Sheba reigned in the Isle of Ceylon and that Ophir was Point de Gralle, I will not now go into that subject.

That Statesman intended to express his opinion that the power of Palmerston was a thing of the past.

Miss Baker was a little querulous at being left so long sitting with Miss Todd at the corner of the garden wall; but Miss Todd was never querulous: she was one of those good-humoured persons who never complain, and find some antidote to every ill in life, even in the ill itself.

“We are always on the wing about this hour on Wednesday night.” The words contained a general invitation for the season, and were esteemed by Lopez as an indication of great favour.

Accordingly we find that it is this truth, now heard for the first time, which clenches their faith.

Cecilia’s Second Chance

Then you can come to my house, and eat your breakfast there if you will.

Minister to the poor and you have ministered to Christ.

If then the witness of the presence of the Holy Ghost be not now given through these miracles, by what is it given, by what does one get to know that he has received the Holy Ghost?

Lady Glencora must of course look after her duchesses, and do pretty, as she called it, to her husband’s important political alliances.

“The Maid of the Mist” plied in this way for a year or two, and was, I believe, much patronized during the season.

“Here’s a fellow,” said he, “has come out from England to find out what’s become of Ferdinand Lefroy.”

They couldn’t expect him to be married till next spring at the earliest, and he would take another winter out of himself at the Moonbeam.

To the Church, to whom it is said in the Song of Songs, "O you fairest among women," [Song of Songs 1:7] kings offer gifts in acknowledgment of her beauty; as king Abimelech offered gifts to Sara, admiring the grace of her appearance; all the more that, while he loved, he was not allowed to profane it.

But it is unnecessary to say more on this point.

If any part of this healing was effected by Him in a way different from the law, He yet Himself did it to perfection; for surely the Lord may by Himself, or by His Son, produce after one manner, and after another manner by His servants the prophets, those proofs of His power and might especially, which (as excelling in glory and strength, because they are His own acts) rightly enough leave in the distance behind them the works which are done by His servants.

Ah, me, if she could have been a young unknown, newly-found sister of my own, how warmly would I have welcomed her!

Therefore by desiring Egyptian food he lost his birthright.

In these days he had come to be somewhat in love with poverty and Pau, and had been feeding on the luxury of his grievance.

63. How can any one baptize either in that sand, where the Church is not, seeing that it is on the rock; nor God and Christ, seeing that there is not there the temple of God and Christ?

“No, Lady Arabella; I will not hold him to anything to which he does not wish to be held. Nothing that you can say shall move me: nothing that anybody can say shall induce me to break my promise to him. But a word from himself will do it. One look will be sufficient. Let him give me to understand, in any way, that his love for me is injurious to him—that he has learnt to think so—and then I will renounce my part in this engagement as quickly as you could wish it.”

On the morning after the occurrence, while Sir Marmaduke was waiting with his solicitor upon a magistrate to find whether anything could be done, the following letter was brought to Mrs. Trevelyan at Gregg’s Hotel:—

Hence, too, those who creep into the houses; and again others who suppose virtue to consist in savage bearishness, and have never known the fruits of long-suffering and humility of spirit.

It is perhaps not unnatural that a sick lady, preparing to receive a clergyman in her bedroom, should put on a clean nightcap,—but to suspicious eyes small causes suffice to create alarm.

Observe what a wail he utters, far more piercing than of a woman in travail—You have defaced the likeness, you have destroyed the kinship, you have changed the form, you need another regeneration and refashioning; nevertheless I call you children, abortions and monsters though you be.

[Psalm 49:17] And with many it lasts not even to the end of life.

[John 9:16] Since then the judgment they pronounced was contrary both to their sight and hearing, therefore, says He, the very hearing do I take away from them.

And then he dies. “At the usual evening hour the chapel bell began to toll, and Thomas Newcome’s hands outside the bed feebly beat time,—and, just as the last bell struck, a peculiar sweet smile shone over his face, and he lifted up his head a little, and quickly said, ‘Adsum,’—and fell back. It was the word we used at school when names were called; and, lo, he whose heart was as that of a little child had answered to his name, and stood in the presence of his Maker!”

‘We were always friends, were we not?’ said she; ‘we were always good friends, Charley. Do you remember how you were to build a palace for me in the dear old island out there? You were always so kind, so good to me.’

He has well added this, for it is a quality which a teacher above all things ought to possess.

I began to fancy, as the danger became nearer and still nearer, that neither of those great men had been surrounded by obstructions such as encompassed me.

What must I do then?

“It is sickening,” said Mrs. Grantly. And then there was a pause between them as each thought of the injury that was done to them.

Otherwise John, when the soldiers who came to be baptized asked, What shall we do?

She was sitting at her glass, brushing her hair and rising every other minute to play with her boy, who was sprawling on the bed and who engaged pretty nearly the whole attention of the maid as well as of his mother.

However, if you persist in pushing your views further, I shall find means of answering you with greater stringency, and of meeting you with the exclamation of the Lord Himself, so as to challenge you with the question, What is your inquiry and reasoning about that?

The signora stared her full in the face for a moment, and then turning to her brother said playfully, “Bertie, you idiot, get up.”

John 4:51-53

“And so am I aware of it. He has told him stories as to your conduct with Mountjoy which, added to some youthful indiscretions of your own—”

That is what we should all wish.

But, to be brief, I will return to the last of the four classes of brethren, those, namely, who are brethren by affection, and these again fall into two divisions, those of the spiritual and those of the general relationship.

As to the passage Far above all rule and authority etc.

If; then, we assert that Christ Himself is Wisdom, and that it was His working which showed itself in the prophets, by which the gnostic tradition may be learned, as He Himself taught the apostles during His presence; then it follows that the gnosis, which is the knowledge and apprehension of things present, future, and past, which is sure and reliable, as being imparted and revealed by the Son of God, is wisdom.

“That has nothing to do with it either. They don’t at all seek people of note as their correspondents. Free communication with all the world is their motto, and Rowland Hill is the god they worship. Only they have been forced to guard themselves against too great an accession of paper and ink. Are you fond of writing letters, Miss Vavasor?”

Learn then, Priest and Levite, what it means to wash your clothes.

But they are anything but happy in their change.

And then that glass of brandy, against which she had raised her voice slightly in feminine opposition.

But the judge, knowing the extent of Graham’s means, made some further preliminary inquiries, and it was considered that Sir Jacob would not be needed—at any rate not as yet.

‘And I think I can help you with the children.’

Their books should aim at showing in what my statements have fallen short of the truth, and in what they have exceeded it.

Let our whole body, then, be preserved in Christ Jesus; and let every one be subject to his neighbour, according to the special gift bestowed upon him.

That there are, however, two Gods or two Lords, is a statement which at no time proceeds out of our mouth: not as if it were untrue that the Father is God, and the Son is God, and the Holy Ghost is God, and each is God; but because in earlier times Two were actually spoken of as God, and two as Lord, that when Christ should come He might be both acknowledged as God and designated as Lord, being the Son of Him who is both God and Lord.

Look; the tribune also hears that the Pharisees have acquitted him of the charges, and have given sentence (manuscripts and Edd.

The Essenes have, however, in the lapse of time, undergone divisions, and they do not preserve their system of training after a similar manner, inasmuch as they have been split up into four parties.

His holy life might be a great inducement to men to keep the commandments, yet I dare not say that it alone could accomplish everything.

Oxen had, in one part, eaten up the grass of the meadows; pigs also had dug up some portions of them with their snouts; while the remaining portion, which continued uninjured, flourished, as if painted with variously tinted flowers.

“If you mean to marry Captain Aylmer, you had better go.”

[1 Corinthians 8:12-13] These things, moreover, does ever one who truly loves God, who truly takes up his cross, and puts on Christ, and loves his neighbour; the man who watches over himself that he be not a stumbling-block to any one, that no one be caused to stumble because of him and die because he is constantly with maidens and lives in the same house with them— a thing which is not right— to the overthrow of those who see and hear.

For He created us and brought us into being, that He might make us partakers of eternal blessings, that He might offer us the kingdom of Heaven, not that He might cast us into Hell and deliver us to the fire; for this was made not for us, but for the devil: but for us the kingdom has been destined and made ready of old time.

It was by these qualifications that the greater part of his success was achieved.

For we shall ask them if Pharaoh was of an earthy nature; and when they answer, we shall say that he who is of an earthy nature is altogether disobedient to God: but if disobedient, what need is there of his heart being hardened, and that not once, but frequently?

And yet even the brutes do not touch the flesh of their own kind; and they pair by a law of nature, and only at the regular season, not from simple wantonness; they also recognise those from whom they receive benefits.

“My lord,” said the parson of Clavering, plucking up something of his past energy, as the color rose to his face, “I think you are wrong in this.

Whereas, though we had an exact knowledge of all other things, not even so were it possible to possess this knowledge to such an extent.

[Romans 7:18] Where is the capacity which is proved to be inseparably implanted in nature?

“A squire as I take it, Mrs. Hopkins, is a country gentleman who lives on his own property. Since my grandfather’s time no such gentleman has lived at Bragton.”

GERALD.

I must excuse myself by saying that I have wanted to paint George Lewes as I knew him.

And again, Have I sanctified my heart in vain, and washed my hands in innocency?

As simple Isabel Brodrick she might marry whom she would without bringing discredit upon the Indefer Joneses.

But the 73’s were all arranged in months, and then in days.

Such of the images as were constructed of precious material, and whatever else was valuable, were purified by fire, and became public property.

It has been shown above, and must be believed as true, that the Word is from the Father, and the only Offspring proper to Him and natural.

My way of living is regulated for another life: I have learned to despise the things that are in the world, to pass by the things of earth, to hasten to the things of heaven, even as Paul expressly testifies, that the world is crucified to him, and he to the world.

He says, the body of our humiliation, because it is now humbled, subject to destruction, to pain, because it seems to be worthless, and to have nothing beyond that of other animals.

“I’ve just come from Conduit Street, and he says that he has been dining with you. He swears that you are to marry his daughter.”

What peace spoke they?

at the same time glancing at both Gentiles and Jews.

“And, what, then, of your truth to Miss Florence Burton?”

But then, how would it be with her, if the Corsair were to take to hurrying about the world without carrying her with him;—and were to do so always at her expense!

‘Tell Marie that you have told me of her marriage.’

Wherefore, no man desires a draught, but to drink what is drinkable; and no man desires an inheritance, but to inherit.

How am I to analyse her mind, and make her thoughts and feelings intelligible to those who may care to trouble themselves with the study?

I think that he has confined his mysticism to the book above named.

Nay verily; let the kings of the earth serve Christ by making laws for Him and for His cause.

But, now-a-days, we without any of these would fain command all things.

You have spoken indeed, and that not falsely.

A more honourable husband is he, in proportion as he has become more pure.

“Or you can send for Mr Daly, to meet you at Roscommon,” suggested Martin.

That you may learn his forwardness, that not even the time restrained him from his purpose.

xxxvii. 5, 6. He shall make your righteousness as the light.

“Is it that girl of the doctor’s, Mrs. Rossiter?”

The Widow Dale of Allington

Yet after such a display of love towards us, we hold back, and are not in earnest in our love of Christ.

If while any of you had been sitting in your Church, and while the people were assembled with you, without any blame, some one had suddenly come under plea of an edict as successor of one of you, and had acted the same part towards you, would you not have been indignant?

[1 Timothy 2:9] For therein would be a snare.

By our persistency, by our treaties, by our power, by enforcing upon their inferior condition as the very trade-mark of our superiority the command that slavery shall exist no longer, we have driven them to deny it, and have almost convinced them that slavery is no longer possible.

As he is about to proceed then to a proof of these points, he starts with an encomium of the hearers, in these words, Do you not know, brethren, for I speak to them that know the Law, that is, I am saying a thing that is quite agreed upon, and clear, and to men too that know all these things accurately,

During the last few months no one near him had dared to speak to him of his will, for it had been known that his condition of mind rendered him unfit to alter it; nor had he ever alluded to it himself.

Magnentius, who had plotted his murder, reduced the entire government of Constans under his own sway.

The Acrobats was a very distinguished club, into which it was now difficult for a young man to find his way, and almost impossible for a man who was no longer young, and therefore known to many.

“Ah,” she said, “there comes the difference; I’m not a lady any longer!” When I contradicted her she snubbed me, and said that I hadn’t seen enough of the world to know anything about it.

For he who says that to those who would forsake their faith it would have been granted, as a kindness, that they should not begin to have what, by a more serious impiety, they would subsequently forsake, sufficiently indicates that a man is not judged by that which it is foreknown he would have done ill, if by any act of kindness he may be prevented from doing it.

These comparisons, dearly-beloved, being thoughtfully considered, we find Herod's character also not to be wanting, of which the devil himself is now an unwearied imitator, just as he was then a secret instigator.

Excuse yourself from talking many idle words: neither backbite, nor lend a willing ear to backbiters; but rather be prompt to prayer.

“Patience did not tell me; but so Beatrice says. Patience showed it to me once, and it is a darling. I think I’d have the dressing-case before the bonnet. But, uncle—”

How then is it that He says, Before Abraham was, I am, and I came down from heaven ?'

From day to day he went on refusing fares,—for the boycotted personages were after all more capable of paying fares than the boycotting hero of doing without them,—suffering much himself from want of victuals, and more on behalf of his poor animal.

“No, no. I have spoiled nothing. It will only be a little dream about ‘that strange American girl, who really did make me feel queer for half an hour.’ Look at that. A great big drop—and the cloud has come over us as black as Erebus. Do hurry down.” He was leading the way. “What shall we do for carriages to get us to the inn?”

Assumes the god,

Or does it see in the reason of eternal truth how beautiful it is to know one's self, and so loves this which it sees, and studies to bring it to pass in itself?

He has to pass through the waves of this world, and to ford its rivers; those by which the saints sat down and wept when they remembered Zion, and Chebar's flood, whence Ezekiel was carried to Jerusalem by the hair of his head.

Fanny was eager and active, and as Mr. Saul was very eager and very active, it was natural that they should have had some interests in common.

Of course, they were more awkward than the boys, even though they were twice more assiduous in their efforts.

So Sir Roger had to leave the huge Government works which he was then erecting on the southern coast, and hurry off to Berlin to see what could be done with young Hopeful.

I suppose the papers would publish anything; and you know how greedily people will read slander about those whose names are in any way remarkable.

Even your Lord's outgoing was no other than that of death.

At last what Abraham had expected the Lord to do took place.

“Thank you, sir,” murmured Gerald.

And if you see things happening contrary to your belief, be not troubled.

27. The change wrought by the Cross in the relation of Death to Man.

It was easy to see that Mr Scruby no longer regarded him as a successful man, and the day of the poll showed very plainly how right Mr Scruby had been.

She flirted with the old earl till he declared that he would marry her himself.

How was he to stand it?

To that oligarchy Cicero was bound by all the convictions, by all the practices, and by all the prejudices of his life.

But from his mother he had often heard of the special injury which he had undergone.

Let this then be your thought with regard to Christ also, when He is going about a wanderer, and a stranger, needing a roof to cover Him; and thou, neglecting to receive Him, deckest out a pavement, and walls, and capitals of columns, and hangest up silver chains by means of lamps, but Himself bound in prison you will not even look upon.

I speak of some only, not of all.

Thus it is, that rich men, attached to their means, have been accustomed to gaze more upon their gold than upon heaven, while our sort of people, though poor, have both discovered wisdom, and have delivered their teaching to others; whence it appears that intelligence is not given to wealth, nor is gotten by study, but is begotten with the very formation of the mind.

It shows that death itself in holding Him had pangs as in travail, and was sore bestead: whereas, by pains, or, travail-pangs, of death, the Old Testament means danger and disaster: and that He so rose as never more to die.

With him entered Mr and Mrs Boyce, from the parsonage, with Dick Boyce, the ungrown gentleman, and two girl Boyces, who were fourteen and fifteen years of age. Mrs Dale, with the amount of goodnature usual on such occasions, asked reproachfully why Jane, and Charles, and Florence, and Bessy, did not come,—Boyce being a man who had his quiver full of them,—and Mrs Boyce, giving the usual answer, declared that she already felt that they had come as an avalanche.

Instantly Mally hurried across to the edge of the pool, crouching down upon her hands and knees for security as she did so.

This in Your sight is clear unto me, and may it become more and more clear unto me, I beseech You; and in this manifestation may I abide more soberly under Your wings.

“I’ve been talking to him,—and the upshot is, that I have promised to speak to you. He isn’t at all a bad fellow.”

For that they had not perfect faith the Evangelist shows by their speeches after this, in which they insult Him again.

For when you see the Apostles raising the dead, yet themselves sick, and unable to remove their own infirmities, you may clearly perceive, that the resurrection of the dead man was not effected by the power of him who raised him, but by the energy of the Spirit.

For had ye not recognised it, and that from the Scriptures, you would not signify your understanding of it by your voices.

These heretics have affinities with Gnosticism which may be traced to the impious teaching of Basilides.

The title which had come from the Plantagenets was now lapsed; and when the last lord died about four hundred a year was divided between his two daughters.

Nay, even if Plato thinks there exists one of which this of ours is the image, that likewise must necessarily have similarly to undergo mutation; inasmuch as, if it is a world, it will consist of diverse substances and offices, answerable to the form of that which is here the world: for world it will not be if it be not just as the world is.

And would that I knew whatever I desire to know to my advantage, as I know that no creature was made before any creature was made.

There were consultations behind her back as to what should be done, of which,—though she heard no word of them,—she was aware.

But men did not know that his inner heart was swelling with triumph, and that his bosom could hardly contain his pride as he reflected that the poor Barchester stone-mason was now the representative in Parliament of his native city.

The empire of light was held by God the Father, who is perpetual in holy origin, magnificent in virtue, true in His very nature, ever rejoicing in His own eternity, possessing in Himself wisdom and the vital senses, by which He also includes the twelve members of His light, which are the plentiful resources of his kingdom.

They were not probably very particular as to which owned each bed, enjoying a fraternal communism in that respect.

And, in truth, Jack had hit him hard.

And it is for this reason that Paul prays.

“ Then came Holmes’ accounts, which have necessarily fallen greatly into arrcar.” Holmes was his steward.

She frankly returned an answer such as she alone could dare to do: first, that she would not treat of marriage while she was in weeds, and while the ashes of Galerius, [her] husband, and, by adoption, the father of Daia, were yet warm; next, that he acted impiously, in proposing to divorce a faithful wife to make room for another, whom in her turn he would also cast off; and, lastly, that it was indecent, unexampled, and unlawful for a woman of her title and dignity to engage a second time in wedlock.

With Him.

He had not been at home during the whole week, and knew well that he ought to give his daughters the countenance of his presence.

‘Only that he pleads a previous promise to you, John Thomas would be my bridegroom. I have his heart, I know. And, oh! and oh! and oh! it is too true that he has mine. Be noble and make him free, and enjoy the undying friendship of Anastasia Fitzapplejohn.

One may also read that Africa, which had by that time become a province of Rome, was visited by a prodigious multitude of locusts, which, after consuming the fruit and foliage of the trees, were driven into the sea in one vast and measureless cloud; so that when they were drowned and cast upon the shore the air was polluted, and so serious a pestilence produced that in the kingdom of Masinissa alone they say there perished 800,000 persons, besides a much greater number in the neighboring districts.

[John 20:13] But the Angels being then present cure their want of knowledge; for they said, Why do you seek the living among the dead [Luke 24:5]?

“And what does that matter? She’s not in gaol. And if the money is hers, she can’t lose it because he goes to prison. Beggars mustn’t be choosers. How do you mean to live if you don’t marry this girl?”

In one of these, which he received about the end of November, she told him that her brother was again in his old haunt, at the Willingford Bull, and that he had sent to Portman Square for all property of his own that had been left there.

The man in the office had almost been angry as he assured Mrs. Brown for the fourth time that Monsieur and Madame would most assuredly be wakened at the appointed time.

He wrote a cheerful letter to Mrs. Shand, in which he told her that though he had not been absolutely engaged to marry Hester Bolton before he started for Australia,—and consequently before he had ever been at Pollington,—yet his mind had been quite made up to do so; and that therefore he regarded himself as being abnormally constant rather than fickle.

All things were made through Him.

But You, O God, shall bring them down unto the pit of corruption [Psalm 54:23].

Which one thing being mentioned, you see there is opportunity to dwell upon things innumerable, which of themselves occur to the thought.

3. Also another work against the Greeks, in which he discourses at length upon most of the questions at issue between us and the Greek philosophers, and discusses the nature of demons. It is not necessary for me to add any of these things here.

He must go on till the end.

“Fiddlestick!”

Shall we then talk any more, seeing we do not so much as know what Paul suffered?

For since to be eternal and without beginning is most peculiar to God, this he puts first; and then, lest any one hearing that He was in the beginning, should assert, that He was unbegotten also, he immediately remedies this by saying, before he declares what He was, that He was with God.

“I don’t mean that; but if I were married,—which I never shall be, for I shall never attain to the respectability of a fixed income,—I fancy I shouldn’t look after my wife at all. It seems to me that women hate to be told about their duties.”

(you will say.)

“But, Miss Todd—”

“ I’ll have a big table put into my own bedroom,” said she, “ and he shall do it there.

When these parts allowed themselves to be led astray from their original brightness, and became hostile to sacred light, this must have been from the force of the enemy; and if they were forced against their will, they are innocent; while, if they could have resisted had they chosen, there is no need of the origin of evil in an imaginary evil nature, since it is to be found in free-will.

[Deuteronomy 5:9 we should make this answer, that the assertion is not universal, but that it is spoken with reference to certain who came out of Egypt.

Surely there would be more than two dozen gentlemen who would be true enough to the cherished principles of their whole lives to vote against such a Bill as this!

“You have no personal wish, then, for my welfare?”

“Miss Furnival,” he said, “when a judge forgets himself and goes out hunting he has no right to expect anything better. What would your father have said had he seen me clambering up the bank with young Orme’s hunting-cap between my teeth? I positively did.”

whether the Son and the Holy Spirit were also sent before; and, if they were so sent, what difference there is between that sending, and the one which we read of in the Gospel; or whether in truth neither of them were sent, except when either the Son was made of the Virgin Mary, or the Holy Spirit appeared in a visible form, whether in the dove or in tongues of fire.

They had but a moderate day’s sport, going a considerable distance in search of it, till an incident arose which gave quite an interest to the field generally, and nearly brought Joshua Thoroughbung into a scrape.

Man, then, genetically considered, is formed in accordance with the idea of the connate spirit.

This, then, it appeared, was what Christ came not to destroy, but to fulfill.

These words I perceive to be spoken by you from the heart, and from a heart kindly seeking to give me good advice.

R. You have made great progress: yet those things which remain in order to the seeing of that light, very greatly impede.

A slight hint or two she did give, or thought she gave, but they were too fine, too impalpable to be of avail.

And so the whole morning was spent, and Mrs. Orme saw neither Sir Peregrine nor her son till she went down to the library in the first gloom of the winter evening.

“I don’t see how she would be comfortable in any other way.”

20. The same writer has also left the Institutes of Arithmetic, in ten books, and other evidences of his experience and proficiency in divine things.

Were they true, it were not only more prudent to keep silence regarding them, but even (to express myself as best I can) it were the part of wisdom not to know them.

She would not even bid her think of it once again, as might have been so easy at parting.

Mrs. French’s Carving Knife

[Matthew 5:45] When He would lead to endurance of wrong He brought an example, Learn of Me, for I am meek and lowly in heart.

In a much, a very much, shorter time you will see the difference between truth and vanity.

Count as money gained the sum that you must expend upon your outfit.

Now from the body the death of the body separates us; whereas the offenses contracted from the body remain, and their just punishment awaits them, as the rich man found in hell.

He was a thief.

For our Lord was, according to the flesh, the son of David; but according to His divine nature, the Lord of David, and his Maker Let no one then, when he hears these words, say, Christ speaks not; nor again say, I speak not; nay rather, if he own himself to be in the Body of Christ, let him say both, Christ speaks, and I speak.

Let us, then, consider what I have to fear.

And I would beseech you, greatest of emperors, before I enter on this discussion, to be indulgent to me while I bring forward true considerations; for it is not my design to show the fallacy of idols, but, by disproving the calumnies vented against us, to offer a reason for the course of life we follow.

For He who was of the Father, yet without mother, was born of woman without a father's co-operation.

For those who thus think irreverently define the Son as a special creation of the Father, but we, with the present synods, both at Rome and in Gaul, hold that there is one and the same substance of Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, in three persons, that is in three perfect essences.

It sets forth in bold outline the end of both of them, the torments of Herod and the comfort of John, that even now Herod might hear that warning: They have there Moses and the prophets, let them hear them.

These things I wrote at that time when I was endeavouring to defend the opinion which is now under discussion.

The Duchess had applauded him,—but yet he thought that he regretted it.

From what the girl’s father had said to her she was disposed to believe that the malady had gone deep with her.

Where then is the book? He purified their minds. They themselves then were the books of the New Testament. But where are the vessels of the ministry? They are themselves. And where is the tabernacle? Again, they are; for I will dwell in them, He says, and walk in them. [2 Corinthians 6:16]

But on these points let this suffice.

Alice did not like it, but, after some consideration, she thought that she might be open to the imputation of having made more of the thing than it was worth if she ran away, as her father called it.

Respectable residents in the island, who would pay some attention to the Governor if he lived at the principal town, find it impossible to undergo the nuisance of visiting Spanish Town, and in this way go neither to the one nor the other, unless when passing through Kingston on their biennial or triennial visits to the old country.

Wherefore we, in fulfilment of our aforesaid promise, have already determined to keep silence on these questions; nor do we desire to mix ourselves personally in these transactions, wherein we feel that too little kindness is being shown.

Fellowship in sufferings has comfort in it, when the miseries have any proportion in them; but when they exceed all proportion, and carry us beyond ourselves, no longer do they allow of our receiving any comfort at all.

This was the story as told with great interest by Mrs. Houghton, who seemed for the occasion almost to have recovered from her heart complaint.

The young lions roar after their prey and seek their meat from God.

It is hard enough, for how could the South have escaped slavery?

And yet you know, as you prove by your quotation, that the Holy Spirit descended in such wise, that those who were then filled with it spoke with various tongues: what was the meaning of that sign and prodigy?

And if it happens that through the management of the superior some of these are given first to one who is known to have nothing whatever, he is still more inflamed with burning rage, and thinks that he is despised as a stranger; nor is he contented to turn his hand to any work, but finds fault with everything which the needs of the monastery require to be done.

And thus the knowledge, which He had not of the nature of humanity whereby He was with the angels a creature, this He denied that He had with the angels, who are creatures.

Are they not destitute of feeling?

Get him to settle himself.

“I will ask him to come here, as he proposes.”

He washed his teacher, he set food before him, and rejoiced.

But Sir Gregory could not at all get the third king into his pocket.

[Amos 7:12-13] Why is he driven from it?

He is reported to have formed men out of clay, because he was esteemed the best teacher of wisdom; yet it does not appear what wise men there were in his days.

Others say: We thought, indeed, that it mattered not in what communion we held the faith of Christ; but thanks to the Lord, who has gathered us in from a state of schism, and has taught us that it is fitting that the one God be worshipped in unity.

“I dare say it’s very ridiculous,” said Jack, in a mooning despondent way. “I dare say I’m not the man I ought to be after the advantages I have had in such friends as you and others.”

And in the same book, [Deuteronomy 17:15] You shall in anywise set him king over you, whom the Lord your God shall choose: one from among your brethren shall you set king over you; you may not put a foreigner over you, which is not your brother.

He still pressed the engagement, but thought now that less publicity might be expedient.

The countess, as she walked back with her daughter towards the house, had to bethink herself for a minute or two as to how she should act, and what she would say. She knew, she felt that she knew, what had occurred. If her daughter’s manner had not told her, the downcast eyes, the repressed sobs, the mingled look of shame and fear;—if she had not read the truth from these, she would have learned it from the tone of Fitzgerald’s voice, and the look of triumph which sat upon his countenance.

Chapter 29. Of Arsenius, and his Hand which was said to have been cut off.

About one o’clock on that day Mr Longestaffe called at Lady Monogram’s. The two ladies had breakfasted upstairs, and had only just met in the drawing-room when he came in. Georgiana trembled at first, but soon perceived that her father had as yet heard nothing of Mr Brehgert. She immediately told him that she proposed returning home on the following day. “I am sick of the Melmottes,” she said.

[1 Timothy 3:10] Because many baptized believers are without crime, but I should say that no one in this life is without sin—however much the Pelagians are inflated, and burst asunder in madness against me because I say this: not because there remains anything of sin which is not remitted in baptism; but because by us who remain in the weakness of this life such sins do not cease daily to be committed, as are daily remitted to those who pray in faith and work in mercy.

For the things which we wish to obtain from God, of those we ought first to impart to our neighbors.

“My friend,” she said, “your table is laid for four, and the places will all be filled.”

Nelly went to the door, and opened it to Lord Ballindine, who had left his gig in charge of his servant. He asked for Martin, who in a short time, joined him in the parlour.

[John 10:36] And in many other places besides He does this.

As to what may be the best way I do not presume to give an opinion; but I do presume to doubt whether the best way has as yet been found at Bermuda.

Seeing that adversity does us harm, and prosperity spoils us, and it is equally dangerous not to have what we want at all, and to have it in the fullest measure.

She stayed yet a little while longer, leaning against the table, waiting to hear whether or no he would answer her; but as he sat silent, looking before him, but not at her, with his hands thrust deep into his pockets, she without further words withdrew, and quietly closed the door after her. As she did so, the faithful John was seen moving away to the top of the kitchen stairs. She would hardly have cared had the faithful John been present during the whole interview.

His Millenarianism reflects the views of a very primitive age, and that without the corrupt Chiliasm of a later period, which brought about a practical repudiation of the whole system.

Let us, however, see what it was that he learned from Socrates, who, having entirely rejected natural philosophy, betook himself to inquiries about virtue and duty.

No attempt at resistance or rescue was made by those whose authority might have had influence on the mob.

For, it is said, we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ that every one may receive the things done in his body according to that he has done whether it be good or bad.

“Cruelty!” said Sir Thomas laughing. “In politics men skin each other without the slightest feeling. I do not doubt that Mr. Westmacott would ruin me with the most perfect satisfaction, if by doing so he could bring the seat within his own reach again; and yet I believe Mr. Westmacott to be a kindhearted, good sort of man. There is a theory among Englishmen that in politics no man need spare another. To wish that your opponent should fall dead upon the hustings is not an uncharitable wish at an election.”

The lord next attacked aunt Jane. “You wouldn’t mind having her here?”

There’s our Lucy; she’s only seventeen, and she never lets on to me, but she’s got a young man of her own, I know.

“I don’t think we do,” said Lord George, who was determined to be angry.

The cup was prepared for his lips, and it was necessary that he should drink of it.

For a moment there came upon him an idea that he would confess that he was weary of her, but he found at once that such an effort was beyond his powers. “How can you ask such a question?” he said.

In confidence I call it grief, because I preach His Cross.

But of all human beings whom you could meet she was the least sly.

What have we here to do with Pilus and Furius, who defended the cause of injustice against justice?

I cannot and will not live with you if you think evil of me.” Then she opened the door, and slowly left the room.

Two strong points have been made for Catiline in Mr. Beesly’s defence.

[Matthew 26:66] He gives not the sentence from himself, but invites it from them, as in a case of confessed sins, and manifest blasphemy.

“Do you mean to pay me my money, sir?” said Cheesacre, at last, finding his readiest means of attack in that quarter.

“Why, yes, they are smarter,” said Matilda; “and there’s nothing on earth so dowdy as an old black coat, But, then, officers are always going away: you no sooner get to know one or two of a set, and to feel that one of them is really a darling fellow, but there, they are off—to Jamaica, China, Hounslow barracks, or somewhere; and then it’s all to do over again.”

I had already at this time begun to conceive an opinion that the armies in Kentucky and in Missouri would do at any rate as much for the Northern cause as that of the Potomac, of which so much more had been heard in England.

If, on the contrary, this Spirit has the impulse to work, but some overwhelming control hinders His design, they must tell us the wherefore of this hindrance.

He had been teaching himself all his life to despise conventionalities.

For the holy council knows their works; it has heard our blood crying aloud, heard from themselves the voices of the wounded.

That a man is able to will and effect any good work, comes from God alone.

What Lord Hampstead might turn out to be, there was as yet no knowing.

If I had ten buttons, and the gloves to fit me, I’d cut my arm off and put it under a glass case.

But she was not at the moment armed with words sufficiently strong to explain all this.

1. It is fitting to add to these accounts the true prediction of our Saviour in which he foretold these very events.

[Philippians 3:11-12] And then he says, Not that I have already received or am already perfected.

You have cried; yet think not yourself safe.

Oh, Linda!

He had in truth resolved that he would not undergo the ordeal.

For he who is made like the Saviour is also devoted to saving; performing unerringly the commandments as far as the human nature may admit of the image.

For who can refuse to believe that these words often revolved in the thought of those women between the sorrow of that desertion with which at present they seemed to themselves to have been smitten by the Lord, and the hope of the resurrection itself, by which they rightly supposed that all would be restored to them?

He acknowledged to himself that there was much labour to be gone through in running away with another man’s wife; and that the results, in respect to personal comfort, are not always happy.

But then in the latter case the disciple is not benefited, he is hindered of his fruit.

For he was suspected of aspiring to the sovereignty, and had the reputation of having invited into the Roman territories the Huns, a barbarous nation, who had already ravaged Armenia, and were then making predatory incursions into other provinces of the East.

The persecution is very hot; and thus the noon signifies the excessive heat The demon that is in the noon-day, represents the heat of a furious persecution: for these are our Lord's words, The sun was up; and because they had no root, they withered away: and when explaining it, He applies it to those who are offended when persecution arises, Because they have not root in themselves.

“Yes, and a little more; and he is anxious to add even to that. He is very energetic about it, Sir Peregrine.”

And why did He do thus?

In this way, wherein I was walking, they hid a trap for me.

Is it abuse to say that she is moral and proper?

[Luke 14:31] Or what king goes to the battle to fight with another king, and does not consider first whether he is able with ten thousand to meet him that comes to him [49] with twenty thousand?

For what is the gain?

On this the Apostle says well: What things to me were gain, those I counted loss for Christ, and he added: Wherefore I count all things but loss, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ.

He notifies the appointment of his representatives at the Council of Ephesus

“Were you? That is the sweetest thing you have said yet. My own;—my darling;—my dearest! If only I can so live that you may be able to thank the Lord for me in years to come!”

You are very harsh, and it crushes me.

Could it be that Roden should make so little of his sister’s name as to talk about her to the Post Office clerks,—to so mean a fellow as this!

“It is the old man, and neither of the sons, as have done it,” said Hart.

For it is with this object that I too discourse so much concerning His goodness, not that we may presume upon it, and do any thing we choose, because in that way this goodness will be to the prejudice of our salvation; but that we may not despair in our sins, but may repent.

And Mark says, that he also cut himself with the stones.

But, he adds, Stablish Thou me with Your word: that I may not by slumbering fall away from those duties which I feel that I have already attained: establish Thou me therefore in those words of Yours that I already hold, that I may be able to reach unto others through edification.

For greater than all these things is it to have Christ our beloved at once and our lover.

“Oh—then, tomorrow evening, if yer riverence plazes.”

It is, of course, another matter if He does not wish to be prayed to, because He is the supremely and spontaneously good God!

“If you suspect me, Mr Melmotte, I had better not see her at all. It is only that there may no longer be any doubt.”

Why do we not shun the punishment?

The two ladies were sitting at the time over the breakfast-table, and old Mr. Bertram, propped up with pillows, with his crutches close to his hand, was sitting over the fire in his accustomed armchair.

A god in truth, but a god with so very moderate an annual income—unless, indeed, those old Burtons made it up to an extent which seemed to them to be quite unnatural!

Chapter 32 [XXVII.]— He Shows by the Example of Abraham that the Ancient Saints Believed in the Incarnation of Christ.

I speak without fear; since You have said.

And that other Fitzgerald must be summoned and told of all this; he on whom they had looked down, whom the young heir had robbed of his love, whom they had cast out from among them as unworthy.

“Parted! No, I do not think that we shall be parted.”

For there were adulteries everywhere and thefts, and the whole earth was full of murders and plunderings.

The false, by showing that they are false; the true, by not again doing the same things.

“Good fortune; no. I never have good fortunes of that kind. But I’ve got hold of a young woman,—or rather a young woman has got hold of me, who insists on having a mystery with me. In the mystery itself there is not the slightest interest. But the mysteriousness of it is charming. I have just written to her three words to settle an appointment for tomorrow. We don’t sign our names lest the Postmaster-General should find out all about it.”

Of the same from the fifth book of the same work:—

You have at hand, no doubt, some learned brother gifted with the grace of knowledge, some one of the experienced class, some one of your close acquaintance who is curious like yourself; although with yourself, a seeker he will, after all, be quite aware that it is better for you to remain in ignorance, lest you should come to know what you ought not, because you have acquired the knowledge of what you ought to know.

Mind you come and see me at Fawn Court.

But You, everywhere present, hearkened to her where she was, and had pity upon me where I was, that I should regain my bodily health, although still frenzied in my sacrilegious heart.

“John, you must not talk of that now.”

Men give them dinners and women smile upon them.

“Mr. Finn has ideas—.”

He was loathsome even to the Tappitt girls; but then the Griggses and the Tappitts had known each other for half a century, and among their ordinary acquaintances Adolphus Griggs might have been endured.

But he did not kneel at all.

Mr. Froude in a preceding passage gives us another passage from a letter to Atticus, “Cæsar was mortal.” So much is an intended translation.

Wherefore he says in another place, "Let us therefore, as many as be perfect, be thus minded: and if in anything ye be otherwise minded, God shall reveal even this unto you."

“Then I’ll be hanged if I don’t prosecute him for stealing it.”

Although therefore to no purpose, yet he confessed that those torments had deservedly lighted upon him; since he even wished his brethren to be instructed, lest they should fall into the same.

And lest any one should excuse himself by saying that he had a just cause, and was suffering wrong, and that he only wished the sentence of the judges to remove his wrong, the apostle immediately anticipates such thoughts and excuses, and says: Why do ye not rather take wrong?

The next verse too is suspicious, "If you believed Moses, you would also believe me;" for the religion of Moses is so entirely different from that of Christ, that if the Jews believed one, they could not believe the other.

She was surprised; but her heart was filled rather with hope than dismay, for she had full confidence in her daughter’s discretion.

“Not so. It has to be spoken of. As I stand at present I have been repudiated by Mr. Jones.”

So far indeed did they succeed in pressing their charges, that the emperor became exasperated, and banished him from Alexandria.

The Cyprians he addresses thus: To the well-beloved lords, brothers, and fellow bishops, Epiphanius, Marcianus, Agapetus, Boethius, Helpidius, Entasius, Norbanus, Macedonius. Aristo, Zeno, Asiaticus, Heraclides, the other Zeno, Cyriacus, and Aphroditus, Theophilus [sends] greeting in the Lord.

Is it possible to think that He separates Himself from the glory of the only God, when He gives as the reason why they seek not the glory of the only God, that they receive Antichrist, and Himself they will not receive?

The giving of such support is incompatible with independence on the part of the ordinary Civil servant.

He had again gone up to the children’s nursery with Cecilia, had kissed them all in their cots, and made himself quite at home in the establishment.

asked Ephraim.

Who that sees winter giving place to spring and spring to summer and summer to autumn, and that these things contrary by nature (for the one chills, the other burns, the one nourishes, the other destroys), yet all make up a balanced result beneficial to mankind—can fail to perceive that there is One higher than they, Who balances and guides them all, even if he see Him not?

For God has chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise [1 Corinthians 1:27] — that God, no doubt, who in reference to this very dispensation of His threatened long before that He would destroy the wisdom of the wise.

“Oh!—a little soft sawther did it! I wasn’t long in putting my com’ether on her when I once began. Well, my lord, from that day out—from afther Moylan’s visit, you know—I began really to think of it. I’m sure the ould robber meant to have asked for a wapping sum of money down, for his good will in the bargain; but when he saw me he got afeard.”

For if even by chance they have seen the truth— a thing which often happens— they so act that it is refuted by others as false.

“Goodbye, Mrs. O’Hara,” he said, a day or two before he left Ennis.

Now it is a something that surpasses will, that He should be by nature, and should be Father of His proper Word.

And to this he adds the aid of arguments.

If any words from her to Lily might be efficacious to such an end!

Ask now, if you like, how the Son of God can help being God, or how she who brought forth God can fail to be Theotocos, i.e., the Mother of God?

But were it to be continued long you would give way.

Even now, on this evening, he had escaped from Onslow Crescent—basely escaped—without having declared any purpose.

At that time they will be brought from the east even unto the west; and they will come up from the west even unto the east, and will weep greatly and wail vehemently.

O let not the foot of pride come against me; and let not the hand of the ungodly cast me down.

Chapter XXXV. “I Deny It”

Did not God convert the rod of Moses into an animal, making it a serpent, which He reconverted into a rod?

You know that they sent for me to come here.” She nodded her head.

Dr. Proudie tripped out into the adjoining room, in which were congregated a crowd of Grantlyite clergymen, among whom the archdeacon was standing preeminent, while the old dean was sitting nearly buried in a huge arm chair by the fireplace. The bishop was very anxious to be gracious, and, if possible, to diminish the bitterness which his chaplain had occasioned. Let Mr. Slope do the fortiter in re, he himself would pour in the suaviter in modo.

If I had not been forcibly urged by our Fathers, I would not have arisen, I would not have spoken, while my mind was darkened with sadness because of your pusillanimity.

In this way it was settled among them that Colonel Osborne was to be received.

Had they been the originators of such a measure they would not have had a chance of success; but now—now that the two bishops were falling into their mouths out of the weak hands of the gods, was not their success ensured?

Chapter 48.

“He is not like that, mother,” she said again.

“Very probably. I hardly expect the attendance of men of business.”

And search out and see that also by the poll-tax [Luke 2:1-2] He was enrolled among them.

But he, trusting in his martyrdom, and promising to himself from the retribution of God the reward of resurrection, exclaimed and said, You indeed impotently destroy us out of this present life; but the King of the world will raise us up, who die for His laws, unto the eternal resurrection of life.

Unhappy souls!

“Do come back,” she said. “And do stay.”

Let us not then be looking open-mouthed towards others.

Sir Alured had said that on such an occasion he, the heir, ought to be on the property with the shortest possible delay.

Eran.— Your proofs are numerous and convincing; but tell me why you have omitted what follows?

Orth.— And only begotten means only Son.

For His baptism is not that of the body only; He fills the penitent with the Holy Ghost, and His diviner fire does away with everything material and consumes everything that is earthy, not only from him who admits it to his life, but even from him who hears of it from those who have it.

He should run down to Perivale on his journey, and perhaps Clara would let him have a line addressed to him there.

Those who are dissatisfied with the fact that the good receive evil, and the evil good, are shown by the example of Lazarus, and on the authority of Paul, that punishments and rewards are reserved for a future life.

The men were Barrère, Westerman, and Santerre, and two of the republican Generals, Chouardin and Bourbotte.

Is that part of the body which was injured for that reason restored to its original condition?

The officers were chiefly young men; and a greater babel of voices was, I’ll undertake to say, never heard from a banqueting-hall than came from our dinner-table.

And He calls together His Angel friends on the finding of the coin, and makes them sharers in His joy, whom He had made to share also the secret of the Incarnation?

Of course Lucinda must go through with it.

“Nonsense, Adolphe,” said Agatha. “Are you a man, to lie grovelling on the floor like that? Rise up, or you will lose my esteem for ever, if that be of any value to you.”

For indeed I myself, when I was young, being in love with a most accomplished woman, not only thought it impossible to obtain her, but did not even hope ever to address her.

It is to be borne in mind also, that it is right for good rulers to desire to please men; but this in order to draw their neighbours by the sweetness of their own character to affection for the truth; not that they should long to be themselves loved, but should make affection for themselves as a sort of road by which to lead the hearts of their hearers to the love of the Creator.

Joy and sorrow he alike despises.

“Yes, sir; Miss Palliser is at home.” So said the indiscreet female, and Mr. Spooner was for the moment confounded by his own success.

“Yet what, my dear?”

If he allows me to marry again, this is due to my own incontinence and not to his wish.

It streams on without a pause, and without any necessary end but that which the convenience of time may dictate.

But all that he had, as it were, discounted, believing that a few hours,—at the very longest a few days,—would remove the distance; but now he was sent back to his prison, there to await his trial for the murder.

Belinda is a little busy, my dear.

Let us set out: but first let us see (for this comes first) whether we are in a sound state.

The man, with a vehement show of exertion, deposited the box on a chair, and then groaned aloud.

She, however, does take the trouble to make her personages stand upright on the ground.

“Oh, papa, I shall never bear it well.”

Does not the Emperor rule the whole world, the Bishop a single city?

Of the main purpose of God and His daily Providence.

Some sorts of torture are, as it were, tacitly allowed even among humane people.

I regret that my son should have been such a fool!

In the House of Lords that night, and in the House of Commons, the outgoing Ministers made their explanations.

But do you now at length quite give up your superstition, feeling ashamed to regard sepulchres with religious veneration.

But this would make not only flesh unclean, but your God himself, in that part which he sent to become subject to absorption and contamination, in order that the enemy might be conquered and taken captive.

2 Corinthians 4:6

Here again he passes encomiums upon his person by his love.

“Now, Fanny, you know that we have all liked your sister-in-law, Lucy, very much.” And then Mrs. Robarts’s mind was immediately opened, and she knew the rest as well as though it had all been spoken. “I need hardly tell you that, for I am sure we have shown it.”

And in respect of their waiting out of love for the Lord and kindling their light for the contemplation of things, they are wise souls, saying, Lord, for long we have desired to receive You; we have lived according to what You have enjoined, transgressing none of Your commandments.

Nor did they stop here, but deified the earth itself, its products, and the various substances by which animal life is sustained, and devised images of Ceres, of Proserpine, of Bacchus, and many such as these.

“But you must give it up.”

By the crimes, he says, of my people was He led unto death; and I will give the evil for His sepulture, and the rich for His death, because He did not wickedness, nor was guile found in his mouth; and God willed to redeem His soul from death, and so forth.

She, they say, when she has to hide, thrusts away into a thicket her head alone— plainly the whole of it, (though)— leaving all the rest of herself exposed.

These granite blocks have been brought to Washington from the State of Maine.

One word Mrs. T. said as she allowed her husband to escape from his prison amidst the blankets, one word by which to mark that the thing was done, and one word only.

‘What are you going to do with it?’

And his worshippers sacrifice their children to him, and they burn some of them alive in his honour.

For if, as you maintain and believe, she fills men's minds with lustful thoughts, it must be held in consequence that any disgrace and misdeed arising from such madness should be ascribed to the instigation of Venus.

Have a regard to preserve unity, than which nothing is better.

In the first epistle of Paul to the Corinthians: Heresies must needs be, in order that they which are approved may be made manifest among you.

For the same light returns and changes by days and nights.

S. Gregory, even after the lapse of many years, speaks of his ordination as an act of tyranny, and at the time, stung almost to madness, as an ox by a gadfly, rushed away again to Pontus, to bury in its congenial solitude, consoled by an intimate friend's deep sympathy, his wounded feelings.

That is: a man cannot find fault with me because I have sinned, although I deserve to be found fault with; for you do not find fault with me on the ground of an open sin, but estimate what I deserve for my offenses by the extent of my misfortunes.

So that, by following the straight path of sound doctrine, we escape, I know not what circuitous paths, discovered by deceiving and deceived sages.

But now ye do what?

“Nothing less strong than grouse could break up Parliament,” said Mr. Monk; “and then what would the pheasants and the foxes say?”

, of Alexandria, becoming blind while very young, and therefore ignorant of the rudiments of learning, displayed such a miracle of intelligence as to learn perfectly dialectics and even geometry, sciences which especially require sight.

So much having been settled, he got into a cab with his attorney, and having dropped that gentleman on the road, he returned home.

“If you will say that you want time to think about it, I shall be contented,” he said. But she did not want a moment to think qtbout it. She could not have confessed to herself that she had learned to love him, —oh, so much too dearly, —if it were not for this most unexpected, most unthought of, almost impossible reve

Delay not, then, dear friends: delay not, you ministers of God, and faithful servants of him who is our common Lord and Saviour: begin from this moment to discard the causes of that disunion which has existed among you, and remove the perplexities of controversy by embracing the principles of peace.

He was a fair man, with a broad fair face, and very light blue eyes; his forehead was low, but broad; he wore no whiskers, but bore on his lip a heavy moustache which was not gray, but perfectly white—white it was with years, of course, but yet it gave no sign of age to his face.

What then means, the Lord has sworn?

He was still in his armchair, thinking of all this, with that small untasted modicum of brandy and water beside him, when he heard some distant Lambeth clock strike three from over the river. Then he rose from his seat, and taking the candles in his hand, sat himself down at a writing-desk on the other side of the room. “I needn’t send it when it’s written,” he said to himself, “and the chances are that I won’t.” Then he took his paper, and wrote as follows:—

As she sat there alone, she took out her handkerchief and pressed it to her eyes.

At present, when the old planter sits on the magisterial bench, a coloured man sits beside him; one probably on each side of him.

“I can only suggest, Mr. Chaffanbrass,” continued the judge, “that you should obtain the consent of the gentlemen on the other side to a postponement of my charge.”

No other man had ever whispered a word of love to her, of no other man had an idea entered her mind that it could be pleasant to join her lot in life with his.

We may suppose that he found hoards among the barbarians, as Lord Clive did in the East Indies.

He knows, therefore, whom He has called, and whom He has saved; and at one and the same time He called and saved them.

For who would suppose that the man who says to his brother, You fool, is in danger of hell-fire, did not He who is the Truth say so?

[John 10:11] Nor did He even stop there, but also added, but he that is an hireling and not the shepherd sees the wolf coming and leaves the sheep, and flees.

“How else am I to speak of him? Tell me this. Do you love him?”

It is not pleasant to make love in the presence of a third person, even when that love is all fair and above board; but it is quite impracticable to do so to a married lady, when that married lady’s sister is present.

For herself, if her hope was small while Owen was needy and of poor account, what hope could there be now that he would be rich and great?

And, having perceived this to be reasonable, we have thought it needful to accede to his petition.

The Son, he tells us, cannot see the Father, and the Holy Spirit cannot see the Son.

He had been married to the woman ten years, and certainly had been a drunkard before he married her.

“Too small in his way altogether. And yet it was clear as the sun at noonday that he was troubled in his conscience. He shut himself up in his misery, not knowing how strong a tale his own unhappiness told against him. Why did he not rejoice in the glory of his position? Then I said to myself that he was conscious of insecurity.”

Hear what was said to the Jews who busied themselves about such outward impurities.

His headkin begins straight from his spine, for neck he has none: and thus reflection is hard for him; but, in circumspection, his eyes are outdarting, nay, they are revolving points of light.

“An Irish peer, was he?” Lizzie understood nothing of this, but presumed that an Irish peer was a peer who had not sufficient money to live upon. Lord Fawn, however, was endeavouring to describe his own history in as few words as possible.

He would expend it all on the lawsuit, if he could find lawyers to undertake his suit.

It’s a pity, perhaps, that one can’t train one’s self to like some girl best that has got money; but as I haven’t, there must be some delay.

As Lord Hampstead was in all respects unfit for that high position which, if he lived, he would be called upon to fill, so was her boy, her Lord Frederic, made to adorn it by all good gifts.

A cry was raised, and a rush was made by hundreds of drivers with their carts and horses; and then men who had never seen war before, who had not yet had three months’ drilling as soldiers, to whom the turmoil of that day must have seemed as though hell were opening upon them, joined themselves to the general clamor and fled to Washington, believing that all was lost.

Chapter XXXIII. Works of Creation

Would that I could persuade you to refrain from misleading people still more ignorant than yourselves!

Send it by a private messenger to the Bedford Hotel there.

For see, I repeat the same statement expressed in other words.

Recognize, Christian, the worth of your wisdom, and understand to what rewards you are called, and by what methods of discipline you must attain thereto.

But in this American contest such justice, though difficult, was easier.

Again in turn He endeavours to exhort the same persons.

Then they went to dinner, and their meal was eaten almost in silence.

If we be willing, and hear Him; not simply (hearing), nor like stocks and stones, being inactive.

For he too when he was sent was inspired.

“So he has,” said Mary. “And you are driven close enough yourself sometimes, Mrs. Thomas. There’s days when you’d like to borrow nineteen and sixpence if anybody would lend it you.”

And the presbyters replied to him, We too know in truth one God; we know Christ; we know that the Son suffered even as He suffered, and died even as He died, and rose again on the third day, and is at the right hand of the Father, and comes to judge the living and the dead.

The colour of his lower vestments approaches perhaps nearer to black than it would have done had he not been so encumbered, and men in the world at large are perhaps a little less free in their remarks before him than they would be before other men.

He had made up his mind as to what he would do, and he was determined to do it.

Which also Joseph says, in making excuse for his brethren, For God did send me hither [Genesis 45:5], that is, He made use of their wickedness for a good end.

“I cannot think, Nora, how you could have the heart to go there,” said Lady Rowley.

We went into all the schools of the college, and made ourselves fully aware that the amount of learning imparted was far above our comprehension.

It was a lovely summer evening, at that period of the year in which our summer evenings just begin, when the air is sweeter and the flowers more fragrant, and the forms of the foliage more lovely than at any other time.

But with the disgust there was a strengthened feeling of admiration for her conduct.

The property, which was small,—£2,000 a year at the outside,—was, no doubt, entailed on the eldest son; and Gerard, fortunately, had a small fortune of his own, independent of his father.

She left her mother’s boudoir, went down into the drawing-room, and there she wrote her notes of invitation, and her orders to the tradesmen; and then she went to her father, and consulted him on the difficult subject of young men.

But to the elder woman the two years had not sufficed to eradicate the remembrance of former reverses, and never for a moment had she felt herself to be secure.

It was known that he would in his natural course of business be in his place in Parliament at four, and Major Mackintosh was of opinion that he certainly should be taken before a magistrate in time to prevent the necessity of arresting him in the House.

And she endeavoured to persuade him to go to his bed; but in this he would not listen to her. He must, he said, see his father that night. “You have been with him, mother, since—since—.”

“Not except on strong provocation,” said Mr. Glascock. “In reference to wives, a stick is allowed as big as your thumb.”

If the heavenly virtues, then, partake of intellectual light, i.e., of divine nature, because they participate in wisdom and holiness, and if human souls, have partaken of the same light and wisdom, and thus are mutually of one nature and of one essence—then, since the heavenly virtues are incorruptible and immortal, the essence of the human soul will also be immortal and incorruptible.

That the fox was running for Dillsborough Wood was a fact well known both to Tony Tappett and Mr. Larry Twentyman.

“None;—only sometimes it is better to speak a word, than to keep one’s sorrow to oneself.”

For it is the nature of the weak and infirm man to be confused even by few words as by many, and what is clear and easy he thinks hard to be comprehended.

Arthur Donne,—for we never saw him,—we fancy that he was a simple, pious, commonplace young man, imbued with a strong idea that in being made a priest he had been invested with a nobility and with some special capacity beyond that of other men, slight in body, weak in health, but honest, true; and warm-hearted.

But they require a patient reader, and one who can content himself with a long protracted and most unemotional excitement.

But since we have stated that these resort to incantations for those bitten by dogs and for other mishaps, we shall explain these.

But when Matter inclined not to good and evil, it was as corporeal or local essences that it did not incline to them.

For much as after a violent burst of rain, there is a clear open sky; so likewise when tears are pouring down, a calm arises, and serenity, and the darkness that ensues on our sins quite disappears.

And then, when they are re-united, in the spot where all the laity think best, in the presence of your courtesy, the public assemblies should be held, and the Lord be glorified by all together.

There were to be four days, with the fourth as a hunting-day, before she need think of going!

Chapter XVII. “My Own, Own Husband”

“Oh, they are very dreadful!” said Lady Anna, when about a dozen had been passed.

This then is the manner of the infirmity according to which He is described by Paul as coming to death, for the man lives by God's power when plainly associated with God's spirit, since from the preceding statements He who is believed to be in Him is proved to be also the power of the Most High.

Will you that I show you a soul, foaming, filthy, and a distortion of the mind's eyes?

“How do you do?” she said, just touching his hand as soon as he was released from her husband’s couch.

The carriage called, moreover, before she was fully ready, and the footman, as he stood at the door to hand her in, had been very sulky.

“My dear one, you shall be his wife,” said Ada. Such were the last words which passed between them on that night.

“You mustn’t give it up at all,—not for a day; that is, if you ever mean to do any good.”

For you either say that some do keep your precepts, and that they should not be mixed up with the guilty in condemning the others; or that the whole inquiry into the character of the members of your sect is wrong, for the question is of the character of the profession.

The Romans, in translating from the Greek, thinking nothing of literary excellence, felt that they were bringing Greek thought into a form of language in which it253 could be thus made useful.

If then you do not grave images as did they, yet do you with great eagerness bow under the very same passions, when you make the members of Christ members of an harlot, and plunge yourself into the other deeds of iniquity.

Dr Thorne was going to explain how very injudicious such an arrangement appeared to be; but Sir Roger would not listen to him.

This however I could not be induced to do, but remained in the villa, knowing nothing of the plans which were devised after these things.

If the nature of everything were thoroughly considered, you too are in a position like that which you censure in our case.

For I wish not to spend time on minor points.

And with good reason.

Old Man: It is not, therefore, on account of his affinity, that a man sees God, nor because he has a mind, but because he is temperate and righteous?

Let truth overcome you willing: for even unwilling she shall of herself overcome you

And who is He that overcomes the world save He that believes that Jesus is the Son of God.

And I am sure that Grace does not.

And in this connection there is a noble and forcible counter-statement and an indignant refutation, showing that He Who gave the oracles to Mosesis Himself the Existent, the Only-begotten Son, Who to the petition of Moses, If You Yourself go not with us, carry me not up hence, said, I will do this also that you have said; Who is also called Angel both by Moses and Isaiah: wherein is cited the text, Unto us a Child is born.

And if we have known Christ after the flesh. As after the flesh in our case is being in the midst of sins, and being out of them is not after the flesh; so also after the flesh in the case of Christ was His subjection to natural affections, and His not being subject to them is to be not after the flesh. But, he says, as He was released, so also are we.

What is there then that can be replied to this?

He answered:— A wrathful passage is altogether wrath, and there is no peace in it.

“Nothing has been settled, and I do not as yet know where she will go to when they leave London. I think she will visit Monkhams when the Glascock people return to England.”

Homily 19 on Matthew

“And Hugh will not be the first to put rancor out of his heart,” said the rector.

For while that pestilent fellow Athanasius is driven from place to place, being convicted of the basest crimes, for which he would only suffer the punishment he deserves, if one were to kill him ten times over, it would be inconsistent in us to suffer those flatterers and juggling ministers of his to exult against us; men of such a character as it is a shame even to speak of, respecting whom orders have long ago been given to the magistrates, that they should be put to death.

But why do they bring this charge against us, while waiting day after day to murder us?

For as when the body is in health, the spirits are high, so when the soul is well conditioned, the pleasure is greater.

The beer was of the best; the boys were not made to eat fat; their taste in the selection of joints was consulted.

He still almost regretted what had been done.

Behind this large room was a smaller one, belonging to Dobbs Broughton, in the furnishing and arrangement of which some regard had been paid to comfort.

All the world believed it.

And observe in what a spirit of hatred and falsehood Celsus collects together the statements of the sacred history; so that wherever it appeared to him to contain a ground of accusation he produces the passage, but wherever there is any exhibition of virtue worthy of mention— as when Joseph would not gratify the lust of his mistress, refusing alike her allurements and her threats— he does not even mention the circumstance!

There would not have been even words which could be called obscene, but all that might be said of these members would have been as pure as what is said of the other parts of the body.

North of Great Namaqualand is Damaraland, whence too have come tokens of copper and whisperings of gold.

And then they all marched out of the room, each with his own glass.

[John 8:25] The Jews said, And you, who are you?

Melmotte’s back had been so utterly crushed that I almost think that he was mad enough to have justified a verdict of temporary insanity.

They likewise drove into exile Ammonius, Agathus, Agathodæmon, Apollonius, Eulogius, Apollos, Paphnutius, Gaius, and Flavius, ancient Bishops, as also the Bishops Dioscorus, Ammonius, Heraclides, and Psais; some of whom they gave up to work in the stone-quarries, others they persecuted with an intention to destroy, and many others they plundered.

And yet, he thought, there was no good reason why they two should not become man and wife.

Since He for our sakes was made, that by Him as by an instrument God might create us; nor would He have existed had not God wished to make us.

But now since this may not be, instead of me, remember my words: and while you are sitting at table, suppose me to enter, and to be standing beside you, and dinning into you the things I now say to you in this place.

For as to that which we hear said by you, that some of the gods are good, that others, on the contrary, are bad, and rather inclined to indulge in wanton mischief, and that the usual rites are paid to the one party that they may show layout, but to the others that they may not do you harm—with what reason this is said, we confess that we cannot understand.

You expected for your own security, I will not utterly take my loving-kindness from them.

What, therefore, does he mean by this universal way of the soul's deliverance, which had not yet been made known by any truest philosophy, or by the doctrinal systems of those nations which were considered to have great insight in things divine, because they indulged more freely in a curious and fanciful science and worship of angels?

It is very desirable that parents should encourage the desire for the virgin life, but more praiseworthy when the love of God draws a maiden even against their will. The violence of parents and the loss of property are not to be feared, and an instance of this is related by St. Ambrose.

Then I said, I would learn how some of men's wrong-doings or right-doings are their own, and some belong to others.

Well, this is not always implied.

It was sent;—and when he received the following answer, it may fairly be said that his editorial hair stood on end.

But of course they bring forward the passage in the book of Proverbs which says, The Lord created Me as the beginning of His ways, for His works.

Much may be said in opposition to this; but nothing shall be said here.

Those, moreover, which evidently proceed neither from God, nor from diabolical inspiration, nor from the soul, being beyond the reach as well of ordinary expectation, usual interpretation, or the possibility of being intelligibly related, will have to be ascribed in a separate category to what is purely and simply the ecstatic state and its peculiar conditions.

Indeed, it is most inexplicable to me, how with a zeal so ardent for the practice of self-control and blamelessness of life, he should in his sermons appear to teach a loose view of temperance.

He had said, Inasmuch as I am the Apostle of the Gentiles, I magnify mine office.

And there was a picture on some of these placards of a wonderful female, without much clothes, which was supposed to represent some tragic figure in a tableau.

She did not wander out o’ nights in winter among the ruins.

He had been heard to assert that, for real quiet comfort, there was not a club in London equal to it; but his hearers were not aware that in past days he had been blackballed at the T–––– and the G––––.

He set against himself as evils little points by which Mary’s mind and Mary’s judgment would never be affected.

Eulalius (Arians) [328-330]

This, he says, is he who appeared in the last days, in form of a man, in the times of Herod, being born after the likeness of Joseph, who was sold by the hand of his brethren, to whom alone belonged the coat of many colours.

For however far understanding may extend, so far is the faculty of comprehending illimitably withdrawn and removed when there is held to be no beginning.

It may be said of him, to his credit, that his love had been too strong for his shame, and that he had made up his mind to marry his cousin Nina in spite of her poverty.

He was the son of Apollo, half human, although the grandson of Jupiter, and great-grandson of Saturn (or rather of spurious origin, because his parentage was uncertain, as Socrates of Argon has related; he was exposed also, and found in a worse tutelage than even Jove's, suckled even at the dugs of a dog); nobody can deny that he deserved the end which befell him when he perished by a stroke of lightning.

In the meantime Mary Lowther at Loring had resolved that she would not be lugubrious, and she sat down to dinner opposite to her aunt with a pleasant smile on her face.

She never contradicted the old lady, but sat longing that the hour might come to an end.

The Crown is not prepared to allow Lax to escape from its hands quite yet.” Then there were many words on the subject going on just at the time at which Lax especially wanted his freedom, and at which, to tell the truth, Yorke Clayton was near the end of his tether in regard to poor Florian.

And overthrow, he says, the faith of some.

You will therefore insure it; but will take care that, as far as lies in your Excellency’s power, he be treated with all that respect and hospitality which would be due to him were he still the President of an allied republic.

Her mind on the subject, if it could have been analyzed, would probably have been this.

“He has worked terrible evil,” said Mr. Prendergast solemnly. “Do you know that he has harassed a poor gentleman into his grave?”

“Every farthing, Will. You’ll take all the rest.”

Woe unto them that are with child and to them that give suck in those days.

Neither has it been without reason numbered among God's praises, You have ordered all things in number, and measure, and weight.

I doubt whether this last assurance had much efficacy. But the arguments with which it was introduced did prevail to a certain extent. “I’ll tell you how it must be then,” she said.

From which final decision of theirs that the apostles should have departed, is (I think) not lawful to believe; or else, if some find it possible to believe so, they will be bound to prove it.

North Priory was a hunting seat some thirty miles from Clavering, belonging to a great nobleman with whom Sir Hugh much consorted.

Again, the same words often have a different meaning.

That just as hunters take by a sheep the wolves that devour sheep, even so the Chief Shepherd, [1 Peter 5:4] offering Himself as man to the spiritual wolves and those who destroy the soul, may make His prey of the destroyers by means of that Adam who was once preyed on by them.

When we are baptizing ([βαπτιζώμεθα]), when we are doing all the other acts?

On the next morning he received it back with a very few words written across it.

Deceive not yourselves, beloved.

That you might charge some, he says, that they teach no other doctrine, neither give heed to fables and endless genealogies.

So then, if it is because you believe Him to be God that you are called a Christian, may you ever be so called, and may you remain in both the name and the thing; but if you are called from Christ only because you have an affection for Him, you attribute no more to him than other names which are given from some practice or fact.

She was indescribably happy.

A week’s starvation or a fortnight’s he might bear, and it was possible that she might give way before that time had come.

If all men were leaders, what would become of the soldiers?

For if it had been possible for the one to abstain from the act of betrayal, and the other from that of denial, as having been warned of the consequences of these actions beforehand, then His words were no longer true, who predicted that the one would betray Him and the other deny Him.

Have you been thrown?

Basil escaped the deluge of impiety and made of his own city an ark of safety, which sailed lightly over the heretics, and afterwards recovered the whole world.

And then there were Captain Gunner and Major Pountney, two middle-aged young men, presumably belonging to the army, whom the Duchess had lately enlisted among her followers as being useful in their way.

“If you don’t mind, I’ll be off early tomorrow, sir. It’s a kind of thing, you know, that does flurry a man. And then my being here may be disagreeable to her;—not that I suppose she thinks about me any more than if I were an old cow.”

For if you toil not at this most glorious toil that is spent upon repentance and virtue, in the world you will assuredly toil and weary yourself in other ways.

But even this trouble was but an addition to the great trouble that overwhelmed him.

Poor John Gordon!

“Did what?”

Let us throw ourselves together on our knees before the Lord.

To that I would cling; with that ever close to me would I live; on that, if needful, would I die I therefore required that it should be carried up the narrow stairs before me, and I saw it deposited safely in the bedroom.

Sometimes she would say she loved him a little, just a little; at others she would declare that she loved him not at all—that is, not as heroines love in novels, not as she thought she could love, and would do, should it ever be her lot to be wooed by such a lover as her young fancy pictured to her.

But in his arguments about the house he said nothing of Lily, or her future prospects.

And on the other hand, let us call those happy in whatsoever condition they be, who are in a state of righteousness.

Lam. iv. 20. Jeremiah lamented his fall.

If chastity be attacked, my sex remains; if blood is sought, I desire none to give bail for me, I have the means to pay.

“She says nothing; but it cannot go on like that. My mother and I cannot live here together if she opposes me in this way. I do not want to frighten your sister by going over to her at Hogglestock, but I expect you to tell her so much as I now tell you, as coming from me; otherwise she will think that I have forgotten her.”

[Matthew 7:2] Set a bridle upon your mouth.

The Duke had been very courteous to him at Richmond, but here he was monosyllabic and almost sullen.

Ask the uncle for his permission.

For, as Christ says, 'I am the true vine,' [John 15:1] it follows that the blood of Christ is wine, not water; and the cup cannot appear to contain His blood by which we are redeemed and quickened, if the wine be absent; for by the wine is the blood of Christ typified, that blood which is foreshadowed and proclaimed in all the types and declarations of Scripture.

Taste, indeed!

Force a Syrian, an African, or Arabian to swallow worms, he will have the same contempt for them as for flies, millepedes, and lizards, although the Syrians are accustomed to eat land-crocodiles, and the Africans even green lizards.

Finally, also, and before He suffered, he approached to tempt Him as man; but when he found that He was not what he thought Him to be, he departed from Him, even till the time.

Caldigate had, upon the whole, been very good to him, and Dick was honest.

“I am so glad to hear you say that.”

Very many things that occur, therefore, are their doing; and these deeds of theirs we ought all the more carefully to shun as we acknowledge them to be very surprising.

Let brothers be brothers.

“What is to be the end of it, Felix?”

His father’s arguments would all fall to the ground if twenty-five thousand pounds were to be obtained in this way; and he had but little doubt that such a change in affairs would go far to mitigate his mother’s wrath.

“That’s the evil you have got to cure.”

If he would consent to call himself master of Castle Richmond, Clara’s hand might still be his.

[Matthew 22:39] On these two commandments, says He, hang all the law and the prophets.

I have been present on some such occasions, and it has always seemed to me a that questions of patronage have been paramount.

Nowhere else, of course, than in so memorable a temple which was carefully shut to all but the priests, and into which there could be no fear of a stranger entering.

The speaker was full of figures, as becomes a Chancellor of the Exchequer; and as every new budget of them fell from him, Mr Bott, with audible whispers, poured into the ear of his chief certain calculations of his own, most of which went to prove that the financier in office was altogether wrong.

Go down, thou false Lothario.

Let us believe and say that there is one substance, but in virtue of the true character of the nature and not to imply a blasphemous unity of Persons.

‘And he says that it’s quite out of the question that you should be carried off in this way.’

And Nebuchadnezzar too, and many others, both cities and individuals, we see visited with punishment.

Thus seeing that figures which move in a circle always return upon themselves, without for a single instant interrupting the regularity of their course, do not vainly imagine to yourselves that the world has neither beginning nor end.

Now if it was with the view of preaching a new god that he was eager to abrogate the law of the old God, how is it that he prescribes no rule about the new god, but solely about the old law, if it be not because faith in the Creator was still to continue, and His law alone was to come to an end?

Both her father and mother had heard her speak of these Melmottes, and knew what she thought of them.

She is a hoyden, one will say.

If necessary, she would run away.

Now it is by the use of our senses and of language that we have to form our conception of an image; and it must be by the same means that we form our idea of that which the image represents.

[Genesis 40:7] to whom we answered: We are not like those bond slaves of Pharaoh who have seen a dream and there is none to interpret it, but I admit that we have passed a sleepless night and there is no one to lighten the weight of our troubles unless the Lord may remove them by your wisdom.

What are the heavenly things he speaks of here?

One of these suggestions required that I should cut the novel down to two volumes.

Accordingly he who predicates unendingness of the one and only God, and does not include the Son in the assertion of unendingness and eternity, maintains by such a proposition, that He Whom he thus contrasts with the eternal and unending is perishable and temporary.

Truly, when a man considers with himself that the sun is good, and that this life is sweet, and that it is a pleasant thing to have many years wherein one can delight himself continually, and that death is a terror and an endless evil, and a thing that brings us to nought, he thinks that he ought to enjoy himself in all the present and apparent pleasures of life.

It is not, however, utterly impossible to form an opinion approximating to the truth concerning a thing which is outside the province of the intellect, if it lies within the province of the senses.

For this reason He has given us this present life, that we may either lose that true and eternal life by our vices, or win it by virtue.

This sweetness was altogether lacking to her brother.

[Titus 1:9] There, too, he says: But speak the things which become sound doctrine: that the aged men be sober, and so on.

Thenceforth Christ extended to all men the law of His Father's compassion, excepting none from His mercy, as He omitted none in His invitation.

He ascertained what was sufficient,—amply sufficient as he was told by the colonel of the regiment and the tutor of the college,—and that amount he allowed, assuring both Joseph and John that if they spent more, they would themselves have to pay for it out of the moneys which should enrich them in future years.

But the traffic did not require his own presence at the city.

For he who lays up treasure for himself in heaven ought to despise the whole world.

We should have known nothing of the bribe and the corruption but for a few playful words in a letter from Cicero himself to Atticus.

Yet we say three persons of the same essence, or three persons one essence; but we do not say three persons out of the same essence, as though therein essence were one thing, and person another, as we can say three statues out of the same gold; for there it is one thing to be gold, another to be statues.

Chapter XX. A Day With One of the Navvies.—evening

Therefore, those whom He predestinated, them He also called with that calling which I am not reluctant often to make mention of, of which it is said, The gifts and calling of God are without repentance.

“That’s the mischief! Never mind. We’ll see if we can’t do something. And in the meantime don’t make a stranger of me. Anything does for me. Lord bless you! if you were to see how I rough it sometimes! I can eat beans and bacon with any one; and what’s more, I can go without ‘em if I can’t get ‘em.”

Fortunatus said: I say that God Almighty brings forth from Himself nothing evil, and that the things that are His remain incorrupt, having sprung and being born from an inviolable source; but other contrary things which have their being in this world, do not flow from God nor have appeared in this world with God as their author; that is to say, they do not derive their origin from God. These things therefore we have received in the belief that evil things are foreign to God.

“Lord Fawn is an idiot.”

These firstfruits unrighteously engulfed He raised again and will make the race to follow them.

Yet it is not indicated in this volume who each was, and how he suffered; but only his name, the place, and day, of his passion are put down.

So that, if any writings outside of it are now brought forward under the name of the ancient prophets, they cannot serve even as an aid to knowledge, because it is uncertain whether they are genuine; and on this account they are not trusted, especially those of them in which some things are found that are even contrary to the truth of the canonical books, so that it is quite apparent they do not belong to them.

How easy it is you will see, when by the grace of God having succeeded in this, you shall receive another precept.

“That you should encounter the burden of the duty binds me to you for ever.”

But He added, that God would avenge His own elect.

But we are assured that the effort has not answered his expectation.

And it was the fate of both of these to fail to speak rightly on the subject, in consequence of their fear of God not being in agreement with an accurate knowledge of the truth.

Libosus of Vaga said: In the Gospel the Lord says, I am the truth. [John 14:6] He said not, I am the custom. Therefore the truth being manifest, let custom yield to truth; so that, although for the past any one was not in the habit of baptizing heretics in the Church, let him now begin to baptize them.

Hence we learn a (great lesson) of philosophic endurance ([φιλοσοφίαν]):— they did not treat them as masters use slaves, but as enemies and tyrants— and he foretold that they should be set in great liberty: for this is the meaning of that expression, They shall serve (Me): and they shall come up hither again ([ἐ] [νταὕθα ἐπανελεύσονται]); and with impunity.

From this flowed the system of the Academy, if that is to be called a system in which ignorance is both learned and taught.

Thus it came about that Moses when victorious allowed none of them to live.

For the spiritual things were theirs.

[Matthew 14:33] For the bringing together of these passages will, I think, be useful to you with a view to seeing the difference of those who come (to Jesus); some indeed come as to Him who was born of the seed of David according to the flesh; [Romans 1:3] but others come to Him who was declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holiness; [Romans 1:4] and of these some with the truly, and some without it.

And by earth he means the ground and foundation, as by the deep he means the multitude of waters; and darkness he speaks of, on account of the heaven which God made covering the waters and the earth like a lid.

When last I saw her I was rebuked by her stepmother because I was a pauper.

He has been injured, not by having his own words as to himself discredited, but by having them too well credited where they have been misunderstood.

Roger knew that it was not true.

But I in my turn reckon it as the greatest accusation that you should say I take a pride in increasing my sorrow by thinking over it: for when you ought to make every possible effort to dispel your affliction you do the devil's will, by increasing your despondency and sorrow.

But because the prince of wickedness could in no other way corrupt the truth, he sent forth his apostles (evil men who introduced pestilent doctrines), choosing them from among those who crucified our Saviour; and these men bore the name of the Saviour, but did the works of him that sent them, through whom the name itself has been spoken against.

“There are reasons why she would not wish it.”

Then will you be the son of David, if you shall keep the covenant; but if you dost not keep it, you will not be David's son.

“She has written to me, but did not tell me of it,” said Grace, not knowing what other answer to make.

Recognise also in Him the Judge, and one too, who expresses Himself on the safety of His followers with the same tenderness as that which the Creator long ago exhibited: He that touches you touches the apple of my eye.

“But wouldn’t the lawyers: do it better than you?”

What; a clergyman of the Church of England, a pious, hardworking country clergyman, whom we have known among us by his good works for years, suddenly turn thief, and pilfer a few pounds!

And Carpophorus yielded to their persuasions, and gave directions for the liberation of Callistus.

And when, in the delightful retirement of the country, by way of satirizing voluptuous men, he described himself as plump and fat, his sportive verse ran thus:

There might, nay there probably would be, a native triumph just across our borders which he as a minister in ,Natal could not interfere to quell,—but which, when a rumour of it should spread among the Zulus on our border, might induce 300,000 coloured subjects to think that they could free themselves by a blow from 20,000 white masters.

“Practically he denies it by asking me the question. He asked me with the ostensible object of finding out what had become of his brother when he himself knew what had become of him.”

You say that it is incredible that Paul should have rebuked in Peter that which Paul himself had done.

But if he speaks of the Persons themselves, and means by works that are 'older and more honourable' those 'works' which he has just fashioned in his own creed, that is, the Son, and the Holy Ghost, it would be perhaps better to pass over in silence such an abominable view, than to create even the appearance of its being an argument by entangling ourselves with it.

“Oh,—that young person.”

“Now I can have no regrets.”

Each created animal must live and get its food by the gifts which the Creator has given to it, let those gifts be as poor as they may,—let them be even as distasteful as they may to other members of the great created family.

Seek not thou at your wife's hand, things which she is not able to possess.

Sattius of Sicilibba said: If to heretics in baptism their sins are remitted, they come to the Church without reason. For since, in the day of judgment, they are sins which are punished, there is nothing which the heretics can fear from Christ's judgment, if they have already obtained remission of their sins.

And so Sallust adds this reason for what he said.

This we may see, so far as illustration goes , for our aim at present is not to render a strict account of the Faith.

For if, in addition to willing it, he has attempted it, but not carried it out, he will be punished not as one who has sinned in his heart alone but in deed.

Felix Graham had plenty of nurses, but Madeline was not one of them. Augustus Staveley came home while the Alston doctor was still busy at the broken bones, and of course he would not leave his friend. He was one of those who had succeeded in the hunt, and consequently had heard nothing of the accident till the end of it. Miss Tristram had been the first to tell him that Mr. Graham had fallen in leaving the covert, but having seen him rise to his legs she had not thought he was seriously hurt.

You have them in a preceding part of the epistle: All things are yours; whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come.

Now, however, since he anathematizes those persons who hold that God's grace and assistance is not given for single actions, but is imparted in the freedom of the will, or in the law and in doctrine, it is quite evident that he really means the grace which is preached in the Church of Christ, and is conferred by the ministration of the Holy Ghost for the purpose of helping us in our single actions, whence it is that we pray for needful and suitable grace that we enter not into any temptation.

If they all at one time beg of the deity with sacrifices what their wants compel each one to think about, what hope, pray, will there be to all of obtaining the benefit, if the god does not hear the cry sent up to him everywhere, and if there shall be any distance to which the words of the suppliant for help cannot penetrate?

However, he was not even in the country; and what the Prefect of Egypt did was not done on ecclesiastical grounds, but for reasons which you will learn from the records, which, after we understood what they had written, we made diligent enquiry for, and have transmitted to you.

It was soon known who was to be the happiest man in the empire.

Chapter XVI. Mr. And Miss Grey

At half-past two the lady was announced,—Miss de Montmorenci; and our editor, with palpitating heart, rose to welcome the very figure, the very same pretty walking-dress, the same little blue parasol, which he had seen upon the steps of the house in King-Charles Street.

All this let us consider, and let us not put our brethren on oath.

And a vast multitude in your nation are convicted of being of this kind, imbibing doctrines of bitterness and godlessness, but spurning the word of God.

“There, perhaps, I am not a judge, as I never kept a school;—but I think not. If any father writes to you, then tell him the truth.”

I asked Persiflage to write to Lord Kingsbury; but he tells me that I must do it all, because he is so busy.

So far Verres fails; and the reader, rejoicing at the courage of the father who could protect his own house even against Romans, begins to feel some surprise that this case should have been selected.

A horrible sin indeed, who can deny it?

“Indeed he will,” said Butterwell.

lie had reached the parsonage in time for a late breakfast, and had then written his letter.

For surely this pretence of ignorance will not be able to profit in the day of reckoning.

Some unexpected and violent temptations: for a plot, it says, being formed against him by the Jews, he was detained three months in Greece.

Learned people often tell us that we use the word education wrongly.

were there anvils, hammers, furnaces, bellows, coals, and pincers?

“And so the good Cathelineau is dead,” said Santerre. “The invincible, the invulnerable, the saint! ha, ha! What sweet names these dear friends of ours have given themselves.”

“I want nobody to tell me;—I know,” continued Neefit.

“I think so, my dear.”

“It was settled, I suppose.”

“As if I cared!”

Passing by names with which I need not trouble you, we now reach Richardson and Fielding, who came forward as novelists very nearly at the same date.

Do not grieve that you have lost such a paragon: rejoice rather that he has once been yours.

If he do not do so, sooner or later his dishonesty will be discovered, and will be estimated accordingly.

I linger long in the land of the midday sun for it was there and then that the spouse found her bridegroom at rest [Song of Songs 1:7] and Joseph drank wine with his brothers once more.

And as they cried out, and cast off their clothes, and threw dust into the air, the tribune commanded him to be brought into the castle, and bade that he should be examined by scourging; that he might know wherefore they cried so against him.

Thou dost not indeed see my actions: but I in iniquity have been conceived, And in sins has my mother nourished me in the womb.

And do thou accordingly, having become a physician of souls, put in practice every mode of cure according to Christ's laws; that you may receive the reward both of saving yourself and of profiting others, doing all to the glory of God, and so being glorified also yourself.

But this is not so: perish the thought; the Triad is not originated; but there is an eternal and one Godhead in a Triad, and there is one Glory of the Holy Triad.

The royal party had endeavoured in the first instance to take up their quarters at this lady’s hotel, or lodging-house, as they are usually called.

For where there is virtue, all other things are superfluous, and there can be no impediment.

What, he means, is it that you say?

“When am I to go?” asked Mary. She was sitting now close to him, and the question was asked with full delight.

Oh, what I felt at that moment!

In your own house you will fear robbers; of the house of God, He is Himself the wall.

The Speaker’s eye is ever travelling to the accustomed spots.

But, though she could have but one word that night with her lover, there were many words between her and Lady Albury before they went to bed. “And so, like wise people, you have settled it all between you at last,” said Lady Albury.

[Acts 10:1-2] All this that is said of him I claim— with a change of name only— for my dear Nebridius.

The need would not have been so pressing, probably, had he not felt that Lily would be more comfortable with Mrs. Thorne than in his lodgings in Sackville Street.

It was certainly true that he loved Kate O’Hara.

By saying, This man is not of God; [John 9:16] This man deceives the people; [John 7:12] and again, You are a Samaritan, and hast a devil.

But after Basil's elevation to the Episcopate Eustathius began to oppose him and to calumniate him on all sides, and even entered openly into communion with the Arians.

He had not always thought, or even hoped, that he would be as he was now, so exalted as to be allowed to entertain the very biggest ones of the earth; but the greatness had grown upon him,—and so had the danger.

So that they would have been peremptory ([ἐ] [πέσκηψαν]) with them, if the man had not been with them.

In this consists the charm of his character, though at the same time the weakness of his political aspirations; his weakness—because he was vain enough to imagine that he could talk men back from their fishponds; its charm—because he was able through it all to believe in honesty.

But after this connection had been formed, then too were giants born.

Walls had been knocked away and arches had been constructed.

“But Mr. Furnival does not know the truth.”

“Psha! Do not tell me of that. I care nothing for my beauty unless it can bind me to your love. Sit down there and tell me what it means.” Then she let go his hand, and seated herself opposite to the chair which she gave him.

But Lady Mason had dressed herself after none of these fashions.

“The thing would be to let the house furnished every summer,” said Lucy.

None of those who returned were without some token of success; some carried back with them the muskets of the republican infantry; others, the sabres of the cavalry; and others, more joyful in their success than any, were mounted on their horses.

I do not know how it is, that after the foolish remarks which he has made upon the subject which we have just been discussing, he should add the following, that God does not desire to make himself known for his own sake, but because he wishes to bestow upon us the knowledge of himself for the sake of our salvation, in order that those who accept it may become virtuous and be saved, while those who do not accept may be shown to be wicked and be punished.

And He, coming forth out of the Virgin's womb, where God was united to man's nature as a bridegroom to a bride.

Be not bitter, for let not them that are bitter be exalted in their own selves.

Intelligent observers had become aware that the return visit was made in the course of the week, but not always made on one certain day;—from which circumstances various surmises arose as to the means, whereabouts, and character of the visitor.

Discern here, if you can, which is the more powerful, which greater, which more to be honoured?

“So is Rapinsky’s shop; but poor people do not generally have much to do there.” Rapinsky was the name of the jeweller who had advanced the money to Nina.

But without something of the aptitudes of a prig the character which the author intended could not have been drawn.

He has become a novelist, as another has become a poet, because he has in those walks abroad, unconsciously for the most part, been drawing in matter from all that he has seen and heard.

Eleanor had not found it practicable to stand stock still before the dining-room window, there receive his offer in full view of Miss Thorne’s guests. She had therefore in self-defence walked on, and thus Mr. Slope had gained his object of walking with her. He now offered her his arm.

And, as I have said before, what follows from this evil is intimated; for the seats of them that presumed to sell doves in the temple of God fell by God's judgment.

For we are His workmanship, created not merely in Adam, but in Christ Jesus, unto good works, which God has before ordained that we should walk in them: [Ephesians 2:10] for it is God which works in us both to will and to do of His good pleasure.

Wherefore He does not speak to her from them, but draws her on by the water and by prophecy, and brings her to make mention of Christ and then reveals Himself; which had He at first told the woman when she had not questioned Him, He would have seemed to her to trifle and talk idly, while as it is by bringing her little by little to mention Him, at a fitting time He revealed Himself.

[Jeremiah 3:22] Their strictness does not prevent them from themselves committing grave sins, far from it; but there is this difference between us and them, that, whereas they in their self-righteousness blush to confess their faults, we do penance for ours, and so more readily gain pardon for them.

“So will he,—after a while. But it can’t be altered, dear, and God forbid that I should set you against him. He is not a rake nor a spendthrift, nor will he run after other women.” Mary thought of Mrs. Houghton, but she held her tongue. “He is not a bad man and I think he loves you.”

Sehon king of the Amorites [Psalm 135:19], an useless shoot, or fiery temptation, for so is Sehon interpreted: the king of them who cause bitterness, for such is the meaning of Amorites.

Or, is a lie sometimes good, or sometimes a lie not evil?

Nor is this all that he has done. Only last year when two fellows tainted with the unsoundness of Apollinarius had gone there and patched up slanders against me, he stood up in church and anathematized me, and that after I had written to him and explained my opinions to him.

It was thus that he allowed himself to be cowed, and to be made to declare to himself again and again that the project must be abandoned.

“A gentleman, Mrs. Robarts! What gentleman?” But Grace, though she asked the question, conceived that the gentleman must be Henry Grantly. Her mind did not suggest to her the possibility of any other gentleman coming to see her.

And the iron leaps from the handle, when out of reproof issues speech too hard.

It was certainly a strong reason against his marriage.

Again that voice!

“Like it! No. He likes nothing but that infernal club.”

In each of these cases the minority of dissentients was so small that the nation suffered nothing, though individuals were all but robbed of their nationality.

For what is more vexatious than to be lending, and taking thought about usuries and bargains, and demanding sureties, and fearing and trembling about securities, about the principal, about the writings, about the interest, about the bondsmen?

But then would not the name of Sir Francis travel with her and crush her?

Do not err, my brethren.

“And, therefore, I will not make him poor.”

And in doing this he would give a triumph, an unalloyed triumph, to a man whom he believed to be thoroughly bad.

Then the man’s manner, though it was distasteful to Wharton himself, would, he well knew, recommend him to others.

But General Price would not be so swept, and it began to appear that a guerrilla warfare would prevail; that General Price, if driven southward, would reappear behind the backs of his pursuers, and that General Fremont would not accomplish all that was expected of him with that rapidity for which his friends had given him credit.

Then he remembered what Gregory had said to him, and how he had encouraged Gregory to persevere.

The Scythians, indeed, regard it as a noble act to banquet upon human beings.

On that day there had come to him from the Dean a letter written in the Dean’s best humour.

“The cigar divan is a very nice lounge when one has nothing better to do,” suggested Mr. Pott. “They have capital coffee there.”

He took his hands down from his head, and clasping them together, said a little prayer.

112. You are a subject being. Whereto He will reply: Why, then, do you seek freedom and pardon of Him Whom you think to be subject as a slave?

It was, at any rate, her peculiarity to attach to herself, by bonds which could not easily be severed, those who had once thought that they might be able to win her love.

Now, at this last moment, Lord Rufford and Arabella Trefoil were there alone together.

She was to go, as Lady Anna Lovel, to stay with Mrs. Lovel and Miss Lovel and the little Lovels.

In the hands of the adulterous woman and the adulterous lovers, God in His wrath, as a jealous God, recognizes His gifts; and do we say that baptism, consecrated in the words of the gospel, belongs to heretics?

I must be in what is Yours, O Omnipotent One.

‘I know you had a note. What does she say?’

For each one is holden with the cords of his sins, [Proverbs 5:22] says Scripture.

He would not have wholly withdrawn his wrath from the priests unless the anxieties of public affairs had supervened, and not permitted him to pursue them further.

For these will be to us the ground-work of those blessings to come hereafter, to which God grant that we may all attain, in Jesus Christ our Lord, with whom to the Father, together with the Holy Ghost be glory and might and honor, now and henceforth, and forever and ever.

How grateful is the alternation of day and night!

You have taken to you an instrument, and your fingers agree with your tongue.

The proof is that in this season not a single crow appears, and that they return with wounds, evident marks of the help and of the assistance that they have lent.

When they ought to be teaching others, they are not even simply learners, but the last of learners.

But if you shall marry, you will not sin.

in God] than wisdom, then wisdom is loved in less degree than according to what it is; love is therefore equal, in order that wisdom may be loved according to its being; but wisdom is equal with the Father, as we have proved above; therefore also the Holy Spirit is equal; and if equal, equal in all things, on account of the absolute simplicity which is in that substance.

He had called on her once or twice at Fawn Court,—as why should he not?

But now he had no motive for such work as this.

The world had spoken evil of him regarding his wife; and he had given the world the lie in a manner that had been petulant and injudicious.

See ye not those too who are in the prisons, it they see any of their acquaintance, how they revive, and are quite fluttering with the pleasure?

Then Peter: [All were made equal by Him, and to all He has given equally to be receptive of truth.

This deep and beautiful mystery of His assumption of manhood the Lord Himself reveals in the words, No man has ascended into heaven, but He that descended from heaven, even the Son of Man which is in heaven.

“It is printed then?” he asked, in an eager tone.

“Wishes it! Oh, mother!”

And how is it an insult?

Moreover, after the pledging both of the attestation of faith and the promise of salvation under three witnesses, there is added, of necessity, mention of the Church; inasmuch as, wherever there are three, (that is, the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit,) there is the Church, which is a body of three.

What if, while they hear, they believe their own ears?

“He is terribly overworked, and it is a shame;—but what can one do?”

But if so, first, there will be another besides the name, next, all things were not by Him brought to be, but in that other, in whom Christ also was made.

And it may be shown without much difficulty that this is the case.

A certain presbyter who had of his own free choice preferred the unity of our Church, was for so doing dragged out of his own house, cruelly beaten without form of law, rolled over and over in a miry pond, covered with a matting of rushes, and exhibited as an object of pity to some and of ridicule to others, while his persecutors gloried in their crime; after which they carried him away where they pleased, and reluctantly set him at liberty after twelve days.

He tells his own adventures as a cardsharper, bully, and liar; as a heartless wretch, who had neither love nor gratitude in his composition; who had no sense even of loyalty; who regarded gambling as the highest occupation to which a man could devote himself, and fraud as always justified by success; a man possessed by all meannesses except cowardice.

Of whom would we wish that the familiar letters of another about ourselves should be published?

As Squire of Bragton he would seek some highly born bride, quite out of her way, whom she could never know.

[Romans 7:24-25] Within is a foe, that law in the members; there are without also enemies: unto what do you cry?

If therefore the light that is in you be darkness, how great is the darkness!

‘Just that. But this little queen’s-head here can’t be untrue.’

It was not, however, in exact order that he related the sayings or deeds of Christ.

I do not mean to mope, or to neglect my work, because a young lord has crossed my path and told me that he loves me.

Suppose you take the word 'was made' to indicate a change; then when you hear Paul saying 'Christ has redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us,' do you understand him to mean a change into the nature of a curse?

Faithful is the Lord in His words: for what has He promised that He has not given?

Then he also seals what he has said by the testimony—

Now they who are concerned in the manufacture of newspapers are well aware that censure is infinitely more attractive than eulogy,—but they are quite as well aware that it is more dangerous.

[Matthew 18:15] It is assigned by the Word to him only who heard, and He no longer applies it in the case of him who has stumbled twice or thrice and been censured; but that which was to be said about him who was censured twice or thrice, corresponding to the saying, You have gained your brother, He has left in the air, so to speak.

Taking all that had been said in that courtly lawyer’s speech this morning as the groundwork of his present judgment, what should he judge to be her condition at the moment?

Her daughter’s husband no doubt would see that she had a fitting home, with all the appanages and paraphernalia suited to a dowager Countess.

Look back upon the instances to be seen in the human race.

“All right! How can you be all right, when you know that your limbs refuse to carry you? All right! why the blood is still beating round your brain with a violence that would destroy any other brain but yours.”

“Nothing like that will come in his way. I heard Mr. Flick say that it was equal to half a million of money. And then it would have been at once. If he goes up to London, and about, just as he is, he’ll be head over ears in debt before anybody knows what he is doing. I wonder what it is. He likes pretty girls, and there’s no denying that she’s handsome.”

Moreover Paulus and Astericius, the aforesaid presbyters, returned from exile at the town of Andropolis, and entered Alexandria, on the x day of Thoth, after x months.

But the others, after being deposed again and again, and once more at Ariminum itself, ventured to write that it ought not to be said that the Son had Essence or Subsistence.

How, though you are equally a body, do you legislate unequally?

Amusement of some kind, — what our forefathers, understanding the matter very well, used to call distraction, — all the world admits to be necessary.

It could not be her duty to bring poverty on a man whom she loved,—especially not as she had refused to confer wealth upon him.

All these affections He is moved by in that peculiar manner of His own, in which it is profoundly fit that He should be affected; and it is owing to Him that man is also similarly affected in a way which is equally his own.

[Philippians 3:7] For great is the value of deceit, provided it be not introduced with a mischievous intention.

What was the cause then why one was loved and the other hated?

Now, whatever other evidence can be furnished of the fact, that it was not without divine intervention that the philanthropic scheme of Christianity was introduced among men, this also must be added.

It is their business: not mine.” But still he sat looking up at the row of books opposite to him.

Like other girls she had been taught to presume that it was her destiny to be married, and like other girls she had thought much about her destiny.

What then, if while he admires you, others deride you, will you not with him deride them?

To prove the point Jovinianus had accumulated countless instances from Scripture which apparently favoured his view, and this contention we rebutted both by arguments and illustrations from Scripture, and pulverized Zeno's old opinion no less with common sense than with the words of inspiration.

For, that none may say, And how is it possible that they who believe in one crucified should be saved, when he himself is holden of death?

When Gertrude declared that she would not consent to be separated from Mr. Houston then they were all hurried home.

I begged her to be silent on the matter.

He gave when it was demanded of him.

Now (Hermogenes) resorts to testimony, thinking to support himself by what is spoken, (viz.)

O wonderful and blind infatuation!

May the faith of the Gospel ever profit thus by the rash contentions of the ungodly to defend itself with the weapons of their attack, and conquering with the arms prepared for its destruction, prove that the words of the one Spirit are the doctrine of the one faith!

For though it was spoken unto them, it was written for the sake also of all men afterwards.

And so he did not walk amid things great and wonderful which were above him.

Whether we got a good investment for our fifty millions, and, also, for our 25,000 English lives, is a question which we cannot now settle.

Whence they are justly found to be blameworthy.

‘I don’t know that it will have much effect upon me, one way or the other,’ said Undy, coolly; ‘but it seems to me to be the only way that can save yourself from some such fate. Shall I tell you what the clauses are of this new bill about trust property?’

“That’s a recommendation, no doubt.”

This he calls 800 miles long, and exaggerates our territories by more than 200 miles.

This informant did not think that Mr. Crinkett had himself gone very deep at Ahalala.

And indeed above he was troubled in his exercise by the voice of the enemy and by the tribulation of the sinner, perhaps being placed in that city, that proud city that was building a tower, which was sunk, that divided might be the tongues: give heed to his inward groaning because of perils from false brethren.

Chapter 13.— Whether the Time of the Persecution or Antichrist Should Be Reckoned in the Thousand Years.

Yet neither promises nor force availed anything.

For while we are grieved and distressed through the loss of wealth; or by reason of sickness, and death, and the other evils that befall us, we not only reap no consolation from our sorrow, but we also increase the force of these calamities.

“But he wants to marry at once.”

believing each of these to be and to exist, the Father truly Father, and the Son truly Son, and the Holy Ghost truly Holy Ghost, as also our Lord, sending forth His disciples for the preaching, said, Go teach all nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost [Matthew 28:19] .

But Mr. Crawley would almost have preferred that the boy should work in the fields, than that he should be educated in a manner so manifestly eleemosynary.

So far from that, we, on the contrary, bring before you one who was their protector, as you will see by examining the letters of Marcus Aurelius, that most grave of emperors, in which he bears his testimony that that Germanic drought was removed by the rains obtained through the prayers of the Christians who chanced to be fighting under him.

In this the astrologers themselves ignore their own doctrine as to Fate and Fortune, for when any one of them, after selling to moneyed simpletons his silly prognostications of Fate, calls back his thoughts from the ivory tablets to the management and care of his own house, he reproves his wife, not with words only, but with blows, if he finds her, I do not say jesting rather forwardly, but even looking too much out of the window.

For, according to that inspired apostle of the Lord, the grace of God which brings salvation has appeared to all men, teaching us, that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world; looking for the blessed hope, and appearing of the glory of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ.

In this way something almost like a conspiracy was made on behalf of Caldigate.

Your father is like a child.

Of course he wins.

Even till they climbed unto the starry heaven,

Therefore, of all this number, the only ones who were honored with the crown of the holy martyrs were Alphæus and Zacchæus.

There was no semblance of that here.

“I don’t know that; I rather think he’ll find he has no such power. Let him try it, and see what the press will say. For once we shall have the popular cry on our side. But Proudie, ass as he is, knows the world too well to get such a hornet’s nest about his ears.”

For them, nevertheless, I pray that from the God of all they may obtain forgiveness; for your excellency, that you may ever live in honour, excel in all good things, speak boldly against lies, and fight on the side of the truth.

Your friend can wait.

Do not think that I am the less obliged to you for your disinterested kindness,—for I know that it is disinterested; but this I think I may confidently say, that not even to avert so terrible a calamity will I again put my name to any bill.

Can you send me to the station?” Then Mrs. Dale read the letter.

It will be remembered that the bishop expressed to Mr. Slope in his dressingroom his determination that Mr. Quiverful should be confirmed in his appointment to the hospital, and that his lordship requested Mr. Slope to communicate this decision to the archdeacon.

Vengeance is mine; I will repay, says the Lord.

However, you will say, they are ([ἄτιμοι]) infamous.

And writing to the Thessalonians he says Now God Himself and our Father and our Lord Jesus Christ direct our way unto you.

Lucius on his return home had declared to the unfortunate lady that she had now no alternative left to her.

See what strong consolation!

In the meantime, however, the matter is fixed.

“What has passed between you and the young lady, of course I do not know.”

“I shouldn’t wonder,” said Snengkeld.

“I fear not, Mr. Marrable.”

For when we are bound to give an account of our thoughts, and words, and actions, and all things, truly it is narrow.

There never could be a marriage.

And then, though she had refused all pecuniary assistance, there had been present to her a feeling that there was near to her a strong human being whom she could trust, and who in any last extremity could be kind to her.

Clear up the first step, and then vindicate the next.

And this I say, not forbidding them to wash hands or mouth; but willing men so to wash as is meet, not with water only, but instead of water, with all virtues.

‘Oh papa!’

Let us slay the poor just man: [Wisdom 2:10] this is therefore saying, He is not God.

And that you can not bear them that are evil, and who say that they are Jews and are not, and you have found them liars, and you have patience for My name's sake. All these things tend to praise, and that no small praise; and it behooves such men, and such a class, and such elected persons, by all means to be admonished, that they may not be defrauded of such privileges granted to them of God. These few things He said that He had against them.

‘When that time comes, and I know it will come, you shall return to me, and once more be my child,’ said the mother.

Moreover, Felicitas, rejoicing that she had safely brought forth, so that she might fight with the wild beasts; from the blood and from the midwife to the gladiator, to wash after childbirth with a second baptism.

What fatigue is it not to swear?

Remember that he exists,” she said, turning back to the earlier words of the letter.

And, finally, the Pharisee, when the Lord asked him, which of them loved him most, [Luke 7:42] answered, I suppose that he to whom he forgave most.

You argue that they ought to be abjured, lest we seem to be often keeping Easter, and appear not to observe the customary yearly vigils.

“By St. Waltheof?”

14. Concerning Those Who Said, Who is the Greatest? And Concerning the Child that Was Called by Jesus.

“I hardly remember what he said;—but he kissed me, and I thought he was very kind.”

Christ died and the disciples feared, and withdrew from that hope wherein they had been.

Mr. Toogood reached the “Dragon” about eleven o’clock, and allowed the boots to give him a pair of slippers and a candlestick.

All are not fitted to teach, would that all were apt to learn.

Is it necessary that we should silence Mr. Burgers?

Ep. XXVI.

Then of herself—what would best become her modesty; her sense of honour?

“I thought you were at the House,” said the Duke.

He was born— but He had been begotten: He was born of a woman— but she was a Virgin.

Now no one who is a man of men has a descent that cannot be declared.

Can he be more excellent than Him who formed the body itself, and the power of sensibility and of life?

He must be very decided.

Mr Grimes was a man who knew that business was business, and as such had some considerable weight in his own neighbourhood.

Miss Greystock wanted a loan sufficient to take the jewels out of pawn.

And therefore he did not say simply tears, but mourning; nor desire, but longing; nor anger, but zeal; and again zeal toward him, which they displayed both about him that had committed fornication and about those who were accusing him.

Not as yet; but still groans, still the anxiety of temptations.

Although he had always agreed with the Marquis,—as he had not forgotten to tell George Roden during that interview in London,—in regard to his lordship’s early political tenets, nevertheless his mind was so constituted that he was quite at one with her ladyship as to the disgraceful horror of low associations for noble families.

“We know what your claim is.”

Even though the Proconsul may have passed sentence on Cyprian, yet the earthly seat of judgment is one thing, the heavenly tribunal is another.

And she had a way of making the most of herself, which it was very hard to resist.

Out of this, His purpose, is that special calling of the elect for whom He co-works with all things for good, because they are called according to His purpose, and the gifts and calling of God are without repentance.

Chapter XXXII. Preparations for Going

But he can’t keep his appointment, you know, if he’s in prison.

And to show this Paul said, For hope that is seen is not hope; for who hopes for that which he sees.

“It is the meaning of the moonlight, and the essence of the poetry,” continued the impassioned girl. “I did not know then why I liked such things, but now I know. It was because I longed to be loved.”

He had within him a certain Christian conscience-stricken feeling of remorse on this head.

She had been shockingly illtreated by Lord Fawn, and the Corsair, and Frank Greystock.

You must not ask me again till the winter shall have passed away.

But if he is otherwise disposed, it is only right, even if he be unwilling, he should be forced to it; so as to avoid the unhappy and discreditable plight in which they now are, who have previously abandoned the pursuit of oratory.

Hear you man: walk not after man, but after Him Who made man.

“Do you believe then that he has invented this falsehood against you, to excuse himself?”

Tell me one of these.

“Assuredly he does, Miss Trefoil. Why else should he send for you?”

Vavasor found himself sitting for an apparently interminable number of minutes in Mr Tombe’s dingy chamber, and was coughed at, and wheezed at, till he begun to be tired of his position; moreover, when tired, he showed his impatience. “Perhaps you’ll let us write you a line when we have looked into the matter?” suggested Mr Tombe.

He talked of rewarding Owen for his generosity; but Clara would have nothing to do either with the generosity or with the reward.

And who will dispute that the rest are justly called light?

And, perhaps, her husband might come back again some day.

Some of those persons who take a pleasure in accusing their neighbours, bring against us and our teaching the charge of blasphemy, though from us they have never heard anything of the kind.

But the women and the maidens will wrap their hands in their garments; and we also, with circumspection and with all purity, our eyes looking upwards, shall wrap our right hand in our garments; and then they will come and give us the salutation on our right hand wrapped in our garments.

But now it is not useful even for this purpose, since you have changed its shape and worship it.

He wouldn’t have gone into tantrums because his wife asked too many people to the house.

The position, therefore, remains unimpugned both in the case of Matter, that it did itself exist, only along with God; and that God existed alone, but with Matter.

He had heard a few voices in the hall, which, under fear of death, had expressed their dislike to the Fixed Period; but he had no idea of the love which the people felt for their own independence, or,—I believe I may say,—for their own president.

I know that a Jewess has no right to push her acquaintance upon a Christian girl.” The Jewess spoke very humbly of herself and of her people; but in every word she uttered there was a slight touch of irony which was not lost upon Nina.

Then he wrote the six Paradoxes addressed to Brutus—or rather he then gave them to the world, for they were surely written at an earlier date.

All they to wit who though they be born in Adam, yet are found reborn in Christ, having a sure testimony both to their justification by grace, and to Christ's sharing in their nature ; for he who does not believe that God's only-begotten Son did assume our nature in the womb of the Virgin-daughter of David, is without share in the Mystery of the Christian religion, and, as he neither recognizes the Bridegroom nor knows the Bride, can have no place at the wedding-banquet.

For when I saw, in our own times, frequent signs of the presence of divine powers similar to those which had been given of old, I desired that narratives might be written, judging that the multitude should not remain ignorant of these things.

And when the day is coming on, they take rest again; for when we begin our works, they have a season of rest.

For we are disciples of the humble and gentle Master who says: Learn of Me, for I am gentle and humble of heart, and you shall find rest for your souls.

She, in her own mind, had attributed these pestilently increased expenses to elongated petticoats, French bonnets, swallow-tailed coats, and a taste for sour wine.

But what is added, And it shall come to pass that he who is left in your house shall come to worship him, is not said properly of the house of this Eli, but of that Aaron, the men of which remained even to the advent of Jesus Christ, of which race there are not wanting men even to this present.

The really clever archbishop,—the really potent chief justice, the man who, as a politician, will succeed in becoming a king of men, should know how to carry his buckram without showing it.

She would tell her husband with all the dignity that she could assume, that it had now become absolutely necessary that he should protect his wife by breaking entirely with his unmannered neighbour; and, as regarded the young members of her family, she would use the authority of a mother, and absolutely forbid them to hold any intercourse with Mary Thorne.

“A dishonest dealer in diamonds will probably realise the plunder,—after some years. There would be something very alluring in the theft of articles of great value, were it not that, when got, they at once become almost valueless by the difficulty of dealing with them. Supposing I had the necklace!”

Then, after something from Cyril:

Was it not possible that she might have thought that she locked it up, but have omitted to place it in the box?

Sir Walter, when he was shown into the Major’s room, felt himself to be very ill able to conduct the business in hand, and to the Major himself the moment was one of considerable trouble.

Her former husband had been kind to her in his way, and she had done her duty by him carefully, painfully, and with full acceptance of her position.

But in these days there seems to be nothing for a girl to do but to bear it and try again.

His hand was constantly playing with a little double-barrelled pistol, which he continually cocked and uncocked, the fellow of which lay immediately before him.

From his homily on Thanksgiving:—

How suddenly has the flower faded!

But let us suppose a man such as poetry and mythology speak of—a man so insociable and savage as to be called rather a semi-man than a man.

When Hetta did not decline to be the bearer of this message she must have at any rate resolved that she would see Paul Montague again,—and to see him would be to tell him that she was again his own.

“There was the devil to pay with my father last night after I went to him,” said Scarborough to Harry next morning. “He now and then suffers agonies of pain, and it is the most difficult thing in the world to get him right again. But anything equal to his courage I never before met.”

He could not but remember what had been said between them up over the waterfall, and how he had been warned not to return to Loughlinter.

For our Saviour left us but one day to be observed in commemoration of our deliverance, that is the day of his most holy Passion: he also wished his Catholic Church to be one; the members of which, however much they may be scattered in various places, are notwithstanding cherished by one Spirit, that is by the will of God.

Those who find fault with the prophets, accusing them of adultery for instance, in actions which are above their comprehension, are like those Pagans who profanely charge Christ with folly or madness because He looked for fruit from a tree out of the season; [Matthew 21:19] or with childishness, because He stooped down and wrote on the ground, and, after answering the people who were questioning Him, began writing again.

That it is not quality of persons, but difference of actions.

I had on previous occasions ridden about the camps, and had seen a review at which General McClellan trotted up and down the lines with all his numerous staff at his heels.

“Oh, Mr. Fenwick, I ain’t fit for the likes of you to touch,” she said.

But the millions were voted, and the fortifications were erected; and the Volunteer Force was set on foot,—with what enormous results is now patent to the whole country.

“And why not Lady Scatcherd, as well as me? We are of the same kind—come from the same class.”

“What are you doing here?” said Peter.

The cause for war still remained, and did in fact prevent for the present any combination of Statesmen in which Lord Palmerston should serve under Lord John; but of personal quarrel there was none, and the two men were thus

He certainly succeeded in strengthening the compassion which was felt for Caldigate and for the unfortunate young mother at Folking.

But let us consider the case of those whom the Lord so binds, going back to the words before the passage quoted, that we may understand it more clearly: The Jews were saying: This man does not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub, prince of the devils.

Did the apostles, with so much foresight, make the office of overseer of this type, that the occupants might be able to enjoy their rule free from anxiety, under colour of providing (a like freedom for their flocks)?

For since he is mortal, he fashions a dead thing with wicked hands.

The squalor of the real living room might be conjectured from the untouched cleanliness of this useless sanctum.

expecting that He had forgotten having said it; and being ready if on the one hand He said, It is lawful to put away, to bring against Him the things He Himself had spoken, and to say, How then did You affirm the contrary?

[Malachi 4:1] And this we read also in the Psalms, where the approach of God the Judge is announced as worthy to be reverenced for the majesty of His judgment: God shall come manifest, our God, and shall not keep I silence; a fire shall burn before Him, and round about Him a great tempest.

For these most trustworthy books of ours contain in one narrative both the miracles that were wrought and the creed which they were wrought to confirm.

This includes a great deal of eating, a great deal of attendance, the use of reading-room and smoking-room—which, however, always seem to be open to the public as well as to the guests—and a bedroom, with accommodation which is at any rate as good as the average accommodation of hotels in Europe.

Had he been born to the manner, he could not have done it with more grace.

“But we are engaged, and I will not hear of its being broken.”

For you saw these things yourselves first, and then you proclaimed them to all generations.

“Told him, indeed! Much he will mind such telling! I shall give your Uncle Magnus a full account of it all and ask for his advice. He is a man in a high position, and perhaps you may think fit to obey him, although you utterly refuse to be guided in any way by your mother.” Then the conversation for the moment came to an end. But Florence, as she left her mother, assured herself that she could not promise any close obedience in any such matters to Sir Magnus.

There was fear of all things, fear of solitude, fear of sudden change, fear of terrible revelations, fear of some necessary movement she knew not whither, fear that she might be discovered to be a poor wretched impostor who never could have been justified in standing in the same presence with emperors and princes, with duchesses and cabinet ministers.

The educated intelligence of the Roman world had come to repudiate their gods, and to create for itself a belief—in nothing.

That evidence had been brought home to his own mind of the identity of the man—though what was the nature of that evidence he could not now describe—as to that he was quite explicit.

But as to those who are not at one with you in this desired election, we have caused them to be admonished by Antoninus our subdeacon, that they may be able to agree with you.

Therefore the impossibility of change for the worse proves infinity of power.

You say, forsooth, that the fabulous are adapted to the theatre, the natural to the world, and the civil to the city; though the world is a divine work, but cities and theatres are the works of men, and though the gods who are laughed at in the theatre are not other than those who are adored in the temples; and you do not exhibit games in honor of other gods than those to whom you immolate victims.

He would not let his sister believe that his heart was too full of the subject to allow of his thinking of other matters.

But if those before the Law did owing to this listlessness come to the very bottom of misery, only consider what is to become of us, who are called to a greater contest, unless we take strict heed unto ourselves, and make speed to quench the sparks of evil deeds before the whole pile is kindled.

And occasionally he had feigned to be angry with her, and had tempted her on to little quarrels with a boyish idea that quick reconciliation would perhaps throw her into his arms.

Her uncle, of whose voice she was always in fear, seemed to be more cross, and when he did speak, more sarcastic than ever.

Now it seems to me that he is not signifying here the whole life of a believer, but instituting a comparison between the Baptism and the Law.

Mr. Westmacott was very short and good-humoured.

It was desirable, she thought, that as few people should know of the meeting as possible, and at last, most unwillingly, the Serjeant undertook the task of arranging it.

She may be fondled by her grandmother, may smile at her father to show that she recognizes him, and may so endear herself to everyone, as to make the whole family rejoice in the possession of such a rosebud.

“Perhaps so,” said Sir Thomas.

Therefore, if two share in common the sacraments of God, the one a just man, the other an unrighteous one, but so that neither the former should imitate the unrighteousness of the latter, nor the latter the righteousness of the former, you say that the result is not that both are made just, but that both are made unrighteous; so that also that holy thing, which both receive in common, becomes unclean and loses its original holiness.

You have heard the history pertaining to Saul!

What, then, is to be said of those who, while acknowledging that they have no righteousness, or no fullness thereof, yet imagine that it is to be had from themselves alone, not to be besought from their Creator, in whom is its store and its fountain?

Why therefore should we not say that the Soul of Christ was full of the evils of humanity, though not of human sins?

For to examine into the testimonies of the Lord, and to seek Him with all the heart, this is to be undefiled in the way, this is to walk in the law of the Lord.

She demanded, from fit to fit, that telegrams should be sent over to bring her father to Italy for her protection.

Now it would be impious for us to declare these; yet it is easy to form an idea of them, by reason of the many statements that have been made.

Or what on the other hand again was Noah's son profited by the virtue of his father, when he became a slave instead of free?

“You have made up your mind, then, that I mean to be idle?”

“What! old William Whittlestaff? Then, let me tell you, you have come to see as honest a fellow, and as good-hearted a Christian, as any that I know.”

How odious!

And yet Mr. Chamberlaine was only a prebendary, was the son of a country clergyman who had happened to marry a wife with money, and had absolutely never done anything useful in the whole course of his life.

Others have been of opinion that it is no substance at all, since they could not think any substance unless it is body, and they did not find that the soul was body; but it was in their opinion the tempering together itself of our body, or the combining together of the elements, by which that flesh is as it were conjoined.

Accordingly this series of generations begins thus: These are the generations of Shem: Shem was an hundred years old, and begot Arphaxad two years after the flood.

First, we spoke about God and the Word of God, and of Gods, either, that is, beings who partake in deity or beings who are called Gods and are not.

Pray, pray, pray write to me at once,—to the Connop Greens, so that I may get a nice, soft, pleasant word directly I get among those nasty, hard, unpleasant people. They have lots of money, and plenty of furniture, and I dare say the best things to eat and drink in the world,—but nothing else. There will be no Jack; and if there were, alas, alas, no one to show me the way to ride him.

But when the storm threatened to knock him off his legs, when the earth beneath him became too hot for his poor tender feet,—what could he do then?

That was the full meaning of Mr Stumfold’s threat; and, as the editor knew Mr Stumfold’s power, the editor wisely turned a cold shoulder upon Mr Maguire.

Do not interrupt me just at present,” she said, stopping him, as some exclamation was escaping from his lips.

“It is proper that I should tell you that he has disgraced himself.”

For hence the Psalmist says, My heart has failed me [Psalm 39:13].

If a mere man was born of Mary, how can it be said that He came?

[Romans 6:6] Or whence comes it to pass that the image of God enters not into the kingdom of God, unless it be that the impediment of sin prevents it?

But while mourning we will mourn, not for ourselves but for them; they have not injured you, but they have destroyed themselves; for you have the Kingdom of heaven in return for the injustice done you, they hell in return for their gain.

For He is not commanded to receive, but you to give.

“Mother, if you speak in that way to me you will kill me. My darling, darling mother!”

For the disembodied spirits of the just are at rest; but those of the wicked suffer punishment till their bodies rise again—those of the just to life everlasting, and of the others to death eternal, which is called the second death.

“I wish people would hold their tongues. People are so indiscreet. People don’t know how much harm they may do.”

So he sat in his bedroom dozing wretchedly in his armchair.

You must then not lay up treasures, and you shall be rich.

‘Don’t you be so rough now with an old pal.

Hierax, deacon

Mrs. Robarts knew, and Mr. Robarts also now knew, the secret of her heart; and if, such being the case, she allowed Lord Lufton to come there with the acknowledged purpose of pleading his own suit, it would be impossible for her not to yield.

You must judge between the two.

There had been little, she thought, nay, nothing of a father’s loving tenderness in his words to her.

Not as though in a subject; as color, or shape, or any other quality or quantity, are in the body.

But all the outlines of the place were so well known to him that he could trace them all in the dim light.

The luminaries of the world, which God set to give light to the souls of the people, have been driven from their homes, and a darkness verily gloomy and disheartening has settled on the Churches.

It raised up from the pit.

Mr. Prosper did not think that he had energy enough to look for a third lady who might be fit at all points to become his wife.

Lord Drummond was a little too prolix for a chairman, and at last concluded by expressing “his conviction that his countrymen would listen to the distinguished Senator with that courtesy which was due to a foreigner and due also to the great and brotherly nation from which he had come.”

But, if at any time you allow any one to be buried in your Church, and the parents, relations, or heirs of such person should of their own accord wish to offer something for lights, we do not forbid it to be accepted.

But if I go in there I know what will be the result.

Therefore our Lord in the Gospel (after saying, Take heed that you do not your righteousness before men, to be seen of them, [Matthew 6:1]) in order that we should not measure our course of life by the limit of human glory, declared in his exposition of righteousness itself that there is none except there be these three—fasting, alms, prayers.

Lastly, that paralytic was waiting for a man.

Cassius came to avenge his friend Trebonius, and Dolabella, finding himself worsted, destroyed himself.

There was nothing there that he could do.

[John 19:30b] He said that, and bowed his head, and gave up his spirit.

Her nose was decidedly more regular in its beauty, for Lily’s nose was somewhat broader than it should have been.

“Now that it is done, the sooner the better,” said Ralph.

“Look here, Frank,” continued General Tom, “if you mean that I am to give her up as a reward to you for being sent home, I will have nothing to do with the bargain.”

From the same work:—

For in order that no one, even of the senseless, might have any complaint to make, either great or small, when brought to judgment; on you, who art to give account, He causes the sentence to depend; and in what way soever you have judged for yourself, in the same, says He, do I also judge you.

He had put the apple to his mouth, and it had turned to ashes between his teeth.

(A spirit) takes, and all with hatred burn.

That it had been a volcanic crater there could be no doubt, but unlike all other volcanic craters that I have seen it was not an aperture on the apex of a mountain.

But Undy Scott was not a man to be thus roughly handled with impunity; and in completing the education which he had received, the use of his fists had not been overlooked. He let out with his right hand, and struck Alaric twice with considerable force on the side of his jaw, so that the teeth rattled in his mouth.

For by occasion of I know not what unknown God, you denied that the Creator of the world is God, but asserted that He is either an evil being, or that He has many equals, or, as we have said, that He is not God at all.

Other women, under the pretext of religion, cut off their hair, and behaved otherwise than is fitting to a woman, by arraying themselves in men's apparel.

I should therefore be surprised if you could follow in that course, since you are so completely wedded to the flesh as to be incapable of seeing ought but what is impure.

They look out on the wide lake which is now the highway for breadstuffs, and the merchant, as he shaves at his window, sees his rapid ventures as they pass away, one after the other, toward the East.

When Fred left Scroope it was understood that he was to correspond with his aunt.

Drat it,—you make me that angry I’m half minded to cuff you.

The king, therefore, is said indeed to have been in prison, but not under the same condition as the prisoners who were detained there.

, I say confidently that this my daughter also has some sins.

She would not have called her father’s partner the “Devil” to any other ear but her father’s.

Why, M’Buffer has been at it now for thirteen years.

You say that He was raised up, that He in His turn might perform the task committed to Him of raising up the created world; but that His birth did not confer upon Him the Divine nature.

These are the gifts we want, but we can’t always get them, and have to do without them.

You know that I have dissipated and done away with them; but, though your neck is broken, you do not bow it down, but, with an impudence which exceeds even your ignorance, you say that I am denying what is quite evident, so as to excuse yourself, after promising mountains of gold, for not producing even a leatherlike farthing from your treasury.

If such are those who take by violence, and we shrink from attempting even what is possible, how shall we ever win?

He would like to make Lord Silverbridge pay for his late insolence.

For in general we hide truths not by telling a lie, but by holding our peace.

For now the prophetic utterance assumes a general character.

I shouldn’t wonder if he didn’t get himself all wrong, even now.” Then Mrs. Finn began to cry; and Mary could only write to her lover, pointing out to him how very anxious all his friends were that he should do nothing in a hurry.

I little thought at that time that I should be called on after so long an interval to renew my work.

As he has come round I suppose I ought to show myself civil.

For we commit many transgressions every day.

But where by such humility he saw any injured, he gave up that undue exercise of it, for that was no longer to be humble but to outrage and destroy the disciples.

[Genesis 4:10] Either this [meaning] or that; because it is still even now celebrated: but not in such way as that of Christ.

I drink it as the Fates ordain it.

Then indeed could the Saviour bid his followers be of good cheer, and, remembering his adorable and glorious resurrection, expect the like for themselves.

[Romans 8:32] For to distinguish Him from those who are not properly sons, He said that He was His own Son.

“I never heard the like! Where am I to get my things? And you will have no house taken or anything. If you think I’m going into lodgings like Sarah Jane, you’re mistook. I don’t marry unless I have things comfortable about me,—furniture, and all that. While you were in your tantrums, George, I once went to see William Brisket’s house.”

“Ah! I like to be attended to all the same.”

In 1876 the registered export of diamonds from Kimberley amounted in value to £1,414,590, and reached 773 pounds avoirdupois in weight.

Was it too late?

The one he now entered was that which kept what we may call his domestic account.

Companionship requires conversation, — for which indeed the spot is most fit; but conversation is not now the object in view.

“Very likely,” said Lucy; and then they went in to dinner. Lucy had been a hypocrite, for she had confessed to herself, while dressing, that Lord Lufton had been very pleasant; but then it is allowed to young ladies to be hypocrites when the subject under discussion is the character of a young gentleman.

“I suppose you know it as well as anybody,” said Silverbridge,—who was simply desirous of making himself pleasant to the “dear old governor.”

At any rate, she disappeared altogether from London, leaving behind her an amount of debts which showed how extremely liberal in their dealings the great tradesmen of London will occasionally be.

“We shall all see her, of course.”

We will therefore desist from proceeding farther, and leave it to you to take in hand the rest, for it is in your power at home to put these things together, and examine their difference, and in the same way to go over what remains.

And yet, whatever loss your interests suffer from the religion we profess, the protection you have from us makes amply up for it.

It is also a doctrine which you have most faithfully set forth, both in your treatise against Jovinian and your exposition of Jonah, as I mentioned above, and, if I am not mistaken, in other parts of your works which I have not read or have at present forgotten.

Mark how He has described at once both the water and the cross.

“It was a pretty run,” said Phineas.

Such was the conduct of Elijah, when, being commanded by the Spirit, he showed himself unto Ahab [1 Kings 21:18 and of Micaiah the prophet when he came to the same Ahab; and of the prophet who cried against the altar in Samaria, and rebuked Rehoboam ; and of Paul when he appealed unto Cæsar.

[Luke 24:49b] But you, abide in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be clothed with power from on high.

For that our former sins were buried, came of His gift.

When he was about to return home he passed the front of the house, and there, standing at the open door, he saw Mrs. Hopkins, the housekeeper, who had in truth been waiting for him. He said a goodnatured word to her, intending to make his way on without stopping, but she called him back. “Have you heard the news, Mr. Reginald?” she said.

Her aunt would dislike such a marriage for him, and he would be bound to obey her aunt in such a matter.

But when they say, What has undergone death is dead, and, Enjoy life while you live, and, After death all things come to an end, even death itself; then I must remember both that the heart of man is ashes, [Isaiah 44:20] according to the estimate of God, and that the very Wisdom of the world is foolishness, (as the inspired word) pronounces it to be.

Who does not know the timid retiring face of the young girl who when alone among men unknown to her feels that it becomes her to keep herself secluded?

The Marquis shook his head and said nothing.

She was somewhat short of stature, as were all the Hotspurs, and her feet and hands and ears were small and delicate.

“A noble jilt, my dears,” said Mrs. Carbuncle eloquently, “is a contradiction in terms.

Or, Wherewith shall we be clothed?

You must now remain at Greshamsbury till Mr Gazebee shall return.

Her promise that she would never throw him over was the warmest word of love that she had ever spoken, but even that was said in her own quiet, unimpassioned way.

It was clear enough to him that Lady Persiflage was on the same side as Crocker.

As he thought of this he felt almost crushed to the earth by an indomitable bashfulness and conviction of his own unworthiness.

“I heard him say it, Botsey,” said Twentyman.

The same both enlightens and overshadows us.

He had been promised absolution as to some complaint made against him on condition that he could read a page of his own manuscript.

This went against the grain with Mr. Crabwitz, but, having an object to gain, he bore it. “We hear a great deal up in London just at present about this Orley Farm case, and I always hear your name as connected with it. I had no idea when I was taking these lodgings that I was coming into a house belonging to that Mr. Dockwrath.”

I bid you then watch your tongue more than the apple of your eye.

When rage the city wall shall overthrow,

‘Well, lads, I hope you’ll both win,’ said Charley. ‘And whichever wins most, why of course he’ll stand an uncommon good dinner.’

In surrendering there is more efficacy, as there is also more grace, than in seizing.

And knowing this, we shall not trust in ourselves; and this is to be made weak.

In Prussia there is a very large staff of “placemen.” Is there any designation of men more objectionable than “placemen?” That word alone nearly explains what I mean.

“I knew he’d do it,” said John; “and so I told George before he got himself spliced. But he would go on. If he’d remained as he was for four or five years longer there would have been no danger;—for Porlock, you know, is leading the deuce of a life. I shouldn’t wonder if he didn’t reform now, and take to singing psalms or something of that sort.”

But this I say, He which sows sparingly shall reap also sparingly; and he which sows in benediction shall reap also in benediction.

“It’s a lie!” said Barry.

He was the first whose pictures, statues, and all similar marks of honor and distinction were everywhere destroyed, on the ground of his crimes and impiety.

The girls desired no better house,—if only their father could be with them.

In fine, then, Xenocrates the Chalcedonian was not quite without hope that the notion of the Divinity existed even in the irrational creatures.

See how God loves confession.

That’s no fault of yours, for the things came so sharp one on another that my fellows haven’t had time to make it out.

For silence is a matter of great consequence when one's speech is mean.

Let us not then be negligent of what is our life, but let us be in earnest; and do every thing, in order that we may be without an enemy, and so present ourselves at the sacred Table.

He says: We hold one baptism, which we say ought to be administered in the same sacramental words in the case of infants as in the case of adults.

“Oh, Harry, there is such a sad affair up at the Hall!”

He was fighting with it at every turn, but he could not conquer it.

“My wishes have reference solely to her.”

Next to me,—yes, Mary, next to myself, he should be the dearest to you of human beings.

When they all passed their evenings together in the beer-garden, she would studiously manage that his chair should not be close to her own.

And you do bring disgrace on the department.

“Has he ever said anything to you?”

Behold, he says, even men appeared well-pleasing to Him thereafter.

At the end of six weeks it was determined between them that Bessy should write to Mrs.

And then there came another trouble, which was more troublesome to Ayala even than the other.

And next, I imagine that you are most desirous of hearing something on this point, that the Christians do not observe the same forms of divine worship as do the Jews.

“And yet it is so important that one should be able to judge correctly of one’s own work! I can at any rate trust myself to be honest, which is more perhaps than can be said of all the critics.”

For let them be excluded, He has said, let them come forth, let them appear.

“That is manifestly the inference which Augustus draws. To hear him speak to me about it you would suppose that he suspected Annesley of having killed Mountjoy.”

“Oh, but I did love Jack,” she said.

No President has vacated his position, even for a period, through any cause other than death.

Part 2. History of ArianOpinions

What my Eunomos sings is not the measure of Terpander, nor that of Capito, nor the Phrygian, nor Lydian, nor Dorian, but the immortal measure of the new harmony which bears God's name— the new, the Levitical song.

Chapters V. and VI.— God created the world by His reason and wisdom; for He cannot have proceeded irrationally in that work; but His reason and wisdom are, as above shown, not to be conceived as a spoken word, or as the mere possession of knowledge, but as a personal and willing potency.

‘Hester, are you hurt?’ When there was still no answer, the mother got up, with limbs so stiff that she could hardly use them, and stood over her child.

Some said, This is the Prophet. Others said, He deceives the people; others said, Christ comes not from Galilee, but from the village of Bethlehem.

But we hold only such things foreign to His nature as may be added to or subtracted from it.

She was careful about her letters, and very careful about her money.

She was certainly at that time a beautiful girl—very beautiful, handsome in the outline of her face, graceful and dignified in her mien, nay, sometimes almost majestic—a Juno rather than a Venus.

‘I do believe that Dick has come back.’

[Mark 12:29-31] He taught, at the same time, love and unity by His instruction.

“Not a week. I have it from Sir Omicron himself. Now I think you will admit, Bertram, that I have been very badly used.”

[Joel 2:16] In like manner also another, Zachariah: Thus says the Lord Almighty, Execute true judgment, and show mercy and compassion every man to his brother; and oppress not the widow, nor the fatherless, nor the stranger; and let none of you imagine evil against his brother in your heart, says the Lord Almighty.

For if he had been rich and high born, the poor, when called upon to imitate his zeal, would have had their poverty to plead; but now you can say nothing of this sort.

You see, brother, how many thousands there are among the Jews of them which have believed; therefore shave your head, and purify yourself.

Such going and living with him would deprive his education of all the real salt.

When Mr. Jobbles made his last little speech at the Board, and retired to his house in the Dean’s yard, Alaric felt tolerably certain that he himself would be invited to fill the vacant place.

And observe this man, how, while they preached to the others, he did not take it much amiss, but only when they approached the proconsul.

It may be answered that they get more law for their money.

And as when the sun is shining the moon and the stars lose their power of giving light, so those who are irradiated by Christ and receive His beams have no need of the ministering apostles and prophets— we must have courage to declare this truth— nor of the angels; I will add that they have no need even of the greater powers when they are disciples of that first-born light.

For our other faults and passions may be said to be simpler and of but one form: but this takes many forms and shapes, and changes about and assails the man who stands up against it from every quarter, and assaults its conqueror on all sides.

Her mother had said not a word to her about it.

Guard against envy, for its author is the devil, and his successor Cain, who envied his brother, and out of envy committed murder.

But in all such matters, my dear, the great thing is like to like.

The sparrow a home, the dove a nest, and a nest too where she may lay her young.

“No, indeed,” said Tom, angrily.

He had sworn to her that to him it made no difference, whether she should be proclaimed to be the Lady Anna, the undoubted owner of thousands a year, or Anna Murray, the illegitimate daughter of the late Earl’s mistress, a girl without a penny, and a nobody in the world’s esteem.

Peter: Because you have not heard the true Prophet saying, 'Seek first His righteousness, and all these things shall be added to you.'

And even when the fox has been found it may be better for the expectant sportsman to loiter about till he breaks, giving some little attention to the part of the wood in which the work of hunting may be progressing.

[Matthew 5:45] And besides, it is not possible that the benefactor and the benefited should remain in enmity.

“And said all manner of horrid things about me.”

[1 Corinthians 7:1-2] In what way does my meaning differ from that intended by the apostle?

Mr. Kennedy had told the whole story of his wrongs, and had told it well,—with piteous truthfulness, as far as he himself knew and understood the truth.

But from this time forth let us be very exact in our reckoning.

For accurate investigation of matters, putting truth to the question with a more searching scrutiny, often reveals that things which have passed for excellent are of quite another sort.

The First Visit to the Guestwick Bridge

“Quite unnecessary.”

From that day to this none of them had heard of Mr Allan.

And he transfers (those marks), he says, to those who close the eyelid, as the naphtha drawing the fire in every direction towards itself; nay rather, as the magnet (attracting) the iron and not anything else, or just as the backbone of the sea falcon, the gold and nothing else, or as the chaff is led by the amber.

This I fear (he says) for you also.

It was said that early in life he had been apprenticed to an attorney at Aberdeen as George Carruthers.

“Yes, I am. Ever since you’ve been home from Bragton it has been the same thing, and when I felt that it was so, I spoke up to your father honestly. I haven’t been beating about the bush, and I haven’t done anything that wasn’t honourable.” They were very near the last stile now. “Come, Mary, if you won’t make me a promise, say that you’ll think of it.”

That third partner was Mrs. Van Siever, the mother of Clara Van Siever whom Mr. Conway Dalrymple intended to portray as Jael driving a nail into Sisera’s head.

We can easily believe that it should have been so.

Then after same other matters he says:— Moreover, we did not withdraw from the visible assembling of ourselves together, with the Lord's presence.

“And yet I would give anything to be on good terms with him. I think I shall go and call. He is at an hotel in Albemarle Street. I have done nothing to deserve ill of him, if he knew all.”

See then how He at once punishes and also displays, even in this, His love.

“Yes; all. And Mr. Tregear spoke to her, and she said that papa ought not to be told quite yet.”

was a most successful teacher of rhetoric at Sicca in Africa during the reign of Diocletian, and wrote volumes Against the nations which may be found everywhere.

For salvation is far from sinners; and, The light of Your countenance has been stamped upon us, O Lord.

At first they judge it to be already in a manner perfect, so that their eyes desire nothing further: but the judgment of the inexperienced eye is one, and that of the rule of art another.

For,' he says, 'if what is your part follow' upon mine, there will be nothing to prevent that joy.

His plan was to linger behind persistently, and then, when the others were all out of sight, to turn round and make his way back to Reykjavik!

God's justice then impelled Him to choose a method of exchange, as His wisdom was seen in executing it.

I shall be accused of using very strong language against the newspaper press of America.

Hence it is that being naked of their first garment, they earned by mortality coats of skins.

And here let us begin with what would probably make any one averse to receiving the history: I mean the play of words between prinos and prisis, schinos and schisis.

Wherefore then do some foolish persons object to Him, See how He discourses with the simpler sort.

Then, Alice, I will tell you what is my belief.

And I said to the Shepherd who talked with me, Sir, who is this shepherd, who is so pitiless and severe, and so completely devoid of compassion for these sheep?

When Richardson wrote novels were scarce, and of those which were written few were deemed to be fit reading for young and modest women.

What has He established?

“How did it end?”

Chapter 3. The Vision which appeared in a Dream to the Witness Attalus.

But the world does so connect them; and, consequently, those who express themselves badly are ashamed of their feelings.

In the Dispensation by which He is a servant, He has as God Him Whom, in the glory by which He is God, He has as Father.

For judges in administering the law condemn to exposure to wild beasts worse criminals than are condemned to be put to death by the sword.

[Galatians 2:9] And what would those pillars have been, except by Him they had been strengthened?

“This is where we pretend to sit,” continued the lord; “where we are supposed to write our letters and read our books.

One, all things seeing, yet Himself unseen.

For, strictly speaking, there cannot any longer be reckoned ought against the martyrs, by whom in the baptism (of blood) life itself is laid down.

Ver. 2. If so be that you have heard of the dispensation of that grace of God, which was given me to you-ward.

When therefore we are in affliction, let us consider these things.

Disturbed as was the state of the country, nevertheless railways ran from Washington to Baltimore, from Baltimore to Pittsburgh, from Pittsburgh to Cincinnati, and from Cincinnati to Frankfort.

he answered, I pervert not Israel, but you and your father's house.

Great indeed, and all-powerful in gifts, and wonderful, is the Holy Ghost.

Indeed he was ready to say that Timothy Crinkett was his uncle.

In such a case there would have been intimacy in spite of disapproval.

The obvious reply is, that he does not understand.

And he said not, Putting stumbling-blocks in their way, but, wounding; so as by the force of his expression to indicate their cruelty.

Next, after they have laid aside as sacred the garments in which they have been clothed while together taking their repast within the house— (now these garments are linen)— and having resumed the clothes which they had left in the vestibule, they hasten to agreeable occupations until evening.

Why should not Bungall’s nephew carry on a brewery of his own?

Ohio 2,377,917

For sometimes a verse of any one of the Psalms gives us an occasion of ardent prayer while we are singing.

But up to the moment of which we are writing, the iron of debt had not as yet absolutely entered into the soul of this young man.

For to account for his fears, in the midst of those things, which he now knows, having come after a sort to the understanding of them, he has been looking behind him again in anxiety, lest the enemy be stealing upon him: he cannot yet say, I am made whole every whit.

“I was only just talking to them about—” Thady began; but he felt that he was going to tell his friend a falsehood, and again held his tongue.

And yet it is the same God, the same Name.

“Don’t mention it, my Lord Duke.”

And what, too, is the meaning of this: From the womb before the morning I begot you?

“And now about the furniture. You can give me two or three days in town, can’t you?”

But perhaps some one will say that the Seraph said to Isaiah: Behold, this has touched your lips, and shall take away your iniquities, and purge away your sins.

“Know why!” replied Owen; “of course I do. It is to give away your sister. Go home, Desmond, my boy; when you have returned we will talk about her. I shall bear it better when I know that she is his wife.”

Cowardice in a man is abominable.

Even of her words she was sparing, seeming to care more to listen than to speak; a humble little thing to look at,—one of whom you might say that she regarded herself as well-placed if left in the background.

“Indeed I’m quite in earnest. But I think your papa means to make up an income for you,—only you must not expect to be rich.”

For suppose that I myself, to avoid some inconvenience and peril, make supplication to any one of these deities, saying, Be present, be near, divine Penates, you Apollo, and you, O Neptune, and in your divine clemency turn away all these evils, by which I am annoyed, troubled, and tormented: will there be any hope that I shall receive help from them, if Ceres, Pales, Fortune, or the genius Jovialis, not Neptune and Apollo, shall be the dii Penates?

“Has he told you?” said Lady Mason, asking the question in the lowest possible whisper, and still holding back as she spoke.

But this is not what is required; we need works, and a pure mind.

Diocletian, apt to be low-spirited and timorous in every commotion, and fearing a fate like that of Valerian, would not in person encounter Narseus; but he sent Galerius by the way of Armenia, while he himself halted in the eastern provinces, and anxiously watched the event.

All the paths of your propositions lead to the same meeting-point, and it is with you as with the frightened deer— while you fly from the feathers fluttering in the wind, you become entangled in the strongest of nets.

'Look not thou at this,' he says, 'whether I be mean and little, but whether you have not enjoyed those things which from an Apostle it was meet you should enjoy.'

Would she not fly into his arms, or at least expect that he should open his own?

For, lo!

Middleton says that the father lived in Rome with his son, and argues from this that he was a man of large means.

Unde merito cum de consummatione Logos locutus fuerat, ait Salome: Quousque morientur homines?

But he thought that the condition of the old man’s mind would affect the partition of his property, and that the old man would surely make some new will in the present state of his affairs.

For where but in a soul that is wise can you write truth?

At any rate, she was resolved to seek redress at law, and at last had been advised to proceed conjointly against Aunt Ju, Lady Selina Protest, and the bald-headed old gentleman.

Then there came dinner. Let misfortunes be what they may, dinner will come. The old man crawled downstairs, and Hester was invited into the dining-room. ‘No,’ she said. ‘If you choose to send it to me here, because of baby, I will eat.’ Then, neither would Mrs. Bolton go to her husband; but both of them, seated in their high-backed armchairs, ate their food with their plates upon their laps.

He put his arms round her waist and kissed her; and as he caressed her, his olfactory nerves perceived that the pomatum in her hair was none of the best … and then he felt very sick’.

But Paul says, that they shall be caught up in clouds.

8. I gathered me also silver and gold, and the peculiar treasure of kings and of the provinces. I gat me men-singers and women-singers, and the delights of the sons of men, as cups and the cupbearer.

For in another passage the Spirit says to the Father concerning the Son: You have put all things under His feet.

They were seated between the canal and the river, with their feet towards the latter, and Walter Marrable was just lighting a cigar.

“That’s a dark man, with evil designs, a wicked tongue, and no money,” said Mrs. Houghton, as a combination of cards lay in Lady George’s lap.

I could laugh at those also who in the present day adhere to his tenets—people who say that sublunary things are not under the care of Providence; and so, being nearer the earth than the moon, and below its orbit, they themselves look after what is thus left uncared for; and as for those who have neither beauty, nor wealth, nor bodily strength, nor high birth, they have no happiness, according to Aristotle.

And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God.

What shall we admire first?

He found the Captain to be a subject very uncomfortable to mention, and thought as he was sitting there that it might perhaps be better to make his first enquiries of this priest.

5. Will you that in her actual deeds also I show you her image? Consider, I pray you, this very evangelist: although we have not his whole life in writing, nevertheless even from a few facts one may see his image shine forth.

[1 John 3:12] Therefore, where envy is, brotherly love cannot be.

Or was there some evil matter of which He made and formed and ordered it, but left something in it which He did not convert into good?

And I have thought it right to say thus much, in order both that the book may be read by the studious (for it is of very great assistance in understanding Scripture), and that no more may be expected from it than it really contains.

“I have come to say goodbye, Lily,” said Johnny Eames, following the girl down one of the paths.

“Nothing that the Radicals can do can make them anything else but what they are. I’m sure that Mr Whitstable, who is to be your brother-in-law, will never condescend to speak to him.”

For you do not of course deem a thing to be decayed unless it be cut off, abolished, and withdrawn from our perception, as having in every possible way ceased to be apparent.

Now the Pythagorean symbols were connected with the Barbarian philosophy in the most recondite way.

Your clemency's religious care which you unceasingly bestow on the Catholic Faith, I recognize in everything, and give God thanks at seeing you take such interest in the universal Church, that I can confidently suggest what I think agreeable to justice and kindness, and so what thus far your pious zeal through the mercy of Christ has irreproachably accomplished, may the more speedily be brought to an issue which we shall be thankful for, O most noble Augusta.

As she stood there beating her foot angrily on the floor of the passage, she made up her mind that there should be more than one ‘but’ in his favour.

But the image, dedicated to a demon, fell down when the ark was brought in there; and, on their setting the idol up again in its place, in the following night it was torn in pieces.

But I will not trouble the workers with the querulousness of old age.

But then this matter did not depend upon her father’s wishes,—or even on her father’s judgment.

“It’s no good abusing me,” said Lady Monogram. “Here we are, and I suppose we had better get,—out unless you want the carriage to take you anywhere else.” Then Lady Monogram got out and marched into the house, and taking a candle went direct to her own room. Miss Longestaffe followed slowly to her own chamber, and having half undressed herself, dismissed her maid and prepared to write to her mother.

There was much in her sister Amelia’s position which she did not envy, but there was less to envy in that of her sister Rosina.

But the fact that to us on the contrary the yoke of Christ seems neither light nor easy, must be rightly ascribed to our perverseness, as we are cast down by unbelief and want of faith, and fight with foolish obstinacy against His command, or rather advice, who says: If you will be perfect, go sell (or get rid of) all that you have, and come follow Me, [Matthew 19:21] for we keep the substance of our worldly goods.

Chapter XVIII. Poor Walker

Wherefore let us not despond after this fashion, nor let us have a thought of cowardice in our heart, nor frame fears for ourselves, saying, I am afraid lest a demon should come and overthrow me; lest he should lift me up and cast me down; or lest rising against me on a sudden he confound me.

Drunkenness is a demon self-chosen, a disease without excuse, an overthrow that admits of no apology; a common shame to our kind.

Chapter 6. An Apparition seen in the Cities subject to Licinius, as of Constantine's Troops passing through them.

“I don’t know, my dear; he’s not a quiet man. There’s something in his eye which tells me that he could be very hard to a woman.”

“Bother what she says!” Felix was not at all anxious to hear what aunt Pipkin might have to say upon such an occasion.

Lady Cantrip had been allowed to come with her lord;—but, as was well understood, Lord Cantrip was not so manifestly a husband as was Mr. Kennedy.

There was papa—that terrible bugbear on all such occasions.

This would make God weaker than the power of ignorance, which took from Him the prerogative of knowledge.

[Matthew 9:36] Wherefore the true Shepherd, Who cares for His own sheep, has visited you from heaven, and has restored to you him whom you desire.

Even though he might have saved himself from all coming evils by a bold demeanour at that moment, he could not assume it.

‘God bless you, Gertrude,’ said Norman, whose eyes were not dry.

She will make the same contribution a hundred times in the same evening.

“Then he won’t. I’ll forbid the banns. I’ll write to the bishop. I’ll go to the church and prevent its being done. I’ll make such a noise in the town that it can’t be done. It’s no use your looking at me like that, Uncle Jonas. I’ve got my own feelings, and he shall never marry Bella. It’s what they have been intending all through, and it shan’t be done!”

With whom the apostle agreeing exclaims, Oh the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God!

They had much more difficulty in disposing of Denot. Had he been turned loose from the château, to go where he pleased, and do what he pleased, he would to a certainty have been killed by the peasantry. De Lescure asked Santerre to take charge of him, but this he refused to do, saying that he considered the young man was a disgrace to any party, or any person, who had aught to do with him, and that he would not undertake to be responsible for his safety.

We wear His face: in like manner as the faces of emperors are spoken of, truly a kind of sacred face is that of God in His own image: but unrighteous men know not in themselves the image of God.

Fitzwalker Tookey had the antecedents and education of a gentleman.

“You’ll all be soldiers shortly,” said Father Jerome. “You are at any rate going the right way to learn the trade.”

Chapter 21 Of the Women Who Were Standing There, and of the Question Whether Matthew, Mark, and Luke, Who Have Stated that They Stood Afar Off, are in Antagonism with John, Who Has Mentioned that One of Them Stood by the Cross.

For if a man has envied or spoken evil of another, if he has not helped him when injured, or not imparted to him of his substance, then neither has he loved him.

Nor will he, therefore, eagerly desire to be assimilated to what is beautiful, possessing, as he does, beauty by love. What more need of courage and of desire to him, who has obtained the affinity to the impassible God which arises from love, and by love has enrolled himself among the friends of God?

You had perhaps begun to be in a manner proud, when you heard the words, He crowns you.

“But it’s not your fault, I suppose?”

Nay, let him summon, not me, but the science of dialectics itself, to the bar of popular opinion as a forger of lies, and let him open his mouth to its widest against it, with all the noisiest uproar of a special pleader.

[My father hearing this, and confounded with excessive sorrow, not knowing whither to go or where to seek, went down with me to the harbour, and began to ask of the sailors whether any of them had seen or heard of the bodies of a mother and two little children being cast ashore anywhere, four years ago; when one told one story and another another, but nothing definite was disclosed to us searching in this boundless sea.

And this assertion, you who are desirous of learning shall ascertain (to be true, by a reference to the previous books, where,) among other opinions elucidated by us, we have explained these doctrines likewise.

There are indeed at this moment twenty-one members of the Legislative Council of which eleven are supposed to have been sent to Parliament by the Western District, and ten by the Eastern;—but even this has now been altered, and the members of the next Council will be elected for separate districts,—so that no such demarcation will remain.

For rebukes are good, and often better than a silent friendship.

And that tree in paradise, by which men know the good, is Jesus Himself, or the knowledge of Him in the world.

Moreover whosoever of them, after this council, shall not disgorge the poison of corrupt doctrine, by abjuring all the blasphemies of Arius, and anathematizing them, let them know that they are themselves, together with Arius and his disciples and the rest of the serpents, whether Sabellians, Patripassians, or the followers of any other heresy, dissevered and excommunicated from the assemblies of the Church, which does not admit of illegitimate children.

On the next day he visited Twickenham. Now, on the morning of that very day Margaret Mackenzie first woke to the consciousness that she was the promised wife of her cousin John Ball. There was great comfort in the thought.

Success, such as this even, is dear to the mind of a young author, and Charley began to feel that he had done something. The editor was proportionably civil to him, and he was encouraged to commence a third historiette.

In the body of this death, therefore, such as it was in paradise before sin, there certainly was not another law in our members warring against the law of our mind— which now, even when we are unwilling, and withhold consent, and use not our members to fulfil that which it desires, still dwells in these members, and harasses our resisting and repugnant mind.

Few men will select St. Thomas as a place of residence from mere unbiassed choice and love of the locale.

Because as he shows from his own temptations and their testimony, and the way in which he acted, that he did not preach with flattery or vainglory; so from their trials, he shows also that they rightly received the word.

When their lords reappear, they are always found smiling, well-dressed, and pretty; and then after dinner they have but one sin—there is but one drawback—they will go to bed at 9 o’clock.

Cecilia did not exactly know all the facts as they had occurred,—between Miss Altifiorla and Sir Francis,—and certainly knew none of those which were now in process of occurring; but she strongly suspected that something had taken place, that some conversation had been held, between her friend and Sir Francis Geraldine.

I want the health of this body, and racking pains come on me: I want the dissolution of the body, and death forbears to come: and in this want my confidence has been weakened.

That horrid tradesman was telling his story to everybody.

Phineas replied that he thought it was to be done. “I’ll tell you the truth at once, Miss Effingham,” he said. “You can do it by a single word.”

“I dare say they wouldn’t come,” said aunt Julia.

And the sojourning of the Hebrews in Egypt lasted 430 years; and after their departure from the land of Egypt they spent 40 years in the wilderness, as it is called.

“And how do you intend to begin with them?” asked Mr. Supplehouse, the business of whose life it had been to suggest difficulties.

At the same time we must notice the Apostle's prudence.

Another witness told how unsafe was the transit of heavy goods by barge from one side of the river to another.

He regarded the Small House as their abode and home as surely as the Great House was his own.

Chapter XXXII. What Cecilia Burton Did for Her Sister-In-Law

It might be that she would disobey him if he simply sent for her and bade her to affix her signature here and there.

Why do you leave God, and get human gains?

Each Person of the Trinity is said in the sacred writings to be Light. The Spirit is designated Fire by Isaiah, a figure of which Fire was seen in the bush by Moses, in the tongues of fire, and in Gideon's pitchers. And the Godhead of the same Spirit cannot be denied, since His operation is the same as that of the Father and of the Son, and He is also called the light and fire of the Lord's countenance.

And the fact of its adoption by Lord Palmerston, and its promotion by him in political concert with Lord John, proves that at this moment there was no war between the two old colleagues.

“But a Jew! She has been to confession, has she not?”

How much more, you say, is it (within their competence to take a body) out of some material substance?

“But we firmly trust that by God’s will and with God’s aid, we will soon be rid of all our troubles,” said the priest. “M le Marquis, we have your best wishes, I know; and your full approval. I hope we shall soon be able to lay our trophies at your feet.”

‘What do you mean?’ said she.

As you and I, my reader, might probably become dear friends were we to meet and know each other, so may the German girl learn to love the fair-haired youth with whom chance has for a time associated her; but to her mind there occurs no suggestive reason why it should be so,—no probability that the youth may regard her in such light, because that chance has come to pass.

He became the latter, He took the latter; He was the former.

These are the words of arrogance.

For the flight of the quarry ever adds eagerness to the pursuit of the huntsman.

2 Corinthians 13:5-6

I bear witness of myself, and the Father who sent me bears witness of me?

And why speak I of God?

That no man might think so, even baptized infants, who are certainly unsurpassed in innocence, are sometimes so tormented, that God, who permits it, teaches us hereby to bewail the calamities of this life, and to desire the felicity of the life to come.

And yet when she was asked again and again to arrange all the difficulties of the family by marrying her cousin, she was forced to carry on the conversation as though no such person existed as her lover at Hereford.

She had told him of her love, and he had not vouchsafed to say a word to her in reply.

Heaven forbid that we should have no gala marriages.

If not, why then his dear boy could do without it.

And,, indeed, it is quite compatible with an entire absence of any such predilection.

The merits of the righteous appear not, and the felicity of the unrighteous has, as it were, a name.

Indeed, the truth about the image could never have been maintained if the beauty reflected in that image had been in the slightest degree opposed to the Archetypal Beauty.

For if with men humility is so lovely, much more with God.

And this is done not in this place only, nor by this Evangelist only, but again elsewhere another Evangelist is seen to do the same.

[John 3:34] By this reflection you can comprehend that Christ dwells in faithful men; yet Christ suffers no loss though He is divided among many.

Or can even these be seen in lungs or livers?

But it was in the last days that the choice of the nations had its commencement.

But tell us, Paul, of the other righteousness also, that which is of grace.

Chapter 15. — The Charge of Infanticide Retorted on the Heathen.

He would tell her in what way she had better live.

He does not say, David, but the Spirit through him.

he is tipsy!” exclaimed Mrs. Broughton; “and what shall we do?” Then Dalrymple took her hand and pressed it, and left the room, so that he might meet the husband on the stairs.

“Is that all you can say to me?”

The conclusion from which, accordingly, is this, that the cause of each one's actions is a pre-existing one; and then every one, according to his deserts, is made by God either a vessel unto honour or dishonour.

“But I am sure you love him;—don’t you?” pleaded Mary; “and I am sure he loves you better than anything in the world.”

For if it has been always, it shall also continue to be; but if it has been made, it shall also be dissolved.

The treatment I received in the hotel at Cairo reminded me of that old woman.

“Oh, papa,” she said;—”oh, papa!” and burst into tears.

“They do pretty nearly all that they oughtn’t to do,” said Mrs Pipkin. John Crumb raised one of his fists, brought it down heavily on the palm of his other hand, and then sat silent for awhile.

For He is both flesh and bread, and has given Himself as both to us to be eaten.

Perhaps our friend would not object? Perhaps, as it certainly is a rule, he would prefer complying with it?

And when all had agreed on these grounds, I continued:

For where they reigned, there they were puffed up, there their necks they lifted up.

He had ascertained on her behalf that she was the undoubted owner of the money which her father had made over to her on his first arrival in England,—and she also had made herself mistress of that fact with equal precision.

For instance, when He says, If her father had spit in her face [Numbers 12:14]: and again, Let me alone, and in Mine anger I will blot out this people.

For allowance must sometimes be made in favour of those women who have not been fortunate in falling in with chaste husbands, and adorn themselves in order to please their husbands.

I say leave it to him.

To the Learned Elias.

But Paulinus, bishop of Treves in Gaul, and Dionysius, of whom the former was bishop of Alba, the metropolis of Italy, and Eusebius of Vercellæ, a city of Liguria in Italy, perceiving that the Eastern bishops, by demanding a ratification of the sentence against Athanasius, were intent on subverting the faith, arose and loudly exclaimed that 'this proposition indicated a covert plot against the principles of Christian truth.

For she became a statue of salt, [Genesis 19:26] in order that by considering her men might be seasoned, might have sense, might not be infatuated, might not look back, lest by giving a bad example they should themselves remain and season others.

For what certain information did Thales, the first of natural philosophers, give in reply to the inquiry of Crœsus regarding Deity, the delay for further thought so often proving in vain?

I will merely mention the most blessed Ambrose, to whom (as I have already observed ) Pelagius accorded so signal a testimony of his integrity in the faith.

But if we choose, we shall make it of the number of impossible things; just as Paul, as Peter, as all the saints did; for it is even impossible for them to be punished.

But because in it was prefigured the new testament, the men of God who at that time understood this according to the ordering of the times, were indeed the stewards and bearers of the old testament, but are shown to be the heirs of the new.

“Yes;—she is here. We are going home, but chance brought us up to the salon. She seemed to think that you are in distress, and that I could help you. I will, if you will let me.”

Likewise in virginity, as the five virgins.

Now it passes into southern regions about the time of the winter solstice, now it returns to the sign of the equinox; from thence it betakes itself to northern regions during the summer solstice, and keeps up by this imperceptible passage a pleasant temperature throughout all the world.

If so even against the Lord Himself, let not the Body disdain that which has gone before in the Head, to the end that the Body may cleave to the Head.

La Mère came in and out three or four times, uneasy in her gait and unpleasant in her aspect, and everybody began to see that things were wrong.

That he could effect all this he did not doubt, but he did not wish to effect it for nothing.

For I rightly address you as lord, seeing that we are both seeking to deliver each other from error, although to some it may seem uncertain which of us is in error before the matter has been fully debated; and therefore we are mutually serving one another, if we sincerely labour that we may both be delivered from the perversity of discord.

Before this what said he?

“There is a tide in the affairs of men,

The assertion that He bears the name of Son by virtue of adoption has been put to silence, and He stands forth as a true Son by a true birth.

“I am not your brother, and I have no right to approve or disapprove.”

Her conduct had been such that he had felt it to be incumbent on him, at the very moment, to justify the touch by a declaration of love.

And yet Petilianus, to avoid answering what I have said, sets before himself what I have not, and draws men's attention away from the consideration of his debt, lest they should exact the answer which he ought to make.

It is not by merely being in the world, however, that we lapse from God, but by touching and tainting ourselves with the world's sins.

Who also, it says, honored us with many honors [Acts 28:10]: not that he received wages, God forbid; but as it is written, The workman is worthy of his meat.

Again he terrifies them speaking of the ends, and prepares them to expect things greater than had already taken place.

“Absolutely.”

Had that look been sure to bring down upon her the hatred of that reverend gentleman, she could not have helped it.

This happened some days after Mr Broune’s proposal to Lady Carbury, more than a week since Marie had seen Sir Felix.

“I really do not see what that has to do with the question. You cannot think the bishop would be justified in allowing you to regard as a sinecure a situation that requires an active man, merely because you have been employed for many years in the cathedral.”

Were they not angels because they are called men?

Letter 208

“Well! There’s nothing more coming, Mr. Jones. Only don’t you come over in any of your fits of jealousy, or you’ll have to be sent back again. You’re not my lord and master—yet.”

“Why should I think anything of her?”

“No Englishman whom I have met is so broadly and intuitively and unceremoniously imbued with the simplicity of the character of a gentleman. He could no more lie than he could eat grass.”

Nor does anything pertain to the nature of God so as not to pertain to that Trinity; and the Three Persons are of one essence, not as each individual man is one person.

Fred declared himself to be that unfortunate man, and explained that he had no apartment in which to be seen.

For we are exceedingly afraid lest we should be forced to do what we ought not to do.

When at the Trasimene lake the streams ran with blood?

The face of the country is like a thickly wooded demesne, divided and subdivided into an infinity of little paddocks.

Therefore when we read, That they may know You, the only true God, and Jesus Christ Whom You have sent, these terms of Sender and of Sent are not intended, under any semblance of distinction or discrimination, to convey a difference between the true Godhead of Father and of Son, but to be a guide to the devout confession of Them as Begetter and Begotten.

He still was holding her by the hand, and he now raised it to his lips and kissed it. “The offer from you,” he said, “is as highminded, as generous, and as honourable as its acceptance by me would be mean-spirited, vile, and ignoble. But whether I fail or whether I succeed, you shall see me before the winter is over.”

And so the Son glorifies the Father fully and finally in the words which follow, I have glorified You on the earth, having accomplished the work which You have given Me to do.

She had been perfectly serious in decrying the personal compliment; but still, still, there had been a flavour of love in the words which now remained among her heartstrings.

And indeed that he might not be driven away again, therefore he continued with Philip, and did not part from him.

But if life is the same thing as the light of men, then no one who is in darkness is living, and none of the living is in darkness; but every one who is alive is also in light, and every one who is in light is living, so that not he only who is living, but every one who is living, is a son of light; and he who is a son of light is he whose work shines before men.

Yet, on the other hand, none of them can perish, because the immutable divine promises are thought of.

MRS. L. Of course I remember. Didn’t I slip it into the envelope myself before I handed it to Tomkins? Magistrates, indeed, and trustees! But here they come. And here’s Mick Stringer. (Enter Mr. and Mrs. Goshawk, followed by Policeman with Mick Stringer, and by Dan Hoggett.) Mick Stringer, where did I get that cheque?

This doing year by year, he got his bread from thence, rejoicing that thus he would be troublesome to no one, and because he kept himself from being a burden to anybody.

“No; no; I deny it. I can admit much from you, but I cannot admit that. The politician who becomes the master of his country sinks from the statesman to the tyrant.”

Let us cast away earthly ornaments if we desire heavenly.

But there is no question that he depicted the usual custom of an enemy when sacking a city.

But who is there so wretched and miserable, that when he had the alternative of dying unjustly, would rather depart by an act of justice?

[Luke 17:10] If then we display charity, if we give our goods to them that need, we are fulfilling a debt; and that not only in that it was He who first began the acts of goodness, but because it is His goods that we are distributing if we ever do give.

And the other rock on which he had depended was gradually shivered beneath his feet.

[And therefore I advise that His righteousness be first inquired into, that, pursuing our journey through it, and placed in the way of truth, we may be able to find the true Prophet, running not with swiftness of foot, but with goodness of works, and that, enjoying His guidance, we may be under no danger of mistaking the way.

But for what deserving, except of faith, by which we believe before we see that which is promised?

And again, The word seraphim means either 'glow' or 'beginning of speech,' and the two seraphim thus stand for the Old and New Testaments.

Becoming by this assimilation to the Good all that the nature of that which it participates is, the soul will consequently, owing to there being no lack of any good in that thing itself which it participates, be itself also in no lack of anything, and so will expel from within the activity and the habit of Desire; for this arises only when the thing missed is not found.

After the Grecian period, and in accordance with the dates, as computed by the barbarians, very large intervals are to be assigned.

“That is just what she would say about you.”

It may be as you say, but how is one to tell?

Those who have a right to expect an example of good living, and who think that they do not see it.” Mr. Crawley had gone at once to the root of the matter, and in doing so had certainly made his own task so much the easier.

For who is there that will not desire, while he is in the flesh, to put on immortality, and to continue his life by a happy escape from death, through the transformation which must be experienced instead of it, without encountering too that Hades which will exact the very last farthing?

[Jonah iii] What then, I ask, Was Nineveh overthrown?

That such a man as Lord Liverpool should have been head of the Government for fifteen years is not more wonderful than that such another as Lord Palmerston should during the same long period have filled a subordinate office under him.

For even with men one may see this happening.

We went to work, therefore, and took the votes on the proposition,—Was or was not the story of “ The New Inmate” debarred by the previous resolution against the admission of novels?

“I will be your wife, Larry.” That was the form on which she had determined, should she find herself able to yield.

In this whole series of most beautiful and most subtle distributions and distinctions, it will most easily appear evident from the things we have said already, and from what is to be said hereafter, to any man who is not, in the obstinacy of his heart, an enemy to himself, that it is vain to seek and to hope for, and even most impudent to wish for eternal life.

“Think of their demanding £500!”

I was not his nephew, nor was I responsible for his nephew’s doings towards him.

“Try. There are other things to be done in life except getting married. You are going into Parliament.”

Do for him! Lord George didn’t want his brother to do anything for him. “Live decently, like an English nobleman, and do not outrage your family.” That would have been the only true answer he could have made to such a question. “I thought you would wish to see me after your return,” he said.

“Well then; are you going to marry her, or rather, is she going to marry you, or is she not?”

I had dined lately and had been waited upon by a Coolie.

The one branch, because it is fruitless, cannot even remain in the Vine, but for the other, because it bears fruit, He renders it more fruitful.

You will remember that you wrote to me in October last, telling me that you were about to be married.

“And behave herself as a mother of a family with quite as much propriety?”

Why did He not say, Separate for the Lord, but, For me?

He would be there often early in the morning, and often late at night after Lord Alfred had left him.

“I have lent her the use of the house till her husband shall come back.”

But Lady Ball did not put out hers.

Let her then ask of Him, and hear Why?

“Nay, Duke, it was no pity. Had I done so, you could not have had us both.”

Then we can only swim with the stream.

She made quite clear, as she thought, the infamous plot by which the envelope had been made to give false evidence, and she added the assurance that certainly before long her dear, dearest, illused husband would be restored to her.

He had come there to talk about other things—about other things which must be discussed, and which would require all his wits.

Would it be in the language of our author, or in the words of the Apostle John?

Had there been a question of any other young man marrying her, he would probably have thought that no other young man could have done better.

Do you pray?

Do nothing without the bishops; for they are priests, and you a servant of the priests.

But, with what daring or with what swelling of pride I know not, you have attempted to seize upon a new name, whereby the hearts of all your brethren might have come to take offense.

“You want me to do it, papa?”

There, rudely carved in the wood, was still the word LILY.

She would have been covered with confusion if her rhymes had fallen into the hands of any one of them.

“Still it seems so odd that Eleanor should not have known of it, seeing that we have been talking of nothing else for the last week,” said Mrs. Grantly.

When Julia would be loud in condemnation of her cousin, and would pretend to commiserate the woes of the poor wife who had been left in Australia, though he knew the source of these feelings, he could not be in the least angry with her.

“Like it! no, I wonder av he did; a black-hearted Protestant like him. What business is it a Macdermot would have taking up with the likes of him?”

The door was just ajar and he passed in.

If he could do aught to ease her troubles, he would do it—as a brother would for a sister.

Which is an instance of Hyperbaton, and must be understood in this way: what Jesus began to do and to teach until the day in which he was taken up, giving charge to the apostles whom He had chosen by the Holy Ghost; so that we ought not perhaps to have to give you any further answer in this matter than that of the passage itself, for the entire passage ought to be sufficient for the full truth, if the mutilation of it was available for your falsehood.

Nothing on earth should make him yield to a woman who had illtreated him,—nothing but confession and promise of amendment on her part.

For those who bewail that death which is common to all one might reasonably accuse of much feebleness of spirit; but when in place of a corpse a dead soul lies before us, pierced with innumerable wounds, and yet even in its death manifesting its former natural comeliness, and health, and beauty now extinguished, who can be so harsh and unsympathetic as to utter words of encouragement in place of wailing and lamentation?

For he knew that if the enemy were a very brute, he would not continue an enemy when he had been fed.

Then Mrs. French went home, and early on the following morning it was thought good by Arabella that she also should pay a visit at Ottery St. Mary’s.

Though you should name infinite treasures, none of them is comparable to a genuine friend.

There is an old saying, which the world still holds to be very true, but which is, nevertheless, I think, very false : “ Whatever you do, do well.” Now there are many things which are worth doing which cannot be done well without the devotion of a lifetime, and which certainly are not worth such devotion as that.

Might it not be her paramount duty to do something of this at the present moment?

So much tea for the week, so much sugar, so much flour, and so much salt.

Therefore the name of it is called Confusion; because the Lord did there confound the language of all the earth: and the Lord God scattered them thence on the face of all the earth.

What might be Crosbie’s knowledge on this subject we will not here inquire; but we may say that it would have mattered very little to him out of whose pocket the money came, so long as it went into his own.

His blooming flower shall be my Christ, upon whom has rested, according to Isaiah, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of piety, and of the fear of the Lord.

But should he become theirs, and, as when any slaves mutiny against their master, get enslaved by those slavish thoughts and ignominiously bow before them; a prey to his natural inferiors, he will be forced to turn to those employments which his imperious masters command.

Poets also, trembling not before the judgment-seat of Rhadamanthus or Minos, but of the unexpected Christ!

For as there were records made, and the enemies themselves bore testimony to the facts, the testimony was above suspicion.

For this reason, therefore, is this delusion foretold unto us by the words of Prophets, Evangelists, and Apostles, lest any one should mistake the coming of Antichrist for the coming of Christ.

He first asked Miss Mackenzie whether she had seen that wicked libel.

How should you?

“Well, then—mind, only five minutes,” said the widow, and again left them alone.

For lust is not directed to things which are before us, and subject to our power, but to those which are before us, and not in our power.

“You’ll find it’s so at all other places,” said the squire, apologetically.

But let us now hear the prophet himself, who speaks thus: The hand of the Lord was upon me, and the Lord led me forth in the Spirit, and placed me in the midst of the plain, and it was full of men's bones; and He led me through them round about, and, lo, there were very many bones on the face of the plain, and they were very dry.

Aaron immediately felt ashamed of what he had done; and he also could have cried, but for his manliness. He walked away to one of the parlour-windows, and looked out upon the frosty night. It was dark, but the stars were bright, and he thought that he should like to be walking fast by himself along the line of rails towards Balston. There he stood, perhaps for three minutes. He thought it would be proper to give Susan time to recover from her tears.

Then follows the duty of silence.

There is the great American line, traversing the Atlantic to New York and Boston with the regularity of clockwork.

But she had seen Harry Handcock at least weekly for the last ten years, and having seen him without any speech of love, she was not now prepared for the renewal of such speaking.

Why ought we to give more earnest heed to the things which we have heard?

They were now upon the fell side, more than three miles away from the Hall; and Kate, as she looked round, saw that they were all alone.

As far as he could see she had never been even comfortable since she had been at Loughlinter.

She had no thought of being gentle and loving to him.

[Matthew 28:20] But it is better to be with Christ: For to depart and be with Christ is far better.

Dear Imogene,

Not yet, you holy and venerable Gospels, do I turn your pages, to prove from them that Christ Jesus, amid these changes and sufferings, is God.

“Or the boy Florian?”

But though it may be allowed to the devil to mingle tares, that is, wicked men, with this Church which still wears the mortal nature of flesh, so long as it is wandering far from God, he being allowed this just because of the pilgrimage of the Church herself, that men may desire more ardently the rest of that country which the angels enjoy, yet this cannot be said of the sacraments.

Do you see that the prayer is for nothing else than that they may understand the love which He has towards them?

Orth.— Hear now the holy Paul when he says But when it pleased God who separated me from my mother's womb, and called me by his grace, to reveal his son in me that I might preach him among the heathen, immediately I conferred not with flesh and blood neither went I up to them that were apostles before me. Does he so style the apostles because he blames them?

You had no doubts, you know.

Ver. 16. But I say, Walk by the Spirit, and you shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh.

It was now the beginning of February.

Shall tread through proud Byzantium's stately street;

Was it not that, when that other comes, he may thus find a way to enter into them, and may take to himself him who has prepared those places for him?

Tell them how the streams of fire, from the succession of the lamps, flowed along in an unbroken track of light, and extended so far that the eye could not reach them.

Her stepmother had known the circumstance, but had rarely spoken of it.

He was Lord Privy Seal,—a Lordship of State which does carry with it a status and a seat in the Cabinet, but does not necessarily entail any work.

What we acquire without difficulty, and use with ease, we praise, keep easily, and communicate freely.

John had, of course, expostulated, saying that he did not want anything, and would not, under his existing circumstances, accept anything; but the earl was a man who knew how to have his own way, and in this matter did have it.

Also the water of the sea is vast, and when you take one cup from it, that is called water.

Æquale quidera certe cœlum undequaque extensum totam terrain cingit.

Where, attacks of the devil in the face of the Holy Spirit?— now that the devil himself and his angels are cast into the lake of fire.

“I am sure she does, because I hated Augusta. I do hate Augusta, and my aunt hates me. The only one of the lot I like is Uncle Tom.”

“But, Madame Goesler, you who offer it would yourself despise me if I took it.”

The true light, moreover, being endued with life, knows to whom his full splendours are to be manifested, and to whom his light; for he does not display his brilliancy on account of the still existing weakness in the eyes of the recipient.

“I know you will; I know you will. Oh! doctor, may you never feel as I do now! May you on your deathbed have no dread as I have, as to the fate of those you will leave behind you!”

For God did and does everything, that our conversation might shine forth and be upright on every side.

Secretly I believe him to be a follower of my teaching.

In the words of a famous orator she is to be praised more for what she will be than for what she is.

Assuredly there are predictions of the Manichæans, less clear in the prophets, and most explicit in the apostle.

For he knew this from the following expressions of the prophet about the cherubim: And the glory of the Lord went out from the house and rested on the cherubim; and the cherubim lift up their wings, and the wheels beside them; and the glory of the Lord God of Israel was over them above.

Only there is this difference, the Lord breathed but once into man's face and he lived, while Elisha breathed three times into the face of the dead and he lived again.

For they were two masters whom He named, God and mammon— the Creator and money.

Next, after applying Naboth's history and Christ's entry into Jerusalem to the present state of affairs, he censures Auxentius' cruel law, answers the Arians' objections, and states that he will gladly discuss the matter in the presence of the people.

Tired, hungry, cold, wet, and nearly penniless, I have sat me down and slept among those mountain tracks,—have slept because nature refused to allow longer wakefulness.

And yet we everywhere behold Him desiring and purposing the same things as the Father.

[1 Corinthians 7:2] But to lay up treasure He allowed not, either with cause or without.

Be it so; let us admit that they ought not: but is it lawful to lay this objection in the way of the powers which are ordained for this very purpose?

The Marquis was very desirous that the man who had become so objectionable to him should quit the house.

All this he explained at great length.

And certainly this is the great difference which distinguishes the two cities of which we speak, the one being the society of the godly men, the other of the ungodly, each associated with the angels that adhere to their party, and the one guided and fashioned by love of self, the other by love of God.

For how much soever any one may discourse unto you, you will not be able to hear any of those things which concern you, while your mind is nailed down to money; but bound like a dog to a tomb, by the tyranny of riches, more grievously than by any chain, barking at all that come near you, you have this one employment continually, to keep for others what you have laid up.

But the allusion was soon made.

Of you, who are alive no one has known anything.

Colonel Stubbs, in his letter to her, had declared that he quite agreed with her views as to matrimony; but she was quite alive to her nephew’s sarcasm.

— But if you were to take one of these, and then open the books of their ancient philosophers, and go through them, and institute an enquiry by way of parallel as to what these now answer, and the others in their day philosophically advanced; you would see how much wisdom belonged to the former, and how much folly to the latter.

Mabel had entertained great hopes, thinking, however, that perhaps three or four years must be passed in melancholy gloomy doubts before the path of true love could be made to run smooth; but the light had shone upon her as soon as she saw them standing together.

He knows that He will be shown how, after His Father's example, He is to give life to the dead.

Be this bad year a suggestion of spiritual abundance, and do ye through the exercise of compassion gather in the harvest of the compassion of God.

The Two Candidates for Silverbridge

[Matthew 27:64] When Daniel came up, his accusers were ashamed; and when Jesus rose, all they who had crucified Him were ashamed.

My traveler, however, unless time were plenty with him, would pass Mr. Plaistead, merely lighting a friendly cigar, or perhaps breaking the Maine liquor law if the weather be warm, and would return to Gorham on the railway.

It is when things go badly with us here, and for most of us only then, that we think that we can see through the dark clouds into the joys of heaven.

This is the faithful house, this is the everlasting temple; and if any one has not sacrificed in this, he will not have the reward of immortality.

And what was spoken of Jerusalem?

To them also it was said, Let them have dominion over the fishes.

I have striven to live that down, and I have succeeded.

How, I say, can good be the cause of evil?

Do not women daily, her equals in defilement, but not her equals in confession, harlots, adulteresses, doers of shameful deeds, defend their sins?

“I’m sure it isn’t a taste too strong—and after such work as you’ve had to-day.—And so young Fitzgerald and Father Barney—”

“It seems to me, Fanny, that you almost regret Miss Robarts’s decision,” said Lady Lufton.

“My name is Mr. Thumble,” said the visitor,—”The Reverend Caleb Thumble,” and he held the bishop’s letter in his hand.

A man may be active, may press his suit even a tenth time, may do something towards achieving success.

[Proverbs 13:8] Annon aperte indicat, quod sicut mundus componitur ex contrariis, nempe ex calido et frigido, humido et sicco, ita etiam ex iis qui dant, et ex iis qui accipiunt?

I shall at last retire within our own lines and firmly hold my ground there, for the purpose of proving to the Christian (the soundness of) my answers to the Philosophers and the Physicians.

A. I attend.

“Maybe I did—maybe I didn’t; I disremember thim little things.”

“You sometimes are a little bitter, sir.”

That the Lord would certainly give good counsel to such a suppliant, if asked aright, she was quite sure.

“Yes; there’ll be mother and Mary, of course. But I will come over here the very first day,—that is, if you’ll care to see me?”

You’re afraid to come down with the stumpy,—that’s what you are.” George put his hand upon his purse, and acknowledged to himself that he had been afraid to come down with the stumpy.

But, nevertheless, Mrs. Grantly took Griselda to Mrs. Proudie’s evening parties in London.

“Dog in the manger, you mean.”

But you will perhaps say, She is goddess of the Romans only, and, being on the side of the Quirites alone, is ever ready graciously to help them.

Nothing was said openly between them about poor Eleanor, but the father and the daughter understood each other.

But an alteration in that direction is in itself desirable.

The woman’s evidence was absolutely so tainted,—was defiled with perjury.

But it will be said, If you knew these things, why did you praise him in your works?

And she would have done so had she not been afraid of meeting with Colonel Askerton.

Yet by all is He loved, by all is He preached; because He is excellently anointed, therefore He is Christ: for He is called Christ from the Chrism or anointing which He had.

In this way then He destroyed wisdom.

“Not he;—it isn’t his ways, and them as knows him’ll never say it of him. John has a heart in his buzsom.”

Accordingly every one that yearns for eternal life when he has found the Son—I mean the true Son, and not the Son falsely so called— has found in Him in its entirety what he longed for, because He is life and has life in Himself.

The fault is, that it lacks that which we all demand.

But all that was changed with her.

But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all.

Nevertheless, he says, we have not used this power.

For bringing them up and educating them.

Then the Duke wrote a cheque for the money claimed and sent it with a note, as follows:—”The Duke of Omnium presents his compliments to Lord Percival.

Chapter XCIX. Conclusion

What if, after all, Mrs. Proudie knew nothing of this visit of Mr. Slope’s?

[Deuteronomy 34:6] And do we, every time that we enter the basilicas of apostles and prophets and martyrs, pay homage to the shrines of idols?

Moreover, he again speaks of the life of Jesus as a most infamous life, as he has done before, not once or twice, but many times, although he does not stay to specify any of the actions of His life which he thinks most infamous.

If, then, the men who teach the principles of eloquence have been forced by truth to confess this in the very books which treat of eloquence, though they were ignorant of the true, that is, the heavenly wisdom which comes down from the Father of Lights, how much more ought we to feel it who are the sons and the ministers of this higher wisdom!

Of amusement, as far as I can remember, he never recognised the need.

But perhaps I have deserved it.

For, as we read, Christ has come to save that which was lost, [Luke 19:10] and to be Lord both of the dead and living.

No, massa; no starve now; God send plenty yam.

“He will be very comfortable without any such word,” said Lily, laughing.

And then from day to day, and from hour to hour, he remembered that these ills were added to the death of that son, who, had he lived, would have been such a glory to him.

Hunting had long been over then, but the great hunting difficulty was in course of solution, and Larry took his part in the matter.

“No; I forgot. It—it was I that said that; and she said—what was it she said? She said, that after all, beauty was but skin deep—and that she valued you for your virtues and prudence rather than your good looks.”

“It is untrue, then?” asked Lady Glencora.

But this was now all gone; his eyes were sunken and watery, his cheeks were hollow and wan, his mouth was drawn and his lips dry; his back was even bent, and his legs were unsteady under him, so that he had been forced to step down from his carriage as an old man would do.

Chapter 17 Inquiry into the production of the Æons: whatever its supposed nature, it is in every respect inconsistent; and on the hypothesis of the heretics, even Nous and the Father Himself would be stained with ignorance

“Ah; but you do not understand. She begged that I would not desert her in her loneliness. We have been so much together that I could not desert her.”

He had said not a word to his father in regard to Florian, fearing to touch upon a subject which, as he well knew, must be very sore.

To love their children. This is well added, since she who loves the root, will much more love the fruit.

Having a handle to my name, and being a lord, or, at least, called a lord, makes it all the worse.

“What did I say to her?” and he repeated her words in a very low voice. “I asked her if she could love me, and be my wife.”

And then, which is the hardest thing of all, I must have known him intimately for at any rate, ten years.

But beyond this there was not much conversation.

But not on that account did he think of changing his purpose.

To her thinking Ayala was not entitled to a husband at all.

And that this is true, you will understand when you hear what were his words.

I could do nothing to help you.

There remains therefore a great subject of inquiry, the discussion of which does not come from talent, but from knowledge: and this must be explained at greater length, that nothing at all may be left in doubt.

For a beginning, let none have any enemy: this (in itself) is not a small matter: let none envy; it is not possible to accuse the man who envies not.

The violence did not amount to more than “nearly” killing this man or the other.

[Matthew 17:2-4] In that same scene Moses also and Elias gave proof that the same condition of bodily existence may continue even in glory— the one in the likeness of a flesh which he had not yet recovered, the other in the reality of one which he had not yet put off.

The Irish car no doubt has both these merits,—carries four and runs on two wheels; but the wheels are necessarily so low that they are ill adapted for passing serious obstructions.

Thus, what it was necessary for you to learn of Him, this He Himself has said; that the Virgin was untouched by man until the birth; but that which both was seen to be a consequence of the former statement, and was acknowledged, this in its turn he leaves for you to perceive; namely, that not even after this, she having so become a mother, and having been counted worthy of a new sort of travail, and a child-bearing so strange, could that righteous man ever have endured to know her.

And yet the laws are full of punishment and restraint, and there is no such thing as law without penalty and coercion.

But things that are opposed to one another in essence have not one nature, and, therefore, soul and body cannot have one essence.

He had not married a rich man’s daughter without an intention of getting the rich man’s money!

And it was not true that Mr. Moss had sent that abominable message to Rachel.

Phineas resolved that he must at any rate play out his game,—whether he were to lose it or to win it; and in playing it he must, if possible, drop something of that Mentor and Telemachus style of conversation.

But this is not a contradiction.

The servant who brought it had asked for an answer, and a verbal answer had been sent, saying that Miss Robarts was away from home, and would herself send a reply when she returned.

For Was and Will Be are fragments of our time, and of changeable nature.

But, if he at no time recovers the exercise of a sound mind, a person should be sought adorned with good life and conversation, who may be able both to take charge of souls, and look with salutary control after the causes and interests of the same church; and he should be such as may succeed to the bishop's place in case of his surviving him.

[Psalm 8:6] And with favor You have crowned us with a shield.

What is that, you will say, to me?

Let me ever buy in the cheapest market and sell in the dearest.

Heaven forbid that I should take upon myself to find fault with anything so pleasant and so innocent!

She was of such a nature that, when she had given herself up in marriage, she would surely learn to love her husband.

That would have been the easiest line, but then Father John had especially barred that!

“I don’t know why you should say so. I intended to be understood as expressing my mind.”

Timothy [378-385]

“Boisterous, George? Was I boisterous?”

“I must draw the country regularly,” muttered the Master.

Her father wanted to give him at least a thousand pounds; but Mr Gazebee has told me confidentially that it literally cannot be done at the present moment!

The pontiff Aaron, we read, faced the raging flames, and by putting fire in his censer checked the wrath of God.

2. And the multitude of believers, both men and women, that were collected there at the very outset, and lived lives of the most philosophical and excessive asceticism, was so great, that Philo thought it worth while to describe their pursuits, their meetings, their entertainments, and their whole manner of life.

He quite understood that Nora was not to go back to the Islands.

“Then, considering your position, you have made a promise which it behoves you to break. I am sure Lady Glencora will see it in that light.”

And that certain atmospheric exhalations arise in places where the stars shine; wherefore, also, when these exhalations are obstructed, that eclipses take place.

It could not have served to pay the postage on a letter from Sydney to Nobble in May 1873, seeing that it had not then been in existence.

On our arrival we were somewhat angry with the very civil and considerate CERES.

For those who are full of evil learning, even with their breath infect as with madness those who associate with them, with their own passions.

On this account He often seizes this nature of ours wantoning in prosperity, and travailing with a fever of sins, and by want, and hunger, and death and other calamities and the rest of the medicines of which He knows, frees us from diseases.

Margaret. You do not touch me with your raillery. ‘Tis not well aimed; it does not hit the mark.

For not that which enters into, but that which comes out of the mouth defiles the man.

“Is it necessary that I should see it?” he asked.

And again, they abolish the unity of substance, both name and thing, because the heretics hold that the unity is divisible; and deny that the Son is God from God, by refusing to believe that He is truly possessed of the Divine nature.

“After all, he is a clever man,” she said, as she went home, “or he could never slip about as he does, like an eel, and that with so very little motion.”

And here I may as well say what further there is for me to say about those two heroes.

Though a passing glance be directed towards any man, let your eyes look fixedly at none; for when you are walking you are not forbidden to see men, but you must neither let your desires go out to them, nor wish to be the objects of desire on their part.

“I don’t know why you should be so very little with me,” said Lady Ushant, almost whining. “When I was at Cheltenham you wanted to come to me.”

S. Gregory left Constantinople in June, A.D. 381, and Tillemont places the date of this Oration soon after his return to Nazianzus.

Mr Peters was now very old, and I am disposed to think he had forgotten all about it.

4. And to an innumerable company of angels. Here he shows the joy, the delight, in place of the blackness and darkness and tempest.

Whence the doctrine that unity (of marriage) must be observed derives confirmation; inasmuch as that which is not found to be permitted by the Lord is acknowledged to be forbidden.

He truly proves that he was worthy of holding that office, had the interests of peace permitted him to do so, who does not insist upon retaining it when he cannot do so without endangering the peace of the Church.

Nay surely, says one, it is new also when part of it has been taken away, and part not.

But Sir Orlando and Sir Timothy and Mr. Rattler, who were all within hearing, thought that the Duchess had intended to allude to the servile nature of their position; and Mr. Boffin, who heard it, rejoiced within himself, comforting himself with the reflection that his withers were unwrung, and thinking with what pleasure he might carry the anecdote into the farthest corners of the clubs.

In the course of the next week two affairs of moment occurred to Miss Mackenzie.

If there be no chance, of what use is his labour?

Yet they were wicked husbandmen, they had slain the prophets, they were then compassing the death of the Lord; [Matthew 21:33] and so utterly lost were they that the Son of God told them that it was they whom he had come to save.

It is incredible that Jesus Christ should have risen in the flesh and ascended with flesh into heaven; it is incredible that the world should have believed so incredible a thing; it is incredible that a very few men, of mean birth and the lowest rank, and no education, should have been able so effectually to persuade the world, and even its learned men, of so incredible a thing.

“He makes work for himself,” says Paterfamilias angrily.

Sitting there she said nothing; neither in truth did she eat anything.

Wherefore the Lord was baptized with the baptism of John, that He might bend the proud necks of men to His own health-giving baptism; and He was not alone baptized with it, lest He should show His own to be inferior to this, with which none but He Himself had deserved to be baptized; and He did not allow it to continue longer, lest the one baptism with which He baptizes might seem to need the other to precede it.

[Matthew 10:28] And therefore let us flee from this, and choose that deadness which is held blessed and admirable; that of the other two, we may escape the one and not fear the other: for it is not the least good to us to see the sun, and to eat and drink, unless the life of good words be with us.

Let us hope that he was no dog in the manger; that the feelings which he now entertained for poor Archie would not have been roused against any other possible suitor who might have been named as a fitting husband for Lady Ongar. Lady Ongar could be nothing to him.

in the mind.

He who in His humility feared no man, will He fear any man in His glory?

I have made a mistake, my friend.

Eustochium's affection for her mother, always true and tried, in this time of sickness approved itself still more to all.

He simply remarked that he did not think the young lady could be induced to go, and suggested that everybody had better wait till the Solicitor-General returned to town.

We may say that he would have been much better contented could he have been allowed to go down the street without any encumbrance on his arm. But there was no possibility now for such deliverance as that.

“But I think that I can love you as honestly and as firmly as a younger one. I think that if you could bring yourself to be my wife, you would find that you would not be treated badly.”

If His death was but a show, they were true who said, We remember that that deceiver said, while He was yet alive, After three days I rise again.

I by no means say that he was not a brute.

This note he sent away by a messenger, who came back with a reply, saying that Mr. Puddicombe would himself preach in the afternoon, and would afterwards call in at the rectory.

Chapter 50.

But how holy was that widow, who, when pinched by extreme hunger, observed the reverence due to God, and was not using the food for herself alone, but was dividing it with her son, that she might not outlive her dear offspring.

I would rather choose to be Peter, for whose sake even the Angel came, yea, I would that I might enjoy those chains.

And yet none with so great frenzy clings to vice as he did to the war against the Church.

[1 Timothy 5:11-12] It is then for these who have outraged Christ their Spouse by committing fornication against Him (for this is the sense of the Greek word [καταστρηνιάσωσι])— it is for these that the apostle wishes a second marriage, thinking digamy preferable to fornication; but this second marriage is a concession and not a command.

This sibyl of Erythræ certainly wrote some things concerning Christ which are quite manifest, and we first read them in the Latin tongue in verses of bad Latin, and unrhythmical, through the unskillfulness, as we afterwards learned, of some interpreter unknown to me.

that He may make men renounce falsely called gods, and that they may recognise Him the true God instead.

For there all will praise and applaud and welcome you.

A short time ago some brethren were massacred by the barbarians even in those deserts of Egypt in which, in order to perfect security, they had chosen places remote from all disturbance as the sites of their monasteries.

“That’s just it: you are so ferocious in your scorn, so unbending, so determined to take all the punishment that comes in your way.”

Should one in boldness say, Lo, I am God!

The time was not long enough to enable him to come to any decision: at the end of the five minutes he was still gazing vacantly before him: he was still turning over in his brain, one after another, the same crowd of undigested schemes.

For him, however, means when sentence is passed upon him.

But possibly these stars which have been called by their names are these gods.

Far be it For even the Apostle Paul through unbelief had been broken, and through faith unto the root he was restored.

We will hereafter consider why these things happen.

He would dine at his club, he said, and perhaps he might go down to Fulham on the following morning.

Laurence Fitzgibbon had eaten the bread of idleness, and yet he was promoted.

For if it were a solitary case only of the man who was cast into outer darkness for not having on the wedding garment, He would not have gone on at once to give it a plural turn, by saying: For many are called, but few are chosen; [Matthew 22:14] whereas it is plain that, after the one was cast out and condemned, many still remained behind in the house.

Lord George said that he could hardly explain the reason.

Mrs. Jones was still thoroughly a Saxon, although she had lived for so many years among the Celts. But it was only when she was quite alone that she allowed herself the indulgence of so peculiarly Saxon a mode of expressing either her surprise or indignation.

If things could not then be arranged to his satisfaction, Linda should be regarded as altogether a castaway.

Discover, if you can, the inferiority, when Both are equal in honour; make out the weakness, when Both work with the same power.

Chapter XIX. Hetta Carbury Hears a Love Tale

“He is still in middle life, and he can marry. That is what he intended to do, so much is he disgusted with his nephew. He has already stopped the young man’s allowance, and swears that he shall not have a shilling of his money if he can help it. The police for some time were in great doubt whether they would not arrest him. I think I am justified in saying that he is a thorough reprobate.”

“Oh, mamma, you do not know him.”

Is He unwilling to pay?

For "the mouth that belies slays the soul."

It is then he should restrain him, and give him a rule to live by; should impose a discipline upon him: or if he has done so, and the other has not taken heed, then was the time when he ought to have been mourned over; then he was more fatally dead while living in luxury, than when, by death, he brought his luxury to its close: at that time, when he was doing such things in your house, he was not only dead, but he stank also.

Who has frequented the recesses of the desert and shunned intercourse with all men in such a way that he never trips by unnecessary thoughts, and by looking on things or being occupied in earthly actions falls away from that contemplation of God, which truly alone is good?

“Certainly not;—certainly not.”

Did he mean to go to the dogs?

For the first measures of the recently appointed prior in presiding over you are so hindered by your disorderly behaviour, that he is himself disposed to leave you, rather than be subjected on your account to the dishonour and odium which must arise from the report going abroad, that you would not have sought another prioress unless you had begun to have him as your prior.

“Yes; it would be convenient.”

And in some degree too his conduct sprung from jealousy, for at supper they reasoned which of them is the greater, [Luke 22:24] to such a degree did this passion trouble them.

Thus as these two persons wrote contrary to one another, and each confirmed his own procedure by the testimony of the Divine word, as it usually happens, every one identified himself with that view which favored his previous habits and inclinations.

The father prostrated himself on the earth and wept over the son who was still alive, and not knowing what other measures to take towards effecting the recovery of his son, he dispatched some of his attendants to Basil to come and visit the prostrate child; because he himself feared to summon the bishop, on account of the injury just inflicted upon him.

He would betray nothing that had been said to him in confidence.

She could bear much.

IX.— Fragment of the Treatise on Marriage.

CRAWLEY. There is unfortunately a stain which is vicarial. (Then he-break down.) Captain Oakley, I am sore beset, but what can I say to you? My darling is as pure as the light of day,—only that she is soiled with my impurity. She is fit to grace the house of the best gentleman in England,—had I not made her unfit.

She would not have been on a level with the wives and daughters of Cabinet Ministers.

Why does he not mention them specifically?

Onions and garlic are the heralds of their doings: as is the food so is the understanding, of this defiled people.— 19.

“You’ve been the ruin of him, I think,” said Charlotte.

And when we heard this, the words of this Conference so fired us that when we went away from the old man's cell we longed with a keener ardour of soul than when we first came, for the fulfilment of his teaching.

“It’s as much fatigue as anything,” said the wife.

For He shall rain snares upon the sinners: which is to be taken according to the exposition above given, and so on with all the rest to the end of the Psalm.

There were many others stationed there as I was, but to them had been given a capability for loafing which niggardly Nature has denied to me.

A tablet was then given to him, which is still carefully preserved.

She had been more wretched still at St. Diddulph’s, and all the outward circumstances of life in her uncle’s parsonage had been very wearisome to her; but she had striven against it all, and the sheen and outward brightness had still been there.

With respect, however, to the following being ranked among the works of the flesh, viz., heresies, and envyings, and contentions, or other (vices), they so understand the passage, that the mind, being rendered grosser in feeling, from its yielding itself to the passions of the body, and being oppressed by the mass of its vices, and having no refined or spiritual feelings, is said to be made flesh, and derives its name from that in which it exhibits more vigour and force of will.

In either case there would be no necessity for breaking up the house at Cosby Lodge.

But there had been a mystery attached to that other murder, perpetrated in the court, which had acted strongly on the other side,—on behalf of the League.

I will receive the cup of salvation, and will call upon the name of the Lord.

Your father Abraham rejoiced to see My day, and he saw it, and was glad.

But among that godless, riotous, ungoverned and ungovernable set of new householders, there was no knowing how to act.

Much does He discourse concerning her: so He loves her.

“Yes, something is very wrong.” They had strolled out of the building, and were walking up and down the gravel terrace in front when this was said.

Next; since to will also is from God, he has attributed the whole to God with reason.

And it was with the object of doing this, of reducing every £10 by some percentage, twenty per cent.

The chances are that not half the crowd are guests at the hotel.

And when we were all fallen down to the ground, I heard a voice saying unto me in the Hebrew tongue, Saul, Saul, why do you persecute Me?

Every discursive effort of thought to go back beyond the ages will ascend only so far as to see that that which it seeks can never be passed through: time and its contents seem the measure and the limit of the movement and the working of human thought, but that which lies beyond remains outside its reach; it is a world where it may not tread, unsullied by any object that can be comprehended by man.

“He should not be here now,” he said, shuddering. “I wish he had been moved before I came. I will not have this room any more; remember that.” She led him up to the foot of the little cot, which stood close by the head of her own bed, and then she removed a handkerchief which lay upon the child’s face.

A farmer’s horse is never lame, never unfit to go, never throws out curbs, never breaks down before or behind.

And the parents of the blind man said these things for fear of the Jews, lest they should be put out of the synagogue.

Ver. 25.— But if we hope for that we see not, then do we with patience wait for it.

So it is with the mental efforts which men make.

For there is no sea to be crossed, nor long journey to be travelled, nor summits of mountains to be passed over, nor money to be spent, no need to torment your body; but it suffices to be willing only, and all our sins are done away.

Then it was grievous that he should have to let himself out of the front door without attendance.

Be astonished at the wisdom which adorned it!

I have said enough touching the designation Earth, by which he will have it that Matter is understood.

And in fifteen years Lady Anna will be supposed by everybody to have made a very happy marriage.” Lord Lovel was at this time inclined to be submissive in everything to his great adviser, and was now ready to take Mr. Daniel Thwaite by the hand.

He advised it, commenced it, carried it on, and completed it His hand—instant, urgent, and pressing—is to be seen in it throughout.

Chapter X. Mrs. Dick’s Dinner Party.—No. II

He had not absolutely heard that the men whom he was going to meet that night, and whom he knew he meant to join, intended to murder Ussher; but Brady had told him that they were determined to have a fling at him, and it was by their promise to treat the attorney in the same way, that Thady had been induced to come down to them.

And then Mr. Supplehouse felt that he was the master mind there at Gatherum Castle, and that those there were all puppets in his hand.

“Do you mean to say—?”

But he feared.

[Deuteronomy 5:16] And let this commandment be especially observed by those here present who have fathers and mothers.

For far greater is it to feed Christ when an hungered than to raise the dead by the name of Jesus: for in the former case you do good to Christ, in the latter He to you.

, bishop of Pettau, was not equally familiar with Latin and Greek. On this account his works though noble in thought, are inferior in style. They are the following: Commentaries On Genesis, On Exodus, On Leviticus, On Isaiah, On Ezekiel, On Habakkuk, On Ecclesiastes, On the Song of Songs, On the Apocalypse of John, Against all heresies and many others. At the last he received the crown of martyrdom.

[John 11:12] His disciples said unto him, Our Lord, if he has [58] fallen asleep, he will recover.

They have been aided by the fanatical abolitionism of the North by which the Republican party has been divided into two sections.

“Lady Clavering is not in town this Spring,” said the captain.

Little as he, Phineas, himself had done in the House in his two sessions and a half, Mr. Kennedy had hardly done more in his fifteen or twenty.

This was not what he said, not what he hoped.

And lastly they wrote more plainly, and concisely, that the Son was coessential with the Father; for all the above passages signify this.

And how can that be defiled which has no corporeal substance; or where can corruption seat itself, where there is no place on which the mark of this very corruption should fasten?

Lord Chiltern; I thought you were at daggers drawn with Chiltern.” “They say he is going to be reconciled to his father, Gustavus, and I do it for Lord Brentford’s sake.

: that of the anchorites, as we were incited thereto by the praises of it by everybody.

For now it is the immense number of Christians which makes your enemies so few—almost all the inhabitants of your various cities being followers of Christ.

The old man lived on wine alone, but at the end of the fortnight he still lived, and the tidings of the fall of the ministry became more frequent.

[Romans 3:20] Now, however, the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets.

Chapter 15. Simon's Disciples Adopt the Mysteries; Simon Meets St. Peter at Rome; Account of Simon's Closing Years.

Then, as a further consequence, he was turned out of the house,—and, as he declared to himself, utterly ruined.

In no wise; and very reasonably and justly so.

Even for the sake of the seat,—even for the sake of his reputation, which was so much dearer to him than the seat,—he could not have bidden guests, who had come to him in his own room, to go elsewhere if they required wine.

Lord George de Bruce Carruthers had in truth been her Corsair, and she had found the thing which she liked to do, and would soon know how to do.

See His divine nature in the power to raise again, and recognise in His death the dispensation of His manhood.

He had as good as told her in what had been her offence, and of course, when she had remedied that offence, he could hardly refuse to return to her.

For now, indeed, if I were able to become serviceable to others, I should wish it myself, and this would be a matter of prayer with me.

He had been there by chance, and it had been quite by chance that he found Clarissa alone.

And this again is the peculiarity of harlots, that they are his who gives the gold.

If he called them gods unto whom the word of God came and the scripture cannot be broken, say ye of Him whom the Father has sanctified and sent into the world you blaspheme, because I said I am the Son of God?

“No; don’t do that.”

And here he found himself in luck.

Then comes the Sacred Night, the Anniversary of the confused darkness of the present life, into which the primæval darkness is dissolved, and all things come into life and rank and form, and that which was chaos is reduced to order.

He goes not on to what lies before Him, until He have well cleared out the former topics.

Thus it comes to pass, that good cannot exist without an evil.

In brief, he was placed in his litter, as a corpse is laid in its tomb, to return in the freshness and strength of youth, with head erect, having been strengthened by the imposition of hands and unction, and, it is not too much to say by the head of him who was anointed.

What is this but that He stood for succor, and the earth was moved to believe?

‘I don’t think I am at all well-treated here among you,’ said Adrian Urmand to George as soon as they were alone.

Where he all but expressly arraigns the tongues of the present day which sever the Godhead.

But when Mr. Caldigate insisted on the parson owning the unreasonableness of his own belief, and called upon him to confess himself to be either a fool or a hypocrite, then the parson found himself constrained to drop all further intercourse.

“There will be no difficulty about that, I should say.”

And in the land of Shinar, among those called Chaldæans, the first king was Arioch, and next after him Ellasar, and after him Chedorlaomer, king of Elam, and after him Tidal, king of the nations called Assyrians.

But I had long foreseen that the first deposition should be effected with some éclat of voluntary glory.

Ain’t they a beautiful match?

For since in six days God made the heaven and the earth, and finished the whole world, and rested on the seventh day from all His works which He had made, and blessed the seventh day and sanctified it, [Genesis 2:1] so by a figure in the seventh month, when the fruits of the earth have been gathered in, we are commanded to keep the feast to the Lord, which signifies that, when this world shall be terminated at the seventh thousand years, when God shall have completed the world, He shall rejoice in us.

Lady Ball was very quiet, and very dignified; but Miss Mackenzie perceived that she was always called “Margaret,” and not “my dear,” as had been her aunt’s custom.

He had received one “put off”—from the Ingoldsbys of Kent.

Then there was a pause for a moment, after which Lord Hampstead went on in an altered voice. “Has he said anything to you since he was at Hendon;—as to my family, I mean?”

O earth, hear the word of the Lord.

Although the apostle speaks of earthen vessels [2 Corinthians 6:7] he refers to man, who was originally clay.

Why are you delaying, executioner?

“It is all very well talking, Patience, but I don’t mean to try to change,” Clarissa said.

Reply. These persons are not doubtful of their baptism, but profess ignorance as to the faith of those who baptized them: and hence since they have received the form of baptism in some way or other, they are not to be baptized but are to be united to the Catholics by imposition of hands, after the invocation of the Holy Spirit's power, which they could not receive from heretics.

But since God is not dependent on the nature of trees, but is the Creator of their natures, the unfruitful, and dry, and barkless rod budded, and blossomed, and bare almonds.

or whatever of barbarian nations has remained yet to be gone unto, and to be filled of the peace of the Church, have they undertaken?

The Kappa-Kappa

“In a half-and-half sort of a way. I laugh at him, and then do as I’m bid. He makes everybody do what he bids them at Clavering—except papa, sometimes. But he scolds him, too. I heard him the other day in the library.”

Violence shall no more be heard in your land, desolation nor destruction within your borders.

‘That is to say, Mr. Caldigate, I am bound in courtesy to you to make some such civil reply as I should have made had I not been employed in your case, and had circumstances then induced you to make such a statement to me.

It might be all very well recommending Mr. Arabin to marry, but how would Mr. Arabin, when married, support a wife?

“It would be imprudent, Colonel Osborne; and could not be permitted in this house.”

Fate, which had made Harcourt a member of Parliament, seemed to intend him, Bertram, to be an author.

As Basil, however, and his party were averse to the council being held in this city, because doctrinal questions had previously been agitated there, it was determined to hold the council at Nicomedia in Bithynia; and edicts were issued, summoning the most intelligent and eloquent bishops of every nation to repair there punctually on an appointed day, so that it might be the privilege of all the priests of the state to share in the Synod and to be present at its decisions.

When by this time the human race had increased to a great multitude, certain angels, whose habitation was in heaven, were captivated by the appearance of some beautiful virgins, and cherished illicit desires after them, so much so, that falling beneath their own proper nature and origin, they left the higher regions of which they were inhabitants, and allied themselves in earthly marriages.

‘It is bad,’ says he.

“He is not quite such a black swan with me as he is with you; but still I think he will succeed, if he takes care of himself. It is astonishing how that absurd story of his duel with Chiltern has got about.”

His due would not be given to the breeches-maker if it were not acknowledged that on this occasion he behaved very well.

Again, what strength could one perceive in the clouds, that that passage may have a true sense, according to its apparent intention, which says that the clouds above have been made strong?

Of which it says in Deuteronomy: If there rise up in the midst of you a prophet, or one who says that he has seen a dream, and declare a sign and a wonder, and that which he has spoken comes to pass, and he say to you: Let us go and follow after other gods whom you know not, and let us serve them: you shall not hear the words of that prophet or of that dreamer, for the Lord your God is tempting you that it may appear whether you love Him or not, with all your heart and with all your soul.

What’s the good of going on in that way?

Surely, surely, names are not things which deserve punishment by the sword, or the cross, or the beasts.

“Your discretion has found that out, has it?”

Miss O’Mahony’s voice had proved itself to him to be worth matrimony,—that and her beauty together.

Wherefore even before He came, John said, One comes after me who is preferred before me.

She had made a sudden resolve that Lord Fawn should not escape her, and she had gone to work after the fashion we have seen.

The construction is arranged altogether in reference to snow, so that the snow itself should afford protection against the cold, and then run off without causing damp.

Therefore I spoke what I knew, not what I foreknew.]

This is an impromptu letter without logical order or charm of style.

For the very indolence of the mind, when it is not kindled with befitting fervour, gets cut off by a torpor that stealthily grows upon it from all desire of good things.

Let the Jews, then, be led astray, since they so will: but let the Church of God be glorified.

“Yes; we start tomorrow,” said Clara.

Since then, I have remained by myself, though I have all confidence to answer for my conduct, in the first place before God, and also before your Piety, for that I did not flee and desert my people, but can point to the attack of the General upon us, as a proof of persecution.

Die lose his new pupil.

Moreover, the good reason of what He did may be seen thus; if God had but spoken, because it was in His power, and so the curse had been undone, the power had been shown of Him who gave the word, but man had become such as Adam was before the transgression, having received grace from without , and not having it united to the body; (for he was such when he was placed in Paradise) nay, perhaps had become worse, because he had learned to transgress.

He could see exactly where the fire had commenced, and could trace the efforts that had been made to stop it.

It was a disgrace to him,—to him within his own bosom,—that she should have preferred to him such a one as Ferdinand Lopez, and this disgrace he exaggerated, ignoring the fact that the girl herself might be deficient in judgment, or led away in her love by falsehood and counterfeit attractions.

Also in the same place: The imprudent man declares his anger on the same day, but the crafty man hides away his dishonour.

Even this was a joy to us, for we were being carried away from Eden.

But matters would not arrange themselves exactly as she wished.

But how can He, to whom the things that are belong, need anything?

“September was the nicest month in the year,” he said, “for getting married and going abroad.

He took it,—as the champagne prescribed by Sir Omicron, or the few mouthfuls of chicken broth which were administered to him by the old lady with the smart cap; but it may be doubted whether he thought much more of the one remedy than of the other.

I confess unto You Your gifts, O Lord my God, Creator of all, and of exceeding power to reform our deformities; for of me was there naught in that boy but the sin.

“Do you mean, Miss Todd, that you will prefer to live in solitude for ever?”

“Indeed I will, Father John, but do you be gentle with her. She’s brokenhearted now; you’ll find her very different from the hot-headed creature she was before her sorrows began.”

Chapter 1. The Heathen Gods from Heathen Authorities. Varro Has Written a Work on the Subject. His Threefold Classification. The Changeable Character of that Which Ought to Be Fixed and Certain.

Nay, whoever sits in a chair or on a bench, will act contrary to that writing.

He sent up his name, with his compliments, and the Countess allowed him to be shown into her room.

These things then being thus confessed, we exhort you not hastily to condemn those who so confess, and so explain the phrases they use, nor to reject them, but rather to accept them as they desire peace and defend themselves, while you check and rebuke, as of suspicious views, those who refuse so to confess and to explain their language.

I have, however, heard it alleged, by a man of undoubted veracity, who was very intimate with the monks above mentioned, that the enmity of Theophilus towards Isidore originated from two causes.

Not to be looked at, but to be read about in the newspapers, was his ambition.

He received it, it was given into his own power; going to a far country, he squandered it all with harlots.

“I ain’t a-going anywhere, Mrs Baggett, because of them strawberries being tied down which, if you untie them, as I always intended, will have the sperrits put on them as well now as ever. And as for your going mad, Mrs Baggett, I hope it won’t be along of me.”

But afterwards they say that Asclepius improved the art.

Hitherto he had received no pay for what he had done.

“Not going! and why not?”

Now this ratio of the single to the double arises, no doubt, from the ternary number, since one added to two makes three; but the whole which these make reaches to the senary, for one and two and three make six.

The Spaniards had probably reached as luxurious a mode of living as any European people when they achieved their American possessions, but I have no hesitation in saying that the Spaniards who now inhabit the ranches and remote farms of Costa Rica or Columbia are in a poorer condition of life than the Dutch Boers of the Transvaal.

“Peter,” she said, “I am sure that you don’t think that I love you.”

And what justice would there be if, being grieved that support was refused to a few priests, they denied it to all, since the vengeance would be more unbearable than the fault?

“Why mayn’t we live at Cross Hall, Sarah?” she said.

Wherefore this in the first place you ought to know, that by the good, which you have chosen, second marriages are not condemned, but are set in lower honor.

She, too, was greatly altered. Not that her beauty had faded, or that the lines of her face were changed; but her gait and manners were more composed; her dress was so much more simple, that, though not less lovely, she certainly looked older than when he had last seen her. She was thinner too, and, in the light-gray silk which she wore, seemed to be taller, and to be paler too.

I am filled with indignation and grief for my Christ (and would that you might sympathize with me) when I see my Christ dishonoured on this account on which He most merited honour.

“I am happy because I love him. I have always loved him. You have known that.”

but he believed: yet, because he believed, he did not therefore sleep: no; what was in his own power by means of human wisdom, he did not abandon.

“Let dogs delight to bark and bite,

“Indeed he has,” said the lady,—” what I call the very troublesomest of troubles. If you was troubled like him, John, where’d you be?”

Who will approve of our conduct, if we reject in his absence one, whose presence among us we gladly welcomed, and admitted him to our communion?

16. The Life May Be the Light of Others Besides.

When, then, the word was of old among the Jews, it was not so among them as it is among the Gentiles; wherefore it is said that, in a boat,— that is, in the body— He went to the desert place apart, when He heard about the killing of the prophet.

And thus he who hears these disgraceful things, will neither think that any good thing ought to be done, since the conferring of benefits has reference to the advantage of another; nor that he ought to abstain from guilt, because the doing of evil is attended with gain.

Thus when we have to face the hard and cruel necessity of death, we are upheld by this consolation, that we shall shortly see again those whose absence we now mourn.

“It’s some sham, some falsehood,” said the Squire.

For silly are they who, from greed, take delight in what they have hoarded up.

He was justified not only by works, but also by faith : for though he did many things well, yet he was never called the friend of God , except when he believed.

Pompey had his triumph; but the same aristocratic airs which had annoyed Cicero had offended others. He was shorn of his honors. Only two days were allowed for his processions. He was irritated, jealous, and no doubt desirous of making his power felt; but he thought of no diadem. Cæsar saw it all; and he thought of that conspiracy which we have since called the First Triumvirate.

That they are not drunken, he shows immediately by his very voice, that they are not beside themselves, as the soothsayers: and this too, that they were not constrained by some compulsory force.

For had He indeed waited to hear and learn, this would have fallen far short of His glory.

Then the bishop was left alone for an hour to write the letter which Mr. Thumble was to carry over to Mr. Crawley,—and after a while he did write it.

2. Constantine, who was the superior both in dignity and imperial rank, first took compassion upon those who were oppressed at Rome, and having invoked in prayer the God of heaven, and his Word, and Jesus Christ himself, the Saviour of all, as his aid, advanced with his whole army, proposing to restore to the Romans their ancestral liberty.

But he attempted (to establish) certain novel (tenets), and affirmed that there existed certain invisible Aeons.

[Daniel 10:20-21] And again: At that time shall Michael rise up, the great prince, who stands for the children of your people.

He had failed in obtaining a father’s control over the young man; and even in regard to the property which had passed through his hands,—though he had been careful with it,—he had not been adroit.

Lady Lufton, who, as I have said, thought much of clerical matters, did not carry her High Church principles so far as to advocate celibacy for the clergy.

It is probable that when they have learned what has befallen him, in fear of a like fate befalling themselves, they will endeavour to escape judgment by showing mercy.

The rooms at Loughlinter were splendid, much larger and very much more richly furnished than those at Saulsby.

When Alaric took his departure the next morning, he thought he perceived, from Mrs. Woodward’s manner, that there was less than her usual cordiality in the tone in which she said that of course he would return at the end of the week.

The next condition is, that the man who has not walked in the counsel of the ungodly shall not stand in the way of sinners.

Namby-pamby in these days is not thrown away if it be introduced in the proper quarters.

You make answer to yourself: Then, I suppose, when you were the supporter of Paul whom he had condemned and made the greatest effort to help him, and instigated him to recover through an imperial rescript the bishopric from which he had been removed by the episcopal tribunal.

Few liars can lie with the full roundness and self-sufficiency of truth; and Crosbie, bad as he was, had not yet become bad enough to reach that perfection.

As to your argument against our view, that he ought to have become to the Gentiles a Gentile, if to the Jews he became a Jew, this favours our opinion rather than yours: for as he did not actually become a Jew, so he did not actually become a heathen; and as he did not actually become a heathen, so he did not actually become a Jew.

For many false Christs and false prophets shall come and shall seduce many.

Such was the letter written by the Synod convened in Palestine. Some time after Athanasius had the satisfaction of seeing the injustice of the sentence enacted against him by the council of Tyre publicly recognized. Valens and Ursacius, who had been sent with Theognis and his followers to obtain information in Mareotis, as we before mentioned, concerning the holy cup which Ischyrion had accused Athanasius of having broken, wrote the following retraction to Julius, bishop of Rome:—

There is a twofold species of fear, the one of which is accompanied with reverence, such as citizens show towards good rulers, and we towards God, as also right-minded children towards their fathers.

And besides, John indeed exhibited no more than his life and conversation; for John, it is said, did no sign, [John 10:41] but He Himself had the testimony also from signs and from miracles. Leaving therefore John to be illustrious by his fasting, He Himself came the opposite way, both coming unto publicans' tables, and eating and drinking.

Of the immortal gods, we sit all free

But,—if you play any prank of that kind with me, you’ll find that you’ve made a mistake.

Again an exhortation, and prayer after the exhortation.

“In about four years.”

But since the Divine Nature, whatever it is believed to be, always remains the same, being above all augmentation and incapable of diminution, we are absolutely compelled to refer his saying to the Humanity.

He was learning to despise mere lords, and to feel that he might almost domineer over a duke.

The monks at a distance grew pale, and, terrified by the danger ever coming nearer, had lost all hope and confidence, expecting only the death of Martin.

But to her mother she said not a word on the subject.

If this goes on about Sophia, it does not signify for her, and, though mamma likes London, it is not of real importance.

But it seemed to him that the congratulations of his friends were not hearty.

[Proverbs 9:8] But are we on that account not to reprove and find fault with a brother, to prevent him from going down through false security to death?

Go your way, the Lord says, and sell not a part of your substance but all that you have, and give to the poor; not to your friends or kinsfolk or relatives, not to your wife or to your children.

Nothing is better than that storehouse which receives such prayers as these.

It is to his grievous injury that a man is deceived when he does not believe what leads to eternal life, or believes what leads to eternal death.

Faddle would do anything he was told to do.

Another kind is that of the crustacea, as crabs and lobsters; another of fish without shells, with soft and tender flesh, like polypi and cuttle fish.

The existing legislature of the State was presumed to be secessionist, but the legislature was not sitting, nor in the ordinary course of things would that legislature have been called on to sit again.

Now that she could acquit him, she owned that it would have been a fault.

But it is those who are cut away from the hand of God, who believed that Christ was cut off from His hand, and thus accounting Him among the wicked, dared to slay Him.

The servant declared that he had gone to bed before eleven o’clock, to her knowledge,—for she had seen him there,—and that he had not left the house afterwards.

It was thus that he was driven to that overthoughtfulness about snobs of which I have spoken in the last chapter.

“I shall not speak of this to Mary,” he said on his journey home.

I said, I will take heed to my ways, that I sin not with my tongue [Psalm 38:1] For it is not without reason that the tongue is set in a moist place, but because it is so prone to slip.

Hence the door is to be shut, i.e.

What, then, will become (of your theory), when, proceeding (with the Epistle), I find something different?

Again, whereas the Jews said, 'Is not this the Son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know?

For as there is one place of mixture for all animals, so also has there been established one (locality) of separation.

How else explain what the apostle says of certain persons: if God perhaps will give them repentance?

It is evident that there are many things in the body, the force and purpose of which no one can perceive but He who made them.

Do you see a glorious victory? For such a trophy as the hosts in all parts of the world having met together have not power to erect, this each one of those men erects; and all things that from the army of drunkenness lie mingled together wounded, delirious words of frenzy, insane thoughts, unpleasing haughtiness. And they imitate their own Lord, at whom the Scripture marvelling says, He shall drink of the brook in the way, therefore shall He lift up the head.

The Evangelist makes use of the known practice of the merchants at the times of the Jewish feasts; they did bring in such animals to the outer court; this practice, with a real occurrence He knew of, were His materials.

Not very long since my uncle offered to settle on me half his fortune if I would oblige him in one particular.

I go back therefore to the point, and ask him this question: Why did (his god) fore-ordain our glory before the ages of the Creator?

Henceforward vice and virtue were prevalent among men, arising from a single source— that of the Father.

Will you also share with Paul?

For it is wrong, said he, to charge the Cross of Salvation with such infirmity, for it is the cross which leads our troops, and attribute such power to the image of Hercules which is at the head of the forces of our foe.

“Poor Morton. He was a friend of mine. We used to call him the Paragon because he never made mistakes. I had heard that you and Lady Augusta were a good deal with him in Washington.”

As then these have their proper uses, so may we say that other beasts, fishes, birds, were created not for eating, but for medicine.

“Indeed, indeed, M. de Lescure—” said Cathelineau, endeavouring to extricate himself from the seat; but both his voice and his exertions were stopped, for three or four of them united to hold him where he was, and declared that he should be the President for the evening.

It was an awful moment, that of the selection of the ponies.

The same law prevails between parents and children as long as the child remains domiciled in the parents’ family.

Doubtless he had vacillated, but, on the balance of his convictions as to his own future conduct, he had been much nobler than his friends.

Now do you find in the body of your bird male organs of generation and not a male bird; or female ones, and not a female?

But what is that in due season?

“But, uncle, I am a girl, and perhaps I may marry;—or at any rate think of marrying some day.”

“Yes,” said Miss Baker, timidly. “Here it is; and I have come up to consult you about the answer.” Mr. Bertram now did take the letter, and did read it through.

“I’m very glad you are going, Alice,” he said when they were in the cab together.

I am sent to represent my tribe.

(17.) Whosoever shall explain, 'The Lord rained fire from the Lord?' [Genesis 19:24], not of the Father and the Son, and says that He rained from Himself, be he anathema. For the Son, being Lord, rained from the Father Who is Lord.

128. Let us look to it, then, forasmuch as whom the Son condemns, the Father condemns also, and therefore let us honour the Son, even as we honour the Father, that by the Son we may be able to come to the Father.

That’s about it, ain’t it, James?

What do we mean by saying that John in his baptism could not give the Holy Spirit to others, yet gave him to Christ?

But when his turn came he paid the penalty of his iniquity; he did not submit to the vote of the synod, but began to ordain bishops and presbyters, though himself deprived of his episcopal rank. These then were the deeds done at Constantinople.

“His aunt, Miss Stanbury, seemed to think not. But I suppose men of education do write for such things now. He says himself that it is very precarious as an employment.”

“Quiet enough, and as cheap as any, I dare say;—but I don’t know whether it is well that you should be thrown so much with them. They are different from us.” The son looked at his father, but made no immediate reply. “Our lot has been cast with theirs because of their difficulties,” continued the old man, “but the time is coming when we had better stand aloof.”

Chapter XLVI. Burning Words

For He died as it were without children, in that He had not yet filled up the number of His elect.

The title then is not simply To the sons of Korah, but, For understanding, to the sons of Korah.

Father John had told him that she was unwell, but he had not thought it necessary to frighten him at the present time by letting him know how very ill she was.

War needs great preparation, and luxury craves profusion; but peace and love, simple and quiet sisters, require no arms nor excessive preparation.

The glorious fruitfulness of their mother the Church rejoices in them, and in them flourishes more abundantly; and in proportion as bright virginity adds to her numbers, in the same proportion does the mother's joy increase.

Things have gone so rapidly that I hardly know how to explain them all, but that is Papa’s resolution.

His father had spoken of the marriage as a thing that was to happen.

And the ground of their inquiry was made to both an occasion of setting forth clearer and more perfect instruction; and the enemies of the truth are compelled even against their will to read the writings in favor of the truth, and to interpret the prophecy; although not all of it.

“It’s very unlikely,” said the secretary of legation. “Lord Peterborough is a man of immense wealth, very old, indeed. They say he is dying at Naples. This man is his eldest son.”

He walked home to his lodgings in Marlborough Street, wretched because of his own failure;—doubly wretched because of the other man’s success.

But, to establish the point more clearly, it will not be superfluous to employ another illustration, as if, e.g., one were to say that it is the sun which hardens and liquefies, although liquefying and hardening are things of an opposite nature.

But their general condition is such as to have made me at least lament that so small an island, so far removed from the comforts of the mainland, should have become the abode of a few families.

Mercy to Miss O’Hara!

He himself was a Kanturk man, and his wife had been a Kanturk woman; no less a person, indeed, than the sister of Father Bernard M’Carthy, rest her soul;—for it was now at peace, let us all hope.

Her body and limbs grew cold and only in her holy breast did the warm beat of the living soul continue.

But concerning Aggarus and Tyberianus, whose case is different from the others who were ordained from among the laity, in this that their ordination is reported to have been accompanied by fierce riots and savage disturbances, we have entrusted the whole matter to your judgment, that relying upon your investigation of the case, we may know what to decide about them.

Why have prudence and wisdom merited no place among the gods?

“He thinks himself to be a deal better than anybody else,” continued Jones, “whereas I for one don’t see it.

So one who has been induced, not by sensuality, but for health, to eat part of a fowl, cannot remain among your elect; though one may remain who has yielded voluntarily to an excessive appetite for comfits and cakes without animal matter.

For this purpose willed He that the words of the Prophets should be obscure, that the servants of God might afterwards have that by interpreting which they might flow over the ears and hearts of men, that they might receive from the clouds of God the fatness of spiritual joy.

He would have hated her, have distrusted her altogether, and have believed her to be an evil thing.

But this spoke He of the Spirit, which they that believe in Him should receive; for the Holy Ghost was not yet given.

“As what?” asked the father, turning upon the son with sharp angry eyes, and with something of real animation in his face.

“Because—Oh, how can I say why? Why does any person do everything that she ought not to do? It’s the fall of Adam, I suppose.”

'Do not then,' he says, 'scrutinize this that I am nothing, but consider that, that wherein ye ought to have been benefitted, I have failed in nothing, but have given proof of mine Apostleship.

But there was the fact of the charge—the fact that it had been placed in the hands of respectable attorneys, with instructions to them to press it on—and the fact also that the evidence by which that charge was to be supported possessed at any rate a primâ facie appearance of strength. All that it was necessary to explain to Sir Peregrine, as it would also be necessary to explain it to Lady Mason.

Wherefore also he here says, making himself equal, Whether it be I or they, so we preach.

“Back to London, you mean?”

10. You shall make them like a fiery oven: You shall make them on fire within, by the consciousness of their ungodliness: In the time of Your countenance: in the time of Your manifestation. The Lord shall trouble them in His wrath, and the fire shall devour them [Psalm 20:9]. And then, being troubled by the vengeance of the Lord, after the accusation of their conscience, they shall be given up to eternal fire, to be devoured.

And beholding the boldness of Peter and John, etc.

As she looked into his face, it seemed to her more common,—meaner than before.

“I do not think you will ever see him again,” said Hugh to her in the train.

What is meant by Your sword, but Your word?

If Isabel had come to me saying that she loved a poor man, there would not have been much to disquiet me.

For He has been demonstrated to be just.

Indeed I am unchanged.

For God stands in the assembly of the gods: He judges among the gods.

Whose water?

“I don’t know why you should be in such a hurry to get to Littlebath,” said Mrs. Wilkinson. “We have been very glad to have you; and I hope we have shown it.” As Arthur had evinced no symptoms of making love to Miss Gauntlet, the good lady had been satisfied, and now she felt somewhat slighted that her hospitality was not more valued.

Do you not know that it is proper in peace to keep up the exercises of war?

“But he doesn’t hate you, Mrs. Cox.”

For if without having heard anything at all concerning Him they had seen the Lord, and as they beheld Him had at the same time received the testimony of John's words, so wonderful and great, the meanness of His appearance would have straightway been an objection to the grandeur of the expressions.

Letter of Athanasius concerning Dionysius, Bishop of Alexandria, showing that he too was against the Arian heresy, like the Synod of Nicæa, and that the Arians in vain libel him in claiming him as on their side.

But what does the Apostle mean by exhorting to continence, if continence be contrary to nature?

She had more than once almost resolved to tell him that she preferred to be left alone during the morning.

De Lescure, Larochejaquelin, and Adolphe Denot led their men further along the road to the point at which Henri had been standing when he first saw the crowd of royalists coming towards him on the former evening, and from thence they also got into the encampment.

He was so little like the “budge doctors of the stoic fur,” of whom it was his delight to write when he had nothing else to do, that he could not bear any touch of adversity with equanimity.

She belonged plainly to the third set of which we have spoken; Miss Todd was an amalgamation of the two first.

“We miss everything,” said the elder of the two ladies, who, however, was very much younger than the gentleman, and not very much older than her companion.

[Hebrews 10:12] Lest thou suppose that He is standing on high, and is a minister, he shows that the matter is [part] of a dispensation [or economy].

Also in Numbers: A Star shall arise out of Jacob, and a man shall rise up from Israel.

Gradually,—very gently,—she contrived to extricate herself. There must be no more of it, or his passion would become too strong for her. “Sit down, dearest,” she said. “You flurry me by all this. It is not good that I should be flurried.”

It is very far from being so.

To him it was odious that she should be present in the house at all, and he had obtained from her father a direct promise that she should not be allowed to come behind the counters after this their opening day.

For this is our palmary faith, that there is nothing which we ought to believe besides.

Oh, no, I implore you.

The thing took for a time, and Conway Dalrymple was picking up his gilt sugarplums with considerable rapidity.

[John 15:14] You are my friends, if you do all that [31] I command you.

[1 Corinthians 12:13] The work is one, for the mystery is one; the baptism one, for there was one death on behalf of the world; there is, then, a oneness of working, a oneness of setting forth, which cannot be separated.

Mr. Wharton was all alone when they entered the drawing-room,—but, as Lopez had surmised, had asked his sister-in-law round the corner to come to dinner.

There were apple-trees there covered with blossom, and the hedgerows were in full flower.

And this most necessary topic the apostle thus explains: But God commends, he says, His love towards us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.

Ferdinand Lopez had lately been at her feet, and had fired her imagination with stories of the grand things to be done in trade.

They’ll have to go back to the Swiss plan, I fancy, and carry the food to the cattle in their houses.

Nor would any one consider, because of 'I have gotten,' that Cain was purchased from without, instead of being born of her.

As to George, he had done as much as he intended to do—certainly for the present.

Now I do not understand how a magician should exert himself to teach a doctrine which persuades us always to act as if God were to judge every man for his deeds; and should have trained his disciples, whom he was to employ as the ministers of his doctrine, in the same belief.

He immediately began to make himself pleasant—more than ordinarily pleasant to Miss Baker.

Do not go a whoring in respect of the Godhead.

[Acts 8:14] True, but neither in the present case is this the thing they complain of; for they knew that it was of Divine Grace: what they say is, Why did you eat with them?

He had, in justice, no right to inquire into all those circumstances of his old cousin’s marriage.

Therefore Jupiter is called father by those who pray to him, as is Saturnus, and Janus, and Liber, and the rest in order; which Lucilius laughs at in the council of the gods: So that there is none of us who is not called excellent father of the gods; so that father Neptunus, Liber, father Saturnus, Mars, Janus, father Quirinus, are called after one name.

For the very shadow of a husband is a wife's safeguard.

“Ten years, I believe.”

Tell me what was ever more iniquitous than the Jews.

But if he should fail!

Sweet it is to lay aside the weight of the body and to soar into the pure bright ether.

Of course I didn’t want to shoot him.

For, it says, they called, and asked, whether Simon, which was surnamed Peter, were lodging there.

It may be understood, therefore, of what importance it was to obtain the services of a Cicero, or of a Hortensius, who was unrivalled at the Roman bar when Cicero began to plead.

And for this peculiarity he has been made the mark of much ridicule.

For the existence of such they cannot possibly deny however desirous to do so.

Indeed we do not say, It is long, because it is not yet, so as to be long; but we say, It will be long.

Had the old man remarked, as he might so probably have done, that they were two fools, and would probably become two beggars, Miss Baker would have known that the match would be displeasing to him.

Having said that the enemies are fierce, he adds further, that they despoil us of vast blessings.

Well, even the hen has the power of being able to bring forth by her own energy.

Of course he got back his house; and with his house about £16,000 for its re-erection, and £4000 for the damage done to the Tusculan villa with £2000 for the Formian villa.

Hence, in the generation of the Son, the incorporeal and unchangeable God begets, in accordance with His own nature, God incorporeal and unchangeable; and this perfect birth of incorporeal and unchangeable God from incorporeal and unchangeable God involves, as we see in the light of the revelation of God from God, no diminution of the Begetter's substance.

You must know that the true God, in whom, alas, you have not yet come to believe, made both the snake along with the lower creatures, and the sun along with other exalted creatures.

These have all been read over to you in their order.

And then rumour was spread about among all the bill-discounting leeches that blood was once more to be sucked from the Sowerby carcass.

Chapter 1. The Number of those who fought for Religion in Gaul Under Verus and the Nature of their Conflicts.

[Luke 7:27] This is he of whom it is written,

“Yes, I believe so—that is, I think he is staying at Plumstead.”

[1 Samuel xix] To receive the sacrament of the body and blood of the Lord is possible even for a bad man: for of such it is said, He that eats and drinks unworthily, eats and drinks judgment to himself.

For I, says he, knew Him not: but He that sent me to baptize with water, He said unto me, Upon whomsoever you shall see the Spirit descending and abiding on Him, that is He.

For it endures all things, suffers all things, bears all things.

What is that to you, thou wretched and miserable?

Even in punishing them You were forgiving toward them: for not in remitting, but also in punishing their sins, have You been forgiving.

It could not, he thought, be possible that Baskerville could have had any reasons for suspicion, and yet the very sound of the inquiry stuck in his ears.

But, continues Celsus, what great deeds did Jesus perform as being a God?

“I take all you say in good part,—as coming from a friend.”

For it was the work of Divine Providence on your behalf, that they, though unwillingly, bore testimony that what the prophets said regarding one God was true, in order that, the doctrine of a plurality of gods being rejected by all, occasion might be afforded you of knowing the truth.

He doubted whether better reliance could be placed on Mr.

Sanga, as a matter of course, told everything to our astute Consul.

Hear, and do.

That evil, if it were an evil, must be encountered with absolute indifference.

Being fully aware of Miss Stanbury’s objection to the marriage, she could not venture to express her approbation of it.

He does not ask merely that He may be glorified, that He may have some special glory of His own, but prays that He may be glorified of the Father with Himself.

Thou Lord in the beginning hast laid the foundation of the earth, and the heavens are the works of Your hands.

Whoever, therefore, is heard when he asks this, is not led into the temptation of contumacy, whereby he could or would be worthy to lose perseverance in holiness.

Nevertheless, she was to be Mrs Moffat.

“They suspect him.”

But how loud would they not have been in the praises of their gods!

It must therefore be accounted an eternal attribute, inbred in God, and everlasting, and on this account worthy of the Divine Being, putting to shame for ever the benevolence of Marcion's god, subsequent as he is to (I will not say) all beginnings and times, but to the very malignity of the Creator, if indeed malignity could possibly have been found in goodness.

98. That the catechumen ought now no longer to sin

As I think it would be ill for both of us, I will restrain that feeling, and remember your Grace ever with the purest feeling of true friendship.

For we say that they have always been, because they have been in all time; and we say they have been in all time, because time itself could no wise be without them.

“Of course you condemned me,—as an outcast.”

Nina had said that she liked the Jews, but when the words were spoken she remembered that they might be open to misconstruction, and she blushed.

Young men who went out to the colonies because they were ruined, were, to her thinking, the worst among the bad,—men who drank and gambled and indulged in strange lives, mere castaways, the adopted of Satan.

“I merely intend, Mr. Slope, to express my own wishes—no discussion will be at all necessary,” said the bishop, reiterating his wife’s words.

“Most of us ride to the meet tomorrow,” he said; “but you and Nina shall be taken in the waggonette so as to save you a little.

But it is in the spirit of a Jew, I think, and in keeping with their bitter animosity, and baseless and even improbable calumnies against Jesus, that he adds: Nor did the prophets predict such a pestilence.

For he who wars for God, dearest brethren, ought to acknowledge himself as one who, placed in the heavenly camp, already hopes for divine things, so that we may have no trembling at the storms and whirlwinds of the world, and no disturbance, since the Lord had foretold that these would come.

To God surely he speaks, and it is evident that God the Father is not judged.

You shall ride Bonebreaker tomorrow at Somerby, and you’ll find that better fun.

“It is a thousand pities, Mr. Western, you will allow me to say so, but it is a thousand pities. A most handsome lady:—with a fine ladylike air! One in a thousand!”

“Yes—but, M. Henri, Annot Stein has some scruples; or rather—”

Very clearly the author Megasthenes, the contemporary of Seleucus Nicanor, writes as follows in the third of his books, On Indian Affairs: All that was said about nature by the ancients is said also by those who philosophise beyond Greece: some things by the Brahmins among the Indians, and others by those called Jews in Syria.

Concerning this (Logos) they have a great question among them— an occasion both of divisions and dissension.

The first of them, the son of Lagus, carried many captive out of Judea into Egypt.

Matrimony, too, was often followed by many troubles.

The law makes no difference between premeditated and unpremeditated murder,—the injury clone being considered rather than the criminality of the doer.

And the animal essence is, he says, of a fiery nature, and is also termed by them the super-celestial Topos, and Hebdomad, and Ancient of Days.

“I don’t think he ever does drink champagne,” said Lady Eardham, talking it all over with Gus on the morning of the picnic.

Then there came to me the letter from Dr. Tempest,—for which I am greatly beholden to him,—strengthening me altogether in this view.

“Certainly, miss;—only you’ll do it tonight.”

Eran.— Then, since Holy Scripture has not mentioned his parents, can he be called without father and without mother?

He had, at any rate, left to this son, who was one among others, a sufficiency with which to begin the world.

And hence, since without doubt we place the Creator above things created, we must needs confess that the Creator both lives in the highest sense, and perceives and understands all things, and that He cannot die, or suffer decay, or be changed; and that He is not a body, but a spirit, of all the most powerful, most righteous, most beautiful, most good, most blessed.

From these beginnings, then, I am confident that such ye will be even to the end.

The temper of the lady was not certainly all that he had desired.

Chapter 22.— It is an Absurdity to Say that the Dead Will Be Judged for Sins Which They Would Have Committed If They Had Lived.

You know what I think of him, and how much I wish that you two could be friends.

“It cost nearly as much,” said Margaret, “for it was very expensive and very light.”

There had been nothing more about him and his wound in the People’s Banner, and he was beginning to hope that that nuisance would also be allowed to die away.

The offering of the sacrifice is cut off, the hallowing of the chrism has failed , and from the murderous hands of wicked men all the mysteries have withdrawn themselves.

It is a singular fact that in the room adjacent to that in which he died another Prime Minister of England had left this troublesome world but a few years previously, and Lady Palmerston had been the sister of that other Prime Minister.

It would be too long to tell now, in these last pages of our story, how Cheesacre strove to escape, and with what skill Mrs Greenow kept him to his bargain.

At this very moment her lover should have been in Liverpool, but he was, in fact, abed in Welbeck Street.

“That’s only an accident.”

He began to feel already that he did not like sermons from the girl of his heart.

There were clever men who suggested that Mr. Daubeny had a scheme in his head—some sharp trick of political conjuring, some “hocus-pocus presto” sleight of hand, by which he might be able to retain power, let the elections go as they would.

As though this favoured lover were prepared to give her exactly her due, and nothing more than her due!

But now the catalogue of his virtues is complete.

“I want to ask you a question, Nina,” said Anton; “or perhaps two questions.” The tight grasping clasp made on his arm by the tips of her fingers relaxed itself a little as she heard his words, and remarked their altered tone.

Do we hesitate, when eternity is at stake, to endure what the competitor for consulship or prætorship puts up with?

“I am better,—much better.”

It is commerce that makes great cities, and commerce has refused to back the general’s choice.

Not that he owned even to himself that the title and all belonging to it were as yet in his own possession.

“You had better let us put a cheque in your hands,” said the Duchess.

[Philippians 3:3] Seek you also every sign in the Old Scriptures as indicative of some passage in the New Scripture, and that which is named a sign in the New Covenant as indicative of something either in the age about to be, or even in the subsequent generations after that the sign has taken place.

Accordingly, on the very spot which witnessed the Saviour's sufferings, a new Jerusalem was constructed, over against the one so celebrated of old, which, since the foul stain of guilt brought on it by the murder of the Lord, had experienced the last extremity of desolation, the effect of Divine judgment on its impious people.

Now, if He were one— being at once both the Son and the Father— He certainly would not have quoted the sanction of the law, which requires not the testimony of one, but of two.

If Mountjoy could be made to drink—so as to die!

Three days after this Mrs. Arabin reached the deanery, and the joy at her return was very great. “My dear, I have been sick for you,” said Mr. Harding.

They were sons of a planter who had been rich in extent of acres and number of slaves before the war of the Secession.

He sat thinking of it all for many minutes.

He was alone with Isa frequently, for neither father, mother, nor Isa herself objected to such communion; but yet things so went between them that he could not take her by the hand and tell her that he loved her.

There are ever so many rocks against which men get broken.

Will it be when we are at ease, and in luxury?

The terms are chosen for decency's sake, but the reproductive organs of the two sexes are meant.

Lord George was quite alive to the duty of defending his wife; but in doing so he was no longer anxious to maintain affectionate terms with his wife’s father.

She lifted her hand to this to tare it from its hook, but he prevented her.

Into it were collected the spoils rescued from the blazing temples and snatched from the gods, not that they might be restored to the vanquished, but divided among the victors; while into these was carried back, with the most religious observance and respect, everything which belonged to them, even though found elsewhere.

He was a spendthrift, and it might be that his fine prospects would all be wasted before they were matured.

For this is why he himself by saying, hope makes not ashamed, has ascribed everything not to our well-doings, but to God's love.

But she had never dared to tell herself either that she did love, or that she did not.

But she towered in her wrath, and would listen to no reason.

“Not a step she won’t, thin,” said Corney. “She’ll go back to Mr. Owen. He was her fust love. You’ll see else.” And so the matter was discussed in the servants’ hall at the great house.

The advice to be given was to a widowed woman from an experienced man of the world; but, nevertheless, he could only make his calculations as to her peculiar case in the way in which he ordinarily calculated.

“But it is dark—quite dark. You won’t be late, will you?” said the wife.

Ruler and chief of all these is the royal Word, acting as Regent of the Supreme Sovereign.

“Are you quite comfortable?” he said, at last.

He had, as it were, proclaimed himself to be indifferent to promotion, and those who chiefly admired his talents, and would mainly have exerted themselves to secure to them their deserved reward, had taken him at his word.

But the display, power, and size of the city, the seeing and the being seen, the paying and the receiving of visits, the alternate flattery and detraction, talking and listening, as well as the necessity of facing so great a throng even when one is least in the mood to do so— all these things are alike foreign to the principles and fatal to the repose of the monastic life.

“Heaven knows! Smoking in the bottom of Mr. Thorne’s ha-ha, or philandering with some of those Miss Chadwicks. Nothing will ever make an impression on him. But he’ll be furious if I don’t go down.”

“If you say one word of Mary—”

Now she was angry.

“Where do you get ‘em from?”

Accordingly they find pleasure in what I may call an adultery of the tongue.

Chapter 70. Adjournment.

But she did not think that she could tell him what had really happened; and were she to do so, there would be horrid doubts on his mind.

You should have heard the governor spouting Latin!

For herself and her girls Lucy was a companion and friend in every way satisfactory.

But I had felt that in this way each might speak his own speech without confusion and with delight to the reader.

Look at that fawn there,’ said he, turning away his face to hide the tear in his eye, ‘did you ever see more perfect motion?’

Our ears were very sharp, and we heard the Doctor’s step upon our stairs within a minute or two of the appointed time.

And the churches, too, will wail with a mighty lamentation, because neither oblation nor incense is attended to, nor a service acceptable to God; but the sanctuaries of the churches will become like a garden-watcher's hut, and the holy body and blood of Christ will not be shown in those days.

“Indeed that will be best,” said Daniel.

Of the horrors of that twelve months it is useless now to tell.

Is it so, that there is no false witness, but when one tells a lie either to invent a crime against some man, or to hide some man's crime, or in any way to oppress any man in judgment?

Thus Linda found herself in the room along with the old gentleman, who still kept his hands behind his back.

Day by day o'er heav'n, endless, ever, (that is, every star),

Nothing so entirely wins my consent.

Then, at the sound of some welcomed gong, they begin to swarm up the sides close at each other’s heels apparently altogether indifferent as to whether there be a path or no.

Eutropius soon after paid the penalty of his impious plan, and was beheaded; and the law which he had enacted was effaced from the public inscriptions.

“I have had no secret, Archdeacon,” said the other with a quiet smile. “None at all—not for a day. It was only yesterday that I knew my own good fortune, and to-day I went over to Plumstead to ask your approval. From what Mrs. Grantly has said to me, I am led to hope that I shall have it.”

Which Moses also did in the case of Zimri and the daughter of Cosbi.

When Peter said this, the multitudes applauded.

Have you forgotten what Scripture commands: Blame no one before you have examined him; and when you have examined him, let your correction be just?

Weeks had passed by since Lord Hampstead had walked up and down Broad Street with Mr. Fay,—weeks which were to him a period of terrible woe.

The count had brought him there to dine in this way with a premeditated purpose of throwing him over, pretending to give him the meeting that had been asked for, but intending that it should pass by and be of no avail.

He could talk with his wonted voice, and act with his wonted authority at his office.

What then, is not His flesh, flesh?

And if the rivers, and mountains, and seas are portions of the Cosmos, then, since the whole Cosmos is God, are the rivers and seas also gods?

“Well;—that’s as people think. A stiff, stuck-up fellow, I should say. Up to this moment he has never forgiven you for what you did to him.”

The difficulty is to make a beginning.

“I am very near the ruin,” said Tom Daly.

And yet the more friends we have, and the more widely they are scattered, the more numerous are our fears that some portion of the vast masses of the disasters of life may light upon them.

Chapter XXIII. Sir Hugh’s Return

But after a minute or two Lady George found that she could not understand two words consecutively, although she was close to the lecturer.

Dear Mr Gordon,—I am not surprised at anything that Mr Whittlestaff should do which shows the goodness of his disposition and the tenderness of his heart.

And a king indeed does all by commanding; but God, not by commanding the evil!

Let them accept a plain proof that there can be nothing which the Holy Spirit can be said not to have made; and that it cannot be doubted that all subsists through His operation, whether Angels, Archangels, Thrones, or Dominions; since the Lord Himself, Whom the Angels serve, was begotten by the Holy Spirit coming upon the Virgin, as, according to Matthew, the Angel said to Joseph: Joseph, you son of David, fear not to take Mary your wife, for that which shall be born of her is of the Holy Spirit.

The book contains the bitterest satire and, as I think, the foulest calumnies on the age in which it was written that disgrace our language.

They that have begun to feel in any degree the sweetness of wisdom and truth, know what I say, how great a punishment it is to be only separated from the face of God: but they that have not tasted that sweetness, if not yet they yearn for the face of God, let them fear even fire; let punishments terrify those, whom rewards win not.

I excuse myself by bodily sickness, which was in truth severe, and scarcely to be lightened but by great care.

And on the morrow when they had come forth from Bethany He was hungry.

Or did He give to others, as if it were His own, what He Himself, according to you, did not possess, unless He received it from Another?

Herein is My Father glorified, that you be My disciples, and bear much fruit.

Hence men are on the one hand born in the flesh liable to sin and death from the first Adam, and on the other hand are born again in baptism associated with the righteousness and eternal life of the second Adam; even as it is written in the book of Ecclesiasticus: Of the woman came the beginning of sin, and through her we all die.

And, if you think fit, let us just examine this in the case of those who plunder other men's goods.

Expeditions for thieving are formed, which men may join or not as they please; but woe betide him who, having promised, fails.

And the lord of this tower wishes all the stones to be fitted into the building, because they are exceedingly bright.

Why should I mention the multitudes of those who had to wander about in desert places and upon the mountains, and who were cut off by hunger, and thirst, and cold, and sickness, and robbers, and wild beasts?

And who is he that proves the spirits?

Surely, to lead the Philippians to humility.

And let not us either come near to these while we are sick, but when we have healed our soul, so receive the food that is offered us.

But this is the usual limit of abstinence; viz., for everyone to allow himself food according to the requirements of his strength or bodily frame or age, in such quantity as is required for the support of the flesh, and not for the satisfactory feeling of repletion.

It was odd that they should have come together; but the facts are as I state them.

Was it not because they vehemently loved their father, and did not endure to see his exposure?

But where there is a constant unity of will, there can be no weakness of temporal subjection.

This, however, seems to me to be a great question in itself, rather than a rule to be applied to the solution of other questions.

But when the Canaanites, a people fierce in battle and rich in troops, successively joined them, showed a horrible disposition against the people of the Jews, this widow, before all others, made all the preparations for war.

Job, too, says, The Spirit of God has made me, and the breath of the Almighty has given me life.

The expression is obscure.

“Have you got the money, Fanny?”

She, Augusta, was, as she well knew, doing her duty by her family by marrying a tailor’s son for whom she did not care a chip, seeing the tailor’s son was possessed of untold wealth.

Were she at once to tell her aunt all that had occurred, that comparison which she had made between herself and the Heisse girls, so much to her own disfavour, would not be a true comparison.

“And the opera, and Madame Tussaud, and the Horticultural Gardens, and the new conjuror who makes a woman lie upon nothing. The idea of my going to London! And then I suppose I shall be one of the bridesmaids. I declare a new vista of life is opening out to me! Mamma, you mustn’t be dull while I’m away. It won’t be very long, I suppose, uncle?”

But the beauty on which she prided herself was the grace of her motion.

But when you hear me say the city, understand the ancient and disorderly multitude of the synagogue.

Here may be recognized, Yea, yea; nay, nay.

But Athenodorns the son of Sandon, while wishing to make out the Serapis to be ancient, has somehow slipped into the mistake of proving it to be an image fashioned by human hands.

“Ah, yes, that was at Castle Richmond; was it not? Well, you have done the best thing that a man can do; you have come home to your wife and family now that you are ill and require their attendance.”

“It must not be that her presence should drive you from the house. Think of mother, and what she will suffer. Father, you must come.”

With one word you can make once more bright a fair name that has long been beneath a cloud.

I hope this will be one of the last letters I shall write from this abominable place, for I am going to sell out at once.

Your present work is, I know, too hard.

That which does not listen or obey reason is the vital or pulsating faculty, and the spermatic or generative faculty, and the vegetative or nutritive faculty: to this belong also the faculties of growth and bodily formation.

She had undoubtedly received overtures from the directors of the Institute of whom poor Aunt Ju had for the moment been the spokeswoman, and in these overtures it had been intimated to her that the directors would be happy to remunerate her for her trouble should the money collected at the hall enable them to do so.

“It seems, Denis, it’s yourself you’re thinking of, more than the Captain.”

He was called Captain Vignolles, but it was only known of him that he was a professional gambler.

“No stones can be dangerous,” said Mrs. Low.

No man who understood matters ever thought of going direct to the duke in such an affair as that.

Again, the word As.

But Me you have not always.

He put off the evil hour, as many a man in similar circumstances has done before him.

Till the last moment for going Ayala seemed to be childish, triumphant, and indifferent.

“You could make his going of no account. You needn’t have the young man when he comes back. He has come here, disturbing us all with his diamonds, in a most objectionable manner.”

Thus Alston was quite alive on the morning of the trial, and the doors of the court-house were thronged long before they were opened.

“I suppose you never heard of me before?”

And do not wonder if, being itself hard, it has sweet fruits; since in trees also the bark is almost destitute of all quality, and rough; but the fruits are sweet.

And He said not, Satan spoke by you, but, Get behind me, Satan. [Matthew 16:23] For indeed it was a desire of the adversary that Christ should not suffer. Therefore with such great severity did He rebuke him, as knowing that both he and the rest are especially afraid of this, and will not easily receive it.

“I had wanted to feel that I should earn my wife’s bread.”

One seems to speak, yet makes Himself at once Bridegroom and Bride; because not two, but one flesh: because the Word was made flesh, and dwelt in us.

It is not so there.

But he was bewildered and dismayed, and his mind within him was changing at every moment.

You seek there the faith of Christ, you find not: you seek a prophet, you find not: you seek a sacrifice, you find not: you seek a temple, you find none.

In the conjectures?

[John 14:2] Where sin has abounded, grace has much more abounded.

Then again there was the idea of a “forlorn hope.” She thought that she could have brought herself to do it, if only death would have been the alternative of success when she had resolved to make the rush.

“A little of that, perhaps. No man ever worked harder than he did, or, in his way, more successfully; and having seen one after another of his juniors become members of Parliament, while he stuck to the attorneys, there is perhaps a little jealousy about it.”

If you love not, fear lest you perish; if you love, fear lest you displease.

For there will be a risk that He should not be shown to be man from His sufferings, if He could not also be approved as God by His powers.

with no Lords and Commons.

“It is for you, sir,” said the son, rubbing his eyes with the hand which supported his head.

And if the Earl could be made to pay the claims against him which were made by his wife’s creditors, then would the law, so far, have decided that the woman was his wife.

Whether the flock is diseased and covered with the scab, or full of life and vigour?

Chapter 52. From St. Paul's Analogy of the Seed We Learn that the Body Which Died Will Rise Again, Garnished with the Appliances of Eternal Life.

Chapter 23.— Further References to Cyprian.

Agatha at first made no reply, and a ruby blush suffused her whole face. She was not at all unwilling that Cathelineau’s mother should know the feeling which she had entertained for her son, but the abruptness, and the tone of the question, took her by surprise, and for a moment scattered her thoughts.

And yet, though she was sure of this, she was so astounded by his declaration, so carried off her legs by the alteration in her position, so hard at work within herself with her new endeavour to change the aspect in which she must look at the man, that she could not even bring herself to think of answering him.

But let us return to the point from which the course of my argument has diverted me.

That, in his mind, was under this Constitution of ours the one act essential for Government.

So the men who had quarrelled agreed to quarrel no more, and it was decided that there should be an end of mismanagement and idleness, and that this horrid sight of the weak pretending to be strong, or the weak receiving the reward of strength, should be brought to an end.

Binns would fight for the plate, and so would Pouncebox for the jewels, almost till they were cut to pieces.

“Lord Fawn has been here,” she said, “and there has been ever so much unpleasantness.

For even after the consecration the mystic symbols are not deprived of their own nature; they remain in their former substance figure and form; they are visible and tangible as they were before.

The City of God (Book XIII)

He did not yield it to death.

Our matrons were; no luxury found room

Thus He acquired them without loss of His true Divinity, and ceased not to be God when He became Man; when He, Who is God eternally, became Man at a point in time.

But that was only a reason the more for parting with him.

To discriminate clearly between the Persons, He is called the Angel of God; He Who is God from God is also the Angel of God, but, that He may have the honour which is His due, He is entitled also Lord and God.

For even of this I would have you know that you have only a shadow when you hear the words, I will consider the heavens, the work of Your fingers, the moon and the stars, and the settled order therein; not as if he were considering them now, but as destined to do so hereafter.

So, too, it may be said to a person of power: Why did you not aid the widow, the orphans also, when enduring wrong?

“No, indeed! nor ever will;—unless it be a fault to love a woman as he loves me. See what he is doing now,—where he has gone,—what he has to suffer, coupled as he is with that wretch! And all for my sake!”

The epistle to Miss Thoroughbung was one requiring great consideration.

It is more like a goodly English town than any other that I saw in any of the smaller British islands.

Why do you reproach us by saying that men renewed in baptism ought no longer to beget children, or to possess fields, and houses, and money?

A little further on, in the same passage, He is called the true light: [John 1:9] The true light, which lightens every man, was coming into the world.

There was a rectory-house, queerly situated at the end of a little blind lane, with a gate of its own, and a so-called garden about twenty yards square.

He was deliciously happy;—while poor Sir Thomas was suffering the double pain of his broken arm and his dissipated hopes, and Griffenbottom was lying in his bed, with a doctor on one side and a nurse on the other, hardly able to restrain himself from cursing all the world in his agony.

A few Boers here and there had possessed themselves of the lands, buying them by some shifty means either from the Natives or from those who alleged that they had purchased them from the Natives.

“Why not yield to him?” her sister said the day before she went.

Chapter 71. Success.

I will be your brother.” And he took her hand, caressing it, and showing her that he was not in the least afraid of her.

Chapter 3. While Valens persecutes the Orthodox Christiansin the East, a Usurper arises at Constantinople named Procopius: and at the Same Time an Earthquake and Inundation take Place and injure Several Cities.

But let no one who is wanting in this be disappointed; for there is no one who has not something to give up.

Maurice was thus banished, and desired to remain in desolation for the space of five minutes; but, just as he had taken up his position, Isabel descended with slow, solemn steps and found him standing at her father’s study door.

Does not the same apostle say, "To be carnally-minded is death?"

And this too they allowed.

It was presumed among us that on these days he had not dined.

This they did in disregard of a law which forbade their ordination of a bishop without the sanction of the bishop of Constantinople; but they pretended that this was a special privilege granted to Atticus personally.

“That’s just it, George,” said the Dean, very seriously,—seriously, and with his kindest manner, being quite disposed to make himself agreeable to Lord George, if Lord George would be agreeable to him.

“Not by many,” said the landlord.

What was it that she intended to do when she arrived at Hamworth?

As they were making their way up the principal street, still striking down the republicans wherever they continued to make resistance, but more often giving quarter, and promising protection, de Lescure with a pistol held by the barrel in his left hand, and with his right arm hastily tied up in the red handkerchief taken from a peasant’s neck, said to the man who was next to him, but whom he did not at the moment perceive to be Denot:

In judging of his speeches, we are bound to remember that they were not probably uttered with their words arranged as we read them.

On that face which the sea, when it saw it, had reverenced, from which the sun, when it beheld it on the cross, turned away his rays, they did spit, and struck it with the palms of their hands, and some upon the head; giving full swing in every way to their own madness.

To this Lady Tringle had assented, knowing more than her husband as to Ayala’s feelings, and thinking that in this way a breach might be made between them.

But in this case there is nothing of this kind, but he both remits the sins, nor compels us to marshal them in array before any spectators.

She had more confidence in Frank than even in Lord George.

“I dare say not.”

One man is subject to the censure and displeasure of another; and one man may be put out of the Service by the will or at the judgment of another.

Therefore, since matter had an end, at the time when the world was made out of it, it also had a beginning.

The boys, utterly ignoring their guides, scrambled up quicker than the Arabs could follow them.

Chapter 7 [V.]— The Necessity and Advantage of Rebuke.

The great dignity of the Holy Spirit is proved by the absence of forgiveness for the sin against Him.

And others, as if they had certain efflorescences, in order to appear comely in the eyes of spectators, stain their faces by adorning them with gay-coloured ointments.

We think nothing of dressing.

Not that Vavasor was popular among fellow-sportsmen.

Is God unrighteous?

Because that the teachers are held in honor induces many unto godliness.

And why do I say, after our power?

If there were any penalty for riding round, or any mark given to those who had ridden straight,—so that justice might in some sort be done,—it would perhaps be better.

AUGUSTUS MELMOTTE.

Nay, in singing itself the first rule is modesty, and the same is true in every kind of speech, too, so that a man may gradually learn to praise God, or to sing songs, or even to speak, in that the principles of modesty grace his advance.

It was much better that it should be so.

Bade Hermes last implant the craft refined

For then the point we had to consider was, Whether any man in this life could ever attain to such perfection as to be absolutely without sin by the grace of God, by the hearty desire of his own will?

Moreover, from the very fashioning of her body, one may see that they are one, for she was made from his side, and they are, as it were, two halves.

If you will only listen to me patiently for a few minutes, Margaret—which I couldn’t get you to do, you know, before you went away from the Cedars in that very extraordinary manner—I think I can explain to you something which—” Here Lady Ball became embarrassed, and paused; but Margaret gave her no assistance, and therefore she began a new sentence.

With regard to Feemy, he was quite right in thinking that her love of Ussher was strong enough to induce her to take almost any step that he might desire; and that that love, joined to her own obstinacy and determined resistance to the advice of those to whom she should have listened, was such as to render it most unlikely that she should be induced to give him up; but though he so well understood the weakness of her character, he was not aware of, for he had had no opportunity of trying, its strength.

It may, indeed, reasonably be maintained that the perfect blessedness we hope for shall be free from all sting of fear or sadness; but who that is not quite lost to truth would say that neither love nor joy shall be experienced there?

But may God free you, my brother, and the holy people of Christ which is entrusted to you, and all the brothers who are with you, and especially the presbyter Rufinus, from the heresy of Origen, and other heresies, and from the perdition to which they lead.

And that light on departing into the regions of the west, is hidden and straightway causes the night to come on.

What are we to think of the condition of a city in which not only could a man be murdered for his wealth walking home from supper—that, indeed, might happen in London if there existed the means of getting at the man’s money when the man was dead—but in which such a plot could be concerted in order that the robbery might be consummated?

The Holy Ghost?...Very good...this is perfect.

The inspector of schools for the Republic is a Scotch gentleman, Mr. Brebner, who is giving himself heart and soul to the subject he has in hand and is prospering admirably.

Let him sing psalms.

Ought then Christ, tell me, to have appeared at that time, at that time to have given them these teachings of true wisdom, when they were raging with lust, when they were as horses mad for the mare, when they were the slaves of money, of the belly?

Pelagius was charged with having said: That the Church here is without spot or wrinkle.

“I cannot. My feelings are too many for me. I should never go through with it after all that has passed between us about poor Broughton. I should break down; indeed I should. Go now, for I am tired.” Then, having probably taken a momentary advantage of that more potent attraction to which we have before alluded, he left the room very suddenly.

So hotly indeed did the persecution rage that Barnabas also was carried away with their dissimulation; nay more he committed murder, if not in actual violence at least in will.

Do you see the exceeding greatness of his condescension?

He could only write letters on the subject, which were very sensible but very cold;—in all of which he would be careful to explain that the steps which had been taken in regard to the property were in strict conformity with the law.

Madame Voss spoke to her often in these days of the coming of Adrian Urmand, but the manner of her speaking was such that no comfort could be taken from it.

That all words between them should, on such an occasion as this, be sad, was a matter of course; but it seemed to Harry that Julia had freed herself from all the effects of that feeling which had existed between them, and that it would become him to do this as effectually as she had done it.

And so let us learn in everything, as we feel our own weakness, and at the same time His help, to declare with the saints, I was overturned that I might fall, but the Lord supported me.

But the following seems to me to have been overlooked by both of them, namely, the words, You have gained your brother.

3. I also confess that the Son of God has in these last days been born of the Virgin and the Holy Spirit: that he has taken upon him our natural human flesh and soul; that in this he suffered and was buried and rose again from the dead; that the flesh in which he rose was that same flesh which had been laid in the sepulchre; and that in this same flesh, together with the soul, he ascended into heaven after his resurrection: from whence we look for his coming to judge the quick and the dead.

On this point Marie had brought herself to be almost indifferent.

Chapter 10.— The Necessity for Perspicuity of Style.

Therefore this better good is honored by the submission of that other, not that other condemned by the praise of this that is better.

Maximian, given to change, eagerly resumed that purple of which he had unwillingly divested himself.

For you would not have believed if you had not found; as neither would you have sought except with a view to find.

But he who does this assuredly knows that he is not the greatest, since something greater can exist.

O you sons of men, how long so slow of heart?

This is the Father's revelation, this the foundation of the Church, this the assurance of her permanence.

Showing How Mrs. Burton Fought Her Battle

So much he had a right to demand.

But he would have still kept silence, had he not seen the brethren perishing.

Fifty million bushels of corn and flour simply seems to mean a great deal.

Does man call on man as God is called upon?

For my part, indeed, when I first applied my mind to writing what follows, because I thought it disgraceful that the excellences of so great a man should remain concealed, I resolved with myself not to feel ashamed on account of solecisms of language.

1 Corinthians 6:12

Or who that hears that the Word transformed for Himself a passible body, not of Mary, but of His own Essence, could call him who said this a Christian?

is considered to be a god when speaking, and making himself heard through the Pythian priestess; so, according to our view, it was the Logos God, and Son of the God of all things, who spoke in Jesus these words, I am the way, and the truth, and the life; and these, I am the door; and these, I am the living bread that came down from heaven; and other expressions similar to these.

Mr. Rowan had now been three months at Baslehurst, and had not altogether found the ways of his relative pleasant.

For also the astrologers speak of the limits of the stars, in which they assert that the dominant stars have greater influence; as, for instance, on some they act injuriously, while on others they act well.

“Who told you all this? how is it you come to know so much about this young lady and M. Henri?” said Madame de Lescure.

A railway train is stopped at a wrong place for a railway director, or a post-office manager gets his letters taken after time.

“The difficulty is not with Lady Staveley but with these nasty ditches,” said the judge, for he had been up to his knees in one of them, and the water had penetrated his boots.

In the Church he is rich who is rich in faith, for the faithful has a whole world of riches.

Here is a man who thinks so much of what he says himself, that he does not consider the possibility of another person saying the opposite.

Quomodo autem non propinquus, qui aptus est esse Spiritus particeps?

And I exhort you all to pray together that the Lord may grant further peace to the Churches.

“Gracious God! would he arrest the man coming to see his own son for the last time!”

According to Celsus, indeed, the tribe of birds that practise divination, forsooth, understand the nature of the Divine Being better than Pherecydes, and Pythagoras, and Socrates and Plato!

Upon that theme he spoke, and told her in plain language that his reason for so hoping was that he trusted to be able to persuade her to become his own wife.

Ver. 18. But it is good to be zealously sought in a good matter at all times, and not only when I am present with you.

Mr. Grey when, in his rage, he had given the lie to Mr. Scarborough had, no doubt, spoken as he had believed at that moment.

Yes; she had known him for some years, and in circumstances which she thought justified her in saying that she understood his character.

I know not what has been enacted in confusion and vehemence by your Synod; but it appears that, from some disturbing disorder, decrees which are not in conformity with truth have been enacted, and that your constant irritation of one another evidently prevented you from considering what is pleasing to God.

My dear Fanny, why don’t you do something?—why don’t you occupy yourself?

What a difference in their food!

For the things offered now no longer belonged to those who offered them, but to the temple and the altar.

Lady Ongar’s form, bust, and face were, at this period of her life, almost majestic, whereas the softness and grace of womanhood were the charms which Harry loved.

It follows that He is what He is from eternity: for He did not become, but is a Father: for in God that which was, both is and will be.

That which denies that Jesus Christ has come in the flesh.

Was not her income enough for both?

Hence one says, Rend, and another, a broken and a contrite heart God will not despise.

And in the Apocalypse, many thousands which no man can number, from every tribe and tongue, are seen clothed in white robes, and with palms of victory.

You shall not say, 'Show us the Father,' and, 'Where are You going?'

Would you know how quickly?

“And my property?—what’s to become of my property?” said Barry.

So saying, he got up and went out, and the priest followed him; they had much to do, and many things to arrange; to distribute arms and gunpowder, and make the most of their little means. It was not their present intention to lead the men from their homes, but they wished to prepare them to receive the republican troops, when they came into the country to enforce the collection of the republican levy.

And the same time etc.

[27] [John 2:6] And there were there six vessels of stone, placed for the Jews' purification, such as [28] [Arabic, p. 20] would contain two or three jars.

There’s all the ill in the world comes from them; and you’d give her up to be taken off by such a one as he among the diamonds!

“I gave the promise first,” said Florian.

Such are the contents of Adrian's rescript.

Man’s energy is brought to its highest point by the presence of obstacles to be overcome, by the existence of difficulties which are all but insuperable.

“At any rate he won’t be my lord and master!” said Dolly, showing by the tone of her voice that the matter had been again discussed by them since the last conversation which was recorded, and had been settled to her father’s satisfaction.

The same sum, no doubt, would send them away now.

He had supposed himself to be richer than other Dales of Allington when coming in upon his property, and had consequently entertained an idea of sitting in Parliament for his county.

“That is what I have always declared,” said Mr. Monk.

163. But who can doubt that the Father is Light, when we read of His Son that He is the Brightness of eternal Light? For of Whom but of the Father is the Son the Brightness, Who both is always with the Father, and always shines, not with unlike but with the same radiance.

Truly this is an exceeding virtue.

Amen, say we.

And so he is proved to possess no virtue perfectly, who is known to have broken down in some part of them.

‘We shall all catch our death of cold,’ said Madame Voss.

They therefore declared the ordinations which he professed to have conferred to be void, and commanded that they should not be even named in the Church, on account of their novel and illegal nature.

But in corroboration it was worth much.

[John 5:43] And He said that those unspeakable calamities one after another were a sign of it, and that Elias must come.

Amongst these he says that there will be a millennium after the resurrection from the dead, when the personal reign of Christ will be established on this earth.

But the miserable, the degenerate, the somnolent, are put to shame, that the things which they themselves cannot do, were done by him, and prefer rather to deny his virtues than to confess their own inertness.

With regard, then, to the subject which I have at this time undertaken, first of all I am surprised that you were perplexed by the question why not the Father, but the Son, is said to have become incarnate, and yet were not also perplexed by the same question in regard to the Holy Spirit.

“I could not bring myself to tell your sister so,” he said; “but I think your father should be told,—or your mother.

“And now we’ll go into the schoolroom,” said Marian Arbuthnot, jumping up and leading the way. “Come along, Mr. Felix,” and Felix Graham followed her.

Proudie dead!” she exclaimed.

Next, lest you think that he is speaking of money, he adds, Let your speech be always with grace, seasoned with salt, that you may know how ye ought to answer each one.

But in learning the Faith and in professing it, acquire and keep that only, which is now delivered to you by the Church, and which has been built up strongly out of all the Scriptures.

Katie, whom you remember an infant.’

And the wonderful circumstance is, that though he was a youth, he was not listless and indifferent; and though (he felt himself) weighed down by sleep, he did not go away, nor yet fear the danger of falling down.

“Oh, entirely,” said the earl, with considerable self-complacency; “that affair is entirely over.”

[Job 3:25] And again, But I wept for every helpless man, and groaned when I saw a man in distress.

So thinking, but with no resolution made, he went on through the woods, and down from the hill back towards the town till he again came to the little bridge over the brook.

The hero would be always repeating to himself a certain line out of a Latin poet, which, of all lines, is the most heartbreaking;—

And by saying, In all things, he again praises them, recalling to memory and bringing forth to view their former obedience.

For eight years they had been man and wife; and sometimes—I grieve to say it—he had been driven almost to hope that she would commit a married woman’s last sin, and leave him.

Let your mind be one, as if from one soul.

“What a tribe of people they’ve got here, haven’t they?” “Yes, and you must dance with them all.

John 11:53

But, when I heard many things said in the letters of your Blessedness in praise of me, I understood your intention; how that you wished to describe not what I am, but what I ought to be.

Nothing had ever been made out in regard to the murder of Terry Carroll in the Court House at Galway.

Waves, he says, of a raging sea.

You are by nature too stern to fall into such faults.

For my part, I shall shortly cause a council to be convened, to which Theophilus shall be summoned.

You may see them at our voice, and by the operation of the hidden majesty, smitten with stripes, burnt with fire, stretched out with the increase of a growing punishment, howling, groaning, entreating, confessing whence they came and when depart, even in the hearing of those very persons who worship them, and either springing forth at once or vanishing gradually, even as the faith of the sufferer comes in aid, or the grace of the healer effects.

Now if that true light, which is in the person of Christ, contains in itself life, and that life with its light is committed to the flesh, is that destined to perish which has life entrusted to it?

She knew that he would not come to Loughlinter.

Had he been quite intimate with her he would have given her the manuscript of his speech, and occupied himself by saying it to her as a lesson which he had learnt.

It is not unjust to say that he sacrificed quality to quantity.

Listen, then, with all your power, to the commendation of Grace, whereby you are saved without price.

He hadn’t a father; he hadn’t a mother; he hadn’t a sister; he hadn’t a brother;—but he had a dearer one still, and a nearer one yet, than all other.—’To be or not to be; that is the question.’—He must in ground unsanctified be lodged, till the last trumpet!

[Psalm 49:8, Septuagint] Call then to mind what is said in the Gospel, the Angels running to and fro, of the bridechamber being shut, of the lamps going out, of the powers which drag to the furnaces.

“Money matters! Very well—very well; money matters. That is your idea of medical practice! Very well—very well. Is my postchaise at the door? I’ll publish it all to the medical world—every word—every word of it, every word of it.”

Poor Mr. Morton!

Nothing that is a second is remote from the first; nothing is so close to the first as the second.

And again, are not the Thessalians reported to worship ants, since they have learned that Zeus in the likeness of an ant had intercourse with Eurymedusa, the daughter of Cletor, and begot Myrmidon?

So Becky is installed in the house in London, having been taken away abruptly from her pupils, to the great dismay of the old lady’s long-established resident companion.

For this did I open my house to all that passed by, that after those many courses run in behalf of the needy, the naked, the orphans, I might receive this recompense?

But I cannot understand how he can reconcile himself to do so, when he himself prevented my going to the Bar, saying that it would be unnecessary.

Occasionally the world saw her, and when the world did see her the world declared that she was a charming girl.

Never were you wont to offer sacrifice without an attendant.

Chapter 12. Helen, the Queen of the Osrhœnians.

For it is not incredible that all at that time were such as from His coming even to the present time we marvel that so many have been and are.

[1 Corinthians 10:23] And, Let no one seek his own advantage, but also that of his neighbour, [1 Corinthians 10:24] so as to be able at once to do and to teach, building and building up.

For we have given names according to our own comprehension from our own attributes to those of God.

Nina Balatka, 1867 450 0 0

The condemnation of all the wicked: and the crowning of all the good: do you wish these things to be fulfilled in your days?

But with Tom the idea had been real, and was, moreover, permanent.

“And who is the friend of friends, Fanny?”

Their belief was, then, that he derived his baptism from men, and not from heaven, but, on account of the multitude, lest they should be stoned, they are afraid to say what they think.

From Windsor, on the Canada side, we passed over to Detroit, in the State of Michigan, by a steam ferry.

For the priestly tribe of Levi, too, was allied with the kingly tribe of Juda, through the circumstance that Aaron married Elizabeth the l sister of Naasson, and that Eleazar again married the daughter of Phatiel, and begot children.

God bless you.” And so he hurried off.

But we seek still more clearly the proof of the time of His coming.

You do not mean, do you, that I am (to believe) you when you commend Him to my faith?

From day to day there grew upon her a feeling that she had subjected herself to domination, almost to tyranny from Mr. Greenwood.

Whereupon the Bishops are severely scourged and cast into chains.

“Well, may they be happy, both of them; I mind their fathers well; the old Marquis is still alive, but greatly ailing they tell me. I have much to be thankful for, and I do thank the Lord!” and as he spoke, Michael Stein crossed himself. “Now, I’m as old in a manner as the Marquis himself and yet you see I can still make the big hammer clink on the anvil.”

“But whisper now, Barney, did he iver shoot many now to your knowing? did he shoot ‘em dead? I wonder whether Mr. Fred will be keeping on the chariot; he’s more taste in the gig way, I’m fearing.”

Chapter 53 [XXXI.]— Concupiscence Need Not Have Been Necessary for Fruitfulness.

He urged her no further. He was too wise to think it possible that he could do so without injuring his cause. Then they found the others, and Emily made her apologies to Mrs. Fitzpatrick for the delay with a quiet dignity that struck her Cousin George almost with awe. How had it been that such a one as he had won so great a creature?

“Does not he know it?”

So, then, the Name of the Father is not one, that of the Son another, and that of the Holy Spirit another, for God is one; the Names are not more than one, for there are not two Gods, or three Gods.

It was a great day for him.

The prayer begins with a testimony to God, and with the reward of faith, when we say, Our Father who art in the heavens; for (in so saying), we at once pray to God, and commend faith, whose reward this appellation is.

For fire is by the Word of God, which governs all things, changed by the air into moisture, which is, as it were, the germ of cosmical change; and this he calls sea.

‘Who has told you?’

He goes to a day-school now, with his books slung over his back in a bag.

77. Let us, however, suppose— as our adversaries would have it— that the Son does, as it were, copy the pattern of that which He has seen His Father doing. But even this, we must confess, means that He is of the same substance, for none can completely imitate the working of another, unless he be one with him in the same nature.

Why should I try to express in tragic style all our experiences, when no language can be adequate to their hard lot?

The peace of Jerusalem; for, says he, He has set peace for your borders.

The End

“What on earth do you mean, Augusta?”

I have told him that if he could mix once more with the world, with the clerical world, you know, that he would be better fitted for the performance of his own duties.

“Yes; and to be tired of your bargain on the next day. Has it ever occurred to you that giving and taking in marriage is a very serious thing?”

“If you are not more precise, I shall think that you have defrauded me.”

For if these are true virtues—and such cannot exist save in those who have true piety—they do not profess to be able to deliver the men who possess them from all miseries; for true virtues tell no such lies, but they profess that by the hope of the future world this life, which is miserably involved in the many and great evils of this world, is happy as it is also safe.

4. James, his brother, when preaching in Judea, was cut off with the sword by Herod the tetrarch, and was buried there.

we would rather do these things which we exhort you to do, than the things which we ourselves are forced to do.

But who can these cold ones be?

But I should not have been altogether happy till I had replaced them in their former position, and must therefore have abstained from increased expenditure till I had done so.

The teaching of both countries, said Bardesan, is the same.

“Why didn’t you get it?”

“Do you mean that you will make an appointment with him elsewhere?”

“My advantage! It’s part of the work to be done and we may as well do it. At any rate I’ll tell him to accept. We shall have this odious American with us, but that can’t be helped.”

Then he took his leave of her.

He had been allowed to remain for the sake of the rector’s comfort, and the best must now be made of it.

The following is said, too, by Zechariah: 'O sword, rise up against My Shepherd, and against the man of My people, says the Lord of hosts.

Therefore with fear and trembling, that it may delight our Maker to work in the lowly valley

Moreover, if that death by serpents, and that destruction by the destroyer, and the slaying by the sword, were figures, as the Apostle evidently does declare, inasmuch as it is manifest that all those things did happen: for he says not, in a figure they were spoken, or, in a figure they were written, but, in a figure, he says, they happened to them: with how much greater diligence of godliness must those punishments be shunned whereof those were the figures?

It is for this cause that I am continually speaking of these things, that we may the sooner pass over to those other.

“And if she comes—and of course she will—I’ll lose no time in bringing her over to you. Nelly must see her of course.”

“It would be best for me to say that I would never marry any one at all. He would be very angry with me.”

[14] [Luke 16:19] And he began to say, A certain man was rich, and wore silk and purple, and enjoyed [15] himself every day in splendour: [Luke 16:20] and there was a poor man named Lazarus, and [16] he was cast down at the door of the rich man, [Luke 16:21] afflicted with sores, and he longed to fill [Arabic, p. 112] his belly with the crumbs that fell from the table of that rich man; yea, [17] even the dogs used to come and lick his sores.

To Dorothy his words appeared good, and true, and affecting.

“May I see it, Kate?” said Mrs. O’Hara, as her daughter sat poring over the scrap of paper by the window.

Dearest Griselda,

It made him sore at heart to feel that this girl should be sly, and doubly sore to think that she should have been able to love such a one as Lawrence Twentyman.

[Ephesians 5:18] But as, before children come to a robust age, abstinence is dangerous and trying to their tender frames, let her have baths if she require them, and let her take a little wine for her stomach's sake.

For He is made not only a Jew, and not only does He take to Himself all monstrous and vile names, but even that which is most monstrous of all, even very sin and very curse; not that He is such, but He is called so.

“Never!” said the Earl.

They rode miles around, and though they did again see the hounds, they did not see the hunt.

Chapter 21.— That Man's Transgression Did Not Annul the Blessing of Fecundity Pronounced Upon Man Before He Sinned But Infected It with the Disease of Lust.

“And, Fanny,” said Lady Lufton, in her kindest manner, “you are not going anywhere on Saturday, are you?”

Then up rose the great Meletius and exhibited the unbending line of the canon of the faith, for using the truth as a carpenter does his rule he avoided excess and defect.

(32) The Fourth Passage. In What Sense God Only is Good. With God to Be Good and to Be Himself are the Same Thing

And then an idea, a grand idea, but one very painful in its beauty, crept into his mind.

He was not a bad man, and marriage in itself was honourable.

[Isaiah 52:14] For although, in David's words, He is fairer than the children of men, yet it is in that figurative state of spiritual grace, when He is girded with the sword of the Spirit, which is verily His form, and beauty, and glory.

At present let us keep to the passage before us.

Whoever, then, denies that our body and its members, which the apostle so approves and extols, are the handiwork of God, you see whom he contradicts, preaching contrary to what you have received.

But, though it had never happened, who will venture to say that Christ could not, if He had so pleased, have come without taking His body from a virgin, and yet appearing in a true body to redeem us by a true death?

And what is the pleasure of drunkenness?

But the woman in her intense suffering could not acknowledge to herself any idea of comfort. “Ah, me!” she exclaimed, with a deep bursting sob which went straight to Mrs. Orme’s heart. And then a convulsive fit of trembling seized her so strongly that Mrs. Orme could hardly continue to hold her hands.

He bowed his head very slightly, as though acknowledging the compliment, and then down she dropped her veil.

“Nothing at all I should think,” said Miss Trefoil.

After him Epiphanes...xxiiii years (24).

But even Lady Glencora was forced to abandon her generosity, and to confess, on behalf of her party, that Lizzie Eustace was—a very wicked young woman, indeed.

‘Did Richard Shand know her?’

[John 1:25] And they asked him and said unto him, Why do you baptize now, when you are not the Messiah, nor Elijah, nor a prophet?

Chapter 11.— The Likeness of the Divine Word, Such as It Is, is to Be Sought, Not in Our Own Outer and Sensible Word, But in the Inner and Mental One. There is the Greatest Possible Unlikeness Between Our Word and Knowledge and the Divine Word and Knowledge.

Was it with the divine virtue which was mingled with it, so that the divine virtue should have the office of an instrument in respect of matter?

In the seventh and lowest Luna.

And even if they were made out of some (previous) matter, as some will have it, they are even thus out of nothing, because they were not what they are.

[Genesis 42:21] In this manner then do thou also, when anything happens, say, We are verily guilty, because we have not obeyed Christ; because we have sworn; my much swearing, and my false swearing, has fallen upon my own head.

In behalf of these men groaning the Prophet does redouble his groaning, that their groaning may come in in the sight of the Lord.

She said her last word to Mr. Monk with so sweet a smile that that old bachelor wished he were younger for her sake.

For a venomous beast is envy, an unclean beast, a deliberate vice which admits not of pardon, a wickedness stripped of excuse, the cause and mother of all evils.

God is not anywhere, and is everywhere.

What could be expected of a husband who could tear up a bundle of Her Majesty’s Mail papers?

And she had believed him, too, when he said that it was not his business to tell her.

But who is this kind being which hitherto has not been even known?

His interest would have been quite safe in the doctor’s hands, and he had, in fact, no legal right to meddle; but neither the doctor nor the squire could prevent him.

However, that it is really easy and smooth, hear what Christ says, [Matthew 11:30] My yoke is easy, and My burden is light.

Why did I go down and find that woman in your chamber with you, when you were ashamed to own to me that she was coming to see you?

On the next morning, after service, which the schoolmaster did not attend, the Doctor saw Mr. Peacocke, and declared his intention of telling the story to Mr. Puddicombe.

“You are bound to think of it when those who are responsible for your actions tell you to do so.”

And thus they depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and to doctrines of devils, speaking lies in hypocrisy.

But the sons of men shall put their trust in the covering of Your wings.

Was it not her own father?

He began for the first time to experience something of that feeling which his uncle so often expressed.

And now, O thou most acute of lawyers, this new twinkling spark of hope has come to thee from a source whence thou least expectedst it!

Pray tell the dear bishop and dear Margaretta all this, with my love.

She saw it all and understood it all, and deliberately determined to take advantage of his weakness.

It is not only that one wretched sinner should be crushed, which is what the Sicilians want, but that this terrible injustice should be stopped altogether, in compliance with the wishes of the people.” When we remember how this was spoken, in the presence of those very judges, in the presence of Hortensius himself, in reliance only on the public opinion which he was to create by his own words, we cannot but acknowledge that it is very fine.

But refuse profane and old wives' fables.

It was a thing at which she could look in coming years, when he and she might be far apart,—a thing at which she could look with pride in remembering that he had thought her worthy of it.

He is the author of many works: but they are characterized by too great an affectation of elegance of diction, and a lavish intermingling of poetic expressions.

And chess is a beautiful game; but they who play chess really well can rarely do much else.

Let each therefore, with an upright conscience, entering into a review of what he has done, and bringing his whole life before him, consider, whether he is not deserving of chastisements and punishments without number?

They who accuse can have or should have no longing for the condemnation of the accused one.

For he who loves himself is abandoned to himself, in order that, being overwhelmed with fears and sorrows, he may cry, if there be yet soul in him to feel his ills, in the words of the psalm, My soul is cast down within me, and when chastened, may say, Because of his strength I will wait upon You.

“John Eames, did L. D. give it you?”

If you choose to come, you must.

They also cause orders to be sent to the magistrates at Alexandria, respecting Athanasius and certain Presbyters, named therein, that if either the Bishop , or any of the others, should be found coming to the city or its borders, the magistrate should have power to behead those who were so discovered.

Therefore Solomon says well: When you sit to eat at the table of a ruler consider diligently what is before you, and put forth your hand, knowing that it behooves you to make such preparations.

But though these nations are said to have been dispersed according to their languages, yet the narrator recurs to that time when all had but one language, and explains how it came to pass that a diversity of languages was introduced.

Just as orators and philosophers in giving their notions of the perfect orator and the perfect philosopher do not detract from Demosthenes and Plato but merely set forth abstract ideals; so, when I describe a bishop and explain the qualifications laid down for the episcopate, I am but supplying a mirror for priests.

Katie became afraid that she would be sent off to bed on the score of her illness before Harry had come, and thus lose the advantage of hearing what was the step decided on. So she sat silent in the corner of her sofa feigning to be asleep, but pondering in her mind what sort of penalties were the penalties of imprisonment, how dreadful, how endurable, or how unendurable. Would they put chains on him? would they starve him? would they cut off his beautiful brown hair?

Be sure, then, whenever you discover anything else in Scripture to assail our faith with, to see, in the first place, that it is not against you, before you commence your attack on us.

Margaret’s last letter had been written to him from the Cedars, but he thought it probable that she might only have gone there for a day or two.

Many persons also wearing long hair used to go about among them; whom he orders to be shorn.

Or rather I always make myself crushable on such occasions as this.

Unless, forsooth, the Creator enjoined us to glory in the god of Marcion.

If the religion of old times does not make a precedent, let the connivance of the last do so.

From these things make your mind pass to the true beauty.

It was essential to him that he should prepare beforehand almost the very words for an occasion of such importance,—the very words and gestures and action.

The ways of the world were known to her well enough to make her feel that it was so, even in that moment of her perturbation.

It sits annually, whereas the legislature in many States sits only every other year.

It may be said, no doubt, that the severity of this judgment acts as a protection to female virtue,—deterring, as all known punishments do deter, from vice.

You know who that is.

But unfortunately Sir Francis did see the paragraph; and, unfortunately also, he had not appreciated the wit of Miss Altifiorla’s letters. “Oh, laws!” he had been heard to ejaculate on receipt of a former letter.

Such objections even the heathen used constantly to bandy about.

For it is not to follow, but to correct you, that I give you my love; and since I by no means despair of the possibility of your amendment, I do not want you to be surprised at my inability to despise the man who has my love.

Much space is devoted to an account of her journey to the East which included a visit to Egypt and to the monasteries of Nitria as well as a tour of the most sacred spots in the Holy Land.

Exhortation to the Heathen (Chapter 11)

She had made up her mind at the time that she would say them, thinking that thus he would be driven from her, and that she would be at rest from his solicitation, from those of her friends, and from the qualms of her own conscience.

'But evil-doers and sorcerers will wax worse and worse, deceiving and being deceived [2 Timothy 3:13].'

“Why should it be the last? You’ll be here tomorrow.”

Upon hearing this Nora sank speechless into the chair which stood in the passage.

Or to say, Take up your bed, and go unto your house?

And even as we read of them, so also we now see them.

Slaves are not generally employed in St. Louis for domestic service as is done almost universally in the towns of Kentucky.

Then he added one special word, “And it is so good of you, Lily, to come with me.”

“I only wrote one, papa.”

And not by this only did he encourage them, but also by what follows. For he did not say rejected and near unto cursing, which shall be burned, but what? Whose end is to be burned, if he continue [such] (he means) unto the end. So that, if we cut out and burn the thorns, we shall be able to enjoy those good things innumerable and to become approved, and to partake of blessing.

As might be supposed, Jacques spent the evening with Annot Stein, at least it was his intention to have done so; but he had been so leading a person in the day’s transactions that he also was besieged by the villagers, and was hardly able to whisper a word into his sweetheart’s ear.

And we commend you indeed for your zeal against anything made with hands being an object of adoration; but we signify to you that you ought not to have broken these images.

I acted rightly then, most religious Augustus, that as I had returned to my country under the authority of your letters, so I should only leave it by your command; and might not render myself liable hereafter to a charge of having deserted the Church, but as receiving your order might have a reason for my retiring.

So, too, count it as true that the harvest of a happy conscience may be mingled with some bitter feelings of grief.

And now this other doubt had passed through the crucible, and by the aid of fire a golden certainty had been produced.

She had admired the young lady’s face, liked her manner, approved of her fortune and family, and had selected her for a daughter-in-law in a somewhat impetuous manner.

“Compensation, my lord. It will only be fair. You ask her ladyship. Her ladyship cannot intend that I should be turned out of your lordship’s house with only two hundred a year, after what has passed between me and her ladyship.”

Those who sent from Jerusalem the priests and levites who asked John these questions, having learned who John was not, and who he was, preserve a decent silence, as if tacitly assenting and indicating that they accepted what was said, and saw that baptism was suited to a voice crying in the wilderness for the preparing of the way of the Lord.

Amongst so many nations, in so great a crowd of sages, Plato, to be sure, is the only man who has combined the oblivion and the recollection of ideas.

Various horrors were related as to the man’s treatment of his wife.

“Who says so? I say there ain’t nobody;—nobody. If anybody tells you that it’s only just to put you off. It’s just poetry and books and rubbish. She wants to be a fine lady.”

“Dear, dear, dear,” said Miss Spruce.

Of what Mrs Neverbend had gone through in providing birds, beasts, and fishes, not to talk of tarts and jellies, for the dinner of that day, no one but myself can have any idea; but it must be admitted that she accomplished her task with thorough success. I was told, too, that after the invitations had been written, no milliner in Britannula was allowed to sleep a single moment till half an hour before the ladies were assembled in our drawing-room; but their efforts, too, were conspicuously successful.

But in judging even of bloodshed we have to regard the circumstances of the time in the verdicts we give.

But we were gentle, he says; we exhibited nothing that was offensive or troublesome, nothing displeasing, or boastful.

“She’s your own flesh and blood, Mr Ruggles,” said the baker.

Everybody around her told her that the man’s happiness was really bound up in her reply.

He certainly worked very hard, for he did not altogether abandon his old engagement.

It would be sad that the fame of Greshamsbury should perish, and that the glory should depart from the old house.

“No; not now, till you have positively made up your mind, and given him an answer one way or the other. You could not go now and leave him in doubt. Take him at once, and have done with it. He is as good as gold.”

If the object be in itself good, and if the money be really paid, we do not laugh at such a man for the sacrifices which he makes.

He was tall and moved without a stoop; and though he moved slowly, he had learned to seem so to do because it was the proper kind of movement for one so high up in the world as himself.

If such a letter had been written by Mrs. Trevelyan to Colonel Osborne, it must have been done while he, Stanbury, was staying at the Clock House.

[John 17:5] What man could ever say, I came down from heaven, not to do My own will, but the will of Him that sent Me?

Just as Paul also did, when they spoke with tongues.

“You’ll be better after that,” said Poppins. “Come, let’s have a little chat over a drop of something hot, and then we’ll go to bed. I’ll stand Sammy.”

After all, such dropping or not dropping must be the work of Florence herself.

“Of course, sir.”

Buethe desolation of her life was so extreme that it was very hard to bear.

For, not even did even this One, so conjoined to the Word of God that by that conjunction he became at once the one Son of God and the same One the one Son of man, act by the antecedent merits of His own will.

But remember even for that very man to pray.

Also certain contain deceived by false faith, and hoping what is vain, and following after what is vain: among whom are all heretics, and whosoever under the name of religion are deceived by any error: whose continence would be true, if their faith also were true: but, whereas that is not to be called faith, on this account, because it is false; without doubt that also is unworthy the name of continence.

“Won’t he be rich?”

After saying, They were judged every man according to their works, he briefly added what the judgment was: Death and hell were cast into the lake of fire; by these names designating the devil and the whole company of his angels, for he is the author of death and the pains of hell.

Forgive!

George expressed a great desire to go and see his parent shot.

Mr T. has written to me from Grey Abbey, where he has been staying: he is a good-hearted fellow, and remembers how warmly you contradicted the report that your match was broken off.

I write no more on this matter, because you will hear all from his own lips when he comes to you.

For at that time, before the consent of the whole Church had declared authoritatively, by the decree of a plenary Council, what practice should be followed in this matter, it seemed to him, in common with about eighty of his fellow bishops of the African churches, that every man who had been baptized outside the communion of the Catholic Church should, on joining the Church, be baptized anew.

Cicero had pleaded in the Senate for a general amnesty, and had carried it as far as the voice of the Senate could do so.

But his remarks as to the second lady had been very uncourteous.

At the Deanery

Now, as he often told himself, they were as completely separated as though each had determined never again to communicate with the other.

For I have shown that Christ was proclaimed by the prophets in parables a Stone and a Rock.

where have you and Mr Cheesacre been?” said Mrs Greenow.

For it is without form, and so cannot be contained as a body is.

Not content with simply asserting it, he proceeded, as he had but very seldom done before, to imprecate upon himself that most terrible fate of separation from the Spirit, if he did not adore the Spirit as consubstantial and coequal with the Father and the Son.

Was he to go to him now—now that he had heard all this?

But it was the Man who had promised that He would come.

If I said, I shall declare thus; behold, the generation of Your sons I have reprobated [Psalm 72:15]: that is, I will teach thus.

Crafty women do get hold of innocent men, and drive them sometimes into perdition,—often to the brink of perdition.

He not only drank—that might have been forgiven—but he drank in taprooms with vulgar drinkers; so said his friends, and so said his enemies.

J.B. and the minister had already discussed the matter, and she was to remain as guest with the minister’s wife.

Oh, Adolphe!

When you have done base things, rebuke yourself;

Then Moses trembled, and dared not behold.

Let Your works praise You, that we may love You; and let us love You, that Your works may praise You, the which have beginning and end from time,— rising and setting, growth and decay, form and privation.

All this had no effect upon his feelings towards her, but filled him with ineffable regret.

“I suppose that’s about all. Don’t let them quarrel with you here if you can help it. Of course at Longbarns they won’t like it for a time. Oh,—if it could have been different!” Then he dropped her hand, and turning his back quickly upon her, went away along the path.

She knows more about his doings than I do.

As Paul says: One Lord Jesus, through whom are all things.

[Proverbs 3:24] And listen to David giving you the good news, You shall not be afraid for the terror by night, for mischance or noonday demon.

“That was what I heard over there when I was inquiring about your brother’s death.”

Through Bob Walliker Mrs. Burton learned that Harry did not come to the office even when it was known that he had returned to London from Clavering—and she also learned at last that the young men in the office were connecting Harry Clavering’s name with that of a rich and noble widow, Lady Ongar.

Let us now then draw near with faith, every one that has an infirmity.

For whereas their heresy has no ground in reason, nor express proof from holy writ, they were always resorting to shameless subterfuges and plausible fallacies.

She made the matter worse by continually proposing to do things which she knew he would not permit, in order that she might enjoy the fun of seeing his agony and amazement.

Soon after this Reginald was summoned to go upstairs and he again met the angry woman in the passage, passing her of course without a word. And then Mary came to see her friend, and she also encountered Mrs. Morton, who was determined that no one should come into that house without her knowledge. “Who is that young woman?” said Mrs. Morton to the old housekeeper.

[Romans 2:5] In which he would not be reproved, whosoever longs to be healed in this life.

“Very well,” said Mrs. Thomas, crossing her hands over each other in her lap and assuming a look of resignation; “I suppose all this will be changed now. I have endeavoured to do my duty, and very hard it has been.”

But yet she forgave her friend.

Now he remembered chiefly that this woman had called herself his sister, and he was grateful.

And, for what you know, give glory, and do not stumble at those things of which you are ignorant.

“A very comfortable code. I wish I could share it.”

In the general conclusion to which his mind had come, he was not far wrong.

We have to do now with Commentaries.

So bad that he had talked of marriage,—had promised marriage.

Just as many questions might be started for debate among people sitting up at night as to the kind of thing that sunshine is, and then the simple appearing of it in all its beauty would render any verbal description superfluous, so every calculation that tries to arrive conjecturally at the future state will be reduced to nothingness by the object of our hopes, when it comes upon us.

When he was yet hardly more than a boy, before he had come up to London, he was living in a house in the country which his father then occupied.

There is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; nor hid, that shall not be known.

“The importance, Bel, is to me, and not to you,” said her brother.

There was therefore no alloy to debase his virgin gold as he trotted quickly into the stableyard.

“ What do you think is a good sort of subject,” I asked him,—as it were cursorily; “ with a view, you know, to the eye of the public, just at the present moment?” He declined to suggest any subject, and I was thrown back among the depths of my own feelings and convictions.

Being then with my brother, I asked him to sketch me a plot, and he drew out that of my next novel, called Doctor Thorne.

They refused to have a spirit of their own: they shall have the Spirit of God.

The whole thing had been arranged; the groom and his wife were to be taken into the house, and the big bedroom across the yard, usually occupied by them, was to be converted into a quarantine hospital until such time as it might be safe to pull down the yellow flag.

No such luxury as stairs was known at Gangoil.

Shall we cite a particular case for comparison with them?

Hearing of this catastrophe, Valeria immediately fled.

Let them tell us who is that king who entered in to see the guests, and finding one among them with unclean garments, commanded him to be bound by his servants, and thrust out into outer darkness.

He would rather have to address the House of Commons with ten columns of figures than utter a word of remonstrance to his wife.

This work we learn to have been finished about the year 401, not only from the order of his Retractations, but also from his books on Genesis after the Letter, begun about that year.

This has brought us to see that God convicts some by His wrath and chastens them by His anger, since His love to men is so great that He will not leave any without conviction and chastening; so that we should do what in us lies to be spared such conviction and such chastening by the sorest trials.

And the hast given Me, and the like expressions, are to show that He did not come as an alien and draw them to Him, but received them as His own.

The sacrifice would be greater because it would be carried on to some future Marquis of Kingsbury.

For nothing else could be born of them than that which they themselves had been.

[Acts 7:30] Do you mark that it is not hindered by lapse of time?

“I know that Lord Chiltern rides anything he can sit, so long as it is some animal that nobody else will ride. It was always so with him. He is so odd; is he not?”

For He did no sin, neither was guile found in His mouth.

And when the Superior of the Cœnobium saw his steadfastness of mind and immovable inflexibility, in order thoroughly to prove the constancy of his purpose, one day when he had seen the child crying, he pretended that he was annoyed with him and told the father to throw him into the river.

But let us travel once more in our journey of instruction over the lessons taught in the holy Law of God.

To this Clara made no objection;—and she must write also to some one else. She must let her cousin know how little chance there was that she would be at home at Christmas, explaining to him at the same time that his visit to her father would on that account be all the more welcome.

“Yes,” said Sir Thomas, “there is one maid servant.” And then he explained how Mrs. Jones had lived with his wife before her first marriage, during those few months in which she had been called Mrs. Talbot, and from that day even up to the present hour.

“If she sticks to her bargain, it cannot be kept secret very long;—nor would she wish it. It’s just what we might have expected, you know.”

And having said these things, He gave up the ghost [Matthew 27:50 but not for any long time, for He quickly rose again from the dead.

Of course a fellow wants something to help him on.

For when she learned that those who served the tyrant in such matters were at the house (she also was a Christian), and that her husband, although a prefect of Rome, would suffer them to take and lead her away, having requested a little time for adorning her body, she entered her chamber, and being alone, stabbed herself with a sword.

Let each attend to his own department.

For it is more worthy of God that He produced even these of His own will, by producing them out of nothing, than from the predetermination of another, (which must have been the case) if He had produced them out of Matter.

Now even if you were positively certain that he were laden with countless iniquities, not even then would you have an excuse for depriving him of this day's sustenance.

The Son and the Spirit are alike given; whence not subjection but one Godhead is shown by Its working.

True.

What remains, then, but that Pelagius should condemn and renounce this error of his; or else be sorry that he has quoted Ambrose in the way he has?

But to bring back a soul which had gone out, so that it came out of the grave when already stinking and passing the fourth day, [John 11:39] was the work of no other than Him who heard the word of the Father, Let us make man after our image and likeness.

Her mother was as excellent a woman as had ever sent forth a family of daughters into the world, and I do not know that any one ever objected to her as being ignorant, or specially vulgar; but the house in Stratton was not like Clavering Rectory in the little ways of living, and this Florence Burton had been clever enough to understand.

For when Lycurgus had had his eye put out by a man, he got the offender into his power; but instead of taking revenge upon him, he ceased not to use all his arts of persuasion until he induced him to become a philosopher.

It is, I think, certain that he had none of those wonderful gifts of elocution which made it a pleasure to listen to Dickens, whatever he read or whatever he said; nor had he that power of application by using which his rival taught himself with accuracy the exact effect to be given to every word.

If you could have heard how warmly, how affectionately he asks after the sister that won’t mention his name; if you could know how much more anxious he is on her account and his father’s, than on his own, Feemy’s coldness and repugnance would strike you as it does me.

But with you, as with other gentlemen who have to work their way, marriage must come late in life, unless you marry an heiress.

Hebrews 4:15

When she reached her father he complained of her absence, and almost scolded her for having been so long at the cottage. “I cannot see,” said he, “what you find in that woman to make so much of her.”

He may have done so, as affording a reason why he should not go through a second marriage ceremony with the lady whom he had so ill used.

If human skill can by some contrivance fabricate vessels that float, out of metals which sink as soon as they are placed on the water, how much more credible is it that God, by some occult mode of operation, should even more certainly effect that these earthy masses be emancipated from the downward pressure of their weight?

And if you were conversant with his discourses, I might go at great length into this subject, and show what a deal of insincerity ([εἰρωνείαν]) there was in them—if at least we may believe what his disciple says of him—and how that all his writings have their ground-work in vainglory.

Chapter 14.— Examination of This Point. The Phrase Old Testament Used in Two Senses. The Heir of the Old Testament. In the Old Testament There Were Heirs of the New Testament

Paul indeed, when Felix the governor hoped that he should receive money for him from the disciples, about which matter he also dealt with the apostle in private, certainly neither paid it himself, nor did the disciples for him.

Unless, it may be, that which makes them not their own: they are saddened by another's sorrow, they are gladdened by another's joy.

For they had proceeded to such a pitch of madness, as even to attempt to destroy Bishops; and would have destroyed them, had they not escaped their hands.

“Never,” said Lady Sarah. “Sometimes when it’s rainy we walk up and down for exercise. It is a fine old house, but I often wish that it were smaller. I don’t think people want rooms of this sort now as much as they used to do. Perhaps a time may come when my brother will make Manor Cross gay again, but it is not very gay now. I think that is all, Miss Tallowax.”

“Pardon me a moment, Mr Armstrong, and I shall have said all which appears to me to be necessary on the occasion; perhaps more than is necessary; more probably than I should have allowed myself to say, had not Lord Ballindine sent as his ambassador the clergyman of his parish and the friend of his father,” and Lord Cashel again bowed and rubbed his hands.

“I wanted to catch you just for one moment,” said Yorke Clayton, running out so as to catch his prey. She had half wished to fly from him, and had half told herself that any such flight was foolish.

Miss Bonner herself, however, was so discreet in her demeanour, that no one could have suggested that any approach had been made to flirtation.

Your eye which regarded a bribe shall be blinded, and your hand which did not rule in righteousness shall waste away.

Lucy With Her Aunt Dosett

If, then, he is aware of this difference even in the case of that light, so that he thinks the light of the body is one thing, and the light of the soul another, we need no longer discuss the point with him, since his defence itself condemns him if we hold our peace.

“But, Lucius, Mr. Furnival—”

And this was not so much a work of her hands, as much more a trophy of her wisdom.

Before I go there, where if I go, I shall thenceforth be no more.

however, this is obscure, by means of some other image, he says the creation teaches (men) to philosophize, in regard to which Aratus has expressed himself thus:—

But they were all hard and unjust and bad.

He would have inquired, moreover, how often the camel was adduced as an object of comparison in the sacred Scriptures, and in reference to what objects, that he might thus ascertain the meaning of the [Logos] concerning the rich men.

His mind had come to be weary of that fictitious life which is always demanding the labour of new creation, and he troubled himself with his two Virginians and his Philip only when he was seated at his desk.

If for those who are dying you are pained, grieve for those too who are eating and drinking, for as this is natural, so is that!

Lizzie, when she was left by Lord George, had many doubts on the subject,—whether she would go or stay at home.

In like manner also the course of the moon, and that changing which seems to the unskilful to be disorderly, is adapted to the growth of crops, and cattle, and all living creatures; for by her waxings and wanings, by a certain wonderful contrivance of providence, everything that is born is nourished and grows; concerning which we could speak more at length and unfold the matter in detail, but that the method of the question proposed recalls us.

And how can they be gods, if they do not exercise their divine power impartially towards all nations everywhere?

And He is the head of the body, the Church.

Certain things must be done which, no doubt, were costly in their nature.

He had not been given to many kisses,—not even to many words of love.

Therefore religion is contained in wisdom, and wisdom in religion.

“Hang myself.”

In the course of his argument on this last point, he turns aside to discuss at some length, in the last chapter, the structure of the human body: but he returns once more, in conclusion, to his main position, that man is generated as a living and animated being, and that the power of the soul is gradually manifested in, and by means of, the material substratum of the body; so that man is brought to perfection by the aid of the lower attributes of the soul.

Few men in any rank of life had known so little joy as he had done, or had so little pleasure; his only object in life had been to drive the wolf from his father’s door and to keep a roof over him and his sister.

[Mark 12:7] Fools!

[Isaiah 42:1-4] Then is it Jacob the patriarch in whom the Gentiles and yourselves shall trust?

The Captain rode on rapidly, and then sharply gave his orders.

He would not go to Scumberg’s, as he did not wish to mix his private life with that of his brother.

And yet the assurance was so sweet, so heavenly, so laden to her ears with divine music, that at this moment she would not even ask herself to disbelieve it.

From the commencement of my success as a writer, which I date from the beginning of the Cornhill Magazine, I had always felt an injustice in literary affairs which had never afflicted me or even suggested itself to me while I was unsuccessful.

“You will come down for Easter, of course,” said his mother.

She had not told him her maiden name, nor what had been the condition of her parents, nor whether they were living, nor at what theatres she and her husband had acted, nor when he had died.

Do you take possession of this good thing, the Unity in the Three, and leave me to fight the battle.

How can it be grace, if it is given in payment of a debt?

Lastly, as to the men who have sinned with the aforesaid women who had left their monasteries, and are said to be now suspended from communion, if your Fraternity should observe them to have repented worthily for such a wickedness, we will that thou restore them to holy communion.

“Seven long miles, ma’am,” said the landlady.

Such logs as have escaped in the manner above described are recognized on their passage down the river by their marks, and are made up separately, the original owners receiving the value—or not receiving it as the case may be.

Consider Him in what He has suffered, He is Man!

But by degrees this wrath died away, and gave place to fears, and qualms, and inward questions.

With a slender sprig of myrtle between her lips,

For as a boy I began to pray to You, my help and my refuge, and in invoking You broke the bands of my tongue, and entreated You though little, with no little earnestness, that I might not be beaten at school.

Indeed, there was never much of such kindnesses between the lord of the soil and his dependants.

Had I written an epic about clergymen, I would have taken St. Paul for my model; but describing, as I have endeavoured to do, such clergymen as I see around me, I could not venture to be transcendental.

But she had longed to be told that he was thinking of her, and at last the letter had come.

She, in her soft feminine tones, had told him what duty had required of her, and, as she had said so she had done.

All that is true.

Harcourt had, of course, been anxious to be allowed to return alone; but Bertram had declined to appear to be too much in love to leave his mistress, and had persisted that he would accompany him.

And tell when planets set or rise;

“A hearl can never choose his own heir, like you or me,” said the footman, laying down the law.

If the Duke of Middlesex called himself Mr. Smith, he’d be Duke all the same;—wouldn’t he, Mr. Jerningham?

Forsake folly that you may live, and correct understanding in knowledge.

For when the Scripture speaks of glory, it shows us also that it had cognizance of differences in glory.

This, together with his hatred of the man, and his customary inability to do or say anything, made him so perplexed that he could not comprehend Mr. Keegan’s first words, which were not only conciliatory and civil, but almost affectionate.

For not as, You shall not commit adultery, You shall not kill, can it so be said, You shall not wed.

Here lies the necessity that each man should be born again, that he might be freed from the sin in which he was born.

For my attention is more engaged by higher causes, believing that men ought to ascribe Africa's great calamities to their own sins.

And by these He means the apostles, and those after them, for, indeed, many prophesied.

Now if it was altogether unseemly in any of the Bishops to change their opinions merely from fear of these things, yet it was much more so, and not the part of men who have confidence in what they believe, to force and compel the unwilling.

[Romans 8:3] And I have set sackcloth my garment: and I have been made to them for a parable, that is, for a derision.

Chapter 14.— Of the Order and Law Which Obtain in Heaven and Earth, Whereby It Comes to Pass that Human Society Is Served by Those Who Rule It.

He does not mean the gates which we see today in dust and ashes; the gates he means are those against which hell prevails not [Matthew 16:18] and through which the multitude of those who believe in Christ enter in.

How could they have escaped the observation of so many?

For it is better to know a single husband, though he be a second or third, than to have many paramours: that is, it is more tolerable for a woman to prostitute herself to one man than to many.

However, I must also request your attention to the following: John Baptist says of Christ, Behold the Lamb of God, Behold Him which takes away the sin of the world; [John 1:29] and He too says of Himself, My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me: and I give unto them eternal life; and they shall never perish.

“Why has there been a secret kept from me between her and this man; and that too, after I had cautioned her against being intimate with him? I am sorry that she should suffer; but it is better that she should suffer a little now, than that we should both suffer much by-and-by.”

And tell me, if we were to be precise about these things, what can be more unclean than our books, which are made of the skins of animals?

I told Thackeray once that it was not only his best work, but so much the best, that there was none second to it.

And the eternal law is the divine order or will of God, which requires the preservation of natural order, and forbids the breach of it.

To expose the godlessness of idolatry?

But the part she had to play was one which even she felt to be almost beyond her powers.

Because he enters not in suddenly, nor at once, but makes much trial first, which accordingly was done here also.

For what excuse can they have who are bidden not simply day and night to commune with the law but to be occupied in, that is, to be for ever holding converse with it , and yet scarce do so for the smallest fraction of their life?

“He’s as clever an author, in the way of writing and that kind of thing, as there is in all London,” said Mrs. Grimes with energy.

Which of these three different causes of impossibility, think you, which we have enumerated (setting aside the fourth) can we meetly assign to the case of the Son of God?

“You look if there aint,—with boots and breeches.”

Which of us is a sojourner even unto ages?

He had been premeditating an escape home to his mother’s house in Guestwick, and thence back to London, without making any further appearance at the Manor House.

For if he that repays that only, which is given him, is wicked, because he did not double it; he that has wasted even this, what will be said to him?

It were good indeed never to be angry.

Now, behold an inkling of the Creator's failings and infirmities in Christ; for I on my side mean to impute to Him ignorance.

“Just what a crabbed, crafty, selfish old bachelor of seventy would be sure to say.”

“Why, he said yesterday that he would have no more going to town at all; that he was barely able to pay the claims made on him, and keep up the house here, and that he would not—”

Arise therefore, and get you down, and go with them, doubting nothing: for I have sent them.

And again: if man is a rational and mortal animal, and every definition is explanatory of the underlying natures, and the rational is not the same as the mortal according to the plan of nature, man then certainly cannot have one nature, according to the rule of his own definition.

After our likeness, without sin. In these words another thing also is suggested, that it is possible even for one in afflictions to go through them without sin. So that when he says also in the likeness of flesh [Romans 8:3], he means not that He took on Him [merely] the likeness of flesh, but flesh. Why then did he say in the likeness? Because he was speaking about sinful flesh: for it was like our flesh, since in nature it was the same with us, but in sin no longer the same.

His intention was to do a general benefit to London at large.

It had been understood some time, and was understood at the present moment; and yet Mr. Scarborough went on living,—no doubt, as an invalid in the last stage of probable dissolution, but still with the full command of his intellect and mental powers for mischief.

A priest.

Therefore, you see, implying that it was He who approved those other acts also, He makes mention also of a prophecy, which if not spoken for this end, yet involves the same meaning. And what is this?

Tie up the Bibles: perhaps the judgment would not be such, not such the punishment: if one were to bury them in dung, that he might not hear them, he would not so insult them as you do now.

‘Tis a pity that he should not have recognised the fact, that in this world no good is unalloyed, and that there is but little evil that has not in it some seed of what is goodly.

[Genesis 4:4] We need not therefore wonder that fallen angels who occupy the air, and whose chief sins are pride and falsehood, should demand from their worshippers by whom they wished to be considered as gods what they knew to be due to God only.

In her perturbation of mind she had foolishly resolved that she would not herself go to bed.

The windows opened on to the full extent of the lovely trim garden; immediately before the windows were plots of flowers in stiff, stately, stubborn little beds, each bed surrounded by a stone coping of its own; beyond, there was a low parapet wall on which stood urns and images, fawns, nymphs, satyrs, and a whole tribe of Pan’s followers; and then again, beyond that, a beautiful lawn sloped away to a sunk fence which divided the garden from the park.

But Sophy was heartlessly cruel in her indifference.

[Matthew 25:12] And when He has said this, nothing else but hell is left, and that intolerable punishment; or rather, this word is more grievous even than hell.

He had been kidnapped, and made to serve as a common soldier, but boasts that he was at once fit for the occasion when enabled to show as a court gentleman.

In public?

No wonder if, when the first-born of all creation was assuming a human body, some of them should have been filled with love to man and become admirers and followers of Christ, and thought it good to minister to his kindness towards man by having a body like that of men.

By which she perhaps meant to imply a belief that a time was coming in which her husband would have a salary much better than that now enjoyed by Phineas, and much more likely to be permanent.

He thought of a Saxon as an evil being.

During the discussion as to the feast and the bridegroom’s entreaties that the two ladies would be present, she had taken no part in the matter in hand.

“We’ll get over to Windermere one day,” said Kate.

If, then, one were to cease from this ambitious strife, and look straight into the actual question before us, he would very soon discover the flagrant absurdity of this teaching.

How accurately must they react the lessons which history and experience should teach them if Great, Britain is to be saved from a repetition of the disgrace which she encountered before the American Colonies declared themselves independent?

And let them know that in worshipping the Lord in the flesh we do not worship a creature, but, as we said above, the Creator Who has put on the created body.

In a second the whole trouble was over.

He was well aware of his duty to his sister.

Is it any great thing to glory in malice?

The innocence of the man; for the dealings of the sheriff’s officer were hardly known beyond the town land which was concerned!

But how stands the case?

For other things, according to the nature of things originate, are without likeness in essence with the Maker; but are external to Him, made by the Word at His grace and will, and thus admit of ceasing to be, if it so pleases Him who made them ; for such is the nature of things originate.

[Galatians 6:2] This, even this, is the consummation of all our works; Love.

“Does my uncle hunt much?”

He is going to school and not out for a holiday.

She would go home to Loring, and try to bring herself to accept him.

Do you not know that ours is the time of more perfect commandments?

And then will I say unto them, Depart from Me, because you are workers of iniquity.

But, indeed, both opinions are quite false.

And this, both the most ancient writers of Greece, whom they call [theologi and also Roman writers following and imitating the Greeks, teach; of whom especially Euhemerus and our Ennius, who point out the birthdays, marriages, offspring, governments, exploits, deaths, and tombs of all of them.

She had given her heart and had got nothing in return.

She likes things comfortable;—and why shouldn’t she, with two hundred a year of her own coming out of the Kingsland Road brickfields?

And it was so.

Would I do so?

And when is an acquittal obtained, upon the criminal becoming his own judge?

For if there be no judgment, and we are not to give account of our deeds, neither shall we receive rewards for our labors.

Their love was of honourable birth, but it grew out of all proportion.

And even David himself was taken from the sheepfolds to be the shepherd of Israel.

Thady and Feemy went into the house, and we hope each got to bed without further words; and Father John walked slowly home, thinking of all the misery he saw in store for his parishioners at Ballycloran.

Should he abandon racing altogether, sell his share of Prime Minister and Coalition, and go in hard and strong for committees, debates, and divisions?

On the following morning the party was of course discussed in the Tappitt family under various circumstances.

He, who is sore at the little respect you have paid him, takes any ground of offence rather than that.

Chapter 22. Type of Those Born Under Scorpio.

And He holds her by the hand, assuring the beholders; so as by that sight to make a way for the belief of her resurrection.

They need not be married immediately.

There has been no counting of these people, but from what information I could get I think I am safe in saying that as many as 6,000 of them live at Thaba ‘Ncho.

The man, who was aware that Caldigate was a county magistrate, civilly touched his hat, and then, with a few whispered words, expressed his opinion that our hero had better go with him to the mayor’s office.

Let us, therefore, brothers and sisters, believe; in a trial of the living God we strive and are exercised in the present life, that we may obtain the crown in that which is to come.

“Mamma,” said Hetta, getting up from her seat, “you may as well believe me. No earthly inducement shall ever make me marry my cousin Roger. It is to me horrible that you should propose it to me when you know that I love that other man with my whole heart.”

“It’s all very well,” said Mr. Ratler, “but Turnbull wasn’t there, you know.”

But in this matter of managing the Emperor, the under secretary had nothing to do, and would have been the last man to be engaged in such a service.

For if they should insist that these things are said of David or Solomon or any of their successors, let them show how the throne of him, who is in their judgment described in the prophecy, is as the days of heaven, and as the sun before God, and as the moon established for ever.

But, say they, the part of the soul of the world which pervades it makes it a goddess.

“At any rate I will think and believe no ill of him.”

More than once he saw Miles Grendall, but Miles Grendall was always ready with an answer.

It is not indeed possible that any one should come to the end of life's race without suffering from calumny; the wicked find it a consolation to carp at the good, supposing the guilt of sin to be less, in proportion as the number of those who commit it is greater.

She had just, for the second time, declared her intention of getting tea, having now resolved that no weakness on her mother’s part should hinder her, when Mrs. Ray, from her seat near the window, saw the young man coming over the green.

[John 13:8] Simon said unto him, You shall never wash for me my feet.

[Matthew 8:21-22] The father of the disciple was not baptized.

If you can say that you wish it on your own account, of course I will yield.

When the Scrobbyites heard that Scrobby had gone all the way to Norrington to buy strychnine to kill rats they were Scrobbyites no longer.

Ralph had written his letter, and had received his answer,—and he also was successful and glorious.

No one, however, can use it well outside the Church.

“Do you think it impossible,” said he, “that you should have it among your own things?”

Imitate ye Idithun, leap over your enemies; men fighting against you, stopping up your way, men hating you, leap ye over: Hope in Him all the council of the people: pour out before Him your hearts:...By imploring, by confessing, by hoping.

“Well, my dear, I’m sure Mr. Hill’s a very nice young man.”

There has been a doctor already, and there isn’t no doubt of that.

“Its high place, its authority, its splendor at home, its name and fame abroad, the purple robe, the ivory chair, the appanage of office, the fasces, the army with its command, the government of the provinces!” On that splendor “apud exteras gentes,” he expatiates in one of his attacks upon Verres.

‘But I cannot do it, Uncle Michel. I can never be Adrian Urmand’s wife.’

“Come, Patrick,” continued the countess, “it is perhaps useless for us to say anything further at present.

When gentlemen past sixty make love to ladies past forty, it may be supposed that they are not so dilatory in their proceedings as younger swains and younger maidens. Time is then behind them, not before them; and urges them on to quick decisions. It may be presumed, moreover, that this pair knew their own minds.

It is He also who teaches Moses to act as instructor.

“We haven’t polled half the voters,” said he.

[1 Thessalonians 3:8, and 2:19] You see his anxiety in this matter, his regard for the good of his disciples, not less than for his own.

And do not the priests, more than the outside worshippers, carry off many of the offerings, thus acknowledging the uselessness of their worship?

Had Mr Apjohn told him what it was that he was about to be called upon to perform, even then, before the necessity of performance was presented to him, there would have been a moment for consideration, and he might have doubted.

All things to wit were made through the Son; but He Himself is not a creature, as Paul says of the Lord: 'In Him were all things created, and He is before all' (Colossians 1:16).

“If I had liked the cook I should have asked her, and I don’t see why Mr. Spooner shouldn’t ask Miss Palliser. She needn’t take him.”

Be not afraid at hearing this.

[Joel 2:3] Terrible indeed these things are, and more than terrible, when we are grieved only at what is present, and are not yet distressed by the feeling of a severer blow: since, as in sickness, the suffering which pains us from time to time is more distressing than that which is not present.

“ Currer Bell was only a young girl when she succeeded,” she added.

Since man would not have been able to call the light Day, or the darkness Night, nor, indeed, to have given names to the other things, had not he received the nomenclature from God, who made the things themselves.

[John 6:67 and again; I will follow You wherever You go.

This conjecture, however, had no foundation; for his true purpose was to have destroyed his son and the others, and then to have reinstated himself and Diocletian in sovereign authority.

Jovian having returned from Persia, ecclesiastical commotions were again renewed: for those who presided over the churches endeavored to anticipate each other, in the hope that the emperor would attach himself to their own tenets.

If evil, why not boldly censure it?

But the smallness in no way injures the lump, but that little quantity converts the whole of the meal to itself by means of the power inherent in it.

Perhaps I ought to have written before, to say that Aunt Stanbury is not as well as we could wish her; but, as I know that you cannot very well leave your office, I have thought it best not to say anything to frighten you.

‘But, Alaric, surely you would not interfere with Harry,’ said Linda, whose humble, innocent heart thought still of nothing but the merits of her sister; and then, remembering that it was necessary that she should admit nothing on Gertrude’s behalf, she entered her little protest against the assumption that her sister acknowledged Norman for her lover. ‘That is, you would not do so, if there were anything in it.’

I will have no one there paid by me to obstruct the course of justice or to hoodwink a jury.

[Acts 16:27] There was an earthquake, that the keeper should be roused from sleep, and the doors flew open, that he should wonder at what had happened: but these things the prisoners saw not: otherwise they would all have fled: but the keeper of the prison was about to slay himself, thinking the prisoners were escaped.

For if you will the good, and hatest the evil, this requires a perfect knowledge.

[πνεύματος], wind) is raised and buoyed up by pleasure, having no steadfastness; facile in making professions, prompt at promising; the thoughts all in restless commotion: laughter ill-timed, causeless hilarity, idle clatter of unmeaning talk.

16. This Jesus though he be the Son of the Just One, all that He preaches is grace. But to me this His grace is torment. Envy is the cause of pleasure to us, for Envy at the beginning mixed for me the first shedding of blood. Why is it guilty in the sight of the Son of Mary Who has come commanding, You shall not be angry against your brother? He has taken away the sword from between brethren; while in the sword of Cain I had pleasure from the beginning.

And that what I believed might be made manifest for salvation, He has made my confession to be conspicuous in His own strength.

Where such a statement is written, Hermogenes' shop must tell us.

How much more things of this life?

Then he would return home and tell his wife all that had occurred;—tell the whole also to Lady Lufton, if that might still be of any service.

“You’ll be rewarded hereafther, mother; shure won’t it all go for charity?”

And though I might have destroyed myself, I should have saved the man who is still my husband.

In front of the building there ran a road,—which after all was no more than a private lane.

Orth.— Do you assert that the human soul was immortal, or mortal?

His assurances were not conveyed in words so light that they might mean much or little.

As to that seeing of the New Year in, it was quite out of the question for the Quaker or for his daughter.

How much, think you, is the nature of the Sun inferior to him?

Concerning those who have come from Africa or Mauretania and know not in what sect they were baptized, what ought to be done in their case ?

“I think I may say that I know all about that also.”

That such diminution is taking place on all sides is apparent enough; but it is apparent to him as an evil, the consummation of which it is his duty to retard.

He was very careful in his speech, never saying in so many words that the privilege of returning a member was his own; but his meaning was not the less clear.

Moses, he says, resorting to allegory, has declared Paradise to be the womb, if we ought to rely on his statement.

But the heathen before they believe, cannot understand: for it is a divine oracle that declares 'Unless ye believe, assuredly you shall not understand.'

For who, at this time of day, accuses you of being an Arian?

“In what way? Of course he has not said a word that was not nice and loverlike, and all that sort of thing. I believe he would have done anything in the world that his aunt had told him; and as to his—”

Chapter XXIX. Mr. And Mrs. Outhouse

Quare si quis est in Christo, nova creatura est, nec amplius peccatis dedita: Vetera præterierunt, vitam antiquam exuimus: Ecce enim nova facta sunt, [2 Corinthians 5:16-17] castitas ex fornicatione, et continentia ex incontinentia, justitia ex injustitia.

Because if we who are so far removed from the greatness of the work, offer supplications and prayers for you, much more is it just that you should do it.

“You expressly desired me to wait tea, Mr. Furnival. I have got your letter, and will show it you if you wish it.”

If the Father of a certainty always was, of a certainty the Son always was.

We have sent to have the house in Portman Square got ready for us, and I suppose we shall be there about the 15th of next month.

[Isaiah 2:19] And has shut to the door, thereby shutting out the wicked, of course; and when these knock, He will answer, I know you not whence you are; and when they recount how they have eaten and drunk in His presence, He will further say to them, Depart from me, all you workers of iniquity; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

Amelia, the eldest, entertained an idea that she was more of a personage in the world’s eyes than her cousin,—that she went to more parties, which certainly was true if she went to any,—that she wore finer clothes, which was also true, and that she had a lover, whereas Dolly Grey,—as she called her cousin behind her back,—had none.

She would have liked to hear the opinion of such a man about John Eames.

Or how can we hold communion with them without the Church's baptism, to whom, if we should only say Hail, we are partakers of their evil deeds?

Then Ether, the Father Almighty, in copious showers descended

For by the Word revealing Himself everywhere, both above and beneath, and in the depth and in the breadth— above, in the creation; beneath, in becoming man; in the depth, in Hades; and in the breadth, in the world— all things have been filled with the knowledge of God.

He should have managed his subordinates better than to have one of them turn evidence against him.

For not only faith is necessary, but love.

“I will, if you will,” she said again, after waiting a second or two for his answer.

She did not understand him, but finding that he was quite in earnest she directed that the box should be again taken to her own chamber.

Who does not know how odious a letter will become by being shoved on one side day after day?

Yet be not ashamed, nor blush, for the very necessity of nature requires this, and so disposes the soul according as the tendency of what is said may be.

“Well, it is nonsense to say that Frank is in love with the girl at the doctor’s bidding.”

“Yes, they are both there,” said Osborne.

For wine, says Androcydes, and gluttonous feeds of flesh make the body strong, but the soul more sluggish.

1 Corinthians 6:14

‘Oh, I am not particularly in a hurry,’ said Charley; ‘but I deny the lunch. This has been a bad season for mutton chops in the neighbourhood of Somerset House; somehow they have not grown this year.’

When the feud was first becoming furious, an enormous advertisement was issued by Dr. Fleabody’s friends, in which her cause was advocated and her claims recapitulated.

“I hope not; but it is always well to be on one’s guard. I am sure you must be aware that Mr. Tappitt has behaved to you very generously; and if you have the high principle for which we are willing to give you credit, and which you ought to possess for the management of such an undertaking as the brewery, you will be careful that me and my daughters shan’t be put to inconvenience by any delay in paying up the income regularly.”

How wisely he answered a certain duke.

At length Thady thought it was dark enough, and without saying a word to the old man, he left the cabin and again descended the hill.

Sheil’s speech was one of those numerous anomalies with which this singular trial was crowded; and which, together, showed the great difficulty of coming to a legal decision on a political question, in a criminal court.

If, therefore, under guiding grace, dearly-beloved, we faithfully and wisely understand what is the particular work of the Father, of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost, and what is common to the Three in our restoration, we shall without doubt so accept what has been wrought for us by humiliation and in the body as to think nothing unworthy about the One and Selfsame Glory of the Trinity.

As to that matter of order, we must begin by stating that the publican himself is as desirous of maintaining it as can be any of those who are in his neighbourhood.

That by ancient right imperial power had been given by bishops, never assumed, and it was commonly said that emperors had desired the priesthood, rather than priests the imperial power.

When the ladies had gone upstairs the conversation became political and lively. The Duke could talk freely about the state of things to Mr. Boncassen, and was able gradually to include Tregear in the badinage with which he attacked the Conservatism of his son. And so the half-hour passed well. Upstairs the two girls immediately came together, leaving Mrs. Boncassen to chew the cud of the grandeur around her in the sleepy comfort of an armchair. “And so everything is settled for both of us,” said Isabel.

If sitting with dignity in his hired carriage, and stepping with authority up the big front steps, would have done anything, Dr Fillgrave might have done much. Lady Arabella was greatly taken with his looks when he first came to her, and it was only when she by degrees perceived that the symptoms, which she knew so well, did not yield to him that she began to doubt those looks.

When will you make my child your wife?

The ancient and pious doctrine which defended the Trinity was abolished, by setting up a palisade and battering down the Consubstantial: opening the door to impiety by means of what is written, using as their pretext, their reverence for Scripture and for the use of approved terms, but really introducing unscriptural Arianism.

He never rode to hounds himself, but I did; and then and thus began one of the great joys of my life.

Madame Staubach hesitated for an instant before she answered, and then replied that Linda was in the parlour.

Hear, hear, hear me graciously, in that way, all Your own, which though known to few is to those few known so well.

A man, therefore, who acts in obedience to the faith which obeys God, restrains all mortal affections, and keeps them within the natural limit, regulating his desires so as to put the higher before the lower.

Having stated the grounds of my perplexity, I appeal to your kindness to give me an answer regarding this matter.

What of so many souls in the entire household?— of which if even one, in consequence of the severity which included the whole household in the excommunication, should perish through departing from the body without baptism, the loss thus occasioned would be an incomparably greater calamity than the bodily death of an innumerable multitude, even though they were innocent men, dragged from the courts of the sanctuary and murdered.

The Deity being incomprehensible is also assuredly nameless.

Between her and her father no word on the subject had been spoken, and even to her mother she was silent, respectful and subdued, as it becomes daughters to be who are hardly used when they are in love.

“ I’m not asking you to go to him to find out whether I know Latin and Greek,” said Mr. Mackenzie.

For who, I pray you, digging in the earth, and watering, and planting, or making baskets, or weaving sackcloth, or practising any other handy works, will ever be proud?

He had smashed his shoulder to pieces against a stump on the bank, and was afterwards shot on that very spot.

Of railway stations there were but few in the country, and even omnibuses were in their infancy.

For if they escaped not, who refused him that spoke on earth, much more shall not we escape, if we turn away from Him that speaks from heaven.

What reader will not understand the agony of remorse produced by such a condition of mind?

Sin henceforth will be an object of dread to you.

Yours said the emperor is the duty alike of pointing out and of mixing the salve.

Him to whom nothing is equivalent, nothing is equal, before whom the nations are as nothing [Isaiah 40:15], Him did he betray for thirty pieces of silver.

“Why then again he said that we were cousins; that I had no nearer cousin anywhere, and that he would be good to me and help me, and that the lawsuit should not go on. Oh, Daniel, he was so good!”

You priests are ended and have given up the Ghost from henceforth, depart you diviners!

To men such a necessity is always grievous.

Justin: I shall give you another testimony, my friends, from the Scriptures, that God begot before all creatures a Beginning, [who was] a certain rational power [proceeding] from Himself, who is called by the Holy Spirit, now the Glory of the Lord, now the Son, again Wisdom, again an Angel, then God, and then Lord and Logos; and on another occasion He calls Himself Captain, when He appeared in human form to Joshua the son of Nave (Nun).

“It is given to us as one whole. Then we have the story of a mystery which is above, or, at least, beyond the utmost stretch of man’s comprehension; and the very purport of which is opposed to all our ideas of justice. In the jurisprudence of heaven can that be just which here, on earth, is manifestly unjust?”

“The question is,” said he, speaking between his teeth, and hardly pronouncing his words, “the question is whether you care for me.”

This is the value of much of the work done by the feminine wing of the school—work which presents itself to French taste as deplorably thin and insipid.

And he brings forward as all instance on this score Gaius and Aristarchus, who were detained instead of Paul; the soldiers who kept Peter; the infants who were massacred by Herod on account of Christ; and Zacharias, the father of the revered and blessed forerunner.

In his worst fits of disreputable living he was ashamed to apply to his guardian for money; and in his worst fits of illness he was, through fear, somewhat patient under his doctor’s hands; but just at present he had nothing of which to be ashamed, and was not at all patient.

As the people pressed around him, and could not get enough of his words, so that when they were pushed hither and yon, and were pressing one another, they incurred danger; and each one was forcing his way to go farther, so that by standing near, he might hear more accurately what John was saying, he placed himself in the midst of them upon the platform of the readers, and, having taken a seat, taught the multitude.

Once more a question, Are not both good, since the good Creator made them?

I have a sort of love for him, as he walks about wretched with that dog of his, though I know that it is necessary to hang him.

For they belong to the part we play before others on a stage which is very quickly set up and taken down again— perhaps indeed more quickly destroyed than put together, as we may see from the manifold changes of life, and fluctuations of prosperity; while the only real and securely abiding good thing is godliness.

“People make changes in their gardens without necessity sometimes.”

“I am delighted to hear it,” said Roger. “She has made it up with her grandfather?”

“Why did she say that I encouraged him?” she demanded indignantly of Gertrude.

Our Lord so instructed His Apostles that, daily at the sacrifice of His body, believers make bold to say, Our Father, Which art in Heaven, hallowed be Your name; they earnestly desire the name of God, which in itself is holy, to be hallowed in themselves; you say, You know, Lord, how holy, how innocent, and how pure are my hands.

Let not therefore heretics flatter themselves against me, because I said, the shortness of my days, as if they would not last down to the end of the world.

For the Law requires not only Faith but works also, but grace saves and justifies by Faith. [Ephesians 2:8]

“Put this with it, dear.” And his mother gave him a little jewel, a cupid in mosaic surrounded by tiny diamonds, which he remembered her to wear ever since he had first noticed the things she had worn. “Not from me, mind. I give it to you. Come—will you trust me to pack them?” Then Mrs. Clavering again made up the parcel, and added the trinket which she had brought with her.

That was all very well.

The body, as a body, was of such a nature that he found it necessary to appall them.

“All right,” said Gager.

there it is, Pat;”—Pat was the huntsman—”outside the low wall there, down towards the river.” This was Sam O’Grady, the master of the Duhallow hounds, the god of Owen’s idolatry.

And if love is a substance, it is certainly not body, but spirit; and the mind also is not body, but spirit.

Let us direct our wives to what is good; let them exhibit, says he, the lovable disposition of chastity; let them show the guileless will of their meekness; let them manifest the gentleness of their tongue by silence; let them give their love not according to their inclinations, but equal love in sanctity to all that fear God.

I can’t say anything about what you speak of.

“She can do as she pleases, of course,” Sir Thomas had said.

I do not know that such interest was renewed.

“Oh yes;—the Queen’s Speech. But there isn’t very much in it.”

“As far as that, I am. She has never misconducted herself; and what is more, she has been cruelly used since she came home.”

But if I were to answer that what He wishes is, and what He wishes not is not, you would say that then He wishes the evil things to be which are done in the world, since everything that He wishes is, and everything that He wishes not is not.

“Well, Graybody,” I said, “I suppose we are nearly ready for the first comer.”

And whence, says some one, are these things clear?

“I dare say. He is blackguard enough for anything,” said De Baron.

For, when teachers still cruelly attack what the delinquents already mourn for, the weak mind's very love for its Redeemer grows cold, because it feels itself to be afflicted in that wherein of itself it does not spare itself.

I therefore being thus gross-hearted, nor clear even to myself, whatsoever was not stretched over certain spaces, nor diffused, nor crowded together, nor swelled out, or which did not or could not receive some of these dimensions, I judged to be altogether nothing.

It consists of one long narrow, irregular street, lying along the Shannon, in which slated houses and thatched cabins delightfully relieve each other, and prevent the eye from being annoyed with sameness or monotony.

And then Sir Peregrine gave way.

“I never thought we should find much difference. It don’t matter what rent a man pays, but what he does. I could tell you how nineteen out of twenty men here would vote, if you’d tell me what they did, and who they were. What’s to be done about talking to ‘em?”

On the whole, I am inclined to think that Mrs. Grantly understood the world better than did Lady Lufton.

Then the disciples looked one upon another, doubting of whom He spoke.

This is the excuse of those who will not be converted to repentance.

A couple of horses had been purchased for her, under Lord George’s superintendence,—his conjointly with Mrs. Carbuncle’s,—and had been at the castle for the last ten days—”eating their varra heeds off,” as Andy Gowran had said in sorrow.

“The very best in the world;—but a man must settle down in the world some day, you know. I want a nice bit of land, a hundred and fifty acres, or something of that sort.”

For the guilt of turning away will be imputed to no one who in returning brings back gain.

God bless you, dearest Nelly,

6. But mark also the children's freedom from vain-glory. For they did not leap into the furnace, but they kept beforehand the commandment of Christ where he says, [Matthew 26:41] Pray that you enter not into temptation. Neither did they shrink when they were brought to it; but stood in the midst nobly, neither contending without a summons, nor yet when summoned playing the coward: but ready for everything, and noble, and full of all boldness of speech.

And I have misfortunes independent of my poverty which make it impossible that I should be other than a miserable wretch.

Her absolute money-dealings had always been with Mr. Pritchett; and as she passed through town, Mr. Pritchett came to her and made her the usual quarterly payment.

They were of immense size, perhaps a dozen miles broad and thirty or forty long.

If at any time war was raised, like David he had recourse to God, knowing that he is the arbiter of battles, and by prayer brought them to a prosperous issue.

“Nor my friend,—especially.”

By this mode of reckoning, the reign of Amassia is made to extend over twenty-eight years.

And so the labor is greater, since it has no one to share the struggles with it.

And, when another old friend was in the neighbourhood, close by,—one of the oldest friends I have in the world,—wasn’t I to go and see her?

Accordingly he had recourse to the following measures: he knew that Constantius had rendered himself odious to the defenders of the homoousian faith by having driven them from the churches, and proscribed their bishops.

He too was a Newton of Newton; but it may be truly said of him that there was nothing selfish in his feelings.

“Or the Lord Chancellor,” said Lord George.

But nobility is itself exhibited in choosing and practising what is best.

Whatsoever things, He said, the Father has done, the Son does also in like wise.

Do you think that we suffer adversity equally with yourselves, when you see that the same adverse things are not borne equally by us and by you?

This life, being a thing which no one can say he has not experienced, it is on that account found in the memory, and recognised whenever the name of a happy life is heard.

Rather, however, both the people and the patriarch, going down there, and coming up thence, were together completing the type of this His return. Thus, as they went down to avoid death by famine, so He death by conspiracy. But whereas they on their arrival were for the time delivered from the famine, this man, when He had gone down, sanctified the whole land, by setting His foot thereon.

Next let not man, now that he knows that by the grace of God he is what he is, fall into another snare of pride, so as by lifting up himself for the very grace of God to despise the rest.

When Sunday came nobody asked her to go to church.

She believed the man to be an atheist.

Let us remember that a certain just man said, I shall never be moved: and that it was showed him how rashly he had said this, attributing as though to his own strength, what was given to him from above.

And, in truth, this is the adamantine statue, this is the considerate servant.

She did not then care to carry her reading further, but returned with the volume into the house.

Mr. Keate in 1871 was Lieut.-Governor of Natal, and undertook, at the instance of the British Government, to make an award between the Transvaal Republic and the Batlapin Kafirs, whose Chief is and was a man called Gassibone.

What will then be the glory of faith?

“But she has been brought up like that, so that it is not her fault. Now she endeavours to do her best.”

Even with the broad humor of Bret Harte, even with the broader humor of Artemus Ward and Mark Twain, there is generally present an undercurrent of melancholy, in which pathos and satire are intermingled.

“I wish that the rich and great had left him as they found him. It would be well for him and me this morning, if he had not so entirely trusted them.”

Whence [does] that [appear] (you say)? I do not say, from the prophets; for neither do I now speak to Christians only; but even if a heathen be here, I am perfectly confident, and bring forward my proofs, and will instruct him. How (you say)?

But if the natural knowledge of the sensuous faculties is permanent, how happens it that the knowledge of the intellectual faculties fails, to which the superiority is ascribed?

On Roden’s first arrival at the office Crocker almost flung himself into his friend’s arms, with just a single exclamation.

Say not then, Tomorrow I will turn, tomorrow I will please God; and all today's and yesterday's deeds shall be forgiven me.

Now we shall not be able to state the cause nor the method of the unspeakable and curious operation; and should we make the attempt, we should be laughed to scorn.

Charette.

Chapter 17.— Nature, in as Far as It is Nature, No Evil

Chapter 22. Righteousness; What It is.

He had fallen in love too young,—it being the nature of young men to be much younger than young ladies, and, not knowing himself, had been as might be a barn-door cock who had set his heart upon some azure-plumaged, high-soaring lady of the woods.

“Yes.”

“Oh, dear, yes. More than that, I should say. I consider you to be rather gay in your attire.”

If you would obtain worldly things, seek Heaven; if you would enjoy things here, despise them.

Why do you believe him, when you won’t believe me?

It was all England against Britannula!

All that part of the business which distresses me is pleasant to him.

“And it is still true?”

Why do riches entice you?

“It is about played out!” said its citizen to me.

As his lusts became corrupt, so himself also.

Were she to tell her story it would seem as though she were repeating to him back his own.

Do you observe, how by degrees he shows it to be not an accuser of sin only, but in a measure its producer? Yet not from any fault of its own, but from that of the froward Jews, he proves it was, that this happened. For he has taken good heed to stop the mouths of the Manichees, that accuse the Law; and so after saying, Nay, I had not known sin, but by the Law; and, I had not known lust, except the Law had said, You shall not covet; he adds,

Besides, the disciples heard at the same time with the others, yet they declared an opinion contrary to theirs, saying, To whom shall we go?

The things which she narrated had been done;—the wrongs had been endured;—and the end of it all which she feared, was imminent.

But the enemy would certainly never have attacked him with so fierce an onslaught, with which he has up till now scorned to attack you, unless in his jealousy at the progress he was to make, he had endeavoured to get the better of that virtue which he saw lay in his disposition, and to destroy it with his fiery darts, as he knew without the shadow of a doubt that he was the stronger, since he deemed it worth his while to attack him with such vehemence.

For not even when we suffer such things as I have mentioned shall your troubles stop there, but as long as you are in the world you shall have sorrow, not only now when I am betrayed, but also afterwards.

It was admitted on both sides that there was no man like Sir Timothy for managing the House or coercing a party, and there was therefore a general feeling that it would be a pity that Sir Timothy should be squeezed out.

As the fullness of the Godhead is in Him, so we are made full in Him.

And Sophocles:—

“I’ll tell you what he’d say thin, av he tould the thruth; he’d say there was an honest man living there, which wor niver the case as long as any of his own breed was in it—barring Anty, I main; she’s honest and thrue, the Lord be good to her, the poor thing. But the porter’s not to your liking, Mrs Costelloe—you’re not tasting it at all this morning.”

2 Corinthians 6:18

Then there was a very stormy scene in the dining-room between the two men. The Dean, whose words were infinitely more ready and available than those of his opponent, said very much the most, and by the fierce indignation of his disclaimers, almost prevented the husband from dwelling on the wife’s indiscretion. “I did not think it possible that such a man as you could have behaved so cruelly to such a girl.”

I could have clung to the outside of a man’s body, to his very trappings, and loved him ten times better than myself!—ay, even though he had illtreated me,—if I had been allowed to choose a husband for myself.

But then comes the question of the cost.

Mr. Purvidge, it was observed, drank the health of every separate member of the family in a separate bumper, pressing the edge of the glass securely to his lips, and then sending the whole contents down his throat at one throw with a chuck from his little finger.

He repeats what he said before, There is no soundness in my flesh; for, There is no rest in my bones, is equivalent to this.

He had been Sir Gregory’s confidential man all through; had worked out cases for him, furnished him with arguments, backed his views, and had assisted him, whenever such a course had been necessary, in holding Mr. Jobbles’ head under the pump.

The nine, however, conquer the four (monads): for it has been declared, when the one number is odd and the other even, the greater prevails; but when both are even or both odd, the less (prevails).

How vainglory may be useful to us.

There were, no doubt, certain laws in accordance with which Balbus was or was not a citizen; but Cicero here says that because Balbus was a good man, therefore there should be no question as to his citizenship.

For riches and poverty are determined not by the measure of the substance, but by the disposition of the mind: and he rather is the poorest of all, who is always hangering after more and is never able to stay this wicked lust.

And again, if the son consulting his own safety had chosen to throw himself into the hands of the army, he would straightway have become a parricide.

[2 Chronicles 33:10-19] And not only by what was done to these men, but also by the words of the prophet does God destroy the counsels of despair, speaking on this wise: Today, if you will hear His voice, harden not your hearts, as in the provocation.

Let us put on clothing and raiment.

Plato thinks that the world has always existed, while the Pythagoreans attribute everything to mathematics.

"Now, the end of the commandment is charity out of a pure heart, and of a good conscience, and of faith unfeigned."

[1 Corinthians 14:29-30] "In which passage he has taught and shown, that many things are revealed to individuals for the better, and that we ought not each to strive pertinaciously for what he has once imbibed and held, but if anything has appeared better and more useful, he should willingly embrace it."

When there was the greatest danger lest the perfidious designs of the barbarians should penetrate the Alps, I conferred victory on you within the very wall of the Alps, that you might conquer without loss.

But whoever shall say that murder is punished by a more severe penalty under the greater righteousness if a reproach is punished by the gehenna of fire, compels us to understand that there are differences of gehennas.

But, nevertheless, picnics cannot exist without a certain allowance of elderly people.

I speak here of that craftiness which is wont to be understood and spoken of in connection with the evilly disposed, not in the sense in which the word is usually employed in our Scriptures, where it is often used in a good sense, as, Be crafty as serpents, [Matthew 10:16] and again, to give craftiness to the simple.

For having become slaves and captives of their pleasures, they are useless even for civil affairs, and if for them, much more for those of Heaven.

Sons of men, their teeth are arms and arrows, and their tongue a sharp sabre.

He went forth, therefore, on his embassy, and we know how he failed.

Certainly he suspected Metellus.

On the following day the two gentlemen came over, according to custom, and Alice observed that Miss Fairstairs hardly spoke to Mr Cheesacre.

At this moment she was very important to herself.

Had I dared to regard myself as the foremost spirit of my age, and should I thus be turned back by the human weakness of one poor creature who had not sufficiently collected the strength of his heart to be able to look death in the face and to laugh him down.

On descending we had to wade through what seemed to be two or three rivers.

But it is no emptying of Himself, that one who is of human nature, and a mere man, should wash his fellow-servants.

[2] [Matthew 17:1] And after six days Jesus took Simon Cephas, and James, and John his brother, [3] and brought them up into a high mountain, the three of them only.

Chapter XXVIII. Dr. Thorne

What its principle?

But when he shall arise he shall continue in his natural state, naked of the Spirit.

The Deity cannot be expressed in words.

She had paid her sovereign, and surely the Baroness had no right to demand more of her.

On this floor there is a bedroom or two, and a nest of others above; but the accommodation is chiefly afforded in other buildings, of which the one opposite is longer, though not so high, as the central house; and there is another, a little down the road, near the mill, and another as far up the stream, where the baths have been built,—an innovation to which Frau Frohmann did not lend herself without much inward suffering.

If the necessary evidence were forthcoming, then no one would wish to interfere further.

For, that they may not say, how then shall we live?

As if the question were asked Him: Why then should you die?

To suppose that those who had tasted of the conflict, would now take fright at it: to expect, impotent as their efforts had proved in the beginning, to effect something new, after such a specimen of oratory as had been exhibited!

Then having wrapped up the body and carried it forth, all the while chanting hymns and psalms according to the Christian tradition, Antony began to lament that he had no implement for digging the ground.

Book XI, Letter 54

And for two others who besought Him, at once He opened their eyes.

“Women generally lead dull lives, I think.” Then he had paused for a while, as though something were on his mind which he wished to consider before he spoke again.

They were soon all asleep, and remained dozing, snoring, changing their uncomfortable positions, and cursing the mosquitoes, till about four in the afternoon, when Boscobel got up, shook himself, and made some observation about “grub.” The meal of the day was then prepared.

For though there be that are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth, but to us there is but one God, the Father, of whom are all things, and we in Him; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things, and we by Him.

And not to carry our search too far, in the same city of Constantina your predecessors ordained Silvanus bishop at the very outset of his schism.

And the Lord spoke again to Ahaz, saying, Ask for yourself a sign from the Lord your God, in the depth, or in the height.

“Then she must.”

I at least subscribed that amount, and—having agreed to bring out our publication every fortnight, after the manner of the well-known French publication,—we called it The Fortnightly.

There is nothing that the courts hate so much as contempt;—not even perjury.

But in answering that question it is material to know that Ireland has accepted and, at any rate for two centuries, has followed that system.

Now if, in becoming Son of Man, he were without participation in human nature, it would be logical to say that neither does He share in the Divine essence, though He is Son of God.

The second speaks to those who rebel against the Stewards of this Mystery, if they are their superiors in rank.

“Rem si possis recte; si non, quocunque modo rem.” In judging of such a character as this, a hard and fast line will certainly lead us astray.

The walk across from Orley Farm to The Cleeve had always been very dear to Lady Mason.

And because he set all his thought in heaven, he was caught up in the chariot of fire to heaven, [2 Kings 2:11] and there his dwelling-place was established for ever.

The bishop was a man sixty years of age, very healthy and handsome, with hair just becoming grey, clear eyes, a kindly mouth, and something of a double chin.

Did she remember the night at Carlisle?

I have clearest evidence of their blindness; they do not see what is really thrown.

He wrote a very civil note to Mr. Greenwood.

There was a grace of motion about her that was almost majestic.

The Confessions (Book I)

“Yes, my dear, take the chair at the meeting and at the dinner.”

“And what harm do I do?”

And in this place by knowledge the Baptist means a perfect acquaintance with Him, who and whence He was.

Who indeed was there that did not marvel at the sight?

‘This suited my pocket best,—and my future prospects.’

Mrs. Sturt was away among the milk-pans, scalding cream or preparing butter, and did not watch either Rachel or the visitor at the cottage.

First Epistle to St. John

“I hope he will give me half-an-hour first,” Ralph answered. There was an ease and grace always present in his intercourse with women, and a power of saying that which he desired to say,—which perhaps arose from the slightness of his purposes and the want of reality in his character.

The whole journey, he found, could be done for a pound, allowing him seven shillings for his night’s expenses in London; and out of the resources of the family there were produced two sovereigns, so that in the event of accident he would not utterly be a castaway from want of funds.

Mrs. Greystock had made up her mind that she would say nothing on the subject.

And if this deluge happened by chance, it might assuredly have happened that he who was the only survivor should perish.

‘Nothing whatever,’ said Alaric.

Morton who was deep in the boundary question put aside his papers and welcomed his neighbour.

Their leader and initiator was Eudoxius, who still held the tiller of Constantinople, with the result that the ship was not steered onwards but sunk to the bottom.

“And one that would grace the parsonage of St. Ewold’s.”

This (thread of discourse) also you spin out, O apostle, when at the very moment you yourself are offering your hand to so huge a whirlpool of impurities; nay, you superadd yet further, 'Having therefore this promise, beloved, cleanse we ourselves out from every defilement of flesh and spirit, perfecting chastity in God's fear.'

There is at this moment a great question forward as to the tenure of Land in Ireland.

I have only to add that it is for him to consider where he may obtain absolution.

We have been ransomed by Christ, and are the slaves of gold.

By no means; you will not be ungrateful.

That it is so is enough for us; and as the good thence derived comes to us so easily, we forget to remember that we might possibly be without it.

Italicus therefore came to the blessed Hilarion and besought his aid not so much for the injury of his adversary as for protection for himself.

And yet this Church, which at one and the same time unceasingly expends so much on clergy, monasteries, the poor, the people, and in addition on the Lombards, lo it is still pressed down by the affliction of all the Churches, which groan much for this pride of one man, though they do not presume to say anything.

In that year Sulpicius perished, and in the next, three of our greatest orators, Quintus Catulus, Marcus Antonius, and Caius Julius, were cruelly killed.” This was the time of the civil war between Marius and Sulla.

For they have written to me that you are arranging terms of peace with the Barbaricini on such conditions as to bring these same Barbaricini to the service of Christ.

He tells us that he ate ashes like bread, and mingled his drink with weeping.

He, therefore, is a better man (since he is only too ready to be corrected, if a true censurer be at hand) than yourself, if either knowing him to be in error you despise him with derision, or ignorant of his wandering course you at the same time closely follow his error.

Had he done so, something of it would have been known.

A clergyman selected for such a position should, we have always thought, have earned an evening of ease by a long day of work, and should, above all things, be one whose life has been, and therefore in human probability will be, so decorous as to be honourable to the cathedral of his adoption.

But here I must be silent, or I may possibly trench upon diplomatic subjects still unsettled.

And when they had prayed, the place was shaken where they were assembled together.

But those who inhabited Mantinium, animated to desperation by zeal for their religion, armed themselves with long reap-hooks, hatchets, and whatever weapon came to hand, and went forth to meet the troops; on which a conflict ensuing, many indeed of the Paphlagonians were slain, but nearly all the soldiers were destroyed.

But he becomes more of a man.

Mrs Eames was delighted to see them. It was so good in Mr Crosbie to come over and call upon such a poor, forlorn woman as her, and so good in Captain Dale; so good also in the dear girls, who, at the present moment, had so much to make them happy at home at Allington! Little things, accounted as bare civilities by others, were esteemed as great favours by Mrs Eames.

“By George, I ain’t. I ain’t rich, indeed.”

Silverbridge of course did not acknowledge that this was true.

‘I do not mean to laugh at her. It is simply the truth. Robert and I have made up our minds that it is better for us all that I should not put myself in her way.’

This, however, must be our defence against other opponents.

they were spiritual words that He spoke unto them, nothing human; either this is the meaning, or, that it was by the Spirit that He gave them commandments.

Or could it be possible that she had turned an eye of favour on Dr. Nupper’s elegantly-dressed assistant.

In fact, an excuse of this sort overturns the entire essence of our sacrament, removing even the obstacle to voluntary sins; for it will be possible also to maintain that inclination is a necessity, as involving in it, forsooth, a sort of compulsion.

[1 Corinthians 13:5] But after all, the phrase about not entering into the thoughts of righteous and holy men is not quite a commendable one, for this reason, that what enters the mind is commonly called a thought, even when assent to it does not follow.

Speaking next of the statements in the Gospels, that after His resurrection He showed the marks of His punishment, and how His hands had been pierced, he asks, Who beheld this?

Some say that he lived 90 years before the Olympiads, which would be 317 years after the taking of Troy.

This hardship Mary could not endure, nor could Mary’s father on her behalf, and therefore Mary prepared a letter to Lady Ushant in which, at great length, she told her old friend the whole story.

‘My boy, my darling boy!’ exclaimed his mother again, as though all their joint troubles were now over.

Would not all have fled?

But we believe and maintain that those holy words, ' I and My Father are one,' point out the oneness of essence which is one and the same in the Father and in the Son.

‘Certainly not;—but that you might have an opportunity of investigating all this for the public service.

When absolute evidence had been obtained of either, a thousand dollars was to be handed to Robert Lefroy.

“How can I help seeing him?”

“I know what it is, my dear, to be jumped upon. We talked with such horror of the French people giving their daughters in marriage, just as they might sell a house or a field, but we do exactly the same thing ourselves. When they all come upon you in earnest how are you to stand against them? How can any girl do it?”

And to our advantage, the Word of God is not silent about this species of fornication of the soul; and it does not warn the soul against following such practices on the ground that those who profess them speak lies, but it says, Even if what they tell you should come to pass, hearken not unto them.

Do, I beg of you, reflect with what a noose this assertion of natural sin is choked.

For when you say that God is merciful, and does not punish, if He should punish he will be found in your case to be no longer merciful.

They have kept in their hands, as rewards for their own services to the country, no more than the country is manifestly willing to give them.

She began to think that she could forgive him, even for his suspicion, if he would only come to be forgiven.

Because your spirit is now old and withered up, and has lost its power in consequence of your infirmities and doubts.

It may, however, be presumed that for every one word that Alice spoke Lady Glencora spoke ten.

“I’m glad you’ve come in time,” said he, “because you can get comfortably warm before dinner.” Then he fluttered about round Mrs. Roden, paying her attention much rather than Marion Fay,—still with some guile, as knowing that he might thus best prepare for the coming of future good things.

“My dearest Margaret,” she said, “Your letter has made both me and John very unhappy.

But because charity believes all things [1 Corinthians 13:7] (among those at all events whom by union with itself it makes one), I too, O Lord, also so confess unto You that men may hear, to whom I cannot prove whether I confess the truth, yet do they believe me whose ears charity opens unto me.

“It is what young men do do,” said Mrs. Green.

Next to such are those to be placed who by a lie wish to please men, not that they may do wrong or bring reproach upon any man; for we have already before put away that kind; but that they may be pleasant in conversation.

I am astonished by the difference of opinion which exists about Reform,—not only as to the difference in the extent and exact tendency of the measure that is needed,—but that there should be such a divergence of ideas as to the grand thing to be done and the grand reason for doing it.

How could it be that Herr Steinmarc should have learned anything of Ludovic’s wild love?

And when war arose with the Philistines, he joined battle with their fierce troops, being desirous of winning renown, while careless of his own safety.

How can we do this?

For what tigress does not gently purr over her cubs, and lay aside her ferocity to fondle them?

As for the genealogy, the author himself does not venture to call it the gospel.

Her father had told her that he had not gone to Liverpool—and had assured her that he had never intended to go.

“Why, man,” said Father John, “what business have you so far from your wife at this hour of the morning, after your wedding? Have you been to take the two pigs home?”

Didst ever love me, Margaret? Margaret.

I will not attempt to describe the tedium of that horrid voyage, for it has been often described before; and to Martin, who was in no ways fastidious, it was not so unendurable as it must always be to those who have been accustomed to more rapid movement.

This suggestion that he might run away as the day of his deposition drew nigh,—or rather, that others might run away,—had been the subject of some conversation between him and me.

But even matrimony may have its drawbacks; among which unconcealed and undeserved jealousy on the part of the wife is perhaps as disagreeable as any.

A grievous thing it is indeed, and exceeding perilous, nay ruinous, and for certain a deadly thing, that witting they sin.

But he read not a word, for his mind was fixed altogether on his cousin Hetta.

Was it not rather thrown down?

Why had she been so injured?

But this will be brought about if we kill the old man, if we mortify our members that are upon the earth, if we crucify the world unto ourselves.

How John Vavasor did hate those words!

So there was once a time when matter did not exist— that is to say, before the combination of the simple elements.

Bertram fell immediately into conversation with Miss Penelope Gauntlet, but even while listening to her enthusiasm as to Arthur Wilkinson’s luck in getting the living of Hurst Staple, and her praise of Lord Stapledean, he contrived to keep an eye on his friend Harcourt. “Yes, indeed, quite fortunate; wasn’t it?” But as he thus spoke, his very soul within him was rejoicing at his own triumph. He had said nothing about Caroline personally; he had refrained his tongue, and now he had his reward.

But there was no adequate ground for delay, and on Tuesday the 17th July the trial was to be commenced.

The statements made both by Erle and Fitzgibbon as to what had taken place in the club, and afterwards at the door, tallied exactly with that afterwards given by Phineas.

that they had really been her brothers!

And so he shows how that is to be taken which is said, I say unto you, Swear not at all: that is, lest by swearing one come to a facility in swearing, from facility to a custom, and so from a custom there be a downfall into perjury.

Not a day, not an hour can be mentioned, in which we may not see continual funerals.

‘So indeed, do I,—and the book.’ The hardship upon the moth is that though he has already scorched himself terribly in the flame, and burned up all the tender fibre of his wings, yet he can’t help returning to the seductions of the tallow-candle till his whole body has become a wretched cinder. Why should he have been the first to speak of the book?

He had, he said, his own reason for such haste.

“I have never turned against him or for him.”

Then Simon answered: [Since all things that exist are in accordance with those five senses, that power which is more excellent than all cannot add anything new.]

And in the beginning of the slaughter he would have done this, unless he had seen it advancing and expected that it would come to himself.

Nine hundred years I sat and waited, for Adam to die: but Cain not even a day, endured his brother.— 14.

No doubt he loved her,—after his fashion of loving.

She had taken her fling at having her own will, and she and all her friends had seen what had come of it.

“You will be about the last man who will be told,” replied the Duchess.

The glory of his active life was over when his Consulship was done—the glory was over, with the exception of that to come from his final struggle with Antony—but the work by which his immortality was to be achieved was yet before him.

You know in your own conscience what you added, what you subtracted, and what you altered on one side or the other at your discretion; and after this you have the audacity to tell us that what is good or evil is not to be attributed to you but to the author.

For He answered that in the resurrection they will neither marry, nor be given in marriage, but will be as the angels in heaven.

For since the children of the wise have said that our life is a festival, and that we have come to exhibit in the theatre the drama of truth, that is, righteousness, the devil and the demons plotting and striving against us, it is necessary for us to look upwards and to take our flight aloft, and to flee from the blandishments of their tongues, and from their forms tinged with the outward appearance of temperance, more than from the Sirens of Homer.

Your hands have grasped the handle of the plough, [Luke 9:62] the hem of the Saviour's garment, [Matthew 9:20] and His locks wet with the dew of night; [Song of Songs 5:2] do not let them go.

Oh, wirra shure!

Let us not look for wealth, nor for that high-birth which is outward, but for that true nobility which is in the soul.

John Caldigate

This is that very salvation, Brethren, concerning which, as the Apostle Peter says, Prophets have enquired diligently, [1 Peter 1:10] and though they have enquired diligently, yet have not found it.

For they will not maintain that the acquaintances and pupils of Jesus Himself handed down His teaching contained in the Gospels without committing it to writing, and left His disciples without the memoirs of Jesus contained in their works.

Lady Glencora was to be removed in October to Gatherum Castle, and remain there till the following spring, so that the heir might, in truth, be born in the purple.

I don’t mean to be uncivil to you, Mr. Morton, or to say anything as oughtn’t to be said of your aunt.

[1 Corinthians 2:15] Those persons, therefore, caused confusion and trouble in the Church who thought themselves to be in the Church what they were not.

[1 Timothy 5:23] But notice the reasons for which the permission is given, to cure an aching stomach and a frequent infirmity.

“It’s because he wouldn’t go to Lady Linlithgow’s,” said Amelia. “He has only waited, mamma.”

I mean, however, concealed adultery with their dependents , which with our teachers is accounted as no less criminal.

And with reason; for what I said before, what I shall not cease to say, I will now repeat, that when He utters anything low or humbly, He puts it in excess, that the very poverty of the expression may persuade even the indisposed to receive the notions with pious understanding.

And he called unto him two centurions, saying, Make ready two hundred soldiers to go to Cæsarea, and horsemen threescore and ten, and spearmen two hundred, at the third hour of the night; and provide them beasts, that they may set Paul on, and bring him safe unto Felix the governor.

Faustus, then, has no proof to give to the inquirer.

And, perhaps convinced that the function of composition and the department of teaching did not belong to the same cast of mind, they gave way to those who had a natural turn for it.

[Acts 2:2] Why did this not come to pass without sensible tokens?

And (this essence) has become (a logical necessity) in his system, in order to accord with the (Peripatetic) division of the world.

Stay quiet, and all is said.

For we ought to sacrifice to God in word; inasmuch as God is the Word, as He Himself confessed.

He was a very handsome man, about six feet high, with large light grey eyes, a straight nose, and a well cut chin.

For it was not that the Lord of the angels was subject to the hour, having, among all things which He had created, made hours and times; but, because the Virgin Mother, when wine was wanting, wished a miracle to be done by Him, it was at once answered her, Woman, what have I to do with you?

I will now withdraw for a short time from this position; in order that I may, even by withdrawing, the more recommend it, when I shall have succeeded even thus also in confuting the presumption of the opposite side.

Wherefore also my blessed fellow-ministers, acting justly and according to the laws of the Church, while certain affirmed that my case was doubtful, and endeavoured to compel them to annul the sentence which was passed in my favour, have now endured all manner of sufferings, and have chosen rather to be banished than to see the judgment of so many Bishops reversed.

5. Wherefore , brethren, be ye steadfast, unmoveable.

Wherefore also the blessed Paul says when discoursing of Abraham He says not and to seeds as of many; but as of one, and to your seed which is Christ, and writing to Timothy he says Remember that Jesus Christ of the seed of David was raised from the dead according to my gospel.

Or why should He, Who was said to be begotten before the earth, be also declared to be born before the mountains, and not only before the mountains but also before the hills; the hills being mentioned, as an afterthought, after the mountains, and reason requiring that there should be a world before mountains could exist?

Yet not even then could the emperor be prevailed upon to yield his assent.

And now the news had reached him of Madame Goesler’s journey to the continent.

The long, slow process of the conjugal wreck of Louis Trevelyan and his wife (in He Knew He TFas Right), with that rather lumbering movement which is often characteristic of Trollope, arrives at last at an impressive completeness of misery.

“Of course you’re a young man, sir.”

And if these, though they are in us and in the substance of our own soul, yet seem to be hidden from us in proportion as they are invisible to our bodily sight, let us take for our enquiry things which are more open to view.

“I ain’t well at all. I am very far from well. If you don’t mind I’d rather not talk about it just at present. When I can see Hampstead, then, perhaps, things can be settled.” As there was nothing further to be said George Roden took his leave.

If you are my people.

And why should he trouble himself in this way?

“D’Elbée!—d’Elbée!—indeed; no, then, I never heard the name till this moment,” said one.

Yet he could not tear himself away.

Together with these things, the fact that all one's leisure and anxiety are spent on this object, that one does not apply one's self earnestly to spiritual achievements; that one is filled with haughtiness, arrogance, and vainglory; that one is riveted to the earth, and loses one's wings, and instead of an eagle, becomes a dog or a swine.

And let that view be removed from consideration which calls the flux of bodies motion, since it is not needed for our present purpose.

“Heaven help him in such a case as that!” And then these two great luminaries of the law shook hands and parted.

And his father, when he was in those straits, only laughed at him, not at all believing the assurances of his son’s misery, which from time to time were given to him by his wife.

[1 Corinthians 8:13] Let us then say, if a sister or a brother causes not one or two but the whole church to offend, 'I will not see that sister or that brother.'

And thou then, brother, though you should remain without food, though you should sleep upon the ground, though you should eat ashes and be ever wailing, and do good to no other; you will do no great work.

“And what of the lady?” said she, in a tone of voice that admitted of no pacific rejoinder.

Would she like to ride with him, as if so he would endeavour to get saddle-horses.

Indeed, there is nothing equal to affliction: she is the mother of true philosophy.

“She is an old fool. Who is going to hurt her? And if it did hurt her, are you and I to be put out of our course because of her? She can remain here as long as she obeys you as her mistress.”

“Simply because he thinks you know something that he doesn’t know. As he’s a detective, that, in his mind, is quite enough for arresting any man. I may as well give him my assurance, then, that he is mistaken.”

Since, however, you have wished to take us as partners in your spiritual inquiry (I mean about the oath which George of Paspasus appears to have sworn), we will declare to Your Reverence what presents itself to our mind.

The same hour of the night, it is said, he took them, and washed their stripes, and was baptized.

Far be it from her to believe this easily, and still more to lay aside her zeal, or change the intention of her mind.

For whatever image of our present evils I may seek speech shrinks baffled from the attempt.

This is done so clearly, to my mind, that I cannot understand the misunderstanding which has existed in the States upon the subject.

‘And the woman?’ As she spoke she held on to the back of a chair by which she stood, and only whispered her question.

Ayala still continued her household duties,—over which, in the privacy of her own room, she groaned sadly; but she continued them in silence.

But on the next morning Lady Elizabeth said that she was not as she had been.

He came there late in the day, and remained with his daughter till Lady Lufton returned.

The bishops of Gaul and of Venetia having reported that similar attempts to disturb the peace of the Church were being made by others among them, the bishops of several provinces assembled not long after at Rome, and decreed that Auxentius and those who held his sentiments should be aliens from their communion.

[Matthew 6:12] They said not, Thanks be to You, who hast forgiven us our debts, as we too forgive our debtors, but, Forgive, as we forgive.

Eames wrote his note, in which he told his mother that he had had an adventure with Lord De Guest, and that his lordship had insisted on bringing him home to dinner. “I have torn my trousers all to pieces,” he added in a postscript, “and have lost my hat. Everything else is all right.” He was not aware that the earl also sent a short note to Mrs Eames.

“She has a liberal, ladylike provision,” said he.

In trying to describe what is done by literature of this class, it is especially necessary to remember that different readers are affected in a different way.

I like you, and you can ask her,—if you please.

Your walk in life will be that of a literary man: but nowadays literary men become senators and statesmen.

“He must have heirs of his body,” said the butler. “Everybody has ‘em. If a man don’t know ‘em himself, the law finds ‘em out.” And then Mr Vickers walked away, avoiding further dispute.

Chapter 11.— Concerning the Universal Providence of God in the Laws of Which All Things are Comprehended.

Hebrews 12:14-15

Let the girls marry.

His prayer again, of how great lowliness of mind it is full.

Soon after Father John and young Macdermot had turned their backs on Ballycloran, Pat Brady, who, stood smoking his pipe, and idly leaning against the gate-post from which, even then, the gate was half wrenched, heard the sounds of Captain Ussher’s horse on the road from Mohill.

“In my place would not you do so too? How can I help it when you talked of a sword? Of course you make me ask what the sword is.”

If then the Divine is immutable and invariable, it is incapable of change or alteration.

The title of the Psalm has: At the end, understanding of David, when there came Doeg the Edomite and told Saul, David has come into the house of Abimelech: whereas we read that he had come into the house of Achimelech.

If we feel any desire to lead multitudes about with us or be looked at by them, let us consider the matter apart by itself, and we shall find that it is utterly worthless.

He continued to speak to Grey of his coming travels, as though it was impossible that they should be over until after the next Easter.

But sitting there, on that velvet settee, you cannot see one half of what there is even in that room ; and what you cannot see sitting, you must look at standing.

But remain in the house in chasteness, expose not your virginity.

Stand therefore, having girded your loins with truth.

And such reports as these have greatly excited our emotions, and urge us eagerly to desire a sight of this (if it be lawful so to speak) heavenly prodigy and most sacred marvel.

“Well—yes; inferior to my Miss Forrester, certainly.”

“What shall I do?”

I think she must have remembered the evening on which her sister had been so urgent with her to go to the Dorcas meeting;—when she had so obstinately refused that invitation, and had instead gone out to meet the Tappitt girls, and had met with them the young man of whom her sister had before been speaking with so much horror.

Chapter 4. Docetic Doctrine Derived from the Greek Sophists.

But they are wretched because, although not wholly miserable, they are not in that place where any mixture of misery is impossible.

For what does that mean which the Lord says, Behold, there is a place by me, and you shall stand upon a rock?

She astonished her sister, the dean’s wife, by the simplicity of her grandeur; and condescended to Mrs. Proudie in a manner which nearly broke that lady’s heart.

there’s no limit to what he might do with us.

For if one man who does the will of God is better than ten thousand transgressors, then you were formerly better than ten thousand Jews.

“She’ll get more than that, Mr. Mason.”

And what greater insult can be inflicted upon the gods than if you believe that they become propitious on receiving wine, or, if you suppose that great honour is done to them, if you only throw and drop on the live coals a few drops of wine?

Of all the States of the old Union, Virginia has probably suffered the most, but Kentucky has least deserved the suffering which has fallen to her lot.

Would that the synagogue had not of her own will shut herself out!

He then immediately embarked, and crossing the Nile, hastened with all speed into Egypt, closely pursued by those who sought to take him.

“I hope so, Henry; I hope so. I do hope so.”

I would say this, that you could have put into action the being discontented, the being impatient, (for these things are in our power,) the praying against him, who grieved you, the uttering ten thousand curses against him, the speaking ill of him to every one.

“I am not speaking of justice, but of feeling.”

They, then, are but abandoned and ungrateful wretches, in deep and fast bondage to that malign spirit, who complain and murmur that men are rescued by the name of Christ from the hellish thraldom of these unclean spirits, and from a participation in their punishment, and are brought out of the night of pestilential ungodliness into the light of most healthful piety.

Greater than that of king or of consul, or of any other.

And during that month nothing was defined about Castle Richmond.

Give her for guardian and companion a mistress and a governess, one not given to much wine or in the apostle's words idle and a tattler, but sober, grave, industrious in spinning wool and one whose words will form her childish mind to the practice of virtue.

If I have given an alms, or shown any other kindness, and the recipient pray that his gods, or the Genius of the colony, may be propitious to me, my oblation or act will immediately be an honour to idols, in whose name he returns me the favour of blessing.

In five minutes the bond was signed and Mr. Crawley was at liberty to go away, a free man,—till the Barchester Assizes should come round in April.

Tell me how what was of one nature produced something of an altogether different substance from its own quality?

8. Who will give salvation to Israel out of Sion?

“But he did absolutely offer to you?”

“Sleep on it! I have slept on it these three weeks. No, I did not come to you till I was fully resolved. As for these people, I owe them nothing; they have scorned and rejected me; and as for the girl’s heart, it is not that I seek now. Let me gain her person, and her heart will follow. A woman soon learns to love him whom she is forced to obey.”

I mean Mr Adolphus Longestaffe, senior, of Caversham.

She felt, she did not know why, that there was something about him which ought to put her on her guard.

“It must depend on how far the husband has been in fault.”

For before all things God was alone— being in Himself and for Himself universe, and space, and all things.

How could He otherwise have died, been crucified, been humbled?

For a man does not become a father before the age of fifteen, nor does a woman become a mother before the age of thirteen.

But this too had to be borne. “I meant, sir, that if she would accept my hand, she would have pretty nearly as great an interest in the property as I myself.”

“Homer-staying youths have ever homely wits,” and we may fairly suppose that our youths are less homely in this particular after they have been a day op two in Paris, and a week or two in Switzerland, and up and down the Rhine, than they would have been had they remained in their London lodgings through that month of September,—so weary to those who are still unable to fly away during that most rural of months.

Surely of all the women on whom his eyes had ever rested she was,—he would not say to himself the most lovely,—but certainly the best worth looking at.

How many things had they then to say: that had wrought iniquity; Lord, did we not prophesy by Your Name, and by Your Name cast out devils?

Perhaps these things are not clear to you now, but 'He' is a clear teacher of them.

We have thus, it seems to me, more than answered the irreverence of those who refer to a unity or agreement of will such words of the Lord as, He that has seen Me has seen the Father [John 14:9], or, The Father is in Me and I in the Father , or, I and the Father are One , or, All things whatsoever the Father has are Mine.

Consider how many sacrifices there are in the law; a sacrifice of praise, a sacrifice of acknowledgment, a sacrifice of peace , a sacrifice of purifications, and numberless others, and not one of them against enemies, but all in behalf of either one's own sins or one's own successes.

And we are deified not by partaking of the body of some man, but by receiving the Body of the Word Himself.

But in reference to the body, we are told by the apostle that the wife has power over her husband's body, as he has over hers; [1 Corinthians 7:4] so that, while in all other social matters the wife ought to obey her husband, in this one matter of their bodily connection as man and wife their power over one another is mutual—the man over the woman, and the woman over the man.

That skilful worker, which from many a flower

But you who receive a person baptized by the Arians and allow him to have perfect baptism, after that admission do you invoke the Holy Ghost as if this were still some slight defect, whereas there is no baptism of Christ without the Holy Ghost?

“And there isn’t any wind, and so there can’t be any fire. I never did think, and I don’t think now, there ever was any use in a man fashing himself as you fash yourself. You can’t alter things, Mr. Heathcote.”

And about fate enough is said; or if, in consideration of the time, we have spoken too little, we shall argue the matter at another time more abundantly and more fully.

Precisely, then, as He has put a distinction of state, not of nature, among the same nations, so also has He discriminated their flesh, which is one and the same substance in those nations, not according to their material structure, but according to the recompense of their merit.

He gave good proof of that liberality whereby there was enough for all.

[Acts 5:41] If scourging and bonds, which seem to be the most grievous of all things, bring forth joy, what else will be able to produce grief in us?

For a time Aunt Emmeline had almost taken her niece’s part, feeling that she might best bring things back to a condition of peace in this manner.

Crosbie would have had her acknowledge herself wrong, and would have delighted in the privilege of forgiving her.

And so when death has been brought upon a saint, we ought not to think that an evil has happened to him but a thing indifferent; which is an evil to a wicked man, while to the good it is rest and freedom from evils.

“I hardly remember,” said the doctor; “I was so flurried. But I know I knocked him down, and then I rushed out of the room. I believe I threatened I’d have him hung.”

The Lord said unto Me, You are My Son; this day have I begotten You: and a few words further on, You shall rule them with a rod of iron.

And how can the harmony of the universe consist out of elements so incongruous; and what can any one say of Heaven itself?

Ill as she was, she could be obstinate, and Bunfit left the house without having been able to finger that key which he felt sure that Lady Eustace carried somewhere on her person.

It follows, then, that as everything that is free will be united with its like, and as virtue is a thing that has no master, that is, is free, everything that is free will be united with virtue.

But further, if they see men weakening themselves to the effeminacy of women, some vociferating uselessly, others running about without cause, others, while their friendship is unbroken, bruising and maiming each with the bloody cestus, these contending in speaking without drawing breath, swelling out their cheeks with wind, and shouting out noisily empty vows, do they lift up their hands to heaven in their admiration, start up moved by such wonders, burst into exclamations, again become gracious to men?

Accordingly mention is made of tables, and potations, and laughter, and intercourse; for men would not devote themselves to love, or beget children, or sleep, if they were immortal, and had no wants, and never grew old.

I must say I think you have treated me badly, and without that sort of brotherly fairness which we on the public press expect from one another. However, perhaps we can come to an understanding, and if so, things may yet go smoothly. Give me a turn and I am not at all adverse to give you one. Will you come to me here, or shall I call upon you?

Whence it follows that we have to inquire how those opposing powers produce these incitements within us.

On the other hand, if we say that there is a great difference between the two, we do but ascribe ignorance to the shepherd, in so far as he did not present or set before the lion food adapted to his use, but rather alien meats.

The district is not poor, and plenty on that day was rarely wanting.

[1 Corinthians 3:21] This is the reason that the attack of empty calumnies and of the bitterest invectives grows even fiercer against us, that when human authority is as it were overthrown, there may remain no ground of hope for those to whom we administer the word and sacrament of God in accordance with the dispensation entrusted unto us.

Let us leave you to His unction, and let His unction teach you.

“And why shouldn’t you try again?” said Eames.

It is said that from the age of fifteen he devoted himself to philosophy in the deserts, and that when he attained the age of forty, he went according to a Divine command he then received, to dwell in regions inhabited by men.

That which had in it them that were fierce against Christ, has now them that adore Christ.

You had better give up thinking about its special honesty.” And yet Mr. Monk would on an occasion preach to him such a sermon as that which he had just uttered!

Hogglestock is to the north of the railway, the line of which, however, runs through a portion of the parish, and it adjoins Framley, though the churches are as much as seven miles apart.

For whereas their parents had mourned for them, not regarding them as gods (for had they known them to be gods they would not have lamented them as if they had perished; for this was why they represented them in an image, namely, because they not only did not think them gods, but did not believe them to exist at all, and in order that the sight of their form in the image might console them for their being no more), yet the foolish people pray to them as gods and invest them with the honour of the true God.The tents of General McCook’s division were immediately at the northern end of it, and the whole place was alive with soldiers, nailing down planks, pulling up temporary rails at each side, carrying over straw for the horses, and preparing for the general advance of the troops.

And yet then, when the savour of Your ointments was so fragrant, did we not run after You.

Shall I tell you how He manifests His jealousy?

But there was no such courage in him.

He could speak well in the House, though he spoke but seldom, and it was generally thought of him that he might have been something considerable, had it not suited him better to be nothing at all.

“And then one person catches them, and another doesn’t?” asked Archie.

[Exodus 7:1] Wherefore it is also said in the Psalms: I have said, you are gods.

Chapter 3. The Dedications in Every Place.

‘Oh, my dear,’ said Mrs. Val, throwing herself down into a sofa as though she were exhausted—’what a dreadful journey it is to you up here!

Having the same love, that is, love and be loved alike; do not thou enjoy much love, and show less love, so as to be covetous even in this matter; but do not suffer it in yourself.

It is just as the calculation shows.

What Cyprian said to Fortunatus about the number seven is clear from the letter which he sent to him.

If the offer came from them of course we could assent; but that offer will hardly be made.

Our requirements did not go beyond these.

It wasn’t Sexty’s fault nigh so much as it was his.

And in this universal cataclasm of the starry councils, what could a poor Diana do, Diana of the Petty Bag, but abandon her pride of place to some rude Orion?

I’d give my heart for her this minute.

“Come back, Mary,” said Kate; “we’ve had walking enough, and shall be awfully tired before we get home.”

For I am a man of unclean lips and I dwell in the midst of a people of unclean lips, seems to agree with the words quoted above: O wretched man that I am!

What is, Your way?

Mr. Grey knew that the thing, if done at all, should be done at once; and Mountjoy, as he had agreed to accept his father’s offer, could not put himself too quickly under the shelter of his father’s roof.

Having learned then from him all that is to be done, give the matter your earnest attention, and press in all ways for this peace to be arranged, since, as report goes, there are some who are trying to hinder it.

“ What I have to lay before you will not take a minute.” A suggestion, however, came from another quarter that I should not be so formal; and Mrs. St. Quinten, touching my sleeve, whispered to me a precaution against speech-making.

Nothing could be more abominable to him than such an association; but there was no other way in which the proposed plan could be carried out.

Otherwise he will find in the law of God not a source of rejoicing, but of confusion, if he has chosen to look into commandments, which he does not.

In all our colonies the women are beautiful and in the large towns a society is soon created, of which the fastidious traveller has very little ground to complain; but in the small distant bush-towns, as they are called, the rougher elements must predominate Our hero, though he had worn moleskin trousers and jersey shirts, and had worked down a pit twelve hours a-day with a pickaxe, had never reconciled himself to female roughnesses.

He did not any longer protract his erroneous ideas by deliberating and disbelieving, but as soon as he heard from heaven the name of Jesus his Lord, he replied in a voice, subdued like that of a servant, tremulous like that of one scourged, and full of fervour like that of one converted, What shall I do, Lord?

Do you observe the great advantage which we derive from an investigation of the points?

Nor does he only comfort him by letters, he invites him to come to him: Do your diligence, he says, to come shortly unto me, and, when you come, bring with you the books, but especially the parchments.

Let my righteousness be known unto God: I however will say that I am a sinner, but only that I may not be found odious for arrogancy.

There were not many at church, and Mr. Fenwick made the service very short.

Chap. iii. 1. Finally, brethren, pray for us, that the word of the Lord may run and be glorified, even as also it is with you.

“Dear, dear, sir—this is a terrible affair!” he said, as he made his way into the room.

Thus no one has shown us clearly the exact time when He rose.

Through Your mercy, Lord, will I worship You, when I have risen: at Your trumpet I will praise Your Son, when I am purged.

They were sawn asunder, they were driven out, they were reproached, they were stoned, they underwent numberless grievances.

How, then, were these not evils which made life miserable, and a thing to be escaped from?

For that the word is in reference to the faithful, what goes before sufficiently shows us, For you are my Son, he says, today have I begotten you, ask of me and I will give the heathen for three inheritance, the utmost parts of the earth for your possession.

“I met the Duke once at Matching,” said Phineas.

Topic 8

Do you see how by that which is evident, He has manifested that also which is obscure?

[John 4:20] Our fathers worshipped in this mountain; and you say that in Jerusalem [25] is the place in which worship must be.

The whole day he is merciful, and lends; and his seed is in blessing.

And then he began to consider whether this British palladium of an unanimous jury had not in it more of evil than of good.

Luke did not know Mrs. Prime, and by no means wished to spend any of the hours of the present evening in making her acquaintance.

3. He belonged to those who were especially liberal, and was not unacquainted with Grecian propædeutics. Besides this he was a eunuch, having been so from his very birth. On this account, as if it were a miracle, the emperor took him into his family, and honored him by placing him over the purple dye-works at Tyre. We have heard him expound the Scriptures wisely in the Church.

“I’m very glad to hear it.”

Chapter LXXXI.

But there is another very worthy lion near Quebec—the Falls, namely, of Montmorency.

London was now very empty, and he was constrained to enjoy his glory very much by himself. He had never associated much with the Minusexes and Uppinalls, nor yet with the Joneses and Robinsons of his own office, and it could not be expected that there should be any specially confidential intercourse between them just at the present moment. Undy was of course out of town with the rest of the fashionable world, and Alaric, during the next week, was left very much on his own hands.

He had been a religious lad before he left school.

“Where’s Cradell?” said Eames, repeating the question. “Upon my word, I don’t know. I walked to the office with him, but I haven’t seen him since. We don’t sit in the same room, you know.”

This will of the Logos must be equalled by his power: for a mixture of choice and impotence would, again, destroy the simplicity.

Had they been desired, in their own paternal halls, to sit and see their mother’s housekeeper darn the family stockings, they would, probably, both of them have rebelled, even though the supply of tobacco and gin and water should be gratuitous and unlimited.

This voice came not because of Me, but for your sakes.

It was too important to be so treated.

The man muttered something, and passed on as though to the village.

At any rate she could listen with pleasure to the few words the Duke would say to her.

“No, Dorothea; it is my bounden duty. It is my work. It is that to which I am appointed as a minister. If you cannot see the difference I have much mistaken your character,—have much mistaken your character.”

Nay, the true character of His nature causes the name that is denied to a plurality to be the privilege of His essence.

But since they will have the Two to be but One, so that the Father shall be deemed to be the same as the Son, it is only right that the whole question respecting the Son should be examined, as to whether He exists, and who He is and the mode of His existence.

And if men so kind as Lord Lufton and Mr. Walker had made him out to be guilty, what could be expected from a stern judge down from London, who would know nothing about her poor father and his peculiarities, and from twelve jurymen who would be shopkeepers out of Barchester.

That were like a usurpation, viz.

For here also not on Him were shut the gates, as being Lord and Maker of all, but because of us is this too written, to whom the door of paradise was shut.

But as regards those three books which it is evident are Solomon's and held canonical by the Jews, to show what of this kind may be found in them pertaining to Christ and the Church demands a laborious discussion, which, if now entered on, would lengthen this work unduly.

Secession is rebellion against the government, and is all the more bitter to the North because that rebellion broke out at the first moment of Northern ascendency.

When he was most determined to make us laugh, he had always a further purpose;—some pity was to be extracted from us on behalf of the sorrows of men, or some indignation at the evil done by them.

“It is necessary. Of course, I do not wish to be dragged up to the police-court for sticking Mr. Moss in the abdomen. That’s what it would come to if we were left together.”

[John 3:33] Some read, Now I know that all things whatsoever You have given Me are of You.

For the cause of all error and false opinion, is inability to distinguish in what respect things are common, and in what respects they differ.

For the higher points, He said, they should hear afterwards.

For my present discourse is not only to the rich, but to the poor also.

That they wait not for those who are in want to come to them, but that they seek out those who need their assistance.

It is because you know not what is really beautiful, what is really good, and seek with eagerness shows instead of realities from fools who, like people out of their wits, imagine black to be white.

For then especially does the enemy lay his plans, when he sees passions engendered in us; then he supplies tinder; then he lays snares.

The Scripture tells us of a city called Nain in Judæa: a widow there had an only child, no longer a child in the sense of being among boys, but already passing from childhood to man's estate: the narrative calls him a young man.

[Matthew 11:27] Are the words of which we are speaking, This is My Son and My Father, consistent, or are they not, with No one knows the Son but the Father, neither knows any the Father save the Son?

“Had she been divorced then?” asked Hetta,—”because I believe they get themselves divorced just when they like.” Simple as the question was he could not answer it.

He knows also that He so received in Himself as that no addition of increment accrues to Himself, as also He knows He infused His whole self so as to incur no diminution.

“Expected what?”

And they do not consider what is the difference between that prophetic veil, and this unveiling which is in the Gospel, of which the Apostle says, When you shall go over unto Christ, the veil shall be taken away.

We are fools for Christ's sake, but you are wise in Christ.

So it is not on account of their relation to certain princes that you forbid your followers to kill animals.

The accusation was conducted by one Erucius, who in his opening speech—the speech made before that by Cicero—had evidently spoken ill of rural employments.

How they were married in November, and how Madame Faragon was brought over to Granpere with infinite trouble, and how the household linen got itself marked at last, with a V instead of a U, the reader can understand without the narration of farther details.

(On the Mysteries. II.)

Is she like her, Thorne?

Therefore, before any one hears what is good for him, it is certain that he is ignorant; and being ignorant, he wishes and desires to do what is not good for him; wherefore he is not judged for that.

Whence are the fires of the stars?

We then.

But brother goes to law with brother, and that before the unbelievers.

You will be a helper to the orphan, that is, to him to whom his father this world, by whom he was born after the flesh, dies, and who can already say, The world has been crucified unto me, and I unto the world.

“I shouldn’t have thought he could have been angry with you. It seems to me from what you say that you may do whatever you please with him.”

Chapter 28.— Of the Things Pertaining to the Gospel of Christ Which Hosea and Amos Prohesied.

“About Lady Clara. Owen Fitzgerald was dreadfully in love with her before your Herbert had ever seen her. And they do say that he has sworn his cousin shall never live if he marries her.”

This is our generation wherein there has been given to us regeneration.

And how shall he wash his hands, if a just man he is?

Ideas crowded upon him.

“Not at all. How should I like it? I know nobody here. I don’t understand how it is that at these parties people do know each other, or whether they all go dancing about without knowing.”

Letter 148 (A.D. 413)

“Has it been traced to any one?”

She had not wanted him.

And was not the President of the United States as good as the Queen of England?

Griselda will have a fortune that would have been convenient; but I do not wish you to care for that.” And thus, as they stood together in Miss Dunstable’s crowded room, the mother and son settled between themselves that the Lufton-Grantly alliance treaty was not to be ratified.

“And good news it’ll be for him,” said Mrs Kelly; “the best he heard since the ould man died. Av he had his will of her, she’d niver rise from the bed where she’s stretched. But, glory be to God, there’s a providence over all, and maybe she’ll live yet to give him the go-by.”

He then who calls the thing glory, and rebukes the disciple because he was trying to hinder Him, and proves that what constitutes the good shepherd is his sacrificing himself on behalf of the sheep, and declares that he earnestly longs for this thing, and willingly goes to meet it, how is it that He beseeches it may not come to pass?

“Frank!” exclaimed Mrs. Docimer. “I thought we were to consider ourselves as altogether separated from that fortunate youth.”

The archdeacon took his text from the epistle to Philemon.

Yet this declines not even little; but thus exactly

“I am determined. Farewell, Captain Broughton. You have all my wishes for your happiness.” And she held out her hand to him.

Mr. Lincoln beat him, and Mr. Seward is well aware that in the states a man has never a second chance for the presidential chair.

Look to his deeds.

For cursed are they which are hanged on a tree, [Galatians 3:13] — a curse which, after the law, is compatible to the Son (inasmuch as Christ has been made a curse for us, but certainly not the Father); since, however, you convert Christ into the Father, you are chargeable with blasphemy against the Father.

This, their nature declares unto him that beholds them.

Among the rich there is that difficulty of the needle’s eye; among the poor there is the difficulty of the hardness of their lives.

With what conscience, then, can he feel safe, who, having perpetrated iniquities, is himself witness to himself that he is not innocent?

The nations also and people subject to their power honored them with images both in the country and in every city, nay, even in their houses and secret chambers, according to the religious practice of their fathers.

De Wynter s House Margaret and Helen Helen.

“Will you do this now,—to save us all from ruin?” But his eyes still threatened her.

And because he had never stayed in cities since he entered on the monk's life, he turned aside to some brethren at Bruchium, not far from Alexandria, whom he knew, and who welcomed the old man with the greatest pleasure.

He does it because he thinks his friends will like it.

Phineas did think so.

“And he must be a thorough royalist,” said another, “or Father Jerome wouldn’t walk with him at all.”

“I don’t believe she ever spoke to him before yesterday.”

“No, I didn’t.”

For instance, to take the case already referred to of the wedding garment, we should prove that it was a great crime in a man to attend the sacred feast, seeking not the bridegroom's glory, but his own, or whatever the garment may be found on better interpretation to signify.

And he is in error still further, in saying that the shepherds made war against the Egyptians.)

Chapter 50. The Absurd Opinion of Epicurus and the Profane Conceits of the Heretic Menander on Death, Even Enoch and Elijah Reserved for Death

And by David: The Lord instructing, has instructed me, and not given me over to death.

But the word of the Lord, he says, endures for ever: as well prophecy as divine doctrine.

“I am quite sure there must be somebody that you like, Reginald,” she said after a pause.

She had already hinted something as to which Ruby had made no answer.

A tongue has been given, in order that you may speak well, in order that you may praise the Creator.

Another Old Friend

For my part I do not think so unless owing to immaturity of age or excessive infirmity he is in some way incapable of believing.

“I know,” he said, “for how much I have to thank you, but I do not know in what words to do it.

Some of those who heard his spurious utterances at that time were indignant, and they rebuked him as one that was possessed, and that was under the control of a demon, and was led by a deceitful spirit, and was distracting the multitude; and they forbade him to talk, remembering the distinction drawn by the Lord and his warning to guard watchfully against the coming of false prophets.

Thus he places on a level with Apollos that Spirit Who perfects men through baptism.

May God keep you uncorrupted, is our prayer.

If they dislike water drawn from the clear spring, let them drink of the muddy streamlet, and when they come to read the Scriptures, let them lay aside the keen eye which they turn on woods frequented by game-birds and waters abounding in shellfish.

Silence we ask, and quiet, in order that our voice, after yesterday's labour, be able with some little vigour to last out.

For these make a man appear even odious: ([φορτικόν], a conj.

When I first took you away to that dance it was so already.

Such is the true philosopher, such is that wealth of which we spoke.

Let us, therefore, be studiously on our guard at all times, that we do not smite our brethren and give them to drink of a disquieting conscience through our being to them a stumbling-block.

Do you see how he bade us hate the deed that is evil, and not the man?

“Justice is blind,” said Graham. “Why should a judge be ashamed to follow the example of his own goddess?” And so at last the owner of the ermine submitted, and the stern magistrate of the bench was led round with the due incantation of the spirits, and dismissed into chaos to seek for a new victim.

And so although through the sin of one alone, yet it passed upon all; [Romans 5:12] that we may not refuse to acknowledge Him to be also the Author of death, Whom we do not refuse to acknowledge as the Author of our race; and that, as through one death is ours, so should be also the resurrection; and that we should not refuse the misery, that we may attain to the gift.

What then, do you demand that the elements should be the slaves of your wants?

We bewail these things at home, and now before your face we express our grief, for this is the one thing in your reign which we take ill. No sooner did he whom sympathetic courtiers called most mild and most philosophic hear these words than he took off his mask of moderation, and exposed the countenance of impiety.

From the Twenty-First and Twenty-Second Chapters

Melmotte was out of breath and could hardly tell his story.

“But here the decoration bestowed upon the chief whom we all follow, would confer a wider honour upon many than it could do if given to any one else.”

For Grahamstown is the capital of the East, and there are many there who think that it should become a Capital of a Colony, whether by separation of the East from the West, or by a general federation of South African States—in which case the town would, they think, be more eligible than any other for all the general honours of government and legislation.

Sir Thomas had shown himself to be absolutely anxious for the success of his son.

Now the whole country has received the boon of Utopian freedom; and the mind loses itself in contemplating to what lowest pitch of human degradation the people will gradually fall.

Upon the whole, however, he was a nice man to look at—for those who like to look on nice men of that kind.

For all living creatures which now bear things younger than themselves could, if only God gave the word, bear things much older than themselves.

Abhor that which is evil, cleave to that which is good.

‘Everybody’s Business’

For the borough of Loughton there would never again be an election.

When Hippolytus dictated these words, the grammarian asked him why he hesitated about that prophecy, as if he mistrusted the divine power in that calamity of exile.

To be seen standing up there, a martyr to the gout, but still shouting for Percycross, was enough for his purpose.

For, though the whole earth was filled with observance of the true faith by the preaching and doctrine of the apostles, yet the orthodox Church of Christ, having been founded by institution and most firmly established by the faithful fathers, is further built up through the teaching of divine discourses, while instructed by your hortatory admonition.

To be a Christian is the great thing, not merely to seem one. And somehow or other those please the world most who please Christ least. In speaking thus I am not like the sow lecturing Minerva; but, as a friend warns a friend, so I warn you before you embark on your new course. I would rather fail in ability than in will to serve you; for my wish is that where I have fallen you may keep your footing.

For they who do not wish to worship the Word made flesh, are ungrateful for His becoming man.

For he attributed the diseases and storms of human passions only to the demons who occupy a grade beneath the moon, and makes even this avowal as by constraint regarding gods whom he honors; but the superior and celestial gods, who inhabit the ethereal regions, whether visible, as the sun, moon, and other luminaries, whose brilliancy makes them conspicuous, or invisible, but believed in by him, he does his utmost to remove beyond the slightest stain of these perturbations.

The whole matter, however, had been much considered, and he signed the document.

“You’ll never have to do that.”

“Vulgar!” cried Crocker, pushing away his plate, and rising from his chair.

If He is our God, He is also our King.

In fleshly robes is clad; for all unknown

“For men may come and men may go, But I go on for ever,—for ever,”

I am about to make a new will; and although I am bound to pay every respect to the entail, and would not for worlds do anything in opposition to the law, still I may be enabled to do something for your benefit.

Jeannette, bring up the leather trunk and the small box and the brown basket.

Poor wretch!

Observe thou, that it is not that the Gentile has become a Jew, but that both the one and the other are entered into another condition.

There was no one in the field whose word would go further with him in hunting matters.

I fear we shall have to give an account at the coming Day of this excessive and unseasonable leniency.

But she regarded her beauty after an unfeminine fashion,—as a thing of value, but as a chattel of which she could not bring herself to be proud.

One shilling, sir,—thank ye, sir,—cigar, sir?—ticket for coffee, sir;—you’ll only have to call the waiter.

The Lord will not wait for the voice of this man in prayer.

And Katie was there, very pretty and bonny, still childish, with her short dress and long trousers, but looking as though she, too, would soon feel the strength of her own wings, and be able to fly away from her mother’s nest. Dear Katie! Her story has yet to be told. To her belongs neither the soft easiness of her sister Linda nor the sterner dignity of Gertrude. But she has a character of her own, which contains, perhaps, higher qualities than those given to either of her sisters.

“No, John; there are other things to think of now; are there not? And, besides, they will want here all that I can do for them.”

That he may not be confused nor disturbed by their weeping.

After these distinctions on our part no one can well be longer in doubt how the Only-begotten at once is believed to be of the Father, and is eternally, even if the one phrase does not at first sight seem to agree with the other—that which declares Him to be of the Father with that which asserts His eternity.

It may also be understood thus: because although we are established in the New Testament, which the number eighty signifies, yet still our life is one of labour and sorrow, while we groan within ourselves, awaiting the adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body; for we are saved by hope; and if we hope for that we see not, then do we with patience wait for it.

We can see Cæsar getting down from his chariot when Cicero came to meet him, and, throwing his arms round his neck, walking off with him in pleasant conversation; and we can fancy him talking to Cicero pleasantly of the greatness which, in times yet to come, pursuits such as his would show in comparison with those of Cæsar’s.

That he could not bewail his lost father without thinking of his lost property, and of the bride that had never been won, was an agony to his soul.

The necessity of throwing whatever responsibility there might be on to other shoulders had been at once apparent to the servants, and they had sent out right and left, so that the house might be filled with persons fit to give directions in such an emergency.

He that is righteous, loves Christ: and if a man thus loves, the Father and the Son come to him, and make their abode with him.

For such flattery is the oil of the sinner, with which the prophet does not desire to have his head anointed; for he says: The righteous shall correct me in compassion, and rebuke me; but the oil of the sinner shall not anoint my head.

With regard to most of those concerned in the household, she had her own way.

Or it may be that the man of our day, with all these advantages, does not keep himself clean—that so many go astray that public opinion shall almost seem to tremble in the balance.

This, forsooth, is the profound reasoning of the wise men, whose thoughts God knows that they are vain.

For, if even when such great things had been declared, still after so long a time Paul of Samosata sprung up, how much more [would such have been the case], had not these things been said before?

‘Is he well, sir?’

Of course there was no hunting during this month at Newton.

You affirm, too, that the shepherd understood the whole case beforehand.

Mrs. Bolton had got it into her head that the two had been dissevered as though by some supernal power; and no explanation to the contrary, brought to her by her husband from Robert, had any power of shaking her conviction.

The late Duke had left her everything at his disposal, and, it was hinted that they had been privately married just before the Duke’s death.

Thinking of these things, I walked the quay for some minutes in a happy state of mind; but by degrees I became impatient, and by degrees also disturbed in my spirit.

She pressed his hand warmly as she looked into his face, but he spoke no word as he passed on to the room which she had just left.

Will six be too early for you, George, with your town ways?’ George said that six would not be too early, and as he made the engagement for the morning he resolved that he would if possible throw his thunderbolt that night.

“And I can only do what other people tell me. You at any rate have something to do with it all, and I have absolutely nothing.”

She had soon confessed to herself the result of that friendship, and had determined to bear her punishment with courage.

For another ex-Solicitor-General a seat would have been found,—or some delay would have been granted,—or at least there would have been a consultation, with a suggestion that something should be tried.

Daniel, however, adds: And they shall be helped with a little help.

Ammonas, presbyter

They felt that they knew the facts.

The horror I feel at being stared at, as the man that was not hung as a murderer, is stronger than I can describe; and I am well aware that I shall be talked to and made a wonder of on that ground.

For another Psalm says, He is terrible over all gods.

Madame Goesler was of opinion that a lady who could carry such a box about the country with her deserved to have it stolen.

“And I may not stay now?”

She also had a title.

“A good deal. His old mother wants for nothing, and he makes two hundred florins a month. He has two shares in the summer theatre. I know it.”

But things were very different with Lucy the next morning.

“There has been something, then?”

But the Father possesses all things by His Son, as the Apostle says, By Him were created all things, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers.

It was some hours before Mr. Robarts left his room.

Hebrews 5:9-10

The Sydney postmark with the date was very plain.

First, let us settle where is its country.

Do you disbelieve in His Godhead?

Such being the amenities which passed between Miss Viner and the prudent lady who had her in charge, it was not wonderful that the former should feel ill at ease with her own ‘party’, as the family of the Grumpy Barbadian was generally considered to be by those on board.

By the Word.

Let the husband render unto the wife due benevolence: and likewise also the wife unto the husband.

Here am I, giving away, as I may say, my own property to a young shopkeeper, and upon my soul you ought to make him pay something for it; upon my soul you ought, for it’s only fair!

Nay, says one, for they shall sin no more.

As how?

And Arius too, how illustrious he was!

And we will not serve God as though He stood in need of our service, or as though He would be made unhappy if we ceased to serve Him; but we do it because we are ourselves benefited by the service of God, and because we are freed from griefs and troubles by serving the Most High God through His only-begotten Son, the Word and Wisdom.

‘They wouldn’t know what such a thing meant. It is years since I have been in the house. I believe that Mrs. Bolton devotes herself to religious exercises and that she regards me as a pagan.’

“Why thin, yer honour, I’m only puirly. It’s bad times as is on us now, indeed and indeed.”

Is it little for a man that some time he is to die?

Tell me, then, will he not benefit her much more than our words?

He had repudiated with scorn his mother’s cold, worldly doctrine; but yet he had felt that it would be a pleasant thing to have it known in London that his wife was the daughter of Sir Walter Wanless.

[Exodus 3:14] For since God is the supreme existence, that is to say, supremely is, and is therefore unchangeable, the things that He made He empowered to be, but not to be supremely like Himself.

[Matthew 9:12] Accordingly, His apostle also says: This is a faithful saying, and worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners.

For there shall be a strict examination of all, and if you be but little better than your neighbor, if it be even an atom, or anything ever so little, God will not overlook even this.

Who being past feeling, says he, gave themselves up to lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness; but you did not so learn Christ.

They were to occupy themselves for two days further in preparations for their journey.

For it is not right that a virgin should have her hair braided for the appearance of her beauty, or boast of her flesh and of its beauty, when she has no struggle greater than that against her flesh, and no contest more obstinate than that of conquering and subduing the body.

That afternoon before dinner he found his sister alone in the drawing-room.

Rise up, therefore, he says, to meet me, and see [Psalm 58:5].

“And Mamma has been so kind! Mamma is very fond of you. I am sure she would do anything for you.”

For even we ourselves, who in respect of the soul are a spiritual creature, having turned away from You, our light, were in that life sometimes darkness; [Ephesians 5:8] and do labour amidst the remains of our darkness, until in Your Only One we become Your righteousness, like the mountains of God.

I suppose, however, that you thought your discourse would not be sufficiently plausible unless you declaimed a good deal about the phenix, after the fashion of young people.

In a passage near the end of Ecclesiastes, where the author is speak-ling of man's dissolution through death separating the soul from the body, it is written, "Then shall the dust return to the earth as it was, and the spirit shall return unto God who gave it."

That would be too much.

Who was this blue-frocked woman, with a felt hat, who seemed to have been willing to do so much more for Ludovic than she had done,—who had gone with him into danger, and was sharing with him his perils?

A gentleman in knickerbockers was to have gone with her, and two other young ladies; but when the time came she was weary, she said,—and she sat almost the entire afternoon looking at the game from a distance.

What will Jeannette say?” “Bother Jeannette,” said the Captain in his bliss.

Clayton, who had been sitting at the end of the row of barristers, jumped up over the back of the bench and rushed in among the people, who now tried simply to hold their own places, and appeared neither to be anxious to go in or out.

And it was spoken, I was aware, in a piteous tone of voice, and with meagre, bated breath. He merely shook his head, and attempted to pass on. “Will you not take your greatcoat?” said I, seeing that he was going out into the open air without protection.

The signora had said truly that the two men were the contrasts of each other—that the one was all for action, the other all for thought.

There isn’t anybody.

For he who has not acted rightly after hearing once, may perhaps do so after hearing a second time; and he who has passed by the second time, may do right after the third.

But if also Elijah be in some sort a word inferior to the Word who was in the beginning with God, God the Word, [John 1:1] this word also might come as a preparatory discipline to the people prepared by it, that they might be trained for the reception of the perfect Word.

“Only that she is an Italian lady.”

Chapter 19. Serapion on the Heresy of the Phrygians.

Or is it perhaps that schismatics, when received without baptism, bring no infection, but that it is brought by those who deliver up the sacred books?

Now if their committing the same sins was unpardonable, when they even outdid the Gentiles, what place can we find for them?

Rom. VIII. 28

But when he continued knocking, and when they had opened, and saw him, they were astonished.

There was no radiance as of joy in Mrs. Burton’s face, nor was there written there anything of despair.

He proposed to take them furnished till they could look about at their leisure and get a house that should suit them.

“Then I can’t say that I forgive her. How is a man to forgive such treatment? If I said that I did, you wouldn’t believe me. I will keep out of her way, and that will be better for her than forgiving her.”

The number of individuals congregated at the council of Ariminum proves nothing in prejudice of orthodox doctrines; for the council was held without the sanction of the bishops at Rome, whose opinion, before that of all others, ought to have been received, and without the assent either of Vincentius, who during a very long series of years guarded the episcopate without spot, or of many other bishops who agreed with those last mentioned.

Hence this also I should perchance have known, which manifestly follows, since injustice and intemperance and other vices of the mind are not objects of sense, but of intellect, how it comes about that these too which we detest and consider condemnable, yet in as much as they are objects of intellect, can outrank this light however praiseworthy it may be in its kind.

How much more sensible are they who, rejecting all this tiresome nonsense, have refused to believe that any one Æon has descended from another by steps like these, which are really neither more nor less Gemonian; but that on a given signal the eight-fold emanation, of which we have heard, issued all at once from the Father and His Ennœa (Thought), — that it is, in fact, from His mere motion that they gain their designations.

“Now I think I have only two more questions to ask you, if you will give me direct answers to them.”

In the morning we sowed our seed, and in the evening let us not cease.

He could not, and would not, stand it.

And wherefore is the left road more thronged than the right, save that the multitude is prone to worldly joys and carnal goods?

Once more I ask, Are the relics of the martyrs unclean?

“So it is serious,—uncommon serious to owe a fellow a lot of money you can’t pay him. I call that very serious.”

Again, according to the view of the inspired Paul , the people itself, by passing through the Red Sea, proclaimed the good tidings of salvation by water.

The method of concatenation was sound.

Plant not poplars there: for such is luxury: it consumes much, and shows nothing for it in itself, but spoils the fruit.

Hear what He added to the former passage, and how He charges the same servants of sin with the reason for their voluntary sale.

But I do not at all imagine that you, my lord Peter, are ignorant that the greatest temptation arises when everything looks bright.

At a first glance you would hardly have called him thirty.

“It’s a great deal more than I do, or hope to do. There’s another branch of public life for which I’m quite unfitted. I’d as soon be called on to choose a Prime Minister for the country, as I would a cook for a club.”

Emily, who had had her triumph, was very gracious.

She had no idea of taking on herself the airs of a fine lady, or the importance of an heiress; she had no wish to be thought a lady; she had no wish for other friends than those of her husband, and his family.

“And be eaten up by mosquitoes! I’ve got to be too old to like travelling.”

When she had absolutely refused to look at her chicken-broth for three consecutive days her father’s heart had been stirred.

Moreover, there is no certainty with them, nothing which proceeds from knowledge.

For God shows His goodness that you may get free from your sins, not that you may add to them.

“Of course I have heard of Miss Dale,” she said, “because we know the De Courcys.” Then she turned away her face, almost blushing, as she remembered the first time that she had seen that Lady Alexandrina De Courcy whom Mr. Crosbie had married.

“And then, he has sold Boxall Hill. It cannot be expected that Boxall Hill shall be repurchased, as some horrid man, a railway-maker, I believe—”

[Luke 2:39] What then may one say?

And it must be acknowledged that the letters of Josephine were such as to make him sure that there might be an adventure if he chose to risk the pages of his magazine.

The change it suffers is in quality, not in essence.

You send out springs in the little valleys.

Now, of this condition of active exercise the eighth day (which is also the first of the week) is a type, because it does not put an end to that repose, but glorifies it.

Without these a missionary institution would be altogether vain;—though, as I have stated some pages back, the school belonging to the Institution at Pacaltsdorp had gone into abeyance when I visited that place.

“I am so glad that you have been here, Emily.”

But what is the meaning of that, which you have thought proper to add to this simile, with regard to the example of the blessed Elisha because he raised the dead by breathing into his face?

Girls had no right to cling to their fathers after marriage.

“Men from whom one should expect charity instead of scandal, but that their provincial ignorance is so narrow!” Then she went on to remind Cecilia how much older was the Roman branch of her family than even the blood of the Geraldines.

At any rate, he is to ask me again in writing,—and then what shall I say?

Some order as to bridal preparations we must presume she gave on that single day which she passed in London.

It was melancholy to see the English Minerva, as he again shouldered his spear and walked back to his tent.

To begin with, this is doubtful, and I have to consider which of the two men I should believe.

Oh, the pride of Satan which has taken root in their unholy souls.

They instruct them that that which is in something else does not exist!

Therefore, when we do anything good, let us not think of what is temporal, but of what is eternal; then will that be a good and perfect work.

For having showed by arguments the resurrection and the life, and that the danger was not a mark of helplessness or destitution; he thenceforward brings in faith also, and to it commits the whole.

Nevertheless I fear and tremble, not indeed distressed for the sake of you who are noble champions of the truth, but because I know that it comes to pass that some men are of feebler heart.

Whilst they were still young, mere youths, of immature age, did they not undergo that grievous affliction of captivity?

Hence when he had vanquished all those who rose up in battle against him he evinced his thankfulness to Christ by zealous attention to the concerns of religion, and exhorted the governors to recognize the one true faith and way of salvation.

Of course you have not.

Justin: Yes, and because he has that whereby he perceives God.

Our warfare is with avarice, with immodesty, with anger, with ambition; our diligent and toilsome wrestle with carnal vices, with enticements of the world.

Their aspect truculent and terrible, their bodily stature prodigious: some of a red complexion, others white as snow, others again of an intermediate color.

Mr. Bolton raised his eyebrows, but still listened patiently.

He had never learned to separate, as you do, the Lord from His body: and had no idea how to rend God asunder from Himself.

Before leaving the inn after breakfast he had agreed to join the dinner in the commercial room at five o’clock, and Mr. Mason’s hot lunch had by no means induced him to alter his purpose.

Chapeau again returned to the house, and left the peasants outside, loudly murmuring.

For, tell me, what do you esteem great? What dignity do you think to be great? Is it that of the Consul? For the many think no greater dignity than that. He who is not Consul is not a whit inferior to him who is in so great splendor, who is so greatly admired. Both one and the other are of the same dignity; both of them alike, after a little while, are no more.

One so full of wisdom as you knows well the danger of such discussions and that silence is in such cases the safest course; except, indeed, on some occasion which renders it imperative to deal with great matters.

Strong men these are;—but such a one certainly was not Sir Thomas Underwood.

If I see that you have fulfilled it, I have received my full return, and have obtained a sufficient recompense for my labours.

“So do I,” said Peregrine. “By Jove, I should think so. If I had two hundred acres of land in my own hand I should not want anything else in the world, and would never ask any one for a shilling.”

He became, as we all know, a dean,—but never a bishop, and was therefore wretched.

Therefore in the Gnostic, along with knowledge, the perfection of fortitude is developed from the discipline of life, he having always studied to acquire mastery over the passions.

And as it were after such a feast and dainties in this way given to Himself, presently He brings in [these words]: Let their table become a trap before them, and a retribution, and an offense: let their eyes be dimmed that they see not, and their back be always bowed down, etc.

I will offer to You the sacrifice of thanksgiving.

Neither ought it to move one not to believe this that the names of some prophets who lived long after the times of king David are read in the inscriptions of certain psalms in that book, and that the things said there seem to be spoken as it were by them.

Persons to be Represented

“You shall have both, my dear,” said the Duchess,—quite in earnest in her promise. Madame Goesler shook her head. “Nobody ever repudiates legacies. The Queen would take the jewels if they were left to her.”

Which was defeated?

He shows that among these blessings must not be reckoned fleshly concupiscence; insomuch as this is wholly evil, such as does not proceed from the very nature of marriage, but is an accident thereof arising from original sin.

And if he had broken both my arms I should not have cared much.

[1 Samuel 2:21] Do you marvel at the happiness of that holy woman?

To Ayala must be attributed the occurrence of these misfortunes.

And here I marvel, that a man of such great ability should promise to men living in philosophy, which makes man blessed by contemplation of truth, a pleasant setting after the discharge of human offices, if this our sentiment and wisdom is mortal and perishable; as if that which we did not love, or rather which we fiercely hated, were then to die and come to nothing, so that its setting would be pleasant to us!

These passages prove what his view is regarding the resurrection.

“That there isn’t. There was a grant of land, which took their name, and became the Manor of Despond; there’s where Spoon Hall is now. Sir Thomas Desponder was one of those who demanded the Charter, though his name wasn’t always given because he wasn’t a baron. Perhaps Miss Palliser does not know all that.”

“I’m blessed if it ain’t true,” said Waddle, convinced by the repetition of his own reading.

It must be explained that our club had no professionals.

These elders reported that a young man was found with her in a retired place, but escaped their hands by his youthful nimbleness, while they were enfeebled with age.

With reason, therefore, is incest frequently detected among you, and is continually permitted.

But now the dread of the new aristocracy was becoming worse than that of the old.

The rest get back into the camp at night, and then, despairing of any safety, overwhelmed with disgrace, conscious that there is no place for hope, they destroy themselves.

For I should not dare to renew from the beginning one who had heard the giving of thanks and joined in repeating the Amen; who had stood by the table and had stretched forth his hands to receive the blessed food; and who had received it, and partaken for a long while of the body and blood of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Besides, this most worthless Ischyras, who has falsely asserted, as he was convicted of doing, that Athanasius had burnt some of the sacred books, has himself confessed that he was sick, and was lying in his bed when Macarius came; from which it is plain that he is a slanderer.

Her chaste locks touch, and stain with gore

Between two and three she went to bed, and on the following morning she left Queen Anne Street for the Great Western Station before her father was up.

Is there truly any reason why any one should leave the worship of Him who created the earth with its living creatures, and the heaven with its stars, for the adoration of her who taught men to set up the woof?

And my soul is immersed to such a degree by calamities that the private sufferings of my own life hardly seem to be worth reckoning among evils (though they are so numerous and great, that if they befell anyone else I should think them unbearable); but I can only look at the common sufferings of the Churches; for if at the present crisis some pains be not taken to find a remedy for them, things will gradually get into an altogether desperate condition.

I take a republican government to be that in which the care of the people is in the hands of the people.

Of what Power?

What was Mr Palliser to do? He did not know whether, in accordance with the rules of the world in which he lived, he ought to pay it, or ought to leave it; and certainly the landlord could not tell him. Then he thought of his wife. He could not go back to his wife without having done something; so, as a first measure, he paid the bill. The landlord’s eyes glittered, and he receipted it in the most becoming manner.

Knowing his own weakness and the frailty of the vessel which he carries, he is afraid of stumbling, lest he strike against something, and it fall and be broken.

In the Father is unity, in the Son equality, in the Holy Spirit the harmony of unity and equality; and these three attributes are all one because of the Father, all equal because of the Son, and all harmonious because of the Holy Spirit.

Now that Mrs. Proudie has gone I don’t suppose the poor bishop will count for much.

The journey had been hot and dusty and she was a little cross.

And see what great works pride does.

He pitied himself with a commiseration that was sickly in spite of its truth.

“And for talking,—you never catch her out; never.” “I never did, certainly,” said Arbuthnot, who, as third secretary, was obedient and kindhearted.

I must now speak against such as deny that He took a soul.

In one letter, written in October of this year, he declares what the Senate has decreed as to the recall of Cæsar from Gaul, and gives the words of the enactments made, with the names subscribed to them of the promoters—and also the names of the Tribunes who had endeavored to oppose them.

For earth ceases to be proud, that is, man ceases, to whom it was said, You are dust; [Genesis 3:19] and why is earth and ashes proud?

[Matthew 25:27] That You may owe, more than enough is given to You; yet who has anything that is not Yours?

For this which is said by the prophet, You shall bring in no burden through your gates on the Sabbath day [Jeremiah 17:24], could be held to as long as it was lawful for the law to be observed according to the letter.

[2 Peter 1:4] And 'what the law could not do in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh [Romans 8:3].'

“I do not want to know what you mean; and it would make papa very unhappy if he were to hear you.”

But how is a man to know whether or not he has within him the qualities necessary for such a career?

But if you marry, you have not sinned; and if a virgin marry, she has not sinned.

Hold communion with all the nations of the earth, and then you may boast that you have preserved the Testament from the destruction of the flames.

Then surely the Secretary of State should have sent him out as though acquitted; and, not daring to hang him, should have treated him as innocent.

“Lecturing you!” said Mrs. Orme.

For I have a convincing Witness to my faith, Who says, Father, all Mine are Yours, and Yours are Mine [John 17:10], even my Lord Jesus Christ, abiding in You, and from You, and with You, for ever God: Who is blessed for ever and ever.

It was quite impossible.

For what man knows the thing of a man, save the spirit of the man which is in him?

The angel also touched him on the breadth of the thigh when he was overcoming him, and in that way made him lame.

And now let us see what he who separates Him from fellowship with the Son is prepared to concede to the glory of the Spirit: For he too, he says, being one, and first and alone, and surpassing all the creations of the Son in essence and dignity of nature, accomplishing every operation and all teaching according to the good pleasure of the Son, being sent by Him, and receiving from Him, and declaring to those who are instructed, and guiding into truth.

In these circumstances the king will not be left in utter solitude and desertion, neither will the affairs of the world fall into the hands of the most impious and wild barbarians.

For seeing that their false gods were pleased with these things, they immediately imitated their gods with like misdoings, thinking that the imitation of superior beings, as they considered them, was a credit to themselves.

But Everett Wharton had simply shown himself to be inefficient to earn his own bread.

It follows, accordingly, that Celsus, who regards birds as superior to men, ought to employ them as his instructors, and not one of the Greek philosophers.

But holy Scripture says they were not of the same merit as the Israelites.

For I know not what other employment there can be where no lassitude shall slacken activity, nor any want stimulate to labor.

Nefas est ergo operantem jam naturam adhuc molestia afficere, superflue ad petulantem prorumpendo libidinem.

She had made a faint struggle to love the young man,—which had resulted in constrained civility.

But others, as the Stoics, are of opinion that the wise man is not subject to these perturbations.

I was wrong not to know it before, but it is better to know it now, than not to have known it till too late.

Is it because he is willingly strong to bear what he would not will to be put upon him?

“Who, I? Laws love you, miss. I wouldn’t;—not for worlds of gold.” And then Mary was left alone to read a second letter from a second suitor.

As Peter was likely to live for the next twenty years, and as the slavery was hard to bear, John had quarrelled with his kinsman, and had gone away to the diggings.

How did you make your way in here?

No grumbling was heard among the peers, and that which came from the peeresses floated down into the current of the great fight about the evening entertainment.

“She is so strong, Thomas, that she can put up with anything,” said Arabella, in a whisper.

And some abstain from the flesh of sheep, and others from that of crocodiles; others, again, from that of cows, while they regard swine's flesh with loathing.

“But, my dear Miss Robarts, I had no intention whatever of putting the burden of my family on the shoulders of another person. They must return to their own home immediately—that is, as soon as they can be brought back.”

From of old he had been taught to regard his brother Mountjoy as the first of young men—among commoners; the first in prospects and the first in rank; and to him Florence Mountjoy had been allotted as a bride.

Would she be taken round to see the neighbouring towns, Rufford and Norrington?

But when we come to divine things, this faculty turns away; it cannot behold; it pants, and gasps, and burns with desire; it falls back from the light of truth, and turns again to its wonted obscurity, not from choice, but from exhaustion.

Which is the earth that is fruitful?

He made it through his own attorney, and had now received Mr. Barry’s answer through the same attorney.

I ought not to have you now that I am to be poor.” But by this time she was in his arms and he was kissing her, till, as she had said, the blood was once again running in her veins.

“She will beg it from her Jew lover,” said Souchey.

And so the holy prophet says: You shall open my mouth, and it shall declare Your praise.

However, let this be as people think.

It was easily reached by a train from London, was in the centre of an essentially hunting country, was near to two or three good coverts, and was in itself a pretty spot.

The Instructor Himself will say again, loving to refer to Himself the kindness of the brethren, Inasmuch as you have done it to these least, you have done it to Me. And these shall go away into everlasting life.

Chapter 13. The Seven Crowns of the Beast to Be Taken Away by Victorious Chastity; The Ten Crowns of the Dragon, the Vices Opposed to the Decalogue; The Opinion of Fate the Greatest Evil.

Our Lord was stripped, that He might make us modest: with the gall and vinegar He made sweet the bitterness of the serpent, which he had poured forth into mankind.

TOOGOOD. Ah! We must have Jacky Joram. We must have Jacky Joram. And then you said that it was given you by an old lady?

‘Oh, Harry,’ said Katie, ‘we are so sorry—that is, not sorry about Alaric, but sorry about you. Why were there not two prizes?’

Obey the prioress as a mother, giving her all due honour, that God may not be offended by your forgetting what you owe to her: still more is it incumbent on you to obey the presbyter who has charge of you all.

He had been intimate with Mills Happerton who was fast becoming a millionaire.

There was no blame to England for that.

“Certainly not, if they can help it.”

Imitate her faith.

Believe me it is a shame.

“Oh, no,” she said, gently struggling to withdraw the hand which he held.

He takes upon himself to be the weekday preacher, so to speak.

She only hated one person in all the world, and he, as she knew well, was living at Portsmouth.

And if no good has been done us by him, so much the greater recompense and higher credit will be ours if we forgive.

Or he says this in the excess of his piety, as when he declares that our well-doings are gifts of grace.

Wherefore are your garments red, and your raiment as though you had trodden in the wine-press?

‘Don’t talk of bribes, my dear fellow.

If I were to worship one of the two, I should be equally conscious of seeming to pour contempt on the uselessness of a numerical distinction, which was superfluous, because it indicated no difference; in other words, I should think it the safer course to worship neither of these two Gods than one of them with some scruple of conscience, or both of them to none effect.

Was he to be looked on as the unjust griping priest he had been there described?

“No, indeed; I never saw him till the other day.”

there they are,—all together.

Olives and vines have pretty names, and call up associations of landscape beauty.

Then, having blamed them for vainglory, He shows that it is not even about great and necessary things they are vainglorious (for neither had they these, but were destitute of good works), but for things without warmth or worth, and such as were certain proofs of their baseness, the phylacteries, the borders; of their garments. For they make broad their phylacteries, He says, and enlarge the borders of their garments. [Matthew 23:5]

What then did Peter?

Lest by any means if there come with me any from Macedonia, we, (that we say not ye,) should be put to shame in this confidence.

Your sacrifice is a rite of being sprinkled with the blood of beasts.

He did despise himself when he found that he put these things first,—as a matter of course.

But my chief work was the investigating of complaints made by the public as to postal matters.

If, for these and other such rules, you insist upon having positive Scripture injunction, you will find none.

“‘Praise undeserved is satire in disguise,’“ said Mr. Cruse, not quite understanding, himself, why he made the quotation. But it did exceedingly well. Mrs. Hunter smiled sweetly on him, said that he was a dangerous man, and that no one would take him to be a clergyman; upon which Mr. Cruse begged that she would spare his character.

Frank Greystock was now going to his picnic; and, though he meant to be true to Lucy Morris, he had enjoyed his glass of champagne with Lizzie Eustace under the rocks.

But, when He shall have come, He will reward us, who have kept ourselves from those things which lust, and have done those things which charity has bidden us: that we may reign in His perfect and eternal peace, without any strife of evil, and with the highest delight of good.

IV. This ill-treatment has come after 20 years' good work in his diocese of Cyrus.

The next witness was Pat Brady, and as the verdict to which the jury came, depended in a great degree on his evidence, it will be given as nearly as possible in detail.

How many can you find among them who are not fully instructed in these writers?

Y. Of the tumult that arose in Thessalonica on account of their preaching, and of the flight of Paul to Berea, and thence to Athens.

By them he was hated,—as was perhaps necessary in his position.

May God bless and preserve you in the trials which are before you, and carry you through them with honour and safety. Wherever you may be I shall watch for tidings of you with anxiety, and always hear them with gratification. I need hardly bid you remember that you have no more affectionate friend

The rectory, for a parsonage, was a tolerably large house, and convenient.

And people are cutting Bermuda up with handsaws.

Had that marriage been stopped by any such suspicion as this?

I had learned to think that Ireland was a land flowing with fun and whisky, in which irregularity was the rule of life, and where broken heads were looked upon as honourable badges.

An Englishman, if he be kept waiting by a train in some forlorn station in which he can find no employment, curses his fate and all that has led to his present misfortune with an energy which tells the story of his deep and thorough misery.

And yet, in fact, they who refer the fables to actual gods, do anything rather than add to their divine character; for they do not perceive, that by the very defence they make for the gods, they confirm the things which are alleged concerning them.

For not yet, in our present condition, has the truth come unmingled to men, who are here unable to bear the sight of pure immortality, just as we cannot bear to look upon the rays of the sun.

He was a good-looking man, with well-formed features, but one whom you had to see often before you could remember him.

And yet we have slaves, some more and some fewer, by whom we could not help being seen; but even of these, not one has been found to invent even such things against us.

But they are not sweet-savoured as are those by Miss Thackeray, and are, therefore, less true to nature.

For as to you was given the written law, so to them was the natural; and they came short in nothing, if, that is, only they were willing, but were even able to surpass you.

One wants sympathy in such a case as that—not evidence.

The earth is full of Your creation.

He saved the lives of the three brethren, [Daniel 3:25-26] who had agreed to lose them for God's sake; but He destroyed those of the Chaldæans, when they had preferred to save them by the means of their idolatry.

Then Peter answered, I should agree with you, but that our Lord, who came for the salvation of all the world, being alone noble above all, submitted to the condition of a servant, that He might persuade us not to be ashamed to perform the ministrations of servants to our brethren, however well-born we may be.

Piracy in the Mediterranean was at that time a terrible drawback to trade—that piracy that a year or two afterward Pompey was effectual in destroying.

“Because you distrusted me; not as your lover, but as a man. But I did not come here to blame you, Caroline.”

Do not let this seem to you to be tolerable, but help me by sympathy and by sharing my indignation, and do right by the dead Cæsarius.

Wherefore he calls himself the friend of the Bridegroom [John 3:29], since he alone was present at the marriage, he it was that did and accomplished all, he made a beginning of the work.

There are persons who can move their ears, either one at a time, or both together.

“Well I remember it, my dear! John was just engaged to Rachel, and the marriage was put off because of the great cruelty of Jonathan’s will. Of course I am not blaming you.”

He has not merely said that narrow is the way [Matthew 7:14], but with wonder, how narrow is the way, that is, exceedingly narrow.

Yes, she had learned it all; but hardly more than she had known before; or, at any rate, not more than she had expected.

Now and then a commercial traveller would visit the place with but faint hopes as to trade.

A dance with Felix at the Music Hall, though it were three days distant from her, would so occupy her mind that she could wash and dress all the children without complaint.

The streets of Brotherton were almost strange to her, so little was she given to leave the sphere of her own duties.

“Only this,—that your house will be his house, and will be full without me. A daughter’s marriage is always a painful parting.”

Lord Fawn might probably be again at her feet.

O earth, who when you had sinned heard the sentence, Earth you are, and unto earth shall you return, [Genesis 3:19] from you let truth spring, that righteousness may look down from heaven.

“One more word, yer honer, may be yet you’ll change your mind.”

As soon as she saw him, and realised in her mind the fact that Augusta was to become his wife, she felt at once the absurdity of sending Augusta on a message.

But He says, in the Name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit.

“When my father was on his deathbed. He had come sooner than that; but then it was that he went. I think, Mr Whittlestaff, that I never ought to marry any one after that, and therefore it is that I have told you.”

These, however, whether men enjoy or do not enjoy them, abide the same undiminished: but what I spoke of is a much greater thing; for spiritual wisdom abides not the same distributed or not distributed: but it rather increases in the distribution.

Even at the time of which we speak, four Presbyters of Alexandria, though they had not even proceeded to Tyre, were banished by their means.

But he endured this with fortitude and showed to all by his deeds that the Divine Power is present with those who endure any hardship whatever for the sake of religion, lightening their sufferings and strengthening their zeal.

Letter 55

Then the wretched victor had thrown his treasure away, and he, John Eames, had been content to stoop to pick it up,—was content to do so now.

“I don’t see it. I never do mine.”

I do lack courage—to have ill motives imputed to me.

How Very Much He Loved Her

Was he to fall again into that horrid low abyss in which even the Tuam attorney had scorned him; in which he had even invited that odious huxter’s son to marry his sister and live in his house?

The estate was then worth £7,000 a year.

“But it does signify to me, and if you will listen to me for a moment I shall take your doing so as a favour added to that which you have conferred upon me in coming here.” The Vicar could only bow and listen.

There was one other question which Madame Faragon longed to ask; but she was almost too much afraid of her young friend to put it into words. At last she plucked up courage, and did ask her question after an ambiguous way.

In the writing of many letters, however, she put no confidence, and regarded penny postage as one of the strongest evidences of the coming ruin.

The following rule then will hold universally and strictly.

A martyr, steadfast in faith, who stood fast as a conqueror amidst the racks and burning plates, was ordered by him to be smeared with honey and to be made to lie under a blazing sun with his hands tied behind his back, so that he who had already surmounted the heat of the frying-pan might be vanquished by the stings of flies.

“You mean your wicked brother-in-law. I should like to know him of all things. He’d be quite an attraction. I suppose he knows how to behave like a gentleman?”

This also he says in the Epistle to the Corinthians, that on this account He gave the discernings of spirits.

We are too true to deny it.

And now the girl herself was—a castaway.

[Philippians 1:23] And, My soul desired to long for Your judgments; or if it is more appropriate to say, My soul longed to desire Your judgments.

He wished that he knew the truth in the matter; or rather he wished he could know whether or no she were innocent, without knowing whether or no she were guilty.

It consists in a general raising of the hat to all mankind; in a daily walk that never hurries itself into a jostling trot, inconvenient to passengers on the pavement; in a placid voice, a soft smile, and a small cup of coffee on a boulevard.

No man was bold enough to surmise a second god.

For this is the expression of one declaring that he was not then young; (nor was he; nor yet old, but a man of middle age. )

For who is there, however slightly acquainted with the holy volume, who does not know this, that the people of Israel who had just escaped from Egypt were suddenly affrighted in the wilderness by the pursuit of the Egyptians, and when dangers encompassed them on all sides, and on one side the sea cut off their passage as by a wall, while the enemy barred their flight in the rear, the people coming together to the Prophet charged him with being the cause of their helpless condition?

And how was it that she was thus able to talk of one of them to the other, as though neither of them had ever come forward with such a suit?

He could be noble in his confidence, and at the same time could become at a moment distrustful.

Chapter 30. The Burgundians embrace Christianity under Theodosius the Younger.

“No, father,” said Edith, positively.

That there was some mistake which would be easily explained were her husband’s mind lucid at all points, but which she could not explain because of the darkness of his mind, she was thoroughly convinced.

Where is the scribe?

The Grinder’s mode of life was too well known for even a mother to attempt to deny it.

Then he asked her whether she could not remain until the beginning of next week, urging objections to this final surrender of Llanfeare; but she was not to be turned from her purpose. “Llanfeare will have been surrendered,” she said; “the house will be his to turn me out of if he pleases.”

To Boniface, My Noble Lord and Justly Distinguished and Honourable Son, Augustine Sends Greeting in the Lord.

Yet Isaiah, Jeremiah, and Ezekiel, are said to have seen Him, and many others.

On whose behalf was it, that he gratified them by doing murders thus without plan or reason?

In regard to men she had never asked herself the question whether this man was handsome or that man ugly.

“Oh yes, people do run away, and it all comes right. It was the gentleman had the money then, and it is said you know that old Lady Catchboy, Lady Julia’s mother, had arranged the elopement herself as offering the safest way of securing the rich prize. The young lord didn’t like it, so the mother had it done in that fashion.”

“Tear and ages! and why wouldn’t he side with the boys as lives on his own land? av he don’t make frinds of them, where will he find frinds? Is it among the great gintlemen of the counthry? By dad, they don’t think no more of him nor they do of us. And is it the likes of Captain Ussher as’ll be good frinds to him? He’s thinking of his own schames, and taking the honest name from his sister. Is that his frind, Pat?”

And is there any need to judge a believer?

From the moment when he had first allowed himself to think of Grace, he had desired, yet almost feared, to make acquaintance with the father; but had been debarred from doing so by the peculiar position in which Mr. Crawley was placed.

I think I understand it all now, Mr. Dockwrath; and when we want you again, you shall hear from us.

For of itself the earth contains no light, unless it receives it from the heaven, in which He placed perpetual light, and the gods above, and eternal life; and, on the contrary, He placed on the earth darkness, and the inhabitants of the lower regions, and death.

for etc.

He again, to put an end to his fears and the other's disputatiousness, says, For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink.

He asked him whether he would not take Mr. Crocker with him to Italy; but that of course was a joke.

For this also He caused just twelve baskets to remain over, that Judas also might bear one. For He was able indeed to have appeased their hunger, but the disciples would not have known His power, since in Elijah's case also this took place. [1 Kings 17:16]

But suppose we are told that they sailed with, and were sent with?

This is a heightening of affliction, when the evils are unavoidable, and there lies upon one as it were a necessity hardly extricable of misfortune.

Very much was said on the matter of drink, in all of which Caldigate was clever enough to impose on his friend Dick the heavy responsibility of a mentor.

Miss Thoroughbung had been known to have declared at the brewery that the whole thing should be done before she had been there twelve months.

Miss Baker told George afterwards that the left side was altogether motionless.

While I was still at Antioch the presbyter, Evagrius, often reproved him in my presence.

Take My yoke upon you and learn of Me, for I am meek and lowly of heart, and you shall find rest to your souls.

“I do not understand what you mean,” he said.

Nor is he idle like Fitzgibbon.

Ayala paused a moment, and then answered stoutly, “Yes, it was because of Colonel Stubbs.”

But the bitterness of Mrs Lupex’s tongue had hardly yet produced its greatest results.

8. Who ever saw, who ever heard of, the scholars taking greater encouragement in the dangers of their teachers?

The day before yesterday I spoke to you concerning Lea of blessed memory, and I had hardly done so, when I was pricked in my conscience.

And it is the part of wise men to choose, as in good things the greater and more perfect, so in evils the lesser and lighter.

Only, in the meanwhile, let us not leave that righteousness which is of faith, since the just does live by faith, [Romans 1:17] as says the apostle.

It is worth while that I should relate, and that you, as you wish it, should hear what his death was like.

But God is always lovely, never unlovely, never changeable.

For, again, how can they believe that He died, when they deny that He had a mortal body?

But suppose that the loss of your patrimony awaits you; are not the future realms of heaven a compensation for perishable and frail possessions?

She knew very well where Mr Slow’s chambers were situated, but she paused on the pavement, not wishing to go thither quite at once.

The book itself

For the Instructor also, in virtue of His being good, with consummate art glides into censure by rebuke; rousing the sluggishness of the mind by His sharp words as by a scourge.

She was at any rate so sure of her own heart that she would never give her husband cause to rue the confidence he placed in her.

And the drunkard, he says, shall be clothed in rags, and be ashamed of his drunkenness in the presence of onlookers.

But unto them that are defiled and unbelieving is nothing pure; but even their mind and conscience is defiled.

Sundries, 7800 0 0

It is an ancient adversary and an old enemy with whom we wage our battle: six thousand years are now nearly completed since the devil first attacked man.

‘What is best for you must be best for me,’ said Gertrude, kissing his forehead.

For He was not able even without flight— a protection so base, and unworthy, and servile— to preserve in persecution such as He knew to be weak!

He was civil, gracious, almost subservient; but he had no comfort to give and no advice to offer, and, like all attorneys, he was in favour of delay.

Here then you are committing two errors, one by increasing his prejudice through your quarrelsomeness, and another by getting him to taste of what is unclean.

Gone without a blow? Scared by the very name of Flemish freedom?

So great, yea and far greater zeal must we use, to uproot and prevent floating reports which are not good, but to see beforehand from afar whence they come, and to remove beforehand the causes from which they are produced, not to wait till they are established and are the common topics in every one's mouth.

And as it happens with thoughtless servants at market, who leave the needful services which their masters have entrusted to them, and rivet themselves at a mere haphazard to those who fall in their way, and waste out their leisure there; this also we undergo when we depart from the commandments of God.

How strong she had looked, even in the midst of her sufferings, on the previous evening!

He moreover bid them renounce their money and other property, pledging himself to guide them through a dry sea into the land of promise.

What do you think of that as the condition for a man to be brought to?

Hence the evils are all made worse, when we both sin, and do not think we even do amiss.

You but served the martyr in your rage, O persecutor: you but swelled the reward in adding to the pain.

Chapter 9. You have given no heed to false teachers

It may be that they were paid by subscription among his political friends,—and if so, again we shall be satisfied.

The Rector of Drumbarrow and His Wife

It was supposed, also, that though they did not own sheep, they preferred mutton for their daily uses, and that they supplied themselves at a very cheap rate.

Let him say this plainly: forasmuch as, even if he shall wish to glory, he will not be a fool, for he says the truth.

To answer this question, it was found necessary to ascertain how such a name for the Supreme has been acquired.

Still, as it is my task and study by reading many authors to cull different flowers from as large a number as possible, not so much making it an object to prove all things as to choose what are good.

The “signora” was not without talent and not without a certain sort of industry; she was an indomitable letter-writer, and her letters were worth the postage: they were full of wit, mischief, satire, love, latitudinarian philosophy, free religion, and, sometimes, alas, loose ribaldry.

“If you call that success,” said Mrs. Low.

“Will you let me return tomorrow,—just for a few days,—and then you can talk to him as you please. I did not mean to come to stay. I wished him goodbye because I knew that I should not meet him here.”

“I have never seen but one document which conveys the ownership of those houses.”

“Cannot I take you back as well as Mr. Sprottle?”

As I am headstrong about having my young man,—and I own that I am headstrong about that,—I guess I’ve got to fit myself for that sort of life.” And Nora, as she said this, pronounced her words with something of a nasal twang, imitating certain countrywomen of her friend’s.

“Indeed we won’t, papa,” said the two Miss Fosters. But the coolness gradually subsided, and the two Miss Fosters consented to attend in their ordinary Sunday bonnets.

And this it seems to me that Jesus took into consideration; add in order that husbandmen, carpenters, builders, and other artisans, might Bet be driven away from good, He convened a common council of them altogether, and by simple and easy conversations He both raised them to a sense of God, and brought them to desire what was good.

The old Duke put on his spectacles and read the letter through,—which ran as follows:

[John 8:44] But we ask how it was that the devil was a murderer from the beginning; and we find that he slew the first man, not by drawing a sword, nor by applying to him any bodily violence, but by persuading him to sin, and thus driving him from the happiness of Paradise.

Between him and his God I cannot judge, but he believed in an Almighty One, and certainly went forth to meet him without a fear in his heart.

On one occasion she took her husband to Vavasor Hall, and there was a regular renewal of all the old family feelings.

The true Faith recognizes Him as God; and this belief is necessary to salvation; yet some reserve must be employed in applying that Name to Him.

“No, you gander. If there was anything of that sort I could manage it myself. But if she had a thing locked up — away from him, couldn’t you manage to show it to him? He’s very generous in rewarding, you know.”

The wicked one, then, having served God blamelessly to the end of the present world, can become good by a change in his composition, since he assuredly is not of one uniform substance whose sole bent is towards sin.

For if you enquire what is absolute justice; it was meet that we should have perished immediately from the beginning, according to the definition of strict justice.

I think, Mr. Flick, that intimation should be made to him that Earl Lovel will join the Countess in immediate application to the court for means to settle his claim.

The Psalmist also, in agreement with this sentence, says, He has dispersed, he has given to the poor, his justice endures for ever [Psalm 112:9].

At this period he was a man somewhat over thirty,—perhaps thirty-three years of age, who had done fairly well at Harrow and at Oxford, but had never done enough to make his friends regard him as a swan.

She would neither defend her engagement, nor would she submit to have it censured.

could she tell him that all the vows that had been made between them were to be as nothing?

The matter which struck me most in looking at them was the difference of condition which I observed in the men.

They shall not glory as if they have not received: You have made them.

“I think you are wrong, Lizzie.”

I do not deny the blessedness of widows who remain such after their baptism; nor do I disparage those wives who maintain their chastity in wedlock; but as they attain a greater reward with God than married women who pay the marriage due, let widows themselves be content to give the preference to virginity.

Whence the Greeks also applied the denominative appellation of wise and sophists ([σοφοί, σοφισταί]) to those who were versed in anything Cratinus accordingly, having in the Archilochii enumerated the poets, said:—

Perhaps the government of the Mandarins did not afford the best specimen of that colonial lore which it was the business of the committee to master.

But Christ is on this account another (Christ), because He acted differently from Elisha— because, in fact, the master is more powerful than his servant!

He who says, I have not found that which I was in hopes of.

The match was, in every way, a good one, and greatly pleasing to all the Kellys, whether with an O or without, for “shure they were all the one family.”

But behold, you are loved, art praised: think it not joy when in yourself you are praised; be praised in the Lord, that you may sing, In the Lord shall my soul be praised.

For no man does well against his will, even if that which he does be well.

In Your own sweetness, not in his meetness.

Is it that those rich men despise Samian vessels?

Rachel was still thinking of Luke Rowan and of the man’s arm when she opened the cottage door, but the sight of her sister’s face, and the tone of her sister’s voice, soon brought her back to a full consciousness of her immediate present position.

Rather, on the contrary, you ought to be ashamed of persisting in this passion; and waiting until the person who has committed the injury comes to you to be reconciled; for this is a disgrace, and a reproach, and the greatest loss.

“No, I will not. I have no judgment. He must judge for me in everything. If he says it is better that we should part, then — then — then I will let him go.”

To this class belong also those things which have been brought forward as true, either by wise men wrapping up some truth in the folds of such inventions, or by foolish men building up various kinds of superstition; e.g.

Who would get the money which poor Silverbridge would lose?

Again, "The hour shall come, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God, and they that hear shall live;" [John 5:25] not, My voice.

Think of those who are much better than yourself.

I shall be a judge acceptable to both of you, as I shall award you the first prize against your father, and the same to your father against you.

“Ah, well! of course, you’ll laugh at me. Theodore always laughs at me when I get on what he calls a high horse. I wonder whether you are as sensible as he is?”

Mounser Green

To love your neighbour as yourself is very difficult, and sometimes unpleasant.

And how should these things be reasonable?

Nor, when an abbot has been constituted, let any person whatever on any pretext be put over him, unless perchance (which God forbid) crimes be apparent which are shown to be punishable by the sacred canons.

Now, I ask, was not He, in the mind of the Jews, true God, Whom men used then to bless, and by whom they swore?

There was an instant certainty that the blow had come and must be borne even should it kill her.

For aught he knew there might still be treachery in regard to the lock; but his heart was comforted as he heard the footfall of the policeman on the doorstep.

“I don’t at all know. I’m afraid there’s something wrong,” replied Morton.

What would I giv for the Atrato ‘ now; for my berth, then thought so small; for its awning; for a bottle of its soda water; for one cut from one of all its legs of mutton; for two hours of its steam movement!

For what end do they collect so many cupbearers, when they might satisfy themselves with one cup?

“Sit down, Denis, sit down—don’t be laving your company such a night as this.”

Much has been given to me; but if much be expected, how shall I answer the demand?

It was a happy idea that of making them all around conceive that Neefit had come after his money.

Let us therefore, when we see the Saints in danger, regard not our life, for it is impossible without daring ever to perform any noble act, but need is that he who takes thought beforehand for his safety here, should fall from that which is to come.

He discovered, when such discovery was no longer serviceable, that it would have been worth his while to have worked for the usual pay assigned to work in this world and have earned a wife and children, with a carriage for them to sit in; to have earned a pleasant dining-room, in which his friends could drink his wine, and the power of walking up the high street of his country town, with the knowledge that all its tradesmen would have gladly welcomed him within their doors.

We have had busy statesmen writing books, two prime ministers translating Homer, another writing novels, a fourth known as a historian, a dramatist, and a biographer.

In the enthusiasm of the moment, the attacks made on his character were answered by eulogy as loud as the censure was bitter.

Messrs Slow & Bideawhile, as the lawyers of the Greshamsbury family—it will be understood that Mr Gazebee’s law business was of quite a different nature, and his work, as regarded Greshamsbury, was now nearly over—Messrs Slow & Bideawhile declared that it would never do for them to undertake alone to draw out the settlements.

A slight interval was allowed for lunch, and then Sir John rose to begin his speech.

St. Ambrose returns to the story of the widow of Sarepta, and shows that she represented the Church, hence that she was an example to virgins, married women, and widows.

That method was doubtless barbarous and unreasonable, but it was satisfactory and sufficed.

“Yes; she certainly is pretty.”

“It’s his own money, and, as far as George Robinson is concerned—”

About this period, Agelius, bishop of the Novatians at Constantinople, feeling his end approaching, nominated Sisinius, one of the presbyters of his church, as his successor.

But the adulterer, the fornicator, the defrauder, ought to be brought to a better course by command.

In his youthful,—all but boyish,—days in London, he delighted to “put himself up” at the Bedford, in Covent Garden.

But to a deity, if really one, nothing whatever is remote, to whom the earth is a point, and by whose nod all things have been established.

But this solemn declaration, spoken from the Father's knowledge, comes to their relief; He is revealed as His Father's own true Son.

Who has been elected, Mr Montague?” Paul knew nothing about the election, and cared very little.

[Hebrews 5:14] Do you see then also in what sense he there calls them full-grown?

It was very evident to Hugh that his mother and Dorothy were for compliance, and that Priscilla was for refusal.

I did try, but I could not do it.” Then she threw herself into the arms of the unsympathetic woman,—who, however, was now somewhat less unsympathetic than she had hitherto been.

But there are other cases in which a lover cannot make himself known as such without great difficulty, and when he does do so, cannot hope for an immediate answer in his favour.

And yet be as large-hearted as we may, we shall never be able to contribute such love toward man as we stand in need of at the hand of a God that loves man.

The witnesses, however interesting they may be in detail, are but episodes.

They had been betrayed;—but as a body were unable even to accuse the traitor.

Whole cities were at war with them; yea, this war made its way also into houses.

He was gradually assuming for that position the prerogatives of a Premier, and men were beginning to talk of Mr. Seward’s ministry.

He had told the lawyer that his word was worth nothing, and yet he had believed much that the lawyer had said to him.

What would he say of an English statesman who should speak of putting up the Union Jack on the State House in Boston?

Father John hurried to the same place, where he found Mr. McKeon already seated on one of the dark benches.

His father was one of the best men in the world, revered on the bench, and loved by all men; but he had not sufficient parental sternness to admit of his driving his son well into harness.

“Afraid! Why should I be afraid? John! My own John! Mamma, he is my own.” And she put out her arms to him, as though calling to him to come to her. Things were now very bad with John Eames,—so bad that he would have given a considerable lump out of Lord De Guest’s legacy to be able to escape at once into the street. The power of a woman, when she chooses to use it recklessly, is, for the moment, almost unbounded.

And what did the people say about Acorn’s escape?

As they were all leaving her together, she contrived to say a word to her old lover.

For where shall be the end of seeking?

Mr Seward was a clergyman, and the tutor of his college, and a man who worked very hard at Cambridge.

I should expect to have my own way,—first because I’ve a deal of experience, and next because my share in the concern would be so much the greatest.

The Diatessaron (Section 44)

For neither if we eat are we the better, (that is, stand higher in God's estimation, as if we had done any thing good or great:) nor if we eat not are we the worse, that is, fall in any way short of others.

I was perhaps more taken with the country which I saw than with the harbour, and was no longer at a loss to know where was the land on which the English settlers of 1820 were intended to locate themselves.

For, in truth, meaner than any servant is he who bears about with him so much pride.

They were so prone to oblige their neighbours that their neighbours failed to perceive how indifferent to them was the happiness and wellbeing of those around them.

He was laid in chains of iron as the Prophet says of Joseph.

Xenophon too, the Athenian, utters these similar sentiments in the following words: He who shakes all things, and is Himself immoveable, is manifestly one great and powerful. But what He is in form, appears not. No more does the sun, who wishes to shine in all directions, deem it right to permit any one to look on himself. But if one gaze on him audaciously, he loses his eyesight.

Chapter XLIII. Millbank

[Matthew 11:25] I have said this, in order that it may be more clearly perceived how in the expression, We will proclaim Your praise, the same has been repeated as had been said higher up, We will confess to You.

Mr. Twentyman was more laughed at than perhaps he deserved.

Well: it is one body; nevertheless she becomes not unclean, but the cleanness of the wife overcomes the uncleanness of the husband; and again, the cleanness of the believing husband overcomes the uncleanness of the unbelieving wife.

For what is there grievous in inhabiting a prison and wearing a chain?

“I wanted to speak to you, sir,” said he, rushing at once into the midst of his subject, “about Caroline’s settlement. It is time that all that should be arranged. I would have made my lawyer see Pritchett; but I don’t know that Pritchett has any authority to act for you in such matters.”

There is a satisfaction in turning out of doors a nephew or niece who is pecuniarily dependent, but when the youthful relative is richly endowed, the satisfaction is much diminished.

not that He does chastise or punish, but for the time allows and permits them.

She was not possessed of strong affections, nor of depth of character, nor of high purpose; but she was no fool, nor was she devoid of principle.

Three days, three out of the fourteen, passed by, and I could think of no fitting subject on which to begin the task I had appointed myself of teaching the British public.

And since, according to our doctrine, wisdom is not the knowledge of evil, but the knowledge of evil, so to speak, is in those who hold false opinions and who are deceived by them, I would therefore in such persons term it ignorance rather than wisdom.

For God having given them a commandment, 'Honour your father and your mother,' and, 'He that curses father or mother, let him die the death [Matthew 15:4 that people established a contrary law, changing the honour into dishonour, and alienating to other uses the money which was due from the children to their parents.

In no wise abashed at the sight, nor shrinking at all from his high purpose through flattery, he was an athlete ready, both in word and deed, to meet a rival of equal power.

But the plural number is employed according to scriptural usage; for the one daughter of Jacob is spoken of as daughters, just as in the usage of the Latin tongue liberi is used in the plural for children even when there is only one.

“Do you mean that after what has passed you will take your brother’s part?”

And all the rest having died, my unfortunate self alone was tossed by a great wave and cast upon a rock; and while I sat upon it in my misery, I was prevented, by the hope of finding my children alive, from throwing myself into the deep then, when I could easily have done it, having my soul made drunk by the waves.

Phineas Finn Is Elected for Loughshane

Seeing, therefore, that the dictum before us, though, so far as it is limited by number of words, it is a short one, yet affords principles and hypotheses for every kind of doctrinal pravity, it would seem right that our readers should require in our reply not so much brevity as soundness.

“Why should he wait below?” said Mrs. Van Siever, very angrily.

But this is obviously the granting of a favour.

“Reginald,” she repeated it after him, but went no farther in naming him.

More nobly the apostle says, Be haters of the evil; cleave to the good.

Here Plato, through fear of the adherents of polytheism, introduces his maker uttering words which contradict himself.

When desiring that she might see nothing more of Joe Mixet, she had been in her pride;—but now she was so tamed and quelled by the outward circumstances of her position, that she was glad to have some one near her who knew how to behave himself.

For Arius, as I have before related, entertaining one opinion in his heart, professed another with his lips; having hypocritically assented to and subscribed the form of faith set forth at the council of Nicæa, in order to deceive the reigning emperor.

The Beginning, he says, is nothing else than this, when there is not a strict life.

But, as he was well aware, she regarded him as being simply cruel to her.

Her first objection was that she had undertaken to go down to Westmoreland and comfort Kate in the affliction of her broken arm.

The head appears sound, and the face also quite sound.

For it was in God's power at once to release us from this dire evil, and not to suffer even the smallest part of it to remain; but in order that we may not again go back to our former negligence, He has provided that the torrent of these evils should subside gently and little by little, holding us fast to the same pious resolutions.

It with discretion, 'tis not bad, but good,—

And, indeed, he was prone to disbelieve them, because they ran counter to a conviction which had already been made in his own heart, and had been extensively acted on by him.

There should be much awe mixed with the love felt for him.

Land is a luxury, and of all luxuries is the most costly.

It has been our aim in a special manner, that the Christians also, who had abandoned the religion of their forefathers, should return to right opinions. For such wilfulness and folly had, we know not how, taken possession of them, that instead of observing those ancient institutions, which possibly their own forefathers had established, they, through caprice, made laws to themselves, and drew together into different societies many men of widely different persuasions.

It was Gilmore’s opinion that, instead of proceeding against Sam, they would put him into the witness-box and make him tell what he knew about the presence of the other two men.

Christmas was over and Mary was up in town when she received Mrs. Jones’ rejoinder, but it may as well be given here.

By the time that Mrs. Brumby had left the premises, our clerk had gone also.

He had been, perhaps, a little unstable in his affections,—as men are so commonly.

What is at length this wonderful mystery?

If He be true, He has sent Me for the truth; if He be true, it is probable that He who is sent is true also.

“Carry you, Pat!” said Gayner; “why, you don’t mean to say you hunt that old garron you call Diana? Faith, man, you’re too bold; your friends ought to look to you; what would the country do if you broke your neck?”

For when we are treating of the birth of God, you maintain that one of greater power could not be born of Mary just as above you maintain than one older could not be begotten.

For men of quick intellect and glowing temperament find it easier to become eloquent by reading and listening to eloquent speakers than by following rules for eloquence.

When I was obliged to make some allusion to it—at least I felt myself obliged, and was very sorry afterwards that I did—she merely laughed—a great loud laugh as she always does, and then went on about the business.

Yet encouraged for the ministration of his office by having seen somewhat of those things, he goes on saying, I heard unspeakable words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter.

But I told you also before that I could not be your wife.

Aaron began to swear that he could not possibly eat any dinner. He had dined once, and was going to dine again;—anything to keep her from going.

Iniquities perchance in heart alone?

For, when speaking concerning images, he says, They dedicate images of the sacred and inviolable immortals in most worthless and motionless matter.

“Dunn,” he said, “I think we will ride on,” and he put his horse into a trot.

Grace had a cousin in London,—a clerk high up and well-to-do in a public office, a nephew of her mother’s,—and this cousin was, and for years had been, violently smitten in love for this young lady.

“You had to do it,” said Frank. “Let things go as they might, you had to do it. You would not have it said of you that you had joined these ruffians against your father.”

It is impossible to state with accuracy the actual population of Washington, for it fluctuates exceedingly.

I’m not going to throw you over.

Forage is the only thing.

Certainly your enemies.

For they relate that the world is divided between three gods, so that it has fallen to the lot of one to restrain and rule heaven, to another the sea, and to a third the lower regions.

The Lord help you on your bed of pain.

“I have not seen what Mr. Dove says. It is clear that the necklace is not an heirloom.”

For indeed both their thefts are more shameless, and their butcheries more hardened, and their impurities far more enormous than the others; and they dig through, not one wall, but estates and houses without end, their prerogative making it very easy to them.

Herr Molk, when he was interrogated on the subject, would shake his head, but in truth Herr Molk knew nothing.

Perhaps in his admiration for the country of his adoption Mr Melmotte had allowed himself to attach higher privileges to the British aristocracy than do in truth belong to them.

Fancy;—eight hundred a year of your own.

Let us then also follow the magi, let us separate ourselves from our barbarian customs, and make our distance therefrom great, that we may see Christ, since they too, had they not been far from their own country, would have missed seeing Him.

“Just so.”

But now he was slow in his steps, and infirm on his legs.

But, nevertheless, he tells us, it will not remain so.

‘Did you bring baby down with you?’ the grandmother asked.

“I have called forth a word of wisdom,” said Madame Max Goesler, almost in a whisper.

Alaric brushed a tear from his eye, and ended by promising to be guided by his friend’s advice.

But there they stayed for a day, and the guides employed themselves in making a litter with long poles so that they might carry Mrs. Arkwright over a portion of the ground.

By this act he even then was setting forth the death of Christ, who was destined by His Father as a sacrifice, and carried the cross whereon He suffered.

He himself understood fully how great was the offer made,—how all-important to the happiness of the poor mother,—and he was also aware, or thought that he was aware, how likely it might be that the offer would be retracted.

But all this had not made her much in love with matrimony generally.

With gladness and rejoicing shall they be led: they shall enter into the King's palace.

Were my detractors country bred or unacquainted with the arts of rhetoric or of logic, I should pardon their want of insight; nor should I censure them for accusing me if I saw that their ignorance was in fault and not their will.

Let us not then despair, but even though thou be a reviler, or covetous, or whatsoever you are, consider that Paul was [1 Timothy 13-16] a blasphemer, and persecutor, and injurious, and the chief of sinners, and suddenly rose to the very summit of virtue, and his former life proved no hindrance to him.

Whom the Lord loves, he chastens, and scourges every son whom he receives.

“Think of your aunt.”

These are they who taught men to make images and statues; who, in order that they might turn away the minds of men from the worship of the true God, cause the countenances of dead kings, fashioned and adorned with exquisite beauty, to be erected and consecrated, and assumed to themselves their names, as though [they were assuming] some characters.

For the stripes and correction of wisdom are in all time.

All he wants is money, and he goes away and has his fling.

Of works.

“So soon as that. I thought you were to stop till the 9th.”

I believe that these figures may be trusted, unless it be with reference to that sum of $l7,000,000, or 3,400,000 pounds, which is presumed to include the salaries of all general officers, with their staffs, and also the extra wages paid to soldiers in certain cases.

But these men will be called to account by God, as well for their devices against the faith as for the snares they have laid against me.

After that confession the use of all his members was restored to him, except the tongue alone; nevertheless he, being still under this affliction, made manifest by writing that he had, notwithstanding, learned the Creed, and still retained it in his memory; and so that frivolous loquacity which, as you know, blemished his natural kindliness, and made him, when he mocked Christians, exceedingly profane, was altogether destroyed in him.

And what says the voice? This is my beloved Son. Now if He is beloved, fear not thou, O Peter. For you ought indeed to know His power already, and to be fully assured touching His resurrection; but since you know not, at least from the voice of the Father take courage. For if God be mighty, as surely He is mighty, very evidently the Son is so likewise. Be not afraid then of those fearful things.

From the first day, he says, even until now.

Concerning these matters, however, we have in the preceding pages answered his statements.

CRAWLEY. It cannot be worse,—for you. For me it does not signify. Let me pass.

This the Prophet signified when he spoke thus, Break up your fallow ground, and sow not among thorns.

The rather, since cruelty lies not only in allowing the bad to do what they will, but in another thing too quite as much; to overlook, and leave uncared for, him who has done no wrong, but who is without cause or reason suffering ill. For tell me; were any one to gather together wicked men from all quarters, and arm them with swords, and bid them go about the whole city, and massacre all that came in their way, could there be anything more like a wild beast than he?

For that corruptible meat is necessary for this life, of which the Lord Himself says, Is not the soul more than meat?

“Some day I suppose he will,” said Fanny, blushing.

For I shall see the heavens, the works of Your fingers, the moon and the stars, which You have ordained.

“And clever, too,—very clever; but—”

[Isaiah 29:13] Yet it is true that there is one baptism, just as there is one Dove, though those who are not in the one communion of the Dove may yet have baptism in common.

But unless the Almighty God did deign to do this, no kind of righteousness, no form of wisdom could rescue any one from the devil's bondage and from the depths of eternal death.

It is also sometimes contrary to duty to fulfil a promise, or to keep an oath.

No further kind of punishment had been inflicted.

And yet nowhere does it appear that honey actually sprang forth for them out of the rock: what then is the meaning of the expression?

With this letter in his pocket he had gone down to Merle Park, determined to put an end to the Tringle affair in one way or the other. His duty, as he had planned it to himself, would not be altered by Imogene’s letter; but if that duty should become impracticable, why, then, it would be open to him to consider whatever Imogene might have to say to him.

For by the use of these distinctive terms does the Apostle make the difference between the several subjects clear and unmistakable, defining the subordinate nature to be spirits and fire, and distinguishing the supreme power by the name of Godhead.

“She is a good girl, Nina.”

But she was sufficiently intimate with the ladies to treat the baby and its mother with all the scorn of an upturned nose.

Then she had rebuked him, and had demanded from him how he had dared to treat her as he had done.

He lived in chambers on a flat in Westminster, and belonged to two excellent clubs.

Other classes of sins require time and occasion and co-operation to be committed; but the propensity to speak can sin when it likes.

So too He did not despise that sheep, though one only, which had strayed from the ninety and nine.

Perhaps you had better go now, and I’ll just say a word or two to my cousin before I leave her.

It may be asked, what distinction there is between man and son of man.

Was it not natural that she should be miserable when she saw her taken in hand by Mrs. Butler Cornbury, and made the heroine at her own party, to the detriment of her own daughters, by the fashionable lady in catching whom she had displayed so much unfortunate ingenuity?

“How little you know about girls! Of course I had to go with the one I—I—I—; well with the one I did not love down to the very soles of his feet.” And then there was the journey with the parrot. “I rather liked the bird. I don’t know that you said very much, but I think you would have said less if there had been no bird.”

To Andiberis.

No one had a right to tell her that any man was too good for her unless she herself should make pretensions to the man.

Here the heretics say, that he is speaking of the baptized.

And this, too, after the definition of Nicæa and the decree of Alexandria, in which the West has joined.

I pass over faults of diction which abound in every book you write.

This, truly, in a man who thinks it right to hide the truth by telling a lie, with what face can we blame, and dare to condemn what we teach?

She never would allow that Lucy was good-looking.

“And were there not many of the townspeople killed?” asked Agatha.

She is very young, and will, I hope, in time get over it.

Mount Pleasant had been a very large property.

To whose judgment of course then there is no trusting, and therefore must we fly within to conscience, and the sight of God.

If this is done, you may know that you will thus be in favour both with God and men.

“But it was your duty to have known him before you brought him here among them. Poor girl! how is she to be told?”

It is much the same thing when a witness is sternly told to speak louder.

Thus, if we observe wisely, irrational nature shows by agreeing together how great evil rational nature commits by disagreement; when the latter has lost by the exercise of reason what the former by natural instinct keeps.

[Matthew 2:13] After He had been crucified, and had risen again, an Angel brought the good tidings, and as a trustworthy servant said to the women, Go, tell His disciples that He is risen, and goes before you into Galilee; lo, I have told you : almost as if he had said, I have not neglected my command, I protest that I have told you; that if you disregard it, the blame may not be on me, but on those who disregard it.

A short time after he went out hunting, and the loving Lord made a prey of him as He did of Paul; for a sudden darkness enveloped him and forbade him to move from the spot; while those who were hunting with him enjoyed the customary sunlight, and he alone was bound with the fetters of blindness.

When the host had finished his own breakfast, he got up from his chair, and, standing on the rug, spoke such words of wisdom as were in him. It should be explained that Pickering, in his letter to Mr. Webb, had enclosed a copy of the Braes of Birken, another little poem in verse, and two of the London letters which he had written for the Salford Reformer. “Upon my word, Mr. Pickering, I do not know how to help you. I do not indeed.”

“Miss Roanoke, you can’t but understand what I mean.”

The bird that feeds upon your vitals would not have gorged himself with common flesh.

She had lived before the world for the last two years as a girl betrothed to a lover—before such of the world as she knew and as knew her; and now her lover was gone; not dismissed by her, but gone!

Had not all these thoughts, and plottings, which had been so heavy on his mind since that telegram had come, which had been so heavy on his soul, been her doing?

Lady Fawn was neither shocked nor displeased; nor was she disappointed; but a certain faint feeling of being illused by circumstances came over her. “Dear me;—the very first day!” she said.

Yea, and if we have friends, whoever they may be, and they should speak evil to any man or revile him, demand of them and exact satisfaction.

“ Mens sana in corpore sano.” What has a man to wish for but that?

She had declared that she would not pay the money till they were afloat, and then that she would not pay it till they had left Plymouth.

He first finds his own brother Simon, and says unto him, We have found the Messias, which is, being interpreted, the Christ. And he brought him to Jesus.

“We must ask him, mamma,” Lady Sarah said.

have urged me, Dexter, to follow the example of Tranquillus in giving a systematic account of ecclesiastical writers, and to do for our writers what he did for the illustrious men of letters among the Gentiles, namely, to briefly set before you all those who have published any memorable writing on the Holy Scriptures, from the time of our Lord's passion until the fourteenth year of the Emperor Theodosius.

3. Many religious persons are displeased that you are so long-suffering in regard to that shocking heresy, and that you suppose yourself able by such lenity to amend those who are attacking the Church's vitals. They believe that, while you are waiting for the penitence of a few, your action is fostering the boldness of abandoned men and making their party stronger. Farewell in Christ.

But these now say also, That God sends rain, count it to the Christians!

And if so be that you approve it, do ye also conduct yourselves in like manner in the Lord.

Once more the spiritual voice of John speaks, once more the Evangelist in his proclamation takes tender care for the hearing of those who are in childhood: not yet have we so much grown by the hearing of his first words as to hear of the Son, and yet remain firm without being moved from our footing by the influence of the wonted sense.

He knew how anxious his friend would be to see the Colonel’s letter.

For temperate harmonies are to be admitted; but we are to banish as far as possible from our robust mind those liquid harmonies, which, through pernicious arts in the modulations of tones, train to effeminacy and scurrility.

But now that the labour was over, a reaction had come upon him, and he went away from his house having hardly spoken a word to his wife after the speech which he made about his duty to his parish.

For the predictions of the prophets that had preceded the events were read, they were corroborated by powerful signs, and the truth was seen to be not contradictory to reason, but only different from customary ideas, so that at length the world embraced the faith it had furiously persecuted.

For who but he who is filled with charity, understands this?

The first extant letter written by Cicero after his Consulship was addressed to Pompey.

“I cannot go without a word,” he said, “but its only purport will be to tell you that I cannot as yet express any decided opinion in this matter.”

My carping critics must not insinuate that I am drawing on my imagination or decking Paula, like Æsop's crow, with the fine feathers of other birds.

So that the day comes unto destruction for them that sleep.

“You will come to me again, Ben,” she said.

You shall hear immediately, in order that you may also thoroughly discern the whole art of the devil.

Captain Glomax had got into the brook, and had then ridden down to the high road which ran here near to them and which, as he knew, ran within one field of the gorse.

Wherefore one ought not, in the desire for the glory that terminates in men, to be animated by self-love; but loving God, to become really holy with wisdom.

There was something almost of elation in his mode of speaking, and he said soft loving words, striving to comfort his wife.

“What’s Hecuba to him, or he to Hecuba?” asks Hamlet, when he finds himself stirred by the passion thrown into the bare recital of an old story by an itinerant player.

Regarding Clara as already one of his own family, he told her as much as he had told his mother.

Ah, if I could only blend the elements!

“And therefore I won’t touch a brick of it. It shall be my hair shirt, my fast day, my sacrifice of a broken heart, my little pet good work. It will enable me to take all the good things of the world that come in my way, and flatter myself that I am not self-indulgent. There is not a dissenter in Bullhampton will get so much out of the chapel as I will.”

Let her not take her food with others, that is, at her parents' table; lest she see dishes she may long for.

“Yes, I did. In those days the county returned four Conservatives. I cannot explain it all to you, but it is his duty to contest the county on the Liberal side.”

Now by these He signifies those who strive to come to the boundaries of virginity, and who strain every nerve to fulfil this love, acting virtuously and temperately, and who profess and boast that this is their aim; but who, making light of it, and being subdued by the changes of the world, come rather to be sketches of the shadowy image of virtue, than workers who represent the living truth itself.

While, then, he was engaged in these toilsome struggles for religion, she remained chaste and kept the marriage vow.

Such things never ruffled him, nor was he ever known to say that such a job wasn’t his work.

Thus Jesus Christ our Saviour is the only one from all eternity who has been acknowledged, even by those highest in the earth, not as a common king among men, but as a trite son of the universal God, and who has been worshipped as very God, and that rightly.

You see, then, that the smallest things coming from above have great power when they fall upon the earth.

In regard to strikes and the ballot he did in a certain way reason within himself and teach himself to believe that he had thought out those matters; but as to Polly he thought not at all.

In such case the male heir would have all if the marriage were no marriage;—but would have nothing if the marriage could be made good.

You may tell him from me,—for I cannot write to him myself,—that he may do whatever is best for him.

Mr. Bonteen’s speech was in no way remarkable.

And otherwise he ought now to have come, if he was about to come when the gifts ceased; for they have long since ceased.

For what is a friend but a partner in love, to whom you unite and attachest your soul, and with whom you blend so as to desire from being two to become one; to whom you entrust yourself as to a second self, from whom you fear nothing, and from whom you demand nothing dishonourable for the sake of your own advantage.

[Mark 11:23] For whenever any one shall say this in faith, believing that it comes to pass, and shall not doubt in his heart, then receives he the grace.

When he has seen that it is sin, and ceases to do the sin, which he did only because he was ignorant: such an one in truth would know his sin, to find it out, and hate it.

What sorrow is that?

Perhaps a sojourn in Ireland did as well as anything could towards assisting the young wife in her object of falling in love with her husband.

It was necessary, my beloved son, that I should obey your spiritual desire, which asked with most urgent petition for those divine teachings wherewith the Lord has condescended to teach and instruct us by the Holy Scriptures, that, being led away from the darkness of error, and enlightened by His pure and shining light, we may keep the way of life through the saving sacraments.

It was not long before Toff effected an entrance into the house, and brought away a report that very many things were missing.

So did I her. But as she has mastered her passion, so have I mine.

“Are you not? What else have I that I make equal to you?” Nina was supremely happy — triumphant in her happiness. She cared nothing for her aunt, nothing for Lotta Luxa and her threats; and very little at the present moment even for St Nicholas or St John of the Bridge. To be told by her lover that she was his own treasure, was sufficient to banish for the time all her miseries and all her fears.

We know now in what manner he had noticed her, and we know also whether she had been wretched.

“Take your answer, Mr Corporal,” said Cathelineau: “had Peter Berrier intended to have joined you he would not have troubled you to come across the square to fetch him. In one word, he will not go with you; if as you say, you intend to drag him across the marketplace, you will find that you have enough to do. Peter Berrier has many friends in St. Florent.”

“It’s overdue; ain’t it?”

Her feet and hands were exquisitely made, and she was very proud of them.

He had resolved that there should be no intimacy of any kind between his daughter and Ferdinand Lopez,—nothing more than the merest acquaintance; and there they were, talking together before his very eyes, with more evident signs of understanding each other than were exhibited by any other two persons at the table.

[Genesis 1:9] Appear, says He, not be made.

The remedies against the disease of covetousness.

“I want to adore him first,” said Mary.

Being fat and old and plethoric he could not be expected to use a stick and thrash the young lord.

He had already told her that Miss Crawley was to go to Framley parsonage, and that he thought that Mrs. Robarts was wrong to receive her at such a time.

And if those after him needed the baptism of Christ, much more would he need it.

These are they who have suffered on account of the law; but the others, and they who returned their branches green, and with offshoots, but without fruit, are they who have been afflicted on account of the law, but who have not suffered nor denied their law; and they who returned their branches green as they had received them, are the venerable, and the just, and they who have walked carefully in a pure heart, and have kept the commandments of the Lord.

“It would be better. If they take me to the prison, I will never see him again. His eyes would kill me. Do you ever watch him and see the pride that there is in his eye? He has never yet known what disgrace means; and now I, his mother, have brought him to this!”

The quarrymen and stone-cutters, who make the stones fitted for the temple, have some kinship to the ogdoad.

She was there when the rector started for London, and there when Mr.

So that I will say again that I know no site for such a set of buildings so happy as regards both beauty and grandeur.

Baptism how by the Son as well as by the Father.

And, [2 Corinthians 13:3] Since you seek a proof of Christ speaking in me.

And therefore it is impossible that they who err in the whole of their life should not be deceived also in religion; inasmuch as piety, if it kept its rule in the chief point, would maintain its course in others.

But if this be so, how is it that they call matter evil, which, from the beginning, was intermingled with the divine virtue?

So much I would say by way of preface. And I think I may also give in a few words the main incidents in my father’s life after he completed his autobiography.

“Good night, Duke.”

That pleasant abode to which she had long looked forward that she might have a welcome there in coming years should be among fields and trees, not in some narrow London street.

Everywhere we find these two Apostles in great harmony together.

“Somebody must write them,—and the writers will be paid.”

For I hear what ravages are being made in the Lord's flock.

For glaring madness it is, to be annoyed at the goodness of neighbors; for this is the act of mad and rabid dogs.

Let him hear, the centurion, not worthy that You should enter under his roof.

And Sir Henry swore too—with a light, indifferent oath, which, however, he had no intention of breaking in any part. He would live with her, and love her, and comfort her, and all that sort of thing;—and very well she would look at the top of his table, in black velvet.

At first the roar from the crowd was so great that it seemed that it was to be with him as it had been with the others.

I ask not what it is that philosophers say, but I would know what they do.

And what will you?

but if not,—if as at this time they both be very bad, the periods of relaxation are only those necessary for taking up the mail bags and catching the animals which are somewhere out on the veld, hobbled, and biding their time.

And the first voice which I heard [was], as it were, of a trumpet talking with me, saying, Come up hither.

And no wonder if the angels fight for you who war with the mode of life of angels.

If you think that this refers to believing without the use of judgment and reason, you are welcome to this blind blessedness.

At any rate, they could not take her income away from her.

Doubtless he was in some disquietude, who with groaning was calling the Sabbath to remembrance

For to begin with this assertion of yours that the Spirit filled with righteousness (justitia) what was created, and your attempts to prove this by the evidence of the Apostle, where he says that He appeared in the flesh, was justified in the Spirit, you make each statement in an unsound sense and wild spirit.

‘You are always so d–––– upsetting,’ said Dick, ‘that no one can speak to you.’ Then Dick turned away, and there was nothing more said about Mrs. Smith on that occasion.

And so they started, leaving the dead fox in the hands of Bean the gamekeeper.

“M. Larochejaquelin will be much here as long as this fighting lasts and M. Denot: we shall have plenty of brave knights coming to and fro to lay their trophies at your feet.”

“I told him a lie.”

For David and all the Prophets died, and the sepulchres of all are with you, but that Resurrection which has now taken place, has shown that the scope of these passages is Jesus.

But He would not, but having discharged His wrath upon the elements, them it was His will to save by clemency.

The Eustaces always had money, and the Bishop of Bobsborough was wealthy.

“No,” said Clara; “I have got no brother now.” Belton was looking full into her face, and saw that her eyes had become clouded with tears.

For why not the nose too?— so that, what was spoken, may be fulfilled: As an ear-ring in a swine's nose, so is beauty to a woman without discretion.

And the mere fact of Dionysius having made his defence about the matters on which these people harp suffices completely to condemn the Arians, and to demonstrate their malignity.

“I suppose they will,” said Denot moodily. “At any rate, they deserve no protection at my hands.”

Even if this were his purpose he would be malicious enough, for both wishing to aggravate his rival's obloquy by permitting His (evil) works to be done, and by keeping the world harrassed by the wrong.

A great council having met in Illyricum, after much discussion concerning the word of salvation, the thrice blessed bishops have declared that the Trinity of Father, Son, and Holy Ghost is of one substance.

How could she do less for him than he was so anxious to do for her?

“But I fear I never have come to think of it,” said the Marchesa.

Have you stayed at the mountains?

Lady Rowley, in answer to this, could only say that she would consult her husband.

But go on, my dear.” Then she told also how the lover had come down, or had gone up, through the rafters, and the old man smiled.

He fought a little, but only a little, and then the English were in possession.

But who considers him worthy thus to judge every one?

She had been weak, foolish, irresolute,—and had finally acted with false judgement.

“Not in particular. Is it true the brothers of those poor fellows I took up at Loch Sheen are here tonight?”

And in this way, though it is said of the Mosaic law that the law brought nothing to perfection, [Hebrews 7:19] we read that some of the saints in the Old Testament were perfect because they went beyond the commands of the law and lived under the perfection of the Gospel: Knowing that the law is not appointed for the righteous but for the unrighteous and disobedient, for the ungodly and sinners, for the wicked and defiled, etc.

These men were all married, and were doing well in the world, living in houses better than their father’s, and spending a great deal more money.

Arkansas 331,710 109,065 440,775

May it not be, that since the fulfilling of the law is that love wherewith we love God and our neighbour, on which commandments of love hang all the law and the prophets, [Matthew 22:40] he is justly held to be guilty of all who violates that on which all hang?

Again, what is adultery?

Let us not then, O my soul, let us not give in to the Evil One; but putting on the whole armour of God, which is our protection, let us have the breastplate of righteousness, and your feet shod with the preparation of the Gospel (of peace).

Could the earth with such a wide extent be lighted up entirely in one moment if an immense disc were not pouring forth its light over it?

By no means; on the contrary (I know that), bonds and afflictions await me.

[Matthew 19:21] He indeed went away sorrowful, slighting what was perfect, choosing what was imperfect.

Chapter 7. Innocent the Bishop of the Presbytery of Rome. He sent an Embassy to Alaric. Jovius, Prefect of Italy. Embassy dispatched to the Emperor. Events concerning Alaric.

The archdeacon read the three or four first lines in silence,—and then he burst out. “He has, has he? Then, by heavens—”

In short, in Cicero, Cotta thus speaks to Lucilius: You know, Balbus, what is the opinion of Cotta, what the opinion of the pontiff.

But if you cannot come, at any rate do not let yourself be previously retained by the other side, or sell for a small gain the freedom which we know from everybody's testimony has always characterized you.

No doubt general opinion was adverse to poor Phineas Finn, but he was not without his party in the matter.

The acclamations of the people, and the voice of flattery, he reckons rather troublesome than pleasing, because of the steady constancy of his character, and genuine discipline of his mind.

“It seems that he does spend money faster than he can get it.”

if you have money, many are able to take away the joy that comes of your wealth; as, for instance, a thief, by digging through the wall; a servant by carrying off what was entrusted to him; an emperor by confiscation; and the envious man by contumely.

For if after we have done all, we ought to call ourselves unprofitable; of what forgiveness can he be worthy who, when no reason presses, exalts himself and boasts?

Neither His power nor His Godhead is amazed, but His soul; He is amazed by consequence of having taken human infirmity upon Him.

“Will you be axing him, thin?”

“Yes; no,” said the countess. “That is, I will write a note to you if it be necessary. Good morning.”

But you may ask, How is it then that in their books some false views occur?

So meditating,—but grieving that he should be driven at such a moment to have his mind forcibly filled with such matters,—still hearing the chapel bell, which in his ears drowned the sound from his own modest belfry, and altogether doubtful as to what step he would take, he entered his own church.

People will talk; all the world will be talking about it before long.

1 Corinthians 10:32

And they said thus to it, Arise, devour.

And, Roger;—what is to be done about Hetta?” Hetta herself had retreated, leaving Roger and her mother alone together, feeling sure that there would be questions asked and answered in her absence respecting Mrs Hurtle, which her presence would prevent.

I trust that I may yet live to return among you, and to render you an account of what I have done for you and for the cause in Europe.” Here I sat down, and was greeted by the deafening applause of the audience; and I did feel at the moment that I had somewhat got the better of Sir Ferdinando.

I think I am not wrong in refusing to allow a runaway to stray farther.

From the east and the west, from the north and the sea [Psalm 106:3].

And since it is judged to be a kind of obsequiousness to imitate the customs and vices of a king, all men laid aside piety, lest, if they should live piously, they might seem to upbraid the wickedness of the king.

But Marie did not come down.

Of course he made difficulties, and spoke of the thing as being beyond the bounds of probability.

Yet idolatry used to be practised, not under that name, but in that function; for even at this day it can be practised outside a temple, and without an idol.

“None on earth; and the most of it is entailed, too; not that Hugh would leave an acre away from the title. I’m as safe as wax as far as that is concerned. I don’t suppose he ever borrowed a shilling or mortgaged an acre in his life.”

But if any one were to turn his attention to the meaning of the legislator, and to the constitution which he established, and were to examine the various points relating to him, and compare them with the present method of worship among other nations, there are none which he would admire to a greater degree; because, so far as can be accomplished among mortals, everything that was not of advantage to the human race was withheld from them, and only those things which are useful bestowed.

The Egyptian or Chaldæan prophets, and the other writers, should have been able accurately to tell, if at least they spoke by a divine and pure spirit, and spoke truth in all that was uttered by them; and they should have announced not only things past or present, but also those that were to come upon the world.

And in what do these differ from Jewish doctrines?

But neither, say they is theft an evil; for it takes away what one does not possess from another who has it.

Since the Law, therefore, enjoined that the seventh day should be spent in rest from carnal things and devoted to spiritual things, it was a mystic indication to the true Israelite who had a mind to see God, that he should through all time offer himself to God and rise higher than carnal things.

Strengthen, O God, that which You have wrought in us: showing that it is not enough for the beginning of our salvation to be granted by the gift and grace of God, unless it has been continued and ended by the same pity and continual help from Him.

Of which one recalling his thought, as we read in the Psalms, says, Shall God forget to be gracious?

What we want is, I think, employment, — mental employment and material employment also, — for women whose circumstances do not require them to earn their daily bread.

Jerusalem

“Mary,” said her father, “leave us for a moment.” Then Mary retired, with a very saddened air. “Do you understand, George, what it was that your brother said to me?”

Neither Sir Gregory nor his rival were men likely to give way, and it soon appeared manifest to the powers that be, that something must be done.

But the woman who in advanced life and of more mature age secretly crept in among us when we were sacrificing, received not food, but a sword for herself; and as if taking some deadly poison into her jaws and body, began presently to be tortured, and to become stiffened with frenzy; and suffering the misery no longer of persecution, but of her crime, shivering and trembling, she fell down.

And from this he concludes that theurgy is a craft which accomplishes not only good but evil among gods and men; and that the gods also have passions, and are perturbed and agitated by the emotions which Apuleius attributed to demons and men, but from which he preserved the gods by that sublimity of residence, which, in common with Plato, he accorded to them.

It is the same with a professional writer of books.

If you cannot endure to hear me, let us break up and go away.

But even when in his prayer he confesses the uncleanness of all sinners, he embraces in his general supplication not only the mass of the wicked but also of the good, saying: Behold You are angry, and we have sinned: in them we have been always, and we shall be saved.

He was now dragged there to a Sunday dinner; and he knew that he should often be dragged there,—that he could not avoid such draggings.

But if they did not plainly say this, namely, God is able to deliver us; but if he deliver us not, for our sin's sake He will not deliver us; wonder not at it.

But when she found that Tribbledale’s statement as to the £160 was true, and when she bethought herself that Crocker would probably be dismissed sooner or later, then she determined to be firm.

But they approach Him with greater honour, saying, Will You at this time restore again the kingdom, as being now already fallen.

“Payments for Pickering!” said Melmotte, assuming an air of unimportant doubt,—of doubt as though the thing were of no real moment. “Haven’t they been made?”

The third time also he denied Him, Jesus turned and looked, and then he wept most bitterly.

“Yes; Lady Laura was at home; and alone.” He was shown up into the drawing-room, and there he found Lady Laura waiting for her husband.

Wherefore, let us not regard this point, that we ourselves have been set free from this sin; but until we have delivered others from it, let us not desist; and let every one offer to God ten friends whom he has corrected; whether you have servants, or apprentices: or if you have neither servants, nor apprentices, you have friends; these do thou reform.

Whoever has the least intelligence will confess that God is good, righteous, wise, true, helpful, not the cause of evils, free from passion, and everything of that kind. And if the righteous be better than the unrighteous, and unrighteousness be abominable to them, God, being righteous, rejoices in righteousness, and unrighteousness is hateful to Him, being opposed and hostile to righteousness. Therefore God is not the author of unrighteousness.

Or received any revenue from this dignity?

She did think that her father was making an ass of himself, but she did not like to be told of it.

Then said Simon: [We cannot even understand this that you say, if there is anything in the power of the will.]

“I suppose it was done to tie me the faster,” he said to himself, as he pulled out the ends of his cravat.

Though her grief was very bitter, though her sorrow was quite sincere, she could not keep herself from thinking of those words.

You shall wash me, and I shall be whiter than the snow.

It is a stipend neither picturesque, nor time-honoured, nor feudal, for Hogglestock takes rank only as a perpetual curacy.

There is reason to believe that there was collected by him, no doubt with the aid of his secretaries, a large body of notes which were known as the Ephemerides of Caesar,—jottings down, as we may say, taken from day to day.

And certainly they were idols and demons to whom she prayed that she and hers might not be given over.

And he reasoned in the synagogue every sabbath, and persuaded the Jews and the Greeks.

“I think it would be most prudent to decline.”

It was rarely indeed that he was disturbed by the presence of any visitor.

“And she is innocent,” said Alice, rising from her chair, as though she might thus give emphasis to words which she hardly dared to speak above a whisper. “She is innocent. Who accuses her of guilt? You ask me a question on his behalf—”

Consequently the constructor of this wall must also be some one of a capacity like that: for the wall marks the boundaries of these two parties, just as among people who dwell in the rural parts a stone is usually taken to mark off the portion of each several party; which custom, however, would afford a better apprehension of the case were we to take the division to refer specially to the marking out of an inheritance failing to brothers.

Of bed, and rest, and sleep he had had no thought.

And since he was present to himself, he could not possibly remember himself, unless memory pertained to things present.

Who but the priests and Pharisees who did not build a sure building, but were overthrowing everything that he was building, as is written in Ezekiel the Prophet:— He was building a wall of partition, but they were shaking it, that it might fall.

(b) And has determined the times appointed, and the bounds of their habitation, that they should seek God, if haply they might feel after Him and find Him.

For my part, said Avida, I wish to learn; but I began first of all to question my brethren here, because I was too bashful to ask you.

To be deceived is the common lot of both layman and bishop.

: (1) who is the true bishop of the three claimants of the see of Antioch, and (2) which is the correct terminology, to speak of three hypostases in the Godhead, or of one?

It was all the fault of Honyman,—of Honyman who never was firm on any matter.

She then started up with a pious fear and trembling; and, although I had not yet been baptized, she feared those crooked ways in which they walk who turn their back to You, and not their face.

Moreover, in paying you the debt of salutation which is due to you, I declare to you that I exult with great joy from knowing that you labour assiduously against the barkings of heretics; and I implore Almighty God that He would aid your Blessedness with His protection, so as through your tongue to uproot every root of bitterness from the bosom of holy Church, lest it should germinate again to the hindrance of many, and through it many should be defiled.

It was cruel, very cruel, that such a moment should not have been made happy to her by his joy.

For God has not given us the spirit of fear, but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind: he calls a healthy state of the soul a sound mind, or it may mean sobriety of mind, or else a sobering of the mind, that we may be sober-minded, and that if any evil befall us, it may sober us, and cut off superfluities.

Such had been the forms in Rome, in which, though the votes of the people were the source of all power, the votes hardly went further than the selection of this or that oligarch.

Their thought is obscured by the rhetorical mud, which is so thick that one can hardly see beyond any clue to interpret them.

“Do not be hard to her, Oswald.”

The whole country would rise against him when informed, in its ignorance, of the contemplated intention.

Eccles. xi. 19. I am the most foolish of all men. This is said by Christ in the person of humanity. So

It doesn’t signify how vulgar he is, or how insolent, or how exacting.

“Cannot I, indeed, citizen General?” said Westerman, rising from his seat and coming into the middle of the room. “I do then utterly despise, scorn, and abominate him, and all such as him. I can conceive nothing in human form more deplorably low, more pitiably degraded, than such a poor subservient slave as he was.”

Was ever the Master of a hunt treated in such a way!

If a man were violently to attack you, and you were to strike him on the head and kill him, you would be justified.

Down in Scotland

What is, with the hands?

Therefore even after their death they may possibly do the greatest good to the governed.

In some degree he begrudged the Doctor his manliness.

On the Thursday she stayed at home and wrote various letters.

Orth.— To them that are initiated in divine things the intention is plain.

Whoever examines into this will find that Faustus has made either an imprudent mistake or an impudent misrepresentation.

His father had been a tradesman at Cambridge, and in this way Jones had become known to Mr Grey.

I Promised to write of the rise, progress, and appointed end of the two cities, one of which is God's, the other this world's, in which, so far as mankind is concerned, the former is now a stranger.

They have been filled with swine's flesh.

I am righteous all my days, with nought to repent: I am he that rescues from you the sons of men.— 8.

I was with him when the strong woman from the hospital, though she could not understand his words, almost fainted at what she saw and heard.

His fidelity and extremely pure perception of the sense of Scripture no opponent even has ever ventured to impugn.

Nay, but how was He to bring you, slumbering and sleeping, and in love with all iniquity, and living delicately, and pampering yourself; how was He to bring you up to heaven?

Beatrice did not refuse, but she did not appear too willing to comply. She stood silent, leaning against the end of a sofa and twisting her bonnet-strings in her hand.

Yea, unto age, and age of age: he shows what he meant by alway.

I have nothing to say against this, and, as a whole, believe that the boast is true.

For myself, I never turn a key anywhere, and no one ever purloins from me even a handkerchief.

“You’ve no right to say that,” said Florian. “It’s just because I’ve turned Catholic, and it’s all your spite.” But the boy blushed ruby red, and the colour told its own story.

“So men think when this or that other man is accused of running away in battle or the like. Nobody will charge you with cowardice of that kind. But there is moral cowardice as well as physical.”

Each several case must be judged on its own merits and not by a reference to the persons concerned.

The case should be immediately taken out of the hands of Messrs. Norton and Flick.

[Luke 16:9] Come for the mystical Seal, that you may be easily recognised by the Master; be numbered among the holy and spiritual flock of Christ, to be set apart on His right hand, and inherit the life prepared for you.

Yet I arrived at the place whither I was bent, though by a roundabout route; and when I heard of the ambush, I congratulated myself on my mistake, and gave thanks to God for it.

But Sir Thomas was again very liberal, and sent down as his contribution to the wedding presents the very necklace which Ayala had refused from her cousin Tom.

“Well, no; not the branch.”

For what if he does not choke us as he did him, still he strangles us in some other way by wicked works.

For it is not fit that believing women should be maintained by unbelievers, lest they should seem to stand in need of them.

And [24] verily say I unto you, They have received their reward.

After a law suit, during which an interdict was pronounced forbidding its exportation or sale, it made its way to the establishment of Messrs. Hunt and Rosskill I find the story told with slight variation by different persons.

Chapter 40.— An Argument Anticipated.

Already you are cleaving to Him: find something better, and He shall give it you.

“To-day!” shouted Barry.

For himself it did not much matter what became of him; but he began to doubt whether for Mary’s sake it would not be well that they should be separated.

Even Montague did not beguile himself into an idea that he was really a director in a company to be employed in the making and working of a railway.

We bring out our bottle or two of the best, that has been put by for a gala day, and so we make his heart glad.

“But even though you have not, yet I must excuse myself to you,” she said with energy, bending forward from her sofa towards him. “Do you think that I do not know the difference?”

Not a second God, but one God with the Father through similarity of essence.

I think then that the Epistle to Timothy was written after this; and when he was now come to the very end of his life, for there he says, for I am already being offered [2 Timothy 4:6 this is later however than that to the Philippians, for in that Epistle he was just entering upon his imprisonment at Rome.

Such a sum would be nothing to her father.

Mrs. Crawley had not seen her cousin since her marriage,—as indeed she had seen none of her relations, having been estranged from them by the singular bearing of her husband.

Therefore He says, there shall be tribulation such as never was, nor shall be.

You mustn’t stick in the mud, you know.

‘I suppose I do,’ she answered.

Let the matter go on.

The rest of the season might certainly be done without assistance from him.

In our own county of Hippo, which the barbarians have not yet touched, the ravages of the Donatist clergy and Circumcelliones make such havoc in our churches, that perhaps the cruelties of barbarians would be light in comparison.

Sometimes also they pretend to flee before adjurations not made in the name of God, that they may deceive men, and destroy them whom they will.

Might it not be best for her happiness that he should do so?

At the same time, because this blessing is nothing else than the peace which passes all understanding, [Philippians 4:7] even when we are asking it in our prayers, we know not what to pray for as we ought.

Again, in the Ctimenus of Euripides:—

That is not now the object of our research; we only wish to prove that its body differs from the light which makes it shine.

“Well, then, Corney,” answered Jack, with Pat Brady’s pipe in his mouth, “av Paddy had sich a thrifle about then, I disremember it entirely; but shure, why wouldn’t he? He’d hardly be so far as Carrick, in sich good company too, without a little change in his pocket.”

At eight o’clock Fanny took the old man his breakfast to the mill, while Mrs. Brattle waited on Carry, as though she had deserved all the good things which a mother could do for a child.

For there are many of what are called sophisms, inferences in reasoning that are false, and yet so close an imitation of the true, as to deceive not only dull people, but clever men too, when they are not on their guard.

[Sirach 30:24] He then who has not compassion on his own soul that he may please God, how can he be said to do almsdeeds proportioned to his sins?

Thus, see by degrees how very high he mounts up.

Then they had hired the little carriage, and Michel Voss had slept again.

And now that we are about to bring this book to a conclusion, we think it proper to do on this subject of Original Sin what we did before in our treatise On Grace, — adduce in evidence against the injurious talk of these persons that servant of God, the Archbishop Ambrose, whose faith is proclaimed by Pelagius to be the most perfect among the writers of the Latin Church; for grace is more especially honoured in doing away with original sin.

XVII. Martin Kelly’s Courtship

When, however, this discourse was, according to the ability and zeal of each, made known abroad by those who had heard it, it found many opponents.

And when they pretend to disapprove of and give up all their definitions to facilitate evasion through their complete art of deception, unless their meaning is detected, they make exception of the dogma that the grace of God is given according to the merits of the recipient.

In the midst of them what else should we do but recall our faults to mind, and give thanks to Almighty God?

Will you then let me play a little upon this word Father, for your example encourages me to be so bold?

That would be terrible, you know.” And Miss Demolines shook her head sadly.

For it is said, he that has built up a house, and then sees his building pulled down, will have less spirit for building again.

What reason is there that we should be considered by you brutish, as it were, and stupid, if we have yielded and given ourselves up to God our deliverer, because of these fears?

In terms of strongest censure, therefore, Aristophanes in the Thesmophoriazousæ exhibits the whole array of female ornament in a catalogue:—

“You think it would be my duty to—”

For if this were the case, surely their statues and their pictures would never be made with representations of their vices and crimes.

“Do find it, for papa’s sake; there’s a good fellow. He will be so wretched without his money. I heard him say that he had only two pounds in his purse.”

“And so would she be in defending me. Circumstances threw us together and made us friends. Her father and her brother were my friends. I happened to be of service to her husband. We belonged to the same party. And therefore—because she has been unfortunate in her marriage—people tell lies of her.”

What He intends then by the words is this; The action has not natural possibility, that He should speak one set of words, and I should utter another.

This envelope bears one only.

And that you may not suspect any such thing, he has added,

As I passed along the road I took every opportunity that came in my way of entering the houses of the Dutch.

You do not know me then.” He had nothing further to say, and it suited her to remain silent for the moment, while she dried her eyes, and recovered her composure, and prepared herself to carry on the battle with a smile.

Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed You.

Your next objection is, that in this writing Daniel is said to have been seized by the Spirit, and to have cried out that the sentence was unjust; while in that writing of his which is universally received he is represented as prophesying in quite another manner, by visions and dreams, and an angel appearing to him, but never by prophetic inspiration.

“Shure, Captain, I wouldn’t be telling yer honour a lie; and they do be saying that the Captain one time was as fine a man as a woman ever sot eyes on;—and why not, seeing what kind the young lady is, God bless her!” If it were true that Kate’s father had “turned up,” such an advent might very naturally alter Neville’s plans.

“And as to what you were saying, Fanny, as to having nothing to support the title, a foreign title in that way is not like one here at home. Here it must be supported.”

Let the soul only meditate some design, the face gives the indication— the face being the mirror of all our intentions.

But how do they know whether he hung himself from wood or from stone?

The one lives on the esteem and applause of men, the other glories in injuries offered to it, and in persecutions.

There were some of our religion whose faith was less established, or who were less learned or less cautious, who rent the unity and divided the Church.

“If you will not answer me, I must tell you that I shall be driven in the execution of my duty to obtain a search-warrant, in order that they may be placed in proper custody. They are not your property, and must be taken out of your hands.”

But at Calama, where these relics have been for a longer time, and where more of the miracles were narrated for public information, there are incomparably more.

She must be taught the great importance of money,—not in a griping, hard-fisted, prosaic spirit; but that she might participate in that feeling of his own which had in it so much that was grand, so much that was delightful, so much that was picturesque.

[Matthew 22:37-40] This he seems to have promised, when he said, Yea, I shall keep it with my whole heart.

The bishop therefore, while Eutropius trembling with fear lay under the table of the altar, mounting the pulpit from which he was accustomed to address the people in order to be the more distinctly heard, uttered an invective against him: wherefore he seemed to create greater displeasure in some, as he not only denied compassion to the unfortunate, but added insult to cruelty.

He did not suppose that she thought he meant to marry her.

How, then, does Power assert, as it were, under oath: Verily, verily I say unto you, which means: Of a truth, of a truth, I tell you?

Or when the people, after the serious and long-continued disturbances at Rome, at last plundered the city and withdrew to Janiculus; a danger so grave, that Hortensius was created dictator,— an office which they had recourse to only in extreme emergencies; and he, having brought back the people, died while yet he retained his office—an event without precedent in the case of any dictator, and which was a shame to those gods who had now Æsculapius among them?

You say also, that if there be anything in your writings which has displeased me, and which I would wish to correct, you are ready to receive my criticism as a brother; and you not only assure me that you would rejoice in such proof of my goodwill toward you, but you earnestly ask me to do this.

For the blind man, afflicted and weary, He opened his eyes and he saw the light.

Whence is it of no consequence if, in this case, under the ordinary expression of a day, it is only a year that in this place is implied, because that which is the greater ought to be fuller in meaning.

“Not if they’re your own.”

The chosen martyrs did battle against error,

“I hate discussing the relative merits of the two countries,” said I; “and I especially hate to discuss them with you. You always begin as though you meant to be fair, and end by an amount of unfairness, that—that “

Hence it was moreover that one said, Your name is as ointment poured forth.

For suppose a place where food cannot be purchased: the beggar will die of starvation, while you, in your wisdom and benevolence, have more mercy on a cucumber than on a human being!

Here too he gives another reason for sending so late to them, not from any remissness, but he kept Timothy because he had no one else, (for, as he had written, he had no one likeminded,) and Epaphroditus because of his sickness.

“A man with your position, Lord Fawn, and your talents and genius for business, can never be poor.”

It is rapid, but has not the beautifully bright color of some European rivers—of the Rhine, for instance, and the Rhone.

Phineas could not find another moment in which to speak to her. Though he spent the evening with her, and stood over her as she sang at the Earl’s request, and pressed her hand as she went to bed, and was up to see her start in the morning, he could not draw from her either a word or a look.

[Matthew 8:8, 10] And our Lord was astonished at his faith, and according to his faith it happened to him.

Her slow motions were adapted to heavy wraps, and however she might procure her large sealskin jacket she graced it well when she had it.

Marcellus had many friends, and it seems that a public effort was made to obtain for him permission to come back to Rome.

He was obliged to abandon that idea, and content himself with a resolve to see the Quaker in the City on the next morning.

Do we not all of us feel assured by the intense nationality of an American that he will not desert his nation in the hour of her need?

“Bother the young foals!” said I.

They had all counted on having much to do during the short hours of this one last day; on being hurried and pressed, so as to be hardly able to get through their task; but instead of this their work was soon done, and the minutes hung heavy on their hands.

This let us meditate on, beloved brethren, let this be our hope, this our consolation.

His wife had now gone from him, and declared positively to her son-in-law that no earthly consideration should ever induce her to go back again;—”not if I were to starve!” she said.

It has come to our knowledge that in the place within the province of Sardinia called Phausiana it is said to have been once the custom to ordain a bishop; but that, through stress of circumstances, the custom has for long fallen into disuse.

Why terror?

Nevertheless when he had even thus failed to persuade him, and could have laid hands on him, he again chose rather to be an exile from his country and to sojourn in a strange land, and suffer distress every day, in procuring necessary food than to remain at home and vex his adversary.

And as for talking about my wine, of course I talk to a man about what he understands.

And she felt herself compelled to give way to people whom, with all her heart, she hated.

“I wonder when he’ll come.” She had watched her mother’s figure disappear along the lane, and had plucked a flower or two to pieces before she returned within the house.

At last the bishop, who, of all the congregation, had been most surprised, and whose hair almost stood on end with terror, gave the blessing in a manner not at all equal to that in which he had long been practising it in his own study, and the congregation was free to go their way.

When you threw yourself the other day into a well, in order to bring death upon yourself, you did so no doubt with your free will.

And he is so happy that you should be here.

“Yes, dear, it is the Inn.”

[Tobit 12:8] Let each one do what she can; what one cannot herself do, she does by another who can do it, if she loves in another that which personal inability alone hinders her from doing; wherefore let her who can do less not keep back the one who can do more, and let her who can do more not urge unduly her who can do less.

He had spoken above of flattery, showing that he did not flatter, that he did not seek glory.

Such was the law of Britannula on the subject.

But, at any rate, now there is peace.

“Altogether useless, Sir Marmaduke,—except just for the fun of the thing.”

“It did not suit at all,” said Mr. Burnaby. “Indeed it was no index. An index should comprise no more than words and figures. Your index conveyed opinions, and almost criticism.”

All this my exceeding love has induced me to say to you, since I think that your joy is my gain, and your sadness my loss.

Whence loose?

He could only seem to have spoken them in this sense, if, when remarking their unfaithfulness to the Creator and not to mammon, He had drawn some distinctions between the Creator (in his manner of mentioning Him) and the rival god— how that the latter would not commit his own truth to those who were unfaithful to the Creator.

It may be as well to say here what there may be to be said as to Cicero’s poetry generally.

And that not in this [our] life only, but also in the Preaching itself.

For many become feeble in praying, and in the newness of their own conversion pray fervently, afterwards feebly, afterwards coldly, afterwards negligently: as if they have become secure.

But the Pelasgians also repudiate the gods in Thrace, while the Thracians know not those of Thebes.

“I don’t feel at all sure of that.”

Indeed there is no branch of the Common Law in which he was not regarded as great and powerful, though perhaps his proficiency in damaging the general characters of his opponents has been recognised as his especial forte.

The one is entered as it were into a waveless harbor, and lives an untroubled life, and far removed from every storm; while the other is ever on the ocean, and lives out at sea in the very midst of the ocean, battling with billows without number.

But, lo, let all men allow this to the servants of God, that when they will they should go forth into their fields, and thence depart fearless and refreshed: as it was ordered to the people Israel by the law, that none should lay hands on a thief in his fields, unless he wanted to carry any thing away with him from thence; for if he laid hands on nothing but what he had eaten, they would let him go away free and unpunished.

“You can read Lady Albury’s letter.”

Therefore the indulgent Peter consented, saying, When you leave the boat, do not go many of you together to see the things that you desire to see; for I do not wish that the attention of the inhabitants should be turned to you.

Hence, unconscious of responsibility, as destined to be annihilated by death, they lived a life unworthy of the name, in the practice of actions deserving a thousand deaths.

Now the Churches which are multiplying throughout the world are, as it were, sacred seminaries of public instruction, in which this sound morality is inculcated and learned, and in which, above all, men are taught the worship due to the true and faithful God, who not only commands men to attempt, but also gives grace to perform, all those things by which the soul of man is furnished and fitted for fellowship with God, and for dwelling in the eternal heavenly kingdom.

“But I looked fierce enough too myself, I dare say; so we’ll say nothing more about that; will we? But now, about this good man of yours?”

For he both checks heat by heat, by laying on a greater load; and subdues inflammation by leaving thirst unappeased, by tormenting rather; and contracts the superabundance of bile by every bitter little draught, and stops hemorrhage by opening a veinlet in addition.

To Mr. Dosett was deputed the agreeable task of telling Ayala on the next evening what was to befall her. If anything agreeable was to be done in that sombre house it was always deputed to the master.

It would not be worth the while of any woman to abstain from having some Mr Rubb or the like, and from being the lawful mother of children in the Rubb and Mackenzie line of life, for the sake of such exceptional rank as was to be maintained by associating with the Stumfoldians.

The pleasant king of the gods and the courtly chief of the giants could shake hands with each other in any house with the greatest pleasure; but men were to meet who, in reference to each other, could shake nothing but their heads or their fists.

For better it is that he should amend through being reproached here, than that he should be put to shame, and punished, in the presence of the whole assembled universe, on that Day, when our sins shall be revealed to the eyes of all men!

On this account the blessed Paul, when giving them the best counsel, said, Are you called, being a servant?

And therefore we should always follow the footsteps of the Elders with the utmost care, and bring to them everything which rises in our hearts, by removing the veil of shame.

If now we must receive our own Generation by faith, what do they deserve who are busy with their reasonings about that of the Only-Begotten?

At the present moment it is altogether at the disposal of the Crown.

But what is, Depart from evil?

I propose to leave it to him.

Two or three voices were heard calling upon the Speaker for protection.

Rightly, therefore, says he, As much as lies in you.

You are suffering for yourself, the creation for you.

That the thing will be done by degrees I do not at all doubt, and do not think that there is just cause of dissatisfaction at the rate of the present progress.

Then he explained to them, as clearly as he was able, what the bishop had done, what the commission had done, and what he had done himself.

I was then becoming alive to the blighted ambition of my father’s life, and becoming alive also to the violence of the strain which my mother was enduring.

And of Mrs. Jay he thought that he knew that she was puritanical, stiff, and severe.

They are more worthless than public hangmen; more audacious than all other heretics.

The tailor had suggested to the mother that she should at once make the proposition known to Lady Anna, but the Countess felt that one other word was necessary as her old friend left her.

“No, my love. He looks it, but he’s only fifty. A man at fifty is supposed to be young enough to marry. There’s a nephew who has been brought up as his heir; that’s the hard part of it. And the nephew is mixed up in some way with the Scarboroughs.”

109. So, then, the Father is holy, the Son is holy, and the Spirit is holy, but they are not three Holies; for there is one Holy God, one Lord. For the true holiness is one, as the true Godhead is one, as that true holiness belonging to the Divine Nature is one.

Chapter 10 Of the Method in Which We Can Reconcile the Statement Which is Made by Matthew, Mark, and Luke, to the Effect that Another Person Was Pressed into the Service of Carrying the Cross of Jesus, with that Given by John, Who Says that Jesus Bore It Himself.

I know indeed that some take the entrusted not of the Jews, but of the oracles, as much as to say, the Law was believed in.

For that a being who in ages past was in a quiescent state, not caring to communicate any knowledge of himself by any work all the while, should come after so long a time to entertain a concern for man's salvation, of course by his own will,— did he not by this very fact become susceptible of the impulse of a new volition, so as palpably to be open to all other emotions?

Now this did disturb Lady Lufton not a little.

For how in that case would the words hold good, Who enters into the house of a strong one to spoil his goods, unless first he shall have bound the strong one?

The room in which her bed was laid was that very room in which her sin had been committed.

He that speaks in tongue edifies himself.

“But papa!”

You know that I became engaged to Miss Burton soon after your own marriage. I feel now that I should have told you this when we first met; but yet, had I done so, it would have seemed as though I told it with a special object. I don’t know whether I make myself understood in this. I can only hope that I do so.

Hardly any popular author except myself thinks of it.” The language used should be as ready and as efficient a conductor of the mind of the writer to the mind of the reader as is the electric spark which passes from one battery to another battery.

“It is intolerable to me,” he said, “that I should be impeded in my free action by the interference and accusations of such an ass as that.” But the question was one on which his wife felt herself to be so strong that she would not yield, either to his logic or to his anger.

Although there was more than one immediate cause for bitterness between them, Roger loved Paul Montague well and could not bear with patience the appearance of his friend’s name on such a list.

Quod si hoc ipsum, an ducenda sit uxor.

Thus, even when that Physician commands one to die, He drives out the lethargy of death.

It turned out that Kantwise had received his information from Dockwrath; but nevertheless, there was that in his manner, and in the nature of the story as it was told to them, that did produce belief. Moulder for a long time held out, but it became clear at last that even he was shaken; and now, even Kenneby acknowledged his conviction that the signature to the will was not his own.

Thus then He will have us disregard our own body, so that whether men scourge, or banish, or burn, or whatever they do, we may not spare it.

“Dear Nina,” he said.

All this was very hard!

For our forefathers built the Churches for us, not just to bring us together from our private houses and show us one to another: since this could have been done also in a market-place, and in baths, and in a public procession:— but to bring together learners and teachers, and make the one better by means of the other.

She did not press the matter any further then, but what she had said was not thrown away. “Your wife is almost right about that man,” the elder Duke said to the younger.

Or it may, indeed, be communicated by letter.

That he might inform his princes like himself, and teach his old men wisdom [Psalm 104:22].

Had they not seen Him after He was risen, what was there sufficient to draw them out unto this war?

To save your walking a little way, does he perish with hunger?

“In supposing what?”

“I’ll not forget it;” and then he remained silent for a minute. What an opportunity this was for him to lose! Colligan so evidently wished to be bribed—so clearly showed what the price was which was to purchase him. But still he could not ask the fatal question.

Studious observers have remarked that the hedgehog makes an opening at the two extremities of his hole.

Hugh Stanbury would be the best.

When He came to us, He had nothing of ours, and also we had nothing of His, though the two natures were His and His Father's.

What right had she to expect such welcome?

yes; And having bound Him, they led Him away as a present to the king of Jarim.

“And it ain’t for no pleasure as I’m agoing now. Nobody ‘ll s’pect that of me. I’d liever let the millstone come on my foot.”

And with the prophet are to be classed those who rejoiced that that which they knew was to come had actually come—as Simeon, or Anna, who immediately recognized Jesus when He was born, or Elisabeth, who in the Spirit recognized Him when He was conceived, or Peter, who said by the revelation of the Father, You are Christ, the Son of the living God.

But a friend had kindly intervened.

All this was very nice, very amusing, and very friendly.

or the Midianites to Moses, [Exodus 2:15] when each of these was a pilgrim and a stranger?

“You cannot defend her against me,” said Eustace, “for I do not attack her.

Then there would be more refreshments; but on this special day the parsonage dinner was never comfortable and orderly.

Two Gods?

And what are we to say of Elijah and Elisha?

But the courage of the man was too high to allow him to be altogether quelled at once.

You see Feemy is proud, and perhaps a little too headstrong, and I don’t think she’d bear just as quietly as she ought, any one speaking to her about the man now.

He had these four books, and this one disciple whose name was Terebinthus.

Thorns and thistles shall it give forth to you, and you shall eat the food of the field.

“Winthrop proposed Borleys at Barchester.”

“You must see Mr. Furnival, by all means,” said Dockwrath. “But—”

[Matthew 5:21-22] Not even by an evil word does He permit it to be vented.

He had told himself that he was now bound to abstain, for his father’s sake, from doing that which he had told his father that he would certainly do.

Where archangels?

It is impossible that he should have learned them from the teaching of any Scripture.

His hopes, too, had been crushed, because she had been so obdurate to him.

“I knew your father, and a very good man he was; only he shouldn’t have taken to farming. People think they can farm without learning the trade, but that’s a very great mistake. I can farm, because I’ve learned it. Don’t you think you’d better get up?” Whereupon Johnny raised himself to his feet. “Not but what you’re very welcome to lie there if you like it. Only, in October, you know—”

He had come down there disposed to do them all manner of kindness,—to the extent even of greatly improving their fortunes by improving the brewing business,—and they had taken upon themselves to treat him as though he were a dependent.

For in these days Bagwax almost wept over the hardships inflicted on that poor lady at Folking.

The Lord informs His disciples in Galilee of what has befallen Lazarus, and also of his own setting out to him to raise him up when laid low.

It is so obsolete and forgotten, that, far from practising it, one does not even know it.

Why did not Dr. Arabin come out there to Hogglestock, and tramp with him through the dirty lanes as they used to tramp?

And what reason would He have had for dying, had He not also had a reason for rising again?

I will say, ‘however, before I describe the Institution, that it is already doomed and its days numbered.

Things went on in this way for two years, during which Mrs. Lefroy’s conduct drew down upon her reproaches from no one.

“He’s away half his time, and when he does come he’d better be away. If he wants to marry that girl why doesn’t he marry her and have done with it?”

Chapter 31.— The Order and Process of Healing Our Heavenly Physician Does Not Adopt from the Sick Patient, But Derives from Himself. What Cause the Righteous Have for Fearing

In doing so he did not abandon his political beau ideal.

For to use corporeal names when discoursing of the incorporeal is perhaps the part of those who deal despitefully and stone Him; but pardon, I say again to our infirmity, for I do not willingly stone Him; but having no other words to use, we use what we have.

Camilla did not speak to her sister, but she condescended to hold some intercourse with her mother, and to take her meals at the family table.

It was now two years since Crofts had been called upon for medical advice on behalf of his friend Mrs Dale.

Then shall the wolves and the lambs feed together, and the lion shall eat straw like the ox; but the serpent [shall eat] earth as bread.

He had been invited to come in order that he might be received as the heir, and since he had come, every one about the place had misused him.

“I do not like ladies to dress very young, that is, ladies of—of—”

Some are going out to join their husbands, some to find a husband, some few peradventure to leave a husband.

Exposition on Psalm 54

If I want to get anything from my old friend Jones, I like to see him shoved up into a high place.

How much more becoming, and more suitable to the limitation of our powers, to feel the same awe which the apostle felt, and to exclaim, "O the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and of the knowledge of God!

He was dressed in black, with a chimney-pot on his head,—and certainly did not look like a miner, though he looked as little like a gentleman.

Probably they had been on a visit at Jerusalem at the time (of John's preaching), and did not even know Jesus.

She was creating an unnecessary disturbance among them.

He had lived long enough to have regarded Catholic emancipation and parliamentary reform in the same light.

“Or Mrs. Clavering?”

For as soon as you have passed over the threshold of your chamber, thou immediately puttest off all, both the robes, and the golden ornaments, and the pearls; and at home of all places thou dost not wear them.

[John 18:6] (If any one say that the Father is greater, inasmuch as He is the cause of the Son, we will not contradict this.

This was the question which he asked himself in those melancholy moments; while he was lying in bed, for instance, awake in the morning, when he was shaving himself, and sometimes also when the squire was prosy after dinner.

‘I don’t know that.’

The German girl of one-and-twenty,— our Isa’s age,—is more sedate, more womanly, more meditative than her English sister.

“I beg your pardon, Lady Staveley;” and Peregrine blushed up to his eyes. “I did not intend—”

And (the Saviour) showed them, (so Apelles taught,) the prints of the nails and (the wound) in his side, desirous of persuading them that he was in truth no phantom, but was present in the flesh.

At every “Grace” that was flung at him he winced and was miserable, and declared to himself that he should never become accustomed to his new life.

He saw that I was observing him, and appeared uneasy and offended. I had already ascertained that he spoke a little English. Of Flemish I knew literally nothing, and in French, with which probably he was also acquainted, I was by no means voluble. The business which I had to transact was intricate, and I required the use of my mother-tongue.

“You were engaged to Mrs Hurtle?”

“Who is the other side?” asked Cousin Henry.

“Am I to understand that Lord Kingsbury refuses to see me?”

Both the soul of the father is mine, says the Lord, and the soul of the son is mine: the soul that sins, it shall die; [Ezekiel 18:4] but he does not sin on whose behalf his parents or any other one resort, without his knowledge, to the impiety of worshipping heathen deities.

He will make your ways straight, and will direct your steps in peace."

She is very unhappy.

For wherever the sign may be, there also will He be.

“So is Mr Cheesacre for the matter of that.”

“Those men’ll never half move unless they’re driven,” a foreman said to me once as we stood together over some twenty men who were at their work.

Silver tried by the fire for the earth.

Of the American I will say, speaking in their praise, that I never ate such bacon and peas.

[Galatians 3:13] Besides, as there is no blasphemy in predicating of the subject that which is fairly applicable to it; so, on the other hand, it is blasphemy when that is alleged concerning the subject which is unsuitable to it.

And are not these failings sins, about which the apostle's precept gives us a general admonition that we should avoid and restrain them, when he says: Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that you should obey it in the lusts thereof?

John 16:30

For no one dwells in heart, save where thought is: but there his thought is, where his treasure is.

Neither could she leave him as he was.

Let no one fall back into that from which he has risen, but, even though from bodily weakness he still languishes under certain maladies, let him urgently desire to be healed and raised up.

Then there came a frown across her brow, — not of anger, but of perplexity. How should she explain it? How should she let him know that it must be as she would have it, — that he must have it all; and have it not from her, but as heir to his kinsman? How could she do all this and teach him at the same time that there need be nothing of gratitude in it all, — nothing certainly of love?

“Well, yes; pretty well. To tell the truth, I have worked hard. By George, yes! It’s not so bad now as it used to be.”

And by obtaining this knowledge, he has obtained also sorrow; but sorrow for straying away from the desire of reaching his own proper country, and the Creator of it, his own blessed God.

But if any has caused sorrow, he has caused sorrow not to me.

“I am quite in earnest. I am not joking.”

“Banns!” exclaimed the Countess.

For you will be able to learn from the letter which I have written to the Brethren, what pains it has cost me to write it, and also to perceive that it is not safe for the writings of a private person to be published (especially if they relate to the highest and chief doctrines), for this reason—lest what is imperfectly expressed through infirmity or the obscurity of language, do hurt to the reader.

And again, His sudden turning to do us good is the waking up; for waking is the dissolution of sleep, as visitation is of turning away.

“What Mary! Be unhappy and not to talk about it to me? That’s something new, is it not?”

“Do not for a moment suppose that I am finding fault either with you or my brother.”

He says not, Why did you sit down to eat, but, Why did you come in?

Where be they who affirm, that He underwent constraint, that He was subjected?

His own dear, fond Fanny!

Then I took up arms on behalf of Augustus.

For, just as we confess that God became man without change or alteration, so we consider that the flesh became God without change.

And I remember that I pressed the Jew, who was deemed a learned man, very hard with this passage; and he, being perplexed about it, gave such an answer as was in keeping with his Judaistic views, saying that the words, Your throne, O God, is for ever and ever: a sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of Your kingdom, are spoken of the God of all things; and these, You have loved righteousness and hated iniquity, therefore Your God has anointed You, etc., refer to the Messiah.

(For some in one way, others in another, teach to blaspheme the Maker of all things, and Christ, who was foretold by Him as coming, and the God of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob, with whom we have nothing in common, since we know them to be atheists, impious, unrighteous, and sinful, and confessors of Jesus in name only, instead of worshippers of Him.

These things she inwardly said; then began she to do outwardly.

He did not much care for her father now, but kissed her hair and her forehead, and held her closely to his bosom.

But they who suppose that it is wind are deceived by this, because we appear to live by drawing breath from the air.

For while you are yet speaking, it is said, I will say, Here I am.

Mr. Bertram had expressed no great anger at the tale of love that was told him; but neither had he expressed any gratification.

He, it was said, had found himself compelled to exclude Phineas Finn from the Government, because of the unfortunate alliance between him and the wife of one of his late colleagues, and had also thought it expedient to dismiss Mr. Bonteen from his Cabinet,—for it had amounted almost to dismissal,—because Mr. Bonteen had made indiscreet official allusion to that alliance.

That was quite understood among the tradesmen.

She, of course, had at once pardoned the old offence.

To her it was very manifest that Honyman was afraid of the young man; and Honyman, though he might not be as keen as some others, was at any rate honest.

I haven’t a person to talk to.

All Travers and Treason was nothing to him, because his son would run so far away from the right path.

“It will be sifted, of course.”

As Mr. Bideawhile had uttered nothing antagonistic to her wishes in this matter,—had seemed to agree that wherever the mother went thither the child would go also,—Mrs.

I will not have it—I will not endure it.

“That is for us to consider; but of one thing I am quite sure. I am quite certain that we must not allow ourselves to be afraid of your brother. To speak the truth, as it must be spoken, he is a bully, George.”

But what persuasion is there where fear of the Emperor prevails?

“Faix, he is so.”

He set himself to work to put me down when I did myself the honour to call on him, because he felt that my connexion with you would probably make me an enemy to him.

And in so doing it is made wise itself.

As, says he, the woman from out the man, so also the man through the woman: but all things of God.

He expresses surprise that sacrifices not only incline the gods, but also compel and force them to do what men wish; and he is at a loss to understand how the sun and moon, and other visible celestial bodies—for bodies he does not doubt that they are—are considered gods, if the gods are distinguished from the demons by their incorporeality; also, if they are gods, how some are called beneficent and others hurtful, and how they, being corporeal, are numbered with the gods, who are incorporeal.

Although Maxentius kept himself within Rome, because the soothsayers had foretold that if he went out of it he should perish, yet he conducted the military operations by able generals.

Ariusmaintains that God became a Father, and the Son was not always; the Son out of nothing; once He was not; He was not before his generation; He was created; named Wisdom and Word after God's attributes; made that He might make us; one out of many powers of God; alterable; exalted on God's foreknowledge of what He was to be; not very God; but called so as others by participation; foreign in essence from the Father; does not knowor see the Father; does not knowHimself.

From the way in which things have turned out it’s not likely that he’ll settle himself at Baslehurst.

He says not, I was in prison, and you delivered Me not, but, and you came not unto Me.

When Mr Apjohn’s explanation had been given, and the search commenced, she retired and went to her own room.

“You’ll find you are wrong there, my friend,” said the elderly gentleman. “But make yourself aisy, I won’t do you the least harm in life, and I sleep as quiet as a mouse.”

The old and young, and they who were neither old nor young, were mingled together, and there seemed to be very little respect of persons.

“Come in? oh yes, of course;” and he turned round sharply at her. “I tell you what, aunt; I am not well here and I cannot stay out the session. I shall go back to Mount Pleasant.”

“But Polly has written ever so many things before,” said Mrs. Puffle.

Intelligo autem, quod aliqui quidem, qui prætextu matrimonii difficultatum ab eo abstinuerunt, non convenienter sanctæ cognitioni ad inhumanitatem et odium hominum defluxerunt; et petit apud ipsos charitas; alii autem matrimonio ligati, et luxui ac voluptatibus dediti, lege quodammodo eos comitante, fuerunt, ut ait Propheta, assimilati jumentis.

The reader need hardly be told that Emily herself regarded the matter in a very different light.

But now even that discordance which seems to exist in little matters delivers them from all suspicion, and speaks clearly in behalf of the character of the writers.

And how can such a one have a friend who can advise him as to what he shall do?

“Keep away from me! I will not even give you my hand to shake till you have promised to be of one mind with me. I will not become your wife.”

Christ said that it was easier for heaven and earth to be destroyed, than for any of his words to fail.

Those things, when perceived and considered—after advice by any one who has without consideration put faith in Manichæus,— lead him to a clear conviction that, in speaking of those natures, he speaks of things good in a sense, not perfect and un-created, like God the one Trinity, nor of the higher rank of created things, like the holy angels and the ever-blessed powers; but of the lowest class, and ranked according to the small measure of their endowments.

Unde tertius quoque liber Stromateus eorum, quæ sunt de vera philosophia, commentariorum, hunc finem habeat.

For either there is a resurrection of the form as you teach, and then Christ is no longer the first begotten of the dead, from the fact that souls appeared before Him, having this form after death; or He is truly the first begotten, and it is quite impossible that any should have been thought meet for a resurrection before Him, so as not to die again.

And why do I speak of the punishments of your fathers, and what they suffered?

“It had to be done,” she said, jumping up at last in her bedroom, and clenching her fist as she walked about the chamber.

There is an enthusiasm in this, a true admiration for an undoubtedly noble work, and a true interest for the reputation of a great writer, which the lovers of English literature cannot but love.

For in such perplexities divine Scripture is able to afford him some relief, so as to take rightly what is written, and to dwell upon our word as an illustration; that as it is proper to us and is from us, and not a work external to us, so also God's Word is proper to Him and from Him, and is not a work; and yet is not like the word of man, or else we must suppose God to be man.

Or, if you suppose that this is a subject to be investigated with all possible scrutiny, first propose to yourself questions which concern ourselves, and then, if you are able to deal satisfactorily with them, speed on from earthly things to heavenly, from visible to invisible.

As far as I could see after a while she never opened another book.

How I reverence these writers is sufficiently shown by my own book in their behalf, in which I have refuted the indictment laid against them, without fear of the influence of their accusers or even of the secret attack made upon myself.

It was heartbreaking to him.

If, however, you believe that man is made by God, and that husband and wife are innocent, see how impossible is your standpoint, that original sin is derived from them.

But how is it now?

These salutary revolutions, in accordance with the order of change, are distinguished both by times, and places, and honours, and cognitions, and heritages, and ministries, according to the particular order of each change, up to the transcendent and continual contemplation of the Lord in eternity.

For I do not know, when I present money to a poor man who asks it, either what he is to do with it, or what he is to suffer from it; and it may happen that he does some evil with it, or suffers some evil on account of it, a thing I did not wish to happen when I gave it to him, nor would I have given it with such an intention.

All the joys of the world were over,—and had been lost by her own fault.

He had promised as much.

Also in the thirty-third Psalm: Fear the Lord, all you His saints: for there is no want to them that fear Him.

The motion for the Committee had been made by a gentleman of the opposition, and Phineas had been put upon it as an independent member.

Had this been explained to him by the lawyer in his letter, he might probably have abstained from so damning a falsehood.

And so a little after he says, For he that loves not his brother whom he has seen, how can he love God whom he has not seen?

Disregarding right or wrong, they would all go where they could get half a zwansiger more!

[Matthew 5:45] Then in another passage it is written, 'For the good things are created from the beginning [Sirach 39:25] and yet again, 'They that are good shall dwell in the land.'

When he came in, Ussher shook hands with Feemy as he would with anybody else, and began talking gaily to the two other girls.

He called therefore and took her by the hand, and expressed a hope that all things should be made to go straight, and then he left her, taking her by the hand again, and endeavouring to prove his esteem by his manner of doing so.

“About the good many I do not at this moment concern myself. My duty is clearly before me and I mean to perform it. I have been asked to ally myself—;” then there was a pause, and the speaker discovered when it was too late that she was verging on the ridiculous in declaring her purpose of forming an alliance;—”that is to say, I am going to marry Sir Francis Geraldine.”

Now may the Holy Trinity protect you with His hand, and render you always vigilant and careful in the custody of souls, to the end that in the eternal retribution you may be counted worthy to be crowned, not only for your own work, but also for the amelioration of your subjects.

And all the Secretaries of State can frank; and ever so many other public officers.

“He is to be here again before long,” said the parson.

“Winifred! Yes, now for the first time, though I have called you Paul from the moment you entered the room. Well, speak out. Is there another woman that you love?”

For he will allure mankind to himself, wishing to gain possession of those who are not his own, and promising deliverance to all, while he is unable to save himself.

They know that they prepare for their guests an evening of misery, and for themselves certain long hours of purgatory which are hardly to be endured.

There was but little said among them, even by the husband to the wife, or by the father to the son; because the husband feared his wife, and the father his own child.

For he that loves another has fulfilled the Law.

The name of God is given Him in the right of absolute ownership, not because He has been admitted to joint use with others of the title.

You are not ashamed though you often hear these words.

Cæsar seems to have respected Cicero always, and even to have liked him; but he was not minded to put up with a “friend” in Rome who from day to day abused all his projects.

Whence is it proved that this is spoken of the end, but still my tongue also all day long shall meditate of Your righteousness?

Well, the eyes are improved, but that’s from change of air. The spectacles are right.

But those which are necessary and uphold our life, are the following; You shall not kill; You shall not commit adultery; You shall not steal.

Having done so much for business, and having thus brought to a conclusion the political work of the evening, they adjourned their meeting to a cosy little parlour near the bar, and then they began to be happy.

by Leontius) complains of your Fraternity, that in the defence of the illustrious physician Archelaus the interests of our brother and fellow bishop, the Metropolitan Domitian, suffer damage .

“And we will help it. Allons; andiamos; vamos.”

If we walk in the light, as He is in the light, we have fellowship one with another.

And the hands when they steal hide themselves, and seek excuses; but if they give alms, they even glory.

She was very clever about it.

I myself, the present Chronicler of the ‘Mastiffs,’ have served among post-offices, and have had much to do with postmasters.

[Numbers 12:3] He knew that the king would not keep true to his promises, yet he thought it right and good to pray when asked to do so, to bless when wronged, to forgive when besought.

It was, perhaps, not crowded, but was by no means deserted.

Or perchance now too with a Samaritan woman only.

There is no comfort.

Dated 17th of August, in the consulship of Leo and Majorian Augusti (458).

Not long after the letter of the emperor reached Asterius, the general of the East; he sent to desire John to repair to him, as if he had need of him.

“It is not for that,” said Nina, thinking of her cousin Ziska’s offer. She need not want for a house and money if she were willing to sell herself for such things as them.

“You know, Dolly, that I am always glad to see you,—only you come to us so seldom,” said Rachel.

“I would leave her to herself, and to her mother,—and to this young lord, if he be her lover.”

Again, we call beginning the essential and first part from which a thing proceeds, such as the foundation of a house, the keel of a vessel; it is in this sense that it is said, The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom, [Proverbs 9:10] that is to say that piety is, as it were, the groundwork and foundation of perfection.

Prayers are there to begin with, that the affliction may stop there, and go no further: many a one comforting the sufferer, and recitals without number of the many who have the like cause for mourning.

[Song of Songs 1:3-4] She began with kisses, and so attained to the chamber.

Let us then expel from our mouth all slander, knowing that if we do not abstain from it, though we might feed upon ashes, this austerity would avail us nothing.

If it might be that the Dean should receive his punishment in that direction he would do nothing to prevent it.

My own desire is, for the common good of the world and the advantage of all mankind, that your people should enjoy a life of peace and undisturbed concord.

You will right their present state; but for yourself you will lay up beforehand the glory and confidence which shall be hereafter.

She felt no inclination to scold her daughter, or even to point out in very strong language how foolish Fanny had been in allowing a man to engage her affections merely by asking for them.

Esaias the Prophet proclaimed with loud voice so many things concerning Him; would you not wish that the King should go down and redeem His herald?

‘That doesn’t follow at all,’ said Captain Cuttwater, ‘What sort of a figure would you make on a yard-arm, reefing a sail in a gale of wind?’

She was very fond of balls, but she soon found that Lord George disliked them as much, and when present was always anxious to get home.

And the sons of Sion shall exult in their King.

Between the lane and the field there was a fence which was not “rideable!” As is the custom with lanes, the roadway had been so cut down that there was a bank altogether precipitous about three feet high, and on that a hedge of trees and stakes and roots which had also been cut almost into the consistency of a wall.

27. This seems, gracious Emperor, to be a full account of our right feeling, but to the impious it does not seem so. Observe what they are striving after. For the heretics are wont to say that the Holy Spirit is to be reckoned among all things, because it is written of God the Son: All things were made by Him. [John 1:3]

Nay, as I sought earnestly to amend them in the first place, so keeping you away from all the rest, to them do I send you as teachers and physicians.

When we depart hence, then, and not till then, will the glorious victory be achieved.

To the generality of men of his age, there are resources in misfortune.

Or of the resurrection of the flesh?

Bears too, and leopards, wolves, and lions, voluntarily suffer any pain for the safety of their offspring, for instead of fleeing from the hunter they will await his attack and do battle for their young.

“I do not wish to be seen in Exeter,” he replied.

The things were stowed away, and all the arrangements were made for the journey; but Lady Anna refused to go, and when the hour came could not be induced to get into the carriage.

“There isn’t a table so well kept in all Brussels,” he used to boast.

“But she is true — so true!”

Some few years since we ill used them, stowed them away in unwholesome holes, gave them bad food for their bodies and none for their minds, and did our best to send them devilwards rather than Godwards.

Had he shown himself in the town, he would almost have been pulled in pieces.

For, on the one hand, they dare not ascribe to their own gods a departure from the body, lest they should seem to worship mortals; on the other hand, they dare not deny their happiness, lest they should acknowledge wretches as gods.

For Saul was the persecutor of a holy man; thence had this man his name, when he persecuted the Christians: [1 Samuel xix] afterward of Saul he became Paul.

But, passing over in the mean while the depth of knowledge, to deal with you as I think I ought to deal with my intimate friend; that is, as I have myself power, not as I have wondered at the power of very learned men; there are three kinds of error, whereby men err, when they read anything.

I have known Ireland for more than forty years,—say from 1842 to 1882.

Mr. Bonteen has been very hostile to me, believing evil things of me, and instigating you, my beloved, to believe evil of me.

She was thoroughly able to look down upon a parvenu millionaire,—to look down upon such a one and not to pretend to despise him.

There is therefore a kind of beauty in righteousness, which we see with the eye of the heart, and we love, and we kindle with affection: how much men found to love in those same Martyrs, though beasts tare their limbs!

Like a signet ring which does not feel the impression it makes?

It never occurred to her to question any word that was said to her.

It was not all noble; but there was beneath it a basis of nobility.

Or when the session at the right hand of the Father is proved both by apostles and prophets?

Let us dispatch, then, that passage also, which they do use to misrepresent,— let them learn what is the sense of the words, The Lord created Me.

When instead of being a wealthy man he became poor, naked instead of rich, pining away instead of strong, despised and contemptible instead of famous and honourable, and yet preserved his fortitude of mind unshaken, when, lastly, bereft of all his wealth and substance he took up his abode on the dunghill, and like some stern executioner of his own body scraped with a potsherd the matter that broke out, and plunging his fingers deep into his wounds dragged out on every side masses of worms from his limbs.

It is, however, the part of God to do what is proper to God, and it is the part of man to do what is proper to man.

Now why did He say It is I that do it, but for my holy name's sake, were it not that they should not think that it was owing to their own good merits that these things were happening, as the Pelagians hesitate not unblushingly to say?

But he had commenced by claiming a year of grace, and to that claim he adhered.

But having done that work, having accomplished her terrible task, she had hoped that rest might be in store for her.

Yet, though you would indict for libel any one who contemptuously scoffed against yourself, by means of such an alteration of meanings, are you not afraid to scoff against God; and are you safe when you laugh at these mysteries of our faith?

“D–––– the South Sea islanders,” said Mr. Sowerby.

Why should he, feeling as he did that it would so soon be necessary that he should disappear from among them?

Gregory had always taken his brother’s part before the Squire; and the Squire, much as he liked the parson, was never slow in abusing the parson’s brother.

Harry at once returned the count’s visit at the address given in Mount Street.

Now at this point we have an asterisk.

The Constitution does not prescribe the suspension of the privilege of the writ under any circumstances.

‘You would not tell her what this man has been saying?’

“Certainly not,” said the other Duke. “As to the Solicitor-General you will have no difficulty. Sir Timothy was only placed there as a concession to his party. Drummond will no doubt continue to hold his office till we see what is done in the Lower House. If the second reading be lost there,—why then his lordship can go with the rest of us.”

Afterwards however he adds it well and seasonably.

Then at last she gave way, fell into tears, hysteric sobbings, convulsions so violent as for a time to take the appearance of epileptic fits, and was at last exhausted and, happily for herself, unconscious.

If any one says that the dilated essence of God makes the Son, or shall term the Son the dilatation of his essence, let him be anathema.

Whence also he adds, And confirm His faith in their minds; that is, that it may not lie on the surface, but strike its root deep downwards.

After receiving this Margaret held out no longer but was carried off by the handsome lady in the grand carriage, very much to the delight of Mrs Buggins.

How then do you know him who is unknown even to himself?...Where then is security?

For if you would deny it, the place refutes you visibly, this blessed Golgotha , in which we are now assembled for the sake of Him who was here crucified; and the whole world has since been filled with pieces of the wood of the Cross.

“I have only to say that he is a man most highly esteemed here. He is well known at the court, and is at the royal parties. Should you become his wife, you would have all the society of Brussels at your feet.”

[Revelation 13:18] And I have an opinion as to this number, though I do not know the matter for certain; for many names have been found in this number when it is expressed in writing.

It was a sight terrible to the eyes of Captain Bellfield, and by no means welcome to those of Mrs Greenow.

That they might know that they could not be saved unless they put their trust in Him.

Would he not be ready to fight Reginald Morton with any weapon which could be thought of for the possession of Mary Masters?

Some of his sayings contradict each other or are trifling (29, 30).

‘Isn’t somebody coming to take you away?’ little Michel asked her, when they were quite alone.

In that case it might have been that she would have brought herself to give her hand to the suitor of whom all her friends approved.

Thackeray’s was a good name with which to conjure.

This delay he attributes to the disturbed state of Palestine, the severity of the winter, the prevalent famine, and his own ill-health.

Chapter 3.— Of the Promise of Eternal Blessedness to the Saints, and Everlasting Punishment to the Wicked.

But since, as you say, they have undertaken the office of abbots, heed must be given to their life, manners, and attention to duty.

For if He were God, He had not said, I Alone, nor God is One it is necessary to declare the sense of these phrases in addition, as far as we can, that all may know from this also that the Arians are really contending with God.

Now it had come to this, that in the eyes of the Duke of Omnium Marie Max Goesler was the top brick of the chimney.

She had made various little attempts but had not known how to go on with them.

But how is this, that if two men be asked whether they would wish to serve as soldiers one, it may be, would reply that he would, the other that he would not; but if they were asked whether they would wish to be happy, both of them would unhesitatingly say that they would; and this one would wish to serve, and the other not, from no other motive but to be happy?

It is said that when he returned from exile, he found that his church was presided over by an Arian bishop, and that scarcely fifty inhabitants of the city had submitted to the control of this new bishop.

Then he ascertained that Mr. Puttock had not been presented to, or selected for the living on account of any peculiar fitness;—but that he had been a fellow of Rufford at Oxford till he was forty-five, when he had thought it well to marry and take a living.

[Matthew 5:20] We must understand in one sense the kingdom of heaven in which exist together both he who breaks what he teaches and he who does it, the one being least, the other great, and in another sense the kingdom of heaven into which only he who does what he teaches shall enter.

“Dear father, we will not talk of that now.”

Give her head, but steady her.” And Archie, as the words passed across his memory, and were almost pronounced, seemed to be flying successfully over some prodigious fence.

And although this suffering did not belong to His nature as eternal Son, the immutability of God being proof against the assault of any derogatory disturbance, yet it was freely undertaken, and was intended to fulfil a penal function without, however, inflicting the pain of penalty upon the sufferer: not that the suffering in question was not of a kind to cause pain, but because the divine Nature feels no pain.

Frank was now at home, and was terribly down in the mouth.

For he made not use of the very expression, in turn ?

And yet, (generally), anger is more readily indirect than indulgence.

He asked me to be his friend.

[Acts 12:10] Now know I that the Lord has sent His Angel.

And when we had accomplished those days, we departed, and went our way; and they all brought us on our way, with wives and children, till we were out of the city: and we kneeled down on the shore, and prayed.

Hence it is manifest that the Word of God could in no way have been defiled by a human body, by which even the human soul is not defiled.

It was not to be expected that he should remember that, just at present; and he rode on, considerably out of humour with all the world except himself.

“That I can believe too. Do you travel down to Yorkshire alone?”

Nor is this to be wondered at, considering that each single man does not generally keep to the same opinion about the same thing, but alters it as fashion influences him.

The sum of your whole argument, which you have expanded into a most prolix dissertation, is this, that Peter did not err in supposing that the law was binding on those who from among the Jews had believed, but departed from the right course in this, that he compelled the Gentile converts to conform to Jewish observances.

He was much too great a fool to have an idea of his own folly.

Frank Gresham felt disconcerted, though he hardly knew why.

And when the Lord saw that he is turning aside to behold, the Lord called to him out of the bush.'

“At any rate I will not if I am one of the servants,” said Mr Harding. “A rose, you know—”

That work of altering is so ungracious, so precarious, so incapable of success in its performance!

When we find ourselves asked to pay—’.

However, for a time He says it not, but puts it afterwards. But for the present, what had most power to persuade them, that He brings forward, namely, that the treasure would thus remain for them unspent.

We hold fast Christ's inheritance; they hold it not, for they do not communicate with the whole earth, do not communicate with the universal body redeemed by the blood of the Lord.

“They are both friends of mine,” said Phineas.

Chapter V. Cicero as Quæstor

Her father is still living; but there is a curate now in the parish.

But I differ so thoroughly from those who do not keep them distinct, that I cannot address you on the subject without insisting on the distinction.

This again, in the same epistle, he says: Let us greet the day which assigns each of us to his own home, which snatches us hence and sets us free from the snares of the world, and restores us to Paradise and the kingdom.

He says then to them again concerning these things, Why do you fast to Me as on this day, says the Lord, that your voice should be heard with a cry?

There were four Catiline speeches made in the year of his Consulship, but in the same year many others were delivered by him.

To get the better is not to inflict but to suffer evil.

They knew that they were ruined; they expected no redress.

“There must be a beginning to such thoughts, of course,” said Sir Thomas.

It is not for nought that all else has been written and how many things He did at the very cross sufficient to recall them to Him; but that you might imitate His goodness, that you might emulate His lovingkindness.

“Why should you say so?” exclaimed Lady Carbury.

And these things He spoke, showing that He should come on a sudden, and unexpectedly, and when the more part were living luxuriously.

I implore your blessedness, therefore, by the crucified Saviour of the world, and by the consubstantial trinity, to authorize me by letter either to use or to refuse this formula of three hypostases.

“We shall find a good fire in the parlour at the hotel,” said Crosbie.

It is tolerable to go mad once in the year.

They don’t care so much about banknotes, my lady, because they fetches such a low price with them as they deal with.

When Lord Rufford came into the room Arabella at once got up and accosted him with a whisper.

“And lose all my seventy pounds for nothing!”

Now it has ever been the wont of glory to exalt, not to humble.

He thought badly of Appius, but hardly worse than he ought to have done of Brutus.267 Of Cælius he was fond, of Curio, of Trebatius.

The richest side of the mine is towards the south, where in one compartment there are 12 claims each rated at £5,500, so that the whole compartment is supposed to be worth £60,000.

4. Do you see that he was free from fondness for rule and from malice? For seeing Jesus bound, and led by so many persons, he did not think that they had unquestionable proof of their accusation, but questions them, thinking it a strange thing that they should take for themselves the judgment, and then commit the punishment without any judgment to him. What then say they?

“That is untrue, madam.”

And by this promise even such men hold themselves bound, lest they be guilty of sacrilege and perjury if they did not fulfil the oath extorted by the fear of death or captivity, and broke the promise given in such circumstances: they are more afraid of breaking their oath than of taking a man's life.

It was manifestly the intention of her family to ostracise her altogether.

Why had he not, on behalf of his old friend, shown something like indignation that any such doubt should have been expressed?

For they so essay to defend the free will of man, as that by it alone, even without help of the grace of God, we are able to fulfill what is commanded us of God.

He is greater, moreover, than all discourse, nor can He be declared; for if He could be declared, He would be less than human discourse, whereby being declared, He can both be encompassed and contained.

I came not to reprove the past, but to bestow the gift: that you may receive your sight, and be filled with the Holy Ghost.

“He was here before, mamma, and I don’t think he liked it. I’m sure we didn’t. He didn’t speak a word the whole day he was here. He’s not at all the person to suit Adolphus.”

Moreover he must have a good report of them which are without.

The magistrate thought that Mr. Trevelyan had done nothing illegal in taking the child from the cab.

Unjust, you say.

“Ah!—if one could always be fortunate when one loved!” said Mr. Emilius, casting his eyes across to Lizzie Eustace. It was evident to them all that he did not wish to conceal his passion.

“The gentleman says that you are engaged to marry him,” said Lady Ball.

“Why should you go and see a vulgar creature throw herself about and wipe her face?”

It was as though she for once experienced a mother’s solicitude for her in her sorrows, and she longed to throw herself on her knees, hide her face in her friend’s lap, and confess it all.

“No, mamma; he didn’t mean quite that. I understand what he meant. As it is to be so, he was quite right. No message could be of any use. It has been my own doing, and I have no right to blame him. Mamma, if you don’t mind, I think I’ll go to bed.”

“I’m afraid I’m ever so much behind my time,” he said.

Of course she would take it.

What sort of forgetting?

He should have made her know that he was there from the first moment of her entrance into the room.

For this purpose it was, as they have themselves confessed, that they did all these things.

I would so willingly delay doing so, saying nice little things the while, did I not know that this would be mere cowardice.

“ Go on,” said I, getting behind his mule as though to drive him.

What if it is not these, and is something else another cause another method, another power, in fine, unheard of and unknown to us by name, which may have fashioned the human race, and connected it with things as established; may it not be that men sprang up in this way, and that the cause of their birth does not go back to the Supreme God?

Never before had his democratic spirit received such a shock,—or rather the remnant of that aristocratic spirit which he had striven to quell by the wisdom and humanity of democracy!

Ego autem audio Nicolaum quidem nulla unquam alia, quam ea, quæ ei nupserat, uxore usum esse; et ex illius liberis, filias quidem consenuisse virgines, filium autem permansisse incorruptum.

And on the Father Angels wait, and again the Son too is worshipped by them, 'And let all the Angels of God worship Him and He is said to be Lord of Angels, for 'the Angels ministered unto Him,' and 'the Son of Man shall send His Angels.'

My boyhood was, I think, as unhappy as that of a young gentleman could well be, my misfortunes arising from a mixture of poverty and gentle standing on the part of my father, and from an utter want on my part of the juvenile manhood which enables some boys to hold up their heads even among the distresses which such a position is sure to produce.

But the king endured what was still more wretched and deplorable.

For this were rather to be thought a curse and a reproach to a man, who bears in himself the image of God, although he has lost the likeness.

The mayor during these days was much tried.

She could not bring herself to tell the story of what had passed in the panelled room.

Christ alone is the sweetness of dew: Him alone you recognise not in Scripture, for whom Scripture was written.

And so, we beg that an ordinance of your Excellency may remove the evil of this wrong-doing from your kingdom, that you may thus show yourselves the more to be worthy worshippers of Almighty God, in that you set free His faithful servants from His enemies.

“As to the woodman’s axe, Wally, it is very well in theory; but—”

Marie as she listened to his praise and his ecstasies, knowing by a sure instinct every turn of his thoughts, tried to take joy to herself in that she had given joy to him.

But was he not offering to give up everything for his love?

What sort of punishment then do we not deserve, when after having received the privilege, we betray our salvation? And how shall we claim to be heard in the rest of our matters, if we will not, in those which depend on us, spare our own selves?

We were willing, he says, if it were possible, even to spend our souls upon you.

He was hurt so often by the little vanities of people!

Nor is it one which can find ready entrance into the mind of a young man who sees a girl blooming with the freshness and beauty of youth.

What is it to be humbled?

She did not believe that her own letter had at all been of a nature to warrant it.

While the Vicar was listening to the eloquence of Mr. Puddleham in the chapel, and was being cozened out of his just indignation by Lord St. George, a terrible scene was going on in the drawing-room of the vicarage.

If you would take him I would be quite contented.

But Valens had cunningly arranged, through means of his agents, that he should be the first to be made acquainted with the result of the battle.

For what we speak, also by the same sense of the flesh you hear, and yet wouldest not thou that the syllables should stay, but fly away, that others may come, and the whole be heard.

Also in the same place: It is good to trust in the Lord rather than to trust in man; it is good to hope in the Lord rather than to hope in princes.

“So is Mr. Annesley.”

Who does not know that sudden thoughtfulness at waking, that first matutinal retrospection, and prospection, into things as they have been and are to be; and the lowness of heart, the blankness of hope which follows the first remembrance of some folly lately done, some word ill-spoken, some money misspent,—or perhaps a cigar too much, or a glass of brandy and soda-water which he should have left untasted?

When he perceived the extreme danger into which the faith had been brought, inasmuch as the Westerns had been beguiled, and the Easterns were being overcome by means of wickedness, he, in three papers publicly presented, begged an audience of the king, in order that he might debate on points of faith in the presence of his adversaries.

Wherefore also he placed Christ instead of the Church, giving that name to His body.

He held Him, he exerted violence to hold Him, he prevailed to hold Him: He caused Himself to be held, in mercy, not in weakness.

Afterwards, on his arrival during Lent, George, sent from Cappadocia, added to the evil which he was instructed to work.

He had already chosen a wife, and by his choice had given much ground of distrust to the men of East Barsetshire.

When she said this she looked into her uncle’s face, smiling indeed, but still asking a serious question. He dared to make no answer, but by his face he told the truth. He had declared his wishes to his nephew.

Do we not all rightly admire the grace of God, when we observe that senseless nature restrains its waves as it were with sense and reason, and that the waves know their own limit?

Women are not actuated in the same way, and are accustomed to look deeper into men at the first sight than other men will trouble themselves to do.

When he spoke of the difficulties in his way, she twitted him by being overcome by straws; and told him that no one was worth having who was afraid of every lion that he met in his path.

But not till she had heard his words.

From Jerome to Augustine (A.D. 410)

Sooner than that you should endanger your inheritance here I will make any sacrifice,—if there be anything that I can do.

Not that I should keep anything from you; only this is so very dreadful that I hardly know how to write it.

True it is that in these sufferings there is something bitter, and that strength of mind cannot hide this pain.

For a part implies division, a whole is undivided, and God is everywhere and wholly present wherever He is.

You know, of course, how all this matter about that woman stands now.

They were now about to join hand and heart in saving the people from the horrors of the conscription, and though the Curé’s nominal mission was to be purely spiritual, he was quite prepared to give temporal aid to his allies, should it at any time appear expedient to himself to do so.

Arise, and take the young Child and His mother.

The night-work is done entirely by the men, as is also part of the day-work.

Having settled this point to his satisfaction, the doctor stepped down to the hospital, to learn how matters were going on there; and as he walked across the hallowed close, and looked up at the ravens who cawed with a peculiar reverence as he wended his way, he thought with increased acerbity of those whose impiety would venture to disturb the goodly grace of cathedral institutions.

“I have seen enough of the one,” said Mr. Fay, “and shall see enough of the other if I live to be as near its close as I am to its birth.”

“I have got one of my usual headaches;—only it’s rather worse than usual.”

What, Miss Finesse—well—well—well.

Quite true, my dear.

You are Satan to each other, and the Evil One is abhorred: you are pestilence to each other, and Death is blamed!— 19.

We therefore implore your holiness to continue to show at once our mind and our efforts.

“He is saying everything horrid he can about Americans.”

Shall I not do unto him as it would be well for me that some such girl should do for my sake if I were such as he?

She is winged and buoyant, having golden pinions, with a flight which greatly delights the angels.

What better way, I ask, what better method could be devised, what more effectual effort put forth for reclaiming evil man, than converse with God himself?

It is good for us to be here.

“But they were not all that way, Sir Thomas;—was they?”

What more is done by those who, gravely occupied in demonstrating theories, trace lines upon the dust and reject two propositions to show that the third is the true one?

But do thou, I pray, consider, how with regard to the Jews he said not, they are par-takers with God, but, they have communion with the altar; for what was placed thereon was burnt: but in respect to the Body of Christ, not so. But how? It is a Communion of the Lord's Body. For not with the altar, but with Christ Himself, do we have communion.

It was all one as though she were a Clavering herself.

Or who is so insane as to suppose that a Son can come into existence otherwise than through birth?

[John 12:28] My Father, glorify your name.

“You liked Nora when she was here?”

Avarice will enjoin you labors, perils, sore hardships and tribulations; and you will do its bidding.

If you had been married before, and your wife had given you a keepsake,—to keep for ever and ever, would you give it up to a lawyer?

For it was not for this that He called us to the spiritual and awful communion of His mysteries, that we should enter with our former wickedness; but that, putting off our filthiness, we should change our raiment to such as becomes those who are entertained in palaces.

“Is your home with that uncle of yours?” She had heard so much of his family; but he had as yet spoken to her no word about Caroline. “I wonder what he would say if he could see you now leaning here and talking to me.”

And, now, can you be surprised that I am wild with joy when I begin to see that everything will be as I wish;—for it will be as I wish, Alice.

For which reason, when Christ taught us to cultivate it, and showed its unsurpassable beauty, the kingdom of the Evil One was destroyed, who aforetime led captive and enslaved the whole race of men, so that none of the more ancient people pleased the Lord, but all were overcome by errors, since the law was not of itself sufficient to free the human race from corruption, until virginity, succeeding the law, governed men by the precepts of Christ.

“Your memory must be very bad, then,” said Mr. M’Gabbery, “or your childhood’s love for your father very slight. I perfectly remember the sweetness of my mother’s caresses when I was but three years old. There is nothing, Miss Waddington, to equal the sweetness of a mother’s kisses.”

But he knew her to be a woman who would boldly risk all in money, though no consideration would induce her to stir a hair’s breadth towards danger in reputation.

Even so the things of God none knows, save the Spirit of God.

People then began to doubt.

Thence, therefore, we see through all empires, and provinces, and cities, that each people has its national rites of worship, and adores its local gods: as the Eleusinians worship Ceres; the Phrygians, Mater; the Epidaurians, Æsculapius; the Chaldæans; Belus; the Syrians, Astarte; the Taurians, Diana; the Gauls, Mercurius; the Romans, all divinities.

Lizzie was longing for a little mock sympathy,—was longing to show off her Shelley, and was very kind to Miss Macnulty when she got the poor lady into the recess of the window.

“What is very bad. Is it not bad that she should say such things to me as that? Are you going to take her part against me?”

Nevertheless I shall tell you, lest I should seem to take you up with words, so as not to answer to those things which you have spoken disorderly.

Therefore it is not the part of a wise and good man to wish to contend, and to commit himself to danger, since to conquer is not in our power, and every contest is doubtful; but it is the part of a wise and excellent man not to wish to remove his adversary, which cannot be done without guilt and danger, but to put an end to the contest itself, which may be done with advantage and with justice.

‘There always will be some danger in such society,’ said Mrs. Callander.

Now if the impossible has become possible, much more will the difficult be easy.

“I am not speaking of wisdom. Of course, Mr. Gilmore is very much richer, and all that.”

Nay, where has He not done it?

Margaret. At my request he came.

Then do not thou I pray, in regard to riches, use this language.

For all those things are to pass away and be destroyed, but love is to abide for ever.

My gallant young friend, Fitzm—, was in command of a small schooner inside the harbour of Greytown. As the accommodation of the city itself was not inviting, I gladly took up my quarters under his flag until the English packet, which was then hourly expected, should be ready to carry me to Colon and St. Thomas. I can only say that if I was commander of that schooner I would lie outside the harbour, so as to be beyond the ill-usage of those frightful musquitoes. The country has been well named Mosquitia.

and from whom else could she look for guidance?

He never for a moment doubted that the diamonds had been taken at Carlisle, and explained the second robbery by the supposition that Patience Crabstick had been emboldened by success.

Nor, again, is the power of the one increased by the power of the other, for there are not two powers, but one Power; nor does Godhead entertain Godhead, for there are not two Godheads, but one Godhead.

At the same time, I was truly sorry for the misfortune of my venerable co-bishop, the ruler of such an important church, who was expected to regard it as his duty, even after this man had been guilty of such infamous treachery, to treat him with submissive deference, in order that the lives of others might be spared.

“My dear, of course I think of you. I am thinking of nothing else. I should say it would be Friday. Sarah,—you don’t mean to say that Brotherton is—dead?” Lady Sarah merely pressed her mother’s hand and looked into the old lady’s face. “Why did not they let me go to him? And is Popenjoy dead also?”

For the very tears and the grief of love, are sweeter than any mirth and joy.

On this head we have already spoken repeatedly.

“I had intended to ask you to advance me a hundred pounds,” said Phineas. “There were expenses to which I was driven on first entering Parliament.”

When it would all come out in this dreaded trial he would be quite unable to defend himself.

I will not suffer my eyes to sleep, nor my eyelids to slumber [Psalm 131:4].

Do you not all reckon among your acquaintances some such emancipated darlings as her whom I have described.

What he had done, he had done in a morose way, and he was aware that it was so.

The first block accomplished, with an adequate rent accruing to me as the builder, I fancy that I should never try a second.

For teaching is food, even to the Giver of food.

“Well; that is impudent! You may believe it then. I think I’ve given you reason to believe it, at any rate.”

And yet this is nothing else than loss; for tell me now, let us examine in detail the conditions of riches, and see whether it be not loss accompanied with trouble, and without any gain.

And although the breath of all this mighty and immeasurable power, and the vigour itself produced, so to speak, by its own existence, proceed from the power itself, as the will does from the mind, yet even this will of God is nevertheless made to become the power of God.

Now if to find time for these things the servants of God at certain intervals of times by very infirmity are of necessity compelled, why do we not make account of some portions of times to be allotted also to the observance of Apostolical precepts?

It is something great and sublime that he has hinted at here.

Then that they may not think now also that there will be again a putting off, and merely a threat in words, therefore he both said before, At the mouth of two witnesses or three shall every word be established; and [now], If I come again, I will not spare.

With him also Lucius went out, who being ejected from Alexandria, as we have before related, had made his escape to Constantinople, and there abode.

Which do you look at with your mind; and don't sit gaping with your eyes.

Couldn’t we buy them ourselves, and let the money stand till she choose to take it?

Testimony of the blessed Theophilus, bishop of Alexandria.

At present he means by life; they will not destroy me; even did they so, Christ will even thus be magnified.

Is it a sell?

Such liaisons have the interests of intrigue, without—I was going to say without its dangers.

For this is not required of him that is ruled, but is most essential to him who has this rule committed to him.

“It would give him such a delightful start. And when he found I didn’t die immediately, as of course I ought to do according to rule, he would be so disgusted.”

The bishops who had condemned him complained of this conduct as a violation of the laws of the Church, declared that they could answer for the justice of the sentence that had been enacted against him, and asserted that tranquillity would never be restored among the people until he had been expelled from the city.

Phineas did cast his eye down, and read the whole letter;—nor as he read it could he bring himself to believe that the writer of it would be judged to be mad from its contents.

The reader will perhaps remember how he went down to Nuncombe Putney in quest of a wife, but all in vain.

Meanwhile, the detestable wickedness of the Meletians increased beyond measure; and the blessed Peter, fearing lest the plague of heresy should spread over the whole flock committed to his care, and knowing that there is no fellowship with light and darkness, and no concord between Christ and Belial, by letter separated the Meletians from the communion of the Church.

The repeal of the Missouri compromise had been to them a loss, and it might be said that its reenactment would be a gain.

Since those days she had not seen him, but now she had summoned him, and he was with her in Bolton Street.

‘Well, I think I shall go,’ said Scatterall, shaking off the last ash from the end of his third cigar.

For our root is Christ, who has ascended into heaven.

“Goodbye, Finn,” said Lord Cantrip. “It is a great trouble to me that we should have to part in this way.”

And the divine Jeremiah too utters the prediction This is our God and there shall none other be accounted of in comparison with him.

It is not an easy thing for a soul, under the influence of error, to be persuaded of the contrary opinion.

Whence he shows, that between the New and Old Covenants great harmony exists, and that the same Spirit wrought in either; and that not we alone are in dangers, but all those of old were so too; and that we must find a remedy through faith and hope, and not seek at once to be released from what is laid upon us.

And this is what it seems to me that he is desirous to set forth, viz.

If therefore they were by nature children of wrath, how do you say that the soul is by nature a daughter and portion of God?

She was angry when she had to look for him before she commenced her operations, and scolded him because he could not understand without being told why she went away and left him twenty minutes before the bell was rung.

It may easily be conceived with what feeling such an announcement has been received by Spain and those who hold Spanish authority in Cuba.

“Your name is Pat Brady, I think,” commenced Mr. O’Malley.

For while my spirit is strong and leads me to life my flesh is weak and draws me to death.

Piety was simple, and worship humble; altars were artlessly reared, and the vessels (thereof) plain, and the incense from them scant, and the god himself nowhere.

For whereas an orthodox confession teaches us to believe in the Only-begotten God so that all men should honour the Son even as they honour the Father, these men, rejecting the orthodox terms whereby the greatness of the Son is signified as on a par with the dignity of the Father, draw from thence the beginnings and foundations of their heresy in regard to His Divinity.

On this point we have other opponents with whom to engage.

Behold now this great danger has overtaken us!

In the same way, too, if sins are called wood, and straw, and stubble, we shall not maintain that sins are corporeal; and if blessings are termed gold, and silver, and precious stones, we shall not maintain that blessings are corporeal; so also, if God be said to be a fire that consumes wood, and straw, and stubble, and all substance of sin, we shall not understand Him to be a body, so neither do we understand Him to be a body if He should be called fire.

Is this his meaning in the expression that the conception of the Existent is attracted by the essence which exercises domination over the Son?

And how is this anything else than a disgrace and a very great condemnation?

“And to hear their damnable taunts!” said Edith. “It is very hard upon him. I think it is papa’s idea to keep him here till after the trial in August, and then, if possible, to send him to England. There would be the double journey else, and papa thinks that there would be no real danger till his evidence had been given.”

So, as far as earthly things are subject to you, they teach you that you are their ruler; as far as they distress you, they teach you to be subject to your Lord.

In the meantime de Lescure and his wife and sister were warmly welcomed on the Breton side of the river, and before night he, for the first time since the battle of Cholet, found himself in comparative security and peace.

Hampstead himself did not attempt to delay them.

For if that which is without end, and imperishable, must also by your argument be ungenerately imperishable, then in whatsoever is without end and imperishable there must be connoted ungeneracy.

I think myself happy, says he, That I am to make my defence before you.

All this Herbert explained to his father gently and without complaint; but it seemed now as though Sir Thomas had ceased to interest himself in the matter.

What is the meaning, then, of your great unfairness and perversity, that you should wish to impose on us the burdens of those whom we never knew, while you will not bear the burdens of your friends?

Who that drowned all Egypt in the sea?

In one of your pestilent treatises you have maintained and said that Since man is the image of the Divine nature, and the devil dragged this down and shattered it, God grieved over His image, as an Emperor over his statue, and repairs the shattered image: and formed without generation a nature from the Virgin, like that of Adam who was born without generation; and raises up man's nature by means of man: for as by man came death, so also by man came the resurrection of the dead.

If asked whom she thought the Queen should take as her counsellor, she would probably have named Lord Eldon, and when reminded that that venerable man was no longer present in the flesh to assist us, she would probably have answered with a sigh that none now could help us but the dead.

Admonish him as a brother, he says, and after having given, he orders you to admonish him.

He stood motionless, undecided, glaring with his eyes, thinking of the pains and penalties of Hades, and meditating how he might best devote his enemy to the infernal gods with all the passion of his accustomed eloquence.

His faith deserved this distinction, but not his works, which were not previously good.

Miss Todd, however, promised to make inquiries, and declared her intention of communicating what intelligence she might obtain direct to Miss Mackenzie. Miss Baker resisted this for a little while, but ultimately submitted, as she was wont to do, to the stronger character of her friend.

Be reconciled unto God, [2 Corinthians 5:20] for these are [the deeds] of enemies and such as are in hostility.

But when my soul was withdrawn from them, a heavy burden of misery weighed me down.

Moreover, it has been enacted in a recent Council, that any who desert a monastery, or are expelled from one, shall not be elsewhere admitted either to clerical office or to the charge of a monastery.

Then, after examining him, they expelled him from the Church.

“Perhaps it is better not to be rich, so that one may have something to do. But I want you to tell me as though you really cared for me.”

For if Solomon reigned, why, it was within the confines of Judea merely: from Beersheba unto Dan the boundaries of his kingdom are marked.

He presumed this to be the case, because there stood a little pony horse,—an animal which did not strongly recommend itself to his instructed eye,—attached by its rein to the palings.

Chapter 7. Varying Doctrine Concerning the Gods.

And when he could spare time from his work, he was generally entertained at the houses of his friends.

But we who ought to present our bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God, which is our reasonable service, should consider, not what God permits, but what He wishes: that we may prove what is the good and acceptable and perfect will of God.

He had some glimmering of an idea that as Kate was a Roman Catholic a marriage ceremony might be contrived of which this would become the necessary result.

“I didn’t sign only one of ‘em.”

No, but calls on is equivalent to calls to him.

“And if he be guilty,” said Mrs. Proudie, resolving that she would ask a question that must bring forth some reply, “can any experienced clergyman think that he can be fit to preach from the pulpit of a parish church?

It was not to come out till 1869, and I, as was my wont had made my terms long previously to the proposed date.

The people of the country, however, declare that the river into which the waters of the Montmorency fall is not the St. Lawrence, but the Charles.

I now return to the several points by means of which he thought that Matter was signified.

“It has lasted my time,” said Mr. Harding, “and I’m very much obliged to it.

The beef and pudding of married life are then in store for him;—or perhaps only the bread and cheese.

The man had been false to her,—false as hell; had sworn to her and had broken his oath; had ruined her whole life; had made everything blank before her by his treachery!

‘I don’t understand you, Harry; why should there always be a quarrel between two brothers, between the husbands of two sisters? I know you mean to be kind, I know you are most kind, most generous; but why should you be so stern?’

“Yes,” said he, “that’s the bill. What am I to do with it now?”

Madame Staubach said nothing more to her about Peter till the morning of that day on which Peter was to come for his answer. A little before noon Madame Staubach brought to her niece some weak broth, as she had done once before, on that morning. But Linda, who was sick and faint at heart, would not take it.

There!

I am here because you have promised to make me your wife, and, as far as I am concerned, I am not ashamed to have the fact advertised in every newspaper in the town.

Very speedily there comes consolation in another form.

Chapter 16. How Constantius, feigning Idolatry, expelled those who consented to offer Sacrifice, but retained in his Palace all who were willing to confess Christ.

In a word, he was a young man manifestly of that class which was esteemed by Mrs. Prime more dangerous than roaring lions.

Temples have been erected with lofty roofs to cats, to beetles, and to heifers: — the powers of the deities thus insulted are silent; nor are they affected with any feeling of envy because they see the sacred attributes of vile animals put in rivalry with them.

I would have no more any division between us.

Some monks who came to me from the monastery of the late abbot Claudius have petitioned me that the monk Constantius should be constituted their abbot.

John 20:1

For because they do, in virtue of a new purpose, whatever new thing has occurred to them to be done (their minds being changeable), they conclude it is so with God; and thus compare, not God—for they cannot conceive God, but think of one like themselves when they think of Him—not God, but themselves, and not with Him, but with themselves.

Let me then lay before you examples of these qualities from the Scriptures.

What, then, is there surprising or unjust in man's being subjected to an impure spirit— not on account of nature, but on account of that impurity of his which he has contracted in the stain of his birth, and which proceeds, not from the divine work, but from the will of man—since also the impure spirit itself is a good thing considered as spirit, but evil in that it is impure?

Those whose lot is contrary to that which passes as prosperous receive their sorrows as well from causes contrary to that.

But we, divinely taught to confess neither two Gods nor yet a solitary God, will adduce the evidence of the Gospels and the prophets for our confession of God the Father and God the Son, united, not confounded, in our faith.

[This was hardly a fair representation of what had been said, but the writer, looking back upon his interview with the lady, thought that it had been implied.]

The duties of a hostess she performed in a stiff ungainly way.

Virgil describes Cacus.

And if they see that he can continue therein as time goes on, and remain in that fervour with which he began, they give them away to the poor.

After certain gods were brought from among nations dwelling beyond the sea, you say, and after temples were built to them, after their altars were heaped with sacrifices, the plague-stricken people grew strong and recovered, and the pestilence fled before the soundness of health which arose.

Take no pleasure in abominable delicacies, says Wisdom.

what for swans and satyrs?

There was a house here containing three rooms, and some forty or fifty acres round it had been stripped of the forest trees.

“Oh, oh; so one of you is father of the lad who brought the donkey, and the other the owner of it; and you neither of you knew what was in the kishes.”

It has the power of burning and also of giving light, and it was made by the Creator on the first day.

And the Lord most righteously reproved the Jews, saying, 'Wherefore do you also transgress the commandments of God on account of your traditions [Matthew 15:3].'

Dr. Nupper took the news into Dillsborough, and as the folk sat down to breakfast they all heard that the Squire of Bragton was dead.

“You don’t mean to say that my uncle expected to hear from me?”

“Oh, Papa, do not talk of buying anything yet.”

It was hardly an hour since Mrs. Proudie had left her husband’s apartment victorious, and yet so indomitable was her courage that she now returned thither panting for another combat.

Do you see the cause of the calling from among the nations, clearly declared, by the prophet, to be the disobedience and gainsaying of the people?

E. Eustace.

He is a sedulous man, probably exempt from any strong evil proclivities, anxious to do the best he can with his life, imbued with a respectable ambition, and animated by that desire to be better than those around him which generally saves a man from being below the average if it does not suffice to do more for him than that.

Lady Tringle was thus talked over, though she did think that at least one of her daughters’ husbands ought to have an income of his own.

He also wrote to John, exhorting him to abstain from the study of Origen's books, and to convoke a Synod for decreeing the same thing as he had done.

At this moment Lady Glencora entered, and encountered the eager inquiries of her two duennas. These, however, she quickly put aside, and made her way up to Alice. “The last morning has come, then,” she said.

In preaching the word there is some toil, and this Paul declares when he says, Let the elders that rule well be counted worthy of double honor, especially they who labor in the word and doctrine.

“No;—I’ll tell you how that was. The king wanted this cook to poison half-a-dozen of his officers who wished to have a way of their own; but the cook said, ‘No, my Lord King; I am a cook, not an executioner.’ So they sent him into the scullery, and when they called all the other servants barons and lords, they only called him Cookey. They’ve changed the name to Crosbie since that, by degrees.”

All of you shun absolutely the law of the devil.

He greatly wanted the comfort of a private secretary who would believe in him—or at least pretend to believe in him.

“There’s no doubt of your talent in the matter, Armstrong: upon my soul I never saw anything so cool. What a wretch—what an absolute fiend the fellow is!”

He was not himself at ease, he was not comfortable at heart, because he knew that Marie was avoiding him.

The two so speedily become four, and six!

“No, Mrs Roper. A fellow must move sometimes, you know; and I’m sure I’ve been very constant to you for a long time.”

He was in the beginning with God may seem to add nothing to And the Word was with God.

You observe that he is not here speaking of the flesh, but of earthly thoughts, which trail upon the ground.

“There is another will. There was another will rather, and he has destroyed it.”

He came forward and took both their hands, and it was not till he had held Clara’s for half a minute in his own that they both saw that he was more than ordinarily serious.

If the book which he has disparaged be good, his judgment will be condemned by the praise of others; if bad, his judgment will he confirmed by others.

It was in vain that she told herself that she was afraid of Owen, and therefore thought of him.

How does he take upon himself to emend the words of the mighty Paul?

Paul therefore, in speaking of Antichrist, would not have passed over these things if they had been profitable.

And just as he was saying this, our father came in and caught Peter talking to us of him; and seeing him displeased, he accosted him, and rendered an apology for having slept outside.

Shall we be young or old when we rise again?

42. The Meaning of the Bright Cloud.

Chapter 24. Departure from Aradus.

What then is the meaning of, you are not your own?

As for him, I can only say, that I am forced to suppose him to be a villain.

But suppose they be one, as you wish, and not different in any power of deity and in majesty, do you therefore persecute us with undeserved hatred?

And again, the same says: And I saw, on the right hand of Him that sat on the throne, a book written within and without, sealed with seven seals; and I saw an angel proclaiming with a loud voice, Who is worthy to open the book, and to loose the seals thereof?

It would be too long to quote all that follows.

Besides this, one may say further, that if any, subduing lust, is overcome by money, often he does not in fact subdue lust, but has received from nature the gift of suffering no great uneasiness of that sort; for all are not equally inclined to it.

“It is just as likely that he will take up the National Debt.” Robarts then told him about the projected marriage with Miss Dunstable, giving it as his opinion that the lady would probably accept the gentleman.

R. Why then does it judge, that is, if it is well trained, that a true sphere of any conceivable size is touched by a true plane at a point?

It was not because she began to doubt her lover that she was now occasionally fretful and uneasy. No; the idea to doubt him never reached her, but nevertheless she felt that things were not quite as they should be.

And by it was enlightened Edessa, the faithful city.

“That, situated as they are, they ought not to marry.”

They have full opportunity of answer and debate; in fact, it is against the law to condemn anybody undefended and unheard.

We have no such cause for personal rancor in our Parliament as has existed for some years past in both Houses of Congress.

[Numbers xvi] Who will now doubt that that was the worse crime which received the heavier punishment?

For to say Paul and Silvanus and Timothy [1 Thessalonians 1:1] is precisely the same thing as to say Paul with Timothy and Silvanus; for the connection of the names is preserved by either mode of expression.

Heed not the things now happening, but the things which are written; and even though I who teach you perish, you shall not also perish with me; nay, even a hearer may become better than his teacher, and he who came last may be first, since even those about the eleventh hour the Master receives.

“It’s one of the best houses in London,” said Lord George, with a certain amount of family pride. “It used to be, at least, before the rich tradesmen had built all those palaces at South Kensington.”

I have sworn once by My holiness, that I will not lie unto David.

He is charitable, too, and subscribes largely to hospitals founded for the relief of the suffering poor.

“I’ll be shot if I know what you’re after, Gertrude. If you’ve got anything to say you’d better speak out. I want to go up to the house now.”

As to money and other details, it seemed as though he could hardly accede fast enough to the wishes of the Postmaster-General; but on one point he was firmly opposed to me.

God speaks to Moses in the desert of Sinai on the first day of the third month.

The meaning, however, of the phrase blameless, which is applied to him, we have already, as I suppose, sufficiently explained.

For (to proceed) he is a natural man, who attributes every thing to reasonings of the mind and considers not that he needs help from above; which is a mark of sheer folly.

“Probably not much yourself; but I thought that as these men were your father’s tenants, you might feel unwilling that they should turn murderers; and as I am your father’s friend, you might, for his sake, wish to prevent them murdering me.”

He did call, perhaps, every other day at his bride’s house, but never remained there above two minutes.

But poor Ontario was, as regarded externals, so ill a subject for a great passion!

Then it was explained to him that Mr. Kennedy’s state of health did not admit of late dinners.

‘Ah, that is so pleasing,’ said M. Victoire: ‘that is just what I like; and is mademoiselle engaged for—?’

And if it is allowable for us to venture to say anything more on such a subject, the soul of God may perhaps be understood to mean the only-begotten Son of God.

There was ever present to her mind an idea of failure and a fear lest she had been mistaken in her views throughout her life.

At that time Ralph was supposed to have sold his inheritance, and did not stand well in Sir Thomas’s eyes.

And yet she had struggled hard to do right,—to think of others more than of herself;—so to dispose of herself that she might be of some use in the world.

Whatever immediate effect such symposiums might have on the inner mind—symposiums indeed they were not; posiums I will call them, if I may be allowed; for in latter life, when he drank heavily, he drank alone—however little for evil, or however much for good the working of his brain might be affected, his body suffered greatly.

It may be presumed that he did love Mary Thorne, and that he was at the time earnest in declaring, that if she could be given to him, he would endeavour to live according to her uncle’s counsel.

What sin?

Another Love Scene

“No;—not to this.”

And when we say three men one nature, or three men of the same nature, they also can be called three men out of the same nature, since out of the same nature there can be also three other such men.

We ought to be grateful to the august sovereign of Monaco in that he enabled an enterprising individual to keep open for us in so brilliant a fashion the last public gambling-house in Europe.

Those, again, who do not seek at all because they have what they require just beside them often grow languid from satiety.

But whither is the madness of faithless men leading us, so that we appear to be proving, as if it were a matter of doubt, that the Holy Spirit rebukes, whereas judges themselves are unable to judge, except through the Spirit.

But if he is dead why is not also Felicianus of Musti dead with him, who ordained him, and might have died beyond the sea with some African colleague or another who was a traditor?

Whence, Arius, have you the boldness to allege this; merely from the things which take place among ourselves?

He afterwards illustrated Orley Farm, The Small House of Allington, Rachel Ray, and Phineas Finn.

Of which body he says in another place: Do you not know that your bodies are the members of Christ?

Ver. 5. One Lord, one faith, one baptism.

[Psalm 51:4] He then for His part did everything, but they were nothing the better even for this.

Do write to me at once, and tell me what I ought to do with a due regard to the position to which I have been called upon to fill in the world.

He is also a pattern landlord, listening to all complaints, and endeavouring in everything to do justice between himself and those who are dependent on him.

But I shall remind you of what the passage says, in order that you may recognise even from this very [place] that God gives glory to His Christ alone.

“Say it to the squire, then. Go to him, and tell him what you mean,—holding your head up like a man. Don’t talk to me about swells. The man who means honestly is the best swell I know. He’s the only swell I recognise. Go to old Dale, and say you come from me,—from Guestwick Manor. Tell him that if he’ll put a little stick under the pot to make it boil, I’ll put a bigger one. He’ll understand what that means.”

Then again he associated with Euphronius, successor of Eustathius, and avoiding a bishopric, he retired to Alexandria, and there devoted himself to the study of philosophy.

“Or he mayn’t have,” said the rector.

That it is not in the power of words to bring it home to people in the way that it is possible to be taught it by actual experience!

Let us no more do this, but leaving off this disorderly way, let us set up a tribunal in ourselves for the sins committed by ourselves, becoming ourselves accusers, and judges, and executioners for our offenses.

If not so, still he is a brute, because I can’t declare otherwise, even for the sake of being ladylike.

On the other hand, many followed the common belief in asserting the existence of a God, but proclaimed Him heedless and indifferent to the affairs of men.

“Do not joke with me. But I know you would not joke on such a subject. And my question did not merely go to the state of his health. What do you think of him as a man generally? Do you call him an honest man?”

And He does not punish them, until He has pleaded with them; wherefore also, when He has put them in their place, He mentions the charges against them.

For the seed, which, so to speak, partakes of a divine creative power, is not to be thought guilty of the incentives to incontinence; and art always works up the matter submitted to it; and nothing is to be considered as evil in itself, but becomes so by the act of those who used it in such a way; for when properly and purely made use of, it comes out pure, but if disgracefully and improperly, then it becomes disgraceful.

We never hear of Caesar so bestowing promotion.

“Yes, my dear; sometimes.”

For my argument is partly against both in common, partly against these latter in particular.

For had he not been the first who was added by birth to the two unborn persons, Adam could not have said what he is recorded to have said, I have gotten a man by the Lord.

After this we also entreat for our sins, saying, And forgive us our debts, as we also forgive our debtors.

It might well be that he had altogether mistaken that touch of her hand.

Since we also honor the Emperor, and the purple and the diadem, because they are symbols of his office.

So that difference is the cause of number.

“Just say the word, and the girls shall come up and see you as they used to do.” Mr. Prosper thought at the moment that one of the girls was going to marry Joe Thoroughbung, and that he would not wish to see her.

He considers only that my body has been washed; but I have believed that the soul also has become both pure and holy; and I count it the sepulchre, the resurrection, the sanctification, the righteousness, the redemption, the adoption, the inheritance, the kingdom of heaven, the plenary effusion ([χορηγίαν]) of the Spirit.

“We sha’n’t wake him, shall we?” said she, as she took her last bit of muffin.

[Thus] I Clement, departing from Cæsarea Stratonis, together with Nicetas and Aquila, entered into Tyre of Phœnicia; and according to the injunction of Peter, who sent us, we lodged with Bernice, the daughter of Justa the Canaanitess.

What then is Paul's mind, and what is his custom?

My father says that the bonds I gave you are not worth the paper on which they were written.

Every spirit, he says, which confesses Jesus come in the flesh is of God, and every spirit that dissolves Jesus is not of God: and this is the spirit of Antichrist, of whom you have heard already, and he is now already in the world.

It would sometimes seem that she was all teeth, and yet it is certain that she never made an effort to show them.

And in her was found the blood of prophets and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth.

This benevolence on the part of the excellent Acacius, astonished the king of the Persians, as if the Romans were accustomed to conquer their enemies as well by their beneficence in peace as their prowess in war.

Margaret then asked him what she was to do, and where she was to live.

Only if he could have passed the morning in Paradise Row, and then have walked home with Roden in the dark evening, he could, he thought, have said what he had to say very conveniently.

“Then Lady Ushant will be disappointed,” said Mrs. Masters who had descended the stairs. “There has been something going on behind my back.”

“Not openly, not manifestly I am sure. Do you think that there are no temptations in your way?”

This ought not to be, if, as you suppose, things lose the good by being thus moved about.

“Ah! he wasn’t to be known and understood in that way. I’m aware there was a little prejudice, because of his being in trade, but we won’t talk of that now. Where should I have been without him, tradesman or no tradesman?”

Indeed, Zeno, defining the soul to be a spirit generated with (the body, ) constructs his argument in this way: That substance which by its departure causes the living being to die is a corporeal one.

“If you knew how many ladies in her position would think that the heavens had rained wealth upon them if some one would give them fifteen hundred pounds!”

This self-same thing also he said in the person of the Lord Himself, in another place, ' The Spirit of the Lord is upon me; because He has anointed me, He has sent me to preach the Gospel to the poor.

“Miss Spruce,” continued Lupex, “there are moments when the heart becomes too strong for a man.”

Now some affirm that the emperor came to this decision with a view to the establishment of unity in the church, since Athanasius was inexorable in his refusal to hold any communion with Arius and his adherents.

Because he was writing unto men well disposed, and exceedingly attentive to him.

Epistle 60. To Basil.

Slow and Bideawhile, and he had himself posted this letter in a pillarbox near to his house.

And here we heard for the first time that there was a long and weary region of sand before us in the portion of the Orange Free State through which we must pass.

Great is the confidence of the Teacher, when from his own good actions he is entitled to reprove his disciples.

For God is not only good, but also just; for if He were always good, and never just to render to every one according to his deeds, goodness would be found to be injustice.

His art more than all the world to him!

It was grievous to think of the mischief and danger into which Griselda Grantly was brought by the worldliness of her mother in those few weeks previous to Lady Lufton’s arrival in town—very grievous, at least, to her ladyship, as from time to time she heard of what was done in London.

If any bishop, despising the insignificance of his city, shall intrigue for the government of a more populous place, and transfer himself by whatever means to a larger flock, he shall first be driven from the chair he has usurped, and also shall be deprived of his own: so shall he preside neither over those whom in his greed he coveted, nor over those whom in his arrogance he spurned. Therefore let each be content with his own bounds, and not seek to be raised above the limits of his present post.

There was this difference, however, between them—that the old man felt a degree of triumph at his successful attempt to keep out his foes, whereas Feemy’s thoughts were those of unmixed sorrow.

Now, that Noetus affirms that the Son and Father are the same, no one is ignorant.

Lest haply if we delay we forget the things within us.'

If this admonition shall only induce you to correct these errors with the humility of a God-fearing man and the peaceful submission of a catholic, they will be regarded as the mistakes of an over-zealous young man, who is eager rather to amend them than to persevere in them.

“Because she was a woman, with a heart in her bosom.”

It is, indeed, better for a man to confess his ignorance of what he knows nothing about, than either to run into heresy which has been already condemned, or to found some new heresy, while recklessly daring to defend over and over again opinions which only display his ignorance.

The third day so paralyzed the man himself that he had to bethink himself not what sort of reply he could make, but how he could escape the necessity of replying by pretending to be ill.” It was in this way that the trial was brought to an end.

Augustine answered: Are you then really not ashamed to call the baptism of Christ a lie, even when it is found in the most false of men?

But Miss Dunstable hardly saw it in the same light. “If anybody were to write me such a letter about Bernard,” said she, “I should show it to him as a good joke.”

For in future I have no one to fear so much as the bishops, with a few exceptions.

Such is vice, and the life that is passed in vice.

But these same villains, vessels of wrath fitted for destruction, screwed up their noses and poured out, if I may so say, as from a well-head, foul noises through their nostrils, and rent the raiment from Christ's holy virgins, whose conversation gave an exact likeness of saints; they dragged them in triumph, naked as when they were born, through all the town; they made indecent sport of them at their pleasure; their deeds were barbarous and cruel.

His power and majesty (they say) Moses perceiving, set up the brazen serpent; and whoever gazed upon him obtained health.

If he have lived through this means, he did then die, but if he have died without this, he then lived.

[1 Corinthians 14:33] Wherefore, as the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ knows, it was from a regard for your good name, and with prayers that the Churches might not fall into confusion, but might continue as they were regulated by the Apostles, that I thought it necessary to write thus unto you, to the end that you might at length put to shame those who through the effects of their mutual enmity have brought the Churches to this condition.

No;—but Mr. Kennedy will.

Let him, therefore, who proposes to inquire why the prophet Jonah was three days in the capacious belly of a sea monster, begin by dismissing doubts as to the fact itself; for this did actually occur, and did not occur in vain.

Remembering not the things before,

There is a question raised about all those kinds of beasts which are not domesticated, nor are produced like frogs from the earth, but are propagated by male and female parents, such as wolves and animals of that kind; and it is asked how they could be found in the islands after the deluge, in which all the animals not in the ark perished, unless the breed was restored from those which were preserved in pairs in the ark.

Of one thing he was conscious,—that if Bragton should become his, it would be his duty to live there.

“Forgive you for what?” said she.

“To myself and my father.”

Ver. 15. Because the Law works wrath: for where no Law is, there is no transgression.

For as the art is potentially in the artist, but only in operation when he is working in accordance with it, so also the Spirit is ever present with those that are worthy, but works, as need requires, in prophecies, or in healings, or in some other actual carrying into effect of His potential action.

Is it because I have rejected a feigned laudation?

Even our brother Carcedonius himself consented to this, not indeed without much distress of spirit, on account of which I entreat you to pray for him, but eventually without opposition, believing that he submitted to Christ in submitting to you.

Lord Castlewell had gone out of town at a most unusual period,—at a time when the theatres always knew him, and had been away on the exact day which had been fixed for their marriage.

“I should think Dr Crofts knows that by this time, my dear.”

Was it not his duty, his manifest, his chief duty, to save her, as far as she could be saved, from further suffering and increased disgrace?

The Master of our Hunt has been banished from racecourses.” Here there was considerable opposition, and a few short but excited little dialogues were maintained;—throughout all which Tifto restrained himself like a Spartan.

That clergyman soon becomes an object of contempt who being often asked out to dinner never refuses to go.

I thereupon spent as much of my time as possible with one who had lately settled in our city, —a sagacious man, holding a high position among the Platonists,—and I progressed, and made the greatest improvements daily.

“Ah! the scenery is good, is it?”

‘They are the heroine and the hero, as I take it,’ said Mrs. Woodward, ‘and I presume them to be human, unless they turn out to be celestial.’

“I should have done it myself long ago, had you told me all the truth about your father’s affairs.”

He fell too into a kind of intimacy with Barry; he liked his daily glass, or three or four glasses, of sherry; and besides, it was a good thing for him to stand well in a professional point of view with a man who had the best house in the village, and who would soon have eight hundred a-year.

Justin: And God himself proclaimed by Moses, speaking thus: 'And circumcise the hardness of your hearts, and no longer stiffen the neck.

And this they cannot be made to understand, unless we leave to their use the estate which they always supposed to belong to their late presbyter; because, even if it was not his, they ought to have known this from the beginning.

Never again would she go there, unless she went there, in triumph—as Harry’s wife.

He was amused to hear a major called “Meejor,” but was unaware that the sound arose from Pat’s affection of English softness of speech.

And so the prophet Isaiah says, Cease from the man whose breath is in his nostrils, for it is He in whom he is reputed to be; or as it is more exactly and clearly in the Hebrew: for he is reputed high.

For the apostle makes a distinction, when he goes on to say, For in this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed upon with our house which is from heaven, if so be that being clothed we shall not be found naked; [2 Corinthians 5:2-3] which means, before we put off the garment of the flesh, we wish to be clothed with the celestial glory of immortality.

Yes, a man may say, but then if I do well I shall have admirers unnumbered.

To good works, putting them in mind of the true sustenance;

This spirit is also called the mind, regarding which an apostle speaks thus: With the mind I serve the law of God.

Scripture certainly commends that peace with excellent praise as a shadow of that which is to come.

Madame Brudo. Margaret, my love, you have made up your little difference with your betrothed? That is right. But what is it the grammar says? “ The quarrels of lovers are the renewals of love.” You’ll be twice as fond as ever now it’s over.

Therefore, if neither in the divine oracles is found another wisdom besides this Son, nor from the fathers have we heard of any such, yet they have confessed and written of the Wisdom coexisting with the Father unoriginately, proper to Him, and the Framer of the world, this must be the Son who even according to them is eternally coexistent with the Father.

“Angry with you?”

“And there’s another thing I must tell you, too, Mr. Trewillian. I come back to town in the same carriage with the Colonel. I thought it better.”

Chapter LXXII. at Turnover Castle

But for my part, I could wish not only to suffer bonds, but also to die at Jerusalem, for the name of my Lord Jesus Christ.

In reply to whom we say, that every man who, as Paul expresses it, is no longer under fear, as a schoolmaster, but who chooses good for its own sake, is a son of God; but this man is distinguished far and wide above every man who is called, on account of his virtues, a son of God, seeing He is, as it were, a kind of source and beginning of all such.

to General Fremont, and that he has altogether altered the whole organization of the military command as it previously existed.

Since, however, our friend did not on this ground ask whether it is to be believed that Lazarus was raised on the fourth day, or that Christ rose on the third day, I am much surprised that he reckoned what was done with Jonah to be incredible; unless, perchance, he thinks it easier for a dead man to be raised in life from his sepulchre, than for a living man to be kept in life in the spacious belly of a sea monster.

They must have not only a majority in the next Parliament, but a majority of good men—of men good and true.

For those words of the Psalm lament such hidden enemies: They bowed down my soul.

“Then do you mean to back out of it altogether, Mr Jones? I wouldn’t be afeared by Mr Cheekey like that!”

Nor was Aunt Emmeline very exigeant, though she was fantastic and sometimes disagreeable.

Lord George hesitated, and the Dean at once saw how it was.

A white man votes by manhood suffrage, providing he has been for one year an inhabitant of his State; but a man of color must have been for three years a citizen of the State, and must own a property qualification of 50l.

“And your cousin really doesn’t seem to mean anything.”

There were present the two barristers and the one attorney for each side, and many an anxious thought was given to the manner in which the meeting should be conducted.

“My dear, I beg your pardon,” said Miss Stanbury. “I beg your pardon, heartily. I’m a thoughtless old woman, I know. Never mind. Now, we’ll go in.”

But what means, You shall perform unto the Lord your oaths? It is this, you shall be true in swearing. But I say unto you, swear not at all.

The idea that would strike one on entering it was chiefly this: “Why was it a town at all?—why were there, on that spot, so many houses congregated, called Mohill?—what was the inducement to people to come and live there?—Why didn’t they go to Longford, to Cavan, to Carrick, to Dublin,—anywhere rather than there, when they were going to settle themselves?” This is a question which proposes itself at the sight of many Irish towns; they look so poor, so destitute of advantage, so unfriended.

For these are accidents belonging to men, without which they are almost never found.

At first it was but a changing shadow; but it settled into a dark veil of sorrow which obscured all his virtues, and made the worthy senior of his room shake his thin grey locks once and again.

And in another place, declaring this, He said, All things that the Father has are Mine, speaking of knowledge.

For when the Spirit of God establishes harmony among Christian princes, a twofold confidence is produced throughout the world, because the progress of love and faith makes the power of their arms in both directions unconquerable, so that God being propitiated by one confession, the falseness of heretics and the enmity of barbarians are simultaneously overthrown, most glorious Emperor.

Some said that the coins should be distributed among the poor; others that they should be given to the church, while others were for sending them back to the relatives of the deceased.

Archelaus said: As you cannot do so much for yourself, like a thorough master of your art, so neither should I care to put this question right and with all patience to make it clear, and to give the evident solution of the difficulty, were it not for the sake of those who are present with us, and who listen to us.

I call those my days, which by my own daring I have made for myself, whereby I have forsaken Him: and, since He reigns everywhere, and is all-powerful, and holds all things, I have deserved prison; that is, I have received the darkness of ignorance, and the bonds of mortality For in these days of mine, The snares of death compassed me round about, and the pains of hell gat hold upon me [Psalm 114:3]: pains that would not have overtaken me, had I not wandered from You.

Mrs. Ray also got up, leaving her mark in her book.

Nowhere was there labour or pain, or despair and cares, or reproaches, and insults, or the countless ills which assailed Job: but nevertheless, when nothing of this kind existed, he fell and was overthrown.

There was, too, another hope,—another hope of instant moneys by which Guatemala might be staved off, as to which further explanation shall be given in a further chapter.

“Nothing, I think, would ever have made me marry Lord Castlewell.”

Nay, but this is the great indication of your high birth, and of your love, that you should believe God without pledges.

[Luke 4:18] And again, Behold My Servant Whom I have chosen, My beloved in Whom My soul is well pleased, I will put My Spirit upon Him.

The Arians are blind to the plain sense of Scripture, and are more blasphemous than the Jews; Christ's reply to the latter meets the objections of the former ( 22-24).

Well, says one, he was not of Paul, so this does not imply 'being of' another.

“But I want you to understand me.”

She was thoroughly convinced that she was being illused.

Though I had felt Washington to be disagreeable as a city, yet I was almost sorry to leave it when the day of my departure came.

We must believe, must apprehend, must worship; and such acts of devotion must stand in lieu of definition.

And then there seemed to be a fair prospect that the building would fall of itself, which surely would be a great triumph.

For in other respects, too, injustice in proportion to the enmity it displays against righteousness affords occasion for attestations of that to which it is opposed as an enemy, that so righteousness may be perfected in injustice, as strength is perfected in weakness.

Is it not then the height of stupidity that they who mourn the death of the body should do this so earnestly, although they know that they will not raise the dead man to life by their lamentation; but that we should not manifest anything of the kind, and this when we know that often there is hope of conducting the lost soul back to its former life?

God, I am sure, is subject to no change; His eternity admits not of defect or amendment, of gain or of loss.

This at that time, as was meet, I accepted as genuine.

And henceforth if these four and twenty Elders of ours have been crowned with any glory for the sake of their teaching, they shall with bowed heads offer it to the Lamb who was slain for the salvation of the world: for He it was Who vouchsafed for the honour of His name to grant to them such exalted feelings and to us whatever words were needful to set forth such profound thoughts.

“No, I will not be angry.”

Don’t joke with me about it any more, there’s a dear woman.

But as many of them as become parents, beget children from the circumstance that they have not yet put off the entire remains of their old nature in exchange for the perfect renovation which awaits them.

Chapter 6. That he was the Servant of God, and the Conqueror of Nations.

You have twice promised; and can have no right to go back because you are displeased with what my mother may have said.

When confidences have been made, the persons making them must abide the consequences.

So also were there three kings at the Civil Service Examination Board.

She sat herself down at her open window and looked out for a while upon the heavens.

The brother with whom it was found said that its title is Epitaphium—a name which we might believe you to have approved, if we found in the work a notice of the lives or writings of those only who are deceased.

‘I fear it is too late to do anything tonight,’ said Harry, looking at his watch. ‘The last train is gone, and I could not possibly find him out before twelve.’

There were in it two very comfortable armchairs and a comfortable sofa.

[Luke 9:56] As far as we can, we must strive that, if possible, no soul be lost.

In the East most of the cities shrank from participation in the wrong, but did not make a rent in the body of the church.

“I suppose he has an opinion of his own on that subject?”

She stood as high as Lady Selina, though on very different grounds.

Yet (it must be) in accordance with the apostle, who warns us to use this world as if we abuse it not; for the fashion of this world is passing away.

For where is the body now, save with Him that assumed it?

I at once began to explain my business.

He had seemed to prefer to shrink and cower and be mysterious with the Carrolls to coming forward boldly with such a man as Yorke Clayton.

But the timber still remained.

“We feel it so,—Clary and I,—and so does Mary. I can’t tell you the sort of anxiety we were in all day yesterday. First we got the telegram about your arm,—and then Stemm came down at eight and told us that you were returned. Stemm was quite humane on the occasion.”

Then—she thought of Mr Samuel Rubb, junior.

1 Corinthians 12:19-20

“Oh,” said Ayala, quite satisfied,—remembering now that she had heard her friend Nina boast of a Colonel cousin, who was supposed to be the youngest Colonel in the British army, who had done some wonderful thing,—taken a new province in India, or marched across Africa, or defended the Turks,—or perhaps conquered them.

As he spoke, Auguste Emile Septimus held out his hand to the young Commander; and Henri could not refuse the proffered grasp.

On this account, therefore, He said, 'I have come to send fire on the earth; and how I wish that it were kindled!'

For this end therefore we received it, that we might build up.

Here Atys, who from an amatory mania had castrated himself, is by the oracle designated as Adonis and Bacchus.

Receive the Holy Ghost: whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; and whose soever ye retain, they are retained.

[1] [Matthew 19:23] Verily I say unto you, It is difficult for a rich man to enter the kingdom of [2] heaven.

If he shall read and hear with persuasion, it is well; and if not, it is meet for me to say that I wrote for those open to persuasion and not for mockers.

O tardy messengers!

“It is not you that are going to marry him, mamma.”

Epistle 47

Because the one is the fruit of the soul and of free choice, whence also it is easily performed: but the other is injurious treatment and violence.

For when it had been objected that His disciples had plucked the ears of grain on the sabbath-day, the instance was taken from history; Have ye not read, says He, what David did when he was an hungered, and they that were with him; how he entered into the house of God, and did eat the showbread, which was not lawful for him to eat, neither for them that were with him, but only for the priests?

For before, one tongue there was: but one tongue for men agreeing was good, one tongue for humble men was good: but when that gathering together did into a union of pride fall headlong, God spared them; even though He divided the tongues, lest by understanding one another they should make a destructive unity.

He was a second mother to all the lambs, and when shearing came watched with the eyes of Argus to see that the sheep were not wounded by the shearers, or the wool left on their backs.

[1 Timothy 1:1] For if in truth the flesh was united with God the Word from its first origin, or rather if it existed in Him and was identical in subsistence with Him, how was it that it was not endowed completely with all wisdom and grace?

“I didn’t mean to be uncivil,” stammered Isabel.

Through that we waded, and then made our way in safety to the inn.

Tell me what is a Principality, and what a Power, and what a Virtue, and what an Angel: and then search out their Creator, for all things were made by Him.

Then again, that you may not think that this remembering you without ceasing is said simply, he has added, before our God and Father.

You would not call your brother, lord.

Great, I say, not only with regard to the bodily formation, but to what is more marvellous than this, I mean the soul itself, and the attributes we behold in it.

For this is, if anything the subversion of the Church, the being in divisions.

On His Birthday, III: Delivered on the Anniversary of his Elevation to the Pontificate.

It was grievously unhappy; but the misery of it came from God, and was in no wise due to human fault.

He combined two professions, in both of which he had been successful,—had been, and continued to be, at the time in which we speak of him.

We felt that there was something more to be told than we had yet heard, and a great fear fell upon us.

[Job 34:10-11] And also the Apostle said, Star excels star in brightness.

“They are not in your hands now, as far as I know.”

R. Then, when anything perishes that is true, Truth perishes not.

With what pride do we regard our chief ministers, the great servants of state, the oligarchs of the nation on whose wisdom we lean, to whom we look for guidance in our difficulties!

“Those sort of men never do,” said Mrs. Carbuncle.

That was all over now.

But there was the necessity of resolving what he would say to Mr Scruby.

Why do ye not rather suffer yourselves to be defrauded?

He took steps also to preserve the chastity even of his enemy.

“Yes; you can send Beatrice to give her notice, you know. She never was unreasonable, and I do not think that you would find her so. You should tell her, you know—”

I shall mention to you the names of a few English novelists, who lived in times now somewhat removed from us, and of some who went from us, so to say, but the other day.

But as a question may be here captiously raised about the meaning of the body (or the flesh), I will at once state that I understand by the human body nothing else than that fabric of the flesh which, whatever be the kind of material of which it is constructed and modified, is seen and handled, and sometimes indeed killed, by men.

“Florian, do you give me your most solemn assurance that you saw nothing of this evil work while it was being perpetrated?”

And when we were dead in our sins and in the uncircumcision of our flesh, God has quickened us together with Him, having forgiven us all trespasses; blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way nailing it to His cross.

She looked at him softly and kindly, and though she uttered no articulate word, her countenance seemed to show that the meeting was not unpleasant to her.

The knowledge of God is best shown by believing in Him without proofs and demonstrations.

Long she sat, holding her head with one hand, while the other attempted to use the pen which would not move over the paper.

And we speak also of a spirit in man distinct from the mind, to which spirit belong the images that are formed after the likeness of bodies; and of this the apostle speaks to the Corinthians, where he says, But if I shall have prayed with a tongue, my spirit prays, but my understanding is unfruitful.

After this I will return, and rebuild the tabernacle of David which is fallen down.

He did not consider with himself, nor say, What!

His credit was at stake in a more than ordinary manner; he had about a week since borrowed money from the woman who kept the public-house in Norfolk Street, and having borrowed it for a week only, felt that this was a debt of honour which it was incumbent on him to pay.

Nay, if you will accuse, accuse yourself.

Since it was probable that Timothy might be apprehended, and be deserted, and be relieved by no friendly attention, or influence, or assistance, but be abandoned even by his friends and the faithful themselves, hear what he says, This you know, that all they which are in Asia be turned away from me.

If, then, nourishment belongs by nature to the vegetative life and impulse to the sentient, freedom of will by nature belongs to the rational and intellectual life.

But it was not every young woman who could live with her.

The monster meetings and O’Connell’s triumphs are not so long gone by but that many of us can remember the first demand for secession made by Ireland, and the line which was then taken by American sympathies.

And the fire that was to offer him up was looking out for him until he came.

[Hebrews 11:37-38] What shall I say of the sons of Jonadab the son of Rechab, of whom we are told that, when at the Lord's bidding the prophet Jeremiah offered them wine, they replied: We drink no wine: for Jonadab the son of Rechab, our father, commanded us, saying: You shall drink no wine, you and your sons forever: and you shall build no house, nor sow any seed, nor plant vineyards nor possess them: but you shall dwell in tents all your days?

His eagerness in coming back to the subject quite surprised her.

These bind us, though our body be free.

The practice of justice and of virtue would, he knew, have much less effect in Rome than the friendship and enmity of such men.

But after imparting a different shape to this (account), he explains it to his pupils as if it were something novel, being under the impression that the entire arrangement of his doctrine (springs) out of it.

And tidings so misrepresenting me would have reached England before me, and I should there have no friend.

Toil and groans shall perish: prayers pass away, hymns of praise succeed.

“But I do. See all the harm I have done;—and yet I did not mean it.”

Is not pleasure your object, beloved?

My boy has gone, and I know that he will not come back to me.

So then the truth as to the birth supports the similarity of essence and the similarity of essence does not undermine the personal reality of the birth.

There is indeed no one who so lives as not to some extent to fail in duty.

Much of this scenery, I say, is superior to the famed and classic lands of Europe.

They are accused of treason among you who have whispered any evil about your kings.

But as he made this assertion, almost everybody in the court except her own counsel did look at her.

[Acts 19:4] For when the sacrifice was not yet offered, neither had the spirit yet come down, nor sin was put away, nor the enmity removed, nor the curse destroyed; how was remission to take place?

“We can get in somewhere,” continued Bell. “There are plenty of lodgings in Guestwick, you know.” But the sound of the word lodgings was uncomfortable in Mrs Dale’s ears.

“Then what makes him quarrel with me? He ought to know which side his bread is buttered.”

The horror of poor Mr. Morris’s fate had almost disappeared under the awe occasioned by the attack on Captain Clayton.

The whole importance of this question to me, in the first place, is as it affects Proculeianus and myself; and if, perchance, he thinks himself not a match for me, let him implore the aid of any one whom he pleases as his colleague in the debate.

Why are we so wedded to unstable objects?

It would be pleasant to him to have back his two fields in this way;—his two fields, and something else beyond!

For he was not so forgetful of his own words and teaching as to say that He was void of righteousness, whom he had always proclaimed as righteousness, saying: Who was made unto us righteousness and sanctification and redemption.

“I don’t care for politics. I see no difference in parties.”

They are so, and we are angry.

Better far, then, is it to become at once the imitator and the servant of the best of all beings; for only by holy service will any one be able to imitate God, and to serve and worship Him only by imitating Him.

For example, He said of Himself, 'I and the Father are one ,' implying that things originate are not so.

We believe that this is expedient for us—to love you, and to confer all things upon you, who hate us.

For this reason the apostles also reasoned submissively, saying, Let us speak freely of the Patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried.

With how much greater show of reason might we say against you, That master of all traitors, the devil, wished to persuade Christ to throw Himself headlong down, and was repulsed!

“Who thinks about paying under such circumstances as these?”

“And think of the young man who has robbed me of them all! And you are to go there too, so that you may see what you have done. There was a time, Hugh, when I was very nearly pleasing all my friends and shewing myself to be a young lady of high taste and noble fortune,—and an obedient, good girl.”

Oh, yes;—indeed I will.

“A hundred and fifty,” said Vavasor.

It was dusk, and no one could see him as he brushed a tear from each eye with the back of his hand.

One word we must say as to Caroline.

The world ought to be made aware that the heir to Buston had been married in the presence of the Squire of Buston.

“But he won’t have any call to come to Baslehurst, Mrs. Rowan. That’s what I mean.”

Nothing so wise as this ignorance, where they that profess they know nothing are wisest of all, and they that spend overmuch labor on these questions, the most foolish of all.

“But, hark!” said the Squire, with a mind evidently perturbed.

Three tickets were to be kept over for presentation to bores endowed with a power of making themselves absolutely unendurable if not admitted at the last moment,—and ten were left for the giver of the feast and his own family and friends.

And again a second time the Lord asked not whether Peter loved (amaret) Him, but whether he had a regard (diligeret)for Him, and, he again answered, Lord, You know that I love (amo) You.

Then, as he rode along, he composed a sonnet, fitting to his case, the strength and rhythm of which seemed to him, as he sat on horseback, to be almost perfect.

But I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife except it be for fornication, and marry another, commits adultery. For since he had stopped their mouths, He then gives the law with His own authority, like as touching the meats, like as touching the Sabbath.

When he talked of dinner she did more than smile and refuse.

He removes from place to place, Who is not contained in any place; the timeless, the bodiless, the uncircumscript, the same Who was and is; Who was both above time, and came under time, and was invisible and is seen.

In answer to such a letter as that the dean might well say, “Think again of it.

“Of course I do;—and he talks to me as if I were some old fogy with an estate of my own. I must concoct a letter and explain my views; and the more I can make him understand how things really are the better. I don’t suppose he wants to see his daughter come to grief.”

For if the baptism of John required washing off, it must, beyond all doubt, have had some foulness in it.

The work which he was now doing, was the work for which he had been training himself all his life.

“It will be so dull. Your cousin is the best friend in all the world, and would make as good a husband as could be picked out of all the gentlemen of England; but in his present mood with me he is not a comfortable host. What nonsense he did talk about the Melmottes!”

Almost the entire city had crowded to see the emperor, for they expected that something extraordinary would result from this interview with the bishop.

“I cannot say at all. He is sometimes here and sometimes with his father at Naples. But when here, he lives chiefly with the Americans. They say he is going to marry an American girl,—their minister’s niece. There are three of them, I think, and he is to take the eldest.” Lady Rowley asked no more questions, and let her august visitor go, almost without another word.

What is he beaten for?

Ofttimes this word is wont to be used for uniting and pacifying one thing and another, that they may not mutually disagree: as when God is establishing His covenant between Himself and His people, this word the Scripture uses; for instead of that expression which is in Latin between Me and you, the Greek has, in the midst of Me and you.

He came there, and behaved so well,—so much like a perfect gentleman.

And to such an extent is account taken, not so much of the actual thing which is done as of the disposition of the doer, that on the other hand truth is sometimes found to have injured some, and a lie to have done them good.

But she would expend nothing in clothes for herself.

When they reached the brewery they all declared themselves to be very much astonished on learning that it was already past nine. Rachel’s surprise, at any rate, was real. “I must go home at once,” she said; “I don’t know what mamma will think of me.” And then, wishing them all goodbye, without further delay she hurried on into the churchyard.

For this rule, (they say), is enjoined upon the animal seed, in order that the salvation, which we do not possess by any privilege of our state, we may work out by right of our conduct.

For the very fact that we are not yet with God, the very fact that we are living amid trials and difficulties, that we cannot be without fear, is tribulation: for there is not that peace which is promised us.

The Father wills the Son and the Son wills the Father

He tells us at the same time that Cicero’s own fortune was less than £4000.

“Baampton,” said the boy, with an accent that was almost Scotch, when he was asked the name of the place.

“But when shall we hear of your saying something?”

And her aunt’s heart would be broken, and the world,—the world as she knew it,—would pretty nearly collapse around her.

“Is Frank to go back to Cambridge, Arabella?” said the countess to her sister-in-law, speaking across her nephew.

During the crop time, at which period my visit was made, and which lasts generally from November till May, the negroes sleep during six hours out of the twenty-four, have two for their meals, and work for sixteen I No difference is made on Sunday.

What is, then, the light that is sealed, but that of the seal of the Spirit, believing in Whom, you were sealed, he says, with the Holy Spirit of promise.

The Leeward Islands were, and properly speaking are, another cluster lying across the coast of Venezuela, of which Curacoa is the chief.

This if we let work on them, we shall be able not only to dry up the thorns, but also the humor from them, since if they be deeply fixed, all is rendered vain.

So it came to pass that when Daniel Thwaite called at the house exactly at one o’clock Lady Anna was not expecting him.

But, nevertheless, even in her bosom was living the usual feminine passion for admiration.

But thanks be to the Lord, that both among us— not indeed everywhere, but in the great majority of places— and also in the other parts of Africa, the peace of the Catholic Church both has gained and is gaining ground, without any of these madmen being killed.

Perigenes was ordained bishop of Patræ: but inasmuch as the inhabitants of that city refused to admit him, the bishop of Rome directed that he should be assigned to the metropolitan see of Corinth, which had become vacant by the decease of its former bishop; here he presided during the rest of his days.

Could it be that reverses of fortune with reference to moderate sums of money, such as this which was now coming into his hands, would always affect him in the same way?

CAPT. O. He is not convicted, nor is he charged with felony; and she is not a castaway,—and I mean to make her Mrs. Oakley. Now, sir, I don’t mind hearing anything you have to say.

Podgens was their name, and they were great favourites with her ladyship, both having been servants up at the house.

It would seem that the captain, before issuing from his bedroom, scented himself with otto of whisky.” Yet there is a kindliness about him which softens our hearts, though in truth he is very careful that the kindness shall always be shown to himself.

That other matter was now arranged.

Is it not a cutting of blocks with a razor, this work of mine?

Judah is a lion's cub; from a sprout, my son, you are gone up: he stooped down, he couched as a lion, and as a lion's cub: who shall rouse him up?

For lest, after liberating them from any charges against them, he should make them the more listless, as not being observed; he gives them another hint in the words,

At her own peril to have saved the teacher of the world?

For the Apostle did not number individually, so as to say 'whether Angel, or Throne, or Dominion, or Authority,' but he mentions together all according to their kind, 'whether Angels, or Archangels, or Principalities :' for in this way is the origination of the creatures.

And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of Man be lifted up.

He that transgresses the Law is indeed also unjust; for not unjust he is not, that transgresses the Law: but every one that transgresses the Law is unjust, not every unjust man does transgress the Law.

Added to these was the testimony of Ursacius and Valens, who had formerly calumniated me, but afterwards changed their minds, and not only gave their assent to the sentence that was passed in my favour, but also confessed that they themselves and the rest of my enemies were false accusers; for men who make such a change and such a recantation of course reflect upon Eusebius and his fellows, for with them they had contrived the plot against me.

Chapter X. Crunch’em Can’t Be Had

Because you have a multitude of slaves and cattle?

Whence it is not surprising that a man resisting in the cause of falsehood, pressed hard in the straits of the truth that contradicts it, should have chosen rather to gasp forth mad abuse, than to walk in the path of that truth which cannot be overcome.

“By George, he’s been drinking!” Conway said to himself, after the first glance.

The master does in fact excuse the evil, — blink at it, and ignore it, finding it easier to pay his percentage than to carry on a long and perhaps losing fight with his household and his tradesmen.

Your Right Hand, O Lord, has dashed in pieces the enemy; [Exodus 15:6] so the Holy Spirit is called the Finger of God, as the Lord Himself says: But if I by the Finger of God cast out devils.

“I’m sure I ought to agree with you, because we never had any.” Then there was a pause. “I suppose you’ve heard about Lord Ongar,” she said.

“But what reasons?”

He had no real hope, unless when he was in one of those poetic moods.

When the Apostle John says, Every man who does sin, does also iniquity and sin is iniquity.

For they are not pure in heart; and Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God.

I rebuke and chasten those whom I love.

He, in truth, bears witness to himself that he is faithful and loyal towards God; and to the tempter, that he in vain envied him who is faithful through love; and to the Lord, of the inspired persuasion in reference to His doctrine, from which he will not depart through fear of death; further, he confirms also the truth of preaching by his deed, showing that God to whom he hastes is powerful.

We are acting for Lord Lovel, and not for the Lovel family.

[2 Samuel 16:11] And if you please, we will examine the very cases themselves.

Rabirius was charged with having slaughtered the Tribune Saturninus by consular authority, the Consuls of the day having been ordered to defend the Republic, as Cicero had been ordered.

that he could not have done so even had he himself been well adapted for the attempt, whereas he was in truth nearly as ill adapted as a man might be?

But when you speak the words of one that would call back (the dead), and speakest of your long intimacy and his beneficence, it is but for this you mourn (not because he was a sinner), thou dost but pretend to say it.

There is not much in the treatise De Inventione to arrest us.

“It is so—certainly—yes, it certainly is connected with yourself, Mr. Slope.”

Those who embraced the Christian faith, after the period of his passion, greatly venerated this tomb; but those who hated Christianity, having covered the spot with a mound of earth, erected on it a temple to Venus, and set up her image there, not caring for the memory of the place.

“I will write to her, if you please,” said the wife, who felt that she could hardly refuse any longer.

For nothing is equal to the soul.

Rules were not made to control the club in a matter of such importance as this.

Wherefore above all, if you will have men see your good deeds, hide them now, that then all may look on them with the more honor, God making them manifest, and extolling them, and proclaiming them before all.

It is the old point of honor which, till it had been made absurd by certain changes of circumstances, was always grand and usually beneficent.

The country is as yet but touched by the pioneering hand of population.

“What a goose you are, Glencora. If it suited me to be a Lord of the Treasury, what difference would the salary make?”

It seems to have been accepted as being in no especial way remarkable.

You are a critic of things invisible; I ask you to explain a visible event.

And if what belongs to friends be reckoned common property, and man be the friend of God— for through the mediation of the Word has he been made the friend of God— then accordingly all things become man's, because all things are God's, and the common property of both the friends, God and man.

It was on the Tuesday evening that the chief mischief was done.

But she had done so much more than this, and so much worse!

R. Your Divine Physician yields so far to your wish.

Consider, then, your fault while there is time; dread, while you can, the severity of the future judge; lest you then find it bitter, having shed no tears to avoid it now.

It is open to us all to enjoy those delights with as keen a relish as the most finished connoisseur.

But then it may be taken as certain that under such circumstances Lady Mabel herself would not have remained.

On the next morning her lover took his departure by an earlier train than he had intended.

For he will deem it unlawful to injure a man; and if there shall be any one who would compel him to depart from God, he will not refuse tortures nor death.

“Beauty and cleverness won’t make a good wife,” said Amelia, who was the wise one of the family.

He found me walking about the little town at dawn, and took out of his pocket a long letter of complaint, addressed to some one in authority, which he insisted on reading to me.

You see, therefore, to what point he comes, when anger is removed and taken away from God.

This the men of Connecticut refused to do.

With the success or failure of his book on that occasion our story is not concerned.

“And I know it now, though she is not my daughter. I was only joking. As soon as I am certain,—finally certain,—that she can never become my wife, I will take back my money. You need not be afraid. The nature of the arrangement we have made shall then be explained to her.”

Creation, Lordship, the having need of naught, authorship of all good— these he has declared.

But in applying such appellations to the Divine essence, which passes all understanding, we do not seek to glory in it by the names we employ, but to guide our own selves by the aid of such terms towards the comprehension of the things which are hidden.

For if the reason that they do not receive our baptism be that we are a generation of vipers— to use the expression in his epistle— why did they receive the baptism of the followers of Maximianus, of whom their Council speaks in the following terms: "Because the enfolding of a poisoned womb has long concealed the baneful offspring of a viper's seed, and the moist concretions of conceived iniquity have by slow heat flowed forth into the members of serpents"?

In relation to the originate, then, the Spirit is said to be in them in various portions and in various manners, [Hebrews 1:1] while in relation to the Father and the Son it is more consistent with true religion to assert Him not to be in but to be with.

Thus Paul was an Apostle of the Gospel, 'which God promised afore by His prophets in the holy Scriptures [Romans 1:2]:' and our Lord Himself said, 'ye search the Scriptures, for they are they which testify of Me [John 5:39].'

[2 Corinthians 4:13] What is the same Spirit, but that Spirit whom these righteous men also had who said such things?

All the honours moreover conferred on the sacred ministry by the great Constantine Julian took away.

“Quite natural. You could have done nothing else.”

Against these the Psalmist, looking back to Jerusalem, and beseeching God that he may be delivered from captivity, says— what?

For, on hearing that I came bound from Syria for the common name and hope, trusting through your prayers to be permitted to fight with beasts at Rome, that so by martyrdom I may indeed become the disciple of Him who gave Himself for us, an offering and sacrifice to God, [Ephesians 5:2] [you hastened to see me ].

From the Gospel of John we have already adduced some passages.

But she mistrusted the letter, not construing it closely so as to discover what might really be its full meaning, but perceiving that the young man took, or intended to take, very much into his own hands; that he demanded that everything should be surrendered to his will and pleasure, without any guarantee on his part that such surrendering should be properly acknowledged.

And yet the children being not yet born, one was honored and the other condemned.

Those bonds Angels reverence, these they even make a mock of; those bonds are wont to draw up from earth to heaven; these bonds draw down to earth from heaven.

For let no one on this foundation building adulteries, blasphemies, sacrileges, idolatries, perjuries, think he shall be saved through fire, as though they were the wood, hay, stubble: but he that builds the love of earthly things on the foundation of the kingdom of Heaven, that is upon Christ, his love of temporal things shall be burned, and himself shall be saved through the right foundation.

How could he have hoped that Ayala should accept such a one, merely because he would have a good house of his own and a carriage?

Then he gives specimens of the accusations made, as he says, by the gods against them, and then goes on: But to some who asked Hecate whether Christ were a God, she replied, You know the condition of the disembodied immortal soul, and that if it has been severed from wisdom it always errs.

“No right to be warden with eight hundred a year; no right to be warden with such a house as this; no right to spend in luxury money that was intended for charity. Mr Bold may do as he pleases about his suit, but I hope he will not abandon it for my sake.”

“But if we paid him to be more accurate?” said Madame Goesler.

“I know that he has been here. I met him at the station at Exeter. Perhaps I should not say so, but I wish he had remained away.”

The people had not interfered there, and the day had been altogether propitious.

Your watchful affection has kept her a virgin.

She had no contests to wage with the desultory chemists of the age.

[1 Corinthians 4:7] Why, by your ostentation of yourself, do you judge others?

For the saying, He that endures to the end, the same shall be saved, is an intimation of this.

I salute the company of virgins, and the order of widows; of whom may I have joy!

For when a barbarian and an untaught person utters things which no man on earth ever knew, and does not only utter, (though if this were the only thing it were a great marvel,) but besides this, affords another and a stronger proof that what he says is divinely inspired, namely, the convincing all his hearers through all time; who will not wonder at the power that dwells in him?

Chapter 23. The opinion of the Jews regarding the law does an injury to God

By this time there had sprung up an intimacy between ourselves and Mrs. Grimes which seemed to justify an expression of the doubt which I then threw on the propriety of such a disarrangement of her most private domestic affairs. “ Mr. Grimes will hardly approve of that,” we said.

1 Corinthians 15:57

Chapter LVII. Lord Nidderdale Tries His Hand Again

A man on some occasion inadvertently takes a little more wine than is good for him.

And the bishop of the diocese, and Mrs Proudie were there.

Therefore thus says the Lord God of Israel, I said your house and your father's house should walk before me for ever: but now the Lord says, Be it far from me; for them that honor me will I honor, and he that despises me shall be despised.

All this Bertram understood, more thoroughly, perhaps, than she did; and for many weeks he abstained altogether from going to Hadley.

He was the offender;—for aught that any of them yet knew, the murderer.

Though his eyes and ears were always open, though he attended to everything, and was a man of sharp intelligence, he did not yet quite understand the bearing and sequence of English titles.

If one were asked, will he be able to answer outright to the questions, In what he differs from the brutes, in what he is akin to the heavenly inhabitants, what can be made of man?

For if (they argue) we say the Body is of one Essence with the Word, the Triad remains a Triad; for then the Word imports no foreign element into it; but if we admit that the Body derived from Mary is human, it follows, since the Body is foreign in Essence, and the Word is in it, that the addition of the Body causes a Tetrad instead of a Triad.

“Most certainly.”

You weren’t drunk when you went among them, or I should think nothing about it—for a drunken man doesn’t know what he does; and it wasn’t from chance—for a man never seeks society so much beneath himself from chance; and it wasn’t from habit—for I know your habits well enough, and that’s not one of them; but I fear you were there by agreement.

He knows nothing, however, of pepper or of laser, but he is quite at home with cumin, and is especially clever in plying the noisy mortar with sweetly smelling plants.

What mode of getting rid of the bishop or his wife Lady Lufton proposed to herself, I am unable to say; but I think she lived in hopes that in some way it might be done.

“He wants to make you Mrs Whittlestaff.”

Yea, I am able.

It has been a great misfortune; but, placed as I was, I could not help myself.

We are suffered to know that the Son is begotten, not to dispute upon the manner of His begetting.

“He shall have the estate for his life,” the squire said to his son John.

These words of the holy man of God indicate that the saints ask for perseverance directly from God, when with this intention they say, Give us this day our daily bread, that they may not be separated from Christ's body, but may continue in that holiness in which they allow no crime by which they may deserve to be separated from it.

“Indeed there are,” said Seward.

“I could do my work very well,” he said, “if you were not here.”

Worthy of honour is in truth that Spirit, holy and good; and fittingly are we baptized into Father, Son, and Holy Ghost.

As regards, however, the burning like a taper of the pyramid, though composed of stone, the cause of this is the following.

In the, first place, Frank was obliged, very unwillingly, to consent that Mr Armstrong should remain, at any rate one day longer, in the country.

“And now, suppose you dress for dinner,” said the baronet. “I’ve got ahead of you there you see. What I’ve told you to-day I have already told your mother.”

“You are weak as water,” said the unhappy father.

Men who have roughed it in the wilderness, as many of our Colonists have had to do, before they have settled themselves into townships, have learned this lesson so perfectly that they are inclined, perhaps, to be too fond of a deluge.

The Psalmist says, His glory shall not descend after him.

According to the custom of his country, he had from his youth upwards, learned the Holy Word, and was afterwards made acquainted with the learning of the Greeks, by the teachers who then frequented his native city.

By the law must be understood not circumcision, or Sabbaths, or sacrifices, or the other Jewish observances, but the true law, viz., You shall not kill, You shall not commit adultery, You shall not bear false witness, and so on.

He was not the John Rossiter to whom she had given her heart.

But before the dinner was quite ended, before he had said the grace which it was always his duty to pronounce, there came a message to him from the rectory.

And if I were still in doubt, I would continue thus: Was Plato no longer mighty in dialectics, nor able to defend his views, after Aristotle had taken his departure; and, on that account, are the opinions of Plato false?

And when He was on the Cross, I thirst, [John 19:28] He said, although they gave not to Him that for which He was thirsting.

Of that also he taught himself to be quite certain.

The nearer she drew to him the slower became her pace, and more majestic.

“ He is a Kafir still,” a gentleman said to me, “ but a Kafir with the addition of European cunning without a touch of European conscience.” As far as I could observe, the merchants and shopkeepers who employ Kafirs about their stores, and persons who have Kafirs about their houses, do eschew the school Kafir.

What, then, bordered on the side of the region which you call shining and sacred?

“I wasn’t there to see, Aunt Susanna; and therefore I can’t swear to it. That’s his name in all the peerages, and I suppose they ought to know.”

But admit that he lives as he wishes, because he has done violence to himself, and forced himself not to wish what he cannot obtain, and to wish only what he can (as Terence has it, Since you cannot do what you will, will what you can ), is he therefore blessed because he is patiently wretched?

At last, when she told him that she herself was very cold, and reminded him that for the last hour there had been no fire, still speechless, he went up with her to their bed.

But as he writes of these civil wars, there is an absence of this feeling of perfect self-satisfaction, and at the same time he is much less cruel.

[63, 64] [Luke 1:62] And they made signs to his father, saying, How do you wish to name him?

Neither let us then destroy our order, nor place the head below and the feet above: now this is done when we cast down right reason, and set our lusts, passions, and pleasure, over the rational part: whence violent are the billows, and great the confusion, and intolerable the tempest, all things being wrapt in darkness.

; and in another place, For of Him, and through Him, and to Him, are all things.

So then the testimony comes from all quarters: from citizens, from foreigners, from proselytes.

I will offer to You oxen with he-goats.

At any rate, they were clearly contraband of war.

But in the early part of last summer an evil time had come.

The two-thirds are almost exclusively British, the Dutch element having had little or no holding in this small thriving capital of the Eastern Province.

For it is blasphemy to believe or to say (even before it can be understood) that any other than God is creator of any nature, be it never so small and mortal.

He could see that she was as pretty as ever, that she was but very little altered.

while Constantine upbraided him for his impiety and enormous guilt. At last Maximian obtained leave that the manner of his death should be at his own choice, and he strangled himself.

When she should be established in her new luxurious home, with servants calling her my lady, with none to contradict her right, she would no longer be enabled to sit late into the night discussing matters with her friend the tailor.

“Will you tell me, Mary, that you will not see him again?”

“He has plenty of friends. I will see that he is not left without everything that he wants.”

To such, under the guise of a learner, it is well said in Solomon, My son, do nothing without counsel, and after it is done you shall not repent [Sirach 32:24].

“And why didn’t you like me then? Did I say anything to offend you?”

The very humanitarianism of it was to him a disgusting pretence.

Her Lady Jane was much more august than the other Lady Jane;—very much more august indeed.

For undoubtedly, as the Holy Spirit has unfolded to you, they are leagued with the Manichæans' error, who deny that the only-begotten Son of God took our nature's true Manhood, and maintain that all His bodily actions were the actions of a false apparition.

It was a return to the old joyousness when she had first discovered the delight of having such a friend as Colonel Stubbs.

Some one, no doubt, will ask about the words of the Apostle, where he writes to the Corinthians: [1 Corinthians 5:7] For our Passover also was sacrificed for us, namely, Christ; he does not say, The Passover of the Lord was sacrificed, even Christ.

The English came,—at the end of 1871,—just as the system of dry digging had formed itself at these two mines, and from that time to this Du Toit’s Pan and Bultfontein have been worked as regular diamond mines.

The Corporation consists of the President, five Fellows so called, and a Treasurer.

[John 3:21] But he that does the truth comes to the light, that his deeds may be known, that they have been done in God.

And what marvel is it, if it be so by land and sea, when even in the heavens the name of Paul is great; with angels and archangels and the powers above, and with the King of these, even God!

In order then that both our houses may be continually open to the one, and our ears to the others, let us purge away the filth from the ears of our soul.

For it is not of the Gift alone that it is the voice, but of the Comforter also who gave the Gift, He Himself having taught us through the Gift so to speak.

How should he manage to sneak back among them all at the Manor House, crestfallen and abject in his misery?

But the poor girl, though she was meek, silent, and almost apathetic in her tranquillity, could not even bear the mention of her mother’s name.

And he said to him, Your name shall be called no more Jacob, but Israel shall be your name: for you have prevailed with God, and art powerful with men.

For it is impossible that one who is not pure from vain-glory, should be lofty and great and noble; but he must needs grovel on the ground, and do much damage, while the slave of a polluted mistress, more cruel than any barbarian.

In the meantime his chapel was of course deserted, and the unfortunate man was left penniless in the world.

Again and again she repeated to herself that she would do her duty; and again and again she repeated to herself that in allowing Philip and Bessy to come together she had neglected her duty.

Love for bodily attractions, since its objects are fleeting, is as fleeting as the flowers of spring.

As she paced the walk it was also much to her that this man who was so generous in her eyes should have provided for him so noble a place in the world.

They have their own special and plenary course in the Creator's dispensation.

But, if anything should accrue to the Church, without sin and without the lust of concupiscence, through those who transact the business of the Church, it is right that these should not be without fruit of their labour.

Our interest in that trial lies in the fact that Cicero no doubt intended, from political motives, to defend Catiline.

These are foreign wares, then, which I am importing at a great expense of labour; and I have still to see whether our countrymen will regard with gratitude one who is bringing them the spoils (spolia) of his warfare, and who is unlocking with the key of our language a treasure house hitherto concealed, though he does it with the utmost good will.

“I hope you like roast chicken, my dear?” said Miss Stanbury.

And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished these parables, He departed thence.

It became necessary, however, that they who were in power in Rome should decide.

For in worshipping God we do good to ourselves, not to Him.

For, when Paul inserted the vice of fornication among so many execrable crimes, he indicated the guilt of it, saying, Neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall possess the kingdom of God [1 Corinthians 6:9-10].

“Do not talk to me after that fashion,” said Lady Lufton.

For He does not, when accused by the Jews respecting the Sabbath, always defend Himself in the same terms, and this we must carefully observe.

But let this assailant of the Christian faith tell us by what arguments he was compelled to accept the statement that there have been many conflagrations and many cataclysms, and that the flood which occurred in the time of Deucalion, and the conflagration in that of Phæthon, were more recent than any others.

Do all the evil that to you seems good.

For if to the uncircumcised, it is not in that he is uncircumcised that he is their father, although justified in uncircumcision; but in that they imitated his faith; much less is it owing to circumcision that he is the forefather of those in the state of circumcision, unless faith also be added.

“What plan?”

III. Dioscorus, who in his madness has attacked even the bishop of Rome, has shown himself the instrument of Satan.

For indeed, when they are for ever drunken, even as the dead by their many wrappers and grave-clothes, so are all their organs of sense closed and bound up.

And then he walked up to town, as Norman once had done after a parting interview with her whom he had loved. It might be difficult to say which at the moment suffered the bitterest grief.

No doubt the contact was dangerous.

Nor must we omit to notice that whereas the passage might very well have run, That which was made was in Him the light of men, and the light of men was life, he chose the opposite order.

It certainly was known in Galway yesterday, that I was to come across the lake this morning, and the tidings may have come up by some fellow-traveller.

This had merely been the padding at the top of the box.

How many evils do you reckon in your chief good?

They are as strong now as ever.

IV. And yet penitence and reconciliation must not be refused to men in extremis.

“Was he angry?”

You tell me to write pleasantly, and to congratulate you; but how is one to do that so utterly in opposition to one’s own interests and wishes?

No political work was required from him, except that of helping for an hour or two to crowd the Government benches.

His father would probably be driven to acquiesce, and people who were almost omnipotent in the world would at any rate give him a start.

For it is possible to see both things in the case of these Demons, the lovingkindness of God, and the evil of the Demons.

She knew that George Hotspur was a rake, was a gambler, was in debt, was hampered by other difficulties, and all the rest of it; but she liked the man, and was therefore willing to believe that a rich marriage would put it all right.

A lady who can sell herself for a title or an estate, for an income or a set of family diamonds, treats herself as a farmer treats his sheep and oxen—makes hardly more of herself, of her own inner self, in which are comprised a mind and soul, than the poor wretch of her own sex who earns her bread in the lowest stage of degradation.

“He is not dead,” she said. “There; he is not dead.”

Lo, unto whom He said, Today shall you be with Me in Paradise, could He keep all his bones?

Also another Felix of Bussacene said: In the matter of receiving heretics without the baptism of the Church, let no one prefer custom to reason and truth, because reason and truth always exclude custom.

And herein it is certain that he returns more than he received.

As for the house, it was a matter of course, whether good or bad.

For while the people of God (I speak of my fellow-servants) are severed from one another by so unworthy and injurious a contest, how is it possible for me to maintain my usual equanimity?

And a second idea struck him,—that he certainly would not lunch with Lord Ardrahan.

Beatrice and Patience discussed the matter fully, and it was agreed between them that it would be better that Mary should know what sterner orders respecting her had gone forth from the tyrant at Greshamsbury, and that she might understand that Beatrice’s absence was compulsory.

But yet He who has come was neither born under such a name, nor ever engaged in any warlike enterprise.

Mr. John Eustace has chosen to accuse me of stealing them.

Yet in these words he does not call the intercourse of the wedded iniquity in itself, but in truth only the pleasure of the intercourse.

“Then he must have been a fool!” the reader learned in such matters will say.

But in this place we hear no more of greater and less, but it is one and the same right.

He would not tell them that his heart was broken,—not if he could help it.

But Cicero’s love for his wife, his brother, his son, his nephew, especially for his daughter, was unbounded.

[Psalm 73:6, Septuagint]

Trevelyan should have trusted either to the eloquence of his own written words, or to that of the ambassador whom he was about to despatch; but by sending both he weakened both.

Thus when about to speak of the Incarnation the prophet says: Ask you a sign.

It remains likewise that we turn to (the virgins) themselves, to induce them to accept these (suggestions) the more willingly.

Or what men today would be alive to hear these words to no purpose, unless they were born?

Which may it come to pass that we all obtain, through the grace and lovingkindness of our Lord Jesus Christ, to whom be glory for ever and ever.

Lady George could remark that the bald-headed old gentleman behind and a cadaverous youth who was near to him were particularly energetic in stamping on the ground.

Hymn 54.

As if a mere difference in their names prevented equality, when an identity of condition is claimed for them!

For the sharing in his joy is a proof not only of your being free from envy, but also of being rooted in love.

Chapter 59. The Bodies Assumed by Angels Raise a Very Difficult, and Not Very Useful, Subject of Discussion.

Book VIII, Letter 21

The question of the war with England is debated by every native pavior and hodman of New York.

Along the opposite margin of the brook there ran a low paling, which made the water a rather nasty thing to face.

For why do we not more intensely wonder that incorporeal souls, which are of higher rank than heavenly bodies, are bound to earthly bodies, rather than that bodies, although earthly, are exalted to an abode which, though heavenly, is yet corporeal, except because we have been accustomed to see this, and indeed are this, while we are not as yet that other marvel, nor have as yet ever seen it?

Mr. Crawley had been almost in good spirits since the last visit which Mr. Thumble had made to him.

she did not remember that no day could be less painful,—less disagreeable than the present.

Such heart as she had to give had been given to himself.

Has his young life been a dream, and not a truth?

Jovinianus, condemned by the authority of the Church of Rome, amidst pheasants and swine's flesh, breathed out, or rather belched out his spirit.

To be reduced to live on his fellowship would be very dreadful.

For you too are steward of your own possessions, not less than he who dispenses the alms of the church.

‘Oh—but Charley, I don’t want a church. Is the Alhambra Gothic?’

Lizzie had liked none of the Bobsborough people.

She had told him that she was always at home between four and six on a Thursday.

XXIII. If any man after the example of the Jews understands as said for the destruction of the Eternal Only-begotten God the words, I am the first God, and I am the last God, and beside Me there is no God [Isaiah 44:6], which were spoken for the destruction of idols and them that are no gods: let him be anathema.

I had also a commission from the Foreign Office, for which I had asked, to make an effort on behalf of an international copyright between the United States and Great Britain,—the want of which is the one great impediment to pecuniary success which still stands in the way of successful English authors.

How this interchange of titles does not interfere with His Divine power.

“It was Miss Lynch I asked for,” said Daly, still looking to the girl for an answer.

For although He is disposed by His kindness to gentleness rather than severity, yet He does not absolutely pardon sinners, lest they should be made worse by His goodness.

“I am to say whatever I like always; that was the bargain, and I mean to stand to it.”

There were two or three narrow footpaths through and across the space, up to the cabins behind the house, but other marks of humanity were there none.

I had three days shooting at Woburn last week, and pretty good sport.

So great that mortals find no room to stand.

In what condition shall the spirit of man be, when it has no longer any vice at all; when it neither yields to any, nor is in bondage to any, nor has to make war against any, but is perfected, and enjoys undisturbed peace with itself?

He speaks consequently of these as the words of a madness inclining to utter senselessness; whence he also adds this sentence, For the fool talks over-much; and by the fool here he means himself, and every one who reasons in that way.

And then, when it should have been sent, he would be off to Italy.

After breakfast John Ball again went to town.

She had clearly been wrong in this matter of meat.

No, but, Peace on earth unto men of a good will.

And the evil of each particular thing, is with reference to that nature of it which is affected by the evil.

The bargainers and traffickers in worldly goods do not act thus.

That as far as any active doing of his own was concerned, the title might lie in abeyance, and that regarding the property he would make known his wish to Mr. Prendergast very quickly after his return to Ireland.

Here, boatman! there are seven of these boxes, all in white like

This also we desire; that your Love should write to him who may have been ordained as Metropolitan in the city of Nicopolis, to the end that he may take cognizance of the case with regard to the injuries which our aforesaid brother Alcyson complains of having been inflicted on his Church, and decide what is just, seeing that the matter itself is stated not to have been decided by his predecessors, but reserved.

28. Augustine answered: I have already answered above, This is both true, and makes for us against you.

Am I not to look to myself?

If the letter were not forwarded, Bozzle thought that the omission to do so might be given in evidence against his employer.

Plutarch tells us that they did not take place till the beginning of the following year.

“You set people talking of you.”

“Yes, my dear, yes. But, of course, we must remember—”

[Acts 18:28] Wherefore, O Lord my God, I will glorify You, I will praise Your name; for You have done wonderful things; Your counsels of old are faithfulness and truth; You are clothed with majesty and honour.

They raged and crucified Him: and afterwards began to see miracles wrought in the Name of Him Crucified; and they trembled still more that His Name should have so much power, since when in their hands He seemed unable to work any; and pricked at heart, at length believing that there was some hidden divinity in Him whom they had believed like other men, and asking counsel of the Apostles, they were answered, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

But Mr Melmotte himself had a word to say, and before he left the house he said it.

Her husband mistrusted her; and she at this moment certainly mistrusted him most grievously.

And she must know!

He would not take his mother’s money, nor lessen his own small patrimony; but now it seemed that wealth was showered on him from the deanery.

Hence he makes this good first, and says, so then faith comes by hearing.

Do you see how by degrees He withdraws us from the things that now are, and at greater length introduces what He has to say, touching voluntary poverty, and casts down the dominion of covetousness?

Mrs. Bold was certainly treating Mr. Slope rather cavalierly, and he felt it so. She was rejecting him before he had offered himself, and informing him at the same time that he was taking a great deal too much on himself to be so familiar. She did not even make an attempt

But wherefore has he nothing to glory of?

Girls in general ask their mother, and send the lover to the father.

[Exodus 35:23] But if when they had gold, they had brought hair, they [would have been] accursed: but if, having this only, they brought it, they were accepted.

And therefore He is here 'anointed,' not that He may become God, for He was so even before; nor that He may become King, for He had the Kingdom eternally, existing as God's Image, as the sacred Oracle shows; but in our behalf is this written, as before.

14. Mark the evangelist, bishop of Alexandria.

That also is to be counted among the charities bestowed upon the island, and is bestowed at the cost of great necessary deterioration in the energy and intellectual capacity of the clergyman selected for the purpose.

In whose bosom might be the ultimate decision,—whether in that of the Secretary, or the judge, or of some experienced clerk in the Secretary’s office,—it was manifest that the facts which had now been proven to the world at large for many days, had none of the effects on that bosom which they had on his own.

On this account Christ did not say, Tell it upon the housetops, but preach upon the housetops [Matthew 10:27 showing both by the place and by the manner what was to be done.

O spare yourselves, you impudent gods!

We ask that the kingdom of God may be set forth to us, even as we also ask that His name may be sanctified in us.

“Yes, sir,” said the waiter, striving to escape without further comment.

“I believe so.”

Therefore not corporeal light, which is the light of the flesh, whether it shine from heaven, or whether it be lighted by earthly fires; nor that of human flesh only, but also that of beasts, and down even to the minutest of worms.

His walk was long and sad among the sombre trees that overshadowed the churchyard.

“I never heard Lord De Guest speak of it.”

Because the body sins not of itself, but the soul through the body.

Thus you see that what is various and changeable is the unclean thing.

She should find him out.

And as for Jupiter, he was a various adulterer, with Antiope as a satyr, with Danaë as gold, and with Europa as a bull; with Leda, moreover, he assumed wings.

Then he mentions the mode of the salvation also.

“Oh, father!” said Marion, rebuking him.

He showed me again many trees, some budding, and others withered.

Justin: If I undertook to prove this by doctrines or arguments of man, you should not bear with me. But if I quote frequently Scriptures, and so many of them, referring to this point, and ask you to comprehend them, you are hard-hearted in the recognition of the mind and will of God. But if you wish to remain for ever so, I would not be injured at all; and for ever retaining the same [opinions] which I had before I met with you, I shall leave you.

Let us therefore kindle it and make it blaze.

This god was so weak and helpless that he could not otherwise secure himself first against an enemy threatening attack, and then against the same enemy in confinement.

Of the same from his discourse on My Father is greater than I: —

This seems to be meant, when it is said to Jacob: "It is not the custom in our country to marry the younger before the elder."

“He has given away what did not belong to himself,” said the Vicar. “But I can’t admit that he’s a thief.”

So that neither in this matter did he speak truly.

The prospect of future want no more disturbed his appetite than does that of the butcher’s knife disturb the appetite of the sheep.

Ask yourself.

And he, whose mouth was as an open sepulchre , began first with blasphemy against the Maker of all things, saying, The God of the Old Testament is the author of evils, as He says of Himself, I am a consuming fire.

What the deuce was he to think now of the lord who would not be let off?

He distinguishes them from the days of this life, of which he speaks as follows, Behold, You have made my days as it were a span long, which are not, because they stand not, remain not, but change in quick succession: nor is there a single hour in them in which our being is not such, but that one part of it has already passed, another is about to come, and none remains as it is.

Its former name having been abolished by him, it has since been denominated the maritime region of Gaza.

To work all uncleanness, says he.

Do you see how great a thing it is to hope in God?

That of the soul against the body, that of vice against virtue.

So he merely chatted with his brother for half an hour and then left him.

Having therefore in the previous book come down to the reign of David, we shall now treat of what remains, so far as may seem sufficient for the object of this work, beginning at the same reign.

And none of his steps shall slide.

I have done pastoral duty in eight hundred churches, for so many parishes does Cyrus contain; and in them, through your prayers, not even one tare is left, and our flock is delivered from all heresy and error.

And we must bear in mind that what is of Him is born of Him, and not made by Him out of nothing, and that it is therefore perfectly, that is, incorruptibly, good like God Himself.

Now if these belong to foreign tongues, we must either make inquiry about them from men who speak those tongues, or if we have leisure we must learn the tongues ourselves, or we must consult and compare several translators.

We must interpret them, and in particular this passage, by the Regula Fidei.

You have given us to drink of the wine of goading.

The reasons were not far to search.

“Tell him what?” said she sharply.

So then the one faith is, to confess the Father in the Son and the Son in the Father through the unity of an indivisible nature, not confused but inseparable, not intermingled but identical, not conjoined but coexisting, not incomplete but perfect.

The pupils pay varying fees, averaging 7s.

And as it is my object to give my reader an idea of the country as I saw it I am obliged to tell something of what I myself found it necessary to learn before I could understand that which I heard and saw.

Whereas if he were speaking of the resurrection from sins, and none is without sin—for even Paul says, I know nothing against myself, yet am I not hereby justified ;— how shall there be any who rise again, according to you?

Now Lord Hampstead’s name had become familiar in King’s Court.

“And now here he is beginning all over again,” said Lady Baldock.

To him the day had been one long triumph, for his voice had sounded sweet in his own ears as, period after period, he had poured forth in full flowing language the gathered wisdom and experience of his life.

And at the Mandarins, though hospitality is a duty, the gentlemen who ate Sir Rowley’s dinners were not exactly the men whom he or Lady Rowley desired to welcome to their bosoms as sons-in-law.

Thus the virgins who had the lamps, had oil, but not in abundance.

‘Had no other subject been introduced.’

For what reason, and why?

For when you were called they became more captious.

They are nasty of course, and have this further disadvantage, that you become much more wet having them on than you would be without them.

‘Why not, indeed?’ said Mr. Caldigate.

Hence, as children of one God and Father, and owning true religion as their common mother, they saluted and welcomed each other with words of peace.

“If you wish it, Roger, we will return to London. I shall find it hard to explain to Hetta;—but we will go.”

But still the Connop Greens either felt or pretended to feel great sympathy with her, and she would still declare from time to time that Lord Rufford had not heard the last of her.

Through this these members both exult in the joy of others, though in themselves afflicted, and also droop for the sorrows of others, though in themselves joyful.

He rather believed that he had become stronger than weaker from all that he had endured.

It is pretty enough, and worth visiting even were it farther from the town than it is; but by those who have hunted out many cataracts in their travels it will not be considered very remarkable.

But when that man of Yours, Simplicianus, related this to me about Victorinus, I burned to imitate him; and it was for this end he had related it.

He expressed a doubt whether the Marquis could be in his right mind, and added a whisper that the accounts of the Marquis’s health were very bad indeed.

It is written, A father's dishonor is a reproach to the children.

And what is more than that, before my interview with Mr. Harding, certain persons at the palace—I do not mean the bishop—had told me that such was the fact.

It was, to divulge by the manner of His Incarnation this great secret; that purity is the only complete indication of the presence of God and of His coming, and that no one can in reality secure this for himself, unless he has altogether estranged himself from the passions of the flesh.

If Mrs. Orme would give him a lecture on farming it might be possible to listen to it without contradiction; but there was no chance for him in that respect.

Her cheek was the softest thing in nature, and the colour of it, when its colour was fixed enough to be told, was a shade of pink so faint and creamy that you would hardly dare to call it by its name.

[Matthew 5:32] For if the coming together makes one body, he who comes together with a harlot must needs become one body with her.

Letter 162

And yet, in the preceding pages, we have pointed out the words of Jesus: Come unto Me, all you that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you rest.

But when He had said: I came not to call the righteous, as if responding to this, Whom, then, did Thou come to call?

And then, there was a reason against any public proceeding much stronger even than this.

So much for belly.

But we do affirm, that a human being, whether he be born in wedlock or in fornication, is in some respect good, because of the Author of nature, God; we add, however, that he derives some evil by reason of original sin.

It seemed to the mother that the mention of the young lord’s name had produced a horror in the daughter’s mind which nothing could for the present subdue.

And it was right first of all to remove our anxiety, and to let us know that even after baptism, if any sinned their sins could be forgiven them, lest a false belief in a reiterated baptism should lead astray those who were destitute of all hope of forgiveness.

Plainly, when about to prophesy.

How blessed, if he is miserable?

“But why should a lot of people be enabled to say that they’d dined here?” asked Hautboy. “I like to see my friends at dinner. What did you think about it, Hampstead?”

[45, 46] [Matthew 10:6] Go especially unto the sheep that are lost of the sons of Israel.

Paphnutius: This would fairly influence us, if in every work and practice, the beginning and the end were everything, and there were no middle in between.

Let then your Holiness so act that we may feel in our inmost hearts the good things you speak of, to the end that, the hearts of priests being in unanimity, when we supplicate for the life of our most pious lords, we may be counted worthy to be heard all the more as peace illuminates your prayers before the eyes of God, and no stain of discord darkens them.

In the Old Testament are temporal and earthly promises.

There are wretched villages, with huge, straggling parallel ways, which will never grow into towns.

But nevertheless it was necessary that he should write to Mrs. Smith.

“Audacity—audacity—audacity,” was the lesson which one hero taught.

Archie, ring the bell, will you?” Captain Clavering, though he was further from the bell than his elder brother, got up and did as he was bid.

Having then sufficiently cleared them of all doubtfulness by these words of his, he does not let his discourse pause at the time present, but urges again the time to come, knowing that there were men of weaker character, who looked too for present advantages, and were not satisfied with these mentioned.

Chapter 30. Will of the blessed Emperor Constantine

He allowed his heart to fill itself with a romantic sense of honour, teaching him that it behoved him as a man not to give up his love.

Nay, the disorder has assumed a sort of method and consistency.

The latter or the former?

Chapter XVII. Conclusion

“Oh, dear! oh, dear! I never wrote a word to him yet, and to begin with asking him for money!”

For, He says, in My Father's House are many mansions.

She shall keep the best table in New York, and shall have her own banker’s account.

To give a single example, were not some books published lately under the name of the distinguished physician Hippocrates, which were not received as authoritative by physicians?

Nor shall I divert from Him what is added, And raises up the poor from the dunghill.

[Luke 22:71] And they all said, Why should we seek now witnesses?

Ask not what is truth [reality] for immediately the darkness of corporeal images and the clouds of phantasms will put themselves in the way, and will disturb that calm which at the first twinkling shone forth to you, when I said truth [reality].

[2 Corinthians 8:14] The lady to whom this letter is addressed knows that what I narrate is only known to me by hearsay, but she is aware also that I am no Greek writer repaying with flattery some benefit conferred upon me.

So John says, "He gave them power to become the sons of God."

“If Emily and Nora come here they must come as our guests,” said Mrs. Outhouse.

“And you,” she continued, “can you still keep that cross? Oh, no! you must give me back that. It would remind you too often of vows that were untrue.”

Ontario Moggs, who on the subject of Trades’ Unions at the Cheshire Cheese could pour forth a flood of eloquence that would hold the room in rapt admiration, and then bring down a tumult of applause, now stammered out a half-expressed assent.

There were many there who were really sorry for poor Bonteen,—of whom without a doubt the end had come in a very horrible manner; and there were more there who were personally fond of Phineas Finn,—to whom the future of the young member was very sad, and the fact that he should have become a murderer very awful.

But I am a worm and no man; a reproach of men, and the outcast of the people.

The cause of this diversity I have set forth more fully for you in the Apology which Pamphilus wrote among his treatises, adding a very short document of my own, in which I have shown by what appear to me evident proofs, that his works have been depraved in many places by heretics and ill-disposed persons, and especially those which I am now translating, the [Περὶ ᾿Αρχῶν] .

This is the lot and portion of your disobedience, says the Lord .

For such things as these serve for exercise and trial, so that, having approved ourselves zealous and chosen servants of Christ, we may be fellow-heirs with the saints.

Or if you understand actual men to be meant by children, the words, If your children will keep My covenant and My testimonies that I shall teach them, may mean, If your children will keep My covenant and testimonies that I shall teach them, and their children also; that is, if they too keep My covenant; so that here you must make a slight pause, and then infer that they shall sit upon your seat for evermore; that is, both your children and their children, but all if they keep My covenant.

Of this door the rule was that the Doctor and the gardener should have the only two keys; but the rule may be said to have become quite obsolete, as the door was never locked.

He was certainly not an usher, as he was paid three hundred a year for his work—which is quite beyond the mark of ushers.

“The truth is, Miss Prettyman, I have done all but ask her to be my wife, and now has come this terrible affair about her father.”

[Psalm 2:11] Jesting renders the soul soft and indolent.

But, after all, how vain is it to suppose that the soul could bear the rites and requirements of the body, or carry any of them away to the infernal regions!

“What about an Italian title?”

Patience continued her protest,—but very mildly, because her father’s arm was in a sling.

“Of course I am always thinking of it,” she had replied, “and always thinking that other people are thinking of it.

For he is described as having been adorned with a crown of comeliness and beauty, and as having walked stainless in the paradise of God: and how can any one suppose that such a being was not one of those holy and blessed powers which, as being placed in a state of happiness, we must believe to be endowed with no other honour than this?

“Indeed yes,” said her ladyship; “we do know that.”

And to prove this that we have said both by the testimony of the ancients and divine oracles, we had better bring forward in his own words and experience what the blessed Paphnutius felt on the subject of admiration of miracles and the grace of purity, or rather what he learned from the revelation of an angel.

Why need I quote philosophers, historians, and orators?

“Well, Doctor Colligan, what do you say?”

Forgive us our trespasses, as we forgive them who trespass against us,—excepting Jones who has committed the one sin that we will not forgive, that we ought not to forgive.

She is loth to part with everything.

Take heed therefore not to confuse the mystery of the incarnation in the words and acts.

Let us therefore respect those who are over us, and reverence the elders; let us honour the young, and let us teach the discipline of God.

Mark, how great forethought we always find them taking for him.

“Fitting! Why not fitting? I think it would fit admirably. I know it would fit me.” Then she leaned over him and took his hand and kissed it.

If your life be for ever, you will see the good things of Jerusalem for evermore

Well, I don’t think it would make any difference in you; I don’t indeed.

“Yes, mother, if she will consent. And now that I have told you so much, it is only just that I should tell you this also; that as far as I can see at present I have no reason to hope that she will do so.”

The month of January, the tenth Indiction.

I send this by the very religious bishops, thinking it worth while to salute your excellency by them and to remind you of your promise. For attacked as I am I do not cease to go a-hunting, for I know that even the sacred apostles in the midst of the assaults made upon them did not cease to ply the net of the spirit.

And the rock was more lofty than the mountains, rectangular in shape, so as to be capable of containing the whole world: and that rock was old, having a gate cut out of it; and the cutting out of the gate seemed to me as if recently done.

Because He forbade the other.

Tradition will be held forth to you as the originator of them, custom as their strengthener, and faith as their observer.

“I don’t know what to think,” said Mrs Marsham.

For they neither knew of a resurrection, nor had they any examples to look to.

The door was opened for him, and as he entered he met Father Marty.

When they heard that he had not been initiated their amazement was increased at the decision of the emperor.

For not one member, but the whole entire body throughout was made an object of insolence; the head through the crown, and the reed, and the buffeting; the face, being spit upon; the cheeks, being smitten with the palms of the hands; the whole body by the stripes, by being wrapped in the robe, and by the pretended worship; the hand by the reed, which they gave him to hold instead of a sceptre; the mouth again by the offering of the vinegar.

Observe, how ambitious he is, and what a display he makes, in his willingness to show that he loved them most of all.

“Oh, my boys, that’s nonsense,” said Joe; “either do the job, or let it alone. Av you’ve a mind to let Captain Ussher walk into your cabins and take any of you off to Carrick, jist as he plazes—why you can; but I’m d——d if I does! I’ve had enough of him now; and by the ‘tarnal powers, though I swing for it, putting Tim in gaol shall cost him his life!”

He was already a practised knight in the highest flight of the world’s tourneys.

It isn’t true.

That was easily done; but what should be done as to the other behest?

Would you not by such a supposition at once lower the character of the Person Himself?

What then, I asked, are we to say to those whose hearts fail at these calamities ?

Truly we must consider, that God gives us some goods, which are to be sought for their own sake, such as wisdom, health, friendship: but others, which are necessary for the sake of somewhat, such as learning, meat, drink, sleep, marriage, sexual intercourse.

It is marvellous to us now that this should have been allowed—marvellous that pirates should reach such a pitch of importance that Verres had found it worth his while to sacrifice Roman citizens in their place.

The man did so, and was freed from his complaint, although the prescription was contrary to the professional rules of the physicians, a confection of so very hot a nature being considered adverse to a bilious disorder.

For we apostles are sent to expound the sayings and affirm the judgments of Him who has sent us; but we are not commissioned to say anything of our own, but to unfold the truth, as I have said, of His words.]

But still, not even so did he rid them of those charges.

But since the soul not only shared in the sin but was first in the sin, for first the thought forms an image of the sin and then carries it out by means of the body, it was just, I ween, that the soul too should be healed.

“I’m sure, Mr. Pritchett, I’m very much obliged for the trouble you are at in telling me.”

But, for aught he knew, she might be afflicted by every vice to which a woman can be subject.

For that they should become few, They went out from us, but they were not of us.

Chapter VIII. Ralph Newton’s Troubles

Let it by all means be irksome to sin again, but let not to repent again be irksome: irksome to imperil one's self again, but not to be again set free.

“No real artist could descend to the ornamentation of a cathedral,” said Bertie, who had his ideas of the high ecstatic ambition of art, as indeed all artists have who are not in receipt of a good income. “Buildings should be fitted to grace the sculpture, not the sculpture to grace the building.”

Lady Laura paused before she answered; and then she told the whole story. “He is violently in love, and the girl he loves has refused him twice.”

When, therefore, we read in the Gospel that the hard-heartedness of the Jews moved Him to sorrowful indignation, [Mark 3:5] that He said, I am glad for your sakes, to the intent ye may believe, [John 11:15] that when about to raise Lazarus He even shed tears, [John 11:35] that He earnestly desired to eat the passover with His disciples, [Luke 22:15] that as His passion drew near His soul was sorrowful, [Matthew 26:38] these emotions are certainly not falsely ascribed to Him.

On what then will you base this captious question?

And our profession too has its own goal and end, for which we undergo all sorts of toils not merely without weariness but actually with delight; on account of which the want of food in fasting is no trial to us, the weariness of our vigils becomes a delight; reading and constant meditation on the Scriptures does not pall upon us; and further incessant toil, and self-denial, and the privation of all things, and the horrors also of this vast desert have no terrors for us.

See by how many things He shows the reality of the incarnation: by what He speaks, by what He suffers.

I had been told that this was to be done without trouble, but when I inquired on the subject I found that this was not exactly the case.

Now they should build on it, gold, silver, and precious stones; [1 Corinthians 3:12] and should have nothing to fear from either fire: not only that which is to consume the ungodly for ever, but also that which is to purge those who are to escape through the fire.

The great river ran noiselessly along, rapid but still with an apparent lethargy in its waters.

Such a journey as those gentlemen were compelled to make would in truth kill a weakly person.

The body is not, then, a fetter upon evil, nor indeed a fetter at all; nor was the soul clothed in it for the first time after the fall.

You’ll have a smash some of these days with one of those Great Western express trains”—Mr.

The girls are waiting for us to go out, and perhaps you will like a cigar on the lawn.

For as the praise improves and extends, so the love and affection increases in fervor.

Now that she understood the importance of her mission and was aware that the present she took with her was only the customary accompaniment of an ambassadress entrusted with a great mission, Martha said nothing even about the expense.

Here Mr. Glascock and Caroline had passed many hours,—and here they were now seated, late in the evening, while all others of the family were away.

His very voice created joy, and the ring of his laughter was to Florence as the music of the heavens.

Creature is synonymous with activity, being our work, and such activity shall not be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

And moreover,—Lady Pomona had received no former hint of the information which was now conveyed to her,—Georgiana was in the habit of meeting the curate of the next parish almost every day in the park.

He would put his shoulder to the wheel, and would yet conquer his enemies.

I must also confess that the letter intended to be addressed to you and added to these books, and which I had begun to dictate when I was with you, is still unfinished, little having been added to it since that time.

It may be so to him.

The men who drove the flies, when summoned to take her out at night, would bring oats with them, knowing how probable it was that they might have to travel far.

They that worship idols, honor also the idols they worship; and if any one speak of them with disrespect or ridicule, they stand up in their defense; whereas thou, as if in a sort of intoxication, art worshiping an object, which is so far from being free from accusation, that it is even full of impiety.

For it is needful to separate one who has grievously fallen, lest a little leaven corrupt the whole lump.

Could it be real?

If, indeed, it be sufficient to bear the name of pastor, and to take the work in hand hap-hazard, and there be no danger in this, then let whoso pleases accuse me of vainglory; but if it behooves one who undertakes this care to have much understanding, and, before understanding, great grace from God, and uprightness of conduct, and purity of life and superhuman virtue, do not deprive me of forgiveness if I am unwilling to perish in vain without a cause.

They subsist on the roots of plants; they settle nowhere in any fixed place, lest they should frequently have men visiting them; wherever night compels them they choose their abode.

In her intercourse with other men there had been generally a battle carried on with some fairness.

To Lady Arabella he was by no means an unwelcome guest, for she found herself able, for the first time in her life, to speak confidentially on her husband’s pecuniary affairs with the man who had the management of her husband’s property.

But the third angel (Naas), by the soul which came from Edem upon Moses, as also upon all men, obscured the precepts of Baruch, and caused his own peculiar injunctions to be hearkened unto.

Of women who are thus presumptuous the apostle says that they are carried about with every wind of doctrine, [Ephesians 4:14] ever learning and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth.

But, as we are informed by those who are worthy of credit, there is in Mary the mother of Jesus an angelic purity of nature allied with the nature of humanity.

She could almost have cried with fatigue;—and yet she told herself that now,—now,—must the work be done.

Chapter 13.— Of the Lower Members.

“You must explain that at first; tell her that you expect her aid, and that she will find you a grateful friend—a grateful friend, say; mind you remember that.”

To Eugraphia.

“If he’s there I’ll send the horse in;—that’s all.” Then Tifto found it best to say a few words to Captain Green. But the Captain also said a few words to himself. “D–––– young fool; he don’t know what he’s dropping into.” Which assertion, if you lay aside the unnecessary expletive, was true to the letter. Lord Silverbridge was a young fool, and did not at all know into what a mess he was being dropped by the united experience, perspicuity, and energy of the man whose company on the Heath he had declined.

On Luke 22:42 etc.

[But I know that you think it sad to be separated from me for the space of at least two days.

His son, his only son, the pride of all who knew him, the hope of his political party in the county, the brightest among the bright ones of the day for whom the world was just opening her richest treasures, fell from his horse as he was crossing into a road, and his lifeless body was brought home to The Cleeve.

The two Dukes were there, and men no bigger than Laurence Fitzgibbon were forced to subject themselves to the benevolence of the Under-Sheriff.

“I was determined to tell her;—so that she should not turn round upon me afterwards and say that I had deceived her. I had made a promise to my father.”

“I know he did. I heard it.”

Turning subtly in each direction these impious men are destroyed, having even here no excuse as touching Dionysius.

These words do point out two peoples as it were, the one belonging to the Old Testament, the other to the New: for in that he says, he has implied that they received the commandments, to make them known to their sons, but that they did not know or do them: but they received them themselves, to the end that another generation might know, what the former knew not.

Madame Melmotte was beside herself with trepidation. “You should not have been made to come up at all,” she said. “Il faut que vous vous retiriez.”

But for so long she bore it.

Where, O death, is your contest?"

I am greatly in error if they do not among themselves swerve even from their own regulations, forasmuch as every man, just as it suits his own temper, modifies the traditions he has received after the same fashion as the man who handed them down did, when he moulded them according to his own will.

But mark, I pray you, how even in things that are bodily, that which is spiritual abounds.

6d., Mr. Masters.

‘Oh!’ said he, ‘my aunt, my aunt, my aunt, my aunt, my aunt!’

Harry had his coffee and some food, and started, with his two horses, for the doctor.

If she put John Morton’s legacy out to interest, she would now be mistress of a small income;—but she understood money well enough to know to what obduracy of poverty she would thus be subjected.

“Would you see him?”

And how, you say, is this possible?

With quickest instinct she immediately perceived that a slight emphasis given to the word ‘you’ implied the singular number.

Therefore, when God wished to send to the earth one who should measure His temple, He was unwilling to send him with heavenly power and glory, that the people who had been ungrateful towards God might be led into the greatest error, and suffer punishment for their crimes, since they had not received their Lord and God, as the prophets had before foretold that it would thus happen.

Chapter 11. Those in Phrygia.

But as to the saying, that they are gathered together; they arise indeed everywhere, but are gathered together by the Angels.

[John 10:8] And all that came are thieves and stealers: but the sheep heard them not.

But it must surely have taught him to think that our Minister was very uncivil, as he of course knew well why the letter had been sent through the French Foreign Office.

If Barbarians had made an incursion on our city, and razed its walls, and burnt its houses, and had taken and carried us away captive, the evil had been less.

Thus are their explanations overthrown.

It is because I know this that I have loved you, and shall always love you.

No; when the husband walks back from the altar, he has already swallowed the choicest dainties of his banquet.

And yet as one flower is more perfect than another and plants are said to flower, even though they bring forth no perfect fruit, so the perfect receive that of Christ which transcends the flower.

All waves thereof whatsoever suffocate; every eddy thereof sucks down unto Hades.

He is Lord of all things.

On the last Thursday and Saturday he had consoled himself for his doubts with the U. R. U., and was minded to do so on the Monday also.

And it is a good thing to consider ourselves to be sinners, and thus endure men set over our heads: in order that we also to God may confess that deservedly we suffer.

Lord love you, what would all that have cost?

“Quite that,” said Lucinda. “I don’t suppose that he suspects poor Lady Eustace, but he thinks that my aunt’s friend should be like Caesar’s wife, above the suspicion of others.”

“And I see crowds of people about.” There were crowds of people about.

He exhorted them to put away all loose talk about such points, and to be of one mind; for he had been not a little grieved, and on this account he had renounced his intention of visiting the cities of the East.

And what I should have asked Your Excellency for had I seen you, I now venture to ask for though I am absent.

“And indeed I am thankful,” continued the widow. “Nothing can be better than his conduct and mode of life; but—”

“It is very easy to say so, but that does not make it any better. Though he be ever so mad the house is his own. If he chooses to turn me out of it he can. I have told Mr. Knox that I would leave it within a month,—for my mother’s sake; but that as I had gone there at his express instance, I could not move sooner. I think I was justified in that.”

Would that this rebuke might accomplish in you what it did in Peter, and that you might hereafter preach the truth concerning God, which you now, judging by feeble sense, find fault with!

But he even ate the excreta from his body.

You have promise of the life that now is, and of that which is to come.

For "no one puts a piece of new cloth unto an old garment, otherwise the rent is made worse."

“I understand all that. I know how good you are. But, Major Grantly, you must understand me also when I assure you that it cannot be so.”

And then as the scheme grew clearer and clearer to him, he declared to himself that if he should be successful, he would use her well, and not rob her of her money—beyond what was absolutely necessary.

Vavasor was a parish situated on the intermediate ground between the mountains of the lake country and the plains.

He consulted his trusted friend, Mr. Dove, on the occasion, making out another case for the barrister, and Mr. Dove had opined that, if it could be first proved that the diamonds were the property of the estate and not of Lady Eustace, and afterwards proved that they had been stolen through her laches,—then could the Eustace estate recover the value from her estate.

To Augustine, My Lord, Truly Holy and Most Blessed Father, Jerome Sends Greeting in Christ.

What is the wheat?

To him Simmichar succeeded, of whom Scripture relates nothing more than that simple fact.

“Ah;—why? How am I to answer such a question? Did you think that Mr. Browborough would be convicted of bribery by a jury?”

Thus, for instance, they have taught you that this Scripture which we are now discussing refers to Hezekiah, in which, as I promised, I shall show they are wrong.

For it is called first Jebus, then Salem, then Jerusalem: names of which the first means down-trodden, the second peace, and the third vision of peace.

Unbelievers pronounce the verdict of foolishness on everything that lies beyond their ken, while believers leave to the power and majesty of God the choice of the mysteries wherein salvation is bestowed.

It is untrue.

Others say that Melampus the son of Amythaon imported the festivals of Ceres from Egypt into Greece, celebrating her grief in song.

To be sure you’re older,—and you are not so heavily weighted.

The man had been told that being a Christian and an emissary from Natal he would probably be murdered if he went on to the Chief’s Kraal; but he had persevered and had been brought face to face with the King.

And thus we are made to understand that the intelligent creation, which constitutes the free Jerusalem, ought to be subordinate in the order of speech to the Creator, the Supreme Trinity: for all that is said of the man Christ Jesus has reference, of course, to the unity of the person of the Only-begotten.

Abide, and see His great power, how He will torment you and your seed.

It seemed to her as though it must be a dream that he should do so; but what if he did?

In Trinidad, the legislative power is almost entirely in the hands of the Crown.

“He never told me that he was going to do it.”

“Do you know anything against Mr. Emilius?” asked Lizzie.

It’s all very well for you to say that, my dear; but the whole family are so queer that there is no knowing what the girl may do.

For the same reason also he subjoins the blessing on his two other sons, the oldest and youngest, saying, Blessed be the Lord God of Shem; and Canaan shall be his servant.

For what is conferred by human mercy, on those with whom God is angry?

[John 1:34] And Christ expresses Himself in the same way to Nicodemus, while he was dull of apprehension, We speak that we do know, and testify that we have seen; and no one receives our witness.

‘Well; no,—unless it’s necessary.’

Some, again, to escape saying that the only-begotten Word is the Son of the counsel or will of God, have affirmed the same Word to be the counsel or will itself of the Father.

From which may we all be kept, Shepherd and flock, as from a poisoned and deadly pasture; guiding and being guided far away from it, that we may all be one in Christ Jesus our Lord, now and unto the heavenly rest.

This is proved by the blessed roll of priests and virgins, and of those who, when married, have allowed nothing in their union to hinder them from attaining an equal repute, and so have made the distinction between them to consist in the condition, rather than in the mode of their life.

I’m dashed if it ain’t as hard to get money from a parson as it is to take a bone from a dog.

“But, Mr. Pritchett,” said she, “I am going to live with Mr. Bertram after another month or so.”

Chapter 17. Aristotle; Duality of Principles; His Categories; His Psychology; His Ethical Doctrines; Origin of the Epithet Peripatetic.

Hence also the sevenfold operation of the Holy Ghost, of which Isaiah speaks, seems to me to correspond to these stages and sentences.

Will it be better for you now to deal with strangers who will rob you at every turn?

He was a Whig Solicitor-General, for there were still Whigs in those days, and Mr. Lovel had not much liked him.

Macassar, with a look of wretched desperation.

Such was not the feeling of Lord Palmerston, who knew more as to the state of Europe than any other Englishman, and was more keenly alive to the immediate needs of both France and England.

You see how many varieties of uncleanness there are.

Scatcherd had but one friend in the world. And, indeed, this friend was no friend in the ordinary acceptance of the word. He neither ate with him nor drank with him, nor even frequently talked with him. Their pursuits in life were wide asunder. Their tastes were all different. The society in which each moved very seldom came together. Scatcherd had nothing in unison with this solitary friend; but he trusted him, and he trusted no other living creature on God’s earth.

“Not yet I von’t,” said Hart. “I ain’t thought it out. I ain’t in the same boat with the rest. I’m not afraid of my money. I shall get that all right.”

“When the wars are over, and the King is on his throne, you shall bring me home a lover; some brave friend of your’s who has proved himself a gallant knight.”

For so the Scripture says: With the heart man believes unto righteousness, and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation: and: By his words shall each man be justified, and by his word shall he be condemned.

It was all very well that lawyers should look upon her as an instrument, as a piece of goods that might now, from the accident of her ascertained birth, be made of great service to the Lovel family.

You know the case of the widow.

Mary would be secluded and trodden on, and reduced to pale submission by all the dragons till her life would be miserable.

It is not, therefore, what one does, but the intent with which he does it, that is to be considered.

“Thank you, no,” said Crosbie. “I never do take wine in the middle of the day.”

R., To Him be great praise Who came down to us here below: and suffered and rose again and in His Body, raises our bodies!— 3.

34. We, the holy synod met in Sardica from different provinces of the East, namely, Thebais, Egypt, Palestine, Arabia, Phœnicia, Cœle Syria, Mesopotamia, Cilicia, Cappadocia, Pontus, Paphlagonia, Galatia, Bithynia and Hellespont, from Asia, namely, the two provinces of Phrygia, Pisidia, the islands of the Cyclades, Pamphylia, Caria, Lydia, from Europe, namely, Thrace, Hæmimontus , Mœsia, and the two provinces of Pannonia, have set forth this creed.

Health good.

For he does not say, was in God, but was with God: declaring to us His eternity as to person.

However, I do not now dispute about these matters, and I claim the same degree of forbearance from you while I wish to make mention of some of the good qualities which you possess.

Come —here they are; and now we will have prayers.” As he spoke, Mrs. Lownd entered the room, followed closely by Mabel, and then at a little distance by Isabel.

[Matthew 18:18] They who rule on earth have indeed authority to bind, but only the body: whereas this binding lays hold of the soul and penetrates the heavens; and what priests do here below God ratifies above, and the Master confirms the sentence of his servants.

If He takes up, why do you fear to pour out?

If you find what I have said satisfactory, let this make an end to our discussion of these matters.

As, therefore, God is greatest of all, so he who is impious against Him shall endure greater punishment, as sinning against the greater; not through His defending Himself with His own hand, but the whole creation being indignant at him, and naturally taking vengeance on him.

The inquirer might bring forward as a difficulty the fact that those in whose books these prophecies are found are not united with us in the gospel.

Then said Peter: What think you then?

Give me one who is grasping, covetous, and tenacious; I will presently restore him to you liberal, and freely bestowing his money with full hands.

And she was at the school,—living under the same roof with the boys!

But I thought the act of Jacob about the cattle should be noticed, for this reason, viz.

Augustus Staveley was master here at Noningsby, and was a clever, dashing, handsome, fashionable young fellow; but Lucius Mason never dreamed of retreating before such forces as those.

“Mr. Emilius!” said Greystock.

So much slander were they factiously making up against me that even my safety would have been endangered had not the help of God at the intercession of your holiness quickly snatched me from the assault of military force.

To Sabinianus, Bishop of Jadera.

She would obey her pastors and masters.

“Then why should he go? And why—should you look at me in that way?”

“I don’t see why you shouldn’t do that”

What words could describe that of persons who have been mutilated in earthquake, battle, or by any other visitation, and live on in such a plight for a long time before their natural deaths?

But what he says a little after, Therefore, as by the offense of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life, shows clearly enough that there is no one born of Adam but is subject to condemnation, and that no one, unless he be new born in Christ, is freed from condemnation.

It was well understood by all men now that the customary food of the country had disappeared.

And him too he sends with the same praises as Timothy, for he commended him on these two points; first, in that he loved them, when he says, who will care truly for you; and secondly, in that he had approved himself in the Gospel.

She was not timid, but he might be so.

But now you are lukewarm and I will begin to spew you out of My mouth.

And ye had seen withered hands recover their suppleness, the tongues of dumb men loosened into speech, the feet of the lame made swift to run, the eyes of the blind endowed with vision, and life restored to the dead.

Finally, the Apostle Paul reproaches, and rebukes, and blames any who are in sorrow at the departure of their friends.

Thus these, twittering, came together: and then the souls.

“I suppose people do,” he said to himself; “but I can’t.

And for what use is right conduct, the mortification of the lusts, and the hating of no creature?

“Only that you may be mistaken. Living down here, you may not know the truth.”

What day is that?

Would not the Lord Himself say: Why did you suffer so many needy to die of hunger?

Chapter VI. The Legislature and Executive

That it is an effect due to God, nevertheless, is declared by David, when he says in the Psalms, Blessed is the man whose help is in You, O Lord, Your ascents (are) in his heart.

Now a new sensation had fallen upon her, by which at certain periods she was almost prostrated.

And now he had to wait for his answer from Adela.

“Rain,—what matters the rain?” Then he started again, disregarding all her prayers, and went off eastward on foot, disdaining the use of a cab because he had settled in his mind on no place to which he would go.

Every house is white, up from the ground to the very point of the roof.

But a pleasure which all must feel is obtained from this narrative so faithfully recorded in the Holy Scriptures, when we examine into the prophetic character of the action, and knock with pious faith and diligence at the door of the mystery, that the Lord may open, and show us who was prefigured in the ancient personage, and whose wife this is, who, while in a foreign land and among strangers, is not allowed to be stained or defiled, that she may be brought to her own husband without spot or wrinkle.

Justin: If, indeed, we had not entered into a lengthy discussion on these topics, I might have doubted whether you ask this question in ignorance; but since we have brought the matter to a conclusion by demonstration and with your assent, I do not believe that you are ignorant of what I have just said, or desire again mere contention, but that you are urging me to exhibit the same proof to these men.

For if by entering gradually you fall into this ocean of madness, you will not be able to get up out of it with ease, and as if you were in whirlpools, struggle as often as ever you may, it will not be easy for you to get clear; so after falling into this far worse abyss of covetousness, you will destroy your own self, with all that belongs to you.

Then Arabella told herself that if anything was to be done it must be done at once.

So as to be useful to him that has received it.

There are several such men, and they are in different places, and the benefits they receive from above vary in shape and character.

For suppose that the other inhabitants of the earth were destroyed at once, and that their gold and silver came of its own accord to you.

Christ thought fit to call our sufferings by the name of the Cross.

[John 8:18] I am he that bears witness to myself, and my Father which sent me bears witness to [30] me.

Then, I guess, the thing’s about as good as done.” These words were spoken with a fine, sharp, nasal twang by a brilliantly-dressed American gentleman in one of the smartest private rooms of the great railway hotel at Liverpool, and they were addressed to a young Englishman who was sitting opposite to him.

Go on, my dear.” Linda had resolved to tell it all, and she did tell it all.

To this Miss Palliser had assented, and, when she left Alice, was determined to tell Mr Palliser the whole story.

“From Stovey, I suppose.”

If he were to decline there would be the poor house, the Guardians, and all the horrors of Bumbledom before him.

If there was such a thought, or rather, such a feeling, who will say that it was not natural?

Money, rank, and blood might have done before, but he’ll expect youth, beauty, and wit now, as well as the other things.

There was clearly no need for those prepared words.

For scarcely for a just man will one die: yet for a good man perhaps one would even dare to die: [Romans 5:8, 7] but our Lord died for the wicked.

He had thought it well to marry her; and having asked her, and having obtained her consent, he intended to take advantage of her promise.

[Matthew 10:17] And this blessed man elsewhere says, For I know this, that after my departures shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock.

Moses was leader of the host of Israel; he brought ten plagues upon Egypt; sky, earth, and sea alike obeyed his commands: yet he is spoken of as very meek above all the men which were at that time upon the face of the earth.

“On the young one?”

For, he says, there are three who have stood; and except there were three Aeons who have stood, the unbegotten one is not adorned.

But if you seek for another way besides to escape from hence, look to God continually, and be content with glory from Him; and if you find the passion tickling you, and stirring you to tell your well-doings to your fellow-servants, bethink yourself next, that after telling them you gain nothing.

Keeping right the seat of intellect and feeling; and walk well

“I wouldn’t mind if I didn’t go to bed at all.”

And he preached to the people of his parish on that Sunday, as he had always preached; eagerly, clearly, with an eloquence fitted for the hearts of such an audience.

For whereas after all these great events, still both in Cæsarea and in Jerusalem a questioning is made about it, how would it have been if these (tokens) had not gone step by step with the progress of the affair?

I am philosophizing at leisure.

‘Perhaps I may do something by writing,’ said Charley, very bashfully.

“And where would you have been if they hadn’t locked you up? I’m blessed if they wouldn’t have had you into the Lough before this time.”

We know bishops who drink no wine, as well as monks who do.

Now eight years ago, in the time of my predecessor of holy memory Pelagius, our brother and fellow bishop John in the city of Constantinople, seeking occasion from another cause, held a synod in which he attempted to call himself Universal Bishop.

How then, says some one, was it that the contrary came to pass, and that these men 'went back'?

For if He be Son only by grace, He not only is not more excellent than the angels, but is even less than they.

“You going to sell Chowton!”

He had not been disinherited.

Lizzie, as she heard the order given, wondered whether she would have to pay for that, or whether Lord George and Sir Griffin would take so much off her shoulders.

“What did Marie Melmotte say to you?”

She knew more clearly now even than she had done before that she had never loved Mr. Gilmore, and never could have loved him.

When the sun about midday was very fiery, one of the body-guard saw you, heated with much sweat and clouds of dust, and, as if to do you a favor, he anticipatingly offered to you a bowl which reflected brilliantly the rays of the sun; he poured in some sweet drink, and added cold water thereto.

“I am sorry, Eleanor, that you hate the religion you find here, but surely you should remember that in such matters the archdeacon must know more of the world than you do. I don’t ask you to respect or comply with me, although I am, unfortunately, so many years your senior; but surely, in such a matter as this, you might consent to be guided by the archdeacon. He is most anxious to be your friend, if you will let him.”

But yet she was gratified by the note from the Duchess.

He Who is called the Angel of God is also Lord and God.

Not given to filthy lucre.

When Mr. Puddicombe came down from the church to the rectory, Lord Carstairs was walking home after the afternoon service with Miss Wortle.

[Matthew 16:18] This is the house where alone the paschal lamb can be rightly eaten.

Though he was bitter over it, or happy; triumphant, or occasionally in despair—as when the money was not forthcoming—he never laughed.

Then came the paragraph in the fashionable evening newspaper; after that, the report of the examination before the magistrate, and then certain information that Lady Eustace was about to proceed to Scotland together with her cousin Mr. Greystock, the Member for Bobsborough.

[Acts 16:7] And in the Epistle to the Corinthians he says, that it is the work of the Spirit, but here only of Satan.

MES. C. I will not let you pass. Oh, Josiah, be a man and bear it. Ask God for strength instead of seeking it in indulgence of your own sorrow.

This being the view held by all who accept in its simplicity the undiluted Gospel, what occasion was there for endeavouring to dissolve this fast union of the Son with the Father by means of the creation, as if it were necessary to suppose either that the Son was from everlasting along with the creation, or that He too, equally with it, was later?

Accordingly the teacher of the Gentiles, in one of his discourses, commends both conjugal chastity, whereby adulteries are prevented, and the still more perfect continence which foregoes all cohabitation, and shows how both one and the other are severally the gift of God.

“A Cabinet Council!”

and when I heard one saying one thing of Him, and another another, it came into my heart to say (and I know not, therefore, how I said it), 'You are the Son of the living God.'

It was all manifest.

He read it twice over, and the work of reading it was one to him of intense agony.

The very one who sings while at the feast,

For [such conduct] is the gate of righteousness, which is set open for the attainment of life, as it is written, Open to me the gates of righteousness; I will go in by them, and will praise the Lord: this is the gate of the Lord: the righteous shall enter in by it.

There is the Great Eastern line, running from Southampton across the Bay of Biscay and up the Mediterranean.

Thus the Cross removed the curse, Faith brought in righteousness, righteousness drew on the grace of the Spirit.

Now the servant of the Lord, as says the apostle, must not go to law.

“Well, my dear, I think that perhaps she is not so wrong there. Of course everything is all right with you now, and I’m sure I’m the happiest woman in the world to feel that it is so. I don’t know how to be thankful enough when I think how things have turned out;—but when I first heard of him I thought he was dangerous too.”

For although the divine Apostle says: Into Christ and into His death were we baptized [Romans 6:3], he does not mean that the invocation of baptism must be in these words, but that baptism is an image of the death of Christ.

And on account of its being near the city which we had left, almost all having heard the preaching before, we stopped there only one day, and set out to Antaradus.

For as in the schools of learning, there are teachers even among the disciples, so also in the Church.

And as when the sea is in uproar, and rendered furious by the violent tempest, fear compels all to fly for refuge from without into the harbour; so also now, the waves of the forum, and the tempest of the city, drives together every one from all sides into the church, and by the bond of love knits the members close to one another.

For He made some simple and round into an orb, in those joints at least in which it was befitting that the limbs should move in all directions, as in the shoulders, since it is necessary that the hands should move and be twisted about in any direction; but others He made broad, and equal, and round towards one part, and that plainly in those places where only it was necessary for the limbs to be bent, as in the knees, and in the elbows, and in the hands themselves.

This new obelisk, or picture-building at Niagara, is one of such.

They saw through the gloom the spot where Mary had scrambled, and the water which had then been bright and smiling, was now black and awful.

Eran.— Now you are getting the argument off the track because you want to shirk the question.

On the Words, the Only-Begotten Son of God, Begotten of the Father Very God Before All Ages, by Whom All Things Were Made.

And so, I think, it must be with our colonies.

And they departed from the presence of the council, rejoicing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for the name of Christ.

If he did this surely then he would forgive her for having left him at the bridge.

“Not tonight, Mr. Ralph,” said Grey.

Chapter IV. Simon's Doings

“My own true girl!” he said, speaking with his arms still round her waist.

Mary and Emmeline Fitzgerald, with whom we shall become better acquainted as we advance in our story, were nice, good girls, and handsome withal; but they had not that special gift which enables some girls to make a party in their own house bright in spite of all obstacles.

You see then that it is virtue which is according to nature, and vice which is against nature, in the same way as disease and health are.

And at Delphi, on the expedition of Xerxes against Greece, the Pythian priestess having made answer:—

The same objects deserve the same reverence; for otherwise the highest honour will be unworthily bestowed on those which are inferior, or with insult to the superior the inferior will be made equal to them in honour.

The truth is, you mistake his character.

Inquire whether a man have spoken who is understood to have spoken.

That cannot be imperfect which has made all perfect.

Should he tell her that he was a blighted being, unfit for love, and with humility entreat of her that he might be excused?

For though they pretend alarm at the name of time, because of those who reproach them with it, and say, that He was before times, yet whereas they assign certain intervals, in which they imagine He was not, they are most irreligious still, as equally suggesting times, and imputing to God an absence of Reason.

“The compliment is a very poor one,” said the judge.

“It comes to that. I know how good you are; how much I owe to you. I know that Dr. Wortle and yourself have been so kind to us, that were I not grateful beyond expression I should be the meanest human creature. Do not suppose that I am angry or vexed with you because you condemn me. It is necessary that you should do so. But how can I condemn myself;—or how can I condemn him?”

[53] [Matthew 15:26] Jesus said unto her, It is not seemly that the children's bread should be taken and [54] thrown to the dogs.

Origen is peculiar in maintaining on the one hand that it is impossible for human nature to pass through life without sin, and on the other, that it is possible for a man, when he turns to better things, to become so strong that he sins no more.

It is not possible for one who has departed to the other world to repent; no athlete, when he has quitted the lists, and the spectators have dispersed, can contend again.

But no rational scheme of governance among mankind had ever entered his mind, and of pure politics he knew no more than the journeyman who sat stitching upon his board.

‘What I mean is that she has no dangers to fear such as my poor wife has encountered. Whomever I think of now I cannot but compare them to ourselves. No woman surely was ever so illused as she, and no man ever so unfortunate as myself.’

“Then go. Do you think I would keep a Briton from his duties?”

“Fierce, my darling!”

He had not settled all his affairs so completely but that it might be necessary that he should return; but he thought that he would be able to remain at least twelve months in England.

And holding and disseminating these execrable dogmas, they still over and above constantly demand a hearing, when, as condemned, they ought to repent.

For it were monstrous for God, the Father of truth, to appear a liar for our profit and preservation.

When the woolsack has been reached there comes an end of doubt, and a beginning of ease.

“Did you speak of your love! And now, Silverbridge,—for if there be an English gentleman on earth I think that you are one,—as a gentleman tell me this. Did you not even tell your father that I should be your wife? I know you did.”

She would undertake very long walks, and would then fail, and declare that she must be carried home; but she would finally get through the day’s work better than another woman who appeared to have double her strength.

He possessed a practical philosophy of his own, by which he was able to steer his course in life.

Why should one have hired him, unless by the arrangement he was to have gone in to the other?

But since all that Moses wrote is of Christ, or relates to Christ, either as predicting Him by words and actions, or as illustrating His grace and glory, you, with your faith in the untrue and untruthful Christ from the writings of Manichæus, and your unbelief in Moses, will not even eat the fish.

There were, however, so many difficulties to be encountered that I cannot but think that the subject was ill-chosen.

What members have had these senses allotted to them?

CRAWLEY. Oh, yes, sir;—you are the son of Mrs. Goshawk.

Even in the very animals monogamy is recognised, for fear that even beasts should be born of adultery.

And this we ought to bear in mind in our own temptations also, and great will be the consolation we shall thence receive.

Chapter 28.— The First Man Himself Also Might Have Stood by His Free Will.

26. My elder daughters and my younger, lo! They cry before You; the damsels with their voices, they that are aged with their tears; my virgins with their fasts, my chaste ones with their sackcloth!

“Not at all hurt; but disfigured, as you see.”

“He does,—does he? May the devil sail along with him!—that is all I say. And does my much-respected and ever-to-be-beloved motherin-law sail with him?”

Chapter 4.— That the Great Reason for the Advent of Christ Was the Commendation of Love

For there follows, Far from My health are the words of My offenses: and it shows in whose person He said this; for sin could not be found in Him

It was a matter of boast to him,—the most pernicious boast that ever a man made,—that in twenty-four hours he could rid himself of all outward and inward sign of any special dissipation; but the twenty-four hours were needed, and now not twelve were allowed him.

Mitigate violent attacks [of disease] by gentle applications.

Chapter IX. Mrs. Dick’s Dinner Party.—No. I

In the first place, it showed that this Thorne was always thinking of his money, like an apothecary, as he was; whereas, it would have behoved him, as a physician, had he had the feelings of a physician under his hat, to have regarded his own pursuits in a purely philosophical spirit, and to have taken any gain which might have accrued as an accidental adjunct to his station in life.

If he could not make you a thief, because his thieving was displeasing in your sight, who can make men traditors or murderers to whom such treachery or murder is abhorrent?

‘Is not that a marriage in some countries?’

It must even be preserved in all dealings with enemies.

There were but three boys gathered at the little gate before the door to see the body of the rich man carried to his last home.

For to receive a mission is the same thing as to be sent, and to have nothing of one's own, but to receive of the free favour of him who gives the mission, and to minister his words to those who are under instruction, and to be a guide into truth for those that are astray.

You call Me Lord and Master, and you say well, for so I am.

Yet not I, but the grace which was with me.

But, says some one, the pleasure is great there.

And again, he says, the Saviour has declared, The publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of heaven before you.

The chance,—perhaps the hope,—of some such encounter as that of the former day, brought members into their seats, and filled the gallery with strangers.

And those Babingtons were such fools!

You, says He, shall be like unto your Father which is in heaven.

The marriage with Nidderdale would upon the whole be the best thing, if it could only be accomplished.

F. N.

“Bloomsbury Square is very near. Here we are at the hotel. Now, father, before you have anything taken off the carriages, ask the prices.”

Had he gone to the bottom of the sea in the same boat with his cousins, the tidings of his fate would have been pleasurable to her rather than otherwise.

And then had come that visit from Johnny Eames. As the poor fellow marched out of the room, giving them no time to say farewell, Mrs Dale and Bell looked at each other sadly; but they were unable to concoct any arrangement, for Lily had run across the lawn and was already on the ground before the window.

“If you will say that such a law is dominant among your class, and that it is one to which you would submit yourself, I will not repudiate it. But you shall not induce me to consent to it, by even a false idea as to the softer delicacy of the sex. That softer delicacy, with its privileges and duties, shall be made to stand for what it is worth, and to occupy its real ground. If you use it for other mock purposes, then I will quarrel with you.” It was thus that she had spoken, and he understood it all.

And when he had been removed, and the trophy was raised, do you then pray to be slain?

You see with what judgment of the Lord this power was given to the devil.

“Of course I know,” she said.

For he seems to me to say this; I have confessed my sins, and You have heard me; that is, so that You would remit them.

To do so he must be a proficient in that impudence, the lack of which created so many difficulties for him.

For if they who are dragged by force have no refuge or defense, if they discharge duty ill and are negligent; since even Aaron was dragged by force, and yet was imperiled; and Moses again was imperiled, although he had oftentimes declined; and Saul having been entrusted with another kind of rule, after he had declined it, was in peril, because he managed it amiss; how much more they who take so great pains to obtain it, and cast themselves upon it?

Observe here, the writer has no intention of flattering them.

But Sunday evenings within doors I always found to be what my friends in that country call “quite a good time.” It is not the thing in Boston to smoke in the streets during the day; but the wisest, the sagest, and the most holy—even those holy men whom the lecturer saw around him— seldom refuse a cigar in the dining-room as soon as the ladies have gone.

You wish me to assert positively one view or the other.

At six, the father and daughter dined, and soon after dinner Mr Vavasor went up to his own room to prepare himself for his journey.

Jesus therefore, rejoicing in the spirit, said: I thank You, O Father, God of heaven and earth, that You have hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them to babes; [Luke 10:21] the Master and Teacher applying the name babes to us, who are readier to embrace salvation than the wise in the world, who, thinking themselves wise, are inflated with pride.

Chapter V. The Solicitor-General Makes a Proposition

For my part, this is the very thing I long tried to persuade myself of, that God was born; but the discrepancy in the genealogies of Luke and Matthew stumbled me, as I knew not which to follow.

Nothing was spoken of that evening between Dr Thorne and his niece excepting Beatrice’s future happiness; nothing, at least, having reference to what had passed that morning. But on the following morning circumstances led to Frank Gresham’s name being mentioned.

Why, I could paper a room with their signatures; and yet I never had a claim upon one of them, though they always have claims on me!

But there’s nothing.

Chapter 32. Stubborn Facts.

“Or you wouldn’t prevent me enjoying myself while I am here, by saying things which you ought to know I don’t like.”

And they are all to be referred to him, if his various parts and powers are thought of as so many gods, or if the principle of mind which they think to be diffused through all things has received the names of many gods from the various parts which the mass of this visible world combines in itself, and from the manifold administration of nature.

When last we heard of her she was at Naples, and there was then a rumour that she was about to join her fate to that of Lord George de Bruce Carruthers, with whom pecuniary matters had lately not been going comfortably.

For, he that does not take his cross, and follow after Me, says He, is not worthy of Me; [Matthew 10:38] and so, The good shepherd lays down his life for the sheep.

Well now, are not such fables as these made up of the most disgusting intrigues and the worst of scandals?

Within twenty minutes, about six thousand men started off without a leader or any defined object, to besiege the walls of Saumur; they did not even know that a vast entrenched encampment of the enemy’s troops lay directly in their way.

But if any one argue, How then is it said, 'Who visits the sins of the parents upon the children unto the third and fourth generation'?

“Oh, Jane, if you’d only think of it! Could you?”

For having become wholly spiritual, and having in the spiritual Church gone to what is of kindred nature, it abides in the rest of God.

A question how is it possible always to observe one and the same measure.

“Oh, I don’t know,” said she.

but felt more, wept more, and let fall hotter tears.

‘He will come when I ask him,’ said Marie, flashing round upon her aunt with all the fire of her bright eyes. ‘Does any one say that I have done anything to bring him to me? If so, it is false, whoever says it. I have done nothing. He has gone away, and let him stay. I shall not send for him. Uncle Michel need not be afraid of me, because of George.’

3. And at the same feast a cow, led by the high priest to be sacrificed, brought forth a lamb in the midst of the temple.

And then she began to think about Lady Glencora herself.

“With plenty of money on both sides?” asked the Duchess. Lopez shrugged his shoulders. A shrug at such a time may mean anything, but the Duchess took this shrug as signifying that the question was so surely settled as to admit of no difficulty. “Then,” said the Duchess, “the old gentleman may as well give way at once. Of course his daughter will be too many for him.” In this way the Duchess of Omnium became the fast friend of Ferdinand Lopez.

Gibson and his first love,—and things went on pretty much as though nothing had been done amiss.

On Fearing God, and Not Fearing the Devil.

“Do you feel pity for me?”

the Psalmist adds: He that has clean hands and a pure heart, who has not lift up his mind unto vanity.

Could she bid him to come to us tomorrow, and bring the box and the papers with him?

And by all these things he has signified what?

If he replies that they were revealed to him by the Holy Spirit, and that his mind was divinely enlightened that he might know them to be certain and evident, he himself points to the distinction between knowing and believing.

‘Will you let me tell her that I will not marry the capitaine; that I will not give up your promises; and then I am ready to leave the house?’

He visited the Romans, and attracted the senate to his doctrine.

And if any one ask why He put the bag of the poor in the hands of a thief, and made him steward who was a lover of money, we would reply, that God knows the secret reason; but that, if we may say something by conjecture, it was that He might cut off from him all excuse.

Therefore though under no obligation He chose it, teaching us to be bold against it, and to set it at nought.

She did not esteem him less now.

“And did he say anything—anything particular?”

Long time had he offered to the Lord his repentance, working out his exomologesis by a seven years' squalor, with his nails wildly growing after the eagle's fashion, and his unkempt hair wearing the shagginess of a lion.

But I found myself to be altogether in the wrong.

When the guest presents himself at any of these hours, he is marshaled to a seat, and a bill is put into his hand containing the names of all the eatables then offered for his choice.

And they should stand together discreetly at the non-running side.

“I’m as innocent as the babe unborn. Why should I be expected to marry a lady merely because Mrs Stumfold tells me that there she is? And it’s my belief that old Peters has got their money somewhere, and won’t give it up, and that that’s the reason of it.”

Now this same Varro had shown that the earth and the stars were animated.

Some men said,—and many women repeated the story,—that she had known of the existence of the former wife, when she had married the Earl.

And if yet thou did not know that it is surely He, how thinkest you yourself credible, affirming as thou dost concerning things, whereof you are ignorant?

“You had better go in to Miss Lynch, mother,” said Martin, “and ask her av’ it’s pleasing to her to see Mr Daly. She can see him, in course, av’ she likes.”

“After what the Rufford people said to me I’m sure he’s going to marry her,” said young Glossop. No doubt Lady Penwether had been anxious to make it understood by every one connected with the family that if any gossip should be heard about Rufford and Arabella Trefoil there was nothing in it.

But if you will, I can bring forward ten thousand such from within the Church.

[John 2:19] And He Himself quickens us together with His Body: For as the Father raises the dead and quickens them, so also the Son quickens Whom He will.

He was necessarily thrown into communication with the man at the time of the trial, and Scatcherd then had not only sufficient sense, but sufficient feeling also to know that the doctor behaved very well.

And although it would be right to denounce and expose in full the folly of those who have had such ideas, yet it would be a good thing to close my letter here and write no more.

3. But wherefore does He also bring forward Moses and Elias? One might mention many reasons. And first of all this: because the multitudes said He was, some Elias, some Jeremias, some one of the old prophets, He brings the leaders of His choir, that they might see the difference even hereby between the servants and the Lord; and that Peter was rightly commended for confessing Him Son of God.

For he did not at once, after taking possession of his throne, like men who have unexpectedly seized upon some sovereignty or inheritance, grow insolent from intoxication.

He would show, that not to have done it would have been to break the Law, and that there are many things more authoritative than the Law, and that Moses endured to receive a command against the Law, and more authoritative than the Law.

And this same may not be unfitly said of memory also.

“Yes; and therefore you are not supposed to understand it. This is what it means. As an hour for joy has come, do not let any trouble interfere with it. Let it all be, for this day at least, as though there had been no walk in the Stalham Woods. There is Larry Twentyman. If I break down as I did on Friday you may always trust to him. Larry and you are old friends now.”

What I lament is that you do not lament yourself, that you do not realize that you are dead, that, like a gladiator ready for Libitina, you deck yourself out for your own funeral.

For Arius and Eunomius, asserting the only begotten Son of God to be a creature, and made out of the non-existent, and a servant, have ventured to apply to His godhead what is said in lowly and human sense; establishing by such means the difference of substance and the unlikeness.

Do not (He says) seize by violence what is not your own; do not overreach; do not forswear yourself. What labors do these things require! What sweatings!

When her son told her that he must go down to Scotland again very shortly, she reconciled herself to his loss.

Consequently these are the words of Abraham to Lot, when taking precaution against this evil, Let there be no strife between me and you, and between my herdmen and your herdmen; for we be brethren.

So far let it suffice for me to have told a few things out of many concerning Abbot John: now I will relate a memorable deed of Abbot Patermucius.

This is a teacher's duty: such an one was the blessed Paul, a man who was free from all manner of vanity, and was contented to be one of the many, nay more, to be the very least even of them.

No—a young unmarried man would not do.—Mat Tierney?—he was afraid of no one, and always cool and collected; but then, Mat was in London; besides, he was a sort of friend of Kilcullen’s.

But, In your Seed shall all nations be blessed.

Who has measured the water with his hand, and the heaven with a span, and the whole earth in a measure?

There was nothing of a devil about him, except that his conscience was not peculiarly attentive to abstract honesty and abstract virtue.

What, then, do you say?

“Yes;—but Rufford!—a fellow with sixty thousand a year!” said Glossop.

Chapter 2. All Creatures Subsist from the Plenitude of Divine Goodness.

He would prove that the boy was not Popenjoy, though he should have to spend his last shilling in doing so.

[Matthew 25:1, etc.]

But in that place he next shows what he offers: The sacrifice of God is a troubled spirit: a broken and a contrite heart, O God, shall Thou not despise.

“Don’t I tell you that I don’t know?”

For supposing the woman had not been deceived, and Adam had not fallen, and man created for incorruption had obtained it, then He would not have descended into the grave, nor would He have died, there being no sin, nor would His love of men have required that He should die, and if He had not died, He could not have been the first-born of the dead.

And what that should be in us, by which we were like God, and might rightly in Scripture be said to be after the image of God, I was entirely ignorant.

The world would never be so hard to a woman or to children as it had been to him.

This I think was effected.

Which is able to build you up.

And [Matthew 20:26-27; Mark 10:43; not verbatim] He that will be first of all, let him be the servant of all.

The ploughs are very deep, and his horse, though still boring at him, pants heavily.

The proposal was not that he should marry Miss Stanbury, senior, who certainly could be severe on occasions, but Miss Stanbury, junior, whose temper was as sweet as primroses in March.

Here He hinted, that not He alone condemns them, but the Father also. Then He concealed this, by leading them to His own testimony.

But whoever reads the sacred writings in the pious spirit which is required to understand them, must be convinced that whatever the light was which was made when, at the time that darkness was over the deep, God said, "Let there be light," it was created light, and the creating Light was the maker of it.

She was sure that she would be true to him, as far as truth to his material interests was concerned.

Our consumption is so enormous that we cannot keep pace with it in our endeavour to provide for it.

Mick had told them that if they found a speck at the end of three weeks they would be very fortunate.

He could not charge her with direct disobedience, because she had promised him that she would not do any of those things which, as a father, he had a right to forbid.

When they all sat down to their breakfast in the Parsonage dining-room, that little matter had come to be clean forgotten.

These things he predicted would come upon them, not as though he wished them to happen.

But this very Bread has come, in whose body you may remember the voice of your forgetfulness, and cry out in your poverty, so that you may receive riches.

And I have declared unto them Your Name, and will declare it.

“Why, perhaps, just at present, you are too weak to move; only wouldn’t it be more comfortable for you to be in your own house? These people here are all very well, I dare say, but they must be a great bother to you, eh?—so interested, you know, in everything they do.”

Then He sees this fruit not existing in you, and he abides not with an unmerciful soul.

Every word that his brother said was in truth an insult,—being, as they were, the first words spoken after so long an interval.

But what had she to do with his friends?

For tell me who was poorer than Elias?

’The loveliest lady that ever was seen

Rom. XII. 1

“But why make such a terrible hard day’s work of it?”

For these are certain admirable dogs of the Royal Courts.

And when she was overpersuaded by her friends, who advised her still to continue with him, in the idea that some time or other her husband might give hope of amendment, she did violence to her own feeling and remained with him.

There are things practiced in a vulgar style by some people, such as control over pleasures.

Mr. Western would be bound to sympathise.

No doubt you will exclaim against this, and will make it a reproach against us that you highly esteem and approve perfect chastity, but do not forbid marriage, because your followers— that is, those in the second grade among you— are allowed to have wives.

There was very little in the dispute which seemed to be worthy of the place in which it occurred, or of the vigour with which it was conducted; but it served to show the temper of the parties, and to express the bitterness of the political feelings of the day.

Be that as it might, he would not yield.

And to wait, he says, for His Son from heaven, whom He raised from the dead, even Jesus, which delivers us from the wrath to come.

He would not accept anything from his father on the understanding that his father had any such right.

For there the tribes went up [Psalm 121:4].

It might have served for three months to keep his throne, but could hardly have been serviceable after fifteen.

It may therefore be correctly affirmed, that such infants as quit the body without being baptized will be involved in the mildest condemnation of all.

He had only half resolved in regard to his cousin.

She first declared that she would not see Lady Milborough.

They are reported, or perhaps actually proved, to be the authors of this perversion; at all events, if not the authors (as having learned it from others), they are yet its boasted abettors and teachers, through whose agency the heresy has advanced and grown to a wider extent.

“Well, I only gave one hundred and four for it then; it’s worth a hundred and twenty now. I wouldn’t sell a bottle of it for any money. Come, Dalrymple, pass it round; but fill your glass first.”

[And they were filled with wonder and amazement at that which had happened unto him.]

[Leviticus 19:10; Deuteronomy 24:20-21] Besides, the tithes of the fruits and of the flocks taught both piety towards the Deity, and not covetously to grasp everything, but to communicate gifts of kindness to one's neighbours.

And who but must condemn the fickleness of Eudoxius, Acacius, and their fellows, who sacrifice the honour due to their own fathers to partizanship and patronage of the Ario-maniacs ?

‘No, I can’t.’

What pardon can there be for you who deride and do violence to the messenger of the truth when he offers to you the knowledge of God?

The shipwrecked have been devoured by fishes, which are themselves devoured.

When he was shown the letter he merely smiled.

This, as He proceeded, he enjoined also more fully, saying, Take no thought for the morrow. He would have us be on every hand unencumbered and winged for flight, yielding just so much to nature as the compulsion of necessity requires of us.

No, there are too many presages from entrails, auguries, soothsayings, whereby they boastingly proclaimed themselves prescient of future events and controllers of the fortune of war—all which prove them to have been present.

I am tempted to say that I will never know anybody any more.” Such was the complaint made by the Duchess to Mrs. Finn a few days after the Richmond party, and from this it was evident that the latter affair had not passed without notice.

He, when he was left alone, first turned his mind to the subject of Jack Stuart and his yacht.

But he had thought at the same time that under no possible circumstances could he have fallen in love with Miss Trefoil.

Daly turned very red at the insinuation. He was within an ace of seizing Lynch by the collar, and expelling him in a summary way from his premises, a feat which he was able to perform; and willing also, for he was sick of his client; but he thought of it a second time, and restrained himself.

“And that is the result of your very extended experience? The orchards which have been opened to you have not, I fear, been of the first quality. Mr. Staveley, my hand will do very well by itself. Such is not the sort of climbing that is required. That is what I call stooping to pick up the fruit that has fallen.” And as she spoke, she moved a little away from him on the sofa.

“There need be no grovelling. There need be no confessions.”

At present there was the embarrassment of not quite knowing how to behave herself.

But of those who shift about according to the character and changes of the several chances which happen to them, we read: But a fool will change like the moon.

During the last London season he had been introduced to her, and had dined twice at her house.

Why should not the girl have the man if he were lovable?

“And I might ask another question. How long will it be before you put the same question to some other girl?”

The bearers of these presents, who came hither from the parts of Istria to find their bishop who is now living in the parts of Sicily, have asked us to speed them in their way, and we have arranged for their journey hence.

In these twelve was the tribe of Judah, whence the kings were.

Here he passes to another subject; in the former chapters he had shown himself not to be an Apostle of men, nor by men, nor in want of Apostolic instruction.

I don’t think that I believe any more in the party;—or rather in the men who lead it.

I am going with the Fitzwilliam.” Now Mistletoe was in Lincolnshire, not very far from Peterborough, not very far from Stamford, not very far from Oakham.

But He owns Himself much indebted to them too, and is not ashamed to confess before all that He, the Master, is nourished by His slaves.

Since know yourself is not so said to the mind as is Know the cherubim and the seraphim; for they are absent, and we believe concerning them, and according to that belief they are declared to be certain celestial powers.

“I did,” said she; “and then all the property was mine.”

Let them begin with short periods of release from the marriage bond, and give themselves unto prayer, that when they have tasted the sweets of chastity they may desire the perpetual possession of that wherewith they were temporarily delighted.

He regarded them all not at all, showing no feeling of disgrace at his position, and no desire to carry himself as a ruffler.

It could not be expected, she said, but that their father would be hard to persuade.

“And proud you may be to have been his mother. He was a great and good man: he was trusted and loved by all La Vendée. No one was so beloved by the poor as he was; no one was so entirely trusted by the rich and great.”

Will it be what the rich man had to do, he who was wont to fare sumptuously in the upper world, and in hell was tormented?

The Emperor Severus left a son, Severianus, arrived at man's estate, who accompanied Daia in his flight from the field of battle.

Will declared that he would stay at the inn at Redicote, striving to explain in some very unintelligible manner that such an arrangement would be very convenient.

ABOUT THIS TIME there came to town an old gentleman from the country, who had known Mary’s father, and he brought with him his daughter Jemima. Jemima Robinson and Mary Tomkins were fast friends, though narrow circumstances compelled the latter to administer to the wants of her aunt’s inmates. Now, it was thought that the presence of the old squire and his daughter might induce the heart-laden girl to tak counsel with prudence, and to give herself either to the one suitor or to the other.

He was weak with hunger too—though he did not know it, for he had hardly eaten food that day, and was nearly exhausted with the unaccustomed amount of hard exercise which he had taken.

Listen, then, said Bardesan, and observe, that that which the stars decree by their Fate and their portions is not practised by all men alike who are in all parts of the earth.

How then is it? For in truth there are many questions following one upon another. Well, give me then your earnest attention; since in fact it is necessary for us first to speak of the scope of Paul and his mind, which one may find everywhere shining forth, and then to subjoin our solution: this being itself an ingredient in our solution.

But since you also wish to be informed concerning my bodily health, let me tell you that I have been relieved for the present from the infirmity which was lately oppressing me, and am now in a more comfortable condition: the only fear is lest the winter on its return should again make havoc of my feeble digestion; and as far as the Isaurians are concerned we now enjoy great security.

“I should perhaps say that he has quarrelled with me. But, dear papa, pray do not question me at present. I will tell you all when you come back, but I thought it right that you should know this before you went.”

Wherefore, when I looked that it should bring forth grapes, brought it forth thorns?

Any rational explanation must assume that God's majesty cannot be augmented, even as it cannot be measured ( 44, 45), while our reason is limited, and so contrasted with the Divine infinity.

After Peter, bishop of Alexandria, had suffered martyrdom under Diocletian, Achillas was installed in the episcopal office, whom Alexander succeeded, during the period of peace above referred to.

[1 Timothy 5:8] And, If any man that is called a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater [1 Corinthians 5:11], such a man honors not God.

But the Lacedæmonians, having learned the stratagem of the enemy, followed.

When they came to the garden, You see, said Isaac, this garden with its shrubs and green vegetables; about three years ago it was ravaged by a troop of wild asses.

“Perhaps it is quite as well that I should find you alone,” he said, after sundry preludes, to his future motherin-law, “because you can make Camilla understand this better than I can.

“I should be very sorry if he had to leave the parish on my account.”

Nor is it probable that a man in addressing his son as to rules of life would have spoken against a method of gathering riches which, had he practised it himself, must have been known to his son.

For he that teaches must be especially careful to do it with meekness.

To rescue a man, already death's capture, from his grasp;

But how, unless they worked miracles, did they convince?

For it is commonly the case that some one is of too joyous a constitution, and yet sadness suddenly arising immoderately depresses him.

But, inasmuch as the same Plato speaks of the rational element only as existing in the soul of God Himself, if we were to ascribe the irrational element likewise to the nature which our soul has received from God, then the irrational element will be equally derived from God, as being a natural production, because God is the author of nature.

But mark thou, I pray you, how vainglory prevailed; when they were commanded not to be vainglorious, even in the synagogues, where they had entered to discipline others.

For though I am bound for the name [of Christ], I am not yet perfect in Jesus Christ.

That is, because men for the most part remember God in sickness, but grow slacker after recovery; He bids them continually both in sickness and in health to give heed to the Lord, in these words, give glory to God.

“I don’t like those slang words, Lily.”

But why do I speak of the distant past?

Then, as soon as he could find a spot apart from the Sunday world, he threw himself upon the turf; and tried to fix his thoughts upon the thing that he had done.

And in the first place, it seemed very unworthy of this most sacred feast, that we should keep it following the custom of the Jews; a people who having imbrued their hands in a most heinous outrage, have thus polluted their souls, and are deservedly blind.

He was the first Gentile baptized by the apostle, and in him the Gentiles were set apart to salvation.

“Of course you have not troubled her,—but she knows what we all mean.”

And he might say things that would be prejudicial to others,—especially to you.

For these are scared by all manner of sounds and noises; because they have not reasoning power, which is adequate to dispel fear.

Frank thought that they had better abstain from allusion to their opponent’s religion.

The interview ended in Mr. Slope receiving a full renunciation from Mr. Quiverful of any claim he might have to the appointment in question. It was only given verbally and without witnesses, but then the original promise was made in the same way.

3. He then adds another distinction, Without father, without mother, without genealogy, having neither beginning of days nor end of life, but made like the Son of God, abides a Priest continually. Since then there lay in his way [as an objection] the [words] You are a Priest for ever, after the order of Melchisedec, whereas he [Melchisedec] was dead, and was not Priest for ever, see how he explained it mystically.

Or let a man venture to make the distinction, that the sun and the radiance are two lights, or different essences; or to say that the radiance accrued to it over and above, and is not a simple and pure offspring from the sun; such, that sun and radiance are two, but the light one, because the radiance is an offspring from the Sun.

“That is because you first knew me in Britannula, and have since passed a month with me at sea. You are my one and only friend, and you are about to leave me,—and you also disbelieve in me. You must acknowledge to yourself that you have never known one whose position in the world was more piteous, or whose difficulties were more trying.” Then I left him, and went down to complete my manuscript.

But if their gold and silver, their vests of silk and cloth of gold, came into your hands, what would it profit you?

But he had been in the breakfast-parlour before her, had seen the envelope, and had recognised the handwriting.

Undue pride was not a part of Lady Glencora’s character.

Again, that the wise man alone and that every wise man is free and has received from the divine law authority to do what he himself is minded to do, and this authority they call lawful power of decision.

[Acts 4:34-35] But Ananias and Sapphira proved timid stewards, and what is more, deceitful ones; therefore they brought on themselves condemnation.

If he went to Berkeley Square again, would he be able to leave it triumphantly as he had done on his last visit?

‘But we must know, dearest, before Harry can do anything,’ said

He was there for ten sad years, and seems to have ruled,—no doubt necessarily,—with a stern hand.

“I certainly think so,” said the squire; “but one can’t have everything.”

How long, when God lifts us to heaven, take we pains to be trailed along the ground?

“Well, well, you know I don’t mean to make you angry.”

For it was possible, even had they believed, that he should remain true; since he would not have prophesied these things if they had been about to believe.

[1 Corinthians 2:8-9] Some writers on this passage betake themselves to the ravings of the apocryphal books and assert that the quotation comes from the Revelation of Elijah; whereas the truth is that it is found in Isaiah according to the Hebrew text: Since the beginning of the world men have not heard nor perceived by the ear, neither has the eye seen, O God, beside you what you have prepared for them that wait for you.

They were in the habit of walking there together when he happened to be at home of a summer’s evening.

It is hardly too much to say that Lady Glencora looked to Alice to save her.

When Saphrus reigned as the fourteenth king of Assyria, and Orthopolis as the twelfth of Sicyon, and Criasus as the fifth of Argos, Moses was born in Egypt, by whom the people of God were liberated from the Egyptian slavery, in which they behooved to be thus tried that they might desire the help of their Creator.

He, therefore, who is not worthy of remission, passes the number fifty, as Doeg the Idumean.

Chapter 2. Cautions against false teachers

For the heavenly Watchers departed from the fence of the vineyard; and the mighty tower on which they relied was torn down.

“Denot will be here directly,” said La Rochejaquelin; “he is at the

“Where does he go?”

For the wife stands there mourning, when she ought to rejoice; the children weeping, when they ought to be glad together; the sick man himself lies there in darkness, and surrounded by noise and tumult, when he ought to be keeping high festival; full of exceeding despondency at the thought of leaving his children orphans, his wife a widow, his house desolate.

In the same way, in the beginning, when darkness was over the deep, God said, "Let there be light, and there was light," which only the light-giving light, which is God Himself, could have made.

He would have avoided Lily for both their sakes, had it been possible; but it was no longer possible, and he could not keep his eyes from her face.

But so much at variance were Mr. Prendergast’s ideas from those entertained by Mr. Somers, that he would not even speak to Herbert on the subject.

Are these then, I beseech you, the persons whose good opinion you follow after?

In short, therefore, to those who are thought worthy of eternal life, God appoints one universal King in the world that shall then be, that by means of monarchy there may be unfailing peace.

[1 Corinthians 3:1-2] A mother I have been to you: as is said in another place, I became a babe among you, even as a nurse cherishing her own children.

For His grace touches the very soul, and thence plucks up the sin by the root.

In how brief a season do flowers pass away, and these are the beauty of the herbs!

After him others also of the same family were discovered in the act of forming secret plots against the emperor; all their intentions being miraculously revealed by God through visions to His servant.

Accordingly they write to Philagrius, and cause him after a while to go out with Gregory into Egypt.

“I would so much rather see you in this way,—I would indeed. I do dine out occasionally, but it is at big formal parties, which I cannot escape without giving offence.”

He foresaw that if the door were left open, pursuit through it would be both inevitable and fatal.

She would tell Lord Mistletoe her whole story,—that is the story as she would please to tell it,—and implore his aid.

To linger there among the rocks seemed to be the only delight left to her in life,—except that intense delight which a mother has in loving her child.

“His mother says so.”

I had no alternative but to do it, of course, and to do it in the hope of reaching the truth.

When they arrived at the holy places, they had an interview with those who were of the same opinions as themselves, namely, Eusebius, bishop of Cæsarea, Patrophilus, bishop of Scythopolis, Aetius, bishop of Lydda, Theodotus, bishop of Laodicea, and others who had imbibed the Arian sentiments; they made known the plot they had hatched to them, and went with them to Antioch.

“One day won’t be much, you know,” he said to his partner, as he made half an apology for absenting himself on business which was not to be in any degree remunerative.

Even to have been sent for at all, to be allowed to go back even in disgrace, would.

“‘Deed, an’ I know how it ‘ll go very well, Sir Herbert, and so does Mr. Somers, God bless him! ‘Twas only this morning he tould me. An’, faix, it’s he has the right to be glad.”

And so, because He was teaching as one having authority, lest His so teaching should be thought boasting and arrogant, He does the very same in His works also, as having authority to heal; that they might no more be perplexed at seeing Him teach in this way, when He was working His miracles also in the same.

She knew that she liked him well, but had feared that such liking might not be encouraged.

224. Each one knows his own powers. Therefore let each one apply himself to that which he has chosen as suitable to himself. But he must first consider what will be the consequences. He may know his good points, but he must know his faults also. He must also be a fair judge of himself, so as to aim at what is good and avoid what is bad.

But what follows, The Lord will send forth the rod of Your strength out of Sion, and rule You in the midst of Your enemies, is so clear, that to deny it would imply not merely unbelief and mistake, but downright impudence.

Woman and man are to go to church decently attired, with natural step, embracing silence, possessing unfeigned love, pure in body, pure in heart, fit to pray to God.

Now the girls had shown how deftly they could do the work, and had begun to talk pleasantly how well they could manage to save the wages and the food.

But let us rather hear the divine words spoken through the angel.

For when men alter a right faith for reputation's sake, and dishonor God that they may be in high repute themselves, tell me, what excess of stupidity and madness must there not be in what they do?

But the mob of Baltimore had ceased to be secessionists within twelve months of their first exploit.

91. Neither do we say that it is valid for salvation so long as they are heretics, just as it is of no value to those murderers of whom we spoke, so long as they hate their brethren: for they also themselves are in darkness, and if any one follows them they fall together into the ditch; and yet it does not follow that they either have not baptism or are unable to confer it.

Trigger.

When, however, Sir Orlando, in his place as Leader of the House, in answer to some question from a hot and disappointed Radical, averred that the whole of her Majesty’s Government had been quite in unison on this question of the county suffrage, he was hardly able to restrain himself.

Forasmuch, therefore, as God would in no wise forsake a man so merciful in his disposition and conduct, there appeared to him in sleep a youth of remarkable appearance and commanding presence, who said to him: Follow me.

If you believe not that repentance is able to quench the fire of hell, learn it from what happened in regard to Ananias.

For this is why the Only begotten, having life in Himself as the Father has, also knows alone Who the Father is, namely, because He is in the Father and the Father in Him.

But these names, and the realities which they represent, contain no innovation upon the Divine nature, nothing inconsistent, nothing alien.

Maroeo shook hands with each of us twice before he began to talk, as did all his cortege.

“To do as I ask you,—that would be kind. Oh, Ayala, cannot you be kind to me?” She shook her head, still standing in the place which she had occupied from the beginning. “May I come again? Will you give me three months, and then think of it? If you would only say that, I would go back to my work and never leave it.” But she still shook her head. “Must I never hope?”

or 14s.,—on each but occupied, and it is indispensable to the Government of the new Colony that the same system shall be introduced there.

It is plainly impossible to say what a manner of generation can mean.

That it may be conformed to the body of his glory.

Is Christ of one mind abroad and of another at home?

For The Lord is His name.

“Really, Fanny, this is the most unaccountable thing I ever heard of. But you’d better sit down, while I speak to you,” and Fanny sat down on the sofa. “I think I understood you rightly, when you desired me, less than a month ago, to inform Lord Ballindine that circumstances—that is, his own conduct—obliged you to decline the honour of his alliance. Did you not do so spontaneously, and of your own accord?”

But to poor Sir Thomas it was indeed a purgatory.

For as there is a Church and Churches, and those are Churches which also are a Church, so that is a nation which was nations: formerly nations, many nations, now one nation.

And if you become depraved, because of His goodness, you are rather belying Him before men.

The Son was not at the first a servant by nature, but afterwards began to be by nature something which He was not before.

Besides they thought they should be gaining a great object if they could slay Christ, but that which the woman had done was allowed by all to be wicked; yet was she not indignant, but was astonished and wondered.

This has happened to myself among others.

He regrets the length of these introductions, and will now begin at once the action of his story.

But the work of his life was to be the advertising department.

And therefore that very ancient prophet, who prophesied many generations before the reign of Cyrus (for he was older than he by more than fourteen generations), expressed himself in these words: The Lord is my light and my salvation: whom shall I fear?

They are not even removable on an address of Congress; thus holding on a firmer tenure even than our own judges, who may, I believe, be moved on an address by Parliament.

He would go to Alice and demand the money from her with threats, and with that violence in his eyes which he knew so well how to assume.

Having ended his prayer, he kissed the tomb of the blessed evangelist, and of the other pontiffs who were buried there, and went forth to the tribunes.

For His readiness to give us the immortality which will be had at the coming of Christ, is in proportion to the compassion with which He hated our death when it hung on the cross at the death of Christ.

Justin: Hear, then, how this Man, of whom the Scriptures declare that He will come again in glory after His crucifixion, was symbolized both by the tree of life, which was said to have been planted in paradise, and by those events which should happen to all the just.

Therefore she said nothing further, though her aunt sat looking at her with open mouth, and eyes full of terror, and hands clasped, and pale cheeks.

But it must be remembered that the dimensions and proportions of wars now are infinitely greater than they were when we began to borrow.

‘Sit down with us, Marie, to oblige me,’ said Madame Voss.

Bourbotte.

God made the world, as Plato thought, but he does not show why He made it.

He could not have come to Lady Linlithgow’s house.

Young Wilkinson, though he lost New College, received a small scholarship from Winchester, and he also was sent by his father to Oxford.

See what follows: But the Word of the Lord abides for ever

How can the Septuagint leave out the word 'Nazarene,' if it is unlawful to substitute one word for another?

Except that He, too, shall come down like rain upon a fleece, and like the drops that water the earth.

“And after that you mean to say—”

“Ah,” said Mr. Chaffanbrass. “But what if he should happen to change his opinion about his own client?”

This makes the eyes of the soul more beauteous, it curbs the belly: it fills with the love of wisdom, with much sympathy: and it is able to soften even a soul of adamant.

because of the relationship of the flesh, and 'First-born from the dead,' because the resurrection of the dead is from Him and after Him; and 'First-born of the whole creation,' because of the Father's love to man, which brought it to pass that in His Word not only 'all things consist ,' but the creation itself, of which the Apostle speaks, 'waiting for the manifestation of the sons of God, shall be delivered' one time 'from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God. '

“Yes; and think of the state in which you’d reach Loughlinter! Come along with me.”

Time will cure it,— in a way.

“It will soon come again to you if you like to try. I was very fond of waltzing before I was married.” And this was the daughter of Mr. Comfort, the clergyman who preached with such strenuous eloquence against worldly vanities! Even Rachel was a little puzzled, and was almost afraid that her head was sinking beneath the waters.

Now, since the Acts of the Apostles thus agree with Paul, it becomes apparent why you reject them.

“Oh, he used her horrible!” said Jane.

Act One. Scene One

“Well, Myles,” she said as soon as he was in the room, and before the door was shut, “where were you all this time, since Sunday?” and she stood on tiptoe to give him the kiss which she rather offered than he asked. “Who have you got in Mohill then that keeps you away from Feemy? It’s Mary Cassidy now; what business had you shopping with Mary Cassidy?”

The practice is, that every year we go out beyond the bounds of the city, in company with our wives and children, and offer up supplications to the only and invisible God, praying Him to send us rains for our fields and crops.

But that which other copies have, let the mountains receive peace for the people, and let the hills: I think must be understood of all sorts of preaching of Gospel peace, whether those that go before, or those that follow after.

Did you not say, I am in dread, lest by any means, after that I have preached to others, I myself should be rejected?

Why cannot you, if others can?

But then Lufton has no constituents to look after—lucky dog!

She trusted in the dean, and knew that he would help them, if any help were possible.

For where there is birth, there we see, My beloved Son; but where there is a choice from among the nations, and adoption through an act of will, there is My firstborn son.

But for bodily mutilation and indignity, mark how he practised himself.

The man could simply say that he was only a messenger, and had now done his work.

You see as I was saying, the important difference existing between such of them as maintain that infants are absolutely pure and free from all sin, whether original or actual; and those who suppose that so soon as born infants have contracted actual sins of their own, from which they need cleansing by baptism.

Then said I, [Never, O Peter, shall I retain anything, if I can lose or forget that.]

Trypho: Of what [signs] do you speak?

It had not even yet been ruffled, although the indignities thrown upon him had almost surpassed those inflicted on myself.

For Himself says, Because iniquity has abounded, the love of many shall wax cold.

The judge menaced them, and multiplied his words of threatening;

Moreover, let them show where there is to be found even the appearance of language dictated by arrogance and proceeding from Jesus.

[Matthew 21:23] For since they could not object against the miracles, they bring forward against Him the correction of the traffickers in the temple.

“Because I don’t know; but it will come. It won’t be about his coat, nor yet his hat, unless he puts it close down under my nose. My time, as I understand, is to be at his disposal.”

For he did not, (Valentinus) says, himself project, but Nous and Aletheia (projected) Christ and the Holy Spirit for the restoration of Form, and the destruction of the abortion, and (for) the consolation and cessation of the groans of Sophia.

For if he condemned himself, if he made a great wailing, why did he find no place of repentance?

Now even if they should presume to make this pretext, they would most glaringly expose their own ignorance.

Let the enemy be drawn up in battle array opposite to these, fierce and savage men, and let the time of the engagement be now at hand.

What sort of excuse then will they have who disbelieve the Resurrection, when the action is practiced each day, in seeds, in plants, and in the case of our own generation?

But the circumstances were hard upon him.

Marie, she told the capitaine, should be equal to herself in the establishment, when once she was entitled to be called Madame Campan, and she should be to her quite as a daughter.

“As for that, Mr. Trewillian,—why facts is to be come at by one party pretty well as much as by another. Now, suppose the things was changed, wicey warsey,—and as I was hacting for the Colonel’s party.”

So at least she thought. She had been working some morsel of lace, as ladies do when ladies wish to be not quite doing nothing. She had endeavoured to ply her needle, very idly, while he was speaking to her, but now she allowed her hands to fall into her lap. She would have continued to work at the lace had she been able, but there are times when the eyes will not see clearly, and when the hands will hardly act mechanically.

Langalibalele

In His shadow I delighted and sat down, and His fruit was sweet to my palate.

Westerman was standing between the hedge and the mounted officer, when the latter fell with his horse, and the blood from the poor animal nearly covered him from head to foot.

“Neville, you must answer me a question,” said the mother to him one morning when they were out together, looking down upon the Atlantic when the wind had lulled after a gale.

The peasants had conceived themselves invincible, and they were struck with consternation to find they were liable to repulse and defeat.

And when they had gone out, etc.

And that creatures should not be in existence, does not disparage the Maker; for He has the power of framing them, when He wills; but for the offspring not to be ever with the Father, is a disparagement of the perfection of His essence.

He, then, who prefers what is right to what is wrong, and what is well-ordered to what is perverted, sees that the peace of unjust men is not worthy to be called peace in comparison with the peace of the just.

Cæsar was not a man likely to be turned away from his purpose of ruling well by personal pride—less likely, we should say, than any self-made despot dealt with in history.

By the middle of May he had been four months in his new home.

In his irrational craving to have children, says Faustus, and not believing God, who promised that his wife Sara should have a son, he defiled himself with a mistress.

Be not a liar, to profess one thing and do another; keep the faith, and He keeps His promise.

Evarestus succeeded Clement, and Alexander, Evarestus. Then Xystus, the sixth from the apostles, was appointed. After him Telesphorus, who suffered martyrdom gloriously; then Hyginus; then Pius; and after him Anicetus; Soter succeeded Anicetus; and now, in the twelfth place from the apostles, Eleutherus holds the office of bishop.

“You must go through Cartago,” said the mild voice, “ and I live there. We will dine there at the inn tomorrow, and then do a portion of our work the same evening.” It was so arranged. I was to be with him the next day at three, with a guide and two mules.

“You begged me to ask no questions,” he said when he was in the cab with her, the maid having been induced most unwillingly to seat herself with the cabman on the box,—”and I have obeyed you.

Between them they were very bad.

He thought it very hard that his life should be made a burden to him by foul-mouthed rumours from Castle Quin.

‘Well,’ said he, ‘I was annoyed last night, and I must own it. It grieved me to hear Alaric turning your uncle into ridicule, and that before your mother’s face; and it grieved me to see you and Linda encourage him. In what Alaric said about the Admiralty he did not speak truthfully.’

Others are not in a position to receive it, perhaps on account of infancy, or some perfectly involuntary circumstance through which they are prevented from receiving it, even if they wish.

[John 14:2] For that which is seen, which is man, he considers to be the Son; whereas the Spirit, which was contained in the Son, to be the Father.

“No, madam, I am not an usher at a school.”

But these our Saviour convicted of uttering the greatest absurdities, from the fact that the kingdom of evil was not yet come to an end.

These times and these men are indicated by the apostle, when he says, But they that will be rich, fall into temptation, and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and in perdition.

He also had been at Oxford; but he had done little there except talk at a debating society, and make himself notorious by certain ideas on religious subjects which were not popular at the University.

It ends with a rhapsody in favor of imperial government—suitable, indeed, to the time of Domitian, but very unlike Tacitus.

“It’s well you didn’t go then.”

To the richer Jews they had oxen to sell, and there were doves for those who had vowed such animals, and many no doubt bought these with a view to their good cheer at the festival.

CRAWLEY. Tush, man! He who brings a message is a messenger, and he who carries letters is a letter-carrier. I will have my answer conveyed to Mr. Goshawk’s house. That I believe will suffice. (He points to the door.)

“I know how to ride,” said Sophie Mellerby.

“Then, perhaps, doctor, I’d better put it off till tomorrow; I’ll tell you why: there’s a person I wish—”

“A speech, my dear, made at the election.”

Or, for the matter of that, why should he have glebe at all?” This was so decisive that no one at the meeting had a word to say after Mr. Puddleham had finished his speech.

[Jeremiah 44:28] For since they did not follow Him when He called, He next follows them to discipline them, and hinder their being hurried further into vice, and as a father full of affection does a child who takes all treatment in the same peevish way, conducting him about everywhere with himself, and following him about.

But thence, even thence, did I love You.

But this soul which was in Jesus, before it knew the evil, selected the good; and because He loved righteousness, and hated iniquity, therefore God anointed Him with the oil of gladness above His fellows.

So that neither can you say, He is indeed our Father, and the things we seek are necessary, but He knows not that we stand in need of them.

And whither I go ye know, and the way ye know.

“You know them all pretty well now. I could not send her from me. Nor could I go and leave her. Had we been separated then, because of the law or because of religion, the burden, the misery, the desolation, would all have been upon her.”

For in the end of the world, and in the resurrection of the just, the body will be united to the spirit in perfect harmony, undisturbed by the wants and the passions of mortality.

Now the brood of swallows, when they are fallen, perish quickly; but we shall not perish, but be punished for ever.

Preaching His decree.

She, to whom every detail of the future nest is so vitally important, is almost bound to praise, though every encomium she pronounces will be a difficulty in the way of those changes which she contemplates.

“He went away—with a look as though he were heartbroken. He crept away slowly, saying that he was the most wretched soul alive. For a minute I believed him, and could almost have called him back; but no, Fanny, do not think that I am over proud, or conceited about my conquest. He had not reached the gate before he was thanking God for his escape.”

Port wine was his way, and it may be doubted whether on the whole it is not the more dangerous way of the two.

It is only necessary to say that the peculiar points insisted upon were exactly those which were most distasteful to the clergy of the diocese, and most averse to their practice and opinions, and that all those peculiar habits and privileges which have always been dear to High Church priests, to that party which is now scandalously called the “high and dry church,” were ridiculed, abused, and anathematized.

The three young ladies, having now finished their repast, got up from the table and retired, following each other out of the room in a line. Mrs. Mason remained for a minute or two longer, and then she also went. “The carriage has been ordered at three, Mr. M.,” she said. “Shall we have the pleasure of your company?” “No,” growled the husband. And then the lady went, sweeping a low curtsy to Mr. Dockwrath as she passed out of the room.

“I understand it. I could have refused him nothing in my power to give him, but I did not wish to be his wife.”

And in that letter he also shows that he had been invited by Helenus, bishop in Tarsus of Cilicia, and by the others who were with him— namely, Firmilian, bishop in Cappadocia, and Theoctistus in Palestine— to meet them at the Council of Antioch, where certain persons were attempting to establish the schism of Novatus.

“All my prospect of enjoying myself at my ease depends on your goodness.” These were the letters he wrote when he had just ceased to be Ædile.

Thus forsooth must their married life begin so that the Evangelist may not be convicted of falsehood.

For if there were a plurality of gods, there would necessarily be also more universes than one.

For that which was lacking to me the brethren which came from Macedonia supplied, and in all things I have kept myself from being burdensome to you, and will keep myself.

“Would it not be better to tell Augustus?” asked the lady, doubting much her power to carry out the instructions given to her.

My delay in sending back to your holiness your treatise translated into Latin is accounted for by the many interruptions and obstacles that I have met with.

When poor Sir John goes, you will become Lady Ball, and be the mistress of this house, and have your own carriage.” Terribly stupid old woman!

with a heavenly intent, having that end of love in view; for love is also the fulfilling of the law.

Let us especially guard against giving occasion in this to the tongues of enemies, which are used by the great Enemy as darts wherewith to slay the weak.

For it is better for you to help your kindred who feel the shame of asking help from others, or of going to another to beg assistance in their need.

Nevertheless they are not the least happy of mankind, these never-readies; they do not pick up sudden prizes, but they hold fast by such good things as the ordinary run of life bestows upon them.

“There is my hand, then.” So Johnny took her hand and pressed it, and held it a little while,—just long enough to seem to give a meaning to the action. “You will get to understand me some day,” she said, “and will learn that I do not like to be reckoned among the everybodies by those for whom I really—really—really have a regard. When I am angry, I am angry.”

But the proof of the possibility of the resurrection of the flesh I have sufficiently demonstrated, in answer to men of the world.

But consider who you are, who art about to make a place for the Lord.

His only work, as far as I can judge them, in which there is no touch of idleness, is Esmond.

She said nothing of what had passed between her and Major Mackintosh, explaining that his visit had been made solely with the object of informing her that Mr. Benjamin was to be sent home from Vienna, but that the diamonds were gone for ever.

Can disease?

As it is said, For heaven shall be folded up like a scroll; and now it is extended over us like a skin.

and she is certainly very pretty.

That for the most part the occupation of government dissipates the solidity of the mind.

If, therefore, we are lovers of learning, we shall also be learned in many things.

He had frequently said to his intimate friends, that in official writing, style was everything; and of his writing it certainly did form a very prominent part.

He might constantly be seen compounding medicines in the shop, at the left hand of his front door; not making experiments philosophically in materia medica for the benefit of coming ages—which, if he did, he should have done in the seclusion of his study, far from profane eyes—but positively putting together common powders for rural bowels, or spreading vulgar ointments for agricultural ailments.

But even this, though it was but little flattering to Clara, by no means lessened the transport which he felt.

See how again he has exhorted to reciprocity.

“And why didn’t the reverend gentleman claim the ground when the works were commenced?” demanded the indignant minister, turning now for the first time to the Vicar, and doing so with a visage full of wrath, and a graceful uplifting of his right hand.

It is to be understood that a euthanasia was to be prepared for them;—and how many, as men now are, does a euthanasia await?

Everybody smiled upon him.

Nobody told him that all his bother about the estate was of no avail.

“Ah, that is so different! I cannot explain it, but you know that it is different.”

“Bishop,” said he, at last, after both had sat silent for a while, “I should deceive you and myself too, if I did not tell you that I am very unhappy about this. Suppose that I cannot bring myself to agree with Dr Grantly!—that I find, after inquiry, that the young man is right, and that I am wrong,—what then?”

She saw that there was very little sympathy between the husband and wife, and that that little was not on the increase.—Very little!

“Don’t you think it’s anything out of the way to be engaged to a young man and then to throw him over? All this has come because you wouldn’t keep your word to Mr Crumb. Only for that your grandfather wouldn’t have turned you out of his house.”

And these being, as they are, the same as counsel— having truth for their aim, train up to the ultimate goal of aspiration, which is conceived of as the end ([τέλος]).

“Oh yes; he knows it all. He was in Gower Street when I told my sister-in-law.”

But yet again for his wisdom he was also held in admiration, for it is said, Are you wiser than Daniel?

This one will be here, where there is the true hope and the certain faith.

“Was he angry with you?”

“If you tell me you’re George Roden, George Roden you’ll be to me. But I think you’re wrong. And I think moreover that the good sense of the world will prevail against you. As far as I understand anything of the theory of titles, this title belongs to you. The world never insists on calling a man a Lord or a Count for nothing. There’s too much jealousy for that. But when a thing is so, people choose that it shall be so.”

“Exactly,” said Mr Apjohn. “As the father of the young lady who would be the heiress of Llanfeare if you were not the heir, I have of course told him everything,—even down to the most secret surmises of my mind.”

Why are the gods themselves made the subjects of comic representations?

It is a fault if you refuse repayment, and piety if you refuse a sacrifice.

For it is not my voice, nor that of any man, but of the Lord Himself; nor did the sound go forth from men, but from angels, at the birth of Christ, "Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace to men of good will."

Be this as it may, you have in Africa that holy man and learned bishop Augustine, who will be able to teach you on this subject viva voce, as the saying is, and expound to you his opinion, or, I should rather say, my own opinion stated in his words.

“But I can’t help thinking of it,” said he, almost blubbering in his earnestness.

In regard to money he did acknowledge some inferiority.

II. The mighty assemblage of prelates testifies to men's loyal acceptance of Peter in Peter's unworthy successor

“Why should he come?” Clara had said.

For it is not thanksgiving to revile others, to be vainglorious before many, to exalt one's self against them that have offended.

“I tell you that I know I haven’t behaved well. What more can I say?”

Will you, with my respectful compliments, ask him, who I believe is now a fellow-visitor with you, to call on the bishop either on Wednesday or Thursday, between ten and one.

If I was afraid of the heat, and disliked the open boat, I could be carried round in a litter.

It is for their welfare that he and I should be on good terms together; and therefore if you don’t mind the sacrifice, I think we’ll go.

May he rest in peace!

“Come here, Grace.” Slowly Grace got up from her seat and came round, and stood by Miss Prettyman’s elbow.

They were now being performed under the auspices of Pompeia, the wife of Julius Cæsar, the daughter of one Quintus Pompeius, and it was alleged that Clodius came among the women worshippers for the sake of carrying on an intrigue with Cæsar’s wife.

“Nothing could have turned her from it,” said Peregrine.

The motion might be a threat, or simply have a useful domestic tendency.

When that sale was made I was on my way to Italy with my wife, paying a third visit there to my mother and brother.

Neither did Griselda say anything special; and so the evening wore away, each feeling in some unconscious manner that she was on less intimate terms with the other than had previously been the case.

But of this cursing his mouth is full.

There were three or four factories there,—in and out of which troops of girls would be seen passing twice a day, in their ragged, soiled, dirty mill dresses, all of whom would come out on Sunday dressed with a magnificence that would lead one to suppose that trade at Loring was doing very well.

He was never weary in furthering the welfare of his clergymen.

And like hunters who lay nets for the young stag,

Vavasor reached the little inn about nine in the evening on a night that was pitchy dark, and in a wind which made it necessary for him to hold his hat on to his head.

But as, in the case of thieves, something of the stolen goods is apt to drop by the way, as a clue to their detection; so, as it seems to me, it has happened to Marcion: the last mention of Abraham's name he has left untouched (in the epistle), although no passage required his erasure more than this, even his partial alteration of the text.

The Dositheans, again, even in former times, did not rise to any eminence, and now they are completely extinguished, so that it is said their whole number does not amount to thirty.

23. For how without the operation of the Holy Spirit could there be the type of a sacrament, the whole truth of which is in the Spirit? As the Apostle also set forth, saying: But you were washed, but you were sanctified, but you were justified in the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ, and in the Spirit of our God. [1 Corinthians 6:11]

Chapter XXVI. Why Should I Not?

[Matthew 16:26] Wherefore I say, Take no thought for your life, what you shall eat; neither for your body, what you shall put on.

“I suppose she learned it from you, Lily,” said the squire.

It couldn’t be so, they said to each other.

I found a stalwart man, represented to be 65 years of age, but looking much younger, in whose appearance one was able to recognise something of the Chieftain.

Also in Solomon: Be not excessively righteous, and do not reason more than is required.

[John 7:42] Because they wished to conceal even this fact by that question, saying all that they said with malicious intent.

At the solicitation of Theophilus bishop of Alexandria the emperor issued an order at this time for the demolition of the heathen temples in that city; commanding also that it should be put in execution under the direction of Theophilus.

Something, however, she learned from Tetchen, something from Linda herself, and thus there came upon her a conviction that there might be no frightful story to tell to Peter,—that in all probability there was no such story to be told.

I know you told me to stop, for I have said enough.

“Oh, Mr. Thorne, this is so kind of you!” said the signora. “You promised to come, but I really did not expect it. I thought you country gentlemen never kept your pledges.”

Currant jelly had been duly provided, and, if Elizabeth had been allowed to dispense it, might have been useful.

Opposite to these two doors was the blind wall of another residence.

Again, on the other hand, Zeno the Stoic thinks the end to be living according to virtue; and, Cleanthes, living agreeably to nature in the right exercise of reason, which he held to consist of the selection of things according to nature.

And having thus spoken, he enjoined me to go to rest; for now indeed my bodily nature demanded sleep.

They were dining in a public room, at a large table which they had to themselves, while others were dining at small tables round them.

The Doctor was a gentleman of the old school, very neat in his attire,—dressed in perfect black, with knee-breeches and black gaiters, with a closely-shorn chin, and an exquisitely white cravat.

Well, therefore, and truly does he say of himself: I am not worthy to be called an apostle, because I persecuted the Church of God.

Letter 64 (A.D. 401)

So here another encomium, and for the other party an accusation.

“I suppose a mother always pities the sufferings of a child.”

It was observed by all that the duke was especially attentive to young Mr. Frank Gresham, the gentleman on whom and on whose wife Miss Dunstable had seized so vehemently.

And thus to the present moment they affirm that their Christ is not come, because He is not come in majesty; while they are ignorant of the fact that He was first to come in humility.

A lover in China, or waging wars in Zululand or elsewhere among the distant regions, is a misfortune.

“He wasn’t so very angry,—only angry. I was obliged to tell him; but I said as little to him as possible because he is ill. Somebody else made herself disagreeable.”

And if you do it not, you will be punished as obstinate.

Now, thanks to your diligence, I have become acquainted with it, and I admire both its whiteness and the delicacy of its flavour.

And thus it will come to be seen that God made all things, and that nothing at all can exist which did not derive its origin from God.

For it is said, that respecting her appellation and her oracular utterances there are several accounts; that being a Phrygian, she was called Artemis; and that on her arrival at Delphi, she sang—

For, infusing secretly into the mixture some drug that possessed the power of imparting such a colour (as that alluded to above), uttering for a, considerable time nonsensical expressions, he was in the habit of waiting, (in expectation) that the (drug), obtaining a supply of moisture, might be dissolved, and, being intermingled with the potion, might impart its colour to it.

Then in the very nick of time, in the absolute moment of the day—so that you might have everything and I nothing—you came.

Perceiving himself suddenly left in very difficult circumstances, in the midst of the Persian territory, where his army was in danger of perishing for want of necessaries, he agreed to terminate the war, even on terms by no means honorable to the glory of the Roman name, but rendered necessary by the exigencies of the crisis.

And this is the sin which by the commandment deceives and by it slays, whenever transgression is actually added, which occurs not where there is no law.

After the Easter holidays the Trafficks came back to Queen’s Gate, making a combination of honeymoon and business which did very well for a time.

Philip came to the door, but she sat mute and would not speak to him.

Since therefore the greater part is of Him, he says all is of Him, speaking according to the custom of men.

But I am injured in other ways, one will say, and even if I do not blaspheme, yet when I am robbed of my money I am disabled from giving alms.

The reader is sure that the Romans are going to bet the best of it at last;—but in the meantime the Roman people are nearly ruined.

The note was sent down by a messenger, but Lord Hampstead in person was the answer.

His sister did not know what to say in answer to this.

That is, He whom you baptized; for this they imply when they say, to whom you bore witness, as though they had said, He whom you pointed out as illustrious, and make remarkable, dares to do the same as thou.

And Fritz Planken wore a blue frock coat with silk lining to the breast, which seemed to have come from some tailor among the gods.

For we have been refreshed with great joy by learning from reports given us of your health that all is well with you.

“Exactly. It is such a bore; but one has to do it.”

I, however, say, that sin is to forsake even unto death the faith which works by love.

His letter to Harcourt had been a difficult task to him, but at last it was finished in a very few words.

But such an ornament as this on which Lord Fawn was now looking, is given in another sort of way.

At last May was come, and Ralph from Beamingham made up his mind that he also would go up to London.

All that comfort and all that strength had left her now.

“And I hope I never may,” said he. “Why did not the jury get up in their seats at once and pronounce their verdict when Mr. Furnival’s speech was over? Why should they wait there, giving another day of prolonged trouble, knowing as they must do what their verdict will be? To me all this is incomprehensible, seeing that no good can in any way come from it.”

Then, does God feed the children of perdition, the goats on His left hand, [Matthew 25:33] for the devil and nourish and clothe them for the devil because He makes His sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sends rain upon the just and the unjust?

They cannot deny that he is dead whom they behold rising again; they see the signs of death and the proofs of life.

They believed; and as they reverently pressed their foreheads, lips, and hands to the top and sides and edges of the sepulchre, their faith became ecstatic.

And when a certain brother of the order of presbyters sought to deter me, and feared lest I should be involved in the same wicked filthiness, because he said that my mind would be contaminated, and indeed with truth, as I myself perceived, I was strengthened by a vision that was sent me from God.

But when it is clear that you have been informed of their names and powers by the suggestions of books, it is unjust to deny the reliableness of these books by whose testimony and authority you establish what you say.

[John 3:28] You are they that bear witness unto me that I said, I am [12] not the Messiah, but I am one sent before him.

That she should have borrowed from Mr. Moss, considering the length of their acquaintance might not have been unnatural; but of M. Le Gros she knew nothing but his civility.

I cannot have Mr. Slope’s love-letters coming here.

We shall become then as the light, in our nearness to Christ's true light, if we leave this dark atmosphere of the earth and dwell above; and we shall be light, as our Lord says somewhere to His disciples , if the true Light that shines in the dark comes down even to us; unless, that is, any foulness of sin spreading over our hearts should dim the brightness of our light.

The swiftest birds fly unhurt over mountains, and woods, and seas, and rocks, in a brief moment of time.

For it has been already established by no contemptible arguments from Scripture, that the first man may be properly referred to Christ Himself, and is no longer a type and representation and image of the Only-begotten, but has become actually Wisdom and the Word.

We must accordingly begin with ourselves, and how we ought to regulate ourselves.

“It isn’t much of a house for you, but you would have it so.” He was of course forced to kiss his mother, but the kiss was not very fervent in its nature.

If brother redeem you not, shall man redeem you?

And he was violent to you, and broke your arm?

He was struck almost dumb at seeing her, and it was her tranquillity which restored him to composure.

And of this we have experimental proof in the deformity of our penal condition.

The doctor shrugged his shoulders. “One never can say how anything may occur,” said he. “I know a young woman who broke the os femoris by just kicking her cat;—at least, she said she did.”

This it is, O Emperor, which I, too, have requested, that you would rather take vengeance on me, and if you consider this a crime, would attribute it to me.

Four or five days before she was due in Bolton Street, her mindful Sophie, with unerring memory, wrote to her, declaring her readiness to do all and anything that the most diligent friendship could prompt.

Nay, to me it seems greater.

The servant was punished for having made a false deposition against her masters, while they, on their part, fled the country; for it was accounted no venial crime by the heterodox to receive or to conceal Athanasius, but was, on the contrary, regarded as an act of disobedience against the express commands of the emperor, and as a crime against the empire, and was visited as such by the civil tribunals.

You can not draw water for yourself, canst not cook for yourself, canst not run before your horse, canst not tend your beast.

He did not open the door, nor did he bid his visitor enter, but having made the way easy for her if she chose to come in, he walked back to the sofa and threw himself on it again.

Hebrews 11:32

That enormous congregation of eaters which extends from Hampstead on the north to Camberwell on the south, and — shall we say?

For I am assured that it has not been altogether deserving of censure, and am confident that you also admit this.

“They can’t be the same, as she was certainly a Miss Oliphant. And you hear, too, what she says.”

But this common use of titles gives no offense to men who are instructed in true religion. We are aware that the dæmons have falsely bestowed upon themselves and on idols the divine name, while the saints have received this honour of free grace.

“I should have told you beforehand,” he then said, “that I was already half engaged to Lady Alexandrina de Courcy.” The reader, however, will understand that this half engagement was a fiction.

'Christ died for us.'

What it was that he feared I could not guess; but it was manifest to me that some great terror almost overwhelmed him.

He may have had pursuits previously, and liberal arts may have imbued his mind while engaged therein; but these things I pass over; for as yet they had nothing to do with anything but his secular advantage.

'Tis God himself who has roused the barbarians against you, because you have stirred many tongues to blasphemy against Him and hast driven His worshippers from their sacred abodes.

“What will he say to me?”

Any loss sustained by our bodies is an accident to them, but their entirety is their natural property.

For this reason, then, is the Son also called the Right Hand of the Father, as we read: The Right Hand of the Lord has done mighty things, the Right Hand of the Lord has exalted me.

A prisoner indeed he had not been, but he had suffered things worse than prisoners, in being not an alien only to his country and his family, but in wrestling with famine and continual death, and thousands of other things.

He said not, But the Lord sits above the heavens; for perhaps some one else might be imagined to have made them, upon which He was enthroned: but, It is the Lord that made the heavens.

What of the heart?

“There is but little to say about us. I suppose Papa has told you?”

Lord Christ, You shall repay for me.

He had a way of believing people, especially when such belief was opposed to his own interests, and had none of that self-confidence which makes a man think that if opportunity be allowed him he can win a woman even in spite of herself.

This is the fruit of my confessions, not of what I was, but of what I am, that I may confess this not before You only, in a secret exultation with trembling, and a secret sorrow with hope, but in the ears also of the believing sons of men—partakers of my joy, and sharers of my mortality, my fellow citizens and the companions of my pilgrimage, those who are gone before, and those that are to follow after, and the comrades of my way.

“But may I ask about it?”

“No;—none. We are greater allies than ever.”

In the one case we are filled with joy; in the other we do but avoid sorrow.

For if bishops have a law of their own teaching monogamy, the other (characteristics) likewise, which will be the fitting concomitants of monogamy, will have been written (exclusively) for bishops.

But these dishonour the reverence of age, the head covered with grey hairs.

Give papa my kindest love, and tell him from me that if he wants to make his poor little girl happy he will forgive her and be kind to her in all this.” Then the Countess made some attempt to argue the matter.

The archdeacon was seated there with sundry manuscripts before him, and with one half-finished manuscript,—as was his wont on every Saturday morning.

Be not then indignant for that it is shut; be mild, be gentle.

And then the great distance from the coast, the badness of the roads, and the lack of the means of carriage exaggerates all the other difficulties.

But it was right, he thought,—and upon the whole best for all parties,—that he should give up everything.

And perhaps there may be, nay, beyond all question there are, written in the sacred books, counsels by the knowledge and acceptance of which the man of God may so discharge his duties to the Church in the things of God, or at least so keep a conscience void of offense in the midst of ungodly men, whether living or dying, as to secure that that life for which alone humble and meek Christian hearts sigh is not lost.

“Do,” said the Earl. “Do. If you see Lord Chiltern will you tell him from me that I should be glad to see him before he leaves London. I shall be at home till noon tomorrow.” Phineas, much astonished at the commission given to him, of course said that he would do as he was desired, and then passed on to Lord Chiltern’s apartments.

“I believe that in your heart you wish it,” he once said to her.

See, brethren, how many things we pass, in which is not the end.

“But I have liked you so well,—so much better than all others! A dozen men have asked me to marry them. And though they might be nothing till they made that request, then they became—things of horror to me. But you were not a thing of horror. I could have become your wife, and I think that I could have learned to love you.”

When these things reached the ears of the emperor, Julian, between hope and fear, became very anxious to lull the suspicions which had been awakened, and therefore began to assume the external semblance of what he once was in reality.

John 11:26

The farmer’s wife was delighted to allow us to wander about the place into the bedrooms, kitchen, parlours, larder, and dairy.

For it was another kind of arrangement by which the Hebrews were trained in the great wilderness, and for a protracted time, to belief in the existence of one God alone, being inured by the wise discipline of endurance to which they were subjected.

Do you see how He indicates Him to be Creator both of souls and bodies? He heals therefore the palsy in each of the two substances, and makes the invisible evident by that which is in sight. But nevertheless they still creep upon the earth.

He adds that it would be impious to say that the same energy produced the angels or the stars, and the heavens or man.

If he ever forgave Phineas Finn again might his right hand forget its cunning, and never again draw blood or tear a scalp.

They well knew that in what He had said previously, Of that day knows no man [Matthew 24:36], He had merely declined telling them: therefore they again drew near, and put the question.

He usually refused to make any answer whatever, and when he did speak, he merely persisted in his declaration that he was willing to die, and that if he were left alive, he had no wish at all as to what should become of him.

But this again is no charge against the Law but against their obstinacy.

There was a sort of darkness with the Apostles, hope failed, in those to whom He at first seemed great, and the Redeemer of all men.

At what hour he woke Thady did not know, but it was broad day, and the sun was high in the heavens; he would have slept again if he could, that he might again forget the dreadful deed which had made the last night so horrible, but he could not; he was obliged therefore to get up, and when he did so he felt himself weak for want of food.

She could not punish her boy, even though he had deserved it.

But it is possible for every one who is naked to obtain this apparel, and to return to its ancient kindred.

But I am carnal, sold under sin; [Romans 7:14] which means: But I being carnal, and being placed between good and evil as a voluntary agent, am so that I may have it in my power to choose what I will.

George was so warm in his solicitude, that in spite of his father’s declining this mark of his affection, he insisted on attending him to the ground; and it was only when Major Longsword gravely assured him that if he, George, was there he, Major Longsword, would not be there too, that the anxious son was prevailed on to give up his project.

“And you are the crossest old woman,” said Lily, laughing, and giving her hand to the postmistress.

And if he who glorifies God the Father is thus afraid lest he should seem a false witness in narrating a marvellous fact, how should not he be justly afraid, who tries to establish the truth by a false statement, preparing an untrue opinion?

And he joins with this a good conscience, in reference to hope; for, if a man has the burden of a bad conscience, he despairs of ever reaching that which he believes in and loves.

But he spoke to an impatient listener.

Let him then, who in his own body was at one time in despair, now that he is set in Christ's body, say with hope, My heart is smitten down, and withered like grass [Psalm 101:4].

You say, in your pamphlet, that so long as we are alive we can pray for one another; but once we die, the prayer of no person for another can be heard, and all the more because the martyrs, though they [Revelation 6:10] cry for the avenging of their blood, have never been able to obtain their request.

It is meet, therefore, to sympathize with those who mourn for their sakes.

The captain was sharpsighted enough to observe the change in her manner.

Chapter 64.— In What Sense the Holy Spirit Solicits for Us, Crying, Abba, Father.

[Isaiah 1:26-27] And yet we nowhere find that the city was called righteousness, but it continued to be called Jerusalem.

“I suppose you know nothing about the panel down there, eh?” said Chaffanbrass.

But whereby?

“He has probably tendered his resignation,” said Mr. Kennedy.

However, this corruption of the body shall put on incorruption [1 Corinthians 15:53], but the other of the soul, never; for where incorruption is, there is no corruption.

Her mother was at home, and she would take the dean into the house.

Then since this dignity was given to the Jews also, for it says, I said you are Gods, and all of you children of the Most High [Psalm 82:6 and again, I have nourished and brought up children [Isaiah 1:2 and so, Israel is My first-born [Exodus 4:22 and Paul too says, Whose is the adoption [Romans 9:4]— he next asserts the great difference between the latter and the former honor.

But it is proof of the popularity of the book.

And thus Johnson is left, without a scrap of comfort, a word of consolation, a spark of sympathy; and yet he had given to that Iphigenia of his the best that was in him to give. Had his publisher sold ten thousand copies of it, how Thompson would have admired it! how he would have pressed the poet in his arms, and have given him champagne up at Richmond! But who now has sympathy for failure? To fail is to be disgraced. Væ victis!

The answer that Christ looks not only at the action but also at the will.

But there was nothing swinish about Mrs. Clifford of Budleigh Salterton.

But he comforts them, as being excessively pinched by their troubles; both praising them from their present state, and encouraging them from a prospect of the futurity, and from the punishment, and from the recompense of good things prepared for them; and he more clearly enlarges upon the topic, not indeed revealing the time itself, but showing the sign of the time, namely, Antichrist.

But if God be simple, as He is, it follows that in saying 'God' and naming 'Father,' we name nothing as if about Him, but signify his essence itself.

Upon the pain of sins they have themselves added.

All these things, sir, I said, are great and glorious.

It had been settled for some time past that Miss Amedroz was to go to Perivale for a few days in November.

Yet you are inferior to the ant.

Crosbie was rather proud of himself when he went to bed.

When she had given way to the voice of the charmer, when she had sunk into his arms, softened by that domestic picture which he had painted, no pricks of conscience had disturbed her happiness.

Mark the man made whole from the disease of avarice: The half of my goods I give to the poor; and if I have taken any thing from any man, I will restore him fourfold.

But yet I am not describing her after the accepted fashion.

‘Now I shall be allowed to go,’ she exclaimed.

The sacrifice of praise shall glorify Me; and there is the way in which I shall show him My salvation.'

“And he said that Mr. Augustus was to have it all; and he proved his words,—didn’t he, now? And then he made out that, if so, our deeds weren’t worth the paper they were written on. Isn’t it all true what I’m saying? And then when we’d taken what small sums of money he chose to offer us, just to save ourselves from ruin, then he comes up and says you are the heir, as legitimate as anybody else, and are to have all the property. And he proves that too! What are we to think about it?”

As population increases and trades arise peculiar to those different climates, the interests of the people will differ, and a new secession will take place beneficial alike to both parties.

Then said Simon: 'I know what you mean; but you know nothing of the matters concerning which you reason.'

If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not; but if I do, even if you will not believe me, still believe the works; and know that I am in the Father, and the Father in me.

There was but one spare bedroom; but, luckily for us, there were two Wesleyan Ministers.

Origen himself, and Clement and Eusebius, and many others, when they are discussing scriptural points, and wish to have Jewish authority for what they say, write: A Hebrew stated this to me, or I heard from a Hebrew, or, That is the opinion of the Hebrews.

But through all this, her ideas were loyal to him.

And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven, to give light on earth, to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and for years; and let them be for lights in the firmament of the heaven, to give light upon the earth: and it was so.

When Sir Thomas passed an evening at Fulham, Stemm could do as he pleased with himself; but they were blank evenings with Stemm when Sir Thomas was away.

She had received from him a certain amount of mining shares and of money, and had undertaken in return never to bother him any more.

And in like manner also (is it with) the second tetrad; (for) Logos and Zoe.

“I am sure of that. I have noticed how particular you are. I won’t say a word of Lucinda’s beauty. Men are better judges of that than women; but for high, chivalrous spirit, for true principle and nobility, and what I call downright worth, I don’t think you will easily find her superior. And she is as true as steel.”

There is a place of refreshment or hospice here, into which we all went for a few moments, and I then saw that my friend with the weak throat was accompanied by two ladies.

None is afraid to accuse him, and speak evil of him.

‘No, mamma; that cannot be.’

But the postmaster, who from the beginning had never been a believer in the Australian wife, and, being a Liberal, was staunch to the Caldigate side of the question, would not allow the letter addressed to the old squire to be retained for the slow operations of the regular messenger, but sent it off manfully by horse express, before the dawn of day, so that it reached the old squire almost as soon as the other letters reached the prison.

“He’s a younger man than me, Aby, by full ten years.”

But as it was not so, he would not say that he would abandon his hope.

“Indeed, yes;—or you will be known to all posterity as the fainéant government.”

Hath not every art an end?

[2 Corinthians 10:15; Romans 15:19, etc.]

And [χθών] is the earth ([κεχυμένη]) spread forth to bigness. And Plectron, according to some, is the sky ([πόλος]), according to others, it is the air, which strikes ([πλήσσοντα]) and moves to nature and increase, and which fills all things. But these have not read Cleanthes the philosopher, who expressly calls Plectron the sun; for darting his beams in the east, as if striking the world, he leads the light to its harmonious course. And from the sun it signifies also the rest of the stars.

The Consul had fifteen hundred talents, or about £500,000!

Have got to be off by the next train.” Then he used to fly away and not be heard of again for a week.

By whom detained outside?

The refined portion, when first the earliest putting down of the seed was accomplished by the non-existent God, immediately burst forth, and ascended upwards, and proceeded towards the non-existent Deity.

Petilianus said: "For the Lord Christ says, ‘No man can come to me, except the Father which has sent me draw him.'

How we ought to do those things which are to be kept secret.

And the men themselves have no superiors in their adaptability to social happiness.

I do not understand how Celsus, while admitting the existence of Providence, at least so far as appears from the language of this book, can say that there never existed (at any time) either more or fewer evils, but, as it were, a fixed number; thus annihilating the beautiful doctrine regarding the indefinite nature of evil, and asserting that evil, even in its own nature, is infinite.

Often produces stronger impulses to love than the procreating of them.

He could not bear that Colonel Osborne himself should think that he was jealous.

And he thinks that he strengthens the accusation, because when we declare the [Logos] to be the Son of God, we do not present to view a pure and holy [Logos], but a most degraded man, who was punished by scourging and crucifixion.

Tom Tringle, though he had first appeared to his cousin Ayala as a Newfoundland dog which might perhaps be pleasantly playful, and then, as the same dog, very unpleasant because dripping with muddy water, was nevertheless a young man with so much manly truth about him as to be very much in love.

“But, Henri,” said Marie, “you must have some idea who this wonderful wild man is. Don’t they say he was one of the Vendean chiefs?”

In spite of the apparition of her mother, all this had passed through her mind.

Sympathy may, no doubt, be conveyed by letter; but there are things on which it is almost impossible for any writer to express himself with adequate feeling; and there are things, too, which can be spoken, but which cannot be written.

Chapter XVII. The American Postal Treaty—The Question 0f Copyright With America—Four More Novels

For let him believe from our own Scriptures that Peter obtained his freedom after having been bound in prison, an angel having loosed his chains; and that Paul, having been bound in the stocks along with Silas in Philippi of Macedonia, was liberated by divine power, when the gates of the prison were opened.

Chapter XXIII. The Inequalities of Lot in Human Life

Just so do thou reason in this case.

Homily 89 on Matthew

In the meantime the doctor and Mark stood talking together on the rug before the fire; the two mothers sat contented, watching the billings and the cooings of their offspring—and Lucy sat alone, turning over the leaves of a book of pictures.

These things must be understood as bearing a divine and mysterious signification.

How often are offers made to us which we would almost give our eyes to accept, but dare not accept because we fear the countenance of the offerer?

Therefore we shall be saved from wrath through Him; from the wrath certainly of God, which is nothing else but just retribution.

“Oh, no! I will go to them. It would not do that I should seem so weak. What must you think of me to see me so?”

The first “friend” to whom she wrote was Lady Linlithgow. The reader shall see two or three of her letters, and that to the countess shall be the first.

There had been much doubt among the young men in the office whether they should or should not apply for these places.

Behold, while we are unconscious of any part in this transaction, we are no less affrighted than those who were daringly engaged in it!

“My poor Louis!”

“I could not take notice of the message in charging the jury, Mr. Chaffanbrass,” said the judge.

The soul does not stand fast in its proper place, but, like as by a running tide, ([ῥ] [εύματος], Edd.

“Hark at that now,” said John, looking at his friend almost with indignation.

“Ah, but I tell you, as your lordship knows very well—no one betther—that it’s a ticklish thing to bring a two year old to the post, in anything like condition—with any running in him at all, and not hurt his legs.”

And again, by means of them, he cleared out and cleaned with spades and mattocks— the admonitory words of doctrine — the souls which a little while before had been covered with filth and burdened with every kind of matter and rubbish of impious ordinances.

Since where is the marvel, pray, in a man's being the father of those sprung from himself?

Indeed I should not choose that this matter should be tried before me under any circumstances, seeing that the lady is my near neighbour.

The woman who appeared in heaven clothed with the sun, and crowned with twelve stars, and having the moon for her footstool, and being with child, and travailing in birth, is certainly, according to the accurate interpretation, our mother, O virgins, being a power by herself distinct from her children; whom the prophets, according to the aspect of their subjects, have called sometimes Jerusalem, sometimes a Bride, sometimes Mount Zion, and sometimes the Temple and Tabernacle of God.

But during the next week the rumour became a fact through the country, and everybody knew, even the Countess of Desmond, that all that family history was again changed.

Genesis 49:4

Thus then are we in relation to Christ; we become one flesh by participation, and we much more than the child.

I am not blaming you, Mary.

From the same source came Marcion's better god, with all his tranquillity; he came of the Stoics.

“But if I don’t keep my mouth shut, somebody ‘ll have my teeth out of my head. Every one for himself and God for us all. I suppose there’s a deal of money flying about. He’ll put a lot of money on this ‘orse of yours for the Leger if he’s managed right. There’s more to be got out of that than calling him Silverbridge and walking arm-in-arm. Business is business. I don’t know whether I make myself understood.”

And the suffering of this extermination was perfected within the times of the lxx hebdomads, under Tiberius Cæsar, in the consulate of Rubellius Geminus and Fufius Geminus, in the month of March, at the times of the passover, on the eighth day before the calends of April, on the first day of unleavened bread, on which they slew the lamb at even, just as had been enjoined by Moses.

Now, certainly this would not happen if the gods despised sacrifices, games, and other acts of worship, and did not consider themselves honoured by expiratory offerings.

Such had been my ambition, such had been my hope.

S., Though I mislike penitents, I give place for repentance: you cut off hope from the sinner who dies in his sin.— 25.

But some say that the words are a prophecy, declaring the state which shall be in the life to come, and that there is no eating or drinking there. Now if that which is moderate shall have an end, much more ought we to abstain from excess.

This was the day of the Silverbridge election, and Mr Grey had gone to that ancient borough, to offer himself as a candidate to the electors, backed by the presence and aid of a very powerful member of the Cabinet.

For the soul, indeed, since it is capable of passion shares in the pain and suffering of a bodily cut, though it is not cut itself but only the body: but the divine part which is void of passion does not share in the suffering of the body.

For the whole rhapsody, the beginning and end both of the Iliad and the Odyssey is— a woman.

If any man, says he, desires the office of a bishop, he desires a good work.

His is

Sir William, had he felt confident, would of course have preferred the four footmen for his client, and the eight hunters, and Belgrave Square; even though the poor English Countess should have starved, or been fed by the tailor’s bounty.

“You merely wish to open her eyes, Mr Grey,” said the mild-eyed lawyer.

For he that with sword fights hand to hand, openly fights: he that shoots an arrow deceives, in order to strike.

For this mortal life is our deep.

‘I am your mother. According to my conscience I am acting for you as best I know how. Do you not know that I mean to be good to you?’

For no thing is written of Him in this place.

To stand at a washtub and wash his clothes, if it were wanted.

And for this reason let us consider the place where he confesses unto the Lord with all his heart.

For He gave unto us power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the strength of the enemy.

(b) But Paul said unto them [Acts 16:37]: that he may not seem to be receiving his liberty as one condemned, and as one that has done wrong: therefore it is that he says, Having openly beaten us uncondemned, etc.— that it may not be matter of grace on their part.

For how should they be capable of forming a sound judgment, who, since their parricidal guilt in slaying their Lord, have been subject to the direction, not of reason, but of ungoverned passion, and are swayed by every impulse of the mad spirit that is in them?

Thus Apuleius says when he is describing our race, Individually they are mortal, but collectively, and as a race, they are immortal.

Her friends and relatives, so Miss Effingham insinuated, were unanimous in wishing that Lady Baldock should remain at Baddingham Park, and therefore,—that wish having been indiscreetly expressed,—she had put herself to great inconvenience, and had come to London in March.

“Why can’t you grow into them gradually as your betters and elders have done before you? It ought to be enough for any man, when he begins, to know that he’s a Liberal. He understands which side of the House he’s to vote, and who is to lead him. What’s the meaning of having a leader to a party, if it’s not that? Do you think that you and Mr. Monk can go and make a government between you?”

Accordingly, true existence is the special distinction of Godhead.

“You put up Joseph Mason to this trial?”

They that are re-modelled after one pattern must have a spirit like the model.

Therefore was the son of man first visited in the person of the very Lord Man, born of the Virgin Mary.

Amongst other things, says she, there has been shown to me a soul in bodily shape, and a spirit has been in the habit of appearing to me; not, however, a void and empty illusion, but such as would offer itself to be even grasped by the hand, soft and transparent and of an etherial colour, and in form resembling that of a human being in every respect.

The Novatians of the Hellespont do not perform their prayers altogether in the same manner as those of Constantinople; in most things, however, their usage is similar to that of the prevailing church.

You see, then, what is said of him who distributes the grain, but not of him that seeks for a high price.

‘I don’t think I have anything particular to fear,’ said Forrest.

The area within the reef,— that is within the wall of rocky and earthy matter containing the diamondiferous soil,—is 31 acres.

For if the case be thus here, consider what it will be in the world to come.

Therefore, (as they further hold,) those other words, Before the morning star did I beget you from the womb, are applicable to Hezekiah, and to the birth of Hezekiah.

After that they sat long into the night, discussing all that Luke Rowan had said, and the discussion certainly took place after a fashion that would not have been considered satisfactory by Mrs. Prime had she heard it.

for a pair of trowsers in London.

She had a father, brother, and cousins, who would also be there to aid her.

And he took me by the hand, and conducted me to where Peter was, saying to me, This is Peter, of whom I told you as being the greatest in the wisdom of God, and I have spoken to him of you continually.

Those inhabiters of the world.

“Knew each other! Don’t be so mealy-mouthed. I don’t mean to be mealy-mouthed, I can tell you. You knew all about it. Adelaide had told you. You knew that we were engaged.”

I soon learned to think the women pretty, in spite of their twisted locks of wool; and to like the ring of their laughter, though it is not exactly silver-sounding.

The two ladies, however, were of a different opinion.

“Yes; I know her,” said Phineas, much surprised.

Consider that he who is insolent is beside himself and mad, and you will not feel indignant, when insulted, since the possessed strike us, and we, so far from being provoked, do rather pity them.

For when he calls Him Father, he shows them to be sons; and when he says sons, he has unveiled the whole treasure of blessings.

The bishop’s first idea was, that Mr Harding, if left to himself, would certainly starve,—not in the figurative sense in which so many of our ladies and gentlemen do starve on incomes from one to five hundred a year; not that he would be starved as regarded dress coats, port wine, and pocket-money; but that he would positively perish of inanition for want of bread.

Whereas it is certain that if the apostle meant this imitation to be here understood, he would have said that sin had entered into the world and passed upon all men, not by one man, but rather by the devil.

Julian heard them, and was very angry, and told them to hold their peace while he was passing by.

It was not that he intended to put all ceremony aside, but that in his eager haste he forgot his usual precaution.

Jerome begins (1) by pleading necessity for his attack on the bishop.

Say then what was once when the Son was not, O slanderous and irreligious men ?

But it seemed to him that it had not been stamped out in other more generous countries.

Of course the man to whom allusion was made was Mr. Twentyman; and of course the discomfort at home had come from Mrs. Masters’ approval of that suitor’s claim.

[Acts 18:28] Now by this, that he publicly convinced them, his boldness was shown: by the clearness of his arguing, his power was declared: by his convicting them out of the Scriptures, his skill (of learning).

But such behavior towards any woman except a wife would be disgraceful.

Chapter 25. The Assumption that There are Two Earths Mentioned in the History of the Creation, Refuted

Such friendship I would wish all to entertain both towards the living and the dead.

For if the Christ is believed to be the first begotten of the dead, He is the first begotten of the dead as having risen before all others.

He liked young associates because they were more timid and less greedy than their elders.

Now it is, says he; on this example of the Maccabees who fell in battle that I ground the necessity of doing this.

In such an establishment as this, if we are not moral, we are nothing.” I supposed he was right, but it seemed to me to be very hard on the young men and women.

Then very quickly, before Lady George had time to look about her, the Doctor was on her feet.

It was as though you were to sojourn for three days at the park-gates before you were entertained at the mansion.

“We invented the price and the name, and that’s as much as anybody does. But that is not all. It’s a well-understood maxim in trade, that a man may advertise whatever he chooses. We advertise to attract notice, not to state facts. But it’s a mean thing to pass off a false article over the counter. If you will ticket your goods, you should sell them according to the ticket.”

“He is left her uncommon well off, I suppose,” said Mrs Jones to Jeannette.

For why, when He had said, I am not alone, but I and the Father that sent Me, and, The testimony of two men is true, did He not hold His peace, instead of adding, I am One that bear witness of Myself?

But when William Bolton spoke of Hester’s happiness, and of the concessions which should be made to secure that, she burst out into eloquence.

The Father will not endure to be deprived of the Son, nor the Son of the Holy Ghost.

[Galatians 6:14] At such a brow as this then reproach alone could be hurled.

“Because she says that Hugh sends her now what she wants.” Miss Stanbury, when she heard this, looked very sour. “I thought it best to tell you, you know.”

Her compliments to Lady Ongar, and would Lady Ongar oblige her by an interview.

Then he sighed heavily as he went home.

The absence of Patience Oriel added to the dullness of the place.

[6] [Luke 14:12] And he said also to him that had invited him, When you make a feast or a banquet, do not invite your friends, nor even your brethren, nor your kinsmen, nor your [7] rich neighbours; lest haply they also invite you, and you have this reward.

He did not look sour at her, nor did he browbeat her with severe words, nor did he exact from her the performance of any hard duties.

But he knew her character well enough to be aware that any word of insult addressed to her as a woman, would create offence which she herself would be unable to quell.

For Paul says elsewhere, "Whether, therefore, I or they, so we preach, and so ye believed."

And her sister, too, was weak and a coward, and would lack the power to stand on her legs and declare herself to be the perpetrator of such villany.

Finsbury delighted for a while to talk of the great Financier, and even Chelsea thought that he had been done to death by ungenerous tongues.

For in the course of his argument he says that God, in that He is without end, is ungenerate, and that, in that He is ungenerate, He is without end, as if the meanings of the two terms were identical.

Lord Chiltern, as he asked his question, looked full into Finn’s face in a manner that was irresistible. His look was not one of anger nor even of pride. It was not, indeed, without a strong dash of fun. But such as it was it showed Phineas that Lord Chiltern intended to have an answer. “No,” said he at last, “I have not been more fortunate.”

“There’ll be worse mischief if you don’t,” Mr Bott had answered. “He can come back, and then he can do as he likes. I’ll keep my eyes upon them.” And so he did keep his eyes upon them.

Nothing has been done without motive, nothing by chance.

Mine is the will which He called His own, for as man He bore my grief, as man He spoke, and therefore said, Not as I will, but as You will.

There were giants in the earth in those days; and also after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became the giants, men of renown.

He declared to Rufinus that he had had a dream in which he saw a ship laden with Eastern merchandize arriving in Italy, and that it was declared to him that this ship would contain the means of attaining the knowledge he desired.

For should any one consider how and for what purpose God brought all things out of nothing and into being, and aim at arriving at that by natural reasonings, he fails to comprehend it.

Things were going wrong with Mrs. Woodward.

As for the landlords themselves, with the money in their pockets, let them emigrate to the United States, if they were in want of something to do.

The result is that increased crowds flock to us, and gladly listen to our teaching.

One Lord God does she acknowledge, the Creator of the universe, and Christ Jesus (born) of the Virgin Mary, the Son of God the Creator; and the Resurrection of the flesh; the law and the prophets she unites in one volume with the writings of evangelists and apostles, from which she drinks in her faith.

Since, however, the twelfth Aeon, having left the eleven (Aeons above), and departing downwards, withdrew, they allege that even this is correlative (with the letters).

As I greatly fear being misunderstood on this subject, I must explain that I by no means think that religious teaching has been inoperative for good among the negroes.

The traitor to domestic bliss!

I don’t think we can help it.

Chapter XXVII. Once More Back to Belton

And let no one suppose that infants ought to be brought to baptism, on the ground that, as they are not sinners, so they are not righteous; how then do some remind us that the Lord commends this tender age as meritorious; saying, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not, for of such is the kingdom of heaven?

“But she has quite made up her mind about it,” continued Mrs. Ray; “and when I saw that I didn’t say very much against it. What was the use? It isn’t as though he wasn’t quite respectable. He is a clergyman, you know, my dear, though he never was at any of the regular colleges; and he might be a bishop, just as much as if he had been; so they tell me. And I really don’t think that she would ever have come back to the cottage,—not unless you had promised to have been ruled by her in everything.”

Chapter 29. Discovery of the Remains of the Prophets Habakkuk and Micah. Death of the Emperor Theodosius the Great.

It is better then to suffer in stomach than in soul, to rule the body than to serve it, to lose one's balance than to lose one's chastity.

“Not to your father,” said Miss Scarborough, shaking her head.

As soon as Harry Clavering had made his promise to Mr. Burton, and had declared that he would be in Onslow Crescent that same evening, he went away from the offices at the Adelphi, feeling it to be quite impossible that he should recommence his work there at that moment, even should it ever be within his power to do so.

When they were seated in the carriage, he together with his wife and Nora Rowley, he immediately asked a question about Sir Marmaduke.

We receive therefore no injury; for God reckons the ill-treatment towards our debt, not according to the principle of justice but of His loving-kindness; and because He succored not him that suffered evil.

She went to bed, and cried herself to sleep.

He had prepared for himself a few headings of what he intended to say, and on one or two points had arranged his words.

She would not as yet look upon the matter as Florence looked at it, and as Theodore did also.

There was something distasteful to her in the idea of this going out at a lover’s bidding, to meet him; but like all Whartons and all Fletchers, she trusted John Fletcher.

And I will ask of you in turn, How is He God if He is created?

“Won’t it, sir? I think a very great deal of a hundred a year. I’m to have a hundred and fifty from the office; and I should be ready to marry on that tomorrow.”

The bullet which had maimed her sorely had not touched her life, and she scorned to go about the world complaining either by word or look of the injury she had received.

The Lord Himself, moreover, tempted (tried) the disciples.

They have forsaken the fountain of living water, and have dug out for themselves worn-out wells, which could not hold water.

It could be no more than a dream.

This very thing He did here also: for consider, Joseph saw the Virgin with child; this cast him into agitation and the utmost trouble, for he was suspecting the damsel of adultery.

Accordingly then, God tied the sense of these, His benefits, not only to the time, but also to the very habit of them that were to eat.

Such were the thoughts which ran through her mind at the moment.

One wish alone made her long to see her native land again; that she might know her son and his wife and child to have renounced the world and to be serving Christ.

So the Son is by nature distinct from the Father, as the tool from the craftsman; and the Spirit is distinct in so far as place or time is distinguished from the nature of tools or from that of them that handle them.

Mr. Furnival had already at this time seen Mr.

It is bad luck indeed if rain do not come by this time;—but, should it not come soon after the witch - doctor’s victim has gone through his torments, then the rainmaker is supposed to be an impostor, and he is at once drowned by order of the Chief.

He, therefore, who makes choice of virtue, is like one who sees all things plainly, and looks upward, and who holds his ways in the time of clearest light.

There are other houses — and the fact is declared in sorrow and not in bitterness — at which it is dangerous to dine because of the poisonous mixtures which are administered to you.

The holy council has praised your piety in Christ.

It was a cold morning, but the rain of the preceding evening had given way to frost, and the air, though sharp, was dry.

“Mr. Price is living there. I can’t make Mr. Price go away directly the painter people come in here. They’ll come tomorrow, perhaps, and what am I to do then?”

For this phantasy of earthly goods will not follow them upon their death; nor when they see the Lord whom they have denied, sitting on His Father's throne, and judging quick and dead, will they be able to call to their help any one of those who have now deceived them; for they shall see them also at the judgment-seat, repenting for their deeds of sin and irreligion.

For, if ever the quality of a transgression requires severity, it should be so dealt with that both vengeance may correct the fault and grace not be denied afterwards to those that have been corrected.

This offended him greatly.

There was something in her touch which to men was almost divine.

It is certain that, whoever they were to whom he wrote, he declared Him to be God in Christ with whom all things agree which are predicted.

“Is she worth being particularly disliked so rapidly?”

But the Lord again turned His face to him, and washed away his sin with his tears.

For if, says he, thou enquire what is the excellent and greatly superior course, it is better not to have any connection whatever with a woman: but if you ask what is safe and helpful to your own infirmity, be connected by marriage.

What she did with her tickets shall be hereafter told.

Perpetual Curate of Hogglestock.

Then, finding that she could not get to the front windows, and seeing that the time had come in which the carriage should have been there, she went down into the hall, where she found her mother seated on a high-backed old oak armchair.

“No, Papa, not old—not to say old. But you are quite old enough to feel the want of a decent room to sit in. You know how lonely Mary and I are here. You know nobody ever sleeps in the big front bedroom. It is really unkind of you to remain up there alone, when you are so much wanted here.”

[Hebrews 6:13-14] Christ had, therefore, none greater, and for that cause swore He by Himself.

This matter is a sort of spiritual merchandise.

And so if they who utter these things should be minded to lay hold upon virtue, they will presently find themselves satisfied concerning hell also, and will not doubt.

[Romans 16:3] Whence it seems to me that they afterwards went back to Rome, in the time of Nero, as having an attachment for those parts whence they had been expelled in the time of Claudius.

Mrs. Greenow, between Captain Bellfield and Mr. Cheeseacre, is very good fun—as far as the fun of novels is.

“Yes; of course. And I know that I shall never love him;—not in that way.”

And he does not mention the words spoken by the Angel to Cornelius, Your prayers and your alms have come up for a memorial before God, that he may not disgust them; but what says he?

He also discussed the cycle of sixteen years, which the Greeks called ἐ] [κκαιδεκαετηρίδα] and gave the cue to Eusebius, who composed on the same Paschal feast a cycle of nineteen years, that is [ἐ] [ννεακαιδεκαετηρίδα] .

It had been entailed upon him before his birth in his grandfather’s time, when his father was about to be married.

Cousin George was sitting in Mrs. Morton’s room with a very bad headache five days after his arrival in London, and she was reading over a manuscript which she had just written. “That will do, I think,” she said.

Victor Constantine Maximus Augustus, to Macarius of Jerusalem.— Such is the grace of our Saviour, that no supply of words seems to be adequate to the expression of its present manifestation.

Still much as I desire to know this after which you seek, I would sooner know when the desire of all nations shall come and when the kingdom of the saints will be set up, than how my soul has come to its earthly abode.

The goodnatured man insisted on emptying an enormous receptacle of soiled table-napkins, and on turning them over one by one, in order that the lady’s property might be found.

Eran.— Without question these words are common to the Trinity.

“Cambridge!” said Bertram, turning round and speaking with the most courteous tone he could command. “Were you at Cambridge? I thought I had understood that you were educated at St. Bees.” Mr. Cruse had been at St. Bees, but had afterwards gone to the University.

You will no doubt afterwards discover that I have not suddenly left without good cause.

Well, Mr. Bagwax, I’m glad that it’s only one envelope this time.’ This was said by Sir John Joram to the honest and energetic post-office clerk on the morning of Wednesday the 3d September, when the lawyer would have been among the partridges down in Suffolk but for the vicissitudes of John Caldigate’s case.

As to your future residence, do not make up your mind to anything while your spirits are thus depressed.

And the keeper of the prison, etc.

Ah, but you must fight me!

R. Was then our master unwilling that we should believe what he taught, and know it?

“Yes, I believe I am.”

We speak of the greatness of men.

Again, it is said, Agree with your adversary quickly, while you are in the way with him.

Chapter III. The Early History of Mr. Robinson

All the billows trouble me; and You have given more favour to the ark: for waves alone encompassed it, mounds and weapons and waves encircle me.

Think not that I have come to send peace on earth, but a sword,— undoubtedly on the earth.

In this frequent allusion to the passion which most stirs the imagination of the young, there must be danger.

[Romans 14:8] A man, we say, wishes not his property to be diminished, he knows how he punishes, he is punishing his own servants.

“If you mean to do anything before dinner you’d better do it at once,” said the parson, opening the door. Maurice jumped up, and in ten minutes was dressed and down in the dining-room. Isabel was there, but did not greet him. “You’ll come and help us tomorrow,” said Mabel, taking him by the arm and whispering to him.

[Matthew 9:20] But the countless multitude of the signs through which men express their thoughts consist of words.

To Theognius, Maris, Macedonius, Theodorus, Ursacius, and Valens, the Bishops who have come from Tyre, these from the Presbyters and Deacons of the Catholic Church of Alexandria under the most reverend Bishop Athanasius.

For it follows that it must be capable of all other bodily casualties as well, of being cut and divided, and even of perishing altogether.

Nor is this Form of the Godhead partial merely, but the fullness of the Father's Godhead is the Being of the Son, and the Son is whole God.

People there had not smiled on her and been civil as M. Lacordaire had done.

For as I am always saying, it is not the nature of the things, but our disposition, which is wont to make us sad or joyful.

And hence when the Lord before the day of His Passion promised the coming of the Holy Spirit to His disciples, He said, I have yet many things to say to you, but you cannot bear them now.

As Broadlands and Brocket Hall, as well as Cambridge House, in Piccadilly, to which he had long since removed, were all on his hands, this could not have been much to him.

Was he to be allowed to go down to Mary, or even to write her a letter?

Gentleness, meekness, obedience.

I must not complete my record of the journey without saying that we dined at Pinetown, half way, and that I never saw a better coach dinner put upon a table.

Poor matron! Good, honest matron, doing thy duty in the state to which thou hast been called, heartily if not contentedly; let the fire burn on; on this occasion the flames will not scorch; they shall warm thee and thine. ‘Tis ordained that that husband of thine, that Q. of thy bosom, shall reign supreme for years to come over the bedesmen of Hiram’s Hospital.

Indeed, when I call to mind our meeting, I seem to see her here now instead of in the past.

Why, then, do we pray and ask that the kingdom of heaven may come, if the captivity of earth delights us?

But Ralph had made up his mind that, in going out into the world to do something, foxes should not be his first object. He had to seek a home certainly, but more important than his home was the work to which he should give himself; and, as he had once said, he knew nothing useful that he could do except till the land. So he went down into Norfolk among the intermittent fox preservers, and took Beamingham Hall.

Chap. iv. 1. I charge you therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, Who shall judge the quick and the dead.

The position he filled,—or had filled,—was that of lecturer on behalf of the United States.

You have compelled me, my dear Nepotian, in spite of the castigation which my treatise on Virginity has had to endure— the one which I wrote for the saintly Eustochium at Rome: — you have compelled me after ten years have passed once more to open my mouth at Bethlehem and to expose myself to the stabs of every tongue.

[1 John 4:3] Already you have heard, On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

“I would;—and I think that I could have reconciled it to my God. But I might have been wrong,” he added; “I might have been wrong. I only say what I should have done.”

But what you propose is Quixotic in every way.

Again He shows, that His very departure was not of hatred but of love.

For he straightway adds, but a bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other kind; i.e., it is not the body that shall be; not so clothed, for instance; not having a stalk and beard, but a bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other kind.

Suetonius, however, informs us that Nero never dreamt, and Theopompus says the same thing about Thrasymedes; but Nero at the close of his life did with some difficulty dream after some excessive alarm.

Lady Penwether, without seeming to look about her, did look about her for a few seconds to see whether the question might be allowed to die away unanswered.

[John 5:21] And as the Father raises the dead and gives them life, so the Son [30] also gives life to whomsoever he will.

They will tell you of domestic comfort invaded by Northern falsehood.

The Duchess behaved very well to her friend, saying not a single word to twit her with the love which she betrayed.

But the admiration which even a Palmerston inspires must have a bound, and our s\_i\_mpathy may be called on too far.

“Not the young lord?”

When then Adam sinned (he means), and his body became liable to death and sufferings, it received also many physical losses, and the horse became less active and less obedient.

Many a large fortune has been made with less of true devotion to the work than is given to hunting by so genuine a sportsman as Mr. Spooner.

“She has everything that ought to make a girl happy, and I don’t know what it is she wants. It makes me quite angry to see her so discontented. She doesn’t say a word, but sits there as glum as death. If I were Arthur I would leave her for six months, and never speak to her during the time.”

But, lest we should make our discourse long, and interrupt its continuity, we have not thought it necessary to insert that account in what we are saying.

I do not know how far English authors may be aware of the fact; but it is undoubtedly a fact that their influence as authors is greater on the other side of the Atlantic than on this one.

Cicero said this because he, with the Platonists, believed that the world would not perish.

He never took sherry and bitters himself.

The Lord Himself shall fight for you, and you shall hold your peace.

If you pardon all the evil done to you, you encourage others to do you evil!

While alive he was your servant, and you showed no forbearance to him.

So then I myself; I with the mind, I with the flesh, but with the mind I serve the Law of God, but with the flesh the law of sin.

[John 20:14] She said that, and turned behind her, and saw Jesus standing, and knew not that it was [22] Jesus.

Caesar was, so to say, at home north of the Rubicon.

Would you see the symbol of this?

When it was found that Henry Jones was working like a steady man at the London office to which he was attached, that he had sown his wild oats, then Uncle Indefer began to ask himself why all his dearest wishes should not be carried out together by a marriage between the cousins.

And the month wore itself away also in that sad household, and the Fitzgeralds were gradually becoming used to their position.

Could I, my dear?” “I couldn’t,” said Amelia;—”but Clara would.”

Thanks be to God through Jesus Christ our Lord.

But at last Mr. Crawley condescended to accept St. Ewolds. “Reverend and dear sir,” he said in his letter.

I think that they could not have avoided the war without dishonor, and that it was incumbent on them to make themselves the arbiters of the future position of the South, whether that future position shall or shall not be one of secession.

This, then, is the Christ, created a new man according to God, Whom we put on.

Chapter 15. The Christians Distinguish God from Matter.

Chapter XVII. First the Worse, Then the Better

But the officer had suggested to him that he had been the man who had said some rough words about the Queen, in Galway, and had promised to abstain in future from lecturing.

And what shall we say of this brief confession and of the incomparable infinity of Divine reward, when it is easy to see what the blessed Apostle, as he fixes his gaze on the greatness of future remuneration, announced on those countless persecutions of his?

That he would have been greatly relieved could the whole thing have been wiped away from him there can be no manner of doubt; but I fancy that he would also have been disappointed.

‘It is no doubt possible that my client may have married this female conspirator, and she is not the less entitled to protection from the law because she is a conspirator.

We must proceed by a different path, for our purpose is not the praise of virginity but its preservation.

And this woman whom she was to see had been the first love of the man whom she now regarded as her own, and would have been about to be his wife at this moment had it not been for her own treachery to him.

The question now is this: Will you obey me in what directions I may give you concerning it?” Nina could not bring herself to give an unqualified reply to this demand on the spur of the moment.

Just by the lions in Trafalgar Square he met Ontario Moggs. Ontario Moggs scowled at him, and cut him dead.

The dispute ran high; the partisans of Eusebius were loud in their menaces, while Alexander had recourse to prayer.

“We must go to the country, I suppose,” said the Earl.

Since, therefore, they back up the impious opinion concerning Christ, which is held by the Jews and Greeks, in every possible way they strive to gain their approval; busying themselves about all those things which they are wont to deride in us, and daily stirring up against us seditions and persecutions.

Does it not savor of trickery of some kind or other?

For he who in this sense understands that the Son and the Father are one, knows that He is in the Father and the Father in the Son; for the Godhead of the Son is the Father's, and it is in the Son; and whoso enters into this, is convinced that 'He that has seen the Son, has seen the Father.'

[1] At that time Herod the tetrarch heard of the fame of Jesus, and all the things which came to pass at his hand; [Mark 6:14b] and he marvelled, for he had obtained excellent [2] information concerning him.

“Where did they pick him up?” said the Major to the Captain, pointing with his head to Ferdinand Lopez, who was shooting with Angelica Thrift and Mr. Boffin and one of the Duke’s private secretaries.

Then by placing them beside each other, one he gives encomiums, the other accusations.

None else, now, is found in the Scriptures but the common Saviour of all, the Word of God, our Lord Jesus Christ.

Might it not be well for him to leave the house without seeing Mr. Kennedy at all?

She knew that the words contained no threat—that taken literally they were the reverse of a threat, and amounted to a promise—but she understood also that he had intended to imply.

As far as I could learn, there were six family names among the eighteen families resident at St. Kilda.

Chapter 29 Of the Two Blind Men and the Dumb Demoniac Whose Stories are Related Only by Matthew.

Remain with them for an hour, and you shall not know you are being smothered yourself.

She knew that she had been wrong, foolish, ill-judging; but there had been nothing of that premeditated secrecy,—that secrecy with a cause, of which he had hinted that she was guilty.

The mother also loved her son with a mother’s natural love; but Louis had ever been ashamed of his mother, and had, as far as possible, estranged himself from her.

Fear, Henri!

It has also that institution which in the eyes of travellers ranks so much above all others, a good and clean inn.

When you have received my letter, and have revised it according to the knowledge and grace given you by God, I beg you will write as soon as possible to my lord Alexander. I feel confident that if you would write to him, you would succeed in bringing him over to your opinion. Salute all the brethren in the Lord. May you, my lord, be preserved by the grace of God, and be led to pray for us.

For as red-hot iron dipped into water, loses its fire, so an angry man filling in with a patient one does no harm to the patient man, but rather benefits him, and is himself more thoroughly subdued.

You got an old man, when he was dying, to make a will that has robbed me of what was my own, and now you think you’ll play your own low game; but you’re mistaken!

We’d all be shewed up in the papers as that black, that they’d hoot us along the streets.

There were no need of words, if we so shone forth in our lives, there were no need of Teachers, did we but exhibit works.

Whose virtue would not be held in such glory, when one of them was willing to die for his friend, the other even for his word which had been pledged, if they were regarded as fools.

He took an interest in all things keener than he had felt for years past.

She knelt at his feet, supporting herself with one arm upon the table, and with the other hand she still held his hand over which her head was bowed.

Daia, although exasperated against her, never ventured to do this, not even after his discomfiture and flight, and when he knew that his end approached.

Of course it was in every man’s mouth that the Duke must be induced to forget his miseries and once more to take upon himself the duties of an active servant of the State.

Neither is it beyond the sea, that you should say, Who will cross over the sea, and obtain it for us, that we may hear and do it?

And they brought the young man alive, and were not a little comforted.

Then, perhaps, they would be gentle with her, and she might yet hear a kind word spoken to her before she went.

A girl when she is engaged is not supposed to talk to no one but her recognised lover in a mixed party of ladies and gentlemen, and she is especially absolved from such a duty when they chance to meet in the house of a comparative stranger.

Wherefore also in the vision of the prophet Ezekiel there is seen above the cherubim a crystal stretched forth, [Ezekiel 1:22] that is, the compressed and denser waters.

“I have answered his letter, Aunt Stanbury.”

Forsooth, it is their numbers that will make us happy, and not the grace of God and the merits of each individual!

This is what Faustus does in his attempt to impeach the truth of the Gospels; as if Luke's omitting some saying of Christ recorded in Matthew implied a denial on the part of Luke of Matthew's statement.

How subjects and prelates are to be admonished.

that comes in the name of the Lord.

They see to what Mexico has come, and the republics of Central America; but the prospect of even that degradation is less bitter to them than a share in the glory of the stars and stripes.

It was strange to see five or six stately Turks, strict children of the Prophet doubtless, sitting there within the door of this temple dedicated to the Nazarene God, sitting there and looking as though they of all men had the most right so to sit, and were most at home in so sitting; nay, they had a divan there, were drinking coffee there out of little double cups, as is the manner of these people; were not smoking, certainly, as is their manner also in all other places.

I will be a servant to minister to every whim; all the world shall be a Paradise to you; you shall have every joy that wealth, and love, and sweet friends can procure for you,—if you will obey me in one thing.” Lady Anna, still crouching upon the ground, hid her face in her mother’s dress, but she was silent.

Miss Altifiorla smiled. Was it likely that Cecilia Holt should have dropped Sir Francis? “It doesn’t much matter now. If it does her wounded pride good to say so of course she can say it.”

“Yes,” said the doctor, “and so have I, but—” He did not express the rest of his thoughts.

But the children only learn the use of the bow, and on reaching maturity have sexual intercourse with sisters, and mothers, and women, wives and courtesans innumerable, practiced in intercourse like the wild boars.

The name of the first is Pison: that is it which compasses the whole land of Havilah, where there is gold; and the gold of that land is good, and there is bdellium and the onyx stone.

This is that Moses who when he saw a great vision and heard an angel, or the Lord speaking in the bush, [Exodus 3:5] could not by any means approach to him without first loosing the latchet of his shoe, that is, putting off the bonds of marriage.

For a few days,—for a week or two, when the blow first struck her, she had been knocked down, and the friends who were nearest to her had thought that she would never again stand erect upon her feet.

“Yes, indeed; and when a fellow gets out there he is apt to stay, I suppose.”

This bite, however, they did not receive in their own actual life, but in him on whom the wound was primarily inflicted.

Chapter 25. Of Time for Prayer

This did not perplex him at all.

There, sure enough, was Madeline waiting to listen to his story.

One may as well ask what does the miser gain who hides away his gold in an old pot, or what does that other madman gain who is locked up for long long years because he fancies himself the grandmother of the Queen of England?

First of all, however, I think it advisable to run briefly over our own doctrinal views and our opponent's disagreement with them, so that our review of the propositions in question may proceed methodically.

Mrs. Woodward, nevertheless, had her own sentiments on the matter, which were not quite in unison with those of her daughter.

“I will be governed entirely by your wishes: under any circumstances his income will, as I understand, be quite sufficient for him, married or single.”

This example being understood, it is time to go on to the thing which it illustrates.

“Well, spake on, I’ll listen.”

But they passing over from the whole to a part, from the body to a wound, from life to a limb cut off, shall meet with what, but going into the pit of corruption?

I find that your story about Mrs. Askerton is in the main true.

When the Father says of His Son, This is , and the Son of Himself, It is He that talks with You [John 9:37], and when Peter confesses You are , and John assures us, This is the true God [1 John 5:20], and Paul is never weary of proclaiming Him as God's own Son, I can conceive of no other motive for this denial than hatred.

Thus it came to pass that all the people and kings in those countries were subject to the kingdom and authority of the Assyrians, and did whatever they were commanded.

How, when now 105 years old, he counselled the monks, and gave advice concerning burial.

First of all, you advertise them for auction, submit them to public sale, knock them down to the highest bidder, when you every five years bring them to the hammer among your revenues.

“You know you intend to do no such thing,” said she. “You have already told me your ideas as to waiting upon young ladies.”

She was grievously offended with her husband; but, as she thought of it, she became aware that she did not wish to bring on him any anger but her own.

Tea was brought in, and the old lady was delighted with her guests.

The vanquished nation, being pursued by their enemies, crossed over into the Roman territories.

But it is not so in the Godhead; for not as man is God; for the Father is not from a father; therefore does He not beget one who shall become a father; nor is the Son from effluence of the Father, nor is He begotten from a father that was begotten; therefore neither is He begotten so as to beget.

He was thinking with a bitter spirit of the ill-result of his morning’s work when he again found himself close to Miss Boncassen in the crowd of departing people on the terrace. “Mind you keep your word,” she said. And then she turned to her father. “Lord Silverbridge has promised to call.”

[Matthew 6:14] Forgive base offenses that you may receive a royal pardon for your offenses; but if any one has done you great wrongs, the greater the wrongs you forgive, the greater will be the pardon which you will receive.

Open the ears of your soul, and hear: The mighty God, even the Lord, has spoken, and called the earth, from the rising of the sun unto the going down thereof; out of Zion, the perfection of beauty.

He was, especially, a determined Protestant, regarding any Catholic claims to the privileges of citizenship with all the bigotry of religious conviction.

Wherefore it is said: And God said, Let light be, and light was; and God saw the light, that it was good, manifestly made good for man.

Shall I not value the father of Gratian more than my very eyes?

Already, indeed, even into the band of these holy ones, an infinite number of women have rushed full of innumerable bad qualities; and in this case our grief is greater than in the other; for there is just the same difference between a virgin and a widow going astray, as between a free-born damsel and her handmaid.

“It’s a bad thing,” said Mr Croll.

“Irish name,” suggested the lord.

And he did not particularly wish to be present at Rufford Hall with the Trefoil ladies.

How, therefore, could it be truly said here, And it shall come to pass that every one that is left shall come to worship him, if that is true, that no one shall escape the avenging sword, unless he would have it understood of those who belong to the race of that whole priesthood after the order of Aaron?

“And so that’s hunting, is it?” said Miss Dunstable.

Now all these things have been spoken by Paul of the subject in hand, not of everything.

“What;—Lord Peterborough’s son? Oh, dear, yes. Such a singular being!”

“And I am so fond of him!”

“You don’t mean that he’ll marry a disagreeable wife!”

Celsus then proceeds to say that we shrink from raising altars, statues, and temples; and this, he thinks, has been agreed upon among us as the badge or distinctive mark of a secret and forbidden society.

Abstaining therefore from their madness, let us tremble at His words, that He may continually build us up.

What shall I, succeeding to my own heir, do?

Unfortunately Mr Whittlestaff never was sick, but Mrs Baggett was patiently looking forward to some happy day when he might be brought home with his leg broken.

And this crown, after the image of the Lord, fades not as a flower.

Mr. Graham was very kind—very kind indeed.

You perhaps ask me at this point, Why bring forward these facts?

“She says that you are her brother. Whose leave should she ask?”

But one certainly doesn’t often come across anything much better than Mrs. Gamp.” And thus the matter was talked over between them with much stable conversation, all of which tended to make Sowerby more and more oblivious of his friend’s sacred profession, and perhaps to make the vicar himself too frequently oblivious of it also.

The requirement of the undue is an augmentation of the due benevolence.

Or could she say to their questionings, I know where they are; but I fear God, I will not betray them?

When, then, our Lord had rebuked them because they made themselves clean on the outside, but within were full of ravening and wickedness, He advised them, in the exercise of that charity which each man owes to himself in the first instance, to make clean the inward parts.

Letter 156

But I thought it possible that I might write a novel.

“It comes more in your way, I daresay,” said Doodles. “But for me, what I like is a little bit of management—what I call a touch of the diplomatic. You’ll be able to see her tomorrow?”

There were many others whom I met for the first time at George Smith’s table.

[2 Timothy 2:4] For if he who fights for the emperor is forbidden by human laws to enter upon lawsuits, to do any legal business, or to sell merchandise; how much more ought he who enters upon the warfare of faith to keep from every kind of business, being satisfied with the produce of his own little bit of land, if he has it?

Unless you do something to displease him very greatly, he will make no further change.

But man, with his erect position, with his elevated countenance raised to the contemplation of the universe, compares his features with God, and reason recognises reason.

You know that philosophers, though they all adhere to one system, are yet frequently at issue on certain points, and differ, perhaps, in their degree of knowledge: yet they are recalled to harmony of sentiment by the uniting power of their common doctrines.

Total …

Without pre-fixing Consulate, month, and day, they wrote concerning Easter, 'It seemed good as follows,' for it did then seem good that there should be a general compliance; but about the faith they wrote not, 'It seemed good,' but, 'Thus believes the Catholic Church and thereupon they confessed how they believed, in order to show that their own sentiments were not novel, but Apostolical; and what they wrote down was no discovery of theirs, but is the same as was taught by the Apostles.

But when Timothy came even now unto us, and brought us glad tidings of your faith and love.

Seeing that it dares to say, I also am the first; I too am before all things; and I am that from which all things proceed; equal we have been, together we have been— both alike without beginning, without end; both alike without an Author, without a God.

“My difficulty in explaining it comes from consideration for you,” he said.

Of course the Earl’s nominee, his lacquey, as the honourable gentleman might be called, would be returned.

And others indeed have given up even their life, and shed their blood; and do you not even give up your superfluities for Heaven's sake, for the sake of so great crowns?

“He has just been thrashed, you know, in the streets,—most horribly.” Marie had not been told of this, and started back from her lover’s arms. “You hadn’t heard it?”

Chapter 10. Leucippus; His Atomic Theory.

Leaving sin and the old man behind, he is made a new man unto the knowledge of God, and arrives at the perfection of his constitution, since through the knowledge of his God he becomes the perfect image of God.

“Oh,—rum; rum be b–––– What’s the use of all that? From what the governor told me this morning, there isn’t a shadow of doubt where the diamonds are.”

When it is absolutely necessary,—then indeed it is done without much thought; but in the case of the Arkwrights it was not absolutely necessary.

Nor does He wish anything not to exist, and yet become the cause of existence to that which He wishes not to exist.

It is hardly necessary to say that Lady Staveley had conceived to herself a recognised purpose in uttering that little caution to her daughter; and she would have been quite as well pleased had circumstances taken Felix Graham out of her house instead of Peregrine Orme. But Felix Graham must necessarily remain for the next fortnight, and there could be no possible benefit in Orme’s return, at any rate till Graham should have gone.

Worship the Lord in His holy court.

The little thing might have been excluded by the closing of the window; but Sir Thomas, though he suffered, did not reflect for a while whence the suffering came.

There were other persons in the carriage, and she, though she had determined in some vague way that she would speak some words to her father before she reached their own house, had still wanted time to resolve what those words should be.

She was, therefore, much surprised when her brother began about the business as soon as she had seated herself.

Respecting the body also, the apostle has said, We have a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens, i.e., in the mansions of the blessed.

The great question for her to decide was this;—should she put herself and her case into the hands of her friend Mr. Furnival now at once, or should she wait till she had received some certain symptom of hostile proceedings?

Chapter 10. The Exercises Suited to a Good Life

On those to whom Christ says: You shall find rest for your souls, for My yoke is pleasant and My burden is light, [Matthew 11:30] Novatian lays a heavy burden and a hard yoke.

“And what is she to do then?” asked Mr Vavasor.

So much may be admitted.

“You wouldn’t take anything from me for yourself I dare say. Anybody can see how proud you are. But if I leave it for her I don’t think you have a right to refuse it. Of course she wants it if you don’t.” With that he brought out a sovereign and put it down on the table.

Now observe the character of the shepherd.

But to the dove he has given young, that is, to the flesh: the dove has found a nest, where she may lay her young.

But now He suffers men to err, and to be impious even towards Himself, just, and mild, and patient as He is.

He had not so written because he liked what he knew of the man.

To such a threat as this, no answer could be made, and Sir Felix left the room.

You had to laugh very hard at him before you could offend Uncle Babington.

For one man who does the will of the Lord, is better than ten thousand transgressors.

I tell you, Mr Armstrong, Lord Ballindine’s in the right of it.

Below the Peacock, where the mill is placed, the valley is closely confined, as the sombre pine-forests rise abruptly on each side; and here, or very little lower, is that gloomy or ghostlike pass through the rocks, which is called the Hollenthor; a name which I will not translate.

Even though what I say be a paradox, nevertheless it is true, and among men of understanding is fully acknowledged.

What becomes of the curse on every one that hangs on a tree?

For when the occasion of a feast brought him once again into the divine temple, after bringing his gifts to the holy table he straightway went out.

“ It cost the Colony ,” I forget what he said it cost.

[Matthew 14:18] Then Jesus said unto them, Bring hither [39] those five loaves and the two fishes.

Phineas was, therefore, driven to depend exclusively on Madame Max Goesler for conversation, and he found that he was not called upon to cast his seed into barren ground.

To shake and rob this some of us wanton young fellows went, late one night (having, according to our disgraceful habit, prolonged our games in the streets until then), and carried away great loads, not to eat ourselves, but to fling to the very swine, having only eaten some of them; and to do this pleased us all the more because it was not permitted.

And not only by strengthening the sick man's body, but also in another way, did He afford him a strong proof of His Divinity; for by saying, Sin no more, He showed that He knew all the transgressions that had formerly been committed by him; and by this He would gain his belief as to the future.

I am not unaware that when we hear that we should love God with our whole heart, this is not said of that portion of our flesh which lies under our ribs, but of that power that originates our thoughts.

For what madman even would think him to be blamed who discharged the duties that were due to those whom he believed to be his parents, although they were not so?

“But it is awfully cold. You’ve been in the stuffy carriage, but you’ll find it cold enough out here, I can tell you.”

21. The streets that were in sackcloth, and ashes cried out—disturbed by the play, akin to that which was—in the wilderness before the calf.

How came he not to prefer a man to a woman for the utterance of his prophesies?

Attend carefully to these things, most beloved son; earnestly observe them; that, when through such management you shall have given back safe to God those whom you have received from Him, you may be counted worthy in the day of eternal retribution to hear Him say, Well done, good and faithful servant: because you have been faithful in a few things, I will set you over many things: enter into the joy of your Lord [Luke 19:17].

Lifted up, they have rushed into vain prevarications.

And so had she.

Basilides, therefore, and Isidorus, the true son and disciple of Basilides, say that Matthias communicated to them secret discourses, which, I being specially instructed, he heard from the Saviour.

This much, however, is at least clear to all men, that you cannot eat your cake and have it.

For it is written: You are all one in Christ Jesus, [Galatians 3:28] and elsewhere: To those sanctified in Christ Jesus, [1 Corinthians 1:2] and again: That we might be the righteousness of God in Him, [2 Corinthians 5:21] and in another place: Should fall from the chastity which is in Christ Jesus.

“I hope not,” he repeated.

Wherefore we are well warned by the Lord's command: Take heed that your hearts be not weighed down by surfeiting and drunkenness and the cares of this world.

“And would not you answer any one who attacked Sir George?”

For this intent, that He might make them even self-condemned, He causes the judgment to be delivered by themselves, like as He does also in the ensuing parable of the vineyard.

He made it, too, as severe as he could by another shake of his head.

Captain Clayton’s Lovemaking

The whole property in Scotland was to belong to Lizzie for her life,—and after her death was to go to a second son, if such second son there should be.

Those men had no written precepts, no patterns of living, but their nature fought, unarmed, by itself, and was forced to float in all directions unballasted.

“You will never prevail with her,” said his sister, taking him by the arm, and looking up piteously into his face.

“It is all rubbish. It has come from that young man Tregear, with whom he has been associating.”

The gentleman was proposing some little addition to a commercial treaty and was expounding in very strong language the ruinous injustice to which England was exposed by being tempted to use gloves made in a country in which no income tax was levied.

She saw the motion of our eye, and at once understood it.

So even if we use it ill, we do not even then cast the blame on it.

Sam Brattle Returns Home

They were apparently those of a tall bony individual with a skull hard as bronze.

This was not flattering to the capitaine, and so he felt it. ‘Perhaps so, perhaps not,’ he said. ‘But at any rate she will get over it. It is a malady which rarely kills young women—especially when another alliance awaits them.’

“A few days more would have done it.”

And yet no wound is so grievous as making a man to stumble.

Such is perhaps the nature of each one of us.

At the time alluded to, Henri de Larochejaquelin was not quite twenty years of age.

Even the Earl had done so more than once on occasions in which the greatness of his position had dropped for a moment out of his mind.

How Antony reverenced all ordained persons.

He was very bad, but there have come up worse since him.

I am your God whom you are lifting up: your God whom you are crucifying.

If asked to define incorruptibility, say that it has the same meaning as mercy or judgment.

As we have promised above to make some mention of Paphnutius and Spyridon, it is time to speak of them here.

So good a thing is virtue, that it has even its enemies themselves to applaud and admire it!

Nothing seems to add so much to the prettiness and comfort of a town as open running water, though I doubt whether it be in truth the most healthy mode of providing for man the first necessary of life.

For why was Isaac only called the seed, and yet he was the father of Ishmael also, and of several others.

Natal

He had no great claim upon his party; and, in giving away the good things of office, the giver is only too prone to recognise any objections against an individual which may seem to relieve him from the necessity of bestowing aught in that direction.

She was a little thing, hardly over twenty years of age, very unlike her father or mother, having no trace of the Jewess in her countenance, who seemed to be overwhelmed by the sense of her own position.

With his rod the same Jacob boasts that he had crossed the river.

17. And when he saw that he refused to sacrifice as commanded, he ordered them to scrape him continually to his very bones and to the inmost recesses of his bowels, not as if he were human flesh but as if he were stones or wood or any lifeless thing. But after long persistence he saw that this was in vain, as the man was speechless and insensible and almost lifeless, his body being worn out by the tortures.

There is a certain iniquity, on the worker whereof it cannot be that God have mercy.

For by the Cross all things have been made right.

LETTER 67

Though he has studiously wrapt the mist of his phraseology round the meaning of this, and made it hard for most to find out, yet as following that which we have already examined it will easily be made clear.

But he was perhaps equally void of those which actuate men to do evil.

“He’ll hear all about that by and by,” said Meg. “Come up and see her now, Martin.”

So in the vision of the beasts he is compared to a lion which excels in its might all the beasts.

Now the doctrine of the Lord is this: Go, He said, teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.

About the middle of July he went to the Duke at the Treasury, was closeted with him, and in a very long narration of his own differences, difficulties, opinions, and grievances, explained to the Duke that his conscience called upon him to resign.

After a while Mrs. Trevelyan called to her mother, and Lady Rowley was allowed to go upstairs.

May God preserve you, beloved brother.

“Psha!” he said again angrily. How could any one presume to talk of the worldly station of his goddess? For just then Madeline Staveley to him was a goddess!

So that they declare nothing else than this, that He is the Firstfruits of the Resurrection.

In a word, shun to be found guilty of digamy, and you do not expose yourself to the necessity of administering what a digamist may not lawfully administer.

Those letters were headed with your name, but I do not think they were yours.

The narrative by Matthew then, runs thus: In the end of the Sabbath as it began to dawn toward the first day of the week, came Mary Magdalene, and the other Mary, to see the sepulchre.

Let it not therefore seek to discern itself as though absent, but take pains to discern itself as present.

The girl had been as sweet a girl as had ever brightened the hearth of an old woman.

There were some few things to be bought, some little bills to be paid, and then there was the fortnight of honeymooning among the Lakes in June.

Let not men exalt themselves upon their worth, let them not think themselves uplifted by their distinctions; let them beware lest they be thrown by an untamed horse

She said that she was too young to think of marrying yet.

Because all their kings had for the most part been an unjust and covetous kind of men, and had given them over to their enemies, and had perverted the people, and made them subject to their foes; Be of good courage, It says, this is not such an one, but meek and gentle; as is shown by the ass, for He entered not with an army in His train, but having an ass alone.

There is perhaps little reason in it, but I find myself comparing this tone of allusion to many lands and many things, and whatever it brings us of easier respiration, with that narrow vision of humanity which accompanies the strenuous, serious work lately offered us in such abundance by the votaries of art for art who sit so long at their desks in Parisian guatrihmes.

Father Barney knew very well that his dear niece had been on much more intimate terms with her guest than she pretended.

But with all these faults the book was a thoroughly honest book, and was the result of unflagging labour for a period of fifteen months.

do for the brethren, that which I have done for you.

There was one lady who conceived all manner of bad things as to Harry Annesley, because, as she alleged, of the want of a profession and of any fixed income.

for we know that no god or father of a god ever devises anything crooked or crafty.

“I have thought,—a great deal, already.”

‘Has it been my fault?’ she asked.

To these States must be added, in counting up the countries of Central America, British Honduras, consisting of Belize and the adjacent district, and the Mosquito coast which so lately was under British protection; and which is —.

Groan when you have sinned, not because you are to be punished, (for this is nothing,) but because you have offended your Master, one so gentle, one so kind, one that so loves you and longs for your salvation as to have given even His Son for you.

Concerning this stirring up, you have heard in the Gospel, They shall deliver you up to councils.

Some consider me a wicked man, laden with iniquity; and such language is more than justified by my actual sins.

For what effect is produced upon His Being or Substance by His having no beginning, and being incapable of change or limitation?

And, in truth, Lizzie almost had made up her mind to break it off.

He is desirous to console the despondency of his disciple, and therefore bids him be of good cheer, since he was going to his crown, having finished all his work, and obtained a glorious end.

“She is pretty, certainly.”

If Peacocke would only give him money enough to support himself for the necessary time, he would remain at Leavenworth till his companion should return there, or would make his way to Chicago, and stay there till Peacocke should come to him.

5. And he did not say, Be not forgetful of the entertaining of strangers, but of hospitality: that is, do not merely entertain strangers, but [do it] with love for the strangers. Moreover he did not speak of the recompense that is future, and in store for us, lest he should make them more supine, but of that already given. For thereby some (he says) have entertained angels unawares.

Then she asked after the children, and specially for the baby; but as yet she spoke no word of Harry Clavering.

“Yes, sir, I remember it,” whispered Kenneby.

For this cause also they said again, What do ye, seeking to bring this man's blood upon us?

“I presume, Miss Mackenzie, that in speaking to you, I am speaking to a lady who would not wish to interfere with another lady who has been before her. I do hope that you cannot be indifferent to the ordinary feelings of a female Christian on that subject. What would you think if you were interfered with, though, perhaps, as you had not your fortune in early life, you may never have known what that was.”

And she still believed him.

It was not that Poppins believed in Johnson, or that he thought that 15,000l.

For if I preach the Gospel, I have nothing to glory of; for necessity is laid upon me; for woe is unto me, if I preach not the Gospel! For if I do this of my own will, I have a reward: but if not of my own will, I have a stewardship entrusted to me. What then is my reward? That when I preach the Gospel, I may make the Gospel of Christ without charge, so as not to use to the full my right in the Gospel.

To her mind the tragedy was so terrible that she could only feel its tragic element.

For what have I done?

He was not a clergyman, nor is his work a sermon to the faithful.

“Well, my dear,” said the Doctor, smiling, “what am I to say to the Earl?”

He did not read much; he did not talk much; he was not specially fond of eating and drinking; he did not gamble, and he did not care for the farm.

[Exodus 3:8] The Lord shall bless your land.

He who has been once baptized into Christ cannot fall, for he has the consolation of marriage to slake his lust.

Archelaus said: And consequently it has an end, because it has had a beginning in time.

The world has been broken to pieces in the same way often;—but extreme Chaos does not come.

“It makes him very unhappy; I know that,” said Mrs. Rolland. “Of course he cannot interfere about the school. As for licensing the gentleman as a curate, that was of course quite out of the question.”

I do not know her.

Those of the ground floor are all uniform in size and position.

How may they deceive those who follow them?

Hence is shown an important doctrine, that the baptism of John is incomplete.

While these were thus harassed the partisans of Acacius remained for a considerable time at Constantinople and held another Synod.

There are listeners who show by their mode of listening that they listen as a duty,—not because they are interested.

I may instance, too, Eleusis, and the mystic Dragon, and Orpheus, who says—

This figure of speech is properly employed when the character and sentiments of the person introduced are faithfully preserved; but it is an abuse of the figure when these do not agree with the character and opinions of the speaker.

Beatrice did not quite see it all; but she saw enough of it to know that Mary was to be pitied; so, instead of scolding her friend for being cross, she threw her arms round her and kissed her affectionately.

“I am told that she still lives in Poitou, and I think I heard that, some years after M. de Lescure’s death, she married M. Louis Larochejaquelin.”

2. But even before this, at the very hour when the Decian persecution was commanded, Sabinus sent a frumentarius to search for me, and I remained at home four days awaiting his arrival.

Such was the creed of those who believed in the debt.

Hold fast in your mind from this that he has subjoined, that envy cannot exist in charity.

The Jews assaulted him: our passions assault us, bidding us abjure our testimony.

Come along, Mrs B.” Then he made a motion as though to run after her, still brandishing the stick in his hand.

Now exert your minds I pray: for whether one hears, or forbears to hear I shall dig and till the soil. Hearken O daughter, and behold, forget also your own people, and your father's house, and the king shall desire your beauty. By beauty in this passage the Jew understands sensible beauty; not spiritual but corporeal.

May it not be possible that the things which give pleasure to you, seem, on the contrary, harsh and disagreeable to them?

Alternately with contentious cable they each spun out the day until evening.

This is to insult and scorn, to yield to conquered religions, to adore them when captive, after having vanquished them.

For the Scriptures point to a sabbath eternal and a sabbath temporal.

III. He asks for further information about the rioting in Palestine and in Egypt.

Not much was lost by a separation thus effectually bridged by a constant correspondence.

But some people in some countries of the West, and especially in the city, not knowing the reason of this indulgence, think that a dispensation from fasting ought certainly not to be allowed on the Sabbath, because they say that on this day the Apostle Peter fasted before his encounter with Simon.

Nevertheless, read also the prayer of Daniel, and see how, when in captivity, he confesses not only the sins of his people, but his own also, and acknowledges that because of these the justice of God has visited them with the punishment of captivity and with reproach.

Adrian Urmand had fallen into a chair, and Michel Voss came and seated himself close beside him.

But at present man must cooperate in the forming of the image of God, while the world exists and is still being formed; for it is said, Increase and multiply.

The remarkable faith of the Ninevites is related to have been manifested about these times.

Caroline.

“But then, Mr. Orme, many young ladies who have been at the first moment quite as sure of their decision have married the gentlemen whom they refused, and have learned to love them with all their hearts.”

You know that the Israelites despoiled the Egyptians, and it was taken as a merit on their part.

If your brother sin against you, go, show him his fault between you and him alone.

“But are they making ducks and drakes?”

“I don’t know why they should have troubled themselves to send for me,” said the tailor.

[1 Corinthians 15:52] Moreover, in death itself some rest, and some live.

She declared that she could see the slaughtered innocents, the raging Herod, Joseph and Mary fleeing into Egypt; and with a mixture of tears and joy she cried: 'Hail Bethlehem, house of bread, wherein was born that Bread that came down from heaven.

For a lower nature can never attain to the might of a higher and more powerful nature.

I have already mentioned that from hence the Apostle Paul had borrowed a text for the encouragement of the Martyrs: that they might not faint in the tribulations undergone by them for the name of Christ.

He was not admitted to those councils of his mother’s, and would not submit to ask after his mother’s welfare or to inquire as to her affairs from a stranger.

[Acts 1:7-8] First of all, the Church spread herself abroad from Jerusalem; and when very many in Judea and Samaria had believed, she also went into other nations by those who announced the gospel, whom, as lights, He Himself had both prepared by His word and kindled by His Holy Spirit.

Again, the science of definition, of division, and of partition, although it is frequently applied to falsities, is not itself false, nor framed by man's device, but is evolved from the reason of things.

But when, what the traveller called the breeding of the wild cat, showed itself;—and when, having escaped from her, he thought of Hetta Carbury and of her breeding,—he was fully determined that, let his fate be what it might, it should not be that of being the husband of Mrs Hurtle.

Every separate point of heretical assertion has been successfully refuted.

And sometimes, as if premature, they are born small, and are somewhat cloudy though well-formed.

But if the belief of a point that is not admitted be carried back to one admitted by all, that is to be made the commencement of instruction.

I have travelled all over Ireland, closely as few other men can have done, and have never had my portmanteau robbed or my pocket picked.

The Word was in the beginning.

Perhaps Lord George had engaged these men, and had afterwards found it practicable to get the diamonds without their assistance.

“Turn again, Robinson, Member of Parliament.”

Hopkins had pretended to the right of taking what he required from the farmyard, without asking leave of any one.

“I don’t know what you call being sure, my dear. I can’t say I’ve ever heard it sworn to, on oath. But his sister Mary told your sister Augusta that he was. I think that’s pretty good evidence. But, Mrs. Cornbury, he’s one of those that will be engaged to twenty, if he can find twenty foolish enough to listen to him. And for her, who never was at a dance before, to go on with him like that;—I must say that I thought it disgraceful!”

The bishop sighed aloud.

But as all Patricians were incapable of the Tribunate, by its original institution so his first step was to make himself a Plebeian by the pretence of an adoption into a Plebeian house, which could not yet be done without the suffrage of the people.

For I know that this name, in your esteem, excels all other glorious and lofty titles.

“That is just what I want to prevent. Why should she lose her little pleasure?”

(v. 31, 35) and (so) immediately gave proof of their kindness towards him.

And then, was it not quite manifest that he was neglecting poor Lucy in every way?

Or is he untrue as a lover in that he does not waste his life in desolation, because he has been disappointed?

Apollodorus, too, asserts the same thing in his treatise concerning the gods.

What are you hiding?

But lest by any chance there should be any doubt in your mind why we call Him Jesus Christ, who was born of God before the world, and who was born of man three hundred years ago, I will briefly explain to you the reason.

Isaac did everything but suffer, as was right, yielding the precedence in suffering to the Word.

“Tired of it! I should think you are too.”

Chapter 17. He Continues on the Unhappy Method of Training Youth in Literary Subjects.

“No;—nobody is ill. But I must go up to London. Mrs Bole will take care of you, and you must not be angry with me for leaving you.”

Whence also the heart of him who lies is said to be double; that is, there is a double thought: the one, of that thing which he either knows or thinks to be true and does not produce; the other, of that thing which he produces instead thereof, knowing or thinking it to be false.

“Yes, father, I will.”

“Lucy, I swear I believe you loved me then.”

What are his works?

And thou indeed art forgiving a fellow-servant; whereas God is forgiving a servant, and an enemy, and one that hates Him.

He and Mrs. Trevelyan became as brother and sister to each other on their way home,—as, indeed, it was natural that they should do.

But Emily Hotspur, though she had been thus reticent and quiet in her joy, though she was resolved to be discreet, and knew that there were circumstances in her engagement which would for a while deter her from being with her accepted lover as other girls are with theirs, did not mean to estrange herself from her cousin George.

And as the element of fire, when it meets with ore from the mine, straightway of earth makes it gold, even so and much more Baptism makes those who are washed to be of gold instead of clay; the Spirit at that time falling like fire into our souls, burning up the image of the earthy [1 Corinthians 15:49], and producing the image of the heavenly, fresh coined, bright and glittering, as from the furnace-mould.

The start of Judas wins praise; his end is condemned because of his treachery.

The secrets of the world are very marvellous, but they are not themselves half so wonderful as the way in which they become known to the world.

If a man have this, he will have the rest also.

The funeral was to take place on the Saturday, and during the four days that intervened she received two visits from Mr. Possitt.

To his wife and sister he explained that he was not able, as yet, to take pleasure in such a party as this with Lady Anna.

See how He would not have you divide yourself over a multitude of pages: On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.

And when Dr. Burnaby found time, in the fifteen minutes which he gave to his sermon, to tell his hearers why the Prophet had specially spoken of Christ as the Prince of Peace, and to describe what the blessings were, hitherto unknown, which had come upon the world since a desire for peace had filled the minds of men, a feeling did come on the hearts of both of them, — to one that the words had better not have been spoken, and to the other that they had better have been forgiven.

He catches salmon in October; or shoots his partridges in March.

And since He had made mention of the Lord and my Lord, He recurs again to the law. And yet the law said nothing of this kind, but, The Lord your God is one Lord. [Deuteronomy 6:4] But Scripture calls the whole Old Testament the law.

Moreover, that the Word is united to the God of all, because He says, I and the Father are one; [John 10:30] and, I am in the Father, and the Father is in Me.

Which you have showed (he says); and he said not unto the saints, but towards God, for this is toward His Name.

Damer.

“That he wouldn’t beat me; or spend all my money if I managed to have it tied up out of his power; or look down on me with contempt because my father was an apothecary! Was not that what you were going to say?”

But as things are, for a buffoon who is moving laughter or for a whorish and abandoned woman, so vast an assemblage of spectators is set, listening in entire quietness to what is spoken, and this when none commands silence ; and there is neither tumult, nor cry, nor any the least noise: but when God is speaking from heaven on subjects so awful, we behave ourselves more impudently than dogs, and even to the harlot women we pay greater respect than to God.

Others surmised that she was the Duke’s daughter.

It is not then the only coin that mortals have, that which is white silver or golden, but virtue too, as Sophocles says.

Let us then, brethren, abide in hope, and surrender ourselves, and hope, in order that the God of all may see our purpose, and cleanse us from our sins, and impart to us good hopes of our estate, and grant us repentance that brings salvation.

She knew also how much she owed to him.

“Sha’n’t I have as much employment as you?”

For the poor man is very strong, and has nothing wherefrom he may be wronged or evil entreated.

Unnecessarily disagreeable, I should have said.

The fourth it cannot bear: for He came first by lawgivers, and secondly by prophets, and thirdly by the Gospel, manifesting Himself openly; and in the fourth instance He shall come as the Judge of the living and the dead, whose glory the whole creation will not be able to endure.

She went, therefore, in her present difficulty to Mr. Prong.

And Orpheus lived at the same time as Hercules; moreover, it is said that all the works attributed to him were composed by Onomacritus the Athenian, who lived during the reign of the Pisistratids, about the fiftieth Olympiad.

She would send a telegram herself.

“God forbid! But go on, Kelly.”

On the 20th of January Milo was returning to Rome from Lanuvium, where he had been engaged, as chief magistrate of the town, in nominating a friend for the municipality.

But it had not been so with her.

The opinion of Basil, who is universally confessed to have been the most eloquent man of his age, is a stronger testimony, I think, to the merit of Ephraim, than anything that could be indited to his praise.

All this was like clockwork at Humblethwaite.

“Oh no!”

But when men unacquainted with other modes of life than their own meet with the record of such actions, unless they are restrained by authority, they look upon them as sins, and do not consider that their own customs either in regard to marriage, or feasts, or dress, or the other necessities and adornments of human life, appear sinful to the people of other nations and other times.

But I think we must pass over this and all that follows.

‘Come, Harry, you should be a little reasonable,’ said she, laughing. ‘If you did not talk last night whose fault was it?’

“Wait a moment, papa.”

With such ideas, however, no wonder they imagine that of such a Son God was not always Father, and such a Son was not always in being, but was generated from nothing as a creature, and was not before His generation; for such an one is other than the True Son of God.

It seemed to Alice that he was not so big or so much to be dreaded as when she had seen him at Matching.

Thirdly, that it was quite a matter of indifference to him who did find fault.

“You must do as you like about that, Mr Dale; I can’t prevent you. I shall think you wrong to harass her on such a matter, and I fear also that her answer will not be satisfactory to you. If you choose to tell her your opinion, you must do so. Of course I shall think you wrong, that’s all.”

For by these two things do they attempt to lead the parents to a denial; by using the words, Whom ye say, and, How then does he now see?

“Well, girls,” he said, as he chucked his bag and coat to Sally, “for heaven’s sake get me something to ate, for I’m starved. What’s the news at Dunmore?”

And he fell, not so much to do hurt to the race of man, as rather to be set at nought by the same.

But what can I do so long as everyone supposes that he has a right to do as he does and thinks that in publishing a slander he is requiting not originating a calumny?

R. I marvel that you ask that question: do we not see thousands of things perish before our eyes?

19. I will come to you, if the Lord will.

For which good faith and humanity whatever you shall bravely bear, is judged to be not only not culpable, but even laudable; save only these things which if a man suffer he is said to suffer not bravely, but immodestly and foully.

Such men are not always the best fathers or the safest guardians; but they carry about with them a certain duc ad me which children recognize, and which in three minutes upsets all the barriers between five and five-and-forty.

I forgot that the Gospel warns us [Luke 10:30-35] that he who goes down from Jerusalem immediately falls among robbers, is spoiled, is wounded, is left for dead.

There’ll be eight of us, and at this time of the year we dine at half-past seven, sharp.

Having thus been deemed worthy of the office of prelate, as it is seemly that men should who have lived such a life, and won such favour and consideration, he did not disgrace, by his subsequent conduct, either his own philosophy, or the hopes of those who had trusted him.

Next let us see what this glory is which the Son expects to receive from the Father; and then our exposition will be complete.

Meager had brought home with him on the morning of the murder.

Now it is quite uncertain what he means in these words by the grace of God; and the judges, catholic as they were, could not possibly understand by the phrase anything else than the grace which is so very strongly recommended to us in the apostle's teaching.

Of the same from his discourse on the beginning of Isaiah: —

The Miss Marians and Captains Ewing cannot go out to dine on the grass without some one to look after them.

The Great Mysteries in the Building of the Militant and Triumphant Church.

For those things which are known not by their actuality, but by their want of it, are known, if our expression may be allowed and understood, by not knowing them, that by knowing them they may be not known.

But Madame Staubach could not trust everything to Herr Molk.

But he had many troubles.

The following day and the Sunday were not passed in much happiness by the two ladies at Bragg’s End. Tidings reached them that Mrs. Rowan and her daughter were going to London on the Monday, but no letter came to them from Luke. By the Monday morning Mrs. Ray had quite made up her mind that Luke Rowan was lost to them for ever, and Rachel had already become worn with care. During that Saturday and Sunday nothing was seen of Mrs. Prime at Bragg’s End.

But now he had heard stories about that “excellent young man, Augustus Scarborough,” which had shaken his faith.

Of bakers, we are sure that they disregard the palates of their customers, and calculate that they may best make their fortunes by selling bread which shall be bad and ill-made.

The meaning of this verse, if we are to expound it, appears to me this, that all our good works are one work of love: for love is the fulfilling of the Law.

Before we received in humility the grace of the Spirit, the letter was only death to us, for it required obedience which we could not render.

Hear another passage, your sacred Majesty,— hear the voice of Christ.

“I can’t tell you, Mr Cheesacre, that you are wanted in that light, certainly.”

But as the sentient nature, even when it feels pain, is superior to the stony, which can feel none, so the rational nature, even when wretched, is more excellent than that which lacks reason or feeling, and can therefore experience no misery.

In the column on the left hand in the note I quote the words with which, in the first pleading against Verres, he declared “that every base and iniquitous thing done on the judgment-seat during the ten years since the power of judging had been transferred to the Senate should be not only denounced by him, but also proved;” and in that on the right I will repeat the noble phrases which he afterward used in the speech for Cluentius when he chose to speak well of the order.

Truly this is indeed the exceeding greatness of His power.

Then he made me two lower bows, touched the tip of my fingers, and said that he would be proud to wait upon me in a few days with a definite proposal.

This also is the meaning of what follows.

“And now,” she said, when she received it, “I must dare to tell him the whole truth.”

But, as it is, the greater part of the Church does not know me even by name: so that even my refusal of the office will not be manifest to all, but only to a few, and I am not sure that all even of these know it for certain; but probably many of them either imagine that I was not elected at all, or that I was rejected after the election, being considered unsuitable, not that I avoided the office of my own accord.

Are not the sacred rites of mother Ceres, which were adopted but a little while ago, called Graeca because they were unknown to you, their name bearing witness to their novelty?

There remained at Rome a few soldiers of that body, who, profiting of the opportunity, put some magistrates to death, and, with the acquiescence of the tumultuary populace, clothed Maxentius in the imperial purple.

Now was she contented?

Into this condition, then, we are to suppose that all this bodily substance of ours will be brought, when all things shall be re-established in a state of unity, and when God shall be all in all.

The lady began by appealing to wages, rent, the price of tea and all such articles as must be imported, the price of clothes, the material of which must at least be imported, the price of butter and vegetables, the price of schooling, of medical assistance and of law, which must be regulated in accordance with the price of the articles which the schoolmaster, doctors, and lawyers consume,—and the price of washing.

But there was no need to baptize?

Sir Thomas did not exactly say that; but, nevertheless, Sir Thomas showed his displeasure.

Moreover, at the sixth hour, Peter, going up unto the house-top, was instructed as well by the sign as by the word of God admonishing him to receive all to the grace of salvation, whereas he was previously doubtful of the receiving of the Gentiles to baptism.

[17] [John 20:24] But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Thama, was not there with the disciples [18] when Jesus came. [John 20:25] The disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen our Lord. But he said unto them, If I do not see in his hands the places of the nails, and put on them my fingers, and pass my hand over his side, I will not believe.

But it serves my purpose best to adhere in reply to the order of attack, that our pious effort may follow close upon the progress of their impious scheme, and when we see them diverge into godless heresy we may at once obliterate the track of error.

But if there were lack of these supplications, which are made with right faith and piety for the dead, I account that it should not a whit profit their spirits, howsoever in holy places the lifeless bodies should be deposited.

Ludovic said a word to her about the house, and Tetchen said many words.

The hands of the kitchen clock came round to two, three, four, before the farmer’s gig wheels were again heard at the vicarage gate.

A servant would have had no rest from his masters, had not the darkness necessarily brought a respite.

For not by dragging into publicity those who have sinned do we thus noise abroad the sins committed by them; but after putting forth our teaching, as common to all, we leave it entirely to the conscience of the hearers; so that each may draw to himself from what is said the suitable medicine for his own wound.

This is what he says: Plants that have been put into the earth up to the period of Canis' rising, frequently, though not having struck root, are yet covered with a profusion of leaves, and afford indications to spectators that they will be productive, and that they appear full of life, (though in reality) not having vitality in themselves from the root.

Hyænam autem vicissim singulis annis masculinum sexum mutare in femininum: significare autem non esse illi ad adulteria prorumpendum, qui ab hyæna abstinet.

And if circumcised, why not also offer sacrifices?

In the midst, then, of this great strife of my inner dwelling, which I had strongly raised up against my soul in the chamber of my heart, troubled both in mind and countenance, I seized upon Alypius, and exclaimed: What is wrong with us?

The duke, as he begged her pardon, wore in his countenance that expression of modified sorrow which is common to any gentleman who is supposed by himself to have incommoded a lady.

“Or that I shall be willing to settle upon her a third of my income. It is not many gentlemen who will do as much as that for a young lady, when the young lady has nothing of her own.”

“You had better keep your word to him absolutely.”

Nor did she, while subduing her dust by fasting, leave to another the medicine of hard lying; nor, while she found this of spiritual service, was she less restrained in sleep than anyone else; nor, while regulating her life on this point as if freed from the body, did she lie upon the ground, when others were passing the night erect, as the most mortified men struggle to do.

And this depositing of Crasweller was to be the first, and should—according to my own intentions—be attended with a peculiar grace and reverence.

The bill of fare was simply written out once, for the mistress, and so circulated round the table.

And although he was in hiding, yet, so far as his strength permitted, directing everywhere his exhortations, and preaching up the unity of the Church, he strengthened men to withstand the ignorance and nefarious temerity of Meletius.

Bid all the bishops subject to your care abstain from the defilement of this elation, that the Universal Church may acknowledge you as Patriarchs not only in good works but also in the authority of truth.

“Oh, no,” said Mrs. Proudie—and her ladyship felt some what recomforted by the assurance—”she had two. But that Signor Neroni beat her, I believe, till she was obliged to have one amputated. At any rate, she entirely lost the use of it.”

The Father is always Father, and in Him the Son, and with the Son the Holy Spirit.

However, they must contrive to recall to their mind even now our preceding arguments, in order that the occasion which originally suggested this passage may assist our judgment in arriving at its meaning.

And Clara, though she pitied him, could not but learn to despise him.

“Why wasn’t Hoppet Hall Rome as much as Bragton?”

It had been for him a great chance,—and he had lost it.

Such exhibition of feeling would be quite contrary to her ideas of female delicacy, and to her very nature.

Are you born?

And yet—yet—yet, who would say what might not happen?

[Proverbs 27:10] And he who relies on falsehoods, feeds on the winds, and pursues winged birds.

And as for the angels, whom those Platonists prefer to call gods, although they do, so far as they are permitted and commissioned, aid in the production of the things around us, yet not on that account are we to call them creators, any more than we call gardeners the creators of fruits and trees.

For every man, says he, praying or prophesying, having his head covered, dishonors his head.

But here, the President of the contests for holiness becomes a fellow-combatant, and helper, sharing with them the conflict against the devil.

“Dead!” said Mr. Harding again.

But these things he said, not to take away free-will.

Chapter 2. These Heretics Brand the Christians as Simple Persons. The Charge Accepted, and Simplicity Eulogized Out of the Scriptures

The next phase in the history of Natal is that which has reference to the quarrels between the Dutch and the English.

But yet, before the good sons can say they have "a desire to depart, and to be with Christ," [Philippians 1:23] many must first be recalled to their Lord by the stripes of temporal scourging, like evil slaves, and in some degree like good-for-nothing fugitives.

In another place He said, God shall glorify Him in Himself [John 13:32], but here, He shall glorify the Father; for when the Son shall appear with great power, He who begot shall be glorified.

They slept one night in town,—where they encountered Silverbridge soon after his retreat from the Beargarden. “I cannot quite make up my mind, sir, about that fellow Tifto,” he said to his father.

But there is one mountain among them which can claim to rank with the Pic du Midi or the Maledetta. No one can pooh-pooh the stern old Canigou, standing high and solitary, solemn and grand, between the two roads which run from Perpignan into Spain, the one by Prades and the other by Le Boulon. Under the Canigou, towards the west, lie the hot baths of Vernet, in a close secluded valley, which, as I have said before, is, as far as I know, the sweetest spot in these Eastern Pyrenees.

He tells all God's marvels, who sees them performed not only openly on the body, but invisibly indeed too in the soul, but far more sublimely and excellently.

Herein we exhort you and before all things admonish you, that your Fraternity study to be so solicitous that, before the iniquity of simoniacal heresy shall gain strength in your parts from the offense of one, it may be cut off from the root by the pruning-hook of your sentence after a council diligently held.

He that gives, gives to one subsisting; did the Father then, having first begotten the Son, afterwards give Him glory, having before allowed Him to be without glory?

[c. v. 19, and 8:28] What was it?

We did not think very much of the acquaintance by whom the strong introductory letter was written.

When they were passing through the hall she turned to go at once up the stairs to her own room.

How was she to love such as these with such an owner for them?

Lady Mason going before the Magistrates.

If he means the fallen angels of the Creator, there is great propriety in his meaning.

According to the story told by Cicero, Clodius was prepared to oppose the Triumvirate; and the other young men of Rome, the jeunesse dorée, of which both Curio and Clodius were members, were said to be equally hostile to Cæsar, Pompey, and Crassus, whose doings in opposition to the constitution were already evident enough; so that it suited Cicero to believe that the rising aristocracy of Rome would oppose them.

The earth was seen, the earth's Creator was not seen; the flesh was held, God in the flesh was not acknowledged.

13. Such was the end of these persons. But not long after, one hundred and thirty admirable athletes of the confession of Christ, from the land of Egypt, endured, in Egypt itself, at the command of Maximinus the same afflictions in their eyes and feet with the former persons, and were sent to the above-mentioned mines in Palestine. But some of them were condemned to the mines in Cilicia.

[Daniel 2:34-35] This he showed beforehand with regard to Christ that the whole earth shall be filled with Him.

“Upon my word I hardly know what to do,” said Merton.

He will review the present consecration, which we have legitimately performed according to His will.

With his own hands he had once adjusted her curls, and each curl was as he had placed it.

On the first day of the next term he whispered to me half a word that perhaps he had been wrong.

Of this state of things Mrs Roper had a lively appreciation, and now, poor woman, she feared that she was reaching it, by the aid of the Lupexes.

Mark Steinmark! Margaret.

For the man to whom I entrusted it neither delivered it to you nor returned it to me.

He wrote to the bishops of the East, and rebuked them for having judged these bishops unjustly, and for harassing the Churches by abandoning the Nicæan doctrines.

It was quite possible that Glossop had been instructed to make this known to Morton by his sister Lady Penwether.

Therefore the power is given that they who believe in Him should become the sons of God, since this very thing is given, that they believe in Him.

“No. There are so many steamboats and railways now that travelling seems easier. Suppose you go as far as St. Petersburg, and see if that does you any good. If it don’t, you needn’t go on, because it will be hopeless. If it does,—why, you can come back, because the second journey will do the rest.”

And does he think that the scriptures are false?

“What an ass you were.”

It had been perhaps her greatest misery that she, by her doing, had placed him in the terrible position which he had lately been called upon to fill.

“That is graphic and short, at any rate.”

When Herr Steinmarc paused for half a minute outside her aunt’s door, and then slowly turned the lock, Linda was not a bit surprised; nor was Madame Staubach surprised.

We do not hesitate in diffidence, we are not under the suspense of uncertainty, but having received an earnest of the promise, we now with the eye of faith see the things which will be, and rejoicing in the uplifting of our nature, we already possess what we believe.

Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God; so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear. By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead yet speaks.

But it is likely some man will say, God forbid it should ever befall me to be sobered in this way! Nor do I wish it for you, but a very different way, that you should do all from love of Christ: if however, which God forbid, it should so befall you, then even on this behalf I would comfort you. If then the demon does not cast out (from the kingdom of heaven), but sin does cast out, to free a man from sin is greater beneficence.

For he could not endure the spontaneous tumult.

The elective franchise under which the constituencies elect their members of Parliament is given under a certain low property qualification.

And, if it please Him, in that Church are we; and those of us who by love abide in it, there let us persevere, if we would show the love we have.

There was something noble in this courage, in this lack of prudence.

Though this one has been false, as were perhaps two or three before, still the road to success is open. Uno avulso non deficit alter. But if all the notoriety of cudgels and cutting whips be given to the late unfortunate affair, the difficulty of finding a substitute will be greatly increased. The brother recognizes his duty, and prepares for vengeance. The injured one probably desires that she may be left to fight her own little battles alone.

To them may these words justly be addressed: Oh!

We have no trace of his speech, and no allusion in history to an occurrence which would certainly have been mentioned.

For even supposing them to serve you, as you falsely say, as letters for the contemplation of God, it is not right to give the signs greater honour than that which they signify.

And a little after, And [when the people saw it,] they removed and stood afar off, and Moses drew near unto the thick darkness where God was, and the Lord said unto Moses, etc.

Homily 3 on Second Corinthians

[Ezekiel 44:3] For He is the chosen Priest and eternal King, the Christ, inasmuch as He is the Son of God; and do not suppose that Isaiah or the other prophets speak of sacrifices of blood or libations being presented at the altar on His second advent, but of true and spiritual praises and giving of thanks.

An apprenticeship of eighteen years was more, probably, than he had anticipated when he made his choice.

But Cicero was forced to fight, not altogether unwillingly—not with the Parthians, but with tribes which were revolting from Roman authority because of the Parthian success.

“Who’s that?” he called out.

He had come to Castle Richmond as the man having the whip hand; and though his courage had certainly fallen somewhat before he left it, nevertheless he had not been so beaten down but what he was able to say a word or two for himself.

The first of June had been the day now fixed for the opening of the new chapel, and here they were already in April.

What is like a lion?

But what things the Lord has commanded you, think thereupon always.

And this, he says, is what has been written in Scripture: For the vineyard of the Lord of Sabaoth is the house of Israel, and the man of Judah is His beloved plant.

“My belief is that he will leave her behind him, or that they will settle somewhere in the wilds of America,—out in Mexico, or Massachusetts, or the Rocky Mountains. I do not think that he will have the courage to shew her in London.”

A comparatively small sum was left to Jack Neville, and a special gem to Sophie Mellerby.

“But I should have done as much as the widow did. Indeed I should, Fred. Oh, dear I to have to give you up I But I only meant for a year.”

It had now become a reality which might probably be full of pain.

On this account, therefore, even after the incarnation, He is called also by the titles which are anterior to the incarnation, since His nature is invariable and immutable.

For when you have pity, you shed as it were tears: when you relieve, you wipe with hair.

“Does she ride?”

But do you O divine and sacred head, instruct me how far I ought to go in setting forth the Deity of the Spirit; and what words I ought to use, and how far to use reserve; that I may be furnished against opponents.

19. That Christ is the Bridegroom, having the Church as His bride, from which spiritual children were to be born

But they who advance in the knowledge of Christianity do not, as you allege, treat the things written in the law with disrespect.

Arabella French would, no doubt, hear of it soon.

Therefore the money would be paid.

Miss Lily Dale’s Logic

That this is wont to be understood of the Head Himself, every Christian acknowledges.

Therefore, to rebaptize even a heretic who has received in baptism the seal of holiness which the practice of the Christian Church has transmitted to us, is unquestionably a sin; but to rebaptize a Catholic is one of the worst of crimes.

It was not his custom to show his hand to the players at any game that he played.

And would you take away my son's mandrakes also?"

Yea, they may forget, yet will not I forget you, says the Lord.

‘I don’t know whether you have thought of her too, Mr. Caldigate.’ He only shook his head.

Hitherto these gentlemen had not been close friends; but now they allied themselves as against a common enemy.

So Rachel, as she met her mother, thought only of the tale which she had to tell, and nothing of that which she was to hear.

Of such it is written, In vain have I smitten your children: they received no correction: [Jeremiah 2:30] and yet I suppose that those of whom the prophet speaks were smitten in love, not from hatred.

It is not the virgin, but the married woman, who is subjected to the sway of a husband.

Nevertheless he slowly learned the art of speaking with great efficiency, and could at last carry on a debate with energy and success,—as was found by the Don Pacifico speech, to which we shall come in his sixty-sixth year, when he spoke for five consecutive hours.

But, even though my mind has been wounded in no slight degree by a proud and profane title, could I possibly be guilty of so great indiscretion as not to know what I owed to the unity of the faith and to ecclesiastical concord, and to refuse to receive the representatives and the synodical letter of my brother on account of bitterness from whatever cause intervening?

The next morning Mr. Harding returned to Barchester, no further word having been spoken in his hearing respecting Mr. Slope’s acquaintance with his younger daughter. But he observed that the archdeacon at breakfast was less cordial than he had been on the preceding evening.

And then, in the course of eighteen months, this poor piece of preferment fell in the dean’s way, this incumbency of Hogglestock with its stipend reaching one hundred and thirty pounds a year.

A comfortable home with kindness, and her needs supplied, would have sufficed.

Do you see how keeping back what was painful, the names of death and the end, he has employed instead of them such as excite great longing , calling them presence with God; and passing over those things which are accounted to be sweet, the things of life, he has expressed them by painful names, calling the life here an absence from the Lord?

For it is much as if one were to say that a word is to be so called because it can be a word.

It is a persistent evil to persecute a man who belongs to the grace of God.

“‘Deed and I won’t,” said Fan, withdrawing herself among the bottles and glasses.

I do not know how it happens, but it always does happen, that everybody in every small town knows which is the brightest-witted in every family.

Wherefore how they may for the present extirpate the mischief, this is their object. And not even this do they seek absolutely, for they trust not themselves with it, but await the Master's decision, saying, Will You?

And when she was in bed she gave herself up to the sweetness of her love.

“I don’t want to be in anybody’s way, my dear.”

They put forward the Scriptures, and by this insolence of theirs they at once influence some.

Besides, such an imagination is far from the meaning here.

Shame indeed there is when each makes known his sins, but that shame, as it were, ploughs his land, removes the ever-recurring brambles, prunes the thorns, and gives life to the fruits which he believed were dead.

But there were four lepers at the gate of the city to whom life was a misery, and to die would be gain.

Is it not most truly written, "For the Holy Spirit of discipline will flee deceit?"

The Second Visit to the Guestwick Bridge

“In your present position,” continued the lawyer, “your influence will be very great.”

Indeed, the historian of social manners, when dealing with the

Chapter XIX. God's Peculiar Attribute

But for one fox found in a gorse you will, in ordinary countries, see five found in woods; and as to the place and conduct of a hunting man while woods are being drawn, there is room for much doubt.

“As God is above us you told me so.”

“Gregory feels sure that his brother will never consent.”

The Arians imagined that, as soon as he found his reign firmly established, Attalus would reinstate them in the supremacy over the churches which they had enjoyed during the reigns of Constantius and of Valens; for he had been baptized by Sigesarius, bishop of the Goths, to the great satisfaction of Alaric and the Arian party.

For after telling us of the father of the patriarch Abraham, and of the father and mother of Isaac, and in like manner of Jacob and of his sons, and exhibiting the pedigree of our first forefathers, of Melchisedec it records neither the father nor the mother, nor does it teach that he traced his descent from any one of Noah's sons, to the end that he may be a type of Him who is in reality without father, and without mother.

We have screwed it out of you, you miserable creature!

But since in addition to the commandments and the precepts there is a light of higher knowledge, we read in one of the twelve (prophets), [Hosea 10:12] Sow to yourselves for righteousness, reap to yourselves for the fruit of life, make light for yourselves the light of knowledge.

Wherefore, that the dominant principles of generation are contraries—namely, heat and cold.

But now, as this very memory itself is mind (for when we give orders to have a thing kept in memory, we say, See that you bear this in mind; and when we forget a thing, we say, It did not enter my mind, and, It slipped from my mind, thus calling the memory itself mind), as this is so, how comes it to pass that when being joyful I remember my past sorrow, the mind has joy, the memory sorrow—the mind, from the joy than is in it, is joyful, yet the memory, from the sadness that is in it, is not sad?

Mr. M’Gabbery at last promised to follow his friend’s advice, and so Miss Todd’s picnic came to an end without bloodshed.

Believe, O man, the living God, who suffered and is adored.

But I hope,—I am obliged to hope, that I may never be made to see my cousin again.

But, he says, souls do perish; for that which is born with the body must perish with the body.

It was leather and prunella, that, from first to last.

Theophila, as though caught round the middle by a strong antagonist, grew giddy, and with difficulty recovering herself, replied, You ask a question, my worthy friend, which needs to be solved by an example, that you may still better understand how the creative power of God, pervading all things, is more especially the real cause in the generation of men, making those things to grow which are planted in the productive earth.

Nay, on the contrary every scripture divinely inspired, written by the afflatus of the Spirit, attests the Divinity of the Spirit.

Chapter 5. The Evolution of the Son or Word of God from the Father by a Divine Procession. Illustrated by the Operation of the Human Thought and Consciousness

It was made infinitely more difficult by the fact that Lady Cantrip had not seemed to think that this marriage was impossible.

Just so they likewise that are rich, daring all for money, for self-restraint's sake endure not to submit to anything, be it small or great.

It is not much that we deign to learn from these Orientals,—we who glory in our civilisation. We do not copy their silence or their abstemiousness, nor that invariable mindfulness of his own personal dignity which always adheres to a Turk or to an Arab. We chatter as much at Cairo as elsewhere, and eat as much and drink as much, and dress ourselves generally in the same old ugly costume. But we do usually take upon ourselves to wear red caps, and we do ride on donkeys.

You know that to me you are more than all the world.” She stood still for a moment after hearing this, and then without any reply walked away into the other room.

Chapter 30. Cain's Family and Their Inventions.

“What you really mean is, that if you had told me I should have asked you not to go.”

When they began to inquire into the nature of the faith, the formulary of Eusebius was brought forward, which contained undisguised evidence of his blasphemy.

Whereas the Churches of God which are instructed by Christ, when carefully contrasted with the assemblies of the districts in which they are situated, are as beacons in the world; for who would not admit that even the inferior members of the Church, and those who in comparison with the better are less worthy, are nevertheless more excellent than many of those who belong to the assemblies in the different districts?

Him, at any rate, not unrighteousness, but charity, made humble; Charity, which rivals not, is not puffed up, seeks not her own; forasmuch as Christ also pleased not Himself, but, as it is written of Him, The reproaches of such as reproached You have fallen upon Me.

There was no such humility about him,—nor such absence of self-esteem.

“My poor mistress! my poor mistress!” sobbed Mrs. Jones.

“I understand,” said Gilmore. “It’s all of no use, and you are troubling yourself for nothing. She told me that she did not care a straw for me;—but she accepted me.”

Therefore she determined to stop the correspondence.

And the others standing in the midst of these have the following names: Simplicity, Innocence, Purity, Cheerfulness, Truth, Understanding, Harmony, Love.

Whereupon Antony said: I am surprised that a wise man should grieve at the loss of a faculty which he shares with ants and flies and gnats, and not rejoice rather in having one of which only saints and apostles have been thought worthy.

Still, at all events, be a little generous, though it be but by necessity.

Have them collected through your own bankers, and then, if it don’t suit you to call, send me a cheque for a thousand pounds when the time is up.” Then Mr Scruby turned to some papers on his right hand, as though the interview had been long enough.

Dear Gerald,

Those other men had perhaps been worthy,—worthy as far as her ideas went of worth,—but none of them so worthy as this man.

Hitherto is the end of the matter.

For there would have been no need of the making of the later light, if that which was created had not been of utility for some purpose: and the one use of light is that of the dispersion by its means of the prevailing gloom.

For whenever I hear Isaiah threaten the people of Sodom and rulers of Gomorrha, [Isaiah 1:10] and say Why will ye be smitten any more, adding sin to sin?

For He has made a kind of intestines soft and thin, which we call the lungs, into which the breath might pass by an alternate interchange; and He did not form this after the fashion of the uterus, lest the breath should all at once be poured forth, or at once inflate it.

Mr. Snapper and Mrs. Snapper did go over to Hogglestock, and the duty was done.

'Then he committed incest with his sister, who was born of Kronos and Thalasse, after the dismemberment of Kronos, and of whom were born Eros and Cypris, whom they call also Dodone.

For if he dreaded such, he would by doing good works prepare to meet his Judge.

Take not away the kindness you have conferred on me.

Zenobia , was a Jewess, and a supporter of Paul of Samosata; but she did not give up the Churches to the Jews for Synagogues.

Our dear friend Bonchamps is no more.

But why had he come to her and made her thus wretched?

Mary Lowther was again at the vicarage, and of course it was necessary that she and Mr. Gilmore should meet each other.

“Well, mamma, I’ll write Mrs. Ellison. Shall I say for a week or ten days?”

But God is truly kind even in spiritual blessings.

Therefore in death she was: in death she was, in yourself.

For she also is commanded to remain unmarried, or be reconciled to her husband; but this in the case of her departing from her husband.

Don't take a bite out of an uncut loaf; (meaning,) diminish not your possessions, but live on the profit (of them), and guard your substance as an entire loaf.

It was known to all the world that Mrs. Montacute Jones’s first great garden-party was to come off on Wednesday, 16th June, at Roehampton.

But granting this, then it follows further that in the same manner it will also be impossible for the wicked one to pass without his own proper limits and invade the territories of the good King, inasmuch as the wall stands there as an obstacle, unless it should chance first to be cast down, for we have heard that such things have been done by enemies, and indeed with our own eyes we have quite recently seen an achievement of that nature successfully carried out.

But it was a swindle that I was made to assist in.

in Memoriam

But a mere man was certainly not in existence before he was conceived, and so had not in himself the power to come.

Therein the new rates, seven zwansigers and a half a head, were inserted unblushingly at full length, as though such a disruption of old laws was the most natural thing in the world.

For some days previous to the delivery of the lecture the hoardings in London were crowded with sesquipedalian notices of the entertainment, so that Senator Gotobed’s great oration on “The Irrationality of Englishmen” was looked to with considerable interest.

Available hypocrisy is a quality very difficult of attainment and of all hypocrisies, epistolatory hypocrisy is perhaps the most difficult.

When Niceta had thus spoken, the old man answered: [You indeed, my son, have conducted your argument wisely and vigorously; so much so, that I do not think the subject of providence could be better treated.

“Who is Mr Hall?” No doubt he had heard the name on the previous evening; but Hall is common, and had been forgotten.

He says, as it were, I shall know if you rightly entertain great thoughts respecting knowledge.

Accordingly we are bound to affirm, before proceeding further, this (principle), which is in danger of being secretly subverted; (namely), of what value in the sight of God this emptiness you speak of is: and, first of all, whence has proceeded the rationale itself of earning the favour of God in this way. For the necessity of the observance will then be acknowledged, when the authority of a rationale, to be dated back from the very beginning, shall have shone out to view.

She believed in his intellect, even if she could not believe in his conduct.

Again, in the same treatise, when he would explain our saying, Forgive us our debts, he says: And how necessarily, how providently and salutarily, are we admonished that we are sinners, since we are compelled to entreat for our sins; and while pardon is asked for from God, the soul recalls its own consciousness of guilt.

The Emperors Honorius Augustus and Theodosius Augustus to Bishop Aurelius Send Greeting.

Thou therefore, O God, that will not march forth in our powers, Give to us aid from tribulation, and vain is the safety of man [Psalm 59:11].

We too sit in an inn, waiting for our friends who travel the same road; when we are all collected, then they shall know whom they insult.

If we are with God, we overcome the devil: for if you fight alone with the devil, you will be overcome.

“I will not have any cheating tonight,” she had said to her neighbour; “I will take my chance, and if I die, I die.

And if I suffice to utter these things in order, the drops of time are dear to me.

It was an act of great self-denial, a triumph of principle over passion.

Then it was Nora’s turn to bid him adieu.

At the present moment he was rather grieved than enraged; but there came over his face that look of wrath with which all who knew him were so well acquainted.

And I allow him, to boot, all his walks and hiding-places.” Then Ada began to implore him not to be too rash.

“It will be all right, soon,” said Tom, considering that upon the whole it would be better not to disturb the gentleman downstairs just yet.

For he does not say even I will see, but shall be filled, imitating thus the language of parents.

Here some prayed to the God of all; some called upon the angels, poured out wine, burnt incense, or offered an ox, or he-goat, a sheep, or a cock.

Eames then left the room without another word, and walked out into the cold air of Jermyn Street.

The benefice belongs to St. John’s, Oxford, and as the vicarage is not worth more than £400 a year, it happens that a clergyman generally accepts it before he has lived for twenty or thirty years in the common room of his college.

Whatever they might do, quick as they might be, they could hardly prevent his taking his seat in the House of Commons.

They so well knew his mildness, that after His Passion also they ask Him, Will you restore?

Oh, Fanny, if I could rescue you from this!

But he was a man who was pleasant to other men,—not combative, not self-asserting beyond the point at which self-assertion ceases to be a necessity of manliness.

This has already been refuted; and it has, I think, been proved sufficiently that there is no reason for saying that more of the good part is found in vegetables than in flesh.

For from it the rudimentary principles extend to the reason that is in us, and the understanding.

And she felt herself constrained to rebuke him with what bitterest words she might use.

For showing half their form and tumbling through the air, they plunged once more into the depth.

And they will be forced to own that the name of Godhead also belongs to Him (Christ), for He (God) associated the righteous also in the name of God.

He would have said that there was not one among them who was not his friend rather than Carroll’s.

What then may we say? That He should die indeed they knew, albeit they knew not clearly the mystery of the Incarnation. Neither did they know clearly about the resurrection, neither what He was to achieve; and this was hid from them.

Do we then disquiet ourselves with doubt about God's skill, and will, and rights?

Philo has given us an account, in five books, of the misfortunes of the Jews under Caius.

But one thing alone he seeks, that he who enjoys this remission should learn the greatness of the gift.

The Duke as he went away thought very much of what Lady Cantrip had said to him;—particularly of those last words.

“That would only make the journey worse; but I am not dead yet, and, what is more to the purpose, neither is my patient.” And as he spoke he contrived to swallow a jorum of scalding tea, containing in measure somewhat near a pint. Mary, not a whit amazed at this feat, merely refilled the jorum without any observation; and the doctor went on stirring the mixture with his spoon, evidently oblivious that any ceremony had been performed by either of them since the first supply had been administered to him.

Now that we have had presented to us this preliminary view of existences, it may be opportune to examine the passage before us.

It never occurred to her now, that any one of these four would on that account hold out a hand to help her.

“Yes; of course you did. And then the Devil went to work with you and prompted you to destroy it?” He paused as though asking a question, but to this question Cousin Henry found it impossible to make any answer. “But the Devil had not quite hold enough over you to make you do that? It was so;—was it not? There was a conscience with you?”

Through marriage?

“There is, I fancy, no sorrow which a man cannot forget; that is, as far as the memory of it is likely to be painful to him. You will not absolutely cease to remember Castle Richmond and all its circumstances; you will still think of the place and all the people whom you knew there; but you will learn to do so without the pain which of course you now suffer. That is what I mean by forgetting.”

And for what had he done this?

[2 Corinthians 11:8] Here he showed that he did receive.

“Looking back at it all, I was right. He had chosen to want me, and had a right to me. I had taken his gifts, given with a full hand. And where were you, my own one? Had I a right to think that you were thinking of me?”

For neither were the sun and moon and stars then uncreated; nor, having been created, were they without their motions; nor did that divine government, which manages and rules their courses, fail to begin [its exercise] together with them.

Phineas Finn, Esq.

Let the woman do what she will, the man can, in truth, show his face in the world;—and, after awhile, does show his face.

You seem to me, O Theophila, to excel all in action and in speech, and to be second to none in wisdom.

Nothing can be better than this union.

Or does he not know it without her telling him?” By this time they had become very intimate, and were whispering backwards and forwards with each other at their end of the carriage.

“What would you give to know?” said Lily.

I am so glad.” With these words Sophie Gordeloup welcomed Harry Clavering to her room in Mount Street early one morning not long after her interview with Captain Archie in Lady Ongar’s presence.

“I will find out who these men were,” said I, “and learn the truth of it. When did it occur?”

It is absurd to argue that readers should judge by the matter and not by the name of the writer.

Now you are free of Hendon Hall for ever.

Though she had probably thought often of Phineas Finn since her marriage, her thoughts had never been of a nature to disturb her rest.

Observe in fact; when they were in the desert, then they waxed fat, they grew thick, they spread out in breadth, they kicked [Deuteronomy 32:15]: and ever and always ease was an evil.

In looking forward to the future prospects of his sons and daughters it was his theory that they should be free to choose their life’s companions for themselves.

I call to witness, Honoratus, my conscience, and God Who has His dwelling in pure souls, that I account nothing more prudent, chaste, and religious, than are all those Scriptures, which under the name of the Old Testament the Catholic Church retains.

Poor Beatrice was not very mercenary in her views: she had no wish to sacrifice her brother to any Miss Dunstable; but yet she felt, as they all felt—Mary Thorne included—that such a match as that, of the young heir with the doctor’s niece, was not to be thought of;—not to be spoken of as a thing that was in any way possible.

Here he seated himself, and for an hour neither stirred from his seat, nor touched a pen, nor opened a book.

“Was it?” said the delighted countess.

From the road there was no mode of ingress for him to this enclosure, unless he could get over the railings.

For certainly when these occurred the altars of the gods were kept blazing, and there rose the mingled fragrance of Sabæan incense and fresh garlands; the priests were clothed with honor, the shrines were maintained in splendor; sacrifices, games, sacred ecstasies, were common in the temples; while the blood of the citizens was being so freely shed, not only in remote places, but among the very altars of the gods.

But as to Sige, whether at any time she is united in marriage (to the Father) or not, this is a point which we leave them to wrangle about among themselves.

For if I have a mind to put on a strong curb, I stop the horse; but the body is unable to check the soul in her evil courses.

Frank Greystock

“And you call that being dutiful and affectionate!”

[1 Corinthians 3:11] In whom each several building, he says, fitly framed together.

He does so by showing that a similar mistake was widely current about the Saviour Himself; for some said that He was John the Baptist, others Elijah, others Jeremiah or one of the prophets.

“There will be two of them against me,” she said to herself as she made the preparation. “There’ll be the dear old governor, and the governor that isn’t dear. If I were left quite to myself, I think I could do it easier. But then it might come to sticking a knife into him.”

Why she had known the old man well, had always been in the habit of speaking to him when she met him either at the one gate or the other of the farmyard,—had joked with him about Bone’m, and had heard him assert his own perfect security against robbers not a week before the night on which he was murdered!

But, thank God, Trinity College still stood firm.

What can be nastier than dung, or more worthless than ashes?

What ever then is what is meant?

It was quite true that she was gone—gone, as far as he was concerned, for ever.

Was it Mr. So-and-so?” and she named an ephemeral literary giant of the day.

If you serve good desire, and be subject to it, you will gain the mastery over evil desire, and make it subject to you even as you wish.

John 9:1-2

“I beg your pardon, Mr Lynch,” said he as soon as he had shaken hands with him, “but will you just step up to my room a minute, for I want to spake to you;” and he took him up into his bedroom, for he hadn’t a second sitting-room. “You’ll excuse my bringing you up here, for the office was full, you see, and Moylan’s in the parlour.”

If this be true, we fall into the heresy of Cerinthus and Ebion, who, though believing in Christ, were anathematized by the fathers for this one error, that they mixed up the ceremonies of the law with the gospel of Christ, and professed their faith in that which was new, without letting go what was old.

Chapter XIII. Condition of the Cape Colony

Of the characteristics of the prayer, the fuller treatment of which is reserved for the Conferences of the Elders.

For not without reason do many call this the resurrection of the martyrs.

For some are noted by the Apostle, that they have a zeal of God, but not according to knowledge, being ignorant of God's righteousness, and going about to establish their own, and not rejoicing in Your light, and thus not submitting themselves unto the righteousness of God.

‘He comes to me,’ she said, alluding to her father-in-law, and not choosing to understand that her brother should have called her husband ‘Mr. Caldigate.’

Could not Mr. Finn remember that he himself had stood in danger of his life before a British jury, and that, though he had been, no doubt properly, acquitted of the crime imputed to him, circumstances had come out against him during the trial which, if not as criminal, were at any rate almost as disgraceful?

Your own cousin and friend, Kate Vavasor.” And then she added a line below, “My own Alice,—If you will let me, you shall be my sister, and be the nearest to me and the dearest.”

“And how do you mean to get it again?”

The supple vigour, and the voice of man:

“I do not mean that, mother. Let him do what he likes with it, I should not upbraid him, even in my thoughts. But if it be embarrassed; if it has dwindled away; if there be any reason why I should not regard myself as altogether untrammelled with regard to money, he ought to tell me. I cannot accuse myself of expensive tastes.”

The whole affair in regard to Mrs. Finn had been explained to her, and she had told the Duke that, according to her thinking, Mrs. Finn had behaved well!

There was a short pause before this second question was answered. “The man had been induced to stand by representations made to him from my house. He had been, I fear, promised certain support which certainly was not given him when the time came.”

And, as it is just that no one who is unwilling should be advanced by compulsion, so I think we must be of opinion that no one who is innocent should be deposed from the ministry of his order unjustly.

For there are different appearances, as it were, of the Word, according as He shows Himself to each one of those who come to His doctrine; and this in a manner corresponding to the condition of him who is just becoming a disciple, or of him who has made a little progress, or of him who has advanced further, or of him who has already nearly attained to virtue, or who has even already attained it.

She knew that, at any rate, it would not come to that.

I know it is hard for a man to change his habits; but I can with truth say this for myself, that I was happy at Allington, enjoying every hour of the day, and that here I am ennuyé by everybody and nearly by everything.

“I don’t want to recover my spirits,” said Fanny; “but if you wish it, I’ll go on with the schools.”

For the man scorned to send before him anything.

She was fond of her tea, and in summer could have cream for twopence; but when cream became dear, she saved money and had a pen’north of milk.

Why was it that, for him, such a world of misery had been prepared?

do you want bread?” “Not bread, but a kind heart and a kind hand.” “My friend, I cannot stay by you; I myself am in a hurry; there is that fiend of a rival there even now gaining a step on me.

For aught I know, they may do so as frequently and as fervently, or more frequently and more fervently, than we do; but there is a rowdiness, if I may be allowed to use such a word, in their manner of doing so which robs religion of that reverence which is, if not its essence, at any rate its chief protection.

Miss Courteney had been married to a much grander lover, and had been taken off to splendid circles.

She wanted no Marchesa Baldoni now to tell her that the angel had in truth come and realised himself before her in all his glory.

We well know how the Mountain became powerful from that day; that from that day Marat ceased to shun the light, and Danton to curb the licence of his tongue that then, patriotism in France began to totter, and that, from that time, Paris ceased to be a fitting abode for aught that was virtuous, innocent, or highminded; but the steady march of history cannot stop to let us see the various lights in which the inhabitants of Paris regarded the loss of a King, and the commencement of the first French Republic.And I had trusted that he would have this feeling more strongly than any one else in it.

When we commit uncleanness, (for we must begin from the instances alleged,) we fear men more than God.

For if we could in any other way arrive at Christ, that is, at life everlasting, who would be willing to die?

Now craving is, according to him, the arrangement of the world, whereas satiety its destruction.

But they did not agree with one another, nor with any other of the former expositions of doctrine, either in word or import.

For these are your words: We confess that baptism is necessary for all ages, and that grace, moreover, assists the good purpose of everybody; but yet that it does not infuse the love of virtue into a reluctant one, because there is no acceptance of persons with God.

“We got through all that early this morning, Miss Fitzgibbon, while you were saying your prayers.”

I will leave them to settle the matter with the Church, merely assuring them of my sympathy in their little difficulties in any case in which mere money causes the hitch.

The name of Lady Ongar was odious to her.

If it can be shown that an incorporeal and reasonable being has life in itself independently of the body and that it is worse off in the body than out of it; then beyond a doubt bodies are only of secondary importance and arise from time to time to meet the varying conditions of reasonable creatures.

There had, of course, been many family consultations as to the manner in which this meeting should be arranged.

“Yes, another.”

You see, moreover, what his successor the holy Pope Zosimus was bound to recollect,— as in truth he did—so as to confirm without hesitation the judgment of his predecessor in this case.

“Arrangements!”

Hear what precept Christ gave to the Jews, creeping as they did upon the earth: If you see, says He, your enemy's beast of burden falling down, do not hasten by, but raise it.

She did not tell herself that a short visit, say for a month, to Cheltenham, would prevent his further attentions, but she felt that there would be a temporary escape.

When they desire to enlarge greatly the spaces of their habitation, let them hear what is written, Woe unto you that join house to house and lay field to field, even till there be no place left.

As for you,—if you illtreat me, I shall know where to go to.” They had now come out from the shrubbery upon the lawn, and there was the carriage at the door, ready to take the elders of the family to church.

“Will he be as generous with one of them as with the living?”

The converts have as a rule been safe,—as have the missionaries,—not from any love borne to them by Cetywayo, but because Cetywayo has thought them to be protected by English influence.

The doctrine was already exploded elsewhere, but he stuck to it with conservative energy.

The hills were proud, and boastful of themselves, God had not touched them: He touches them, and they shall smoke.

“I daresay it was very nice.”

The incidents are arranged in certain lines—the arrangement being as palpable to the reader as it has been to the writer—but do not follow each other as results naturally demanded by previous action.

Hold fast the faith of the Church: hold fast the truth of the Creed: hold fast the salvation of baptism.

No meal should be begun without prayer, and before leaving table thanks should be returned to the Creator.

I’m sure of it.

R. Without these three things therefore no mind is healed, so that it can see, that is, understand its God.

Sir Hugh Clavering had declared, in Mrs. Clavering’s hearing, though but little disposed in general to make any revelations to any of the family at the rectory, “that he did not intend to take his sister-in-law’s part.

Since if they gave not in proportion to their substance, not even so shall they escape; our alms being judged not by the measure of our gifts, but by the largeness of our mind.

For tell me not of the laws that are without; since even the publican fulfills the law that is without, but nevertheless is punished: which will be the case with us also, unless we refrain from oppressing the poor, and from using their need and necessity as an occasion for shameless trafficking.

But, nevertheless, there is in the form of government as thus established an absence of that close and immediate responsibility which attends our ministers.

“Now I can,” once whispered in his ear, would do it all.

He was the uncle of an earl, and the brother-in-law of a duke and a marquis.

He may hear, too, the names of mountains and of rivers.

And with regard to Lazarus He says, Where have ye laid him?

[Job 27:2-3] He certainly did not here signify by His Spirit the vital breath and bodily breathing passages, but signifies the nostrils of the inner man within him, wherewith he gathered in the fragrance of eternal life, and drew in the grace of the heavenly ointment as with a kind of twofold sense.

This transaction was no doubt comfortable to the island; but I doubt whether it redounded to the profit of the owner of the mutton.

Chapter 2. The Age of Manicaeus, or Manes; His First Disciples; The Two Principles; Manichaean Matter

“What; by getting a husband? But I suppose Dale must give her something. They’re not married yet, you know, and, from what I hear, that fellow may prove a slippery customer. He’ll not marry her unless old Dale gives her something. You’ll see if he does. I’m told that he has got another string to his bow at Courcy Castle.”

Chapter LXXV. Lord George Gives His Reasons

But still I must confess at the end of this paper, as I hinted also at the beginning of it, that the hunting parson seems to have made a mistake.

Put yourself in my place, and consult your own feelings.

Now this happened in the case of the manna.

[Matthew 12:27] Neither ought we to suppose that only twelve men shall judge along with Him, though He says that they shall sit upon twelve thrones; for by the number twelve is signified the completeness of the multitude of those who shall judge.

“And there are two of them will carry you. The other two are not quite up to your weight.”

For, naturally, whatever is infinite will also be incomprehensible.

The news was telegraphed down to Trafford Park by the family lawyer,—with an intimation, however, that, as the accident had been so recent, no absolute credence should yet be given as to its fatal result.

“But the facts were so strong, Mr. Toogood!” “Nobody there to soften ‘em down, you know,” said Mr. Toogood, shaking his head.

See the preferableness of making evil in general to consist in this disagreement, from which the sun's ray produces dimness in the eyes, though nothing is more pleasant to the eyes than light.

[Galatians 1:6] That they likewise (remember), what was written to the Corinthians, that they were yet carnal, who required to be fed with milk, being as yet unable to bear strong meat; who also thought that they knew somewhat, whereas they knew not yet anything, as they ought to know.

But I have heard that they were too dainty to walk in the muddy streets, that they were carried about in the arms of eunuchs, that they disliked crossing uneven ground, that they found a silk dress a burden and felt sunshine too scorching.

“ You know, John, he could no more do it at home than he could fly,” said Mrs. Grimes.

The emperor honored this man exceedingly, and often sent for him to the palace, and kissed the part where the eye had been torn out.

Dated 13 April, in the consulship of the illustrious Adelfius (451).

[Matthew 5:14] Let us be made lights in the world, holding forth the Word of Life; [Philippians 2:15-16] that is, let us be made a quickening power to others.

This at least is what I suppose, for I do not positively declare it but only suspect it to be the fact.

Therefore, just as man is called good, yet not as God, of whom it was said, "There is none good save God alone;" [Mark 10:18] and just as the soul is called immortal, yet not as God, of whom it was said, "Who alone has immortality;" [1 Timothy 6:16] and just as a man is called wise, yet not as God, of whom it was said, "To God the only wise;" [Romans 16:27] so fire is called eternal, yet not as God, whose alone is immortality itself and true eternity.

Then they parted at Chowton gate with many expressions of friendship on each side.

For so did their fathers to the false prophets.

For continence will be a mean whereby you will traffic in a mighty substance of sanctity; by parsimony of the flesh you will gain the Spirit.

For, in this very passage, the reading in many copies is: The Lord of Sabaoth, He is the King of glory.

It was not that he would call upon them to resign, but that, if aggrieved, he would resign himself.

As though he were lifting it up by some engine, he has raised it up to a vast height, and set it on yonder throne; for where the Head is, there is the body also.

Accordingly, my brethren, did those five porches of Solomon, in the middle of which the pool lay, heal the sick at all?

But any young lady who does go into society, whether it be of county or town, will fully understand the difference between a liberal and a stingy wardrobe.

His words are:— The washing or water is a symbol of the cleaning of the soul which is washed clean of all filth that comes of wickedness; but none the less is it also by itself, to him who yields himself to the God-head of the adorable Trinity, through the power of the invocations, the origin and source of blessings.

And so you ought to have it dwelling with you, and to cherish it, and to guard it, that you may be able perhaps to bestow it upon others.

He was left undisturbed at his studies for an hour or two, when a knock came to the door, and Mr Chadwick was announced. Rabelais retired into the secret drawer, the easychair seemed knowingly to betake itself off, and when the archdeacon quickly undid his bolt, he was discovered by the steward working, as usual, for that church of which he was so useful a pillar. Mr Chadwick had just come from London, and was, therefore, known to be the bearer of important news.

He had been delayed by winds and by want 109 of vessels large enough to carry him and his suite.

“Dear Lady Eustace,” said Mrs. Carbuncle, “now you can be a friend indeed,”—meaning, of course, that an invitation to Portray Castle would do more than could anything else towards making straight the crooked things of the hour. Mrs. Carbuncle, when she made the request, of course knew of Lizzie’s coming troubles;—but let them do what they could to Lizzie, they could not take away her house.

“She must change her nature first. Everything she sees at Monkhams will make her stronger in her choice. With all her girlish ways, she is like a rock;—nothing can move her.”

He was at the head of his men, just passing over the Loire by a wooden bridge, called the bridge of the Green Cross, and having possessed himself of a sword in his passage through the town, was making good use of it, when a dragoon turned suddenly round, and fired a pistol almost in his face: near as the man was to him, in his hurry he missed him, and the bullet merely grazed Henri’s cheek, without even raising the skin.

He that is a man may be scourged, yet does he not succumb.

He proceeds then thus: And the (king's) daughter of the South shall come to the king of the North to make an agreement with him; and the arms of him that brings her shall not stand; and she, too, shall be smitten, and shall fall, and he that brings her.

She had found it very pleasant to go to church, and to be led along in the easy path of self-indulgent piety on which they all walked at Yoxham.

He was not allowed to remain longer on his knees, but was hurried back to the spot where the women were awaiting their doom.

But He that justifies does Himself deify, in that by justifying He does make sons of God.

But the white part is the age that is to come, in which the elect of God will dwell, since those elected by God to eternal life will be spotless and pure.

The hands are always pure; for his sleep is composed and regular.

And yet the two were one and the same thing; both were human beings; no one will deny that.

Forsooth two errors, contrary the one to the other, have, through not understanding them, taken hold of each one of these two sentences.

There were moments in which her dear son John could be very foolish, in spite of that lifelong devotion to the price of stocks, for which he was conspicuous.

NINTH COMMANDMENT

“If you’ll come with me I’ll tell you. I don’t want to say it here, because the girls will hear me;—and that old Peter will know everything that’s said.”

On the contrary, it so thoroughly adopts it, that even while a man is alive, and body and soul are united, it calls each of them singly by the name man, speaking of the soul as the inward man, and of the body as the outward man, [2 Corinthians 4:16] as if there were two men, though both together are indeed but one.

As it happened the Countess might as well have given him the address, as the woman at the lodgings informed him on the next morning that the Countess had removed herself to No.

That personal bravery is required in the composition of manliness must be conceded, though, of all the ingredients needed, it is the lowest in value.

For in truth these are bonds, not those; those are ornament, these are bonds; these, along with the body, afflict the soul also; those, along with the body, adorn as well the soul.

For that earthly life, which we lead in common with dumb animals, both seeks pleasure, by the varied and agreeable fruits of which it is delighted, and avoids pain, the harshness of which, by its unpleasant sensations, injures the nature of living beings, and endeavours to lead them to death, which dissolves the living being.

He would have had no objection to fight a duel with Crosbie, had duels in these days been possible.

But worship thou One God the Almighty, the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ.

To these conditions the emperor would not agree: 'God's will concerning the child will be done then,' said Basil; as Basil said this the emperor ordered him to be dismissed; the child, however, died shortly after.

It is a matter in which there is no room for a doubt.

But this bishop deemed it more advisable to leave each party to the free discussion of doubtful topics, so that by persuasion rather than by force, they might cease from contention; hence he sat down as a judge with some of his clergy, and led both sides into a discussion.

Behold the season of recalling and restoring the deceased, and bringing them back to former life!

“I don’t want to be stiff,” she said, “but your questions are so very singular.”

Now where did these two persons acquire such diverse deserts,— I do not say, that the one should believe and the other not believe, for that is a matter for a man's own will; but that the one should hear in order to believe, and that the other should not hear, for this is not within man's power?

Who obtained the decrees of the princes against them, and the consent of the whole of this quarter of the world?

Probably, then, in addition to other causes for the crucifixion of Jesus, this also may have contributed to His dying a conspicuous death upon the cross, that no one might have it in his power to say that He voluntarily withdrew from the sight of men, and seemed only to die, without really doing so; but, appearing again, made a juggler's trick of the resurrection from the dead.

Sometimes they would sit in the front room with Hetta, to whom also Mr Broune had become attached; but sometimes Lady Carbury would be in her own sanctum. On this evening she received him there, and at once poured forth all her troubles about Felix. On this occasion she told him everything, and almost told him everything truly. He had already heard the story. “The young lady went down to Liverpool, and Sir Felix was not there.”

He would quarrel perseveringly with his father, who only had a life interest in the estate.

79. We were then sealed with the Spirit by God. For as we die in Christ, in order to be born again, so, too, we are sealed with the Spirit, that we may possess His brightness and image and grace, which is undoubtedly our spiritual seal. For although we were visibly sealed in our bodies, we are in truth sealed in our hearts, that the Holy Spirit may portray in us the likeness of the heavenly image.

The Duke and Duchess with all the family went down together, and Mr. Warburton went with them.

Well, but Christ plainly teaches a new kind of patience, when He actually prohibits the reprisals which the Creator permitted in requiring an eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth, [Exodus 21:24] and bids us, on the contrary, to him who smites us on the one cheek, to offer the other also, and to give up our coat to him that takes away our cloak.

It were well also to say, what from considering this Epistle we have found to be its occasion and subject.

Why do you adorn yourself?

It was exactly a similar coat, only with its collar raised, that had passed him in the street.

Concerning those who on their deathbed promise repentance and die before receiving communion.

Can any one dare to speak of the divine and supreme Being in such a way that a less degree of honour in comparison is proved by the argument.

A voice, he says, of the howling of the shepherds, for their glory is spoiled.

It was also proved that he had been drunk in the House of Commons, a fact to which one of the clerks of the House, very much against his will, was called upon to testify.

For into what is most glorious of the things in our power, which is the soul, no one would (deliberately) admit what is vicious, that is, transgression, but that from ignorance and an erroneous conception of virtue, supposing that they were achieving something honourable, they pass into vice.

You ask me, and I can only tell you what I think.

If, then, the apostle does not utter contradictions, how can he, according to him who so understands him, reasonably find fault, censuring the individual at Corinth who had committed fornication, or those who had fallen away, and had not repented of the licentiousness and impurity of which they had been guilty?

R. We must, however, wait patiently, until the remaining senses also make report to us that falsity dwells in the similitude of the true.

Like other great men, Mr Melmotte liked to choose his own time for bestowing favours.

Regard not, therefore, the narrow bounds of human language, but the plain meaning of the words, and believe facts accomplished.

Mareotis is a district near Alexandria, and derives its name from the lake Maria.

For man has been otherwise constituted by nature, so as to have fellowship with God.

“I think I should be told, and then left to regulate my own ways accordingly.” This was mutinously imperious, and yet he did not quite know how to convince her of her mutiny.

The men were in and out of the house, but they had some breakfast.

Here too the house was exceedingly picturesque, being surrounded by oak trees.

“But will one day do it, Mrs Phillips?”

There shall be an end of this in some way, and I am brokenhearted.

“Because you seem so stern. I am sure I would do anything I could to oblige you, if I knew how. It would be so shocking not to be good friends with a cousin like you.”

But for such a one as he, truth to a principle was political annihilation.

[Daniel 9:25] Now three score and nine weeks of years contain four hundred and eighty-three years.

Then the Duke spoke to her again, and she found that she got on very well during dinner.

But if this were done simply with the object of winning her, where was that real love of which sacrifice of self on behalf of another is the truest proof?

By the manner of difference, then, and in that alone, they are enumerated, and thus are brought under discontinuous quantity.

Nor did Imogene like the idea of this appointment with her lover without a word spoken about it to her sister-in-law.

Holy Job, when about to speak in the words of such a one, began thus, saying: Bear with me, I also will speak; then laugh at me.

Further, Ptolemy the son of Agesarchus, in his first book about Philopator, says that Cinyras and the descendants of Cinyras were interred in the temple of Aphrodite in Paphos.

For thus, after the above-mentioned patriarchs, was the Law given to Moses, at that (well-known) time after their exode from Egypt, after the interval and spaces of four hundred years.

They had not then yet, as it seems, attained.

In these days Mrs. Orme went daily to the Farm. Indeed, she never missed a day from that on which Lady Mason left The Cleeve up to the time of the trial. It seemed to Sir Peregrine that his daughter’s affection for this woman had grown with the knowledge of her guilt; but, as I have said before, no discussion on the matter now took place between them. Mrs. Orme would generally take some opportunity of saying that she had been at Orley Farm; but that was all.

In so far as Christ's natures differ from one another, that is, in the matter of essence, we hold that Christ unites in Himself two extremes: in respect of His divinity He is connected with the Father and the Spirit, while in respect of His humanity He is connected with His mother and all mankind.

And I said that I would pour out My fury upon them in the wilderness, to accomplish My anger upon them; yet I did it not; that My name might not be altogether profaned in the sight of the heathen.

And whereas, when he owed ten thousand talents, he called him not wicked, neither reproached him, but showed mercy on him; when he had become harsh to his fellow-servant, then he says, O thou wicked servant.

And indeed, if he had said this, it would still be possible that Christ was meant by God; for Christ shall be seen by the flesh in the flesh.

“He has the rent of the other houses,” said Balatka.

I said to him, Sir, whatsoever you enjoin upon me I will observe, for I know that you are with me.

Be it known then to your Fraternity that John, formerly bishop of the city of Constantinople, against God, against the peace of the Church, to the contempt and injury of all priests, exceeded the bounds of modesty and of his own measure, and unlawfully usurped in synod the proud and pestiferous title of œcumenical, that is to say, universal.

“But you won’t leave it there?”

When she had once got Anty home, it was all right.

Therefore married persons owe one another not only the faith of their sexual intercourse itself, for the begetting of children, which is the first fellowship of the human kind in this mortal state; but also, in a way, a mutual service of sustaining one another's weakness, in order to shun unlawful intercourse: so that, although perpetual continence be pleasing to one of them, he may not, save with consent of the other.

Now, that the philosophers were ignorant of the nature of anger, is plain from their definitions, which Seneca enumerated in the books which he composed on the subject of anger.

I do not know that there was any need that he should speak of intimidation.

Where are those men, who do not even turn themselves in their bed?

For omitting to ask (I say this by way of concession) if God took from us to our profit, I only say this; that if He took what had been given, not even thus, could anyone be able to reproach Him.

“Good evening,” said Trevelyan, with an assumption of indifference.

Scarcely does one such prayer occur among many.

Having taken with him therefore two youths to whom he was related, who were by no means ignorant of the Greek language, Meropius reached the country by ship; and when he had inspected whatever he wished, he touched at a certain place which had a safe harbor, for the purpose of procuring some necessaries.

Of such details as these Sir Peregrine had remembered nothing when he recommended her to go to her own room.

In the same way Moses also is afraid: so that the words betokened that he was afraid, and shrunk from the task, not that he did not believe.

For each of us shall give account of himself to God.

But behold others not reprovers, but praisers of the book of Genesis,— The Spirit of God, say they, Who by His servant Moses wrote these things, willed not that these words should be thus understood.

“What is it they say, Mrs. Tapp?”

Chapter 7.— The Addition of a Negative Does Not Change the Predicament.

But that the future merits of men, which merits will never come into existence are beyond all doubt no merits at all, it is certainly most easy to see: for this reason even the Pelagians were not able to say this; and much rather these ought not to say it.

“I am glad that her son has not come to-day,” he said, not bringing his head suspiciously close to hers, but still speaking so that none but she might hear him.

And yet it seemed to me that his audience was satisfied.

The dullest intellect could perceive that there was something special in the wind.

He would sit there unwashed, with his unshorn face resting on his hand, with an old dressing-gown hanging loose about him, hardly tasting food, seldom speaking, striving to pray, but striving so frequently in vain.

No questions would be asked.

But let them look to that, who shall presently be ashamed of their wisdom, destroyed and disgraced together with the world (it lives in).

“That’s a pretty sort of welcome to your wife’s brother-in-law, who has just come over all the way from Mexico to see her.”

For if you being evil know how to give good gifts to your children, how much more shall your Father which is in Heaven give good things to them that ask Him?

These facts set forth in sanctuary we have put forward, not on the supposition that the greatness of the agent was to be seen in these virtues alone.

“I’m not so sure of that. We were only saying yesterday that as you had been in the country a fortnight without coming to us, we did not think we would be at home when you did come.”

The newspapers, however, had taken that matter up in the proper spirit, and political capital might to some extent be made of it.

How many poor may be filled by the breakfast we have this day given up?

Even so the things of God none knows save the Spirit of God.

Unless he is as the ox treading out the grain, and bearing the yoke, in spite of heat and thorns, and ceases not till he has carried the grain into the granary, he is not worthy.

If he contemplates the Beings in their common dignity, this addition is unnecessary and superfluous, and dwells upon that which is obvious: although a word so out of place might be pardoned, if it was any feeling of reverence which prompted him not to reject it.

These are the tricks and artifices by which you make us out to be Pelusiots and beasts of burden and animal men who do not receive the things pertaining to the Spirit.

Now, I clearly have my pledge which no change can any more tear from me; I have the relics which I may embrace, I have the tomb which I may cover with my body, I have the grave on which I may lie, and I shall believe that I am more acceptable to God, because I shall rest upon the bones of that holy body.

For I am not meet, he says, to be called an Apostle, because I persecuted the Church.

Now this law has been broken both by the deposed and the excommunicate.

Lord Rufford as he was speaking got on to his own horse, and before the Duchess could expostulate they were away.

For nearly a month after this the question subsided.

Sir Thomas ought not to have sent that cheque to Mr. Pabsby.

Tell me, does a prophet dye his hair?

When then you go about stripped of this garment, what shall we say?

Thereafter he discusses the divergence of names and of things, speaking, of that which is ungenerate as without a cause, and of that which is non-existent, as the Scindapsus, Minotaur, Blityri, Cyclops, Scylla, which never were generated at all, and shows that things which are essentially different, are mutually destructive, as fire of water, and the rest in their several relations.

It was natural that the Dutchman should go across the Orange River, and natural too that the English governor should not quite know how to treat him when he had gone.

‘That’s quite allowable,’ said Mrs. Woodward—”successful in producing the buds of May. The sparrows chirped sweetly on the housetop, and the coming summer gladdened the hearts of all—of all except poor Crinoline.

He thought it well over, and felt assured that very much of the success of such a measure must depend upon the wording of the letter.

These things, he says, I suffer: I am cast into prison, I am banished; For I know Whom I have believed, and am persuaded that He is able to keep that which I have committed to Him against That Day.

The man who addressed her was entitled to use all the warmth of an accepted lover.

The conquest was not yet finished, but surely it should be left to him who had begun it so well.

[Ephesians 6:4] Youth is wild, and requires many governors, teachers, directors, attendants, and tutors; and after all these, it is a happiness if it be restrained.

‘My aunt wants me to go over to Babington,’ he said to his father.

“Then what’s the good of your pretending not to know?”

With certain conspirators to help them out of the city they were sent upon their way.

“And, Richard—”

For the length of the human body, from the crown of the head to the sole of the foot, is six times its breadth from side to side, and ten times its depth or thickness, measuring from back to front: that is to say, if you measure a man as he lies on his back or on his face, he is six times as long from head to foot as he is broad from side to side, and ten times as long as he is high from the ground.

“Yes;—a knave. No one who was not a knave would lend a hand towards separating a little child from its mother. I think you are a knave, but I don’t think you are fool enough to suppose that the child will be given up to you.”

“But Hugh can’t give it while his uncle holds it.”

Wherefore see how Paul, since he knew our nature to be easily inclined to remissness, though he had given great praise to the Philippians, now subdues their mind by many other things above, but chiefly by his present words.

“Papa tells me you are not going,” she began by saying.

For oftentimes it is convenient to estimate from our own words those things which are above us, and because we cannot see those things we draw inferences from those which we can see.

But nevertheless even His very endurance of sufferings does not so far expose Him to a participation in our humility as to separate Him from the power of the Godhead.

But the land in the Transvaal is locked up and unused,— and not open to new comers.

“What made you so savage at old Melmotte to-day?” said the young lord.

For even if that rich man had endured none of the things I have mentioned, if he had passed his whole life without dread and care— why say I his whole life?

We, on the other hand, cannot express either of these ideas by one word.

But in this is a father who sustains all things, and nourishes things that have beginning and end.

And why does he refer to it as something peculiar to the Spirit, and to no other power in the creation, saying, For who among men knows the things of a man, save the spirit of the man which is in him?

But now so far are they from being called sons, that they are the greatest possible aliens.

But the man who is appointed to the administration of a Bishopric must have a care for the moral health of these, if not in a greater, at least in no less a degree than the others.

I tell everybody that I’m going to marry your royal highness, king Jones; there isn’t a bit of a secret about it.

Would that all were as the few of whom it is said: Many are called, few are chosen.

“I must say this—that after what has passed, and at the present crisis of your life—”

He was in the Form of God, equal to the Father; He took upon Him the form of a servant, so as therein to be less than the Father

“The bill will be read again on Monday, the first.”

You have released your debtor; sustain the loss.

Ussher, I main—Captain Ussher—it’s he’d be welcome with you now, my pet,” and he began stroking his daughter’s shoulders and back, for she had still her bonnet on her head.

And as this was delivered to us by a few of those who were left of the oldest fathers, so it is only divulged by us to a very few and to those who are really keen.

For although the bare word of a King is of equal weight and authority with his written command, especially if he who reports it, boldly affirms in writing that it has been given him; yet when they neither openly declared that they had received any command, nor, as they were requested to do, gave me assurance of it in writing, but acted altogether as by their own authority; I confess, I say it boldly, I was suspicious of them.

The consequence was that she almost regretted that she had allowed him to escape.

But the entire deep was almost nothing, since hitherto it was altogether formless; yet there was then that which could be formed.

But if her husband have fallen asleep, she is freed, let her marry whom she will, only in the Lord.

He had left the vicarage, making another offer for the girl’s hand, as it were, with his last gasp.

But further also, attend to this, that while there are many forms of dying, the Son of God was crucified, being hanged on a tree, in order that all who die unto sin may die to it, in no other way than by the way of the cross.

Usthazanes, however, believed that as by his timidity in consenting to worship the sun, he had caused many Christians to fear, so now, by the diligent proclamation of the cause of his sufferings, many might be edified by learning that he died for the sake of religion, and so became imitators of his fortitude.

“And I have endeavored to save you what trouble I could by being straightforward.” Still he paused, sitting in his chair uneasily, but looking as though he had no intention of going.

But Mr. Saul would not admit himself that it was a fault.

If I thought that he would get the fresh young girl with the dimples then I ought to abstain.

Nothing more was said that night between the uncle and nephew, and no word had been spoken about Mary Lowther.

All this occurred in Sir Thomas’s private room.

The reason, then, why the children of several of them are not mentioned, is that they belonged by birth to other nations, and did not themselves become nations.

Alterius, nec tetra invisaque stupra tulerunt

When such a man as Barrington Erle undertakes to send information to such a correspondent as Lady Glencora in reference to such a matter as Lady Eustace’s diamonds, he is bound to be full rather than accurate.

Then I asked her in regard to the ages, if now there is the conclusion.

She sat silent in her place, while her friend made one or two turns about the room; and then she got up from her seat also.

For the things which were believed to require setting at rest and healing by the meeting of a Synod at Ephesus, have not only resulted in still greater disturbances of peace but, which is the more to be regretted, even in the overthrow of the very Faith whereby we are Christians.

And He heard me out of His holy mountain.

Then it was asserted that old Barty had been found to have no real claim to any share in the bank, and that he was to be turned out at Miss Stanbury’s instance;—that he was to be turned out, and that Brooke had been acknowledged to be the owner of the Burgess share of her business.

May this people, free from stain, be strengthened in your arms, and may you bear to the stars a pure pledge to God.

The agent was of opinion that the Duke had had no alternative.

A Roman Catholic Irish girl of whom nothing was known but that her mother was said to be a widow, was, in Lady Scroope’s eyes, as formidable a danger as could come in the way of her husband’s heir.

They must excuse her for a few minutes, she said.

It was manifest that nothing special could be said to Mrs. Houghton on that occasion, as one person came after another.

Whenever, therefore, you do to another what you would not have another do to you, you defile the image of God with undeserved distresses.

When Mr. Wharton got home on that day he said not a word to Emily as to Arthur Fletcher.

Wherefore it seems to me that it would be easier to sail on dry land, than to learn geometry by the senses, although young beginners seem to derive some help from them.

“There was no further delay?”

But things were in a terrible confusion at Loughlinter.

See that female walking down Broadway.

He hesitated a moment, as though he were going to retreat again, and then began to pull about the books and toys which lay on one of the distant tables, as though he were in quest of some article.

Thus did Lot, thus Abraham.

I am mindful that I am free from the world, not from God.

As they are therefore.

But verily there is need of grace in order that the understanding may perceive it, and admit even so much as at least one little ray.

The two ships, one full of recruits and the other of veterans, agree to surrender, Otacilius having sworn that he will not hurt the men.

Our greatest masters in works of imagination have obtained such aid for themselves.

I will lay down my life for You. For since he had heard, Greater love than this has, no man, he straightway sprang forward, insatiably eager and desirous to reach even to the highest pitch of virtue. But Christ, to show that it belonged to Himself alone to promise these things with authority, says,

How does it compass all things!

The more she thought of the similarity of the stories, the stronger were her sympathies on the side of poor Grace.

There has of late prevailed a taste for the appointment of young bishops, produced no doubt by a feeling that bishops should be men fitted to get through really hard work; but we have never heard that young prebendaries were considered desirable.

“But I should be very glad to learn what he means to do while he lives. I want to get you into sympathy with me in this matter;—but it is so difficult.”

His lordship has signified to me that it is his intention, in his own and Lady Cashel’s name, to request the renewed pleasure of an immediate, and, he hopes, a prolonged visit from your lordship.

If he had got past that dreadful trial—that cold unfeeling prison, with the harsh noise of the large key and the fetters, the stern judge, and the twelve stern men sworn to hang him if he deserved it!

All the evil to which mortal men are liable comes not from death but from life; and if in dying they have the soul sustained by Christian grace, death is to them not the night of darkness in which a good life ends, but the dawn in which a better life begins.

Chapter 7. Explanation of the Lord's Question About His Mother and His Brethren. Answer to the Cavils of Apelles and Marcion, Who Support Their Denial of Christ's Nativity by It

God knows that He mixes Himself without the natural corruption, and He is mixed in reality.

These things command, he says, that they may be blameless.

Be not deceived.

We paid our twenty zwanzigers and went on, consoling ourselves with the thought of our ready supper and our assured beds.

He had, moreover, obtained for John Eames that situation under the Crown which he now held.

Even Lady Monogram, her old friend Julia Triplex, had trampled upon her.

Assuredly then He is.

That the place of baptism is sometimes supplied by martyrdom is supported by an argument by no means trivial, which the blessed Cyprian adduces from the thief, to whom, though he was not baptized, it was yet said, "Today shall you be with me in Paradise."

Wherefore then did not the angel speak before Joseph became troubled.

She is all the world to me.

“What do you think of Miss Effingham?” said Madame Max Goesler, again addressing him suddenly.

Tell me this too: Would you not say, that the Creator beyond all comparison excels His works?

The dealers, probably, were careful that I did nothing of the kind.

For if it be extended, it is divided into the past and future; but the present has no space.

You have learned the way, how in the judgment you may be found among those on the right hand; guard that which is committed to you [1 Timothy 6:20] concerning Christ, and be conspicuous in good works, that you may stand with a good confidence before the Judge, and inherit the kingdom of heaven:— Through whom, and with whom, be glory to God with the Holy Ghost, for ever and ever.

He then remembered that he had promised to send Alice up to his wife, and he hurried back into the house.

2 Corinthians 12:12

They were now up among the scattered prostrate logs, and had again taken up the question of the business of woodcutting. ‘No, George; it would never have done for you; not as a mainstay. I thought of giving it up to you once, but I knew that it would make a poor man of you.’

And desire blended with inquiry arises as faith advances.

And that there might be no excuse, because he had not followed up this subject, he testified that neither inclination nor attention had been wanting to him.

The evidence given by Lady Cantrip and her husband and by Mr. Monk was equally favourable. She had always regarded him as a perfect gentleman. Lord Cantrip had found him to be devoted to the service of the country,—modest, intelligent, and highspirited. Perhaps the few words which fell from Mr. Monk were as strong as any that were spoken. “He is a man whom I have delighted to call my friend, and I have been happy to think that his services have been at the disposal of his country.”

Aspasia Fitzgibbon was a warm woman as regarded money, and as she was moreover a most discreet spinster, she was made welcome by Lady Baldock, in spite of the well-known iniquities of her male relatives.

And Frank as he went to town brought his mind to the same way of thinking.

Has idleness been equally a matter of course with you?

“Not too high. Why should you not fly high? If I can justify myself, surely I cannot accuse you.”

In what manner, too, will it be destroyed, the divine virtue which was mingled with it at some you or other seceding to itself?

And, when he would not yield and consent to gratify her passionate desire, she cast the righteous man into every kind of distress and torment, to within a little of death, by bearing false witness.

In answer to this she could only shake her head.

She had come to him without a shilling; and yet, bad as her treatment of him had been, he was willing to give enough not only to support her, but her sister also, with every comfort.

But if there is no man who would dare to attribute to our times those things which took place long ago, how can we be the causes of the present misfortunes, when nothing new is occurring, but all things are old, and were unknown to none of the ancients?

You have loved malignity above benignity.

‘May I not see the letter?’

From the housetop he flies home.

Then said Peter: Let us then, in the first place, inquire into this.

[2 Thessalonians 1:6-7] That is, justice was not violated, but God went forth against them, and caused the penalty to come round on the sinners, though not all their sins are made manifest, but only where the express ordinances were transgressed.

In short, there are many who are just and good; and these, having laid aside the worship of earthly things, acknowledge the majesty of the one and only God.

We have a very vivid and by no means unflattering account of the singular agility of our ancestors in their mode of fighting from their chariots.

For, when one reads of God as being the searcher and witness of the heart; [Wisdom 1:6] when His prophet is reproved by His discovering to him the secrets of the heart; [Proverbs 24:12] when God Himself anticipates in His people the thoughts of their heart, Why do you think evil in your hearts?

“It is rather hard on us,” said a young planter to me, with whom I was on terms of sufficient intimacy to discuss such matters—” We send word to the people at home that we are very poor.

The full amount of this threat Mr Palliser understood, and, as he thought of it, he acknowledged to himself that he had never felt for Lady Dumbello anything like love.

And so in like manner, the Father calls them sons in whomsoever He sees His own Son, and says, 'I begot.'

But when your father has asked what better step he could take, I have been unable to advise him.’ It was as though the old man were telling the young one that he was too bad for hope, and that, therefore, he must be consigned for ever to perdition.

We have received back our Father; and we enjoy so much the greater pleasure, inasmuch as we have received him back now beyond our hopes.

Do they not explain the code of law?

It was not only necessary that Peter should not suspect, but that John, too, should be kept in the dark.

“And what a deal I shall have to say to you!” she went on. “You’ll upset all my other plans. But, Mary, my dear, how long are you going to stay here? I go—let me see—I forget when, but it’s all put down in a book upstairs. But the next stage is at Mrs. Proudie’s. I shan’t meet you there, I suppose. And now, Frank, how’s the governor?” The gentleman called Frank declared that the governor was all right—”mad about the hounds, of course, you know.”

‘You seem to doubt it.’

And now I would have you observe the way in which their whole life is interwoven.

He endeavored, however, to expel such thoughts from his mind, as though there was something ungenerous in entertaining them.

The Hebrew calls Heaven by one name, the Canaanite by another, but both of them understand it alike, being in no way led into error by the difference of the sounds that convey the idea of the object.

Let the Vestal Virgins, he says, retain their privileges.

And then again if I should fail!

For two days the miller was very gloomy, and made no reply when Sam declared his purpose of leaving the mill before Christmas unless Agnes should be received there as his wife;—but at last he gave way.

Mrs. Quiverful, however, did gain access, and Mrs. Proudie proved herself a woman.

Hereupon, when the letter reached him, without fear or delay, he replied— consider the courage and spirit of his answer— Most excellent governor, we have one Censor of all our actions, and one Emperor, against whom his enemies are in arms.

Shame is that which causes even a noble brow to blush, because of the upbraiding with a pretended crime.

And why do they wish to have it enforced by word of command?

It is said that the goods are brought to the ports of the Colony by Colonial merchants and are resold by them to the traders of the Orange Free State, so as to make it impossible for the Colony to know what is consumed within her own borders and what beyond.

But that was not now easy.

And to this rule they apply all the instances of lying which are produced from the Old Books, and are found not reprehended, or cannot be reprehended: either they are approved on the score of a progress towards improvement and hope of better things, or in virtue of some hidden signification they are not altogether lies.

Lucy looked on somewhat astonished to find that the lover whom her sister had been blamed for rejecting, and who was spoken of with so many encomiums, was so old a man.

To be restored to its forfeited salvation!

For He permitted opinions erroneous, and unworthy of Himself, to prevail, as that He was a body formerly, and that He was visible.

“Their cousin is in London also,” continued Patience.

When Phineas entered Lady Laura’s drawing-room on the Wednesday before dinner, he found the other guests all assembled.

“It is this very spot where we now stand that made me build the house where it is,” said Mr. Kennedy, “and I was only eighteen when I stood here and made up my mind. That is just twenty-five years ago.” “So he is forty-three,” said Phineas to himself, thinking how glorious it was to be only twenty-five. “And within twelve months,” continued Mr. Kennedy, “the foundations were being dug and the stone-cutters were at work.”

But was it the good God?

If the churchwardens, or the archdeacon, or the college, or the bishop had power to interfere, as to which he was altogether ignorant, and chose to exercise that power, he could not help it.

He had been rejected on what he had acknowledged to be fitting grounds while that had been her position.

Though he had professed to his brother that he could own the fact without shame, still he was ashamed.

The poor dear old woman began to repeat to herself the first half of the Quaker’s advice, “Doan’t thou marry for munny.”

Now it is for the sake of all these public gatherings, and of much seeing and being seen, that all pomps (of dress) are exhibited before the public eye; either for the purpose of transacting the trade of voluptuousness, or else of inflating glory.

Now an advance upon unblamable is unreprovable, when we have done nothing either to be condemned for, or charged with.

“I suppose not, my dear.”

“Leave it with me,” he said; “that is, if you do not object.”

“We are not sure of that,” said Sir Ferdinando. “It is always well to be on the safe side.”

And that you may be quite sure that this, which we say, is really so, not on my own authority but on that of the Lord, hear how very clearly He describes the character and condition of that world: Behold, says He, I create new heavens and a new earth: and the former things shall not be remembered nor come into mind.

For in the body even the little members seem to contribute no little, but the great ones themselves are often injured by them, I mean by their removal.

“I don’t know what you call long. As for walking with him, it’s out of the question. He goes about a mile an hour. And then he makes me look so much like a fool. I had no idea that he would be such an old coddle.”

Those, on the contrary, which are called Sinister are evil, and whenever they in their turn are in possession of the ascendant they act in opposition to Nature; and not on men only do they inflict harm, but at times on animals also, and trees, and fruits, and the produce of the year, and fountains of water, and, in short, on everything that is comprised within Nature, which is under their government.

But as to the statement which you annex to this, that death is a separation between good and evil, do you not see that, if the soul be good and the body be evil, he who joined them together, is not good?

“I will indeed.”

And in addition to this, frequently to remind them of the punishments appointed by the laws, that, using fear as a bridle, they may not run on in wicked pleasures.

“You’ll lose your fifty dollars, Mr. Gotobed, and only cause a little vexation to a highspirited young nobleman.”

They were there on the bridge, or roaming together alone among the woods, for nearly an hour after that, till Mrs. Fitzpatrick, who knew the value of the prize and the nature of the man, began to fear that she had been remiss in her duty as chaperon. As Emily came down and joined the party at last, she was perfectly regardless either of their frowns or smiles. There had been one last compact made between the lovers.

Perhaps you might be unable to pay the fine imposed upon those who rebaptize members of the Church, having been involved in so much expense in buying people whom you might compel to submit to the rite.

And with His brethren.

Every one is asking this question, but you say nothing about it; nobody asks the other, but to that you direct your answer.

In this form He ascended into heaven, and that voice was heard by His disciples, "He shall so come as you have seen Him go into heaven."

Else we should soon see the enemies' arrows give way to our javelins, their caps to our helmets, their palfreys to our chargers.

It could not be told by her because it was untrue; but for the moment she thought that she might pass it by without notice.

For it is very unsuitable that, if one cannot fulfil the duties of either of these positions with diligence proportional to its importance, any one should be judged fit for both, and that so the ecclesiastical order should impede the monastic life, and in turn the rule of monasticism impede ecclesiastical utility.

My sister to the princess ran, and said,

“Oh! Lady Hartletop’s!” said Lily. “Then I suppose we must give in;” which little bit of sarcasm was not lost upon Mr Crosbie, and was put down by him in the tablets of his mind as quite undeserved. He had endeavoured to avoid any mention of Lady Hartletop and her croquet ground, and her ladyship’s name had been forced upon him. Nevertheless, he liked Lily Dale through it all. But he thought that he liked Bell the best, though she said little; for Bell was the beauty of the family.

Indeed I have omitted the majority of the details, lest my speech should be unnecessarily burdensome.

And even now He bears to be stoned, not only by those who deal despitefully with Him, but also by ourselves who seem to reverence Him.

whosoever has seen me has seen the Father; how then do you say [38], Show us the Father?

For all live unto God, [Luke 20:38] and they who return unto the Lord are still to be reckoned members of his family.

The denial of this nature puts our salvation far from us; for if the Godhead of the only begotten is impassible, as the nature of the Trinity is impassible, and we refuse to acknowledge that which is by nature adapted to suffer, then the preaching of a passion which never happened is idle and vain.

Yours as you would have me to be,

The number of ladies in the room was too great for that, and ladies do not divide themselves nicely into small parties, as men and women do when they are mixed.

And we quote these passages, making no distinction between the Son of God and Jesus.

So much stronger than I is He who is coming after me, that I am not able to bear even the outskirts of the powers round Him which are furthest from Him (they are not open and exposed, so that any one could see them), nor even to bear those who support them.

Men whom waters have drowned or affected with madness or with fear, they call nymph-caught, or lymphatic, or hydro-phobic.

“If you do, and do not tell her so,” continued Bertram, when he found that he got no immediate reply, “I shall think you—. But no; a man must be his own judge in such matters, and of all men I am the least fit to be a judge of others. But I would that it might be so, for both your sakes.”

But since sensation remains to all who have ever lived, and eternal punishment is laid up (i.e., for the wicked), see that you neglect not to be convinced, and to hold as your belief, that these things are true.

At length the battlefield is chosen,—near the town of Pharsalus, on the banks of the river Enipeus in Thessaly.

“It ought to be free, Conway, and you must make it free. It will be well that you should be married, and well for others besides yourself. I tell you so as your friend, and you have no truer friend. Sit where you are, if you please. You can say anything you have to say without stalking about the room.”

Sir Marmaduke, during his journey in the cab, had resolved that, old as he was, he would take this sinner by the throat, this brute who had striven to stain his daughter’s name,—and would make him there and then acknowledge his own brutality.

“She would obey your slightest wish,” said Mrs. Crawley.

And for no more than others, nay, even at a less price.

The first which came to hand, though official, was small, and marked private, and it was addressed in the handwriting of his old friend, Butterwell, the outgoing secretary.

And there probably the usual knowledge about Jamaica ends.

He therefore intimated that He should come, humble indeed in His first coming, but glorious in His second.

Five minutes under a lamp-post with Mary Snow was sweeter to him than the promise of a whole bevy of evenings spent in the same society, with all the comforts of his mother’s drawing-room around him.

Some reference was made to him by his wife, but he showed at once that he did not regard Graham as company, and that he conceived himself to be entitled to enjoy the full luxury of home.

He left eighty thousand pounds to his son, who was younger than Fanny, and twenty to his daughter.

We believe also in the Holy Spirit.

But lo!

Men who had risen in the world as Mr. Furnival had done do find it sometimes difficult to dispose of their wives.

For if God foreknew those who are called, according to His purpose, to be conformed to the image of His Son, for whose sake, according to the blessed apostle, He has appointed Him to be the first-born among many brethren, [Romans 8:28-29] are they not godless who treat with indignity the body which is of like form with the Lord?

“What more, my lord?”

For they too rob those who are poorer than themselves.

He makes them a speech in which he explains how badly they have treated him.

Search through the coast of Italy which used to be called Magna Græcia, and you will find there various doctrines of Pythagoras inscribed on brass on their public monuments.

John 14:28

Wherefore also there was no need of beginning at that point, but rather with a different topic; by which, in fact, he powerfully conciliated them, namely, by rejecting the glory which was to be had from them.

For that the people of holy Church increases, that spiritual crops of grain for the heavenly garner are multiplied, we never doubted that this was from the grace of Almighty God which flowed largely to you, most blessed ones.

“They are very different;—but Mr. Vivian wouldn’t think of such a thing. He understands the nature of things, and knows his own position. There is a conceit about the other man.”

Caroline had made up her mind to live again with her aunt—had made up her mind to do so, providing that her husband’s power was not sufficient to prevent it.

I think it is urging everything.

“No, no; never. I begin to know her now.”

Carriages are to be taxed, as they are with us.

It was necessary that they should go forth and work; and Madame Staubach conceived it to be possible that the work of the world could not be adequately done by men who had been subjected to the crushing process which was requisite for women.

And he was not afraid, either of death or of sufferings:

On account of these and such like reasons, these constantly attend the mysteries called those of the Great Mother, supposing especially that they behold by means of the ceremonies performed there the entire mystery.

Then she sat down alone in the dingy old dining-room, to think what had better be done in her present circumstances.

But these by all their words have attempted to do away with the Godhead of Christ, have made those seem righteous, since they have come nearer to Antichrist.

And in whomsoever the eye of the soul has been blinded by ill-nurture and teaching, let him advance to the true light, to the truth, which shows by writing the things that are unwritten.

Nay, for these garments are woven in Heaven, where is neither moth, nor worm, nor any other such thing.

He was afterwards, however, reinstated in his bishopric by the Synod of Sardis, after having proved that he did not hold such sentiments.

Nor, however, let any one be disheartened, or despair concerning himself, if, overcome by passion, or impelled by desire, or deceived by error, or compelled by force, he has turned aside to the way of unrighteousness.

And God set them in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth, and to rule over the day and over the night, and to divide the light from the darkness: and God saw that it was good.

Respectit Sir—

Then shall be seen in the clearest light of wisdom what with the pious is now a faith, though it is not yet a matter of certain knowledge, how sure, how unchangeable, and how effectual is the will of God; how many things He can do which He does not will to do, though willing nothing which He cannot perform; and how true is the song of the psalmist, But our God is in the heavens; He has done whatsoever He has pleased.

It was not only that she knew well that her cousin would give ample and immediate attention, and lend himself thoroughly to the matter without any idea of payment,—but that she could not quite believe that her husband’s humility was true humility.

You say not then to God, just I am, and You are unjust: but you say, unjust I am, but You are more unjust.

[Matthew 5:6] We ought to be God's hungry ones The Lord looses them that are fettered; the Lord lifts up them that are dashed down; the Lord makes wise them that are blind [Psalm 145:8].

‘There, now, is a specimen of a species of the genus homo, class Englishman, which is, I believe, known nowhere but in Cornwall.’

“We shall live through it,” said Lily.

And ever and again, as he thought of the great prayer as to the forgiveness of trespasses, he could not refrain from asking himself whether it could really be intended that he should forgive such trespass as that committed against him by Paul Montague!

“No; I have written to no one. I cannot write. I feel as though if it were to bring him back again I could not write of it. My boy! my boy! my boy!” But still there was not a tear in her eye.

Homily 74

[Jeremiah 23:24] And again, Am I a God near at hand, and not a God afar off?

If convicted he would bear the punishment, still hoping that an end might come.

Just think now what a disgrace it would be for a man having a flowing beard, and with staff in hand, and cope on shoulders, to go to school with children, and be set the same tasks with them: would it not be above measure ridiculous?

His sympathies in these matters were all with his sister.

Now I deny that the goodness of Marcion's god is rational, on this account first, because it proceeded to the salvation of a human creature which was alien to him.

“Adelaide, you mean?”

Thus again is He preparing them to be vigilant, in every case assigning to them the sufferance of wrong, and permitting the infliction of it to others; to teach you that the victory is in suffering evil, and that His glorious trophies are thereby set up. For He said not at all, Fight ye also, and resist them that would vex you, but only, You shall suffer the utmost ills.

She had stood on it before, and had stretched her arms with enthusiasm towards the just-visible mountains of Arran.

She endeavoured to teach him that no good could come from such foolhardiness.

Whence we must say that it is in the nature of things for arts to be produced in men out of what has no existence.

It is of great use to be in the habit of doing good actions.

For if you be evil, it is said, thou alone shall endure the evil; but if good, it is for yourself and for your neighbor.

You are invited by this threefold testimony, and called on to purify this substance by your sanctity.

But he heard, says she, that I lifted up my voice, and left his garments, and went out.

In the same way also we explain the expressions, I, who make peace, and create evil; for He calls into existence corporeal or external evils, while purifying and training those who would not be disciplined by the word and sound doctrine.

Am I false when I say that her father acts illegally in detaining her?

Because God pardons even such.

But she, though she was in many respects # brave woman, did not dare to tell the man that she was prowling about the hotel in order that she might make a midnight raid upon the mustard pot.

while as many of you as surely know the truth, hold it unbroken and unshaken in Christ Jesus our Lord, with whom be to the Father glory and might, together with the Holy Spirit, for ever and ever.

As none of the wild beasts at that time touched her, she was taken down from the stake, and cast again into prison.

But who ever heard a priest of the faithful, standing at an altar built for the honor and worship of God over the holy body of some martyr, say in the prayers, I offer to you a sacrifice, O Peter, or O Paul, or O Cyprian?

“And all our pretty plans are gone.”

Everything would have been over.

Nay, rather, to speak out more truly, the augurs, the dream interpreters, the soothsayers, the prophets, and the priestlings, ever vain, have devised these fables; for they, fearing that their own arts be brought to nought, and that they may extort but scanty contributions from the devotees, now few and infrequent, whenever they have found you to be willing that their craft should come into disrepute, cry aloud, The gods are neglected, and in the temples there is now a very thin attendance.

Did I speak evil before you even of Eusebius and his fellows who had persecuted me?

Integrity, whether the result of preservation or restoration, will be able to lose nothing more, after the time that it has given back to it whatever it had lost.

“Very well, my dear; only mind you wrap yourself up.”

I do not know that Lady Glencora’s heart was made of that stern stuff which refuses to change its impressions; but it was a heart, and it required food.

For in the synod which dealt with the three chapters it is distinctly evident that nothing pertaining to faith was subverted, or in the least degree changed; but, as you know, the proceedings had reference only to certain individuals; one of whom, whose writings evidently deviated from the rectitude of the Catholic Faith, was not unjustly condemned.

“Well, father, I have something to tell you.”

Clearchus the Peripatetic says that he knew a Jew who associated with Aristotle.

And not only that, but adding the expression in Christ, by which he shows that it was not that he was more illustrious in the world, not that he was more powerful, but it was on account of his faith in Christ—then he also adds, to enjoin you, and not that only, but that which is convenient, that is, a reasonable action.

You say, I also am of God; and you wander out of doors.

The pursuit of human glory, we maintain, is forbidden not only by the teaching of Jesus, but also by the Old Testament.

Alienated are sinners from the womb, they have gone astray from the belly, they have spoken false things [Psalm 57:3].

When the Lord invites the blest to their inheritance in the kingdom of heaven, He does not include a pilgrimage to Jerusalem among their good deeds; when He announces the Beatitudes, He does not name among them that sort of devotion.

But the glory of the Hudson is at West Point itself; and thither on this occasion we went direct by railway, and there we remained for two days.

Should they agree that lying is not possible to the God of the universe, ask them in the second place, if He who is the fount of justice can become unjust.

But he was in truth a general benefactor of the human race, and spent his whole time in doing magnificent deeds as to which he was content that the whole world should be ignorant of their existence.

Why, before Noe?

Or why, as yet, should he think that she would prefer an empty, gilded lordling to the friend who had been her friend as far back as her memory could carry her?

Therefore we bring forward these ways in a very different manner from that in which the philosophers are accustomed to present them: first of all, because we say that a guide is proposed to each, and in each case an immortal: but that the one is honoured who presides over virtues and good qualities, the other condemned who presides over vices and evils.

“I never said anything unkind.”

What may he give her so that men sha’n’t come and worry her life out of her in this way?

“Rufford,” she said, looking up into his face with her lustrous eyes, and speaking with a sweet, low, silvery voice,—”are you sure of yourself?”

“Upon my word and honour I cannot stand this, and I will not. I have not as yet quarrelled with anybody; but I must quarrel with you, if you go on in this way. It is quite unusual that a man should be put through his facings after such a fashion, and I must beg that there may be an end of it.”

R. It will then remain to inquire concerning intellection.

She was married in the tent at Ahalala in the presence of Crinkett and Adamson, and of her own female companion, Anna Young,—all of whom were there to give evidence of the fact.

From this well the still boiling water makes its way under ground, a distance of a few yards into a much larger pool where it still boils and bubbles, and still maintains that bright green colour which seems to be the property of water which springs hot from the bowels of the earth.

His load was too heavy to be borne, and therefore he said to himself that he would put it down.

[Acts 2:38] So grace comes also of the Holy Spirit as of the Father and the Son.

The Senator lifted his hat and remarked that it was a very fine afternoon.

It is no doubt true that if we did but know the facts correctly, we could refer back every political and social condition of the present day to the remotest period of man’s existence; but the interest fails us when the facts become doubtful, and when the mind begins to fear that history is mixed with romance.

It is real death, to go into the pit of sin; this indeed may be also understood of the Jews.

He nowhere says that they are destitute of everything, but that they are deficient; everywhere the words, that you may be filled, show this.

The Egyptians, indeed, with their boastful notions of their own antiquity, have put forth a sort of account of it by the hand of their astrologers in cycles and myriads of years; which some of those who have had the repute of studying such subjects profoundly have in a summary way called lunar years; and inclining no less than others to the mythical, they think they fall in with the eight or nine thousands of years which the Egyptian priests in Plato falsely reckon up to Solon.

Could it be possible that he might live to see her, not merely deprived of her ill-gained money, but standing in the dock as a felon to receive sentence for her terrible misdeeds?

For in no case is that which contains not greater than that which is contained.

In what sort does the tongue cry out?

Let not then any one account His injunctions impracticable.

That you may be justified in Your sayings, and conquer when You are judged.

But to show you also by way of example the sort of spies which the devil sends into us to spy out what is in us, come let us strip one of them, and examine it strictly at the tribunal: and if you please, let us bring forward some of those which were detected by Paul.

Grace was met at the Guestwick railway-station by her friend Lilian Dale, and was driven over to Allington in a pony carriage belonging to Lilian’s uncle, the squire of the parish.

With those who first condemned Athanasius, and then solicited pardon for having condemned him, or with those who have condemned these latter?

This is proved especially by the omission of the words your neighbor, which are inserted when false witness is forbidden: You shall not bear false witness against your neighbor.

[2 Kings 5:11] But the blind man neither disbelieved, nor contradicted, nor reasoned with himself, What is this?

[2 Corinthians 12:21] Show your charity towards the sinner.

You must be content to do that; or in quarrelling with him you must quarrel with me also.” And it was done at the spur of the moment— without delay.

When they reached the lawn at Surbiton Cottage they were both in high spirits.

Yet, although the radiance proceeds from the sun itself, we cannot say that it is later in point of time than the substance of that body, since the sun has never appeared without its rays.

The edifices used for the undergraduates’ chambers and for the lecture-rooms are by no means handsome.

And I might mention numberless cases, if I had a mind to recount all.

8. That we must press on and persevere in faith and virtue, and in completion of heavenly and spiritual grace, that we may attain to the palm and the crown

But ordinary phraseology would not have allowed the saying, Be unwilling to make any manner of lie, [Sirach 7:13] had there not been also an evil will, whose wickedness separates if from that which the angels celebrated, Peace on earth, of good will to men.

In the baths, we see the illustrious, the undistinguished, and the base, alike bare.

Could he not put the money into some convenient hiding-place—now at once?

Then he went in and wrote a note to Mr. Green, the lawyer, desiring that the interest of the fifteen hundred pounds for one year might be at once remitted to Miss Amedroz.

Not so is our God: be He praised with the will, loved with charity: let it be gratuitous (or voluntary) that He is loved and that He is praised.

2 Corinthians 10:3

It is true, rising again is spoken of one who has fallen: and this is why he keeps on explaining, and says not only that He was raised, but adds this also, from the dead.

If indeed they be unwilling to do this, who can venture to compel them?

“I think you should guard against it, for the sake of the parish.”

Yours most faithfully,

Her beauty now belonged entirely to her husband.

“Ferdinand has been speaking to me about my fortune.” It had gone much against the grain with her to write these words, “my fortune.” “But I have no fortune,” she said.

“And of course I know that you are as well aware as I am of the nature of the transaction. That you can brazen it out without a blush only proves to me that you have got beyond the reach of shame!”

She could do it, she thought, in such a way as to make him understand that her last quarrel with George Vavasor was not supposed to alter the footing on which she stood with him.

And what will be the condition of that life which you would introduce, that men will attack and be attacked, be enraged and disturbed, and live always in fear?

It would certainly be a very great thing for British interests if a direct line could be made from such a port as Halifax, a port which is open throughout the whole year, up into the Canadas.

Chapter 45. Polytheism Inexcusable.

But we will in the first place accompany the ladies into the drawing-room for a few minutes.

(Then) iniquity shall abound, as the Lord also says: Because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold.

When one makes up one’s mind to that, one does not cry.

It seems to me that the faithful still assembled there, for they did not immediately withdraw them.

“Oh, it’s the way of the world, my dear. They all do just the same. You might just as well be angry with the turkey cock for gobbling at you. It’s the bird’s nature.” And as she enunciated to her bairns the upshot of her practical experience, she pulled from her pocket the portions of tape which showed the length and breadth of the various rooms at the hospital house.

Indeed, the details of the whole event are therein read: Dogs compassed me about; the assembly of the wicked enclosed me around.

There is— where He himself declared He would make and finish it.

The two men shook hands of course, and then De Baron went out, muttering something to the Dean as to his being back to dinner. “I can’t say I like that young man,” said Lord George.

“At this moment I must go to her.”

4. But neither was Abraham ignorant of the Holy Spirit; he saw Three and worshipped One, for there is one God, one Lord, and one Spirit. And so there is a oneness of honour, because there is a oneness of power.

The reality has succeeded to the type, and grace has shut out the Law.

That sense of divine superiority must now pass away.

Prayer, then, may be uttered without the voice, by concentrating the whole spiritual nature within on expression by the mind, in un-distracted turning towards God.

Because you are unjust, even Me you have deemed unjust; as though an approver of your misdeeds, and no adversary, no avenger thereof.

You always did spoil me;—didn’t you, father?” Then Polly kissed Mr. Neefit’s bald head; and Mr. Neefit, as he sat in the centre of his lawn, with his girdle loose around him, a glass of gin and water by his side, and a pipe in his mouth, felt that in truth there was something left in the world worth living for.

Unless, as I said before, in their madness they repeat that He has come into being through Himself, or through some other.

Readers will not imagine that she based her prayers on the impatience of love.

Against Two Letters of the Pelagians (Book IV)

I am God, and there is no God else beside me; a just God and a Saviour; there is none beside me.

Since Paul himself we admire on this account, not for the dead whom he raised, nor for the lepers whom he cleansed, but because he said, who is weak, and I am not weak?

But she acknowledged that she had not intended to stay long in Westmoreland, probably not more than a week, and it was at last decided that the Pallisers should postpone their journey for four or five days, and that Alice should go with them immediately upon her return from Vavasor Hall.

And yet, in most of these instances, the individual himself may be hardly responsible that he does not do good.

For the plea will not avail them in their self-defence, that He is delivered by our Lord to His disciples third in order, and that therefore He is estranged from our ideal of Deity.

And he says, that he is the first-fruits, not of Corinth only, but of the whole nation, as having become as it were a door, and an entrance to the rest.

The Lord of Hosts is with us; the God of Jacob is our taker up.

There was fighting and the Dutch had certain native allies, who assisted them well.

She could not even pretend to speak to him with cold words after having chatted with him so pleasantly, and with such cordial good humour; and yet, were she to tell him that he might come, she would be granting him permission to appear there as Rachel’s lover.

No doubt on the side of falsehood, if you prove arrogance to exist on the side of truth.

God's prediction, therefore, was fulfilled—the wicked Nineveh was overthrown, and a good Nineveh built up.

For truly by a great stretch of power the plant of virginity was sent down to men from heaven, and for this reason it was not revealed to the first generations.

If there is therefore any consolation in Christ, if any comfort of love, if any communion of spirit, if any bowels and mercies, fulfil my joy, that you may be of the same mind, having the same love, unanimous, thinking one thing.

To his mother he had not whispered an idea of a suspicion.

When, then, you shall have committed my body to the ground, and mingled my bones with your father's, embark for a long voyage, and set sail on any sea you will: then there will be no one to hinder you: but as long as my life lasts, be content to live with me.

Lord Alfred had but scanty fortune of his own, but was in Parliament and in office, and was doing well.

Perhaps it would have been better for the cousins that they should have gone to different schools.

“Mary,” he said, beginning with words that he had fixed for himself as he came up the garden, “it is six weeks, I think, since I asked you to be my wife; and now I have come to ask you again.”

“She’s no better than her neighbours, M. Chapeau,” said one of her brothers. “There was young Boullin, the baker, at St. Paul’s. Till we heard of these wars, Annot was as fond of him as could be. It was none but he then; but now, she will not as much as turn her head if she sees his white jacket.”

But I had not in the least succeeded in making him see the good which would come from his deposition.

this occasion his mother begged him to give them one night.

His young wife sat by and laughed as it was all explained to her by the daughter of a former marriage who understood English.

Well, well.

Cicero complies with the ways of the world; but his epistles are no longer private, and he is therefore subjected to charges of falsehood.

What need of further details?

Upon us, who are of an imperfect nature, is imprinted the mark of this (animal) seed, because we are reckoned as sprung from the loves of Theletus, and consequently as an abortion, just as their mother was.

At best he can only pretend to open his heart, and even this Mr. Wharton would not do.

Her cap sat jauntily on her head, and showed just so much of her rich brown hair as to give her the appearance of youth which she desired.

But why,—why had he been so tender to her?

Since, therefore, You are the Creator of all times, if any time was before You made heaven and earth, why is it said that You refrained from working?

“He knows all about it,” said the Colonel to Ayala. “Do as he tells you.”

‘Twas thus that her pride was still strong within her; and as it supported her through this misery, who can blame her for it?

What things?

Wherefore, say you, it is not fabricated as a whole, but in its parts.

“There ain’t another from Liverpool stopping here till the 2.20,” said the pundit. “You had better come again if you mean to meet him by that.”

When Augustus left the room in the middle of the day he encountered Madeline wandering about the house. In these days she did wander about the house, as though there were something always to be done in some place apart from that in which she then was. And yet the things which she did were but few. She neither worked nor read, and as for household duties, her share in them was confined almost entirely to the morning and evening teapot.

“I daresay, if the truth were known, my uncle Baldock did not always keep his temper,” she once said.

“Pretty well. I’ve been here four years; and he’s a near neighbour. I think I do know him well.”

You remember, my children, that a friend of ours who seemed to recommend himself by his assiduity in his duties, yet was not admitted by me into the number of the clergy, because his gestures were too unseemly.

And You, Lord God of virtues, God of Israel.

The reason they assigned for the deposition of Silvanus was, that he had constituted himself the leader of a foolish party in Seleucia and Constantinople; he had, besides, constituted Theophilus as president of the church of Castabala, who had been previously ordained bishop of Eleutheropolis by the bishops of Palestine, and who had promised upon oath that he would never accept any other bishopric without their permission.

The bishop felt that if Dr. Tempest would only begin, the work on hand might be got through, even in his wife’s presence.

“Oh yes; he never likes to be out after a certain hour.”

[1 Corinthians 15:39] All flesh is not the same flesh; but there is one flesh of men, and another flesh of beasts, and another flesh of birds, and another of fishes.

Though Medea with her cauldron has done so much to bring us back to servility, I think that the manhood of the times is too strong for her.

The possible glory of Mary’s future career did not deter the Doctor from thinking of his troubles,—and especially that trouble with the Bishop which was at present heavy on his hand.

And yet it has to be remembered that though Esmond deals with the times of Queen Anne, and “copies the language” of the time, as Thackeray himself says in the dedication, the story is not supposed to have been written till the reign of George II.

“And you, Mrs. Low?”

Do you see that their soul was close pressed with fear? For he was confounded and troubled, and thought that as we see dead men in a dream, so He also would be seen. In order therefore that they might not imagine this, hear what He says.

It was now October, and the morning on the mountain was very dark and cold.

To gain the Jews, you pretended to be a Jew; and James and all the other elders taught you this dissimulation.

He thought that there were ample reasons why Paul Montague should be punished,—why Paul should be utterly expelled from among them, and allowed to go his own course.

So it had come to pass that Alice had been the free mistress of her own actions, and had been left to make the most she could of her own hours.

She had done all this, and he had been successful.

We read in the Proverbs: the ransom of a man's soul are his own riches.

My work has been very easy.

“Mark, to tell you the truth I have banished the affair from my mind, and don’t wish to take it up again. My mother has paid the money to save the property, and of course I must pay her back. But I think I may promise that I will not have any more money dealings with Sowerby. I will not say that he is dishonest, but at any rate he is sharp.”

“Honoured Miss,” the letter went, “I’ve been at Peter Corcoran’s doing work any time these twelve months.

“Lady Devil! If anything angers me now it is that ‘ladyship’—her to be my lady! Why, when I came out of jail that time, the poor creature had hardly a shoe to her foot. But it wasn’t her fault, Thorne; it was none of her doing. She never asked for such nonsense.”

As it happens, Caesar has already especially ordered that the city shall be spared; and a kind of truce is made, to endure till Caesar shall come and take possession.

Only if one has a lot of money and people like it, why shouldn’t one?

Yet not that the Father Himself is both Son and Holy Spirit, or whatever else each is singly called in relation to either of the others; as Word, which is not said except of the Son, or Gift, which is not said except of the Holy Spirit.

If you do neither one nor the other very quickly, I shall have you turned out of the house.

In proportion as they had been as virgins destined to great rewards, so will they experience great punishments for the loss of their virginity.

Let us be moderate, and lowly, and gentle.

But the thing had been a success, and men liked to be members of the Universe.

They were in fact more open to such a candidate than they would be to one less iniquitous—to an honest man or a scrupulous one, or to one partially honest, or not altogether unscrupulous.

They all walked home gloomily to their dinner, and ate their cold mutton and potatoes in sorrow and sadness.

For that they may not have occasion to say, that since Christ said that He was God—although He nowhere said this openly—but since those who came after proclaimed it, we have not believed.

Chapter 14.— How the Wisdom of God Healed Man.

And again, He that descended is the same also that ascended far above all the heavens that He might fill all things.

And now would you tell me that because I have been poor you would choose to be poor also?” It would have been thus that she would have answered, had she been accustomed to speak out her thoughts.

For you thus show to all that you are faithful worshippers of God, while you love His priests with the acceptable veneration that is due to them, and hasten with Christian devotion to do whatever may advance their position.

Mr. Browborough sat in the Court throughout it all, and was the hero of the day.

In finding her as your associate.

“Isn’t Lord Silverbridge a cousin of yours?” asked Sir Timothy.

He makes no proposition now, but declares what he means to do.

[Matthew 10:41] But he who out of this ill-timed scrupulousness passes one that should be admired, shall even suffer punishment.

“It was not for me to refuse to go.”

“See you, Mr. Thady! How could she see you, an’ she in a raging fever in bed at Mrs. McKeon’s? in course she couldn’t see you.”

For this cause He did not suffer them to be sufficient unto themselves.

[Luke 8:25b] And they feared greatly.

That is well understood by every one.

For it has not been said to them, Whatsoever you shall bind on earth shall be bound in Heaven, and whatsoever you shall loose on earth shall be loosed in Heaven.

That, then, which man brought upon himself through carelessness and disobedience, this God now vouchsafes to him as a gift through His own philanthropy and pity, when men obey Him.

She was to be banished from Merle Park, from Queen’s Gate, and from Glenbogie.

Knowing that all this would be at an end after His Passion, He was sad unto death.

And are you not my own, and am not I yours?

“And now he tells me that I have been unjust to him and he bids me ask you. I have not been unjust.”

The scrap of paper purporting to be a copy of the marriage certificate, and the clergyman’s pretended letter, were mere forgeries, having about them no evidence or probability of truth.

Therefore he immediately adds, 'What nation is there so great who has God drawing near unto them ?'

The men are all employed.” Then she remembered that when last she had dispensed with Peter’s services Anton had driven her,—that Anton who was now carrying the butter and eggs into market.

But, Tom, when I know what your goings on are with a nasty, sly, false woman like that, I won’t bear it; and there’s an end.” In saying which final words Mrs. Furnival rose from her seat, and thrice struck her hand by no means lightly on the loo table in the middle of the room.

its strength was gone.

[Matthew viii] Then He embarked in a ship and crossed over to the other side to the country of the Gergesenes.

Let us then preserve this unbroken, and none of those evil spirits will be able to enter in, who cause division in so perfect union; to which may we all attain by the grace and lovingkindness of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom and with whom, to the Father and the Holy Ghost, be glory, now and ever, and world without end.

What is the discourse of man unto God, save the confession of sins?

It surely is the life which He lived up to His passion, which was not only openly shown among the Jews, but has now been displayed even to all nations.

“His lordship could hardly set him aside,” said the lawyer. “At any rate I would not recommend him to try. I think you might suggest a commission of five, and propose two of the number yourself. I do not think that in such a case Dr. Tempest would raise any question.”

For he says, Him therefore I hope to send immediately.

15. From Vol. III. V. 286.

2 Corinthians 13:11

How may an author best acquire a mode of writing which shall be agreeable and easily intelligible to the reader?

At the end of six weeks Miss Gregory knew the whole secret of Philip and Bessy’s love, and knew also that Bessy was quite resolved to persevere.

Let us be fruitful and multiply and replenish the earth, [Genesis 1:28] but let us slay no lamb and celebrate no mystic passover, for where there is no temple, [Deuteronomy 16:5] the law forbids these acts.

“Miss Cassewary?”

[Romans 8:26] We then who do not know even how to ask for what is fitting, unless we have received of the Spirit, let us take care to offer up thanksgiving for all things, and let us bear all things nobly.

I have been invited to stand for Loughshane, and have consented.

Why do you conjure up this fabulous First Man of yours, and refuse to acknowledge the first man of the apostle?

Further, the nature it vitiates is a good, and therefore to this good also it is contrary.

Neither Lady Carbury nor Sir Felix has ever known anything about it.

Malchen at this time was known to all Innsbruck as the handsome Frau Schlessen who had been brought home in the winter to her husband’s house with so very comfortable a mitgift in her hand.

And dear, uncharitable Cecilia Burton was apt to think, when evil was spoken of women—of women whom she did not know—that there could not be smoke without fire.

Mr. Arabin met her in the middle of the room. “There,” said she, breathless with her haste; “there, take him—take him, and love him.”

There was nothing further settled, and very little more said, when Lord George left the deanery and started back to Manor Cross. But with Mary there had been left a certain comfort. The shopkeepers and Dr. Pountner had seen her with her husband, and Mr. Groschut had met Lord George at the deanery door.

In April of the same year, he writes to Lord Cowley at Paris; “ The Emperor’s mind is as full of schemes as a warren is full of rabbits, and, like rabbits, his schemes go to ground for the moment to avoid notice or antagonism.” And there is a record of a conversation which he had with Count Flahault a few days previously.

Upon which it follows that if from no other quarter, yet from you I have a right to receive.

For, far surpassing the help which these demons give to jugglers (who deceive men for the basest of purposes), is the aid which the devil himself affords in order to deceive the human race.

he thinks no more of wedding Agatha than I of Diana.

But she did know that he had hardly closed the door behind him when she was in his arms, and felt the burning love of his kisses upon her cheeks.

If his purpose is to save property from being lost, why might not those same monasteries into which soldiers have been received pay their debts, retaining the men only for monastic profession?

Mr. Webb, though he gave the letters open to Fred, read them to him with the view of explaining to him how little and how much they meant.

But when Adeodatus, deacon of the aforesaid Church, at the time when he was here, in like manner pressed us strongly concerning this use of the pallium, we, desiring to ascertain the truth, in like manner had him questioned as to what the custom was: and he, that he might persuade us to believe him, and succeed in obtaining from us what he sought, testified under oath that it had been the ancient custom for the bishop of his city to use the pallium in four or five solemn litanies.

Whence also Thucydides, in the Histories, says: Many men, to whom in a great degree, and in a short time, unlooked-for prosperity comes, are wont to turn to insolence.

The other soldier, when he saw his two comrades struck, fired his pistol also, and wounded some other person in the crowd. He then attempted to make his escape back towards the barracks, but he was tripped up violently as he attempted to run, and fell on his face on the pavement. The unfortunate trio were finally made prisoners of; they were disarmed, their hands bound together, and then left under a strong guard in the cow-house attached to the auberge.

For Demetrius, to wit, who even before had not deserved to be called a bishop, has been found to be involved in transactions to such an extent and of such a kind that, if he had received judgment without mercy according to the character of his deeds, he would undoubtedly have been condemned to a most hard death by both divine and human laws.

For certainly they too, rotting under contact with the earth, are broken up, and when the fertilising moisture of the soil gives life to the dead and hidden seeds, and, by the vital warmth, as it were breathes out a kind of soul of the green herb.

For we see it and its parts as objects of our senses.

“But there are fitnesses of things which such a one as you cannot disregard without preparing for yourself a whole life of repentance.”

Where is that much-talked-of and renowned Hades , then?

What man.

Chapter 14.— Of the Appearance in the Pillar of Cloud and of Fire.

Their mother observed that the maiden was dedicated to God, and believed that by her prayers her sons might be delivered from the danger of death, which was imminent.

“Very good climate,” said Currie. “Ladies I have known who have gone there have enjoyed it very much.”

On account of this humility they did not recognise their God, and entered into the detestable design of depriving Him of life, who had come to give them life.

For Pythagoras asserted that souls passed into new bodies; but foolishly, that they passed from men into cattle, and from cattle into men; and that he himself was restored from Euphorbus.

Such loss, if it fall upon me, will not interfere in the least with the income which I have proposed to settle upon you for your use after my death; and, as your father declares that in the event of your marrying me he will neither give to you nor bequeath to you a shilling, he might have abstained from telling me to my face that I was a bankrupt merchant when I myself told him of my loss.

She knew that her cousin Tom was altogether distasteful to her, while she took delight in the companionship of the Colonel.

“No, my dear; no. I don’t think that you ever did.” Mrs. Dosett, who was justice itself, did acknowledge to herself that of any such fault as that suggested, Ayala was innocent. Her fault was quite in the other direction, and consisted of an unwillingness to settle herself and to free her relations of the burden of maintaining her when proper opportunities arose for doing so. “I only want to explain to you that people must,—must,—must make their hay while the sun shines. You are young now.”

I hate to see time wasted.

For he thought it much better to be generous even to the undeserving for the sake of the deserving, than from fear of the undeserving to deprive those who were deserving.

The Publican humbled himself, although the case can hardly be called humility; but how?

Nature, having been vitiated by sin, has never experienced an instance of that primeval purity.

Is this display purchased, or is it a real possession?

For the greater followed not the lesser, but the lesser were sure to follow these greater.

“But if he had once brought himself to ask her?” said Gordon.

My dear Marchioness,—Of course I have heard all about you from time to time, and of course I have been delighted.

Surely there is here no authority restraining us from inquiry into what is truth.

The Diatessaron (Section 36)

Let us not then be enslaved or become swinish; but, as true children of the light, let us raise our eyes and look on the light, lest the Lord discover us to be spurious, as the sun does the eagles.

So, then, a widow is not only marked off by bodily abstinence, but is distinguished by virtue, to whom I do not give commandments, but the Apostle.

At this point of our discourse, let us consider whether is harder, for a man after having been buried to rise again from the earth, or for a man in the belly of a whale, having come into the great heat of a living creature, to escape corruption.

When he torments me I shall always leave him.” Then Linda got up and stalked out of the room.

Is it, then, that we are of another and a superior nature, and that therefore the demons are afraid of us?

And this misery the Pelagians will not have to descend from a just condemnation, because they deny original sin; although even if the ignorance and difficulty were the natural beginnings of man, God would not even thus deserve to be reproached, but to be praised, as I have argued in the same third book.

In order therefore not to render my production unprofitable to both classes of readers—to the learned on the one hand, because no elaboration of language could satisfy them to rank it with the magniloquence of the writers of antiquity, and to the unlearned on the other, because they could not understand the facts, should they be clouded by a parade of words—we have purposely adopted a style, divested indeed of all affectation of sublimity, but at the same time clear and perspicuous.

‘I had rather not speak of Gertrude, Mrs. Woodward.’

Grant to us who obey Your precepts, that we may perfect the likeness of the image, and with all our power know Him who is the good God and not a harsh judge.

“I call that woman a perfect Godsend. What should we have done without her?” This Lady Glencora said almost to herself as she prepared to join the duke. The duke had only one more observation to make before he retired for the night. “I’m afraid, you know, that your friend hasn’t what I call a good time before her, Glencora.”

And yet even thus it is not superfluous, but even very necessary.

Not the less did he spring out of the phaeton with a quite youthful jump.

Formerly there was lamentation, there were altars everywhere, everywhere the smoke and fumes of sacrifice, everywhere unclean rites and mysteries, and sacrifices, everywhere demons holding their orgies, everywhere a citadel of the devil, everywhere fornication decked with wreaths of honour; and Paul stood alone.

The poets also added their influence, and by means of poems composed to give pleasure, raised them to the heaven; as is the case with those who flatter kings, even though wicked, with false panegyrics.

And observe how, at the very beginning, he excuses himself for not having come to him, nor seen him.

We encountered two generals of brigade, General Siegel, a German, and General Ashboth, a Hungarian, both of whom were waiting till the weather should allow them to advance.

It was intricate and delicate, and difficult withal. I began by remarking on the weather, but he did not take my remarks kindly. I am inclined to fancy that he thought I was desirous of borrowing money from him. At any rate he gave me no encouragement in my first advances.

They cast no wistful looks towards France.

Two or three other people arrived, and the house became much less dull than was its wont.

“Why should there not be comfort for you both?”

But when he was violent and remained within some days, Antony waited and said, 'If you stay here, you can not be healed.

At this time Mr Owen was away, having gone for his holiday to the Continent.

That such changes should take place had gone much against the grain of her conservative nature.

And when he had first taken the fruit from the vineyard, having become merry, he drank even to intoxication, and lay naked.

Which he does likewise in the Epistle to the Galatians, saying, But he that troubles you shall bear his judgment, whosoever he be.

These dregs, however, fly off, in the motions above mentioned, along with what is good in the soul; for though it is mostly, it is not entirely good.

What excuse can be found for that insolence which classes the dead of whatever sort as equal with the gods?

On neither of these occasions did she say a word, but she assumed that little look of contradiction which her friends at Stalham already knew how to read.

Isis bewails, laments, and seeks after her lost son, with her Cynocephalus and her bald priests; and the wretched Isiacs beat their breasts, and imitate the grief of the most unhappy mother.

All minor debts were to be paid at once; an arrangement to which Mr Longestaffe cordially agreed, as it included a sum of £300 due to him for the rent of his house in Bruton Street.

But, you reply, you honour the gods with the carcasses of bulls, and by slaying other living creatures.

It had been understood from the first that he was to spend his Christmas at Courcy Castle.

It would not be possible to hang a man for a murder simply because he had fabricated a key,—even though he might possibly have obtained the use of a grey coat for a few hours.

But of all the sufferers Sir Thomas suffered the most.

But the ladies found it impossible to listen to her any longer, so with some difficulty they extricated themselves from the crowd by which they were surrounded, and once more shaking hands with those who were nearest to them escaped into the park, and made their way back towards the house.

And in the song in Deuteronomy, also, it is prophetically made known that, on account of the sins of the former people, there was to be an election of foolish nations, which has been brought to pass by no other than by Jesus.

Twenty thousand a year would not be necessary to make her a happy woman.

And then came his great fight with Dockwrath, which in the end ruined the Hamworth attorney, and cost Mr. Mason more money than he ever liked to confess.

[Romans 11:32] God has shut up all unto disobedience, that he might have mercy upon all.

Why are you eager to please either one who is suspicious, or else one who desires it not?

Deign, most excellent sir, to give us by him information of your excellency's precious health, and of the desired fulfilment of your promise.

How he fled to a monastery when his wife would not consent.

(And they make a similar application) of the loss (sustained) in the case of the one sheep out of the ninety and nine; and adding these one into the other, they give a fabulous account of numbers.

For he had a good report of you to me, and you will say these words to others, that they also who have either repented or will still repent may entertain the same feelings with you, and he may report well of these to me, and I to the Lord.

But the due gradation was kept between Sundays and weekdays.

There is a consciousness on the minds of leading politicians that the pressure from behind, forcing upon them great measures, drives them almost quicker than they can go, so that it becomes a necessity with them to resist rather than to aid the pressure which will certainly be at last effective by its own strength.

As, therefore, the entelecheia controls the body, so the Son, according to Basilides, controls the God that is more ineffable than ineffable (entities).

In Wisdom have You made them all ), a little afterwards mention is fitly made of the Holy Spirit also.

At Glenbogie something had been whispered to her about Tom and Ayala, but she had not believed much in it.

For there must be such an one, as it is impossible for the prophet to have spoken falsely.

Unto what a height does she lead up him that follows after her!

Historical as well as personal motives render the occasion of the deepest interest.

“I shall show the list to Gresham tomorrow,” said Ratler, “and of course he can do as he pleases; but I don’t understand this kind of thing.”

Observe again, the word must, here used, does not express necessity, but is declaratory of something which will certainly come to pass.

Thumble and Mr. Quiverful will simply be outvoted on the first day, and after that will give in their adhesion to the majority.” “Mr.

“I never dine out anywhere now,” said Crosbie. And then they walked out of the Park together. Neither of them, of course, knew that Lily Dale was staying at the house at which Fowler Pratt was going to dine.

For even if you are not able to remove the evil, yet contribute tears, and you will take the worst half away.

Proof that after the Incarnation our Lord Jesus Christ, was one Son.

envy, that dost begin by tearing yourself!

No one indeed save he himself— wherefore also Christ said I have power to lay down my life, and I have power to take it again, [John 10:18] and again Destroy this temple and in three days I will raise it up.

With this exception, the further he can go the better; but here also circumstances will clearly show him the spot.

George went in, shrugging his shoulders as his eyes met his sister’s. It was in this fashion that the reconciliation took place between Squire Vavasor and his heir.

And we know that at Oil City the flavour of petroleum must not be openly declared to be objectionable, and so it was with coal at Tankerville.

You may probably know that since Bishop Proudie came to the diocese I have exerted myself here a good deal and, I may certainly say, not without some success.

If a man call you a charioteer, or a dancer, you say that you have been insulted, and use every means to wipe off the affront; but if he draw you to be a spectator of the action, you do not start away, and the art whose name you shun, you almost in every case pursue.

As He gave us commandment: that we love one another.

Forasmuch then as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like gold, or silver, or stone, graven by art.

In the course of these battles Framley Court would sometimes assume a clerical aspect,—have a prevailing hue, as it were, of black coats, which was not altogether to the taste of Lord Lufton, and as to which he would make complaint to his wife, and to Mark Robarts, himself a clergyman. “There’s more of this than I can stand,” he’d say to the latter. “There’s a deuced deal more of it than you like yourself, I know.”

It was not right that a young woman should have to live in the house with two favoured lovers; nor, as regarded the young men, was it right that they should be allowed to go on glaring at each other.

On looking at the printed reports of the Commissioner and Magistrate for the division, made in 1874, 1875, and 1876, I find nothing but misfortune mentioned,—except in regard to the copper mines.’ “1874,” says the report for that year, “ has been a very bad year.” “ There has, so to say, been no corn in the land.” “ One person after thrashing out his corn obtained three pannicans.” Poor farmers!

We see, moreover, how they cry and struggle when they are baptized, and feel the divine sacraments.

Because for it they looked; and it came to meet them, even as they desired.

I’ve had no end of an argument with Father Malachi, and he’s got the best o’ me.

I shall be content with rational blessedness.

Then they, trusting in their ready-made trick, ordered the usual offering to be made, and the temple to be sealed up by the king, on the understanding that, unless on the following day the whole offering were found to have been consumed, they should suffer death, while, on the opposite being discovered, the same fate awaited Daniel.

“Yes;—ten times removed. But so much the better if he’s to be anything more than a cousin.”

“And what will be the good of your going on after that?”

They were also well instructed as to the country to be drawn, and usually had a word of import to say to the huntsman.

And, no doubt, this feeling went a long way with the giants.

The shops are of course open in the main streets of the town, but banks and counting-houses are closed, because the Jews will not do business on that day — so great is the preponderance of the wealth of Prague in the hands of that people!

At this time Athanasius, that victorious athlete of the truth, underwent another peril, for the devils could not brook the power of his tongue and prayers, and so armed their ministers to revile him.

You sinner, be of good cheer!

And he said these things both to check those, and to raise the spirits of these that they might not be ashamed at Paul's sufferings.

By this He means, in truth, that whatever the wicked prince of this world desired, and whatever he lusted after, he committed to writing through Moses, and by that medium gave it to men for their doing.

'Why, does he not know' (you say) 'that it is wrong?'

Because then that even to others yourselves are our commendation, we need no epistles from you; but further, because we love you exceedingly, we need no commendation to you.

And this rift must be traversed by the traveller.

At any rate it would not suit him to be afraid of his brother, and he went to the hotel.

The Walk Back to Hendon

Just so now the Evangelist has put the word as, desiring to represent the transcendent nature and incomparable excellence of His glory.

Then the Quaker returned with his news,—which was accepted by him and by them all as trustworthy. “Now my girl will be happy again?”

“Yes: I’ve got my mother.”

We shall therefore apply what is divinely spoken and acted to God the Word; on the other hand what is said and done in humility we shall connect with the form of a servant, lest we be tainted with the blasphemy of Arius and Eunomius.

Up to that time he had stood erect, and though as he walked his steps had shown that he was no longer young, he had walked with a certain air of strength and manly bearing.

He received indeed the affection of His mother, but sought not another's help.

“Oh, Fred!” said Nora.

For it is not possible for the man who clings strongly to the things of the present life really to lay hold on those in heaven, but he who is earnest about the one must needs lose the other.

“He has recuperative faculties which bring him round at last:—but I really doubt whether he was made for a politician in this country. You remember Lord Brock?”

By this Apostle stand the powers from above, marveling at the beauty of his soul, and his understanding, and the bloom of that virtue by which he drew unto him Christ Himself, and obtained the grace of the Spirit.

Be not then afraid, he says, as if transgressing the Law in having come over to the faith.

4. Therefore He said also, [Matthew 10:17-18]

These little lacerations of the spirit, not the deep wounds, make the difficulty.

Were I as happily placed as he is in being the possessor of a seat in the House of Commons, I too should hope that I might do something.

With what honor did He honor the disciple!

In this way we shall be able to receive a reward from Him who sees exactly all our doings, if we are content to have Him only for a spectator.

He does not sin who, unwittingly, afterwards partakes of food which he formerly refused because it had been offered to an idol.

Copy of an epistle in which the emperor commands another synod to be held for the purpose of removing all dissensions among the bishops.

Then we pursued an inquiry touching the power of God, whether it was sufficiently great to be habitually able to confer this restoration on a thing which had been destroyed.

All right, all right. They’re all here—mouth, chin, neck, figure and all.

But I have not extended my duty to obeying her in a matter in which my own future happiness is altogether bound up; and in which, perhaps, the happiness of another person may be slightly concerned.

That, and that only, was the point to which Sir John Joram found it necessary to give attention.

In the mean time, while it is taking possession of all, it has seemed good to the Husbandman to cut off some unprofitable branches, and they have made heresies and schisms.

Moreover, we forbid that the bishop have licence, without the consent of the abbot and presbyter, to remove from the same place any monk for promotion to an ecclesiastical order, or for any cause whatever, lest usurpation in this regard should be carried to such an extent that places which have to be built up by the acquisition of men be destroyed by their removal.

As for me, what shall I do, who, having no predecessor, have, as the saying is, the worst possible master, namely myself, and yet I must acknowledge that Eusebius Pamphilus in the ten books of his Church History has been of the utmost assistance, and the works of various among those of whom we are to write, often testify to the dates of their authors.

But the peculiar charm of that old man’s voice soon attracted him;—a voice that, though tremulous, was yet strong; and he ceased to regret the saint whose honour and glory had occasioned the length of that day’s special service.

“As you are my love of loves, she is my friend of friends.” Lady Mary had been satisfied by the assurance, but had become anxious to see the friend of friends.

“Wally,” she said, “we talk about England, and Italy, and France, as though we knew all about them; but how hard it is to realise the difference between one’s own country and others.”

You did not meet them anywhere.

It could not be permitted that she should marry Adolphe.

And Tappitt spoke too more than once,—as did also Luke Rowan, in spite of various noisy interruptions in which he was told that he was not an elector, and in spite also of an early greeting with a dead cat.

And you will be told the last rather.

If this be so,—if the necessity for going be so great, and the power of enjoying the journey be so rare, it must be worth our while to inquire into the matter, with the object of seeing whether the evil may not be in some degree remedied.

(a) And after three months we departed in a ship of Alexandria, which had wintered in the isle, whose sign was Castor and Pollux.

Peter felt that what was asked in such a way might be obtained, and that Christ's aid would not be wanting to the petitioners, since He Himself was clothed in the clothing of the widows.

If it be the Father— then we answer that the Father is not the Wisdom of God, for the Son is.

I will not begin by answering for myself, but first speak of the injury which you have here done to another.

These would be very glad to get any price in hand for land of which their tenure was so doubtful; and these were the men whom the “decemviri,” or ten magistrates, would be anxious to assist.

The Scriptures bear testimony to my words: When the children of Israel had crossed over the Sea of Suth, Moses and the children of Israel sang the praises of the Lord, and said: We will praise the Lord, because He is exceedingly to be praised.

“I do not want to be grand at all, and I never will be wise any more. Only do not frown at me and look savage.” Then she put up her hand to smooth his brow. “I am half afraid of you still, you know. There. That will do. Now let me go, that I may tell my aunt. During the last two months she has been full of pity for poor Lord Chiltern.”

Major Grantly proposed to call for him at “The Dragon,” and to take him on from thence to Hogglestock.

O death, where is your sting?

Wonderful was David who laid Goliah low with a single stone; but if you will examine Paul's achievements, that is a child's exploit, and great as is the difference between a shepherd and a general, so great the difference you shall see here.

On what ground then can his words be worthy of credit when he blames men who have only read quite a few of these books while their rule of faith is kept sacred and their piety unimpaired.

Philanthropy must put up with the fact, and justice must reconcile herself to it as best she may.

A certain widow who had several daughters, some married already and others of marriageable age, began to think of a second marriage for herself.

For if on the one hand you doubt that there is any power superintending the world, you are of all men the most senseless; but if you are persuaded of this, why doubt that it is our duty to please God?

But I am sure it will be better for my darling little Florian in every way; and as for myself, I have felt for the last two years how unfitted I have been to manage everything myself.

Is the picture a son of the painter, or the sword a son of the smith or the house a son of the architect?

Or if this too is doubted, every one allows that beetles, at least, are bred in the ball of mud which they make and bury.

For if Jesus had simply told His disciples to be on their guard against those who professed to work miracles, without declaring what they would give themselves out to be, then perhaps there would have been some ground for his suspicion.

Charity herself keeps watch; for it is none other than she that shall knock, she also that shall open: anon you shall understand in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

For neither had God left out anything of the things likely to recover him, nor did he leave out anything of those that would ruin him, and put him beyond any forgiveness.

And the same Apostle again exclaims, [1 Corinthians 15:58] 'Flesh and blood shall not inherit the Kingdom of God, nor shall corruption inherit incorruption.'

Constantius Augustus the Conqueror to Athanasius.

An innocent one I see that rather weeps than is angry.

He also loosened the tongues of the dumb, so that they discoursed and spoke eloquently.

I suppose that I have not been told the whole truth.” Then he stopped, as though in spite of his injunction as to her silence he expected an answer from her.

Commentary on the Gospel of John (Book IV)

Thus also the apostle says, that he who marries should be as though he married not, and deem his marriage free of inordinate affection, and inseparable from love to the Lord; to which the true husband exhorted his wife to cling on her departure out of this life to the Lord.

You do love me, don’t you?

And to the truth of these things all preceding time bears witness.

The honour of the Most High God, which cannot be divided or shared with another, is so lightly esteemed by him, that he cannot believe in the ability of God, if called upon and highly honoured, to give to those who serve Him a power by which they may be defended from the assaults directed by demons against the righteous.

Whatever counter-influence I may introduce among my own people, will be good and wholesome.

Mr Grimes was a stout man, not very tall, with a mottled red face, and large protruding eyes.

1 Corinthians 12:16

Let us beseech Him that He will not declare us unworthy of the gifts offered to us, and let us ourselves withal endeavor to contribute our own part, that we may teach not only by speaking, but by acting also.

For to this purport does David say: The earth is the Lord's, and the fullness thereof; the world, and all that dwell therein: He has founded it upon the seas, and on the streams has He established it.

As to this girl, who was so true to him, was he justified in supposing that she would be different from others, simply because she was true to him?

2. And when they were departed, behold, an angel appears to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and take the young Child and His mother, and flee into Egypt. [Matthew 2:13]

For it is just to ask them, whether the Word, when He was in God, was perfect, so as to be able to make.

For nothing is so productive of pleasure, as food well digested: nothing so [productive of] health: nothing [so productive of] acuteness of the faculties, nothing tends so much to keep away disease.

‘I dare say not,’ said the captain; ‘but take my word, she’ll never have him—Lord bless you, Norman knows that as well as I do.’

We are disposed to believe that Spenser might be named in the list; Bunyan’s Pilgrim’s Progress should be inserted; and De Foe’s writings, with the exception of Robinson Crusoe.

I could have done all the dirty work.

In depicting Anna Howe and her lover, Richardson has intended to be humorous, but even Mr. Dallas will not, we think, break a lance in defence of his author’s humour.

When doing this, he had doubtless not anticipated the grandeur to which he would soon rise, or the fact that he was about to embark on seas so dangerous that this little harbour of refuge would hardly offer security to his vessel.

“Never! Perhaps I shall live on; but I feel that it has killed me for this world. I don’t know how a girl is to get over it when she has said that she has loved any one. If they are married, then she does not want to get over it; but if they are not,—if he deserts her, or is unworthy, or both,—what can she do then, but just go on thinking of it till—she dies?”

This is not, however, an unanswerable objection, for the angels, who are like our souls invisible, have at times desired to appear in bodily forms and be seen, and (whatever might be the form of body worthy to be assumed by these spirits) they have appeared, for example, to Abraham [Genesis 18:6] and to Tobias.

And they prepared themselves for insult and stripes, and for blows,

I have not space here to tell how Hintsa, the Kafir chief, was shot down as he was attempting to escape from the British whom he had undertaken to guide through his country, or how the Kafirs were at last driven to sue for peace and to surrender the sovereignty of their country.

“Yes, sir,” said the Senator. “It’s about time, I guess, that I should get back to London.”

He must go,— because she ordered him, because the house was hers and not his, because he was no longer welcome there as a guest unless he would promise to abandon Bessy.

And He knew where Lazarus lay, and yet He asked; for the All-holy Word of God, who endured all things for our sakes, did this, that so carrying our ignorance, He might vouchsafe to us the knowledge of His own only and true Father, and of Himself, sent because of us for the salvation of all, than which no grace could be greater.

Wherefore speak they?

Could there be anything more moonstruck, more shandy, more wretchedly listless, than for a girl, a penniless girl, to indulge in dreams of an impossible lover, when such a tower of strength presented itself to her as was Mr Whittlestaff?

For this reason He exhibited the loneliness of one man, and the fervent faith and zeal of the other: for this reason He healed the one on the Sabbath, the other not on the Sabbath: in order that when you see them accusing and rebuking Christ on another day you may understand that they accused him on the former occasion also not because of their respect for the law, but because they could not contain their own malice.

“What are they, Lord George?”

Christ Himself, who was Peter's Master in the doctrine which leads to eternal life, is our Master too.

Only see what a name Paul had got!

And if you are not aware how exceedingly amiss this is, look at it as among men, and then you will fully know the greatness of the sin. As thus: if a servant of yours had been commanded by you to go to another servant, who had money of yours, to receive it, and were to come back not only with empty hands, but also with despiteful usage; what would you not do to him that had wrought the insult? What penalty would you not exact, as though, after this, it were yourself that had been ill used?

“But they are not vermin. They are men;—and till they have been found guilty they are innocent men.”

The Phrygians, however, assert, he says, that he is likewise a green ear of grain reaped.

And Peter said: You recognise only his voice, which is unaffected by magic; but as my eyes also are unaffected by magic, I can see his form as it really is, that he is not Simon, but your father Faustus.

Chapter 13. Concerning Pleasures.

“I never undertook it. I wouldn’t have done it at the price,—or for any price. I never felt for him the respect or the love that were due to a father. I did feel both of them, to the full, for my own father. They are a sort of a thing which we cannot transfer.”

What is this then, He makes wars to cease unto the end of the earth?

Still it might have been better that he should have gone.

As he turned the bundle of documents round in his hand, he made up his mind that he had not done enough.

His face became red up to the roots of his hair as he stood looking at her without answering. “You would grant it certainly,” she continued, “if you knew how much it would be valued.”

Doubt not then for your life if you have righteousness, for righteousness is greater than life as being mother of it.

She was basely born—as basely born as any lady could be.

So they’re making hay still.

For you know (he says) how that afterward, when he would have inherited the blessing, he was rejected.

It is necessary therefore that the mind should continue forever, if the science continues forever.

And hence it happened that even Holy Scripture, which brings a remedy for the terrible diseases of the human will, being at first set forth in one language, by means of which it could at the fit season be disseminated through the whole world, was interpreted into various tongues, and spread far and wide, and thus became known to the nations for their salvation.

Only let us understand each other.

He had been courteous also to Lopez, and Emily, amidst the pleasure of his welcome, had forgotten some of her troubles.

The course of the tormentor stirs you up to cry out against your brother.

“Well, Denis, and what fortune are you to get? You are not the man would take a wife unless she brought something with her.”

With slow step she made her way across the green, hardly daring to look to the door of the cottage.

I in like manner have wandered for a long time, by giving attendance upon heathen fanes, my parents themselves being ignorant.

With women, and children, and maid-servants, they sang hymns to God, made purer than the sky by affliction.

For in the case of Adam, the father of all, this expression is used not only when Cain, who seems to have been his first-born, was conceived, but also afterwards the same Scripture says, Adam knew Eve his wife, and she conceived, and bare a son, and called his name Seth.

“Why; I do it every other day of my life. And I never think of sending for Martha Biggs; I promise you that.”

“Has she? And what could you say to her?”

And afterwards when he came to Jordan, all the cities were set on the wing, and came to him from Jerusalem, and from all Judæa, to be baptized.

Or else, why does not His flesh, since it is like ours, return in like manner to the ground, and suffer dissolution?

And because He had said that He had come down for this purpose, that He might do the will of His Father; among the other marvels of His virtues, whereby He showed forth the marks of a divine majesty, He also maintained the patience of His Father in the constancy of His endurance.

Then when a panic comes, don’t you see how it hits?

To Camilla Spondi intimation was given of the contents of the Earl’s will as far as they concerned her; but she was told at the same time that no portion of the dead man’s wealth would be placed in her hands till the courts should have decided whether or no the old lord had been sane or insane when he signed the document.

Chapter XXIX. Riding Home

They both were sure that Daniel Thwaite had been much the worse for drink,—a statement which led to considerable confusion.

For those members which seem to be more feeble are much more necessary and require greater care and attention.

A corrupt tree will never yield good fruit, unless the better nature be grafted into it; nor will a good tree produce evil fruit, except by the same process of cultivation.

“I must at any rate write a letter to Mary Snow,” he said.

And his unrestrained madness and blind wickedness has deservedly brought contempt and disrepute on himself, so that while he rages against the holy church of Alexandria with diabolical purpose, men may learn the character of those who desire to reconsider the Synod of Chalcedon.

“I’m sure she doesn’t think you right.”

For it is not wicked, but is both beautiful and a token of the wisdom and power and lovingkindness of God.

Was he not easy to find?

And if any be brilliant in speech, they do not praise him alone but likewise the whole Church.

For since the Head sits, the body sits also with it, and therefore he adds in Christ Jesus.

But this it were utter folly to say.

He had declined the first invitation given to him by Theodore Burton; but he could not altogether avoid his future brother-in-law, and had agreed to dine with him on this day.

Ve would have our little holiday in Germany at Vienna.

Many have I seen with a richer lip, with a more luxurious curve, much more tempting as baits to the villainy and rudeness of man; but never one that told so much by its own mute eloquence of a woman’s happy heart and a woman’s happy beauty.

If so be, he says, that it is a righteous thing with God to punish these, he will certainly punish them.

“It is all true, then?”

Trade, also, was no doubt injured by the disturbance in the country, and the circulation of letters was, as a matter of course, to some degree affected by this injury; but it seems that the gross revenue of 1861 was less than that of 1860 by only one thirty-sixth.

We presume that Chrysogonus had the greater part of the plunder.

Why then should his engagement with another woman have any effect with her either in one direction or in the other?

[Philippians 4:11-14] Lo!

But he was unhappy, saturnine, and generally silent except when closeted with his ancient mentor.

Pitiable indeed seemed the condition of this poor man, from the extreme weakness of his soul in the matter of the Faith, to all true members of the Church; for who is so wanting in feeling as not to pity, at least, a perishing soul?

For it was only right that Christians should shine in the world as children of light, adoring and invoking Him who is the One God and Lord as the light of the world.

Nay, more: Brethren, (he adds), I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing (I do), forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, I press toward the mark for the prize of blamelessness, whereby I may attain it; meaning the resurrection from the dead in its proper time.

John Eames saw nothing more of Lily Dale till he packed up his portmanteau, left his mother’s house, and went to stay for a few days with his old friend Lady Julia; and this did not happen till he had been above a week at Guestwick.

Happy, therefore, so to say, alone are all those with one accord—

For while so many and such important ecclesiastical documents were passing and repassing between the Apostolical See and the African bishops, — and,moreover, when the proceedings in this matter in that see were completed, with Cœlestius present and making answer—what sort of a letter, what decree, is found of Pope Zosimus, of venerable memory, wherein he prescribed that it must be believed that man is born without any taint of original sin?

Can we, in short, suppose, that to render the sea firm as the solid ground, to still the raging of the storm, and finally to ascend to heaven, after turning the unbelief of men to steadfast faith by the performance of these wondrous acts, demanded less than almighty power, was less than the work of God?

Do you remember Constance Vane?

And He said unto me, Turn you again, and you shall see greater enormities which these do.

For of a truth the jealous God Himself rebukes the woman who commits fornication against Him, as the type of an erring people, and says that she gave to her lovers what belonged to Him, and again received from them what was not theirs but His.

He, with two others, has a claim for thirty-five thousand pounds, for which he has given but ten thousand pounds in hard cash, and he thinks that he may get some profit out of Tyrrwhit’s money, and holds out.

Unhappy men!

One had shot a bird, and another a hare; and the most triumphant of the number had slaughtered a very fat monkey of a peculiarly blue colour about his hinder quarters.

“And why not? Just because you’d be a tyrant,—like other husbands? What’s the harm of looking fast, if one doesn’t do anything improper? Poor Dandy, and dear Flirt! I’m sure they’d like it.”

But they are good-humoured, anxious to oblige, offended at nothing, and extremely honest.

It is so in truth, he said, O Africanus, for the same gate was open to Hercules; as though he himself had been doorkeeper in heaven at the time when this took place.

It is that city, that only, which still sustains all things; and the God of heaven is to be entreated by us and implored— if, indeed, His arrangements and decrees can be delayed— lest, sooner than we think for, that detestable tyrant should come who will undertake so great a deed, and dig out that eye, by the destruction of which the world itself is about to fall.

Then they say: If Moses is believed on account of his word and his works, and has no need of any witnesses to announce him beforehand, and if the prophets were received, every one of them, by these people, as messengers from God, how should not one who is much greater than Moses and the prophets accomplish His mission and benefit the human race, without prophets to bear witness about Him?

Indeed, it was for this that intelligent beings came into existence; namely, that the riches of the Divine blessings should not lie idle.

She liked the idea, and she had grown to be very sick of the necklace.

Does he mention this saying of Jesus?

“Lady Eustace,” said Mr. Camperdown, putting his hand on the carriage-door, and so demeaning himself that the coachman did not dare to drive on, “I must ask you a question.” He spoke in a low voice, but he was speaking across Miss Macnulty. That lady, therefore, heard him, and so did William, the servant, who was standing close to the door. “I must insist on knowing where are the Eustace diamonds.” Lizzie felt the box beneath her feet, and, without showing that she did so, somewhat widened her drapery.

That he may be able both to exhort, and to convince the gainsayers.

“And how happy I shall be to take you again to see it! But before we go it is necessary that I should say one thing.”

It is for this reason that we have the hope of the common resurrection for the race will assuredly share with its first fruits, and as we have shared with Adam in his death, so too with Christ our Saviour shall we be sharers in His life.

“Yes; I hope we shall.”

It need hardly be pointed out here that this was a branch of trade for which he was peculiarly unsuited, and that his productions would be stale, inadequate, and unattractive.

And having arisen the old man wept.

It knows nothing of the Depth and Silence and the thrice ten æons of Valentinus.

If this had been his object, certainly the place had been well selected.

As some people resolve that, under certain circumstances, they will commit suicide, so she could see that, under certain circumstances, she must consent even to be separated from him.

Phineas, not quite understanding the nature of the offer, and not as yet knowing the profession of the gentleman, gave some general reply.

“It can make no difference,” she said.

I will not say much of my own deserts towards you,—which are indeed less as yet than I had wished or you had expected.” Then, having thus declared that he will not speak of himself, he does venture to say a few words on the sub

I could speak no foreign language,—and I may as well say here as elsewhere that I never acquired the power of really talking French.

But after few tribulations, or none, these shall come to tribulation everlasting, whence they shall never be delivered: but the righteous after many tribulations shall come to peace everlasting, where they shall never suffer any evil.

Petilianus said: "Come therefore to the Church, all you people, and flee the company of traditors, if you would not also perish with them.

Chapter 3.— Among Signs, Words Hold the Chief Place.

“What,” he says, in opening his argument, ”does it become me, a Tullius, to do for this other Tullius, a man not only my friend, but my namesake?” It was a matter of no great importance, as it was addressed to judges not so called, but to “recuperatores,” judges chosen by the Prætor, and who acted in lighter cases.

For the affliction was not natural, but the device of the evil spirit; wherefore also he needs others to bring him. For he could neither make entreaty himself, being speechless, nor supplicate others, when the evil spirit had bound his tongue, and together with his tongue had fettered his soul.

He would be one of the smallest, one of the least of those who would fight the good fight; but, though smallest and least, he would do it with what earnestness was in him.

Wherefore he said not 'largess ,' nor 'supply ,' but 'ministry.'

She had not asked permission to have Mr. Saul for a lover.

Exposition on the Acts of the Apostles

“Yes, Sir;” said the servant. “He says he has a letter which he must put into your own particular hands.”

They, too, heard the crackle of the buckram, and were aware that the last touch of awe had come upon that brow just as its owner was emerging from the shadow of the Speaker’s chair;—but to them it was a thing of course.

And perhaps this man is more culpable who, so far as it rests with him, makes her an adulteress when he does not satisfy her desires than he who, for other reason than fornication, has sent her away—for poisoning or murder or any of the most grievous sins.

It cannot be said, he says, that we indeed do all things unblamably, but you on the other hand have done things unworthy of our course of life.

But since we quoted the language of Paul regarding Christ, where He says of Him that He is the brightness of the glory of God, and the express figure of His person, let us see what idea we are to form of this.

But Cousin George went down to Norfolk altogether in high feather.

He would not let her starve.

Because the condition of the one is not the same as that of the other.

Their heads are shaved, and their faces covered with short, grisly, fierce beards.

Let no one, therefore, lead you astray with the empty words of error.

Mrs. Baxter and Mrs. Draper never spoke to each other.

Such was the condition of things when Frank first met Gertrude Tringle at Rome, now considerably more than twelve months since.

Letter 244

“Yes; I shall come down for Easter, I think,—or at any rate at Whitsuntide.”

For what was death to Him?

“Nonsense! you will of course go back to your husband.”

The leaders of this view seem to me to have given very little heed to these things, and for that reason to have strayed absolutely, by explaining the passage otherwise than as the divine and prophetic Scripture demands.

But those who have not seen the self-determination of the human soul, and its incapability of being treated as a slave in what respects the choice of life, being disgusted at what is done through rude injustice, do not think that there is a God.

But you long for justice on the earth, while the worship of false gods continues, which cannot possibly come to pass.

Had he been alone with the doctor, he would, I think, have told him the whole of his trouble; for in all the county there was no man whom he would sooner have trusted with his secret.

“A father generally has to do that whether he approves of what his son is about or not,” said the caustic old gentleman.

Thirdly, To whom it is, and whence?]

For sometimes fountains run even in darkness; and sometimes in the desert you suffer the sun, findest no fountain: here then can these two be separated: there you shall not be wearied, for there is a Fountain; there you shall not be darkened, for there is Light.

Sickness, poverty, obscurity, death, finally all human afflictions, ought not to be ranked as evils; since we do not count among the greatest boons things which are their opposites.

And the end of both is death.

He likewise attacked certain sentiments of Cyril, bishop of Alexandria, unwisely delivered by Cyril against Nestorius, which now are an encouragement and give strength to the Timotheans. He is said to be still living and preaching.

But it was said by some there, especially by Mrs. Bonteen, that the conversation between them was not slow.

From this founder, therefore, there began to be two kinds of philosophy: one the old one, which claims to itself knowledge; the other a new one, opposed to the former, and which detracts from it.

And of course you must answer that truly—that you were doing so.

“I will remember nothing of the kind,” said Herbert. “Am I to set myself up as a judge and say that this is pitch and that is pitch? Do you remember St. Peter on the housetop? Was not he afraid of what was unclean?”

In His name let us ask, and through Him let us seek mercy of the Father while making this inquiry.

So far you have triumphed, leaving scores of men behind; but of what good is all that, if you also are to be left behind at the last?

Gregory to Cyprian, Deacon and Rector of Sicily.

Not for this was the night made, that we should sleep all through it and be idle.

“Yes, Sophia, I am a beggar,” the letter went on to say.

It probably never occurred to her, even at the present time, to say to herself that he was certainly that thing, so impossible of definition, and so capable of recognition; but she knew that she had to do with one whose presence was always pleasant to her, whose words and acts towards her extorted her approbation, whose thoughts seemed to her to be always good and manly.

“I am not joking at all. She is a daughter of old Furnival’s, whom by-the-by I hate as I do poison. Why my governor has him down at Noningsby I can’t guess. But I tell you what, old fellow, he can give his daughter five-and-twenty thousand pounds. Think of that, Master Brook.” But Felix Graham was a man who could not bring himself to think much of such things on the spur of the moment, and when he was introduced to Sophia, he did not seem to be taken with her in any wonderful way.

No one, therefore, can know God unless he apprehends the Son; for the Son is the wisdom by whose instrumentality all things have been created; and these created objects declare this wisdom, and God is recognised in the wisdom.

Again in this passage: The Son of God began to be also the Son of man, not being changed from what He was, for He is unchangeable, but taking to Himself what He was not: for He is pitiful so that He, who could not be embraced, can now be embraced.

These horrid men that sat around him,—how he hated them!

For if God's grace is limited to this that He has formed us with wills of our own, and if we are to rest content with free will, not seeking the divine aid lest this should be impaired, we should cease to pray; for we cannot entreat God's mercy to give us daily what is already in our hands having been given to us once for all.

What I did say was this,—that I don’t feel inclined to risk my own reputation on the appearance of new people at my table.

“Your governor finds that it succeeds in the county,” said one.

For he seems to have made them simply that they might harmonize with what he had said before; but they have no reference to us.

“But if she can’t have her own way altogether—” Then the son paused, and the father shook his head.

You have both the time in which marriage is permitted, and the time in which it is said to be unsuitable, laid before you, not on their own account, but in consequence of an inquiry about the resurrection.

Let any, however, who are disposed to hear us observe, that if we have need of a body for other purposes, as for occupying a material locality to which this body must be adapted, and if on that account the tabernacle is clothed in the way we have shown, we have no need of a body in order to know God.

Since then that blessed man was of such a character, and apostolic grace was committed to him, he wrote, wishing 'that all men should be as he was [1 Corinthians 7:7].'

Bertram however denied this.

What then were the woodland plains, save nations yet untilled?

“Since you do ask me about it, I suppose there’s no harm in saying that I believe him to be a very poor man.”

“It can’t be fit for you to go about and fetch witnesses; and it won’t make it more fit because she is a pretty young woman who has lost her character.” “Honi soit qui mal y pense,” said the Vicar.

Then there was a voice in his ear.

In Heaven, on the right hand of the Father, occupying the highest throne of glory; where are the blasphemous words of the Emperor, and his unchastened tongue?

“‘Deed, thin, and I don’t jist know—not exactly;” and sinking lower down upon her haunches, she put up to her forehead the hand with which she had supported herself on the floor—the hand which was not occupied with the baby, and pushing back with it the loose hairs from her face, tried to make an effort at thinking.

Nor did he on that account resign all hope.

And so is it with this blessed man; for these pangs were more severe in proportion as the force of his affection was stronger.

Indeed in the hope of establishing their impiety there was no law that they did not fearlessly transgress; illegality was becoming the very foundation of their blasphemy; nor was this an isolated specimen of their irregular proceedings.

It had been dull and sombre enough.

But nothing more was told her.

Don’t tell me; where is it to come from?

I first remark, that strangers, and persons unconnected by ties of relationship, are not usually invited to a supper; but that members of the household and family are more frequently the favoured guests.

For instance; To live in poverty, many account disgraceful: and we flee poverty, not because it is disgraceful nor because we are so persuaded, but because our masters count it disgraceful; and we fear them.

He was terribly angry both with me and with you; but the fact is, he is so blindly unreasonable that one cannot regard his anger.

I pass, accordingly, to the points which remain.

“I can’t understand, for the life of me, why you should not live together just like any other people,” said Mrs. Outhouse, whose woman’s spirit was arising in her bosom. “When people are married, they must put up with something;—at least, most always.” This she added, lest it might be for a moment imagined that she had had any cause for complaint with her Mr. Outhouse.

But the hope that a certain woman’s name would have to be mentioned, crammed it from the floor to the ceiling.

Then the praise also, before the rewards, is exceeding great.

But, in the teeth of this embargo on colored men, the constitution of Pennsylvania asserts broadly that all men are born equally free and independent.

No good results to us from these bonds, but even harm.

But it was not so in Cicero’s time; and this was the way he took to sing the praises of his own profession and to magnify his own glory.

“ In England 1” the lady repeated.

[Acts v] How closely do the sin and punishment correspond in each case!

A just man?

Now all these rules, except the one about the promises and the law, make one meaning to be understood where another is expressed, which is the peculiarity of figurative diction; and this kind of diction, it seems to me, is too widely spread to be comprehended in its full extent by any one.

“I don’t see that at all,” said the angry lord.

Then David delivered himself over on behalf of his sheep, when he prayed, saying:— O Lord God, I have sinned in that I have numbered Israel.

“I’ve got something I’d better show you,” she said, as she seated herself by her husband’s sofa. Then she proceeded to read to him the letter, without telling him as she did so that it was anonymous. When he had heard the first paragraph he demanded to know the name of the writer. “I’d better read it all first,” said the Marchioness. And she did read it all to the end, closing it, however, without mentioning the final “WellWisher.” “Of course it’s anonymous,” she said, as she held the letter in her hand.

Let there be good things without number, but what is the benefit— be it wealth, be it luxury— without friendship?

Yet have these infatuated and wretched persons, endued with an unhappy disposition, again had the temerity to declare themselves the propagators of false doctrine, and even endeavor to subvert the constitution of the Church.

‘Well;—that might come after a time. But I think you would have the feeling of the community with you if you succeeded;—well, not violence, you understand.’

But nevertheless there was but one thing in the whole world which in Marie’s eyes was of any value; and that one thing was the heart of Adolphe Bauche. Without that she would be nothing; with that,—with that assured, she could wait patiently till doomsday.

She went up to London, where she again took and furnished a house, from which my remaining sister was married and carried away into Cumberland.

This was almost a fib on the part of the archdeacon, for Mrs. Grantly has a very nice school.

And again, unless the human race have the power of avoiding evil and choosing good by free choice, they are not accountable for their actions, of whatever kind they be.

The crow, they say, knows God, and the raven likewise, and they possess gifts of prophecy, and foretell the future; there is justice among them, and polity, and laws.

Think of the worm that dies not, and you will easily both put away from you this disease, and in all other things wilt do virtuously.

“That wouldn’t suit me at all,” said Frank.

He did not say, 'for I love you,' but uses a term far more vehement than this.

There had been many objections to the writing of such a letter, but there appeared to be stronger objection to that telling it face to face which would have been forced upon her had she not written.

And He will appear in His glory.

And for this reason she was thought worthy to become a partaker of the kingdom of the Only-begotten, being betrothed and united to Him.

Doubtless the illustrious and noble justice of the Romans had its beginning from the very cradle of the growing empire.

For we must give thanks to God for the good that befalls others, as that He makes the sun to shine upon the evil and the good, and sends His rain both upon the just and the unjust.

If you deceive your attorney with false facts he cannot bring you before the magistrates.

The argument is interwoven with a spirited appeal to the Eastern bishops to return to that faith as expressed at Nicæa.

Harry could not but show it to his father, and in an hour or two it became known to his mother and sister, and, under an oath of secrecy, to Joshua Thoroughbung.

And therefore she received no small reward for this her great zeal.

For such an one, wandering about like some vagabond, is transfixed by any wickedness; and like a child let loose, any one that likes makes such a soul his slave.

And for this reason too the Apostles do not answer them with defiance ([θρασέως]): for they were teachers.

I am not speaking of the blasphemy of saying these things about the nature of God which is thus fettered.

I must so live that I must clearly seem to be, and always have been, the very opposite of this man, not only in my words and deeds, but as to that arrogance and impudence which you see in him.” Then he shows how opposite he is to Verres at any rate, in impudence!

222. You see then that this matter has been solved for you, since the saying of the Son is referred to the assumption of our state in its fullness, and it was thus written concerning the Father, in order that you might cease to cavil at the Son.

That he had been found dead that morning had been already announced.

“I am,” said the Duchess.

But what a great thing it is that angels because of incontinence fell from heaven into this world, that virgins because of chastity passed from the world into heaven.

And sundry other books of the philosophers may one see full of this disease.

He spoke a word of the danger which might come from luxury, and of the discontent which would be felt when the girl returned to her own home.

I entered into your dwelling, and you gave me not water to wash my feet: but this [6] woman has bathed my feet with her tears, and dried them with her hair.

Mr. Gibson had not been at the house for some days, but the notes had been going and coming.

The Duke was a man with whom it was very easy to work, whose courtesy to all dependent on him was almost exaggerated, who never found fault, and was anxious as far as possible to do everything for himself.

Wherefore Paul continually says, Lest any of you be hardened by the deceitfulness of sin.

The former are for the most part converted by arguments of reasoning; the latter sometimes better by examples.

“Well, yes; it is about Mary. You mustn’t be a woman, Harry, or let a woman make you seriously wretched.”

Lord de Courcy we left suffering dreadfully from gout and ill-temper at Courcy Castle.

What reason was there to induce me to write to such a man?

Were he simply to assent to this latter proposition, it could not be but that the feminine nature of Miss Demolines would be outraged by so uncomplimentary an acquiescence.

You see how Daniel interpreted to Nabuchodonosor the dominion of the kingdoms; you see how he explained the form of the image in all its parts; you have observed how he indicated prophetically the meaning of the coming up of the four beasts out of the sea. It remains that we open up to you the things done by the Antichrist in particular; and, as far as in our power, declare to you by means of the Scriptures and the prophets, his wandering over the whole earth, and his lawless advent.

But a young man had now spoken to her, to Linda,—had spoken to her words that she did not dare to repeat to any one,—had spoken to her twice, thrice, and she had not rebuked him.

With the man of whom we are about to speak conscience was strong.

He has no instinct in politics, but reaches his conclusions by philosophical deduction.

As though He needed anything: since even those (acts of worship) He did not in this sort seek, as having need.

He had never spoken of his love to his friends at Normansgrove.

This victory was achieved in the seventh year of the conqueror's reign.

For continence is not a good thing, except when it is practised in the faith of the highest good, that is, God.

But the great principle was there, and there had come another eloquent man, who had also been in America; and Kit Mooney was now a confirmed Landleaguer.

On Nature and Grace

“It ain’t nonsense to me, I can tell you. I’d sooner have a kiss from you than all the wine as ever was swallowed.” Then she did kiss him, “as though she meant it;” and when she returned with him to Bungay the next day, she had made up her mind that she would endeavour to do her duty by him as his wife.

Every hard word hurled at Antony, and every note of praise heard in return, was evidence to him of his own power.

“She thinks that my Griselda would make the best possible wife in the world for her son: and I think so too. I think that her son will be a very fortunate man if he can get such a wife. And now what do you think, Griselda?”

I see nothing but bones, and a worm, and a spider's web; all those things are earth, all those a fable, all a dream, and a shadow, and a bare relation, and a picture, or rather not so much as a picture.

“To me! What can you have to say to me?”

He was consequently always at Belton a full hour before the time, and though Clara was well aware of all this, she could not help herself.

“And for your energies that is a good deal. Only think that you should have been doing anything for two hours before you begin to feed.”

It begins: Sing ye to the Lord a new song.

But why did the Holy Ghost come to them, not while Christ was present, nor even immediately after his departure, but, whereas Christ ascended on the fortieth day, the Spirit descended when the day of Pentecost, that is, the fiftieth, was fully come?

To have assisted in putting an end to this, even in one town, was to a certain extent a satisfaction.

And on the afternoon of the Sunday a new grievance, a very terrible grievance, was added to those which Mrs. Trevelyan was made to bear.

These (words of his) will be in duty bound alike to serve as a prescriptive rule for the foregone, and a prejudgment for the following, (parts of the Epistle).

“But there are not many like him, thank God,” said Mrs. Outhouse, bridling in her wrath.

Chapter 1. The Opinions of Hermogenes, by the Prescriptive Rule of Antiquity Shown to Be Heretical. Not Derived from Christianity, But from Heathen Philosophy. Some of the Tenets Mentioned

It was, however, your undoubted right to turn her out of your house if you thought fit;—though, as a woman who had known her for so many years, you might, I think, have treated her with more forbearance.

There is much of this which is quite independent of love—much of it that may be done without love.

Should they say, Whatsoever is sold in the shambles, ought that to be bought?

For if the force of this emotion which is called anger be blunted, all the evil contentions of men will be lulled to rest; no one will plot, no one will rush forth to injure another.

Well now, what is it which St. Ambrose has here condemned in the true doctrine of this deliverance?— is it the goodness of marriage, or not rather the worthless opinion of these heretics, although they had not then come upon the stage?

But after that the kindness and love of God our Saviour towards man appeared, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost, which He shed upon us richly, we became such as we are.

A man in his misery thinks much of his misery; but as soon as he is out of it it is forgotten, or becomes matter for mirth.

We are unhappy, for either we suffer ourselves or we see our brethren suffer.

Under no circumstances is the President to decree what shall be done.

Oppius was called on to defend himself against the Proconsul with whom he had served.

The men concerned had been too well known to them to allow their minds to become clear of the subject.

So also the worship of demons is contrary to the divine worship, baptism to baptism, laws to the law, false apostles to apostles, and false teachers to teachers.

But the Lord, though He spoke oftentimes many things modestly, and beneath His own glory, what says He here, to establish the doctrine of them that were amazed at Him for His authority?

So also in the Church, if you have slighted your neighbor, you have injured yourself.

“Never mind about lawyers now,” said Dr Thorne, angrily.

“I hope he will,” said Sir Thomas, “if he is of our way cf thinking, otherwise I should be sorry to ask him.” Still Mr. Pabsby said nothing;—but he smiled very sweetly, and laid his head a little lower.

As he shut himself up in his own room he grieved inwardly with a deep grief.

Wherefore, seeing that we do not admit that any particle is so small as to be insusceptible of further diminution, what compels us to admit that any assemblage of parts is so great that it cannot possibly be increased?

“Just to pay their respects to the King, and, perhaps, to lend us a hand in driving those Jacobins out of Paris—that’s all. Till that’s done the King is to live at Saumur.”

He has given unto reproach those that trampled on me.

John 18:26

Who do you think is to come running after a moping slut like you?” Then Mary gathered herself up and left the room, feeling that she could not live in the house if she were to be called a slut.

Wherefore also He says that He will appear on the Judgment Day in the glory of the Father [Mark 8:38], when He will render to every man according to his works.

And only the Holy Spirit proceeds from the Father's essence, not having been generated but simply proceeding.

Two qualities remain, their liability to passion, and their eternity—the first of which they have in common with men, the second with the gods; so that they are neither wafted to the highest nor depressed to the lowest extreme, but perfectly poised in their intermediate position.

Your own wickedness shall reprove you, and your apostasy shall rebuke you.

“I’m sorry, sir, to find you in this way,” he said.

“Is it, mamma?”

Then he turns himself to her, O daughter of Babylon, unhappy; unhappy in your very exulting, your presumption, your enmity; unhappy daughter of Babylon!

“Not in the least. Who could ask more, madam, than to bask in such sunshine as yours from year’s end to year’s end?”

Money, position, rank are worth the having—at any rate, the world thinks so, or why else do they so scramble for them?

These, not verity but vanity has made goddesses.

It was current among the filibusters that the logs of wood had been laden with gunpowder in order to effect this damage.

A more wretched day than that I never spent in my life.

I did no more than my duty in conveying to Sir Thomas Charleys my conviction,—my well-grounded conviction,—as to the gentleman’s conduct.

[John 6:40] But in fixing the order of the Church's faith, and basing our faith upon the Father and the Son, he has uttered the mystery of that indivisible and indissoluble unity and faith in the words one God and one Lord.

But there is not a word in what he says in which an ordinary Englishman does not sympathize.

Is mine a narrow fold?

Let him interdict or extinguish friendly affection; let him burst with ruthless insensibility the bonds of every human relationship; or let him contrive so to use them that no sweetness shall distil into his spirit.

And though these memoirs are written with the express view of advocating a theory of trade founded on quite a different basis, nevertheless, it may be admitted that Mr. Brisket’s view of commerce has its charms, presuming that a man has the wherewithal.

In his time the Jews accused Herod; but he put the deputies to death, and restored Herod to his government.

Money had been paid away,—on his behalf, as alleged by Mr. Gazebee,—like running water; money for furniture, money for the lease of a house, money when he had been separated from his wife, money while she was living abroad.

That love not only makes sons out of servants, but also bestows the image and likeness of God.

“That’s nonsense, Mr. Clavering. My falsehood, if you should choose to call me false, is of a very different nature, and is pardonable by all laws known to the world.”

But if she should be firmer than we think, if there should be in her bosom a greater power of resistance than we expect, should she dash herself too violently against the cage,—then you must let her go.’ That was intended to be the gist of the advice given, though it perhaps was not so accurately expressed.

To Boniface, Bishop.

There is plain perception of one thing dwelling in another, namely the divine nature in manhood, without undergoing commixture or any confusion, or any change into what it was not.

Are you unable to fast?

I speak foolishly, [2 Corinthians 11:23] but it shall be said, in these pursuits I was perhaps not inferior to many.

But from my childhood I have done all that I could to attain them.

The latter was there first by some minutes, and explained to Mr. Hartlepod that he had come there to meet his son-in-law.

He was a thin-minded, plodding, respectable man, willing to devote all his youth to work, in order that in old age he might be allowed to sit among the Councillors of the State.

But, say those astrologers, whatever be the virtue of the horoscope in other respects, it is certainly of significance with respect to birth.

Among its other contributors were George Lewes, Hannay,—who, I think, came up from Edinburgh for employment on its columns,—Lord Houghton, Lord Strangford, Charles Merivale, Greenwood the present editor, Greg, myself, and very many others;—so many others, that I have met at a Pall Mall dinner a crowd of guests who would have filled the House of Commons more respectably than I have seen it filled even on important occasions.

Not the same, so that Himself is Father, Himself Son, Himself Spirit [one and the selfsame Person but because both the Father and the Son are the same Power.

Mary knew that she, herself, was beautiful.

The power of moving was exercised before the means of moving were supplied.

Frank, some month or six weeks since, in a moment of soft confidence, had told his friend of his engagement with Lucy Morris.

He knew that he was playing on the edge of a precipice—that he was fluttering as a moth round a candle.

[Jeremiah 7:23] This is the invitation of God.

[3] [Matthew 23:36] Verily I say unto you, All these things shall come upon this generation.

“What I mean is this: can you give me your word that these young people do not intend to do anything rash? One word like that from you will set my mind quite at rest. And then we could be so happy together again.”

In one respect, certainly.

Two days after the dinner, George Bertram called in Eaton Square and saw Lady Harcourt; but, as it happened, she was not alone. Their interview on this occasion was not in any great degree embarrassing to either of them. He did not stay long; and as strangers were present, he was able to talk freely on indifferent subjects. Lady Harcourt probably did not talk much, but she looked as though she did.

But it was not found that "hence grew more abundant heresies and schisms," because what is of Christ in them is approved, and what is of themselves is condemned; for all the more those who hold this law of rebaptizing were cut into smaller fragments.

Man did eat angels' bread.

He then describes (17, 18) how the orthodox bishops were beguiled into accepting the creed of Ariminum, but afterwards saw their error (19).

“No, Mr Maguire; no right; certainly none as yet.”

Pat Carroll had been before the magistrates at Headford, and had been discharged, as all evidence was lacking to connect him with the occurrence.

And what is His Shield, what are His Arms?

As if dead bodies could be buried elsewhere than in the ground!

[2 Corinthians 3:10] For when you see the Lord sacrificed, and laid upon the altar, and the priest standing and praying over the victim, and all the worshippers empurpled with that precious blood, can you then think that you are still among men, and standing upon the earth?

She was too clever to forget that such plainness of speech would be, must be more difficult to Lady Laura than to herself.

What when we shall have grown greater?

For from that time it has been a sort of excellent haven for all who have sinned, not suffering them to sink into desperation, but calling all to repentance; and by what it did, and by what it obtained of God's favour, persuading men never to despair of their salvation, but exhibiting the best life they can, and setting before them a good hope, to be confident of the issue as destined in any wise to be favourable.

he left behind him were obeyed we do not know; but we may imagine that the tribute exacted was not sent to Rome with great punctuality. In fact, Caesar invaded the island twice, but did not reduce it.

And what is this opening of the hand but the process of civilization—yes, my friends, the process of civilization?

The Synod at Ariminum first commenced proceedings; it consisted of about four hundred members.

For the voice itself, so to speak, ought to receive its just dues; and those who are vociferous and clamorous ought to be silenced.

Lord Brentford, who loved his seat in the Cabinet and the glory of being a Minister, better even than he loved his borough, had taken a gloomy estimate when he spoke of twenty-seven defaulters, and of the bill as certainly lost.

Or, better still, let him seek the dark shadows of the Black Forest, and there wander, fancy free, — if that indeed can be freedom which demands a bondage of its own.

let these works shine before men, that they may see them, and rejoice and glorify your Father in heaven.

So that if any one pursues pleasure, and a life full of gladness, let him avoid the society of fornicating women, for they fill the minds of their lovers with a thousand conflicts and tumults, setting in motion against them continual strifes and contentions, by means of their words, and all their actions.

Each of these has a double time to every one of those.

For God suffers it not to be hidden; but if you conceal it, the other will make it known, and greater will be the admiration, and more abundant the gain.

She was by no means free from the solicitations of her husband, who knew well where she was, and who still adhered to his purpose of reclaiming his wife and his wife’s property. When he was released by the magistrate’s order, and had recovered his goods from Mr. Meager’s house, and was once more established in lodgings, humbler, indeed, than those in Northumberland Street, he wrote the following letter to her who had been for one blessed year the partner of his joys, and his bosom’s mistress:—

It is to East Barsetshire that we are called. When the division above spoken of was first contemplated, in those stormy days in which gallant men were still combatting reform ministers, if not with hope, still with spirit, the battle was fought by none more bravely than by John Newbold Gresham of Greshamsbury, the member for Barsetshire. Fate, however, and the Duke of Wellington were adverse, and in the following Parliament John Newbold Gresham was only member for East Barsetshire.

But they could not forgive the want of good spirits which was apparent.

For now there had been much talk of Hester and her home at Folking, and her former home at Chesterton; and people everywhere concerned themselves for her peace, for her happiness, for her condition of life.

He loved it dearly, though he seldom spoke of it;—as men of good family seldom do speak of it.

“Look here, Trevelyan. Sir Marmaduke and Lady Rowley are gone. They will have sailed, at least, before we can reach England. Whatever may have been either their wishes or their power, they can do nothing now. Here something would be done,—very soon; you may take my word for that. If you will return with me and your wife, you shall choose your own place of abode. Is not that so, Emily?”

No opponent would have dreamed of tampering with his Whiggery, nor would any brother Whig have dreamed of doubting it.

Then, when His first Creation was in good order, He conceives a second world, material and visible; and this a system of earth and sky and all that is in the midst of them; an admirable creation indeed when we look at the fair form of every part, but yet more worthy of admiration when we consider the harmony and unison of the whole, and how each part fits in with every other in fair order, and all with the whole, tending to the perfect completion of the world as a Unit.

“Yes, all, Mr. Pott. Why should not a cock crow there as well as anywhere else? It is so beautiful to believe.”

Our adversaries conceive of the existences of Father, Son, and Holy Spirit as involving elder and younger, respectively.

“That prosperity, such as it is, I desire most anxiously to share with you.”

“If there be no other reason, I cannot think that that can be held to be a reason now. Of course your mother would like to have you always; unless you should be married,—but then there are reasons why this should not be so.”

And he that has offended not so much is less tormented.

“Four hundred a year!” said Adela, reproachfully.

The doctor contrived to escape without giving a definite answer to this question; and then, having paid his compliments to Lady Scatcherd, remounted his cob and rode back to Greshamsbury.

Again, you fetch up Paul to me, again the prophets, some ten or twenty men.

“Oh, you are quite right! Go on. I wonder it never occurred to her before to set her cap at me.”

For be the idea far from us, that the glory of so great a blessedness as that should either be most basely enslaved by always following a preceding lust, or, by resisting it, should not enjoy the most abounding peace.

When I had said this, I added: [You promised that you would give at the proper time two things: first this exposition, at once simple and entirely free from error; and then an exposition of each individual point as it may be evolved in the course of the various questions which shall be raised.

For the impossibility of good becoming evil signifies the immensity of the goodness; and that He that is just should never become unjust, nor He that is true a liar, exhibits the stability and the strength that there is in truth and righteousness.

“Anyways, your reverence will call for me coming back?” said farmer Mangle.

[Matthew 17:12] And these things indeed as about Elijah the disciples asked and the Saviour answered, but when they heard they understood that the words, Elijah has already come, and that following which was spoken by the Saviour, had reference to John the Baptist.

Now, therefore, I beseech your holiness to scatter the slander raised against me, and bridle the tongues now vainly reviling me. For, after the incarnation, I worship one Son of God, one Lord Jesus Christ, and denounce as impious all who hold otherwise. Deign, sir, to give me too your holy prayers, that, by God's grace, I may reach the other side of the ocean of danger, and drop my anchor in the windless haven of the Lord.

Imploring God that she might not be deprived of a companion so dear, that if Paula was to die she might herself no longer live, and that one bier might carry to burial her and her mother.

Now they all feared the attacks of the Jews, but Thomas above the rest; wherefore also he said,

“Never,” said the supposed Grinder’s wife; “but what does it matter to you where I was?”

Was he not together with the bondage subject to mockery in respect of that trick?

And because our soul was troubled within us, we remembered You, O Lord, from the land of Jordan, and that mountain equal unto Yourself, but little for our sakes; and upon our being displeased with our darkness, we turned unto You, and there was light.

Thus the truth-loving Plato says, as if divinely inspired, Since I am such as to obey nothing but the word, which, after reflection, appears to me the best.

‘You wait till you’re placed as he is, and you’ll find that you’ll say anything that comes uppermost. But what are we to do with him, George?’

“But, father, I have found out that the papers you want are certainly in my uncle’s keeping in the Ross Markt.”

He would pay the entire cost of his own journey.

If, therefore, this thing had to be acquired from without, it would be difficult in reality; but if it is in us, let us keep ourselves from foul thoughts.

“I think it very hard because I almost never see Llwddythlw.”

What was the good of looking at it?

“Oh, what a soft!” exclaimed Amelia; “and he hasn’t paid mother a shilling for the last two months!”

A heart of compassion.

All we, like sheep, have gone astray.

“It’s old Lady Lufton’s doings,” said Mr. Robarts, trying to laugh the matter over.

And first he enticed the woman by fraud to take the forbidden fruit, and through her instrumentality he also persuaded the man himself to transgress the law of God.

Well now, it is not so written.

The bishop got a response which gave an additional satisfaction to his speedy translation to a more comfortable diocese.

[Philippians 2:22] But lest from boldness towards the disciple they should proceed also to the teacher, and become worse, he checks them from afar off, saying, that he may be with you without fear; that is, that none of those desperate persons rise up against him.

And one who dispenses money to the needy, or otherwise succors the oppressed, benefits his neighbors to some extent, but so much less than the priest in proportion as the body is inferior to the soul.

For they have not given over so disputing who have professed to be lovers of wisdom rather than wise men.

The reader will not care to hear more of it than he has heard.

They shall be yet more increased in fruitful old age, and shall be quiet, that they may show it forth [Psalm 91:13].

Thence, in like manner, the rulers in different places were emulous of like honour, and very many of them honoured the tombs of those who were beloved of them, though not dying by lightning, with temples and statues, and lighted up altars, and ordered them to be adored as gods.

The office is in the gift of the bishop, and its emoluments are as handsome as the duties of the place are small.

[Romans 6:6] By the voice of that man He has said these words, Him whom You have smitten they have themselves persecuted, and upon the pain of My wounds they have added.

At the great stronghold of conservative policy in Pall Mall men were silent, embarrassed, and unhappy.

There seemed to be a conviction that clergymen under the new order of things would be much better off than under the old.

When without a sign you believe, then he gives you the sign also; when you have done your own part, then also does God fully assure you.

Chapter XV. Scrobby’s Trial

So great then is the knowledge of God, so that with Himself they were in a certain ineffable manner before they were created: and of you does He expect to receive what He had, before He created?

Remarkable indeed is his own discriminating insight, displayed throughout, into human characters and motives, and his perception of the temptations to which circumstances or temperament render various people— pastors as well as members of their flocks— peculiarly liable.

To this end, you see, having first uttered that prediction, then and not before He raised up the sick of the palsy; that He might make the future credible by the present, and the less by the greater.

And when he found no ground of accusation, and had no real ground of objection against them, he next enacted a law, to the effect that the bishops should never on any account hold communication with each other, nor should any one of them absent himself on a visit to a neighboring church; nor, lastly, should the holding of synods, or councils for the consideration of affairs of common interest, be permitted.

Seeing, then, all things have an end, these two things are simultaneously set before us— death and life; and every one shall go unto his own place. For as there are two kinds of coins, the one of God, the other of the world, and each of these has its special character stamped upon it, [so is it also here.] The unbelieving are of this world; but the believing have, in love, the character of God the Father by Jesus Christ, by whom, if we are not in readiness to die into His passion, His life is not in us.

Chapter 1. How he honored Many by Presents and Promotions.

Christ coming to him, he sent his friends to meet Him, nay unto Christ truly passing over to him he sent his friends, and asked that He would heal his servant who was dangerously sick.

2. But the supreme rulers also confirmed to us still more extensively the munificence of God by repeated ordinances in behalf of the Christians; and personal letters of the emperor were sent to the bishops, with honors and gifts of money. It may not be unfitting to insert these documents, translated from the Roman into the Greek tongue, at the proper place in this book, as in a sacred tablet, that they may remain as a memorial to all who shall come after us.

All this is simple enough, and yet the work of hatching is most complicated and requires not only care but a capability of tracing results which is not given to all men.

For so you will see how the birth of the Word of God differs from the procession of the Gift of God, on account of which the only-begotten Son did not say that the Holy Spirit is begotten of the Father, otherwise He would be His brother, but that He proceeds from Him.

The matter was one of most serious importance.

The afternoon went with them very slowly and almost in silence. Neither of them would now speak about Luke Rowan; and to neither of them was it as yet possible to speak about aught else. One word on the subject was said during those hours. “You won’t have time for your letter after tea,” Mrs. Ray said.

And the hounds had veered a little round to the left, making, after all, for Claydon’s.

“And that they are dishonest in all their dealings,” said Joe. “I suppose he got that out of some of the radical news papers.” For Joe, after the manner of brewers, was a staunch Tory.

Now let us see whether we anywhere read about the flesh being contrary in the baptized also.

But you persist continually in your blasphemies attacking the Son of God, and using these words 'as the Son and the Father are one, so also are the soul which the Son took and the Son Himself one.'

Why was he no more, and his place nowhere to be found?

I can have a room at Laura Kennedy’s house.” Then Lady Baldock, whose position was hard and cruel, resolved that she would stay in town.

I will add one more instance common to them both.

You must not be surprised, dear brethren, that so many creeds have recently been written.

For he seems to me, having had dominion beneath the sky, not to have fallen from his dominion, even after his transgression.

“Yes; poor Jack De Baron also! No man should talk to a girl of marrying her unless he loves her. It is different with a girl. She may come to love a man. She may love a man better than all the world, though she hardly knew him when she married him. If he is good to her, she will certainly do so. But if a man marries a woman without loving her, he will soon hate her.”

For in truth I know not; I for my part have nothing of my own.

Arete . I do permit you and assist you; for your discourse will be perfectly adorned when you have added this to it.

Margaret told the lady that she did not know her, and at that moment was altogether at a loss to guess who the lady might be.

Aulus Gellius says that he read in this book that the Stoics maintain that there are certain impressions made on the soul by external objects which they call phantasiæ, and that it is not in the power of the soul to determine whether or when it shall be invaded by these.

“Oh, but you should keep it still. I feel almost certain that Lady Lufton would like such a match.”

We again come back to the old maxim, that the labor of a country is its wealth; and that a country will be rich or poor in accordance with the intellectual industry of its people.

Miles to die there would be no home for her.

“I know not that, my dear. The acceptance of a cure of souls is a thing not to be decided on in a moment,—as is the colour of a garment or the shape of a toy. Nor would I condescend to take this thing from the archdeacon’s hands, if I thought that he bestowed it simply that the father of his daughter-in-law might no longer be accounted poor.”

.choose life, that you may live.'

Furthermore, if, while I have continued without intermission to prove how entirely the passages of Scripture which Petilianus has quoted against us have failed to hurt our cause, he himself has in some cases not touched at all what I have quoted, and partly, when he has endeavored to handle them, has shown that the only thing that he could do was to fail in finding an escape from them, you require no long exhortation or advice in order to see what you ought to maintain, and what you should avoid.

Heroines should not only be beautiful, but should be endowed also with a quasi celestial grace,—grace of dignity, propriety, and reticence.

The words of it were very strange to her ear.

She did not dare to suggest that Mr. Rowan might perhaps be a very proper young man, and that the two young people might be growing fond of each other in a proper sort of way.

But of what she had to give over and above her heart and intellect she never thought at all.

Matt. VI. 1.

And there were owing to that man from his fellow-servant a hundred pence, and he caught him by the throat.

If he refers the word made, which is used of the Lord in the passages from the Epistle to the Hebrews, and from the words of Peter, to the pretemporal idea, he might fairly refer the word in that passage which says that God made Him to be sin, to the first existence of His essence, and try to show by this, as in the case of his other testimonies, that he was made, so as to refer the word made to the essence, acting consistently with himself, and to discern sin in that essence.

But he would leave London by the night mail train from Paddington on Wednesday evening so as to reach Trafford Park House on the following morning between four and five.

For no one discerns the truth of that which he reads from anything which is in the mere manuscript, or in the writer, but rather by something within himself, if the light of truth, shining with a clearness beyond what is men's common lot, and very far removed from the darkening influence of the body, has penetrated his own mind.

That David, who was placed among the Jews in the flesh, in Christ in hope, speaks Remember what is my substance.

He attributes this to Antony—but only because, as he thinks of it, some movement of Antony’s has recurred to his memory.

He does then love judgment, and does not forsake His Saints

And do not tell me that it is impossible to separate them.

Handle Me and see because (or that) a spirit has not bones and flesh, as you see Me have [Luke 24:38-39] .

The list is incredibly and most unnecessarily long.

All that was changed now,—but it was not his fault that it was changed.

With regard to Cicero the allegation is that he would not be allowed to be bribed to accuse Cæsar, and thus incur danger.

Nor did she leave the distribution of her alms to others; she distributed them herself.

“Milliner’s manners, I suppose?”

He brought to mind, as he stood over her, all those scenes which she had so successfully performed in his presence since she had come to London,—scenes in which the robbery in Carlisle had been discussed between them.

“Yes; that was what he suggested. We were to leave by the train for Civita Vecchia at six tomorrow morning and catch the steamer which leaves Leghorn tonight. Don’t tell me of wine. He was prepared for it!” And she looked round about on us with an air of injured majesty in her face which was almost insupportable.

Letter 19 (A.D. 390)

George blushed deeply, and affected to laugh.

It wanted but two days to his departure for Guestwick Manor, and as he sat breathing a while after the manufacture of a large batch of Sir Raffle’s notes, he made up his mind that he would give Mrs Roper notice before he started, that on his return to London he would be seen no more in Burton Crescent.

A novel indeed may be false, — hideously false.

I have found no one who would tell me that there was such reason now. Artizans in the dockyards vote; and will it be said that clerks in metropolitan public offices are more subject to the influence of Government than they are? We hear that they are subject to such influence, but no one dreams of taking from them their votes. It would be monstrous to tell a body of men who, combined, form the largest portion of a large profession in the metropolis, that they should be so influenced.

It was then, when he had left the room for a few minutes, in order that he might wake himself by walking about the house, that Glencora told Alice of his yawning down at Matching.

Mr. Goffe suggested that perhaps a few gentle words might be successful.

Did He not make you and create you ?'

If these changes be not completed, and if it would not be presumptuous in me to offer a word of advice, I would say that in the present state of the island, with a Negro-Gallic population who do little or nothing, it might be as well to have as much as possible of the Queen, and as little as possible of the Lords and Commons.

“Oh, certainly.” The priest now saw that there was something more in the man’s manner than lordly pride. As the Earl got again up on his car, the priest turned his horse, and the two travelled back through the village without further conversation. The priest’s horse was given up to the boy in the yard, and he then led the way into the house. “We are not much altered in our ways, are we, my Lord?” he said as he moved a bottle of whiskey that stood on the sideboard. “Shall I offer you lunch?”

He would not leave the office till he had done so.

My joy would be to remain ever as your slave; but then the heart that beats beneath your bosom must be my own.

Who to live in pleasure?

“What can I do, Malchen? “ She did not quite know what he could do, but she was sure that when her lover, after a month’s absence, got an opportunity of sitting with her by a waterfall, he should not confine his conversation to a discussion on the value of z wan sigers.

Chapter XXIX. A Serious Interview

The same Saturus at the other entrance exhorted the soldier Pudens, saying, Assuredly here I am, as I have promised and foretold, for up to this moment I have felt no beast.

Plutarch tells us that he went to his Tusculan retreat, and that on receiving news of the proscriptions he determined to remove to Astura, on the seaside, in order that he might be ready to escape into Macedonia.

Further, it has come to our knowledge that on the death of bishops some persons from being laymen are tonsured, and mount to the episcopate by a sudden leap.

“It does seem a pity,” said Crosbie, “for Lily seems to know all about pigs.”

“They want you to come,” said Emily, “because there has been some family reconciliation. You usually do go once or twice a year.”

“Perhaps you hardly understand her, mother.”

They convicted me of folly, ignorance, indiscretion, idleness, extravagance, and conceit.

Perhaps there had been a little treachery on the part of Mr. Davis, for he had, in a gently insinuating way, made known to the Squire the fact of those acceptances, and the additional fact that he was, through unforeseen circumstances, lamentably in want of ready money.

Why did the women flock around me and kiss the very hems of my garments?

Whence are the bones, and sinews, and arteries, and veins?

Was there not in their parents, to whom it is said, Do you not know that your bodies are the members of Christ?

Another Consul would either have looked for popularity and increased power of plundering, as Antony might have done, or have stuck to his order, as he would have called it—as might have been the case with the Cottas, Lepiduses and Pisos of preceding years.

What can match the folly of this!

Men when they arrive from their travels now-a-days have no strippings of greatcoats, no deposits to make of thick shawls and double gloves, no absolutely necessary changes of raiment.

For He Who is the one or the other, that is God or man, is one and the same, and both what is divine and what is human belong to Himself.

Dearest Aunt,—I think you hardly know what are my sufferings.

She scrambled down,—not very far down, but a little way beneath the garden gate, to a spot on which a knob of rock cropped out from the scanty herbage of the incipient cliff.

His nose and face were all over blotches, and he looked to be dissipated and disreputable.

I did not care to go through the list with her, though I think that a London butler costs more than a Zulu boy.

Members of Parliament with seats for counties have been exalted after the same unjust fashion.

They replied, Wait for him until he comes; and if he comes he will converse with you, and if he does not come you will remain here with us until he does come.

Chapter 37— The Same Continued. John, Bishop of Jerusalem, and His Examination

How have You provided for our health!

It reads as though it were true.

“Nothing on earth could be better, my dear fellow,” said the captain, “and I’m sure I should be the last man in the world to take the job out of the hands of one who would do it so much better than I can; but as it’s your health that we’re going to drink, I really don’t see how you are to do it.”

But let him hear Christ saying, Rejoice not because the demons are subject unto you [Luke 10:20], because He knew that all men rejoice most in this, through vainglory.

Shall I not wash in them and be clean?

Immediately letters from Maximinus against us were published everywhere in every province.

He looked round to ascertain from the countenances of others whether they had heard what had been said.

Whether the friendship might have remained valid had Julia lived we cannot say; but she died, and the two friends became enemies.

One city out of the five, [Genesis 19:18-21] Zoar, was saved, and a place which lay under the same sentence as Sodom, Gomorrha, Admah, and Zeboiim, was preserved by the prayers of a holy man.

For what is so just, or what is more just than God?

It was now the 189th Olympiad, which (Olympiad) in the year that had the bissextile day, the 6th day before the Calends of March,— i.e., the 24th of February,— corresponded with the 24th year of the era of Antioch, whereby the year was determined in its proper limits.

The hidden poison was, in the meantime, working in his breast, and he, at whose beck demons were expelled from the bodies of others, was quite unable to cleanse himself from the hidden thoughts of vanity.

Then the answer is so ready: “My dear young lady, do darn your stockings; it will be for the best.” Or perhaps, less tenderly, to the male aspirant: “You must earn some money, you say.

If, indeed, he has some things of his own, the whole of which he might give to his son, along with the man of the Creator, then show some one thing of them all, as a sample, that I may believe; lest I should have as much reason not to believe that all things belong to him, of whom I see nothing, as I have ground for believing that even the things which I see not are His, to whom belongs the universe, which I see.

He had come down to see Dorothy’s mother and sister, and to say a bit of his own mind about future affairs;—and to see the beauties of the country.

“Is it? Then I am in a bad way. Oh dear, oh dear, what a fool I am! What an idiot I’ve been! Fanny, I don’t think I can stay here; and I do so wish I’d never come. I do—I do—I do, though you look at me so horribly,” and jumping up she threw herself into her sister-in-law’s arms and began kissing her violently. “Don’t pretend to be wounded, for you know that I love you. You know that I could live with you all my life, and think you were perfect—as you are; but—”

For to which of the Angels said He at any time, You are My Son, this day have I begotten You.

Lady Aylmer and Belinda and the carriage and the horses used, as I have said, to go off without her.

The covetous and rapacious?

And it is produced from water being commingled and blended with bodies as if it were a salt of existent things, and a light of darkness.

Did you not summon the chief priests?

and even 30s.

What’s the matter with the man that he isn’t good enough for you?

As she and her mother were out on a lengthened cruise among long-suffering acquaintances, going to the De Brownes after the Gores, and the Smijthes after the De Brownes, with as many holes to run to afterwards as a four-year-old fox,—though with the same probability of finding them stopped,—of course she had her wardrobe with her.

“I hope that you do not think that my calling is intrusive,” he said.

But who the deuce would think of going to work with one horse; or two either, if you insist on calling the old pony a huntress?

Evelina is perhaps the best instance we have of a novel told by letters; and this is so, not because the letters are at all natural, but because Miss Burney in concocting them has thrown over all idea of fashioning the letters to the minds and natural language of the writers, and has allowed herself to write them as though she herself had forgotten her own trammels.

He that ascended, the same is he also that descended [Ephesians 4:10].

For as to the Sodomites, although they committed a great transgression, yet it was before the law and grace; but we, after so much care shown towards us, of what indulgence should we be worthy, showing so much inhospitality, and shutting our doors against them that are in need, and before our doors our ears?

“He’s a very comely young gentleman.”

“What are they saying?” Lord George felt that he must open his mouth, but did not wish to talk to this man, and especially did not wish to talk about his own affairs.

When shall I come and appear before the Lord?...

The mother, as soon as she found herself seated and almost before she had recovered the breath lost in mounting the lodging-house stairs, began the speech which she had prepared for delivery on the occasion.

The sinner then flies.

The maintenance of slavery was a political mistake; and I cannot think that the Americans in any way lessen the weight of their own error by protesting, as they occasionally do, that slavery was a legacy made over to them from England.

[Genesis 9:26-27] And so, too, the planting of the vine by Noah, and his intoxication by its fruit, and his nakedness while he slept, and the other things done at that time, and recorded, are all of them pregnant with prophetic meanings, and veiled in mysteries.

The next to this is matrimony itself, which is the only remedy for that consciousness of disreputable debauchery, a savour of which always clings, more or less strongly, to unmarried men in our rank of life.

For in winter, when the air is condensed, and prevents the escape of the heat enclosed within, the food, transmuted and digested and changed into blood, passes into the veins, and these, in the absence of exhalation, are greatly distended, and exhibit strong pulsations; consequently also nurses are then fullest of milk.

“Certainly, Mr. Slope, certainly,” said the bishop; “that is but reasonable. Well, my decision is that you had better look for some other preferment. For the situation which you have lately held I do not think that you are well suited.”

“There’ll be a deal of trouble saved in that way.”

Prompted to do so by various motives, they, who had undertaken to prove that the Countess was no Countess, had freely accorded to her her title, and had themselves entertained her daughter with all due acknowledgment of rank and birth.

What may be the reason that to him they did nothing, but Paul they assault?

She had a certain price, from which no earthly consideration would induce her to depart; and certain returns for this price in the shape of déjeuners and dinners, baths and beds, which she never failed to give in accordance with the dictates of a strict conscience.

Destroy, slay so and so, whoever have believed in You, such an one, who died an ill death!

It is necessary that the reader should attempt to realize to himself the personal characteristics of Pompey, as from this time forward Cicero’s political life—and his life now became altogether political—was governed by that of Pompey.

Dear mamma, I do love you so much.

I complain of it very bitterly.

For without the gift of God, that is, without the Holy Spirit, through whom love is shed abroad in our hearts, the law can command, but it cannot assist; and, moreover, it makes a man a transgressor, for he can no longer excuse himself on the plea of ignorance.

Perhaps they learned it from the clamor which arose.

ἐκ τῆς καμίνου] added Blessed be God, who has sent His Angel, and delivered his servants out of the furnace, because they trusted in Him and have changed the word of the king.

She must learn to look at the world with his eyes.

Now you must necessarily be back at Chaldicotes on Sunday morning!” And so the matter was settled.

Nor am I now speaking about individual rulers, but about the thing in itself.

How comes he by the knowledge of the words against which he declares war?

But it is necessary for his revenge that the man too shall be punished, — and to punish him he must know him.

To which we reply, that even we do not suppose the body of Jesus, which was then an object of sight and perception, to have been God.

De utilitate credendi

For if the leader of their band, one so entirely fervent, was told that before the cock crew he should thrice deny his Master, it was likely that they would expect to have to undergo some great reverse, sufficient to bend even souls of adamant.

But I’m sure you like him, and so do I, and I think we might do something for him.

On that evening Rachel saw no more of her sister.

“You mean to say that you are bashful in assuming your new privileges. Then you had better go back to your old habits, because you always used to come where I was. You must come and go now like my very second self.” Then he came forward from the desk at which he was wont to stand and write, and essayed to put his arm round her waist. She drew back, but still he was not startled. “It was but a cold kiss I gave you down below. You must kiss me now, you, as a wife kisses her husband.”

Bragg’s End,

He, with others of his class, had shown himself ready to bow down before Cæsar.

Of their own free choice.

“Since you have been back?”

For since the reader and the interpreter, are crying aloud: your ears therefore are heavy, or else your hearts.— 14.

“Not promise me,—your father!”

But all that Judge Bramber did not understand.

In answer to this he had once or twice begged her to define the word, and then there had been some slight, very slight, disagreement between them.

He was still sitting in the same chair and the same posture, having hardly moved a limb for two hours, when Eleanor came back to tea, and succeeded in bringing him with her into the drawing-room.

And Itself is that very power that went out from Him, as we read in the Gospel, and healed them all.

He did not treat things unknown as well known, and so rashly accept them.

But the Lord, that He might make him not go before Him, but follow after Him, says, Get behind, Satan!

As then both he who hanged on a tree, and he who transgresses the Law, is cursed, and as it was necessary for him who is about to relieve from a curse himself to be free from it, but to receive another instead of it, therefore Christ took upon Him such another, and thereby relieved us from the curse.

Do you wage wars with your enemies, without believing that you will carry off the victory by success in battles?

But what did the carriage or no carriage on Wednesday signify?

It is not from bracelets, or from necklaces, nor from their eunuchs either, and their maid-servants, and gold-broidered dresses, but from their toils in behalf of the truth.

“I don’t want a man to stick to me. I want a man to stick to his country.”

On this occasion she did so, and within two minutes of the time in which the paper had been put into her hands exclaimed to her niece almost with ecstasy, “Clara, what do you think?

Then again that other method of falsification is introduced, by which it is made to appear that the nature of the devil and of other demons has not resulted from the wickedness of their will and purpose, but from an exceptional and separate quality of their creation, although he in all other places had taught that every reasonable creature was endowed with the faculty of free will.

“None,” said Herbert, very decidedly.

“Oh, yes! All the de Courcys have gone. I think, between ourselves, Mary stays away because she does not love them too well. They have all gone, and taken Augusta and Frank with them.”

Our readers may be told in confidence that up to a very late date Mr. Neefit lived in the rooms over his shop.

And why do thoughts arise in your hearts?

If when you name the Father, or use the word 'God,' you do not signify essence, or understand Him according to essence, who is that He is, but signify something else about Him , not to say inferior, then you should not have written that the Son was from the Father, but from what is about Him or in Him ; and so, shrinking from saying that God is truly Father, and making Him compound who is simple, in a material way, you will be authors of a newer blasphemy.

‘She is engaged, Robert.’ This was said almost more seriously and more firmly than before.

“I don’t mean to let the Duchess interfere with me,” said Arabella in a whisper.

There is as it were the army of an emperor seated within in your mind.

It is also taken up (in its second birth) by the Holy Spirit, just as in its first birth it is embraced by the unholy spirit.

“I think it might have been better that you should have gone to my father.”

[Matthew 9:26] And this report spread in all that land.

This, says he, is the kingdom of heaven that reposes within us as a treasure, as leaven hid in the three measures of meal.

For this is the number of years from the reign of David to the crucifixion of Christ.

And truly what has been offered in the kindness and earnestness of charity demands full credence, reason having prompted your pontifical order to rejoice with us.

They had been glorious eyes to him, and in those early days he had not known that they lacked aught; but he had perceived, or perhaps fancied, that now, in her present condition, they were often cold, and sometimes almost cruel.

Chapter 4. Concerning the nature of Deity: that it is incomprehensible.

With the green carpet she would have been contented.

“I am sure it is,” said Caroline; “but I would not care for that so much if I thought—”

The Sabines also placed among the gods their first king, Sancus, [Sangus], or Sanctus, as some call him.

“You are engaged to him?”

Chapter III. The Old Man Does Not Believe in God or Providence

Nor was Lady Ongar much more comfortable in the Isle of Wight than she had been in London.

“That’s nonsense, John!”

The reappointment of the old warden would be regarded by all the world as a matter of course.

He who has made for himself a great position, and apparently has ample means, would not in truth be affected.

Robespierre the elder believed only in himself; Robespierre the younger believed in his brother, and his belief was fervid and assured, as is always that of an enthusiast.

Sam had, perhaps, not really known the extent of the iniquity of the men with whom he had associated, and had come up the garden probably with a view to the fruit.

“Dear Will! Dearest Will!”

MRS. C. Well, dear.

So far Gager’s mind had arrived at certainty.

Almost all the names of the gods came into Greece from Egypt.

They were both of them quite clear that Mr. Peacocke should be made to go at once.

Pat’s father was an attorney at Cork; but not prospering, I think, for poor Pat was always short of money.

The mother had been most loath to part with her treasure.

O happy he, whom so many lament!

“You must speak out louder,” said Mr. Furnival, himself speaking very loudly.

Wherefore, omitting the former topic, he discourses of the benefits which had been conferred on us.

As for love, I don’t believe in it.

He might perhaps live for another twelve months, but the doctors thought it hardly possible that he should last longer than that.

As to that other matter I can only say that you shall be obliged, as far as it is in my power to obey you. For what may come out from me by word of mouth when we are together, I will not answer with certainty. But my pen is under better control, and it shall not write the offending name.

The other hundred streets, each of two miles long, with the avenues, which are mostly unoccupied for four or five miles, is the ground over which the young New Yorkers are to spread themselves.

Under these circumstances, all men who care for the Church of England are beginning to ask themselves how the race of curates is to be continued.

Was the Cross before the world?

When we hear this we know that Pompey’s position was not comfortable, and that he was under constraint.

Thirty men can sit still, each as like the other as peas.

“Very well, Mary; but don’t give him too much, for fear he should drop the letters about. I’ll be ready in ten minutes.” And in five minutes she had scrawled a very different sort of letter. But he might want the money immediately, so she would not delay it for a day.

“I have not accepted him. I have refused him. I have told him that it was impossible.”

“I do so wish I knew him,” said Madame Max Goesler. “I am fond of madmen, and men who haven’t shillings, and who are a little wild, Could you not bring him here, Mr. Finn?”

True; but he persuaded the Gentiles through the Jews, and from the things which he discoursed of to the Jews.

The monks did so; but in order to render due honor to the martyrs secretly, according to the agreement with Eusebia, they formed a subterranean house of prayer near her tomb.

When large tracts of land went out of cultivation, was it not natural to think that agriculture was receding from the country, leaving the green hills once more to be brown and barren, as hills once green have become in other countries?

They wished to have Cæcilianus accused by a mob such as that to which they had given way themselves, when they pronounced sentence upon parties who were absent, and who had not been examined.

In this food let us delight of which the prophet says: Delight thou in the Lord.

Exactly; her only friends.

Could he have a cup of tea?

The American government is not called on to make such proclamations, nor had Ireland ever taken upon herself the nature and labors of a belligerent.

“Tomorrow!” ejaculated Biddy; “what, is you going tonight?”

George was voluble, witty, and perhaps a little too loud.

Felix Graham, thinking that he would obey instructions by letting his horse do as he pleased, permitted the beast to come close upon Orme’s track and to make his jump before Orme’s horse had taken his second spring.

[James 2:13] For the meaning of the prayer, Enter not into judgment with Your servant, is this: Judge me not according to Yourself, who art without sin; for in Your sight shall no man living be justified.

But they were broken up before a very late hour by the necessity that Harry Gresham should return to Greshamsbury.

For the Trinity speaks nothing external to Itself.

MRS. G. YOU are guilty before the law, sir. You would have been in prison now, sir, for taking Mr. Soames’s cheque, but for my son. The jury will soon settle that. (Another pause.)

An’ it’s you that are welcome back this blessed night to Castle Richmond.” Such and such like were the greetings which met him from twenty different voices as he essayed to enter the house.

Now if you grieve at hearing these things, I thank you much, for who is he that makes me glad, but he which is made sorry by me?

Separate the two natures, but you must separate also the two beliefs.

[1 Corinthians 3:10-12] We are not ignorant that 'marriage is honorable...and the bed undefiled.'

“I suppose they have. At any rate, I am glad that you should make some excuse for me. But I do like the man. He is gracious and noble in his bearing. He is now very old, and sinking fast into the grave; but even the wreck is noble.”

And in course of time he conformed himself so thoroughly to the duties implied in dignity, and surrendered himself so entirely to the exhibition of modesty, that a glorious amendment of character threw a cloak over the habits of his former life.

“You may, at any rate, be sure that they will not hurt me.” And, without waiting for his reply, she descended the stairs, and walked into the hall.

[Genesis 11:9] And when I see the flood of trials that pours in upon us from this confusion, I say that these are the waters of Babylon by which we sit down, and weep because there is no one to guide us over them.

And yet she could not quite like him, for there was always apparent in his conversation a certain feeling on his part that he hardly thought it worth his while to be in earnest.

George Voss was very careful to make no demonstration of affection for a girl who had forgotten him, and who was now, as he believed, betrothed to another man; and Marie was determined that certainly no sign of the old love should first be shown by her.

“Tell mamma,” said she to Sarah, “that I intend to go out and put that in the post to-day.” The letter was addressed to Wyndham Street. Now the Countess knew that Daniel Thwaite had left Wyndham Street.

Hence Horace, a more careful observer than Ennius, says: Is fame your passion?

If we add not these and other points besides, as times and places and the opinions of the listeners, many absurd consequences will follow.

Accordingly He leads us into the liberty of the Father—sons that are co-heirs and friends.

To whom, then, has the administration of so great affairs been entrusted, if these things which we see to be governed by the highest judgment are neglected by God?

Though much the wealthiest of the ecclesiastical matrons of the county, she had so managed her affairs that her carriage and horses had given umbrage to none.

Do you not know as a matter of course that such description is false?—false and fraudulent, but with a modified fraud, because no one was expected to believe it.

He shows that, under the name of grace, Catholics neither assert a doctrine of fate, nor attribute respect of persons to God; although they truly say that God's grace is not given according to human merits, and that the first desire of good is inspired by God; so that a man does not at all make a beginning of a change from bad to good, unless the unbought and gratuitous mercy of God effects that beginning in him.

When Tregear first came to town with his arm in a sling, and bandages all round him,—in order that he might be formally accepted by the Duke,—he had himself taken to one other house besides the house in Carlton Terrace.

“She was the woman who had millions upon millions,” said Lily, “all got by selling ointment.”

And what had hitherto come of it?

“I should have thought you would have known.”

And when this word, Hail, thou that art highly favoured, reached her, in the very moment of her hearing it, the Holy Spirit entered into the undefiled temple of the Virgin, and her mind and her members were sanctified together.

Yet surely, even antecedently to the kingdom, and to all the rest, even for the very fact of His giving, we ought to feel bound to Him.

If all this came to pass and there should be a close division, Phineas felt that his fate would be sealed.

Xenophon in eight books narrates the life of Cyrus, King of the Persians, and asserts that they supported life on barley, cress, salt, and black bread.

Chapter LXV. “I Hate Her!”

False accusation is his business.

And so he does not introduce the solution of it as main argument, but by way of opposing this; that by the exigency of meeting it, he may get a plea for saying what he wishes, and make his accusation not so unpalatable.

Chapter 54.

Such were my thoughts as I walked the deck of the Cunard steamer.

He longed to behold, crowding around him, an attendance as copious as Mr. Spurgeon’s, and to see every head bowed over the posing questions which he should have dictated.

But if I were even to grant this, then there was a time when evil was not complete, namely, before matter was wrought by God.

Proceed, and next consider the Scriptures themselves.

A double-first his father had not hoped for; but, in resolving not to hope for it, he had consoled himself with thinking that the hopes which he did form were the more certain of success;—and then there would always be that further chance of happiness in store.

“I speak for all,” said the tutor stoutly. “It is coming to that, that there will be no life left anywhere in the country. No one is any longer fit to rule himself, or those belonging to him. The Government is to find us all in everything, and the press is to find the Government. Nevertheless, Mr. Slope won’t be Dean of Barchester.”

As to my cousins at the manor, I never see them; and as to talking to them about business, I should not dream of it.

The Gospel lesson, dearly-beloved, which has reached the inner hearing of our minds through our bodily ears, calls us to the understanding of a great mystery, to which we shall by the help of God's grace the better attain, if we turn our attention to what is narrated just before.

If it were genuine!

For where there is no shape nor order, nothing either comes or goes; and where this is not, there certainly are no days, nor any vicissitude of spaces of times.

For it is written: Blessed is the man that has not walked in the counsel of the ungodly, and has not stood in the way of sinners, and has not sat in the seat of pestilence, but in the law of the Lord was his delight.

‘I only repeat what the editor says to me—I know nothing about it myself. Only we are requested ‘to hold the mirror up to nature,’—and to art too, I believe. We are to set these things right, you know.’

“I am surprised that you should turn your thoughts to anything so insignificant,” he replied.

For he sees whole tribes of the human race brought in afresh to the adoption of God's sons and the offspring of the New Birth multiplied through the virgin fertility of the Church.

“The chimneys and the furnaces may perhaps be used,” I replied.

When you hear To whom it is given, add, And it is given to those who are called and to those who incline that way.

Consider, then, the manner of His entreaty, the occasions of His commanding.

Though they are too late in doing this, yet better now than never.

The moment in which Phineas refolded this note and put it into his breast coat-pocket was, I think, the happiest of his life.

It could not now be doubted by her that her uncle, doubly actuated by the presence of the man he disliked and the absence of her whom he so dearly loved, had found himself driven to revoke the decision to which he had been brought.

Dr Theophilus Grantly, son of the bishop, archdeacon of Barchester, and rector of Plumstead Episcopi, and her father became, a few months later, precentor of Barchester Cathedral, that office being, as is not unusual, in the bishop’s gift.

The stable-servant, who was hanging about, immediately came to him;—and there was his father standing, all alone, at the door of the house.

[Matthew 5:1-3] And again in another place, as the multitudes stood in need of healing, it is said, Many multitudes followed Him and He healed them.

The night sinks to sleep, and the day arises; the day [again] departs, and the night comes on.

Too fast, I say.

He did not throw away his money.

We can reach Australia by another and a shorter route; and as for Vancouver’s Island and Frazer River, they as yet are very young.

The waiter hesitated a moment, and then declared that to the best of his belief his master was not down.

Clara had endeavoured, since she had been at Aylmer Park, to investigate her own feelings in reference to Captain Aylmer; but had failed, and knew that she had failed.

But if any one admire a solitary life, and retirement from the society of the multitude, I should say myself that such a life was a token of patience, but not a sufficient proof of entire fortitude of soul.

“And twice he asked you to come here since your return, but you would not come.”

Have about you troops of virgins whom you may lead into the king's chamber.

His mother had called her clever and cunning as a serpent.

“What! you here still?” said Eames. “I thought you always went at four.” Cradell had remained, hanging about the office, in order that he might walk home with the new private secretary. But Eames did not desire this. He had much of which he desired to think alone, and would fain have been allowed to walk by himself.

“I will put his eyes out of him if he laughs like that,” said Tetchen, looking as though she were ready to put her threat into execution upon the instant.

For he is not their God, but the God of those who know him.

He could endeavour to persuade, but she must decide.

For that can never be investigated which is not sought by its own way.

Who can help being struck by their position?

To tell the truth, Alice was frightened at what she had done, and almost repented of it already.

Mrs. Woodward laid her gently on the sofa, undid her dress, loosened her stays, and then sat by her chafing her hands, and moistening her lips and temples, till gradually the poor girl’s eyes reopened.

Or has not a man himself lost his mind who even entertains the thought that God was ever without Reason and without Wisdom?

If subsequent question should arise as to the boy’s legitimacy, as might so probably be the case, in what light would he appear, he who had taken upon himself, on his own responsibility, to extort from her Majesty a pardon in opposition to a righteous and just verdict,—in opposition to the judge who had tried the case?

Have not the fierce pangs of famine driven mothers to eat their own children, incredibly savage as it seems?

It is a public lane between hedgerows, with a broad grass margin on each side of the road, from which the lime-trees spring.

I don’t know why you should have looked to such a one as me to be your wife.

For to worship the true God, that and nothing else is wisdom.

That Sir Gregory was the second of the name,—the second at least as mentioned in these pages.

There had come a sharp frost after the rain, and the ground was hard and dry.

“He came back and slept at Mrs. Clegg’s that night,—at least, that was what he said he should do.”

Sarah [Sarah was John Fletcher’s wife] is rather against it.

Mr Harding did go to him at once; and long and confidential was the consultation between the two old friends. There they sat together the whole long day, plotting to get the better of the archdeacon, and to carry out little schemes of their own, which they knew would be opposed by the whole weight of his authority.

“Oh, Mr. Fitzgerald, won’t she run away?” said Clara, as she gave him her hand.

‘I have had another conversation with her,’ said Shand to him that night.

In the same envelope was a short note from one of his brother clerks.

“If you did you would accept your cousin’s offer. What right have you to refuse him? I believe it is all because of that young man.”

And when tidings came,—the tidings came in a letter from Phineas to his father,—that he did not intend to speak that session, because speeches from a young member on his first session were thought to be inexpedient, Miss Flood Jones and the Miss Finns were quite willing to accept the wisdom of this decision, much as they might regret the effect of it.

Much had then been done to make travelling comfortable, or at any rate cheaper than it had been four-and-twenty years before.

But never is the light brighter than at mid-day.

“Say that you’ll like being with me alone.” They had the compartment of the railway carriage all to themselves, and she, as she spoke, leaned against him, inviting him to caress her.

On the fourth day she was sitting in the drawing-room alone—for her aunt had gone out of Littlebath for the day—when Adela Gauntlet came to call on her. Adela she knew would counsel her to yield, and therefore she would certainly not have gone to Adela for advice. But she was sad at heart; and sitting there with the letter among her threads and needles before her, she gradually found it impossible not to talk of it—to talk of it, and at last to hand it over to be read.

Lady Lufton had of course heard of the doctor’s death, and had sent all manner of kind messages to Mark, advising him not to hurry home by any means until everything was settled at Exeter.

She could not, however, bear to think that Mr Whittlestaff should be so very prudent and so very wise solely on her behalf.

For tell me what have you to say to the Greek, if you plunder, and be covetous?

What more simple than a holy composure?

Alaric was touched; but there was more triumph than sympathy in his heart.

The sea itself when it is quiet and at rest sets forth a representation of the Divine Quiet; when it is stirred up, it shows that the wrath on high is terrible.

‘Nor I han’t down’arted, ma’am, for thank God I could love any man, but it’s the looks on it, ma’am; it’s that I mind.’

“I’m going to lave you, father, altogether.”

It was not He who was forsaken either by the Father, or by His own Godhead, as some have thought, as if It were afraid of the Passion, and therefore withdrew Itself from Him in His Sufferings (for who compelled Him either to be born on earth at all, or to be lifted up on the Cross?)

“Lady Griggs’s and Miss Fleebody’s—I know. A great deal of sugar for her ladyship, and Miss Fleebody eats muffin. Mrs Blow always takes pound-cake, and I’ll see that there’s one near her. Mortimer,”—Mortimer was the footman,—”is getting more bread and butter. Maguire, you have two dishes of sweet biscuits over there; give us one here. Never mind me, Mrs Stumfold; I’ll have my innings presently.”

“What is it, Fred?” she said.

But that He came unto His own, and His own received Him not.

But Caldigate fancied that there must be a betrayal of trust in these revelations, and though he was in truth interested about the woman, did not give much encouragement to his friend.

But if Paulinianus is the subject of your remarks, he, as you see, is subject to his bishop, and lives at Cyprus: he sometimes comes to visit us, not as one of your clergy, but as another's, his, namely, by whom he was ordained.

To be Duchess of Omnium!

“Who cares what you believe, sir?” said Mr Cheesacre.

Your instance, she replied, and your reasoning upon it, though belonging to the counter-argument, may both of them be made allies of our statement, and will contribute not a little to the confirmation of its truth.

He suggested that perhaps he might be allowed to try again when the first month or two of her grief for her brother should be over; but she assured him that it would be useless.

Although the piper played with a rapidity which would have convinced the uninitiated of the impossibility of dancing to the time, every foot in the room fell to the notes of the music as surely as though the movements of the whole set had been regulated by a steam machine.

He could go down to Winchelsea, when writing about the little town, to see in which way the streets lay, and to provide himself with what we call local colouring.

And recite your panegyrics upon me in every street, every corner, even in the weaving-shops of the women?

O the hard stones of unbelieving words!

Then she went to him very slowly, and sat with him, leaving her hand in his, listening to his words, and feeling in her heart the full delight of having such a lover. Of the words that were then spoken, but very few came from her lips; he told her all his story of the brewery quarrel, and was very eloquent and droll in describing Tappitt as he brandished the poker.

“What, Mr. O’Callaghan!” said Sir Lionel into Miss Todd’s ear, in a tone of well-bred wonder and triumphant admiration. “Mr. O’Callaghan among the sinners! My dear Miss Todd, how will he like the whist-tables?”

For to be quite free from pain while we are in this place of misery is only purchased, as one of this world's literati perceived and remarked, at the price of blunted sensibilities both of mind and body.

To her thinking the kindness of the archdeacon to them personally demanded some indulgence in the expression, and even in the formation, of an opinion, respecting his clerical peculiarities.

And the power of the Logos, having in itself a faculty to foresee future events, not as fated, but as taking place by the choice of free agents, foretold from time to time the issues of things to come; it also became a forbidder of wickedness by means of prohibitions, and the encomiast of those who remained good.

He knew that Montague made frequent visits to her in London.

Whence also angels, who are spirits, see God; and therefore men, as long as they are men, cannot see Him.

“Why do you always call me Mr. Morton?”

Now there are born to the blessed Josiah these five sons— Jehoahaz, Eliakim, Johanan, Zedekiah, or Jeconiah, and Sadum.

By reason of Him the water is suspended in the clouds; the rains shower upon the earth, and the sea is kept within bounds, while the earth bears grasses and is clothed with all manner of plants.

But this they suppress, but make much of what was done by violence in Thrace ; thus showing that they are dissemblers of the Arian heresy, and aliens from the sound Faith.

“The fellow who did that was an ass,” said Harry; “a greater ass than I should have taken him to be, not to have known that if he could have gotten the grass to burn outside, the wool-shed must have gone without all that preparation.

Now and again a man cannot bear the bondage of office, and flies into rebellion and independence which would have been more respectable had it not been the result of discontent.

But this absurdity was beyond the endurance of the assembled bishops— admirable men, and full of divine zeal and wisdom, such as Helladius, successor of the great Basil, Gregorius and Peter, brothers of Basil, and Amphilochius from Lycaonia, Optimus from Pisidia, Diodorus from Cilicia.

“I am sure he is not fit to be the husband of Lady Anna Lovel.”

He could not now say that Mabel had shown a disposition to reject his offer, because as they had been sitting by the brookside at Killancodlem, even he, with all his self-diffidence, had been forced to see what were her wishes.

When the bride heard that her mother and sister were about to escape to Baden-Baden, there rushed upon her a sudden hope that she might be able to accompany the flight.

She must tell him, and then there would be an end of everything.

He went away without another word, and got out to his gig without seeing Mrs. Crawley.

For Daniel saith to Nebuchadnezzar when he had come to all kinds of evil, and had entered upon all impiety, O King let my counsel be acceptable unto you, redeem your sins by almsgiving and your iniquities by compassion on the poor.

For they who pursue these things shall enjoy peace and amity, and may properly be called by the name of Israel.

The hills do not stand thickly together so as to group themselves; the passes from one valley to another, though not wanting in altitude, are not close pressed together with overhanging rocks, and are deficient in grandeur as well as loveliness.

“Which is just what I intend to do.”

So that everywhere the wearing of gold is hurtful, but especially when you are entering into a church, when you pass through the poor.

Pardon me for having praised Origen's zeal for Scriptural learning in my youthful days before I fully knew his heresies; and I will grant you forgiveness for having written an Apology for his works when your head was grey.

The Captain politely opened the old gate for the widow, and then carefully closed it again,—not allowing it to swing, as he would have done at Yarmouth.

He was pleased to do also some miracles, such as they had done, to prevent the incongruity of His not doing in person such things as He had done by them.

Then came the Virgin Mary.

She had learned to feel that she could not trust her comfort in his hands,—that she could never know what his thoughts of her might be.

Now it appears that M. Thome de Gamond has never set foot in Central America; or, if he has done so now—and I do not know whether he has or has not— that he never had done so when he drew out his project.

To be once more a bachelor, in lodgings, with six hundred a year to spend on himself, seemed to him now such a prospect of happiness that he almost became light-hearted as he dressed himself.

For it is evident that He is incorporeal.

The wise, when they acquire goods, send some of them before them, as Job said:— My witnesses are heaven; and again:— My brethren and my lovers are with God.

“I don’t know,” said Lucy blushing. “ I suppose I ought not to have thought anything. But you seemed to be so fond of her.”

9. Then forasmuch as it comes to pass that we sin even after the washing of regeneration, He, showing His love to man to be great even in this case, commands us for the remission of our sins to come unto God who loves man, and thus to say,

Mr. Toffy had his reasons for interrogating this poor woman, but he did not for a while let any one know what those reasons were. He could not, however, obtain more information than what is contained in the answers above given, which were, for the most part, true. Neither the mother nor the younger woman knew where was to be found, at the present moment, that hero of adventure who was called the Grinder, and all the police of Wiltshire began to fear that they were about to be outwitted.

And as Paul was to be led into the castle, he said unto the tribune, May I speak unto you?

GOSHAWK. That we’d take her to our bosoms, if this affair of the cheque should ever be cleared up. (Aside to Mrs. G.) You know I didn’t think it ever would then.

How is it, then, you will say, that frequently at the ordination of priests a virgin is passed over, and a married man taken?

The editor of The People’s Banner, however, expressed the gratification of that journal that even Mr. Gresham had not dared to propose Mr. Phineas Finn for any place under the Crown.

“It is not in the market, Lizzie. Nor should your diamonds be there. You must be content to let them take what legal steps they may think fit, and defend your property. After that you can do as you please; but keep them safe till the thing is settled. If I were you I would have them at the bankers.”

The man’s right to his own land,—his right to be protected from pheasants and foxes, from horses and hounds,—was not lessened by the fact that he was a poor ignorant squalid dishonest wretch.

Laying aside for the sake of clearness that indefinite term of girl—for girls are girls from the age of three up to forty-three, if not previously married—dropping that generic word, we may say that then, at that wedding of her brother, she was a child; and now, at the death of her father, she was a woman.

They shall live here and have the house to themselves if they like it.

And he triumphed again when he found himself really standing by Sir Louis Scatcherd’s bedside.

Write, it is said, the commandments doubly, in counsel and knowledge, that you may answer the words of truth to them who send unto you.

“You, Lotta; you.”

For every wicked man persecutes the good on this account, because the good man consents not with him to evil.

Had she loved George Vavasor, he could have understood that well enough.

He had, doubtless, looked very often into Linda’s face, and had listened very often to the tone of her voice; but he had not understood what her face expressed, nor had he known what compass that voice would reach.

But if He were not Man, there would not have been deliverance for man.

“But surely that is nothing. If I thought so, I should die. If I believed it, they should never take me out of the prison while you are here. Barrington says that it cannot be. Oswald and Violet are sure that such a thing can never happen. It was that Jew who did it.”

And yet, if any man uses this life with a reference to that other which he ardently loves and confidently hopes for, he may well be called even now blessed, though not in reality so much as in hope.

[Luke 2:36-38] After such a fashion as this, I suppose you have had, O Marcion, the hardihood of blotting out the original records (of the history) of Christ, that His flesh may lose the proofs of its reality.

I refuse not this lodging and that, having opened to you the whole Heaven.

What had been decided was committed to writing, and was signed by all the bishops.

But she could not find fault now.

For thus says the prophet Moses: 'In the beginning God made the heaven and the earth.

Wherefore voluntarily?

How indeed could Christ be called perfect God and perfect man, and be said to be of like essence with the Father and with us, if only part of the divine nature is joined in Him to part of the human nature ?

“Salary and wages is one. A salary is a nice thing if it’s paid regular. I had a salary once myself for looking after a stud of ‘orses at Newmarket, only the gentleman broke up and it never went very far.”

“In a trap?”

The prison was opened, and the doors of the furnace were opened: for a dewy breeze whistled through it.

But whether the figurative significations of these things be so, or whether they are better understood in another way, whom would it not move, that with ten plagues the Egyptians are smitten, and with ten commandments the tables are inscribed, that thereby the people of God should be ruled?

When Jeremiah understood what they wanted he said: The spot will remain unknown until God shall gather His people together and be gracious to them.

And if so we are found false witnesses in that we testified of God, that He raised up Christ, Whom He raised not up.

Well, along of this—and knowing as how the masther were agin Mr. Keegan too, they thought he’d jine in; and to bring him round, they swore niver to pay the rint afore he did.

Mr. Walker had invited Dr. Tempest and Miss Anne Prettyman and Major Grantly to meet Mr. Toogood, and had explained, in a manner intended to be half earnest and half jocose, that though Mr. Toogood was an attorney, like himself, and was at this moment engaged in a noble way on behalf of his cousin’s husband, without any idea of receiving back even the money which he would be out of pocket; still he wasn’t quite,—not quite, you know—”not quite so much of a gentleman as I am,”—Mr.

And it is on this score that your claims to honor are so equal.

To this he prefixed the preface which is here printed among Jerome's letters.

[Romans 3:20-26] And then he adds the passage which is now under consideration: Where, then, is your boasting?

The estimation is well grounded and clear.

You will fill them with joy, that they should seek nothing further, when they shall see You face to face; in whom because I am, You will fill Me.

“It was a subject, my friend, on which I could not speak to her. All that was said came from her. Her mind was so fully made up, as I have said before, no advice from me could avail anything. With some people it is easy to see that whether you agree with them or differ from them it is impossible to turn them.”

She could mend his clothes, and it was something for him to have some one to speak to him.

[Romans 15:20] Great courage this also.

“I do not think so; far from it, Miss Waddington. Bertram is my dear friend, and I know his fine qualities; but I cannot but own that he justified you in that temporary want of confidence which you now express.”

Show me their seed— their birth— their mothers.

[Luke 15:4] How long will money last?

She must see her friends before she went, or else her friends would know that she had been carried into banishment.

Chapter 53. The Love of Moses Towards His People.

The poor dear old dowager was exceedingly busy and full of groans, prescribing Naples, prescribing a course of extra prayers, prescribing a general course of letting bygones be bygones,—to which, however, Trevelyan would by no means assent without some assurance, which he might regard as a guarantee,—prescribing retirement to a small town in the west of France if Naples would not suffice; but she could effect nothing.

“Can any man love another better than I do you?” I would say to him with energy; “and yet would I scruple for a moment to deposit you in the college when the day had come?

I do not write to say a word about my love, of which I think you may be assured without any letter.

Santerre, who sat next to him, was in every respect unlike the ci-devant nobleman.

“For others there may be excuse,” she continued, thinking then, as always, of that scene at West Putford, and defending to herself him whom to herself she so often accused; “but for you there can be none. If you drive him from you now, whatever evil may befall him will lie like a weight of lead upon your heart. If you refuse him now, he is not the man to take it quietly and wait.”

He had been very unwilling, he said, to express any strong opinion of his own.

Where the long chain of the Stoics?

Ever since her last interview with the woman whom she had feared, she had been conscious of having been indiscreet.

If the people of Tankerville would return him to Parliament it should be his first object to put an end to this anomaly.

Captain Cuttwater poured out another glass of rum, and dropped the subject.

For these fathers were furnished with the Spirit, and largely honoured by the Word Himself; and just as it is with instruments of music.

“But tomorrow’s the night, Mr. Thady, when yer honer’s to be inisheated among us sworn brothers.”

If they deprecate our doxology on the ground that it lacks written authority, let them give us the written evidence for the confession of our faith and the other matters which we have enumerated.

“Dead; of course he is dead. What of that? I wish he had been dead ten years ago,—or twenty. Do you suppose I am to forgive him because he is dead? I’ll heap his grave with curses, if that can be of avail to punish him.”

For they will find nothing from any quarter except the greater condemnation of themselves.

(For it is said, They shall receive you into their everlasting tabernacles [Luke 16:9]) when you see each one of them beaming with light above the rays of the sun, not from brass and steel, but from that glory whose gleamings the eye of man cannot look upon?

Ah, yes, I thought so.

Chapter XLVIII. Mr. Prosper Changes His Mind

The father, what with his election and his farming, and a period of costly living early in his life, had not done well for the family.

Such a change even as that would throw them into a different way of talking, and prevent the necessity of any further immediate allusion to Will Belton.

She had only to say that he was indifferent to her;—that was all.

Here is the knot which the fingers of men cannot open, and which admits of no sudden cutting with the knife.

On what account?

“Well, Scatcherd; I must do my duty to you, whether you like it or not.”

For they were both sprung from Rebecca, and from Isaac the true-born, the elect, the son honored above all, of whom He said, In Isaac shall your seed be called, who became the father of us all; but if he was our father, then should his sons have been our fathers; yet it was not so.

“No,” said he; “no indeed. I hate it,—particularly between friends. So you have come to grief with your friends, the Aylmers?”

Whence, by offering unto death the body He Himself had taken, as an offering and sacrifice free from any stain, straightway He put away death from all His peers by the offering of an equivalent.

But a sermon is still required of us, that the priests' exhortation may be added to the solemn reading of Holy Writ, as I am sure you are with pious expectation demanding of us as your accustomed due.

When then they were now not living in them, they were now bidden to mortify such.

“Uncle,” she said at last, “what makes you so sombre? Shall I read to you?”

Light is good when it shines in cheerfulness, to a sorrowful heart it seems even to be a trouble.

I have spent the best part of my life in looking after, and I hope in improving, such mails; and I always endeavor to do a stroke of work when I come across them.

It was an extremely comfortable arrangement, and Julia was very glad of the money—feeling it to be a portion of that which was her own.

My friend at the estate invited us to a late breakfast after having shown me what I came to see.

Every apprehension of those evils under the pressure of which all had suffered was now removed; men whose heads had drooped in sorrow now regarded each other with smiling countenances, and looks expressive of their inward joy.

And say not, why do you call me to council, if you hearken not to what I say?

For, if he had meant such an opinion as this to be entertained of the facility of taming the tongue, there would have followed in the sequel of the passage a comparison of that member with the beasts.

Mrs. Western and her secret must be altogether discarded.

To make a long story short, leaving on her left the mausoleum of Helena queen of Adiabene who in time of famine had sent grain to the Jewish people, Paula entered Jerusalem, Jebus, or Salem, that city of three names which after it had sunk to ashes and decay was by Ælius Hadrianus restored once more as Ælia.

And if the soul is able by its own imprudence to create for itself a new misery, which was not unforeseen by the Divine Providence, but was provided for in the order of nature along with the deliverance from it, how can we, even with all the rashness of human vanity, presume to deny that God can create new things— new to the world, but not to Him— which He never before created, but yet foresaw from all eternity?

She did not quite understand why Margaret’s sojourn at the Cedars had been and was to be so much prolonged.

As she made her promise she turned her sweet face up to his, and he leaned over her, and kissed her.

Moses bears with thousands murmuring against God, and so often offending His holy name.

I do not, however, for this cause deny the Godhead of the Son.

The fourteenth of July is the date of both.

But mark His tender care also, how He surpasses the affection of any father.

Nor ought it to appear wonderful to any one, if a kingdom founded with such vastness, and so long increased by so many and such men, and in short strengthened by such great resources, shall nevertheless at some time fall.

[Jonah 3:10] Manasses was the most lawless of Kings, [2 Chronicles 33:12-13] but is the most conspicuous among those who have attained salvation through mourning.

I know that I am letting him waste his sweetness all in vain.

I will introduce him to the reader in the present tense as Rector of Bowick, and proprietor and head-master of the school established in the village of that name.

But does any urgent and most pressing cause compel the demons to mediate between the gods and men, that they may offer the prayers of men, and bring back the answers from the gods?

“And tell your fellow to take them round to the back door.”

You shall meet her so; and then we’ll shoot over the squire’s land.

For he says, 'But you are not in the flesh.'

But you say to me, He rose again, do I by any means rise again?

She had then declared that Johnny was a “mere clerk.” She had a higher opinion of him now,—a much higher opinion, even though he could never be more to her than a friend.

He is much more powerful than any minister can be with us, and is subject to a much lighter responsibility.

Thus, O Lord, thus, I beseech You, let there arise, as You make, as You give joy and ability—let truth spring out of the earth, and righteousness look down from heaven, and let there be lights in the firmament.

“By G——,” said Gilmore, “I’d give every acre I have in the world, and every shilling, and every friend, and twenty years of my life, if I could only be allowed at this moment to think it possible that she would ever marry me!”

Chapter 21.— Superstition of Astrologers.

Perhaps a Christian from Friday Street, with plenty of money in his pockets, would stand in higher esteem at Suez than at Cairo.

Why then do we, to the neglect of our own selves, waste all our attention upon those things, which when we are gone we can no longer reach, and often even while we stay here we cannot keep hold of, when we might have such riches as to be found not in this life only, but also in that, in the easiest circumstances?

But then if I were unmarried I ought to do just the same.

; and in their hands had been reposed by the Frau that confidence as to business matters which almost every one in business must have in some lawyer.

He was crippled as regards space; he was crippled as regards money, and he was crippled as to materials; for he was called on to use columns from other places.

Then came a scramble, as I have said, and Grey had a hold of the smaller man by the nape of his neck.

For we observe that our discourse has been serviceable not only for a refutation of heresies, but also in reference to those who entertain these opinions.

Anxiously now were all eyes turned to the headland, but as yet no boat was there.

He of course does not notice the Scriptures of the New Testament, wherein we learn that the intention of the law in its censure is this, that, by reason of the transgressions which men commit, they may flee for refuge to the grace of the Lord, who has pity upon them— the schoolmaster [Galatians 3:24] shutting them up unto the same faith which should afterwards be revealed; [Galatians 3:23] that by it their transgressions may be forgiven, and then not again be committed, by God's assisting grace.

Chapter 32. Invitation.

‘Your left hand, Katie, your left,’ shouted Norman; ‘your left string.’ Katie was confused, and gave first a pull with her right, and then a pull with her left, and then a strong pull with her right. The two men backed water as hard as they could, but the effect of Katie’s steering was to drive the nose of the boat right into one of the wooden piers of the bridge.

I expressed in Latin just what I found in the Greek text of the books [Περὶ ᾿Αρχῶν], not wishing the reader to believe what was in my translation, but wishing him not to believe what was in yours.

He had quite understood all that he might gain by assuming the intimacy of cousinhood, and he had assumed it.

Wherefore his own, if it is of the law?

lxxvii. 2. My soul refused to be comforted.

Although the Prophet in the Spirit of God so speaks these things, even as God does the same, with sure judgment, with a judgment good, righteous, holy, tranquil; not moved with wrath, not with bitter jealousy, not with desire of wreaking enmities, but of punishing wickedness with righteousness; nevertheless, it is a prophecy.

Some are rich, as they wish, and are afflicted with ill-health, as they do not wish; others are blessed with good health, as they wish, and afflicted with poverty, as they do not wish.

He that says, I know him, and keeps not his commandments, is a liar, and the truth is not in him.

“Miss Melmotte-” began poor Hetta very slowly.

Lord Chiltern was as glad to see him as she had been, and in a very few minutes he found himself quite at home. In the hall he was introduced to Miss Palliser, but he was hardly able to see her as she stood there a moment in her hat and habit. There was ever so much said about the day’s work. The earths had not been properly stopped, and Lord Chiltern had been very angry, and the owner of Trumpeton Wood, who was a great duke, had been much abused, and things had not gone altogether straight.

She had told him that he ought to have remembered that Felix was her son; and as she spoke she had acted well the part of an outraged mother.

And (Carpocrates asserts) that the soul (of Jesus), inasmuch as it was made vigorous and undefiled, remembered the things seen by it in its converse with the unbegotten God.

Unless such evidence be conclusive, who can venture to declare that this aspirant may not be the one who shall succeed?

To him all the mighty pomp and all the little squabbles of office were, he said, as nothing.

But instead of the pleasure which one expects therefrom, one gets accusations, plots, slanders, disparagement, charges brought against one, bits of a sentence torn from their context, caught up, and turned to one's hurt.

It is on the contrary well known to your excellency that I have spent a considerable portion of my ecclesiastical revenues in erecting porticoes and baths, building bridges, and making further provision for public objects.

Whence I expected nothing else but that the whole land would be deluged, and I began to form in my mind a place of escape, and a Noah's ark.

Doubtless it was this—that if all future things have been foreknown, they will happen in the order in which they have been foreknown; and if they come to pass in this order, there is a certain order of things foreknown by God; and if a certain order of things, then a certain order of causes, for nothing can happen which is not preceded by some efficient cause.

And now, Mr. Fenwick, let me beg that there mayn’t be another word about her.

“More ain’t Spicer,” said another voice.

It is a fine permission which is conveyed in the words be together again.

‘Listen to me here!’ ‘Obey my word at once!’ ‘Speak a word more than you are told, and you’ll see what you’ll get!’ ‘Do that a second time, and you die!’ We should read of such things and look at them from a distance, not only for our pleasure, but that we may know of what we have to be aware, and what we ought to avoid.

I, He says, am the Way: no man comes unto the Father but by Me.

“Thankye, Mum; no, I takes it reg’lar when I takes it. I’m on dooty just at present.”

Where the cherubim?

Twenty times the idea of a will had come into her mind, and how comfortable it would be if Anty would leave her property, or at any rate a portion of it, to Martin.

He enjoyed at any rate that supreme delight which a man feels when he thoroughly believes his own doctrine.

‘And the box must be opened again.’

There are, they say, seventy thousand coloured people in the island, and not more than fifteen thousand white people. As the former increase in intelligence, it is not to be supposed that they will submit to the latter. Nor are they at all inclined to submission.

But then she also had not been quite true with him.

They were to go out to the Gentiles: but observe the boldness coming with measure: for if Peter pleaded in his justification, much more these needed a plea, none having called them there.

“I haven’t a sixpence, Sir Abraham,” said the warden.

Either, then, they ought to have died, since they had seen Him— for (the sentence runs), No man shall see God, and live; or else if they saw God, and yet did not die, the Scripture is false in stating that God said, If a man see my face, he shall not live.

Yet they shut themselves up alone with women and justify their sinful embraces by quoting the lines:

In the same manner also, if there are more gods than one, they will be of less weight, others having in themselves the same power.

How should it be cashed at his banker’s, seeing that he had not had a shilling there for the last three months?

Does not your image in the mirror appear to will to be you yourself, but to be therefore false, because it is not?

And this (light) is a perfect God, who from the unbegotten radiance above, and from the spirit, is borne down into human nature as into a temple, by the impulsive power of Nature, and by the motion of wind.

The ark in which he was placed when dead, which every one now calls a sarcophagus, was then called in Greek [σορὸς], and they began to worship him when buried in it before his temple was built; and from Soros and Apis he was called first [Sorosapis, or] Sorapis, and then Serapis, by changing a letter, as easily happens.

Their connection was too firm and too close to be shaken off.

It may one day be conic sections, another Greek iambics, and a third German philosophy.

Now these promises, it is evident to every one, will be fulfilled after the resurrection.

“I put it to yourself whether you do not know the why. How often have you made excuses for him? Why have the excuses been necessary? I am prepared to bear all the blame. I must bear it. But I am not prepared to make myself miserable for ever because I have made a mistake as to a man’s character. Of course I shall suffer,—because I love him. He will not suffer much,—because he does not love me.”

Some one concerned had looked into this matter of the trains, and there at the station was a fly ready to take her to Llanfeare.

But when she set herself to work to weigh it all, and to find out what it was that young Newton really wanted,—and what he ought to want, she shook off from herself that dream before it had done her any injury.

Are His words displeasing, and are you offended when you hear them?

“The Vulturess will take you in again, when she knows you’ve nowhere else to go,” Lizzie had said,—displaying, indeed, some accurate discernment of her aunt’s character.

And if He has a figure, how is He not limited?

“What to say,—Anna?”

For indeed malice stops at nothing.

And while I remained in that city, he sent for me again into Gaul (for the father Hosius was going there), that we might travel from thence to Sardica.

Or was the real fact this, that they examined him so far as man can examine man, but were unable to find him out, as he long lay hid with cunning falseness?

But I quoted the case of Silvanus of Cirta, who held his own see some little time before himself, who was expressly declared in the Municipal Chronicles to have been a traditor while he was yet a sub-deacon.

“I don’t know yet, my dear.”

She hoped for no great change in the direction of society.

If you wish to be a catholic, refrain from believing, or saying, or teaching that infants which are forestalled by death before they are baptized may yet attain to forgiveness of their original sins.

That in such a transaction Mrs. Brumby should have been so thoroughly successful, and that we should have been so shamefully degraded, has always appeared to us to be an injury too deep to remain unredressed for ever. Can such wrongs be, and the heavens not fall! Our greatest comfort has been in the reflection that neither the lieutenant nor his wife ever saw a shilling of the £10. That, doubtless, never went beyond Badger and Blister.

“I am disturbed, and you had better go.”

Of course there had been spite and malice and every possible evil passion at work.

It must, I think, be conceded that the Gulf States have not suffered at all by their connection with the Northern States; that in lieu of any such suffering, they owe all their national greatness to the Northern States; that they have been lifted up, by the commercial energy of the Atlantic States and by the agricultural prosperity of the Western States, to a degree of national consideration and respect through the world at large which never could have belonged to them standing alone.

Such was Mr. Arabin, the new vicar of St. Ewold, who is going to stay with the Grantlys at Plumstead Episcopi.

What need to tell of the wife of Niceratus, who, not enduring to wrong her husband, inflicted death upon herself rather than subject herself to the lust of the thirty tyrants whom Lysander had set over conquered Athens?

Because the time is short.

Nectarius, after much hesitation as to what means ought to be adopted, deposed the deacon; and, at the advice of certain persons, who urged the necessity of leaving each individual to examine himself before participating in the sacred mysteries, he abolished the office of the presbyter presiding over penance.

Their own friends, having no food for them, had expelled them from their own homes.

He shall submit. Am I not President? Soldiers— Madame Brudo.

They were close to Caldigate as they entered; neither did they speak to him or he to them.

“Melmotte a convert to Romanism! I’ll make you a present of him, and thank you to take him; but I don’t believe that we’ve any such good riddance.”

“And then he’ll come back to you?”

He might have said, He was with God; but as He was in the beginning, so He was with God in the beginning, and All things were made by Him, being in the beginning, for God made all things, as David tells us, in wisdom.

Chapter 23 [X.]— The Pelagians Affirm that God in the Case of Abraham and Sarah Aroused Concupiscence as a Gift from Heaven.

“And what then? That would only be for a month or so.”

She would have given much to escape what was coming, but she had not expected to escape it.

Here he seems to me to be alluding also to them that commit fornication: and to raise up as a wall unto them the fear of that world, not however to them alone; but also to all that in any wise transgress.

that which was in the memory of him who retains, and that which is impressed thence upon the vision of the mind of him who recollects.

But she did feel that she ought not to be afraid, or that her fears, at any rate, should not be allowed to restrain her.

“I have felt for years,” said he, “that if anybody could break up the party it would be Mr. Gresham.”

“No, Josiah,—surely not so? They did not use that very word?”

Some letters must of course be subjected to new dies, and this letter might in due course have been so subjected.

Chapter 12. The True Functions of the Soul. Christ Assumed It in His Perfect Human Nature, Not to Reveal and Explain It, But to Save It. Its Resurrection with the Body Assured by Christ

Our mother's Sire! Whose wrath makes all things reel;

[Ephesians 3:17] He then added, in your hearts by faith, rooted and grounded in love,— making faith and love not substantial parts, but only conceptions of the soul.

And then that doubled burden,—that burden of two mouths to be fed, of two backs to be covered, of two minds to be satisfied, is so apt to double itself again and again.

The rumour had then spread itself through the whole town from Pimlico to Marylebone.

Tractate 60 John 13:21

And this also St. Paul showed, when he said, We are chastened now, that we should not be condemned with the world.

And thus it is agreed that this alone is sufficient to condemn a man; viz., that he differs from the judgment of truth.

‘Compel! How will you compel it? She is my wife.’

Wherefore they shall eat the fruits of their own way, and they shall be filled with their own ungodliness.

Rational action ought therefore to be subject to the control of contemplation, which is exercised through faith while we are absent from the Lord, as it will be hereafter through sight, when we shall be like Him, for we shall see Him as He is.

I would not be understood to say that the prime minister had in so many words promised the bishopric to Dr. Grantly.

I suppose, in order that, it may consider itself, and live according to its own nature; that is, seek to be regulated according to its own nature, viz., under Him to whom it ought to be subject, and above those things to which it is to be preferred; under Him by whom it ought to be ruled, above those things which it ought to rule.

For in admonishing Timothy he says, Reprove, entreat, rebuke, with all long-suffering and doctrine [2 Timothy 4:2].

Thus, moreover, we find that Enoch also was translated, who pleased God, as in Genesis the Holy Scripture bears witness, and says, And Enoch pleased God; and afterwards he was not found, because God translated him.

To this we reply, that if Celsus had known that saying, I and My Father are one, and the words used in prayer by the Son of God, As You and I are one, he would not have supposed that we worship any other besides Him who is the Supreme God.

And there came a voice to him, Rise, Peter; kill, and eat.

And then from time to time little rumours reached her ears which made her aware that, in the teeth of all Mr Melmotte’s social successes, a general opinion that he was a gigantic swindler was rather gaining ground than otherwise.

“Think of me, then. Is there anything said there which the usage to which I have been subjected does not justify?”

In regard to her own wishes on the subject she had never asked herself a single question.

We do not live with strictness, nor keep a clear conscience; for if this were the case nothing would alarm us, neither death, nor famine, nor the loss of wealth, nor anything else of this kind.

And He answered and spoke unto those that stood around before His face, saying, Take away the filthy garments from Him, and clothe Him with a flowing garment, and place a fair mitre upon His head; and they clothed Him with a garment, and placed a fair mitre upon His head.

“As the law stands I cannot do that. But as you are luckily in orders, I can put you in—on this understanding, that you shall regard the income as belonging rather to your mother and to your sisters than to yourself.”

“But I knew that you would be true.”

As then you cannot say, Whence arises my intimacy and connection with this limb?

It did not occur to her to do other than hate him.

[Jerome's reply to the foregoing. Exposing the error of Hilary of Poitiers, who supposed the expression to signify redemption of the house of David, he goes on to show that in the gospels it is a quotation from Psa. cxviii. 25 and that its true meaning is save now (so A.V.). Let us, he writes, leave the streamlets of conjecture and return to the fountain-head. It is from the Hebrew writings that the truth is to be drawn. Written at Rome A.D. 383.]

The friends of Melmotte had moreover a basis of hope, and were enabled to sound premonitory notes of triumph, arising from causes quite external to their party.

Now it was God who made and still makes man; but by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for in him all sinned.

For, as the tares within the Church can have and handle them, though not for salvation, but for the destruction to which they are destined in the fire, so also can the tares without, which received them from seceders from within; for they did not lose them by seceding.

For in this place they reproach Him with cowardice and vainglory: since to say, no man does anything in secret, is the expression of persons charging Him with cowardice, and suspecting the things done by Him as being not really done; and to add, that he seeks to be known, was to accuse Him of vainglory.

If used at all they should be steeped in water and dried, but even then they are pernicious except in small quantities.

c. Such was Susan’s fate, as communicated to her by Mrs. Bell and Hetta.

Latterly, being bound as he was to follow the matter up officially, he would not have seen Mrs. Crawley, had he been able to escape that lady’s importunity.

“I am so glad she has gone,” said Lily. “We shall have to stop here for the next hour, as Gregory won’t know what to take away and what to leave. I was so afraid she was going to stop and see us off the premises.”

The objection made to such a seat is, that it would so soon be dirty.

We have a similar instance, in Paul's Epistle to the Corinthians, in his command to husbands and wives to come together again.

Even if he delay and defer with respect to the giving, let us not be dispirited; having learned that the putting it off and delay is a sure proof of caring and love for mankind.

The boy had been unfortunate at Eton;—but how many unfortunate boys had become great men!

IV. The foolish practice of some who turn to the sun and bow to it is reprehensible

For each one among created things must remain in its own proper place, that none may be wanting to any, but all may be full: heaven of angels, thrones of powers, luminaries of ministers; and the more divine spots, and the undefiled and untainted luminaries, with seraphim, who attend the Supreme Council, and uphold the universe; and the world of men.

“ He do lie,” she said.

My life is over for me, and I may as well lay me down and die.

13. For You shall set them low. For You shall rank them among those from whom in degradation and contempt You will turn away. In Your leavings You shall make ready their countenance [Psalm 20:12]. And in these things that Thou leavest, that is, in the desires of an earthly kingdom, You shall make ready their shamelessness for Your passion.

Well, I keep to this statement.

Break every bond of wickedness; for this is the sacrifice that is acceptable to the Lord, a contrite heart that seeks its Maker.

“There are other ways of speaking than the voice; and I will boast to you, though to no one else, that you have told me so. I believe you love me. I shall hold myself as engaged to you, and I shall think you false if I hear that you listen to another man. Now, good-by, Grace;—my own Grace.”

[John 4:35] And again, The harvest truly is great, but the laborers are few.

“The Bios Company?”

“Very well, George; then I have done. It has been the same in every twist and turn of my life. In everything that I have striven to do for you, you have thrown yourself over, in order that I might be thrown over too. But I believe you say this merely to vex me.”

I really could not tell him about her sitting and—and kissing the man.

For what things are the subjects of His Providence, of those He is Maker through His proper Word.

Would it not be better for him to recede?

As he did so it occurred to him that the reporters had been more than courteous to him.

But, dearly beloved, among all tribulations of the human soul is no greater tribulation than the consciousness of sin.

It is necessary first to say what the meaning of this passage is: for so shall we readily comprehend the Apostle's discourse.

Do you believe that the gods also flock up to enjoy their pleasant taste, and, just as barking dogs, lay aside their fierceness for mouthfuls, and pretty often fawn upon those who hold these out?

Here he gives them a hard blow, by showing that this error had crept in because the love of Christ had not been rooted within them.

V. Chastity and charity are the two things most needful in preparing for Easter Communion

The engagement was to remain in force.

But for those Spanish marriages Louis Philippe’s heirs might still have sat upon the throne of France, and the name of king would not be altogether disgraced in the realm over which Henry IV.

You are a man; become not a wild beast.

“A sad, sad story,” said Mrs. Vincent, shaking her head.

“For being companion to some lady in the decline of life, who would want to have some nice mannered person always with her. You have the advantage of being ladylike and gentle, and I think that you are patient by disposition.”

But Barty could not jump among the waves from one stone to another as she could do, nor was he as yet able to get aid in his work from the very force of the water as she could get it.

For, as far as pertains to God's creation, every creature is clean.

“You wrote in such a strain that I could not but come to you.”

For He said not, This doctrine is not Mine; but having first said, it is Mine, and having claimed it as His own, He then added, it is not Mine.

Anaxagoras, however had not said anything about bodily sensation.

Therefore they endeavour entirely to exterminate and take them away as witnesses of their crimes and wickedness, and think them burthensome to themselves, as though their life were reproved.

And thus they cease to listen with submission to a man who does not listen to himself, and in despising the preacher they learn to despise the word that is preached.

Had Pompey remained free from Cæsar it would have been better.

But like Pharaoh he hardened his heart.

Banquet of the Ten Virgins (Discourse 1)

And our father began to say: Do not suppose, my dearest Peter, that I am not thinking of the doctrines preached by you.

Now it would be necessary that she should meet him, and she looked forward to doing so almost with fear and trembling.

Poor ladies!

“If you choose to take my solicitude on your behalf in that way, of course I have done. You were good enough to say just now that you wished to see me and my husband in your hospitable halls. After all that has passed, do you think that I could be a visitor at your house unless there is a mistress there?”

Cure autem omnibus animantibus æque ipsum communem effuderit.

Hitherto, on this subject, Mrs. Grantly had said little or nothing.

Nor of all these as diverse let me speak.

Fitzm and I shared the same bed; that is, we lay on the same boards, and did what we could to cover ourselves with the same blankets.

For he had a slow fever, and the itching of the skin of his whole body was insupportable.

Lady Alice was the only one of the family who had ever studied music.

It certainly amounted to very much.

For such is the case with our passions, and such in this matter is the task of the good shepherd, if he is to know properly the souls of his flock, and to guide them according to the methods of a pastoral care which is right and just, and worthy of our true Shepherd.

The bones of the martyrs, that is, the bodies of the witnesses of Christ.

And truly the very fact of existing is by some natural spell so pleasant, that even the wretched are, for no other reason, unwilling to perish; and, when they feel that they are wretched, wish not that they themselves be annihilated, but that their misery be so.

He humbled Himself, becoming obedient even unto death, and the death of the cross.

We worship those mercies, and bow the knee before the Majesty of His Father, Who converted our worship to Him.

Eli. Eustace.

But, indeed, He even affirmed that the sex should exist by saying, They shall not be given in marriage, which can only apply to females; Neither shall they marry, which applies to males.

But all these imprecations He uttered in order to tarnish the Creator as a cruel Being, against whom such as offended were destined to have a woe.

He had on the uniform of a Vendean officer, and round his waist was fastened a white scarf with a black knot, the distinguishing mark which he now bore of his rank in the army as Commander-in-Chief.

As to other things, moreover, in accordance with the rules of saving doctrine, which require to be narrated or discussed, whether they be matters relating to the faith, or questions bearing on the moral life, or others dealing with temptations, all these should be gone through in the manner which I have indicated, and ought therein to be referred to the more excellent way (already noticed).

Either anger must be attributed to God, and kindness taken from Him; or both alike must be taken from Him; or anger must be taken away, and kindness attributed to Him; or neither must be taken away.

“Your papa likes his being in Parliament.”

And I think that just as a man commits adultery in his heart only, though not proceeding altogether to the overt act, so he commits in his heart the rest of the things which are forbidden.

[1 Timothy 1:9] For the just has within himself the law of his mind, and a rule of equity and justice.

For they for whom innocent blood was given were redeemed, and, turned back from their captivity, they sing this Psalm.

So that Enos, Seth's son, was nineteen years old when his son Cainan was born, though Scripture calls these years 190.

Now, if you have been cast out after defeat in battle, you have suffered such treatment justly indeed, as all the Scriptures bear witness; but we, though we have done no such [evil acts] after we knew the truth of God, are testified to by God, that, together with the most righteous, and only spotless and sinless Christ, we are taken away out of the earth.

Itaque ardentissimam cupiditatem cunctorum animantium corporibus admiscuit, ut in hos affectus avidissime ruerent, eaque ratione propagari et multiplicari genera possent.

And yet in transmitting these things your most sweet soul declares that it blushes much for shame, and holds out the shield of charity before this same shame-facedness.

For the flood-wave coming in, the whole breaks up and scatters.

Providence has hitherto been very good to me in not having made that loss irremediable by your marriage with Mr Grey.

And, even now, it was not against her son that her heart was bitter, but against the woman, who, being an Italian, and having been married, if married, without the knowledge of the family, presumed to say that her child was legitimate.

“I know it,” he said. “I know how good you are and how reasonable. I know how much you have to forgive.”

And this is clearly indicated also by the words, And the world hated them, because they are not of the world.

Did it no longer exist?

The truth was that no air suited him for sleeping except the air of Southampton Buildings.

“Does Gertrude obey her about Mr. Houston?”

He gave his name to some officer about the place, but learned that his name was altogether unknown.

“My dear Dr. Wortle,” said the reply; “your letter has pained me exceedingly, because I find that I have caused you a degree of annoyance which I am certainly very sorry I have inflicted.

Archie did thank him, and Doodles was not without his triumph. Of the frequent references to Warwickshire which he had been forced to endure, he said nothing, nor yet of the reference to Michaelmas dinners; and, gradually, as he came to talk frequently to Archie of the Russian spy, and perhaps also to one or two others of his more intimate friends, he began to convince himself that he really had wormed the truth out of Madam Gordeloup, and got altogether the better of that lady, in a very wonderful way.

And, though what is done is right, yet it is not to be approved that the mind is therein disturbed.

For as you are a partaker of his good actions, so are you of his sins.

He had been harassed by the importunities both of his father and of Davis; and that, under such circumstances, he should have run away from his affianced bride, was almost excusable, But now—!

Few, probably, will think that Providence has permitted so great an exodus as that which has taken place from Africa to the West without having wise results in view. We may fairly believe that it has been a part of the Creator’s scheme for the population and cultivation of the earth; a part of that scheme which sent Asiatic hordes into Europe, and formed, by the admixture of nations, that race to which it is our pride to belong. But that admixture of blood has taken tens of centuries.

To the right honourable lords our right reverend brethren and colleagues Damasus, Ambrosius, Britton, Valerianus, Ascholius, Anemius, Basilius and the rest of the holy bishops assembled in the great city of Rome, the holy synod of the orthodox bishops assembled at the great city of Constantinople, sends greeting in the Lord.

[Tobit 4:3-19] His own son had, and he had not; and the way of life a blind man to one seeing did show.

He has with him the good men of all time, and turns his mind freely wherever he chooses.

“As far as I am concerned you are quite welcome to know everything.”

Mrs. Furnival had not said much at the time to encourage the fidelity of her friend, but she was thus justified in declaring to herself that her husband’s goings on had become the talk of all the world;—and his goings on especially in that quarter in which she had long regarded them with so much dismay.

And one of the disciples was not even willing to depart with Him into Judea, when he heard of dangers, but said, Let us also go that we may die with Him, [John 11:16] taking it hardly because he expected that he should die.

It may be play to you, but it’s death to me.” He looked at her, and saw that she was quite in earnest.

Young ladies who must go about without mothers, brothers, uncles, carriages, or attendants of any sort, are not often eaten or even roared at.

And, by the end of the year, the starving would have to be done by three,—a development of events on which he had not seemed to calculate when he told his dearest Mary that after all there were worse things in the world than starving.

Homily on Psalm 1

So, sir, give the episcopal throne of Antioch to whom you will.

She was very quiet, allowing her guests to do most of the talking.

It is false.

Bozzle had always waited upon him with a decent coat, and a well-brushed hat, and clean shoes.

For this last sounds most weighty, and reminds us that certain stages were passed over from lighter to more weighty, until the gehenna of fire was reached.

I did not like to search further by displacing them.

Is this desirable and praiseworthy justice, or not rather atrocious and damnable error?

But what He is, in His own Nature, Who exists apart from generation, and what He is, Who is believed to have been generated, we do not learn from the signification of having been generated, and not having been generated.

And so, by the persuasion of nature herself, the superfluous multitude of other gods being abandoned, Felicity alone would be worshipped, prayer would be made to her alone, her temple alone would be frequented by the citizens who wished to be happy, which no one of them would not wish; and thus felicity, who was sought for from all the gods, would be sought for only from her own self.

“Mamma,” she said, “I will not do anything without telling you; but I cannot leave Herbert in all his misery to think that I have no sympathy with him. I shall write to him.”

The bishop also thought that Mr Quiverful wouldn’t do for the hospital; such an exchange wouldn’t look well at such a time; and, when pressed harder, he declared he didn’t think Mr Harding would accept of Puddingdale under any circumstances.

“It is very hard to judge of men’s motives. I have never supposed him to be so black that he would not wish to make atonement for the evil he has done.”

For both at the beginning he put the two in close succession, David and Abraham, and also in summing up he mentions both in the same way.

What evil words he with his will has said.

“A mayo. I will explain it all to you. You will see them about in all places, and you will get used to them.”

We once knew a gentleman who, on asking the price of a sole, was told that he could have one fresh for a shilling, but that a stinking sole would cost him sixpence.

But if they be not abominable, go down unto the stage, imitate that which you praise, or rather, do thou merely take a walk with him that is exciting that laugh.

No; he could not himself destroy the document, though it should remain there for years to make his life a burden to him.

Miss Grantly was a young lady not much older than Lucy Robarts, and she also was quiet, and not given to much talking in open company.

Why, Mary and Augusta Gresham had for years, we will hardly say now for how many, passed their mornings together in the same schoolroom; had quarrelled, and squabbled, and caressed and kissed, and been all but as sisters to each other.

“What a wicked old woman she was!” virtuous readers will say; “what a wicked old woman to endeavour to catch that poor old maid’s fortune for her son!”

Of the same concerning the Incarnation (Schol. c. 13):—

“Yes; but I must beg you to understand that there has been no quarrel. Indeed you will, I have no doubt, perceive that, as Mrs. Orme has assured me that she will see your mother constantly till the time comes.”

Indeed, they are so sweet that almost every man will condescend to flatter the master of hounds.

Divers are the lives, but better is Your life than our lives My lips shall praise You.

It will be remembered that the party escaping from the Château of Clisson met Jean Stein, when they had come within four or five leagues of Durbellière.

Yes—now is the time to remember it, if it is ever to be remembered to any advantage. He went on with stoic resolution to the end of the street, determined to press home and put the last touch to ‘Crinoline and Macassar;’ but as he went he thought of his interview with Mr. M’Ruen and of the five sovereigns still in his pocket, and altered his course.

I don’t understand it, and wish that he had someone else to lecture to.

And then there came a horrible thought.

It was surrounded by shelves which were laden with books and dust, which by no chance were ever disturbed.

They are made beautiful that this worship may be attractive to men, and not for the glory of God.

What do you take me for?

One has shown forth through poverty, another through riches; for example, Elijah through poverty, Abraham through riches.

He would have reached London at four or five in the morning, and have been very uncomfortable.

“You see, if he don’t work now he must come to grief. He hasn’t got a shilling that he can call his own.”

“But you might have had that good fortune without the fever.”

For as in the case of those who are beloved, their faces, their garments, their sandals, their houses, or streets, excite us, the instant we behold them; so also should we observe a servant, or friend, or house, or street, or any thing else belonging to those we hate and hold our enemies, we are stung by all these things; and the strokes we endure from the sight of each one of them are frequent and continual.

She will like his title, his house, and his property.

But among other things which had been uttered under his name, the deacon Paulinus had objected to Cœlestius that he said that the sin of Adam was prejudicial to himself alone, and not to the human race, and that infants newly born were in the same condition in which Adam was before his sin.

“Well, Sir?” Captain Batsby found the explanation very difficult; and hummed and hawed a great deal. “Do you mean to say that it was a lie from beginning to end about Miss Dormer?” Great liberties of speech are allowed to gentlemen whose daughters have been run away with, and whose hospitality has been outraged.

But the Only-begotten God is God, subsisting by virtue of a perfect and ineffable birth, true Scion of the Unbegotten God, incorporeal offspring of an incorporeal nature, living and true God of living and true God, God of a nature inseparable from God.

But he thought that the brother had been quite as favourable to him as he could have expected, and the ice was broken.

“But it is ay, my dear. It is so. This is a thing such as men do; not such as women do, unless they be forlorn and unaided of men. I know that I am weak where you are strong; that I am crazed where you are clear-witted.”

XXII.

Acts IV. 1

When the ladies left the dining-room, both Bertram and Harcourt heartily wished that Miss Baker had not been so scrupulously hospitable.

For not a carnal love ought ours to be.

They were addicted to the love of boys, and one of their wise men made a law that Pædrasty, as well as anointing for wrestling, should not be allowed to slaves, as if it was an honorable thing; and they had houses for this purpose, in which it was openly practiced.

“And I’m always taking exercise,” said the earl. “There isn’t a man about the place works much harder than I do. And, let me tell you, sir, when you undertake to keep six or seven hundred acres of land in your own hand, you must look after it, unless you mean to lose money by it.”

For ten or twelve days after the little dinner in Berkeley Square Guss Mildmay bore her misfortunes without further spoken complaint.

57. But how hard it is to condemn to penance for life one who even afterwards keeps the commandments of the Lord, let Him teach us Himself Who has not refused forgiveness. Even to those who do not keep His commandments, as you read in the Psalm: If they profane My statutes and keep not My commandments, I will visit their offenses with the rod and their sins with scourges, but My mercy will I not take from them. So, then, He promises mercy to all.

The man, however, who yields to it a wicked service, receives such great energies that, even when all his members are now failing through age, and those special parts of his body are unable to be applied to their proper function, he does not ever cease to revel in a still increasing rage of disgraceful and shameless desire.

There was now neither inclination nor opportunity for a fête, such as would have graced the nuptials of Marie de Lescure at a happier time; she now neither desired, nor could have endured it.

But I assure you that I have judged all those who are bystanders worthy to know the unrevealed Father.

The Dog of Erigone is shown in the heavens, and the Scorpion the helper of Artemis, and Chiron the Centaur, and the divided Argo, and the Bear of Callisto.

As I slipped about on the ice and groaned with that terrible fardle on my back, burdened with a dozen shirts, and a suit of dress clothes, and three pair of boots, and four or five thick volumes, and a set of maps, and a box of cigars, and a washing tub, I confessed to myself that I was a fool.

And we establish this necessity in the following manner.

So also in the nature of the soul; a soul is not called great in the same respect in which it is called true.

The work is begun at the Louvre, for the disciple in this school of learning will never condescend to use our own National Gallery, though for the purposes of such learning our own is perhaps the best gallery in the world.

In other trades, professions, and lines of life, men are paid according to their work.

Natural disposition appears in us before resolution of character, and, in this sense, takes the lead; but disposition is overcome by resolution, as is plainly proved by the right eloquent orator Athanasius.

One day on his return home he found a card on his table which surprised him very much.

For a bishop must be blameless as the steward of God; not self-willed, not soon angry, not given to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre; but a lover of hospitality, a lover of good men, sober, just, holy, temperate; holding fast the faithful word as he has been taught, that he may be able by sound doctrine both to exhort and to convince the gainsayers.

on each musket; and that the same man afterward appeared as an aid-de-camp on General Fremont’s staff.

If George had anything to say that could not be said in a letter, a meeting might be arranged elsewhere.

It is a point of etiquette with him to give his assistance, in turn, as he may be called on; so much so, that leading men are not unfrequently employed on one side simply that they may not be employed on the other side.

“That is very unfair, mamma,” Mary said.

Burlesque singing is the boon companion of drunkenness.

Soon afterwards Lucinda also endeavoured to escape, but to this Sir Griffin objected. Sir Griffin was in a very good humour, and bore himself like a prosperous bridegroom. “Come, Luce,” he said, “get off your high horse for a little. Tomorrow, you know, you must come down altogether.”

In the regeneration, it says, when the Son of Man shall be seated in His Majesty.

What would he have had her do?

The Vicar was a pestilent man to whom punishment was due, but the punishment should be made to attach itself to the man, rather than to the man’s office.

Margaret, when she had reached her own room, and seated herself so that she could consider all that had occurred in quietness, immediately knew her own difficulty.

It was not often that Mrs. Brattle made her way to the Vicarage, but when she did so she was treated with great consideration.

For in point of fact they insulted Him both when He was arrested and when He was bound, when He was judged, when He was mocked by the robe they put on Him and the homage they did on bended knee, when He was crowned with thorns and struck with a rod on the head, when He bore His cross, and when at last He hung upon the tree.

[Psalm 91:2] And why do I speak of Angels?

But he gave himself no praise for his constancy, looking on himself as being somewhat weak in that he could not overcome his longing.

“Not tomorrow, Harry. It would be foolish. Say on Monday.”

And it is of such that the Psalm speaks: When He slew them, then they sought Him: and they returned and came to Him early in the morning: and they remembered that God was their helper, and the most High God their redeemer.

He must defy these claimants;—and then if they chose to come to England with their story, he must bear it as best he could.

But who could pity him?

For this, as I before said, he has shown by the term Word.

When inquired into, he cannot say that he has been pursued.

This later opinion was espoused by Theophilus, and preached by him in the church; and in the epistle which, according to custom, he wrote respecting the celebration of the passover, he took occasion to state that God ought to be regarded as incorporeal, as alien to a human form.

But there was one for which Hampstead demanded priority, writing it himself, and himself giving it into the hands of the despatching young lady, the daughter of the Gimberley grocer, who no doubt understood the occasion perfectly.

Therefore he who is anxious for the truth, who does not wish to deceive himself, must lay aside hurtful and injurious pleasures, which would bind the mind to themselves, as pleasant food does the body: true things must be preferred to false, eternal things to those which are of short duration, useful things to those which are pleasant.

He might, to be sure, make some arrangements for doing weekday service at the cathedral; but he had chanted the litany at Barchester so long, and had a conscious feeling that he did it so well, that he was unwilling to give up the duty.

Our righteousness shall be perfect, when we shall see by actual beholding.

But there is generally a vail thrown over the object of the worshiper’s idolatry.

He was the ‘swell’ of the place.

But as months ran by she felt that Mary was thawing, and that Mr Whittlestaff was becoming more affectionate.

After the decease of Julian, the government of the empire was, by the unanimous consent of the troops, tendered to Jovian. When the army was about to proclaim him emperor, he announced himself to be a Christian and refused the sovereignty, nor would he receive the symbols of empire; but when the soldiers discovered the cause of his refusal, they loudly proclaimed that they were themselves Christians.

We admit, of course, that such facts have been related.

“What a very odd request!”

“And perhaps we might get the Boncassens to come to us. I did say a word to him about it.” Now, as Mary felt, difficulty was heaping itself upon difficulty. “I have seldom met a man in whose company I could take more pleasure than in that of Mr. Boncassen; and the young lady seems to be worthy of her father.” Mary was silent, feeling the complication of the difficulties. “Do you not like her?” asked the Duke.

“Just lately, during these changes, you know, everybody has been so much engaged. Ludovic has been constantly at the House, and then men find it so necessary to be at their clubs just now.”

So also was it in Massachusetts and Virginia, which have now, happily, passed away from us.

If there be not, now that His fame is spread abroad in every place by His good odor, virgins also brought unto Christ to be consecrated, of Whom it is said, and to Whom it is said, There shall be brought unto the King the virgins after her, her companions shall be brought unto You.

What then does he say here?

A friend of mine, an English officer, was at another house. He also was one of four; and it so occurred that he lost thirty pounds out of his sac de nuit. On the whole I may consider myself to have been lucky.

The Bishop Sends His Inhibition

That she knew, and never rebuked him.

Answer of the blessed pope Gregory: Over the bishops of Gaul we give you no authority, since from the ancient times of my predecessors the bishop of Arelate (Arles) has received the pallium, and we ought by no means to deprive him of the authority that he has acquired.

Remembering this, the English Minister’s wife gave up the point when the thing was really settled, and benignly promised to come to the breakfast with all the secretaries and attachés belonging to the legation, and all the wives and daughters thereof.

On that evening they undressed and tended her like a child; and then when she was alone with her husband, she repeated to him her sad foreboding.

In the year following, wherein Arcadius Augustus bore his first consulate in conjunction with Baudon, Timothy bishop of Alexandria died, and was succeeded in the episcopate by Theophilus.

Who can unfold the mystery of so great a boon?

“You have surpassed yourself,” said Lotta.

And who will keep me back from that tasting of the tree which is of mixed and doubtful kind?

The great West Indian question is now this: Is there reasonable ground for such hope?

Come then, as I do not desire you to repeat to me those things which are already sufficiently known from what you have written, let those other points, at my request and that of many others, be fully set forth, which at the time of your writing you passed over, to prevent, as I believe, any feeling of weariness on the part of your readers.

But in the rest of the elements, both animal and vegetable, in those the divine power is unequally mingled.

In answer to all this, John Ball said nothing, but once or twice lifted up his left hand so as to establish Margaret’s arm more firmly on his own.

“I was not thinking of it,” said the major.

With reason were infants sacrificed to him by parents in some parts of Africa, caresses and kisses repressing their crying, that a weeping victim might not be sacrificed.

And he that looks so as to lust [Matthew 5:28] is judged.

Whence should the working proceed unless the presence went before?

And thus the Manicheans agree with the Pelagians that it was not the guilt of the first man that passed into the human race— neither by the flesh, which they say was never good; nor by the soul, which they assert comes into the flesh of man with the merits of its own defilements with which it was polluted before the flesh.

When Adrian presented himself at the window of her little bar, he found that Peter was with her, and she managed to keep Peter with her till Adrian was gone.

They have all the same design as the Preface to Genesis already given, namely to meet the objections of those who represented the work as a reproach to the LXX which was then supposed to have almost the authority of inspiration.

Erechtheus of Attica and Marius the Roman sacrificed their daughters—the former to Pherephatta, as Demaratus mentions in his first book on Tragic Subjects; the latter to the evil-averting deities, as Dorotheus relates in his first book of Italian Affairs.

She had now heard of his engagement with Camilla French, and saw in that complete proof that the foolish man had been induced to offer his hand to her by the promise of her aunt’s money.

“And she and Sir Peregrine were really to be married?” Mrs. Furnival, as she asked the question, thought with confusion of her own unjust accusations against the poor woman. Under such circumstances as those Lady Mason must of course have been innocent as touching Mr. Furnival.

For it is in his very will that he is guilty, whereby he would prefer, if it were possible, that what he dreads should not exist, in order that he might freely do what he secretly desires.

This was the fourth novel of which I had placed the scene in Barsetshire, and as I wrote it I made a map of the dear county.

He was commonly called “Dot Blake”, in consequence of his having told one of his friends that the cause of his, the friend’s, losing so much money on the turf, was, that he did not mind “the dot and carry on” part of the business; meaning thereby, that he did not attend to the necessary calculations.

But the truth would not come out so easily. Whether it was the thirty-nine articles, or the natural modesty of the man’s disposition, I will not say; but he did not find himself at the moment able to give a downright answer to this downright question. He would have been well pleased that Bertram should know the whole truth; but the task of telling it went against the grain with him.

And this was the termination of the Council in Seleucia.

His life had been made dark by similar clouds before now, and he had lived through the storms which had followed them.

She endeavoured, in writing her letter, to obey the commands that had been left with her, but she could not go nearer to it than this. She could not so far belie her heart as to tell her daughter that she herself would be glad to see the man. Then it took her long to write the address. She did write it at last;

The point itself consists of a bluff of land so formed that the River Hudson is forced to run round three sides of it.

Why should not an Irish girl be as good as any English girl?

To this George assented, and made special request that the old mare might receive gentle treatment.

Wherefore, if he said nothing else, it was competent to us to conclude from his words that without sin the soul could not perish.

The hum of their voices soon dropped, and they stood as silent before her, as though no strong passion, no revenge and thirst for blood had induced them, but a moment before, all but to mutiny against the leaders who had led them so truly, and loved them so well.

The question of Linda’s marriage had become quite a city matter.

Should any one, moreover, desire to learn whence I am an Apostle, you are the persons whom I bring forward: for all the signs of an Apostle have I exhibited among you, and not one have I failed in.

“I do not expect you to believe me, Countess; but her money counts as nothing with me. If it becomes hers and she becomes my wife, as her husband I will protect it for her. But there shall be no dealing between you and me in regard to money.”

He knew that it behooved him now at once to tell her all his tale as to Stratton and Florence Burton—that if he could tell it now, the pang would be over and the danger gone.

Contemplate with me the beauty of the sky; how it has been preserved so long without being dimmed; and remains as bright and clear as if it had been only fabricated today; moreover, the power of the earth, how its womb has not become effete by bringing forth during so long a time!

Then the priest said that only means for the maintenance of the widows and orphans was laid up there.

For every one, when he hears another giving precepts, is unwilling that the necessity of obeying should be imposed upon him, as though the right of liberty were taken from him.

If then He take so great care of them which exist for our sakes, much more of us; if of the servants, much more of the master.

Should an Englishman be seen here or there in such a position he will be one who has fallen abnormally in the scale, and will, as an exception, only prove the rule.

His life now might have been insured, as against the gallows, at a very low rate.

For he was a king, and never endured these sufferings; but the Spirit of God, who was about to suffer these things, after [ten hundred and fifty] years, spoke by him.

When we were at Dubuque, nothing was talked of but the army.

Forsooth on that of enemies, for whatever cause, for whatever reason, for this is not now the question, still enemies.

And to the disciples also He said thus, Into any city of the Samaritans enter ye not.

“Do not the circumstances justify it?”

“I wonder whether he took the tickets overnight,” said Mackinnon.

[Matthew 16:19] Let us pray by night, and we shall loose these bonds.

The mountain was called Somor from its owner [1 Kings 16:24]: as also Esaias says, and the head of Ephraim is Somoron [Isaiah 7:9, Septuagint], but the inhabitants were termed not Samaritans but Israelites.

For if not Son, neither is He Word; and if not Word, neither is He Son.

“Oh, indeed I have, and a very good one. For all my talking in that way, I was never badly off for lovers, and now I’ve chosen one for good and all; and I love him dearly, Madame; dote on him, and so does he on me, but for all that there was a time when I really would have eaten his heart, if I could have got at it.”

‘Now, that’s what my editor would call a Nemesis,’ said Charley.

Nay, but as it is, all things are turned upside down.

She tried hard to teach herself to think that she might learn to love him.

On the railway to Cologne he had picked up with Jones, and for twenty-four hours the prospects of a blessed union had cheered him.

The King in truth, is so written, because they chose a fox, a King in truth they would not have.

[Sirach 30:8] The other species of fear is accompanied with hatred, which slaves feel towards hard masters, and the Hebrews felt, who made God a master, not a father.

For it was not just that they who did not keep the first commandment, which it was easy to keep, should any longer be taught, but should rather be driven to just punishment.

He had changed his politics.

What can have been worse to a young man than to have been open to such payment?

Over and beside his professional success, there was not much in his present life which endeared itself to John Caldigate.

I have heard that you say that the Apostle Paul intimated the lawfulness of suicide, when he said, Though I give my body to be burned, [1 Corinthians 13:3] supposing that because he was there enumerating all the good things which are of no avail without charity, such as the tongues of men and of angels, and all mysteries, and all knowledge, and all prophecy, and the distribution of one's goods to the poor, he intended to include among these good things the act of bringing death upon one-self.

She walked up the middle aisle with as much self-possession as though the chancel had belonged to her family for years; and the respectable pew-opener absolutely deserted two or three old ladies whom she was attending, to show Mrs Greenow into her seat.

If a penitent bishop may not continue what he was, neither may a penitent layman remain in that state on account of which he confesses himself a penitent.

Emily and Bernard had gone behind Pratt and Crosbie to Mrs. Thorne’s side before they had recognized the two men;—and in this way Lily was completely surrounded.

[Luke 18:12] And what says the Lord?

Or we, who are ambassadors for righteousness, be guilty of any wickedness?

Dr. Filgrave, indeed, did tell the bishop that he had dreaded all along exactly that which had happened.

You have been selected for the high office which you are now called upon to fill solely because it has been thought that you are the most fit man to perform the onerous duties attached to it.

2 Corinthians 2:7

The rulers threaten; therefore must the Church give comfort!

There we shall rest and see, see and love, love and praise.

[1 Samuel xxvii] Elijah ran before the chariot of a most wicked king—not by the king's command, but from his own loyalty.

You may talk of armies, money, horses, walls, arms, or any thing else whatsoever; you will name nothing like long-suffering.

XVI. God, who created all things, and provides and cares for all things, took dust from the ground, and made our outer man.

Or how had the Son increase, being ever in the Father?

His resolution was soon made to go at once to London and consult the best lawyer he could find—or the best dozen lawyers should such be necessary—as to the validity of Mary’s claims.

Moreover, that our greatest faults arise out of overmuch pleasure, any one may see.

As he said to his brother John, no harm had been done, and he might have better luck next time.

‘She is ill, I am afraid,’ said one.

For no one will dare to set wise men, whether yet to die or already dead—in other words, whether already quit of the body, or shortly to be so—above the immortal gods, to whom the Supreme, in Plato, promises as a munificent gift life indissoluble, or in eternal union with their bodies.

This novel was to have contained sixty chapters.

One Gainas, a Scythian, but still more barbarous in character, and of cruel and violent disposition, was at that time a military commander. He had under him many of his own fellow-countrymen, and with them commanded the Roman cavalry and infantry. He was an object of terror not only to all the rest but even to the emperor himself, who suspected him of aiming at usurpation.

As to my business, you had better never speak to me about it any more.

49. Privatianus of Sufetula said: "He who says that heretics have the power of baptizing should first say who it was that founded heresy. For if heresy is of God, it may have the divine favor; but if it be not of God, how can it either have or confer on any one the grace of God?"

Unless man, who while living was void of understanding and power, should be believed when dead to be endowed with more of active power.

For the Lord Himself says, "Therefore every scribe instructed in the kingdom of heaven is like an householder who brings forth from his treasure things new and old."

Sir Harry, who certainly had no particular affection for his half-brother, always bore with him on this account; and Lady Albury was equally gracious, mindful of the wisdom of keeping on good terms with a rich relation.

He had expressed a desire to see Mr Greenmantle personally, and having proved his eagerness by a double request, had been allowed to have his way.

“Then you acknowledge the Countess’s marriage, of course,” said the Serjeant.

What Christ is, we Christians shall be, if we imitate Christ.

They think that they are brought together to do battle with her; nor do they assign any reason by whom and on what account they are thus matched; but they only boast that they are every moment carrying on a contest for life and death with fortune.

Words which fell from Mr. Grey were certainly words of truth, but they were, in Mr. Barry’s then estimation, words of wisdom also.

For this not only I but all the holy bishops of our district decreed in the recent Council.

If, then, things are created, it follows that they are also wholly mutable.

That is, bring yourself down to their humble condition, associate with them, walk with them, do not be humbled in mind only, but help them also, and reach forth your hand to them, not by means of others, but in your own person, as a father taking care of a child, as the head taking care of the body.

And then Lord Fawn was very poor.

For to the end that none should err for want of instruction in the actual events, they feared not to mention even the cause of His death—that He suffers it not for His own sake, but for the immortality and salvation of all, and the counsels of the Jews against Him and the indignities offered Him at their hands.

When they got to the lodge it was quite dark—so dark that even Richard, who was experienced in night-driving, declared that a cat could not see. However, they turned in at the great gates without any accident, the accustomed woman coming out to open them.

Now I think some such view is indicated in the Psalms, when the prophet says, My eyes have seen your imperfection; by which the mind of the prophet, examining with keener glance the first principles of things, and separating in thought and imagination only between matter and its qualities, perceived the imperfection of God, which certainly is understood to be perfected by the addition of qualities.

It isn’t temporary at all.

Dear Hugh has told me all about it, and I do so hope that things may come right and that we may be sisters.

“Yes, to you; in private, if Grace won’t mind?”

So far, indeed, as any man is led by the Spirit, he is not under the law; because, so far as he rejoices in the law of God, he lives not in fear of the law, since fear has torment, [1 John 4:18] not joy and delight.

The divine Scriptures are the feast of wisdom, and the single books the various dishes.

And there were precious toys lying here and there about the room,—toys very precious, but placed there not because of their price, but because of their beauty.

The consequence was, that the Counsellor was a man after Tony’s own heart.

For if you help no one, you will not be able to grow wealthy.

He did not see her again that evening.

“For the present we will put that on one side. Not looking at the party which you may be called upon to support, having for the moment no regard to this or that line in politics, there is no opening to the real duties of parliamentary life which I would sooner see accorded to you than this.”

And by that gift what else can properly be understood except love, which brings to God, and without which any other gift of God whatsoever does not bring to God?

For the searchers for metals, were those which are employed for ornament procured in equal abundance with the rest, would be impelled by avarice to despise and neglect to gather those which, like iron or copper, are serviceable for husbandry, or house-building, or the equipment of ships; and would care for those only which conduce to luxury and a superfluous excess of wealth.

“He is easily satisfied,” said Patience, with something of sarcasm in her voice.

No mortal can be seriously wise at all hours; and in these happy hours did that usually wise mortal, the bishop, lay aside for awhile his serious wisdom.

Money could be had at the bank, she said; and, after all, what were fifty pounds more or less on such an occasion as this?

They will be justified in so telling you; but I, on the other hand, defy you not to take it as such evidence.

Yet how divine she looked!

Now five of them were prudent and wise; and five were foolish and unwise, for they had not the forethought to fill their vessels with oil, remaining destitute of righteousness.

In like manner, God's almighty power was competent to make her children also, as soon as born, grown up at once.

But he was aware that an adventurous life was always a life of difficulties, and that for such as live adventurous lives the duty of overcoming difficulties was of all duties the chief.

She could not bring herself to think that the charge was made seriously.

“To me,”—said the Doctor,—”to me she is as pure as the most unsullied matron in the country.” Upon this Mr. Peacocke, jumping from his chair, seized the Doctor’s hand, but could not speak for his tears; then he seated himself again, turning his face away towards the wall. “To no one could the presence of either of you be an evil. The evil is, if I may say so, that the two of you should be here together. You should be apart,—till some better day has come upon you.”

It was his great political idea that political advantages should be extended to the people, whether the people clamoured for them or did not clamour for them,—even whether they desired them or did not desire them.

Ver. 26. That your glorying may abound in Christ Jesus in me, through my presence with you again.

In sacrifices, in burnt-offerings, in calves of a year old?

Now, if you please, you may just as well send over that clock and that harmonium to Daniel Tribbledale, Esq., King’s Head Court, Great Broad Street.” So saying she left him, and congratulated herself on having terminated the interview without much unpleasantness.

To Amandus

She had loved him, and him only.

The date of the letter is 405 A.D.]

Therefore, it was clear that he and Imogene ought not to marry and encounter the danger of all those embryo mouths.

This Saviour, then, having humbled the calumniator by humbling Himself, abides with the visible sun before His illustrious church, tropically called the moon, from generation to generation.

For they did not act as was right, neither was their zeal according to law, but they rather sought their own pleasure in such days, as the prophet accuses them, beating down their bondsmen, and gathering themselves together for strifes and quarrels, and they smote the lowly with the fist, and did all things that tended to their own gratification.

In this a great subject is discussed which would be too long for these pages; but I think that there now exists a feeling that literature can herself, for herself, produce a rank as effective as any that a Queen’s minister can bestow.

“When she knew that she had two,” said Lady Margaret.

As Celsus has deferred to another opportunity the explanation of Plato's idea, we also think that it does not fall within our purpose at present to enter into any full description of that holy and good land, and of the city of God which is in it; but reserve the consideration of it for our Commentary on the Prophets, having already in part, according to our power, treated of the city of God in our remarks on Psalm 46 and Psalm 48.

She could not explain to Miss Todd all her best motives; and then, those motives which were not the best were made to seem so very weak and mean by the way in which Miss Todd approached them.

If Eunomius does assign them to one only of the Persons acknowledged in the creed, let him dare to call Him not true in words Who has said, I am the Truth , or to call the Spirit of truth not true in words, or let him refuse to give the title of true in works to Him Who does righteousness and judgment, or to the Spirit Who works all in all as He will.

Orth.— Why then, when soul and body have both sinned together, does the body alone undergo the punishment of death?

This Is Conington’s translation, but it seems to me to be a little flat.

Since therefore you rejoice in the freedom of Christ, since your life is better than your profession, since you are all but on the housetop of which the Saviour speaks; you ought not to come down to take your clothes, [Matthew 24:17-18] you ought not to look behind you, you ought not having put your hand to the plough, then to let it go.

Otherwise his case will be that described by the prophet: [Jeremiah 3:10] And yet for all this her treacherous sister Judah has not returned unto me with her whole heart, but feignedly.

In all, Feemy was a fine girl in the eyes of a man not too much accustomed to refinement.

Behold the city of which it is said, A city set upon a mountain cannot be hid!

He put his men into pits, and kept them there without food; left them to be eaten by vermin—to be fed upon while they could not feed; and played, upon the whole, such a melodrama of autocratic tricks and fantasies as might have done honour to a white Nero.

say, 'Why do we not cease from being drunken?

“My dear boy, I have an appetite, and I must go and satisfy it.” So saying the Colonel escaped, and the Captain allowed his father to make his way down the stairs and into the cab before he followed.

The Tearing of the Verses

They plough, they reap; they herd and shear the sheep; they drive the oxen; they load the waggons; they carry the bricks; they draw the water; they hew the wood; they brush the clothes; they clean the boots; they run the posts; they make the roads; they wait at table; they cook the food; they wash the wool; they press the grapes; they kill the beef and mutton; they dig the gardens; they plaster the walls; they feed the horses;—and they find the diamonds.

No one ever heard Mally Trenglos complain of her work, but about this time she was heard to make great and loud complaints of the treatment she received from some of her neighbours.

“Yourself Louis, was as quick as any one—I marked you well. Indeed then, said I to myself, if all our men are as forward as Louis Bourdin, the village will have a great name before the war is over.”

“Undoubtedly.”

“I don’t approve or disapprove of it. He’s his own master.”

Dialogue 1

Therefore it is that gently and little by little they carry them on, with much consideration and forbearance letting themselves down to their low attainments, themselves the while enjoying in more plentiful measure the grace of the Spirit, and doing greater works in Christ's name than Christ Himself did, that they may at once raise them up from their grovelling apprehensions, and confirm the saying, that Christ was raised from the dead.

They may fight it out then with Terry Daly as they can.” Now, Terry Daly was the well-known agent for the lands of Carnlough.

As the day drew near for the final examination at Heytesbury of the suspected murderers,—the day on which it was expected that either all the three prisoners, or at least two of them, would be committed to take their trial at the summer assizes, the Vicar became anxious as to the appearance of Carry Brattle in the Court.

Wherefore God has endowed the soul with free choice, that He may show it its duty, and that it choosing, may receive and retain.

Epistle 74

Life went on very pleasantly with them at Belton for two or three weeks;—but with this drawback as regarded Clara, that she had no means of knowing what was to be the course of her future life.

The chosen vessel, in writing to the Corinthians, promises unconditionally to return, saying: But I will come to you when I pass through Macedonia: for I will pass through Macedonia.

“I hope not, sir,” said Peregrine the younger, thinking over some of these things.

And while the conversation was going on on these subjects, at daybreak some of the members of the family came in and told Peter that Simon, when he heard of Peter's arrival, departed in the night, on the way to Syria.

If we do, they will never come together.” The Earl was convinced, and did his best.

I remember having been told on the spot nearly forty years ago that that wonderful “ Irishman,” Lord Palmerston, had for the last ten years spent all his income upon the estate.

The walk back from the summerhouse through the wood is very lovely; but it would be a disappointing walk to visitors who had been prevented by a flood in the river from coming up the channel, for it indicates plainly how requisite it is that the river should be seen from below and not from above.

Affliction is a great good.

As you have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk in Him, rooted and built up in Him, and established in the faith.

In that what was more precious to Him than all, even His only-begotten Son, Him He gave for us His enemies; and not only gave, but after giving, did even set Him before us as food; Himself doing all things that were for our good, both in giving Him, and in making us thankful for all this.

Should we lose the case, your nephew would be—a very poor man.

“Would do it in half a minute, and think nothing of it!”

I would by no means be so arrogant as to attempt to enrich by my small coppers your mind, which by the divine gift is golden; and none is more able than yourself to revise and correct that work to which I have referred.

Surely on such an occasion as this an aunt would not expect that her niece should be a prisoner and a slave.

And the master of the slave departed to a foreign country.

Is it any dishonour to the Father that He sits at the Son's left hand?

His name he knew must be familiar to her ears, for chance had made it prominent in the struggle; but beyond that, it had never occurred to his humble mind that Agatha Larochejaquelin had given one thought to the postillion of St. Florent.

“I had a few words to say to you, if it would suit you,” said Ziska, in a low voice.

33. Christ the True Vine, and as Bread.

In the epistle entitled To the Hebrews it is said, To do good and to communicate, forget not: for with such sacrifices God is well pleased.

So there is no absurdity in philosophy having been given by Divine Providence as a preparatory discipline for the perfection which is by Christ; unless philosophy is ashamed at learning from Barbarian knowledge how to advance to truth.

And Judas and Silas, being prophets also themselves, exhorted the brethren with many words, and confirmed them.

For the greatness of the calamity, and the circumstance of their having expected still worse things, when they suffered these, had prepared the soul for the exercise of a wise fortitude.

As he stalked up and down the room in his wrath, he forgot as much as he remembered.

All these arts, with many changes, no doubt, as years rolled on, had come down to him from days before Cicero; but he always refers to Cicero as though his were the palmy days of Roman eloquence.

For most persons are slow to believe such things, feeling a horrible disgust at supposing that our nature could have an appetite for the food of wild beasts, when it has precluded these from all concubinage with the race of man.

This took place in the morning, but in the evening the affair was again discussed at Framley Hall.

Madame Brudo. Unhand me, sir! Generous soldiers, kind soldiers, brave soldiers, I’m a poor lone widow. Brudo, my own Brudo, my darling Brudo—is dead,—

Lizzie was sure that, a month since, her cousin would have yielded himself to her willingly, if he could only have freed himself from Lucy Morris.

“I do not know that anybody has been angry with you. We may be disappointed without being angry.” That was all that was said, and then Lady Anna was left to dress for dinner. At dinner Lord Lovel had so far composed himself as to be able to speak to his cousin, and an effort at courtesy was made by them all,—except by the rector. But the evening passed away in a manner very different from any that had gone before it.

The Sacrament is greater than the visible environment.

“As I know nothing will stop you when you once get into a vein of that kind, I shall go,” said Clara. “And till this man has come and gone I shall not mention his name again in your presence.”

Let this also be supposed, she said.

'I am the vine, you are the branches.

Had Alaric been called to his long account, it would have been his dearest wish to have become at some future tune the husband of his widow.

But those whom you regard as masters are only men, and one day they themselves must die.

Say, if you have a slave, and you only threaten him, and do not beat him; when is he most in fear, when most inclined to run away?

Those who had shut themselves up in the Serapion prepared a more spirited resistance, from fear of the punishment that they knew would await their audacious proceedings, and they were further instigated to revolt by the inflammatory discourses of a man named Olympius, attired in the garments of a philosopher, who told them that they ought to die rather than neglect the gods of their fathers.

Chapter 18. Past and Future Times Cannot Be Thought of But as Present.

‘And I have been civil,’ said Marie.

There is no one now to say a good word for him; but of all those who have spoken ill of him, this declaration is the loudest in its censure.

We rejoice, therefore, at your telling us that you have broken the said modius and made a just one.

“No, father, I won’t,—say anything about sharp.”

His heir, Plantagenet Palliser, had been always subject to him.

Let us add the following illustration of the absurdity of his assertions.

“Dear me! That’s not the way of the age;—is it, Aunt Stanbury?”

Chapter 67. That Religion began in the East.

[1 Corinthians 1:23] For he that is spiritual judges all things, but the natural man receives not the things of the Spirit.

“Laws, that is so like you, Mr. Reginald. The young squire is to be here next week.”

Mr. Woolsworthy was a little man, who always wore, except on Sundays, grey clothes—clothes of so light a grey that they would hardly have been regarded as clerical in a district less remote.

“Lord John is all very well,” continued the member, not altogether liking the interruption; “but there is only one man in the country who thoroughly understands the subject, and who is able—”

And every tongue, should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

“Four thousand a year. Something more, nominally, but four thousand to spend.”

The Arm in the Clouds

Yet this seems rather contrary to nature, which has given not to fire but to water the power of melting salt, and the power of scorching it not to water but to fire.

She could not tell him that on that matter he had said enough, nor could she warn him that so much of confidential intercourse between them would give rise in the minds of others to erroneous ideas.

The eternal whiteness of our garments is the purity of virginity.

“That is nonsense, Guss. Lady George Germain I have seen three times, and she talks only about her husband; a pretty little woman more absolutely in love I never came across.”

I deem it wrong that servant girls, who follow women of high rank, should either speak or act unbecomingly to them.

Wherefore, if both from his actions and character we have proved that Jupiter was a man, and reigned on earth, it only remains that we should also investigate his death.

Thus they slew, indeed, about one thousand and three hundred men of our number, and wounded other five hundred.

Jerome in his reply postpones most of these to a future time but deals with two in detail viz.

God bless you.

Christ, who was born as an infant, is the lion's cub, as it is added, My son and offspring, to show why this whelp, in whose praise it is said, "The lion's cub is stronger than the herd," [Proverbs 30:30] is even in infancy stronger than its elders.

Tradition says the golden ages pure

“Money has nothing to do with it, Mr. Anderson.”

I often wish that I had been brought up as a journeyman hatter.

He was small of his age, but clever and sharp, and, since his mother’s death, had been his father’s darling.

The terrapin is a small turtle, found on the shores of Maryland and Virginia, out of which a very rich soup is made.

Now then that Christ sits in Heaven, now that He is glorified, now that necks of kings are made subject to His yoke, and their brows placed beneath His sign, now that not any one remains to dare openly to trample upon Christians, still, however, we groan amid instruments and singers, still those enemies of the Martyrs, because with words and steel they have no power, with their own wantonness do persecute them.

What could she do with her own heart there, living in solitude, with none but the sea gulls to look at her?

But the letter which contained the real invitation had been addressed to her aunt, and her aunt could in truth answer it as she pleased.

It is respectable for a man to draw water for himself, and to cut billets of wood which he is to use himself.

And so complete is the observance of this bond in the city of our God, in His holy mountain — that is to say, in the Church of Christ— by all married believers, who are undoubtedly members of Christ, that, although women marry, and men take wives, for the purpose of procreating children, it is never permitted one to put away even an unfruitful wife for the sake of having another to bear children.

Yet the heavens needed the command of God, that they might be established; for their arrangement and excellence in this firm unshaken constitution, which they display, did not arise from the blending and commingling of some kind of matter, but from the breath of the mouth of God.

He then from his earliest youth threw himself into the monastic discipline with such fervour that when he had spent only a short time in it, he was endowed with the virtue of submission, as well as the knowledge of all good qualities.

Above when He said, Sacrifice, and offering, and burnt-offerings, and [offering] for sin You would not, neither had pleasure therein, which are offered by the Law, then He said, Lo!

Joseph being brought before him, according to his summons, was able to expound them.

I wish my readers would look at her.

“Sir Thomas would not accommodate me.”

But to whom has she replied?

Then Mrs. Ray began to think it possible that she might escape away to Rachel without any further words.

In reference to Mr. Lopez she would have said, if interrogated, that she had taken the man up in obedience to her husband.

I am afraid the invitation was given in a spirit of triumph over the Senator rather than with genuine hospitality.

But when He saw, or rather, when they showed themselves worthy of greater things, then He no longer suffers them to receive these, but those greater ones; wishing to show us that they are worthy of greater things, being unwilling to be bound to these.

“Fancy that I love you! Do you think, Isa, that a man can carry his heart round to one customer after another as the huckster carries his wares?”

Argument: Christians Abstain from Things Connected with Idol Sacrifices, Lest Any One Should Think Either that They Yield to Demons, or that They are Ashamed of Their Religion.

Honor those who yield to your remonstrances, and expel those who disregard them. Establish hostelries in every city, so that strangers from neighboring and foreign countries may reap the benefit of our philanthropy, according to their respective need.

“He should not have said that.”

What could be compared with this lovingkindness?

Therefore we entered, having Peter in the midst of us, looking about if we could see the old man anywhere; and when Peter saw him hiding in the midst of the crowd, he called him to him, saying: [Since you possess a soul more enlightened than most, why do you hide yourself, and conceal yourself in modesty?

In the drawing-room, after a little while, Lord George found himself seated next to Mrs. Houghton—Adelaide De Baron, as she had been when he had sighed in vain at her feet.

As he walks in this tabernacle, and contemplates God's wonderful works for the redemption of the faithful, the sound of that festivity charms his ears, and bears the hart away to the water-brooks.

And You, O Lord, had already magnified Your Holy One, raising Him from the dead, and setting Him at Your right hand, [Ephesians 1:20] whence from on high He should send His promise, [Luke 24:49] the Paraclete, the Spirit of Truth.

Delicacy with many women is like their cleanliness.

He however had withdrawn before these instructions reached them, and from the time when Syrianus broke into the Church; for he remembered that which was written, 'Hide yourself as it were for a little moment, until the indignation be overpast [Isaiah 26:20].'

The temple is founded and the God dwells therein.

He was good-tempered, reasonable, easily led, and yet by no means despicable.

There is not a Parliament in our sense of the word, but a Legislative Council.

(12) The Twelfth Breviate

For marry him she certainly will.

“I only know I have paid regularly one hundred and fifty pounds a year to your order, and I find from Pritchett”—Pritchett was his man of business—”that I am paying it still.”

That the human limbs must belong to Matter, because they are not specially mentioned as objects of creation?

In the first place the father gives his evidence, and is cross-examined with great effect by Mr. O’Laugher; then the letters are read, and are agreed by all to be very affectionate, proper, agreeable love-letters; there is no cross-questioning them, for though answered, they will not answer; and our friend, who escaped but just now melancholy from the porter drinkers in his bedroom, is brought forward to prove the lovemakings of the delinquent.

With all his ears he listened, and as he did so Mr. Chaffanbrass, amidst his dreaming, reading, and fidgeting, kept an attentive eye upon him.

For Antiochus had not spared even the Gentiles, whom he had sought to persuade to abandon their long-established superstitions, and to draw over to one kind of religious observance.

After all, I believe that your own dear sweet truth and honesty would guide you better than anybody else can guide you.

There was Odgers, and Mr. Beale.

And Euripides on the stage, in tragedy, says:—

Ah, Harry, that is so easily said.

The best-governed states are very-particular in not allowing rumours as to state affairs to be made matter of public discussion.

John 1:45

A new fashion of robbery, this, to induce people to be glad when one is plundering them!

Not, namely, that others may have ease, and you straits; but by an equality, that now at this time your abundance may be a supply for their want, that their abundance also may become a supply for your want: that there may be equality, as it is written, He that had gathered much had nothing over; and he that had gathered little had no lack.

By Miss Pucker she was at any rate treated with great respect, and was allowed perhaps some display of pastoral manner on her own part.

He had never broken his faith to any man, and he would not break it to Adrian Urmand.

In treating of the civil war he devotes the first and second books to the doings of one year.

But it seems that where the population is which creates the crime, there the criminals must remain.

And if it be not, how is that saying of the apostle true: Unto you it is given in the behalf of Christ, not only to believe in Him, but also to suffer for His sake?

If he did once wish that you and I should become man and wife, I do not think that he wishes it now.

Sir Felix as he walked down to his club felt that he had been checkmated,—and was at the same time full of wrath at the insolence of the man who had so easily beaten him out of the field.

Oration 28

Overcome by his importunity, I see nothing further to be done but to commit the cause of Maximus to your Fraternity.

And your servant, if he say anything filthy in your hearing, will receive stripes in abundance; and be it a son, a wife, whoever it may, that does as I have said, you call the act an affront; but if worthless fellows, that deserve the scourge, should invite you to hear the filthy words, not only are you not indignant, thou dost even rejoice and applaud.

Mr. Furnival was a man loyal to his friends at heart.

As it was, after all her entreaties, Mrs. Arkwright did not like to ask him again to alter his plans; and he, having altered them once, was averse to change them again.

There is always some compliment implied when an old man unbends before a young one, and it is this which makes the viciousness of old men so dangerous.

I think you may be sure that I can manage it.

They possess unchangeableness and immortality, and absolute being with its consequences, for sure are the properties of things sure.

CRAWLEY. I will not discuss the affair, unfortunate or not, with such as you (still holding the door open).

The purport of the order in all its severity had not been conveyed to Captain Batsby.

That she does wish it I do not doubt.

“So do I, papa.”

Spyridon knew not what answer to give him, so he searched the whole house for it; but not being able to find it, the man wept, tore his hair, and seemed ready to expire.

The next morning, Frank underwent a desperate interview in the bookroom.

And this there is no other source whence to obtain, save by keeping to necessaries, and not coveting anything more.

Hetta repeated, though in other language, the assurance which the young lady made who declared that if her future husband would consent to live on potatoes, she would be quite satisfied with the potato-peelings; while Paul made some vague allusion to the satisfactory nature of his final arrangements with the house of Fisker, Montague, and Montague.

What can be said against such harmony except by blind barkers?

“The bishops came out very strong last night;—didn’t they?” said Ralph, in the outer shop.

She liked her sisters’ husbands very well, and in former days, before Harry Clavering had come to Stratton, she had never taught herself to think that she, if she married, would want anything different from that which Providence had given to them.

What good gifts have been conferred on you from above, and with what piety heavenly grace has filled you, this, among all the other proofs of your merits, intimates evidently to all that you both govern the savage hearts of barbarians with the skill of prudent counsel, and (what is still more to your praise), adorn your royal power with wisdom.

His coming had certainly been to her as the coming of a god.

That we are able, says he, to see with our eyes is not of us; but it is of us that we make a good or a bad use of our sight.

That boast was especially made in the mercantile City of New York; and when the matter was discussed it seemed as though no American realized the iniquity of such a threat.

It was Cæsar’s intention to carry out his will with such compliance with the forms of the Republic as might suit him, but in utter disregard to all such forms when they did not suit him.

“By George!” The wrong that was done him filled the young baronet’s bosom with indignation.

And how can that, which strictly has not being, be God?

22. For as you have inquired of our affairs and desire us to tell you how we are situated, you have heard fully that when we— that is, myself and Gaius and Faustus and Peter and Paul — were led away as prisoners by a centurion and magistrates, with their soldiers and servants, certain persons from Mareotis came and dragged us away by force, as we were unwilling to follow them.

Now Numa is said to have married the nymph Egeria, because (as Varro explains it in the forementioned book) he carried forth water wherewith to perform his hydromancy.

And Plato, too, when he says that form is the third original principle next to God and matter, has manifestly received this suggestion from no other source than from Moses, having learned, indeed, from the words of Moses the name of form, but not having at the same time been instructed by the initiated, that without mystic insight it is impossible to have any distinct knowledge of the writings of Moses.

Leo, bishop, to the holy Synod which is assembled at Ephesus

Accordingly it is befitting that all who wish deservedly to be called wise, who wish to be called men, should despise frail things, should trample upon earthly things, and should look down upon base things, that they may be able to be united in a most blissful relationship with God.

But is he borne on horseback? And what of that? Why, so is the other on a couch. And what is very hard, while the other is seen by no one in his dissolution and decay, but has his coffin for a veil, this man is going about everywhere with his evil savor, bearing about a dead soul in his body as in a tomb.

Did you ever see such blood-red colour?” The light was very wonderful, for the sun had just gone down and all the western heavens were crimson with its departing glory.

There are, we are told, seven planets among these luminaries, and these move in a direction opposite to that of the heaven: hence the name planets. For, while they say that the heaven moves from east to west, the planets move from west to east; but the heaven bears the seven planets along with it by its swifter motion. Now these are the names of the seven planets: Luna, Mercury, Venus, Sol, Mars, Jupiter, Saturn, and in each zone of heaven is, we are told, one of these seven planets:

In many cases, practically, they cannot be enfranchised.

This phrase very early in the morning probably indicates the early dawn of the first day of the week; and thus, when the Sabbath itself was wholly past, and also the whole night succeeding it, and when another day had begun, they came, bringing spices and myrrh, and then it became apparent that He had already risen long before.

For He who vouchsafed to be borne so long in a Virgin's womb, and to come forth thence with our nature, and to be smitten with rods, and crucified, and to suffer all the rest which He suffered—why do you marvel if He vouchsafed also to be baptized, and to come with the rest to His servant.

And spare also the others who are under my care.

“Perhaps it’d be—for a prison; or to live along with a lot of others. Oh, Mr. Fenwick, I could not stand that.”

And, mindful of that, remembering how great is the agony of adversity, how crushing the despondency of degradation, how susceptible I am myself to the misery coming from contempt,—remembering also how quickly good things may go and evil things come,—I am often again tempted to hope, almost to pray, that the end may be near.

[Wisdom 8:1] In the faultless procedure of this adorable providence, He appointed for Himself an earthly mother; and to free His servants from the bondage of corruption He took in this mother the form of a servant, that is, a mortal body; and this body which He took He showed openly, and when it had been exposed, even to suffering and death, He raised it again from the dead, and built again the temple which had been destroyed.

For Joseph is withal blest by his father after this form: His glory (is that) of a bull; his horns, the horns of an unicorn; on them shall he toss nations alike unto the very extremity of the earth.

Because it was possible for him to have committed certain sins, not however, knowing that they were sins.

In melancholy solitude he discussed his mutton chop and pint of port.

And so the thing was settled.

I send this inside a note from my brother to Mr Dale.

The vicar was a young man to whom the living had lately been given by the Chancellor, and he had commenced his career by giving instant offence to the Squire.

[Sent to Florentius along with the preceding letter, which Jerome requests him to deliver to Rufinus. This Florentius was a rich Italian who had retired to Jerusalem to pursue the monastic life. Jerome subsequently speaks of him as a distinguished monk so pitiful to the needy that he was generally known as the father of the poor. (Chron. ad A.D. 381.)]

Therefore he there calls glory, that vision, the smoke, the hearing unutterable Mysteries, the beholding the Seraphim, the lightning which leaped from the throne, against which those powers could not look.

This he had done with so much reluctance that his spirit had given way while he was waiting in the dean’s library, and he had wished to depart without accepting what the dean was quite willing to bestow upon him.

He came to you, to receive pity from you, but he goes away having received a deadly blow, and weeps the more.

But he had been consulted, had acceded, and had encouraged the idea by excessive liberality on his part.

Now there was present a certain man of the name of Demosthenes, superintendent of the imperial kitchen, who in rudely chiding the man who instructed the world was guilty of a solecism of speech.

“And the girl?”

How far more easy is it for heaven and earth to pass away, than for one tittle of the law to fail!

What benefit do they who offer such sacrifices implore from the gods?

II.— Nicetas Bishop of Heraclea.

Though they had heard so much from her own mouth, they knew no more than they had known before.

It is a high distinction for a city, the being a colony.

Whence the saying went abroad among the brethren that that disciple should not die.

And His imitator, the Apostle Paul, says, But they had heard only, that he which persecuted us in times past now preaches the faith which once he destroyed; and they glorified God in me.

It may be doubted whether any meaner crime was ever committed in the name of policy, or one of which the end was more befitting, or better deserved.

John 17:21

She was talented, but her talents were all turned to evil, for they only enabled her to intrigue against her adopted country.

But Alice trembled as the cab drew up at No. 3, Paramount Crescent. She met her aunt, as was usual, just inside the drawing-room door, and she saw at once that if any bitterness had passed away from that face, the original bitterness must indeed have been bitter. She had so timed her letter that Lady Macleod should have no opportunity of answering it. The answer was written there in the mingled anger and sorrow of those austere features.

Again he makes it common property and does not allow this to be theirs alone, but extends the knowledge all over the world.

6. But God was the friend, protector, and guardian of Constantine, and bringing the plots which had been formed in secrecy and darkness to the light, he foiled them. So much virtue does the great armor of piety possess for the warding off of enemies and for the preservation of our own safety. Protected by this, our most divinely favored emperor escaped the multitudinous plots of the abominable man.

“I won’t have my house searched as though I were a swindler and a thief. Can you go into any man’s house and search it just as you please, merely because you are an attorney?”

Chapter 78

The Softness of Sir Raffle Buffle

Hence again, it is said through Solomon, Length of days is in her right hand, but in her left hand riches and glory [Proverbs 3:16].

Truly it is right to point out the plan of our translation to you, who have read these works also in Greek, lest haply in some parts you may think the order of translation not kept.

They are mine own, at any rate till next Saturday.

And He that searches the hearts knows what is the mind of the Spirit, because He makes intercession for the saints according to the will of God [Romans 8:26-27] — that is to say, He makes the saints offer intercessions.

But to this soul obeying His laws, He subjected all things without adversity, so that the rest of the things that God made should serve it, if also the soul itself had willed to serve God.

That was his own idea on the matter as he sat smoking his cigar.

Having learned from experience that the impiety of his predecessor had excited the wrath of God, and given rise to public calamities, he wrote without delay to the governors of the provinces, directing that the people should assemble together without fear in the churches, that they should serve God with reverence, and that they should receive the Christian faith as the only true religion.

Neither do men light a candle and put it under the bushel, but on the candlestick, and it gives light unto all that are in the house. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in Heaven.

‘I think she’s a very handsome young woman. As to myself I never asked the question.’

“Are they in now, Mrs. Toff?”

“Who was he, Frank?”

“Of course he is,” said Clarissa. “Nobody can doubt about it. There are some people as to whom it is as absurd not to admit that they are handsome as it would be to say that a fine picture is not beautiful. Ralph is one such person,—and of course I know another.”

She told herself also, in language somewhat differing from that which Doodles had used, that her filly days were gone by, and that she was now a trained mare.

He decided that morning, with many soft regrets, that he would go to Glenbogie, and let those dreams of wanderings in the mountains of the Tyrol pass away from him.

It was then the purport of his life to become an artist, and he studied drawing at Paris, affecting especially Bonnington, the young English artist who had himself painted at Paris and who had died in 1828.

I think we must seek for the good, if good is to be discovered in the proceeding, in the presumed strength which might be added to the Republic by friendly relations between himself and Cæsar.

The ark, according to the Apostle Peter, was a type of the Church, in which eight souls were saved.

But if he receive not this, who is diseased with the Manichæan doctrines, let him hear Paul saying the very same in another place, For Abraham had two sons, one by the bondmaid, and another by the freewoman; and these are two covenants. [Galatians 4:22] As therefore in that case the wives are different, the husband the same; so here too the covenants are two, the Lawgiver one.

What this means in point of truth God may know, and whether He Himself has given insight to us or not, he who can may judge.

But as to the means by which all is to be done, so that every one may have pleasure in his work when he catechises (for the better he succeeds in this the more attractive will he be)—that is what requires the greatest consideration.

The date is 414 A.D.]

[It is said ] that Jupiter, when grown up, having heard that his father and mother had been surrounded with a guard and imprisoned, came with a great multitude of Cretans, and conquered Titan and his sons in an engagement, and rescued his parents from imprisonment, restored the kingdom to his father, and thus returned into Crete.

Bertram was very anxious to say something which might tend towards the commingling of his destiny with hers. He was hardly yet prepared to swear that he loved her, and to ask her in good set terms to be his wife. But he did not like to leave her without learning whether he had at all touched her heart. He was fully sure now that his own was not whole.

For they call Moses one who who breathed [on being taken] from the water.

But they had soon done with Captain Cuttwater, and Alaric had to choose another subject. Gertrude and Norman were at some distance from them, but were in sight and somewhat in advance.

From the orations against Verres we learn how the people of a province lived under the tyranny inflicted upon them; and from those spoken in defence of Sextus Amerinus and Aulus Cluentius, we gather something of the horrors of Roman life—not in Rome, indeed, but within the limits of Roman citizenship.

He would do it tomorrow if you told him.

Why, indeed, is the judgment from one offense to condemnation, while the grace is from many offenses to justification?

For when the soul receives a wound, and falls, it does not lie as a lifeless body, but it is thenceforth tormented, being gnawed by an evil conscience; and after its removal hence, at the time of judgment, it is delivered over to eternal punishment; and if any one be without grief in regard to the wounds given by the devil, his danger becomes the greater for his insensibility.

Or from what sky did he fall?

“SIR,” he began. He considered this matter very deeply; but as the entire future of his own life was concerned in it he felt that it became him to be both grave and severe.

“Why not?” said she, in a loud voice. “Why can I not marry him? If the priest says a blessing over us, shall we not be married as well as you and your husband?”

What means, Among you?

The fact is, that the chapel in question has been built on the glebe land by authority—illegally and unjustly given by your lordship.

Chapter 16. Instruction Continued: the True Prophet.

5: Dr Freeborn and Philip Hughes

But when the word too which is spoken is in itself more wounding than the insolence, the blaze becomes twice as great.

1 Corinthians 6:15-16

What is the desire of the heart?

“You shall not be in my way. Come, then. But first you must eat and drink.” Though Nina declared that she could not eat a morsel, and wanted no drink but water, Rebecca tended upon her, bringing the food and wine that were in truth so much needed. “And now, dear, I will help you to bed. You are yet cold, and there you will be warm.”

Their custom was to breakfast at nine,—or as near nine as Lady Glencora could be induced to appear,—and then Mr Palliser would read till three.

What can be more respectable than a connection at such a time with such people?

“He is one of my neighbours down here,” said Morton;—”but being always away of course I see nothing of him.” After that Arabella consented to be taken out on horseback to see a meet of the hounds although she could not hunt.

Many men desire the prolongation of life as a lengthened period of enjoyment.

“Why do you throw it in his teeth then that he does not give you more of his time?”

Then, after the marriage, came the breakfast, at which the countess presided with much noble magnificence.

You may read that first.

For as the helmet guards the vital part in us, surrounding the head and covering it on every side, so also this hope does not suffer the reason to falter, but sets it upright as the head, not permitting anything from without to fall upon it.

For just as the earth, when it is not sown nor planted, sends up simply weeds; so also the soul, when it has nought of necessary things to do, being desirous by all means to be doing, gives herself unto wicked deeds.

“But I do mind being put down a place or two,” said Johnny, who could not forget that were he so put down his friend Fisher would gain the step which he would lose.

For he cannot be said to be clean every whit, if he has any sin remaining.

For it is impossible not to be roused up by the baseness of many things; otherwise we might be accounted, not virtuous, but apathetic and neglectful.

And, seeing that antiquity has not without reason admitted the histories of saints to be painted in venerable places, if you had seasoned zeal with discretion, you might undoubtedly have obtained what you were aiming at, and not scattered the collected flock, but rather gathered together a scattered one; that so the deserved renown of a shepherd might have distinguished you, instead of the blame of being a scatterer lying upon you.

Or is the sun the worse for shedding his light upon foul objects?

Lady Albury was of opinion that Lady Tringle had heard of the engagement, and was coming with the intention of setting it on one side on Tom’s behalf.

“The worst of it is,” said he “that I am ashamed of myself for being so absolutely cut up about money. A man should be able to bear that kind of thing; but this hits one all round.”

9. Jesus son of Nun, slew thirty kings, and filled the graves and pits for me; he laid waste Jericho and filled Sheol. But this Jesus who has come, has wasted the graves of their dead, and has filled the cities of the upper world. Wherefore thus when lo! They are like in their names, are they unlike in their doings? That gave me the body of Achor, but this snatched from me the body of Lazarus.

An Irish kitchen is devoted to hospitality in every sense of the word.

We have two signs, and we desire to learn a third.

We cannot here altogether defend the fishmonger simply on the score of accident.

“Mrs. Swan,” said Mr. Prendergast, “I should think myself dishonest were I to worm your secrets out of you, seeing that you are yourself so truthful and so respectable.” Perhaps it may be thought that Mr. Prendergast was a little late in looking at the matter in this light. “But it behoves me to learn much of the early history of your husband, who is now living with you here, and whose name, as I take it, is not Swan, but Mollett. Your maiden name probably was Swan?”

When they have attained their little purpose,—or have failed to do so,—they revert naturally into their sucking-dove elements.

Under such circumstances Mr. Harding could not but feel that he was an Englishman who did not know how to live.

Then the territories they occupied, and some of the cities, are named.

Let these and similar answers (if any fuller and fitter answers can be found) be given to their enemies by the redeemed family of the Lord Christ, and by the pilgrim city of King Christ.

But if you would be rich like the ancients, be rich not in gold, but in necessary things, that you may bestow on others from that which you have ready.

Are His works impassible and He Himself passible?

There are always coloured people about, living in adjacent huts,—very probably within the precincts of the same courtyard.

It was said, however, in reference to this comparison between fishing and foxhunting, that Lord Hampstead was altogether deficient in that skill and patience which is necessary for the landing of a salmon.

‘I believe it is Dick,’ said Mrs. Rewble, standing in the doorway so as to detain the others.

and the king shall desire your beauty.

Of this pot in a certain place of prophecy is said, A pot heated by the North wind.

“I will believe anything that you will tell me.”

“Ah, of course you say so.”

As he had advanced they had retreated, and now he heard them in the drawing-room. He began to be conscious that they were not alone,—that they had some visitor with them, and began to be conscious also who that visitor was. And when he got himself at last into the room, sure enough there were three girls there, two running forward to meet him from the fireplace to which they had retreated, and the other lingering a little in their rear.

“In a few days,—in a few hours, Kate.”

“I suppose she has told you so.”

And Mr. Phillips also could not keep his tongue away from the abominations of Englishmen and the miraculous powers of his own countrymen.

On the Incarnation (Book IV)

What means then, for the remission of sins?

Because my heart was delighted [Psalm 72:21].

A vain thing then is their argument about the term 'Unoriginate,' as is now proved, and nothing more than a fantasy.

He had a shooting lodge in Scotland, and apartments in London, and a string of horses in Leicestershire—much to the disgust of the county gentry around him, who held that their own hunting was as good as any that England could afford.

Cut off some part of your income; a tenth if you choose, though that is but little.

If he knew her to be guilty what matter who might think her innocent?

Let us then attentively listen to them.

“They can mostly do that, sir, if they’re well handled.”

There have been backslidings even here, it is true; but then, in what county have there not been such backslidings?

Nay, though it is a strange thing, I must say, display towards us now still greater kindness than ever; and again write this city's name among the foremost in your love—if you are indeed desirous of being revenged upon the demons who were the instigators of these crimes!

If any one cause a woman to miscarry, he shall be put to death.

And the kingdom of death so reigned over men, that the deserved penalty of sin would have hurled all headlong even into the second death, of which there is no end, had not the undeserved grace of God saved some therefrom.

First, however, we must demonstrate, according to the authority of the Holy Scriptures, whether the faith be so.

I don’t know anything against him.” Then he had turned away, and had gone into the dining-room, and was now standing with his back to the empty fireplace, determined to take Mr. Hamel’s part if any want of courtesy were shown to him.

The form, however, of the brazen serpent which the Lord afterwards commanded Moses to make, afforded no pretext for idolatry, but was meant for the cure of those who were plagued with the fiery serpents.

I feed him myself.

And so it is that, when once more they are induced to turn towards studying the diffuse doctrine of these lectures, they may not abhor them while they, undergoing instruction unnecessarily prolix, rush stupified into the transgression devised by (Justinus); and previously he binds his followers with horrible oaths, neither to publish nor abjure these doctrines, and forces upon them an acknowledgment (of their truth).

Of course there was a great amount of scolding and a loud clamour on the occasion.

And all were of one speech, and wished to rise

[Sirach 20:29, Septuagint.

And around us are the wise men of the Greeks mocking and jeering us, as those who believe without inquiry, and foolishly.

Then, my friend, you have your place to win, and it may be that the distance shall be too great to allow of your winning it.

And if there be a third truth, or a fourth, and if any one seek any truth altogether different in those words, why may not he be believed to have seen all these, through whom one God has tempered the Holy Scriptures to the senses of many, about to see therein things true but different?

What will you do if you are caught in that heaving tide of impious judgments?

‘By writing! ha, ha, ha,’ and Alaric laughed somewhat cruelly at the poor navvy—’ do something by writing! what will you do by writing? will you make £20,000—or 20,000 pence? Of all trades going, that, I should say, is likely to be the poorest for a poor man—the poorest and the most heartbreaking. What have you made already to encourage you?’

Had he no will of his own, by which he might conquer this enemy?

The life of Mary is set before virgins as an example, and her many virtues are dwelt upon, her chastity, humility, hard life, love of retirement, and the like; then her kindness to others, her zeal in learning, and love of frequenting the temple. St. Ambrose then sets forth how she, adorned with all these virtues, will come to meet the numberless bands of virgins and lead them with great triumph to the bridal chamber of the Spouse.

For never had that worm touched it, had it not found the soul corruptible.

Nor was the promise of pardon made good to the feigned adulterer, for he was fixed to a gibbet, and then he disclosed the whole secret contrivance; and with his last breath he protested to all the beholders that the women died innocent.

The multitude then having erroneous opinions imagine that there are many different things which ruin our virtue: some say it is poverty, others bodily disease, others loss of property, others calumny, others death and they are perpetually bewailing and lamenting these things: and while they are commiserating the sufferers and shedding tears they excitedly exclaim to one another What a calamity has befallen such and such a man!

She did not care to know what it was that they fixed.

Would the gentleman sit down for a minute or two?

Hear at least God upbraiding him with this especially.

For he no more restrained the Creator than he resisted His Christ.

Wherefore in proportion as you grieve that God has taken away one who was so good and worthy you ought to rejoice that he has departed in much safety and honour, and being released from the trouble which besets this present season of danger, is in great peace and tranquillity.

But it is necessary now to look over again what we have read.

She who had sent these loved things away, should have her letters again, and should touch her little treasures with fingers that should take pleasure in the touching.

But where was he to turn, and what was he to do with himself?

“‘I wonder whether he has a heart, said she; ‘and if he has, I wonder whether it is at his office.’

But when one has received an entire and firm rule of truth from the Scriptures, it will not be improper if he contribute to the establishment of true doctrine anything from common education and from liberal studies, which, it may be, he has attached himself to in his boyhood; yet so that, when he has learned the truth, he renounce falsehood and pretence.]

He, however, was hot upon his lawsuit, and thus the whole parish was by the ears.

But the Persians, supposing that they had penetrated more within the confines of the truth, asserted that the Deity is luminous, a light contained in air.

“Say all that you think, Mrs. Roden. Surely you know that I know that whatever may come from you will come in love. I have no mother, and to whom can I go better than to you to fill a mother’s place?”

“Would you mind seeing him yourself, Kate, and explaining to him that it won’t do to get on in this way. Perhaps you wouldn’t mind telling him that if he’ll promise not to bring any more, you won’t object to take this one.”

[Luke 7:48] The self-righteous Pharisee perished in his pride, while the humble publican was saved by his confession.

But as Christ, comparing Himself with John, who came neither eating nor drinking, says that He came eating and drinking, I should like to know what He ate and drank.

Before the summer was over Conway Dalrymple had been married to Clara Van Siever, and by a singular arrangement of circumstances had married her with the full approval of old Mrs. Van.

“No;—no. You have no promise. I will make no promise exacted from me in so disgraceful a manner.”

“I would say in a court what I have told you, if that will do any good.”

“Then hear it from me. You shall be my child. And if you will love me you shall be very dear to me. You shall be my own child,—as dear as my own. I must either love his wife very dearly, or else I must be an unhappy man. And she must love me dearly, or I must be unhappy.”

If he said that Moses did not spare God, it could easily be shown in reply that Moses everywhere does honor to the true God, whom he declares to be the Maker of heaven and earth.

Cæsar had not then assented; but not the less great had been the favor conferred by Sextius on Cicero.

But for God this was no great thing, that the dead should be quickened.

This is the bishop’s opinion.” It need hardly be explained that the promised visit of Mr. Thumble to Hogglestock was gall and wormwood to Mr. Crawley.

In truth, it was the very choice of men to disregard these precepts, and to turn a deaf ear to the commandments so distasteful to them; though had they listened, they would have gained a reward well worthy such attention, and that not for the present only, but the future life, which is indeed the only true life.

Let us now see what follows.

Wherefore at one time He says, I go, and I come again; and, That where I there ye may be also; and, You cannot follow Me now, but afterwards you shall follow Me; and, I go to the Father; and, The Father is greater than I; and, Before it come to pass, I have told you; and, I do not suffer these things from constraint, but from love for the Father.

“ I, who have intended to be a teacher, am now aware that I have hardly as yet become a pupil.” In such case the “ Panjandrum” would be at an end.

More or less is committed to different servants, and according to the nature of the trust, as well as of the sin, is the number of stripes inflicted.

Sir Harry Hotspur of Humblethwaite, 1871 750 0 0

For those who are beginning to be possessed with a demon, or to be disturbed in their minds, begin in this way.

Of course he had felt at the first moment that time must pass by.

was nothing.

And why should you enlarge on his beauty?

According to his teaching, as uttered in the sanctum of his own study, young men were not to be regarded as ravening wolves.

“The truth is, it is Lord Trowbridge who is my enemy here, and not the chapel or Mr. Puddleham. I’d have given the spot for the chapel, had they wanted it, and had I had the power to give it. I’m annoyed because Lord Trowbridge should know that he had got the better of me. If I can only bring myself to feel,—and you too,—that there is no better in it, and no worse, I shall be annoyed no longer. Lord Trowbridge cannot really touch me; and could he, I do not know that he would.”

“We are going to have a little dinner party to-day,” said Mrs Tom.

We may perceive also, from the words of our Lord Himself, why He said, You are not far from the Kingdom of Heaven, rather than, You shall be in the Kingdom of Heaven.

But these he left at Ephesus.

She did go twice, Mounser Green accompanying her to the morning service;—but there was no restraint.

While the mother of the gods was then sleeping on the highest peak of Agdus, her son, you say, tried stealthily to surprise her chastity while she slept.

As long as you are the deputy Squire, I will be the deputy Squiress.

Can it be declared?

There is a kind of usage which would drive any girl to run away,—or to drown herself.

They were very glad to see him, explaining that, as nobody was supposed to be in town, nobody had been asked to meet him.

But that grief which arises in the hearts of the pious, who are persecuted by the manners of bad or false Christians, is profitable to the sufferers, because it proceeds from the charity in which they do not wish them either to perish or to hinder the salvation of others.

He instances colossi, pigmies, centaurs, as the result of this mental operation.

“But she’s awful in another way, too,” said Dalrymple.

He was called here and sent there, till he was very near rebellion.

His personal appearance was admirably fitted for such scenes!

What if chloroform had been used?

‘I do not mean to postpone my comfort to their views - or my daughter’s.’

His knowledge of human nature had not carried him sufficiently far.

Her life at that period is of little moment to our story, except that it is essential that the reader should know in what she had been slandered.

“That’s a niceish nag you gave Frank this morning,” he said to his uncle. “I was looking at him before dinner. He is a Monsoon, isn’t he?”

She had given herself to him; and now all the world might know it, if all the world cared for such knowledge.

For we know that, with the help of Almighty God, your life is the health of many.

There had even been a rumour of the photograph which had been seen by one of the maidservants,—who had, it is to be feared, given the information to the French teacher.

The brewery at Baslehurst stood on the outskirts of the town, in a narrow lane which led from the church into the High-street.

She was dressed from head to foot in magenta.

Who that burnt up the synagogue of Abiram?

“No, no, not ruin him, Lady Arabella; not ruin him, I hope.”

Can you imagine what distress and grief I suffer when I observe, that if a public holy day and festival is at hand there is a concourse of all the inhabitants of the city, although there is no one to summon them; but when the holy day and festival are past, even if we should crack our voice by continuing to call you all day long there is no one who pays any heed?

You stand above the devil and sin; why do you again subject yourself to sin?

And hence, when it is turned to itself by thought, there arises a trinity, in which now at length we can discern also a word; since it is formed from thought itself, will uniting both.

That, when he comes to utter that great and lofty expression concerning himself, I labored more abundantly than all, his discourse may be rendered more acceptable, both hereby, and by its being spoken as a consequence of what went before and not as a leading topic.

But that candidates should come down to Percycross and talk about purity there, was a thing abominable to him.

You write that the angels are mutable; and, under cover of a pious opinion, introduce an impiety by maintaining that, after the lapse of many ages, souls are produced not from the angels, but from whatever it was into which the angels were first changed.

For when they asked for bread, He gave them manna from heaven; and when they wanted flesh, He sent them abundance of quails— not a serpent for a fish, nor for an egg a scorpion.

but brings in themselves to judge, that nothing has been wanting, and to condemn themselves.

“I say, doctor,” said the baronet, “hadn’t my man better come in and help? He’s got nothing to do, you know. We should be more cosy, shouldn’t we?”

You see, O man, the Artificer, you see the wise Creator.

[John 1:5] In John's Epistle the Light declares, Behold what manner of love the Father has bestowed upon us, that we should be called the sons of God.

Is there any law of Nature,—law of God, rather,—by which a man has a right to enough of food, enough of raiment, enough of shelter, and enough of recreation, if only he will work?

Caput XIII.— Julii Cassiani Hæretici Verbis Respondet; Item Loco Quem Ex Evangelio Apocrypho Idem Adduxerat.

And then the farce commenced.

A Letter of Augustine to Boniface, who, as we learn from Epistle 220, was Tribune, and afterwards Count in Africa.

[Isaiah 49:15] By rivers he means, says he, the moist substance of generation, and by fire the impulsive principle and desire for generation.

Every blade had been cut and carried in the night, and was then stacked on the ground on which no distraint could be levied.

And yet those dresses are of gold; but for this very reason it were unseemliness, because they are of gold.

Come;—answer me a fair question fairly.

But they came to it according to the Law, and worshipped the God who uttered His oracles from the Temple.

From the loving desire for the Saviour we have been called Christians, as the, whole world itself attests, and as the apostles also plainly declare.

For, says he, not even those moderate temptations, as I was remarking, may we bear by our own power: but even in them we require aid from Him in our warfare that we may pass through them, and until we have passed, bear them. For He gives patience and brings on a speedy release; so that in this way also the temptation becomes bearable. This he covertly intimates, saying, will also make the way of escape, that you may be able to bear it: and all things he refers to Him.

“Well, what of that? To hear you talk, one would think that there was nothing left of Greshamsbury. What’s four-and-twenty thousand pounds? Does Scatcherd know what rent-roll is?”

6. Hence it is only for those who are themselves instructed in Divine things and understand the motives of that zeal of which these works are the result, to appreciate the more than human impulse by which our emperor was guided, to admire his piety toward God, and to believe his care for the memorial of our Saviour's resurrection to be a desire imparted from above, and truly inspired by that Sovereign, to be whose faithful servant and minister for good is his proudest boast.

“No;—because you’ll give it in a wrong spirit. He knows well enough that I wish him well;—but you may tell him that from me, if you please. He has from me all those wishes which one friend owes to another.”

It is a great subject, and is treated with power, and the ornaments of speech are not wanting: Behold, he says, now is the accepted time; behold, now is the day of salvation.

For it was not, as in bygone days, when the church was attacked by strangers and by enemies, but now natives of the same country, who dwelt under one roof, and sat down at one table, fought against each other not with spears, but with their tongues.

He could hardly endure to show himself at his club, fearing that every one would be talking of him as the man who was separated from his wife,—perhaps as the man of whose wife Colonel Osborne was the dear friend.

But let us now deal with the subject matter and the words which express it.

For we do not say that His divinity is subject to passion or created.

The French ambassador might even now be coming.

You shall not be with many, it is said, for evil, nor give yourself to a multitude; [Exodus 23:2] for wisdom shows itself among few, but disorder in a multitude.

Have ye not houses to trifle in?

If then all chastisement be such, this also will be such: so that we ought to look for good things, and for a sweet and peaceful end.

But matter cannot always have existed, for if it had existed it would be incapable of change.

In the five of the Books of the Tusculan Disputations, still addressed to Brutus, he contends: 1.

“Unhand it, sir!” said Mrs. Proudie with redoubled emphasis, and all but furious wrath. This allusion to the fairies was a direct mockery and intended to turn her into ridicule. So at least it seemed to her. “Unhand it, sir!” she almost screamed.

[John 15:13] How was it possible for the Son of God to lay down His life for us without putting on flesh in which He might die?

They are easily recognized by any one who cares to scrutinize the men around him in the hunting field.

But let us for a moment retrace our steps.

As for dyeing of hair, and anointing of grey locks, and dyeing them yellow, these are practices of abandoned effeminates; and their feminine combing of themselves is a thing to be let alone.

These men's fear, then, I do accept, that I still think that laudable man who would neither lie, nor betray a man, did both better understand that which is written, and what he understood did bravely put in practice.

“Oh, yes; I know what you mean; a wife and family are expensive, of course. It is a little too late now to complain of that.”

“Known it! Of course they ought to have known it. Look here, Mr. Mason! If I had it on my mind that I’d thrown over a client of mine by such carelessness as that, I’d—I’d strike my own name off the rolls; I would indeed. I never could look a counsel in the face again, if I’d neglected to brief him with such facts as those. I suppose it was carelessness; eh, Mr. Mason?”

What can more manifestly favor them who say that all those gods were men?

Lastly, wherefore did He leave His own Son in the hands of the ungodly?

From this case we also are led to think that you may be occasionally mistaken.

Nay, it will be said, For this is suitable with God, that there should be a kingdom only, and not a hell.

While Lucilius is rightly assailed by Horace for the unevenness of his verses, he is equally rightly praised for his wit and his charming style.

“ I fear that I am justified in telling you,” said the doctor, “ that it can only be a question of weeks.” We got up and took her hand.

[Mark 9:43] Are these but mere threats then?

The functions of the Lord Petty Bag he was no doubt performing elsewhere.

“And is Bernard going?”

“Bathing,” said Mrs. Mountjoy, in a low voice.

There cannot possibly be any reason against it,—except only that I have nothing to give him in return; that is in the way of money.

Whence the mountain heights, the hard rocks, the woody groves?

There are innumerable models laid before you in the Scriptures of virtuous lives; whichsoever you will, come, and after the Master find it in the disciples.

Come into the house, I tell you.” And then she preceded him through the open door into the narrow passage, and thence to the kitchen.

Mr. Barry Again

And had he not moved her?

She was advised now by persons who seemed really to understand the law, that she could recover the value of the diamonds which her dear, dear husband had given her, from the freeholders of the parish in which the robbery had taken place.

Sir Peregrine had started from his chair when she had so spoken.

And their work is what was Adam's also at the beginning and before his sin, when he was clothed with the glory, and conversed freely with God, and dwelt in that place that was full of great blessedness.

Very much of a novelist’s work must appertain to the intercourse between young men and young women.

Indeed, the offer had been all but made.

[John 14:6] When, therefore, man lives according to himself—that is, according to man, not according to God—assuredly he lives according to a lie; not that man himself is a lie, for God is his author and creator, who is certainly not the author and creator of a lie, but because man was made upright, that he might not live according to himself, but according to Him that made him—in other words, that he might do His will and not his own; and not to live as he was made to live, that is a lie.

It does not suit us to ask for an explanation, because it is not our habit to interfere with other nations.

“Two pounds,” said Bob.

And again: But if a man find a betrothed damsel in a field, and the man force her, and lie with her: then the man only that lay with her shall die: but unto the damsel you shall do nothing; there is in her no sin worthy of death.

This is the very reason why he fell into temptations, because he mightily smote the devil.

They had all whispered to each other their convictions on this head.

We read of some who were divorced the day after they were married, and immediately married again.

Only think what a life it would give to the education of the country in general, if any lad from seventeen to twenty-one could go in for a vacant dukedom; and if a goodly inheritance could be made absolutely incompatible with incorrect spelling and doubtful proficiency in rule of three!

And the same writer [Galatians 5:19] tells us that the works of the flesh and the works of the spirit are manifest, and these are contrary the one to the other, so that we do not the things that we would.

And the half of the week the two prophets, along with John, will take for the purpose of proclaiming to all the world the advent of Antichrist, that is to say, for a thousand two hundred and sixty days clothed in sackcloth; [Revelation 11:3] and they will work signs and wonders with the object of making men ashamed and repentant, even by these means, on account of their surpassing lawlessness and impiety.

These two men whom she had so lately seen in lusty health—proud with all the pride of outward life—had both, by a stroke of the winds, been turned into nothing.

Any good that he did he ascribed to his uncle: but if the result did not correspond to his expectations, he would say that his uncle knew nothing of it, that it was his own mistake.

Homilies on Colossians

To pious and discerning readers of the sacred Scriptures evidence of the chastity of the holy men who are said to have had several wives is found in this, that Solomon, who by his polygamy gratified his passions, instead of seeking for offspring, is expressly noted as chargeable with being a lover of women.

This the emperor readily acceded to, having no suspicion of a clandestine purpose: Eudoxius having some of the principal officers of the emperor's bedchamber as coadjutors, deserted his own diocese, and fraudulently installed himself in the see of Antioch.

Psalm 45

He was a rich man, who was not in truth made unhappy by parting with his money.

He never spoke a word more either to annul it or to enforce it.

Take heed, then, not to have your conscience polluted, and so to begin to defile the feet of Christ.

She never inquired in a sneering tone, and with angry eyes, whether he had enjoyed his day’s sport: but when he spoke of it, she could not answer him with enthusiasm; and in other matters which concerned him she was always enthusiastic.

Then the Ladies Susanna and Amelia were informed, and the feeling became general throughout the household that the world must be near its end.

“And everything can’t be published,” said the sagacious beauty.

She had thought it over, and had endeavoured to persuade herself that Mr Whittlestaff did not care about it very much.

What Thackeray did enabled him to leave a comfortable income for his children, and one earned honestly, with the full approval of the world around him.

They are the very foundations which the rain, and blasts, and wind, most quickly overturn.

The broken sea was full of the long straggling growth which the waves had torn up from the bottom of the ocean, but the masses were carried past him, away from him, nay, once or twice over him; and then Mally’s weird voice would sound in his ear, jeering him.

As to the actual difference of price, she did not now care very much about it.

There is not usually even a fireplace in the room.

If, then, you have read what he has given you, I also shall have become known to your inward perception.

Dear old place!

“For reasons that I know of.”

“Yes; they have. But they have had nothing to do with my being the eldest legitimate son of my father. The cards have been against me, but they have not affected my mother. Then there came the blow from the governor, and where was I to look for my bread but to you? I suppose, if the truth be known, you get the money from the governor.”

In seeking for the useful, we are compelled to abandon the picturesque.

For if one should even choose it through vain-glory, such his choice will be but for once and again, not all his life long, like ours.

‘I will ask her nothing,—except that she shall not speak to you any farther about it. You have come here wilfully-minded to disturb us all.’

“Yes;—by chance,” said Lady Laura. “But every one at Loughlinter always comes up here. If any one ever were missing whom I wanted to find, this is where I should look.”

And what is the injury of that straitness, when it leads to rest?

Assuming that the Son knows the Father, it would seem that by this knowledge He can comprehend Him as much as a craftsman can comprehend the rules of his art.

How he did hate himself for his one weakness!

Neither will I bear to be deprived of my consecration; One Lord, One Faith, One Baptism.

Chapter 13. Rhodo and his Account of the Dissension of Marcion.

Now it is written that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners.

Madame de Lescure had, while her husband was speaking, sunk upon her knees beside his bed, and was now bathing his hand with her tears.

But if any mischief arise from hence exceeding the advantage, let us take care, I beseech you, lest while we are earnest to comfort one soul, we put a stumbling-block in the way of ten thousand.

“I can pardon him easily enough; but one doesn’t like men who are given to threatening. He’s not the sort of man that I took him to be.”

Very much more is said,—and very much more may be learned from the latter than from the former book.

You say he was drunk.

She turned round and saw by the gaslight that Lizzie’s face was white as a sheet, and that all the lines of her countenance were rigid and almost distorted.

But I have come into your royal presence with the sacred laws; and instead of all other gifts, I present these; and I exhort you to imitate your Lord, who while He is daily insulted by us, unceasingly ministers His blessings to all!

Hearken unto My prayer, not in deceitful lips: not going forth to You in deceitful lips.

Perhaps he respected her more than he had done when he was resolving, three or four days since, that he would be the master in his own house; but it may be feared that the tenderness of his love for her had been impaired.

For by the state in which I find you will I judge, also, is what in each case the end of all cries aloud.

And yet how many such men does one see in almost every set?

“I did think so certainly. What more can I say?”

There was no interest in the newspapers,—except when Mr. Slide took the tomahawk into his hands.

Chapter XXIX. Burgo Fitzgerald

[Gregorion] . I seem to be disappointed of my hope, as some one else has given you intelligence beforehand on the subject respecting which you ask me. For I thought that you had heard nothing of what had happened, and I was flattering myself greatly with the idea that I should be the first to tell you of it. And for this reason I made all haste to come here to you, fearing the very thing which has happened, that some one might anticipate me.

This happened about noon on the day after that on which Sir Peregrine had declared himself.

Had he said to her,—when her heart was softest towards him,—I once loved another woman, and that woman is here now in London, a trouble to me, persecuting me, and her history is so and so, and the history of my love for her was after this fashion, and the history of my declining love is after that fashion, and of this at any rate you may be sure, that this woman has never been near my heart from the first moment in which I saw you;—had he told it to her thus, there would not have been an opening for anger.Would it be in my bosom to make her come and live with a stupid, silly old man, to potter on from day to day without any excitement?

At length meetings began to be held in various places in the city, and this subject to be discussed in conversation, and to be a matter of wonder who this might be who had appeared, and what message He had brought from God to men; until, about the same year, a certain man, standing in a most crowded place in the city, made proclamation to the people, saying: [Hear me, O you citizens of Rome.

There might yet be a hope, though, alas, the hope was becoming slighter every hour.

Such is the account given by holy Scripture of the history of man and of Paradise.

You see that in many things they took their measures as men.

You’ll have to do it sooner or later,—whether or no.

That his manner was thoroughly noble no one could doubt.

“That is why I wish it. Now will you consent to learn from me again?”

“True?—yes, it is all true. Why did you bring the scoundrel here? It has been your fault.”

So also yourselves, had you your reasoning power in full strength, would not reduce to matter so great a revelation of the Godhead: but neither would you have given to the image greater honour than to the man that carved it.

And this I have said, that these brethren may not be ignorant of the danger they incur by disobedience to you, because whosoever disobeys your orders, disobeys Christ; and he who disobeys Christ offends God.

The pretext which he advanced for these proceedings was, that the clergy were the leaders of sedition among the people.

Chapter 2. The Preface Continued.

“I never knew anybody yet that was proud of his friends. I like him well enough, but I can quite understand that the governor should object.”

Why, what sort of bites are as ferocious as this? What kind of weapons as bitter? Not so did Christ instruct you; not so did He command you to stain your mouth with blood. Nay, mouths made bloody with human flesh are not so shocking as tongues like these.

And especially when at first setting out these things were said, and before He had given proof of His own power?

Moreover, it is now even seven years that we have been living in this city among the swords of the Lombards.

Let a man say, that having done us numberless ills, he has suffered nothing in return: let him say that he might again frantically assault us, and have nothing to fear.

“Yes, I have; I have this to say, that I will not endure this sort of usage.”

Their very names, he said, are their clothing.

How much less then can it go back behind the time when it had its origin, and comprehend with its perception things which existed before it in the realms of eternity?

Mrs. Proudie might be said still to bloom, and was, at any rate, strong, and the bishop had no reason to apprehend that he would be speedily visited with the sorrows of a widower’s life.

His reward and his time had now come. He was selected for the vacant bishopric and, on the next vacancy which might occur in any diocese, would take his place in the House of Lords, prepared to give not a silent vote in all matters concerning the weal of the church establishment. Toleration was to be the basis on which he was to fight his battles, and in the honest courage of his heart he thought no evil would come to him in encountering even such foes as his brethren of Exeter and Oxford.

“By herself.”

Father, they say, is a name either of an essence or of an Action, thinking to bind us down on both sides.

As I belong in a manner to the house I took down Miss Harford, and hovered about her for five minutes.

For thus the prophet speaks of this spirit, His meat is choice.

And it was not true that Sir Florian Eustace had asked her in marriage.

The Cæsarean spirit which induced Sallust to ignore altogether the words of Cicero would have induced him to give his own representation of the other two, even though we were to suppose that he had been able to have them taken down by shorthand writers—Cicero’s words, we have no doubt, with such polishing as may have been added to the shorthand writers’ notes by Tiro, his slave and secretary.

“Why don’t I go in at it?” said Ontario, closing the book in hopeless confusion of mind and figures. “I’d give every pair of boots in this place, I’d give all the business, to get a kind word from her.”

For the former topic by itself is laboring in vain.

This same light of men which shines in darkness, the true light, is called, further on in the Gospel, the light of the world; Jesus says, I am the light of the world.

There is the Assumption, by Murillo — a picture not worth quite all that we said of it when it was removed from Soult’s Gallery: but still a fine picture; and there are others, — wonderful works of art.

Richard Carey, Esq.

She had laboured hard to make the cottages on the estate clean and comfortable.

Talk of Scotland!

Suppose there were a king and a general, and while the king was asleep or drunk, the general should endure hardship and erect a trophy, whose would you count the victory to be?

Mr. Prendergast had very little doubt as to the truth of Mollett’s story;—indeed we may say he had no doubt; otherwise he would hardly have made it known to all that world round Castle Richmond.

“A man gets over that quickly, I think.”

Yet even thus he forgot not his duty, for at the approach of death, as it were by his last testament, he bore witness to the force which had been used towards him, and anathematized the Arian heresy, and gave strict charge that no one should receive it.

But, says my opponent, the deities are not inimical to you, because you worship the omnipotent God; but because you both allege that one born as men are, and put to death on the cross, which is a disgraceful punishment even for worthless men, was God, and because you believe that He still lives, and because you worship Him in daily supplications.

Owen Fitzgerald.

But every virgin is of course unmarried.

Athanasius assembled the endemic priests, and consulted with them on the subject; and he ordained Frumentius bishop of India, since he was peculiarly qualified and apt to do much service among those among whom he was the first to manifest the name of Christian, and the seed of the participation in the doctrine was sown.

He, Sir Peregrine, could not have gone into the court himself.

For I do not conceive that which lay hid in my memory, but that which I hear, when anything is narrated to me.

But what is so worthy of an idol as that which is also worthy of a dead man?

But if this is allowed for a part of the body, why is it denied for the whole body when need requires?

He is bound to do so when he is convinced that a woman’s decision is final; and there can be no stronger proof of such finality than the fact that she has declared a preference for some other man.

His wife had behaved with such indiscretion as almost to have compromised his honour; and in return for that he was to beg her pardon, confess himself to have done wrong, and allow her to return in triumph!

Pointing this out with much triumph, she accused Mrs. Carbuncle and Lucinda of great treachery, in that they had not adhered to any vestige of their travelling raiment.

And now we call the proud happy; yea, they that work wickedness are set up; yea, they that tempt God are even delivered.

Her father wouldn’t let her be married till I had got the living, and I think he was right, because I shouldn’t have liked to spend money in painting and such like on an uncertainty.

The bride must take with her a well-dressed lady’s-maid.

We discoursed also at length concerning the night, and the day, and the order of these, as well as of the harmony which is strictly preserved by them; and much was said respecting the measured dance of the seasons of the year, and of their equality.

A Duchess of Omnium might be said to fill,—in the estimation, at any rate, of English people,—the highest position in the world short of royalty.

The prestige of the Romans had not as yet established itself in these parts, and the Swiss nearly have the best of it.

Because He looked not to the display of Himself, but to their profit.

For that Lamb that was slain by them without any debt of sin has conquered them; but not by the might of power before He had done so by the righteousness of blood.

He had touched her so closely that she determined at once to tell him the truth, thinking that she might best in this way put an end to his passion forever.

That, at any rate, must be avoided.

We’re a bigger people than any of you and have more room.

“That can hardly be possible,” said Trendellsohn.

“Dear Lady Scatcherd, is it not better that I should tell you the truth?”

I don’t know when I ate a better one.

“Yes, taxes,” she said; “ they are an evil which we must all endure. It is no good grumbling at them. But we have had the roads made for us.”

And again it is to be understood in another way; the blood for the Jews, and the water for the Christians: for upon them as plotters came the condemnation from the blood; but to you who now believest, the salvation which is by water.

The perfection of all our good things and our perfect good is God.

Does He not reveal to His Apostles the Dispensation of this glory by the express signification of the words, Now is the Son of Man glorified, and God is glorified in Him.

In what terms could he speak to Neefit of the money due both for breeches and the loan, in the event of his declining Polly?

And then the judge had added to the life of the meeting, helping to bamboozle and make miserable a wretch of a witness who had been caught in the act of seeing the boat smashed with a fragment of rock, and was now, in consequence, being impaled alive by his lordship’s assistance.

To this is added, that it is not uniform; but being divided into sects, and scattered into many and discordant opinions, it has no fixed state.

“A man who will do nothing else must do harm.”

Then she had written, and had received no answer.

Certainly, she was very beautiful.

For not all the citizens of that city are captives, but those who are away from thence, they are captives.

In Holy Scripture, it is true, the Spirit of wisdom is called manifold [Wisdom 7:22] because it contains many things in it; but what it contains it also is, and it being one is all these things.

“Nonsense, Caroline; why should he have stayed away? Why should you expect him to stay away? Had he stayed away, you would have been the first to grumble. Don’t be missish, my dear.”

“Oh, Mr. Monk, it is such a blessing for him, and such an honour for us, that you should be so good to him.” Then the mother spoke out all her past fears and all her present hopes, and acknowledged the great glory which it was to her to have a son sitting in Parliament, holding an office with a stately name and a great salary, and blessed with the friendship of such a man as Mr. Monk. After that Mr. Monk got on better with her.

“Of course they are not all for Mary,” said Patience.

Together they cannot be; for what fellowship has light with darkness?

But as the old Confusion of tongues was laudable, when men who were of one language in wickedness and impiety, even as some now venture to be, were building the Tower; [Genesis 11:7] for by the confusion of their language the unity of their intention was broken up, and their undertaking destroyed; so much more worthy of praise is the present miraculous one.

De Wynter. The Count my son? Count Upsel be the husband of my daughter, and stoop again to her, who cast away his proffered hand and honourable love for one too base to name?

Might it not be that his acquittal or conviction would depend on what she might now learn from him?

You may as well leave me,—or at least be quiet.

And these views they think to establish on the authority of the prophets by those promises which are written regarding Jerusalem; and by those passages also where it is said, that they who serve the Lord shall eat and drink, but that sinners shall hunger and thirst; that the righteous shall be joyful, but that sorrow shall possess the wicked.

“For about an hour.”

Therefore, Mr. Groschut, who was a very low churchman and had once been a Jew, but who bore a very high character for theological erudition, was asked to the deanery.

Justin: You know, then, sirs, that God has said in Isaiah to Jerusalem: 'I saved you in the deluge of Noah.'

For, apart from the knowledge of God, what solid happiness can there be, since death must come?

[Matthew 15:11] Accordingly, all their endeavors are concerned not about the rejection of kinds of food as polluted, but about the subjugation of inordinate desire and the maintenance of brotherly love.

That she could remember distinctly, as also the rooms in which she was then taken to live, and the fact that she was told that from henceforth she was to be a Jewess.

said, How could he who cannot do so while thinking?

Elamashmsi inatatu anesibozo.

And again it is written, A time to keep silence, and a time to speak [Ecclesiastes 3:7].

The sacramental bond, again, which is lost neither by divorce nor by adultery, should be guarded by husband and wife with concord and chastity.

Not that she loved him more than usual, but that she was beginning to think that she could not ever really love him at all.

On the day after her engagement she saw Gilmore, and then she wrote to her aunt to tell her the tidings.

And these things He said, setting laws and rules for His own disciples, that when they should have to receive as disciples those of all sorts that should come from the whole world, they might deal with them very gently.

But in regard to the state of Italy at the time, he had expressed himself very strongly in the memorandum above quoted; “There can be no reasonable doubt, therefore, that both France and Sardinia would unite with England in maintaining the principle that the Italians should be secured against foreign compulsion, and should be left free to determine, according to their own will, what shall be their future political condition.”

For at the same time that these costly images of the dead were stripped, as we have said, of their precious materials, he also attacked those composed of brass; causing those to be dragged from their places with ropes and as it were carried away captive, whom the dotage of mythology had esteemed as gods.

She was clever, too, in her way, and could say sprightly things.

“If you want to make her your wife, put it in writing. And if it be as you don’t, just say so, and walk away,—free.”

For when we compare together the soul and the body it cannot be said that they are of one nature.

Her opinion of herself was so poor, she had become so sick of her own vanities and littlenesses and pretences, that she could not understand that such a man as this should in truth want to make her his wife.

It was about eight months after the business had been opened that a circumstance took place which gave to the firm a reputation which for some few days was absolutely metropolitan.

Or what unlearned man could invent things adapted to one another, and coherent, when the most learned of the philosophers, Plato and Aristotle, and Epicurus and Zeno, themselves spoke things at variance with one another, and contrary?

For they were not with You when You did them, inasmuch as You made even these very men.

A grievous famine was once approaching, and the inhabitants of Antioch determined, as far as each person had the means, to send relief to the Saints dwelling at Jerusalem.

I acknowledge myself to be a gregarious animal, or, perhaps, rather one of those which nature has intended to go in pairs.

Therefore hear him, as knowing that he who grieves the president of the truth, sins against Christ, and offends the Father of all.

Nevertheless, though mocked and dead, He shall break in pieces the heads of His enemies, of whom He says, Raise me up, and I shall render to them: whether it be good things for evil things, while to Himself He subdues the heads of them believing, or whether just things for unjust things, while He punishes the heads of them proud.

Certainly, there was no rival in the field, and therefore she did not quite know whether she ought or ought not to write at once in her present circumstances of assured determination.

Then Peter: You have the Word of life eternal: to whom shall we go?

We both had some property, but neither of us could enjoy it.

They have a reward; to him a dispensation of the gospel was committed.

After this, when we have issued from the font, we are thoroughly anointed with a blessed unction,— (a practice derived) from the old discipline, wherein on entering the priesthood, men were wont to be anointed with oil from a horn, ever since Aaron was anointed by Moses.

The image in truth is not that of a bodily countenance, not one made up of colours, nor modelled in wax, but simply derived from God, coming out from the Father, drawn from the fountainhead.

On they came, close under the rocks, obeying with every muscle of their bodies the behests of those who called to them from the shore.

The equality of this politician would forbid any to rise above him instead of inviting all to rise up to him.

He did not think himself more clever than his cousin; and as for personal appearance, it was a matter to which his thoughts never descended; but he had about him a self-dependence and assurance in his own manhood, which forbade him to doubt the love of one who had told him that she loved him.

I like you for that; I do, indeed.

On account of these most obstinate contentions of theirs, no philosophy existed which made a nearer approach to the truth, for the whole truth has been comprised by these in separate portions.

He said something about tradition; more of the many learned men who by their practice had confirmed the present arrangement; then went at some length into the propriety of maintaining the due difference in rank and income between a beneficed clergyman and certain poor old men who were dependent on charity; and concluded his argument by another reference to the archdeacon.

An uncorrupted nature is justly held in esteem.

Thus it was that the two letters were written from the same house.

Non enim penitus repellit naturæ appetitiones, qui fit ad tempus, consensus: per quem rursus inducit Apostolus conjugationera matrimonii, non ad intemperantiam et fornicationem et opus diaboli, sed ne subjugetur intemperantiæ, fornicationi, et diabolo.

He forbade the children of Christians from frequenting the public schools, and from being instructed in the writings of the Greek poets and authors.

You are not the man to be diffident of yourself in such a matter.

I will therefore turn my discourse from you, Petilianus, for a time, and direct it rather to those whom you have endeavored to turn away from me by your revilings, as though my endeavor rather were that men should be converted unto me, and not rather with me unto God.

But if you are distressed lest the consequences of my ill-treatment should remain, know for certain that I have shaken myself entirely free from them, and that I am in better bodily health than when I was sojourning in Cæsarea.

The happy aspirant had taken this to be almost as good as a promise.

All the English world knows, or knows of, that branch of the Civil Service which is popularly called the Weights and Measures.

And behold, also, the same thing happening in respect of grace.

But Grey was not to be shaken off.

And how greatly did He value you, who spared not His own Son?

She was used to her turban and her drapery, and therefore thought not of it at all; and he also was used to it, seeing her in it two or three times a week; but now that he intended to accomplish a special purpose, the turban and the drapery seemed to be in the way.

This death he means both of that in the Laver, and that in sufferings.

The creation of moving creatures.

But rather we must understand a return and restoration to that which existed in Him at the beginning, essentially and inseparably.

[Matthew 6:10] Examine your heart: see, behold, Your kingdom come: He cries out to you, I come: do you not fear?

But the one thing dear to him was the Republic—what he thought to be the Republic.

Such was the end of one who, at the beginning of his reign, had distinguished himself in war and in peace, and who had been honored by receiving the sister of Constantine in marriage.

The violence of his manner and utterance of these words was so great, that all his veins were opened by the effort, and all the arteries ruptured; and from the quantity of blood which thereupon gushed forth he died.

And I entreat your holiness both to look on them with fatherly regard, and to lend them your ears in sincere kindness, and also to deem my slandered and falsely attacked position worthy of your protection, and above all to defend with all your might the Faith that is now plotted against, and to keep the heritage of the fathers intact for the churches, so shall your holiness receive from the Bountiful Master a full reward.

Yet forcible as is the example I have mentioned, still it is after all weak and inadequate.

And how it is taken by its own wings, and needs not the warfare from without, but by itself it is pierced through?

Of course I do.

Lady Rowley thought that her daughter had better go back to her husband, let the future consequences be what they might.

But let us suppose that they were introduced by these.

I have drunk also from the great river Euphrates, not spiritual but actual water, such as you can touch with your hand and imbibe with your mouth.

But if, as I desire, I should ever have attained to wisdom, I will do what I may find her to suggest.

Or if nature is heaven and earth, and everything which is created, nature is not God, but the work of God.

Does the Son of God say of the Father, The Lord says, while He Himself is that Angel of the Father?

“Well, yes; meditating about your diamonds has brought my philosophy out. When do you think you will go to Scotland?”

We have men who go in debt to tradesmen perhaps without a thought of paying them; but when we speak of such a one who has descended into the lowest mire of insolvency, we say that he has not paid his washerwoman.

But, if through my unpolished diction we run aground amid the rough cross-currents of language, you may blame my lack of power, but you will at least recognize my good intentions.

Do you not see (how it is with) the demoniacs (in their fits)?

But does He promise nothing to those who believe Him to be the Son of man, when the Son of God and the Son of man are the same?

And then to be told that one is unmanly by the father, and a coward by the young lady, as occurred to me in this affair, is disheartening.

“I have your instructions, then?”

I will not, in a letter, express my admiration, &c., &c., &c. But I will proclaim in Connaught, on my return, that so worthy a bride was never yet brought down to the far west. Lord Cashel will, of course, have some pet bishop or dean to marry you; but, after what has passed, I shall certainly demand the privilege of christening the heir.

According to the trick which he knows of old, he is trying to blend his perfidious poison with the Catholic faith; he assails virginity and hates chastity; he revels with worldlings and declaims against the fasts of the saints; he plays the philosopher over his cups, and soothes himself with the sweet strains of psalmody, while he smacks his lips over his cheese-cakes; nor could he deign to listen to the songs of David and Jeduthun, and Asaph and the sons of Core, except at the banqueting table.

Moreover to the saying, They that received the half-shekel came to Peter, [Matthew 17:24] you will adduce from Numbers that, for the saints according to the law of God, is paid not a half-shekel simply, but a sacred half-shekel.

But I bewail you, knowing the evils that await you, the punishment that is about to overtake you.

Not dividing, he says, His own essence by begetting, and being at once begetter and begotten, at the same time Father and Son; for He is incorruptible.

That’s what I call skinning a witness.

And having said this, He tarried two days.

I should not dare to turn from my evil way, were I not assured of remission; I could not endure so as to persevere, if I were not assured of the fulfilment of Your promise

But she did think of it, and could not keep her thoughts from it for a moment.

She nourished with her milk Him who imparts sustenance and life to everything that has breath.

A girl with large ankles is, one may suppose, as liable to die for love as though she were as fine about her feet as a thoroughbred filly; and there is surely no reason why a true heart and a pair of cherry cheeks should not go together.

[Genesis 1:26] And, in truth, Christ became the perfect realization of what God spoke; and the rest of humanity is conceived as being created merely in His image.

Hence also He indicates what punishments are in store for the servant who has been elated by his assumption of government, saying, But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My Lord delays his coming, and shall begin to smite his fellow-servants, and to eat and drink with the drunken, the Lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looks not for him, and in an hour that he is not aware of, and shall cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites [Matthew 24:48, seq.].

The club goes on without much change, Mr. Masters being very regular in his attendance, undeterred by the grandeur of his new household.

She passed on altogether across the bridge, in order that she might reach the spot she desired without observation — and perhaps also with some halting idea that she might thus postpone the evil moment.

For as to your authority, it cannot weigh much with yourselves, not to speak of me or any other person.

They are not man and wife;—not now, even if they ever were.

How it had come to pass that a man whose eyes were generally so widely open to everything around him had not perceived that this young widow was rich as well as beautiful, cannot probably now be explained.

Thady went home to his dinner or supper—rather glad that he had had the interview, for the man’s manner was not so insolent as he had expected it would be; and he now felt tolerably confident that he should not again be solicited to keep the unfortunate promise which he had made.

[1 Corinthians 7:19] Neither celibacy nor wedlock is of the slightest use without works, since even faith, the distinguishing mark of Christians, if it have not works, is said to be dead, [James 2:17] and on such terms as these the virgins of Vesta or of Juno, who was constant to one husband, might claim to be numbered among the saints.

So, then, just as even though the three subsistences of the Godhead are united with each other, we cannot speak of them as one subsistence because we should confuse and do away with the difference between the subsistences, so also we cannot speak of the two natures of Christ as one nature, united though they are in subsistence, because we should then confuse and do away with and reduce to nothing the difference between the two natures.

If immediately, where will be the long lapse of the time which is as yet inadmissible in the hypothesis?

A proof of their education is in the books they have written and left behind, and the many things worthy of record.

Ask Esaias: And we saw Him, and He had no form nor comeliness.

This little episode went far to break the day, and did more than anything else could have done to put Captain Bellfield at his ease.

And now we must look also at this, that if ever those who know not how to do well, live well; for they have lighted on well-doing.

“Well, then, seriously, I hope Miss Gresham will be very happy as Mrs Moffat.”

I received your letter this morning; but as you were so kind as to give me a day to answer it, I have put off doing so till I could be quite alone. It will be a very simple answer. I value your love more than anything in the world. You have my whole heart. I hope, for your sake, that the troubles which you speak of will not be many; but whatever they may be, I will share them. If I can, I will lessen them.

“That’s unkind. I’d like what I say on such an occasion to be more poetical or else more nonsensical than what other people say under the same circumstances. And now I’ll tell you why I always think of you when I come here by moonlight.”

But, seeing that I could not resist the divine decrees, I have recovered a more cheerful frame of mind.

He was a hardworking, ill-favoured, saving man; but, as he was able to keep a comfortable home over a wife, he had no difficulty in getting one.

The drastic southernwood. The healing drug

If the soul, while disembodied, decreases thus by retrogression of its age, how much more reasonable would it be, that it should resume its life with a richer progress in all attainments of life after the lapse of a thousand years!

As for me, I will confess greatly unto the Lord with my mouth [Psalm 108:29] Is He said to praise among the multitude because He is with His Church here even unto the end of the world; [Matthew 28:20] so that we may understand by among the multitude, that He is honoured by this very multitude?

For what can be more intolerable than the death of a son before his father's eyes?

By this the holy Apostles did not understand that He had gone forth, in the sense of having been sent, from God.

The fox had turned a little to the left, which was in Larry’s favour, and the Major was now close to him, covered on one side with mud, but still looking as though the mud were all right.

But the mother was never able to extract from the son any intimation of his intention to give up the marriage, though she used threats and tears, ridicule and argument,—appeals to his pride and appeals to his pocket.

And it will result that the unchangeable and unaltered God has altered and changed.

For there are (of them) some who are called Cataproclans; there are others who are termed Catæschinetans.

While the search was being made he had retired to another room, and had had a little conversation with his partner about the weather.

“Why do you say so? Why do you try to make unhappiness between us?”

He, at the present moment, had no curate who interfered with his happiness.

The faithful (mercies), the abiding (mercies), those which never perish.

Could it have been by accident that the graces of her form were so excellently shown?

So, too, did the Corinthians themselves understand him.

“Love me! I don’t doubt her loving me. She’ll love me because she is loving—not that I am lovable. She’ll want to do a’most everything about the house, and I shall want the same; and her wants are to stand uppermost,—that is, if she is to be Mrs Whittlestaff.”

But I am not speaking of your wife.

She herself did not believe that she could be brought to accept him, and was now stronger in that opinion than ever.

He Tries His Hand Again

He was specially unjust to poor Larry, who was by no means a wretch.

“Yes; I see you have got back.”

And so even a solitary can detect by sure signs that the roots of each fault are still implanted in him, if he tries not to show his purity to men, but to maintain it inviolate in His sight, from whom no secrets of the heart can be hid.

That was now within his reach.

Let us put on the whole armor of God. Do you see how he banishes all fear? For if it be possible to do all, and to stand, his describing in detail the power of the enemy does not create cowardice and fear, but it shakes off indolence. That ye may be able, he says, to withstand in the evil day. And he further gives them encouragement too from the time; the time, he seems to say, is short; so that you must needs stand; faint not when the slaughter is achieved.

And what becomes of what you just before had said, that man was the work of God?

‘I ain’t bound to come and tell you all the family arrangements about my marriage.’ If you look at it all round it was uncommonly well done.

“My cousin Plantagenet suggested—marriage.”

For the one, in order to escape poverty, desired to take back what he had forsaken; the others, for fear lest they might become poor, tried to keep back something out of their property, which they should have either offered to the Apostle in good faith, or have given entirely to the brethren.

Just as my Christ is to be expected, who was predicted from the beginning, so his Christ therefore has no existence, as not having been announced from the beginning.

Up comes another.

If He be Maker of all things, why does He not also attend to these things by His Providence?— Who in times past suffered all nations to walk in their own ways [Acts 14:16]— but wherefore He suffered them, this he does not say, for at present he keeps to the matter of immediate importance, nowhere bringing in the name of Christ.

And on account of the necessity for a numerous offspring, the custom of one man having several wives was at that time blameless: and for the same reason it was not proper for one woman to have several husbands, because a woman does not in that way become more fruitful, but, on the contrary, it is base harlotry to seek either gain or offspring by promiscuous intercourse.

“God knows there was; and the necessity which lay upon you of bearing a bold front during those long and terrible weeks of course consumed your strength. The wonder is that the fibres of your mind should have retained any of their elasticity after such an ordeal. But as you are so strong, it would be a pity that you should not be strong altogether. This thing that is now to be offered to you is what you have always desired.”

“Yes; I am the little girl,” said Clara, smiling.

If your son has learned to say, Believe me; he will not be able to go up to the theatre, or to enter a tavern, or to spend his time at dice; for that word, lying upon his mouth instead of a bridle, will make him however unwilling feel shame and blush.

But perhaps at that time of your wife's pregnancy you will have the hardihood to beg from God a remedy for so grave a solicitude, which, when it lay in your own power, you refused?

But further ; chastity and profligacy are both carried on in the flesh; those also who endure the most painful tortures for their religion, and those on the other hand who shrink from such, both one class and the other reveal their character in relation to fleshly sensations; how, then, can justice be done at the Judgment ?

She was in this state when Tetchen crept up to her room, on that evening on which Peter had been with Herr Molk. “Fraulein,” said Tetchen, “you are very unkind to me.”

He is honour complete from head to foot.

“Oh, Madeline!” said he, “tell me that you love me—do you—do you love me?”

For He will not draw back from you; for My name is in Him.'

No stranger could see into it, or hear sounds from out of it.

The bishop was sitting listlessly in his study when the news reached him of the dean’s illness.

At last, upon some there will be bestowed this blessing at the last day, that they shall not feel death itself in sudden change, but shall be caught up along with the risen in the clouds to meet Christ in the air, and so shall they ever live with the Lord.

See how again he soothes them, by adding and do minister.

“And don’t you dance at all?”

And thus it is everywhere believed as ascertained truth.

into his house.

For he indeed was doing what he would; while the other prevented him not, nor accomplished his own purpose.

Meats, he says, are on good terms with gluttony, and it with them.

It’s more than poor.

To sit in the Cabinet for one Session would, he then thought, be more to him than to preside over the Court of Queen’s Bench as long as did Lord Mansfield.

Dr. Grantly, to his great horror, found himself leagued to Mrs. Clantantram.

For the ridicule is greater.

For I, says He, have sent them.

“I am very sorry—but it is a secret. It is not one of my own seeking; that is all I can say.” His mother and sisters also asked him a question or two; but when he became mysterious they did not persevere. “Of course it is something about Florence,” said Fanny. “I’ll be bound he is going to meet her. What will you bet me, Harry, you don’t go to the play with Florence before you come home?” To this Henry deigned no answer; and after that no more questions were asked.

or does there seem to be any feeling of repugnance at such intercourse on the part of any one concerned.

If my mode of addressing your Grace be too familiar I hope you will excuse it.

They speak us fair, in order to work us secret harm.

They would have chosen then ten thousand times rather to be outcasts at home, than kings in Babylon.

And so neither can the Son exist without the Father, nor the Father without the Son.

And when the defenders of Arianism quoted the same author in confirmation, as they imagined, of their own views, these two confuted them, and clearly proved that their opponents did not at all understand the reasoning of Origen.

And then the child was brought in.

“Well, my love,” he said, “I know it is impertinent to ask a young lady to speak on such a subject; but fathers are impertinent. Be frank with me. I have told you what I think, and your mamma agrees with me. Young Mr. Orme would have been her favourite—”

Do not despise fish because they are dumb and quite unreasoning; rather fear lest, in your resistance to the disposition of the Creator, you have even less reason than they.

“Then, why can’t you stay? Write and tell Mrs Tom that she must keep Susanna at home for another week or so. It can’t matter.”

Rocks there were.

His words were low in their tone, though very clear, impassive, delivered without gesticulation or artifice, such as that so powerfully used by Mr. Chaffanbrass; but Alaric himself felt that it was impossible to doubt the truth of such a man; impossible to suppose that any juryman should do so.

How those are to be admonished who have had experience of the sins of the flesh, and those who have not.

amount, and the work lessened, till the Civil servant was a sinecurist.

I looked at the page, and I rubbed my brow, and I gazed into the street,—and then determined that a two hours’ ring round the Regent’s Park was the only chance left for me.

“Corpo di Baccho!” said the landlord, and he also looked at me as though I were a thief. In the mean time the landlady and the three daughters had clustered round Mrs. Greene, administering to her all manner of Italian consolation. The box, and the money, and the jewels were after all a reality; and much incivility can be forgiven to a lady who has really lost her jewels, and has really found them again.

[Hosea 8:3] I know the emptying, the making void, the making waste, the melting of the heart, and knocking of the knees together, [Nahum 2:10] such are the punishments of the ungodly.

Those evangelical precepts of peculiar sublimity which you make people who know no better believe that you obey, are really obeyed by multitudes in our communion.

For the Patriarch Jacob who had before fled from Esau, feared not death when it came, but at that very time blessed the Patriarchs, each according to his deserts.

You have capital, and you will dispose of that capital for your own purposes, as long as a shilling remains uninvested of your ward’s money.

“My darling child, it is beautiful to hear you say so of him.”

Such was the case made out by the promoters of the bridge, and the chairman and his party were very sanguine of success. They conceived that Mr. Blocks’ figures had completely cowed their antagonists.

Others refer to the devil the whole of what they do ill: and will not have even a share with him, whereas they may suspect whether he by hidden suggestions has persuaded them to evil, and on the other hand cannot doubt that they have consented to those suggestions, from whatever source they have come.

[Acts 4:22] But let us look over what has been said from the beginning.

Now as the daughters sinned not, neither did he sin in their persons, because he was not making them to sin, if they should be deforced against their will, but only to bear them that did the sin.

The Lord, as was meet and right, brought us safe through, accompanied as we had been by your prayers, and I will tell you a manifest token of His loving kindness.

For it is not to be believed that the Godhead which is impassible was subject to the passion.

“Thank God! I thank Him with all my heart and soul: and I know you were the first everywhere. Charles wrote but a word or too to Victorine, but he said you were the very first to set your foot in Saumur.”

For he that praises except he also exhibit proof, even appears to flatter.

Now, should any one wish to argue that the Creator's precepts extended only to a man's brethren, but Christ's to all that ask, so as to make the latter a new and different precept, (I have to reply) that one rule only can be made out of those principles, which show the law of the Creator to be repeated in Christ.

I might reply and say, Why do you tie me down to the short space of a month?

But, says He, whosoever keeps my word, shall not see death for ever; therefore the word of Christ affords immortality, and by immortality affords divinity.

This also let us consider not only with respect to an oath, but to every thing.

Marie first heard that she no longer had a living parent as she stood by the poor woman’s bedside, and she was enabled, as much perhaps by the necessity incumbent upon her of attending to the wretched woman as by her own superior strength of character, to save herself from that prostration and collapse of power which a great and sudden blow is apt to produce.

It don’t take much to kill one of them old trees,—but there’s life in ‘m yet if they be well handled.

“Why, no, I don’t think there is; indeed, I have no doubt she will hold out a fortnight yet.”

“Because he is a stranger and a foreigner. Would you have wished me to tell him that he might come?”

Lady Lufton’s experience of the world at large was not perhaps extensive.

But it will be urged that the bad outside are worse than those within.

Nor was this the full extent of their misery: they groaned beneath the pressure of other evils equally numerous and irremediable.

“Oh yes, you do. Poor Ralph, our Ralph, is a spendthrift, and I shouldn’t wonder if this one were to have the property after all. And then his father is very rich. I know that because Gregory told me. Dear me! wouldn’t it be odd if we were all three to become Mrs. Newtons?”

Mr Apjohn had come out to him at Llanfeare, pretending to be his lawyer, his friend, his advisor, and had recommended this treacherous indictment merely that he might be able to subject him to the torments of Mr Cheekey’s persecution.

“ But, as it may be taken seriously, I hope he will not repeat it.”

Onesimus was a true son, but he was again not true, for he became unprofitable; then he again became a true son, so as to be called by the Apostle his own bowels.

But while loving, thus to continue yielding to the will of God, shows intense reverence.

She had nothing to say but, No, no, no.

But I shall briefly explain why I have used the appended expression in the interior.

For the reviler too shall fall into hell; and the drunkard has no part in the kingdom; and he that lovest not his neighbor so offends God, as to find no help even in his own martyrdom; and he that neglects his own has denied the faith, and he who overlooks the poor is sent into the fire.

She asked him questions about Parliament, which, of course, he didn’t answer, and told him little stories about poor dear Greenow, not heeding his expressions of unmistakable disgust.

Goffe and Goffe.

For by the name of urchin is denoted the duplicity of a mind that is insincere, and cunningly defends itself; because, to wit, when an urchin is caught, its head is perceived, and its feet appear, and its whole body is exposed to view; but no sooner has it been caught than it gathers itself into a ball, draws in its feet, hides its head, and all is lost together within the hands of him that holds it which before was all visible together.

For when the ark was carried across Jordan, on the entrance to the land of promise, the upper part of the river stopped in its course, and the lower part flowed on, so as to present both to the ark and the people dry ground to pass over.

In old days he had often been in that room, and had read many of the titles as given on the backs.

Bold, I will not keep you, for you are fluttered.

‘If you really love him,’ said the mother, again caressing her eldest daughter as she acknowledged her love, but hardly with such tenderness as when that daughter had repudiated that other love—’if you really love him, dearest, of course I do not, of course I cannot, object.’

And he did woo her—and won her.

Thomas Furnival.

In numbers, those we have purchased are less than one half those that have come to us without purchase.

What you received was not paradise, nor trees and plants, but heaven and the good things in the heavens.

Whence also the apostle says, When you were the servants of sin, you were free from righteousness.

Mr. Gresham was either not enough like Satan for the occasion, or else he was too closely like him.

Shall I convict him of ignorance, or accuse him of rashness?

I am a ‘cute one; so mind your eye.” It was with such words that Tom Tozer’s face spoke out; and though a thorough liar in his heart, he was not a liar in his face.

Let His house be built throughout the earth, let all the earth sing a new song.

For of such sort are the young plants that are fit for fruit, for the beautiful fruit, fruit I mean of the olive-tree.

Sometimes it happens that they do some evil, and one begins to reprove them; because they dare not blaspheme Christ, they blaspheme His ministers by whom they are reproved: but if you show them that you speak Christ's words, not your own, they endeavor all they can to convict you of speaking your own words, not Christ's: if however it is manifest that you speak Christ's words, they go even against Christ, they begin to find fault with Christ: How, say they, and why did He make us such as we are?

“Well, three regular. I do get an odd day with the Essex sometimes, and the governor winks.”

For what advantage is there in those thoughts, or what profit is there in the multitude of words, where the streams of foolish speaking are flowing, as it were, from the fountain of folly?

Is it so magnificent if he overcame a lion and a boar; if he shot down birds with arrows; if he cleansed a royal stable; if he conquered a virago, and deprived her of her belt; if he slew savage horses together with their master?

“And we heard,” said the cook, “how all the girls in the town came and crowned him with bay leaves; and how the priest blessed him.”

1. This Psalm's lintel is thus inscribed: Unto the end, for Idithun, a Psalm to Asaph himself. What Unto the end is, you know. Idithun is interpreted leaping over those men, Asaph is interpreted a congregation. Here therefore there is speaking a congregation that leaps over, in order that it may reach the End, which is Christ Jesus.. ..

Chapter 7. I have exhorted you to unity

So let men be content to see them, and not attempt to tread upon the fallacious heather of the mystic hills.

Indeed they acted but consistently in laughing while he continued to praise God; for it is the part of Christians to endure stripes, but to scourge Christians is the outrage of a Pilate or a Caiaphas.

And so our Lord Jesus Christ, being at birth true man though He never ceased to be true God, made in Himself the beginning of a new creation, and in the form of His birth started the spiritual life of mankind afresh, that to abolish the taint of our birth according to the flesh there might be a possibility of regeneration without our sinful seed for those of whom it is said, Who were born not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God [John 1:13] .

“And you mean to put up with it, mamma?” she said.

“Yes; I have said they may have it. It is of no use to me. I hate the place.”

And in saying this I do not forbid your meeting together, or taking your suppers at a common table, but to prevent your behaving unseemly, and as wishing indulgence to be really indulgence, and not a punishment, nor a vengeance, or drunkenness and revelling.

Therefore if man desires what God charges, God must be prayed to grant Himself what He enjoins

Miss Baker, when she returned to Littlebath, could not think that she had been successful in her mission; and Caroline immediately declared that any idea of a marriage for that year, or even for the next, must now be altogether out of the question.

It lies open and unguarded before all that seek it; and though many take from it there is no deficiency; and when they give of that which they have received, their own portion is greatly multiplied.

Amelia, was the bugbear of his life.

“That’s not true,” said Margaret to herself, almost out loud; “I never told him anything of the kind.”

And well says he, Defraud not; fraud here, and debt above, that he might show the strictness of the right of dominion in question.

I had come out thither, having resolved to learn a little that I might if possible teach that little to others; and now the lesson was learned, or must remain unlearned.

They are essentially a dirty people.

And, if there are any things such as to offend your mind, punish them not without enquiry.

What, then, is signified by the nose of the Church but the foreseeing discernment of Saints?

As to the other two classes a question might reasonably be raised, were it not manifest that the mind is less liable to illusions when it has not yet been subjected to the deceptive influence of the senses, and of things sensible; and yet who can doubt that these images are much more unreal than those with which the senses acquaint us?

Had there been no question about the woman, he would have given the money to satisfy his own conscience as to the injury he had involuntarily done to his old partners.

“I hope you’ll have a good hunt, Larry.” Then she retired back to the bridge and again looked to her lover to know whether he would approve.

Eve indeed, the servant in subjection deceived: but him not even his partner, and helpmate could overthrow.

Exposition on Psalm 36

It was very long and very glossy, soft as the richest silk, and gifted apparently with a delightful aptitude to keep itself in order.

And have you received the Spirit, yet sufferest not such things, nor encounterest perils?

For when he says this, he, as it were, directs his finger toward it.

I came suddenly upon their strongholds, and have got possession of them.

Let us briefly consider the force of each separate phrase.

A man, with all the world around him, encountered neither the misery nor the risk in waiting that fell to a girl’s lot.

Sing on, then, and open your eyes, if you can, to your own shame.

Now, if nourishing substances taken in by the nostrils are diviner than those taken in by the mouth, yet they infer respiration. What, then, do they say of God? Whether does He exhale like the tribe of oaks? Or does He only inhale, like the aquatic animals, by the dilatation of their gills? Or does He breathe all round, like the insects, by the compression of the section by means of their wings? But no one, if he is in his senses, will liken God to any of these.

Perhaps our soul has passed over the water without substance [Psalm 123:5].

But this is done, that they may not keep together among themselves.

He had left his position at Eton because the Head-master had required from him some slight change of practice.

Then, with becoming consideration, that he might not need aid from others, he disposed of whatever valuable books of ancient literature he possessed, being satisfied with receiving from the purchaser four oboli a day.

But still he had gone down with her to Lowestoft as her lover, and, to Roger’s thinking, a man who could do that was quite unfit to be the husband of Hetta Carbury.

If this be the case, and if he who makes use of many salutary words is guilty of multitude of words, then Solomon himself did not escape this sin, for he spoke [1 Kings 4:32] three thousand proverbs, and five thousand songs, and he spoke of trees from the cedar that is in Lebanon even unto the hyssop that springs out of the wall, he spoke also of beasts and of fowl, and of creeping things and of fishes.

On the day after this Roger Carbury received a letter which disturbed him very much, and to which he hardly knew whether to return any answer, or what answer. It was from Paul Montague, and was written by him but a few hours after he had left his letter for Hetta with his own hands, at the door of her mother’s house. Paul’s letter to Roger was as follows:—

“Certainly I will. I will neither eat here, nor sleep here, nor stay here till I know that all this is at an end. I have made up my mind what I will do.”

For the good things and the bad are not such as are by nature, but by temper and determination alone.

For if He in whom 'all things came to be,' Himself became flesh, but Christ is not in the Father, as Word 'by whom all things came to be,' then Christ has not become flesh, but perhaps Christ was named Word.

He though naked yet kept the robe of Christ; you, clad in your silks, have lost the vesture of Christ.

“And Hetta too. Dear me. And you’ll be wanting dinner. I’ll go and see about it.”

Unskilled, ill-clothed, ill-shod he was upheld by Him who also has given the earnest of the Spirit.

But he was a prudent, discreet man, with a long family, averse to professional hostilities, as knowing that he could make more by medical friends than medical foes, and not at all inclined to take up any man’s cudgel to his own detriment.

He had been unhappy before because he was conscious that he was illtreating his wife, but now he was almost more disturbed because it seemed to him to be possible that his wife was illtreating him.

Gregory to Maurentius, magister militum.

A man may be a stockbroker though he never sells any stock; as he may be a barrister though he has no practice at the bar.

and she will find no halt in the rhythm.

But, says some one, these have their origin from the body.

“I believe he would think we were swans. If I had ever thought he would be so much in earnest about it, or that he would ever have cared about our being here, I would never have voted for going. But he is so strange. He is affectionate when he ought to be angry, and illnatured when he ought to be gentle and kind.”

“Well—no; why should I? I am too idle about it as it is. I should be more so under these altered circumstances.”

But I did not think much of his African wild beasts.

Whatever you do, do well, and you have praised God.

“I wouldn’t ask you to dine there to-day, because I thought we should be less melancholy here;—but you mustn’t cut us altogether. You haven’t seen Everett since you’ve been in town?”

“But, my child, who is scolding you?”

“Expect, aunt! “ Bessy had been instructed to call Mrs. Miles her aunt.

Strong love for the thing loved necessitates strong hatred for the thing hated, and thence comes the spirit of persecution.

Do you see how exceedingly imperfect they were before the crucifixion?

The threat was no threat to me, as I knew myself to be too good to be treated in that fashion.

What is the finger that is to convey to him this drop?

“I’m glad at any rate that Walter’s share did not go.”

And Noah's [Genesis 6:8] glory was that he was pleasing to God; he who was entrusted with the saving of the whole world from the waters, or rather of the Seeds of the world, escaped the Deluge in a small Ark.

“You’ll find that pretty good; a good deal better than what you’ll get in most houses in London nowadays. But you know a man always likes his own wine, and especially an old man.”

Nevertheless He was not forsaken.

In all the moralities he was perfect.

Let us see what Celsus next goes on to say.

Now might not some of the more simple-minded, and such as know not how to look into the nature of all things, be turned away (so far, at least, as Celsus could accomplish it) from helping those who are weighed down with the burdens (of life), and from sharing their toils, when he says of the ants, that they help one another with their loads, when they see one of their number toiling under them?

“What question will you answer?”

And again when Paul discourses about grace, he says, Of how much sorer punishment, suppose ye, shall he be counted worthy, who has trodden under foot the Son of God.

Yet there is a point which we would urge in respect of this very man of whom the suggestion was made to our Lord.

It is not that Age is ashamed of feeling passion and acknowledging,—it but that the display of it is without the graces of which Youth is proud, and which Age regrets.

He had found that out during his present visit.

He has to reflect what others think of it, and to endeavour to do what will please them.

For they chose to dwell under a defence of their own, not under that of the Most High: thus they listened to the suggestions of the serpent, [Genesis 3:5] and despised the precept of God: and discovered at last that what God threatened, not what the devil promised, had come to pass in them.

“Because I can get you to do it for me.”

There was in his personal appearance a defect which many ladies might find it difficult to overcome; and then that little story about his debts, which Miss Todd had picked up, was not only true, but was some degrees under the truth.

It had been decided between the squire and Mrs Dale that the removal from the Small House to Guestwick was not to take place till the first of May.

His men had already ransacked every room, and in their anxiety to find the more distinguished inhabitants of the château, allowed the domestics to escape; but few of them had been in bed, and even they were overlooked in the anxiety of the troopers to find M. de Lescure.

We have received your letter, which is full of sweetness, and rejoice to hear that your Excellency is well.

Jesus, therefore, cannot at this rate be God for He has ceased to be the Word, which was made flesh; nor can He be Man incarnate for He is not properly flesh, and it was flesh which the Word became.

Lady Julia immediately took hold of Lily, and led her apart, having a word or two to say about the clerk in the Income-tax Office.

“Oh—h—h! male children! Ah—h—h! Now I see the difference; I beg your pardon, Mr. Stistick, but I really was very stupid. And you mean to explain all this to Lord John in the present session?”

For He is the expression of the Father's Person, and Light from Light, and Power, and very Image of the Father's essence.

He was thoroughly ashamed of the weakness which had overcome him at the dinner-table, and of that palsy of fear which he had allowed himself to exhibit.

All the Church, so long as she holds The Head, increases; because here is no more passion of pride and vainglory, nor invention of human fancy.

You’re sure to find her any time before dinner;—that’s at one, you know.

Chapter 83. It is proved that the Psalm, The Lord said to My Lord, etc., does not suit Hezekiah

“Mother, is it always to be like this?”

And that he who drinks ought to observe moderation, He clearly showed by what He taught at feasts.

What had he that was spiritual?

But, being wounded by such men as these, you hate us also; and, as though you had lost your right ears, you do not hear the voice of Christ as He sits at the right hand of the Father.

“Your views, Mr. Gotobed, are utilitarian rather than picturesque.”

Perhaps we may be reproached, as we have been before, with the exquisite character of our table, the splendour of our apparel, the officers who precede us, our haughtiness to those who meet us.

“Oh no! And there would be cowardice; of course there would,” said the Duchess, not much caring what might be the bonds which bound him to the task so long as he should certainly feel himself to be bound.

“But what can she do? You would not have her turn him into the street?”

He having disciplined himself greatly in Alexandria, and being very powerful in magic, and being ambitious, wishes to be accounted a certain supreme power, greater even than the God who created the world.

Light was That Godhead Which was shown upon the Mount to the disciples— and a little too strong for their eyes.

Lucius Mason now began to feel against his mother the same sort of anger which Joseph Mason had felt when his father had married again.

If ever a Savage was taken red-handed in treachery, Hintsa was so taken, and was so shot down.

Who ever could have made eyes capable of seeing?

Having washed her, it says, they laid her in an upper chamber: that is, they did all (that was right) for the dead body.

For what things He predicted would take place in His name, these we do see being actually accomplished in our sight.

That which is so in His eyesight.

What possible right could we have to do so?

The comfort of his life was gone.

Your own falsehood confutes you.

For they knew that some souls were by nature kept in the body.

It is very hard to tear out from one’s heart and fling away from it the only love that one has cherished!

Black was I in sins, but I am comely: for I have repented and turned me. I have put away in baptism that hateful hue, for He has washed me in His innocent blood who is the Saviour of all creatures.

But so great had been the man’s luck that no real evidence seemed to touch him.

But he had concocted a story for himself.

[Luke 17:34] Verily I say unto you, In that night there shall be two on [48] [Arabic, p. 162] one bed; one shall be taken, and another left.

“I am sure I am very much obliged to you,” said Mark.

Now, while Jesus said these things, the disciples reasoned, saying not aloud, but in their own hearts, We took no loaves.

They accordingly assign to God the Father, as though it were His distinctive portion and lot, the phrase of Whom; to God the Son they confine the phrase by Whom; to the Holy Spirit that of in Whom, and say that this use of the syllables is never in terchanged, in order that, as I have already said, the variation of language may indicate the variation of nature.

And he’d never known two young people more fitted by the gifts of nature to contribute to one another’s ‘appinesses.

But it must be only with my thoughts, only with my prayers, only with all my heart.

Yet I never gazed upon her naked person; I never touched her flesh, for I was afraid of losing in peace what I had preserved in the conflict.

I do not ask from You about those everlasting days: they are without end, where I shall be; it is not those I ask of: I ask of temporal days; show unto me my temporal days; show me the shortness, not the eternity, of my days.

Captain Yorke Clayton

The very fact that the North is the North, is an offence to the South.

But when debarred these vicarious pleasures by what seemed to her to be the caprice of her guests, she would be offended.

That Mr. Bonteen should go into the Cabinet would be gall and wormwood to many brother Liberals; but gall and wormwood such as this have to be swallowed.

“Oh, I thought it had been offered to you: I thought you spoke of this new minister as having all that in his own hand.”

“Very well. The matter shall be brought in proper course before the magistrates tomorrow, and if, as I do not doubt, an injunction be granted, I will proceed with the matter at once. I will tell you whom we select as our counsel at the assizes, and, as soon as I have learnt, will let you know whom they employ. Let me only implore you not only to tell the truth as to what you know, but to tell all the truth. If you attempt to conceal anything, it will certainly be dragged out of you.”

“There you’re right. His business is to lend money, and he’ll lend it you as long as you’ve means to repay it; and I’m sure no Connaught man will do more—that is, if I know them.”

“I thought she was a beauty.”

But when things are otherwise, and you are straying in distant wanderings, as you did but lately, the last Lord's Day, I am much troubled, and glad to be silent; and I consider the question of flight from hence, and seek for the Carmel of the prophet Elijah, or for some rock without inhabitant; for men in depression naturally choose loneliness and solitude.

They do coal the vessels at about a dollar a day each—that is, when they are so circumstanced as to require a dollar.

He makes a distinction between the time of sight, and the time of knowledge.

He was not, therefore, led into any strong opinion that these new tidings were of value.

“Now, with reference to marrying—”

“But, Linda—” and then he went on to show to her how very unsatisfactory a courtship theirs would be, if, now that they were together, nothing could be arranged as to their future meeting.

The honesty of purpose makes you called: for if your body be here but not your mind, it profits you nothing.

Spiritual substance can neither perish nor be dissolved; ours, however, as is easy to understand, perishes and is dissolved.

“Is it settled?” asked Currie.

Antony was chosen as Cicero’s colleague.

“Then why the deuce should you give it him?” said Mr Broune.

“And if the machines had no hearts?”

[Jeremiah 18:7-8] Guarding then this law, he saved those who were converted and released from His wrath those who desisted from their wickedness.

And as he there says, whom I serve in the Gospel of His Son [Romans 1:9], so also here, after saying, because of the grace given unto me by God, he adds,

“And what will you do?” he asked.

Or supposing that, before learning and confessing this for himself, he should be found to entertain such an opinion, and should be taught what he ought to reject and what he should believe, and it were to become clear that he had held this false belief when he was baptized, ought he therefore to be baptized again?

And he found himself to be driven whither he did not wish to go, and to be brought into perils from which his experience did not suffice to extricate him.

No one now had a word to say in his favour, or a doubt as to his guilt.

[Matthew 20:28] Let us, then, recognize in Whom these mysteries are seen to be accomplished.

It will undoubtedly follow, that as the devil is not the cause of our feeling hunger and thirst, so neither is he the cause of that appetency which naturally arises at the time of maturity, viz., the desire of sexual intercourse.

But it does inform us that even these earliest of mankind sacrificed to God, as appeared also in the case of the two first brothers; Noah, too, is said to have offered sacrifices to God when he had come forth from the ark after the deluge.

Has any irascible reader,—any reader who thoroughly enjoys the pleasure of being in a rage,—encountered suddenly some grievance which, heavy as it may be, has been more than compensated by the privilege it has afforded of blowing-up the offender?

Marriage with her had by no means been the thing that she had expected.

The Sowerbys, for many generations, have been rangers of the Chace of Chaldicotes, thus having almost as wide an authority over the Crown forest as over their own.

Chapter 7. The Virgins, the Righteous Ancients; The Church, the One Only Spouse, More Excellent Than the Others.

They, constrained by necessity, performed the duties thus imposed on them successfully; nevertheless they were dissatisfied because they were unable to follow philosophical pursuits and ascetic exercises.

“Adelaide, you never had any heart!”

“She’s a coomin; she’s a coomin,” were the first words he uttered.

Only be not ignorant of the measure of grace; only let not the enemy, while you sleep, maliciously sow tares.

“I didn’t see it; but I do believe it was there. Some of the old fogies were awfully solemn about it.”

The week which I spent in the neighbourhood of George cost me £30, and would have cost me much more had I been alone.

Why, he has forgotten his own object!

He was already known by his faculty of making verses, chiefly parodies.

When some man is coming as a judge, to whom the conscience cannot lie open, even innocent men may tremble, if from him they expect a reward for virtue, or fear the penalty of condemnation; when He shall come who cannot be deceived, let the hills rejoice, let them rejoice fearlessly; they shall be enlightened by Him, not condemned; let them rejoice, because the Lord will come to judge the world with equity; and if the righteous hills rejoice, let the unrighteous tremble.

Of course you have my love and my best wishes; but I do not know how to write as though I could rejoice with you.

When Jesus had thus spoken, He spat on the ground, and made clay of the spittle, and He anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay, and said, Go, wash in the pool of Siloam.

At these two latter places, the cannon which Cathelineau had taken in so gallant a manner at St. Florent, was brought into action, and quite supported its character as a staunch royalist.

What could equal then the great and generous spirit of this man, who, when the law commanded eye to be plucked out for eye, and tooth for tooth, and retaliation on equal terms, [Deuteronomy 19:21] not only abstained from doing this, but exhibited a far greater measure of moral wisdom?

But as we do not admire those for their appearance, as seeing what their nature is, that all is clay; so therefore let us not these either, for these too are but clay.

Let the mother bear you, not miscarry.

But nevertheless there was that in the letter which annoyed and irritated her, though she could not explain to herself the cause of her annoyance.

The attempt was made; but nevertheless she was probably pleased when she found that it was made in vain.

The prophecies of the unbelief of the Jews no one can avoid seeing, no one can pretend to be blind to them.

I shall try to write a reply to those works in another treatise if God grants me a sufficient span of life.

14. I say this not only to widows, and to the rich; for here the necessity of widowhood seems to cause this: but to those also who have a husband.

Chapter III. Return to Durbellière

Those men who choose the present have power to be rich, to revel in luxury, to indulge in pleasures, and to do whatever they can.

Conferred to such an extent signal delights,

It does papa good to have him here, and for that reason I am sorry that he has gone.

go, and take precautions as you know how.

Do you know what I suffered when, through George’s fault, the engagement was broken off?

‘All attempts at robbery and imposition are of course distressing.’

4. Afterwards I plainly addressed the most clement Emperor Theodosius, and hesitated not to speak to his face. And he, having received a similar message from the Senate, though it was not the request of the whole Senate, at length assented to my recommendation, and so I did not go near him for some days, nor did he take it ill, for he knew that I was not acting for my own advantage, but was not ashamed to say in the sight of the king that which was for the profit of himself and of my own soul.

It was now clearly his first duty to pursue Pompey,—whom, should he escape, the outside provinces and distant allies of the Republic would soon supply with another army.

Should they absolutely come to grappling and boarding, Amelia would no doubt have the best of it; but Mrs Lupex would probably be too crafty to permit such a proceeding as that.

Yes; with his own hands.

I own that I do not know what ages passed before the human race was created, yet I have no doubt that no created thing is co-eternal with the Creator.

At one time the money had been paid half-yearly by the landlord’s cheque on the bank at Barchester.

The wrath in his face was so plainly expressed that Doodles could perceive it, and wished himself away.

To prevent this outrage on society, his marriage,—with its ordinary results,—would be the only step.

And carried about, says he, with every wind.

For the more religiously they honour those earthy images, so much the more wicked are they towards the name of the true divinity.

They were all full of the blandest courtesies.

My duty is to resist the frenzy of the heathen, and not deny the Lord.

Permit Edem, then, to hold possession of the world as long as she wishes; but do you remain with me.

But this had been twenty years ago, and Mr. Emilius professed himself to be only thirty-five years old, and had in his possession a document from his synagogue professing to give a record of his birth, proving such to be his age.

But we know of kings who in truth advance under the guidance of Wisdom to the rule that has no end— the poor in spirit, whose possession is the kingdom of heaven , as the Lord promises, Who is the Wisdom of the Gospel: and such also we recognize as the princes who bear rule over their passions, who are not enslaved by the dominion of sin, who inscribe the decree of equity upon their own life, as it were upon a tablet.

The world wants not shoes only—make hats.

For Christ, when the joined the manhood to His person, united that which death by the separation of the body had dispersed.

At this moment the door of the dining-room was opened, and Mrs Lupex put in her head.

Brethren, here we receive a mighty task; it is a voice from heaven, from above it sounds to us.

There had been some disagreeable confusion in the house that afternoon after Augustus had spoken to his sister.

And again: For You, Lord, are gracious and merciful, patient and very merciful and ready to repent of the evil, i.e., of the sufferings and losses which You are forced to bring upon us as the reward of our sins.

Cassiodorus calls him a Presbyter, though at that time he was not baptized.

And he spoke almost in a whisper, very slowly; and when Sir Raffle joked,—and Sir Raffle often would joke,—he not only did not laugh, but he absolutely sighed.

“They may say what they like of me?”

[Proverbs 20:8] And thus God's mercy is even then necessary, by which he is made blessed to whom the Lord has not imputed sin.

Here, the precept is, Understand, you senseless among the people; and you fools, be at some time wise; there, the reward is full wisdom and perfect knowledge.

Miss Stanbury made no reply to this, but sat, still playing with her niece’s hair. “I think I will go to bed,” she said at last. “It is past ten. You need not go to Nuncombe, Dorothy. Martha shall meet him, and he can see me here. But I do not wish him to stay in the house. You can go over and call on Mrs. MacHugh. Mrs. MacHugh will take it well of you that you should call on her.” Dorothy made no further opposition to this arrangement, but kissed her aunt, and went to her chamber.

He had already said to himself more than once that she had made her bed for herself, and must lie upon it.

To a gentleman like you who knows what he’s about it’s all nothing.

Such subjects as the above, however, are best left to the decision of individual judgment.

He was a man of indomitable courage and undying perseverance.

The Son is not the Image of the Father after such a fashion as this; He is the living Image of the Living.

To whom I answer: Suppose I do not know; nevertheless that he did bodily work, and thereby lived in the flesh, and did not use the power which the Lord had given to the Apostles, that preaching the Gospel he should live by the Gospel, those things above-said do without all doubt bear witness.

“Perhaps it’s the Dean.”

Chapter 19.— Of the Divine Preservation of Sarah's Chastity in Egypt, When Abraham Had Called Her Not His Wife But His Sister.

Sir Roger had never been at the doctor’s house at Greshamsbury, had never seen Mary Thorne, but he had heard that there lived with the doctor some young female relative; and thus a glimmering light seemed to come in upon Sir Roger’s bed.

For thou, O Jew, he says, hast not found even the righteousness which was by the Law.

The Romans, too, were acquainted with dreams of this kind.

In that respect Lily would have been a wife indeed,—a wife that would have transferred herself with quick mental activity into her husband’s mental sphere.

Though there should be no home left to her in all the wide world she would not accept an order which should separate her from the man she loved.

As, then, a crown is given to many after they have lapsed, so, too, if they believe, their faith is restored, which faith is the gift of God, as you read: Because unto you it has been granted by God not only to believe in Him, but also to suffer in His behalf.

He has disregarded, however, the ties of kindred, of old age, of infirmity, and the severity of the season, and the toils of the journey; and preferring you and your safety above all things, he has broken through all these restraints.

Gradually he looked up into her face, still keeping her hand pressed on the desk under his.

When she went down to Glenbogie she only knew that Mr. Hamel was considered to be by far too black a sheep to be admitted into her aunt’s presence, and that she must regard herself as separated from the man as far as any separation could be effected by her present protectors.

As for example, Absalom usurped the government, and dared not afterwards to lay it aside.

“Have you been over to Gangoil since you left it?” said Harry, looking the man full in the face.

To a stranger, and perhaps also to the inmates, the idea of gloom about the place was greatly increased by the absence of any garden or lawn near the house.

As the Spirit of God, however, and the Power of the Highest, [Luke 1:35] can He be regarded as lower than the angels—He who is verily God, and the Son of God?

For the whole life of temptation in the human race is a stage play; for it is said, Every man living is altogether vanity.

When that is over Mr Apjohn will find the will, and will read it.

But if you allow that the faculty which rules the senses, and which they call Hegemonikon, has its sanctuary in the brain, or in the interval between the eyebrows, or wheresoever the philosophers are pleased to locate it, the flesh will still be the thinking place of the soul.

And after they had dined, Penia came to beg for something (seeing there was an entertainment), and she stood at the gate.

If in order to put an end to public wars, and tumults, and battles, the Priest is exhorted to offer prayers for kings and governors, much more ought private individuals to do it.

18. Behold, the Eyes of the Lord are upon them that fear Him: because if you seek salvation, behold, the love of the Lord is upon them that fear Him. Upon them that hope in His mercy [Psalm 32:18]: that hope not in their own strength, but in His mercy.

“Crasweller, I will come and live with you, and be a brother to you, during the entire twelve months.”

In regard to the Orange Free State nothing of the kind is to be expected.

Am I not justified in declaring that I have divorced them from my heart?

You must not suppose that I shall not do all in my power.

Now that the above statement is false is clear from this, that Christians do not neglect, as far as in them lies, to take measures to disseminate their doctrine throughout the whole world.

It is the part of strength to wrestle with hunger and thirst.

3, t. i. p. 748. c) his piety.

This also wherein, when he had said, and He gave over to the hail their beasts, he has added, and their possession to the fire: of the beasts slain with hail is read in Exodus; [Exodus 9:25] but how their possession was burned with fire, is not read at all.

“You know you put it into my head your own self,” pleaded Mr Cheesacre.

These testimonies, therefore, so many and so great, clearly teach that there is but one government in the world, and one power, the origin of which cannot be imagined, or its force described.

Perhaps his wife was bored.

Chapter 18. The Gods Themselves Have Been Created, as the Poets Confess.

“I know you changed your mind. Men often do. A pinker pink, a whiter white,—a finger that will press you just half an ounce the closer,—a cheek that will consent to let itself come just a little nearer—!”

“The truth is, I think you are beginning wrong. You have now been to Liverpool, to buy guano, I believe.”

24. Irruption of Syrianus.

But of that she had felt but little doubt for some considerable time past.

Some rumour of that proposed visit to Monkshade, and the way in which it had been prevented, had reached her ear.

His father, some time since, had put before him, for his signature, a letter, prepared in Mr Bideawhile’s office, which Dolly said that he had refused even to read, and certainly had not signed.

It was a little after one when he found himself at the cathedral door, and thinking that the Dean and his daughter might be at lunch, he went into the building, so that he might get rid of half an hour.

But when the demand was made, the States government yielded at once, and yielded without bluster.

I promise you a kingdom: and let present things be the ground of your trust, your trust in me.

Or because you believe not that God will judge the dead, you foolishly make yourself ruler of heaven instead of Him.

And the labourers who hastened and were wearied in the vineyard, shall not receive the reward till the labour shall cease.

In the synagogue of these children of the Most High, of whom the same Most High said by the mouth of Isaiah, I have begotten sons and brought them up, but they despised Me, [Isaiah 1:2] stood God.

There is no need to pay money to these physicians, for neither do they themselves demand hire for themselves, nor for the medicines which they prepare do they drive you to the necessity of expense, except for almsgiving; but in everything else they even add to your possessions; as, for instance, when they require you to be temperate, they deliver you from unseasonable and wrong expenses; when they tell you to abstain from drunkenness, they make you wealthier.

He would not sympathise with the newspaper.

“To be ashamed of!” she said, almost rising in anger.

Sir Thomas began his speech very well, but became rather misty towards the end, when he found himself unable to reduce Mary to a state of feminine confusion.

I know it hasn’t all been just as it should have been—that is as regards you; but I should like to hear you say that you’ve found me honest before you went.

Since, however, the cohabitation for the purpose of procreating children, which must be admitted to be the proper end of marriage, is not sinful, what is it which the apostle allows to be permissible, but that married persons, when they have not the gift of continence, may require one from the other the due of the flesh— and that not from a wish for procreation, but for the pleasure of concupiscence?

What is here present speaks of love to man; what is here apparent, of the Divine condescension.

Have we not [all] one God and one Christ?

“It is Harcourt who has led you to this.”

For it is profitable for you, that one of these which you so love that they cleave to you as if they were members, should perish, rather than that your whole body should be cast into hell.

“That’s just what I was saying to Wilkinson,” said Prodgers. “Wilkinson seems to think that a man may be anybody as long as nobody knows who he is. ‘That ain’t the captain,’ said I.”

It was the same with Mr. Low and Barrington Erle.

Listen to the fish, who by their actions all but speak and say: it is for the perpetuation of our race that we undertake this long voyage.

“But it shocks me so.”

Now, however, recalling to mind your Charity's good deservings, by the tenor of this our authority we grant you your request, and have granted to you or to your archdeacon to be decorated by the use of dalmatics; and we have sent the same dalmatics by the hands of our most beloved son, the abbot Cyriacus.

What I shall do with the remainder of any money that I may have, I do not think he is entitled to ask.

Of the Creation of Heaven and Earth. In the Beginning God Created, etc.

While he fasted in paradise he continued a virgin: when he filled himself with food in the earth, he bound himself with the tie of marriage.

Again, when he says that by fasting grief is signified, and that by food joy is represented, why does he not reflect what it was which God designed to signify by that which is written, that He rested on the seventh day from all His works,— namely, that joy, and not sorrow, was set forth in that rest?

He mentioned Lopez’ name the other day before Plantagenet.

But the Hebrews are said to have remained in the wilderness for so long a time, with this view, until all those who had not believed the words of God perished.

“Wait till her hair be grey!” said Robinson, when he was left to himself. “Do I wish her to wait? Would I not stand with her at the altar tomorrow, though my last halfcrown should go to the greedy priest who joined us? And she has sent her friend to Aldersgate Street,—to my rival! There must, at any rate, be an end of this!”

It was a most disagreeable thunderbolt.

But being what he was, having been born to such privileges and such limitations, was he not bound in duty to maintain a certain exclusiveness?

For these things in our case produce a plurality of individuals, since each of them is separate both from every other quality, and from every other individual possession of the same quality.

An advertisement in the New Zealand papers would have done better, and have cost less trouble.

To receive the helmet of salvation is to escape the peril.

Trevelyan was standing by, the while, looking on; but he did not speak till she addressed him.

But of that part of the Church which is in heaven what can we say, except that no wicked one is found in it, and that no one has fallen from it, or shall ever fall from it, since the time that God spared not the angels that sinned, as the Apostle Peter writes, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment?

“What is it, sir? Why do you not speak to me? Can it be that you disapprove of my marrying?”

In this the emperor understands whether you love him, that his laws be observed throughout the provinces.

Of General Chasse, of the cathedral, and of the Rubens, I had heard much, and was therefore well pleased that such should be his resolution.

And supported by their bounty, we should be free from the care of preparing food, were it not that this curse of the prophet terribly frightened us.

If he were seen merely walking down the street he would surely be taken for a great man.

For this, corrupt not for the inscription of the title, I see not how it belongs to that David.

He was at this time on a Committee of the House with reference to the use of potted peas in the army and navy, at which he had sat once,—at a preliminary meeting,—and in reference to which he had already resolved that as he had failed so frightfully in debate, he would certainly do his duty to the utmost in the more easy but infinitely more tedious work of the Committee Room.

An elderly gentleman from Essex once told him that his buttons were given to breaking.

[1 Timothy 5:2] When he returned home he used to leave the clergyman outside and to give himself over to the hard rule of a monk.

In what manner?

He promised to convey me to the establishment in an hour,—but it was two hours and a half before we were there.

In the Greek copies we find the passage runs thus: Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them.

[Romans 11:23] Of the very Jews the Apostle said this, and it was done in their case.

And in one Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of God, begotten of the Father; only-begotten, that is, of the substance of the Father, God of God, Light of Light, Very God of very God, begotten not made, being of one substance with the Father: by Whom all things were made both in heaven and on earth: Who for us men, and for our salvation, came down from heaven, and was incarnate, and was made man; He suffered, and rose gain the third day; He ascended into heaven, and is coming to judge both quick and dead.

“I don’t know how that may be. I think my girl might have done better. I told her so, and I just tell you the same. She might a’ done a deal better, but women is always restive.”

To Mr Slow he sent a copy, and another to Messrs Slow and Bideawhile, and a third to the other lawyer.

“Well, yes. All difficulties seem to me to be an affair of money. A man, of course, would wish to earn enough before he marries to make his wife comfortable. I would struggle on as I am, and not be impatient, were it not that I fear she is more uncomfortable as she is now than she would be here in the midst of my poverty.”

They were heedful of the faith of the house of God.

Once she had spoken to herself of having warmed a serpent in her bosom; but instantly, with infinite self-scorn, she had declared to herself that Bessy was no serpent.

Homily 14 on Hebrews

When, says a man, the holy season of Lent sets in, whatever a man may be, he partakes of the mysteries, or, when the day of the Lord's Epiphany comes.

Let us show mercy to our neighbors, that mercy may be shown to us.

Does He not know, who makes you to know?

For he wrote thus: Time, accordingly, was created along with the heavens; in order that, coming into being together, they might also be together dissolved, if ever their dissolution should take place.

Of the same from the same Epistle:—

For Jacob himself was called Israel.

Chapter 2 [II.]— Cœlestius, on His Trial at Carthage, Refuses to Condemn His Error; The Written Statement Which He Gave to Zosimus.

Jews from Jerusalem, [John 1:19-21] kindred to John the Baptist, since he also belonged to a priestly race, send priests and levites to ask John who he is.

And what cares and troubles attend those who are thus pierced, it is not possible to express.

How then shall we overcome them?

And they were all amazed, and marvelled, saying one to another, Are not all these which speak Galilæans?

One sees a poor man; one despises and takes no notice of him!

A single hound who turns when he is heading the pack should teach you to turn also.

“That’s nonsense, Robert,” said Mrs. Brown, who was disposed to resent the use of so severe a word, even from the legislator cousin.

It certainly had a considerable effect on him, for he breathed slow awhile, and was some little time before he could entirely realise the conception that Fanny was now the undoubted owner of a large fortune.

There is too much bustle, and the pack becomes disconcerted.

“It is quite true;—and right that you should think of it. It will be particularly necessary that you should think of it tomorrow. You will have to wear a light dress, and—”

If it were but for that word, Mrs Baggett should not be allowed to leave his house.

The little table was hardly more than a long slab or plank, perhaps eighteen inches wide.

Hamel’s features were regular, whereas the Colonel’s hair was red, and he was known for a large mouth and broad nose, which were not obliterated though they were enlightened by the brightness of his eyes.

In the map of New York now before me, the cross streets running from east to west are numbered up northward as far as 154th Street.

He adds, indeed: But this is the condemnation, that light has come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light.

Do you see not, that Christ also thus trains His own disciples?

They, as was their usual custom, when overcome by thirst, came to their well-known haunts.

And why did He call the grace of the Spirit water?

“No; I ‘aven’t taken that step yet; but I think it’s very likely I may before long if you won’t hear reason.”

Ver. 8, 9. Anger, wrath, malice, railing, shameful speaking out of your mouth. Lie not one to another.

The Captain came; but, as to Ayala, Mrs. Dosett sent word to say that she had been invited to stay some days just at that time with her friend Lady Albury at Stalham.

This your heresy prevents you from doing, for it invariably represents the body and the soul and God as extended in space, either finite or infinite, while the idea of space is applicable only to the body.

The weak Son is not the image of omnipotence.

It was Joe who brought to them the first account; and then farther particulars leaked out among the servants of the two houses.

25. This then is the sense in which they who met at Nicæa made use of these expressions. But next that they did not invent them for themselves (since this is one of their excuses), but spoke what they had received from their predecessors, proceed we to prove this also, to cut off even this excuse from them. Know then, O Arians, foes of Christ, that Theognostus , a learned man, did not decline the phrase 'of the essence,' for in the second book of his Hypotyposes, he writes thus of the Son:—

“I don’t know why a man is to make an offer to a girl just because he finds her working like a housemaid.”

Of course there was no answer, though the knock was repeated.

We may say that the difficulties in his way were not as yet very great.

Of course there were periods in which her mind veered round.

And naturally enough; inasmuch as he who lays snares for his neighbor will be laying snares first of all for himself.

Yes, they are commonplaces when we read of them in novels; common enough, too, to some of us when we write them; but they are by no means commonplace when first heard by a young girl in the rich, balmy fragrance of a July evening stroll.

This occurred in the thirtieth year of the emperor's reign.

And if she preserve that which is so deformed and unsightly, much more herself.

What is man, that You are mindful of him?

Great was the anger of Lady Arabella, loud were the protestations of the girl, mute the woe of her father, piteous the tears of her mother, inexorable the judgment of the Greshamsbury world.

“I know you didn’t win the Derby.”

“And what is Walker;—besides being leading man in Silverbridge?”

Nay, rather should one accurately examine, this very present state is night.

“Oh, no; I should scratch it. I was afraid that if Hannah had it, it might be lost.” Then again there was silence, and Crosbie again considered as to what he would next say to his wife.

“She hardly ever yields about anything,” said Priscilla.

So shall they appear before the awful judgment which through Jesus the Messiah is destined to come upon the whole human race.

But if the large firm commits any such act of injustice, the little men in the trade have no power of setting themselves right by counter-injustice.

For, as he said, he was anxious to know what that could be without which my life, which was so pleasing to him, seemed to me not life but a penalty.

That which is everlasting...Behold The Same: I Am that I Am, I AM.

Who shut them in?

But he was overjoyed,—so much so that for a while he lost that restraint over himself which was habitual to him.

The Parson of the Parish

The fornicator, then, is not the only one that is unclean, but others more than he, as the adulterer.

“And how is cousin Posy?” said the major.

[And the builders asked him from what mountain he wished them to be brought and put in their place. ]

How, then, can any one treasure up for himself wrath against a day of wrath, if wrath be understood in the sense of passion?

Thus, for instance, Cornelius the centurion, when he prayed, had a claim to be heard.

Why need I count up all those who have been called to Himself by God and associated with such wonders as confirmed him in his piety?

And that God the Father of all would bring Christ to heaven after He had raised Him from the dead, and would keep Him there until He has subdued His enemies the devils, and until the number of those who are foreknown by Him as good and virtuous is complete, on whose account He has still delayed the consummation— hear what was said by the prophet David.

He had come to think lately that the younger young lady was the sweeter.

“That makes no difference. You don’t understand me, mamma.”

And how, if all things were made by Him, and without Him was not even one thing made, was He ignorant of the day?

The difference is between working for nothing and working for money.

But even that would be work done.

These things then, and yet more than these, the blessed Evangelist having in mind, things which though he knew, he was not able to write, because the world could not have contained them (for if all things should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written [John 21:25]), reflecting therefore on all these, he cries out, We beheld His glory, the glory as of the Only-Begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth.

A wife, had she seen to the feeding of the numerous babies, would have given them too much to eat, and had she not undertaken this care, she would have been useless at Daly’s Bridge.

This was one Captain Yorke Clayton, who for nearly twelve months had been in the County Mayo.

And yet, he says, not yours this achievement, this distinction; the gift has passed over to your children.

For when he says, Eyes that they should not see, and ears that they should not hear, he is but finding fault with their contentious spirit.

Chapter 36. Testimony of the Chaldeans to the Antiquity of Moses

They announced Christ, indeed, according to the truth whereby we believe in Christ, but not in the spirit in which He was announced by the good evangelists to the sons of the dove.

Because he already began to waver, and nearly to consent, he looked back unto the Lord.

Why, that man is a kind of angel, yea, like God.

Concerning the Sabbath also I have this to premise, that this question could not have arisen, if Christ did not publicly proclaim the Lord of the Sabbath.

Chapter 128

Cabs, dinners, wine, theatres, and new gloves are always at the command of men who are drowned in pecuniary embarrassments, whereas those who don’t owe a shilling are so frequently obliged to go without them!

Do you see how God permitted these tribulations even to the end, that He might show the assailants the spiritual wisdom of those whom they assailed, as well as His own providence.

He had become engaged to a certain Miss Mary Tremenhere, and by her he had been—jilted.

Does not such cunning and subtlety appal one?

Thus is a widow trained from her youth, thus is she spoken of in her age, who has kept her widowhood not through the chance of time, nor through weakness of body, but by large-heartedness in virtue.

“Because you are not English.”

For He who ascended into Heaven that He might be removed from your eyes, promised unto you, saying, Lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world.

And he has concluded thus, this glory have all His saints.

It is not said to God, Arise, as if asleep or lying down, but it is usual in holy Scripture to attribute to God what He does in us; not indeed universally, but where it can be done suitably; as when He is said to speak, when by His gift Prophets speak, and Apostles, or whatsoever messengers of the truth.

“Maggie,” said he, “Maggie.” She stepped forward, and put her hand upon his shoulder.

Have I spoken of God, or uttered His praise, in any worthy way?

You have heard that up in Oregon—I shot a man.

He had busied himself in this matter, and had ferreted things out, till he had pretty nearly got to the bottom of that affair about the houses in the East, and had managed to induce the heirs of the old man who had died to employ him.

At last he wept himself into an apathetic tranquillity, as though he had at present no further power for any of the energy of grief; and she left him while she went about the house and learned how things had gone on during her absence.

The stranger cared nothing for the utter desolation which one unscrupulous ruffian might produce, felt no horror at the idea of a vast devastating fire, but could be indignant in his mock philanthropy because it was proposed to watch the doings of a scoundrel!

“When he asked me again, he only did it because he pitied me. I don’t want to be any man’s wife because he pities me.”

After the resurrection, however, when the final, universal judgment has been completed, there shall be two kingdoms, each with its own distinct boundaries, the one Christ's, the other the devil's; the one consisting of the good, the other of the bad—both, however, consisting of angels and men.

“But, papa,” said Mrs Grantly, getting up, and putting her arm through that of her father, “what is Eleanor to do if you throw away your income?”

Accordingly Solon has written most wisely respecting God thus:—

For He alone it is Who has not sinned, and has taken away the sins of the world.

It seemed as though she could not fall.

Perhaps they were certain unbelieving men, that haunted the temple, as in fact neither did they present him to the Apostles, when they saw them entering, after having done such great miracles.

Others lie in wait for my back, and give greater pain, for the unsuspected blow is the more fatal.

“I don’t know that he wouldn’t be able to come upon the firm for the money your brother put into the business,” said he gloomily.

For the case is different from that of men endowed by nature with practical ability, where you may look at capability and execution apart from each other.

‘There’s a pretty kettle of fish you’ve made!’ said he as soon as he had finished reading the letter.

But rather, I should say, what language is fully adequate to set forth the whole excellency of this member?

Therefore, after the conclusion of this feast, which is now drawing to its close, on the twelfth of the month Pharmuthi, which is on the vii Id.

“I dare say she would consent,—if it were all serene. Why should she not? Do not try her too hard, Lord Silverbridge. You say you love her.”

“The Duke is peculiar. If a subject is distasteful to him he does not like it to be mentioned. You had better not mention Mr. Tregear.” Lady Cantrip, as she said this, blushed inwardly at her own hypocrisy.

The boy was then dismissed, and went home to his father’s home, indifferent as to who might see him now, because he had come from the priest’s house.

It is the desirable result of trade.

Who are its members, and what do they do as such?

He was good-tempered, well-mannered, sprightly in conversation, and had not a scruple in the world.

Catherine had been a fair-haired girl, and had now blossomed out into the anxious mother of ten fair-haired children.

How many young men, subjected to the temptations which had befallen Harry Clavering—how many young men whom you, delicate reader, number among your friends—would have come out from them unscathed?

The glory, I fear, has departed from his house.

Your money perish with you!

But if in the small matter you are not in earnest, how shall I trust you concerning the great?

Mr. Chaffanbrass continued at it for a long time, but with very indifferent success. That affair of the signatures, which was indeed the only point on which evidence was worth anything, he then abandoned, and tried to make her contradict herself about old Usbech. But on this subject she could say nothing. That Usbech was present she remembered well, but as to his signing the deed, or not signing it, she would not pretend to say anything.

But the flesh of the Lord received the riches of the divine energies through the purest union with the Word, that is to say, the union in subsistence, without entailing the loss of any of its natural attributes.

Neglecting the mystery of the Divine birth, and the mystery of God's emptying Himself and taking flesh, they will argue the inferiority of His nature from His assertion that the Father is the greater.

“‘Ere’s a go!” said Mr. Hart, striking the door violently with the handle of his stick.

Let them return then to their former state and make voluntary reparation, nor let that which a condition of necessity extorted from them be by any means turned into disgrace through evil desires; because, as those women who refuse to return to their husbands are to be held unholy, so they who return to an affection entered on with God's sanction are deservedly to be praised.

Not to be passed over for silencing the disputings of Arian misbelief are those words of the same Saint John, which he set down in another Scripture: If you know that He is just, know that he which does righteousness is born of Him.

And he wanted to procure safety by flight; but the other ceased not from pursuing, nor would control his anger.

Let her again consider how many noble and high-born maidens have not only received nothing of their husbands, but have even given dowries to them, and have spent their all upon them.

[Acts 14:22] For they sought not what was profitable for them, but that which was profitable for the many, that they might be saved, and that they might be enabled to say unto them many things conducing to this, that they might act suitably to the Word of God, unless, as says the apostle, the time should fail me in speaking.

To Proba and Juliana, Ladles Most Worthy of Honour, Daughters Justly Famous and Most Distinguished, Augustine Sends Greeting in the Lord.

The Baronet should be allowed his full swing till she was entitled to call herself Lady Geraldine.

So Sir Walter had told him, and so Maria, the naughty girl, had said also—” Only for your beaux yeux, Major Rossiter, we shouldn’t have had any party at all.” This had been said by Maria when she was laughing at him about her sister Georgiana. “ I don’t know how that may be,” said the Major; “ but all the same I shall never be at home at Brook Park.”

“And are you also of the family?” Ziska asked.

“And you?—what will you do?”

When he was twenty-one he inherited a fortune from his father of more than double that amount; and as he was the undoubted heir to a property of £7,000 a year, it may be said of him that he was born with a golden spoon.

But if my Julie will think of this, and will remember her Sophie—how much she have expended, and now at last there is nothing left.

“My girl!” he said, with so much joy in his tone that she could not but rejoice to hear him.

II. The penitents among the backsliding bishops are to be received back into full communion upon some plan to be settled by Anatolius and Leo's delegates.

To burn a gorse over a fox’s head!

“I did receive him as a dear friend. Why not? He is a dear friend. I love him heartily,—as you do.”

“And you won’t marry her?”

This I almost did.

All the world was raving of her beauty.

“I went to look for you but you were gone,” said Mr. Glascock.

I have found David, the son of Jesse, a man after My own heart, which shall fulfil all My will.

He that fears is not made perfect in charity.

When two men sit at the same desk together they ought to be thick as thieves.

I have to examine myself, and find out whether I am guilty of the meanness which I might perhaps be too ready to impute to another.

“Well, you will be, and that’s all the same; but I have no such title to honour, thank God.”

“What a fine old fellow! I should forgive him his rent.”

He had resisted every attempt which Cæsar had made to purchase his services.

On his return to Italy he had not force enough to declare a political conviction, and to go over to Cæsar boldly.

Let these species, then, of Greek plagiarism of sentiments, being such, stand as sufficient for a clear specimen to him who is capable of perceiving.

“What sort of a Christmas will it be if you and I, and these young fellows here, and Kate, are all burned out of Gangoil? Here’s Bates.—Well, Mr. Bates, how goes it?”

Without much thinking about it,—for he probably never thought very much about anything,—he had deemed it prudent to separate two young people brought up together, when they began, as he fancied, to be foolish.

On my arrival at Baltimore, I found the place knee-deep in mud and slush and half-melted snow.

And she had no end of her own in view.

And indeed he is full of ignorance, on account of his voluntary want of reason: for how can he be deemed anything else who does not perceive reason when it lies at his very feet?

And that the same thing happens spiritually to the soul the same Solomon thus tells us in other words, when he says: water dripping drives a man out of the house on a stormy day.

With Dickens and others he shares the custom, so irritating to us of to-day, of ticketing his personages with clumsy, descriptive labels, such as, in The Three Clerks, Mr. Chaffanbrass, Sir Gregory Hardlines, Sir Warwick West End, Mr. Neverbend, Mr.

His father’s demise had, in truth, been promised to him, and to all the world.

“After that he was always courteous; and when the end came and things were very terrible, he behaved well and kindly. He went in and out quietly, and like an old friend. He paid for everything, and was useful. I know that even this made people talk—yes, Harry, even at such a moment as that! But in spite of the talking I did better with him then than I could have done without him.”

She would have to be content with such rank as is accorded to Ministers at the Courts at which they are employed.

“And he wasn’t confused?”

“Not a word!” And he looked at her as he had looked on that day when he had told her of the Major’s sins. She tossed her head and pouted her lips and walked on without speaking. If it was to be so, then indeed would she have failed. And, therefore, though in his general manner he was loving to her, things were not going smooth with her.

She had thoroughly liked her Frank.

It never ceases from lying; nor even at the moment when it reports the truth is it so free from the wish to lie, as not to interweave the false with the true, by processes of addition, diminution, or confusion of various facts.

“You are speaking of a liberal Government, of course, Duchess.”

Innocent persons undergo such suffering.

Thus He Who was born to be God had neither a beginning of His Godhead, nor yet a development up to it.

They were somewhat too bold, perhaps; there was too much daring in their eyes, as, with their naked shoulders and bosoms nearly bare, they met the eyes of the men that were looking at them.

If, that is, they restrain any.

One can make you a countess; the other simply an honest man’s wife, and, so far as that can be low, lower than that title of your own which they will not allow you to put before your name.

On the following morning George was off without seeing his father.

And she prepared them now.

[1 Corinthians 1:27] For nothing in the dispensation of God is found to be mean, and ignoble, and contemptible.

From day to day her father would ask her whether she had made her intended purchases, and she would tell him that she had still postponed the work.

For if 'the advent' of our Saviour into the world 'was a mystery hid from ages and from generations,' as the apostle declares; and if the devil himself, the prince of wickedness, knew nothing of it, his ministers, the Egyptian priests, are likely to have been still more ignorant of the matter; but Providence doubtless purposed that in the enquiry concerning this character, there should something take place analogous to what happened heretofore at the preaching of Paul.

The hills signify the great.

Yes; we are becoming the slaves of a mercenary and irresponsible press—of one single newspaper.

“Polly,” he said, “I hope you can love me.

But since we have exhibited the succession of their genealogy, it seems expedient next that we should also explain the depraved teaching involved in their doctrines.

“No, Emily. You cannot go with him now. I will thank you to release him, that I may take him.” She still held the little fellow closely pressed in her arms. “Do not reward me for my courtesy by further disobedience,” he said.

But I prefer to assign this usage as a testimony to Scripture.

He not uncommonly maintains a mild opposition to his bishop, upon whom he is apt to look down as belonging to a new order of things, and whom he regards, on account of this new order of things, as being not above half a clergyman.

The hard man sends him off without a scruple to that office-stool; the soft man assures him that there is much merit in his MS.

“You’ll see;—she’ll marry Lord Ballindine. Had Harry lived, it might have been different; but now she’s got all her brother’s money, she’ll think it a point of honour to marry her poor lover. Besides, her staying this year in the country will be in his favour: she’ll see no one here—and she’ll want something to think of. I understand he has altogether thrown himself into Blake’s hands—the keenest fellow in Ireland, with as much mercy as a foxhound. He’s a positive fool, is Ballindine.”

The matter with him is simply one of dollars.

Unfortunate men!

He was exceedingly shocked, and wondered that we had entertained such a view; being moved by nothing else but the ugly appearance of the transaction, as one wholly unworthy not only of us, but of any man.

Tractate 93 John 16:1-4

It was not on the cards that he should win.

But he had promised to see Clara either that day or the next, and he could not bring himself to unsay all that he had said to her.

“Twenty pounds! What is twenty pounds? No; I will not have your twenty pounds.” And she pushed away from her the two notes which Lady Ongar had already put upon the table. “Who is to pay me for the loss of all my time? Tell me that. I have devoted myself to you. Who will pay me for that?”

But when He tells us that they who call God their Father must love Himself because He has gone forth from God, He makes His birth the reason for their love.

I got out of it as best I could without treachery and without dishonour.

Nay, rather Christ has shone as the true light on the nations within the ocean's limits, and from the heaven which is over us all.

Well, go if you will, Cathelineau,” added he, seeing that the postillion hesitated; “but every one here will tell you that you are wrong to do so.”

Yet that a right faith avails nothing if the life be corrupt, both Christ and Paul declare, having taken the more care for this latter part; Christ when He teaches, Not every one that says unto Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven [Matthew 7:21 and again, Many will say unto Me in that day, Lord, have we not prophesied in Your Name?

The labour was great; the task was terrible; but now it was so nearly over!

He therefore that is to superintend a family, and order it well, must first bring his own soul into order; for it is his family: but if he cannot order his own family, where there is but one soul, where he himself is master, where he is always along with himself, how shall he order others?

Thus he sees that there is an opening here or an opening there, and the offence in either case is not great to him.

She was endeavouring to assure him of her truth, but could understand the sneer which was conveyed in his acknowledgement. “But you cannot, nor can I for your sake, abolish the things which have been.”

Spare the province, which the indication of your purpose has subjected to the threats and extortions at once of the soldiers and of private enemies.

She spoke as soon as she found herself by his side in the street.

To make clay with spittle and earth was a work of the body: but to anoint therewith and enlighten the eyes of the blind is an undoubted mark of that power which had reserved for the revelation of its glory that which it had not allowed to the early part of His natural life.

If there were risk to her—and in truth there was fearful risk—it was his duty to guard her from the chance, not hers to say whether such danger should be encountered or no.

He made her understand that the magistrate had gone out of his way at the last inquiry, believing her to be a lady who had been grievously wronged, and one, therefore, to whom much consideration was due.

Lady Mason in the present crisis of her life endeavoured to be true in all her dealings with Mrs. Orme; but nevertheless Mrs. Orme had not yet read her character.

Nor shall the heaven of heavens declare this, nor the waters which are above the heavens.

That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, and which we have seen with our eyes, and our hands have handled, of the Word of life: and the life was manifested, and we have seen, and bear witness, and show unto you that eternal life, which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us: the things which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that you also may have fellowship with us: and that our fellowship may be with the Father, and with His Son Jesus Christ.

Is it not?

It cannot be explained why her heart throbbed when she saw Sir Francis get out of his brougham.

And for so great a matter to be understood by an example, let what we are describing be compared to a great chorus.

And the Lord said unto Moses, Whosoever has sinned against me, him will I blot out of my book.

And while thou, having washed, returnest home from the bath, in a glow with soft raiment, merry of heart and rejoicing, and hastening unto a banquet prepared and costly: he, driven every where about the market place by cold and hunger, takes his round, stooping low and stretching out his hands; nor has he even spirit without trembling to make his suit for his necessary food to one so full fed and so bent on taking his ease; nay, often he has to retire with insult.

The Apostle also points out the words, Rejoice, O you nations, with His people as those of the Son, and in corroboration further cites this:— And there shall be a root of Jesse, and One that shall arise to rule the nations; in Him shall the nations trust.

“I don’t know about being foolish, ma’am; but it’s the most natural thing in life. If I had two beaux as was a-courting me together, in course I should expect as they would punch each other’s heads. There’s some girls do it a purpose, because they like to see it. One at a time’s what I say.”

The game was played out, and all his victories were as nothing to him.

It will kill me if this is to be carried out.

And ourselves, says he, your servants for Jesus Christ's sake.

“I cannot now take that other as the expression of your mind.”

So the matter of instruction is a sort of fountain.

Let her have her way, and take no notice of the Quintus Slides.” The Prime Minister smiled, as though this repeated allusion to Mr. Slide’s letter had brought back his good humour, and said nothing further then as to his difficulties.

The old piano had not been tuned for the last ten years.

“I would marry her this moment,” said Johnny.

He thinks well of you,—would probably believe your word on any indifferent subject without thought of a doubt; but if you were to tell him that I didn’t get drunk every night of my life and spend most of my time in thrashing policemen, he would not believe you.

For when he sets forth with much confidence some passage from our master, and treats it with preliminary slander and contempt, and promises that he will show it to be worth nothing at all, he meets with the same fortune as befalls small children, to whom their imperfect and immature intelligence, and the untrained condition of their perceptive faculties, do not give an accurate understanding of what they see.

“There is no fear of that, father.”

“Of them we have none at Plumstead. No,—I was speaking of the dear old fellow with the brush. Pass the bottle, Mr. Crawley. Won’t you fill your glass?” Mr. Crawley passed the bottle, but would not fill his glass. Then the dean, looking up slily, saw the vexation written in the archdeacon’s face. The parson whom the archdeacon feared most of all parsons was the parson who wouldn’t fill his glass.

For this requires that the offender suffer what he did, as that clause of the law says, Eye for eye, tooth for tooth.

Chapter 114

[Luke 13:32] For He said this in the person of His body, which is His Church, putting days for distinct and appointed periods, which He also signified in the third day in His resurrection.

For so when the Psalm says, What is a man that You are mindful of Him, from the part we understand the whole, as while only one man is mentioned the whole human race is meant.

The poet, indeed, compares foolish men to infants.

Lady Amelia de Courcy to Miss Augusta Gresham

Look we up to heaven, take we thought of spiritual things.

The fortnight allowed him by the San Juan Company had nearly gone by when he called at the little house in the little street, resolved to push his fortune in that direction without fear and without hesitation.

The faults of Mr. Morgan and of Secretary Welles are nothing to us in England; but the light in which such faults may be regarded by the American people is much to us.

But not so now: (I speak of my own case so far.)

Whence it is manifest, that the Jewish constitution had begun to dissolve.

Because if our heart think ill of us, i.e.

And note too that the recompense is greater.

Such, as regarded the outward woman, was Madame Max Goesler; and Phineas, as he took his place by her side, thought that fortune for the nonce had done well with him,—only that he should have liked it so much better could he have been seated next to Violet Effingham!

For it was not concerning those nations that he believed, but concerning him who was to be from his barren wife.

You needn’t pull such a long face.

By this time the archdeacon had again ascended, and was now in the dining-room.

“Whisper,” she said to me, with a peculiar but very proper aspiration on the h—”Wh-hisper,” and both by the aspiration and the use of the word I knew at once from what island she had come. “Mr. Greene keeps all his money in this box also; so I never let it go out of my sight for a moment. But whatever you do, don’t tell him that I told you so.”

For when he says also, Who shall deliver me from the body of this death?

“Peradventure he signifies his Consent.”

Farewell, and be in peace, my most loving brother, most true worshipper of God, and an Israelite in whom there is no guile.

For it is not right to put a heretic to death, since an implacable war would be brought into the world.

The rather is in comparison.

Bring unto the Lord yourselves, whom the Apostles, the leaders of the flocks, have begotten by the Gospel.

Why, what a time it is since I last had the pleasure—but then I’m so tied by the leg—so much business, Mr. Macdermot; indeed, though I was determined to drop in this morning as a friend, still even now I’ve just a word to say on business.

“And will the other men be convicted?” Mrs. Fenwick asked.

“What is going to happen, Melmotte?”

“What a grand lesson! It is a pity that my husband should not be here to hear it.”

Below it was the Potomac, and immediately on the other side stands the City of Washington.

The woman had told her that she was a flirt, had declared that what she did and said was improper.

“Must they, mamma?”

At this time Reginald Morton himself was still at Hoppet Hall, and had declared that he would remain there till after his marriage.

My soul was distracted amid all these claims, yet still it pressed along that profitable road which leads inevitably to the true knowledge of God.

“But they may come back,” said Gilmore.

It came to pass speedily that Luke Rowan was expected to build a new brewery, and that the event of the first brick was looked for with anxious expectation.

Wherefore also Moses exhorted them, and said, When you have eaten and drunken and are full, remember the Lord your God.

[Galatians 5:17] For this is said of the carnal habit yet unsubdued, against which the spirit lusts, not to destroy the body, but to eradicate the lust of the body— i.e., its evil habit— and thus to make it subject to the spirit, which is what the order of nature demands.

For they believe that the gods love whatever they themselves desire, whatever it is, on account of which thefts and robberies and murders daily rage, on account of which wars overthrow nations and cities throughout the whole world.

Miss Mackenzie Goes to Littlebath

He was a man to whom he owed nothing, and for whose welfare he was not in the least solicitous.

“And beyond that,” continued the captain, “ you make a difficulty for me. What am I to say when you tell me these things? That you should have one political opinion and I another is natural. The question between us, in an abstract point of view, I can discuss with you willingly. The possibility of Venice contending with Austria I could discuss, if no such rebellion were imminent. But when you tell me that it is imminent, that it is already here, I cannot discuss it.”

LETTER 90

“It isn’t good that women should own houses,” said Madame Staubach; “it should be enough for them that they are permitted to use them.” Then Herr Steinmarc went on to explain that if the widow would consent to become his wife, he thought he could so settle things that for their lives, at any rate, the house should be in his care and management.

At this point therefore a man may say to himself, What shall I do?

I cannot dig, to beg I am ashamed; [Luke 16:1-2, etc.]

Bear in mind that Him Whom you have confessed as Alone true, you have also confessed as Alone the righteous Judge.

He was not that Light, but that he might bear witness of the Light.

This is the usual evening living-place of the family; and I never yet saw an occupant of one of these chairs with a book in her hand, or in his.

They must leisurely look for the big boxes and other things, and need say nothing about the steam packet till they were in a cab.

“Very well. If this ill usage came from Clara Desmond herself, I should be the last person to complain of it; and you would be the last person to whom I should make complaint. But I feel sure that it is not so. She is acting under the influence of her mother, who has frightened her into this thing which she is doing. I do not believe that she is false herself.”

Two or three elderly ladies came in, and four or five young ladies, and an old gentleman who sat close to Mrs. Brownlow and squeezed her hand very often, and a middle-aged gentleman who was exceedingly funny, and two young gentlemen who carried the tea and cakes about, but did not talk much.

But the fountain of wisdom and religion is God; and if these two streams shall turn aside from Him, they must be dried up: for they who are ignorant of Him cannot be wise or religious.

But we all know what we mean in its common use.

This, too, was in the early days of the arrangement of the Melmotte affairs, when Mr Longestaffe’s heart had been softened by that arrangement with reference to the rent.

But he was a man whom the feeling of injustice to himself would drive almost to frenzy, though he never measured the amount of his own injustice to others.

Though he considered himself to be Captain of the Country, he would have been treated with no more respect than any other Hottentot had he shown himself at the diggings.

“That will do,” he said, when the letter was finished. But when Mr. Merton turned to leave the room Mr. Scarborough detained him. “Upon the whole, I am not dissatisfied with my life,” he said.

Only that he had been merciful, this young lord would not have been able to scorn him and illtreat him as he had done.

“Bertie’s wooing has gone astray,” said Madeline. “I knew it would.”

Whatsoever you will you say of eternity.

Money!

[Psalm 49:17] And often it abides not with him while he lives.

She had had her chance and had lost it,—because of those idle dreams.

Having himself got rid of Tifto, he would have been glad that the poor wretch should have been left with his hunting honours.

Indeed I doubt whether such a character could be made more lifelike than Lucy Robarts.

“How nice! I wonder how long you’ll go on picking up Lord George at the Carlton.”

And it seems indeed to be a sort of equal recompence, but it is a far greater thing than the act of goodness. For whereas they themselves show mercy as men, they obtain mercy from the God of all; and it is not the same thing, man's mercy, and God's; but as wide as is the interval between wickedness and goodness, so far is the one of these removed from the other.

I am much obliged by your letter about the money; but the truth is that I have known for some time that there was to be no mortgage. When I was in town I saw Mr Rubb at my brother’s house, and it was understood between us then that the matter was to remain as it is. My brother and his partner are very welcome to the money.

Declare the justice of God's anger: lest you should seem to be excusing yourself, and accusing Him.

She had failed grievously when she had endeavoured to make her daughter a prisoner at the Grange.

But the Lord, Who always has scoffed at the devil, does the same even now, saying, 'I am in the Father, and the Father in Me [John 14:11].'

To live in safety, to be easily subdued by no terror, to stand superior to all that despitefully use us.

Hence the ambiguous name which she gave to her first-born son, calling him [Cain], which has a capability of interpretation in two ways; for it is interpreted both [Possession] and [Envy], as signifying that in the future he was to envy either a woman, or possessions, or the love of the parents towards her.

His brother should have an income secured to him, but he would keep Tretton in his own hands,—as long as the gambling-tables would allow him.

[Deuteronomy 32:39] Would the persecutor Saul [Acts 9:4] have died, unless he were wounded from heaven; or would the preacher be raised up, unless by life given him from His blood?

condition of men’s minds.

Lord Lufton had determined not to explain to his mother the whole state of the case.

Therefore, as innumerable good things have been given which it might enjoy, so also have evils, against which it might guard.

[Genesis 7:21-22] Here, if we remove all the windings of doubtful disputation, we understand the term spirit to be synonymous with soul in its general sense.

“I know I love you. Oh, I am so glad to have you again. It was ‘so hard not to be with you when I thought that you were ill. I did not know how sick it would make me to be away from you.” Neither then nor at any time afterwards was there a word spoken on the one side or the other as to that declaration of enmity.

Thackeray himself declared the man to be a prig, and he was not altogether wrong.

Considering then all these things, let us betake ourselves unto the preparation for our departure hence.

The wings, which in themselves are by no means devoid of beauty, are joined to the center by passages so narrow that from exterior points of view the light can be seen through them.

Did they restore the decayed?

“Indeed then, sir, I can’t say anything positively, nor for that matter, not impositively either.” And then she shut herself up doggedly, and sat with compressed lips, determined to resist all the lawyer’s arts.

And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself shall be brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself, shall not stand: and if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand?

Here, gentlemen, here—(snatches the passport)—you will see it’s all right.

Then would I find him whom my soul loves.

Among even these,—among the Pondos, who are much more numerous than the Galekas, our influence is maintained by European magistrates, and the Kafirs, though allowed to do much according to their pleasures, are not allowed to do everything.

For is it indeed still to be called faith, when faith, according to the definition in the Epistle to the Hebrews, is the evidence of things not seen?

20. I have found David My servant: that David from David's seed: with My holy oil have I anointed Him [Psalm 88:20]: for it is said of Him, God, even Your God, has anointed You with the oil of gladness above Your fellows.

Then aunt Sarah explained all that she knew, and perhaps suggested more than she knew.

After some further discussion, Harcourt left him.

No one; but both Greeks and barbarians, both poets and philosophers, yea the whole race of men in this agree with us, though differing in particulars , and affirm that there are tribunals of some sort in Hades; so manifest and uncontroverted is the thing.

If carried away by my feelings, I were to appeal to the jury for their sympathy because of my belief, I should betray your cause.

“Yes—I; from your husband, from yourself, and from the world. You do not know—not yet, all that I have done for you. Did you read what Lord Ongar had said?”

I had then been nearly two months in Egypt, and had at last succeeded in settling the terms of a postal treaty.

The meal had so gotten within his hair, and skin, and raiment, that it never came out altogether even on Sundays.

In case that his present client should then have become Lady Orme, Mr. Chaffanbrass and Mr. Solomon Aram might carry on the battle between them, with such assistance as they might be able to get from Messrs.

“You’ve heard about Mr. Soames and his cheque, and about Mr. Crawley, I daresay?” said Toogood.

It seemed that among a people so intelligent, and so quick in all enterprises of trade, a well-arranged post-office would have been held to be absolutely necessary, and that all difficulties would have been made to succumb in their efforts to put that establishment, if no other, upon a proper footing.

Young Carstairs had certainly not come over on the sly, as we may call it, but nevertheless there had been a project in his mind, and fortune had favoured him.

This is what the Lord promised when He said: Them that honour me I will honour.

For how shall we guard against them if in order to guard against them we shall have them?

Whatsoever evil man shall have lost these things, has nothing to hold by without, has nothing within whereon he may rest.

Chapter XIV. Their Discoveries

He who was going to consecrate a new order of birth, must Himself be born after a novel fashion, concerning which Isaiah foretold how that the Lord Himself would give the sign.

On this same subject, according to Matthew: How broad and spacious is the way which leads unto death, and many there are who go in thereby: how straight and narrow is the way that leads to life, and few there are that find it!

As though he said, before they kissed and embraced, before the consummation of marriage, she was found to be with child.

But I am clothed with flesh, and it is the property of flesh to sin.

You do not wreath your heads with flowers; you do not grace your bodies with odours; you reserve ointments for funeral rites; you even refuse garlands to your sepulchres— pallid, trembling beings, worthy of the pity even of our gods!

It was clear to her now that her husband was in urgent want of money, though of his affairs, even of his way of making money, she knew nothing.

Well, but this, say you, is of itself an evil.

Wait not for the fire to be kindled, but check it before it comes to that: do not exasperate the savage beast, rather do not suffer it to become exasperated: for you will no longer be able to check it, if once the flame be kindled.

For our God sojourned with us in the flesh, after that very flesh of ours which He made for Adam and all Adam's posterity, yet without sin.

Surely there would be little directions to her given, which should be obeyed,—oh, with such care, if he would be good to her.

His command had been so well obeyed in regard to vessels, that he finds ready, of that special sort which he had ordered with one bank of oars only on each side, as many as six hundred, and twenty-eight of the larger sort.

He went on beating about the bush for some time—giving her to understand now necessary it was that persons situated as they were should live either for themselves or for each other, and that, above all things, they should beware of falling into the mouths of voracious aristocratic lions who go about looking for prey—till they came to a turn in the grounds; at which Miss Dunstable declared her determination of going in.

To roam in exile, what your land— the bound

She wept bitterly as she returned to the house.

Observe further that the word judgment ([γνώμη]) is used in many ways and in many senses.

Section 20

Since to see that he wished it all for Christ's sake, just hear what comes next.

, Seneca said: Philosophy is nothing else than the right method of living, or the science of living honourably, or the art of passing a good life.

If God, He is not a creature; for the creature ranks with us who are not Gods.

On one occasion she would talk on other things.

As it was, the lieutenant in command gave up, half an hour after his usual dinner time.

Augusta was shocked, declaring that the little dance was to be one of the great balls of the season, and pronouncing the whole to be a falsehood; but the affair was arranged before she could stop it.

Diogenes maintains that tyrants do not bring about revolutions in cities, and foment wars civil or foreign for the sake of a simple diet of vegetables and fruits, but for costly meats and the delicacies of the table.

We must return for a moment to the fact that Hugh and Archie had returned to town before Harry Clavering.

“Oh—ah—yes; no doubt the lawyers will settle it: settle it with a fine bill of costs, of course. But, as Finnie says,”—Finnie was Sir Louis’s legal adviser—”I have got a tremendously large interest at stake in this matter; eighty thousand pounds is no joke. It ain’t everybody that can shell out eighty thousand pounds when they’re wanted; and I should like to know how the thing’s going on. I’ve a right to ask, you know; eh, doctor?”

Subter., iv.

I pray that you may be strengthened, beloved brethren.

He was a man who thought much of the duties of hospitality, feeling that a man in his own house was bound to exercise a courtesy towards his guests sweeter, softer, more gracious than the world required elsewhere.

There was a thorough disruption of his property, for which the subsequent generosity of his country was unable altogether to atone.

“And dis,” said a grinning Frenchman from Martinique with a curse, exhibiting a rotten walnut—” dis, dis!

Had the daughters learned in Sodom some vile art which enabled them to intoxicate their father with a few cups, so that in his ignorance he might sin, or rather be sinned against?

Anton, hearing steps in the passage, had come out from the room on the ground-floor, and had seen Souchey before Souchey had seen him.

“I had not thought of it. But you never saw him since he had you in his arms as a baby. You cannot mourn for him in heart.”

Wherefore neither did he employ it; not because he had it not, but because he always sought the more profitable things: being as he was free from all vain-glory, and considering one thing only, how he might render the hearers better.

“Whose else, Mum? His lordship don’t ride generally nobody’s ‘orses but his own.”

I will go to gather them, like children: that they may play the wanton and the madman, until they perish.— 12.

She knew her brother well.

“But we have now found out that he has behaved very badly. He has come here to you,—with unexampled treachery to your cousin Roger—”

If you do these things, says He, the kingdom of my Father shall come.

For he also bears witness to great virtue in them.

Therefore to the lean man when you say, Why have you done this?

Well;—yes.

What weight of gold, what amount of treasures, are so dear to a wife as these words?

Yet those gods, guardians of the Roman empire, and, as it were, theatric spectators of such contests as these, were not satisfied until the sister of the Horatii was added by her brother's sword as a third victim from the Roman side, so that Rome herself, though she won the day, should have as many deaths to mourn.

[Ecclesiastes 1:2] It is not I that say it, but he who had had the experience of all things says thus: I built for me houses, I planted vineyards, I made me pools of water, [I had] men servants and women servants.

It did seem to her that Mr. Dockwrath and Joseph Mason would hardly dare to bring such a charge as that threatened against the wife of Sir Peregrine Orme.

Originally the operation was done by band-windlasses which were turned by Kafirs,—and the practice is continued at some of the smaller enterprises;- but the horse whims are now so general that there is a world of them round the claim.

“Yes,” continued Mr. Prendergast, speaking still in a low voice, with a tone that was almost tender, “truth is always best. Look at this wretched man here! He would have killed the whole family—destroyed them one by one—had they consented to assist him in concealing the fact of his existence. The whole truth will now be known; and it is very dreadful; but it will not be so dreadful as the want of truth.”

But the Doctor’s greatest difficulty was with his wife, whose conduct it was necessary that he should guide, and whose feelings and conscience he was most anxious to influence.

Is he not admired?

3. The other things then He carried no further than to accuse them, as being small and trifling, and as though His disciples needed not at all to be corrected about these matters; but what was a cause of all the evils, even ambition, and the violent seizing of the teacher's chair, this He brings forward, and corrects with diligence, touching this vehemently and earnestly charging them.

In this way her view of the matter became more and more firmly adopted as that which should be the view resolutely to be taken by them both.

And could not he, too, go to sleep,—he, Gilmore?

He saw that she was angry with him.

[Isaiah 54:4] There was therefore a confusion of the Church once, which now has been forgotten: for of Her confusion and of the reproach of Her widowhood now She is not mindful.

Now, in his misery, he declared that he would bind himself to his work and never leave it.

Against these it is not by robustness of flesh and blood, but of faith and spirit, that it behooves us to make our antagonistic stand.

Over all the face of heaven is scattered this charm (of repose).— On this account are we evil spoken of even among the Gentiles, as though we did all for display and ostentation.

And what for those Ganymedes who were carried off and set to preside over lustful practices?

He enacted two altogether different persons on occasions which were altogether different.

The municipalities of which I speak extend, I believe, to all Canada—the two provinces being divided into counties, and the counties subdivided into townships, to which, as a matter of course, the municipalities are attached.

Cholet will join us, and Beaupréau, and Coron, and Torfou.

They conspire in evil; they practise beforehand with pretended heat, that they may deceive others into saying that a deity is present.

For it was seemly that such an epistle should be sent by the head of the church of Alexandria to the Apostolic See, as showed that the Egyptians had from the first learned from the teaching of the most blessed Apostle Peter through his blessed disciple Mark , that which it is agreed the Romans have believed, that beside the Lord Jesus Christ there is no other name given to men under heaven, in which they must be saved [Acts 4:12] .

For we call the Son God of God; but the Father, God only; not of God.

“Well, Croll,” he said with an attempt at a smile, “what brings you here so early?” He was pale as death, and let him struggle as he would, could not restrain himself from trembling.

They have God for their Father, and are they not illustrious?

You see, at least, how many things he discourses concerning this ministering.

Deficiency of sincerity there was.

Let there be one antagonist.

Are you free from a wife, seek not a wife; bind not yourself with bonds of iron.

“It may be that God will open her eyes.”

Everybody knows that.

Was it not the fact that Lady Ongar had spoken the simple and plain truth when she had said that Harry must be allowed to choose the course which appeared to him to be the best for him?

Because you have heard, pay, will you not vow?

“Probably not,” I said; “ when you once commence, you will doubtless have to go on—in the good path.” I confess that the last words were said sotto voce. On that occasion the courage was wanting in me to speak out my mind. The lady was very pretty, and I could not endure to be among the unfavoured ones.

I had a vague hope—a hope which I hardly hoped to realize—that I might be able to get through to the South.

The Lord, then, is in His holy place

“Only six weeks old!” said Nina, stooping down and kissing the child.

Rachel said at once that if her absence were desirable she would find whither to betake herself. “I’d stay upstairs in my bedroom, for the matter of that, mamma.”

It would appear therefore at first sight to be natural that the large English Colonies should swallow up and assimiliate the little Dutch Republic.

Chapter 4.— Man— What?

Let us then recover ourselves for a while and take our breath, for this idea is not only without wisdom but also without the Spirit, as it is certainly wanting in spiritual wisdom and has nothing to do with the Spirit of salvation.

“When did he propose and where?”

On this principle, physicians ought also to be worshipped as gods, for they cure many; and in proportion as any one is more skilful, the more he will cure.

By the opposing din, moreover, of some partisans of the individuals, truth began to be overcast by a sort of cloud.

“You’re wrong in all your three statements.”

It is impossible that you should live as the wife of a slaveowner.

To be alone is of course essential.

There goes a story that a mountain chieftain’s son, hunting the stag across the valley when the floods were out, in leaping the stream, from rock to rock, failed to make good his footing, was carried down by the rushing waters, and dashed to pieces among the rocks.

213. What shall I say of those two-year-old children of Bethlehem, [Matthew 2:16] who received the palm of victory before they felt their natural life within them? What of St. Agnes, who when in danger as regards two great matters, that is, chastity and life, protected her chastity and exchanged life for immortality?

Cincinnati is built on the Ohio, and is closely surrounded by picturesque hills which overhang the suburbs of the city.

And the reverse of this is also true.

How often might they stand there again if only his constancy would equal hers?

In regard to matters of this sort, whatever the holy men of those times did without lust, Scripture passes over without blame, although they did things which could not be done at the present time, except through lust.

This is the faith which ought to be sufficient for you, for us, for all who wrest not the word of the true faith; for it is the ancient faith; it is the faith of our baptism; it is the faith that teaches us to believe in the name of the Father, of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.

She sat there numb, motionless, voiceless, thinking where John Carmichael might be.

His power was then coveted by Antony, a man of very different character, polluted and debased by every kind of vice, who was strenuously resisted by Cicero on the same plea of defending the liberty of the republic.

Late in life he had taken into partnership his nephew Tappitt, and during his life had been a severe taskmaster to his partner.

For doing this in any case a law had to be passed—or, in other words, the assent of the people must be obtained and registered.

We cannot, moreover, but feel that there were fewer drawbacks from greatness in the personal demeanour of the Roman “ Imperator “ and Dictator than in that of the French Emperor.

[Luke 16:11-12] He, being such, did at that time cling to me, and wavered in purpose, as I did, what course of life was to be taken.

If our critics, then, wish to attain not a spurious and affected, but a genuine and sound moral health, let them find a cure in believing the Scripture record, that the honorable name of saint is given not without reason to men who had several wives; and that the reason is this, that the mind can exercise such control over the flesh as not to allow the appetite implanted in our nature by Providence to go beyond the limits of deliberate intention.

There isn’t one gentleman among ten of them.

“I don’t understand it all,” said Lady Sarah. “What is he to gain by pretending. And so they used to quarrel.”

So truly it is our way also, when we talk of man, to speak things both high and low.

“Madame Socani should be nowheres.”

And if He is forced to strike, surely He will refrain, according to His Nature.

“Goodbye,” he said; “goodbye,” and without waiting to take the hand which his aunt offered him he hurried out of the room, out of the house, and back across the Gardens to Queen’s Gate.

Now it followed from all the predictions which were uttered regarding Him— among which was this prediction of the resurrection— and, from all that was done by Him, and from all the events which befell Him, that this event should be marvellous above all others.

The lamprey obeys, and is united to this venomous animal.

Those years wherein Satan is bound are in the first advent of Christ, even to the end of the age; and they are called a thousand, according to that mode of speaking, wherein a part is signified by the whole, just as is that passage, the word which He commanded for a thousand generations, although they are not a thousand.

In the words of the Council which they are most forward to quote, "Some of us," it declares, "traitors to the truth, uphold heretics."

‘I think it is, my lord,’ said Undy.

For we see them, and to them is no changing: they that die in that same perverseness, in that same schism, to them is no changing.

But we who despise this life have other virtues set before us, respecting which philosophers could not by any means even conjecture.

I have not taken many such fancies into my head, at so short a notice; but I did love him, as though he were a younger brother.

[Proverbs 11:25] And again, He that walks simply, walks surely.

Much less, when we invade a country, do we kill or mutilate all those who have endeavored to protect their own homes.

Chapter XXXV. “She’ll Accept You, of Course”

It must be a Thursday, because of the boats.” Then she made inquiry about his money, and took from him the notes which he had, promising to return them, with something added, on the Thursday morning; but he asked, with a little whine, for a five-pound note, and got it.

[1 Samuel 2:30] For which glorification the Lord, forming and preparing us, and the Son of God instilling the likeness of God the Father, says in His Gospel: You have heard that it has been said, You shall love your neighbour, and hate your enemy.

Thus the plotter destroys himself first; just as he that treads on fire burns up himself, and he that smites adamant spites himself, and he that kicks against the pricks draws blood from himself. For somewhat of this kind is he that knows how to suffer wrong, and to bear it manfully; he is adamant, and the pricks, and fire; but he that has used himself to do wrong is feebler than any clay.

At last there seemed to be an opening, —not exactly what he wished, but still an opening.

When two-year-old ewes went up to three pound ten at Ballinasloe, we thought that we were to get that price for ever, but they were soon down to two seventeen six; and when we had had two years of the potato famine, we thought that there would never be another potato in County Galway.

“I don’t think she will last long,” said Captain Aylmer, soon after the door was closed.

I had still hoped to find one in you, but that hope is over.

“No;—not like. She has been quite quiet. Lucinda!”

These constitute the astonishing mysteries of Elchasai, those ineffable and potent secrets which he delivers to deserving disciples.

And if Mrs. Lookaloft be admitted within the sanctum of fashionable life, if she be allowed with her three daughters to leap the ha-ha, why not the wives and daughters of other families also?

What produces it in the man in whom it exists?

Or perhaps he will take refuge in what the Apostle says of himself: Though I be rude in speech, yet not in knowledge.

Chapter 47.— He Compels to the Perpetration of Horrible Turpitudes

“He said;—but he had no right to say it.”

And the reason of this arrangement is not obscure: for we should not have the power of speaking if the windpipe were open to the nostrils only, as the path of the gullet is to the mouth only; nor could the breath proceeding from it cause the voice, without the service of the tongue.

There is no necessity for His being changed, when He makes the world from what He was when He was not making it; and neither is there any necessity for saying that the universe must have co-existed with Him, on account of our not being forced to say that He has changed, nor that the universe is co-eternal with Him.

The box was put down upon two chairs, the supporters who had borne it retiring a pace each.

And for the cause of his going up, I came, he says, to bring alms to my nation and offerings.

“And I should have done so too; and then we might have been wrong. Is it not well as it is, Arthur?”

In London, white satin slippers are the fashion.

Men are not dunned so rigorously when they have just fallen into their fortunes.

On hearing them, what comfort has he, which prevents his heeding them, and enables him to enter by the door?

That we may be able more fully to collect and more plainly to perceive this, let us recur to its fount and origin.

Lastly, having been created, do I desire to be re-created?

“She will think you very uncivil; that is all. I told her that she could go with you when I heard that Miss Vavasor was not to be there.”

“Very well,” continued Mary; “we will say nothing more about it at present.

“I know that it is. The dean would be glad to see him with any coat. But the fact is that he cannot bear to enter the house of a rich man unless his duty calls him there.”

To me in all parts of the world an Irishman is dear.

Who is the greatest subverter of the people of God— he who, relying on the power of free choice, despises the help of the Creator, and is satisfied with following his own will, or he who dreads to be judged by the details of the Lord's commandments?

Then shall the King say unto them who shall be at His right hand, Come, you blessed of my Father, receive the kingdom which is prepared for you from the beginning of the world: for I was hungry, and you gave me to eat: I was thirsty, and you gave me to drink: I was a stranger, and you received me: naked, and you clothed me: sick, and you visited me: I was in prison, and you came unto me.

Break your bread to the hungry, and bring in the poor that are cast out to your house.

“Get;—what should I get? You don’t believe in friendship, then?”

“Do not be angry with me, George!”

But Christ did both; the same being is both God and man.

“I don’t wonder at that, for she was very anxious that we should be married.”

What the Lord Jesus says, Abraham desired to see my day, and he saw it, and was glad, [John 8:56] meaning by the phrase his day to understand his time, affords of course a clear testimony that Abraham was fully imbued with belief in His incarnation.

[John 1:1] And what is this?

“But you never hear of any swell being a medium. Why don’t the spirits go to a prime minster or some of those fellows? Only think what a help they’d be.”

[Ephesians 3:3-4] According as you are able, he said, since he knew that some had received milk only, and had not yet received meat, nor even milk simply.

When it was being brought out, the author told a friend of his,—and of mine,—that it was not much thought of at Fraser’s, and that he had been called upon to shorten it.

But I wonder that men can be so audacious in their conjectures.

Or how could he take out or put in anything in such books as the [Περὶ ᾿Αρχῶν], in which everything is so closely knit together that one part hangs upon another, and anything that may be taken out or put in to suit your will must at once show out like a patch on a garment?

Chapter 1. It is Not to the Philosophers that We Resort for Information About the Soul But to God.

She too was an Earl’s daughter, and had been much loved by our Earl’s first wife.

They were both standing with their arms upon the wall, looking down upon the town of Le Puy; but they had so stood that each could see the other’s countenance as they talked.

The archdeacon had again recourse to his drawer, and twice read through the essence of Sir Abraham Haphazard’s law-enlightened and law-bewildered brains.

Indeed I think he would, and would have gone straightway off.

How, then, does Plato blame Homer for saying that the gods are not inflexible, although, as is obvious from the expressions used, Homer said this for a useful purpose?

“I can give no explanation, and I had rather that no questions should be asked. But so it is.”

But the age of Chiramus is somewhere about the Trojan war; but Solomon, the contemporary of Chiramus, lived much later than the age of Moses.

Likewise, when they asked Him where His Father was, He answered them, that they had known neither Himself nor the Father; and in this answer He plainly told them of Two, whom they were ignorant of.

Matthew and Luke represent that he was first at Nazara, and then left them and came and dwelt in Capernaum.

[John 1:11] But what means, which were in the world?

Could it be that Lord George had instigated her to do so?

Wherefore every one while still existing in this body should already be aware that he must be committed to that state and office, of which he made himself a sharer and an adherent while in this life, nor should he doubt that in that eternal world he will be partner of him, whose servant and minister he chose to make himself here: according to that saying of our Lord which says If any man serve Me, let him follow Me, and where I am, there shall My servant also be.

Evidence, indeed!

We can only profess our belief that he is that by the most unworthy, nay, a fatal flattery; it is just as if, having an emperor, you call another by the name, in which case will you not give great and unappeasable offense to him who actually reigns?— an offense he, too, needs to fear on whom you have bestowed the title.

In such circumstances how could she now tell the truth?

“Uncle Reg says that you would like to see me once again.”

[Ephesians 2:19-20] You see the structure of so great a city: yet whereon does all that edifice repose, where does it rest, that it may never fall?

All this was worse than Greek to Gertrude; but she collected what facts she could, and then returned to her mother.

No doubt you would wish to be a prodigy!

For if justice is the mother of all virtues, when they are severally taken away, it is also itself overthrown.

It is a sort of confidential talk between writer and reader….

She was a woman of strong convictions and bitter prejudices; but her heart was soft enough.

In the meantime Phineas was taken to Newgate, and was there confined, almost with the glory and attendance of a State prisoner.

The gentleman saw that plain enough.

He had said, 'I received not, nay I am ready even to give besides, and to spend and much discourse is made on this subject both in the former Epistle and in this.

Why, I want to know, was it of so much importance, that Christ should, when perfectly aware what He really was, exhibit Himself as being that which He was not?

In strength, of manliness he shows the signs;

“Come, let’s get on; you’ll want your dinner, and it’s getting dark.” So they cantered on, and got off their horses at the gate, without another word.

“Then,” said Caroline, “I will put an end to it.”

52. Again, there is a third cause of impossibility. A man may be naturally capable, and his bodily health may allow of his doing some work, which he is yet unable to do by reason of want of skill, or because his rank in life disqualifies him; because, that is, he lacks the required learning or is a slave.

Nor was he directed wrongly; for after walking about twenty minutes, he saw through the trees the legs of a donkey moving on the greensward, at about two hundred yards from him.

Send them I pray you, on their way with your prayers and with your prayers too strengthen me.

Yea moreover, says he, the beasts of the field.

He certainly was not happy in his mind.

For we ought not with things of this nature to act as busybodies, but to be well pleased and content with them.

All our readers will know what is meant by taking orders,—the process by which a layman becomes a deacon or a priest under the bishop’s hands; and most of them will understand that a title to orders is the possession in prospect of such sacerdotal position as will justify a bishop in turning a layman into a clergyman.

“But, Crawley, do let me send you over. There is the horse and gig doing nothing.”

“You can’t stop them women, squoire. There ain’t no dropping into them. But, Lord love ‘ee, she shall come and be missus of my house tomorrow, and what’ll it matter her then what they say? But, squoire did ye hear if the Baronite had been a’ hanging about that place?”

[2 Corinthians 7:1-11] Such are the preparatory exercises of gnostic discipline.

For in the course of the arguments by which he wished to show that heretics should be baptized again, which we have sufficiently considered for our present purpose in the former books, he says: "But some will say, What then will become of those who in times past, coming to the Church from heresy, were admitted without baptism?"

Surely no man's crime can stain with guilt another who does not know of its commission.

And with the poor and maimed do they associate, and their tables are full of these guests; so that for this are they worthy of the heavens.

Before she had been in the house an hour she was reading Greek to him, and there was no wandering in his mind as to the due emphasis to be given to the plaints of the injured heroines, or as to the proper meaning of the choruses.

So they were to Cicero—in whose ears the very name of Consul had in it a resonance of the magnificence of Rome.

He attempted it, and history shows us the result.

“I did not mean to say anything to hurt you, Mr Dale.”

He had said the same to Mr. Rerechild, the surgeon, when they two had had a consultation together at the palace on the occasion of a somewhat alarming birth of a grandchild.

Accordingly human nature did not enter into the creation from any other source, nor grow spontaneously in the parents of the race, but it too had for the author of its own constitution none other than the Father of all.

Had she not lain in his arms while he embraced her?

“It won’t at all do to have me and him together,” said Ayala to herself, alluding of course to Tom Tringle.

Was there then no Altar of Victory?

[Luke 17:21] And concerning this (nature) they hand down an explicit passage, occurring in the Gospel inscribed according to Thomas, expressing themselves thus: He who seeks me, will find me in children from seven years old; for there concealed, I shall in the fourteenth age be made manifest.

They were whisked away, having first duly gone through the amount of badgering which the bride and bridegroom have to suffer at the wedding breakfast-table.

The bishop at first hummed and hawed and affected to deny the truth of what was said.

“You may have that.”

As Hugh Stanbury went over to Lessboro’, and from thence to Nuncombe Putney, he thought more of himself and Nora Rowley than he did of Mr. and Mrs. Trevelyan.

And, Let every one that names the name of Christ depart from iniquity.

“I did say so—because it suited me. But I can hardly imagine that they would have carried me on board with violence, or that they would have put all Gladstonopolis to the sword because I declined to go on board.”

He should be further admonished, however, not to take the term neighbor in a carnal sense, but to understand under it every one who may ever be with him in that holy city, whether there already or not yet apparent.

And all the while the necklace had been lying in her own desk, and she had put it there with her own hands!

In this way the larger number of them perished by famine, and others perished by the sword, and some were taken prisoners, and the city was burned with fire, and the temple and the wall were destroyed.

Her Kate was at last avenged.

But the self-immolation had not been completed, and he now began to think that he could save himself.

Peter, to the brethren beloved and established in the faith of God, peace in the Lord.

Herod the king the Lord Himself has called a fox.

“Not at all. He might give it to you if he pleased. He could not have an heir who would care for it less. But it is right that it should be so. Whether it would suit my taste or not to live as Squire of Bragton,—and I do not think it would suit my taste well,—it ought to be so. I am the next, and it will be my duty.”

When I see you I’ll explain why I am so hurried.

“Who ish dat man there?” asked Mr. Hart.

So far he shows that he and his have found favor, in that they had received ([καταξιωθέντας]) [the Spirit not so they whom he is addressing; for that they had crucified [the Lord].

For who was such a friend to him as you are to me, perpetually endeavouring to surpass yourself in every kind of excellence?

“It is of no use,” said he. “I cannot talk about it. Do you suppose that it does not tear me to the very soul to think of it?”

For he was then speaking to teachers.

Hear them, He said, as entrusted with the key of the kingdom, which is knowledge, which alone can open the gate of life, through which alone is the entrance to eternal life.

Chapter XXIII. Isabel’s Petition

For these four virtues (would that all felt their influence in their minds as they have their names in their mouths!

We are going to have a little supper at the Dragon of Wantly, and, after what we have gone through, upon my word we want it.

The money had been his own money!

“I have made no mistake as yet, Miss Camilla. She so asserted, Mr. Gibson, in the hearing of a friend of mine, and she repeated the assertion here in this room to me just before you came in. She says that you have authorised her to declare that—that—that,—I had better speak it out plainly at once.”

That the need of water is absolute and indispensable, you may learn in this way. On one occasion, when the Spirit had flown down before the water was applied, the Apostle did not stay at this point, but, as though the water were necessary and not superfluous, observe what he says; Can any man forbid water, that these should not be baptized, which have received the Holy Ghost as well as we? [Acts 10:47]

For whatever they may say in reply with respect to the providence of God, we shall be able more effectually to answer it by remarking, that the providence of God was wonderfully manifested in using the transgression of that people for the purpose of calling into the kingdom of God, through Jesus Christ, those from among the Gentiles who were strangers to the covenant and aliens to the promises.

All the life that she remembered, except the last year, had been spent in nursing her other brother; and now to be employed about the bedside of a sufferer was as natural to her as the air she breathed.

This was troublesome. Bagwax did not think that he could explain the matter very shortly. He could not explain the matter at all without showing his envelopes; and how was he to show them in the present condition of that room? He immediately dived into his bag and brought forth the first bundle of envelopes. ‘Perhaps, Sir John, I had better put them out upon the floor,’ he said.

Jane was of opinion that “Miss Anastasia Lynch’s compliments to Mr Barry Lynch, and she didn’t find herself strong enough to move to Dunmore House at present,” would answer all purposes, and be, on the whole, the safest course.

I the Lord God, I the God of Israel, will hear them, and will not forsake them; but I will open rivers in the mountains, and fountains in the midst of the fields.

Chapter 21. That these Things cannot have been spoken of a Mere Man: and that Unbelievers, owing to their Ignorance of Religion, know not even the Origin of their own Existence.

“So do I,” said Johnny;—”I never liked anybody so much in my life.

Or is it I only that feel thus, and do ye rejoice at hearing of these things?

One never meets an uncivil or unruly man, but the women of the lower ranks are not courteous.

You can hardly answer this question by looking for a man’s indifference when undergoing it.

Suppose that God would fill you with honey: if you are full of vinegar, where will you put the honey?

“Oh yes;—and so will Lord George.”

What is it then which made wickedness to be?

Now let us shift our ground a little, and we shall see our way more clearly.

But are you pained and dejected lest it should seem to be owing to My weakness, that there are many who plot against and beat you and harass and scourge you?

I do not believe for a moment that my mother will punish us by any injustice as to money.

The Father.

Neither money nor position can atone to me for low birth.

Isaiah said: This is the man who moves the world and so many kings, and under whom the land shall become desert.

The property is, I believe, wholly unembarrassed, and there are no younger brothers.

“But of course he would like to hear something about money.”

He knew Mrs. Thorne quite as intimately as he did her husband, and liked her quite as well.

[Matthew 22:21] As if He had said, In like manner as Cæsar exacts from you the impression of his image, so also does God: that as the tribute money is rendered to him, so should the soul to God, illumined and stamped with the light of His countenance.

For he had no other care save to be accurately instructed in all things that are to be, and to prove himself an instructor in such.

For the wisdom in the world is not creative, but is that which is created in the works, according to which 'the heavens declare the glory of God, and the firmament shows His handywork. '

But if any one of you, he says, does lack wisdom, let him ask of God, who does give to all men abundantly, and does not upbraid, and it shall be given to him: but let him ask in faith, nothing wavering.

“Yes; she gave a hundred and fifty for him; and I’m told he was as nearly done on Friday as any animal you ever put your eyes on. They say Harriet cried when she got home.” Now the gentleman who was talking about Harriet on this occasion was one with whom she would no more have sat down to table than with her own groom.

And when I had thus made up my mind, there occurred a long time of delay, my worldly affairs being difficult to arrange.

MRS. GOSHAWK. This is not to be borne, Mr. Goshawk. I did not think you would allow me to be so treated in my own house.

Here arises a very important question, Who were these false brethren?

“Well, Mr Daly,” he said, turning round sharply, “I suppose you have done here now, and the sooner you turn your back on this place the betther—An’ you may take this along with you. Av’ you think you’ve frightened my mother or me, you’re very much mistaken.”

Lady Albury had told him that Ayala would be a happy girl if he were in earnest, and he himself was well aware of Ayala’s dependent position, and of the discomforts of Kingsbury Crescent.

[1 John 3:9] The seed of God, i.e.

“Holloa! Mr. Macdermot; so you’ve had a breeze with the attorney, have you? And was Thady here at the time?”

“What do you think I’ve been doing to-day, Frank?”

If the former reflection does not suffice for consolation, the deficiency is made up by the second.

Of the Works of Monks

“Oh, uncle Christopher, I should so like it,” said Lily.

“ Static, bone fida carinis,” was what I heard all the way down,—or rather promises of coming security and marine fruitfulness which are to be results of the works now going on.

Again, if we were to define what desire is in itself, we should call it a seeking for that which is wanting, or a longing for pleasurable enjoyment, or a pain at not possessing that upon which the heart is set, or a state with regard to some pleasure which there is no opportunity of enjoying.

Other parts of England were being done by other men, and I had nearly finished the area which had been entrusted to me.

I shall insert his words as they stand: It is most worthy of remark in Romulus, that other men who are said to have become gods lived in less educated ages, when there was a greater propensity to the fabulous, and when the uninstructed were easily persuaded to believe anything.

Thackeray’s Lectures

She declared to herself that she was weak, impotent, purposeless; but she admitted, on the other hand, that he had displayed more of power than she had ever guessed at his possessing.

“Everybody, I should think, must be kind to you.”

In respect to the trouble about the chapel, Mary Lowther was sympathetic and droll, as she would have been had there been upon her the weight of no love misfortune.

After a few days the master made a feast, and sent to his slave many dishes from his table.

And how would the meeting be arranged?

He of course said nothing to them on the subject, but he looked in their eyes as though he were conscious of being replete with secret importance; and on this very account they were afraid of him.

You make yourself strange to him through pride, in vain puffing up yourself in your carnal mind, and not holding the Head.

But if only they would sincerely seek after the way of perfection, they would rather endeavour with all their might and main to attain to this: viz., that they might strip themselves not only of their wealth but of all their former likings and occupations, and place themselves unreservedly and entirely under the guidance of the Elders so as to have no anxiety not merely about others, but even about themselves.

He knew that the question he had asked was one to which there could be made a true and satisfactory answer, but that his safety lay in the fact that that answer was all but impossible for her to give.

The fifth was Cæsar’s passing of the Rubicon, the battle of Pharsalia, and his subsequent adherence to Cæsar.

How should Graham be made to earn an income, and what allowance must be made to him till he did so?

He appears to me in these words also to hint at the priests of the Jews, as being no longer priests, [but] intruders and corrupters of the law of the priesthood; [Hebrews 5:5] So Christ also glorified not Himself to be made an High Priest.

Well, is it, I wonder, by the God of Marcion?

But the height of the mountains is the purity of the continent.

But He, Who knows what is secret, beckoned to Simon and said to him:— Come hither, Simon, I bid you; does any one stand at the door?

For a few minutes she lay there and as she was lying she calculated whether it would be better to try at this moment to drive him to some clearer declaration, or to make use of what he had already said without giving him an opportunity of protesting that he had not meant to make her an offer of marriage.

Harry sat between them, like a sheep as he was, very meekly—not without some enjoyment of his sheepdom, but still feeling that he was a sheep.

By gesture and by voice, by This, and My, and Son, I declare Him to you.

For sooner would grass endure the application of fire than the devil the flame of love.

He won’t make himself such a fool.

It was not, then, to be all love; and she could perceive that he was going to be serious with her, and, as she feared, perhaps angry.

[Matthew 6:9-12] Even in that evil city let there abound these usuries; let them not enter the walls where the breast is smitten!

“Yes;—yes. I think so.”

One cannot always convey one’s meaning to another; and this difficulty is so infinitely increased when one is not quite clear in one’s own mind!

He must be sharp enough sometimes to others, though ever soft to her, with a silken moustache and a dimpled chin, and perhaps twenty-four years old.

Not Matthew then alone is an Evangelist, nor Mark, as neither was this man alone an Apostle, but they also; even if he be said prëeminently to be this, and they that.

3. Outrages of the Arians against the Bishops.

Rise by loving.

Ver. 14. Bring Zenas the lawyer and Apollos on their journey diligently, that nothing be wanting unto them.

Thereupon Ayala got up and danced with him for the next ten minutes. Again and again before the evening was over she danced with him; and although, in the course of the night, many other partners had offered themselves, and many had been accepted, she felt that Colonel Jonathan Stubbs had certainly been the partner of the evening. Why should he be so hideously ugly? said Ayala to herself, as she wished him good night before she left the room with the Marchesa and Nina.

If there were such they were likely to be mistaken, as the Senator was not a man prone to submit himself to such treatment.

He here seems to me to hint at something other than He expresses; perhaps in their envy they designed to deliver Him up to the Jews; and pointing out this to them, He says, My time is not yet come, that is, the time of the Cross and the Death, why then hasten ye to slay Me before the time?

In the decorations of the church he, being an elderly man, and one with other duties to perform, would of course take no part.

And the latter terminating in love, thereafter gives the loving to the loved, that which knows to that which is known.

Now we must go on to that which is before us, and keep to the thread of what had been affirmed.

And therefore for such merits he at once obtained the glory of proscription also.

She was very good to the old man, tending all his wants, taking his violence with good-humour rather than with submission, not opposing him with direct contradiction when he abused his grandson, but saying little words to mitigate his wrath, if it were possible.

Wherefore, if any one should ask a man who is truly wise for what purpose he was born, he will answer without fear or hesitation, that he was born for the purpose of worshipping God, who brought us into being for his cause, that we may serve Him.

To tell the truth, Lady Lufton had been trying hard to know and love Griselda, but hitherto she had scarcely succeeded to the full extent of her wishes.

The Lord also says, 'I and My Father are One:' and 'He that has seen Me, has seen the Father and the Apostle who was sent by Him to preach, writes, 'Who being the Brightness of His glory, and the express Image of His Person [Hebrews 1:3].'

The stage of Trollope’s drama is not a wide one, but it is far wider than that of Jane Austen.

Muster Thomas Craddock,

My teacher, Gregory of Nazianzus, when I once asked him to explain Luke's phrase [σάββατον δευτερόπρωτον], that is the second-first Sabbath, playfully evaded my request saying: I will tell you about it in church, and there, when all the people applaud me, you will be forced against your will to know what you do not know at all.

But be it which it may, the equality of the Trinity became apparent in this book also, and that God was not triple, but a Trinity; and that the Father and the Son are not, as it were, a double as opposed to the single Holy Spirit: for therein three are not anything more than one.

Thus did the Iberians receive the knowledge of Christ, and until this day they worship him carefully.

Still another has his limbs rotted with jaundice and lives on after his body has become a corpse.

Chapter LXIII..

Madame Brudo. You needn’t mind those sort of things, Jeannette. Jeannette.

Surely it was not the Father?

“I believe you have, Sir;—cheek enough for anything. But mamma must manage it,—mamma and me, between us. Only keep yourself disengaged. You won’t go to the Tyrol,—eh?” Then Frank Houston promised that he would not go to the Tyrol as long as there was a chance open that he might be invited to Glenbogie.

I can easily understand what it is that makes the Earl so devoted a lover.

His intention now was, merely to work upon the timidity and ignorance of Anty and the other females, and to frighten them with a bugbear in the shape of a criminal indictment; and Daly felt that the work he was about was very, very dirty work.

The nearest way from the Deanery to the High Street was through the Cathedral, the transept of which could be entered by crossing the passage.

By your new mode of controversy, says he, you both profess to be a catholic and patronize Manichæus, inasmuch as you designate matrimony both as a great good and a great evil.

And again, Let your eyelids go before your steps [Proverbs 4:25].

It seems indeed not to be connected, but it is even closely so.

“Ah, I shall dine better to-day. I shall get a meal in the Windberg-gasse.”

God is the Judge.

But the claims of the two were equal, and Lord Granville, as being between them, was selected.

And what man will believe that a stone taken from the earth, having no feeling, of sooty colour and dark body, was the mother of the gods?

For eloquent speakers are heard with pleasure; wise speakers with profit.

There was time for only few words before the old man again entered the room, announcing dinner; and those few words had no reference whatever to the Castle Richmond sorrow.

So much for English opinion about America in August last.

Lastly, the wonderful beauty of the world itself is at hand from without, both to our gaze, and to that sense which is called touch, if we come in contact with any of it: and this also has its image within in our memory, to which we revert, when we think of it either in the enclosure of a room, or again in darkness.

For had this discourse been addressed to those who had unworthy conceptions of Christ, it would have been well to mention those things; but, inasmuch as the disturbance comes from persons who fear to incur punishment should they abandon the Law, he therefore mentions that whereby all need of the Law is excluded, I mean the benefit conferred on all through the Cross and the Resurrection.

But if any one maintains that the devils have no bodies, this is not a matter either to be laboriously investigated, or to be debated with keenness.

As all the others in the senate agreed to this, he saved almost all the besieged.

Yes, for they are also displeased at other noble words— both the older Pharisees, and the Pharisees of the present day.

In our endeavours to produce effects, these ideas should be remembered and obeyed.

In the meantime, Avitianus, buried in deep sleep, is smitten by an assailing angel, who says to him, 'Does the servant of God lie at your threshold, and do you continue sleeping?'

“I felt that blow,” said Frank.

“Yes,” said Mary; “he has gone.”

“Oh, how unfortunate!” exclaimed Ralph. Taking all his difficulties into consideration, we must admit that he did not do it badly.

“Pray then, tell Wessemberg from me, but in the strictest confidence, that I would entreat of him and his colleagues to consider, for the salvation of their country, whether some arrangement could not be made by which the Emperor might abdicate.” Can we imagine any foreign minister recommending to an English statesman the abdication of a British sovereign?

“I should like to have been Shakespeare’s shoeblack,” he says.

“He’ll lave it fast enough, if you’ll make it worth his while,” said the Honourable Laurence Fitzgibbon, who also had his expectations.

Hyperides says, But we must investigate things unseen by learning from signs and probabilities. And Isocrates having said, We must conjecture the future by the past, Andocides does not shrink from saying, For we must make use of what has happened previously as signs in reference to what is to be. Besides, Theognis having said:—

And let us look upon this purification as a kind of journey or voyage to our native land.

He thought that, if she would only allow it, he could speak of her love as a calamity which had befallen them, as from the hand of fate, and not as a fault.

You see the swift relenting of a merciful God.

How was he to address her?

So, whereas he seems to be justifying himself, in fact he is terrifying them.

“Three thousand pounds! The last money he gave me was half-a-crown, and I thought that he was so stingy! I particularly wanted ten shillings. I should have liked it so much better now if he had given me a nice new five-pound note.”

“Let me see,—you went and saw her, didn’t you?”

“He is not going to prove a false knight?” asked Lady Eustace, in her lowest whisper.

The design of his confessions being declared, he seeks from God the knowledge of the Holy Scriptures, and begins to expound the words of Genesis 1:1, concerning the creation of the world. The questions of rash disputers being refuted, What did God before he created the world? That he might the better overcome his opponents, he adds a copious disquisition concerning time.

How many of God's commandments are directed against pride!

All the same, they are not pleasant subjects of conversation.

And one is the light from the sun in the radiance; and so we know of but one origin; and the All-framing Word we profess to have no other manner of godhead, than that of the Only God, because He is born from Him.

But his wife remained, awaiting the great occurrence with all the paternal comforts around her, Mr. Traffick having been quite right in surmising that the father would not expose his daughter in her delicate condition to the inclemencies of the weather.

You’ll petition.

To Julianus, Scribo .

He was of so kingly and magnanimous a character that, on an attempt being made by the army to appoint a colleague to share his throne, he uttered the well-known words which are universally repeated, Before I was emperor, soldiers, it was yours to give me the reins of empire: now that I have taken them, it is mine, not yours, to take counsel for the state.

And his fellow-slaves rejoiced to receive the dishes, and began to pray for him, that he might find still greater favour with his master for having so treated them.

He had not dared to show himself, and the feeling had grown upon him from day to day.

For if the Apostles themselves once did this, much more might those.

As though, forsooth, even if a Paul and a Peter made like endeavours, their sonship would in no respects differ from His.

And when you have read and learned the works of faith, you may be made like that tilled land upon which the good seed fell, and produced fruit a hundred-fold and sixty-fold and thirty-fold.

He praises even the coward Lepidus, who was in command of legions, and was now Governor of Gaul beyond the Alps and of Northern Spain, and proposes that the people should put up to him a gilt statue on horseback—so important was it to obtain, if possible, his services.

‘Are you aware of what they are doing at the Grange?’ he asked, in a voice which was not so guarded as it should have been on such an occasion.

You know Mr. Percival, sir?” Frank knew neither Mr. Percival nor Mr. Nappie, and at this moment cared nothing for either of them.

Crucifixion was the punishment ready prepared in capital cases; and for lesser crimes, fetters.

I am poor and of low estate; I neither possess riches nor do I think it right to accept them if they are offered me; and, similarly, let me tell them that it is impossible for them to have the riches of Christ, that is, the knowledge of the Scriptures, and the world's riches as well.

Let us not pass over the groans of the poor with deaf ear, but with prompt kindness bestow our mercy on the needy, that we may deserve to find mercy in the judgment.

Because to the many it would have seemed a mere apparition, inasmuch as they understood not the secret of the mystery.

Mr Maguire may be said to have made himself odious to the fashionable world at large, and the fate of poor Margaret Mackenzie with her lost fortune, and the additional misfortune of her clerical pledged protector, had recommended itself as being truly interesting to all the feeling hearts of the season.

Indeed, the money must be there some time on the Saturday.

Now that your Excellency's royal solicitude is in all matters of government praiseworthy, you ought, for the increase of your glory, to show yourself more watchful, and careful not to allow those whom you rule with counsel outwardly to perish inwardly among themselves.

And will you not learn the bye-paths of the road, lest from ignorance thou fall down a precipice?

Similarly, says he, our Lord is in respect to Himself what He is essentially, but when named according to the differences of His operations, He has not one appellation in all cases, but takes a different name according to each notion produced in us from the operation.

The North, I think, will ultimately perceive that it will gain much by the secession of the South; but it will be very difficult to make the West believe that secession will suit its views.

In that prolonged expression there was a curse as deep as any that Ernulphus ever gave. Alas! such is the forgiveness of too many a Christian!

And see the great confusion which fell out on both sides.

Edith was very good, and she should still be his pet and his favourite,—but Walter Marrable should be told that he might marry and bring his bride to Dunripple, and that if he would sell out of his regiment, the family lawyer should be instructed to make such arrangements for him as would have been made had he actually been a son.

Our Saviour, dearly-beloved, was born today: let us be glad.

Neither teach him to be captivated by laughter, nor by a loose dress, lest you prepare a poison against yourself.

That she should have been excited by what passed between you is no more than natural.

The inhabitants of Gaza, being inflamed with rage against them, dragged them from their house, in which they had concealed themselves and cast them into prison, and beat them.

But from the time that the burden of ecclesiastical cares was laid upon me, all these recreations have passed from my hand so completely, that now, when I cannot but respect your wish and command—for it is more than a request,— I have difficulty in even finding what I had written.

the bulldog returns minus an ear, with an eye hanging loose, his nether lip torn off, and one paw bitten through and through.

Dishonouring the good and saving work of the Word, the consecrated agape, with pots and pouring of sauce; and by drink and delicacies and smoke desecrating that name, they are deceived in their idea, having expected that the promise of God might be bought with suppers.

For this reason we must take all pains about the true Faith, and those things which have been set forth and decreed by the holy Fathers, that always, and in all circumstances, they may be kept and guarded whole and uninjured.

Bethink yourself what is this Republic; what it is you seek to be in it, and who you are that seek it.

And again: So also ought men to love their wives even as their own bodies.

Dockwrath would not dare to bring forward such a forgery as that.

Was he, or was he not a wolf? That was the question which Mrs. Bell scarcely knew how to answer. Hetta had given her voice, saying he was lupine. Mr. Beckard’s opinion she had not liked to ask directly. Mr. Beckard she thought would probably propose to Hetta; but as yet he had not done so. And, as he was still a stranger in the family, she did not like in any way to compromise Susan’s name. Indirectly she had asked the question, and, indirectly also, Mr. Beckard’s answer had been favourable.

Perhaps Frank might know; but it was clear that Lady de Courcy did not: at any rate, she did not know how to express herself. Had she said out her mind plainly, she would probably have spoken thus: “I want you to make love to Miss Dunstable, certainly; or at any rate to make an offer to her; but you need not make a show of yourself and of her, too, by doing it so openly as all that.” The countess, however, did not want to reprimand her obedient nephew, and therefore did not speak out her thoughts.

I suppose, now, you wouldn’t call Barry Lynch one of your poor people; but in my mind he’s the poorest crature living this day in county Galway.

As in a certain place the Lord Himself testified, saying, Every one that loves Him that begot, loves Him also that is begotten of Him.

“You’ll let it I suppose,” Peregrine had asked.

Now, look again at his subterranean lurking-place, and believe his story, if you can.

At last she uttered a long sigh.

“It’s quite as civil as I wish him to be,” said Polly.

“I don’t know what you mean by my own friends. I endeavour always to ask yours.”

He could not dare to face his friends in London as a young briefless barrister.

When therefore Christ had foretold great things to him, and committed the world to him, and spoke beforehand of his martyrdom, and testified that his love was greater than that of the others, desiring to have John also to share with him, he said, And what shall this man do?

Temptation to Him was not necessary: the temptation of Christ is our learning, but if we listen to His answers to the devil, in order that, when ourselves are tempted, we may answer in like manner, we are then entering through the gate, as you have heard it read in the Gospel.

I charge you, with the importunity, with which I am in the habit of knocking at your door even in the middle of the night, being driven by fear of a refusal to the modest attitude of a supplicant, to show me kindness once more, and to expound the Benedictions on the twelve Patriarchs.

Because he cannot say that no one has told him, no one admonished him; since therefore after admonition he continues the same, he is self-condemned.

I don’t mean to be caught till some great swell comes this way.

“It has,” he says, “been my first endeavor to deserve the high rank of the State; my second, to have been thought to deserve it.

I do not ask in what guise He spoke to Cain and Abel and Noah, and in what guise He was near to Enoch also, blessing him.

For, he says, that is not absolutely ineffable which is named (so)—although undoubtedly we call this ineffable—but that which is non-ineffable.

This then is said in order to full assurance, that it is altogether necessary for them to be punished: but what was said before, was said that they also might be honored, because they suffer these things on your account.

When once she believed in her servant there was nobody like that servant.

Attend therefore, beloved: as far as the Lord allows, let us say somewhat of this Psalm, which indeed you already know; for the fresh mention of truth is sweet.

“He’s as good as any other old man.”

Yet the Jews were discontented, though enjoying such delightful fare.

Listen to the preacher exhorting not to be hasty to utter anything before God, for God, (says he,) is in heaven above, and thou upon earth beneath [Ecclesiastes 5:2] .

Chapter 5.— Against the Title of the Epistle of Manichæus

She had not forgiven him.

There; I’ve told it all now, as though you were looking at me.

If Harry had just cause for anger and sorrow in regard to Nokes and Boscobel, he certainly had equal cause to be proud of the stanchness of his remaining satellites.

The earth, let willingness move her or not,

Roaming thus through the fairest fields of scripture I have culled its loveliest flowers to weave for your brows a garland of penitence; for my aim is that, flying on the wings of a dove, you may find rest and make your peace with the Father of mercy.

In the meantime he could, he thought, perform his duties from Hoppet Hall as well as on the spot.

This is the advice of the Apostle Paul, who, after saying that he was not yet perfect, [Philippians 3:12] a little later adds, Let us, therefore, as many as are perfect, be thus minded, [Philippians 3:15] — meaning perfect to a certain extent, but not having attained to a perfection sufficient for us; and then immediately adds, And if, in any thing, you be otherwise minded, God shall reveal even this unto you.

For when the accuser and traitor condemns himself, and he who gives sentence puts off from himself the guilt, and such a vision appears the very night, and even as condemned he begs Him off, what kind of plea will they have?

He shows how heretics pervert holy Scripture, by replying to the argument drawn from the Apostle's words, Without father, without mother, etc.: Heb. vii.

7. Further, because he had run down the possessors of this gift, as though they had no such great thing; that he might not seem to hold them cheap, as being himself destitute of it, see what he says:

(Gregory after his resignation of the Patriarchal See of Constantinople had retired to Nazianzus, and had been persuaded to undertake the administration of the diocese then vacant, until the vacancy should be filled.

For if He had distinctly stated the day, he would seem to have laid down a rule of life for that one age which was nearest to the judgment, and the just man in the earlier times would be more negligent, and the sinner more free from care.

But the story, as a story of Roman life, is interesting, and it gives a slight aid to history in explaining the condition of things which Sulla had produced.

Among them there was none more low, more pious, more sincere, or more given to interference.

This power Mr. Prendergast possessed, and therefore it may be said that Sir Thomas had chosen his surgeon judiciously.

She had promised her lover that she would do this thing.

Then, at last, when she felt that she was no longer quite a young woman, she allowed herself to attempt to form friendships for herself, and among her friends was one of the other sex.

But God bids us that we be both wise and continent, without which goods we cannot be just and perfect.

Or who would resort to Him Whose being has been shown by the enemies of the true Lord to be improper and unsubstantial?

You must teach yourself to know this,—to be quite sure of it.

She had forgiven his pharisaical arrogance, and even his greasy face and oily, vulgar manners.

Many things are the cause of this: both preconceived opinion, and human causes ([αἰτίαι]).

But we have told, in the sixteenth book, when or by whom it was founded.

The light straws are tossed about by the tempest, the feeble trees are overthrown by the onset of the whirlwind.

“‘Deed and I don’t think he was iver throubled much in respect of money. But money doesn’t matter, Mr. Neville.”

These accounts agree also with those of the Greeks.

I know that my skill and learning are inadequate, for I feel it most difficult to express in words my own belief as I understand it in my heart; far less easy must it be to expound the statements of others.

And how will she answer you?

If, however, he should teach that the immortal being of the soul also is sown along with the mortal body, he will not be believed; for the Almighty alone breathes into man the undying and undecaying part, as also it is He alone who is Creator of the invisible and indestructible.

And indeed there did often exist in England at this time a misapprehension as to Irish wants, which led to some misuses of the funds which England so liberally sent.

And why does the lad ask the question?

And this is no small consolation, that they are suffering these things both for Christ, and for the Gentiles' conviction.

My Irish life had been much better.

Psalm 116

But, though the will were in his own power, it could not be abolished by his own hands.

It would be very nice to be a marchioness, but she certainly was not in love with Lord George.

And yet she must tell him to lie, and having resolved so to tell him, must use all her intellect to defend the lie,—and to insist upon it.

But to go back to the point, who that pays attention can help suspecting that the intention of Manichæus in denying Christ's being born of a woman, and having a human body, was that His passion, the time of which is now a great festival all over the world, might not be observed by the believers in himself, so as to lessen the devotion of the solemn commemoration which he wished in honor of the day of his own death?

In our many dealings with native tribes we have repeatedly had to make treaties.

Immediately that Mr. Gauntlet’s death was known at Hurst Staple—and it was known there two hours after Adela knew it herself—Mrs.

George Hotspur.

Till yesterday I did doubt whether she would use her strength to perpetuate her own prejudices and to put down the progress made by another people.

But now,—to be taken back by Philip to Launay!

Had then the Apostle said, 'by so much has the Son precedence of the Angels,' or 'by so much greater,' you would have had a plea, as if the Son were compared with the Angels; but, as it is, in saying that He is 'better,' and differs as far as Son from servants, the Apostle shows that He is other than the Angels in nature.

For the two, says He, shall be one flesh.

It is hard to be impressively eloquent when one is interrupted at every best turned period, even by a supporting voice.

He had known when he took his present place that he must yield to others; but he had not known how terrible it is to have to yield when a principle is in question,—how great is the suffering when a man finds himself compelled to do that which he thinks should not be done!

“Is it freezing now?” he asks from under the bedclothes.

During the minutes so occupied the operation must have been made with the nail.

It is not any bread and wine that we hold sacred as a natural production, as if Christ were confined in grain or in vines, as the Manichæans fancy, but what is truly consecrated as a symbol.

These treasures had been greatly increased by the donations of pious men of various provinces, who had been induced by their admiration of Epiphanius to entrust him with the distribution of their alms during their lives, or to bequeath their property to him for this purpose at their death.

Then came Peter and said unto Him, Lord, how often shall my brother sin against me and I forgive him?

In doing him justice it must be owned that he kept nothing back from her of that which he learned, probably feeling that he might best achieve success in his present project by such honesty,—feeling also, no doubt, the girl’s own strength in discovering truth and falsehood.

We in our English life are daily approaching nearer to that republican level which is equally averse to high summits and to low depths.

‘Or Marie herself?’

Many consider that their own virtue is sufficient for their salvation, and if they duly regulate their own life, that nothing further is wanting to save them.

And in the preceding pages we have already shown, that He would not have come into the hands of men had He not so willed.

That’s all I can say,” he continued.

“I’m afraid it is so,” said John Gordon.

[Luke 22:33] The Physician had felt his pulse, and knew what was going on within His patient's soul: the patient knew it not.

Besides it will be impossible for a thing either to have been tardy all the while it remained unannounced, or to have approached from the time it shall begin to be announced.

Thus used they, too, (like the Psychics), to find the angelic bread of xerophagy displeasing: they preferred the fragrance of garlic and onion to that of heaven.

Poor Beatrice was robbed of half her joy: over and over again her brother asked her whether she had yet seen Mary, and she was obliged as often to answer that she had not.

When two people go to play billiards, a third may surely accompany them.

“Yes; I saw it,” said Cousin Henry, gasping for breath.

Therefore Moses, and the prophets also themselves, call the law which was given to the Jews a testament: for unless the testator shall have died, a testament cannot be confirmed; nor can that which is written in it be known, because it is closed and sealed.

“Not for worlds,” replied the other, “were I not certain that your heart would follow your hand. Whoever may be your husband, you will love him. But ask my mother, talk to her, ask her advice; she at any rate will only tell you that which must be best for your own happiness. Go to her, Fanny; if her advice be different from mine, I will not say a word farther to urge my suit.”

For Alexander waged war against Darius, and overcame him, and made himself master of the whole sovereignty, after routing and destroying his camp.

Chapter 8. Of the Birth of Jesus in the Spirit and in the Flesh: of Spirits and the Testimonies of Prophets.

“I have no doubt it would be gay, and we at home are very dull.”

And if you desert, you are manifest [by it] to all.

I assisted very many in their walks of life.

The ordinary Hottentot with his daily pound of mutton, properly cooked in a first-class kitchen and nothing but convict labour to do, would probably find himself very comfortable.

[Matthew 5:19] May he enjoy the crown of virtue, and in return for his daily martyrdoms may he follow the Lamb robed in white raiment!

She also had a novel with her.

“Mary Jane Walker,” if she could be very simple, would do, or “Blanche De Veau,” if she were able to maintain throughout a somewhat high-stilted style of feminine rapture.

The lion was roaring, wishing to attack, the bull seeming to toss with its horns, the serpent writhing but unable to approach, and the wolf as it rushed on was restrained; altogether the noises of the apparitions, with their angry ragings, were dreadful.

The permeation moreover did not come of the flesh but of the divinity: for it is impossible that the flesh should permeate through the divinity: but the divine nature once permeating through the flesh gave also to the flesh the same ineffable power of permeation ; and this indeed is what we call union.

There has taken place a great change in Ireland since the days in which I lived at Banagher, and a change so much for the better, that I have sometimes wondered at the obduracy with which people have spoken of the permanent ill condition of the country.

They carried off troops of captives.

“Victorine—my own Victorine,” said he, “my greatest grief is over now. I feared that we were not to meet again, and that thought alone was almost too much for my courage.”

His complexion was fair and almost pink; he was small in height and slender in limb, but well-made; and his voice was of peculiar sweetness.

On Repentance and Remission of Sins, and Concerning the Adversary.

For however long the interval of time might be before Jesus Christ came, beyond doubt it was after the death of king David, to whom He was so promised, that He behooved to come, who should build an house of God, not of wood and stone, but of men, such as we rejoice He does build.

He had been there by eleven o’clock, and had remained ever since.

Of the Duke Balacius, and how, warned by Antony, he met with a miserable end.

Rachel Ray underwent a fate which no other novel of mine has encountered.

And therefore we must believe that Wisdom was generated before any beginning that can be either comprehended or expressed.

Granted, says Jovinianus, that there is a difference between marriage and virginity, what have you to say to this—Suppose a virgin and a widow were baptized, and continued as they were, what difference will there be between them?

But he found that others, as well as he, were labouring under a stress of sentiment; and when about to tell his own tale, he had learned that a tale was to be told to him.

When they are told of gods who are fornicators, they deny that these are fables, but believe them.

There is a whole district of the Transvaal Republic,—a county as we should say,—lying outside or beyond the “ Maquasie Spruit,”—called Bloomhof, with two towns, Bloomhof and Christiana, each having perhaps a dozen houses,—and this the Transvaal never did surrender.

Rememberest thou not those former words?

When the first man transgressed the law of God, he began to have another law in his members which was repugnant to the law of his mind, and he felt the evil of his own disobedience when he experienced in the disobedience of his flesh a most righteous retribution recoiling on himself.

It was declared to be in favour of Moggs and Westmacott.

Chapter 18. Family of Saturn.

“No, Mr Kissing, it isn’t,” said a young clerk from the other end of the room.

After that Margaret determined to have as little to do with the carriage as possible, and on that evening she learned from her cousin that the horses had been sold to the man who farmed the land, and were hired every other day for two hours’ work.

For when we do good works, we have Him debtor for our good works only; but when we do not so much as think we have done any good work, then also for this disposition itself; and more for this, than for the other things: so that this is equivalent to our good works.

Therefore, neither is he that plants anything, nor he that waters, but God that gives the increase.

For by the use therein of the term simplicity they politely call me silly.

I saw no vegetables but potatoes and onions, and was told that as a rule the people are satisfied with them.

“He has given a blackguard a licking, that is all,” said Harry.

He ate and drank after His resurrection, and appeared in clothing, and allowed Himself to be touched, that He might make His doubting Apostles believe in His resurrection.

I thought that he should have understood that there was something higher to be achieved than an extra year or two among the prettinesses of Little Christchurch.

“I don’t remember what the man looked like.”

“You had better ask your wife, Sir Thomas. And, if you find that what I have said is true, I think you will own that I have been obliged to explain myself as I have done. As you have told me to my face that I have been guilty of untruth, I shall now leave you.” With this he walked out of the room, and the words which Sir Thomas threw after him had no effect in recalling him.

Think too, I pray, of this beautiful eye, when diseased and old, wasting with despair, swelling with anger, how hateful to the sight it is, how quickly it perishes, how sooner even than pictured ones, it is effaced.

But not such is my song, which has come to loose, and that speedily, the bitter bondage of tyrannizing demons; and leading us back to the mild and loving yoke of piety, recalls to heaven those that had been cast prostrate to the earth.

That the idol is anything?

But these I set aside for the present; do you meanwhile show me the Church.

I should hardly interest my readers if I were to go into the details of this family feud.

“Not now, George; you are angry, and I will not speak to you in your anger.”

Hard it is to find a man pure from injustice.

He shook them more in sorrow than in anger; for he knew that Macassar was in love, and he remembered the days of his youth.

Observe that each word maintains its own rank, showing at once God's grace, and the obedient temper of them that receive salvation.

“Well?” said her ladyship, sitting up and looking frightened.

[Song of Songs 1:4] Let my soul rejoice in the Lord: for He has clothed me with a garment of salvation, and a robe of gladness: He has crowned me with a garland as a bridegroom , and decked me with ornaments as a bride: that the soul of every one of you may be found not having spot or wrinkle or any such thing [Ephesians 5:7 I do not mean before you have received the grace, for how could that be?

“Do let Mrs. Robarts go, please,” said Grace.

[Acts 4:8] Observe his wisdom: he does not say outright, In the Name of Jesus we did it, but how?

If we were to send a High Commissioner to Bloemfontein with thirty policemen and an order that the country should he given up to us, I do not know that President Brand and the Volksraad could do better than comply,—with such loudest remonstrance as they might make.

My handwriting was in truth wretched.

The grass withers, and the flower falls away.

[Matthew 6:26] as if it belonged to the soul to eat, to the body to be clothed.

Thus tribulation is not perpetual, but there will be also repose; only in our tribulation, let us give thanks to God always.

Of Norman, Charley had seen less even than of his cousin.

Besides, to the Jews He spoke not so clearly; for had He said, You cannot come to the Father but by Me, they would straightway have deemed the matter mere boasting; but now by concealing this, He threw them into perplexity.

The man had been ill used.

Her nose and mouth were perfect.

In fact, Ariovistus was an intolerable nuisance to that eastern portion of Gaul.

When this was read aloud, I heard the name Donatus among the bishops to whom the writing had been sent.

“It was not so. The Duchess knew it. The present condition of things is altogether an accident.”

You say that you cut off anything that was offensive and replaced it by what was better.

Though there might also be some wrenching to be done within his heart, he would never come back again uninvited.

“Yes, indeed. Have you not often heard that young men may be infatuated? It has chanced that I have been the Cinderella for his eyes.”

Nor in this confidence am I disturbed by any fear of that uncertainty as to the morrow which must be present when we lean upon human weakness, and which I have in a former paragraph bewailed.

The birds injure their feathers by sitting and at every hatching lose two months.

And those gifts certain others also, of no great worth, received in the beginning, as they who said, Lord, did we not prophesy by Your Name, and do mighty works?

There would be ample for himself and for a curate.

Samples of each sort from time to time rise high in political life, carried thither apparently by Epicurean concourse of atoms; and it often happens that the more confident samples are by no means the most capable.

But the Scripture must be attended to, if haply Song do not denote a joyful theme.

The champagne had ceased to flow in a perennial stream.

But let no man believe anything which runs counter to the perfectly unambiguous declaration, that by the offense of one all are brought into condemnation, and that from this condemnation nothing sets men free but the grace of God through our Lord Jesus Christ, in whom alone life is given to all who are made alive.

Take any spirited fellow of twenty, and ask him whether he would like to go to Mexico for the next ten years!

Every month, every day, should have its purpose.

For as in the case of husbandmen, the seeds are indeed cast into the earth once for all, yet do not constantly remain, but require much preparation withal, and if they do not break up the earth, and cover over the seeds sown, they sow for the birds that gather grain; so we also, unless by constant remembrance we cover over what has been sown, have but cast it all into the air.

“I do give my entire mind to Cæsar,” said Clifford, junior.

That is to say, the providence of Him by whose power and sovereignty it has come about that your body was brought up to its present stature, can also clothe you; but that it is not by your care that it has come about that your body should arrive at this stature, may be understood from this circumstance, that if you should take thought, and should wish to add one cubit to this stature, you cannot.

There would be time before the meeting of the Railway Board.

He was noble-looking, gracious, and aristocratic from the crown of his little head to the soles of his little feet.

“Barty, my boy, speak to me,” said the mother.

And others returned their branches nearly all green, the smallest part only, the top, being withered, but they had cracks in them; and these stood apart.

The first man is of the earth, earthy; the second man is the Lord from heaven.

Perhaps, however, he thinks the name of Christ to be necessary on this account, that by His gospel we may learn how we ought to live; but not that we may be also assisted by His grace, in order withal to lead good lives.

“I don’t know about that,” said Mr. Arabin, gently laughing. “That is an opinion on which very much may be said on either side. It is strange how widely the world is divided on a subject which so nearly concerns us all, and which is so close beneath our eyes. Some think that we are quickly progressing towards perfection, while others imagine that virtue is disappearing from the earth.”

And, since you have learned, through the Spirit teaching you in the school of the heart, the precepts of life— to despise all earthly things and to speed to the heavenly country—in proportion as you have advanced in good you think what is good of others.

But as we do so, let me say that one of the great charms of Niagara consists in this: that over and above that one great object of wonder and beauty, there is so much little loveliness— loveliness especially of water I mean.

He acknowledged himself to have been wrong in misleading his correspondent, and allowing her to imagine that she possessed his heart.

In point of fact, our friend the ploughman must go and work, even though his o’erlaboured bones be tired, as no doubt they often are.

Christ, then, does not baptize with water, but His disciples.

It is of ourselves.

Had he gone, it would have seemed so much more natural.

“Well, yes; my intimate friend is my mother, and she would never dream of such a thing. She hates pictures.”

She has the whole of the Scotch property for her life.

“I suppose you had better go now.”

At the instigation of Mr. Monk, Sir James Deering, who was really the father of the House, an independent member, but one who generally voted with the Coalition, consented to ask the question in the House of Commons.

Francis Geraldine.

I have received by Cyprian, deacon, three letters, or rather three little books, at the same time, from your Excellency, containing what you call sundry questions, but what I feel to be animadversions on opinions which I have published, to answer which, if I were disposed to do it, would require a pretty large volume.

The two were sitting together after dinner on the lawn, and Mrs Baggett had brought them their coffee.

Fenwick had written a very angry letter to Lord Trowbridge, to which he had got no answer, and Lord Trowbridge had written a very silly letter to the bishop, in replying to which the bishop had snubbed him.

For it becomes those that are servants of one God, that their possessions and furniture should exhibit the tokens of one beautiful life; and that each individually should be seen in faith, which shows no difference, practising all other things which are conformable to this uniform mode of life, and harmonious with this one scheme.

Was he to bear all this, to receive as usual his now hated income, and be known as one of those greedy priests who by their rapacity have brought disgrace on their church?

[Isaiah 5:8] Another has defiled the land with usury and interest, both gathering where he had not sowed and reaping where he had not scattered, [Matthew 25:26] farming, not the land, but the necessity of the needy.

He knows our forming.

Come with the wise men, and in suppliant adoration worship the true King.

Now in these two authors whom I have selected as specimens of the rest, and in other ecclesiastical writers who both speak the truth and speak it well—speak it, that is, judiciously, pointedly, and with beauty and power of expression—many examples may be found of the three styles of speech, scattered through their various writings and discourses; and the diligent student may by assiduous reading, intermingled with practice on his own part, become thoroughly imbued with them all.

“Pray do no such thing,” said she; “you can do no good and will only make an unseemly quarrel in the house. You have no idea how headstrong she can be.”

“A jury of her countrymen has found her innocent,” Moulder had said with much heat; “and any one who says she’s guilty after that is a libeller and a coward, to my way of thinking. If a jury of her countrymen don’t make a woman innocent, what does?”

“It isn’t my way at present, Aunt Stanbury. But a man shouldn’t promise.”

What should he do next?

Lucy’s silence had been a reproach to her, though she herself had been able to do so little to abolish the silence.

If the disinherited one would give him his hand and let bygones be bygones, he would do the same.

“You might,—might do anything. You ought to do something. You know that you ought. You know that your father is right in what he says.”

Dirty, fierce-looking, uncouth, repellent as they are, there is always about them a something of personal dignity which is not compatible with an Englishman’s ordinary hat and pantaloons.

Many have thus compelled their domestics and slaves.

If this is to make her miserable, and if, as I gather, she has committed no great fault, will it not be—wicked?” Mr. Gray sat silent for a few moments, looking him in the face.

It was a miserable-looking place with a pigsty and a dungheap and a small horsepond or duck-puddle all close around it.

What then is, I pray for them?

I remember a case when I was young on the road; it was at Nottingham.

But this made the feeling the stronger that they would all be strange up in London.

“Dreadful, indeed, my child! It is my duty to tell them to you; but I must caution you, before I do so, to place a guard upon your feelings. That which I have to say must necessarily alter all your future prospects, and, unfortunately, make your marrying Herbert Fitzgerald quite impossible.”

“Is it about the money?” she asked.

He sent two more to the same persons after they had returned to the Church.

At last the command was given: Surrender the Basilica.

The second sense is hearing, whereby voices and sounds are perceived. And it distinguishes these as sharp or deep, or smooth or loud. Its organs are the soft nerves of the brain, and the structure of the ears. Further, man and the ape are the only animals that do not move their ears.

“Tell me, Mademoiselle, that you forgive me,” said he, “tell me that you pardon my love, and above all, pardon me for speaking of it. I have now but a few hours’ breath, and in them I feel that I shall be but feeble; but tell me that you forgive me, and, though dying, I shall be happy.”

Then neither sloth nor drowsiness invades you: how can they, when your soul is aroused by such great things?

“No. You are always thinking of yourself. You couldn’t be disinterested.”

[Luke 7:54] I say, if He feed you, not doing these things, much more will He reward you, doing them.

He is beginning to feel the wearisomeness of the triumph; and indeed it was a time in which the utter hollowness of triumphal pretensions must have made the idea odious to him.

After their first greeting she had seated herself on the sofa, and there was that in her manner which showed both to her mother and sister that she was somewhat confused,—that she had something to say as to which there was some hesitation.

It shows a proper regard for religion.

“Lady Ongar.”

The sum he had given her was exactly wanted to make up the required number of twenty-five.

The argument from the cause will appear, if we consider whether man was made at random and in vain, or for some purpose; and if for some purpose, whether simply that he might live and continue in the natural condition in which he was created, or for the use of another; and if with a view to use, whether for that of the Creator Himself, or of some one of the beings who belong to Him, and are by Him deemed worthy of greater care.

“You should not condescend to be thwarted in such a matter. You lower yourself by admitting such a feeling.” And yet he writhed himself under the lashes of Mr. Slide!

As he looked at her, knowing that she was at this moment softened by false hopes, he could nevertheless see in her eye the wrath of the wild animal.

It behooved the Foreign Secretary of State to declare openly that England intended to side either with one party or with the other, or else to remain neutral between them.

Come then, let us first teach you this, that what happens is from your own listlessness, and that thou at the first gavest entrance to the Devil, and now if you have a mind, with much ease may drive him off.

In truth, the tedium of those hours in Princess Royal Crescent had been very heavy.

It was not a part of his plan to tell her anything of the means by which he hoped to make himself a wealthy man.

It is my meditation all the day [Psalm 109:97].

There was Maude Hippesley, the Dean’s daughter, and Miss Altifiorla, the daughter of an Italian father who had settled in Exeter with her maternal aunt,—in poor circumstances, but with an exalted opinion as to her own blood.

‘Call them what you will for me.

It will be a point of honour with you to drink health and prosperity to our friend Bertram with all the honours.

Not to ask, or even if they asked, to hold their peace, and give it up.

From thence I went down into the parish of St. Anns, on the northern side. They all speak of St. Anna as being the most fertile district in the island. The inhabitants are addicted to grazing rather than sugarmaking, and thrive in that pursuit very well. But all Jamaica is suited for a grazing-ground, and all the West Indies should be the market for their cattle.

And the leader of the pearls, on the finding of which the rest are found with it, is the very costly pearl, the Christ of God, the Word which is superior to the precious letters and thoughts in the law and the prophets, on the finding of which also all the rest are easily taken.

Thus the part possessing is entirely different from the part possessed; and yet does not divide into two persons Him who is an object of thought in them.

But He who had said, Ask, and you shall receive, [John 16:24] gave to them when they asked, that death which each one had wished for.

He had already nearly got beyond this with Marie Melmotte; but Marie was by no means quick in discovering his deficiencies.

[Philippians 1:14] Every where you bear about the chain, everywhere you put forward your bonds, and boastest in the thing.

Men and women get up painting as other men and women get up botany, or entomology, or conchology, and a very good subject painting is for the purpose.

To this pious duty of good works, therefore dearly beloved, the day of Apostolic institution invites us, on which the first collection of our holy offerings has been prudently and profitably ordained by the Fathers; in order that, because at this season formerly the Gentiles used superstitiously to serve demons, we might celebrate the most holy offering of our alms in protest against the unholy victims of the wicked.

Two miles below the falls the river is crossed by a suspension bridge of marvelous construction.

And Socrates says, that the law was not made for the sake of the good.

Warburton suggested that I should invite Sir Orlando at once; but there I was obdurate.

Your umbel servant to command,

And therefore there could not be from eternity, as was suggested, an evil will in that thing in which there had been previously a natural good, which the evil will was able to diminish by corrupting it.

LETTER 20

And Alice had managed generally to drive her friend away from those topics which were so dangerous,—those allusions to her childlessness, and those hints that Burgo Fitzgerald was still in her thoughts.

But it is not so with your horse,—and is less so in the Transvaal than in any other country in which I have travelled.

Oh, yes;—there were three payments to be made; one to you, one to your son, and one to the mortgagee.

And then shall we be able also to be counted worthy of the lovingkindness which comes of God, through the grace and mercies of His only-begotten Son, with whom to the Father, together with the Holy Ghost, be glory, might, honor, now and forever and ever.

12. Why need we relate the licentious, shameless deeds of the man, or enumerate the multitude with whom he committed adultery? For he could not pass through a city without continually corrupting women and ravishing virgins.

To ordinary thinkers, to unprejudiced outsiders,—to Americans, let us say, or Frenchmen,—there does not seem to be room even for an argument.

The exertion necessary for not crying was quite enough for her.

“There was some story of her being terribly in debt when she married Sir Florian Eustace,” said Diana, the fourth.

“Gertrude!” exclaimed Ayala, who also knew of the engagement with Mr. Houston.

“Not in the least. Nothing will ever do any good. As for offending him, you might as well swear at a tree, and think to offend it. There’s comfort in that, anyway. I wonder whether he’d talk to you if I went away?”

“Scolding I suppose will be no good now,” she said.

The modern bishop is a working man, and he is selected in order that he may work.

Fulfil not a part, but the whole, if the Law is of force; but if it be not of force, not even a part.

“Don’t you, Mr. Biffin? And what kind of thing do you like?”

“I thought it right to show it to you,” said Mrs. Robarts.

Both Felix and Elpidius, it is said, were Christians, but to please the impious emperor apostatised from the true religion.

He knew, however, that a great liberty had been taken with his sister’s money, and that his firm had no longer the power of providing her with the security which had been promised to her.

Chapter 17 Proof that God did not appoint the Levitical dispensation for his own sake, or as requiring such service; for he does, in fact, need nothing from men.

The Word, because He is without blemish; the Power, because He is perfect; the Son, because He is begotten of the Father; the Wisdom, because He is one with the Father, one in eternity, one in Divinity.

Nor is it I alone or a few others who wish to be happy, but truly all; which, unless by certain knowledge we knew, we should not wish with so certain a will.

To this Fanny said nothing. Why should she? She was not Mr. Ingram’s keeper.

First of all then, even if it were indifferent, not even in that case were it right to disregard it, when one knows that the greatest evils are both produced and increased by it, and that it oftentimes terminates in fornication.

He never shook in his shoes if Tappitt were angry, nor affected to hasten his steps if Tappitt were in a hurry, nor would he even laugh at Tappitt’s jokes, if,—as was too usual,—such jokes were not mirth-moving in their intrinsic nature.

You need not be afraid of fornication.

But if this has been blotted out by absolute forgetfulness, yet once again, under the guidance of teaching, one will come to that which had altogether dropped away, and it will be found such as it was.

She knew that Patience was not there; and had retreated upstairs.

If the House would allow him he would very shortly explain his idea of constitutional government as carried on in this country.

She did not quail before his eyes, but seemed, though kneeling before him, to look up at him as though she would defy him.

“I’ve no money,” hoarsely croaked Barry.

I cannot bear to ascend this throne, without effecting some great reformation.

Then a meeting was called for Saturday, the 18th December, to be held at that well-known sporting little inn The Bobtailed Fox.

But by that time the hospitality of the citizens had put me in good humour with the city and had enabled me to forget the iniquity of that sabbatical Custom House official.

Chapter 12.— Of the Greatness of the First Transgression, on Account of Which Eternal Punishment is Due to All Who are Not Within the Pale of the Saviour's Grace.

You have no right to ask it, and the pursuit is open to me as to any other man who may choose to follow it.

Nay, how is it possible (for I say the opposite thing) if one is rich?

“I suppose she likes dancing, and there is no harm in the boy,” said Marie.

When he had got as far as the first offer of the presentation, he ceased reading for a while, and looked round about the room as though lost in thought.

In that moment of the scramble her heart had been so near her mouth that she was almost choked.

To see him talking with Mrs. Rolland and the Bishop’s daughters, you would not have thought that there was anything wrong with him.

Mr. Jones had told himself that it was his duty to forgive him, and had struggled to perform his duty.

But Tatian, not understanding that the expression Let there be is not always precative but sometimes imperative, most impiously imagined concerning God, who said Let there be light, that He prayed rather than commanded light to be, as if, as he impiously thought, God was in darkness.— [Origen]: De Orat.

“We are so much gratified, Mr. Finn,” said Lady Laura. “Mr. Kennedy says that it is the best appointment they could have made, and papa is quite proud about it.”

But neither is it consistent with the fitness of things that the first God should work with His own hands.

The park was not large, containing about sixty or seventy acres.

Finn”, showed at once that something was wrong.

Thus Celsus, as if he had forgotten what he had said against the Jews, now includes them in the general eulogy which he passes upon all who observe their ancestral customs, remarking: And whatever is done among each nation in this way, would be rightly done whenever agreeable to the wishes (of the superintendents).

Mrs. Sexty Parker

“What she feels is much worse than what she writes.”

To abstain, then, from food is not a substance; and yet the substance of our body, if it does altogether abstain from food, so languishes, is so impaired by broken health, is so exhausted of strength, so weakened and broken with very weariness, that even if it be in any way able to continue alive, it is hardly capable of being restored to the use of that food, by abstaining from which it became so corrupted and injured.

He made visions to himself of a sweet home, and a sweeter, sweetest, lovely wife; a love whose hair should not be redolent of smoke, nor her hands reeking with gin, nor her services at the demand of every libertine who wanted a screw of tobacco, or a glass of ‘cold without.’

For the soul is a sort of wax.

But young ladies do like the conversation of young gentlemen.

Nor indeed, if, among the Greeks, in accordance with the carelessness of custom, women and wives are classed under a common name— however, there is a name proper to wives— shall we therefore so interpret Paul as if he demonstrates the apostles to have had wives?

Sir Thomas, who had become tired of his late ward, and who had thought worse of the Eardham marriage than the thing deserved, was indifferent to the joys of the Italian honeymoon.

It is this same Word who has penetrated the recesses of the deep, has given their being to the finny race, and produced the countless forms of life which there exist.

Many are the tribulations of the righteous: but the Lord delivers him out of all.

All this to me is rowdy.

Their habits, conversation, dress, and interests are photographically accurate, to the point of illusion.

The Chaplet

And before they had gone to bed that night all the dozen knew the reason why.

At this point (14) the Luciferian yields.

It is reported that, on the night before the sedition occurred, a spectre was seen in the form of a woman of prodigious height and terrible aspect, pacing through the streets of the city, lashing the air with an ill-sounding whip, similar to that which is used in goading on the beasts brought forward at the public theatres.

In this he was completely wrong.

He was still fast asleep when a servant came to him from Mrs. Arabin to say that she would see him at once. “Yes, yes; I’m quite ready to go on,” said Johnny, jumping up, and thinking of the journey to Rome. But there was no journey to Rome before him. Mrs. Arabin was almost in the next room, and there he found her.

“But it won’t be hard now.”

“Tell him I am here and that I have said that I will forgive him everything, and that I love him still, and that if he will be true to me, I will be true to him.”

Nor, though she had submitted to the visit to Cheltenham, did she approve of it.

“But would that be necessary? Perhaps they haven’t got twelve children.”

The soul, therefore, cannot be a body, but is incorporeal.

Either contend that the devil works with our God, or else let the Paraclete be held to be Satan.

Chapter XIII. On English Novelists of the Present Day

Therefore the one Lord of all is God.

But their end was so dreadful that they have become a fearful warning to all mankind, to deter others from similar iniquity.

But tonight Aunt herself has desired me to tell you that she thinks you ought to know that she is ill, and that she wishes you to come to Exeter for a day or two, if it is possible.

They shall bring to my ear the voice of Christ, and the teaching of Plato and of Plotinus.

Now it was time for Mary to pause. “If I were to tell you my whole heart,” she said, “I should be ashamed of what I was saying; and yet I do not know that there is any cause for shame.”

What then has this to do with the sacrifices being offered oftentimes?

“Oh, Silverbridge;—oh, my loved one! Do not say that to me! Do not kill me at once!” Now she placed her hands one on each arm as she stood opposite to him and looked up into his face. “You said you loved me once. Why do you desert me now? Have you a right to treat me like that;—when I tell you that you have all my heart?” The tears were now streaming down her face, and they were not counterfeit tears.

When He blesses you?

And his namesake exclaimed, After me comes one who is preferred before me for He was before me. And when he had shown one person, he expressed both the divine and the human, for the words man and comes are human, but the phrase He was before me expresses the divine. But nevertheless he did not recognise a distinction between Him who came after and Him who was before, but owned the same being to be eternal as God, but born man, after himself, of the Virgin.

For, say, if He did not call us to account, would human life then have endured?

But if they shall say of matter that it is made, it will undoubtedly follow that they confess Him whom they declare to be God to have been made!— a result which certainly neither their reason nor ours can admit.

He couldn’t bring himself to assure her that Mr. Neefit would be a welcome guest in his house.

Chapter 52.— The Hope of the Salvation of Men Consists in the Knowledge of the True God, and of the Hatred of the Heathens Against the Christians.

As long as the servants were in the room the dinner went on much as other dinners.

“There can, nevertheless, be no doubt of your being able to have the money, and that at once, if you chose to go into the market for it. I have no doubt but that Mr Jervis could get it for you at once at five per cent.”

Nay, but if nothing more, observe this, that in this too is shown what was of man (in the preaching of the Gospel).

“Well; no. I’d as lief not think about the money either. The world is not ripe yet, Daniel.”

“It seems to me that the house becomes fuller and fuller every year, Frau Frohmann.”

But she knew not in what language to explain all this.

‘Certainly not. But it comes very near owing, doesn’t it?’

The squire was very sad about it,—very sad indeed.

And what says the same Apostle?

I ought to be baptized by You; and our Lord replied, Suffer it to be so now, for thus it becomes us to fulfil all righteousness; [Matthew 3:14-15] He wished to fulfil all humility, so that He should be washed, who had no defilement Our Lord, then, was baptized, and after baptism He was tempted; He fasted forty days, a number which has, as I have often mentioned, a deep meaning.

A windy egg was laid by black-winged night

‘I say, Charley,’ said Scatterall, coming over and whispering to him, ‘you couldn’t lend me half a crown, could you?’

Chapter 3. Ignatius sails to Smyrna

Miles, judging from her own feelings; and Bessy was very good, very affectionate, very grateful, had always been obedient.

“If the devil is to get ahead, he must, but I won’t hold a candle to him. You fellows may tell every man about the place what I say. As long as I’m master of Gangoil I’ll be master; and when I come across a swindle I’ll tell the man who does it he’s a swindler. I told Bos to his face; but I didn’t tell any body else, and I shouldn’t if he’d taken it right and mended his ways.”

Then, having watched her opportunity, she said her word, “I suppose we shall be safe with Mr. Lopez?” When Mr. Sprugeon was about to reply, she shook her head and went on about the iron plate.

If Mary said nothing to John Gordon on this evening, he would take an opportunity before they left the house to inform Mr Hall of his intended marriage.

He had been told to say nothing, and he could ask no questions; but Lady Baldock did not choose that he should be left to imagine things more terrible than the truth.

“I didn’t see him.”

Philo the Jew, an Alexandrian of the priestly class, is placed by us among the ecclesiastical writers on the ground that, writing a book concerning the first church of Mark the evangelist at Alexandria, he writes to our praise, declaring not only that they were there, but also that they were in many provinces and calling their habitations monasteries.

He showed this however with greater clearness in the expression which follows next, saying unreservedly, The veil lies upon their heart.

Whence also I assent to and confirm your judgment, that nothing can be known by man with certainty, and without doubt, seeing that he has but a short period of life, and a brief and slender breath, by which he seems to be kept in life.

And yet God converted him, and turned his indignation into gentleness.

My eye has been disordered by anger.

Who has comforted your sorrowing souls, and stayed your agitated spirits!

For I have seen what Laban does unto you.

The Earl, when he had repeated his general apology, especially to Lady Cantrip, who was the only lady present except his daughter, came up to our hero and shook him kindly by the hand.

“That wouldn’t do at all,” said the squire. “Lady Julia specially wants you to be one of the party.”

“Will you answer me one question truly, Mademoiselle?”

“You are with them.”

Was he to decline to enter in upon the joys of Paradise when Paradise should be thus opened to him?

But should the stranger win, then there may arise complications incapable of any comfortable solution.

Now whoever utters that which he holds in his mind either as belief or as opinion, even though it be false, he lies not.

He said not, You have sent me weak, acknowledging servitude, and doing nothing of Myself; but dismissing all these things, that you may have no such suspicions, He puts the real cause of the prayer, That they may not deem Me an enemy of God; that they may not say, He is not of God, that I may show them that the work has been done according to Your will.

To him, as to other fox-hunters, the country was good or bad as it promised or did not promise a good “run.” Though Trollope was a great traveller, he rarely uses his experiences in a novel, whereas Scott, Thackeray, Dickens, Bulwer, George Eliot fill their pages with foreign adventures and scenes of travel.

It was at this hour that he went daily, and he had not now thought it worth his while to remain to welcome Mrs. Morton.

Besides the works and letters of Irenæus which we have mentioned, a certain book of his On Knowledge, written against the Greeks, very concise and remarkably forcible, is extant; and another, which he dedicated to a brother Marcian, In Demonstration of the Apostolic Preaching; and a volume containing various Dissertations, in which he mentions the Epistle to the Hebrews and the so-called Wisdom of Solomon, making quotations from them. These are the works of Irenæus which have come to our knowledge.

He, however, who created him is also his Saviour.

“We’ll have our boots off soon, Duke,” said Mr. Monk, speaking of the recess.

“Yes, the course is open,” answered Graham.

You should therefore not look for patience in your own case from the virtue of others, thinking that then only can you secure it when you are not irritated by any (for it is not in your own power to prevent this from happening); but rather you should look for it as the consequence of your own humility and long-suffering which does depend on your own will.

“What are we to do? Oh, Lord Nidderdale, it is so dreadful! Poor papa! Poor papa! When I think of all that he must have suffered I wish that I could be dead too.”

Working quickly I have completed this letter in a single night anxious alike to gratify a friend and to try my hand on a rhetorical theme.

Thus it was contrived that, having removed him from the archdeaconry, he might call in another person to minister in the place of the deposed archdeacon.

10. But the natural man receives not the things of the Spirit.

He buckled to again, to the great disgust of Dr. Duggin, who at this time said very illnatured things about young Phineas.

If one virtue would remain always in the ascendant,—though I might differ or another,—there would be an intelligible policy.

They that are far from You, it says, shall perish.

A. Are they then so ambiguous as to give rise to a difference as to their meaning? I do not ask for an answer to two questions at once. You laid down two propositions; the one, that man can be without sin, if he chooses: the other, that God's commandments are easy. Although, therefore, they were uttered together, let them be discussed separately, so that, while our faith appears to be one, no strife may arise through our misunderstanding each other.

Chapter 19.— On the Reasonableness of Offering, as the True Religion Teaches, a Visible Sacrifice to the One True and Invisible God.

I am his lordship’s chaplain, and, if I may presume to say so, his most attached and sincere friend.

But never mind that now.

But, my opponent says, these are not the rites of our state.

“Of course we are,” said Ayala.

“I declare,” said Nina, “sometimes, when he is talking, I think him perfectly lovely. The fire comes out of his eyes, and he rubs his old red hairs about till they sparkle. Then he shines all over like a carbuncle, and every word he says makes me die of laughter.”

And he answered me again, saying, Every one who is the servant of God, and has his Lord in his heart, asks of Him understanding, and receives it, and opens up every parable; and the words of the Lord become known to him which are spoken in parables.

And it was thought that he might like an opportunity of making himself known in the House.

By this grace we have become the beloved of God, no longer as servants, but as sons and friends.

What madman would say this?

Letters on the Apollinarian Controversy.

[Leviticus 26:12] Furthermore also the Prophet Jeremiah said:— You are the temple of the Lord, if you make fair your ways and your deeds.

“I will tell you just the plain truth. Even though it may be bitter, the truth will be best between us, dearest. When first I heard what you said, I believed that all must be over between you and me.”

We who are fathers know that our sons and daughters must have recreation; — and when we hear of a Boy of ours who has excelled at this or that sport we are proud of his prowess.

The gentleman won’t die because he has had a mustard plaster on his throat.

But really I have unwittingly deviated in spirit from the order, to which I must now revert, and must find fault with having large numbers of domestics.

When holy David was suffering Saul his enemy, when he was being vexed by his persecutions, when he was fleeing through various places, in order that he might not fall into his hands, he lusted not for her that was another's, he slew not husband after committing adultery with wife.

The joy of the Vendeans, when they found themselves masters of Saumur, knew no bounds, but they were grotesque rather than unruly in their demonstrations; they plundered nothing from the poor people, or even from the shopkeepers; the money that was found in the republican chest was divided among them, but as this consisted almost entirely of assignats, it was of but little value.

On the next morning Miss Mackenzie sent down word to say she was not well, and would not come down to breakfast.

He likewise exhorts them to remain by the purpose of their heart and desire, and to restore to harmony and unity those who, a dissension having arisen after the death of the Abbot, had broken the unity by separating themselves from the community.

At any rate, it was agreed by them all that Harry must meet his uncle halfway, and write the “full and complete explanation,” as desired.

Her father would now be in London in a day or two, and on this occasion would again be staying in Munster Court.

“And so she shall be if she comes.”

Wherefore I wish you, Nicetus and Aquila, to go before me in two separate bodies, and enter secretly into the Gentile cities.

How Things Were Arranged

And like as one continually thirsting, though he should drink up ten thousand fountains, feels not the pleasure, because he is not satisfied; so also these, so far from feeling pleasure, are even tormented, the more they heap around themselves; from their not feeling any limit to such desire.

Then Martha took up her basket, and went on to the cottage, which had been close in sight during their conversation in the road.

Plato refuses to do this, as if it endangered the soul's immortality.

But having the hope of a future world through Christ, who makes us altogether new by clothing our souls with righteousness and our bodies with immortality, to believe that the bondage and infirmity of our original corruption will prevail over us or over our actions, must continue to be a sin, till the seven days of the course of time are accomplished.

This is the Work of Demons.

She must tell the lie;—but at the moment it seemed to her that there might be a middle course.

The difference lies in the payment; but as flight is a buying off without money, so buying off is money-flight.

Then Mary knew from his answer that the exercise had been of service to him, perceiving that he had been able to take an interest in his own prowess as a walker.

From thence the body was borne into the neighboring Senate-house by the crowd, under the leading of Sextus Clodius, a cousin of the dead man.

Why do you place your hopes upon what is instantly transferable?

God was found little, that man might become very great.

To cast out of them, by this salutation, all arguing that confused them, and all grounds for little pride; that neither the great might despise the little, nor the little grudge at the greater, but that haughtiness and envy might be more driven away, when this kiss soothed down and levelled every one.

What, further, is the celebrated temple at Jerusalem?

But if we have a High Priest in Heaven, who intercedes with the Father for us (for He has entered into the Holy of Holies, within the veil),...we are safe, for we have a Priest; let us offer our sacrifice there.

He says, For thus says the Lord, the holy God of Israel, Who made the things to come, Ask me concerning your sons and your daughters, and concerning the works of My hands command ye Me.

The old man answered: [It is impossible.]

I shall first, then state the case, and then call the witnesses.

Yes, answered Thaddæus; if you believe in Jesus Christ, the Son of God, the desires of your heart shall be granted.

“I cannot,” she said sternly. And her eyes were still fixed before her, and her fingers were still bound in one with another. And yet she loved him. Yet she knew that she loved him. She could have hung upon his arm and smiled up into his face, and frowned her refusal only with mock anger as he pressed her to his bosom,—only that those dreams were so palpable to her and so dear, had been to her so vast a portion of her young life! “I cannot,” she said again. “I cannot.”

What benefit?

He had almost ceased to hope for anything except the end of it.

[Deuteronomy 13:4] For the law calls assimilation following; and such a following to the utmost of its power assimilates.

Arkwright as he used to be styled in Hamworth,—had been Sir Joseph’s medical attendant for many years, and therefore there had been room for an intimacy.

Chapter 1.— That Although God is Always Judging, It is Nevertheless Reasonable to Confine Our Attention in This Book to His Last Judgment.

But the occasion for his doing so is even more urgent here than in the other Epistles.

For more than a fortnight she had refused to visit the front gate of her own house.

At this time her father lived at Camberwell, and I doubt whether the education which Margaret received at Miss Green’s establishment for young ladies in that suburb was of a kind to make up by art for that which nature had not given her.

For who is there that does not receive through the eyes, through the ears, through the taste and smell and touch, pleasures and delights, so as to become impatient of the control of continence as a driver, who checks and vehemently restrains the horse from evil?

But when the night is passed, and the day which succeeds it is at hand, then we shall have bread to eat which has nothing to do with the leavened bread of the older and lower state of things, but is unleavened, and that will serve our turn until that which comes after the unleavened bread is given us, the manna, which is food for angels rather than men.

The supposition of Celsus would have some foundation if we were to say that it had been foretold by the prophets that death would befall God the Word, the Truth, the Life, the Resurrection, or any other name which is assumed by the Son of God.

“Did I, Bessy?”

He was aided in these contests by that Aphraates whose life I have written in my Religious History, and who, preferring the welfare of the sheep to his own rest, abandoned his cell of discipline and retirement, and undertook the hard toil of a shepherd.

“Because you were such a perverse creature, as the old lady said. I am not sure that you were not right, because a girl does so often raise herself in her lover’s estimation by refusing him half-a-dozen times. But you were not up to that.”

If His Grace did not want to have the wood drawn, let him say so.

Moreover, the perfection of angels is sanctification and continuance in it.

how could he help himself?

About her there was none of the look of having been found out, which is so very disagreeable to the wearer of it; whereas Frank, when Lord Fawn was announced, was aware that his manner was awkward, and his general appearance flurried.

Her cousin, Barrington Erle, had brought her there, and was below, waiting for her in the Governor’s house.

“Upon my word I’m not, then. That coalheaving brute of a parson pretty nearly did for me.”

But again, Scatter them, he says.

Will he like his dinner?

These are seized by his allies, who destroy all that they cannot carry away, and Caesar’s army is in danger of being starved.

A very small part of that army remains.

But, disobeying this order, he directed his quartermaster to pay a further sum of 4000l.

For "the sting of death is sin, and the strength of sin is the law," [1 Corinthians 15:56] which adds to the force with which the consciousness of disregard of the precept strikes and slays.

She looked timidly into Rachel’s face and unconsciously construed into their true meaning those lines which formed themselves on the girl’s brow and over her eyes.

For we do continually beseech God by Jesus Christ to preserve us from the demons which are hostile to the worship of God, and whom we of old time served, in order that, after our conversion by Him to God, we may be blameless.

For there is no heresy but will call itself the truth; and the prouder it is, the more likely it will be to call itself perfect truth: and so it will profess to lead into all truth; and since that which is perfect has come by it, it will try to do away with the doctrine of the apostles, to which its own errors are opposed.

Phygellus and Alexander made shipwreck; but the rest continued to run the race of faith.

Captain Aylmer had interfered with his dearest wishes, and during this now passing hour he would willingly have crucified Captain Aylmer had it been within his power to do so.

For that you may the more readily know that, while they are themselves guilty, they yet entertain an excellent opinion of our faith, let me inform you that I baptize their polluted ones; they, though may God never grant them such an opportunity, receive those who are made mine by baptism—which certainly they would not do if they recognized any defects in our baptism.

Their mouths are never so fine then, and they generally want to be brought up to the bit, d’ye see?—up to the bit.

You have heard that He was given vinegar to drink; learn where this also is written.

Nepotian is happy who neither sees these things nor hears them.

He dared not approach into the prison which he had prepared for them in the fire.

If God were to appoint unto you a bull, goat, or ram, for a present, you would find one to bring: He has appointed a humble heart, and you will not enter; for you find not this in yourself, because you are swollen with pride.

Chapter I. Shewing How Wrath Began

They knew the genius of the man, and the notice afterwards appeared exactly in the form in which Robinson had framed it.

Thus the blessed Paul, having found it so by experience, declared beforehand, 'As many as will live godly in Christ, shall suffer persecution [2 Timothy 3:12].'

Suppose, then, we were wanderers in a strange country, and could not live happily away from our fatherland, and that we felt wretched in our wandering, and wishing to put an end to our misery, determined to return home.

I look on my food, he says, as a fetid mass.

For we struggle not for things of the earth, he says, but for Heaven, and the things in the Heavens.

With what fires, I pray you, is it preferable to burn— (the fires) of concupiscence, or (the fires) of penalty?

For as when a wild beast is hunted down from all sides, it is impossible for it to escape; so he that has so many to watch him, so many to reprove him, who is liable to be struck at from all sides, cannot help being on his guard.

“Tell me this, Alice; has he got any of it as yet?”

But as not only pain may be inflicted, but lust gratified on the body of another, whenever anything of this latter kind takes place, shame invades even a thoroughly pure spirit from which modesty has not departed—shame, lest that act which could not be suffered without some sensual pleasure, should be believed to have been committed also with some assent of the will.

For such was the nature of the manna; it was new and fresh, nowhere costing them any trouble, nor straining them by labour.

The “orthogwaphy is inaccuwate,” as a certain person says in the memoirs,—”so inaccuwate” as to take a positive study to “compwehend” it; but the joke, though old, is so handled as to be very amusing.

“What cousin?” said the Squire, turning sharply round.

“We were down in the churchyard, and the gate was open, and so we walked up;—that was all. If we’d meant to do anything out of the way we shouldn’t ‘a come like that, nor yet at that hour. Why, it worn’t midnight, Mr. Fenwick.”

From whence did it enter their thoughts to expect to overcome the world, unless they had seen Christ after He was risen?

He had persevered because in such matters it is so difficult to choose the moment in which to recede.

For what does the term old covenant imply but the concealing of the new?

Chapter 18. It is Never Allowable to Tell a Lie; But Lies Differ Very Much in Guilt, According to the Intention and the Subject.

For, in my eager desire, I was both urgent to satisfy my wishes by seeing you; and we seemed, if we should meet, likely to accomplish more effectually the work of the Lord, since by comforting one another we should live with the heavy load of this world trodden under our feet.

He was a man determined on no account to live beyond his means; and was not very anxious to seem to be rich.

But why had this perfect lover come to her, to one so small, so trifling, so little in the world’s account as she, and given to her all the treasure of his love?

Was she to rob her of it?

It would be well if we could realize the idea of liberty which Cicero entertained.

Moreover he has dared to say, that 'the Word is not the very God 'though He is called God, yet He is not very God,' but 'by participation of grace, He, as others, is God only in name.'

He was poorer than their other relatives, and made no attempt to hold his head high in Barsetshire circles.

But as he came in so opportunely, she allowed his coming to cover her defeat.

It is the mark of unbelievers to receive glory of one another: for what glory can man give to man?

But behold, He has not yet come: what need is there they should tremble?

The like doctrine you have also in the interpretation of the Stone, which was cut out of a mountain without hands, which is Christ according to the flesh ; And His kingdom shall not be left to another people.

“I suppose she’ll stay till the dean picks her up on his way home?” said Mrs. Grantly.

Well did he thus call it. For where there is not faith, there is not knowledge; when anything springs from our reasonings, it is not knowledge. Or perhaps he says this, because some then assumed the name of Gnostics, as knowing more than others.

For, if those delivered it unto us, who from the beginning were eyewitnesses and ministers of the word; then, what he says, is theirs.

is incapable of suffering in company with another; otherwise, if He can suffer with another, He is of course capable of suffering.

The prisoners are necessarily mute, and can only be looked at, not heard.

“‘Ah me!’ said the Lady Crinoline—”

“At times, sir. Times again his father don’t say much to him. The master ain’t given to much talking in the mill, and Sam, when he’s there, works with a will. There’s times when his father softens down to him, and then to see ‘em, you’d think they was all in all to each other. There’s a stroke of the master about Sam hisself, at times, Mr. Fenwick, and the old man’s eyes gladden to see it. There’s none so near his heart now as poor Sam.”

My ignorance of many natural phenomena is no excuse for your ignoranceas to the origin of souls. You ought, according to your boasting dream to knoweverything. The thing of most importance was forgotten in your cargo of Eastern wares.

Who then would dare to allow this injury to be perpetrated upon so great a sacrament , seeing that this great and venerable mystery is not without the support of the statutes of God's law as well, whereby it is clearly laid down that a priest is to marry a virgin, and that she who is to be the wife of a priest [Leviticus 21:13] is not to know another husband?

He did not care to fight; but are all men cowards who do not care to fight when work can be so much better done by talking?

But her sister could hardly bear to hear the praises of Sir Hugh. When she found how it was to be, she resolved that she would bear them—bear them, and not contradict them; but her struggle in doing so was great, and was almost too much for her.

A dozen, at any rate, took his hands as he strove to make his way through them, and though he was never quite sure about it, he believed that one or two had kissed him in the dark.

It remains, then, that we demonstrate whether this doctrine of ours, of which we have now given the rule, has its origin in the tradition of the apostles, and whether all other doctrines do not ipso facto proceed from falsehood.

At that age he is entitled to one-sixtieth of his salary for every year he has served up to forty years.

Our preceding reasonings imply assent to this.

For unbelief, while it does not believe that there is to be a judgment by God, affords licence to sin, and sin makes men liable to sufferings; but faith, believing that there is to be a judgment of God, restrains men from sin; and those who do not sin are not only free from demons and sufferings, but can also put to flight the demons and sufferings of others.

And what is it that he says?

But His main purpose in this declaration was to strike at the unbelief or the pride of Israel, in that (although there were many lepers among them, and a prophet was not wanting to them) not one had been moved even by so conspicuous an example to betake himself to God who was working in His prophets.

Father and the Squire ought never to have been brought together,—nor ought I and Frank.

“Very much;—though I thought her self-willed. But she is not worldly, and she is conscientious. She might have married that lord herself if she would. I do like her. When she comes to you at Exeter, if the wedding gown isn’t quite worn out, I shall come and see her. I knew she liked him when she was here, but she never said so.”

Beyond this, Mr. Fothergill was not ashamed to confess—so he said—that he hoped to hold Lord Dumbello’s agency.

Martinique is certainly rather larger than either of the other two, but size has little or nothing to do with it.

Young people and women have to yield,—but for such a man as this, to yield is in itself a misery.

This, and what she had suffered since, had greatly weakened her, and it was some time before Doctor Colligan would pronounce her convalescent.

Constantius Augustus, the Conqueror, to Nestorius, Prefect of Egypt.

We might long ago have urged you to ponder this, were it not foolish to ask proofs of such things, as well as to say them.

“I don’t believe in your love, sir.”

It betakes itself for refuge to the veil of the head as to a helmet, as to a shield, to protect its glory against the blows of temptations, against the dam of scandals, against suspicions and whispers and emulation; (against) envy also itself.

Chapter 11. Of the Last Times, and of the Soul and Body.

As I explained late attendance was the first named.

The following is an epitome: We have done all that you wished, and Palestine is almost wholly free from the taint of heresy. We wish that not only the Origenists, but Jews, Samaritans and heathen also, could be put down. Origenism does not exist among us. The doctrines you describe are never heard here. We anathematize those who hold such doctrines, and also those of Apollinaris, and shall not receive anyone whom you excommunicate.

Yes, but they sought nothing of the kind, but from the proof of the napkins, they straightway received the word concerning the Resurrection, and before they saw the body, exhibited all faith.

These were two happy hours, during which he did not allow himself to doubt of his triumph.

Mrs. Carbuncle had been at her feet that morning borrowing money.

When he had sent to Pompey a long account of the grand doings of his Consulship, Pompey had replied with faintest praises.

An interview with Father Marty would be very bad, for he must declare his intentions in such a way that no doubt respecting them must be left on the priest’s mind.

But Georgiana, though she was so far beaten, kept up her quarrel with her sister.

For why are these things practised, if not because the faithful, even though dead, are His members?

“What should bring him to Coron among my men?”

John 3:6

That ye, having always all sufficiency in every thing, may abound to every good work.

Thou see indeed, that while in other cities they bring them to the magistrates, and need help from them.

Lady Rowley bore it, never absolutely telling the tale of her daughter’s fruitless victory.

You hypocrite, however much of abstinence you use to show yourself a Marcionite, that is, a repudiator of your Maker (for if the world displeased you, such abstinence ought to have been affected by you as a martyrdom), you will have to associate yourself with the Creator's material production, into what element soever you shall be dissolved.

He was an Irishman, living on the best of everything in the world, with apparently no fortune of his own, and certainly never earning anything.

But since they will have it that Minerva is a virgin, they say that Vulcan, being disturbed in the struggle between them, poured out his seed into the earth, and on that account the man born of it received that name; for in the Greek language [ἔρις] is strife, and [χθὼν] earth, of which two words Ericthonius is a compound.

If you did not reply, what becomes of your Apology, of which you boast among the simple, and which you are scattering broadcast among those who do not understand the matter?

And that which in the wilderness seemed to the Jews marvellous, (they said at least, Can He give bread also? Or prepare a table in the wilderness? ) this He shows forth in His works. With this view also He leads them into the wilderness, that the miracle might be very far beyond suspicion, and that no one might think that any village lying near contributed ought to the meal. For this reason He mentions the hour also, not the place only.

She had already given him occasion to declare himself off, and if thoroughly angered he would no doubt use it.

We know these coals.

“By George! she’s a wonderful woman. Do you know I can’t help thinking of her at night? She keeps me awake-she does, upon my honor.”

The words, no doubt, are so placed in the Greek, that they may be understood to express that the light itself comes into the world.

Nor are you, in the midst of the repast, to exhibit yourselves hugging your food like wild beasts; nor helping yourselves to too much sauce, for man is not by nature a sauce-consumer, but a bread-eater.

Lady Augustus was very clever in arranging her locomotion and seldom paid for much more than her railway tickets.

When a man is advanced in years you must not be too ready to believe evil of him; his past life is itself a defence, and so also is his rank as an elder.

I shall take into consideration, that is, not your circumstances but yourself.

But in this place he has bound us more tightly: If we shall ask, he has said, if our heart accuse us not, and tell us in answer, in the sight of God, that true love is in us; Whatsoever we ask, we shall receive of Him.

When a puppy is taken away from its mother, she is bad enough for a few days, but she gets over it in a week.” There was a pause then for a few moments.

For some such cause he has been driven outside the flock; or even himself, perhaps, by anger, by pride, by jealousy, (or)— as, in fact, often happens— by disdaining to submit to chastisement, has broken away (from it).

“I don’t know who should tamper with her,” said Dockwrath, “unless it be Lady Mason—whom I must say you seem very anxious to protect.”

Maurice, when she had gone, looked after her, and then read a page of his novel; but he was thinking of Isabel, and not of the book.

Thus came I to understand, from my own experience, what I had read, how that the flesh lusts against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh.

“Yes; you live at the parsonage, don’t you?”

How can the customary action of any created object be regarded as existing prior to the maker of it, while all time is a creation, and every creation has taken its being from its creator?

Young ladies can be made to understand the beauty of coal-mines almost as readily as young gentlemen.

“We have been talking politics,” said the Duke.

In the next place, Celsus urges us to help the king with all our might, and to labour with him in the maintenance of justice, to fight for him; and if he requires it, to fight under him, or lead an army along with him.

To avoid starting alone with him was within her power; but she found herself compelled to join herself to Gertrude and her brother in some of those little excursions which were taken for her benefit.

“God Almighty ordained such difference.”

On becoming conscious of this strange power, by the use of the ring he committed adultery with the queen, killed the king, and took possession of the kingdom after slaying all the rest, who he thought should be put to death, so that they might be no hindrance to him.

He entered the Civil Service, and soon rose to high office.

But, though he seemed to be, if not logical, at any rate rational, the world generally did not agree with him. Wherever he was encountered there seemed to be an opinion that he ought to assume whatever name and whatever rights belonged to his father. Even at the Post Office the world was against him.

How ever, the antithesis (or variety of administration) will rightly be His property, to whom it actually belongs in (the government of) the world.

He knew his two creditors well enough to understand that the Jew, getting his money, would be better pleased to serve him than to injure him.

Why is she alone? and how is it possible that a girl whose dress fits her so nicely should not have “ a nearer one and dearer one yet than all other?”

Moreover, he does not say, It was Jesus that healed him: but, The God of our fathers has glorified, etc.

He sat over her while she wrote it, and nearly drove her distracted by discussing every word and phrase.

Surely when he heard the three names, he believed in three Gods, and was an idolater; or by the three titles he was led to believe in a God with three names, and so fell into the Sabellian heresy.

Mr. Puddleham held up both hands.

For the Saviour has told them before that unless we also are present, He will not give it them.

He had been quite aware in his more gallant days, before he had been knocked about on that Charybdis rock, that he might sip, and taste, and choose between the sweets.

If it were not so, do you think that all my family as well as yours would join in wishing that you may become my wife?

Who Black Daly was or whence he had come, many men, even in County Galway, did not know.

Every creature, then, is subject to change, not only such as has been changed by some sin or condition of the outward elements, but also such as can be liable to corruption by a fault of nature, though by careful discipline it be not yet so; for, as we have shown in a former treatise, the nature of Angels evidently can be changed.

To this end see what follows.

It was his duty as a just man to abstain from taking hold of those acres, and he was prepared to do his duty.

Though a keen sportsman himself, he did not specially like Lord Rufford,—a fact which had been very well known to Mrs. Masters.

This was the wall against which Mrs. Ray had allowed herself to be fastened for many years past, and though the support was strong it must be admitted that it could hardly have been at all times pleasant.

“No, mamma, she has not. Don’t be unfair to Fanny. If there is anyone in fault it is Adolphus; but, as you say, what shall we do to prevent further misunderstanding? I think I had better tell papa the whole.”

If good life is wanting, faith has no merit, as the blessed James attests, who says, Faith without works is dead [James 2:18].

Early in January they were all to go back to London.

There is also, however, a more natural relation of a different number to the monad, according to the arrangement of the orbit of six days' duration, (that is), of the duad, according to the position and division of even numbers.

Can hold.

After this that of Sabellius, saying that the Son and the Spirit and the Father are One.

You wouldn’t get them in the shops under six.” Alice did feel them, and wondered whether her aunt could have saved the halfcrown honestly.

She’s saved; she’s happy yet. He cannot see her and not renew those passionate vows of love, which won her heart, shall win it yet again—

Was it that, after reading these little books of mine, he ventured to pronounce me wise?

She is afraid of Barry; and though she didn’t say so, she won’t agree to tell him, or to let me tell him, or just to let the priest walk into the house without telling him.

Had there been no Mrs Hurtle, the letter would have been all that Hetta could have desired; and she could have answered it, unless forbidden by her mother, with all a girl’s usual enthusiastic affection for her chosen lord.

For both their sakes she would have preferred such a match to one with the owner of Chowton Farm.

For the pouring out of the blood of the righteous on behalf of the unrighteous was so powerful in its effect , so rich a ransom that, if the whole body of us prisoners only believed in their Redeemer, not one would be held in the tyrant's bonds: since as the Apostle says, where sin abounded, grace also did much more abound [Romans 5:20] .

Hear then what the Gospel relates next, Pilate hearing that He was from Galilee, sent Him to Herod, who was king in Israel at that time.

An exposition of that which God said.

For [5] up to this time not even the brethren of Jesus believed on him.

He will not then deprive, of the things which exist for the sake of virtue, those for whose sake they were created.

For He is believed to have been conceived on the 25th of March, upon which day also He suffered; so the womb of the Virgin, in which He was conceived, where no one of mortals was begotten, corresponds to the new grave in which He was buried, wherein was never man laid, neither before nor since.

All actions, again, are the province of preceptive discourse; while persuasive discourse applies itself to heal the passions.

Then Caesar again forgives the 2Edui; but Vercingetorix is taken as a prisoner to Rome, is kept a prisoner for six years, is then led in Caesar’s Triumph, and, after these six years, is destroyed, as a victim needed for Caesar’s glory, — that so honour may be done to Caesar!

Till the day of the funeral, Merton, the doctor, had remained with him and his aunt, Miss Scarborough; but when the old squire had been laid in his grave they both departed.

For since they had no charge to bring, they enquired concerning His disciples, perhaps where they were, and why He had collected them, and with what intention, and on what terms.

I shall therefore have to bring her before you.

And now, by the parable of the leaven, the Lord shows concealment; for He says, The kingdom of heaven is like leaven, which a woman took and hid in three measures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

The whole length of the cluster is but twenty miles, and the breadth is under four.

There are three or four gentlemen who, after the work of the last three years, bearing in mind the manner in which our defeat has just been accomplished, feel themselves disinclined to join Mr. Gresham unless you will do so also.

Nay, and they do not think that any of all those who are now our colleagues, has attained even to a moderate amount of wisdom; boasting themselves to be the only men who are wise and divested of worldly possessions, the sole discoverers of dogmas, and that to them alone are those things revealed which have never before come into the mind of any other under the sun.

For these are the points upon which I see that some persons who are very insignificant pride themselves.

There is among the Persians in a city Ampa, near the river Tills, a well; and near the well, at the top, has been constructed a certain reservoir, supplied with three outlets; and when one pumps from this well, and draws off some of its contents in a vessel, what is thus pumped out of the well, whatever it is at all, he pours into the reservoir hard by.

Now he learned that such was not the general opinion in Carmarthenshire.

The title then of this Psalm seems from thence to have taken its hue, so that when he had said, Of the sons of Jonadab; he added, and of them that were first led captive: not that the sons of Jonadab were led captive, but because to them that were to be led captive there were opposed the sons of Jonadab, because they were obedient to their father: in order that they might understand that they had been made captive, because they were not obedient to God.

Do not, I beseech you, lest I say of you, They have added to the pain of my wounds.

Hearing her grandfather’s voice through the wind, she desisted from her purpose, if any purpose she had had, and went forth to her work. As she passed down the cover, and scrambled in among the rocks, she saw Barty still standing on his perch; out beyond, the white-curling waves were cresting and breaking themselves with violence, and the wind was howling among the caverns and abutments of the cliff.

They have seen clearer than you have done what is required, and know better than you can know how that which is wanted is to be secured.

But we to whom it is said, [1 Corinthians 7:29] The time is shortened, that henceforth those that have wives may be as though they had none, have a different command, and for us virginity is consecrated by the Virgin Saviour.

The odds were daily rising against Macassar, and as he heard the bets offered and taken at the surrounding desks, his heart quailed within him.

“And will they—hang him?”

It was not when she smiled and laughed that she most pleased.

For the sake of honor.

On the Friday, Emily with her child, and Hugh with all their baggage, travelled out on the road to Casalunga, thinking it better that there should be no halt in the town on their return.

Luxury has outstripped nomenclature.

“No, Mr. Walker, it mustn’t be here. I couldn’t stand that. I must go away from this,—God knows where. I must go away from this, and I shall never see the old place again!”

It would add greatly to her immediate misery if the servants were to come while she was there, and see her in her wretchedness.

This reason for sacrifices is not valid, therefore, as it seems; nor can it be said by any one that sacrifices are kept up for this reason, that the deities are nourished by them, and supported by feeding on them.

And so, having departed and tarried a little while to honor His mother, He again commences His miracles after restoring to her home her who had borne Him.

“I don’t think I said anything,” she said.

“Ask her; no! there will be no need of asking her; she has already given you her promise. You do not think that she will desert you? you do not wish it?”

His wife would certainly object to his drawing the back heads of other young women.

But the scorn came from her, and it beat him down.

If any look on these things as trifles, let them know that they are the source of great evils; and that not even unto Paul did it seem right to overlook the lesser things.

Here he censures them more severely.

For they themselves were mingled with harlots, and sacrificed with the initiated; and the people that understood embraced a harlot.

For it often happens that a man has an enemy whom he hates most unjustly; although we are commanded to love even our unjust enemies, and to pray for them.

But over those who have not set at naught the counsel of the Lord, but who, disposing of all their property to the poor, take up their cross and follow the bestower of grace, sin can have no dominion.

“So Quick tells me. What can have brought him, my dear?”

For this, has passed over above the earth is, they pass over all earthly things?

But how not to be awkward?

He certainly respected her as he had never respected any other young woman.

The Phœnicians, for example, do not know those who are called gods among the Egyptians, nor do the Egyptians worship the same idols as the Phœnicians have.

Lady Monk, on these occasions, was moved by a noble ambition to do something different from that done by her neighbours in similar circumstances, and therefore she never came forward to receive her guests.

Does this friend of the Negro in his heart think that the black man is fit to assume political ascendancy over the white;—or that the white man would remain in South Africa and endure it?

Then will he rule their minds and turn their hearts.

Therefore this confession is inseparable from Christ even in the humiliation of His manhood, as He says, And this is eternal life, that they should know You, the only true God, Him, Whom You sent, even Jesus Christ [John 17:3 for firstly there is no life eternal in the confession of God the Father without Jesus Christ, and secondly Christ is glorified in the Father.

For sins have not substance: they have destitution, not substance; they have want, not substance.

The other grooms with their animals were on in advance, and were by this time employed in combing out forelocks, and rubbing stirrup leathers and horses’ legs free from the dirt of the roads;—but Bat Smithers was like his master, and did not congregate much with other men, and Vavasor was sure to give orders to his servant different from the orders given by others.

Two regiments passed through the place during the time, getting out of one steamer on to another, or passing from the railway into boats.

Sir Peregrine Orme has made me an offer of marriage and I have accepted it.

Whence also he applied the name brood of vipers to the voluptuous, who serve the belly and the pudenda, and cut off one another's heads for the sake of worldly pleasures.

It was evident to Mr. Thumble that they both expected that he should go.

This person had been very courteous to him, and he had gone to Siena thinking that he would find it easy to obtain Trevelyan’s address,—or to learn that there was no such person there.

Do not be surprized if I ask of you a great favour; for it is from a great man that I am asking it, and the request must be measured by him of whom it is made; for it is equally absurd to ask great things from a small man, and small things from a great man, the one being unseasonable, and the other mean.

Hats 5s.

For it clearly shows how freely He laid down His life for us when He had it in His power thus to take it up again.

And this has the name right, because an angel is called by a right (propitious) name.

In a.d. 365 he was appointed Prefect of Constantinople, as a reward for timely intimation which he gave to the Emperor Valens of the usurpation attempted by Procopius.

For what kind of excuse shall we have, if irrational creatures are able to hunt for an animal of their own species, while we who have been honoured with reason and so much wisdom neglect this kind of pursuit?

“This is so kind of you,” she said.

Your darts shall go in the light; that is, Your words shall not be sent in secret, but openly.

Even when our righteousness shall be perfect, when we shall be equal to the angels, not even then shall it be equalled with Him.

At this period the adherents of Macedonius, among whom were Eleusius, Eustathius, and Sophronius, who now began openly to be called Macedonians, as constituting a distinct sect, adopted the bold measure on the death of Constantius, of calling together those of their own sentiments who had been convened at Seleucia, and of holding several councils.

As we cannot turn a man into a woman, or endue him with that quicker appreciation and more sparkling intelligence which is the woman’s privilege, so neither can we give to her the gift of persistent energy by which he does perform, and as been intended to perform, the work of the world.

And in the midst of all this, Mr. O’Mahony came in for his share of popularity.

For eternal bliss there could, she thought, be no other preparation She did not want to be happy here, or to have those happy around her whom she loved.

This is done with almost an instinct in the matter, and habit has made perfect in the woman that which was born with her.

To die is gain to me, who, in the very treatise in which I comfort others, am incited as it were by an intense impulse to the longing for my lost brother, since it suffers me not to forget him.

The Custom duties of the Cape Colony in 1869, before the diamond industry existed, were less than £300,000.

“It’s from Sir Lionel,” said Miss Baker, trembling. There were as yet no promising auspices for the fraternal reconciliation.

I shall get salvation thus.

For every man knows that the sun is fixed in the heavens, yet its rays are spread out in the earth, and (light) from it enters by many doors and windows of houses; and wherever the sunshine falls, though it be but as (the measure of) the palm of the hand, it is called the sun.

But if evils were by nature, superfluous were all this admonition and advice, superfluous the precaution by the means that have been mentioned. But if it be not superfluous, as surely it is not superfluous, it is quite clear that wickedness is of the will.

Be that as it may, the new bishop bill was to be their first work of government, and it was to be brought forward and carried, and the new prelates selected and put into their chairs all at once,—before the grouse should begin to crow and put an end to the doings of gods as well as giants.

Humbly afflicted and abject he replies, Need has compelled me.

However, I make this suggestion, that if, as you have said, we begin to speak, in presence of my father, as if for the purpose of discussing some subject, or learning something from one another, you, my lord Peter, ought not to occupy the place of one who has anything to learn; for if he see this, he will rather be offended.

And in another place, Therefore, says he, brethren, we are debtors, not to the flesh, to live after the flesh.

“But there are others as bad as he left behind. I wouldn’t trust that fellow Boscobel a yard.”

Each night I copied fairly what I had written in the day, and I came to love the thing with an exceeding love.

“I! I cut one of my very best friends! How can she say anything so untrue? If I knew where she lived I’d go and pay her a visit after dinner.”

Since both took place in a new way, and beyond ordinary custom.

“You’ll have to be one a bit longer yet;—unless you mean to throw up everything. At this present moment you are six or seven thousand pounds richer than you were before you first met me.”

What can he gain by this unmeasured ribaldry, when the object of it will retain all that character which his life, his words, and the general estimate of the civilized world proclaims him to have possessed?

And again, They committed adultery in the wood.

But these things seem like the transgressions that sprung from the pristine deceit, and the penalties of these primeval offenses still await me here.

The soul alone is its treasure.

Then there gradually came to her some comfort from a source from which she had certainly not expected it.

“Yes, it is convenient. You see in my position,—Parliamentary position, I mean,—I am obliged, as a public man, to act in concert with others. A public man can be of no service unless he is prepared to do that. We must give and take, you know, Miss Vavasor.”

And now, Hubert, you must go.

For in the solid vault of heaven He has both awakened the light-bringing Sunrisings; He has filled up the white globe of the moon in its monthly waxings as a solace for the night; He, moreover, kindles the starry rays with the varied splendours of glistening light; and He has willed all these things in their legitimate tracks to circle the entire compass of the world, so as to cause days, months, years, signs, and seasons, and benefits of other kinds for the human race.

There are, indeed, innumerable passages in the Scriptures which establish with exceeding clearness the existence of freedom of will.

“How can I help you?”

There is in such a dogma more power than I can tell assigned to chances in opposition to the power of God, by the occurrence of which casualties that which He has predestinated is not permitted to come to pass.

She in her rage had declared that it would be well that Lord Hampstead should break his neck out hunting or go down in his yacht at sea; and she had been gratified to find that her friend had sanctioned her ill-wishes.

She has got her bread to earn, and if she won’t do it one way then she must do it another.

Tribulation and grief I found, and on the Name of the Lord I called.

In truth, however, there had been no contract, and Mr. Grimes had gone to work upon a verbal order which, according to the Puddleham theory, he had already vitiated by refusing compliance with its terms.

As soon as I passed over to the doctrines of the Church I shook off my Jewish prejudices, manifesting on that side a zeal still more ardent; and this is a proof that my conversion is sincere, and that the zeal which possesses me is from above.

As if some one should say: let stools or chairs sit here.

Mrs Tom Mackenzie had hoped, then—had hoped and had inwardly resolved—that half, at least, of the dying brother’s money would have come to her husband; and she had thought that if she once encumbered herself with the old maid, the old maid might remain longer than was desirable.

He was a man who would delight in sharing his house, his hope; his schemes and councils with his wife.

Lady Clavering liked the idea of having her sister with her, but she was not quite meek enough to receive the permission now given her as full compensation for the injury done. She said that she would do as he had bidden her, and then went back to her own grievances. “I don’t suppose Julia, even if she would come for a little time, would find it very pleasant to live in such a place as this, all alone.”

Nay, it is most bearable, when you have an audience present of witnesses praising and applauding you, scoffing at and making a jest of him.

Though he lied, as he always lies, when I first spoke to him, I brought him to admit that he and she had been friends down in Suffolk.

Now what had Hezekiah to do with Melchizedek, the priest of the most high God, and him uncircumcised too, who blessed the circumcised Abraham, after receiving from him the offering of tithes?

The chief part then of our improvement and peace of mind must not be made to depend on another's will, which cannot possibly be subject to our authority, but it lies rather in our own control. And so the fact that we are not angry ought not to result from another's perfection, but from our own virtue, which is acquired, not by somebody else's patience, but by our own long-suffering.

Abluamini juste, et ne peccetis.

[Hebrews 12:14] Consider then, that without sobriety, it is impossible to see the Lord; yet it does not necessarily follow that with sobriety it is possible to see Him, because often-times something else stands in the way.

In that case the Spirit sinned along with him; and how can he escape peril who says this?

Let me beg you to consider then this simple and single-hearted man, and take notice of him in the affairs of life, and you will see him a pattern of the utmost scrupulousness, such that if he would have shown it in spiritual matters he would not have been overlooked: for the facts of the truth are clearer than the sun.

“Yes, sir,” said Crabwitz.

Ere long they found, in ruin and destruction by famine and war, their reward for crucifying God; for they condemned the Lord of Life to death, and paid no heed to God's truth displayed in Him through His glorious works.

For some moments his anger supported him; but after a while that gave way to the old feeling of discomfort which pervaded him always.

The injured honour of all the Tillietudlemites rose against him with one indignant shout; and a rumour, a horrid rumour, of a severer fate met his ears.

And to prove that I say not this upon conjecture; when they fell into the furnace, they bewailed themselves after this sort, saying, [Daniel 4:6-10] We have sinned, we have done iniquity, we cannot open our mouth.

The Lord is full of compassion and mercy: long-suffering, and of great mercy [Psalm 102:8].

According, therefore, to this definition, the divine repentance takes in all cases a different form from that of man, in that it is never regarded as the result of improvidence or of fickleness, or of any condemnation of a good or an evil work.

For animality, from whence these singly have been derived, is not any one (of them); and though it is not any one of them, it has yet become some one originating principle of existing things.

To both Watt and Smith it had been a matter of pure conscience.

“But I was not told. Do you not see that I was deceived there. Mrs. O’Hara clearly said that the man was dead. And she told me nothing of the galleys.”

For what is that which is called vacuity but as it were a vessel which contains nothing, except the vessel itself?

So earnest and assiduous was Origen's research into the divine words that he learned the Hebrew language, and procured as his own the original Hebrew Scriptures which were in the hands of the Jews.

There is no beginning, no middle, and no end to this treatise.

If there were anything which could delight us here, it could not delight without you; and if ever we had earnestly desired to prolong our life, now at any rate we would not exist without you.

“Everything is going against me!” exclaimed Mr. Prosper.

All his life long the dean had seen what came of such spending.

Hester’s great grief was in regard to her mother.

Whether they will happen in your time we know not, or whether they will happen after you we know not; but it is well that, knowing these things, you should make yourself secure beforehand.

Studies in Early Victorian Literature

[Isaiah 30:1-5] And, further, Zechariah tells, as you yourself have related, that the devil stood on the right hand of Joshua the priest, to resist him; and [the Lord] said, 'The Lord, who has taken Jerusalem, rebuke you.'

Even if he do any just thing, he is not credited, condemned as he is by all on account of his power (of injuring): for in all who dwell with him he has accusers: he cannot enjoy friendship: for none would readily choose to become the friend of a man who has such a character, for fear of becoming implicated with him in the opinion held of him.

But we will speak of these things more fully in the last book, when we shall speak of His second advent; now let us treat of His first advent, as we began.

From that period Jovian manifested the greatest friendship towards Athanasius, and sent him back to Egypt, with directions to govern the churches and people of that country as he might think fit.

And so his prayers dropped senseless from his lips.

And yet Anaxagoras held the opinion that essential supreme Wisdom is mind, although it is not the peculiar property of any living being, so to speak, since Truth is near to all souls alike that are able to enjoy it.

That it should be said to the sinners, For if God spared not the natural branches, take heed lest He also spare not you.

And Orpheus:—

Wherefore, if you would attain to the blessed city, shun the society of devils.

Peter was found standing in the middle of the chamber, with his left hand beneath his waistcoat, and his right hand free for the performance of some graceful salutation.

And these, where have they been?

“Just to get up at nine o’clock tomorrow, and go to church as though nothing had happened. Then, when Dr Crofts came in the evening, you would tell him I was down at the school.”

He does not say this in the way of comparison. For things which are contrary to each other, and mutually destructive, cannot be compared. But his decision was, that the one is to be chosen, and the other avoided. To like effect is the saying, Men loved darkness rather than light. [John 3:19] For the term rather in that passage expresses the choice of the person loving, and not the comparison of the objects themselves.

Thirdly, he bequeathed five hundred pounds a year for life to Mary Baker, late of Littlebath, and now of Hadley; and the use of the house at Hadley if she chose to occupy it. Otherwise, the house was to be sold, and the proceeds were to go to his estate.

There was a relief to her, a sort of relief, in those words. The doom as so far spoken was so much a matter of course that it conveyed no penalty. Her story had been told in order that that result might be attained with certainty. There was almost a tone of scorn in her voice as she said, “Oh yes; all that must be over.”

For if even now men form to themselves images, since they cannot keep the body (for neither is it possible, but whether they will or no it glides and hurries from them), and are rivetted to the planks of wood; what monstrous thing would they not then have devised?

So then the same Lord, our Divine Physician, using His own instruments and servants, has by you wounded him when he was proud, and by us healed him when he was penitent, according to his own saying, I wound, and I heal.

The use of a Colony as a prison is no doubt in accordance with the Dutch theory that the paramount object of the outlying settlement is the welfare of the parent state,—but it is not at all compatible with the existing British idea that the paramount object is the wellbeing of the Colonists themselves.

He had so heavy a burden to sustain, that he needed much aid from above.

For the multitudes now have a beginning, appearing as they do to be introduced into the divine Word, and to approach the truth; and thus they begin to say within themselves, We have Abraham for our father.

Then Malchen paused, and the younger of the two ladies shook her head. “ Because you always have been there.”

For not only is the Creator of the world called a Power, but even the ministers of His glory, and all the heavenly host.

[Joshua 10:12-14] I see that time, then, is a certain extension.

One of his devices was of the greatest service.

But in that which is added, And the Word was with God, there is much reason to understand thus: The Word, which is the Son alone, was with God, which is not the Father alone, but God the Father and the Son together.

[Mark 15:46] And so it is shown to all that the Body was not the Word, but Body of the Word.

For call to mind, for instance, those words wherein ye renounced his usurped rule, and bent the knee and deserted to The King, and uttered those awful words whereby we are taught in nothing whatever to obey him.

But in this nature of man, that is good, and well formed and ordered by One That is Good, there is now war, since there is not yet health.

The accommodation of course will come as years roll on.

This glory we also shall enjoy according to our measure, if we be sober.

“Oh, Mr. Glascock, I did not mean that; indeed I did not. Pray do not think that. Take what I say as final. I like you more than I can say; and I feel a gratitude to you that I cannot express,—which I shall never forget. I have never known any one who has seemed to be so good as you. But— It is just what I said before.” And then she fairly burst into tears.

Let those tell us who consider the nature of God to be within their comprehension, whether they understand themselves— if they know the nature of their own mind.

They hold together each by each and are interwoven one with another: [Ezekiel 1:11] like wheels within wheels they roll along [Ezekiel 1:16] and go wherever the breath of the Holy Spirit wafts them.

A brother is nearer to you than any chance person.

Or shall I say that forgetfulness is in my memory with the view of my not forgetting?

“It does remain, and every day becomes worse.”

What if he made some inquiry as to the correctness of his old recollections?

“Oh yes,” she replied; and he felt her hand tremble in his, and dropped it. He had forgotten that he thus held her as all these thoughts pressed upon his brain.

One firm .

He looked on friendship as one of those costly delights with which none but the rich should presume to gratify themselves.

Then, too, where you have rivalry, you have rage, bitterness, wrath and grief, with all bad things which flow from them— the whole entirely out of keeping with the religion of Christ.

Ayala, in truth, required no assistance in dressing.

“Dear me! how tired you will be of us. Now do say something pretty, Mr. Staveley.”

We must not inquire into her motives, though we may pity her fate.

But this modern and accursed heresy, when it is overthrown by argument, when it is cast down and covered with shame by the very Truth, immediately endeavours to coerce by violence and stripes and imprisonment those whom it has been unable to persuade by argument, thereby acknowledging itself to be anything rather than godly.

But this unlettered man, the ignorant, the native of Bethsaida, the son of Zebedee, (though the Greeks mock ten thousand times at the rusticity of the names, I shall not the less speak them with the greater boldness.)

There’s nothing becomes a young woman like a little caution, or makes a young man think more of her.

For its own will was the originator of its evil, as God was the originator of its motions towards good, both in making it when it was not, and in remaking it when it had fallen and perished.

“Of course I should come; who doubted it? But never mind that, for here I am.”

She had believed herself to be right, and would not, even now, tell herself that she had been wrong; but there were doubts, and qualms of conscience, and an uneasiness,—because her life had been a failure.

Poor Hermy!

For he gave glory to God, most fully believing, as it is written, that what He has promised He is able also to perform.

On being informed of this fact, Ammonius and the monks embarked for Constantinople, and took Isidore with them; and they requested that their cause might be tried in the presence of the emperor and of the bishop; for they thought that, by reason of his boldness, John, who was careful to do right, would be able to help them in their rights.

So she blushed, and almost trembled, when she heard that he was coming, and was glad in her heart when she found that there was neither anger nor sunshine in her mother’s face.

He knew that what took place there would, if divulged, utterly ruin him with Mrs.

Manes said: Hear, O judges, what he has said of the adversary.

Never in my life had I been in a position of such extraordinary difficulty.

As to family prospects he had none.

In which we may see the poison of the heresy.

Gregory to Barbara, etc.

There is no whitening equal to that of sepulchres whited as they are whited!

‘I thoroughly congratulate you,’ said Sir Gregory. ‘You have justified my choice, and done your duty with credit to yourself and benefit to the public. I hope you may go on and prosper. As long as you remember that your own interests should always be kept in subservience to those of the public service, you will not fail to receive the praise which such conduct deserves.’

And what of Sam?

What sort of storehouses are there for the concepts that are being put in by our hearing?

What seat will you build for me, or what is the place for my rest?

How is it, then, that he fails to perceive that he is using the views he fights against as his allies in the war?

“I want to leave Aunt Julia behind, which we shall certainly do.”

Praise to the Holy Trinity for ever through the ages of the ages.

It did not occur to the man that his offer could be refused.

We have therefore followed precedent, and the example of men well known and illustrious both for learning and character.

His friendship for Cnæus!

‘Down here, is it?’ said Alaric peeping over.

For he did actually see the glory of God, the mystery of Whose taking flesh from the Virgin he foretold.

Lord Rufford had promised her a tedious communication through servants as to the state of the weather.

Another circumstance also much influenced him, though it was one which may almost be said to have influenced him against his will.

You know of me, and I know of you, that if every tittle of the evidence of that child’s birth were in the keeping of either of us, so that it could be destroyed on the moment, it should be made as public as the winds of heaven tomorrow, so that it was true evidence.

And He who is truly God is just and good; who is Himself all, and all is He; for He is God, the only God.

Once there came on a little shower, which just sufficed to give Harry an opportunity of wrapping his companion very closely, but he had hardly completed the ceremony before the necessity for it was over.

But he was there, only five minutes after the time, and the dinner was eaten almost in silence.

With arms extended, and loud voice, and dishevelled hair, and streaming tears, shrieking to Heaven in her agony, every now and again kissing the hand of the poor sinner, she besought the Lord her God that He would give to her the thing for which she asked;—and that thing prayed for with such agony of earnestness, was a consent from Linda to marry Peter Steinmarc!

4. John Denies that He is Elijah or The Prophet. Yet He Was A Prophet.

Chapter 28.— Whether the Worship of the Gods Has Been of Service to the Romans in Obtaining and Extending the Empire.

But it had not been altogether so with her.

But what must we say in reply to what follows?

The Gospels then being four, I deem the first fruits of the Gospels to be that which you have enjoined me to search into according to my powers, the Gospel of John, that which speaks of him whose genealogy had already been set forth, but which begins to speak of him at a point before he had any genealogy.

He was doing the very thing which throughout all the years of his manhood he had declared to himself that he would not do.

Nor in such an act of thought does he do anything else than deal with images of corporeal things, that is, of sounds.

There was not a word to be uttered.

Therefore pity, indignation, grief, joy, every human emotion is experienced by the demons, with the same mental disturbance, and the same tide of feeling and thought.

“I suppose it won’t much matter either,” said the father, “if he goes to prison and rots there. It seems to me that that’s the other alternative.”

That letter, moreover, was not an answer from me to you, but a confronting of my arguments with yours.

It was very handsome for a single lady, but then she lived in a free and openhanded style; her charities were noble; there was no reason why she should save money, and her annual income was usually spent within the year.

John 14:22

Why does she speak of demons, when she means to denote spirits to be held accursed?

“It is true,” said Hetta. There came over the face of the other girl a stern hard look, as though she had resolved at the moment to throw away from her all soft womanly things. And she relaxed her hold on Hetta’s waist. “Oh, my dear, I do not mean to be cruel, but you ask me for the truth.”

“Oh no,—at least I hope not. Susanna did try to make mischief.”

wirra, wirra, what’ll I do at all?

But you still ask, how is the body dissolved while it yet eats and drinks?

Thus you will leave an imperishable memory of honour to future generations.

There are men who do not believe in a day of judgment; these cannot have boldness in a day which they do not believe will come.

Come then, there have been many men of old days illustrious for piety, as lawgivers, generals, prophets, teachers, and men brave to the shedding of blood.

“Why should I not?”

“That setting was done for my mother,” he said, “but it is already old.

Ver. 22. Whom I have sent unto you, says he, for this very purpose, that you may know our state, and that he may comfort your hearts.

[Proverbs 20:10] There are tasks which wisdom apportions, and apportions according to the estimate of the virtue and strength of each.

Should it lead by any misfortune to her discovery before she could escape, that she could not help.

One cannot shut one's ears; and to forbid them is looked on as a sign of haughtiness.

What means this word only, but that this, and nought else, is the only thing we should seek?

But it was not only from the family of the Boltons that these applications and entreaties came. Even Mr. Seely took upon himself to tell Mr. Caldigate that under existing circumstances Hester should not be detained at Folking.

If, however, he does grant that the Son subsists in some substantial way— we will not quarrel now about the particular way— why does he take away again that which he has conceded Him to be, and prove Him to exist not properly, which is tantamount, as we have said, to not at all?

I am not engaged to marry Miss Fay,—as yet. I think that I may be some day soon.

For unless He had fallen, we should not have risen again.

But we must not forget what follows the subjection, namely, Last of all is death conquered by Him.

But if one were to say that he disparaged the flesh, and generation on account of it, by quoting Isaiah, who says, All flesh is grass, and all the glory of man as the flower of grass: the grass is withered, and the flower has fallen; but the word of the Lord endures for ever; [Isaiah 40:6-8] let him hear the Spirit interpreting the matter in question by Jeremiah, And I scattered them like dry sticks, that are made to fly by the wind into the desert.

Sport in the West

I am living a life before the public as a singer, in which it is necessary that I should encounter certain dangers.

A man who thinks this will be proving that their nature is one thing in itself, and becomes something else by virtue of its participation in this beauty or its opposite: as happens with iron for example: if it is approached some time to the fire, it assumes the quality of heat while remaining iron: if it is put in snow or ice, it changes its quality to the mastering influence, and lets the snow's coldness pass into its pores.

Her entreaties to the priest, who was constant in his attendance upon her in the prison to which she was removed from his house, were piteous,—almost heartbreaking.

[Ecclesiastes 12:8] Hear also what the Prophet says, He heaps up riches, and knows not who shall gather them.

I will say (albeit I would rather not) it is a difficult thing for one to turn woman once for all who fears to do so, and who, when already so turned (in secret), has the power of (still) falsely pretending to be a virgin under the eye of God.

Boscobel affected to hear the slight put upon his courage with good humor, but Nokes laid himself down in a corner and sulked.

But I think that some remembrance of the past must come back upon you now that you have seen me again.

Jubilate in God every land.

Wherefore it lies today in our own power whether we choose to live under the grace of the gospel or under the terrors of the law: for each man must incline to one side or the other in accordance with the character of his actions, for either the grace of Christ welcomes those who go beyond the law, or else the law keeps its hold over the weaker ones as those who are its debtors and within its clutches.

In this way your heresy has grown and you have deceived many; especially those who cleave to women and are assured that they cannot sin.

Chapter I. The Weights and Measures

The Prime Minister and his wife visited their Sovereign, and he made some very useful speeches through the country on his old favourite subject of decimal coinage.

The Lord was the judge, and declared himself against the unjust.

“Nothing on earth should have made me have it while he was in prison,” the Duchess had said.

“Don’t you? Then you must be very thickheaded. My father has sent me word that you are to be turned out. Of course he means it for me. He does not wish to give me the power of saying that he sent me away from the house,—me, whom he has so long endeavored to rob,—me, to whom he owes so much for taking no steps to punish his fraud. And he knows that I can take none, because he is on his deathbed.”

“She’d take her skin off her if she could, now that she’s angered,” said the lady’s husband, who no doubt knew the lady well.

“It was Rebecca Loth who thought of it, and who asked me to come,” said Ruth.

His code of perseverance taught him that it was a virtue to overcome cold shoulders.

And they both owed him very much in that he had never said a word of it all to anybody else.

He loved Oxford with all his heart, and some years since had been heard to say hard things of Mr. Peacocke, when that gentleman deserted his college for the sake of establishing himself across the Atlantic.

But he was very young, and had not as yet learned the manner in which he might best advance his cause with such a woman as Lady Laura Standish.

It is not right to fear if the gang that contended with Christ, should conspire against godliness; but we should the more please God through these things, and should consider such matters as the probation and exercise of a virtuous life.

“I tell you I haven’t, ma’am; and what’s more, I won’t.”

She would not have minded it, she said, if he had been a Roman Catholic.

So the first man on the earth, or rather he who generated evil in man, had for choice the Good and the Beautiful lying all around him in the very nature of things; yet he wilfully cut out a new way for himself against this nature, and in the act of turning away from virtue, which was his own free act, he created the usage of evil.

Certainly not,—though there might be a triple ducal coronet to be had.

They were eating of the Devil's garbage: you were feeding on spiritual unguents.

When a gentleman is going abroad with his family, he and his family need not as a matter of course travel together.

Let us judge, therefore, with respect to those which are manifest; but respecting those which are concealed, let us leave the judgment to God: for they also cannot be hid, whether they be good or evil, when the time shall come for them to be manifested.

When he had appeared before her, she had jumped up, ready to rush into his arms; but then she had repressed herself, and had fallen back, and she leant against the table for support.

Actuated by that fear she had repulsed him with a falsehood, though the matter was one on which it was so terribly expedient that she should tell the truth.

The impostor Callistus, having ventured on such opinions, established a school of theology in antagonism to the Church, adopting the foregoing system of instruction.

And he adds more explicitly: If, then, in this whole treatise we have investigated well, it results that virtue is neither by nature, nor is it taught, but is produced by divine providence, not without intelligence, in those in whom it is found.

These great men counted worthy of prophetic inspiration look down upon time: every opening is barred whereby human perception might penetrate behind the birth, which transcends times eternal.

For all die in the sin; they do not sin in the death; for when sin precedes, death follows— not when death precedes, sin follows.

To create something useful was, to his thinking, very good.

For persons split into many parties cannot properly claim this appellation, for the name of Church is a name of harmony and concord.

‘You wouldn’t have to go, I suppose?’

It is a new work which we are undertaking in lieu of the old one.

“I suppose you are getting right now.”

We answer, Because the retribution, according to the desert of each, does not take place here, but is reserved for hereafter.

Though she was as confident about her daughter as was the father, she was less confident about the old friend.

These, then, are the opinions of Monoïmus also.

Everything in the Old Testament is of this kind.

But why a MS. of ‘,ivy, or of Dante, should not be as serviceable at Capetown as in.

“I did not. As far as I can analyse my own feelings, I entertained anger only against those who, though they knew me well, thought that I was guilty.”

The freeing from sin, and also the making them servants to righteousness, which is better than any freedom.

Since then both in this respect it is more grievous, and from the sick not being sensible of it as he ought to be; come, give yourself to my words, that I may teach you plainly the mischief of it.

Undutiful! So she called herself; but had she not, in truth, paid duty to her aunt beyond that which one human being can in any case owe to another? Are we to believe that the very soul of the offspring is to be at the disposition of the parent? Poor Linda! Madame Staubach, when the letter was handed to her by Tetchen, sat aghast for a while, motionless, with her hands before her. “She is off again, I suppose,” said Tetchen.

“I don’t know,” said Ada.

‘Euphemia Caldigate.’

Hear Him, Who opens the way to heaven, and by the punishment of the cross prepares for you the steps of ascent to the Kingdom?

At first the tidings had been gloomy enough.

When he had proceeded about six miles, Frank was picked up by his friends; but even then his anger had hardly cooled.

Cousin Henry dashed at him, and in the struggle the book fell to the ground.

Let us, however, consider more carefully his argument on this point.

This is the diversified wisdom of the Peratic heresy, which it is difficult to declare in its entirety, so intricate is it on account of its seeming to consist of the astrological art.'

She had been told that Silverbridge understood what was expected from him; and of course could not fail to carry home to herself an accusation that she failed to understand what was expected from her.

“Oh, I don’t mean any disrespect to Mr. Stanley. The horridness I speak of does not attach to him personally, but to his stiff, respectable, ungainly, well-behaved, irrational, and uncivilised country. You see I am not very patriotic.”

“But juries in Common Law courts are not always intelligent. And you may be sure, Prendergast, that any gentleman taking up the case on the other side would have as much to say for his client as your counsel would have for yours. Remember, you have not even been to Putney yet.”

“Nor I either,” said Matida. “ He used to walk about with her, but what does that come to? The children were always with them. I never would believe that he was going to make so little of himself.”

It’s very well for you to say that, who have friends like the Balls to stand by you.

The deadly bites of serpents are healed by the brazen serpent, which was lifted up that they might look at it.

Had he come yesterday, indeed?

“She has twelve hundred pounds.”

All nations then had devils for their gods: those whom they called gods, were devils, as the Apostle more openly says, The things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice unto devils, and not to God.

Else Paul would not be so bent (upon going)— he that on all (other occasions delivers himself out of dangers.

Where Diana, when hers fell at Ephesus?

Now, you had better stay here, and not say a word more about it till he is ready to take you.

The sacrifice does not disperse into ashes, or into smoke, or into steamy savor, it makes the things placed there bright and splendid.

But latterly in all great matters Mr.

But they were members of a Liberal government, and of course anti-Lizzieite.

The gifts here would be from States, and not from individuals but the principle would be the same.

[Genesis 1:10] Why does Scripture say above that the waters were gathered together unto one place, and that the dry earth appeared?

But he became all things to all men that he might save all, when he says: He that eats let him not despise him that eats not, and let not him that eats not judge him that eats: and: He that gives his virgin in marriage does well, and he that gives her not in marriage does better; and elsewhere: Who, says he, is weak, and I am not weak?

“I’ll tell you what I’ll do;—when I come, I’ll bring you a dog that will follow you without thinking of apples.” Then the gig was heard on the gravel before the door, and Belton was forced to go.

But if they say that justice is not a blessing, it must either be an evil or an indifferent thing.

But neither when He goes forth from the Father does He retire from a place, nor is He separated as a body from a body; nor when He is in the Father is He as if a body enclosed as it were in a body.

But if a man is, as Jesus taught, pure in heart, and meek, and peaceful, and cheerfully submits to dangers for the sake of his religion, such an one might reasonably have confidence in God, and with a full apprehension of the word contained in the prophecies, might say this also: All these things has God shown beforehand, and announced to us who believe.

A governess should make up her mind to do without a lover.

“No,” said Will; “I never saw her.”

Not that Paul was the person to whom they were attaching themselves; for he would not have borne it: but wishing by concession to tear up this custom from the root, he introduced himself, indicating that if any one had inscribed upon himself even his name when breaking off from the common body, even so the thing done was profane and extreme wickedness.

Even at that early hour of the morning we could hardly make our way through the narrow streets.

For the blood is found to be an original product in man, and some have consequently ventured to call it the substance of the soul.

That State basis, as opposed to a basis of population in the Upper House of Congress, has been the one great political weapon, both of offense and defense, in the hands of the Democratic party.

But if this is everywhere manifest, and promptly occurs to all not by instruction but by nature, what is there left that seems obscure, unless perchance it be concealed from some one, that when we wish for something, we will, and our mind is moved towards it, and we either have it or do not have it, and if we have it we will to retain it, if we have it not, to acquire it?

When they shall have awoke from this life, that thing does pass away which was grasped as if in sleep.

Souch. Don’t now—don’t you, sir! he has teeth like a lion!

Chapter 21. Of Silent Acquiescence in Heathen Formularies

And after this, let him partake of bread and salt with him who commits them to him.

“I am not thinking of leaving you.”

For unless it is offered spontaneously, and from the soul, it is a curse; when men sacrifice, compelled by proscription, by injuries, by prison, by tortures.

But at home Serjeant Bluestone was all the judges of the land rolled into one.

The answer about the beginning of the devil's fall.

She had no such knowledge as regarded Felix Graham.

He had hoped then that he could have saved it.

Since what need was there further, that when the second was moved to prophesy the first should speak?

The Church had become his profession, and he had worked hard at his calling.

Chapter 27. Some Hair-Splitting Use of Words in Which His Opponent Had Indulged

Gregory to Secundinus, Bishop of Tauromenium. [In Sicily.]

For even in recent days, by means of his ministers— that is to say, the idolaters— that bitter adversary took up the word deny, when the lawless pressed upon the witnesses of Christ, with the adjuration, Deny your God, the crucified One.

Afterwards, when Caesar, as we shall hear, had crossed the Rubicon, their enmity was declared.

Is it a longer life?

Do you see how He varies His discourse; at one time saying, Not every one that says unto me, Lord, Lord, and revealing Himself; at another time, He that does the will of my Father; and again, bringing in Himself as judge, For many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in your name, and I will say, I know you not. And here again He indicates Himself to have the power over all, this being why He said, Whosoever hears these sayings of mine.

Eber lived 134 years, and begot Peleg, in whose days the earth was divided.

And all this together is referred to the world, that is, to Jupiter, who is called progenitor and mother, because he emitted all seeds from himself, and received them into himself.

But it expressed an assured confidence—which never quavered in a page or in a line—that the North would win.

Had He not been of the same Nature, He would not have spoken thus.

“I shall be angry with him, madam,” ejaculated Dr Fillgrave, making another sudden demi-pirouette. “I am angry with him—or, rather, I despise him;” and completing the circle, Dr Fillgrave again brought himself round in full front of his foe.

“There is no quarrel.”

I wrote unto you in my epistle to have no company with fornicators: yet not altogether with the fornicators of this world, or with the covetous and extortioners, or with idolaters, for then must ye needs go out of the world: but now I write unto you not to keep company, if any man that is named a brother be a fornicator, or covetous, or an idolater, or a drunkard, or a reviler, or an extortioner; with such an one no not to eat.

His head was turned now this way and now that, but never towards his plate.

But we can find the date of these two prophets in the chronicles, not in their own writings, for they say nothing about it themselves.

Mr. Harcourt, though a member of Parliament and a learned pundit, was nevertheless a very young man. He was an unmarried man also, and a man not yet engaged to be married. It may be surmised that George Bertram would not have been pleased had he known the sort of conversations that were held between his dear friend and his betrothed bride. And yet Caroline at this period loved him better than ever she had done.

“I hear that Mr. Quiverful is already appointed,” said Tom Staple.

Can it be that your Christ promises a kingdom of heaven, without having a heaven; as He displayed Himself man, without having flesh?

2 Corinthians 8:10

If those won’t do it, nothing will.” All the same the magenta colour and the nine times nine did have their effect.

If then he answer, as he must, that God comprehends all things, it follows from the very fact of their being capable of comprehension, that they are understood to have a beginning and an end, seeing that which is altogether without any beginning cannot be at all comprehended.

Did you commit whoredom once?

8. Give us this day our daily bread. [Matthew 6:11]

“That’s it. Sometimes I wish that Louis had not a shilling in the world; that he had to trudge about with an apron round his waist as I did. But it’s too late now to think of that. If he would only marry, doctor.”

The injured provincials would probably have none of great mark.

No pistol was ever seen,—though the weapon remained in the old desk for some days, and was at last conveyed out of the house when the Countess left it with all her belongings.

“Is this intended for an attack? “ he asked, looking from one to the other.

[Hebrews 12:12] For this is to fall indeed.

To John the Œconomus.

“We take our wine at dinner, sir.”

[Luke 18:6] Again it has overcome sloth also, and what friendship did not effect, this continued entreaty did: and although he will not give him because he is his friend (He says), yet because of his importunity he will rise and give to him.

Therefore, when it had been said, Our God is the God of salvation, immediately it was added, Even of the Lord the exit was by death, in order to show that we were to be saved by His dying.

But this resolution had only now been made known to the Duke, and he was rather puzzled to think how the Duchess had been able to be so quick upon him.

He is especially named, as his interest in the matter discussed was large.

John Kenneby, after one or two attempts in other spheres of life, had at last got into the house of Hubbles and Grease, and had risen to be their bookkeeper.

A thing which comes of the utmost wretchedness; to be of all men most effeminate, where one ought to practise self-command, but where more caution was required, in these cases again to become more shameless and obstinate.

[Zechariah 6:12] And speaking of the same, he says that 'each tribe shall mourn.'

At last, as he drew near to his own door, he resolved on the line of conduct he would pursue.

Both he and others have suffered at their hands.

Then, again, should you be disposed to apply the term adversary to the devil, you are advised by the (Lord's) injunction, while you are in the way with him, to make even with him such a compact as may be deemed compatible with the requirements of your true faith.

His unexpected appearance excited the greatest astonishment.

But if they sin willingly, spring away from them.

“Mrs Baggett, I want to speak to you, if you’ll come into the other room,” said Mary.

While he was lying beneath the table, John pronounced a discourse, in which he reprehended the pride of power, and directed the attention of the people to the instability of human greatness.

Thence in a mystery the similitude of cleansing the heart has been taken.

Let us then imagine a wondrous child, having besides His virtue the dominion of the whole world, and in all respects so virtuous, as to be capable of bringing all men to the yearning of a father's affection.

It’s killing you from day to day, and hour to hour.

It had come now—all of which they had dreamed, and more than all they had dared to hope.

I will sing unto my God, as long as I have my being.

In looking at her he could only look down upon her.

Lastly, what they possessed he would not have to grow old in their hands: but that something should be made of it to be for the price of the redemption of their souls.

Now Lady Hartletop could not be regarded as an agreeable connexion, but this was the only word which escaped from Lady Lufton that could be considered in any way disparaging, and, on the whole, I think that she behaved well.

[Habakkuk 3:3-4] Zephaniah, that is the bodyguard and knower of the secrets of the Lord, hears a cry from the fishgate, and an howling from the second, and a great crashing from the hills.

But insane ambition had driven him away from his anchorage.

“As a friend, I mean;—as a real friend. If it should be the case, Mrs. Crawley, that a jury should give a verdict against your husband,—what will you do then? Perhaps I ought not to suppose that it is possible.”

For this is especially the cause why, with the wise and the learned, and the princes of this world, the sacred Scriptures are without credit, because the prophets spoke in common and simple language, as though they spoke to the people.

Through faith he left his parents; left country, and place, and home through faith.

Such was the description given to us; but to the outward eye everybody seemed to be very happy,—and if the cabbage had been a little more boiled everything would have been perfect.

God appeared from a tree to Abraham, as it is written, near the oak in Mamre.

As well as I could learn he was called Apollo.

I, on the contrary, contend that nothing empty and void could have come forth from God, seeing that it is not put forth from that which is empty and void; nor could that possibly be devoid of substance which has proceeded from so great a substance, and has produced such mighty substances: for all things which were made through Him, He Himself (personally) made.

Nor is there any need to go through the deaths of individuals, since through the manifold lapses occurring in the world the punishment of their sins is as varied as the multitude, of sinners is abundant.

All the same, Mr Butterwell began to think that there was something wrong.

For there is nothing so powerless as bitterness.

But after this?

“My Marion”

Now, every image, whether carved out of wood or stone, or molten in metal, or produced out of any other richer material, must needs have had plastic hands engaged in its formation.

No character should utter much above a dozen words at a breath,—unless the writer can justify to himself a longer flood of speech by the specialty of the occasion.

But give heed to my first discourse of the truth.

O what an expression has he used, in saying, an evidence of things not seen.

Assuredly, Ambrose was not only enabled to say this by reading in the holy writings, but as of such a man is to be without doubt believed, he felt it also in his own heart.

’Midst green and sweets, a royal fabric, stands,

Do you send whatever candidates you please: it is for me merely to say whether or not they shall enter.’ But Mr. Jobbles would have gone much farther.

All these things Pilate did to Christ; and now in fact a Christian in his own convictions, he sent word of Him to the reigning Cæsar, who was at the time Tiberius.

There is need not only of profession, but of patience also to persevere in that profession, and of vehement contention, and of numberless toils, that you be not overthrown.

1. Enough has been said, as I think, your sacred Majesty, in the book preceding to show that the Son of God is an eternal being, not diverse from the Father, begotten, not created: we have also proved, from passages of the Scriptures, that God's true Son is God, and is declared so to be by the evident tokens of His Majesty.

For men prefer examples rather than words, because it is easy to speak, but difficult to accomplish.

For the beautiful, to which the ugly and deformed is opposed, is estimated and praised according to what it is in itself.

Why, I’m half carried away and half left behind.

Wherefore He is before the Son also, as indeed we have learned from you in your public preaching.

On it the apostles take from the Lord's hands the trumpet of the gospel which is to be preached to all nations, and receive the sacrament of regeneration which they are to bear to the whole world.

Now it might have been supposed in this case that it is not a sin to have a quarrel with another, that the only sin is in wishing to have it adjudicated upon outside the Church, had not the apostle immediately added: Now therefore there is utterly a fault among you, because ye go to law with one another.

“That’s nonsense. I saw him yesterday, and I asked him to come. I saw him again to-day, and he said he would come. He’s not such a fool as to suppose after that, that you asked him.”

“And why?” Mark looked up at Lord Lufton, and then remained silent for a moment.

[Matthew 10:40] Now what can be equal to the receiving Christ and His Father?

One can forgive, or, at any rate, make excuses for any injury when it is done; but it is almost beyond human nature to forgive an injury when it is a-doing, let the condition of the doer be what it may.

For it is absurd to say that Christ was in Peter and in Paul, but not in Michael the archangel, nor in Gabriel.

What, according to your views, are you profited by the innocence of Donatus, when you are stained by the rapacity of Optatus?

How, then, should he be said to have received or to have had perseverance who has not persevered?

Dinner at the Beargarden

“Or Sir Francis Geraldine. I suppose my uncle is still in search of a wife, and if he knew where to find such excellent principles he would be able to make his choice. What a joke it would be should he again try his luck at Exeter?”

For what a sword is to a madman, much the same is wealth to a covetous man; nay, it is even a worse thing.

Signifying, that if they were negligent, they would have incurable horrors to endure, and not have so much as a hope of remedy.

He had intended that the smile should be acquiescent, but it had been as cold as steel.

For according to the Scriptures the word God is used either of the true God, or by appellation only, or of a false god.

“I don’t see that it is wrong at all. Because Louis is foolish and mad, that cannot make another man wrong for doing the most ordinary thing in the world.”

And sighing she seeks a watered land from her father, because the grace of tears is to be sought with great longing from our Creator.

‘It is the old man’s bread,’ said this older man, weakly.

Then Nicolas, one of the seven Deacons, and one whose lechery knew no rest by night or day, indulged in his filthy dreams.

To these were added, or not added, according to the opinion of those who spoke, the smaller outlying colonies of Newfoundland and Prince Edward’s Island.

And why speak of this?

“Nonsense, Mrs Hearn!”

Imagine, then, with what joy I heard tidings so accordant with my desire, that the fairest districts of Persia are filled with those men on whose behalf alone I am at present speaking, I mean the Christians.

Everything that can be there done for your accommodation and comfort,—every luxury which can be provided to solace the President of this late republic,—shall be afforded.

The news conveyed by the telegrams was at Tankerville almost as soon as in the Court at the Old Bailey, and was believed as readily.

Now, even the seeds of plants have, one form in each kind, but their development varies: some open and expand in a healthy and perfect state, while others either improve or degenerate, owing to the conditions of weather and soil, and from the appliance of labour and care; also from the course of the seasons, and from the occurrence of casual circumstances.

Did He not permit you to give tribute to Cæsar?

[Wisdom 1:4] It is sufficient, however, to represent in the style of a historic narrative what is intended to convey a secret meaning in the garb of history, that those who have the capacity may work out for themselves all that relates to the subject.

After a few words of greeting Miss Marrable said that Miss Lowther was out walking. “She will be very glad, I’m sure, to hear good news from her friends at Bullhampton.”

“Faith, I don’t know; I never thought about her fortune if you’ll believe me. I never even remembered that her brother’s death would in any way affect her in the way of money, until after I left Grey Abbey.”

And though this grief burns, yet if Christ hold the place of foundation in the heart—that is, if nothing be preferred to Him, and if the man, though burning with grief, is yet more willing to lose the things he loves so much than to lose Christ,— he is saved by fire.

When he had first kissed his cousin up in London, she suggested that the kiss was given as by a brother, and asserted that it was accepted as by a sister.

“No; I can’t. You won’t let me do what I like.”

He knew that Trendellsohn lived close to the synagogue, and to the synagogue he made his way.

She hardly spoke to them, and I’m sure that even the servants understood that there was a quarrel.” She did not say a word of Lizzie’s offer of the brooch to herself, nor of the stories which by degrees were reaching her ears as to the old debts, and the diamonds, and the young bride’s conduct to Lady Linlithgow as soon as she married her grand husband, Sir Florian.

It appears pretty certain, now, that Brien Boru is not the property of the gentleman in whose name he has run; but that he is owned by a certain noble lord, well known on the Irish turf, who has lately, however, been devoting his time to pursuits more pleasant and more profitable than the cares of the stable—pleasant and profitable as it doubtless must be to win the best race of the year.

[1 Thessalonians 3:12] In another place we are warned that those who are of a different opinion from us must be corrected with meekness, if God perhaps will give them repentance to the acknowledging of the truth, and that they may recover themselves out of the snare of the devil, who are taken captive by him at his will.

“Who did then? But what matters? She knew it;—and, as the only means of whitewashing you in her eyes, I did tell her how cruel and how heartless you had been to me. I did explain how the return of friendship which you had begun to show me, had been frozen, harder than Wenham ice, by the appearance of Mr Carbury on the sands. Perhaps I went a little farther and hinted that the meeting had been arranged as affording you the easiest means of escape from me.”

“You don’t look down in the mouth, my Lord.”

Do you seek riches? Prove that you think lightly of the few things, that I may trust you also concerning the many things. But if you dost not think lightly even of these, much less will you do so of the other.

I reply; they are most useful and most necessary.

“Of course I will,” said Maurice.

Again, if the reason why it was said to the apostles, "Now are you clean," and "My peace I give unto you," was that the traitor had already left the room, then was not that supper of so great a sacrament clean and able to give peace, which He distributed to all before his going out?

And moreover, 'I and My Father are one,' and, 'I in the Father and the Father in Me ,' is equivalent to saying, 'I am from the Father, and inseparable from Him.'

She was almost sure that she had never heard of such a case as that.

[Genesis 12:5] For some perhaps might say this arose rather owing to their relationship than from any voluntary action on his part.

Therefore he worships them, therefore he welcomes them with speech, therefore with a seat.

But we must distinguish between the impious or heretics who will be destroyed (28) and Christian sinners who will be forgiven.

The emperor derived but little advantage from this artifice; yet he did not cease from his efforts to effect a change in religion.

Nor did the two sisters go to bed at once.

I ask, how is His Name wonderful in all the earth?

'By no means,' I said, 'but like philosophers.'

Therefore we are most anxious that you be persuaded not to be misled by such persons, since we know that every one who can speak the truth, and yet speaks it not, shall be judged by God, as God testified by Ezekiel, when He said, 'I have made you a watchman to the house of Judah.

For He needs nothing that we have to bestow, and this is also a special proof of a sincere love, when one who needs nothing and is not in any necessity, does all for the sake of being loved by us.

When I say a thing I mean it.

For the former indeed within a few days carries a man off and sets him free; but the other eating into and putrefying the body, gives it over to long disease, and then to a most painful death.

It is, however, fitting that, as I do not believe you guilty of the other things laid by some to your charge, I should not believe this either.

Wherefore I also, after I had heard of your faith in Christ Jesus and with reference to all the saints, cease not to give thanks for you.

The whole body of Christ therefore speaks Next follows, for I have hoped in Your judgments.

For temperance is named from the well-tempered mind.

But we recognize one glory of the Father, the equality of the Only-begotten; and one glory of the Son, that of the Spirit.

Thus the eye can take in the whole circle, if it adds to the illuminated part this obscure and dark curve.

Of Lady Lufton herself enough, perhaps, has been written to introduce her to my readers.

You either worship idols, or devils.

This also it is needful for you to attend to wisely; that, if there should be any proper petition on the part of the same bishop against the bearers of these presents, it should be thoroughly enquired into; and, if haply they themselves also should rightly deserve to be smitten for their own fault, we pronounce that they should by no means be spared on the ground of their having had the toil of resorting to us.

By this time an animus in regard to the election had been created strong enough to bring out the men on both sides, and to produce heat, when otherwise there might only have been a warmth or, possibly, frigidity.

You know D’Ossi?” Roden declared that he had not the honour of knowing the Italian Minister.

[Wisdom 12:18] But it is clearly enough shown by these words, that for sins these tribulations do befall men, though they be faithful: although hence may bloom the Martyrs' glory by occasion of their patience, and the yoke of discipline godly endured as the scourge of the Lord.

[Genesis 3:14] What do you amid these things?...Nevertheless, to God my soul shall be made subject [Psalm 61:5].

“By appointment?”

“Very well; I have been satisfied to remain as engaged to you; but I am not satisfied to be subject to your interference.”

And this is not all; for, according to you, God is not only corruptible, but corrupted; not only changeable, but changed; not only subject to injury, but injured; not only liable to want, but in want; not only possibly, but actually weak; not only exposed to misery, but miserable.

Let Marcella begin, since she sits in the highest place, and is at the same time the eldest.

“A man should master his heart.”

So much did they look to this one object, to betray Him, and to set Him at enmity with the rulers.

She sat quite still in her chair; but she heard his quick step at the hail door; she was sure—she could have sworn to his step—and then she heard the untying of cords, and pulling down of luggage.

Thus it was just as true, that He received the form of a slave, as that He remained in the form of God.

“And you will answer my letters?”

“Have you been up with the ladies?” Melmotte asked him.

Of course he could neither acknowledge that he had been rewarded, nor assert that a share of the punishment of which she spoke had fallen upon him also.

And as John fulfilled his course, he said, Whom do you think that I am?

She had loved Mr. Prime very dearly, and trusted him thoroughly.

For how many sayings, uttered on another occasion, have no weight— in cases, to wit, where they are not uttered— unless the subject-matter be the same as on the other occasion, so that the one utterance may suffice!

Pompey at Thessaly was forced to divide at least the name of his power with Scipio, his last father-in-law: but Caesar never gave a shred of his mantle to be worn by another soldier.

Could any mere letter of your writing break the bond by which we were bound together?

“I think you must see him if he calls.”

From the moment that she is Lady Rufford, she will love him,—as she loves everything that is her own.

The active duties of a girl in her position are very few.

Chapter VIII. The Old Man Gives Information in Regard to Faustus the Father of Clement

“But yet that statement will have its effect. It will produce custom, and bring grist to our mill without any dishonesty on our part. Advertisements are profitable, not because they are believed, but because they are attractive. Once understand that, and you will cease to ask for truth.” Then he turned himself again to his work and finished his task without further interruption.

The Father is, in fact, greater, first as being the Unbegotten, and secondly inasmuch as the Son has condescended to the state of man, yet without forfeiting His Godhead ( 51).

The Bertrams

As a rule I am rather shy of chance travelling English friends.

Were the waters also telling her of the mistake she had made in accepting Mr Grey as her husband?

Because henceforth he is one that adores the Father and the Son and the Holy Ghost; one that detests demons and idols.

George thinks you will come up to town when you hear, and begs you will come here.

I tell her clubs come from nagging,—and it’s true.

One old gentleman, who, together with himself, had employed the forces of the establishment that evening, had told him that there wasn’t a single soul left in London.

‘You ain’t educated - not like Dr Freeborn, and men of that class.’

He, therefore, Who has achieved the work of our resurrection is plainly pointed out to be very God.

Who can be ignorant that this is uncertain?

Adolphe as he looked at her, felt that he was afraid of her.

Not only the suspicion of the Jews, but the faith of Christians, does declare this If then David in the spirit called Him Lord, how is He his son?

Such were the Epicureans, and all of the same school.

“Laws, sir,” she said, “the visitors’ day is Wednesday; and if you would come then, there would be the man in livery!” She took my card with the corner of her apron, and did just as well as the man in livery; but what would have happened to her had her little speech been overheard by her mistress?

Eran.— The promise was made about Solomon.

4. Afterwards he says he appeared unto James, who was one of the so-called brethren of the Saviour. But, since in addition to these, there were many others who were called apostles, in imitation of the Twelve, as was Paul himself, he adds: Afterward he appeared to all the apostles. [1 Corinthians 15:7] So much in regard to these persons. But the story concerning Thaddeus is as follows.

[2 Corinthians 5:17] What old things have passed away?

“She showed her sense in refusing you,” said Sir Thomas.

The body is composed of members both honorable and dishonorable.

[Song of Songs 1:2-3] The whole of that place of delights sounds of sport, stirs up approval, calls forth love.

A monster, I call him—a double monster: from man to woman; by and by from woman to man: whereas neither ought the truth to have been belied, nor the deception confessed.

Chapter III. The Arm in the Clouds

And the turning of sin to the man can be understood of his conviction that the guilt of sin can be laid at no other man's door but his own.

“I couldn’t be patient, Lady Fawn.”

For it was the opportunity of possessing which was wanting in their case, and not the will for it: which latter is always crowned by God, rather than compulsion.

If you’re quite in earnest, I’ll get some one to order the carriage.”—Rachel said that she was quite in earnest, and then Walter was called.

As therefore he is baptized by One that is alive, who is clothed with the baptism of the living Christ, so he is baptized by the dead who is wrapped in the baptism of the dead Saturn, or any one like him; that we may set forth in the meanwhile, with what brevity we may, in what sense the words which you have quoted may be understood without any cavilling on the part of any one of us.

“An odd thousand is nothing,” said Mr. Stistick, pausing for a second till the grace was over.

He is purely and simply good.

Now it is especially necessary for the man who is bound to speak wisely, even though he cannot speak eloquently, to retain in memory the words of Scripture.

“I should have thought, Lord Ballindine, that you would have felt that the sudden news of a dearly loved brother’s death, was more than sufficient to excuse Miss Wyndham from undergoing an interview which, even under ordinary circumstances, would be of very doubtful expediency.”

“Anyways you’ll be a rich man with a handle to your name. To me, living here in this out of the way parish, a lord doesn’t matter that.” And Father Marty gave a fillip with his fingers. “The only lord that matters me is me bishop. But with them women yonder, the title and the money and all the grandeur goes a long way. It has been so since the world began. In riding a race against you they carry weight from the very awe which the name of an English Earl brings with it.”

He was one who, in these, his latter days, eschewed all society, and cared to see no faces but those of the surviving few whom he had loved in early life.

For it was thus that Peter spoke.

That he should become a tyrant because he had the power to tyrannise was not in accordance with her former conception of the man’s character;—but then he was so changed, that she felt that she knew nothing of the man who now stood before her.

We had better meet there,—say at half-past ten.” Whereupon Mr. Wickerby wrote to the governor of the prison begging that Phineas Finn might be informed of the visit.

Chapter 17. Miracle performed by Paul Bishop of the Novatians at the Baptism of a Jewish Impostor.

She was related to the family only by her aunt’s marriage, and yet, as she said, she had always heard more of the Marrables than of the Brownlows.

Mr Brown didn’t know anything.

But there was an inner feeling in his bosom as to his own family, his own name, his own children, and his own personal self, which was kept altogether apart from his grand political theories.

And now what must be the next step?

The party from Scotland reached Queen’s Gate late one Saturday evening, and intended to start early on the Monday.

For the phenomena of sensation are simple, and incapable of being decompounded; but those of understanding are simple, rational, and primary.

For I do not ask, I do not inquire whether they could have said anything when swaying to and fro in their drunken maunderings; or whether, while Jupiter was unwilling, or rather unwitting, any one could have marie known the way to bring him down to earth.

On the contrary I implore you to live in harmony, so as to give no ground for any such suspicions.

Or if he wishes to die, not because he dislikes life, but that after death he may live better, still he is not yet living as he wishes, but only has the prospect of so living when, through death, he reaches that which he wishes.

Lamenting then he says, The breath of our countenance, Christ the Lord was taken in our corruptions.

This Only-begotten Son of God, sent by His Father, we know to have come down from heaven, as it is written, for the destruction of sin and death; begotten of the Holy Ghost and the Virgin Mary, as it is written, according to the flesh.

“Say it then. Or are you so ashamed of it that the words stick in your throat?”

[Luke 17:14] And when he saw them, he said unto them, Go and show yourselves unto the priests.

[Matthew 21:31] Do you see her standing, and taking courage, and washing away her own sins?

Friendship is the guardian of pity and the teacher of equality, so as to make the superior equal to the inferior, and the inferior to the superior.

Thanks be unto God for His unspeakable gift!

[Ephesians 5:15-16] In fine then, what man shall have any excuse who hears these things in the Church from prophets and apostles, and from the Lord Himself, and yet will give no heed to the care of his soul, and to the time of the consummation, and to that approaching hour when we shall have to stand at the judgment-seat of Christ?

5. C. I have been longing to say something, but have checked the words as they were bursting from my lips. You compel me to say it.

God alone has commanded us to offer to Him the hymn of praise.

If he had but had the chance!

But as it is noble for a man to die for virtue, and for liberty, and for himself, so also is it for a woman.

But the facts were stern, and there was no hope for her.

And if we would more exactly and carefully scrutinize the words which refer to the resurrection of the good, we may refer to the first resurrection the words, the dead shall rise again, and to the second the following words, and all who were in the graves shall rise again.

Or if she blushes to accept your offer or finds the house in which she was born too narrow for her, then move both of you to her abode.

They maintain the ungodly doctrine entertained by the Greeks and the Jews concerning Jesus Christ; and thus, by every means in their power, hunt for their applause.

Married ladies seldom estimate even the girls they like best at their full value.

Shouldest thou then have gone all lengths in wickedness, yet say unto yourself, God is loving unto men and he desires our salvation: for though your sins be as scarlet, I will whiten you as snow, [Isaiah 1:10.

I was already running after peace, but you have made me quicken my pace: my sails were set for the voyage but your exhortation has filled them with a stronger breeze.

Surely He could not have first removed this man's blindness, in order that he might afterwards cease to regard Him as the Son of David!

I should feel that I lost more than I got by goirig.” This she knew to be a lie, but it was so important that her father should believe her to be contented with her home duties!

This being, who from good became evil by his own act, is called by the Greeks diabolus: we call him accuser, because he reports to God the faults to which he himself entices us.

“And I am speaking of the old lady too,” said Arabella. “Of whom else should I be speaking?”

I will therefore that the younger widows marry, bear children, guide the house, give none occasion to the adversary to speak reproachfully.

The lists are open, I cry; your enemy has marshalled his forces, his position is plain, and (if I may quote Virgil )—

“I daresay not. And I’m sure I am the last person to wish to give you pain. But you see,—if the poor lady has done nothing to merit your anger, it does seem rather a strong measure to throw her off and give her no reason whatever. How would you defend yourself, suppose she published it all?” Lady Glencora’s courage was very great,—and perhaps we may say her impudence also. This last question Lord Fawn left unanswered, walking away in great dudgeon.

Also in the forty-fourth Psalm: Your throne, O God, is for ever and ever: the sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of Your kingdom.

Now who after this does not see through this conspiracy?

But now what says He?

Mr. Kennedy was not there, nor was Lady Laura.

“Every word of it,” said Mrs. ruffle energetically.

As to Porphyry's statement that the universal way of the soul's deliverance had not yet come to his knowledge by any acquaintance he had with history, I would ask, what more remarkable history can be found than that which has taken possession of the whole world by its authoritative voice?

Brooke Burgess was to become a rich man as her aunt’s heir, and her aunt would of course have her own ideas about Brooke’s advancement in life.

“Oh, Mrs Mackenzie, that is so terrible.”

For this is the import of all things, both inward and outward things, as we read in another place: Cleanse first that which is within, that the outside may be clean also.

Homily 40 on First Corinthians

And in no less degree is capable of being recognised the Word of Jehovah addressed to us from the bush (batos, i.e., an atmospheric medium); for voice, as significant (in language) of a meaning, is a reverberation of air, and without this (atmosphere) human speech is incapable of being recognised.

He poured forth during this period such an amount of learning on the subject, that when men took it up after the lapse of centuries they labelled it all as his philosophy.

And this image, since it is elsewhere spoken of as after the image, is not as if it were said relatively to the Son, who is the image equal to the Father; otherwise he would not say after our image.

Larochejaquelin.”

He said not, Let the word of Christ be in you, simply, but what?

Ireland, he says, is half the size of Britain, and about the same distance from it that Britain is from GauL In the middle of the channel dividing Ireland from Britain there is an island called Mona,—the Isle of Man.

For from these joy is engendered.

But from that time forth there came a great change in his manner to his youngest daughter.

“Then I shall leave this house and go with my girls to Norrington.” Now this threat, which had been made before, was quite without meaning. Mrs. Masters’ parents were both dead, and her brother, who had a large family, certainly would not receive her. “I won’t remain here, Mr. Masters, if I ain’t to be mistress of my own house. What is she to go to Cheltenham for, I should like to know?”

Chapter 6. The Ophites the Grand Source of Heresy.

Miss Stanbury had come to think of herself as though all the reality of her life had passed away from her.

Mrs. Robert, however, seemed to think that no one could keep her in any house against her own will without positive bolts, bars, and chains.

Another month, and English lords, and English members of Parliament, and English barristers would be there,—all men, for instance, who could afford to be indifferent as to their character for a month,—and the place would be quite alive with music, cards, and dice.

One price is owing to Me from you for My healing the blind and lame, and I receive another; for thanksgiving, dishonour, and for worship, insult.

“My dear Brother,” he said,—”I don’t think it necessary to let you know the reasons which induced me to keep my marriage private awhile.

How then can a man extinguish pride?

Ofttimes this anxious thought has crossed my mind,

The grass in patches was as good as in an English park, and the views through the open bits of the forest were very lovely.

I trust I have made it understood that corn comes into Buffalo, not only from Chicago, of which I have spoken specially, but from all the ports round the lakes: Racine, Milwaukee, Grand Haven, Port Sarnia, Detroit, Toledo, Cleveland, and many others.

O soul, clinging to the body, when reduced almost to an immaterial state through lack of food; or rather, when the body had been mortified by force, even before dissolution, that the soul might attain to freedom, and escape the entanglements of the senses!

“Yes,—why not? Why should you be different from other mothers? Why should I not think about it as other fathers might do? It is impossible. I wish it were not. For Mary’s sake, I wish he were three or four years older. But he is as he is, and we know that it is impossible. Nevertheless, it is natural that she should think about him. I only hope that she will not think about him too much.” So saying he closed the conversation for that night.

To what an office did it serve?

Spasmodic periods of pleasure, of affection, or even of study, seldom fail of disappointment when premeditated.

Trevelyan had now become so accustomed to being told by everybody that he was wrong, and was at the same time so convinced that he was right, that he regarded the perversity of his friends as a part of the persecution to which he was subjected.

Oh, fool!—that men should be so vile, and think themselves masters of the world!

“Indeed he was,” said Chapeau, “the very first. You don’t think he’d have let any one go before him.”

Of course this was Lady Glencora.

You have heard the description with pleasure: perhaps also it has made you enamored of solitude.

“But you might; now your son is quite a man.”

Adelaide Houghton is Miss Mildmay’s most intimate friend, and Adelaide has always known that I couldn’t marry.” As soon as Mrs. Houghton’s name was mentioned a dark frown came across Lady George’s brow.

Though he had never thought of murdering him,—as he told himself,—yet he hated him.

Wishing, then, to follow step by step your own commentaries which you have drawn out of your theology of every sort (because the authority of learned men goes further with you in matters of this kind than the testimony of facts), I have taken and abridged the works of Varro; for he in his treatise Concerning Divine Things, collected out of ancient digests, has shown himself a serviceable guide for us.

“Can I see Henrietta tomorrow?”

Lord Ongar, in his state of health, had not been in a position to make close stipulations as to the dower in the event of his proposed wife becoming a widow.

He made no answer to this, but moved the papers one by one carefully till he came to a folded document larger than the others.

But consider, I pray you, how he every where uses such a definition as shows that nothing very great, nor indeed any thing more, had been introduced by them.

This was an accident which had probably never happened to him before, and which had disturbed him much.

Let us trade with the silver that we have received, [Matthew 25:21] that we may be called diligent servants.

“You are free if you will say so;—but you must answer me.”

There was nothing said about Lily Dale the next morning at breakfast. Lady Julia observed that John was dressed a little more neatly than usual;—though the change was not such as to have called for her special observation, had she not known the business on which he was intent.

“Of course he will come, but I want to see him again first. Do I not, Harry?”

But Miss Tickle was in the room, and might have been said to be in the way, were it not that a little temporary relief was felt by Mr. Prosper to be a comfort.

There should be no gorgeous theatres flaring with gas, and certainly no policemen to take down men’s words.

“It is very dreadful,” she said, in a low voice.

When did God turn away His Face from His Son?

Accordingly, the brethren who prepared these objections understood him to have said that man's soul and God are of the same nature, and to have asserted that the soul is part of God; for thus they understood that he meant that the soul partakes of the same condition and power as God.

Her husband suspected her of having married him while her heart was still the property of that other man!

And let no one say that the time to the coming communion is short, for it is possible, not only in five days, but in one moment, to change the whole course of life.

There was the fact that he had been ridiculed by the very young man whom it was intended that he should support by his liberality.

[Hebrews 1:2] Now there is a distinction observed among us between creation and workmanship.

Nor yet was it any other of the creatures, since every creature is liable to change.

What apostle?

And when ladies have told me, as ladies did tell me,—pretty clever well-dressed women, —of hours so passed, of day after day spent in the turning of dust by their own fingers because there might still be diamonds among the dust, I thought that I could almost sooner have seen my own wife or my own girl with a broom at a street crossing.

These people also blame us for believing the resurrection of the flesh, and rather wish us to believe themselves concerning these things.

“I once thought,” said Mr. Turnbull,—”nay, not long ago I thought, that he and I would have fought this battle for the people, shoulder to shoulder, and knee to knee;—but he has preferred that the knee next to his own shall wear a garter, and that the shoulder which supports him shall be decked with a blue ribbon,—as shoulders, I presume, are decked in those closet conferences which are called Cabinets.”

The reason why my communication was so late in reaching you, or yours so late in being sent to me, I do not know.

Now for the first time we have heard this piece of vain babbling—that the Lord, by Whom are all things, does not in a strict sense exist.

Now that she had succumbed, and had told herself and had told him that she loved him, she did not scruple to be as generous as a maiden should be who has acknowledged herself to be conquered, and has rendered herself to the conqueror.

Indeed, the Rowleys, one and all, felt that providence had been very good to them in sending young Trevelyan on his travels in that direction, for he seemed to be a very pearl among men.

The heat had made him weak, and he was to come in September.

Again, he speaks after the class, and he always does it; for from kindness comes humbleness of mind, and from this, longsuffering.

For, through the genuineness of their love, their greatest contest with him was that the Beast, being choked, might cast out alive those whom he supposed he had swallowed. For they did not boast over the fallen, but helped them in their need with those things in which they themselves abounded, having the compassion of a mother, and shedding many tears on their account before the Father.

For it is not unknown, as I believe, to your Efficiency, how Anatolius (a man of wonderful learning, as says Saint Hieronymus, extracts from whose writings Eusebius, bishop of Cæsarea, inserted in his Ecclesiastical History, and Saint Hieronymus praised this same work about Easter in his catalogue) disputes with strong disapprobation about this age of the moon.

“A portrait, I suppose?”

How can it be worth one’s while, such critics will say,—the writer here speaks of all critical readers, and not of professional critics,—how can it be worth our while to waste our imaginations, our sympathies, and our time upon such a one as Ralph, the heir of the Newton property?

But in Him was the yea. That is, just as I said, the word abides unshaken and steadfast.

Wherefore is this experience more frequent, in proportion to the devotion with which any one in his inmost soul worships God?

for that which specially gives us assurance is, that we did not transgress the law, nor compel another to do it.

If so, how base must have been his friend’s conduct!

I shan’t give it up till she calls somebody else her husband; and then,—; why then I shall just cut it, and go off to uncle in Canada.

We ought therefore to hold forth and offer to God that alone for the receiving of which He Himself produced us.

“She wouldn’t have me,” Maurice had answered.

In the case of men then, it is a mark of goodness to punish, and of cruelty not to punish, and is it not so in the case of God?

‘But he hasn’t got a house,’ said Katie.

But she could not do it.

I will go back and linger out my life at Dresden, where my disgrace can hurt no one.” Her sister-in-law with all imaginable tenderness said what she could to console the miserable woman;—but there was no consolation possible.

He opens the opera-houses before Easter, and makes Parliament sit on a Wednesday evening.

[Matthew 6:12] And justly does He withhold this imputation, because that is just which He says: With what measure you mete, it shall be measured to you again.

I know, too, of another utterance of Jeremiah, which is reckoned among the books of the Psalms ; it is that which he made over the captivity of Israel.

Of what first-born does he speak? Of the faithful.

“Of course I can, and I will.” Then he asked her a question looking into her face. “You are not going back to Bragton?”

“I am happy to have the pleasure of making your acquaintance, Mr Gresham,” said the baronet, intending to be very courteous. “Though we have not met before, I very often see your name in my accounts—ha! ha! ha!” and Sir Louis laughed as though he had said something very good.

Her beautiful dark-brown hair was braided close to her face, and fastened in a knot behind her head.

So that it was not merely because the Jews did not listen that He called the Gentiles, nor was it of mere necessity, nor was it on any inducement arising from them.

One might presume that his pocket would be in some degree benefited, seeing that he was saved from the necessity of supplying the spiritual wants of a certain portion of his parish.

If—if it was to be her fate to be taken away from Fawn Court a happy, glorious, triumphant bride, then the additional obligation put upon her by her dear friends would not be more than she could bear.

The day of the debate had come, and Phineas Finn was still sitting in his room at the Colonial Office.

For he who is to supplicate for the people ought to be chosen of God and approved by the priests, lest there be anything which might give serious offense in him whose office it is to intercede for the offenses of others.

And, for himself, he thought that he had got out of the scrape very well by the exhibition of a little mock anger.

For this cause he also said, for a witness to the nations, to show, that He does not wait for all men to believe, and then for Him to come.

But if you are greater than He, and if you know better than He what is true, how do we yet believe Him?

9. John I. 22.

“Oh no!” The idea of rejecting Isabel!

As he thought of this he declared to himself that if he could meet Crosbie again he would again thrash him,—that he would so belabour him as to send him out of the world, if such sending might possibly be done by fair beating, regardless whether he himself might be called upon to follow him.

“At any rate he has been thoroughly disgraced,” continued Mr. Jawstock, “as a sporting man.

And who is quite sure that no such thing can happen to the wise man in this life?

By this example also, others there bury those who die by lightning as beloved of God, and honour them with temples, and erect statues of the dead in their own forms.

Here he paused for a moment to think.

[Hebrews 12:14] And humility too in like manner is a part of virtue; but nevertheless though any one should fulfill other good works, but have not attained to this, he is unclean with God.

As long as he lived, and her father, her father should not be disturbed.

“I’ve got to bear worse things than that, my dear.”

The author has cared enough about the character of such a person to find out exactly what it is.

Ayala’s first instinct was to look at the finery which had been provided for her.

The whole county was astir in this matter of this alleged guilt of the Reverend Josiah Crawley,—the whole county, almost as keenly as the family of Mr. Walker, of Silverbridge.

“I have heard all that, Mr. Greenwood.”

The late lord, who had been a Whig of the old fashion, had been the Duke’s friend.

Set me as a signet upon Your heart, and as a seal upon Your arm.

Fred Neville,—as he had been a week or two since,—was almost grovelling in the dust before the priest’s eyes; but the priest for the moment thought that he was wrapping himself up in the sables and ermine of his nobility.

[Matthew 27:54] And the officer of the footsoldiers, and they that were with him who were guarding Jesus, when they saw the earthquake, and the things which came [12] to pass, feared greatly, and praised God, and said, This man was righteous; and, [13] Truly he was the Son of God.

There were men at this time who declared that she was simply the cleverest and the handsomest woman in England.

And while we should praise and approve ungrudgingly what is said aright, we ought to examine and correct what does not seem to have been written soundly.

Here might be another chance,—if only Mr Palliser could give up his winter in Italy!

For you shall see, it says, your Life hanging before your eyes; and who shall declare his generation?

[2 Corinthians 12:7-8] But the Lord loved him, and so did not do what he had requested Him to do.

“Yes; it is the worst of it. But then I am so much accustomed to be alone. You see me in society, and in society only, and therefore naturally look upon me as one of a gregarious herd; but I am in truth an animal that feeds alone and lives alone. Take the hours of the year all through, and I am a solitary during four-fifths of them. And what do you intend to do?”

“I am sure he is true.”

Our Paul, moreover, educated by these words, and longing after things supra-mundane and super-celestial, and doing his utmost for their sake to attain them, says in the second Epistle to the Corinthians: For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, works for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory; while we look not at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporal; but the things which are unseen are eternal.

I shall think more of you as a man who might have been a Prime Minister than if you were really sitting in the Cabinet like Lord Cantrip.

Girls of nineteen do not care for lovers of one-and-twenty, unless it be when the fruit has had the advantage of some forcing apparatus or southern wall.

The Chaldaic art must necessarily be refuted by a greater number of arguments, although we have been reminding (our readers) of it on account of other circumstances, not peculiarly on account of the art itself.

For in the first place, as He also says further on, it is impossible that a devil should cast out a devil, for that being is wont to repair what belongs to himself, not to pull it down.

Now in proportion as the dominion of lust is pulled down, in the same proportion is that of charity built up.

had, nevertheless, by even his master's goods made to himself friends, who might receive him when he was put out of his stewardship.

“I suppose I did. It did not seem to be difficult to understand.”

Hence it is that the Saviour says to the Jews: [John 8:44] You are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father it is your will to do.

He might, no doubt, have been much hurt.

1 Corinthians 12:21

For when, on the tyrant's death, he returned to Ephesus from the isle of Patmos, he went away, being invited, to the contiguous territories of the nations, here to appoint bishops, there to set in order whole Churches, there to ordain such as were marked out by the Spirit.

Those or these?

In this Christ there came to men, at the time which He knew to be most fitting, and which He had fixed before the world began, the instruction and the help necessary to the obtaining of eternal salvation.

I give you a long notice, because you seem to have so many appointments.

And when He had sent the multitudes away, He went up into the mountain apart to pray: and when the evening had come, He was there alone. But the ship was now in the midst of the sea, tossed with waves: for the wind was contrary.

They belonged altogether to another set, being connected, as we have heard before, with the Omnium interest—”those horrid Gatherum people,” as Lady Lufton would say to her, raising her hands and eyebrows, and shaking her head.

“Oh, d—— my relatives.”

This (is He who) breathes upon the disciples, and gives them the Spirit, and comes in among them when the doors are shut, and is taken up by a cloud into the heavens while the disciples gaze at Him, and is set down on the right hand of the Father, and comes again as the Judge of the living and the dead.

For incorruptibility belongs to the corruptible body.

For a man would change all things more easily than those pertaining to religion.

God who at sundry times and in various manners spoke in time past unto the fathers by the Prophets, has at the end of the days spoken unto us by His Son whom He has appointed heir of all things, by whom also He made the worlds.

But if this be the end of the gifts, and if it be possible to effect it in another way without gifts, boast not yourself on the score of the signs, nor do thou bewail yourself to whom the gifts are denied.

But they are seduced into error in common with the heretics previously alluded to, and devote their attention to the discourses of these above the Gospels, thus laying down regulations concerning novel and strange fasts.

I have heard her say it was all the carrot-juice.

“What;—because such a man as Sir Orlando Drought throws up his office?”

Had Mr Broune, in his closet, told her that her book was absolutely trash, but had undertaken at the same time to have it violently praised in the “Breakfast Table”, it may be doubted whether the critic’s own opinion would have even wounded her vanity.

Thus the doctor walked about his room, much disturbed; now accusing himself for having been so angry with Lady Arabella, and then feeding his own anger by thinking of her misconduct.

In the present condition of things suffering would be better than happiness; more in accord with the feelings and position of the person concerned.

If they have not done so altogether, they have so greatly abstained from meddling in them that none of that thorough knowledge of the affairs of other nations has been necessary to them which is so essential with us, and which seems to be regarded as the one thing needed in the cabinets of other European nations.

Then there was the burning of the “Caroline.” England had improperly burned the “Caroline” on Lake Erie, or rather in one of the American ports on Lake Erie, and had then begged pardon.

So the Father cannot be called Father of an alien substance unlike His own, for a perfect birth manifests no diversity between itself and the original substance.

Shall I then accomplish it?

For all these things let us return glory to our merciful God, not by words only, but much more by works that we may obtain the good things hereafter, which may it be that we all attain to, through the grace and lovingkindness of our Lord Jesus Christ, by whom and with whom, to the Father and the Holy Ghost, be glory for ever and ever.

In that affair of John Grey they had both for a time thought alike, and Mr Vavasor had believed that his theory with reference to Alice had been quite correct.

There is an old saying, that no man is a hero to his valet de chambre, the reason doubtless being this, that it is customary for his valet to see the hero divested of those trappings in which so much of the heroic consists.

How he lived no one knew.

[Matthew 6:6] When therefore you enter into your chamber, you enter into your heart.

But I say this shall assuredly be the case, when all shall show their preference for Him, and thus there shall be a change of the present world.

“There’s Brown,” said Sir Orlando Drought, hurrying up to the commercial gentleman whose mistakes about finance Mr Melmotte on a previous occasion had been anxious to correct.

The passage over Pennsylvania Avenue, immediately in front of the War Office, was a thing not to be attempted in those days.

“Dear Fanny,” and “Dear Lady Lufton,” was said between them with all the usual warmth.

10th April, 18––.

“Would she come if she were let to come?” asked Fanny.

2. But the corrupters of the truth, who, incapable of submitting their reason to Holy Scripture, distort at will the meaning of the Holy Scriptures, pretend that these words mean matter. For it is matter, they say, which from its nature is without form and invisible—being by the conditions of its existence without quality and without form and figure. The Artificer submitting it to the working of His wisdom clothed it with a form, organized it, and thus gave being to the visible world.

For to it by nature belong the lower place and darkness, as they say; and the upper region and light are contrary to its nature.

; that is, otherwise You will not revive me, unless I walk in the midst of tribulation.

In the first place, she would understand more than he meant her to understand if he made the attempt.

To this Alaric replied that as Clementina had not much sense to speak of, that objection might fall to the ground.

“She will never marry Mr. Twentyman.”

We have not therefore given the preference to such cares as wishing to deny to your Holiness this and such other information.

See here how blindness, coming in punishment of madness, obscures the light in the eyes of the persecutor, not to be again expelled except by baptism!

“Nor Mary?”

Nor has there ever been anyone who quarrelled with this faith, without being guilty of unbelief: for to deny what is right and proved is to confess what is wrong.

He it is Whom the Father begot before the morning star, as being eternal, He brought Him forth from the womb as the Son; He uttered him from His heart, as the Word.

“Amen,” said the archdeacon.

Mamma did talk of going up to town, but I believe they have things now quite as good at Hereford.

Without the element of water, none of the present order of things can subsist.

It has been tried, as we all believe successfully, with British North America.

On this occasion sixteen waggon-oxen had died on the road.

Testimony of Irenæus bishop of Lyons, from his third book Against the heresies:—

Brachmanes quidem certe neque animatum comedunt, neque vinum bibunt; sed aliqui quidera ex iis quotidie sicut nos cibum capiunt; nonnulli autem ex iis tertio quoque die, ut ait Alexander Polyhistor in Indicis; mortem autem contemnunt, et vivere nihili faciunt; credunt enim esse regenerationem: aliqui autem colunt Herculem et Pana.

How then shall the modest woman, being a member of Christ, receive such an one, or how shall she join to herself the member of an harlot.

Such men may doubtless be found among the holders of livings in Ireland, as they may also in England; but such is not the general character of the Irish clergyman.

There was also Aunt Julia, with her niece Guss, and of course, there was Jack De Baron.

Whosoever, therefore, has not the Spirit of God in him, is none of His: as it is written, The Spirit of God departed from Saul, and an evil spirit troubled him, which was sent upon him from God.

But to point out how each of them supports his own opinion would take too long, and is not necessary; for indeed they use human conjectures, and bring forward nothing certain from the authority of the canonical Scriptures.

For that which comes short of perfection, whether it be in goodness, or power, or wisdom, or time, or place, could not be God.

They are not content to fight for the wellbeing of a race, and to think that the victory shall not come till the victors shall for centuries have been mingled with the dust.

How then [was he] without father, without mother?

‘Oh, John, we are so very, very, very, very glad to have you back again,’ said Julia, sobbing and laughing at the same time.

Early on the following morning the two lawyers again met, and it was arranged between them that the London lawyer should go over at once to Barchester, and that the Silverbridge lawyer should see Major Grantly.

Chapter 18. The Emperor Constantine abolishes Paganism and erects many Churches in Different Places.

In all these letters Cicero asks questions about his money and his private affairs; about the mending of a wall, perhaps, and adds something about his wife or daughter or son.

And saw heaven opened, and, knit at the four corners, a certain vessel descending unto him, as it had been a great sheet, and let down to the earth: wherein were all manner of fourfooted beasts of the earth, and wild beasts, and creeping things, and fowls of the air.

And they passed as traitors of their parents, and by their treachery did they not reap profit.

But whether we marry, it is only that we may bring up children; or whether we decline marriage, we live continently.

These letters, however, had been written before the first brick had been laid, and the world in that part of the country was of opinion that the Marquis might have retracted his gift.

But because you covered the eyes of Christ, (and ) thus you beat Him, for this reason, too, you bend your back for servitude always.

The kings of the Argives were these: Inachus, Phoroneus, Apis, Criasis, Triopas, Argeius, Phorbas, Crotopas, Sthenelaus, Danaus, Lynceus, Prœtus, Abas, Acrisius, Perseus, Sthenelaus, Eurystheus, Atreus, Thyestes, and Agamemnon, in the eighteenth year of whose reign Troy was taken.

To the one he adds what is wanting, from the other he subtracts what is overabundant.

He replied at the same time to the letter of the bishops who were convened at Antioch, for just then he happened to have received their epistle, and accused them of having clandestinely introduced innovations contrary to the dogmas of the Nicene council, and of having violated the laws of the Church, by neglecting to invite him to join their Synod; for he alleged that there is a sacerdotal canon which declares that whatever is enacted contrary to the judgment of the bishop of Rome is null.

I was then a clerk in the London Post Office, and I remember well how gay she made the place with little dinners, little dances, and little picnics, while she herself was at work every morning long before others had left their beds.

Outside active sins, to which it may be presumed no temptation allured herself, were abominable to her.

The Lord has ascended into the heavens, and has thundered: He shall judge the ends of the earth, for He is righteous: and He gives strength to our kings, and shall exalt the horn of His Christ.

For when the time has come for giving the infant a name, caring not to call it after the saints as the ancients at first did, they light lamps and give them names, and name the child after that one which continues burning the longest; from thence conjecturing that he will live a long time.

Now the Holy Ghost is a Power most mighty, a Being divine and unsearchable; for He is living and intelligent, a sanctifying principle of all things made by God through Christ.

So in this house of the world, when you look upon the heaven and the earth, its providence, its ordering, its law, believe that there is a Lord and Parent of the universe far more glorious than the stars themselves, and the parts of the whole world.

“Yes; five thousand at the Exchequer.”

He first appeared at a neighbouring meet on a pony, dressed in his shooting-coat, as though he had trotted in by accident; then he walked up one morning on foot to see his favourite gorse drawn, and when his groom brought his mare out by chance, he did not refuse to mount her.

No longer as a bond-servant, but more than a bond-servant, a brother beloved, especially to me.

11. Second reason for the Incarnation. God, knowing that man was not by nature sufficient to knowHim, gave him, in order that he might have some profit in being, a knowledge of Himself. He made them in the Image of the Word, that thus they might knowthe Word, and through Him the Father. Yet man, despising this, fell into idolatry, leaving the unseen God for magic and astrology; and all this in spite of God's manifold revelation of Himself.

“But I want you to know that I can afford it. You might perhaps have thought that I wanted your money.”

And that he did not simply leave [these things], he expressed by saying, he refused, that is, he hated, he turned away.

The sail up the bay is very pretty, through almost endless woods stretching away from the shores to the hills.

“The first time?”

“But not less on that account is the profession distasteful to me. You do not wish to see your sisters on the stage?”

We wish, but have not strength, to raise ourselves to behold that highest Trinity which is God.

But not even so will they be injured.

“I am so much taken by surprise, Ludovic, that I can hardly give you an answer. If you ask me whether I approve of such a marriage, I must say that I do not; I think that you would be throwing yourself away in marrying Miss Robarts.”

They say, too, that Here delights in the lily, and Artemis in the myrtle.

Of necessity these tables are against you, for the second commandment is, "You shall not take the name of the Lord your God in vain;" whereas you attribute the vanity of falsehood to Christ Himself, who, to remove the vanity of the fleshly mind, rose in a true body, visible to the bodily eye.

Nothing is placed in the Holy Scriptures without a reason, for they were uttered by the Holy Ghost, therefore let us enquire exactly into every point.

My beloved came down into His garden to eat the fruit of His trees.

The desire, therefore, of hearing the word of God, and inquiring into His will, they have from God; and this is the beginning of the gift of God, which is given to the Gentiles, that by this they may be able to receive the doctrine of truth.

Ayala’s promotion was now so firmly fixed that the buxom female came to assist her off with her clothes when Lady Albury had left her. From this time forth it was supposed that such assistance would be necessary. “I take it, Miss,” said the buxom female, “there will be a many new dresses before the end of this time two years.” From which Ayala was quite sure that everybody in the house knew all about it.

“That I can assure you I regard as a matter of course,” said the wife.

It seems that in 1825, when at a general election he had to stand again for the University, he expected that the influence of the Government would be given to Copley,— the future Lord Lyndhurst,—and to Goulburn.

Their state appears to the multitude despicable and inauspicious.

Of course that keg of brandy who went out just now understands very well who you are.

She also had been specially invited, but she had not returned from school in time to accompany her aunt.

“Certainly not,” said Rachel. “You’d frighten Mrs. Sturt out of all her composure, and we should never get the cream.” Then Rachel went off, and Rowan was again left with her mother.

“I do not mean to be impertinent.”

During dinner he was somewhat silent and moody; but when he got to his wine he recovered his spirits, and seemed tolerably happy.

Then there came the news that Cecilia Holt was going to marry Mr. Western.

Even as the Father has said unto me, so do I speak.

He had taken a very great step and he feared that he had not taken it with wisdom.

The dean also went to Plumstead.

The General Court usually sits for about ten weeks.

The two ladies were quite friendly in London; though down in their own neighbourhood they waged a war so internecine in its nature.

“I cannot come down, Mrs Mackenzie; I cannot, indeed.”

[1 Timothy 5:22] What do you say?

For if a man will but look up to heaven, he sees its Order, or if he cannot raise his face to heaven, but only to man, he sees His power, beyond comparison with that of men, shown by His works, and learns that He alone among men is God the Word.

And while He hungered in the flesh, as God He fed the hungry.

It was clear, however, that no robbery for the purpose of sale had been made.

[John 1:33] If you too hast unfeigned piety, the Holy Ghost comes down on you also, and a Father's voice sounds over you from on high— not, This is My Son, but, This has now been made My son; for the is belongs to Him alone, because In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

It was specially understood that nothing appertaining to a man was to be seen on the occasion, not even the portrait of one; and it may possibly have been the case that Clodius effected his entrance among the worshipping matrons on this occasion simply because his doing so was an outrage, and therefore exciting.

But I say unto you, Pray for your enemies, and love them that hate you, and bless them that curse you, and pray for them that despitefully use you.

An assurance given to the dealer that he will absolutely receive his money when the deal is completed will generally result in a diminution of 20 per cent, on the sum to be charged.

[John 8:36] For He said not, the Son of God; but in saying merely, Son, He gives us to understand whose Son it is.

In fact, the vice of envy grew stronger in him; and, having entrapped his brother, he slew him.

The language between them has been the language of equals, and their arrangement as to labor and wages has been a contract between equals.

But the Romans, watchful at home and in war, were active, made preparations, encouraged one another, marched to meet their enemies—protected by arms their liberty, country, parents.

There is a mystery respecting Mr. and Mrs. Peacocke which, according to all laws recognised in such matters, ought not to be elucidated till, let us say, the last chapter but two, so that your interest should be maintained almost to the end,—so near the end that there should be left only space for those little arrangements which are necessary for the wellbeing, or perhaps for the evil-being, of our personages.

Continuing the road from Sea.

In truth all kinds of tribulation were wrought out beyond number in us, perhaps because we were paying the penalty of sins, perhaps because the merciful God was trying us by means of the multitude of our sufferings.

Alaric had ascertained that Fidus might in a certain degree be useful to him, that the good word of the Aristides of the Works and Buildings might be serviceable, and that, in short, Neverbend was worth cultivating.

“Because I like him better than any one else,” she answered, boldly.

“But if he tells me that I must go?”

You should have the bowl he drank the milk out of, so as to tell the whole story.

The Duke was angry because Lord Chiltern had been violent;—and Lord Chiltern had been violent because Mr. Fothergill’s conduct had been, to his thinking, not only sacrilegious, but one continued course of wilful sacrilege.

“From Ellis’s,” repeated Lady Selina.

But Lady Milborough slept on the suggestion, and on the next morning hinted her disapprobation.

And he works his land by turns, or if he will not let it lie fallow, he alternates his crops, so that the fields may rest through change of produce.

For he says, when it shall turn to the Lord the veil shall be taken away: now the Lord is the Spirit [2 Corinthians 3:16-17] .

Wherefore have I said these words, brethren?

Your affectionate sister-in-law,

At Carthage, on the contrary, there was among the scholars a shameful and intemperate license.

To follow her is wholesome, and to turn away from her and neglect her is deadly.

Give not your alms to those who preside in the Church to distribute.

“You’ll see, my boy,” said Keegan—and now the benevolent attorney had altogether lost his smile,—”you’ll see, my boy, whether I won’t make the two of you pay for this; ay! and the whole family too, for a set of proud, beggarly, starved-out paupers. By G——, I’ll sell every rotten stick of old furniture left in the house, on the 6th of next month; and the three of you shall be tramping in the roads before the winter’s over!”

If either the Father spoke from heaven to the Son when He Himself was the Son on earth, or the Son prayed to the Father when He was Himself the Son in heaven, how happens it that the Son made a request of His own very self, by asking it of the Father, since the Son was the Father?

I was exceedingly delighted to observe the love cherished by you, which truly is of the largest measure.

For again we divide that which walks into rational and irrational; and then selecting from the species, apprehended by division, those next to man, and combining them into one formula, we state the definition of a man, who is an animal, mortal, terrestrial, walking, rational.

Charley sat down at his desk opposite to his friend Scatterall. ‘I hope, Mr. Snape, you had a pleasant meeting at evening prayers yesterday,’ said he, with a tone of extreme interest.

“She should teach herself to like the man, if the marriage be suitable. I would not have you take a vicious man because he was rich, or one known to be cruel and imperious. Your cousin Roger, you know—”

I tell you, because of free-will; for if we were not capable of death, we could not, as being immortal, be punished on account of our voluntary sin.

[Wisdom 7:24-25] It is mere prurient absurdity to find fault with the sign of human regeneration appointed by that God, to whom all things are pure, to be put on the organ of human generation, while you hold that your God, to whom nothing is pure, is in a part of his nature subjected to taint and corruption by the vicious actions in which impure men employ the members of their body.

Chapter XVIII. A Day With One of the Navvies.—morning

Would that you might be persuaded by our exhortation, and succeed too, and become imitators of those who have been successful, through the grace and mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ, with Whom to the Father and the Holy Ghost together be glory, and power, and honor, now and ever, and world without end.

This plant not even death when it comes causes to wither, but ever it stands enlightening the mind, feeding the sinews of the soul, and rendering its strength mightier.

The Jews feared to believe in manhood taken up into God, and therefore have lost the grace of redemption, because they reject that on which salvation depends; the Arians degrade the majesty of Godhead to the weakness of humanity.

Lord Rufford probably had made an offer, but it had been extracted from him by the vilest of manœuvres.

He entrusted you with these, and handed them over to you.

If left on the steamer, it had been so left through an intent on the part of some one there employed.

I should propose yourself and her son.

Stumps was a thickset, solid, solemn-looking man, who had been ridiculed by our side as being much too old for the game; but he seemed to think very little of Jack’s precise machine.

Then her brother strove to explain as best he could that the mere money was not all he wanted. If his sister did not like this man, if she had no wish to become a married woman, of course, he said, the plan must fall to the ground. But if there was anything in Mr Rubb’s belief that she was not altogether indifferent to him, if such an arrangement could be made palatable to her, then he would be able to think that he, by the work of his life, had left something behind him to his wife and family.

[Matthew 7:8] Let us learn upon earth that knowledge which will continue with us in heaven.

The singularity of his conduct in allowing none of his family to become acquainted with his wife was pointed out.

Chapter 14.— Of the Remedy Against the Fifth and Sixth Sources of Weariness

A slight suspicion of a hint, such as that she had made, would have been taken by a Frenchman, by a Russian, by a Pole, as meaning no more than it meant.

But what I mean is this.

Then it must be shown that the causes of the affections, and not the affections themselves, must be moderated.

“Oh;—very well,” said Tifto;—and Tifto got out.

If any one hated papistry Mrs. Bolton did so; but from a similar action of religious fanaticism she had fallen into worse that papistical self-persecution.

And had not the exceeding wickedness of his soul been betrayed by other means, it might have been said that he adopted this contrivance from a wish to promote concord among the people.

I see that a conspiracy has evidently been formed against Athanasius; for they have determined, I know not on what grounds, to send all those to whom he has objected, without giving any information to us, although it was agreed that we should consider together who ought to be sent.

For that none may take it as an expression of their piety (that he says,) You judge not yourselves worthy, therefore he first says, You put it from you, and then, We turn unto the Gentiles.

Were not also those expressions of Thales derived from these?

Had it been her own happiness that was in question, her own conduct, her own greatness, she would not have dreamed of having an opinion of her own.

Is He a body?

The speaking must all be done by him, and what was there that he could say?

But nothing is stronger than the truth.

Gradually had he and Captain Green come to understand each other, and though they did at last understand each other, Tifto would talk as though there were no such correct intelligence;—when for instance he would abuse Lord Silverbridge for being pigheaded.

For neither in the teaching by words does He continue always, nor in the wonderful working of signs, but He does now one now the other, variously working the salvation of them that were waiting upon Him and following Him, so as by the miracles to appear, in what He said, a Teacher worthy of belief, and by the teaching of His word to increase the profit from the miracles; and this was to lead them by the hand to the knowledge of God.

“You’re to remimber your oath, Muster Flory. You’re become one of us, as Father Brosnan was telling you. You’re not to be one of us, and then go over among them schaming Prothestants.”

“I shall go on with it now. I can’t help feeling that I’ve been a little let in among them. When the Duchess first promised me it was to be a simple walk over. Now that they’ve got their candidate, they go back from that and open the thing to any comer. I can’t tell you what I think of Fletcher for taking advantage of such a chance. And then the political committee at the club coolly say that they’ve got no money. It isn’t honest, you know.”

What Faustus says here has already been answered.

Thus have I written so far as the limits of a letter would allow me, beseeching your eminence for all our sakes to preserve your health, which is wont to be maintained by cheerfulness and ruined by despondency.

And then, after luncheon, when she had been for a few minutes with her husband in his own room, she told Clara that the Colonel wanted to speak to her.

On the contrary I tone down much that I may not appear to relate incredibilities.

Let the rose of modesty bloom in your garden, and the lily of the mind, and let the violet beds drink from the source of sacred blood.

But might it not well be that she had resolved that friendship should take the place of love?

Mr Harding walked on, and shook his head impatiently. Poor Bunce little knew how he was tormenting his patron.

The manner in which the Poor Law was first rejected and then accepted, and then, if one may say so, swallowed whole by the people; the way in which emigration has affected them; the difference in the system of labour there from that here, which in former days was so strong that an agricultural labourer living on his wages and buying food with them, was a person hardly to be found: all these things must be regarded by one who would understand the matter.

Christ's body was derived from Adam, for His mother the Virgin Mary was a child of Adam.

She was determined to avoid the length of the High Street, and she was determined also to avoid Brewery Lane; but she was equally determined to pass through the churchyard.

But he spoke to her of the things that worried him,—the unreasonable exactions of proprietors, and the perilous inaccuracy of contributors.

So much therefore I would say in order to show that the sense which I set forth is not improbable in connection with the context.

Afterwards, when I returned to Ireland, I wrote other articles for the same magazine, one of which, intended to be very savage in its denunciation, was on an official blue-book just then brought out, preparatory to the introduction of competitive examinations for the Civil Service.

England is not yet a commercial country in the sense in which that epithet is used for her; and let us still hope that she will not soon become so.

But I should need many more hours for my discourse, if I wished to speak of all things which concern her.

She had probably never questioned the fact, whether Mr. Glascock was a gentleman or not, and now she did not analyse it.

Once he had told her that she would be a fool if she did not do so and so.

Is it some disordered and irregular motion or some unguided current, some unreason of the universe, as though there were no Ruler of the world, which is therefore borne along by chance, as is the doctrine of the foolishly wise, who are themselves borne along at random by the disorderly spirit of darkness?

on his capital, and had enjoyed the gratification of seeing his name put up as one of the firm, which now stood as Fisker, Montague, and Montague.

Your friend,

But what shall I do? Perhaps, if it be not too much trouble, you will come up to town and see me. You can send me a word by the wires.

But you laugh at our reply, because, while we deny that souls are of royal descent, we do not, on the other hand, say in turn from what causes and beginnings they have sprung.

She realised it all, and told herself that that was the game she would play.

When He disperses its waves, Habakkuk's words are fulfilled, where he says, Scattering the waters in His passage.

Then, on hearing the words of this deceiver, these miserable men will perceive that this is the wicked accuser, and will mourn in anguish, and weep vehemently, and beat their face with their hands, and tear their hair, and lacerate their cheeks with their nails, while they say to each other: Woe for the calamity!

Hear another Psalm: Serve the Lord with fear, and rejoice unto Him with trembling.

Since, then, as you say, if I myself should ever wish—which God forbid—to transfer you to another doctrine, I shall not be able to persuade you, begin from tomorrow to attend upon me in the discussions with the adversaries.

Book IX, Letter 58

“He engaged hisself to me to marry her. He won’t say no otherwise himself. And he asked her twice. Why, Sir Thomas, he was all on the square about it till the old gentleman broke his neck. He hadn’t nowhere else to go to for a shilling. But now the estate’s come in like, he’s for behaving dishonourable. He don’t know me yet; that’s what he don’t. But I’ll make him know me, Sir Thomas.”

[Acts 3:19] This betokens them in a sad state, brought low by many wars.

On the night but one before he had not been in bed at all, having reached Basle after midnight, and having passed the hours ‘twixt that and his morning visit to Urmand’s house in his futile endeavours to stop poor Marie’s letter.

Herbert had a great deal that was very sensible to allege in favour of his views, but what use of alleging anything of sense to such a mind as that of Owen Fitzgerald?

Let that which is extended in space, that which is enclosed by limit, and whatever is not always everywhere and entire be banished from the heart.

For the gospels (continued he), the writings, and the oracles of the ancient prophets, clearly teach us what we ought to believe concerning the divine nature.

And there had been some conversation on that terribly difficult question respecting the foxes in Trumpeton Wood. “The fact is, Lord Chiltern,” said the Duke, “I’m as ignorant as a child. I would do right if I knew how. What ought I to do? Shall I import some foxes?”

“Natural that I should be inclined to marry again! And is that all? It is hard sometimes to see whether men are thick-witted, or hypocrites so perfect that they seem to be so. I cannot bring myself to think you thick-witted, Frank.”

It is quite manifest; to bind up a body.

And though we now talk of Sulla instead of Sylla, we hardly venture on Antonius instead of Antony.

And on every occasion, consequently, he kept watch upon the virgin's words, in order that, whenever this mystery should be fulfilled, he might prepare her dishonour.

“Will you not sit down? There is something wrong, I know. What is it?”

“Her name is Mrs Marsham; she is my bête noire.” And then they were actually dancing, whirling round the room together, before a word had been said of that which was Burgo’s settled purpose, and which at some moments was her settled purpose also.

The jeweller was ultimately successful in his views,—and so was the lady.

It was quite true that he would much have preferred to find that the woman’s evidence was in favour of Lady Mason.

Chapter XLI. Nearer and Nearer

An angry ill-pleased wife is no pleasant companion for a gentleman on a long evening.

Red-hot balls of clay and hot arrows are thrown into the camp, and there is a fire.

But he had pointed out that I was a particular man, and that under such circumstances the final settlement might be doubtful.

“Think of it! I do think of it.”

He would so speak that Mr. Chaffanbrass should clearly understand him; but still, not even to his ears, would he say that he really believed Lady Mason to have been guilty.

Again, regarding the prophets among you, he speaks thus: Their spirit is one of impiety, or of the lawlessness of the darkness which arose at the beginning.

The Lord is near unto them that have broken their heart; and saves such as be lowly in spirit [Psalm 33:18].

Thus far touching my eulogy of the flesh, in opposition to its enemies, who are, notwithstanding, its greatest friends also; for there is nobody who lives so much in accordance with the flesh as they who deny the resurrection of the flesh, inasmuch as they despise all its discipline, while they disbelieve its punishment.

The same elsewhere he thus expresses, [2 Corinthians 12:9] For my strength is made perfect in weakness.

“I don’t see it, Lady Cantrip.”

(On the Mysteries. IV.)

The Apostle calls me back, and as it were puts a bit upon my sorrow, saying, as you heard just now: We would not that you should be ignorant, brethren, concerning them that sleep, that you be not sorrowful, as the rest which have no hope.

‘Oh! nonsense, my dear; of course you’ll go; it’s the show of the year, and the Grand duke is to be there—baby is all right now, you know; I must not hear of your not going.’

Xenophanes of Colophon was the founder of the Eleatic school, who, Timæus says, lived in the time of Hiero, lord of Sicily, and Epicharmus the poet; and Apollodorus says that he was born in the fortieth Olympiad, and reached to the times of Darius and Cyrus.

Whatever, by the laws of war, conquerors had done to the conquered, the like did this man presume to perpetrate against Romans and the subjects of Rome, because his forefathers had been made liable to a like tax imposed by the victorious Trajan, as a penalty on the Dacians for their frequent rebellions.

My answer on the general subject is contained in the short treatise which I then wrote to him.

That was to arrive on the following morning.

After much consideration,—very much consideration, a consideration which took him the whole time that he was brushing his hair and washing his teeth,—he resolved that he would, in the first instance, speak to Mr. Amedroz.

Therefore even just men, who can refrain from every unjust work, are sometimes, however, overcome by frailty itself, so that they either speak evil in anger, or, at the sight of delightful things, they desire them with silent thought.

“No. It is on our account. But this restraint, as you call it, makes us unhappy, and she is governed by seeing that. My uncle is generous to her as regards money; but in other things,—in matters of feeling,—I think he has been ungenerous.”

Clearly, if invited unto priestly function and sacrifice, I will not go, for that is service peculiar to an idol; but neither will I furnish advice, or expense, or any other good office in a matter of that kind.

For Mary Walker, when earnestly entreated by Jane, the parlourmaid, to tell her something more of the great news, had so far respected her father’s caution as to say not a word about Mrs. Arabin.

For to sit, He says, on My right hand and on My left, is not mine to give, save to those for whom it is prepared.

Edith was certainly the plainest of the family, and yet she had her turn.

I do not condemn them if they even sometimes dealt freely with things which to the eye of history happened differently, and changed them so as to subserve the mystical aims they had in view; so as to speak of a thing which happened in a certain place, as if it had happened in another, or of what took place at a certain time, as if it had taken place at another time, and to introduce into what was spoken in a certain way some changes of their own.

‘No servant announced me.’

When Hercules had arrived at the place, and was suffering hunger, he saw a ploughman at work, and began to ask him to sell one of his oxen.

What was this wondrous bath of Menander?

For behold, I would rather forget the wanderings of Æneas, and all such things, than how to write and read.

Indeed after the first blow he walked away.

Let there be in you a new dignity, an admirable virtue, a notable modesty, a marvelous patience, a gait becoming a virgin with a bearing of true shamefacedness, speech always modest, and such as is uttered only at the proper time, so that whosoever beholds you may admiringly exclaim: What is this exhibition of new dignity among men?

[Luke 1:29] And she, when she beheld, was agitated [31] at his word, and pondered what this salutation could be.

There seemed to be an opening in all this for John Gordon to remain at any rate a day longer in the neighbourhood of Mary Lawrie, and he determined that he would avail himself of the opportunity. He therefore, together with his friend Blake, saw the coachman, and gave instructions as to finding the bag at the station, and prepared himself to walk out to the Park. “You can go down to the station,” he said to Blake, “and can ride back with the carriage.”

There are three passions, or, so to speak, three furies, which excite such great perturbations in the souls of men, and sometimes compel them to offend in such a manner, as to permit them to have regard neither for their reputation nor for their personal safety: these are anger, which desires vengeance; love of gain, which longs for riches; lust, which seeks for pleasures.

He always fancied that he was in love with Isa, and wrote some poetry about her.

They were both no doubt happy in their ambition, but I think that of the two, Mr Palliser showed his triumph the most.

And this is the bound assigned, that unless one first do the will of the demons, the demons have no power over him.]

And now let us hear what it is.

There was at that time a most potent senator, to whose favours many were indebted, of whom also many stood in fear.

They do not wish it, lest the writer of the letters should be certain of detection.

This last idea seemed to give him great consolation.

Or if what is meant are the higher and lower parts of this world, how can the promise of heaven separate me from Him who made heaven?

Mr. Bonteen was there, of course, and Phineas as he sat alone could hear him as he edged his words in upon the royal ears.

But there was nothing tender in his eye, no tender tone softened the words which fell from his mouth.

Thus again the Antiochian church was divided into rival factions, not grounded on any difference of faith, but simply on a preference of bishops.

But at present we are speaking of those beings whom he described as being properly intermediate between gods and men, in nature animals, in mind rational, in soul subject to passion, in body aerial, in duration eternal.

But He that with the temptation makes also an escape, so that you may be able to bear it [1 Corinthians 10:13], may He stand by all of us, and reach forth His hand, that being gloriously proclaimed victorious we may attain to the everlasting crowns, through the grace and love towards man (5 manuscripts add the rest and so Field passim) of our Lord Jesus Christ, through Whom, and with Whom, to the Father be glory, with the Holy Ghost, for ever and ever.

But if you give thanks when you are in comfort and in affluence, in success and in prosperity, there is nothing great, nothing wonderful in that.

“Put me where?” Then Mr. Tappitt looked at his wife with a look that was intended to annihilate her, for the time being,—seeing that no words that he could speak had any such effect,—and he hurried out of the room without staying to wash his hands or brush his hair before he went off to preside at the meeting.

He did not believe that his wife was in any serious danger.

Some one will say.

And again, since we do not believe that your Excellency has detained him except on the ground of some probable transgression, it is proper that a synod should be held to bring to light any crime that is charged against him.

For perhaps a benevolence, even when operating injuriously, might be deemed to some extent rational, if exerted for one of our own house and home.

Him the Apostle has affirmed to have been afterwards made of a woman, in order that the making might be understood not of the Godhead, but of the putting on of a body— made of a woman, then, by taking on of flesh; made under the Law through observance of the Law.

Do you see how you are doing outrage to yourself?

[Matthew 24:24-25] This shows that the established authority of Scripture must outweigh every other; for it derives new confirmation from the progress of events which happen, as Scripture proves, in fulfillment of the predictions made so long before their occurrence.

For the former ought to have distinguished, and the latter to have united Him; the one in number, the other in Godhead.

if once they had asserted their masterhood to a white race.

The situation in question is not one which is of itself very charming, nor is it supposed to be in a high degree fashionable; but Nora looked forward to her escape from St. Diddulph’s to Manchester Street as though Paradise were to be reopened to her as soon as she should be there with her father and mother.

I can at any rate promise you that I will not be the medium of any so absurd a requisition.

“Or have you got his writing to any document? Have you anything to show that he knew what his son was doing when he borrowed money of you? Is it not perfectly clear that he knew nothing about it?”

Although, dearly-beloved, as the Easter festival approaches, the very recurrence of the season points out to us the Lenten fast, yet our words also must add their exhortations which, the Lord helping us, may be not useless to the active nor irksome to the devout.

Now to Him that is of power to establish you according to my Gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ according to the revelation of the mystery, which was kept secret since the world began, but now is made manifest, and (manuscripts [τε] which Sav. omits) by the Scriptures of the Prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith: to God only wise, to Him be glory through Jesus Christ our Lord. Amen.

“That is an ugly picture.”

The work of taking up a new district, which requires not only that the man doing it should know the nature of the postal arrangements, but also the characters and the peculiarities of the postmasters and their clerks, was too heavy to allow of my going on with my book at once.

“I think he loves her better than his own eyes,” Ruth had said to Rebecca, speaking of her uncle and Nina.

If flight press hard, the flesh wars with the inconvenience of flight; if imprisonment overtake us, the flesh (still was) in bonds, the flesh in the gyve, the flesh in solitude, and in that want of light, and in that patience of the world's misusage.

“Such mistakes are very foolish. The sooner you unmake it the better.”

“I don’t think nothing,” said the miller.

“Then she must be in yours,” said the capitaine.

“Last Thursday, I think he said.”

“I’m afraid it is far-fetched, Ma’am,—if you understand what I mean,” said Mr. Wickerby.

And will you not avenge yourself?

It’s only matter of report now, and the creditors, no doubt, do believe that when old Scarborough goes off the hooks they will be able to walk in and take possession.

Mr. Crawley Speaks of His Coat

But if you endure the injustice, you overcome; deprived indeed of the money, but not at all of the victory which is annexed to such self-command.

There is still, the heretics say, another serious and far reaching confession of weakness, all the more so because it is in the mouth of the Lord Himself, My God, My God, why have You forsaken Me [Matthew 27:46]?

Those , then, who, after having been baptized into Father, Son, and Holy Spirit, and having been taught that there is one divine nature in three subsistences, are rebaptized, these, as the divine Apostle says, crucify the Christ afresh.

This ancient story, though rejected by most as fabulous, has reached the ears of all.

Therefore after then they had departed with fear and joy, Behold, Jesus met them, saying, All hail.

Dolly would come in in her dressing-gown, and, sitting on his bed, would discuss the matter with him as advocate against the devil.

Do you see then how far you still are from being righteous?

And—a thing incredible, if it were not thoroughly well proved—these very theatric representations of the crimes of their gods have been instituted in honor of these same gods.

“Yes, sir. I know how great is my presumption. But, yet, having ventured, I will hardly say to entertain a hope, but to have come to such a state that I can only be happy by hoping, I have thought it best to come to you at once.”

John 5:36

Janet, do not be cruel to me.

An officer of the Emperor Constantius whose golden hair and personal beauty revealed his country (it lay between the Saxons and the Alemanni, was of no great extent but powerful, and is known to historians as Germany, but is now called France), had long, that is to say from infancy, been pursued by a devil, who forced him in the night to howl, groan, and gnash his teeth.

Then Mr. Monk explained, making his first great speech on Irish tenant-right.

Then tell us which of all things first was made.

I tell you the priests are at the head of it all.

To this praise they add also, that they say that Christ the Lord was sprinkled with no stain of sin as far as pertains to His infancy; because they assert that His flesh was most pure from all contagion of sin, not by His own excellence and singular grace, but by His fellowship with the nature which is shared by all infants.

“It is everything to me,—death, destruction, annihilation,—unless I can overcome it. Darling of my heart, queen of my soul, empress presiding over the very spirit of my being, say,—shall I overcome it now?”

Now that he was in Ireland, he thought that he did love dear Mary very dearly.

There were various large barns and outhouses, as though it had been intended by the builder that corn and hay and cattle should be kept there; but it seemed now that there was nothing there except the empty vats at which the two men were coopering.

“If I can only like Aunt Margaret,”—Aunt Margaret was Mrs. Dosett, with whom neither of the girls had hitherto become intimate, and who was known to be quiet, domestic, and economical, but who had also been spoken of as having a will of her own,—”I shall do better with her than you would, Ayala.”

His lot had been thrown with them; he had passed his life with them, and the feelings, which in a selfish man are given up to self, had with him been turned on those to whose care it had seemed that his life should be dedicated.

And, behold, six men were coming toward the way of the high gate which was looking toward the north, and each one's double-axe of dispersion was in his hand: and one man in the midst of them, clothed with a garment reaching to the feet, [Revelation 1:13] and a girdle of sapphire about his loins: and they entered, and took their stand close to the brazen altar.

The power of becoming bad resides in the will; one act of wishing is often the sufficient occasion for a finished wickedness; and this ease of operation is more especially fatal in the sins of the tongue.

But if it were so, that of course must put an end to his interference.

His wife held one of his hands, and the other he pressed against his eyes, as though shading them from the light.

Beyond that he could tell them nothing.

O devilish purpose!

Why should I want assistance?

“Is he to be here tomorrow?”

It would take him nearly an hour to come down in an omnibus from the City.

The gentleman appealed to pronounced the name for the judge’s hearing with a full rolling Irish brogue, that gave great delight through all the court; “R-rowland Hough-h-ton, me lor-r-d.”

But, as he himself has intimated, he has said the same thing before; and we, to the best of our ability, replied to it.

[7] [Matthew 12:20] And a bruised reed shall he not break,

Then he had seemed to go to sleep.

For so preëminent in virtue was Timothy, that his youth was no impediment to his promotion; therefore he writes, Let no man despise your youth [1 Timothy 4:12, and 5:2 and again, The younger women as sisters.

They breakfasted at ten, and twelve had been named for the meeting.

Unless, perhaps, Celsus and the Epicureans will deny that it is a vain hope which they entertain regarding their end—pleasure—which, according to them, is the supreme good, and which consists in the permanent health of the body, and the hope regarding it which is entertained by Epicurus.

“Nor must you be angry with me if, as Rachel’s friend, I say something further about it. As you do not wish to answer me, I will ask no other question; but at any rate you will be willing to listen to me. Rachel has never spoken to me on this subject—not a word; but I know from others who see her daily that she is very unhappy.”

But that fate would not be hers, and then there arose the question whether, on that account, she was unfit to be the wife of any other man.

For the thought, and the expectation of entering the church, schools you to partake of food and drink with becoming decency; lest, after you have entered there, and joined your brethren, you should appear ridiculous to all present, by smelling of wine, and unmannerly eructation.

I do not think any one is so unreasonable as to ascribe to Him a confession of wickedness, when it was He Who said, Come unto Me, all you that labour, and are heavy laden, and I will refresh you.

But the very cause which made Charley dumb on the subject of his own distresses made Mrs. Woodward inquisitive about them.

“Rubbish!”

Chapter 39. Preservation of the Church of the Novatians from Fire.

Book VI, Letter 5

He looked down at her and saw that she was wan and thin and weak, and he did not dare to preach to her the old family sermon as to his rank and station. “But, Anna, why do you tell me this now?” he said.

Quæ est autem consensio templo Dei cum idolis?

At first he threatened the young sinner, and frowned at him.

But by this time her mother’s harshness to her had produced some corresponding hardness in her.

When he is as old as I am he’ll be perfect.

In the present case so little of this sort have I overheard, that I live in hopes of finishing my work within 300 pages, and of completing that pleasant task—a novel in one volume; but something had passed between them, and as the warden blew out the wax candles, and put his instrument into its case, his daughter stood sad and thoughtful by the empty fireplace, determined to speak to her father, but irresolute as to what she would say.

It is the same which Christ gave to His disciples, and which the Priests now minister.

“Indeed she has, Lady Midlothian.”

If it don’t get into the ledger in one way it will in another.” So Mr. Toogood started for Silverbridge, having sent to his house in Tavistock Square for a small bag, a clean shirt, and a toothbrush.

And let us not despair of the fulfilment of such a great promise because it is exceeding great, but rather believe that we shall receive it because He who has promised it is exceeding great, as the blessed Apostle John says: Now are we the sons of God; and it does not yet appear what we shall be: but we know that, when He shall appear, we shall be like Him; for we shall see Him as He is.

In Ezekiel: They say, Our bones have become dry, our hope has perished: we have expired.

The earl was one of those men who could not endure to live otherwise than expensively, and yet was made miserable by every recurring expense.

“I hope you are happy, Caroline?” said Sir Henry, as he gently squeezed the hand that was so gently laid upon his arm.

“Why should I not ask her as well as any other woman?” Then the music ceased, and after a minute’s interval Lord Hartletop took away his partner on his arm into another room.

Take what is yours, and go your way; I will give unto this last also, even as unto you.

The desire of the ungodly shall perish, when all things shall pass away like a shadow, [Wisdom 5:8-9] when the flower shall fall down on the withering of the grass.

But then came my baby, and the world was all altered for me.

2 Corinthians 12:16-18

Sir Marmaduke, blessed and at the same time burdened as he was with a wife and eight daughters, and condemned as he had been to pass a large portion of his life within the tropics, had become at fifty what many people call quite a middle-aged man.

Try to write it, dearest.

And at this time you have heard the devils crying out, and confessing to the martyrs that they cannot bear their sufferings, and saying, Why are you come to torment us so severely?

‘D—— your impudence!’ said Undy; ‘how do you dare to league me with your villany? Have I been the girl’s trustee? have I drawn, or could I have drawn, a shilling of her money? I tell you, Tudor, you are in the wrong box. You have one way of escape, and one only. I don’t want to ruin you; I’ll save you if I can; I think you have treated the girl in a most shameful way, nevertheless I’ll save you if I can; but mark this, if this money be not at once produced I cannot save you.’

Hooker, E. P. V. lxxii.

Bother an annuity!

For many, He says, have desired to see the things which you see.

I doubt whether she ever brought it home to herself that those whom she now recognized as the established and well-credited lords of the creation had ever been young men themselves.

She couldn’t be satisfied with the reflection that the sports at Ullathorne should be interfered with by the personal attentions necessary for a Lady De Courcy.

In one winter, after the period of his misfortune, he became slack about his hunting, and there were rumours that he was carrying out that terrible threat of his as to the crusade which he would go to find a cure for his love.

R. To the soul alone, or to something else?

“No change, gentlemen; not the slightest change. But a telegraphic message has arrived—Sir Omicron Pie will be here by the 9.15 P.M. train. If any man can do anything, Sir Omicron Pie will do it. But all that skill can do has been done.”

She merely shook her head.

But now they add, of the twelve, as though they had said, of the first company of those selected as the best, of them with Peter and John.

[Luke 13:16] Ought not this woman, who is a daughter of Abraham, and whom the devil has bound eighteen years, [47] to be loosed from this bond on the sabbath day?

Many of them sat on the front Opposition bench, whereas he, as a matter of course, had seated himself behind.

This man most of all is the giver of thanks.

Anderson was as good as his word.

But the law had become a dead letter in the majority of cases.

He then resumes the argument, and proves that Christ is Son by birth, not by adoption, from the words both of Father and of Son as recorded in the Gospel ( 22-25).

But no poor man, no, not one, commits as many horrible things from want, as do the rich for the sake of surrounding themselves with more, and of not losing what stores they have.

And now the crash begins: away they go in full flow of harmony together,—up hill and down dale,—now louder and louder, then lower and lower; now loud, as though stirring the battle; then low, as though mourning the slain.

Crasweller turned upon his heel and walked down the hill with the officers,—all the crowd accompanying them; while Bunnit and the bar-keeper had gone off with the horses.

If she be not fair for me,

Next I ask , who it is that assigns to each its place. For they will not affirm that they have come to a friendly agreement with, or been reconciled to, one another. For evil is not evil when it is at peace with, and reconciled to, goodness, nor is goodness good when it is on amicable terms with evil. But if He Who has marked off to each of these its own sphere of action is something different from them, He must the rather be God.

It remains, therefore, that the reproach of disgraceful covetousness must be levelled indirectly at the clergy, and especially at the bishop.

For since he has been thought worthy to be in the most secret places, and has the Lord of all speaking within him, he is subject to nothing that is human.

Do the gods of heaven have ears, then, and temples, an occiput, spine, loins, sides, hams, buttocks, houghs, ankles, and the rest of the other members with which we have been formed, which were also mentioned in the first part of this book a little more fully, and cited with greater copiousness of language?

Augustus, suspecting him as he did, had begun to fear that he might live too long.

Julian answered his reproaches by loading him with contumelious epithets: and he defended himself by words calling him 'blind.'

So, when the soul has left the flesh, the dregs are utterly filthy, and the soul of those who eat flesh is defiled.

“Wisht, boys! how am I to marry you at all, if you go on this way? Come, Mary, off with that glove of yours; now for the ring, Denis:” and Mary hauled away at the glove, which the heat of her hand prevented her from pulling off.

Return we therefore in our discourse to the point which now presses and is profitable to you.

And in its anointing the very name of Christ is expressed, for, as all know, Christ means anointed.

Let there be no bright colors.

74. Would you know what is the nature of the Word— hear the Scriptures. For the Word of God is living and mighty, yea, working effectually, sharp and keener than any the sharpest sword, piercing even to the sundering of soul and spirit, of limbs and marrow. [Hebrews 4:12]

“And of course he will tell us nothing but what he is told to tell us,” continued Lady Rowley. “Can there be anything so horrible as this,—that a wife should be bound to communicate with her own husband respecting her own child through such a man as that?”

And then, did she not love him,—love him already, without waiting for any change?

For why should we be eager to bear children, whom, when we have them, we desire to send before us (to glory) (in respect, I mean, of the distresses that are now imminent); desirous as we are ourselves, too, to be taken out of this most wicked world, and received into the Lord's presence, which was the desire even of an apostle?

“He is a man, and will bear it as a man should do. Shall I do anything for you before I go?”

Chapter II. Is She to Be Your Wife?

you are, I dare say, indifferently honest as the world goes, like the rest of us.

For the pearl too is hidden so long as it is within the oyster.

He spent his time in the city, still engaged in the politics of the day; as to which, though he dreaded the coming together of Cæsar and Pompey and Crassus—those “graves principum amicitias” which were to become so detrimental to all who were concerned in them—he foresaw as yet but little of the evil which was to fall upon his own head.

What lustfulness is this!

He most firmly believed that that codicil had not expressed the genuine last will and fair disposition of property made by his father, and it might certainly be the case that proof of all that he believed was to be found among the papers of the old lawyer.

Our insensibility to such a kindness should strike us with horror.

Why did we not hasten to place ourselves beneath the awning in that boat.

His train left Pollington at nine, and at eight the doctor with all his family were there to greet him at the breakfast-table,—with all the family except Maria.

Lastly, it is a thing that can both be feigned by pretence, and be thought to be in him in whom it is not.

Perhaps it was that she had seen him going in and out of the house, and had associated him with the great mystery of the young nobleman; perhaps she had been simply attracted by the easy air with which he cocked his hat and swung his gloves;—or, perhaps it was simply chance.

[Romans 8:37] When we go forth from this body, and escape from every burden, and from sin, with its incessant activity, what are we?

It is befitting that I now speak of what is our own.

And then he talks to me about notoriety!

Because the foundations of love had not been firmly fixed in him.

What would He declare?

And if the moon be not visible, they do not hold the Sabbath, which is called the first; nor do they hold the new moon, nor the feast of unleavened bread, nor the feast, nor the great day.

That Mrs. Proudie should have known more of the facts connected with the Hartletop family than any one else in Barchester was not surprising, seeing that she was so much more conversant with the great world in which such people lived.

From him [Julian] received, in addition to the principles of philosophy, his own religious sentiments, and a desire to possess the empire.

But they ought to have heard Job, saying, For there is hope of a tree; for if it be cut down, it will sprout again, and the tender branch thereof will not cease.

On that evening she was sitting alone in her room when her mother came to her, and her eyes were red with weeping. Pen and paper were before her, as though she were resolved to write, but hitherto no word had been written.

She had been distinctly told that Mr. Glascock was to marry the eldest, and this lady was certainly older than the other two.

“Birth!” said Gertrude, turning up her nose.

He sat there contemplating the old man’s work, telling himself that it was for him to destroy it utterly by just a motion of his wrist.

“Give him a shilling and a glass of spirits; beg him to keep the people quiet outside, and promise him cold beef and beer at three o’clock. If he runs rusty, send for me.” And then, having thus instructed the head of the house, he again seated himself before his writing materials at the table.

At this time he was about twenty-five years of age, and for the last two years had been absent from Vernet—for reasons which will shortly be made to appear.

In doing this she had been actuated by friendship rather than by abstract principle.

[Luke 23:34] Why because of righteousness?

“Exactly; a low fellow whom you would be ashamed to see in your office! He fancies that young Mason has injured him; and though he has received numberless benefits from Lady Mason, this is the way in which he chooses to be revenged on her son.”

Yet,—yet how far was he from that image of manly perfection which her daily thoughts had created for her!

The woman alluded to was Mrs Grantly, the wife of the parson and mother of Lady Dumbello.

Hitherto we had talked fluently enough, but now we became very silent; we went on following, each at the other’s tail, floundering in the mud, silent, filthy, and down in the mouth.

Neither then do thou pursue these shadows, for this is a shadow of glory, not glory.

will you be half profane?

“He is gay enough, but I am sure he is no deceiver. A man may make himself nice to young ladies without deceiving any of them; may he not?”

“But you have sometimes thought of giving it up.”

For Logos and Zoe offer twelve Aeons unto Nous and Aletheia.

I have found out what to do: let the Church herself be wounded by such blows as she can suffer; let that be done in me which may cause her members pain.

He says, Believe in Me also, just as He said Believe in God.

This pass I regard as one of the grandest spots to which my wandering steps have ever carried me, and though I had already lingered about it for many hours, I now walked thither again to take my last farewell of its dark towering rocks, its narrow causeway and roaring river, trusting to my friend the landlady to see that my luggage was duly packed upon the diligence.

“What am I to say? How am I to know?”

[John 2:19] For He showed to what belongs (the incidents of) being destroyed, thrown down, and kept down— even to that to which it also appertains to be lifted and raised up again; although He was at the same time bearing about with Him a soul that was trembling even unto death, [Matthew 26:38] but which did not fall through death, because even the Scripture informs us that He spoke of His body.

“Well, he says so;” and then the words between the young ladies became a little more angry. But, nevertheless, in due time they came forth with faces smiling as usual, with their hair brushed, and without any signs of warfare.

I feel as though there were no good in hoping that things would ever come right again.

But Gertrude’s delight was, of course, the strongest, and Gertrude’s welcoming the warmest,—as was proper. “When I think of it,” she said to him, “I don’t know how I should ever have looked anybody in the face again,—after our going away with our things mixed up in that way.”

And in the sea afar: and because in the sea, therefore afar.

As the chronicles have also dealt with him, no further records of his past life shall now be given.

See in what we glory—even in what we did not receive!

For since it exists, it is evident that at some time it began to exist, for nothing can exist without a beginning; and because it had a beginning, it is evident that it will at some time have an end.

But probably she will not be resolute like that.

As for herself, she would check her rebel heart if she could; but, at any rate, she would learn to check the rising blood which would otherwise tell her tale.

Thorne is richer than half the dukes,” said the squire.

In all their lectures to her about her title and grandeur they had succeeded in inculcating an idea of the solemnity of rank, but had robbed it in her eyes of all its grace.

“And why does the rich barrister object?”

Tell me; does it not seem to you greater to give eyes to the blind than even to drive away diseases?

Very speedily I passed sentence upon Adam, very speedily I pardon you.

It was simply this;—she had fallen in love with the one, and had never fallen in love with the other!

I would not have such injury come upon him for the gain of all the world to myself.

If there are prophets who predict the Manichæans with praise, and if it is said that the existence of the sect is a fulfillment of this prediction, it must first be proved that these predictions were not forged by Manichæus in order to gain followers.

Happy is the man who has found wisdom, and the mortal who knows understanding, says the Spirit by Solomon: for it is better to buy her than treasures of gold and silver; and she is more valuable than precious stones.

“Everything is awful now,” said Hampstead, laughing. “Of course the word is absurd, but one gets in the way of using it because other people do.”

Indeed they would be capable of discovering other reasons, as many as they wish, why a man ought not to be brought suddenly to this honor, but gently and gradually.

According to you, O Celsus, they also who have accepted the doctrine of the duration of the soul (after death), and who lead a life through which they become heroes, and make their abodes with the gods, are won over by vain hopes.

Although holy Scripture has already shown by many and clear tokens, who is here spoken of, yet it has most plainly pointed to the name of Christ by using the name of Saviour: for surely the Saviour is the same as Christ, as the angel says: For to you is born this day a Saviour who is Christ the Lord.

I think that by the end of that time,—that is, when William returns,—my uncle and aunt from Sleaford will be with us.

“I say there is then,” said Mrs. Ray; “and it’s very illnatured in you, Dorothea, to speak and think in that way of your sister.”

And it was acknowledged by every one at the office, that neither the friendship of the nobleman, nor the fact of the private secretaryship, nor the acquisition of his wealth, had made him proud to his old companions or forgetful of old friendships.

Who, tell me, would overlook the most important things, to attend to those which are less so?

Wherefore the true religion, although formerly set forth and practised under other names and with other symbolic rites than it now has, and formerly more obscurely revealed and known to fewer persons than now in the time of clearer light and wider diffusion, is one and the same in both periods.

For this story, as well as the rest, is a burlesque on our dear old favourite Ivanhoe.

After mature consideration, Miss Wyndham commissioned me to express her sentiments,—and I must say they fully coincided with my own,—to Lord Ballindine, and to explain to him, that she found herself obliged to—to—to retrace the steps which she had taken in the matter.

Also after David's time, in the reign of Solomon his son, we read a somewhat similar reference to the divine likeness.

[Romans 8:5] And again he said:— When we were in the flesh, the weaknesses of sins were working in our members that we might become fruit for death.

You must know how important this is to him.

And if they shall say that it is worthy of censure, they will return an absurd answer; since the saints desire and run, and manifestly in so acting do nothing that is blameworthy.

Is it for long?” “ Well, yes; I suppose it is for always.” Then there came upon her a sense of increased desolation.

For this rule, indeed, very properly prevails with relation to the secular tribunals and councils.

But having said it was hard; as He proceeds, He shows that it is even impossible, and not merely impossible, but even in the highest degree impossible; and this He showed by the comparison concerning the camel and the needle.

[Hebrews 2:14] Who, then, is He Who would have us to be partakers in His own flesh and blood?

Chapter 28.— How We are to Decide Whom to Aid.

“It is too true, Mr. Macdermot; and indeed, indeed, I feel for you.”

But it becomes a man of sense to wait for the testimony of others, and it becomes men to be of one accord also in the pronunciation of their language.

Does the flesh destroy the sweetness of spiritual grace?

This is Jesus Christ who came a High-Priest of the good things to come [Hebrews 9:11 who for the bountifulness of His Godhead imparted His own title to us all.

Such is envy, such is jealousy, it is not easily stayed.

But these things are spoken not of money only, but also of speech, and of power, and of gifts, and of every stewardship, wherewith each is entrusted.

I will tell him nothing else.

“Then why didn’t he speak himself?”

It is indolence; or rather one would not call it the root only, but also the nurse and mother.

She told herself so a score of times a day.

Columbus, and Galileo, and Newton, and Harvey, and Wilberforce, and Cobden, and that great Banting who has preserved us all so completely from the horrors of obesity, would not have been named with honour more resplendent than that paid to the name of Neverbend.

If, however, as the Truth has it, he is baptized just that he may be with Christ, it certainly follows that he who is not baptized is not with Christ; and because he is not with Christ, he is against Christ; for He has pronounced His own sentence, which is so explicit that we ought not, and indeed cannot, impair it or change it.

[Testimony is borne to these things in writing by Papias, an ancient man, who was a hearer of John and a friend of Polycarp, in the fourth of his books; for five books were composed by him.

“It is terrible while it lasts,” she said, speaking to Mrs. Finn of her headache, “but when it has gone then I am quite well.

Before man was made, who was there to be a fornicator, or an adulterer, or a murderer?

Is it right, he says, to regard your sacrifice, and receive it with good will at your hands, as if he were most highly incensed, and rejecting their ministrations owing to their wickedness.

‘Then there will be an end of it,’ said George.

There had been the “ Noctes,” and some imitations even of the “ Noctes.” But then, what is new F The “ Noctes “ themselves had been imitations from older works.

For what stirred up the envy of the Jews against Jesus, and aroused them to conspire against Him, was the great number of those who followed Him into the wilderness—five thousand men on one occasion, and four thousand on another, having attended Him there, without including the women and children.

This, indeed, is made plain from the fact that baptism is not conferred again on their return, when any of the very men who seceded happen to come back again.

And when we promised that we would be active in doing everything, he said, 'Cæsar has ordered sorcerers to be sought out and destroyed in the city of Rome and through the provinces, and a great number of them have been already destroyed.

“I wish he would. But you must ask him. I should not dare.”

Godless, unholy, without natural affection, he feared not God, he regarded not his father's affection for Hosius, he reverenced not his great age, for he was now a hundred years old ; but all these things this modern Ahab, this second Belshazzar of our times, disregarded for the sake of impiety.

But he had asked after the Dean at the hotel, and had told the verger of his acquaintance, and had been seen by many in the town.

They, to preserve their bodies, throw their goods overboard, and wait not for the assailing wave to overturn the vessel.

I went out to him, and opened the gate for him; and he was clothed in a richly ornamented white robe, and he had on manifold calliculæ.

Wherefore the one spoke to the other, and silenced him by saying, Do you not even fear God, seeing you are in the same condemnation?

[Isaiah 65:9-12] Such are the words of Scripture; understand, therefore, that the seed of Jacob now referred to is something else, and not, as may be supposed, spoken of your people.

He had himself put less of confidence in that assertion than he did in her rebuke with reference to the other young woman to whom she chose to consider that he owed himself.

Rufford was a good deal moved as to the trial of Mr. Scrobby.

By the death of One the world was redeemed.

“Go—yes; you may go; I will speak to you tomorrow, when you will be more cool.”

Should another guest be found, he might also be an Englishman, and I might thus form an acquaintance which would be desirable.

“No;—certainly.”

For some say that He neither does a kindness to any one, nor becomes angry, but in security and quietness enjoys the advantages of His own immortality.

And we are confident that in sincerely anathematising these views, they ipso facto confess that the Son is of the Father's Essence, and coessential with Him.

Why, for this cause, says he, do I so speak, in order that being roused by the obscurity of my words, they may proceed to seek Him, whom I preach.

You hear how the Prophet says that Christ the Lord was taken, and for us, that is, for our sins, delivered to corruption.

B. C. 44.

But if in a spirit of controversy you maintain that these also are gods, what great matter is it, then, for Christ to be called God?

With respect to Apolinarius, father and son, he convicted them both publicly of their sin, and ejected them from the church; for they both belonged to the clergy, the father being a presbyter, and the son a reader of the Holy Scriptures.

Early on the following morning his father again sent for him. “Mountjoy,” he said, “I have thought much about it, and I have changed my mind.”

A great expense was being incurred,—most uselessly, if he intended to retreat before the day came,—and who would pay the money?

“Won’t it? But I think it will. I wish you would try it. Not that I’m going to complain. I never minded work, and as for company, I can put up with anybody. The world’s not to be all dancing and fiddling for the likes of me. I know that well enough. But—” and then she paused.

And as the man who has received the halter, before he has gone out of the city and come to the pit, and seen the executioner standing over him, is dead from the time he passed the doors of the hall of justice: so also the swearer.

“Not at all;—of younger brothers, and barristers, and of men who have their way to make, as you have. Let me see,—can you dine here on Wednesday? There will be no party, of course, but papa will want to shake hands with you; and you legislators of the Lower House are more easily reached on Wednesdays than on any other day.”

“Just for the present I’ll be Miss Bonner.”

But I scarcely know either them or our mother, but bear about with me an obscure image of them, as through dreams.

He has taken what He gave.

You have lost one son; but that blessed man, after he had been bereaved of the whole family of his children, both received a plague in his own flesh, and sat down naked upon the dunghill, streaming with gore from every part, and his flesh gradually wasting away; even he who was just, and true, so devout a man, who stained from every evil deed, and had even God for a witness to his virtue.

[Luke 18:11] And the Pharisee stood apart, and prayed thus, O Lord, I thank you, since I am not like the rest of men, the unjust, the profligate, the extortioners, or even like this publican; [19] [Luke 18:12] but I fast two days a week, and tithe all my possessions.

Will you continue burying yourself under such crudities?

Touching Jacob, however, that which he did at his mother's bidding, so as to seem to deceive his father, if with diligence and in faith it be attended to, is no lie, but a mystery.

Might they not climb up among those woods on the opposite bank?

I have never spared heretics, and I have done my best to make the enemies of the Church my own.

How then did it come to pass that he was seen at Miss Todd’s party?

He to whom Christ's enemies impute words of terror, He by that so-called tenor renders men undaunted and fearless.

Our friend Jack is with us, behaving very well, but not quite like himself.

He has showed you the true light; if you shun it, and runnest back again into the darkness, what shall be your excuse?

At last she succeeded; and after a while, too, Phineas himself was able to talk.

“Oh, aunt, I hope you are not going to talk about that.”

How to account for its falsehood, how to explain to himself that such a letter should have been written to him without any foundation for it, without any basis on which such a story could be constructed, he could not imagine to himself.

Well, after that, the Vendean army was no more; the army was gone, it had melted away; the most of those who were still alive were left in Brittany, and they joined the Chouans.

“Indeed I will. I will love you very dearly if you will let me. My girls’ husbands are the same to me as sons.” Then she put up her face and he kissed it, and so they wished each other good night.

“For Emily’s sake.”

The rigid strictness of Sabbatarian practice requires the full energy of middle life.

As she was taking herself to task, accusing herself of being a Flora without the poetry and romance to excuse her, Mr. Fenwick came round from Farmer Trumbull’s side of the church, and got over the stile into the churchyard.

“And I am sorry too, my Lord;—for your sake rather than my own. A man is in a bad case who cannot endure to hear of his faults.”

The arrogance of a few men has destroyed.

Sometimes too by the virtue of compassion and faith the stains of sin are removed, according to this passage: By compassion and faith sins are purged away.

Your own,

If then he places the Son in opposition to the incorruptible, he not only defines Him to be corruptible, but also asserts of Him all those incidents from which he affirms only the incorruptible to be exempt.

For if the things asserted were human, we ought to examine them; but since they are of God, they are only to be revered and believed.

‘But what has John done that there should be any question about all this?’

Nay, and when we say that a virgin is corrupted, we say so, strictly speaking, on this account also, not only because the body is defiled, but because of the transgression.

While I was walking, eating, or reading, I was still thinking of my story.

I don’t like that.

[Luke 1:76] John, the voice of the Word, the lamp of the Light, before Whom he even leaped in the womb, [Luke 2:41] and Whom he preceded to Hades, whither he was dispatched by the rage of Herod, [Matthew 14:10] to herald even there Him who was coming.

“Goodbye, Mr. Moggs,” said Polly; “and mind you get into Parliament. You stick to it, and you’ll do it.”

Outlying grand scenery is given by nature; but the prettiness of home scenery is a work of art.

Moreover, a good name is more pleasant to the mind [Proverbs 22:1] than oil to the body; and the end of life is better than the birth, and to mourn is more desirable than to revel, and to be with the sorrowing is better than to be with the drunken.

We couldn’t get so much as soap for house-washing, unless Mrs. Blake had stood by us and let us have her soap.

The poets therefore were ignorant, who sung that she fled to heaven, to the kingdom of Jupiter.

Of the difference of the number of Psalms appointed to be sung in all the provinces.

(They also testify) that Jesus is Himself the Christ, and under one or the other designation the Son of God.

Of luxury; of not knowing God.

Chapter IV. Mrs. Madden’s Ball

But there are things which should be talked of, though the heart should break.” After another pause he continued; “Is there, thinkest thou, sufficient cause in the girl’s health to bid her sever herself from these delights of life and customary habits which the Lord has intended for His creatures?” At every separate question he paused, but when she was silent he went on with other questions.

Chapter 23.— That the Name of Gods is Falsely Given to the Gods of the Gentiles, Though Scripture Applies It Both to the Holy Angels and Just Men.

From which position of his it must needs follow that death will appertain to its own self, since itself comes to an end; and much more to man, in the ending of whom among the all, itself also ends.

For, omitting the sublimer miracles of God's hand, by which it would have been easy to place his hearer in a dilemma (for instance he might have asked how or whence comes a heavenly body, that of the sun for example, or that of the moon, or that which is seen in the constellations; whence the firmament, the air, water, the earth?

As these thoughts passed through his brain, he began for the first time to long for life, to think that the promised blessings of heaven hardly compensated for those which he was forced to leave on earth; but his mind was under too strong control to be allowed to wander long upon such reflections.

But the description of Anaxagoras also is, that God is said to be the motion of an infinite mind; and the God of Pythagoras is the soul passing to and fro and intent, throughout the universal nature of things, from whom also the life of all animals is received.

For the Teacher now only fills a place.

Go (enter) into these, follow the Lamb, because the Flesh of the Lamb also is assuredly virgin.

Why do we not rejoice in the works of God?

And then there was sadness beyond this, and even deeper than this.

In order, then, that man might not be an undying or ever-living evil, as would have been the case if sin were dominant within him, as it had sprung up in an immortal body, and was provided with immortal sustenance, God for this cause pronounced him mortal, and clothed him with mortality.

Sixthly, they bar against us the ways of attaining unto the knowledge of God.

In the gospel, moreover, I discover a Minister and Witness of the Creator, even His Word.

And it may be observed that it is so also in mechanics, when one looks upon a statue or a brazen horse melted.

Many delights had tempted her.

Thus I might now recall this well-worn artifice and praise you in your own method.

Her father is a clergyman like myself, so we are all in a boat together.

Again, he entertained strangers, yet did he not here act vain-gloriously, but himself both ran to them and bowed down to them, not as though he were giving, but receiving a benefit, and he calls them lords, without knowing who they are who have come to him, and presents his wife in the place of a handmaiden.

It was now the end of August, and the parterres, beds, and bits of lawn were dry, disfigured, and almost ugly, from the effects of a long drought.

How very little of that passion had Alaric breathed himself!

Chapter 14.— Beauty of Diction to Be in Keeping with the Matter.

The chaste woman is grieved when she is desired by another.

To the fellow-Bishops and Deacons.

He then who being alive in the spirit raised again His own flesh that was dead, the true Mediator of life, has cast out him, who is dead in the spirit and the mediator of death, from the spirits of those who believe in Himself, so that he should not reign within, but should assault from without, and yet not prevail.

The Duke had not himself consented to interfere, but he had agreed to a compromise proposed by his son.

While we wonder then at his kindliness, let us show forth our doings, and before all others let us curb the vehemence of our tongue, and not always be giving utterance.

John 6:70

[Hebrews 11:16] Many are the commendations of them in the New, many the praises of them in the Old Testament.

“That is such nonsense.”

And I was also determined that I would not plead to you as a pauper.

The doctor was wanted at once to see Mr. Morris.

“No. He has refused,” said Arthur with strong emphasis.

Is that unbecoming a wife?

He had not much admired the count, but the count’s sister had been odious to him.

[Matthew 19:12] In a word, it is virtue which makes angels: but this is in our power: therefore we are able to make angels, though not in nature, certainly in will.

A glimmering of the truth struck coldly upon Robinson’s heart. She had endeavoured to get from her father this sum and had failed. She had failed, and the old man had sworn to her that he had it not. But for what purpose had she so eagerly demanded it? “Maryanne,” he said, “if you love another more fondly than you love me—”

And so since He does not draw His subsistence from nothing, or spring from any other source than God, it cannot be doubted that He was born with those qualities which are God's; since the Only-begotten essence of the Son is generated neither from things which are non-existent nor from any other substance than the birthless and eternal substance of the Father.

That he was His servant, and was His priest, and His minister.

Come and talk to me a bit.

[Luke 18:13-14] So he was justified by the judgment of the Lord rather than the Pharisee, whom overweening pride made so hideous.

On the whole, therefore, she paid little or no attention to the family misfortunes.

“Certainly, if Mrs Greenow will desire me to do so,” said the Captain.

For to have said to the parents, Deny that he is your son, and that he was born blind, would have seemed very ridiculous. And again, to have said this to himself would have been manifest shamelessness. Wherefore they say not so, but manage the matter in another way, saying, Give God the glory, that is, confess that this man has wrought nothing.

He had a high, broad forehead, enormous blue eyes, a thin, long nose, cheeks very thin and hollow, a handsome large mouth, and a strong square chin.

“I think I will go to bed, aunt,” she said very calmly, “and I will write to John from Littlebath.”

Both parties assure us that, if urged to the commission of some immorality or crime by the threatened loss of these goods or advantages, they would prefer to lose such things as preserve bodily comfort and security rather than commit such things as violate righteousness.

“Lady Augustus,” said he at once, beginning the lesson which he had taught himself, “I hope I see you quite well.

Perhaps they brought him flesh in the evening, as it were stronger food, such as the Corinthians, whose minds were weak, could not take, and were therefore fed by the Apostle with milk.

And on this account, you being ignorant of what is advantageous, are seduced by temporal pleasures from taking hold of eternal things.

But he could not smother his anxiety.

“It will be so nice! And then I shall be sure to have you with me the first moment I see them. I shall think it very awful when I first meet your father.”

I shall proceed to record accurately what I have either myself seen, or have been able to ascertain from actual observers; having tested the truth by the unanimity of the witnesses that spoke of the same affairs, and by every means I could possibly command.

On the other hand, those who say that we must never lie, plead much more strongly, using first the Divine authority, because in the very Decalogue it is written You shall not bear false witness; under which general term it comprises all lying: for whoso utters any thing bears witness to his own mind.

“Very likely. Move! What’s the harm of moving? You talk of moving as though that were the worst thing that could happen. How would you like to be in some place where they wouldn’t let you move?”

A convivial lunch I hold to be altogether bad, but the worst of its many evils is that vacillating mind which does not know when to take its owner off.

And you all in my hearing having sufficiently contended in speaking, I pronounce victors and crown; but Thekla with a larger and thicker chaplet, as the chief of you, and as having shone with greater lustre than the rest.

“I do not wonder that my brother has been struck with her.”

With whom when he was not engaged (which was but a little time), he either was refreshing his body with necessary sustenance, or his mind with reading.

And whence know we, says one, that the words were not hyperbolical?

Our contemplation, however, of the respective properties of the flesh and of the Godhead remains free from confusion, so long as each of these is contemplated by itself , as, for example, the Word was before the ages, but the flesh came into being in the last times: but one could not reverse this statement, and say that the latter is pretemporal, or that the Word has come into being in the last times.

Of course, he made in his own mind those comparisons which are common to us all on such occasions.

He recounts at the same time the madness of Caius: how he called himself a god, and performed as emperor innumerable acts of tyranny; and he describes further the miseries of the Jews under him, and gives a report of the embassy upon which he himself was sent to Rome in behalf of his fellow-countrymen in Alexandria; how when he appeared before Caius in behalf of the laws of his fathers he received nothing but laughter and ridicule, and almost incurred the risk of his life.

And the fox during his beneficial life had eaten no corn, nor for the most part geese,—but chiefly rats and such like.

Greatly are we delighted, when the love of peace cries from your hearts.

I demand one thing only of you, and that is the display of them in real action, the obedience of deeds.

And in the book of Wisdom, concerning wisdom: "Remaining in herself, she renews all things."

But I can say of myself that I have never done anything unworthy of a gentleman, while this thing that you are doing is unworthy of the lowest man.

Celsus, however, says that it is only the course of mortal things which, according to the appointed cycles, must always be the same in the past, present, and future; whereas the majority of the Stoics maintain that this is the case not only with the course of mortal, but also with that of immortal things, and of those whom they regard as gods.

Though his passion told him every hour, was telling him all day long, that she was as false as hell, yet there was something in him of judgment, something rather of instinct, which told him also that she was not bad, that she was a firm-hearted, highspirited, great-minded girl, who would have reasons to give for the thing that she was doing.

If Mr. Thwaite could call on the Serjeant before that date, either early in the morning at his house, or on Saturday at his chambers, —— ——, Inner Temple, it might perhaps be serviceable.

From Oudtshoorn I travelled back through the Outiniqua mountains by Robinson’s pass to Mossel Bay, and thence returned by steamer to Capetown.

And yet it is not an equal return, first to be loved, afterwards to love.

But the twirling of the elder boy was by far the more graceful.

Firstly, then, the rational nature of the soul is strongly confirmed by its difference from irrational creatures.

This were most unrighteous of all.

“Yes; I do say so.”

For just as the human attributes of the Saviour overthrew Sabellius, so against the Arian madmen one must use proofs drawn not from the human attributes but from what betokens the deity of the Word, lest they pervert what is said of the Lord by reason of His Body, and think that the Word is of like nature with us men, and so abide still in their madness.

Must it not be said that a curse has fallen upon the land?

For if, says the Scripture, he [Abraham] was justified by works, he has whereof to glory, but not toward God.

She stood silent, motionless, conveying nothing of her feelings by her face,—unless one might have read something from the deep flush of her complexion.

Did not all run to baptism?

Chapter XXV. The Last Morning at Rufford Hall

He could not keep his ground when he felt that he was not using the ground upon which he stood.

To the Emperors Marcus Aurelius Antoninus and Lucius Aurelius Commodus, conquerors of Armenia and Sarmatia, and more than all, philosophers.

Do not therefore fail, beloved brethren; like servants of God, and professors of the faith of Christ, be tried in the Lord, and let not tribulation cast you down, neither let troubles caused by the heretics who plot against you make you sad.

“It will be all the same for the present purpose, if it comes from India,” said the rector declining all present argument on the great American question.

And let no one impute cruelty to God, in that he excludes those who fail in this matter, from the kingdom of Heaven.

“Bob Morris, of Minas Cottage!” exclaimed Peter Bodkin, who had ridden over to give Tom Daly some comfort in his solitude, if it might be possible.

Or at all to breathe and see this sun?

These words of Cyprian seem to warn us that we must distinguish between those who are bad outside, and those who are bad within the Church.

“A wife must obey her husband, father. Mother always obeyed you.”

It falls not as the building of the sand, for I have not built my doctrine upon the sand: a rock shall be for me the foundation, for on Your rock have I built my faith; the secret foundation of my trust, shall support my walls.

[1 Corinthians 13:12] Now we war after the flesh, then in the Spirit we shall see the divine mysteries.

A Lord Mayor is, I take it, much in the same category.

Lord Rufford Makes Up His Mind

He had no money, and very few acres of his own on which to preserve foxes.

I cannot tell.

Mrs. Smith had calculated that there might still be time for her ladyship to pass on and avoid the interview.

But I have obtained on my own mind’s eye a tolerably clear impression of the outward appearance of the Northern army; I have endeavored to learn something of the manner in which it was brought together, and of its cost as it now stands; and I have learned—as any man in the States may learn, without much trouble or personal investigation—how terrible has been the peculation of the contractors and officers by whom that army has been supplied.

The good and useful citizen is he who works for the comfort of others and requires the work of others for his own comfort.

It was the nature taken from us for our sakes which experienced our feelings without sin, not He that on account of our salvation assumed it.

Would the wolf be kind enough to come and take possession of them and all their belongings, and allow them to be the humblest of his friends 4 We come to hate these Remi, as we do the /Edui; but they are wise in their generation, and escape much of the starvation and massacring and utter ruin to which the other tribes are subjected.

Now since there are men too that are dogs, who neither cry out, nor fly in a passion, nor threaten us when they are offended, yet in secret are weaving plots, and contriving ten thousand mischiefs, and revenging themselves not in words but in deeds; he hints at these.

Men and boys, with social glee and happy boyish shouts, congregate together on a hillside, at the mouth of a narrow hole, and proceed, with the aid of a well-trained bulldog, to draw a badger.

For the Jews say, that from the beginning God sanctified the seventh day, by resting on it from all His works which He made; and that thence it was, likewise, that Moses said to the People: Remember the day of the sabbaths, to sanctify it: every servile work you shall not do therein, except what pertains unto life.

“No, I couldn’t. I don’t know her address.” Then ‘ a without waiting for another word he walked out of the room, leaving the sovereign on the table. This occurred in a small back parlour on the ground floor, which was in the occupation of the landlady, but was used sometimes by the lodgers for such occasional meetings.

To see how patiently it bore that contest so terrible that was.

For a time, at least, you have been free from the mundane touch of that beef and ale with which novelists of a meaner school will certainly bring you in contact.

If he counselled her to do this or that, she would follow his counsel,—because she owed him so much.

He had been stout enough, and, as his enemies had said, insolent enough, in making these assurances.

And in all the plottings of the Jews against him the same thing happens: then he becomes more illustrious.

There had therefore come to be a good deal said about the Goodwood meeting, so that the affair reached Sir Harry’s ears.

The former, or the latter?

For though He is called Good, and Just, and Almighty and Sabaoth , He is not on that account diverse and various; but being one and the same, He sends forth countless operations of His Godhead, not exceeding here and deficient there, but being in all things like Himself.

[Isaiah 54:13] We say to them, What do ye long for?

If the creation was by Him, but He was not by Himself, plainly He is something outside the creation.

We believe also in the Son of God, the only begotten God, the first-born of all creation, very Son, not Ungenerate, verily begotten before the worlds.

To His Father, When He Had Entrusted to Him the Care of the Church of Nazianzus.

But neither is the soul good by nature, nor, on the other hand, is the body bad by nature.

Even Peregrine, as he went down the steps after his mother, had begun to suspect the truth; and we may say that he was the last within all that household who did so.

He broke from his fastest friend, Sheridan.

Neither by reason of the Flesh did he think the Word of God a creature: nor because the Word was the maker of all creation did he despise the Flesh which He had put on.

“What’s the use? The Duchess hates my mother, and my father never goes near the place.”

“In course; and no objection on arth on my part so long as it’s one at a time.”

We did not first become Jews, so as to reach Christianity through faith in their prophets; but were attracted solely by the fame, and the virtues, and the wisdom of our liberator Jesus Christ.

If you were to say to him, You will lose your villa, he would perhaps scarcely keep from laying his hand upon you: and yet he says, that Christ has lost His inheritance, redeemed by His own Blood!

But before we went to bed that night in Washington we had been told that Messrs. Slidell and Mason were to be sent on to England.

It will have been an immense achievement to have accomplished in so short a time, but it will by no means equal the annual sum with which we are charged.

He spoke of his heart, wrath, mouth, blasphemy, eyes, fornication, covetousness, hands and feet, lying, the understanding itself, and the old mind.

You know, it was all as good as my own then; and now, confound it!

He had driven back methodically to Carnlough gates, but he hesitated to carry his burden up to the hall-door.

You will teach yourself to regard me as your best and closest friend,—as he on whom you have the strongest right to depend, of all,—except your husband?

For in many things the mind is even absurdly moved.

But the end of all was to induce some one to do something which would cause a publisher to give her good payment for indifferent writing, or an editor to be lenient when, upon the merits of the case, he should have been severe.

While they sat together discussing the matter in the drawing-room Emily Wharton hardly said a word.

They collected vast quantities of wood from the country around, which they piled up against the tower, and finally set fire to the mass.

For wherein is He inferior, Who has all things even as the Father has them?

Your excellency I can never forget, and I beg our common Master to fill your house with blessing.

Wherefore our anxiety has been more accurately to investigate, and to discover minutely what are the (instructions) which they deliver in the case of the first bath, styling it by some such name; and in the case of the second, which they denominate Redemption.

“Yes, utterly—utterly,” she repeated. And as she said so, she thought again, what would the world say of her if she were to share his flight?

The very nature of the man has become impregnated with the aptitudes of his art.

How much each of them had to tell the other, and how certain each was that the story which he or she had to tell would astonish the other!

Chapter XXXV. Melmotte’s Glory

But this is not the case: away with the audacious thought!

For it is no loss to be silent when insulted, but it is, on the contrary, to defend one's self when insulted.

She says she hopes John will do nothing of the kind because of the expense; but we all know that she would like him to have them.

Nine out of every ten men in London, between the ages of fifteen, and fifty, would think little of the trouble and less of the danger of getting there; but I could not interfere with the triumph of my friend, so I merely remarked that it certainly was a very singular place.

She could not bring herself to ask the gardener whether Mr. Western wished this thing or the other.

So the Jews, in cursing the Christians, always excepted the name of the Desdichado,—or the double disinherited, as he now was,—the Desdichado Doblado.” Then came the battle of Alarcos, and the Moors were all but in possession of the whole of Spain.

“But he might have done so?”

And she was essentially one of those women who are not contented to be known simply as the wives of their husbands.

‘You’d have to prove it.’

“Thank you, no; I don’t like it. I’ll drink sherry.”

For neither so has the prediction fallen to the ground.

“Quite the contrary,” said Mrs. Stackpoole.

Though in action he would so often be thoughtless,—yet he understood perfectly the effect which had been produced on his father’s mind by his conduct.

[Luke 12:35] When Ezekiel tells us how Jerusalem is found in the plain of wandering, covered with blood, he uses the words: Your navel has not been cut.

On the poor Ayala and poor Tom side of the question there was a good deal which might be said.

She knew that she would be, in all respects, safe in his hands.

For who can possibly love us more than Christ, who laid down His life for His sheep?

Then she prayed for him, and strove very hard that her prayer might be sincere.

Consider how evil a thing it is, that at the very time when we rejoice in the return of the Donatists to our unity, we have to lament internal discord within our monastery.

I should wish even to be set right by you.

Where the stop in believing?

And that intervals between worlds are unequal; and that in one quarter of space (worlds) are more numerous, and in another less so; and that some of them increase in bulk, but that others attain their full size, while others dwindle away and that in one quarter they are coming into existence, while in another they are failing; and that they are destroyed by clashing one with another.

What then was this?

Such are they also that sin, though they see it not.

Consider, too, another merit of virginity.

“Of course he’s your brother. I wish he were not.”

For they rejoice indeed that you supply their wants and alleviate their poverty; but far more, in that you are so subjected to the Gospel; whereof this is an evidence, your contributing so largely.'

He did not, however, venture to bring in the book, and his assertions were refuted by them all and he himself was convicted of forgery, and thus the brethren were taught a lesson not to give ear to such accusations.

[Luke 5:3] And one of them belonged to Simon Cephas.

The lawyers on such an occasion had no inconsiderable work to accomplish, and though the lady was not coy, nor the gentleman slow, it was not found practicable to arrange an earlier wedding.

Near three miles from Nicomedia there is an eminence, on the summit of which Galerius formerly received the purple; and [there] a pillar, with the statue of Jupiter, was placed.

In short, there is no place at all where we read that nuptials are prohibited; of course on the ground that they are a good thing.

Had she not been enticed over from her own country in order that she might open her mouth, and preach her doctrine, and become a great and a wealthy woman?

And see what it is that He works: But the manifestation of the Spirit, he says, is given to every man to profit withal.

“I will not be accused in that way without defending myself. Let it be fancy or what not, I love Marion Fay, and I have come here to tell her so. If I can make any impression on her I shall come again and tell her father so. I am here now because I think that you can help me. If you will not, I shall go on without your help.”

But sometimes, when the merciful God has decreed to refresh the mourning hearts of many with His consolation, He advances one to the summit of government, and through the bowels of His mercy infuses the grace of exultation in Him into the minds of all.

The reason why the wood grows up is that it may be cut down.

When, therefore, both he and Mary felt that it would be better for her again to absent herself for a while from Greshamsbury, it was, after much deliberation, agreed that she should go on a visit to Boxall Hill.

And if it reaps not the harvest of peace here, yet it sows the seed of it with the Lord; nor does it lose, but prepares, its fruit.

He formed an intimacy with John, spoke frequently in the churches, and was admired.

“But it is possible it may not be true,” she said, speaking almost in a whisper, looking, not into his face, but by him, at the fire.

But let us return, as we best may, to the question proposed.

The thing was then over, and people were astonished that so great a thing should be over with so little fuss.

you.’ Mr Greenmantle looked very angry at this, and was preparing himself to use some severe language to his daughter. But he remembered how recently she had become engaged to be married, and he abstained. ‘As you wish it, we will go,’ he said. ‘At the present crisis of your life I would not desire to disappoint you in anything.’ So it happened that the doctor’s proposed guests all accepted; for Harry Gresham too expressed himself as quite delighted to meet Emily Greenmantle on the auspicious occasion.

“He holds nothing in awe,” said the wife.

And hence the righteous men in primitive times were made shepherds of cattle rather than kings of men, God intending thus to teach us what the relative position of the creatures is, and what the desert of sin; for it is with justice, we believe, that the condition of slavery is the result of sin.

“Ah, Captain Aylmer! you do not understand; you cannot understand. I would not for worlds reproach you; but do you think I suffered nothing from your mother?”

‘In the first place, such evidence requires peculiar sifting, which unfortunately cannot be applied to it in the present case, because it has been brought to us from a great distance.

The bishop of Cyzicus having died, Sisinnius ordained Proclus to the bishopric of that city.

They took you against your will out of the water, that you might not be drowned.

How then will it be a gain?

They had most mightily vowed this vow.

Did the flesh of the Son come down from heaven?

Such are the details we possess concerning Eutropius.

He altogether laid aside the matter at issue, and went into the general question of the merits of the Government.

Kate hesitated for a moment. “Well, no. I suppose it would be very rough without Mary; and he’d be so lonely when he came in.”

[Luke 24:46-47] See from what an inheritance you estrange yourselves!

Hence at least it is that the glow of charity is produced; by the bond of peace, he is desirous to bind us all together.

They said that he who kept not the Law was cursed, but he proves that he who kept it was cursed, and he who kept it not, blessed.

Well, if you attest what He has not, your ascription is meaningless and comes to nothing; for he who calls bitterness sweetness, while he lies himself, has failed to commend that which is blamable.

You, on the other hand, deny that the creature is good, and call it unclean, saying that animals are made by the devil of the worst impurities in the substance of evil and so you reject them with horror, as being the most cruel and loathsome places of confinement of your god.

“Than some women. I see women doing things that really disgust me; I do, indeed;—things that I wouldn’t do myself, were it ever so;—striving to catch men in every possible way, and for such purposes! I wouldn’t have believed it of Maria Clutterbuck. I wouldn’t indeed. However, I will never say a word against her, because she has been my friend. Nothing shall ever induce me.”

But, even in his present condition, his mind was not wholly occupied with Augusta Mildmay.

There was not much more said between them, nor did he give her any definite promise as to when he would see her again.

And every one who hears my words, and does them not, I will liken him to the foolish man, who built his house upon the sand.

Five minutes had been allowed for the arrangement of the mysteries, and at the end of five minutes Maurice was authorized, by the rules of the game, to return to the room.

Is it false, then, that every nature already formed, or matter formable, is only from Him who is supremely good, because He is supreme?

On Ossa, Pelion nods with all his wood.

“And why don’t you take that other person?”

At Killancodlem there was lawn-tennis and a billiard-room and dancing every night.

Nor can it be denied that the souls of the dead are benefited by the piety of their living friends, who offer the sacrifice of the Mediator, or give alms in the church on their behalf.

“No more wine for me, sir,” said Lucius.

For you may rightly deem those to be dead, who, not knowing God the giver of life, and depressing their souls from heaven to earth, run into the snares of eternal death.

He cites Augustine to the same effect in the noted passage: —

I know that I shall never again be at Boston, and that I have said that about the Americans which would make me unwelcome as a guest if I were there.

He says that the generation of the essence is without intervention, and that it preserves indivisible its relation to its Generator, Maker, and Creator.

How it is, then, that the system of the Chaldeans is unstable, let us now declare.

Nora, his mind is a mystery to me.

2 Corinthians 5:7-8

Was it all Prague told that falsehood also?” There was a scorn in her face as she spoke which distressed Ziska greatly, but which he did not know how to meet or how to answer.

They were now in a cab together, going towards the town, and Mr. Caldigate did not find it convenient to read the paragraph. But of course he knew the contents. ‘It is quite true,’ he said, ‘that the persons you allude to have been arrested, and that they are up in London. They will, I presume, be tried for perjury.’

By the instrumentalities of these and similar passages, they subtlely tend at last to such a point, that every one who is somewhat prone to appetite finds it possible to regard as superfluous, and not so very necessary, the duties of abstinence from, or diminution or delay of, food, since God, forsooth, prefers the works of justice and of innocence.

Or will they say that such events actually happened, but that no credit is to be attached to that account which makes this so-called man to have died to ensure the destruction of a mighty evil spirit, the ruler of evil spirits, who had held in subjection the souls of all men upon earth?

For let us suppose any one to be covetous, a traitor, heady, and yet to believe aright; of what advantage is it, if he wants all the qualities becoming a Christian, if he does not the works that characterize godliness, but outdoes the Greeks in impiety, when he is a mischief to those with whom he associates, causes God to be blasphemed, and the doctrine to be slandered by his evil deeds?

I speak to a Christian— return not either evil for good, nor evil for evil.

For our own part we hold that his was not talent streaked with genius, but rather a jog-trot genius alloyed with mediocrity.

“I don’t believe he can do it,” said Mrs. Fenwick, boiling with passion.

He understood, from what had passed, much of Harry’s trouble, if not the whole of it; and though he did not despair on behalf of his sister, he was aware that her lover had fallen into a difficulty, from which he could not extricate himself without great suffering and much struggling.

To my eye, at any rate, it is not so.

Edith Brownlow was not beautiful, not grand in her beauty as was Mary Lowther; but she was pretty, soft, ladylike, with a sweet dash of quiet pleasant humour,—a girl who certainly need not be left begging about the world for a husband.

But we trust that all will be such in that immortal life.

“Yes, sir; I intend to be at Mr. Beilby’s office on the 11th.”

He drank his wine at dinner like a glutton, who had only a short time allowed him, and wished during that time to swallow as much as possible; and he tried to hurry his companion in the same manner. But the doctor didn’t choose to have wine forced down his throat; he wished to enjoy himself, and remonstrated against Barry’s violent hospitality.

For on these two commandments hang all the Law and the Prophets.

The door was opened, and Mr Melmotte appeared.

Mr Palliser had relinquished his sword of state for the distaff which he had assumed, and could take no glory in the change.

Again, they were the inventors of geometry.

Before the evening was over he thought that he had made up his mind that he would not, under any circumstances, give up his reversionary right.

And the diadem is the mark of a king, and the star is a celestial announcement of portents to fall on the earth.

It was at last settled that Mr Rubb should go down to Littlebath and bring Susanna back with him; and this he did, not at all to that young lady’s satisfaction.

Who can bear with people who fill the cities with impiety, who secrete impurity in the most distant regions, and who delight in nothing but in injuring the righteous?

I do not intend hereby to accuse Americans of drinking much; but I maintain that what they do drink, they drink in the most uncomfortable manner that the imagination can devise.

For when he says, who actuates all things in all, he says this concerning men: you will hardly say that among those men he numbers also the Spirit, though you should be ever so manifold in your doting and madness.

She was the first to speak.

“I suppose, uncle, you think that we are like the fox that lost his tail, or rather some unfortunate fox that might be born without one.”

This, after many words, had been fixed at two thousand pounds; and the money, as we have seen, had been paid.

But Ruth Jacobi was the bearer of no note from Anton, nor indeed had she come on her present message with her uncle’s knowledge.

For if he produces by himself, it is plain that he had no need of productive organs, since he gave birth to Saturn himself; but if he had them, and suffered mutilation from his son, the origin of all things and all nature would have perished.

He knew nothing of Mrs. Proudie’s persecution, except what he gathered from the fact of the clerical commission of which he had been informed; but he could imagine that Mrs. Proudie would not lie easy on her bed while a clergyman was doing duty almost under her nose, who was guilty of the double offence of being accused of a theft, and of having been put into his living by the dean.

Sir Rowley was a highminded gentleman, who would have liked to have handed over a few thousand pounds on giving up his daughters; but, having no thousands of pounds to hand over, he could not but admire the principles of his proposed son-in-law.

But let us forsake the world which is not ours, that we may arrive at the place to which we have been invited.

For it is plain that the Father only knows how He generated the Son, and again the Son how He has been generated by the Father.

Not those dogs, whereof says the Apostle, Beware of dogs: [Philippians 3:2] but those that eat of the crumbs which fall from the table of their masters.

He had said that early hours would be good for them.

But we have no hesitation in finding fault with you, who think that we are criminal in bringing any complaint before a Christian emperor against the enemies of our communion, seeing that a document given by your predecessors to Anulinus the proconsul, to be forwarded by him to the Emperor Constantine, bore this superscription: Libellus Ecclesiæ Catholicæ, criminum Cæciliani, traditus a parte Majorini.

Did she do so, his friendship should by no means be withdrawn from her.

Finely and irresistibly does this noble thinker plead for his doctrine.

What then is that which He says here?

She was not wanted there, at any rate by her stepmother,—hardly by her brothers and sisters,—and was, perhaps, not cordially desired even by her father.

As to that ambition of putting down the consumption of cider, I myself am inclined to think that the habits of the country would be too strong for him.

Even those who are without say this, that he who is a good manager of a house will be a good statesman.

“So mamma tells me.”

And that you may not suppose that what I say is a mere conjecture, let us, I pray you, direct our discourse to the Scripture itself.

“Or, at any rate, not eyeless in Gaza, if the Lord is good to me. Come, Jane, we will go on.” Then he took up the passage himself, and read it on with clear, sonorous voice, every now and then explaining some passage or expressing his own ideas upon it, as though he were really happy with his poetry.

How did they not conduct themselves?

At the other intervals not thus occupied, I do not see what could be a more excellent, useful, and holy exercise for a Christian congregation.

But he was bound by every consideration to perform the task.

1 Corinthians 16:2

“Any hope as to what, Bernard?”

For already the civil wars had begun; and before this, some lamentable battles and execrable massacres had occurred.

“I have had no secret, Hugh,” said his wife.

It might be very well to count votes at the Reform Club; but after the votes had been counted,—had been counted successfully,—Brooks’s was the place, as Phineas believed, to learn at the earliest moment what would be the exact result of the success.

So that there is nothing strange, nothing new, neither in the lawgiving, nor in the accusation, nay not even in the comparison of the sepulchre.

Having therefore convened a Synod at Antioch, they deposed Eustathius, as a supporter of the Sabellian heresy, rather than of the tenets which the council at Nicæa had formulated.

[Exodus 33:13, partly from Septuagint] And Jacob took his name from this very thing, being called Israel; for Israel is one that sees God.

How, again, is He before all things, if He is not the first-born of every creature— if He is not the Word of the Creator?

Wherefore it will be a clear proof of our failure if we find that we have gained nothing more, nor should we doubt but that we have altogether gone back, whenever we find that we have not advanced upwards, because, as I said, the mind of man cannot possibly continue in the same condition, nor so long as he is in the flesh will any of the saints ever reach the height of all virtues, so that they continue unalterable.

But the very theory of our Government will be overset by a reversal of the rule which I have attempted to describe.

And when will he who, as a fugitive, is a defeated man, be conqueror?

Sometimes as a great delicacy you may have some small fish.

Well, yes; manly.

We have spoken respecting the gods: now we will speak of the rites and practices of their sacred institutions.

[Romans 3:20] This may indeed be possible before men, but not before Him who looks into our very heart and inmost will, where He sees that, although the man who fears the law keeps a certain precept, he would nevertheless rather do another thing if he were permitted.

These things both prove that their previous flight was not the effect of cowardice; and testify that their after conduct also was of no ordinary character: and they loudly proclaim that they possessed in a high degree the virtue of fortitude.

Which of them more magnanimous than Pompey, more prosperous than Sylla, of greater wealth than Crassus, more eloquent than Tullius?

Ring terror in the 'wildered ears.

But take care to request the most excellent Exarch, in his dispatches, to notify these same things to the most pious ears of the Emperors, since, although the order which has been conveyed to him appears to have been elicited from them, yet he is not forbidden in that order to allow such as wish it to return to the Church, but only, at the present time, to compel the unwilling.

But what am I doing?

“Then I would not have failed. Had you remained here, and have taken me, I should certainly not have failed then.”

This is the prayer of one who is improving

Of Mr. Kennedy, Phineas had as yet seen nothing since he had been up in town.

The conversation was desired for purposes appertaining solely to the convenience of the widow. She wanted some money, and then, with tears in her eyes, she demanded to know what was to be done. Miss Colza paid her eighteen shillings a week for board and lodging, and that was now two weeks in arrear; and one bedroom was let to a young man employed in the oilcloth factory, at seven shillings a week.

Whence, if on the one hand He is man only, as the heretics will have it, how shall not anybody who believes in Him die eternally, since he who trusts in man is held to be accursed?

Let this word be enough for your wisdom to remember.

While, however, different questions have arisen among them, a certain (heretic), who himself also was styled Theodotus, and who was by trade a banker, attempted to establish (the doctrine), that a certain Melchisedec constitutes the greatest power, and that this one is greater than Christ.

“I am sure we have meant to be kind to her,” said Ziska.

And as in Adam all die, so also in Christ shall all be made alive [1 Corinthians 15:21-22] .

“But those one or two,” answered the Senator, “were wilfully left there by the Parliament which represented the whole nation.”

Before lunch everybody in the house knew that poor little Popenjoy was dead, and that the Dean had, in fact, won the battle,—though not in the way that he had sought to win it.

Ought we not every day to wrestle and fight and run?

Therefore let me add, He brought forward His own love to man, that by the comparison, as He says, you might learn, that though thou forgive seventy times seven, though thou continually pardon your neighbor for absolutely all his sins, as a drop of water to an endless sea, so much, or rather much more, does your love to man come short in comparison of the boundless goodness of God, of which you stand in need, for that you are to be judged, and to give an account.

On which account, because He was so faithful, because He arrogated nothing at all to Himself, that He might fulfil the commands of Him who sent Him, He received the dignity of everlasting Priest, and the honour of supreme King, and the authority of Judge, and the name of God.

There, perhaps more than anywhere else, lingers the early Victorian atmosphere.

“You used to be a little free in your way of living.”

And He indeed, in His pitifulness, was born for all, but it is the disloyalty of heretics that has brought it to pass that the birth of Him Who was born for all should not profit all.

And thus we may say of peace, as we have said of eternal life, that it is the end of our good; and the rather because the Psalmist says of the city of God, the subject of this laborious work, Praise the Lord, O Jerusalem; praise your God, O Zion: for He has strengthened the bars of your gates; He has blessed your children within you; who has made your borders peace.

‘I know Harry is very goodnatured to him.’

I can do all things through Him who strengthens me.

What is more diversified than this pleasure?

It may be that as, when men die in this world by the separation of soul and body, they are allotted different positions in hell according to the difference in their works; so when angels die, out of the system of the heavenly Jerusalem, they come down to this world as a hell and are placed on earth according to their deserts.

Therefore, since it is impossible and useless to resist nature, so that we are not excited at all; before, however, the emotion bursts forth to the infliction of injury, as far as is possible let it be calmed in time.

[John 1:23] And he said, I am the voice that cries in [7] the desert, Repair ye the way of the Lord, as said Isaiah the prophet.

[Sirach 3:22] Tell me first what He is who begot, and then learn that which He begot; but if you can not conceive the nature of Him who has begotten, search not curiously into the manner of that which is begotten.

M. C.

Nor could he very well leave his mother without explaining to her why he did so.

When it is moved round upon that from which a certain shape has to be cut, the part so excised is limited by the size of the instrument, and a circle of such a radius will be cut as the instrument possesses of length, and, to put the matter the other way, the span of the instrument will measure and cut out a corresponding circle.

He was calm, without strong passion, not prone to give to words a stronger significance than they should bear;—and he was essentially unsuspicious.

Had there been a question in regard to an English title she certainly would not have shaken her head.

He had not become so dead to honor but that noblesse oblige did still live within his bosom.

Difficult as it is always to avoid extremes, the philosophers are quite right in their opinion that virtue is a mean and vice an excess, or as we may express it in one short sentence In nothing too much.

and frequently, too,

“But she has nothing of her own,” said Sir Thomas. And then that interview was over.

But of beer that is not beer, indeed of any adulterated compound, the law is able to take cognisance.

We must now follow Alaric to his trial.

I am not saying that people are equal; but that the tendency of all lawmaking and of all governing should be to reduce the inequalities.” In answer to which Mr. Kennedy said not a word.

A. I must certainly own this to be true.

Well, Agatha, so be it.

It was during these years that John Tilley, who has now been for many years the permanent senior officer of the Post Office, married my sister, whom he took with him into Cumberland, where he was stationed as one of our surveyors.

Three days were allowed to Frank Houston to consider within his own mind what he would say for himself and what he would propose finally to do when he should see Miss Docimer on the appointed Sunday.

The consent of the clergy, the testimony of those held in honour, the approval of the orders and the laity should be required.

“Stone and Toddy,” said Herriot.

Smith positively declining to take one of them; though, as she admitted, her rank as Lady Papua of the islands did give her some claim.

For the lustre of the sun and of the sky we see from an immeasurable distance, but a woman's beauty one cannot discern so far off.

If there be but a couple of black men with him he presumes that it is his business to superintend and not to work.

It becomes weak, ignoble, unmanly, illiberal, cowardly, full of impudence, servility, ignorance, rage, violence, and all kinds of evil, and destitute of the opposite virtues.

You are unwilling to profit by this comparison, by some other profit, it matters not provided thou do it: and, being secure, wait for the Kingdom of God, lest your prayer quarrel with you.

But as these things are, so also even now are there some who are emulous of these children: who say, your gods we serve not, and your images we worship not; but both the furnace of poverty we endure and all other distress, for the sake of God's laws.

‘I will not go; leave me alone. You cannot love me, mamma, or you would not treat me like this.’

Although we did not act thus without good reason, yet we have followed it up among the people so as to confess and to add again and again that it was far better to preserve souls than gold for the Lord.

From the troubling of men.

And shall convict me.

O Body of Christ, Holy Church, let all your bones say, Lord, who is like you?

Exposition on Psalm 144

Not even bread would be sweet, unless hunger had preceded.

For the Scripture does so do in many passages of the prophetic sayings In the plagues therefore of the Egyptians, which are in the book which is called Exodus, where the Scripture has been especially careful, that those things whereby they were afflicted should be all related in order, there is not found what this Psalm has, and He gave to the mildew their fruits.

It might be that he had means of ascertaining what strangers arrived at Castle Richmond; and it might be, that he would, under the present circumstances, think it expedient to stay away.

Those were the professions intended for gentlemen.

Let us prepare as offerings for the King desirable fruits, fasting and prayer.

For whether it be wealth that He takes, He has taken but His own; or honor, or glory, or the body, or the life itself: be it that He takes away your son, it is not your son that He has taken, but His own servant.

For, if there were not a trench in the altar, the passing breeze would scatter every sacrifice that it might find there.

She did not see him at first, as the light of her own candle was in her eyes, and she was startled when he spoke to her.

That the election made according to foreknowledge, might be manifestly of God, from the first day He at once saw and proclaimed which was good and which not.

But having first promulgated false dogmas to men; plainly fighting against almost the whole Scriptures, and constantly confuted by us who contradict them; for the rest, even now partly they hold out against admitting the prophetic Scriptures, and partly disparage us as of a different nature, and incapable of understanding what is peculiar to them.

He had been entrapped by bad advisers, and had fallen into a pit.

Belton had now got the poker into his hands, and sat silent for some time, knocking the coals about.

Your friend's face you discern by your own body, your own faith you discern by your own mind; but your friend's faith is not loved by you, unless there be in you in return that faith, whereby you may believe that which in him you see not.

“Well, perhaps so.” And then the other quarter of a mile made away with itself. “Come, get along, Dumpling.” This was said to the fat steed; for they had now risen to level ground.

And as for me, you are quite welcome.” But, as a fact, there she was.

But a contest was still carried on for more that a twelvemonth longer through which the Dutch farmers strove to regain their independence, and it was not till the Sth of August, 1843, that the twenty-four members of the still existing Volksraad declared Her Majesty’s Government to be supreme in Port Natal.

Therefore she had written to him, in his own study, a few very simple words, telling the matter on which she wanted his advice.

And if he could induce her to say that she would return to her old ways, return to them she would in a hearty manner.

Now lest when you hear that none knows the Father, save the Son, you should assert that although He knows the Father more than all, yet He knows not how great He is, the Evangelist says that He dwells in the bosom of the Father; and Christ Himself declares, that He knows Him as much as the Father knows the Son.

For what man is there of you, says He, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone?

He had found himself to be one of six young men, who habitually spent about five hours a day together in the same room, and whose chief employment was to render the life of the wretched Mr. Snape as unendurable as possible.

If Lord Lufton chose to go to Hogglestock she could not prevent him.

Then how is it that without this the earth bears nothing of itself?

Dumb then will he be to God, who forgets Jerusalem.

Barry was half standing, and half sitting on the small parlour table, and there he remained for a few minutes, meditating on Daly’s most unpleasant proposal. It was a hard pill for him to swallow, and he couldn’t get it down without some convulsive grimaces. He bit his under lip, till the blood came through it, and at last said,

Let them ask what the heretics can make of this present passage.

Does then the brazen serpent save when crucified, and shall not the Son of God incarnate save when crucified also?

Indeed, she herself was equally prepared to devote her energies for the present to the same object.

Quebec and Montreal were important cities before any of the towns belonging to the States had been founded.

He foretold both the cold and the frost.

How faultless it would then have been in English eyes!

She had not only assured him of her undying affection in the presence of her father and mother, had not only offered to be chopped in pieces on his behalf, but had also written to him, telling how she had a large sum of her father’s money within her power, and how willing she was to make it her own, to throw over her father and mother, and give herself and her fortune to her lover.

So we also expect that you will all at once show to us ripe fruit.

But when you have been regenerated by water, show by good works the likeness in you of that Father who has begotten you.

“It is for you that I fear it. It would grieve me to hear men speak lightly of your name.”

Here he shows what great loving-kindness God herein exhibits.

And if you were to go up again higher from these mean persons, you will see the race more illustrious and royal.

“Every tie you have in the world is in England.”

For, when a man is surrounded by a believing crowd of children and grandchildren, he is as good as a candidate for the faith.

Now she was saved from that; but,—but at what a cost!

Of course she would read it.

It was thus he reasoned with himself.

“A very great difference indeed. I think it is her own. But, at any rate, she is much younger than I am, and there need be no settlement out of my property. That is the great thing. Don’t you think she’s—nice?”

Why should I wish him for your husband?

Next, those matters that are plainly laid down in them, whether rules of life or rules of faith, are to be searched into more carefully and more diligently; and the more of these a man discovers, the more capacious does his understanding become.

The sermons of Perivale were neither bright, nor eloquent, nor encouraging.

Ver. 11, 12. To be quiet, and to do your own business, and to work with your hands, even as we charged you: that you may walk honestly toward them that are without, and may have need of nothing.

13. Therefore, you see, having mentioned, first the judgment, then the council, then hell, and having spoken of His own sacrifice, He adds other topics again, thus speaking:

This wrongs others, and grieves me.

And the beginning of his kingdom was Babylon, Erech, Accad, and Calneh, in the land of Shinar.

Chapter 9. The Dispensation of Grace in Paul the Apostle.

Orth.— Of what was then the growth and increase in wisdom and stature?

1 Corinthians 13:9-10

And coming up to me at a convenient place, and addressing me, he said, 'For a long time I have been following you and wishing to talk with you, but I was afraid that you might be angry with me, as if I were instigated by curiosity; but now I shall tell you, if you please, what I think is the truth.'

Yea, I beseech and implore you.

“Nay, dear; he is your own friend,—of your own making. You must say what you think fit.”

“Never, never; it is impossible. Dear Patrick, I am so sorry to make you unhappy, and I love you so very dearly,—better than ever, I think, for speaking as you do now. But that can never be. Let him come here, however, and I myself will tell him all.” At last, disgusted and unhappy though he was, the earl did accept the commission, and again on that afternoon rode across the fields to Hap House.

His memory carried him but little farther back than the day on which his brother turned him out of his rooms.

From what teachers of dogma or mythology?

I write this to men of the priestly and monastic Orders, and also to the dignitaries and councillors, and to the whole people.

But if there be any, it is so brief as not even to be apparent.

Now there was at that time in New York city a Mr. Bell, great in railway matters—an uncle of the once thriving but now departed Albany lawyer.

All that she left mainly to the woman’s conscience and her own dealings with her Saviour,—merely saying a word of salutary counsel as to a certain spiritual pastor who might be of aid.

See how they are carried on high by the wind, who say, We will magnify our tongue, our lips are our own, who is our Lord?

Instead of this, as if nothing had happened, they ask, Did we not strictly charge you not to speak?

An individual who bears the name of bishop, but of ways unworthy even of stage players, has fled from the episcopal synod at a time when he was lying under sentence of excommunication and is endeavouring to calumniate and discredit the visitation, while through his hatred to the illustrious Philip he assails the truth.

If they confine this Christ the Spirit within the bounds of shape and body, such a corporeal Christ will not be the likeness of the invisible God, nor will a finite limitation represent that which is infinite.

The house was dark and gloomy, never having been altogether opened since the murder.

“No; I do not love him now,” she had answered.

But Sir Thomas insisted.

How much wrath, tell me, how much expense, how many enmities these men incurred; and what the gain?

She was contented to put herself altogether in the background till he should have pleased to leave the place.

For it either affirms what is true or it does not affirm what is true.

An Englishman reading this should of course remember that Lord Palmerston was an English Minister, filled with English convictions at the moment, and that he (the reader) will of course only get the English view.

“I hope,” she said, “I am not intruding in coming to you; but I have been anxious to renew our acquaintance for reasons which I am sure you will understand.”

Blessed is the man that hopes in Him.

For He is not far from every one of us, for in Him we live, and move, and have our being.

I cannot do it!

Eran.— Yes, for so have I learned from the Apostolic Scripture There are diversities of gifts but the same spirit, and again All these things works that one and the selfsame spirit, dividing to every man severally as He will, and again Having the same Spirit of the Faith.

“And was it sold?” said he.

For say not they are under necessity, when you too are under a necessity in the fear of hell.

Why do you discard the annual feast of unleavened bread, and the appointed sacrifice of the lamb, which, according to the law and the prophets, is to be observed for ever?

But why did these fail, except in order that others might be sought for?

Take no heed of things present.

This is the beginning of a better life.

I do love Lord Lufton.

Or, while you think that it is so, do you conceive no anxiety lest you should in something offend the gods themselves, whoever they are, because you believe that it is owing to filthy intercourse ... that they have reached the light they knew not of, thanks to lewdness?

He had not that perfect faith in mankind which is the surest evidence of a simple mind.

“No, no, no,” she exclaimed.

“That’s about it,” said the Squire.

How could I despise him because he was a tailor?

“Why, God bless me! Mr O’Joscelyn!—the queen hasn’t turned Papist, and the Repealers are all in prison, or soon will be there.”

It seems impossible that one object should be both within and without another, or that (since it is laid down that the Beings of whom we are treating, though They do not dwell apart, retain their separate existence and condition) these Beings can reciprocally contain One Another, so that One should permanently envelope, and also be permanently enveloped by, the Other, whom yet He envelopes.

[Isaiah 59:1] Therefore let your sins and of-fences be reckoned up; let the wounds of your conscience be considered; and let each one cease complaining about God, or about us, if he should perceive that himself deserves what he suffers.

How was it to be with the enemy?

For nothing that is endowed with reason and judgment has been created, or is created, for the use of another, whether greater or less than itself, but for the sake of the life and continuance of the being itself so created.

Or not so?

“And so will you and Mr. Eames—some day, I hope.”

There is much of pathos in the love of the girl, and of paternal dignity and affection in the father.

A residence had been taken for the couple in a very fashionable row of buildings abutting upon the Bayswater Road, called Princess Royal Crescent.

[Ephesians 6:16] If we are widows, we must either speak as we are dressed, or else dress as we speak.

I’d rather you wouldn’t tell him, if you please.” Then Mr. Grey departed, without making any promise, but he determined that he would be guided by the squire’s wishes.

“Ah! I wonder why,” said Mrs. Sturt. “I wonder why any young man should come on such an errand! But it won’t do to leave him there standing in my parlour by himself, so do you come along with me.”

Is the retribution equal?

[Matthew 5:44] It is not their death, but their deliverance from error, that we seek to accomplish by the help of the terror of judges and of laws, whereby they may be preserved from falling under the penalty of eternal judgment; we do not wish either to see the exercise of discipline towards them neglected, or, on the other hand, to see them subjected to the severer punishments which they deserve.

“Yes;—because I saw that I could trust him. I told him because I wanted him to be quite sure that I had never loved him. But, Frank, I have put no spoke in your wheel. There has not been a moment since you told me of your love for this rich young lady in which I would not have helped you had help been in my power. Whomever I may have harmed, I have never harmed you.”

In Pennsylvania the General Assembly, as the joint legislature is called, sits every year, commencing their work early in January, and continuing till it be finished.

That the rains, and snow, and hail fall upwards to the earth?

But this also we observe, not to have a common table with Gentiles, unless when they believe, and on the reception of the truth are baptized, and consecrated by a certain threefold invocation of the blessed name; and then we eat with them.

“Never; never.”

Or how shall they believe in Him of whom they have not heard?

He admits that she was betrothed, and in the next breath will have her to be a man's wife whom he has admitted to be his betrothed.

“And now he has gone and died,” continued Mounser Green. “‘I never nursed a dear gazelle,’ and all the rest of it. Poor Paragon! I fear he was a little cut about Miss Trefoil.”

So it was with Cecilia Holt.

This had been reported to Crocker.

“You won’t catch us without one for the next two months; will he, mamma? You have got a letter, uncle. Is it for us to see?”

Often would Miss Le Smyrger come upon her there, and sometimes would pass by her even without a word; but never—never once did she dare to ask her of the matter of her thoughts.

The two men whom Mr Apjohn had sent from his office, together with the butler and Mrs Griffith, began their work in the old man’s bedroom, and then carried it on in the parlour.

He has gone away, and is in London, and would tell you so himself if you would ask him.

“Well, Selina, I’ll answer you fairly. If that bit of paper is a cheque for five hundred pounds, I will leave this place in two hours. If it is not—”

But to have done that which was clearly injurious to his party was as bad.

Days went on, and Fanny Heisse was married, and all probability of telling the story was at an end.

As yet, while they were standing there in the hall, there had come no moment for her to feel whether there was anything to regret in this.

For we who read the things of God need much application, lest we should say or think anything too rashly about them.

It was a grand thing to Crocker to have been brought into contact with a man possessed of so noble a title.

Indeed it was one of those hunting-days got up rather for the ladies than for the sport.

For Jordan alone of rivers, receiving in itself the first-fruits of sanctification and benediction, conveyed in its channel to the whole world, as it were from some fount in the type afforded by itself, the grace of Baptism.

Then become pure in heart, and near to the Lord, there awaits them restoration to everlasting contemplation; and they are called by the appellation of gods, being destined to sit on thrones with the other gods that have been first put in their places by the Saviour.

“I do not know whether you are in earnest, Miss Thoroughbung.”

Also in the twenty-fourth Psalm: Show me Your ways, Lord, and teach me Your paths, and lead me unto Your truth, and teach me; for You are the God of my salvation.

For many are God's reasons for the dispensation, and to us inexplicable; and for all we must be heartily thankful, and think those only wretched who live in wickedness; not those who do not possess children.

And yet it is a smiling pretty land, blessed with numerous advantages; and if it were my fate to live in South Africa I should certainly choose Natal for my residence.

Will it again be subject to all its present wants, especially meats and drinks?

He had begun to see the claims of other diplomats, and to contest them before he had won his place at our own Foreign Office.

Let us too rejoice when we see a righteous man dying, and yet more even when any of the desperately wicked; for the first is going to receive the reward of his labors, but the other has abated somewhat from the score of his sins.

We neglect Him when He wants necessary food; sick and naked we visit Him not.

But if you do not wish to learn, as though you knew all things, I shall first set forth the faith which I preach, and do you also set forth what you think to be true; and when the profession of each of us has been disclosed, let our hearers judge whose discourse is supported by truth.]

He was true.

[Colossians 1:16-17] Does he, then, include the Holy Spirit here among creatures?

But if I be not minded to carry them about with me, I shall not suffer them to be in my house, but shall deposit them with my bishop, having the same faith, and setting out from the same persons as myself.

But if he will not hear the Church, let him be to you as an heathen man and a publican [Matthew 18:15].

And he who exhibits all these qualities offers a sacrifice as often as he performs any good and pious action.

And countless other passages might be found as well in the holy gospels and in the writings of the apostles as in the predictions of the prophets, setting forth that our Lord Jesus Christ is very God.

And he shows that noble birth after the flesh is of no avail, but we must seek for virtue of soul, which even before the works of it God knows of.

“I certainly think that you ought to discontinue your visits to Dr Thorne altogether.”

The will, therefore, was to him thoroughly distasteful.

[Romans 2:10] For to this end the Stone which the builders set at nought, has even been made for the Head of the corner, in order that two in itself It might join: for a corner does unite two walls.

During the next two or three days the Duke was neither much better nor much worse.

And then the two younger ladies again went on clipping and arranging their papers, while Mrs. Woodward renewed her protest that she would do her best as to reading their production.

“Had you there, Grindems,” said Maxwell.

And yet his relations with them will be more embarrassing than formerly, as they will all combine with each other, and thereby become more powerful than before.

But if any one, surrendering himself to evil, is guilty of delinquency, he who has been thus deceived does not become a teacher to all whom the Chaldeans are disposed to mislead by their mistakes.

Open went one box after another, and in five minutes the room was strewed with her possessions.

“The question is whether she be a princess,” said Lady Albury.

Those which books and monuments contain.

On Monday he got a scolding from the bishop in the hearing of the servants, and down he went till nobody would have him at any price; but on Tuesday he received a letter, in an official cover, marked private, by which he fully recovered his place in the public favour.

Then the Dean had told his daughter that he would allow her £300 a-year for her own expenses, to include the brougham,—for it was to be no more than a brougham,—during the six months they would be in London, and that he would regard this as his subscription towards the household.

But we, sitting with Peter the whole night, asking questions, and learning of him on many subjects, remained awake through very delight in his teaching and the sweetness of his words; and when it was daybreak, Peter, looking at me and my brothers, said: [I wonder what has befallen your father.]

And not least would we say that they are divine, and are raised to the prophetic ecstasy by the inspiration and possession of God, when they correctly speak of many and important matters, and yet know nothing of what they are saying, — plainly and manifestly referring to the prophecies of the Sibyl.

In Isaac shall your seed be called, and that son he brought to be sacrificed.

“You cannot do that,” said his wife.

I shall not therefore stay to inquire what sort of men Romulus gathered together, seeing he deliberated much about them—how, being assumed out of that life they led into the fellowship of his city, they might cease to think of the punishment they deserved, the fear of which had driven them to greater villainies; so that henceforth they might be made more peaceable members of society.

If he thought then that he might have done better with his energies than devote them to dangerous horses, he never said so.

Though my school should be broken up tomorrow, which I do not think probable, I should still have enough to live upon,—which is more, by all accounts, than her unfortunate husband can say for himself.

[John 2:19] And the very nature of His death, that is, the height of the cross, is understood by the single words You are gone up.

Necessary it was that the style of one engaged in searching for a drachma in a house, should be aptly fitted with the helpful accompaniment of a besom as well as of a lamp.

“Then it means that you intend to hold yours.”

Chapter 33. Abraham: His Posterity.

She looked at her frock, and having one darker and thicker than that she wore, she changed it instantly.

The man had not attempted to shake hands with him, or affected familiarity; but seemed to be thoroughly humiliated.

The then Mr Gresham was not an old man at the time of his death, and his eldest son, Francis Newbold Gresham, was a very young man; but, notwithstanding his youth, and notwithstanding other grounds of objection which stood in the way of such preferment, and which must be explained, he was chosen in his father’s place.

The Apostle Paul, rapidly recounting the benefits of God, ended with the words, [2 Corinthians 2:16] And who is sufficient for these things?

When, but subsequently to the Prophets in the last days?

Here, then, let us bring to a close what has to be said before proceeding to read the work itself.

If my son here will agree with you in raising the money, and if Mountjoy,—as he, too, is necessary,—will do so, I too will do what is required of me.

“So I said, Herbert; not exactly in those words, but trying to comfort him. He then put it off by declaring that it was the consciousness of his inability to see any one on business which affected him so grievously.”

For if they should be detected so doing, and knowing a man to be unworthy have brought him forward on some pretext or other, the amount of their punishment shall be equivalent to his, nay perhaps the punishment shall be even greater for them who appointed the unfit man.

How He helped their hunger and thirst, He says not, but even this expect ye: Let them confess unto the Lord His mercies, and His wonders towards the children of men [Psalm 106:8].

“No such word was ever spoken,” said Mr. Camperdown in wrath.

For neither Jews, nor Celsus, nor any other, can bring any argument to prove that a pestilence converts men from the practice of evil to a life which is according to nature, and distinguished by temperance and other virtues.

“Take the good the gods provide you, Mary. That will all come right.”

No one had come when the carriage was announced, and the three ladies went off together.

There was not much to enliven the house at Folking during these days.

As He has overcome every revolting power many diadems mark His victory.

He sat there for a while, so astounded by the transaction of the morning as to be unable to collect his thoughts.

and from those very circumstances, for which they ought to admire the loving-kindness of God they find fault with it.

II. The Incarnation has changed all the possibilities of man's existence

“You, if you had been painting duchesses then, with a studio in Kensington Gardens, would not have said so, if you had happened to come across me. I can’t define a gentleman, even in my own mind;—but I can define the sort of man with whom I think I can live pleasantly.”

For over and above the undergoing of superfluous and profitless dangers, there is this additional harm, that the Greeks will not come over to us.

“I could hardly dare to think that there was so much happiness left for me,” said Herbert.

And in the city we take so much care, as to shut up the wild beasts in solitary places and in cages, and neither at the senate house of the city, nor at the courts of justice, nor at the king's palace, but far off somewhere at a distance do we keep them chained; but in the case of the soul, where the senate house is, where the King's palace, where the court of justice is, the wild beasts are let loose, crying and making a tumult about the mind itself and the royal throne.

Observe then what he says; For you remember, he has not said, the benefits received from me, but, our labor and travail: for working night and day, that we might not burden any of you, we preached unto you the Gospel of God.

“None at all. I think we should all be sorry, because he does so much good.”

By what means I shall persuade you, I know not.

“Martha,” she said, “is my aunt happy now?”

Give me a man who is afraid of pain and death; he shall presently despise crosses, and fires, and the bull of Phalaris.

“Mamma,” she had often said, “there’s one thing certain.

31. Proof of the existence of the rational soul. (1) Difference of man from the brutes. (2) Man's power of objective thought. Thought is to sense as the musician to his instrument. The phenomena of dreams bear this out.

But to whom is it more becoming to be also one spirit with God, than to this soul which has so joined itself to God by love as that it may justly be said to be one spirit with Him?

But let it be so, that meaning departs from their epistles.

He is the door of the greatest temple, He the way of light, He the guide to salvation, He the gate of life.

These still have repentance in their power, if they repent speedily; and their abode will be in the tower.

And the blessed Apostle Paul, writing to the Thessalonians, says: Now we beseech you, brethren, concerning the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and our gathering together at it, that you be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letters as from us, as that the day of the Lord is at hand.

Then he suggests hopes to them, saying [Hebrews 3:14], We are made partakers of Christ; All but saying, He that so loved us, He that counted us worthy of so great things, as to make us His Body, will not suffer us to perish.

For even if a child be born, it at once disgraces yourself, and has itself had injustice done it in being born through you illegitimate and base.

The Moon and the Stars You have made, the Sun to rule the day have You kindled, the Heavens have You framed together.

The Earl Arrives

No one had seen her dip her hands in that jar.

Even the boy who blacked his boots felt that he was blacking the boots of a great man.

“Yes,—to Mr Broune. I had to pay a sum for Felix which Mr Broune told me ought to be paid. And I owe money to tradesmen. I fear that I shall not be able to keep on this house. And they tell me,—your cousin and Mr Broune,—that it is my duty to take Felix out of London probably abroad.”

Pleasure of the ears is received from the sweetness of voices and strains, which indeed is as productive of vice as that delight of the eyes of which we have spoken.

Some such closer regard I have felt for you—very foolishly.

But yet he could not bring himself to wound her by his absence.

“The time has gone by, Arthur, in which I might well have been guided by my father. There comes a time when personal feelings must be stronger than a father’s authority. Papa cannot see me with my own eyes; he cannot understand what I feel. It is simply this,—that he would have me to be other than I am. But I am what I have made myself.”

We will wait below.

“But somebody has said that I did. I’ve been told that Mr Bideawhile says so.”

For Jonathan, not having heard his father take the oath, put forth the end of the rod that was in his hand, and dipped it in the honeycomb, and his eyes saw clearly.

Her uncle would be blandly goodnatured.

He does not say, let not the flesh live or act, but, let not sin reign, for He came not to destroy our nature, but to set our free choice aright.

Mr. Finn was not struck, and managed to escape from the room.

The pruning-knife, I should think, and the pick-axe, and the other agricultural implements, are necessary for the culture of the vine, so that it may produce eatable fruit.

For he who is corrupt being within, will be much more so being without.

He does not say, Who knows if to die is not to live, and if to live is not death But he boldly proclaims the truth, and says, Our soul is bowed down to the dust; and, You have brought me into the dust of death; and similarly, Who will deliver me from the body of this death?

Whence also the resurrection is actually spoken of as regeneration, according to the words of the Lord: Verily I say unto you, that you which have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit on the throne of His glory, you also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel.

“Yes;—Phineas Finn,—the man who was tried.”

Pull me to pieces and scatter me to the winds: tax me with what offenses you please: accuse me of luxurious and delicate living: you would like me better if I were guilty, for I should belong to your herd.

Light of the living, is light of the immortal, light of holy men.

But after all there’s been betwixt you and us it wouldn’t be natural to pass it by without one word; would it, Mr. Finn?

Monks alone maintain a lasting union in intimacy, and possess all things in common, as they hold that everything that belongs to their brethren is their own, and that everything which is their own is their brethren's.

In that cab Bagwax made up his mind that he would do his duty like an honest man.

And let those who are ignorant of it learn from those who know.

I’m almost sick of looking at the straight ridges in the big square fields every day of my life.

The mild voice grasped my hand very tightly as he crept to the edge and looked over.

But I follow on, said he, if I may apprehend that in which I also am apprehended of Christ Jesus.

Paterculus speaks specially of his fraud, and breaks out into strong repudiation of the murder of Cicero.

Oh, Florence, you also will find yourself in the hands of the policeman!” At this moment the fly drew up at the door of the house in Montpelier Place, and the two ladies had to get out and walk up the steps into the hall, where they were congratulated on their early return from the party by the lady’s-maid.

[Matthew 10:8] And heal the sick, and cleanse the lepers, and cast out the devils: freely you have received, freely [48, 49] give.

And she had been unable to obtain any of that consolation which could have come to her from talking of her wrongs.

For to all bad men is Christ a stone of stumbling; whatever Christ says is bitter to them.

His mother and sisters altogether failed to persuade him.

When she complained of this to their mother the Marchioness merely drew herself up and was silent.

Again he had himself been at fault.

Accordingly, one who comes to us with the view of being formally admitted, in that we cherish the hope of his ability to go forward, should wipe away the sorrow caused by one who fails us.

But, how He upholds by the word, he has not further added: for neither is it possible to know.

He had not believed in so great a virtue.

Then he arose and replied with words of assent.

And next, the workmen who receive the wages are those who have entered, not those who have missed, the vineyard; which last is like to be your case.

But, nevertheless, he was touched by their ridicule.

I do not think that I am a mercenary man. When I married your daughter I raised no question as to her fortune. Being embarked in trade I no doubt thought that her means,—whatever they might be,—would be joined to my own. I know that a sum of £20,000, with my experience in the use of money, would give us a noble income. But I would not condescend to ask a question which might lead to a supposition that I was marrying her for her money and not because I loved her.

As she said afterwards to Sir Damask, she was not going to have that Jew there at her house as Georgiana Longestaffe’s accepted lover without Mr Longestaffe’s knowledge.

But in regard to Ayala she had expressed nothing of the kind.

And he was a man sufficiently well to do, though that boast made by his friends, that he was as warm a man as the bishop, had but little truth to support it.

‘Lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil!’ Let that petition come forth from a man’s heart, a true and earnest prayer, and he will be so led that he shall not hear the charmer, let him charm ever so wisely.

For pray what is the pain of laying aside anger against one who has aggrieved you?

He himself believed that he had been the victim of a foreign conspiracy, aided by those Englishmen who agreed that its purpose was good.

As to the other, if after his intercourse he has a little respite, it must be counted nothing.

But things arrange themselves. How probable it was that he would never be married to her. After all, this might be but an incident, and not an unpleasant incident, in his life. He had had his amusement out of it, and she had had hers. Perhaps they would part to meet no more. But when he thought that there might be comfort in this direction, he felt that he was a scoundrel for thinking so.

During one year he was sent abroad to travel with a tutor, and was then reported to have been all that a well-conducted lad ought to be.

“Madame Staubach,” he said, “I have been thinking about Linda Tressel.”

If told where he might find Trevelyan, he would probably insist on starting in quest of his son-in-law himself, and the distance between the mother and her child might become greater in consequence, instead of less.

The unfortunate concomitant circumstances still remained, and were of sufficient force, as she thought, to make such a marriage inexpedient.

“He did go in behind!” “Those cats of things always do it somehow,” Larry replied darting forward again and keeping the Major well in his eye.

Lord bless you, ma’am, in any other house than this it would go for nothing.

How, he urges further, did Saul recognise (what appeared), and do obeisance?

63 He then that gives these things, much more remits sins.

He had not the slightest idea that by doing so he would be able to soften his father’s heart.

Chapter 19 Jesus Christ was not a mere man, begotten from Joseph in the ordinary course of nature, but was true God, begotten of the Father Most High, and true man, born of the Virgin

But away with (the thought): for not even we ourselves forget the distinction between sins, which was the starting-point of our digression.

See whence arises their persuasion, from their sins, from their being conscious to themselves of nothing good!

“The earl was, at any rate, quite right about lying upon the ground. I wonder you can be so foolish. And he is right about your poor father too. But you have got to change your boots; and we shall be ready for dinner almost immediately.”

He would not make use of Merle Park and Glenbogie.

It made Elisha a two-fold Elias!

Wherefore also the Scriptures were translated into the language of the Greeks, in order that they might never be able to allege the excuse of ignorance, inasmuch as they are able to hear also what we have in our hands, if they only wish.

“Perhaps you had better let me make a communication by letter,” he said. At that very moment the all but completed epistle was lying on the table before him, where even her eyes might reach it. In the flurry of the moment he covered it up.

He had taught himself to be courteous and urbane, because he had been clever enough to see that courtesy and urbanity are agreeable to men in high places.

Weep, groan, give alms, apologize to him that is affronted, reconcile him to yourself hereby, wipe clean your tongue, lest you provoke God more grievously.

“Is Miss Vavasor going to walk home?” she asked.

He did so, in the presence of all the men assembled; but the humiliation of doing it almost broke his heart.

[Exodus 20:3] But by the bow He does signify the mind's intention.

“I think of going tomorrow,” said Lord George, gloomily.

“And will learn to,—to,—to forget him.”

He therefore who is in a state of wickedness, undoubtedly also wanders from the faith; and he who falls from godliness, falls from the true faith.

Active efforts were made to get me a wife.

“A year, is it? No, not a year. This is the beginning of June, and I did not come here till the end of last August. It’s about nine months, Mr Maguire.”

“Oh indeed!” Those had been the words with which Mr. Furnival had received the announcement made by Sir Peregrine as to his proposed nuptials. And as he uttered them the lawyer drew himself up stiffly in his chair, looking much more like a lawyer and much less like an old family friend than he had done the moment before.

He still vacillated, but his vacillation did not bring him nearer to his cousin’s side of the case.

For there the urgency of public affairs demanded his presence; and especially the proclamation of Vetranio as emperor by the military.

Ayala was to the sculptor only second in sacredness to Lucy.

[Σ] Sounding the archangel's trumpet shall peal down from heaven,

“Margaret has a home now with her cousins in Cavendish Square; but she cannot stay there after they go to Scotland. It will be for her welfare that she should be married from their house. And as for my father’s death, I know that you do not suspect me of disrespect to his memory.”

Together with her were both Clarissa and Patience Underwood.

But I cannot fancy myself much in love with a Western lady, or rather with a lady in the West.

To meet a foeman worthy of his steel he will willingly cross to the antipodes; and, as he goes, he pities his fellow-travellers who are cumbering themselves with the troubles of the journey for no purpose worthy of their labour.

“I dare say he did.”

One of our own lot, maybe!

“Indeed, I’d rather not. The truth is, I can’t afford to ride my own horses, and therefore I’d rather not ride my friends’.”

Immediately opposite to this little hovel there was on that night a detachment of the 80th going up to join its regiment at Newcastle.

And he calls them pitiless, and says My neighbours have rejected me, and my servants spoke against me, and I called the sons of my concubines, and they turned away from me.

[Daniel 1:12] Now it appears that they were defiled in mind and conscience most of all when they were closing their mouth against blood and idol-feasts.

For this life is liable to sin, that life is reserved for the reward.

And with regard to this, understand and observe that when Elijah also, and Elisha his disciple, raised the dead, it was not with one word that they raised them up, but after they had prayed and made intercession and delayed no little time, then they arose.

But I’m told he is in a very low condition,—never sees anybody except his courier, and never stirs out of the house.

For it has to be told that a considerable portion of the Capetown library,—or rather a small separate library itself numbering about 5,000 volumes,—was given to the Colony by that eccentric but most popular and munificent Governor.

Chapter 27. Among Other Enactments, he decrees that no Christianshall slave to a Jew, and affirms the Validity of the Decisions of Councils.

But you see what terrible misery may be occasioned by not allowing those who are to come after you to know what it is they are to expect.

He was terrible as a friend; but then he could be more terrible as a foe.

He had not done so.

In the former book I indulged my longing to some extent, lest too sharp remedies applied to a burning wound might rather increase than assuage the pain.

And, if he once began to reckon the points of the case upon his fingers, and to spread his syllogistic nets, what criminal would his pleading have failed to save?

It is our desire, if possible, to guard in our days not only the Catholic faith and the rules of the church, but the people committed to our charge, and to give a quietus to all strange doctrines.

How if there be no good that we can do?

Come, my brethren; if we ask how these were punished, the Lord will aid me to tell you.

But in spiritual things, when the less adheres to the greater, as the creature to the Creator, the former becomes greater than it was, not the latter.

“They were always together, but I dare say it was Platonic. I believe these kind of things generally are Platonic. And as for Lady Laura;—heavens and earth!—I suppose it must have been Platonic. What did the Duke say to you?”

Else how could these words apply to the person of sinners: For I do not the good which I would, but the evil which I hate that I do?

What can a man do, in a strange country, when he is told that a native spits in his face by way of civility?

“Well, you know, my dear, what they say about Mrs. Trevelyan and the Clock House is not very nice. If Mr. Gibson were to turn round and say that the connection wasn’t pleasant, no one would have a right to complain.”

piercing) is a name he here gives to the habit of soul inclinable to the worse, when incurably and unchangeably so.

You will have forgotten, I dare say.

Crucified, dead, and buried.

And it is plain that this is not opposed to that which has just been said.

For this is a demon we willingly receive, a self-chosen madness.

“London, papa!”

To what does he bear witness, and cry?

[cf.Sirach 22:27] But in speaking of the men of those times, these things might well be named, seeing they were carnal: but in our case, God forbid they should be (even) named.

I go to have my wounds bound.

For this too the Lord calls a regeneration—though, of course, not such as occurs through baptism, but still a regeneration wherein that which is now begun in the spirit shall be brought to perfection also in the body.

He can threaten to have sons like Priam.

It is a pity something could not be done for him after all he has undergone.

And if any man has at one blow lost property to the same amount, which can never be, yet he has not had the further affliction of a sore all over his body, he has not scraped the humors that covered him; or if this likewise has been his fate, yet he has not had men to upbraid and reproach him, which is above all things calculated to wound the feelings, more than the calamities we suffer.

“I hope that you may be successful, Mr Cheesacre, and that she may not be torn away from you early in life. Is dinner ready, Jeannette? That’s well. Mr Cheesacre, will you give your arm to Miss Fairstairs?”

While the thing is in this evil plight, she raises her eyes, and turns them to the Father.

We who have obtained your aid owe you everlasting gratitude for your healing power.

‘But I should still be your wife.

They dwell in their own countries, but simply as sojourners.

It was to him an additional delight that his daughter should have been selected as one of the dancers.

Feemy had been at mass with the family, and when she met Father John afterwards, she exerted herself to appear before him as she usually did, and to a certain extent she succeeded.

The girl herself had hitherto seemed to escape the scourge under which they perished.

Further, admonishing, and showing whence we may be clean and purged, He added that alms must be given.

If you long for God to manifest Himself to you, why do you not hear Moses, when he commands the people to be pure from the stains of marriage, that they may take in the vision of God.

He shows that it is for great objects that he is led away from them.

But those who spoke ill of him should have remembered that this was his misfortune rather than his fault.

“At any rate it cannot be so.”

“And you would really wish me to marry that girl?”

“With Mrs. Trevelyan, you mean.”

There was almost a quarrel, and we began to doubt whether Mrs. Brumby would not be the means of taking the very bread from out of our mouths.

Even murderers, tomb-breakers, and adulterers, are not condemned by their judges until they have themselves confirmed by confession the charges brought against them, or have been clearly convicted by the testimony of others.

‘No, my child, I will not say another word. Dear as he is to me, you are and must be ten times dearer. There, Gertrude, it is over now; over at least between us. We know each other’s hearts now. It is my fault that we did not do so sooner.’ They did understand each other at last, and the mother made no further attempt to engage her daughter’s love for the man she would have chosen as her daughter’s husband.

Let, then, your Holiness, taking with you your sons who with you disapprove of these things, try to induce good feeling among the inhabitants of your city, since at this time especially, when there is alarm from the enemy, you ought not to have a divided people.

Ofttimes one straitened, and perceiving how true are the charges which are made, says, May God requite our ancestors!

There is none; nor is there any other cause why we mutually bestow upon each other the name of brethren, except that we believe ourselves to be equal.

Let him enter his club with five thousand pounds at his banker’s and no misfortune could touch him.

Remember then, my brethren, that Christ has promised us eternal life: This, says he, is the promise which He has promised us, even eternal life.

“Let me get my hat, Mr. Newton,” said Mary, taking the opportunity to trip upstairs, though her hat was hanging in the hall.

“I could only know what she told me,” he said, as he went on with his story.

But Tiberius continued to hold his own opinion, and threatened death to the accusers of the Christians.

Constantius, on the other hand, lest he should have seemed to dissent from the injunctions of his superiors, permitted the demolition of churches,— mere walls, and capable of being built up again—but he preserved entire that true temple of God, which is the human body.

“How glad those Proudies will be!” Griselda would have talked by the hour on this subject had her mother allowed her, but it was necessary that Mrs. Grantly should go to other matters.

“What did she think of Miss Dunstable’s birth?” said he, again more bitterly than before. “No, sir,” he continued, after a further pause. “All that can make no change; none at any rate now. It can’t make my love less, even if it could have prevented it. Nor, even, could it do so—which it can’t least, not in the least—but could it do so, it could not break my engagement. I am now engaged to Mary Thorne.”

And how is it clear that it is on this account that we are hated?

A whole novel, too, is so great a piece of business!

Ver. 19. For what is our hope, or joy, or crown of glorying? Are not even ye before our Lord Jesus at His coming?

“I heard yesterday,” he said, “that Henry was over here.”

Her ladyship always passed the morning, after breakfast, in a room adjoining her own bedroom, in which she daily held deep debate with Griffiths, her factotum, respecting household affairs, knitting-needles, and her own little ailments and cossetings. Griffiths, luckily, was a woman of much the same tastes as her ladyship, only somewhat of a more active temperament; and they were most stedfast friends. It was such a comfort to Lady Cashel to have some one to whom she could twaddle!

Half the population of the Roman cities were slaves, and in Cicero’s time the freedom of the city, which he regarded as necessary to liberty, belonged only to a small proportion of the population of Italy.

He pushed the door open, and at once went into his sister’s room. Here she was still lying on the sofa, and Katty was sitting beside her—begging her mistress to tell her what was the matter. But Feemy had not spoken since she had been there; she had recovered her senses, for she held her hands before her eyes, and the tears were falling fast beneath them: but she had not spoken a word to Katty since her brother had placed her on the sofa.

We have never heard that any of the infidel philosophers have committed this folly, any more than we have met with it in the inspired writings, or in the common apprehension of mankind.

And what great thing is it if God made the world out of existent materials?

Then there had been further consultations at the deanery, and it had been again agreed that it would be best to say nothing to him of his music.

In telling the little novelettes of our life, we commence our narrations with the presumption that these details are borne in mind, and though they be all forgotten, the stories come out intelligible at last.

Earth was become a heaven, for manner of life, for boldness of speech, for wonders, for all besides; like Angels were they looked upon with wonder: all unconcerued for ridicule, for threats, for perils: compassionate were they, and beneficent; some of them they succoured with money, and some with words, and some with healing of their bodies and of their souls; no kind of healing ([πἅν εἶδος ἰατρείας]) but they accomplished.

‘She have, no doubt. She have a mind and so have you. But you haven’t either of you got the money. The money is here,’ and Mr Peppercorn slapped his breeches pocket. ‘I’ve had to do with earning it, and I mean to have to do with giving it away. To me there is no idea of honesty at all in a chap like you coming and asking a girl to marry you just because you know that she’s to have a fortune.’

Couldn’t we arrange this little matter without fighting?

I told her that you and I were gentlemen, in spite of our trousers.

And therefore, cast down in despair, and not concealing in our looks the inner bitterness of our thoughts, we came back to the blessed old man with a tolerably anxious heart: and when he at once asked the reason why we were so sad, Abbot Germanus groaned deeply and replied as follows.

[Mark 15:45a] And when [30] he knew, he commanded him to deliver up his body unto Joseph.

It was of no use that the poor lady had provided herself with two strings, two most excellent strings, to her bow,—two strings either one of which should have contented Miss Effingham.

Therefore she kept her peace, and sympathised with a one-sided sympathy.

She has got an idea into her head that I ought to make a good bargain in matrimony, and sell myself at the highest price going in the market;—that I ought to get money, or if not money, family connexion.

Then she looked up into his face, and as she did so a tear formed itself in each of her eyes. “ Am I ashamed of anything before you? “ she asked.

“I see that the dates are the same;—the 14th of July in the same year.”

The great man received him with an excellent courtesy.

“Eh; well?” said Mr. Furnival.

Wherefore women ought to have more true wisdom than men, because they are for the most part riveted to keeping at home.

Even to swiftness.

It was dusk, but not dark, and there was no artificial light in the billiard-room.

But on what account does he say, them that are fallen asleep?

There was nothing magical, as you suppose, nothing human, delusive, or crafty in Christ; no deceit lurked in Him, although you smile in derision, as your wont is, and though you split with roars of laughter.

“And will you give Grace my love?”

He smiled as he recalled all this in his memory, waiting impatiently for the moment in which he might rise.

The girl had been meek and, in all other things, submissive.

Not at once, but with crafty gradations, the author sloped away to the point of his subject.

“I tell ‘ee, lass, I do not want the pipe to-day. Now’t has got itself done. D’ye think as grist ‘ll grind itself without hands?”

For this is the meaning of, that he may instruct Him.

If nothing can injure the substance of God, what was the race of darkness about to do to it, against which you say war was waged by God before the foundation of the world; in which war you assert that we, that is souls that are now manifestly in need of a liberator, have been commingled with every evil and implicated in death.

“And what shall we do?” said Herbert to Papa Heine.

With the white people, it always signifies England, even though the person using the word has never been there.

What say here the followers of Paul of Samosata?

“My severity won’t go for much.”

When it was publicly known that the Duke of Omnium had stepped into Mr. Bonteen’s shoes, the general opinion certainly coincided with that given by the Duke of St. Bungay.

“I don’t know what you call temptation. Haven’t I the temptation of a bottle of wine under my nose every day of my life?”

She was taken up to the coroner, and what answers she gave to him were spoken in so low a voice that they did not reach us.

“You can go to him. I will take you if you wish it.”

Rebecca is full of the Holy Spirit, as understanding the word which she heard before she gave birth, For the elder shall serve the younger.

Then speak not evil.

“Do you love him?” For a moment or two Bessy remained silent, striving to arrange her words so that they should contain no falsehood, and yet betray no truth. “Ah, I see you do,” continued Miss Holmes. “But of course you do. Why else did you accept him?”

That is so like a man’s pride!

Which of us understands the Almighty Trinity?

Yet not even so are we willing to turn to better things.

Her aunt’s death had been now far enough back to admit of her telling Martha that she would not dine till Captain Aylmer had come, and to allow her to think somewhat of his comfort.

Do not reject a poor man, Christ when He was rich became poor, and became poor because of you, that by His poverty He might make you rich.

Temples are not to be built to Him with stones piled up on high; He is to be consecrated by each man in his own breast.

Mr Palliser,—Plantagenet Palliser, according to all rules of courtesy should have said a word to her as he went; but, as I have said before, Alice was disposed to overlook his want of civility on this occasion.

Of those then who seem to acquire some show of knowledge or of those who while they devote themselves diligently to reading the sacred volume and to committing the Scriptures to memory, yet forsake not carnal sins, it is well said in Proverbs: Like as a golden ring in a swine's snout so is the beauty of an evil-disposed woman.

Mr. Damer. When Mr. Damer said “Oh!” Miss Dawkins sighed, and said,

Then I must pray that you will think about it again.

And if you will allow me, I will explain myself by an example.

And then I could not but think, even in this moment of public misery, how willing Jack would have been to have assisted old Crasweller in his little fraud, so that Eva might have been the reward.

“I won’t have her go to Hendon at all,” he said, when his son had finished.

46. Pray that you enter not into temptation.

19. These bold words against the Saviour did not content him, but he went further in his blasphemies, as follows:

Why should he—”bring himself”—to do anything on behalf of one who had treated him so badly?

Then said Peter: [We do not compel those who come to us either to keep silence continually, or to ask questions; but we leave them free to do as they will knowing that he who is anxious about his salvation, if he feels pain in any part of his soul, does not suffer it to be silent.

It was grievous to him that he himself should not have been held in personal respect high enough to protect him from such an insult.

How long negligent?

Yea, and many have succeeded by frequent attempts: and when they most of all despaired, then did they most gain their point.

And when this was zealously gone about by all, inasmuch as their minds had been corrupted by the universal flattery which prevailed, Annanias, Azarias, and Misael kept aloof from the profane observance, being well aware that that honor was due to God alone.

“Well, no; I can’t exactly say that I have paid money for them. That is to say, they have paid their own bills, and I have not lent them anything. But I dare say you know that a man never travels with ladies in that free and easy way without feeling it in his pocket. One is apt to do twenty things for them which one wouldn’t do for oneself; nor they for themselves if they had to pay the piper.”

Be the Lord always magnified!

“I don’t want Mr. Twentyman to teach me what is proper for my family,—nor yet to teach you your business. Mr. Twentyman has his own way of living. He brought home Kate the other day with hardly a rag of her sister’s habit left. She don’t go out hunting any more.”

To which term also, thus interpreted, it appeared well to assent; since we were aware that even among the ancients, some learned and illustrious Bishops and writers have used the term one in essence, in their theological teaching concerning the Father and Son.

It is the part of a lover of man, or rather of a lover of God, to remind men who have neglected it of that which they ought to know.

Twice in the day Mrs. Clavering went over to the big house, and on her second return, late in the evening, she found her son. When she arrived, there had already been some few words on the subject between him and his father.

Thus meditating, under the influence of that intermittent evil grasp, almost angry with himself for the open truth which he had spoken,—or rather written, and perhaps thinking more of Lizzie and her beauty than he should have done, in the course of three weeks he had paid but one visit to Fawn Court.

“What do you think about them yourself?” asked Lucinda.

“But why must you?” asked Mrs. O’Hara.

Now Abraham was born in that kingdom among the Chaldees, in the time of Ninus.

Then she brought forth the documents which professed to be the copy of the register of the marriage, made by the minister in his own book; and the envelope,—the damning envelope,—which Caldigate was prepared to admit that he had himself addressed to Mrs. Caldigate; and the letter which purported to have been written by the minister to Caldigate, recommending him to be married in some better established township than that existing at Ahalala.

But you say, that you therefore believe your friend, whose heart you cannot see, because you have proved him in your trials, and have come to know of what manner of spirit he was towards you in your dangers, wherein he deserted you not.

The respect paid to Mrs.

“Then my mind is greatly relieved. I was about to remark, having heard in the outer world that there were those who ventured to accuse you of—of perjury—”

There is also the case of the man who while he did not arrive at the evil action, came short of it in spite of his own will.

But, presenting to your weakness the gift of the example of His own flesh, the more perfect Adam— that is, Christ, more perfect on this account as well (as on others), that He was more entirely pure— stands before you, if you are willing (to copy Him), as a voluntary celibate in the flesh.

So that He rebukes them in a twofold manner; first, what they said in secret He published aloud, so as to put them to shame; after that He revealed also what was in their hearts.

“You can surely walk, leading the beast, if you fear to mount him,” said Mr. Crawley.

“No, mamma; or, if you object to the word, I will say love. You have known that I have not loved my cousin, and that I have loved this other man. That is not nonsense; that at any rate is a stern reality, if there be anything real in the world.”

And I remember reading in the book of a certain Pythagorean, when writing on the hidden meanings in that poet, that the prayer of Chryses to Apollo, and the plague which Apollo afterwards sent upon the Greeks, are proofs that Homer knew of certain evil demons who delight in the smoke of sacrifices, and who, to reward those who offer them, grant in answer to their prayers the destruction of others.

They were misled by the ambiguity of the Greek word, because both wife and woman is expressed in Greek by the same word.

That feeling shame at saying 'work,' and 'creature,' and 'God's Word was not before His generation,' yet in another way they assert that He is a creature, putting forward 'will,' and saying, 'Unless He has by will come to be, therefore God had a Son by necessity and against His good pleasure.'

“I am delighted to see you at Brook Park,” said Sir Walter as they met at the luncheon table. “ When I was at Christchurch your father was at Wadham, and I remember him well.” Exactly the same words had been spoken when the Major, on a former occasion, had been made welcome at the house, and clearly implied a feeling that Christchurch, though much superior, may condescend to know Wadham—under certain circumstances. Of the Baronet nothing further was heard or seen till dinner.

You ought to bestow greater; but anyhow, beloved, we ought to bestow equal care upon it.

On the Holy Spirit (Book I)

For not he that commends himself is approved, but whom the Lord commends.

“I dare say. I don’t.”

It is very bad that they should be false, but it is very surprising that they should be dull.

[Esther 14:16] Despair we not then of the citizens of the kingdom of heaven, when we see them engaged in any of Babylon's matters, doing something earthly in republic earthly: nor again let us immediately congratulate all men that we see doing matters heavenly; because even the sons of pestilence sit sometimes in the seat of Moses, of whom is said, What things they say, do ye: but what things they do, do not: for they say, and do not.

TOOGOOD.

He was willing not only to condone past offences, but to wink at existing iniquity!

“Oh, mamma, why didn’t you tell him that it is impossible?”

Lord George was not a clever hypocrite.

But that thankfulness is altogether a matter apart, and does not bear upon the question.

We shall thus recognize him as Doctor of the Nations not only for his praise of monogamy but also for all his precepts.

Your most affectionate son,

‘We don’t know a great deal about him,’ said Dick.

Did God then choose to scrutinize this alone, do you think that we could obtain pardon, or be able to find any excuse?

Mr. Turnbull had predicted evil consequences, both in the House and out of it, and was now doing the best in his power to bring about the verification of his own prophecies.

“I got such a nice affectionate letter from the dear bishop,” said Lizzie, “but he couldn’t come.

For a happy life is joy in the truth.

The vellum and gilding of “Harding’s Church Music” cost more than any one knows, except the author, the publisher, and the Rev.

And, if this be preserved unharmed, by it is also preserved their life:

Henceforth do not so much as look upon a woman at all, that you may stand in more safety.

No subjects could have been less interesting to Mr. Grey, as Augustus was aware.

For if you had possessed real knowledge, you would have understood that the Creator can with equal ease both create what does not exist, and change that which already has a being.

But if you would have it unlawful because it ought not to be lawful, without doubt that should have no permission of law which does harm; and on this ground, in fact, it is already determined that whatever is beneficial is legitimate.

[Matthew 13:33] For the tripartite soul is saved by obedience, through the spiritual power hidden in it by faith; or because the power of the word which is given to us, being strong and powerful, draws to itself secretly and invisibly every one who receives it, and keeps it within himself, and brings his whole system into unity.

But yet even so he gets the victory: and the reason is, that we are not earnestly set upon being above his blows.

Then he would turn away his face, and stand alone in his field, blinded by the salt drops in his eyes, weeping at his own weakness.

Such, then, is the rebellion of this concupiscence which the primitive pair received for their own disobedience, and transfused by natural descent to us.

But he said he had no doubt about it; and I’m sure, from what was going on last week, I couldn’t have any doubt either.

For there are threescore queens, and fourscore concubines, and virgins without number.

When the greater evil arrived, that of Household Suffrage,—a measure which twenty years since would hardly have been advocated by the advanced Liberals of the day,—the Conservatives had learned to acknowledge the folly of clinging to their own convictions, and had swallowed the dose without serious disruption of their ranks.

But if it be too unseemly that He should be called good and merciful upon will, then what they have said themselves must be retorted on them—'therefore by necessity and not at His pleasure He is good and, 'who is it that imposes this necessity on Him?'

It is seldom that we want any great thing from our friends.

By a subtle and wicked art you say that He is to be worshipped together with God in order that you may not have to confess that He is God, and by the very statement in which you seem deceitfully to join Him with God, you really sever Him from God.

(though not even this would have been clear, yet clearer than the other.)

He should expect and demand that sum of money.

But that which would have been sordid in her, did not seem to her to have any stain of sordidness for him.

[Luke 4:38c] And Simon's wife's mother was oppressed with a great fever, and they besought him for [49] her.

For since the Feast was near, all were running to Jerusalem; but they, at a time when all others were rejoicing and holding solemn assembly, hide themselves, and are in danger.

[7, 8] [Matthew 22:21] He said unto them, Give what is Cæsar's to Cæsar, and what is God's to God.

For if men do not overlook these things, how should God make an oversight?

And their own ruler intentionally overlooked their oppression at the hands of the rulers of the other nations, in order that he also with good reason, as avenging himself, having obtained power to tear away from the other nations as many as he can, may do so, and enact for them laws, and point out a manner of life agreeably to which they ought to live, that so he may conduct them to the end to which those of the former people were conducted who did not commit sin.

“What I say, is this,” said Mr. O’Leary. “Let ‘em manage for ‘emselves. God bless my sowl! Why we shall be skinned alive if we have to pay all this money back to Government. If Government chooses to squander thousands in this way, Government should bear the brunt. That’s what I say.” Eventually, Government, that is the whole nation, did bear the brunt. But it would not have been very wise to promise this at the time.

The doers of the wrong, if wrong there was, are still alive; and the avengers of the wrong,—whether a real or a fancied wrong,—are still keen.

Accordingly, to undertake the training of others before being sufficiently trained oneself, and to learn, as men say, the potter's art on a wine-jar, that is, to practise ourselves in piety at the expense of others' souls seems to me to be excessive folly or excessive rashness— folly, if we are not even aware of our own ignorance; rashness, if in spite of this knowledge we venture on the task.

I must let you into a secret, too.

An arrow which is discharged from the tight-drawn bow is not easy to avoid, for it reaches him at whom it was aimed before the shield can be raised to stop it.

Nora, in her pride, had resented this as interference,—had felt that the thing had been done, and, though she had valued the admiration of the man, had ridiculed the action of the woman.

He knows, however, that away from Rome, in her provinces, in Macedonia and Achaia, in Asia and Cilicia, in Sicily, Sardinia, and Africa, in Mauritania and the two Spains, there are Roman legions which as yet know no Caesar.

In the former case, the material gives some aid to the artist, but in the latter, there is a naked display of his art.

Let us now continue the course of our narrative.

“Some of them will come down from time to time,” said Father Jerome, “and do what little can be done for him, poor old man! His sufferings, it is to be hoped, will not last many days.”

The other was a little square man in the hardware line, of the name of Kantwise.

“I do care very much,” said Silverbridge.

Of the black African races the South Eastern people whom we call Kafirs and Zulus are probably the best.

Chapter XLVI. Our Pet Fox Finds a Tail

For the lover of truth need fear no one's censure.

But he has indeed insinuated the same, yet he puts it in a milder way, so as both to strike and not to do this severely.

Not to quarrel with his two eldest children was the wish that was now strongest at his heart.

All things that belong to the Father are the Spirit's; but we must not think that whatever He received of the Son, He did not receive of the Father also; for all that the Father has belongs equally to the Son.

In the first place, I beseech you, my friends, and implore you, for Christ's sake, not to let my bodily absence grieve you.

At any rate, Phineas Finn was pledged to stand.

And the man himself who would have been her husband was such a one that any woman might have trusted herself to him with perfect confidence.

Barrington Erle and Lord Cantrip also tried their eloquence upon him; but it was Mr. Monk who at last drew from him a promise that he would go down to the House and be sworn in early on a certain Tuesday afternoon.

Or what fair account of them can we give?

For she desired, and I remember privately warned me, with great solicitude, not to commit fornication; but above all things never to defile another man's wife.

Mrs Eames, with her son and daughter, were the first to come.

And now she was told that he was coming to Matching as though nothing had been the matter!

I know no spot more odious in every way to a man who has learned to love the ordinary modes of English life.

I do not think I should answer a word, if he called me the vilest thing on earth.” Before they parted for the night many questions were of course asked about Nora, and Hugh described the condition in which he and she stood to each other.

As to Mr. Chaffanbrass and Mr. Solomon Aram,—to them the escape of a criminal under their auspices would of course be a matter of triumph.

So you will ask when you read these words, Ambrosius, you who are truly a man of God, a man in Christ, and who seekest to be not a man only, but a spiritual man.

Lady Susanna felt that her approaches were being cut off from her, and that she must rush at once against the citadel if she meant to take it. “Do you think that playing bagatelle is—nice?”

“And as for being dull,” said the widow, “when people grow old they must be dull.

If other things be equal, it is probable that a baronet will be more of a gentleman and a pleasanter fellow than a manufacturer of oilcloth.

For it may be, both that one doing alms before men may not do it to be seen of them, and again that one not doing it before men may do it to be seen of them.

The Post Office clerk had never before been received at Hendon Hall, though he had been introduced in London by Lord Hampstead to his sister.

He let the letter lie by him for four-and-twenty hours after he had composed it, and then determined that not to send it would be cowardly.

Forcibly and admirably, like light from darkness, you have separated the truth from the subtlety and dishonesty of heretics, defended the Catholic Church, proved that the arguments of the Arians are nothing but a kind of hallucination, and taught that the diabolical gnashings of the teeth are to be despised.

“Very well, then. Hold your tongue, and don’t say such things. Honest indeed! If I were to take the young man tomorrow, that would not make me dishonest.”

The wheel, then, within a wheel is life under the Law, life under grace; inasmuch as Jews are within the Church, the Law is included in grace.

Lady Albury was present also, welcoming her guests, and Sir Harry, who had already come home from hunting, with one or two other men in red coats and top breeches, and a small bevy of ladies who were staying in the house.

Mr. Greene, who was seated on the sofa, groaned audibly, but said nothing. Sophonisba, who was sitting by him, beat upon the floor with both her feet.

When I am in this storehouse, I demand that what I wish should be brought forth, and some things immediately appear; others require to be longer sought after, and are dragged, as it were, out of some hidden receptacle; others, again, hurry forth in crowds, and while another thing is sought and inquired for, they leap into view, as if to say, Is it not we, perchance?

“You see that you have the police against you after a most minute and prolonged investigation.”

My dear Lucius,

Well, now, the Pythagoreans may learn, the Stoics may know, Plato himself (may discover), whence Matter, which they will have to be unborn, derived both its origin and substance for all this pile of the world— (a mystery) which not even the renowned Mercurius Trismegistus, master (as he was) of all physical philosophy, thought out.

Indeed, it is but reasonable to suppress all irrational emotions, and to subdue carnal and natural passions.

Then, giving obedience to the Father's command as His only motive, He adds, But that the world may know that I love the Father, even as the Father gave Me commandment, so I do.

Sentence of Exile

Perhaps it was better for him as it was; and the blow came to him with a rapidity which created less of suffering than might have followed the slower mode of proceeding which he had intended. He was actually making the fifth copy of the letter, rendered necessary by that violent full stop, when Matthew came to him and announced that Miss Thoroughbung was in the drawing-room. “In the house!” ejaculated Mr. Prosper.

It was very deep and very low, and prolonged with a cadence that caused Linda to tremble in every limb.

And in fact any one of average intellect, who hears that in this nature part is subject to injury and part not, will at once perceive that this makes not two but three natures—one violable, a second inviolable, and a third violating.

He wrote to the people and to Eusebius, adopting his judgment and calling him happy, because he was worthy to hold the bishopric not only of one single city, but of the world.

“What is her purpose now?”

For the man there is a natural delight in discussions, and in the management of affairs, and in the honourable discharge of the duties of an office, and in being distinguished for acts of help to the needy; in living, it may be, with a wife whom he loves, and ruling his household; and in all those amusements to be found in this life in the way of pastime, in musical pieces and theatrical spectacles, in the chase, in bathing, in gymnastics, in the mirth of banquets, and anything else of that sort.

He had hitherto remained standing; but on hearing this he flung himself into a chair and buried his face in his hands. Even then she might have been softened, and he might have relented, and all might have been well!

But forasmuch as he was the great high priest, consecrated to the Supreme Lord and King, and therefore more than a victim, the Word, the Power, and the Wisdom of God; he soon recalled his body from the grasp of death, presented it to his Father as the first-fruit of our common salvation, and raised this trophy, a proof at once of his victory over death and Satan, and of the abolition of human sacrifices, for the blessing of all mankind.

Secondly, the same charge lies against him who receives the oath: that, in a question of compact, he must drag in God for warranty, and refuse to be satisfied unless he get Him.

Need we speak of David and his descendants, all of whom reigned here?

“I know she is.”

Nay more.

Was it not on account of food?

But if these things are so, what remains, except that death follow old age?

Some one might well retort; 'whether man possesses motion and energy was not the question: it was, what is the energizing principle itself; and that I fail to learn from your way of deciding the question.'

Whereas the Lord says, 'I am the Truth [John 14:6].'

To this Nectarius replied as follows: Although I am now a priest, do you not know that my past career was a more guilty one than yours, inasmuch as you were but an instrument in my numerous profligacies?

What means, you are built up as lively stones?

Do they congratulate themselves that at sixty-seven they have been still able to perform so well many of the feats of their youth?

And then he sat down by Felix’s head, and resolved that he would be loyal to his new friend all the same—loyal in all things needful.

but knowing that He was not a sinner.

What is there, tell me, so hard, what so difficult?

You are right, old girl.

It is certain, I think, that the humblest mutton chop is better eating than any “Supreme of chicken after martial manner,”—as I have seen the dish named in a French bill of fare, translated by a French pastrycook for the benefit of his English customers,—when sent in from Messrs. Stewam and Sugarscraps even with their best exertions.

There were twelve years of tuition in which I do not remember that I ever knew a lesson!

Once more I anathematise the heresy of Sabellius and of Photinus , and every heresy, walking in the Faith of Nicæa, and in all that is above written.

There, will that zatisfy you?

Whatever sin there is can be put away, whatever law there is cannot be laid aside in marriage.

101. Furthermore— to concede that which is no truth, to their folly— I ask them, if there is, as they think, no difference in the words, why do they not call upon Him Whom they worship by the better title? Why do they not avail themselves of the Father's word? Why do they reject the title of honour, and use a dishonouring name?

, that so no plant of the devil may be found in you, but you may remain in all holiness and sobriety in Jesus Christ, both with respect to the flesh and spirit.

But what will come next?

Tom Tringle, in spite of his rings and a certain dash of vulgarity, which was, perhaps, not altogether his own fault, was not a bad fellow.

He was still thinking of all this when he was accosted by Mrs. Spalding. “Are you going to dear Lady Banbury’s tomorrow?” she asked. Lady Banbury was the wife of the English Minister.

He dissects with a knife and also with a needle.

Which then of the two alternatives do we choose for ourselves?

“Let it remain there till I am allowed to tear it out.”

This does not seem to be the work of man: this is the power of God; these are the evidences of His manifestation.

Their bitter hearts still cherish a longing for mischief which they can no longer hope to satisfy.

Young Lord Hautboy came to hunt with him, bringing his sister Lady Amaldina, and after a few days Vivian found them.

The editor looked at the little woman who made some half attempt to rise, and thought that he could see in the brightness of the eye some symptoms of the sauciness which had appeared so very plainly in her letters.

A Jove-born intellect is hardly wanted, and clashes with the inferiorities.

“There need be no secret between us certainly,—and on my part there shall be none. On my part there has been none.”

But suppose the flesh to be the bride, then in Christ Jesus she has in the contract of His blood received His Spirit as her spouse.

Lucy muttered something, which was intended to signify that any such dinner party had better not be made up with the intention of including her, and then took her leave.

Therefore she still lived, in maiden blessedness, as mistress of Guestwick Manor; and as such had no mean opinion of the high position which destiny had called upon her to fill.

For frugality is, it is true, the abstaining from pleasures; but in this respect it is a vice, because it arises from the love of possessing, whereas we ought both to abstain from pleasures, and by no means to withhold money.

“That’s not charitable, Rachel. But if you please we won’t say anything more about it. It’s over, and that is enough. And now, mother, I want to know if you will object to my returning here and living at the cottage again.”

This is the doctrine delivered to us by the divine prophets; this is the doctrine of the company of the holy apostles; this is the doctrine of the great saints of the East and of the West; of the far-famed Ignatius, who received his archpriesthood by the right hand of the great Peter, and for the sake of his confession of Christ was devoured by savage beasts; and of the great Eustathius, who presided over the assembled council, and on account of his fiery zeal for true religion was driven into exile.

And, indeed, He commanded in the law that none should worship them.

So it is written, brethren, not as some bad copies have it, The Lord shall send His Angel round about them that fear Him, and He shall deliver them: but thus, The Angel of the Lord shall send round about them that fear Him, and shall deliver them.

What is it that I am in love with in another, which, if I did not hate, I should not detest and repel from myself, seeing we are equally men?

Indeed, so lamentable a proposition as this of building a bridge across the river had never before been mooted by the public.

Love is God: and he that dwells in love dwells in God, and God dwells in him.

[2 Kings 25:4-7] And as the flying sickle overthrew the buildings, so did it also cut him down in his flight.

But for such fishing as that what will not a fisherman endure?

But in pleasing themselves, they much displease You, not merely taking pleasure in things not good as if they were good, but in Your good things as though they were their own; or even as if in Yours, yet as though of their own merits; or even as if though of Your grace, yet not with friendly rejoicings, but as envying that grace to others.

Need I speak of Melito bishop of Sardis, of Apollinaris chief-priest of the Church of Hierapolis, of Dionysius bishop of the Corinthians, of Tatian, of Bardesanes, of Irenæus successor to the martyr Pothinus; all of whom have in many volumes explained the uprisings of the several heresies and tracked them back, each to the philosophic source from which it flows.

“I can marry no one else. I can see my way so far. You had better tell Sophie Mellerby everything, and then a son of yours shall be the future Earl.”

When he had been there an hour or two, there came to him a messenger from the Income-tax Office, with an official note addressed to himself by Sir Raffle Buffle,—a note which looked to be very official.

It seemed to him to have been almost proved that George Roden must have spoken to this man of his intended marriage.

And what additional harm would be done to John Crumb, or what increase of danger engendered in that true lover’s breast, by one additional evening’s amusement?

But she would do nothing to seem to deprecate his wrath.

“But when we read of Churches as is called State Churches,—Churches as have bishops you and I have to pay for, as never goes into them—”

It is false; for how many of them have not been detected?

In this book, when discussing the question of the resurrection of the flesh, I say: 'Rise again the body will, according to the Christian faith, which is incapable of deceiving.

On the 13th of February Mr. Palliser made his first great statement in Parliament on the matter of the five-farthinged penny, and pledged himself to do his very best to carry that stupendous measure through Parliament in the present session.

“Your cousin Adelaide never cared for any human being in her life except herself. She had no punishment to suffer as I have. Oh, Jack! I do so love you.” Then she rushed at him, and fell upon his bosom, and wept.

There is, if you desire it, a precious ointment and a fragrance, with which you might anoint your soul; not brought from Arabia, or Ethiopia, nor from Persia, but from heaven itself; purchased not by gold, but by a virtuous will, and by faith unfeigned.

[Isaiah 32:6] Are you not ashamed not to grant, that God can create from nothing?

But the hiccuping of those who are loaded with wine, and the snortings of those who are stuffed with food, and the snoring rolled in the bed-clothes, and the rumblings of pained stomachs, cover over the clear-seeing eye of the soul, by filling the mind with ten thousand phantasies.

I can hardly expect to win, but if I do pull it off I’m made for ever!” A daughter can hardly say all that to her mother.

But in praying it is customary to declare those things to God which He has done in taking vengeance, and for a petition to be added, that henceforth He should pity and spare.

But observe how he transfers all that was well achieved in the matter unto themselves; and lays whatever was painful to the account of the Epistle, saying, It made you sorry for a season; while the benefit that resulted from it he speaks of as their own good achieving.

How great glory did he already have in preaching, when he was undergoing so great [afflictions]!

Then, as they walked home, the two girls explained to Harry what had occurred in the larger room, while he was talking to Lady Clavering in the smaller one. But he said nothing to them of the subject of that conversation.

Chapter XVI. Captain Clayton Comes to the Castle

For he knew what it was that he was unwilling to hear; and the cunning obtained by the artifice of the serpent will avail him nothing for an excuse, for he will have to do with Him to whom the heart is open.

If it is not to be so,—why then let the name and family go on in the old beaten track.

For this is useful unto service, but he that has thus given himself up is serviceable for nothing.

why, if I were a man I would not sell one jot of liberty for mountains of gold.

“Eleanor, at any rate, has just now told me so.”

The first of these evils for a time Margaret succeeded in escaping, but from the latter she had no means of withdrawing herself.

“Unfortunately,” says Mr. Dallas, “Richardson has a great fault; he is prolix.

[Luke 4:44] And he was preaching in the synagogues of Galilee.

At this moment my neck was ricked by my futile endeavours to keep my head straight on the side car, and the water had got under me upon the seat, and the horse had come to a standstill half-a-dozen times in the last two minutes, and my apron had been trailed in the mud, and I was very unhappy.

R. Have you sufficiently considered whether you may not have conceded something rashly?

How infinitely better it would be that he should have an heir of his own!

See the affection of this blessed one; in this way too he comforts them, when they see that he is master of his own choice, and that this is done not by man's sin, but by the dispensation of God. Why mourn ye, says he, at my death? It had been far better to have passed away long since. For to depart, he says, and to be with Christ, is very far better.

Up to the time of this disastrous fit of ambition on Polly’s behalf he had never made himself ridiculous, and had been a prosperous tradesman, well thought of by his customers.

“And now they tell me that my cousin Peter is to be your husband.”

It is understood that a slave who escapes into Ohio will not be caught and given up by the intervention of the Ohio police; and from Covington or Newport any slave with ease can escape into Ohio.

But the letter was written in his name and sent with his knowledge; and it was perfectly understood that that invitation to Honyman signified an unconditional surrender on the part of Mr. Tappitt.

“Who ever heard of going to Paris in September?” said the Lady Alexandrina.

Among all the natural goods of procreation which he mentioned, he was, I repeat, unwilling to name this particular fact of concupiscence, over which even marriage blushes, which glories in all these before-mentioned goods.

This is the disciple which testifies of these things, and wrote these things, and we know that his testimony is true.

“Now, Denis, my man, don’t be thinking of those two pigs, but bring your better half with you, and let’s see how you can behave as a married man.”

Mr. Prong had given it as his opinion that Luke would not trouble them again by his personal appearance among them.

At eight o’clock he had completed his catalogue of illustrations, and immediately Mr. Monk rose from the Treasury bench to explain the grounds on which the Government must decline to support the motion before the House.

“You know her to be treacherous, false, vulgar, covetous, unprincipled. You cannot like her. You say she is a dragon.”

[Romans 5:12] Can it be that men are not the work of God?

“And may I ask Florence to come up? Is it not always better that people should be near to each other when they are engaged?”

“ You may go and tell her,” she said one night as she was preparing to go to her chamber.

To give Mr. Tyrrwhit his due, it must be acknowledged that he personally sent no emissaries, having contented himself with putting the business into the hands of a very sharp attorney.

Had he not one bride in commerce, a bride that would never scold; and would it not be well for him to trust his happiness to her alone?

“I think you are so good and so kind.” As she said this she leaned upon his arm almost as though she meant to tell him that she loved him.

She who had deceived man, felt that God was taking vengeance.

It is, if I am not mistaken, in the Sixth Book of his Commentary on the Gospel of St. John that he distinctly makes the Spirit an object of worship.

He apologized for troubling his neighbor at all on the subject, and endeavored to explain, somewhat awkwardly, that as Mr. Medlicot was a newcomer, he probably might not understand the kind of treatment to which employers in the bush were occasionally subject from their men.

“Look at his position,” said the mother, pleading her cause before her son. “He is illegitimate, and—”

But now he remains, and is defeated indeed by one, but gets the better of many.

“If he should get worse, Mr. Orme—.” And then Peregrine made her a sort of promise, but in doing so an idea shot through his poor heart of what the truth might really be.

Labienus, who in the Gallic War was Caesar’s most trusted lieutenant, went over to the other side and served under Pompey in the Civil War.

Chapter 62. Our Destined Likeness to the Angels in the Glorious Life of the Resurrection.

He’ll just remain up in London thinking about it, and never tell himself that there’s anything to be done.

Again, we have to remember that in judging of the meaning of words between two such correspondents as Cicero and Atticus, we must read between the lines, and interpret the words by creating for ourselves something of the spirit in which they were written and in which they were received.

And if even once we have a desire to know the future, let us be pure in mind, for I believe that if a soul is perfectly pure and in its natural state, it is able , being clear-sighted, to see more and further than the demons— for it has the Lord who reveals to it— like the soul of Elisha, which saw what was done [2 Kings 5:26] by Gehazi, and beheld the hosts [2 Kings 6:17] standing on its side.'

Nor had he in truth been always so very anxious that foxes should be found in his covers.

Then his opponents hurried with angry fervour to Constantinople; first they indicted him before Eudoxius, and when Eudoxius refused to see them, sought an audience of the emperor and made lamentation over the ruin their bishop was wreaking among them.

The son does not die before his father, then; nor do they feel pains in their bodies, nor polypus in their nostrils.

But if we despise the small, neither shall we easily lay hand upon the other.

“Do tell us,” said Clara, getting up. “I am afraid Sir Thomas is very ill.” The old baronet had been kind to her, and she did regard him. To her it was a sorrow to think that there should be any sorrow at Castle Richmond.

“Uncle Tom?”

as a young middy.

Or again, Joseph?

Her eyes were sharp and grey.

Squercum was the very opposite to this.

“Is anything the matter in Queen Anne Street?”

[Acts 14:19] Would ye know how mighty a thing is an iron chain for Christ's sake, bound about His servant's body?

Now Mr Paul’s name stank in the nostrils of Mrs Stumfold.

We hold communion with the apostolic churches because our doctrine is in no respect different from theirs.

He had walked more than thirty miles in a day since they had been living at Hogglestock, and she did not doubt but that it might be possible for him to do it again.

Had he lacked guile?

She told the story of Florence Burton—with what result we know; and was quite sharp enough to perceive afterward that the tale had had its intended effect—even though her Julie had resolutely declined to speak either of Harry Clavering or of Florence Burton.

that he might append vice as a most disgraceful tail to a good man and might represent him as without patience, which is the greatest of all the virtues.

To whom the sufferer thus briefly replies:

But nevertheless there was but one thing in the world which in

At present: he of necessity wrote to those for whom he cared so greatly.

“Yes, indeed. A very good thing, as I was saying, Mr. Amblethwaite.”

Whether it was the fourteen children with their probable bare bread and their possible bare backs, or the respectability of the father’s work, or the mingled dust and tears on the mother’s face, we will not pretend to say.

even when none reproves us, and do not many feelings of repentance come over us, both for what we have said and done; but when we gain the mastery, then are we not proud, and exult as conquerors?

All day long warring he has troubled me, every one that has been put afar off from the saints.

Again, when he said, Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from Me: yet, not as I will but as You will [Matthew 26:39], is it not clear to all that He said this as a lesson to us to ask help in our trials only from God, and to prefer God's will to our own, and as a proof that He did actually appropriate to Himself the attributes of our nature, and that He did in truth possess two wills, natural, indeed, and corresponding with His natures but yet in no wise opposed to one another?

Let us now suppose that Rome is present and addresses you in these words: Excellent princes, fathers of your country, respect my years to which pious rites have brought me.

[1 Corinthians 8:2] When they raise the objection that the churches were rebuked, let them suppose that they were also corrected; let them also remember those (churches), concerning whose faith and knowledge and conversation the apostle rejoices and gives thanks to God, which nevertheless even at this day, unite with those which were rebuked in the privileges of one and the same institution.

Sing, rejoice, and make melody.

Smith said that he never had done so, but that he would take the charge of mine if I liked.

Now, as regarded God’s laws, her hand was free again, and might follow her heart.

What do you think of, that He does not know?

Nevertheless, his Master does not in any wise call him to a strict account, nor compel him to do the same with his fellow-servant, nor does he say, Why can you not gain the five?

223. Petilianus said: "Lastly, as we have often said before, how great is your presumption, that you should speak as you presume to do of kings, when David says, ‘It is better to trust in the Lord than to put confidence in man: it is better to trust in the Lord than to put confidence in princes?'"

Behold, they came and went from day to day, and by coming and going they disseminated in my mind other ideas and other remembrances, and little by little patched me up again with the former kind of delights, unto which that sorrow of mine yielded.

Read the book of Exodus, and observe the number of days between the first passover and the giving of the Law.

Certainly here He speaks of Theudas and Judas, (for all, as many as believed on them, were scattered [ Acts v. 36 ], It says,) or of the false Christs who after that time should deceive.

Cicero himself never alludes to her—as neither, if I remember rightly, did Horace to his mother, though he speaks so frequently of his father.

This is the statement of our opinion, and this we allowed; our contention now that Cyzicus was the prize of a heresy, not the successful result of a defence, shows it.

And if we have an advantage over them in knowing things to come, they have an advantage over us in that the severe punishments are presently laid upon them.

“Yes, my lord, of course; that was the reason. So you put Arthur into the living, and you allocated the income to me. That is all settled. But now the question is about the house.”

Though she was as yet but nineteen, London had already begun to talk about Ayala Dormer.

Go now into [6] all the world, and preach my gospel in all the creation; [Matthew 28:19b] and teach all the peoples, and [7] baptize them in the name of the Father and the Son and the Holy Spirit; [Matthew 28:20] and teach them to keep all whatsoever I commanded you: and lo, I am with you all the days, unto [8] the end of the world.

bishop, is that you?” said Mrs. Smith.

He is also called the Spirit of grace, as when he says again, And has done despite to the Spirit of grace.

But I, for my part, think it equally as absurd to pay attention to remarks like that, as to occupy myself with old wives' dreams.

How could anyone with due brevity describe a work which cost so much time and toil and skill: or will it suffice to say that amid all the works, private and public, which adorn other cities, this has of itself been able to secure us celebrity among the majority of mankind?

For that these things occur either for the discipline of the obstinate or for the punishment of the evil, the same God declares in the Holy Scriptures, saying, In vain have I smitten your children; they have not received correction.

“Such things cannot be forgotten,” said Gilmore.

If I can sell my interest in the Loughlinter property I shall do so, as I am sure that neither the place nor the occupation is fit for me.

Would he come and see her in spite of his mother?

If he whom we rebuke is a son of peace, our peace shall rest upon him; but if not, it shall return to us again.

“Don’t do that, dear.”

There were a couple of swords lying on a table that looked like a dresser.

“There’s no fear, no fear,” said the doctor, who was almost put out of countenance by the orator’s intense gaze. The countess looked colder and more angry, and muttered something to herself about a bear-garden.

Was it to be believed that anybody could be taken in by such a story as this?

I don’t think that I ever heard of a man who loved a girl as I love her.

The number of carriages which we saw there— remembering as I did that the place was comparatively empty—and their general smartness, surprised me very much.

Fear not them, said our Lord, which can kill the body, but cannot kill the soul.

For of Christ it is said, who justifies the ungodly.

Do you also, my hearers, as seeing Him now with the eyes of your mind, hear Him saying the same things to you; Take heed that no man mislead you.

What else is an idolater?

They were old maids; she was a young bride.

“The old stones are rotten too,” said the poetess; “but their dust tells no lies.” That well known piece of hers—”Ancient Marbles, while ye crumble,” was written at this time, and contained an occult reference to Mr. Glascock and her friend.

Chapter 14. A warning appeal to the Greeks

And hence, since in every member of the Church both the integrity of the true Faith and abundance of good works is looked for, how much more ought both these things to predominate in the chief pontiff, because the one without the other cannot be in union with the Body of Christ.

In this Beginning, O God, have You made heaven and earth—in Your Word, in Your Son, in Your Power, in Your Wisdom, in Your Truth, wondrously speaking and wondrously making.

African.

For it is not the spirit of the dead that cries out, but the evil spirit that feigns these things in order to deceive the hearers.

Then, with all due circumstances of description, the legacy was made in favour of his nephew.

Wherefore, if things be equally great in one respect, but not in another, the fact that they are not alike in all respects does not invalidate the statement that in one respect, as admitted, they are equally great.

Twentyman dashed along the lane, while the girls followed him with the Colonel after them.

He himself had not that confidence in the right honourable gentleman which would justify him in accepting a measure on so important a subject as the union or severance of Church and State from his hands.

For to the Apostles (the Lord) says not this, but what says He?

But he had no alternative; he had accepted the charge from Sir Roger, and he must go through with it.

Listen to Osea, as he speaks thus grandly: In those days the Lord shall bring on a burning wind from the desert against them, and shall make their veins dry, and shall make their springs desolate; and all their goodly vessels shall be spoiled.

But the trifling ones you may contemn from their very littleness; to the very great ones you may yield in regard of their overpoweringness.

There is he taking such care for your property, while you take none even for your soul.

The news about the bank arrangements, though kept of course as a great secret, soon became common in Exeter.

I haven’t a doubt in the world it’s bad enough.

[John 1:17] The law given by Moses is that of which Christ says, "He wrote of me."

It had done much to injure both, and had created such a feeling of hostility that no intercourse of any kind now existed between them.

“It was liberal, but it did not suit me to accept it.” George had an inkling of what would pass within Sir Harry’s bosom as to the acceptance or rejection of that offer. “I wrote to you, declining it, and as I have received no answer, I thought that I would just run down. What was I to do?”

And then Mr Gazebee came down from town, with an intimation that it behoved the squire himself to go up that he might see certain learned pundits, and be badgered in his own person at various dingy, dismal chambers in Lincoln’s Inn Fields, the Temple, and Gray’s Inn Lane. It was an invitation exactly of that sort which a good many years ago was given to a certain duck.

It was likely also there should be swords because of the lamb, and that the disciples, hearing that certain were coming forth against Him, took them for defense, as meaning to fight in behalf of their Master, which was of their thought only.

And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week; and in the middle of the week the sacrifice and oblation shall be taken away; and in the holy place shall be the abomination of desolations, and until the consummation of time shall the consummation be assigned for desolation.

Do you despise your father and prefer impure men filled with ten thousand vices?

Satisfy him not with words.

Human reverence of the Deity, looked at in its plainest meaning, is nothing else but an attitude of love towards Him, and a confession of the perfections in Him: and I think that the precept 'so ought the Son to be honoured as the Father ,' is enjoined by the Word in place of love.

I thought that very cruel.

Day dies into night, and is buried everywhere in darkness.

And, when some of them had been baptized and had ceased sacrificing to idols, the same payment had been exacted by this same judge of the island, even after their baptism, which they had been previously accustomed to make for leave to sacrifice to idols.

On the third day, which was the fifth after her return from Augsburg, Herr Molk came to her, and at his own request was alone with her.

“So, indeed, am I,” answered Mary.

“It was my way to play my game. Leave that alone, Sophie.” And there came a frown over the brother’s brow.

102. That all good men ought willingly to hear rebuke

And yet I was there—necessarily there, unfortunately—for some considerable time.

“I hope she’ll look after her money, that’s all. And what’s all this about my friend Rachel? I’d a great deal sooner hear that she was going to be married,—if I knew that the man was worthy of her.”

Now He said, I am not come to destroy the law, but to fulfil it, [Matthew 5:17] of whom it was said, We have seen His glory, the glory as of the only-begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth.

Then she went through with him, diligently, all the arguments which she had used with Florence, palliating Harry’s conduct, and explaining the circumstances of his disloyalty, almost as those circumstances had in truth occurred.

“You can speak before my friend here,” said Trevelyan.

Then he got up and moved down the hall behind the guests.

Nevertheless, is it not true?”

That they did believe then is clear, from the Evangelist signifying this besides, and saying, As He spoke these words, many believed on Him.

He readily despises all things who reflects always that he must die.

certainly not without cause.

Prayer proceeds from conscience.

For, tell me, if it were possible to live uninjured without roof or walls, would you not prefer this; wherefore then do you increase the signs of your weakness?

[1 Samuel 9:9] And hence we, too, who are rightly instructed in what was declared aforetime by them, speak not of our own capacity.

As he would have been an indifferent civil servant, an indifferent member of Parliament, so was he perfunctory as an editor.

Of course he cannot break off the match if she persists in it.

Discharged the sarvice!

And yet the validity of logical sequences is not a thing devised by men, but is observed and noted by them that they may be able to learn and teach it; for it exists eternally in the reason of things, and has its origin with God.

For it is rightly said to him: Physician, heal yourself.

The story of Amelia and her two lovers, George Osborne and Captain, or as he came afterwards to be, Major, and Colonel Dobbin, is less interesting, simply because goodness and eulogy are less exciting than wickedness and censure.

And then the gaping earth shall show a Tartarean chaos; and all kings shall come to the judgment-seat of God.

And this may be confirmed from many sources; for instance, from James, from Mary the Mother of Christ, from the words, He made them male and female.

Threatened folks live long; parliamentary petitions are very costly, and Undy’s adversaries were, if possible, even in more need of money than himself.

“No. We are talking of putting in on the coast of Normandy somewhere; and probably may run down to Brittany. I shall be back, at any rate, for the hunting. As for the partridges, the game has gone so much to the devil here that they are not worth coming for.”

It was now the general belief that if there was any truth at all in the Italian claim, it rested on the survivorship, at the time of the Cumberland marriage, of a wife who had long since died.

In the South, the population of which must be divided into free and slave:

We asked for the number of the house, remembering well the entrance into the court.

Do you not see what a number of qualifications the Bishop must have?

As one bucket runs down empty on one set of wires, another comes up full on the other set.

For the Holy Spirit, through Whom the things that are good are ministered to us, is never evil.

Three years among the bodegas of Xeres had taught him, no doubt, to appreciate the exact twang of a good, dry sherry; but not, as I now conceive, the exactest flavour of the true Spanish character.

Nevertheless she went on.

I wish, however, redundantly to superadd the testimony likewise of one particular comrade of the apostles—(a testimony) aptly suited for confirming, by most proximate right, the discipline of his masters.

Think of that which enables you to think; reflect on that which in forebodings is the prophet, the augur in omens, the foreseer of coming events.

Crocker had been suspended;—by which act he had been temporarily expelled from the office, so that his time was all his own to do what he pleased with it.

Paul says it was the Spirit, and Luke supports him.

And this will take place the more easily, if you obey with a willing mind His commands, which He has willed should be confirmed by so great authority of the Catholic Church.

It seemed to imply that the matter of his marriage was distasteful to him.

“It would be too good for him,” said Mr. Prendergast, who was now absolutely almost out of temper.

For indeed chastity is properly by preëminence called holiness, since fornication and adultery is also uncleanness.

And here he puts them in mind of a great marvel, of the things done in the Mount: Who received living oracles to give unto us.

And afterwards taking all the fragments that remain,

I did not tell him that his illness was deserved as well as natural, but such was my feeling on the matter.

Gird up your intellect to comprehend Him as a whole; He eludes you.

Such attire as covers them completely, and decently, not with superfluous ornaments, for the one is becoming, the other is not.

Are you rich?

And profound peace being established in every church, they remained until the reign of the Emperor Trajan, and until the above-mentioned Symeon, son of Clopas, an uncle of the Lord, was informed against by the heretics, and was himself in like manner accused for the same cause before the governor Atticus.

The party had intended to breakfast at their leisure, and proceed to London by a train leaving Carlisle in the middle of the day; but they were soon disturbed from their rest.

And so things had gone on.

I dread two things for you,—that you should marry unworthily, and that you should injure your prospects in public life by an uncompromising stiffness.

John Eames sat at his office on the day after his return to London, and answered the various letters which he had found waiting for him at his lodgings on the previous evening.

“To no other marriage will I agree. That has been the dream of my life through all those moments of hot excitement and assured despair which I have endured. Her mother has always told me that it should be so, and she herself in former days did not deny it. Now you know it all. If my father wishes to see me married, Florence Mountjoy must be my wife.” Then he sunk back on his seat, and nothing more was said between them till they had reached Tretton.

When she declared how she had despised and hated her late lord, she threw off mentally all her weeds.

For he is convinced that you fully know all things, as indeed you do.

So then, until that end shall come, and this corruptible and mortal shall put on incorruption and immortality, we must be liable to sin; not, as you falsely say, owing to the fault of our nature and creation, but through the frailty and fickleness of human will, which varies from moment to moment; because God alone changes not.

For when such an one hears from you, This [fellow] is a cheat; that a hypocrite; and the other lends out money; he neither gives to the one nor to the other; for he suspects all to be such.

The brickwork up to the eaves is well pointed, fresh, and comfortable to look at.

For we do not know of any differences by way of superiority and inferiority in attributes which express our conceptions of the Divine nature, so that we should suppose it an act of piety (while allowing to the Spirit community in the inferior attributes) to judge Him unworthy of those more exalted.

It is utterly impossible to get beyond such effrontery.

For herself, when she would allow her thoughts to stray for a moment in that direction, all the bright azure tints of heaven were open to her.

9. Imitate at least the barbarians, if no one else; for they verily are altogether clean from seeking such sights. What excuse then can we have after all this, we, the citizens of Heaven, and partners in the choirs of the cherubim, and in fellowship with the angels, making ourselves in this respect worse even than the barbarians, and this, when innumerable other pleasures, better than these, are within our reach?

However often I read him, even till my heart sinks within me, I am still in uncertainty of his meaning.

That evening, as the countess and her daughter were sitting together over the fire, the gray-headed old butler brought in a letter upon an old silver salver, saying, “For Lady Clara, if you please, my lady.”

Monday, the 9th of November, was the day set down for the trial of the case which had assumed the name of “Lovel versus Murray and Another.” This denomination had been adopted many months ago, when it had been held to be practicable by the Lovel party to prove that the lady who was now always called the Countess, was not entitled to bear the name of Lovel, but was simply Josephine Murray, and her daughter simply Anna Murray.

And yet again she bare a second son, whose name was Abel, who began to be a keeper of sheep, but Cain tilled the ground.

And what chance was there that she should escape?

[Acts 19:34] Do you mark the inordinate rage?

I looked at nothing; not at one word in a single letter.

[Ephesians 2:8] They might possibly say, We received grace because we believed; as if they would attribute the faith to themselves, and the grace to God.

Letter 51

“George,” he said one evening to his junior partner, “I’d like to be laid decent in Kensal Green! I know it will come to that soon.”

So that, though you should die, you will live; for He Himself also died.

So many are the differences of the term generation, which we discover in a philosophic view of them, that is itself, so to speak, the result of generation.

Thus encouraged, Lizzie determined that she would remain in London till after Lucinda’s marriage,—till after she should have received the promised letter from Lord Fawn, as to which, though it was so long in coming, she did not doubt that it would come at last.

“Have you written to Julia?”

She felt a certain delight, an inward satisfaction, in giving up everything for her Jew lover — a satisfaction which was the more intense, the more absolute was the rejection and the more crushing the scorn which she encountered on his behalf from her own people.

He was not a brilliant man, and understood well that such was the case.

Mrs Elton with her loud Bath-begotten vulgarity is excellent; and Miss Bates, longwinded, self-denying, ignorant, and eugolistic has become proverbial.

[Genesis 1:28] For in the very preamble of this one production, Let us make man, man's whole posterity was declared and described in a plural phrase, Let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, etc.

And that this is so, Isaiah says: 'What house have you built Me?

Her mother was with her in her own room, and of course they were talking about Cousin George for hours together.

Captain Clavering Makes His Last Attempt

“You can forget that, Mrs Hurtle. Pray don’t write. I don’t want him to know as I’m in service.”

When the continuation of this text is brought before them, which is, ' and they have rebelled against Me,' and it is objected that these words are inconsistent with the Saviour's nature, which is immutable, they throw aside all reverence, and affirm that God foreknew and foresaw that His Son would not rebel against Him, and that He therefore chose Him in preference to all others.

None can be so important.

Chapter VII. You Are One of Us Now

“I can’t eat lunch,” he said.

And further, above this, we have in common reason, the Law, the Prophets, the very Sufferings of Christ, by which we were all without exception created anew, who partake of the same Adam, and were led astray by the serpent and slain by sin, and are saved by the heavenly Adam and brought back by the tree of shame to the tree of life from whence we had fallen.

And of the triple division with them, one portion is a certain single originating principle, just as it were a huge fountain, which can be divided mentally into infinite segments.

“Everybody heard of it. But it has made such a difference between him and me, that I don’t think I can meddle. Send for Lord Chiltern, and speak to him.”

For it was no longer by their fall that salvation came to the Gentiles, nor was it their fall that was the riches of the world.

But you shall be glad and rejoice forever in that which I create.

But yet there he was, free once more,—an odious being, whom Johnny was determined to sacrifice to his vengeance, if cause for such sacrifice should occur.

And not to you alone, but to ourselves who speak them, are these words said, yea, and shall be said, for we too need the same teaching; so though they be spoken by us, yet nothing hinders their being spoken to us, (for the Word, when it finds a man in fault, amends him, when clear and free, sets him as far off from it as possible,) and we ourselves are not pure from transgressions.

She was an only daughter, too,—with an only brother; and as the Ancrums were all rich, she would have a very pretty fortune of her own.

But the highest praise is that of the only-begotten Son of God, in which He is proclaimed even that which He is, the only-begotten Son of God.

“Yes; followed me here to say he wanted to be paid for something! It was horses, I think because of the fellow’s trousers.”

Do not thou then darken your darkness; God darkens it not, but enlightens it yet more; for to Him is said in another Psalm, You, Lord, shall light my candle: my God shall enlighten my darkness.

There is a burning and destroying of everything far and wide, a gathering of ambassadors to Caesar asking for terms, a demand for hostages,—a double number of hostages now,—whom Caesar desired to have sent over to him to Gaul, because at this time of the year he did not choose to trust them to ships that were unsea-worthy; and he himself, with all his army, gets back into the Boulogne and Calais country.

Finally, our flesh is supposed by ignorant men and unbelievers to be destroyed after death, in such a degree that it retains no relic at all of its former substance.

“Ah, well; perhaps not. My own impression is that no case will be made out; that there will be nothing to take before a jury.”

Nor must we afford them another lurking-place, which they had not, wherein they may take refuge, to wit, that being perhaps betrayed of them whom they have essayed to seduce but could not, they should say, We only wanted to try them, because prudent Catholics have taught that to find out heretics it is right to do this.

Wherefore I admonish your Fraternity to endeavour not to be burdensome to your subjects, and, if they have any grievances, to abate them, seeing also that you ought not to have departed from what had once been determined.

And why (you say) do they expose their maimed limbs?

But some copies have, I slept, and was cast into a deep sleep.

On this afternoon there was not a member who did not feel that something had occurred which added an interest to Parliamentary life.

Were we to name Wells or Salisbury, Exeter, Hereford, or Gloucester, it might be presumed that something personal was intended; and as this tale will refer mainly to the cathedral dignitaries of the town in question, we are anxious that no personality may be suspected.

Mrs. Woodward looked vexed; but she made no immediate reply, and for some time the mother and daughter went on working without further conversation. At last Gertrude said:—

That is an example from common life; it is fitting that another analogy should be adduced from the inspired books.

Lord Kilcullen rejoined by threatening immediately to throw the whole of the property, which was entailed on himself, into the hands of the Jews.

“If you knew it all, you would feel that I could not help myself.” It was thus that Mary would have spoken if she could have given vent to the thoughts within her bosom.

Make clear distinctions, and do not confuse things which are diverse.

His mother was consecrated to God by virtue of her descent from a saintly family, and was possessed of piety as a necessary inheritance, not only for herself, but also for her children— being indeed a holy lump from a holy firstfruits.

They also wrote to the churches in the neighboring regions, to desire them to search for the copies of the book written by Marcellus, and to destroy them, and to lead back any whom they might find to have embraced his sentiments.

money, house, and name; to call myself Julia Brabazon, and let the world call me what it pleases.

But Lady Laura’s request overrode everything with him.

My partner, Montague, will tell you the address.” Then bustling off, taking an affectionate adieu of Paul, shaking hands with them all round, and looking as though he cared nothing for the money, he took his leave.

The story she had heard seemed to be almost too awful to be true,—even about any one else.

Hear even under the Old Testament, how great regard there was for this, The ways of revengeful men are unto death.

Chapter 102

“You mean to ask whether, if, as regards other circumstances, I was minded to marry, I would then be deterred by a motherin-law and sister-in-law?”

He had looked at her while speaking as though it were her own case of which he spoke.

The Major’s Fate

He hearing of the resurrection, says, the thing is a legend; I, aware of the facts which demonstrate it, fall down and worship the dispensation of God.

The river here was rapid and sparkling; not rapid because driven into small compass, for its breadth was greater and more regular in its passage through the Cleeves than it was either above or below, but rapid from the declivity of its course.

Chapter 37.— We Were Elected and Predestinated, Not Because We Were Going to Be Holy, But in Order that We Might Be So.

Her name sounded so sweet upon his lips. No idea occurred to her that she ought to be angry with him for using it. Angry with him! Could it be possible that she should ever be angry with him—that she ever had been so?

Since he who is not stirred up to anger, will much more refrain from murder; and he who bridles wrath will much more keep his hands to himself.

And they troubled the people, etc.

Because Christ declared: And greater works than these shall he do, because I go unto My Father.

And moreover, I certainly did wish to go.

suppose another voice has begun to sound, and still sounds, in a continued tenor without any interruption, we can measure it while it is sounding; for when it shall have ceased to sound, it will be already past, and there will not be that which can be measured.

‘New South Wales is so far, and you will both marry there, and then you will not want to come back. I hope I may live to see dear Dick again some day.’

My health stands wonderfully well, though the heat here is very great.

And also when the chief of the Synagogue requested Him concerning his daughter, He said thus to him:— Only firmly believe and your daughter shall live.

She had got up and curtseyed, and had then taken his hand and asked him to sit down. “My sister tells me that you want to see me,” she said, in her softest, mildest voice.

We may all be found worthy of, by the grace and loving-kindness of our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom and with whom be glory to the Father, together with the Holy Ghost, now and for ever and ever.

“It’s what many a gentleman and many a good fellow has done before him,” said George; “but if he has insulted you, of course he must apologize—or do the other thing.”

Make them holy by the gift of the Spirit, and of right doctrines.

“I wish that I could induce you to do so. Every day that he is kept in the dark is an injury to you.”

He was deceived by the representations of some diviners, who assured him that he would be able to conquer Africa without a battle; he disobeyed Alaric, who urged him to send a moderate force to Carthage, to slay the officers of Honorius, in case of their attempting any resistance.

“The captain, when he was drunk one night, got a couple of ponies from him. It wasn’t a couple all out. And Juniper made him write his name for five hundred pounds. It was thought then that the squire ‘d have been dead next day, and Juniper ‘d ‘ve got a good thing.”‘

Alice had never written much of love in her love-letters, and Grey was well enough contented with her style, though it was not impassioned.

But see, I pray you, after such signs had been wrought, what evils within a short space ensue.

Wherefore blessed?

While with her there was hardly left a remembrance of the kiss which he had imprinted on her brow, his lips were still burning with the fever.

“No; not at all. I am glad you have come. Kiss me, and be good to me.” And she twined her arms about Lily and embraced her.

But if at any time Martin undertook the duty of exorcising the demons, he touched no one with his hands, and reproached no one in words, as a multitude of expressions is generally rolled forth by the clerics; but the possessed, being brought up to him, he ordered all others to depart, and the doors being bolted, clothed in sackcloth and sprinkled with ashes, he stretched himself on the ground in the midst of the church, and turned to prayer.

The former she thought would be preferable.

Different, however, is the method of our reply to those who assert that the creator of this world is a malignant being, i.e., a devil.

“I found a letter.”

very well,” said Robinson.

[Luke 2:29-30] Anna also, the prophetess, a most devout widow, of austere life, bears witness of Him.

O harmony of the world, bearing light, all-wise demon.

Whether on this side or on that, the candidates are first looked for among the sons of Earls and Dukes,—and not unnaturally, as the sons of Earls and Dukes may be educated for such work almost from their infancy.

Baguas, the eunuch, took him off by poison on an occasion of his suffering from illness.

It’s very pretty, but people here will find it too slow.” It may be doubted whether he did much good by this explanation.

Since, then, the seer must look towards some sight, God is rightly called the Seer of that which is to be seen.

Of all things, (i.e.)

I shall never have the same confession to make to another man.

Now this is like what happens to these who fear poverty, and cannot so much as endure the expectation of it.

The Baroness, as she heard of this, became louder and louder.

I do not think that there is a single incident in the book which could bring back to any one concerned the memory of a past event.

“Don’t I, sir? All I require is a relay of napkins for every course:” and he went to work, covering it with every spoonful, as men with beards always do.

For what other set of men is the seed-plot of all the calumny against us?

But she was beginning to find out that she, as a married woman, was supposed to be now fit for other teaching than had been administered to her as a child.

“Everybody is asking me what I think of Mr. Gibson.”

Not for nothing had all those little cares been taken.

Again (that), it is secure from the attacks of the evil-disposed, and robbers, and housebreakers— what, is this all the good, or is it this— that besides the not suffering diminution, it grows also and increases into multitude?

‘Ah! it is because you cannot love me.’

Miss Stanbury for a long time persisted in being neither better nor worse.

For when this very Jacob was about to bless Manasseh and Ephraim, the sons of Joseph, with his hands placed across on the heads of the lads, he said, The God which fed me from my youth even unto this day, the Angel who delivered me from all evils, bless these lads.

Whosoever desires to gain himself, let him remove from him the gain of the world.

How many voluntary eunuchs are there!

Soon after his departure Olympus the prefect, in obedience to the same Pythiodorus, and those who were with him, most difficult persons, sent into exile Paulus and Astericius, presbyters of Alexandria, and directed them to live at the town of Andropolis.

In the afternoon he again encountered Mr Palliser, and having thought over the matter since his interview with Alice, he resolved to tell his whole story to his new acquaintance,—not in order that he might ask for counsel from him, for in this matter he wanted no man’s advice,—but that he might get some assistance. So the two men walked off together, up the banks of the clear-flowing Reuss, and Mr Palliser felt the comfort of having a companion.

Thus to say that the creation has had given to it a beginning in time, according to the good pleasure of the wisdom of Him Who made all things, does not go beyond probability: but to regard the Divine Nature itself as being in a kind of extension measured by intervals, belongs only to those who have been trained in the new wisdom.

He had told himself over and over again that when the Countess came to her own there must be an end of this intimacy,—that there could be nothing in common between him, the radical tailor of Keswick, and a really established Countess.

A heroine should hardly want to be married, the arrangement being almost too mundane,—and, should she be brought to consent to undergo such bond, because of its acknowledged utility, it should be at some period so distant as hardly to present itself to the mind as a reality.

For this vice specially kindles the fire of hell, and everywhere extends its role, and tyrannically occupies every age and every rank.

Great hope has risen upon us, the Catholic faith does not teach what we conceived, and vainly accused it of.

Violently did my heart cry out against all my phantasms, and with this one blow I endeavoured to beat away from the eye of my mind all that unclean crowd which fluttered around it.

It is not, however, a matter of surprise that, owing to the greatness and incomprehensibility of the divine judgments, ignorant persons should make mistakes, and Celsus among them.

Chapter 2. Why Christ's Coming Should Be Previously Announced.

She meant her nephew to understand that duty commanded her to shut her heart against any cousin who could marry a tailor.

[Hebrews 11:1] Accordingly, in the same Epistle to the Hebrews, where this passage occurs, after enumerating in subsequent sentences certain worthies who pleased God by their faith, he says: These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but seeing them afar off, and hailing them, and confessing that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth.

“Nay, call me Fanny.”

“Bah! if neither love of your country or of me, nor yet fear of the punishment due to traitors, will keep you true,” (and he slightly shook her with his hand, as he slowly uttered the last fearful words), “the judgment of God will not have much effect upon you.”

“Where is Pat Kirwan himself?” said I, coming to the door, and blustering somewhat. For, let it be remembered, I was very tired; and it may be a fair question whether in the far west of Ireland a little bluster may not sometimes be of service. “ If you have not a room ready, I will go to Larry Kirwan’s,” said I, showing that I understood the bearings of the place.

Whoever eats of the milk, let his heart be upon the flock; and let him that is ministered to from the labour of his yoke, take heed to his tillage.

“She’ll prefer the lord to the tailor for a guinea,” said Sir William.

Of a dread dragon );

“Your argument would be very well,” said he, “if men were to be contented to live for themselves only.”

He has been described as a spendthrift and gambler, and as one scarcely honest in his extravagance and gambling.

People would assert that she had caught the lover who had intended her for other purposes.

And, had she not taken the eye herself, would any Court in the world have given it to her?

Again: Abraham, when he came to the place which God told him of on the third day, looking up, saw the place afar off.

Mrs. Woodward went on reading.

When a partnership has been formed, neither partner has a right to retreat at once, leaving the burden of all debts upon the other.

The boaster then desires to be greater than all, and affirms no one to be equal in worth with him; and how much soever honor he may obtain, he sets his heart on more and claims it, and accounts himself to have obtained none, and treats men with utter contempt, and yet seeks after the honor that comes from them; than which what can be more unreasonable? For this surely is like an enigma. By those, whom he holds in no esteem, he desires to be glorified.

poor lady 1

But now, hear how Solomon speaks when he wishes to set forth the multitude of these; Perceive that you go in the midst of snares; he does not say, that you go by snares, but in the midst of snares.

And the men who make might their right are exalted to an eminence, from which, however, they shall also fall.

He had already abandoned the profit of provincial government—to which he was by custom entitled after the lapse of his year’s duty as Prætor—in order that he might remain in Rome among the people.

And, if any of the bishops included within the limits of the patrimony committed to you are living with women, do thou entirely put a stop to this, and for the future by no means suffer any women to reside with them, except such as the censorship of the sacred canons allows, that is a mother, an aunt, a sister, and others of this sort, concerning whom there can be no ill suspicion.

Bodies have built the edifice of this basilica, the ample size of which you see; and since bodies have built it, they placed the foundation lowest: but since we are spiritually built, our foundation is placed at the highest point.

And he said not, the superior and the inferior, but being many, which is common to all.

Bright to govern it?

He was at some moments of his miserable existence fearfully anxious to come to terms with his wife, in order that at his death his boy might not be without a protector.

For, pray, it says, for them, that despitefully use you— that you may be like your Father which is in Heaven.

Ought he to pay his taxes when no one around him was paying?

‘It’s a terrible loss her going, you know, George; I shall feel it sadly.’

“If so,” he said after a pause, “then there is an end of it all,” and he looked at her as though he absolutely believed her words,—as though he had not known that her assertion had been mere feminine pretext!

What I have said often, I say also now; let there be many monitors ([λογισταὶ]), let there be many examiners and censors ([ἐ] [ξετασταὶ], [δοκιμασταί]).

But if this knowledge of the Father be peculiar to Him, Who is from the Father, must not this circumstance also, that He is from the Father, be peculiar to Him?

from treachery.

But since, as the Lord says, Not all receive this word; therefore let her who can receive it, receive it; and let her, who contains not, marry; let her, who has not begun, deliberate; let her, who has undertaken it, persevere; let there be no occasion given unto the adversary, let there be no oblation withdrawn from Christ.

He hinted, moreover, that there were other gentlemen in other cupboards; but with none of them could he advance beyond forty-five shillings a week.

There is no such thing as good translation.

No doubt Augustus had, till the spring of this present year, been kept in the background; but no injury had come to him from that.

For in joining product of generation with product of making, and product of creation, he thinks that he stealthily makes away with the difference in significance between the names, by putting together what have nothing in common.

He had not given himself up with any special zeal to the education of his children, nor to the preservation of his property.

And in order that we may receive God's help while cleaving to Him, do we without His help cleave to God?

This then we will do likewise; and for the present we will commit you to your wife; but if you despise her, we will send you away to the school of the very brutes, and will point out to you how many birds, fishes, four-footed beasts, and creeping things are found more honorable, and chaster than you.

“I’ll go home with you, I think, and pay my respects to the countess.”

It behooved her to be proud, at any rate till she should know how this new Lady Clavering would receive her.

For it was better that those who would not have sought out divine things, nor engaged in the study of philosophy, should be placed in a condition of want, in order that they might employ their understanding in the invention of the arts, than that they should altogether neglect the cultivation of their minds, because their condition was one of abundance.

I do know something about it, Mr. Tappitt; and I won’t hold my tongue.

“Yes,” said he, “I have heard of it.

“I shall see you in the morning, nearly as soon as you get this,” said the semi-official note; “but I must be the first to congratulate you on the acquisition of my old shoes.

Then, that no one might suppose His words to come of flattery, but that all might be aware that such was the mind of the centurion, He says,

He could have no further excuse for addressing himself to the girl who was about to become the wife of another man.

Let no one therefore deceive your holiness into the belief that I should ever do this, for God is without doubt on my side and strengthening me.

“Why, I don’t know. I’ll tell your lordship just how it is. You know when old Sim died, my lord?”

The words, however, I am the voice of one crying in the wilderness, etc., may be taken as equivalent to I am He of whom the 'voice in the wilderness' is written.

“The lady” was living with Mrs. Stanbury, having been so placed by her husband; and young Stanbury was taking the lady’s part!

The earth is the Lord's, and the fullness thereof, the compass of the world, and all they that dwell therein [Psalm 23:1 when the Lord, being glorified, is announced for the believing of all nations; and the whole compass of the world becomes His Church.

Why, then, one might say, if it were necessary for Him to yield up His body to death in the stead of all, did He not lay it aside as man privately, instead of going as far as even to be crucified?

Lord Lufton whistled again. “No bill of his dishonoured! Why, the pocketbooks of the Jews are stuffed full of his dishonoured papers! And you have really given him your name for four hundred pounds?”

And to us He has given the pearls; His holy Body and Blood.

And what were they who suffered thus?

As he approached them it seemed as though a sort of opening was made for himself; but he could see, though others did not, that the movement came from Lady Laura.

He almost believed that, were the paper left open on the table, no eye would examine its contents.

From Palestine; Maximus, Aetius, Arius, Theodosius, Germanus, Silvanus, Paulus, Claudius, Patricius, Elpidius, Germanus, Eusebius, Zenobius, Paulus, Petrus.

“They didn’t intend that the hounds should hunt that day either at Moytubber or elsewhere. Daly did not put his hounds into the covert at all; but rode away as fast as his horse’s legs could carry him to Kilcornan.”

“No time has been flied. I am a very poor man, you know.”

“And why should I not have loved you?” she said slowly, laying her hand gently upon his arm.

It’s a kind of thing that will occur, you know.

“But you will answer me, Bell! Or if you would like time to think, or to speak to my aunt, perhaps you will answer me tomorrow?”

Clothes

Learn we then, beloved, to despise and not to desire the honor which is from men; for we have been honored with the greatest of honors, compared with which that other is verily insult, ridicule, and mockery.

But, behold, we do what you have desired; we treat with you as if your bishops had not said: No case forecloses the investigation of another case, and no person compromises the position of another person.

Yet now God promises you not one piece of gold, nor ten, or twenty, or a hundred, or a thousand; no, nor the whole earth, for your labours, but He gives you that which is greater than all the world, the kingdom of heaven; and not only this, but also another thing besides it.

Has not God of old made it manifest by the prophet, My glory will I not give unto another; [Isaiah 42:8] and how do You, being a man, make Yourself God?

[John 14:9] And how, if the Son is the Word or Wisdom and Reason of God, was there a time when He was not?

And the Lord said unto the adversary, The Lord who has chosen Jerusalem rebuke you; and lo, a brand plucked out of the fire.

But either effect is wrought by him that uses it.

Lastly, other copies have from nations, where the translators have rather followed the sense than the word.

From Milwaukee we went across Wisconsin, and reached the Mississippi at La Crosse. From hence, according to agreement, we were to start by steamer at once up the river. But we were delayed again, as had happened to us before on Lake Michigan at Grand Haven.

“Will you meet me there?” Then she bowed her head to him and passed on.

But now he hesitated, not thinking that he would refuse her, but feeling that on such an occasion it would be necessary to point out to her how far she might go without risk of bringing censure on her own name.

At Welwyn people smelled of the City.

Alexandra Cottage, Hendon,

That is what I have to say about myself.

At the end of the same section, after the words Wise Creator, this is found: Glorify Him in His unsearchable works, and concerning Him whom you are not capable of knowing, inquire not curiously what His essence is.

In these days men never expect to be refused.

Is that refused under the most bountiful emperors which the most parsimonious have granted?

Sermon 95

What then, it may be said, if in these things too they counterfeit?

And the congregation of the people shall surround You.

And so the Apostle warns us: Be not desirous of vainglory. [Galatians 5:26] And the Lord, rebuking the Pharisees, says, How can you believe, who receive glory from one another, and seek not the glory which comes from God alone? [John 5:44] Of these too the blessed David speaks with a threat: For God has scattered the bones of them that please men.

Many are our debts there, not of money, but of sins; let us then lend Him our riches, that we may receive pardon for our sins; for He it is that judges.

That Mr. Finn should have reasons of his own for keeping the whole affair secret, and for screening the attempt at murder, is clear enough.

When during that period we extracted first one packet and then another for judgment, we would still leave Mrs. Brumby’s roll behind in the corner.

It may be that I shall sell it.

What then is it that I affirm?

“But it makes no difference to me how she comes.”

And more recent than this last by fifty-two generations, was Pthiotis, founded by Deucalion.

Mark well, beloved.

Others again are there, lying in a mean between these two extremes, who do not exhibit this praiseworthy enthusiasm, nor embrace a life of incontinence, but still honour the simplicity of the faith.

1 Corinthians 15:58

Chapter 30. Athanasius is found Innocent of what he was accused; his Accusers take to Flight.

For it is not water that He gives us from this fountain, but living blood; and it is indeed a symbol of death, but it has become the cause of life.

About nine o’clock she crept on again, but even then her mind was not made up.

Diogenes with his company of dogs, who professes that great and perfect virtue in the contempt of all things, preferred to beg for his support, rather than to seek it by honest labour, or to have any property.

The teachers were suffering persecution, and the disciples rejoiced.

And therefore we must by no means suppose that they were born in the order in which they were set down; otherwise, how could the twelve sons of Joktan, another son of Heber's, and brother of Peleg, have already founded nations, if Joktan was born, as he is registered, after his brother Peleg, since the earth was divided at Peleg's birth?

But she was to come to him and let him know, from her own lips, facts of which nothing more than rumour had yet reached him.

To keep a house of public entertainment and to lose by it was, to her mind, a very sad idea!

Was it born in your old age?

Hence I conclude that the soul is not the chief good of man, whether we give the name of man to soul and body together, or to the soul alone.

When a lady who is thinking about getting married is asked by a gentleman who is frequently in her thoughts whether she does not want some one to love, it is natural that she should presume that he means to be particular; and it is natural also that she should be in some sort gratified by that particularity.

His intoxication, moreover, was unfortunately not of that sort which was likely to end in quiescence and incapability.

We must now however make some allusion to the origin of this custom in the church of responsive singing.

In a word, who has complaint to make against us on other grounds?

He walked about constantly between Lombard Street, the Exchange, and the Bank, and talked much to merchants; he had an opinion too of his own on particular cases; but the business had almost got beyond him, and Mr Brehgert was now supposed to be the moving spirit of the firm.

Cease from anger, and forsake wrath [Psalm 36:8].

[10] [John 16:25] I have spoken unto you now in ænigmas: but there will come an hour when I shall not speak to you in ænigmas, but shall reveal unto you the Father plainly, [11] in that day when you shall ask in my name: [John 16:26] and I say not unto you, that I shall [12] entreat the Father for you; [John 16:27] for the Father loves you, because you have loved me, [13] and have believed that I came forth from my Father.

Or honour?

“But I want my message to be very important. Tell her that I’ve seen her father, and have offered to explain all my affairs to him,—so that he may know that there is nothing to fear on her behalf.”

I will praise their vigour, if they succeed in selling anything of virginity among the heathens withal.

Or how shall He be the only-begotten who, as they say, is reckoned with all the rest, if indeed He is a thing made and created?

Contra Celsus, Book II

Answer: You are mistaken, for I lack neither courage nor weapons.'

For when persons from among you, and having been practised in these things, both believe me and obey, it is most clear that they will also condemn those who are against me both in deed and word.

Finally, also, those ten commandments on the tables teach nothing new, but remind them of what had been obliterated— that righteousness in them, which had been put to sleep, might revive again as it were by the afflatus of the law, after the manner of a smothered fire.

Say, how came Esau to be overcome?

Lady Staveley declared that she would do both. She would call at The Cleeve, and again at Orley Farm after Lady Mason’s return home. She well understood, though she could not herself then say so, that the greater part of the advantage to be received from her kindness would be derived from its being known at Hamworth that the Staveley carriage had been driven up to Lady Mason’s door.

‘Nor to a curmudgeon,’ continued Michel, not caring to notice the interruption, ‘nor to an ill-tempered fellow, or one who gambled, or one who would use bad words to you. But here is a young man who has no faults at all.’

“Oh yes; I remember that.”

Whence then does he receive his faith?

And, no doubt, even the real nativity of a God is a most mean thing.

Now Henri, to this day, had never heard a word of the want of courage which Denot had shown in the passage of the bridge of Saumur. No one but de Lescure had noticed it; and though he certainly had never forgotten it, he had been too generous to speak of it to any one. Henri merely knew that his two friends, Charles and Adolphe, had been together at the bridge.

From which we clearly see that antagonistic powers raise against each other those quarrels of nations, and conflicts and dissensions, which they show among themselves at their instigation, and that they either exult at their victories or are cast down at their defeats, and thus cannot live in harmony among themselves, while each of them is always striving with restless jealousy on behalf of those whom he presides over, against the patron of some other nation.

But let that be as it might, he could not go to America, and be absent for so long a period, without telling her.

But then, in connection with evil, we find no honour, no glory, no incorruption, no power; and so we are forced to dismiss all doubt that a man who has nothing to do with these last-mentioned things must be connected with their opposites, viz.

I hope, Mr. Thumble, that the bishop will never be found interfering with the ordinary laws of the land.

“I shall see the duke myself,” Mr. Sowerby said at last, and there was something almost dreadful in the sound of his voice.

“Yes;—the conviction that it is the man’s duty to be a staunch Liberal, but not the reason why. Or a man sees his opening on this side or on that,—as is the case with the lawyers. Or he has a body of men at his back ready to support him on this side or on that, as we see with commercial men. Or perhaps he has some vague idea that aristocracy is pleasant, and he becomes a Conservative,—or that democracy is prospering, and he becomes a Liberal. You are a Liberal, Mr. Finn.”

He was in the House of Commons last night.

GOSHAWK. Ah, yes. I am very glad to see you here, my dear. You are the very person I should like to speak a few words to. My dear young lady—

He was a man of the world, and was by no means inclined to abandon any right that was his own; but it seemed to him that he was almost bound to say some word to show that in his opinion Clara should hold herself bound to comply with her aunt’s requirements.

“Oh, I am quite sure it is. It is worth ten dollars at least—or twenty,” said poor Mrs. Bell, not in the very best taste. But she was perplexed, and did not know how to get out of the scrape. The article in question now lay upon the tablecloth, appropriated by no one, and at this moment Hetta came into the room.

“She wanted to be friends with me.”

[1 Corinthians 4:7] — even some such an answer as this: See, we have the will to believe, which we did not receive.

Speak, Harry; if you are a man, say something.

He had no cry with which to meet the country, nor, indeed, had the leaders of the Opposition.

“‘Orrid old man!” said Mr. Hart.

For one thing so follows the other, that it is impossible not to admit these last things.

It is written, they say, Seek, and you shall find.

He was welcome to the mere doll who was wanted simply that she should grace his equipage.

“Ah, yes. You stay for the hunting.”

“For this young lady was not able to carry out any emotion to the full, but had a sham enthusiasm, a sham hatred, a sham love, a sham taste, a sham grief; each of which flared and shone very vehemently for an instant, but subsided and gave place to the next sham emotion.” Thackeray, when he drew this portrait, must certainly have had some special young lady in his view.

But if we are afraid of their power and assaults, we may also claim the protection and assistance of God against them, of which we read: For greater is He who is in us than he who is in this world: [1 John 4:4] and His aid fights on our side with much greater power than their hosts fight against us; for God is not only the suggester of what is good, but the maintainer and insister of it, so that sometimes He draws us towards salvation even against our will and without our knowing it.

At the bottom of her heart she knew that she had been a bad wife.

And so the matter was discussed.

Why do you envy the rich man?

If he could set himself up as an amateur detective he thought that he might perhaps get to the bottom of it all.

And if you also cast him out again from this, he will look to them that have a moderate estate.

Plato again, while withholding his assent on other points, also divides [superior beings] into the uncreated God and those produced by the uncreated One for the adornment of heaven, the planets, and the fixed stars, and into demons; concerning which demons, while he does not think fit to speak himself, he thinks that those ought to be listened to who have spoken about them.

If then He is our Saviour, and He commanded these things with a view that we should be saved, it is not from a love of command.

Letter of Origen to Gregory

But this was not required of her.

“I must explain myself?”

But oh, Alice, if you had seen the Duke’s long face through those three days; if you had heard the tones of the people’s voices as they whispered about me; if you had encountered the oppressive cheerfulness of those two London doctors,—doctors are such bad actors,—you would have thought it impossible for any woman to live throughout.

By her grief for her young husband she has set an example to all wives; and by her resignation she has proved that she believes him not lost but gone before.

You’ll have to make an affidavit in the morning, and we can get the injunction served before two or three o’clock.

Why not go in, and have done with all this?

To this encaged sempstress no one ever speaks unless it be to give a rare order for a mutton chop or pint of stout.

“Why do not you speak to Lord Brentford;—you who are his favourite?”

It has been prepared by the ingenuity of men, able to dominate matter though altogether powerless over mind.

30. The reality of the resurrection proved by facts: (1) the victory over death described above: (2) the Wonders of Grace are the work of One Living, of One who is God: (3) if the gods be (as alleged) real and living, a fortiori He Who shatters their power is alive.

“There shall be no quarrel. I will forgive him even that if you will be guided by me. And, dearest Mary, you must be guided by me now. This matter has gone too far for you to go back—unless, indeed, you will say that personally you have an aversion to the marriage.”

“Go on, Dot, go on. You want to provoke me, but you won’t. I wonder whether you’d bear it as well, if I told you you’d die a broken-down blackleg, without a friend or a shilling to bless you.”

In his view of the case the marriage of Lady Anna Lovel, with a colossal fortune, to Daniel Thwaite the tailor, would be a grievous injury to the social world of his country,—and it was one of those evils which may probably be intercepted by due and discreet precautions.

But as he went he again encountered Beatrice. “Tell Mary I went to her to-day,” said she, “and that I expect her up here tomorrow. If she does not come, I shall be savage.”

What then is this which he says, and why does he thus speak?

The meaning of these words is plain enough, receiving as it does additional light from the preceding clause: Enter not, says the Psalmist, into judgment with Your servant, for in Your sight shall no man living be justified.

For we find that in the book of Genesis this very circumstance in regard to the sacrament is foreshadowed, and our Lord's sufferings typically set forth, in the case of Noah, when he drank wine, and was drunken, and was uncovered within his tent, and his nakedness was exposed by his second son, and was carefully hidden by his elder and his younger sons.

“I don’t quite understand what you mean by all this,” said Clara.

The whole of your blasphemy then consists in this: that Christ had nothing of Himself: nor did He, a mere man, as you say, receive anything from the Word, i.e., the Son of God; but everything in Him was the gift of the Spirit.

Our sole hope, our sole confidence, our sole assured promise, is Your mercy.

For as Abraham's obedience is with justice pronounced to be great, because the thing commanded, to kill his son, was very difficult, so in Paradise the disobedience was the greater, because the difficulty of that which was commanded was imperceptible.

It was rumoured that Mrs. Carbuncle, with her niece, had gone to join her husband at New York.

Therefore a city ought not to worship its own gods, but rather others who aid their own worshippers.

Even if they were free from any participation in condemned doctrine, they would stand already judged on the mere ground of time, being all the more spurious because they were not even named by the apostles.

But though friends may talk in low voices, a man without a friend will hardly fall into conversation at the Turkish Bath.

Whence should we so learn mercy?

For God has a Logos: else He would be without reason.

The time, says (the apostle), is compressed.

And with what a return!

“And he was nearly as bad as she.”

They never do mind giving credit for such things as that, and though there is a bill due to Mrs. Morell now, she has had a deal of Dobbs’s money.” Clara promised her that she should have mourning to her heart’s content.

“There! there!” said Marie; “you will be too late if you do not run.” Then Herr Crippel did run, and caught Lotta as she was taking her hat from the old woman who had the girls’ hats and shawls in charge near the door.

As for the holy presbyter Firmus, we sent him last year to go on business of Eustochium and Paula, first to Ravenna, and afterwards to Africa and Sicily, and we suppose that he is now detained somewhere in Africa.

For it is a great thing, and ineffable; and even they saw through a glass darkly, as says the Apostle, For now we see through a glass darkly; but then face to face.

I shan’t think of interfering with such a man as Grey.

The first of God's commandments attests the truth of this; that, namely, which gave to man unstinted enjoyment of all the blessings of Paradise, forbidding only that which was a mixture of good and evil and so composed of contraries, but making death the penalty for transgressing in that particular.

“Indeed it is,” said the warden, ringing the bell.

If not, it will fare badly for Jamaica, and will probably also fare badly in coming years for the rest of the West Indies.

It is when they are round me that, if ever, I can use my mind aright and bring it to the work which is required of it.

“I know all about you, you know,” said the earl. “Your grandmother Stoddard was a very old friend of my aunt’s. You don’t remember Lady Jemima?”

Then let us not neglect so great wealth, but contribute our alms with largeness, that we may be found worthy of the mercy of God, by the grace and tender compassion of His only begotten Son, with Whom to the Father and Holy Ghost together be glory, dominion, honor, now and ever, world without end.

The head is honourable, but it cannot say to the feet, I have no need of you.

Then Runciman had replied, “No doubt, my Lord; no doubt.

It might, he thought, be long before there was permanent comfort between them.

as if He should say, Supposing such things were necessary to me, I would never ask you for what I have in my own hand.

In those 'praises' which you gave me you laid it to my charge that I had spoken of Origen as a teacher of the churches, and now that you speak in the character of an enemy you think that I shall be afraid because you accuse me of calling him a diligent reader.

“Mrs Greenow, just at present there’s only one woman in the world that I can think of.”

Here, however, Jerome has affirmed that the nature of the Creator is invisible even to the angels, and to every creature without exception in heaven.

As he looked round after knocking at Mrs. Roden’s door, he saw the figure of Clara Demijohn standing a little back from the parlour window of the house opposite.

“And, Lucius—”

What shall I say of the Gauls which were more productive than usual?

With them Ayala was always good-humoured, but always brave.

And except He had immediately gone on to say after this, All things that the Father has are mine; therefore said I, that He shall take of mine, and shall show it unto you; it might, perhaps, have been believed that the Holy Spirit was so born of Christ, as Christ is of the Father.

So then the prayers were not made in an off-hand way, but with much deliberate attention: and this office, as well as preaching, was thus brought to good effect; for what they did, they effected mostly by the means of these (their prayers.)

For while their actions prove them to be men, the panegyrics upon them go beyond the nature of men.

I was taken up to Barkly “ on a picnic “ as people say; and a very nice picnic it was,—one of the pleasantest days I had in South Africa.

The Montressors had already congratulated themselves on the good fortune of little Lord Frederic; and the speedy death of the Marquis was prophesied, as men and women were quite sure that he would not be able in his present condition to bear the loss of his eldest son.

Everybody in the county was talking about Mr. Crawley.

“She had been very much put about,” she said,—”dreadfully put about.

In the beginning, then, God made the heaven and the earth.

Old Mr. Topps, in rising from his chair, did not say very much. He had been hunting in the Runnymede country for nearly fifty years, and had never seen anything so sad as this before. It made him, he knew, very unhappy. As for foxes, there were always plenty of foxes in his coverts. His friend Mr. Jawstock, on the right, would explain what all this was about. All he wanted was to see the Runnymede hunt properly kept up. Then he sat down, and Mr. Jawstock rose to his legs.

What if old men should charge it on the Christians that they grow less strong in their old age; that they no longer, as formerly, have the same facilities, in the hearing of their ears, in the swiftness of their feet, in the keenness of their eyes, in the vigour of their strength, in the freshness of their organic powers, in the fullness of their limbs, and that although once the life of men endured beyond the age of eight and nine hundred years, it can now scarcely attain to its hundredth year?

Lady Albury’s Letter

I am not sure that all lovers of poetry would recognise a Lycidas coming from some hitherto unknown Milton.

She, well knowing his habit, took care to be out of the way.

His time he endeavoured to occupy with thinking of the last promise he had made to Gertrude.

Individual gentlemen could, of course, say what they pleased to individual voters; but it was agreed at last that no overt use should be made of the rumours by Mr Alf’s Committee.

There could be no doubt that allusion was made to Mrs. Peacocke.

You said in the Creed when you received the Sacrament of true Salvation: the Lord Jesus Christ, Very God of Very God, Being of one substance with the Father, Creator of the worlds, Maker of all things.

“Magna est veritas, as the dear bishop said,” exclaimed Miss Dunstable.

“A letter has been placed within my writing-case,” she said to her maid, quite openly.

However, they attribute the origin of the offense to him; although it ought not to be imputed even to Macarius who is clear of it.

For in my case, whether I prove equal to what you have commanded me or no, the very fact of my obedience and humility will be in some degree an excuse for me; if indeed I might not urge that there is more value in my obedience, if there is less that I can do.

Treatise III

“Lopez,” he asked, “what is this that the newspapers are saying about your expenses at Silverbridge?”

Persiflage will do whatever he can, but that can only be if you will open your arms to him.” Lady Kingsbury did feel that she was called upon to undergo a terrible revulsion of sentiment.

She was quite of opinion that they must do as the Duke directed.

In Prison

For to one is given through the Spirit the word of wisdom, and to another the word of knowledge according to the same Spirit: to another faith, by the same Spirit, and to another gifts of healing.

The world was being changed very fast.

He also had heard the report that your father did not wish for the appointment, and putting all these things together, he thought he had no choice but to look for someone else.

But if we require proofs, the priests of the heathen gods produce many that are clear and convincing, partly from wonders performed by demons, and partly from the answers given by oracles, and various other modes of divination.

The good-looking Irish member of Parliament who had been put in possession of a handsome salary by feminine influences, will not, we think, after what we have already said, again become a burden on the public purse.

And does any ask, How shall we bear it nobly?

“Emily,” he said, “for God’s sake let all this pass away.”

Certainly it is God.

And as the man who is a victim to passion readily makes everybody else miserable and is ashamed to apologize to the brother whom he has wronged, so when the brother offers to do so to him, he rejects it with scorn.

At this moment Tony’s mind was much disturbed, and he looked round more than once for Captain Glomax.

Hear him saying, The first man is of the earth, earthy, the second man is the Lord from heaven.

“Are you going into Baslehurst this evening, dear?” she said.

It has since increased maybe by a tenth.

“And eaten by me,” said Boodle.

Thus, when he had gradually descended, he remained on the last step, because he now saw the precipice.

But he that works miracles and has perfect knowledge, without this, though he raises ten thousand from the dead, will not be much profited, broken off as he is from all and not enduring to mix himself up with any of his fellow-servants.

Is this the whole of our happiness, that we shall have a city which mountains surround?

And that you may know that he is not speaking of that resulting from baptism, but about the other, after saying, for if we were planted together in the likeness of His Death, he does not say that we shall be in the likeness of His Resurrection, but we shall belong to the Resurrection.

It is with difficulty enough [said the article in the Jupiter], that the Church of England maintains at the present moment that ascendancy among the religious sects of this country which it so loudly claims.

Of course it is known that Pennsylvania was granted to William Penn, the Quaker, by Charles II.

On some points its selected rocks and chosen standing ground have slipped from beneath its feet, owing to the weakness of words in defining and making solid the intended prohibitions against democracy.

So he went direct to the castle, and was received quietly, but very graciously, by his cousin Lizzie.

“This is very kind of you, Mrs. Bold; very kind, after what has happened,” said the lady on the sofa with her sweetest smile.

The catechists must therefore be learned, and unblameable, of much experience, and approved, as you will know that Clement is, who is to be your instructor after me.

But I did not dare to do this; and said that his long communion was sufficient for this.

“Mother,” said Herbert, “who can this man have been?”

“I suppose I shall marry her, and there’ll be an end of me,” he said to himself, as he remembered a short note which he had once written to her in his madness.

To even the upholsterers, the bankers, the hotelkeepers and the owners of post-horses she was communicative, making every one the gratified recipient of her tidings.

And in thus speaking, he instances the case of grain and of our Lord as on a level in point of dignity, thinking it equally absurd to compare God with either.

The same homage is paid, dutifully too, by those who consult astrologers, and soothsayers, and augurs, and magicians, about the life of the Cæsars,— arts which, as made known by the angels who sinned, and forbidden by God, Christians do not even make use of in their own affairs.

Mrs. Furnival herself was a stout, solid woman, sensible on most points, but better adapted, perhaps, to the life in Keppel Street than that to which she had now been promoted.

Upon whatever they might among them decide, it was expedient that the Dean should be at once told of the marriage.

Strato, ruler of Sidon, thought of dying by his own hand, that he might not be the sport of the Persians, who were close by and whose alliance he had discarded for the friendship of the king of Egypt.

III. We must be thankful, and show our thankfulness for what we have received, whether much or little

It occurred to the son-in-law to go to the oratory of St. Stephen, and there pray for him with all earnestness that God might give him a right mind, so that he should not delay believing in Christ.

If you will think of it all round you will see that you have got no cause of quarrel with me any more than I have with you.

Now they were united to each other as each believed for the last time.

“Ah, yes; very well; I understand,” said Sophie, taking the ticket.

“Captain,” he said, as soon as he had carefully closed the door behind him, “are you going to be upon the square?” Newton had given special orders that Neefit should not be admitted to his presence; but here he was, having made his way into the chamber in the temporary absence of the Squire’s own servant.

“But for a combination of chastity and tenderness I don’t think you can easily beat Clara Demijohn.” Lord Hampstead bowed, as showing his readiness to believe such a statement coming from so good a judge.

But if you cease not, although it seem to you to be ill with you in the day of your sorrow, yet in your God it shall be well with you

What she wanted was simply this, that something of interest should be added to her life.

Certainly she had then been swayed by some feeling that it would be ungenerous in her to seize greedily the first opportunity he had given her.

“Why should she incur the risk of conveying infection for so small an object?” as she herself argued, writing by letters, which were duly fumigated before they were opened at the parsonage.

But Sir Thomas was not in a frame of mind at all suited to the sifting of evidence.

“Does he know anything of this matter of your money?” continued Mr Ball.

“I wish it were all clean forgotten,” said Lizzie.

To maintain two natures in the one Christ, makes a Tetrad of the Trinity, says he; for he expressed himself thus: And it is the true God, the unincarnate, that was manifested in the flesh, perfect with the true and divine perfection, not with two natures; nor do we speak of worshipping four (persons), viz., God, and the Son of God, and man, and the Holy Spirit.

If, then, this is so, how can Jupiter be God supreme, when it is evident that He is everlasting, and the former is represented by you as having had a natal day, and as having uttered a mournful cry, through terror at the strange scene?

But, that you may not suppose that it is merely those bodies which are consigned to tombs whose resurrection is foretold, you have it declared in Scripture: And I will command the fishes of the sea, and they shall cast up the bones which they have devoured; and I will bring joint to joint, and bone to bone.

“Yes,” said Lucy, “I should.”

If then, whether in punishing, or in honoring, he be a Minister, in avenging virtue's cause, in driving vice away, as God wills, why be captious against him, when he is the cause of so many good doings, and paves the way for yours too?

[1 Corinthians 2:13-14] And so, because he knew that these questions would arise among natural men, foreseeing the future he says: For who has known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct Him?

He thought that Newton Churchyard was, of all spots on earth, the most lovely.

This sum of two thousand pounds was not, it is true, left away from the surviving Joseph, but was to be produced out of certain personal property which had been left by the first will to the widow.

either in respect of each abounding and wanting, does he say that this [equality] takes place; or else in respect of the present life only.

Enter Upsel. Count Upsel, I have sent—

And Noah came out of the ark on the twenty-seventh day of the month Jiar, in the second year: for the ark continued sailing live whole months, and moved to and fro upon the waters, and in a period of fifty-one days neared the land.

“Mr Gresham! I did not know that he had been away.”

And Baron Brawl was of the party, one of Her Majesty’s puisne Judges, as jovial a guest as ever entered a country house; but given to be rather sharp withal in his jovialities.

“I don’t see that there is very much of a story to be told, Mary.”

And Mrs Dale and Bell, though in their gentle way they laughed at her,—nevertheless they worked with her, sitting sternly to their long tasks, in order that Crosbie’s house might not be empty when their darling should go to take her place there as his wife.

I have just come home from Scotland, where they have been telling me something of your little troubles.

Gentle reader, did you ever feel yourself snubbed?

There is greater freedom of speech in this harangue, than in the former.

He never wearied of the pre-established round of English customs—never needed a respite or a change—was content to go on indefinitely watching the life that surrounded him, and holding up his mirror to it.

Why, in short, do we grow, decrease, and perish?

That was to take place on the Wednesday after Easter, and was to be celebrated by special royal favour in the chapel at Whitehall.

There had not been much that was dangerous in the conversation between Mr Palliser and Lady Dumbello, but I cannot say the same as to that which was going on at the same moment between Crosbie and Lady Alexandrina.

To this Simon replied: [From the words of your master I shall refute you, because even he introduces to all men a certain God who was known.

For it is said, whatever you ask believing you shall receive.

It had been made under a state of things differing much from that now existing, and the change that had come upon her affairs had seemed to her to annul the offer.

I know that Aunt Sarah feels quite sure that I shall at last, and that she thinks I ought to do so at once.

Her daughter should find that she could be stern and rough enough if she were really thwarted.

Which gave us comfort, he says, and good hope through grace.

Of what dragon?

How are you to bid a starving man to wait when you put him down at a well-covered board?

And at what instant I shall speak concerning a nation, and concerning a kingdom, to build and to plant it; if it do evil in my sight, that it obey not my voice, then I will repent of the good, wherewith I said I would benefit them.

And when they were seated, they asked, [Where is Faustinianus?]

I confess to being much afraid, my Lord my God, seeing that from my earliest years I had not experienced such pain.

For something over three weeks after his walk with the priest Neville saw neither of the two ladies of Ardkill.

It never occurred to her as yet to think whether she would or would not receive a letter from her dismissed lover.

[John 3:13] For the Lord of Glory is one and the same with Him Who is in nature and in truth the Son of Man, that is, Who became man, and both His wonders and His sufferings are known to us, although His wonders were worked in His divine capacity, and His sufferings endured as man.

“Don’t you think he seems sweet upon that girl?”

Because now too there is set up a golden image, even the tyranny of Mammon.

“Well, he is a muff!” said Frank.

“But I shall come, and shall come for that,” said Mrs Mackenzie; and at the end of the ten days she did come, and she did carry her husband’s cousin back with her to Cavendish Square.

Indeed, as to all gay apparel, we may say that we only miss it by comparison.

“Have you seen Herr Molk?” demanded Madame Staubach.

At Taunton there branched away from the main line that line which was to take her to Perivale, and therefore she was able to take her own place quietly in the carriage when she found that the down-train from London was at hand.

For we do not say, Listen how it glows, smell how it glistens, taste how it shines, or feel how it flashes, since all these are said to be seen.

The question with me was, whether I should be useful as a wife, or useless as an unmarried woman?

For that nothing is made by means of atoms, is apparent from this, that everything has a definite seed, unless by chance we shall believe that the nature both of fire and water is derived from atoms.

Is it fit that you, or that any man should turn round upon a lady and say to her that your word is to be broken, and that she is to be exposed before all her friends, because you have taken a fancy to dislike her ring or her brooch?

“I’ll tell you the plain truth at once, Mary. I shall go over myself with it, and see the earl. Then I will decline it or not, according to what passes between me and him. I wish Lily would have gone.”

This is the price for chance guests.

And these visions he was unwilling to tell, but as he spent much time in prayer, and was amazed, when those who were with him pressed him with questions and forced him, he was compelled to speak, as a father who cannot withhold ought from his children.

“He does not know what real work means.” But his anger turned to disgust as regarded Harry, and almost to despair as regarded his sister, when Harry had been a week in town and yet had not shown himself at the Adelphi.

Chapter 9. The Letter of the Synod, relative to its Decisions: and the Condemnation of Arius and those who agreed with him.

Be not of such sort, brethren: see ye how that to this end we say these words, to this end we sing, to this end we treat, to this end toil— do not these things.

Call to mind the generations before you; you will find that the making of Adam is but a thing of yesterday.

For they, says He, are blameless.

And he affirms that Christ did not receive his flesh from the Virgin, but from the adjacent substance of the world.

“But a kick from an infuriated horse!”

“I wish they would,” Sophonisba whispered into my ear.

He affirms, lastly, that the very hairs of our head are all numbered, [Matthew 10:30] and in the affirmation He of course includes the promise of their safety; for if they were to be lost, where would be the use of having taken such a numerical care of them?

[1 Corinthians 12:11] There are not then either three Fathers, or three Sons, or three Paracletes, but one Father, and one Son, and one Paraclete.

Thinking of all this when he received his mother’s letter, he assured himself that Florence would not like professional literature.

“The letter refers to my nephew, Mr. Henry Annesley.”

“The Vicar of Bullhampton”—”Sir Harry Hotspur”—”An Editor’s Tales”—”Caesar”

“Well done, Mr. Finn, well done,” said Bunce. “I always knew there was a good drop in you.”

They are bought, glanced at, and thrown away.

“But though she had despised it, the Greshams had not been less irritated, and, therefore, Mr Umbleby had been driven out of his house.” We can hardly believe this, as victory generally makes men generous.

Do you see how again he places the Spirit in the rank of God, (vide infra) and raises them up to the rank of the Apostles.

10. The Pearl of the Gospel in Relation to the Old Testament.

“You will let me have one kiss?”

“And it’s what I have said to Lord John; and what I intend to say to him again. Lord John is all very well—”

After what had passed before, you cannot have thought it right to receive letters from him which I was not to see, or to write letters to him of which I was not to know the contents.

“Go off of what?”

Of the intended marriage,—if it were intended,—he would say nothing.

But by the help of the people, he was saved from destruction.

To this Caldigate made no answer, but turned round to leave the room.

I planted, you ought to have watered.

Since both they that came said, Trouble not the Master, for the damsel is dead; and those in the house laughed Him to scorn, when He said, She sleeps; and it was likely that the father too should have experienced some such feeling.

Why, for this selfsame reason they must be worthy of ten thousand deaths, that what things all laws command men to flee, they have taken pains to imitate.

She did not fall in love, she did not wilfully flirt, she did not commit herself; but she smiled and whispered, and made confidences, and looked out of her own eyes into men’s eyes as though there might be some mysterious bond between her and them—if only mysterious circumstances would permit it.

“If you think he is particular, you know, we will send a note across.” Mrs. Robarts said that she supposed Mr. Oriel would not be particular, but, looking at Grace, made some faint excuse.

For though there were many saints, many elect and even friends of God, yet none could ever of themselves be saved, had they not been saved by the advent of the Lord and His redemption.

For incontinence and luxury is a head of the dragon; and whoever bruises this is wreathed with the crown of temperance.

But this we desire your Love to attend to carefully; not to allow yourself to be mixed up in any cause whatever where there is oppression of the poor; lest haply, under pressure to some extent from persons in power, you should be driven to do what could not be of advantage to your soul.

[Acts 28:17] Then again, some time passes while he tarries at Jerusalem, that you may learn, that, though some time passed, the evil design against him prevails nothing, God not permitting it.

With them she would spend hours, feeling no inconvenience from their language or habits.

Then he might return to Cairo.

So Paul did to the Athenians also, discoursing and saying, The times of this ignorance God winked at: but now commands all men everywhere to repent, because He has appointed a day in the which He will judge the world in righteousness by that Man whom He has ordained, whereof He has given assurance unto all men, in that He has raised Him from the dead.

I went to the house of some such lady in St. Georges, and she told me a woful tale of her miseries.

Because they chose not to do anything but rage, they would not hear.

But he was clear-headed enough to perceive that his mother did not intend to agree with him.

[Luke 17:21] Antony and the hosts of monks who are in Egypt, Mesopotamia, Pontus, Cappadocia, and Armenia, have never seen Jerusalem: and the door of Paradise is opened for them at a distance from it.

What family owns more numerous, or more illustrious generals and governors, or court officials, or again, men of wealth, and lofty thrones, and public honours, and oratorical renown?

The name of the first is Pheison, which is the Indian Ganges; the name of the second is Geon, which is the Nile flowing from Ethiopia down to Egypt: the name of the third is Tigris, and the name of the fourth is Euphrates.

[Exodus 22:9, 12] And in the battle they were sought for by the foreigners on the Sabbath day, that they might be taken captive, and, as if by the very strictness of the law, might be fashioned to the avoidance of its teaching.

Having gone there to fight with him,—most unwillingly,—I could not afterwards promise him that I would give up Miss Effingham.

I do not order it; but if you ask my counsel, I advise it.” Exile was the severest punishment known by the Roman law, as applicable to a citizen, and such a punishment it was in the power of no Consul or other officer of state to inflict.

There was no reason, he thought, why he should not enjoy himself to the last, and he would say a parting word to poor little Ruby.

And this, the law's relation to the Sabbath, was like the servant who has charge of the bridegroom's chamber, and who prepares the same with all carefulness, and does not suffer it to be disturbed or touched by any stranger, but keeps it intact against the time of the bridegroom's arrival; so that when he has come, the same may be used as it pleases himself, or as it is granted to those to use it whom he has bidden enter along with him.

He believed, at any rate, in Mr. Scarborough.

The very fact that a man should have descended so far in quest of beauty,—the flattery of it alone,—will produce love.

‘Why, what’s the cheese now?’

Set crowns innumerable upon dead men, and they will not be raised: but one word went forth from an Apostle, and it brought back revoked nature, and restored it to its ancient condition.

Chapter 11. Ordination of Flavian as Bishop of Antioch, and Subsequent Occurrences on Account of the Oath.

And if in another place he says, I have fought the good fight [2 Timothy 4:7], but here, I count myself not as yet to have apprehended; any one who reads carefully will well know the reason both of those, and of the present words; (for it is not necessary to dwell continually on the same point;) and that he spoke these words at a much earlier date, but the others near his death.

But I am aiming at something which appears to me very easy to be shown; that either nothing remains to us to be subdued, or that we have made no advance at all, and that the taint of all those things which we believed cut away remains.

“He has lost so much time that he knows it ought to be got through and done with without further delay. If he could only go to sleep and wake up a married man of three months’ standing, he would be quite happy. If it could be administered under chloroform it would be so much better! It is the doing of the thing, and the being talked about and looked at, that is so odious to him.”

I am sure he ought not to be here quite by himself.

“Then it doesn’t matter whether the woman’s her aunt or not. I’ll go and see her and try to get her back to Bungay.”

And, as I must not enlarge my book unduly, seek for yourself: you will find that all holy men have suffered adversity.

And there was a certain disciple at Damascus, named Ananias; and to him said the Lord in a vision, Ananias. And he said, Behold, I am here, Lord. And the Lord said unto him, Arise, and go into the street which is called Straight, and inquire in the house of Judas for one called Saul, of Tarsus: for, behold, he prays, and has seen in a vision a man named Ananias coming in, and putting his hand on him, that he might receive his sight.

“Dead!” said Lady Brabazon, when Lady Alice, with sad face, whispered to her the fatal news.

There was a carriage kept by the widow, and they had themselves driven out together.

This had been in April, and at that time all that he knew of Violet was, that she was not yet in London.

How many have mistakenly made it a point of honor to give themselves up to the service of their friends (only), to their hurt!

Then you were told to say, I believe in the Father, and in the Son, and in the Holy Ghost, and in one Baptism of repentance.

“You can’t help me;—not at present.”

Get me some strong coffee—at once.

For God is not contained in space.

I am so much obliged.

It was certainly true that George had not known that she was injured.

I don’t doubt but that there’s a policeman about waiting till I leave this house;—or looking at me now with a magnifying glass from the windows at the other side.

It was not that he really felt himself to be guilty of the man’s blood, but that any one should say that he was guilty.

I tell you for your own sake as well as for mine, unless you can drop drinking, we had better give it up even yet.” After that, for a month or two under her auspices, he did “drop it,”—or at least so far dropped it as to induce her to run the risk.

“Well, Frank,” said Blake, “the cock has crowed; I must away. I suppose you’ll ride down to Igoe’s, and see Brien: but think of what I’ve said, and,” he added, whispering—”remember that I will do the best I can for the animals, if you put them into my stables. They shall be made second to nothing, and shall only and always run to win.”

Nevertheless, for the sake of official decency, and from certain wise remembrances of the sources of official comfort and official discomfort, Mr. Butterwell had always maintained a show of outward friendship with the secretary.

“Better than she! As women you are poles asunder.”

And with regard to our not swearing at all, and always speaking the truth, He enjoined as follows: Swear not at all; but let your yea be yea, and your nay, nay; for whatsoever is more than these comes of evil.

The conviction which thus came upon him did not add much to his comfort.

And this order the lad received with his customary veneration, never considering its impossibility, and day by day carried it out so that he constantly carried water for nearly two miles and never ceased to water the stick; and for a whole year no bodily infirmity, no festival services, no necessary business (which might fairly have excused him from carrying out the command), and lastly no severity of winter could interfere and hinder him from obeying this order.

“If he were to come again he would come in vain, John.” She did not say that he had come again. She could tell her own secret, but not that of another person.

It is sad to find that the great men with whose name we are occupied have been made subject to145 those “whips and scorns of time” which we thought to be peculiar to ourselves, because they have stung us.

And because the greater part believed not, and but few believed, therefore that a halting might be produced, He touched the breadth of his thigh.

“You’ll about want a couple more, Mr. Newton,” said Mr. Horsball.

It was, however, exceedingly unjust of her to be angry with Mr. Arabin, as she had herself spent a very pleasant evening with Bertie Stanhope, who had taken her down to dinner and had not left her side for one moment after the gentlemen came out of the dining-room.

From hence that we may be delivered let us cry: lest perchance amidst oppressions we consent to iniquity, and truly irreparably we be swallowed up.

“Not a shilling,” said Augustus, in thorough ill-humor.

Where, however, I do not understand these writers, though their eloquence is then less apparent, I have no doubt but that it is of the same kind as that I do understand.

Would then God promise, or swear thus falsely?

Is not all its vigilance spent in the discernment of good from evil things, so that no mistake may be admitted about what we should desire and what avoid?

His bloody edicts had not yet reached the more distant provinces, when he himself lay all bloody on the earth at Cænophrurium in Thrace, assassinated by his familiar friends, who had taken up groundless suspicions against him.

“As well as can be expected. He doesn’t walk about his room with a poniard in his hand,—ready for himself or Sir Orlando; nor is he sitting crowned like Bacchus, drinking the health of the new Ministry with Lord Drummond and Sir Timothy. He is probably sipping a cup of coffee over a blue-book in dignified retirement. You should go and see him.”

Then her mother was right.

This intelligence has been caught up by philosophy, and, with the view of glorifying her own art, has been inflated (it is not to be wondered at that I use this language) with straining after that facility of language which is practised in the building up and pulling down of everything, and which has greater aptitude for persuading men by speaking than by teaching.

Zacchæus, the convert of an hour, is accounted worthy to receive the Saviour as his guest.

Encouraged by the forbearing tenderness, the unfortunate one ventured to return to the house of his friend, the owner of the wood, hoping that, in spite of the sacrilege committed, he might be able to face a world that would be ignorant of his crime.

I suppose it is queer that a singing girl should marry Mr. Jones.

Now the whole canon of Scripture on which we say this judgment is to be exercised, is contained in the following books:— Five books of Moses, that is, Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers, Deuteronomy; one book of Joshua the son of Nun; one of Judges; one short book called Ruth, which seems rather to belong to the beginning of Kings; next, four books of Kings, and two of Chronicles— these last not following one another, but running parallel, so to speak, and going over the same ground.

We can learn of it from the Gospel: I am the Way, [John 14:6] the Lord says: Christ has said, I am the Way.

All the bonnets, all the claret, all the horses, seemed to come at Queen’s Gate and at Glenbogie without any wickedness.

In this way the mind of the Foreign Office was moved, and the coming of the young duke was awaited with considerable anxiety.

But if it had been blindness, that is to say, if they could see nothing, then they would not have asked for the gate by which they might enter the house, but for guides who might lead them away.

Peter did his best to oppose this, as did also Madame Staubach herself; but Linda prevailed, and the clause was there.

My duty in this matter is to his lordship, and I can admit of no questioning but from him.

Edward Fielding from the first moment of his intimate acquaintance with Mary had left no doubt of his intentions on the mind of any one.

Think of that, Master Brook.

She has not accepted me, if you mean that.

When he was fairly engaged in the sport, his style of play so fascinated Undy that they embarked in a sort of partnership, pro hoc vice, good to the last during the ups and downs of Wheal Mary Jane. Mary Jane, no doubt, would soon run dry, or else be drowned, as had happened to New Friendship. But in the meantime something might be done.

Papa dined out yesterday somewhere with that Lord Alfred, so I haven’t seen him since you were here.

Thus it is a good bishop's desire to wish to heal the weak, to remove the spreading ulcers, to burn some parts and not to cut them off; and lastly, when they cannot be healed, to cut them off with pain to himself.

Should we say, then, that there are many Gods, we must recognise difference among the many.

On the occasion now spoken of, he had had some reason for visiting Hogglestock, and had paid the money personally to Mr. Crawley.

For where those of our own household are not opposed to us, there also the kingdom of God is secured in peace of heart.

Where fear exists, there is zeal in almsgiving, and intensity of prayer, and tears warm and frequent, and groans fraught with compunction.

Had she known the world better she might have felt, perhaps, that something was expected where so much was given.

But to return to our sable friends.

‘You see,’ said he, ‘I am so strong of my years, that if you wished for my shoes, there is no knowing how long you might be kept waiting.’

It’s too little, Soames & Simpson say; but I’m soft, and in love, you know.” Here she leered at him, and he began to hate her.

[Romans 3:30] When indeed they utter this call, they seek something; and what do they seek, but that which they hunger and thirst after?

Chapter LXII. The Brake Country

Showing What Frank Greystock Thought About Marriage

The only two people he cared to see were Lady Rosina and the old Duke.

The sale would still be their object.

As the king grew more earnest in Christianity and confessed that the confession at Nicæa was attested by God, he rejoiced at the occurrences.

But your iniquities separate between you and your God; and because of your sins He has hid His face from you, that He may not have mercy.

A question or two he had asked, and had represented to his client how dreadful was the condition to which he was condemning both the lady and himself.

For soon after this they sent into exile out of Egypt and the two Libyas the following bishops: Ammonius, Thmuïs, Caïus, Philo, Hermes, Pliny, Psenosiris, Nilammon, Agatho, Anagamphus, Mark, Ammonius, another Mark, Dracontius, Adelphius, and Athenodorus; and the presbyters Hierax and Discorus.

The governors were of opinion that, if allowed to remain together, they would probably make a revolution.

She revelled in the work.

Seeing, therefore, that at that time three hundred bishops or more welcomed a few men whom they might have rejected without injury to the Church, I am surprised that certain persons, who are certainly upholders of the faith of Nicæa, are so harsh as to think that three Confessors returning from exile were not bound in the interests of the world's salvation to do what so many illustrious men did of their own accord.

This I pray for, and this my trust and desire I commit to Him, who is sufficiently able to keep those things which He has given me, and to render those which He has promised.

Although the pious judges approved of this sentiment also, they were unwilling to consider or examine how incautiously he had written, or indeed in what sense he had employed the words found in his book.

“Not in the least. You see before you the most wretched heroine that ever appeared on the boards of any theatre. You may laugh, but it’s true. I don’t know what I’ve got to say to Mr. Moss now. If he comes forward in a proper manner, and can prove to me that Madame Socani is not Madame Mahomet M. Moss, I don’t know what I can do but accept him. The Adriatic is free to wed another.” Then she walked about the room, laughing to prevent her tears.

As I have mentioned the monks, and know that you like to hear about holy things, lend an ear to me for a few moments.

And who shall free himself, if God abandon him?

This small body was to consist of Harry himself, of the German, of Jacko, and, according to the story as at present told, especially of Mickey O’Dowd.

“You have already declared,” said the Vicar, “that you can’t endure failure, and yet you want to make your failure known to all the world.” His third proposition was more absurd still.

“She would, certainly,” said Mary.

With swift feet me pursuest, a god

That’s plain speaking;—but it would be a blessing!

that the spotless Apollo, Latona's son, most chaste and pure, with the passions of a breast not governed by reason, desired Arsinoe, Aethusa, Hypsipyle, Marpessa, Zeuxippe, and Prothoe, Daphne, and Sterope?

But it has to be encountered; and though the change be awful, it should not therefore, by the sane judgment, be taken as a change necessarily for the worst.

The buffet of presents no doubt was all there; though it may be doubted whether the contributions from Royalty were in truth so conspicuous as they were made to appear.

There was about his heart—about his actual anatomical heart, with its internal arrangement of valves and blood-vessels—a heavy dragging feeling that almost amounted to corporeal pain, and which he described to himself as agony.

He vehemently inveighs against the error of the Pelagians, who declared that Christ was a mere man.

If he would also learn the number of children that are educated gratuitously in each of the two cities, and also the number in each which altogether lack education, he would, if susceptible of statistics, be surprised also at that.

For the one has been fabricated to destroy the glory of the Only-begotten, and nothing more: but the other includes in its scope the aim of the dispensation concerning man.

“Linda, my child.”

I am, however, quite prepared to acknowledge that the want of pleasure comes from fault of my intellect.

The report deals manfully with Mr. Morgan, showing that for five months’ work—which work he did not do and did not know how to do— he received as large a sum as the President’s salary for the whole Presidential term of four years.

But if it were gold, it would be said to be, and not to be like, gold.

Mr. Hoskins had never done me the honour of calling on me before, nor had I ever become intimate with him even at the club; but, nevertheless, as he had come to me, of course I was willing to see him, and so he was shown up into my room.

“I should read all the more.”

For Daniel says: I considered the horn, and behold that horn made war with the saints, and prevailed against them, till the beast was slain and perished, and its body was given to the burning of fire.

It might be all right yet,—unless the beast should tire with him; and then, Phineas thought, a misfortune might probably occur.

Whatever you may chance upon, has already existed; whatever you have lost, returns again without fail.

“We are regarded as the dominant party, as gentlemen who ought to do what is right, and support the laws.”

Take Prussia for instance.

“I knew the trouble we should have with that man,” said Mr. Goffe, who had always disliked the Thwaites.

For above as commending him, he called them an epistle; but here an epistle of Christ, as having the Law of God written in them.

“I bean’t to be galloping up and down them rides, I suppose,” said Bat, almost contemptuously.

[Wisdom 8:1] What mighty speed!

It is not surprising that men should have wept when they saw that ghaatly face staring at them from the rostra, and the protruding tongue and the outstretched hands.

There might be some fifteen hundred acres of it altogether, and the archdeacon had rejoiced over it with his wife scores of times, saying that there was many a squire in the county whose elder son would never find himself half so well placed as would his own younger son.

The first movement is called beginning.

To reach these regions a man must be an equestrian— as must also a woman.

Why, then, do you not burn indiscriminately the juice of any tree whatever, without making any distinction?

“In such a matter,” he said in his reply, “I am amenable to the laws of the land, and am not, as I take it, amenable to any other authority.” Then he went on to say that for his own satisfaction he should be very glad to tell the story to the Bishop.

She could not even tell him,—at any rate till that marriage at Hastings was quite a settled thing.

For if that is to be called our necessity which is not in our power, but even though we be unwilling effects what it can effect—as, for instance, the necessity of death—it is manifest that our wills by which we live up-rightly or wickedly are not under such a necessity; for we do many things which, if we were not willing, we should certainly not do.

I do not mean the substance of riches, but the unseasonable and frantic desire of them?

Or what does every one that seeks find?

But then he did not know Dolly Grey.

He found his lordship alone, and was received with almost reverential courtesy.

“Certainly. I look upon her as though she were my sister. She has no other brother.”

For there must he saith be also heresies among you that they which are approved may be made manifest among you.

And therefore the man was thrust out with torture and bonds into the outer darkness.

Nor did it ever return members to Parliament; but there was once, in one of the numerous bills that have been proposed, an idea of grouping it with Cirencester and Lechlade.

And not what the Creator could have made it.

Lo, your Fraternity has taken it amiss to have been blamed by me about feasts, while I, who surpass you in my position, though not in my life, am ready to be found fault with by all, and by all to be amended.

What pleasure, what amusement often was given me by this, because I saw that they were mistaken in us?

Chapter LXXV. The Great Wharton Alliance

He had entered upon a feverish state of existence in which it was impossible that he should live in Ireland.

But yet did none of these things cast him down, but he stood like a noble athlete, and for each one was proclaimed and crowned a victor.

“You have said quite enough, Lord Lufton.”

Nearly all birds can be tamed and are capable of training, except the weakest, who through fear and timidity cannot bear the constant and annoying contact of the hand.

He remembered the determined tone in which she had demanded the fifty pounds merely as a further beginning.

jump down your throat, do you? You can but try it on; and then if

She well knew that Sir Griffin would neither pay her debts nor give her a home nor lend her money.

And we know that the apostle said of the vessels placed in the great house, "If a man therefore purge himself from these, he shall be a vessel unto honor, sanctified, and meet for the Master's use, and prepared unto every good work."

But what do they straightway philosophize?

“Fairly well. Thank you. Travelling I think agrees with me. I miss, not my comforts, but a certain knowledge of how things are going on, which comes to us I think through our skins when we are at home. A feeling of absence pervades me. Otherwise I like it. And you;—what have you been doing?”

“I’ll go on for money,” said the immovable major.

“Well, well; two hundred a year, and two thousand pounds, and one, and Pritchett’s account. I’ll tell you what, George, I should like to see you comfortable; and if you and Caroline are married before next October, I’ll give you—”

Of such a nature was the adverse reward of the Jews for their unbelief, which caused them to refuse to pay to the Trinity the tribute of praise.

Phineas himself had been only too willing to pass the thing by as a trifling accident, if he might be allowed to do so, and the Macphersons had been by far too true to their great friend to think of giving him in charge to the police.

But it was known to many of them that he had had a great “turn of luck” on the preceding day, and had walked off from the “rouge-et-noir” table with four or five hundred pounds.

And well too does he give advice concerning conversation; inasmuch as we shall pay the penalty, not for our deeds only, but also for our words.

This is a voice which, when it comes, prevents what I am about to do, but exhorts never.

Wherever therefore I have found in his books anything contrary to the truth concerning the Trinity which he has in other places spoken of in a strictly orthodox sense, I have either omitted it as a foreign and not genuine expression or set it down in terms agreeing with the rule of faith which we find him constantly assenting to.

[Matthew 19:9a] I say unto you, Whosoever puts away his wife without fornication, and marries another, has exposed [37] her to adultery.

As Mrs Lawrie had then told him, he was little better than a pauper.

“I am bad at guessing, I cannot guess. Is it Mr. Blake of Carnlough?”

But this stone would not form a corner, unless it received another wall from the Gentiles: so that the former wall relates in a special manner to the truth, the latter to the mercy of God.

‘I do,’ said she, embracing him—’God knows that I do;—but,

But if, Trypho, some of your race, who say they believe in this Christ, compel those Gentiles who believe in this Christ to live in all respects according to the law given by Moses, or choose not to associate so intimately with them, I in like manner do not approve of them.

Their soul wasted in miseries.

As often as he chose to indulge his humour, he ordered some particular bear to be brought in, and men were thrown to that savage animal, rather to be swallowed up than devoured; and when their limbs were torn asunder, he laughed with excessive complacency: nor did he ever sup without being spectator of the effusion of human blood.

No doubt He then goes on to say, And as for the son of this bond woman, I will make him a great nation, because he is your seed.

And she said, Clement.

And she knew also that the father, as yet, was quite in the dark on the matter.

He saw that Alaric was no ordinary clerk, that Sir Gregory was likely to have the Civil Service under his thumb, and that Alaric was a great favourite with the great man.

And then children had come.

“But, Theodore, he must not speak to Miss Lilian Dale herself about it yet a while.”

“Mary? No. That is just it. She will stick to it if he does.”

[Luke 7:14] Did He then like those who received power from God, ask that power might be given to Him for performing these things by the invocation of the Divine Name?

Now His wisdom is the splendour of that light, not only in respect of its being light, but also of being everlasting light, so that His wisdom is eternal and everlasting splendour.

Therefore, as is reasonable, grasping by faith the indemonstrable first principle, and receiving in abundance, from the first principle itself, demonstrations in reference to the first principle, we are by the voice of the Lord trained up to the knowledge of the truth.

Since, if such an opinion had not existed, if they had not been brought up in these dogmas, but they were now for the first time brought in, perhaps some one might not have received the saying.

“Roger is upstairs, mamma,” said Hetta in the hall.

Attend, Holy Brethren; he said not, I sought gold from the Lord, and He heard me; I sought from the Lord long life, and He heard me; I sought from the Lord this or that, and He heard me.

Then see the prize again: Because your reward is great in heaven.

“And if you’ll take my advice, you’ll go home as fast as you can, and live wherever he bids you.”

It is strange that he omitted to mention Apuleius, of whom many and wonderful things are accustomed to be related.

And it is somewhere written, Israel is My son, My first-born.

Now that he’s been put upon by them lawyers, I’m not the woman to turn my back upon him.

Heretics do away with marriages; Psychics accumulate them.

“I’ll have it done, I will, by heavens! if you’ll only say the word,” protested Sir Roger.

“It was very little.”

For there is nothing miserable save the offending against God; but this apart, neither afflictions nor conspiracies, nor any other thing has power to grieve the right-minded soul: but like as a little spark, if you cast it into a mighty deep, thou presently puttest it out, so does even a total and excessive sorrow if it light on a good conscience easily die away and disappear.

When Elijah, in his flight from Jezebel, lay weary and desolate beneath the oak, there came an angel who raised him up and said, Arise and eat.

“We must turn over a new leaf, Sir Roger; indeed we must.”

It is sin which has filled our life with pangs; it is on account of sin that death is lovelier to us than life; it is on account of sin that when we think in imagination of that incorruptible tribunal we shudder even at the life to come.

Do you see not the trees too, the more they are shaken by the winds, so much the more do they become stronger and firmer?

“Yes, and am asked expressly to hear Turnbull make a convert of you. There are only to be us four. Au revoir.” Then Mr. Kennedy went, and Phineas found himself alone with Lady Laura. He hardly knew how to address her, and remained silent. He had not prepared himself for the interview as he ought to have done, and felt himself to be awkward. She evidently expected him to speak, and for a few seconds sat waiting for what he might say.

For since it is its wont to be at work, when you stop its workings in what is good, seeing it cannot be unemployed, it is compelled to engender what is otherwise.

Who, e.g., would not rather have bread in his house than mice, gold than fleas?

And first of all, I will say something about the very profession which you make in your brotherhood.

There can be no doubt that what Pelagius has acknowledged as his own is as yet very obscure.

“It is a hard case,” said Mark, pleading his own cause. “Though these men have this claim against me I have never received a shilling either in money or money’s worth.”

[Matthew 6:12] I know that the smitten soul endures not meekly, but if we consider that by so doing we do a kindness not to him who has grieved us but to ourselves, we shall soon let go the venom of our wrath; for he who forgave not the hundred pence to him who had transgressed against him, wronged not his fellow-servant but himself, by rendering himself liable for the ten thousand talents of which he had before received forgiveness.

“Gradually you might do so,—at any rate so as to make life possible. You will be all alone. Think what it will be to have to live all alone.”

“Who? I! Oh, no—I don’t think of those sort of things. I suppose I shall marry some day. I’ve a house fit for a lady tomorrow, from top to bottom, linen and all. And my property’s my own.”

When they were taken from him, he suffered in silence, as such men do suffer; and he suffered the more because he knew well how little of gentleness there had been in his manners with them.

But Peter, walking along leisurely while conversing, was looking out for a suitable place for a conference.

[Matthew 23:10] And be not called directors: for your director is one, even the Messiah.

[Revelation 2:23] For God does not ask for our blood, but for our faith.

A coloured man or negro is doubtless qualified to vote if he own a freehold; but then, care is taken that such shall not own freeholds.

On the day before the appointed day he prostrated himself before the altar, and continued all the night in prayer to God, that his enemies might be prevented from carrying their schemes into execution against him.

And so, when health of body, received for the purpose of doing good, is despised, it is felt, after it is lost, how precious was the gift: and at the last it is fruitlessly sought, having been enjoyed unprofitably when granted at the fit time.

“The most graceful girl I ever saw in my life, certainly,” said Mrs. Montacute Jones. “His Royal Highness, when he heard of the engagement, said that you were the happiest man in London.”

A face, so to say, morose?

Whether the motion be to one extreme or to the other, the method is the same, and this is abundantly set Forth.

The truth probably is that they have become so mingled with other races as to have lost much of their identity; but that the race has not perished, as have the Indians of North America and the Maoris.

O nights of vigil, and psalmody, and standing which lasts from one day to another!

For when this heart of ours is made the receptacle of such things, and bears crowds of this abounding vanity, then are our prayers often interrupted and disturbed thereby; and while in Your presence we direct the voice of our heart to Your ears, this so great a matter is broken off by the influx of I know not what idle thoughts.

If the astrologer may on this ground forbid us from drawing comparisons from the heavenly bodies for the mystical representation of sacramental realities, then the augurs may with equal reason prevent the use of these words of Scripture, Be harmless as doves; and the snake-charmers may forbid that other exhortation, Be wise as serpents; [Matthew 10:16] while the play-actors may interfere with our mentioning the harp in the book of Psalms.

“I niver was there, but I know that’s the name of the big mountain over Loch Allen, to the north of Cash.”

“But how has it not come off?”

When then he says, on the strings and organ, he seems to me to have intended to signify some instrument which has strings.

Who that has been placed in foreign lands would not hasten to return to his own country?

And this he did in dependence on the precepts of Aristotle's Categories; there is a book of that name, the scope of which he neither himself perceived, nor had been enlightened on by intercourse with learned persons: so that he was little aware that he was framing fallacious arguments to perplex and deceive himself.

“Impossible, aunt. The Hunters are ready to start tomorrow, or, if not, the day after, and I know they would not have him.”

For it is easy to bind them when cautery or cutting is required, and to keep them inside the fold for a long time, whenever it is expedient, and to bring them one kind of food instead of another, and to cut them off from their supplies of water, and all other things which the shepherds may decide to be conducive to their health they perform with great ease.

In that case she is the more bound to him with whom she has a cause (to plead) at the bar of God.

As He spoke the word, He cast out fear from their souls.

Chapter 14. Constantine. The Army of Honorius and Edovicus his General. Defeat of Edovicus by Ulphilas, the General of Constantine. Death of Edovicus.

For not long after, on the arrival of Alexander, it was subdued, when, although there was no pillaging, because they dared not resist him, and thus, being very easily subdued, received him peaceably, yet the glory of that house was not so great as it was when under the free power of their own kings.

I trust that the smoke of the guns may be duly observed.

She belonged to a noted family of the nobility, and was celebrated on account of her perpetual virginity and her virtuous life.

Book XIV, Letter 4

The chair in which he was sitting was placed upon the rug, and it might be that the fire required his attention.

“Jonathan Ball, to John Ball, junior—Deed of Gift.”

So the barren bears, not once only, but a second time and a third, and many times.

One may say.

Jesus was not yet come into the town.

So far he is without defence.

The bishops assembled at Rome in sacred synod, Damasus and Valerianus and the rest, to their beloved brethren the bishops of Illyria, send greeting in God.

“Not of what you said to him, but of the reasons which have made you so determined. Would it not be better for you to be married?”

Therefore He puts it after the former parable, that He may show even hereby the charge to be greater, and highly unpardonable. How, and in what way? That although they met with so much care, they were worse than harlots and publicans, and by so much.

For what can you say?

Also, she will not be holy in body (which consists of all the members), who is defiled by the pollution of even one of them.

[Romans 1:20] For these animals are subservient to reason, when, being kept in check from a deadly advance, they live, and are good.

‘I suppose he was a little wild out there, but that is a very different thing from bigamy.

Tell the truth, and your father will at once send you to some school in England, where you will be educated as becomes my brother.

He never passed another night under his mother’s roof; he never again heard his mother’s blessing.

He was quite sure of himself that nothing short of cart-ropes or of the police would drag him into the witness-box.

“I like bathing where I can see the bright stones like jewels at the bottom. You can never do that in fresh water. It’s only in some nook of the sea, where there is no sand, when the wind outside has died away, and when the tide is quiet and at its full. Then one can drop gently in and almost fancy that one belongs to the sea as the mermaids do. I wonder how the idea of mermaids first came?”

The boy had been anxious to enlist for the Spanish war.

As this is going on round the entire circle it follows that there are wires starting everywhere from the rim and converging to a centre at the bottom, on which the buckets are always scudding through the air.

Here he hints at something mystical: that they received beforehand all the things which have been spoken concerning things to come; concerning the resurrection, concerning the Kingdom of Heaven, concerning the other things, which Christ proclaimed when He came, for these are the promises of which he speaks.

D., Lo!

This should not be, by many, the last of his visits to Goodwood.

“And you tell me that I’m to be turned out of the house.”

Then she said to me, The last are for the righteous: the first are for heathens and apostates.

Why did you thus present a petition to the other?

Serenus: You have propounded two not unimportant questions, to which I will reply, to the best of my ability, in the order in which you have raised them.

In the first place, it is impossible not to observe the absurdity of acting on petitions from the negroes of Jamaica on such a pretence as this.

For as the lightning comes out of the east, and shines even unto the west, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

For a living creature or animal consists of soul and body, and of these two parts the soul is undoubtedly the better; even though vicious and weak, it is obviously better than even the soundest and strongest body, for the greater excellence of its nature is not reduced to the level of the body even by the pollution of vice, as gold, even when tarnished, is more precious than the purest silver or lead.

If it is supposed that God could not enjoin warfare, because in after times it was said by the Lord Jesus Christ, "I say unto you, That ye resist not evil: but if any one strike you on the right cheek, turn to him the left also," [Matthew 5:39] the answer is, that what is here required is not a bodily action, but an inward disposition.

Everything had gone well with him! Such was the City report of old Mr. Bertram. But let the reader say how much, or rather how little, had gone well. Faustus-like, he had sold himself to a golden Mephistopheles, and his Margaret had turned to stone within his embrace.

Further, let religious clerics (religiosi clerici) avoid resort to or the patronage of laymen; but let them be in all respects subject to your jurisdiction according to the canons, lest through the remissness of your Fraternity the discipline of the Church over which you preside should be dissolved.

Even a sovereign can abdicate; but the Prime Minister of a constitutional government is in bonds.

“Not exactly a live crook; but doing all that kind of thing. I learned a great deal about pigs.”

When we are intimate enough with the Browns to be aware of Jane Brown’s passion, we understand the father’s manner and the mother’s look.

Words cannot express or feeling embrace or reason apprehend the results of enquiry carried further; all is ineffable, unattainable, incomprehensible.

Now really, would it not be the highest possible injustice, even in Hades, if all were to be still well with the guilty even there, and not well with the righteous even yet?

Massachusetts and Connecticut carry out the Fugitive Slave Law?

The dog is not gifted with a share of reason; but with him instinct has the power of reason.

At such entertainments Paterfamilias is simply required to find the provender and to carve it.

Further that which has innate in it the faculty of volition is spoken of as capable of willing : as for instance the divine is capable of willing, and the human in like manner.

And on many occasions He even charges them to make Him known to no man before the Passion; and on the cross He said that this sin was forgiven them.)

I dwell on the earth as a traveler.

But in the other case there was nothing of this kind.

It is still the same.

Not that it came in big drops, or with the violence which wind can give it, beating hither and thither, breaking branches from the trees, and rising up again as it pattered against the ground.

“I can tell you my belief of the state of her welfare.”

Chalky earth is fashioned into the shape of a pyramid, but its colour is that of a milk-white stone, and it is prepared after this fashion.

And a little after: You cannot, says He, serve God and mammon.

Plainly, you must be aware that these precepts are not the law, or any part of the law, since you claim to be righteous, though you make no attempt to keep the precepts.

“I only mean in the course of nature. Sons do come after their fathers, you know. And as for money, I suppose the governor is quite as rich as those Alburys.”

Whence then this change?

Aut Cæsar aut nihil.

There had been moments of doubt in which her heart had fainted a little; but as she read her lover’s words she acknowledged to herself how wrong she had been to faint at all.

Of course she’ll deny herself if you send in your name first.

O bravo!

The Church was in his brother's son, Lot, alone, and in his house, in Sodom, and he endured the iniquities and perversities of Sodom, until God freed him from amidst them.

or 'a creature?'

She was so much at home there that she could always be mistress of the occasion.

In telling our tale we will not go back to the old sins of the borough, or say aught but good of the past career of the members.

“And what about the property?”

If then you take away the antagonist, which of these two have you injured?

But what has been inferred from the same passage by your Holiness for my comfort I gladly accept, since in the understanding of sacred Scripture whatever is not opposed to a sound faith ought not to be rejected.

But when her father told her that she was to be taken abroad for a prolonged residence, and when it of course followed that her lover was to be left behind, there came upon her a natural feeling that the best thing for her would be to lie in bed, and so to avoid all the troubles of life for the present moment.

Yours, dear Lady Tringle, ever so much,

He knew that the Colonel was an older man than himself, and his Emily was still to him only a young girl.

During that discussion nothing was said about Edith Brownlow, and of course, not a word was said about Mary Lowther.

This Word, therefore, consists not in uttered speech, but in the designation of celestial excellence, so that Photinus' teaching is refuted.

If he did by chance open his mouth on the subject to Mr. Monk, even Mr. Monk discouraged him.

“Mr Blake, thin—Mr Blake, darlint—doesn’t ye remimber the promise you guv me?”

They wear no headdress when in their carriages, and indeed may generally be seen out of doors with their hair uncovered.

It had been a pity.

See in what the evil ends.

“You ask him, Mrs Baggett.”

Mr. Wharton was in the front room, and though on entering it he did look round furtively for his daughter, he was ashamed to wander about in order that he might watch her.

“A fainting fit in a carriage and half-a-dozen kisses.”

The Lord Himself has given commandment in the Gospel, how it behooves men always to pray and not to faint.

And here the superfluous birds were brought, much to the old man’s grief, for he knew that he should never see them again; but he could not refuse them when they were given to him, and the room which he inhabited would conveniently hold no more.

Words cannot express how sweet is the savour of Christ which your letter breathes.

Consider what a tempest Saul then sustained, his bowels being torn with anguish, and the most profound precipice appearing on either hand!

Hence our sorrow over the departed is all the more grievous; we do not exactly know whether this vivifying principle is anything by itself; where it is, or how it is; whether, in fact, it exists in any way at all anywhere.

Who is this, says Isaiah, that comes up from Edom, with shining raiment from Bozrah, so beautiful in his glistening robe?

This seat in Parliament has come in my way by chance, and I think it would be pusillanimous in me to reject it, feeling, as I do, that a seat in Parliament confers very great honour.

True, but (people) are also everywhere persuaded (as, in fact, here), some were persuaded, and some believed not.

You Terrible One, when saw we You naked, and clothed You?

For He who brought them into existence out of non-existence would not reduce them to the loss of it.

Let Your mercy be exalted above Your justice, [James 2:13] because Your words are true, and You have promised mercy unto the merciful; [Matthew 5:7] which You gave them to be who wilt have mercy on whom You will have mercy, and wilt have compassion on whom You have had compassion.

Mountjoy conceived that his only chance of obtaining money arose from his brother.

For as the term Father points to no difference of nature from the Son, his impiety, if he had brought his statement to a close here, would have had no support, seeing that the natural sense of the names Father and Son excludes the idea of their being alien in essence.

Let us then receive knowledge, not desiring its results, but embracing itself for the sake of knowing.

“These things will occur in political life,” said the leader; “but I think that they seldom leave rancour behind them when the purpose is declared, and when the subject of disagreement is marked and understood.

We are all talking about your speech. My father was in the gallery and heard it,—and said that he had to thank me for sending you to Loughton. That made me very happy. Mr. Kennedy declares that you were eloquent, but too short. That coming from him is praise indeed. I have seen Barrington, who takes pride to himself that you are his political child. Violet says that it is the only speech she ever read. I was there, and was delighted. I was sure that it was in you to do it.

For to the good, so far as they are themselves concerned, it is enough that they are good; but those are to be congratulated whose interest it is to imitate the good when the good are praised by them, since they thus show that the persons whom they sincerely praise are persons whose conduct they appreciate.

Deary me, and isn’t it a thing for sore eyes to have you back again!

But when he got home he bade Mary tell him what Mr Lowlad had said in his sermon, and was quite cheery in his manner of picking Mr Lowlad’s theology to pieces;—for Mr Whittlestaff did not altogether agree with Mr Lowlad as to the uses to be made of the Sabbath.

Why, then, do you refuse to admit that Christ, in a preternatural manner, suffered without submitting to the condition of birth?

But this he said on account of Judas, who should betray Him; therefore said He, You are not all clean.'

For when we smite, and raven, and overreach, and use the free as if they were slaves, whom is not this enough to offend?

Of course she stayed her needle.

Because, to what purpose would you love without fraud, and not love with warmth?

Perhaps nothing more disagreeable, more squalid, more revolting to the senses, more opposed to personal dignity, can be conceived.

stated to be still due.

For if for their own side alone they have praised the connivance of those princes, who, though Christians, yet in no way abolished the heathen decrees, how much more ought you to defer to brotherly love, so that you, who ought to overlook some things even if you did not approve them in order not to detract from your brother's statutes, should now maintain what you judge to be in agreement both with your own faith, and the bond of brotherhood.

And if we feel the difficulty which, among his numerous philanthropic works, Lord Birmingham must experience in attending to the state of his numerous dependents, it only makes us reflect more often, that from him to whom much is given, much indeed will be required!

She could only shudder.

She dressed with the greatest care, always wearing silk at and after luncheon.

As Noah is commanded to make the ark of squared beams, that it might resist the force of the deluge, by the precious stones he sets forth the holy men who cannot waver in persecution, who could not be moved either by the tempest of persecutors, or be dissolved from the true faith by the force of the rain, because they are associated of pure gold, of whom the city of the great King is adorned.

He’s your husband, Mrs. Lopez.

“By dad, you’re right, Mr. Thady,” said one of them. “Shure wouldn’t we have him in a bog-hole, or as many as he’d send; and then they might take away what they could carry in their mouths.”

Why are philosophers attended to, who either say that there are no gods, or that, if there are any, they take no interest in, and do not regard the affairs of men, or argue that there is no providence at all, which rules the world?

So great was the name of Monkhams!

Mrs. Low was deeply affected, declaring her opinion very strongly as to the horrible condition of things, when madmen could go about with pistols, and without anybody to take care against them.

If he did command her now she thought that she must go.

“I’ll not do anything.”

Therefore loosing from Troas, we came with a straight course, etc.

Some as they think fit circulate stories such as this— that he was a man living in an underground cave with flowing hair down to his feet, and invent many incredible tales which it would be useless to detail.

Him too that says He took not a body and became man.

What I now relate is unparalleled: from one man's lips were heard different voices and as it were the confused shouts of a multitude.

Consider whether He may not have preserved a race such that He is looking for a testimony to Himself from them, as well as consisting of those on whom He enjoins the interchange of righteous dealing.

And he sent a copy to the Chairman of the Board at the Shadrach Fire Office, and another to the Chairman at the Abednego Life Office.

“Poor fellow!”

In His zeal to do the Father's commandment, He rises and hastens to complete the mystery of His bodily passion.

As it has been shown that he who injures another for the sake of his own advantage will undergo terrible punishment at the hand of his own conscience, it is referred that nothing is useful to one which is not in the same way useful to all. Thus there is no place among Christians for the question propounded by the philosophers about two shipwrecked persons, for they must show love and humility to all.

Therefore it will be much more accurate to denote God from the Son and to call Him Father, than to name Him and call Him Unoriginated from His works only; for the latter term refers to the works that have come to be at the will of God through the Word, but the name of Father points out the proper offspring from His essence.

And, then, was not Lady Ongar’s name tainted?

Mr. Kennedy was an unmarried man, with an immense fortune, a magnificent place, a seat in Parliament, and was not perhaps above forty years of age.

, a native of Asia, instructed in the Scriptures at Rome by Tatian whom we mentioned above, published many things especially a work Against Marcion in which he tells how the Marcionites differ from one another as well as from the church and says that the aged Apelles, another heretic, was once engaged in a discussion with him, and that he, Rhodo, held Apelles up to ridicule because he declared that he did not know the God whom he worshipped.

Ver. 15. Of whom also beware; for he has greatly withstood our words.

And will you not refrain from meats even, for him that is weak?

That softening of his heart which had followed upon the receipt of the telegraphic message departed from him as he dwelt upon the stubborn, stiffnecked, unfeminine obstinacy of the letter.

But there arose certain quibbles and questions, all of which Jack had at his fingers’-ends, by the strength of which the unfortunate young man was trounced.

How, therefore could John be Elias?

What had happened at Castle Richmond?

[Ezekiel 18:4] And he has not sinned who suffers the evil, but he who has done the evil.

If from man, whence is man?

When the note was written Mr. Brown felt that it was cold;—but then it behoves an editor to be cold.

Very clever, I dare say.

For he speaks of God the Father and God the Son, whom he calls (writing in Greek) the intellect or mind of the Father; but of the Holy Spirit he says either nothing, or nothing plainly, for I do not understand what other he speaks of as holding the middle place between these two.

“I’m sure of that, Mr. Slope; I am quite sure of that;” said the bishop, mollified: “and you really think that Mr. Harding should have the hospital?”

They wish to understand how the Trinity uttered that voice which was only of the Father; and how the same Trinity created that flesh in which the Son only was born of the Virgin; and how the very same Trinity itself wrought that form of a dove, in which the Holy Spirit only appeared.

And, indeed, we must speak of them both conjointly, because they are closely connected.

Chapter 6. Of the election of Ambrosius, the Bishop of Milan

What, then, moves you to say that to God the Father or to His Christ there is glory, life, greatness, or power, in the Holy Spirit, and to refuse to say with the Holy Spirit?

But I beseech you to remember that, though in the indictment he has been charged with murder only, he has been by the servant of government, by my learned friend on the other side, accused of other grievous crimes; and I implore you by your verdict, to purge his character of the stain which has been so unjustly attached to it, if you find, on examination of the evidence, no cause to suppose that he had been a participator in the councils of such societies.

For hearing from the Scriptures that His Godhead is represented in the Son as in an image, they blaspheme, saying, that it is a creature, and everywhere concerning that Image, they carry about with them the phrase, 'He was not,' as mud in a wallet , and spit it forth as serpents their venom.

God, subsisting alone, and having nothing contemporaneous with Himself, determined to create the world.

Rightly, therefore, was he called a wild-vine, because he in nowise sprung from the shoots of the vine of Israel.

Because everything which is in the world is lust of the flesh, and lust of the eyes, and the ambition of this world, which is not of the Father, but of the lust of this world.

For a judgment ought not to be solicited in a case which he himself has judged.

Forgotten it could not be,—nor, as she thought at the moment, forgiven.

For the Reason which is talking with you promises so to demonstrate God to your mind, as the sun demonstrates himself to the eyes.

But, lo, he speaks boldly, and they say nothing unto him.

“If you are ever my wife?”

What manner of people were the Burtons?

That is, do not put that confidence to shame.

“It may be a week, the doctors say, and it is hardly possible that he should remain alive for another month.” Such was the news which reached him from his own emissary at Tretton. What had he better do in the emergency of the moment?

Furthermore we send you, as a blessing from Saint Peter, Prince of the apostles, a key of his most sacred sepulchre, in which is inserted a blessing from his chains , that what bound his neck for martyrdom may loose yours from all sins.

The Rules also would be much in the way.

But there was jealousy at Stratton, though Florence was not jealous.

Chicago, which has grown out of nothing in a much shorter period, and which has no factories, has now 120,000 inhabitants.

Wherefore be not led away by the solemn assemblies of philosophers who are no philosophers, who dogmatize one against the other, though each one vents but the crude fancies of the moment.

At one time they say that the Evil One has no communion with the good God in the creation of the world; but at another time they say that he has the fourth part only.

He takes aim also against the Jews, and if he censures the whole nation, we need not wonder, for he does the same in the case of the Galatians, saying, O foolish Galatians.

(7) The Seventh Breviate

Plaistow Hall, — July, 186—.

Euphemism required that his name should be mentioned at no public meetings in connexion with the coming election; but, nevertheless, most men in the county believed that he could send his dog up to the House of Commons as member for West Barsetshire if it so pleased him.

And ambiguity ought to be avoided, so that, as the Greek called them [περιζώματα], by which only the shameful parts of the body are covered, so also the Latin should either use the Greek word itself, because now custom has come to use it instead of the Latin, or, as some do, use the word aprons, or, as others have better named them, wrestling aprons.

XV. The Saviour showed to the believing apostles prayer to be stronger than faith in the case of a demoniac, whom they could not cleanse, when He said, Such things are accomplished by prayer. He who has believed has obtained forgiveness of sins from the Lord; but he who has attained knowledge, inasmuch as he no longer sins, obtains from himself the forgiveness of the rest.

[Micah 4:1-3] This prophet predicts the very place in which Christ was born, saying, And you, Bethlehem, of the house of Ephratah, art the least that can be reckoned among the thousands of Judah; out of you shall come forth unto me a leader, to be the prince in Israel; and His going forth is from the beginning, even from the days of eternity.

But the old ways are not like these, but such as become men. Wherefore I for my part expect that in process of time the young men among us will wear even women's shoes, and not be ashamed. And what is more grievous, men's fathers seeing these things are not much displeased, but do even account it an indifferent matter.

A rebel!

Sir —— is a particular friend of mine.” Here he named a pundit of the peace, very high in the estimation of all policemen.

They then used to come with the word “coal” on the outside.

Just as John: The same, says he, shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost.

Say now yourselves if they are not false deities?

21. Herod and the Baptist.

What then is the mysterious lesson?

What then is the answer?

To these then he went and said, What will you give me, and I will deliver him unto you. And they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver. And from that time he sought opportunity to betray Him. For indeed he was afraid of the multitude, and desired to seize him alone.

“And won’t he be dhrunk again, Anty?” suggested Jane.

Although at one time philosophy justified the Greeks, not conducting them to that entire righteousness to which it is ascertained to cooperate, as the first and second flight of steps help you in your ascent to the upper room, and the grammarian helps the philosopher.

But there is great delight in it, he says.

There shall rise up together ten kings of the Romans, reigning in different parts perhaps, but all about the same time; and after these an eleventh, the Antichrist, who by his magical craft shall seize upon the Roman power; and of the kings who reigned before him, three he shall humble , and the remaining seven he shall keep in subjection to himself.

The man who sells his goods because he despises them and means to renounce the world can have no desire to sell them dear.

Then Jacob, going on his way, is said to have had a vision of angels and of the army of the Lord.

And a little further on, he proceeds thus:— And they concealed themselves in the city, and secretly visited the brethren.

For if there were no such medium, how could the voice travel from the speaker to the hearer?

Also in the second Epistle of Paul to the Corinthians: We must all be manifested before the tribunal of Christ, that every one may bear again the things which belong to his own body, according to what he has done, whether good or evil.

“Yes;—like a servant-maid,” said Lucy. “That is to say, a servant-maid would, I suppose, simply walk in and be married; and I shall do the same.”

He was no judge of men.

“And have you no claim on me, Marie?”

“Could I have a bedroom immediately, with a fire in it?”

He had thought that he could explain the reasons to the Minister, but found himself incapable of explaining them to himself.

That accident in regard to the colour of the Dean’s lodge had stood in the way of his logical studies,—so that he was unable to put his argument into proper shape; but there belonged to him a certain natural astuteness which told him that he must put in his rejoinder at this particular point.

For as unbelief brings forth an evil life, so also a soul, when it has come into a depth of evils, becomes contemptuous [Proverbs 18:3], and having become contemptuous it endures not even to believe, in order thereby to free itself from fear.

I will not say that assuredly the Colony should do so,—or else not have the soldiers.

But of these two, that is, of a good life, and a good report, or as is said more shortly, of virtue and praise, the one for his own sake he most wisely kept, the other for the sake of others he most mercifully provided.

Others are free to insult him; for, when he is insulted, he does not venture to retaliate.

[1 Corinthians 11:1] What?

Sermon 25

“This is Mr. Fitzgerald—Mr. Herbert Fitzgerald; and I am Mr. Somers, the agent. Can we do anything for you?”

Arius then raves in saying that the Son is from nothing, and that once He was not, while Sabellius also raves in saying that the Father is Son, and again, the Son Father , in subsistence One, in name Two; and he raves also in using as an example the grace of the Spirit.

The Duchess was almost certain that no message had come, and from various little things which she had observed and from tidings which had reached her, very much doubted whether Arabella had known anything of his intended going.

Thus then did the Prophet comfort him, but the blessed David, for all he heard it said, The Lord has put away your sin, did not cease from repentance, king though he was, but put on sackcloth instead of purple, and instead of a golden throne, he sat, a king, in ashes on the ground; nay, not only sat in ashes, but also had ashes for his food, even as he says himself, I have eaten ashes as it were bread.

For tell me, what was there ever more exalted than Abraham?

Nor would the Christians, had they owed their origin to a rebellion, have adopted laws of so exceedingly mild a character as not to allow them, when it was their fate to be slain as sheep, on any occasion to resist their persecutors.

You must feel it to be so.

From that period, many of the Macedonians seceded from the others, and held separate churches; while others, condemning this opposition and contentiousness of those who had made these decisions, united themselves still more firmly with the followers of the Nicene doctrines.

Would you learn, that you may know, that this is no time for tears?

We had claimed the Dutch as our subjects when they attempted to start for themselves in Natal, and had subjugated them by force of arms.

I protest before God and the Elect Angels that the Flock of God is being unrighteously dealt with in being left without a Shepherd or a Bishop, through my being laid on the shelf.

“From you or from Sir Thomas?”

They again went together to the room which they had shared for the last night or two, and there they parted. They had not been there long when the sound of wheels was heard on the gravel, and Mrs. Orme got up from her seat. “There is Peregrine with the carriage,” said she.

“I am to go in the carriage with him,” said his wife.

“Was—Augusta Mildmay there?”

We hurriedly offered him 30s., and he was at last bustled into the impropriety of agreeing to our terms without taking a night’s rest to sleep upon it.

It is because I know that you have unfeigned faith that I put you in remembrance.

So to the leper that was cleansed He said, Go, show yourself to the priest [Matthew 8:4 at once providing most certain proof of the cleansing, and stopping the shameless mouths of those who asserted that He was legislating in opposition to God.

Behold, your house is left desolate.

Young Hampton jumped a very nasty fence by the side of the wicket, and Lord Rufford followed him.

Since, then, the Only-begotten God is by nature the good (or rather beyond all good), and since the good does not fail to be the object of the Father's will, it is hereby clearly shown, both that the conjunction of the Son with the Father is without any intermediary, and also that the will, which is always present in the good Nature, is not forced out nor excluded by reason of this inseparable conjunction.

[1 Corinthians 11:3] and that Christ is the head even to them, because there is but one Mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus?

“In three months’ time!” exclaimed Everett, whose mouth was watering at the prospects of his friend.

Then indeed the partisans of Eusebius, ill-disposed towards Athanasius, imagining they had found a seasonable opportunity, welcomed the emperor's displeasure as an auxiliary to their own purpose: and on this account they raised a great disturbance, endeavoring to eject him from his bishopric; for they entertained the hope that the Arian doctrine would prevail only upon the removal of Athanasius.

For if they who are of the law be heirs, faith is made an empty thing.

As, therefore, no one will deny that these are all descended from that one man, so all the races which are reported to have diverged in bodily appearance from the usual course which nature generally or almost universally preserves, if they are embraced in that definition of man as rational and mortal animals, unquestionably trace their pedigree to that one first father of all.

She did begin to see what men might say of him, and the way in which they might speak of his silence, though she was resolved to be as true to him in her faith as ever.

The giants sinned, and much wickedness was then spread over the earth, and because of this the flood was to come upon them: and in the five hundredth year God utters His threatening; but in the six hundredth He brought the flood upon the earth.

Thus it is plainly shown that the offerer was not acceptable by reason of the gifts, but the gifts were so by reason of the offerer.

For, if one commits murder while drunk, it is an act of ignorance, but yet not involuntary : for one was one's self responsible for the cause of the ignorance, that is to say, the drunkenness.

We are the same to emperors as to our ordinary neighbors.

That which was sick you did not heal, and that which was broken you did not bind.

But in the daughter of Erechtheus

It was not with him, as with most others, an affair of politics, respecting which, when the need existed, he could, for parties’ sake or on behalf of principle, maintain a certain amount of necessary zeal; it was not with him a subject for dilettante warfare and courteous, commonplace opposition.

Which Christ teaching by His actions, goes to His Passion, not by constraint and necessity, but willingly.

Your people, Lovel, have not understood me.

There cannot be a doubt about that.

“Yes,” said he, “if those are your feelings, why don’t you take a wife?”

The Lord is the hierophant, and seals while illuminating him who is initiated, and presents to the Father him who believes, to be kept safe for ever.

Moggs junior was profuse in gratitude, profuse in obedience, profuse in love.

“Penwether told me about it,” said the Lord.

‘It all depends on the spirit of the stitches,’ said Charley the censor.

Do this then; and looking up unto the heaven, think that you are made like Him that sits there upon the Cherubim.

And after this, when blindness of mind has succeeded passion, and the hostile powers, by their suggestions, hurry on the mind, money is now no longer desired, but stolen, and acquired by force, or even by shedding human blood.

“They would have put you into the interior.”

And this was not without meaning; but that by means of the number of the ten men, he (Gideon) might appear as having Jesus for a helper, as [is indicated] by the compact entered into with them. And when he did not choose to partake with them in their idol-worship, they threw the blame upon him: for Jerubbaal signifies the judgment-seat of Baal.

“Yes, my dear,” whimpered the poor woman.

Roden.

Every one of the royalists, on the other hand fired, with a clear aim, and almost invariably with deadly effect.

On his return to his inn, Bertram at once found that there had been an arrival of some importance during his absence. Waiters and boots were all busy—for there are waiters and boots at Jerusalem, much the same as at the “Saracen’s Head,” or “White Lion;” there is no chambermaid, however, only a chamberman. Colonel Sir Lionel Bertram was there.

She let it drop from her, as though the receiving, and opening, and reading it had been a stain to her.

Perhaps in some sort of way he had a weak fondness for her;—but it was a fondness that had never touched his heart.

“I shall think it an unwise marriage,” he continued, repeating his words; “but I was bound to tell him that were Miss Boncassen to become your wife she would also become my daughter.”

Woman ought to make her hair yellow,

“To see thee?”

The very place for him.

She had much more pleasure in looking at them than she would have had in listening to the congratulations of M. Grascour.

Did she also commit them to the earth to be hid from sight; and lest in this case they should, being uncovered, be dispersed in the bosom of the earth, did she indeed wash and anoint them with fragrant gums before wrapping and covering them with his dress?

Suppose one summons a Eubulus to his assistance, and a Critolaus, and a Zenocrates, and on this occasion Plato's friend Aristotle.

Who attracts the attention of those in the public places, she who wears beautiful garments, or she who is dressed simply and artlessly?

“Pat Carroll?” said the Captain; but giving the name merely as a hint to help the boy’s memory.

Chapter 24. Concerning Melitius; the Excellent Directions made by the Holy Council in his Complications.

It also is wonderful—moreover David also says to God, You are the same, and Your years shall not fail; and furthermore Isaiah says, I am God, the first, and hereafter am I: and the Evangelist, He was in the beginning, and was with God, and was God:— and that He has neither beginning nor end: — and he proves that those who say that He is new and comes from nothing are idolaters.

But now he had been told that he had no right to rob Ayala of her chances, and he felt that he had not the right.

And now I have a mournful story to tell.

Is it so secret as to be supposed to characterize a new doctrine?

And consequently, when God is said to change His will, as when, e.g., He becomes angry with those to whom He was gentle, it is rather they than He who are changed, and they find Him changed in so far as their experience of suffering at His hand is new, as the sun is changed to injured eyes, and becomes as it were fierce from being mild, and hurtful from being delightful, though in itself it remains the same as it was.

E'en then her schemes, her cares were bent.

To this Dalrymple was able to make no direct answer.

What was it that Thou did then, O my God, and how unsearchable are the depths of Your judgments!

At this time also arose the heresy of the Messaliani. Those who translate their name into Greek call them Euchitæ.

If we have only two servants, we can live.

Nor truly was it allowed them to do anything else, than what the people, following the Divine will, desired to be accomplished.

All this happened a full year before the beginning of our present story.

I have been informed by persons who were acquainted with Isidore, that from his youth upwards he practiced the philosophic virtues, near Scetis.

Nay, in truth, Pythagoras, who first invented this name, since he had a little more wisdom than those of early times, who regarded themselves as wise, understood that it was impossible by any human study to attain to wisdom, and therefore that a perfect name ought not to be applied to an incomprehensible and imperfect subject.

The busy-bodies, and the over-curious, whatever they have learned, do not stop.

He robs not another of his estate, but so loves his own, that if he loses it he will be disturbed.

If, then, we all kill ourselves we shall become the cause, as far as in us lies, why no one should be born, or instructed in the divine doctrines, or even why the human race should not exist; and we shall, if we so act, be ourselves acting in opposition to the will of God.

How the Earl Was Won

You said, moreover, that he was so moved by these words of yours, that he purposed to give the lives of these men to you as a present, in token of friendship, before you set out on your journey.

Whence we are of opinion that, seeing the soul, as we have frequently said, is immortal and eternal, it is possible that, in the many and endless periods of duration in the immeasurable and different worlds, it may descend from the highest good to the lowest evil, or be restored from the lowest evil to the highest good.

11. Neither do I, my brethren, with greedy desires, long for this, so that I may be set over many things; the recompense I get from the fact of your advance is enough for me. Oh that I may not be found unworthy of that which I have received! Let those things which are too great for me be assigned to better men. I demand them not! Yet may Thou say, O Lord: I will give unto this last, even as unto you. [Matthew 20:14] Let the man that deserves it receive authority over ten cities. [Luke 19:17]

Again, Paul recounts all things as created in Him, in heaven and on earth, visible and invisible.

And this was necessary, seeing that their division from us was effected by strife, and carried out with war and bitter animosities.

Madame Goesler met him more than half across the room as he entered it.

Was it not all for him that she was doing it?

“If you will stand to me, mamma, I am sure it may be done. I would write to him, and say that you would see him.”

For the following is his statement: Moses alone shall come near the Lord; but the rest shall not come near.

For the Jews from the beginning had understood by a most certain tradition that this man should at some time come, by whom all things should be restored; and daily meditating and looking out for His coming, when they saw Him among them, and accomplishing the signs and miracles, as had been written of Him, being blinded with envy, they could not recognise Him when present, in the hope of whom they rejoiced while He was absent; yet the few of us who were chosen by Him understood it.

For just as free will is shown by the disobedience of the people, so the government of God and His assistance is made clear by the beginning and end of the verse, where He implies that He had spoken to them before, and that afterwards He would put down their enemies, if they would have hearkened unto Him.

Are you not my work in the Lord?

For the crown of sorrows and sufferings cannot be received unless patience in sorrow and suffering precede it.

If the Arabias complain of this, let the Sabæans be well assured that their more precious and costly merchandise is expended as largely in the burying of Christians as in the fumigating of the gods.

A fourth mode is, when, from either side of those, there is advanced an unanswerable and irrefragable argument.

His lettres de cachet no longer ran.

“‘Deed an that’s thrue for you, cook,” said Biddy, with the corner of her apron up to her eyes. “But tell me, Richard, won’t poor Mr. Herbert have nothing?”

While then we were puzzling over this question the blessed Chæremon arrived at the cell, and as he saw that we were whispering together about something, he cut the service of prayers and Psalms shorter than usual, and asked us what was the matter.

Every European state but ours rewards its men of letters.

We do not therefore, as you think, receive your men of your party as still belonging to you, but in the act of receiving them we incorporate with ourselves those who forsake you that they may be received by us; and in order that they may belong to us, their first step is to renounce their connection with you.

2. In one love will I cause them to shine, and as a crown will I weave them, the splendid blossoms, and the fragrant flowers of the teacher and of his disciple, who remained after him as Elisha; for the horn of his election and he was consecrated and became head, and he was exalted and became master. R., Blessed be He Who made him chief!

In politics I have done my work.

Orth.— After making many promises about this seed that it should be Lord both by sea and land and higher than the kings of the earth and be called the first begotten of God, and should boldly call God, Father God also added this, My mercy will I keep for him for evermore and my covenant shall stand fast with him. His seed also will I make to endure for ever and his throne as the days of heaven.

For this results in their case, not from any feeling of goodness, but from the exigencies of solitude, and when they have secured an opportunity of hurting some one, at once they produce the poison stored up in them, and show the ferocity of their nature.

[Matthew 7:6] For had He revealed even to those who disbelieve, their disease would have been the rather aggravated.

In this way the outlying populations have been encouraged to take upon themselves their own governance, and the governing power of the President and his cabinet has been kept within moderate limits.

Masters repeating her objections, but repeating them with but little energy.

“Is that all you know about women, Harry? Do you think that the girl whom you love so dearly will take up with one man after another in that fashion?”

If, then, you teach that burning or fornication is good, the good will still be surpassed by what is still better.

“I shall say nothing—nothing here,” said Kenneby.

For I was seeking some one whom I might send to you, and it was not easy to fall in with one qualified both by trustworthiness in performing and by alacrity in undertaking the work, as well as by experience in travelling.

Celsus continues in his usual manner, asserting that to change a nature entirely is exceedingly difficult.

Now He had already taught before the sacrament of this perfect unity, saying, As the living Father sent Me, and I live through the Father, so he that eats My flesh shall himself also live through Me.

But when can I enumerate all the particulars relating to the nature of our spirit and our soul of which we are ignorant?

There might still be the miracle; her prayers were still her own to give; of them she would say nothing to her father.

But He does not at present reveal this, but what says He?

As for the sword, which is drunk with the blood of the brigand's victims, who would not banish it entirely from his house, much more from his bed-room, or from his pillow, from the presumption that he would be sure to dream of nothing but the apparitions of the souls which were pursuing and disquieting him for lying down with the blade which shed their own blood?

The operation, then, of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit is one, unless perchance you, who deny the oneness of the same operation upon the Apostle, think this; that the Father and the Spirit wrought in Peter, in whom the Son had wrought, as if the operation of the Son by no means sufficed for him to the attainment of the grace.

And hence we have a story, that a certain judge played a trick upon them, by ordering them to be bound and led away, as though for execution, and so escaped their violence, without injury to himself or them.

The only change made was effected by the retirement of Sir Marmaduke Morecombe, who was raised to the peerage, and by the selection of—Mr.

“He is not a fellow of very much account,” said Anderson; “one of those handsome fellows without conduct and without courage.” “I’ve known lots of ‘em,” said Arbuthnot.

“Ah! that is so like you. You are so scornful, and so proud,—and never so proud as when pretending to be humble. I sometimes think that it is better that you and I are two, because you are so proud. What could a poor girl like me have done to satisfy you?”

Very little of that servility can be enjoyed by persons of the Mollett class when money ceases to be ready in their hands and pockets, and there is, perhaps, nothing that they enjoy so keenly as servility.

Nor have we ever heard that the great God, after giving his spirit to the creator, demands it back again.

Lucy, remembering her duty, remembering how imperative it was that she should endeavour to do good to the one human being with whom she was closely concerned, forgave her, and tried to comfcrt her;—forgave her even though at last she refused to be guided by her monitress.

He left her without any assured purpose;—without, that is, the assurance to her of any fixed purpose.

The fruits of the autumn fed Liguria and the Venetias.

Is it not therefore of themselves also that it is said in the same Council, "The poison of asps is under their lips, their mouth is full of cursing and bitterness, their feet are swift to shed blood; destruction and unhappiness is in their ways, and the way of peace have they not known"?

51; and (2) we shall be caught up in the clouds, 1 Thes.

“I know what you mean, and it’s all very well. After your different fashions you two have been true to me, and I don’t care how much you see of my hand. That man’s insolence angers me to such an extent that I cannot refrain from speaking out. He hasn’t spirit enough to go out with me, or I would shoot him.”

The judges decided that, having been once deposed, he ought not to be admitted to a second trial.

Everything therefore depends upon the end; in which one who was consecrated by a noble conversion at the outset may through carelessness turn out a failure, and one who was compelled by necessity to adopt the monastic life may through fear of God and earnestness be made perfect.

And (if so) not without reason; inasmuch as it, too, consists of that which is the essence of fornication.

Blame not, before you are informed.

How have you been robbed of your ornaments!

By way of example, we have chosen for our consideration this passage out of many in the Old Testament, which treat of the knowledge of God, in order to show that when God does not know, the cause lies, not in His ignorance, but in the occasion.

The God of Gods shall appear in Sion.

“Do you tell me that to my face?”

“I’ll tell you what I’m athinking,” said Lefroy. Mr. Peacocke stood with his hand ready for a final adieu, but he said nothing. “I’ve half a mind to go back with you to England. There ain’t nothing to keep me here.”

And yet what hope can a man have, who, whether he is aware of it or not, has either a very bad head or no head at all?

Consequently, it proceeds from a want of faith, this bringing in the Law.

“But he won’t have changed his mind if you have given up your plan about your sister-in-law.”

Some expressed almost a regret that his generosity should go unrewarded, and others went so far as to give him his reward: he was to marry Emmeline Fitzgerald, they said at the clubs in Cork, and a considerable slice of the property was destined to give additional charms to the young lady’s hand and heart.

For God did not create death, neither does He take delight in the destruction of living things.

When the people of Epidaurus saw this, I mean the roaring waves and heaving waters and the swirling billows mountain-high dashing on the shore, fearing that what they saw had happened elsewhere might befall them and their town be utterly destroyed, they made their way to the old man, and as if preparing for a battle placed him on the shore.

Did He not, to take an example from our Lord Himself—did He not suffer when He willed, and was He not found when He was sought?

With good cause, therefore, does the true religion recognize and proclaim that the same God who created the universal cosmos, created also all the animals, souls as well as bodies.

That, therefore, which at one time before its beginning had no existence, and will by and by after its end cease to have an existence, cannot of course, by any possibility, seem to be a god, wanting as it does that essential character of divinity, eternity, which is reckoned to be without beginning, and without end.

But it, when lifted up, is forsaken, and, being forsaken, it is recalled to fear.

Just as in the case of the thief on the cross, who confessed but was not baptized, the Lord did not give him the kingdom of heaven, but paradise; [Luke 23:43] the words remaining accordingly in full force, 'Unless a man be born again of water and of the Holy Ghost, he shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven.'

“They seem to get a very good living here, and they pay their rent punctually.”

Even if God had enjoined no preceptive fasts, still, by pointing out the source whence Adam was slain, He who had demonstrated the offense had left to my intelligence the remedies for the offense.

But, inasmuch as we have ourselves also written to him, we believe that he will without delay keep himself quiet from disquieting you.

By what spirit is it borne into a rapidly flowing stream?

[Galatians 3:18] So that, because the law was made four hundred and thirty years after, it might enter that the offense might abound; [Romans 5:20] since by sin the pride of man presuming on his own righteousness is convinced of transgression, and where sin abounded grace much more abounded [Romans 5:20] by the faith of the now humble man failing in the law and taking refuge in God's mercy.

Judah, he says, begot Pharez and Zara; yet neither were these twins the first-born of Judah, but before them he had begotten three other sons.

But John never speaks as if referring to himself, or as if referring to another person. But the author of the Apocalypse introduces himself at the very beginning: 'The Revelation of Jesus Christ, which he gave him to show unto his servants quickly; and he sent and signified it by his angel unto his servant John, who bore witness of the word of God and of his testimony, even of all things that he saw.' [Revelation 1:1-2]

Were she to quarrel altogether with Steinmarc, she thought that there would be left to her no means of bringing upon Linda that salutary crushing which alone might be efficacious for her salvation.

If any one wishes to defend this statement of Celsus, let him show that it is not the divine angels of god, but demons, the whole race of whom are bad, that have been appointed to communicate all those blessings which have been mentioned.

With him it is manifestly personal ambition, and not duty.” There was much more of it in the same strain, but at the same time an acknowledgment that he had now instructed the Dean’s lawyer to make the inquiry.

There was Legge Wilson, who twelve years since had been at the Treasury, and would do very well.

For (he says) that perfect Nous, knowing the sixfold number to be possessed of the power of production and regeneration, manifested to the sons of light the regeneration that had been introduced into this number by that illustrious one who had appeared.

For what we call temporal, he describes as having had a beginning.

We therefore seek you that we may find you; for we love you that you should have life, with the same intensity with which we hate your error, that it might be destroyed which seeks to ruin you, so long as it is not itself involved in your destruction.

When therefore from the first we learn to bear it patiently, and do not sink into despair, He presently relieves us, as having effected the whole matter.

The pig will travel on freely, but will always take the wrong turning, and then when stopped for the tenth time, will head backwards, and try to run between your legs.

And the work of the day was much impeded by a certain member who unfortunately spoke German, who seemed to be fond of speaking German before his brethren of the Committee, and who was curious as to agriculture in Holstein generally.

“I am so sorry that you should have been disturbed!”

And men drink themselves drunken, and perish, and forget their own Creator: while not temperately but lustfully they use the things created, the Creator is despised.

And do not wonder that a man may become an imitator of God.

You do not put your wages into a bag with holes, [Haggai 1:6] but you lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, [Matthew 6:20] and if you seek my friendship, it is because you believe me to be a servant of Christ.

Nothing would hamper you in your future career so much as a long marriage engagement; and for myself, I am aware that the sorrow and solicitude thence arising would be more than I could support.

A Barchester jury won’t like to find a man guilty who is hand-and-glove with the dean.

Eames was always angered when his new patron Sir Raffle talked of his old friendship with the earl, and never gave the Commissioner any encouragement. “I am going down to Guestwick,” said he.

For mankind is part of the whole as well as the rest.

But, on the other hand, the Egyptian emperor— who, after pursuing the once afflicted people of God, long denied to their Lord, rushed into the battle — did, after so many warning plagues, perish in the parted sea, (which was permitted to be passable to the People alone,) by the backward roll of the waves: [Exodus 14:15-31] for repentance and her handmaid exomologesis he had cast away.

Moreover, if any one by transgressing the law dishonours the lawgiver, it seems clear to us that if the two laws, the law of God and the law of mammon, are completely opposed to each other, it is better for us by transgressing the law of mammon to dishonour mammon, that we may honour God by keeping His law, than by transgressing the law of God to dishonour God, that by obeying the law of mammon we may honour mammon.

Disdain not, I beseech you, to accept this suggestion, petition, and entreaty from me.

For it is pious to hold and confess the Holy Trinity in one Godhead.

“I had hoped that perhaps, sir, you and he might—”

With whom would he not be equal?

In these plays the most shameless actors celebrated Jupiter as the corrupter of chastity, and thus gave him pleasure.

Leave the darkness of night, and lay hold on the light.

With reason He said, There are few that be saved.

There can be no worldly boasting among them, if they reflect how vain a thing it is that they should, in smaller matters, prefer themselves to those whom they know to be equal to themselves in greater matters, and should regard, as placed below themselves on earth, those whom they believe to be equal to themselves in what relates to heaven.

Bart. Bobbin.

One cannot wonder that the white man here should be vituperative in his wrath. First came emancipation.

And in voice;

No such occasion had ever yet occurred, but Aaron thought that it might probably be brought about.

Music is introduced.

It is a reward, that even that flesh of yours by which you were oppressed rises again and that not even a hair of your head perishes.

But when we speak of the dispensations made for man by our great God and Saviour Jesus Christ, who will gainsay their having been accomplished through the grace of the Spirit?

Chapter LV. Quints or Semitenths

In less than half a minute, and without speaking another word, they were all on their horses and riding in the direction of the light.

He may be deceitful if he pleases.

Early in the morning their fellow-passengers had left them, and they were now alone.

Chapter 29.— Of the Three Men or Angels, in Whom the Lord is Related to Have Appeared to Abraham at the Oak of Mamre.

What man is he that lives, and shall not see death?

“Here he is,” said Hugh, as he entered the parlour.

His next letter is to his other young friend, Curio, who has just been elected Tribune.

For they fall to the lot of fewer men, and that generally by chance; and they often fall to the indolent, and sometimes by guilt, and they are desired by those who already possess them.

And this diviner method is called by the apostle the manifestation of the Spirit and of power: of the Spirit, on account of the prophecies, which are sufficient to produce faith in any one who reads them, especially in those things which relate to Christ; and of power, because of the signs and wonders which we must believe to have been performed, both on many other grounds, and on this, that traces of them are still preserved among those who regulate their lives by the precepts of the Gospel.

His excuse to himself lay in the political character of the institution.

“I think you’re wrong there, Miss Louey,” said Father John; “I think he not only did think of her—but does think of her; and I’ll tell you what I know, that if Feemy Macdermot had the great blessing which you have, and that is a kind, good, careful mother to the fore, she’d have been married to him before this.”

She had lived at his house.

‘To put my things in. I can’t pack up unless I’ve got something to pack them in. As to going tomorrow, papa, it’s quite impossible. Of course there are people I must say goodbye to. The Freeborns -’

“It’s true,” said Cheesacre.

And if Celsus would maintain that there is no difference between us and the Egyptians, who worship the goat, or the ram, or the crocodile, or the ox, or the river-horse, or the dog-faced baboon, or the cat, he can ascertain if it be so, and so may any other who thinks alike on the subject.

Then Mick pointed to the swag.

He knew very well that he could not get the better of her, and was apt at such moments to think that she took an unfair advantage of him by keeping her temper.

Thus Moses was the greatest of the Prophets, yet he, when others were to receive the Spirit, himself suffered diminution.

But then if the marriage were managed in any notoriously quiet way, the very notoriety of that quiet would be as dangerous as an attempt at loud glory.

That lodging was rudely prepared, but it was more illustrious than the halls of kings.

“You can make yourself understood when you speak, Sir William.”

This Eunomius Eudoxius promoted to the see of Cyzicus; who having come there, astonished his auditors by the extraordinary display of his 'dialectic' art, and thus a great sensation was produced at Cyzicus.

“Papa,” she said, “what does George mean by saying that I ought to be more particular than other people?”

She will hear me conversing of her always, either with her sister or with her mother.

“I would be more than kind.”

And in the next place, He did it to honor His mother, that He might not seem entirely to contradict and shame her that bare Him in the presence of so many; and also, that He might not be thought to want power, for she brought the servants to Him.

Mr Palliser was chiefly known to the world as a rising politician.

Could I have swum with the stream and have said yes or no as yes or no were expected, I might have revelled in generous hospitality.

The Latin words do not convey the meaning of the Greek.

“And therefore he resigned,” said Phineas.

Therefore we have been comforted.

“There is nothing like being straightforward,” she said to herself, “and if he does not choose to believe me, that is his fault.” So she took up her pen, and wrote quickly, to the following effect:

When he came to the details of his dealings with the different parties, every one wanted from him twice as much money as he had expected.

Some have drawn them into marriage against their will, and others have forced them to minister to disgraceful services, to infamous love, to acts of rapine, and fraud, and violence: so that the accusation is twofold, and neither can they obtain pardon upon the plea of necessity.

Having given himself for some time to earnest prayer, and perceiving by means of the Spirit of God that power was present, he then rose up for a little, and gazing on the countenance of the deceased, he waited without misgiving for the result of his prayer and of the mercy of the Lord.

And the Apostle John teaches us how this has been fulfilled, when he says, We know that the Son of God has come, and has given us an understanding, that we may know Him that is true, and may be in Him that is true, even His Son , and again, let us therefore love God, because He first loved us.

And it is well that it is so.

After this, as He ever does, not by the honor only laid up for the good, but also by the punishment threatened against the wicked, does He correct the hearers.

The latter, which is an event in time, produced or constituted since the origin of man, falls within the limits in which the discerning sense may claim to pass judgment, since it is not prior in time to our perception and reason.

“Yes, it would be expensive,” said Lady Glencora.

“The Laague, then, isn’t any such old friend of mine. I niver heerd of the Laague, not till nigh three years ago. What with Faynians, and moonlighters, and Home-Rulers, and now with thim Laaguers, they don’t lave a por boy any pace.”

But it might be possible that messengers sent by him should reach Jaffa by four or five on the day after his arrival.

And all the people sat down [38] by companies, by hundreds and fifties.

“All right,” said Sir Hugh. “You had better come with me into the city this morning. I am going to Boxall’s, in Great Thames Street.”

[Acts 23:1] What he means is this: I am not conscious to myself of having wronged you at all, or of having done anything worthy of these bonds.

But she had declared that she would not submit—that she would have house and income and all; and she had been successful.

The potted peas Committee sat on the Thursday, and he ought to have been there. His absence, however, was unavoidable, as he could not have left his friend’s bedside so soon after the accident. On the Wednesday he had written to Lady Laura, and on the Thursday evening he went first to Portman Square and then to Grosvenor Place.

12. Arrows of infants have been made the strokes of them [Psalm 63:7]. Where is that savageness? Where is that roar of the lion, of the people roaring and saying, Crucify, Crucify? Where are the lyings in wait of men bending the bow? Have not the strokes of them been made the arrows of infants? You know in what manner infants make to themselves arrows of little canes. What do they strike, or whence do they strike? What is the hand, or what the weapon? What are the arms, or what the limbs?

Going on one occasion to the holy father Macarius about mid-day, and being overcome with the heat and thirst, I begged for some water to drink: 'Content yourself with the shade,' was his reply, 'for many who are now journeying by land, or sailing on the deep, are deprived even of this.'

Orthodoxus. But matter was found to be without quality or form?

Now as there are very many wicked things which I tell you of him, remember first his blasphemy, secondly his slavery (not that slavery is a disgrace, but that his pretending to be free-born, when he was a slave, was wicked), thirdly, the falsehood of his promise, fourthly, the murder of the child, and fifthly, the disgrace of the imprisonment.

And now he might put down, not only the bell, but with the bell the ill-conditioned peer who had caused it to be put up—on glebe land.

After offering up these prayers he proceeded towards Italy, crossed the Alps, and took the first guard-posts.

She would be hardly a bride if the trousseau were not there.

You see, therefore, says he, because the power of the Lord co-operates everywhere with human efforts, that no man is able to build without the Lord, no man to watch without the Lord, no man to undertake anything without the Lord.

It is for him indeed that we take such care of our estate.

In the contemplative life, then, one in worshipping God attends to himself, and through his own spotless purification beholds the holy God holily; for self-control, being present, surveying and contemplating itself uninterruptedly, is as far as possible assimilated to God.

When so much land would be thrown into the market it would be sold very cheap and would be sold to those whom the “decemviri” might choose to favor.

[Genesis 48:18] And Jacob said, I know it, my son, I know it; but the elder shall serve the younger: yet he also shall be blessed.

Of the stock of Israel.

“Do,” she said, smiling up into his face; “don’t let me ever be in your way.

Truly, as a faithful physician, with the healing knife of preaching in His hand, He has cut away all our wounded parts.

Who would dare to walk into Garnett’s shop with the diamonds in his hands and ask for the four hundred pounds?

Fare well.'

The blessed Constantine hearing of this at once, was struck with wonder to find him thus convicted of perjury.

And there was a widow in that city; and she came unto him day by day, saying, Avenge me of mine adversary.

She had been quite, quite sure, when she came into the house; but she was more than sure now.

When I.O.U.’s have for some time passed freely in such a company as that now assembled the sudden introduction of a stranger is very disagreeable, particularly when that stranger intends to start for San Francisco on the following morning.

‘Instinct with inexpressible beauty and grace, Each stain of earthliness had passed away.’ I can see him now in all his manly beauty, as we used to sit together by the hour, looking over the waters.

This subject I will inquire into more particularly elsewhere.

“And I?” said he.

He had already resolved, previous to this, that he would at once prepare a home for his coming bride, though he was sore distressed by the emergency of his position.

With him was joined Mr. Boffin, the patriotic Conservative who had never listened to the voice of the seducer, and the staunch remainder of the old Tory party.

What place has this command here?

“Yes; not at first, that is. Of course I asked him who he was as soon as I thought he could bear the question. But he turned away, and merely said that he was a stupid man about some old London business, and that he should have gone to Prendergast. But when, after a while, I pressed him, he said that the man’s name was Mollett, and that he had, or pretended to have, some claim upon the city property.”

Troubles were coming thick upon Ralph Newton.

Pay for the article yourself, Mr Vavasor, and then it’s your own.

12. Bind up your words that they run not riot, and grow wanton, and gather up sins for themselves in too much talking. Let them be rather confined, and held back within their own banks. An overflowing river quickly gathers mud. Bind up also your meaning; let it not be left slack and unchecked, lest it be said of you: There is no healing balsam, nor oil, nor bandage to apply. Sobriety of mind has its reins, whereby it is directed and guided.

“A great deal more that is worth hearing.”

“I do not know,” he replied; “I hardly know yet what I am going to do. But it is at any rate certain that I must do something.”

Short and fleeting are the joys of this world's pleasures which endeavour to turn aside from the path of life those who are called to eternity.

He would come very soon,—as soon as Johnstone had come back from his fishing.

As a lawyer, in the broad and high sense of the word, it may be presumed that Mr. Chaffanbrass knows little or nothing.

Not unmoved, indeed, but always with a spirit of antagonism.

[2 Corinthians 12:21] For he who after sinning has practised repentance, is a worthy object not of grief but of gratulations, having passed over into the choir of the righteous.

And this the blessed Paul showed even from times of old, when he said, that They did all eat the same spiritual meat, and did all drink the same spiritual drink: and added, that they were not saved; for they were overthrown in the wilderness.

Whereunto has it led him?

And things were said so terrible that she hardly knew how to bear them.

Nor is there a portion of the Father resident in the Son, for the Son bears witness, All things that the Father has are Mine , and again, And all things that are Mine are Yours, and Yours are Mine , and the Apostle testifies, For in Him dwells all the fullness of the Godhead bodily [Colossians 2:9 and by the nature of things a portion cannot possess the whole.

As none but those of his own party attended the meeting, it was not wonderful that the vote was unanimous.

Nickem was now at work trying to learn where Scrobby had purchased the poison, as it was feared that Goarly’s evidence alone would not suffice to convict the man.

You know a good deal of my history, Miss Newton.

I will receive you with open hands and— if I may boast and speak foolishly like Hermagoras — I will strive to learn with you whatever you desire to study.

“You mean the advertising people?”

She does not separate her lot from his because he is in debt!

He has been very violent, but he never drinks.

Let us entreat God, let us entreat him whom we have reviled.

At any rate, Mrs. Talboys was not so inclined, for she started down the hill towards the long low wall of the old Roman circus at the bottom; and O’Brien, close at her elbow, started with her.

So said the bystanders.

In two, if I mistake not: if either those things are done which are forbidden, or those things are not done which are commanded.

“You do not believe him,” said Violet.

Before this became a definite arrangement Miss Stanbury had given way in a certain small degree.

Owing to this little accident, Lily was not so much oppressed by Hopkins as she had expected to be in that matter of their altered plans; but this salvation did not extend to Mrs Hearn, to Mrs Crump, or, above all, to Mrs Boyce.

For the dog, which is an irrational animal, may be said to be continent, dreading as it does the uplifted stick, and therefore keeping away from the meat.

What can such a one as I have to do with landed property?

How, then, does Plato the philosopher condemn the poet Homer for saying, Even the gods themselves are not inflexible, and yet himself represent the maker of the gods as so easily turned, that he sometimes declares the gods to be mortal, and at other times declares the same to be immortal?

“Oh, Lady Lufton!”

7. In the fifth book of his Expositions of John's Gospel, he speaks thus concerning the epistles of the apostles: But he who was 'made sufficient to be a minister of the New Testament, not of the letter, but of the Spirit,' [2 Corinthians 3:6] that is, Paul, who 'fully preached the Gospel from Jerusalem and round about even unto Illyricum,' [Romans 15:19] did not write to all the churches which he had instructed and to those to which he wrote he sent but few lines.

Of course nothing is too hard for the Lord.

For conceive of him as being at that time taken away by the dignity of martyrdom.

The answer must, however, still be ambiguous.

But the American Germans are in earnest, and I am strongly of opinion that they will so far have their way, that the country which for the future will be their country will exist without the taint of slavery. In the Northern nationality, which will reform itself after this war is over, there will, I think, be no slave State. That final battle of abolition will have to be fought among a people apart, and I must fear that while it lasts their national prosperity will not be great.

Mr. J. ARNASEN (Inspector of the Latin College).

We should have to lay aside the whole man before we could change the service of the various members: as if, for instance, we were to try to take food with the left hand, or to perform the duties of the left hand with the right, so as to remove the remains of food— unless, of course, need demanded it.

[2 Timothy 2:3] Such an opinion did the Valentinians assert of themselves.

Could he not give up the property with the signing of some sufficient deed, and thus put an end to their cruel clamour?

Today, the 11th of the month Gorpiæum, we are expecting our very pious Emperor to cross over to the Rufinianum, and there to hear the trial.

He did not actually forbid his wife to see Mr. Saul, but he did say that Mr. Saul should not come to the rectory.

Now we know that what things soever the Law says, it says to them who are under the Law, that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God.

He thought that if he could only find some one person who would sympathize with him and support him, he would not mind.

Chapter IX. First Book of the Civil War.-Caesar Crosses the Rubicon.- Follows Pompey to Brundusium. -And Conquers Afranius in spain.-b.c. 49

Having therefore these promises, beloved.

But they have become vain in their imaginations and their foolish heart was darkened.

I am altogether certain of both.

They were driven to this by their own consciences; but their flight only confirmed the proof of their own calumnies, and caused those things to be believed against them, which their accusers, who were present, were asserting and arguing.

For, behold, the darkness shall cover the earth, and gross darkness the people: but the Lord shall arise upon you, and His glory shall be seen upon you.

and are you always ready to forgive in that way yourself?

And had not man been united to God, he could not have shared in the incorruption.

For all love those who love them; it is peculiar to Christians alone to love those that hate them.

“What purpose?” Mr. Greenwood went on staring and shaking his head and rubbing his hands, till the Marquis, awestruck and almost frightened, put out his hand towards the bell.

Sir Harry acknowledged to himself that he had learned a great deal about his cousin, and it was for him to judge after that whether he would receive his cousin at Humblethwaite.

Our love, too, proceeding from ourselves and returning to us, would suffice to make our life blessed, and would stand in need of no extraneous enjoyment.

So much on the interpretation of one paragraph of the Epistle to the Galatians.

[Matthew 7:22-23] And on the other hand, if the faith of those who bring them or of the sick is wanting, it prevents those on whom the gifts of healing are conferred from exercising their powers of healing.

We are like those who have a wealthy society with which to compare their own poverty, and so are all the more vexed and discontented with their present lot.

For there the years abide; but here they pass away, yea, they perish: for before they come they are not, and when they shall have come they shall not be, because they bring their own end with them.

He would never have added let each man have his own wife, unless he had previously used the words but, because of fornications.

Mrs. Outhouse did attempt to show him that it was his fault; but while she was doing so he left the house. “I don’t think she could go back to him,” said Mrs. Outhouse to her husband. “He is quite insane upon this matter.”

Are these things what you recompense unto the Lord?

“He is a very rich man, I suppose.” Then Mr. Morton endeavoured to explain the position of Captain Glomax. He was not rich. He was no one in particular—except that he was Captain Glomax; and his one attribute was a knowledge of hunting. He didn’t keep the “dogs” out of his own pocket. He received £2,000 a year from the gentlemen of the county, and he himself only paid anything which the hounds and horses might cost over that. “He’s a sort of upper servant then?” asked the Senator.

Then follows, For You see toil and considerest anger, to deliver them into Your hands [Psalm 9:14].

For Wisdom declares that it is prior to all these things.

But more than this.

Practically the books are given to those who ask for them, whoever they may be.

Now the things which are to be kept safe for sanctity's sake are these: pudicity of body, and chastity of soul, and verity of doctrine.

He had once declared to certain naval acquaintances, over his third glass of grog, that he regarded it as his birthright to be an Admiral; but at the age of seventy-two he had not yet acquired his birthright, and the probability of his ever attaining it was becoming very small indeed.

She was very old,—some people said eighty, adding probably not more than ten years to her age,—very enthusiastic, particularly in reference to her friends; very fond of gaiety, and very charitable.

We shall start on the first of September.” As this was said about the middle of August there was still some remnant of comfort for poor Mrs Pipkin.

“She promised she would come again, you know. They are at their own place in Surrey. They will come unless they have friends with them. They have no shooting, and nothing brings people together now except shooting. I suppose there are things here to be shot. And be sure you write to Silverbridge.”

For unto this end was manifested the Son of God, to undo the works of the devil: for He has undone them withal, by setting man free through baptism, the handwriting of death having been made a gift of to him: and accordingly, he who is being born of God does not sin, because the seed of God abides in him; and he cannot sin, because he has been born of God.

“So am I.” Then the old man toddled into his own chamber, and after sitting there ten minutes went away home.

The night was long, but she wished it to be longer.

Mrs. Greenacre was humbled and said nothing further on the matter. But let prudent men such as Mr. Greenacre preach as they will, the family of the Lookalofts certainly does occasion a good deal of heartburning in the world at large.

During this time the old Duke was away, and even the Prime Minister was absent for some days.

“I can only refer you to Mr. Barry,” said Mountjoy.

But it is sufficient at present to bring forward this from the Gospel according to John, Jesus turned and beheld them— clearly, Peter and Andrew— following, and says unto them, What do you seek?

'I have never seen the righteous forsaken, nor his seed begging bread.'

So then, that he refers all to the Father, is in order that they may receive what is said: and that assertion, Not possible, he fetches in from the prophecy.

For myself I hate to think of the coming severance; but if it must come, why not by your hands as well as by any other?

And I have, methinks, observed a proneness in the world to ridicule that dependence on a woman which every married man should acknowledge in regard to the wife of his bosom, if he can trust her as well as love her.

And Euphorion, in his book about the Aleuades, maintains that he was born in the time of Gyges, who began to reign in the eighteenth Olympiad, who, also he says, was the first that was called tyrant ([τύραννος]).

For you are God, and we knew it not, O God of Israel.

“May God Almighty in His mercy protect and guard him!” said the sister.

Here is an instance of this in our Scripture.

II. The Incarnation was the only effective remedy to the fall

I may speak of other kingdoms and other kings as appendages of these.

And as for Guiana !

The elder had already made an excellent match, as regarded fortune, in marrying Sir Hugh Clavering; and the younger was now about to make a much more splendid match in her alliance with Lord Ongar.

And when he had plainly taught the people concerning these things, he added this also: That unless a man be baptized in water, in the name of the threefold blessedness, as the true Prophet taught, he can neither receive remission of sins nor enter into the kingdom of heaven; and he declared that this is the prescription of the unbegotten God.

Here she wrote her books and contrived her system for the inveigling of editors and critics.

Lady Rowley, in arguing this, had expressed no assent to the marriage, even as a distant arrangement, but had thought thus to vanquish her daughter by suggesting small but insuperable difficulties.

[Isaiah 42:5] And to the Son: I am the Lord God, Who have called You in righteousness, and will hold Your hand, and will strengthen You; and I have given You for a covenant of My people, for a light of the Gentiles, to open the eyes of the blind, to bring out of their fetters those that are bound.

No; but he refutes and confounds them out of their own mouths.

And if He gave it not from the beginning because of those that were unwilling to receive it, still, they that were willing did hear it.

It is therefore specially surprising that our author, who differs from Tertullian in this point, yet labours to persuade us that the incorporeal God does not make the soul out of nothing, but exhales it as a corporeal breath out of Himself.

We deem it necessary to compare with the expression of the passage we are considering the similar expressions found elsewhere in the Gospels.

This was no common murder, and no common murderer.

Those however which I have quoted at length are out of the reach of any dishonest manipulation, and can easily be verified from the actual works.

According to the same force of the text, Jacob also, hastening to seek a bride, met Rachel unexpectedly at the well.

Let the unbelieving be silent, even though they themselves do not believe.

Next, however, with regard to your statement that there is indeed one baptism, [Ephesians 4:5] but that it is consecrated in three several grades, and to your having distributed the three forms of it to three persons after such fashion, that you ascribe the water to John, the Holy Spirit to the Lord Jesus Christ, and, in the third place, the fire to the Comforter sent down from above—consider for a moment in how great an error you are involved.

Again the Emperor was stated to have declared: I also ought to have one Basilica.

Mr. Jerningham could never go away till Æolus went.

Hold fast, O virgins!

I have got my property to manage, and I mean to manage it myself as long as I live.

“Father,” she said; “it is I.”

Where has she to go to?

Here was an answer for a man to get to the most earnest appeal which he could make! Here was comfort for a wretch suffering from fear, remorse, and shame, as Alaric was suffering. He had spoken of his feelings and his heart, but these were regions quite out of Undy Scott’s cognizance. ‘Take a blue pill,’ said he, ‘and you’ll be as right as a trivet in a couple of days.’

“I should have thought that just on this one occasion you might have managed it,” she said to him, trying to mingle a tone of love with the sarcasm which at such a crisis was natural to her.

If you object from a proper modesty, it argues that those who accept, shew an improper degree of assurance.

He was surely entitled to it.

“Yes; indian-rubber’s wonderful too. Are you in that line, sir?”

There was nothing of romance in her nature; but as she looked at matrimony, with all its blisses,—and Mr. Barry among them,—she told herself that death would be preferable.

For God called the firmament, above which are the waters, Heaven, and yet the psalm says, Let the waters that are above the heavens praise the name of the Lord.

Let no one then, [even] of those who have come to the extremest wickedness, despair of himself.

And the sword was blunted, that it should no more lay waste the friends of Christ.

Apollinarius also and Didymus published certain commentaries on it, from which I have culled some things, though but few; and, as seemed to me right, I put in or took out others; but I have done this in such a way that the careful reader may from the very first see how far the work is due to me, how far to others.

For great is the reward he receives from God.

“Of course he hasn’t much to say for himself; for he’s always at home. But he is a gentleman.”

She did not, however, understand the nature of the note she had signed, and thought that simply new bills would be presented by the jewellers to her husband.

Her brother, a boy of six years old, was with her, and he had the care of another baby.

But he found that it was impossible for him to be so guided, even at any distance, and at last he thrust the poor figures from him altogether and trampled them under his feet.

In like manner, the things which are good for the body are evil to the soul, that is, desire and lust, by which riches are desired, and the enjoyments of various pleasures, by which the soul is weakened and destroyed.

“My jumping is pretty wellnigh done,” said the old woman.

In one of the earlier chapters of this volume—now some seven or eight chapters past—I brought myself on my travels back to Boston.

“I don’t want to go back to anything. When it comes to a fellow’s parting with such prospects as mine, it does come very hard upon him. Of course it’s my own fault. I might have got along well enough;—only I haven’t. I am hard up for money,—very hard up. And yet,—if you were in my place, you wouldn’t like to part with it.”

I knew how it would be when she came among us with her streaky brown cheeks, ou’d make an anchor wish to kiss ‘em.” Here Mr Whittlestaff again became appeased, and made up his mind at once that he would tell Mary about the anchor as soon as things were smooth between them.

Nay, in India it is said that a huge monster of an elephant shall yield to a stripling of fifteen, who manages him with the utmost ease.

“Certainly I will. He has always been one of the best friends I ever had in my life. I know it hasn’t been his fault. But what can a man do? Girls won’t marry this man or that because they’re told.”

For, in our opinion, the same virtue belongs to all the blessed, so that the virtue of man and of God is identical.

As soon as she was on her feet, Bernard had dropped Emily’s hand, and offered his arm to his cousin.

And in this there is not much fault to be found with your senses—that is, your bodily senses.

For what is even more amazing, there are those women, whom we have lately mentioned.

If perchance you have a wife, would you have your wife fear you thus, that she be not condemned by you?

Orth.— Is man called an image of God?

And thus he disproved the judgment of the philosophers, who had thought that the truth was drawn forth, and found out by their talents—namely, because that wisdom was mortal, and, having been instituted a few ages before, had now attained to its greatest increase, so that it was now necessarily growing old and perishing, the Academy suddenly arose, the old age, as it were, of philosophy, which might dispatch it now withering.

And therefore the poet Claudian, although an alien from the name of Christ, nevertheless says in his praises of him, O prince, too much beloved by God, for you Æolus pours armed tempests from their caves; for you the air fights, and the winds with one accord obey your bugles.

The major could not submit to so much indignity.

And if this pleases you, what is the need of the Word, seeing that things inferior can be brought to be by things superior?

Scene—Entrance to the Dragon of Wantly Inn and yard. Coffee-room door opens to the left. Bar to the right, with open windows, at which the hat is seen of a man sitting at a desk. Toogood, solas, enters between the bar and coffee-room.

To these we shall reply at the proper time; for they differ with us in regard to first principles.

But the Apostles not so, but how?

Jesus properly and justly did not deign to reply that He was; but reminded him of the works of which he had already heard: "The blind see, the deaf hear, the dead are raised."

And you must not suppose that they ask me to stay.

He knew her writing well, and was aware that here was the confirmation of his fate.

And then, looking forward, he could perceive the possibility of an event which, if it should occur, would cover him with confusion and disgrace.

What disasters are suffered by those who travel by land or sea!

Is perchance the Law itself to be understood in Mount Sina, as that which the Heavens dropped from the face of God, in order that the earth might be moved?

Then to prevent these saying, But why were You not made manifest to us also?

And, indeed, you ascribe to him no mean favours; since, in your opinion, the god Hercules was born to exceed and surpass in such matters his father's powers.

But if your mind is still turned towards refusing, ask Mr. Gresham to give you three or four days for decision, and then come here.

Therefore we received and embraced your pastor, and, having held communion with you through him, we dispatch this address and our eucharistic prayers that you may know how we are united by the bond of love to him and you.

Such are the reasons in the case of Christ so far as we can attain to them.

“I have no power to turn anybody out or in,” said he. “I’ve got nothing to do with it.”

The word here translated cloak may mean a garment, or, as some say, a bag, in which the books were contained.

Some people, however, found it easy enough to call him, whose parents were unknown, the son of those gods from whom all may in a sense seem to be derived.

“True, Bessy;—that is quite true. But equally true whether you bid him come or allow him to remain away. That task of making up one’s mind for life, must at last be done in some special moment of that life.”

Some approach, however, may be reached to the amount actually paid in wages and for clothes and diet; and I give below a statement which I have seen of the actual annual sum proposed to be expended on these heads, presuming the army to consist of 500,000 men.

But he was very far as yet from understanding the whole truth.

“Yes, he has been successful. I’m sure you must be glad, papa.”

“What is your objection, Mr. Wharton?”

A sweet mouth multiplies its friends, and a gracious tongue.

[Proverbs 6:27] You bear in your bosom live coals; burned through is your vest; you bear in thought adultery, and whole then is your soul?

There was something worse in the god’s smile.

And how can one be a slave and not a slave?

“No; I can’t do that.”

Mr. Jones is to let me have a place called Clover Cottage, down in Gloucestershire, and, I believe, I’m to take a farm and be churchwarden of the parish.

The two men walked down the hill together, reaching the hotel about noon.

Mr Montague had found her out, and had told her grandfather’s landlord.

He had been specially fortified in this resolution by his dislike to the ballot,—which dislike had been the result of Mr. Monk’s teaching.

The sin was rather hers,—in that she kept it from him.

He consorted much with blacklegs and suchlike, because blacklegs were to his taste.

If she goes to Cheltenham I won’t stay here.

As Paul said, Whether in pretense or in truth Christ is preached.

[4] [Arabic, p. 155] [Matthew 23:37] O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, slayer of the prophets, and stoner of them that are sent unto her! How many times did I wish to gather your children, as [5] a hen gathers her chickens under her wings, and you would not! [Matthew 23:38] Your house shall [6] be left over you desolate. [Matthew 23:39] Verily I say unto you, You shall not see me henceforth, till you shall say Blessed is he that comes in the name of the Lord.

It is contented (if it be only a little shrub) with its own insignificant destiny, which it has in its foreseeing instinct thoroughly been aware of from its infancy, only it still fears even a ruined building.

That people which was called of old the people of God was divided into twelve tribes, and over and above the other tribes it had the levitical order, which itself again carried on the service of God in various priestly and levitical suborders.

How, then, according to the Scriptures, is one our Master, even Christ?

But when he expressed his unusual opinions he became a noted man, and Natal was heard of for the first time by many people.

Now these things were not necessary to Him, if He had been perfect by simply appearing and approaching.

“Never again,” he said to her very gruffly, but still with such a look across his eyes as irradiated his whole face. “This hand shall never again be your own to do as you please with it.”

For, Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father Which is in heaven.

Nothing mean and contemptible is here mentioned: and indeed to that mind which is not earth, both gold and silver is earth, but more beautiful and brilliant, more solid and firm.

From the moment in which he had read the minister’s letter to the young member, he had felt that the offer had too probably come from a desire to make the political separation between himself and his son complete.

For what the objectors asserted, was not that they must not be received upon believing, but that it must be with the Law.

The outlet of this system lies between the States of Tennessee and Missouri, of Mississippi and Arkansas, and through the State of Louisiana.

Wherefore subordinates of either order are to be admonished that, when they observe the deeds of their masters, they return to their own heart, and presume not in upbraidings of them, since The disciple is not above his master, nor the servant above his lord [Matthew 10:24].

who, through their love of pleasure, reject chastity.

Who could confront the sun!

Lizzie could not stop to beg pardon, but she would remember to do it in her prettiest way on their journey home.

The story of the Lion and the Lamb was very popular.

For if love is less great therein [i.e.

For this was particularly the vice of women and of old age.

But I say that the house of the poor also is a city.

God alone could teach how he wished Himself prayed to.

He had promised not to foster a quarrel between Mary and Lord George, but he thought it by no means improbable that circumstances would for a time render it expedient that his daughter should live at the deanery, while Lord George remained at Cross Hall.

But how is this effected?

“And he has done all in his power to blacken me? I know it. Tell me, Miss Mackenzie, has he not blackened me? Has he not laid things to my charge of which I am incapable? Has he not accused me of getting money from you under false pretences,—than do which, I’d sooner have seen my own brains blown out? I would, indeed.”

‘Yes, you did.

Such love was in itself a sin, even though it was accompanied by the severest forbearance and the most rigid propriety of conduct.

But, alas, I have come to think it inexpedient,—and, if expedient, still impracticable.

It would have been much better for me had I done so.

To the Nobles and Proprietors in Sardinia.

But now, to the poor Duke the wound had no salve, no consolation.

What possible doubt would there be in the breast of anyone as to his guilt?

He performed the Christmas services with nothing of special despondency in his tone or manner, and his wife thought that she had never heard him give the sacrament with more impressive dignity. After the service he stood awhile at the churchyard gate, and exchanged a word of courtesy as to the season with such of the families of the farmers as had stayed for the Lord’s supper.

lest then this should be urged against him, he says, 'Neither do I assert that we therefore groan, that we may put it off; (for no one puts it off without pain, seeing that Christ says even of Peter, 'They shall carry you, and lead you whither you would not; [John 21:18]) but that we may have it clothed upon with incorruption.'

Consider also with me the wisdom of the Lawgiver.

And then Dr Thorne, taking Lady Scatcherd’s hand and leading her out into another chamber, told her the truth.

Maximus, Sermon 13, p. 574.— Antonius Melissa, Sermon 32, p. 45, and Sermon 33, p. 57.

And again they are to be admonished that, if they fear not to be bad, they at least blush to be seen to be what they are.

Now I am not ignorant that most of those, whose mind being dulled by impiety does not accept the mystery of God, or who through the strong influence of a hostile spirit are ready to manifest, under the cover of reverence, a mad passion for disparaging God, are wont to make strange assertions in the ears of simple-minded men.

For, as the house, through the window of which a little sunlight enters, is altogether illumined, so the man into whom a little of Satan enters, is altogether darkened.

Sir Florian was a grand gentleman; but surely he must have been dull of intellect, slow of discernment, blear-eyed in his ways about the town, when he took Lizzie Greystock,—of all the women whom he could find in the world,—to be the purest, the truest, and the noblest.

For it was none the less the body of the Lord and the blood of the Lord, even in those to whom the apostle said, "He that eats unworthily, eats and drinks damnation to himself."

“No;—not quite like that,” said Sir Felix, with a sickly laugh.

For any one who becomes the scholar of your most eminent instructor, is more beset by difficulties than all men besides.

His first evening in the house was not very bright.

Whosoever then shall deny that the Father is in Christ naturally must first deny that either he is himself in Christ naturally, or Christ in him, because the Father in Christ and Christ in us make us one in Them.

But mark both their faith, and their obedience.

But he did not long make himself any such promise.

The fear is so great that the soldiers “ sometimes could not refrain even from tears; “- “ neque interdum lacrimas tenere poterant.” When we remember what these men became after they had been a while with Caesar, their blubbering awe of the Germans strikes us as almost comic.

Perfect, Herbert would have said, had he dared to express his true meaning. But he paused for a moment to look for a less triumphant word; and then paused again, and left his sentence incomplete, when he saw the expression of his father’s face.

“Yes;—some old steady-going buffer. Mr. Kennedy, perhaps.”

Letters

much more with regard to spiritual things.

We will begin from this point; and let me ask of you who delight in such matters to cleanse your mind and your ears and your thoughts, since our discourse is to be of God and Divine; that when you depart, you may have had the enjoyment of delights that really fade not away. And this same discourse shall be at once both very full and very concise, that you may neither be displeased at its deficiencies, nor find it unpleasant through satiety.

But Trollope’s fertility was gross, importunate; he himself contended, we believe, that he had given to the world a greater number of printed pages of fiction than any of his literary contemporaries.

Very little had been said upon the subject between the mother and daughter.

“Of course she has seen him. When a man dines at a house he is bound to call. Of course he has called,—I don’t know how often. And she has met him round the corner.”—”Round the corner,” in Manchester Square, meant Mrs. Roby’s house in Berkeley Street.—”Last Sunday they were at the Zoo together. Dick got them tickets. I thought you knew all about it.”

So it was now, that Ada had consented to become the wife of the elder brother, of Tom Reckenthorpe, with his home among the slaves, although she, with all her New England feelings strong about her, hated slavery and all its adjuncts.

“Those are your ideas because you don’t take the trouble to return evil for evil. But then you never take the trouble to return good for good. In fact, you have no idea of duty, only you don’t like to burden your conscience with doing what seems to be illnatured. Now, if a man does me good, I return it,—which I deem to be a great duty, and if he does me evil, I generally return that sooner or later. There is some idea of justice in my conduct, but there is none in yours.”

Bozzle had been his only refuge,—a refuge not adapted to make life easier to such a man as Trevelyan; and he,—in spite of the accusations made by himself against his wife, within his own breast hourly since he had left her,—had found it to be very difficult to satisfy his own conscience.

The two births combine in laying down one prescriptive rule of monogamy.

Towers it was not so easy to write a letter that should be effective and yet not offensive, that should carry its point without undue interference.

And to what end?

For it could destroy the universe but it does not will so to do.

And this personage was a clerk in the Post Office!

Her brothers would of course dance with the Coverdale girls, and her father would of course stand up with Isabella.

“Just because she’s got forty thousand pounds. If Mr Greenow had left her with a bare maintenance I don’t suppose I should ever have held out my hand to her.”

Ferdinand Lopez, Esq.

There must be an end of that.

How faithful?

In the meantime the warden sat alone, leaning on the arm of his chair; he had poured out a glass of wine, but had done so merely from habit, for he left it untouched; there he sat gazing at the open window, and thinking, if he can be said to have thought, of the happiness of his past life.

Why, in the first place, says he, though you had been perfect in spiritual things also, not even so ought you to be elated; for what you preach is not your own, nor such as yourselves have found from your own means.

At the end of March they went into their new house, and we will hope that Lady Alexandrina did not find it very cold.

Or if she was already a goddess long before the birth of Romulus and his brother, show us what was her name and title.

so by a question to bring them to an answer.

Yea, Lady, said I, make known to me what they are.

A strange report has come round to me about a lady called Mrs Hurtle.

Between these he interposes the separation of a great and absolute difference— as great as lies between what is just and what is good; as great as lies between the law and the gospel; as great, (in short,) as is the difference between Judaism and Christianity.

That is all that I have got to say.

When you’re wasting so much time and money at your dirty law proceedings, it’s well that somebody should earn something at home.

By means of the faith which is in Him, Christ, he means, happily ordered this for us before we were born; nay more, before the foundation of the world.

That done, he remained in town but one night, and then set his face again towards Matching.

[Isaiah 65:2] But may we who worship this obtain a part in Christ the crucified.

Nor did it occur to them to grudge Melmotte his more noble pickings, for they knew how great a man was Melmotte.

58. What is it, then, that even they who hear me not follow my teaching, and those who hear me follow me not? For I have known many virgins who had the desire, but were prevented from going forward by their mothers, and, which is more serious, mothers who were widows, to whom I will now address myself. For if your daughters desired to love a man, they could, by law, choose whom they would. Are they, then, who are allowed to choose a man not allowed to choose God?

The countess, however, had agreed with her, and when Crosbie received from his motherin-law a very affectionate epistle, setting forth all the reasons which would make the fourteenth so much more convenient a day than the twenty-eighth, he was unable to invent an excuse for not being made happy a fortnight earlier than the time named in the bargain.

Again, there are some sins which would be considered very trifling, if the Scriptures did not show that they are really very serious.

For this turning away God accounts a punishment, inasmuch as the sinner is left to his own devices.

I then agree with him in thinking that we ought not to attribute to God all the qualities of men.

Let us, while there is time, take thought for our security and eternal salvation, according to the admonition of the Apostle Paul, who says: Therefore, while we have time, let us labour in what is good unto all men, but especially to them that are of the household of faith.

This he failed to do well.

But let us suppose that neither tomb-breakers, nor moths, nor worms, nor time, nor anything else, destroy what lies in the tomb, but that the body itself remains untouched until the Resurrection, and these things are preserved new and fresh and fine; what advantage is there from this to the departed, when the body is raised naked, while these remain here, and profit us nothing for those accounts which must be given?

And as in the beginning earth was the subject material, but the whole was of Him who molded it; so also now water is the subject material, and the whole is of the grace of the Spirit: then, man became a living soul, [Genesis 2:7 now he becomes a quickening Spirit.

The bishop of Rome , on account of his very advanced age, was absent, but he sent two presbyters to the council, with authority to agree to what was done.

Let us not then pride ourselves herein.

We walk between dangers on either hand; the unity of God may force us into a denial of the Godhead of His Son, or, if we confess that the Father is God and the Son is God, we may be driven into the heresy of interpreting the unity of Father and of Son in the Sabellian sense.

Whence we conclude that it was not the gods, who are all good and highly exalted, that Plato deprived of the pleasure of theatric plays, by reprobating and prohibiting the fictions of the poets, but the demons.

The dean still keeps his deanery, but the number of resident canons Las been terribly diminished.

“There was a neck of mutton and a chicken. She said the neck of mutton would keep hot best, so I took the chicken. I hope you like lukewarm neck of mutton?”

“Maybe we may, some day; one down and another come on, you know; as the butcher-boy said.”

He might see this, and intervene to save her from the waters.

“On your acquittal.”

He could laugh loud.

If, in fine, it was the law of nature that caused the appellations to spring up for us from the objects, just as her plants spring up from seeds and roots, and she did not entrust the significant naming of each of the subjects to the choice of those who had to indicate the objects, then all mankind would be of one tongue.

The two ladies were civil, and tried to make the house pleasant, but they were not cordial as they had been hitherto.

He had been at Athens, and had in his interviews (with its philosophers) become acquainted with that human wisdom which pretends to know the truth, while it only corrupts it, and is itself divided into its own manifold heresies, by the variety of its mutually repugnant sects.

For at present it is the nature of the human mind which adorns this mortal life which we are extolling, and not the faith and the way of truth which lead to immortality.

For the mind sees beforehand what is to be and then performs it thus by means of the body.

“It was bad,” said Lucy, “when Uncle Tom told him to sell those magnificent conceptions of his brain by auction!”

I. They have possibly been misled by a wrong translation of his letter on the Incarnation to Flavian.

When her wedding day was now close at hand and when a marriage chamber was being got ready for the bride and bridegroom; secretly without any witnesses and with only the night to comfort her, she is said to have nerved herself with such considerations as these: What ails you, Demetrias?

I confess that I was amazed to find in them an indication concerning God so exact that it expressed in the terms best adapted to human understanding an unattainable insight into the mystery of the Divine nature.

All this Mr. Forrest could do; nay, more, most willingly would do!

Why speak of holy men and angels, who, being creatures of God, are of course capable of sin?

Here it is not required to handle the plow, to yoke the ox, to wait the season, nor to break up the earth, or to contend with the frost.

Security in sin is likewise an appetite for it.

Iron is hammered out by the blows of the artificer into some useful instrument.

Rather it is He who gives strength to the hungry, and through His Word refreshes the labouring.

Then immediately from these beginnings open the way to your discourse on true wisdom, and with some circumlocution make a protest against riches.

Ver. 16. Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the Law, save through faith, in Jesus Christ, even we believed on Christ Jesus.

“James,” said I, “ might I trouble you to leave those boots, and see the bath filled for me?” and I bowed to him.

Are not you Ditheists?

Therefore also at the beginning He puts nothing severe or grievous, as the other did, mentioning an axe, and a tree cut down; a fan, and a threshing-floor, and unquenchable fire; but His preludes are gracious: the Heavens and the kingdom there are the good tidings which he declares to His hearers.

They were not only not his own, but they belonged to one who was mounting into his seat of power over his head.

We are now sending to you, by the favour of God, John our subdeacon, the bearer of these presents, to this end—that, with the help of Almighty God, he may see to your bishop-elect being consecrated after the manner of his predecessor. For, as we demand our rights from others, so we conserve their several rights to all.

See how great was the excess of the light.

In the pages of a novel the novelist can hardly do more than indicate the sources of the troubles which have fallen upon the country, and can hardly venture to deal with the names and characters of those who have been concerned.

The countess got up as Crosbie entered and greeted him with an open hand; but Alexandrina kept her seat, and merely nodded at him a little welcome.

Again, in the same treatise he says: The blessed Apostle Paul in his epistle lays it down, saying, 'To me to live is Christ, and to die is gain [Philippians 1:21] counting it the greatest gain no longer to be held by the snares of this world, no longer to be liable to the sins and vices of the flesh.

The Saviour Himself speaking to His disciples in the temple said: arise, let us go hence, [John 14:31] and to the Jews: your house is left unto you desolate.

She is below your notice.

Or what would be more unendurable than a miserable immortality?

How much better it is to have health without money, than money without health!

For who makes you to differ?

But when the Son of God in His transfiguration is so understood and beheld, that His face is a sun, and His garments white as the light, straightway there will appear to him who beholds Jesus in such form Moses—the law— and Elijah,— in the way of synecdoche, not one prophet only, but all the prophets— holding converse with Jesus; for such is the force of the words talking with Him; [Matthew 17:3] but, according to Luke, Moses and Elijah appeared in glory, down to the words, in Jerusalem.

And what an odious man he was—in Lady Susanna’s estimation!

Chapter LVII. The Explanation

Else, (if you so do,) what inferiority would the poor unhappy victims of the public lusts have (beneath you)?

What ropes are needed?

The Psalm then is to the Strong in hand, and Desirable, to Him who for us has overcome death, who unto us has promised life: for in this is He Strong in hand, that He has overcome death for us; in this is He Desirable, that He has promised unto us life eternal.

Ebion's is a Council of vanity since he teaches that, while we believe in Christ, we are withal to observe the circumcision of the flesh, the keeping of the Sabbath, the accustomed sacrifices, and all the other ordinances according to the letter of the Law.

“That’s about true, Mr. Neefit.”

This Law was a Commandment as to what plants he might partake of, and which one he might not touch.

But what was he to think of this question now, after hearing the clear and dispassionate statement of all the circumstances by the solicitor-general?

Moreover we have sent to our most reverend brother and fellow bishop Leander a pallium from the See of the blessed Apostle Peter, which we owe both to ancient custom, and to your character, and to his goodness and gravity .

Let him not speak in complaisance with a wicked man, nor with his enemy.

Then he walked up and saw the flag waving over the Castle, indicating that he, the Lord Lieutenant of the County, was present there on his own soil.

Nay, how enjoy every common nourishment, when you are gathering so much venom?

Who closed the heavens?

Now we have to prove that just as in the one case he has followed the usage of Scripture, so with regard to the word till he is utterly refuted by the authority of the same Scripture, which often denotes by its use a fixed time (he himself told us so), frequently time without limitation, as when God by the mouth of the prophet says to certain persons, [Isaiah 46:4] Even to old age I am he.

As yet also he has said nothing about Judas; and yet it was known to all what a doom and punishment he had undergone; for nothing was more forcible than to argue with them from prophecy: this was more forcible even than facts.

“That be blowed,” said Jack; “you go easy and hold your tongue. If you know nothing, nobody can hurt you.”

She was short and dapper in person; not ugly, excepting that her nose was long, and had a little bump or excrescence at the end of it.

For that Simon the sorcerer desired such gifts of the Apostles, when he wished to buy the Holy Spirit for money.

What kind of oath the members take not to divulge any tittle of the proceedings at these awful conferences, the general public does not know; but it is presumed that oaths are taken very solemn, and it is known that they are very binding.

For you were cut off from the wild olive-tree , and grafted into the good one, and were made to share the fatness of the true olive-tree.

And shall not you incur punishment, not considering that the workman is worthy of his hire?

If you hang back, I’ll not go ahead.

And why did that vexatious Secretary of State send him messages about blue books?

“You don’t mean to say you wish to ask him to this house?”

Chapter 58. We Have No Certain Knowledge of the Organization of the Angelic Society.

If, now, we endeavor to find between these opposites the mean occupied by the demons, there can be no question as to their local position; for, between the highest and lowest place, there is a place which is rightly considered and called the middle place.

Their married daughter and her husband had left them, and their unmarried daughter was also away.

It was simply the brokenhearted wailings of a woman whose love was too strong for her.

[John 19:41] Mary is a garden enclosed...a fountain sealed, [Song of Songs 4:12] and from that fountain flows, according to Joel, the river which waters the torrent bed either of cords or of thorns; of cords being those of the sins by which we were beforetime bound, [Proverbs 5:22] the thorns those which choked the seed the goodman of the house had sown.

Would we fix an hour within the next day or two at which we would call upon her in Harpur Street and arrange as to terms!

Lady Milborough, in her kind anxiety on Nora’s behalf,—that the fish should be landed before Nora might be swept away in her sister’s ruin,—hardly knew what step she might safely take.

How shall they be in us?

“Yes, papa; they had heard of it.”

“But Mr. Arabin was a fellow, and couldn’t have had a wife.”

[Matthew 10:41] Therefore too he that receives Christ, shall receive the reward of him who has Christ for his guest.

Or does it make the honor to be no honor?

He then, desiring to show that He did not shun the proof from the Scriptures, again referrs them to the Scriptures.

The threat had rankled in his bosom from the time of its utterance, to that moment when a strange coincidence had given the threatener the power of executing it.

But in supreme evil, before the commingling which they maintain, there never was any good.

He may do so after experience with something of certainty.

Although some maintain that this also is spoken concerning teachers and disciples and concerning corrupt heresies: but the reasoning does not admit it.

Ontario frowned and expressed an opinion that all elections should be made absolutely free to the candidates.

If it casts out devils, if it drives away diseases, much more does it render business easy.

For that it was for sins that He punished him, hear what He says, Behold, you are made whole, sin no more.

I can’t deny that he was bleeding; he certainly was speechless, and for a few moments may have been motionless.

Be the people angry; what can the angry people do against him who has become the throne of God?

MR. THUMBLE, the new schoolmaster.

For he had said above, But I say, walk in the Spirit, and perform ye not the lusts of the flesh.

When we talk of the advances of civilization, do we mean anything but this, that men who now eat and drink badly shall eat and drink well, and that those who cannot read and write now shall learn to do so—the prayers following, as prayers will follow upon such learning?

As he dressed himself with the utmost rapidity, thinking perhaps not so much as he should have done of his appearance in the eyes of his ladylove, he endeavoured to come to some resolve as to the task which was before him.

And God made man; (conformable) to the image and likeness of God made He him.

“And the Chevalier was second, wasn’t he?” said the cook.

For sometimes He calls us children, sometimes chickens, sometimes infants, and at other times sons, and a new people, and a recent people.

And this happiness these philosophers refuse to believe in, because they do not see it, and attempt to fabricate for themselves a happiness in this life, based upon a virtue which is as deceitful as it is proud.

But because Christ's people cannot be rent, His robe, woven and united throughout, is not divided by those who possess it; undivided, united, connected, it shows the coherent concord of our people who put on Christ.

“A fellow wants to get a little sleep, you know.”

Her lawyers wrote back, advising her to refer Mr Rubb, junior, to them.

There is a melancholy in this that will tinge our thoughts, let us draw ever so strongly on our philosophy.

For on their extirpation God takes up His abode again in you.

To your own hurt you would be secure; you must be solicitous.

The Athenian sacrifices to Erechtheus as Poseidon.

“Yes, alone; for so I shall be calmer; and then I shall at any rate learn what he does mean to do in the matter.”

To you shall his turning be, and you shall rule over him [Genesis 4:7, Septuagint], meaning his brother.

As the case stood, however, inasmuch as he acknowledged that they ought to be baptized, he thought that he had not erred [criminally], and therefore ought not to be adjudged a heretic, even though he maintained the reason of their baptism to be other than the truth holds, or the faith claims as its own.

“He hardly lives anywhere. He goes and comes at present as he is wanted by the cause. It is quite on the cards that we should find that the police have nabbed him. But I hope not. I think not. When I have seen you made comfortable, and when we have had something to eat and drink, I shall know where to seek him. While I am doing so, you had better lie down.”

For the natural man, it is said, receives not the things of the Spirit.

You were very anxious to do something grand, but hadn’t got this grand thing clear before your eye.

I saw, I think, fifteen in one.

“Go to Stalham, my dear!” said his mother.

“Oh, yes; I’m afraid so,” said Mr. Mason, still rather in the dark.

“But it is of no use; you had better not. Her room, I fear, is quite unfit for you to see; and the whole house, you know, may be infected.” Dr. Arabin by this time was in the sitting-room; but seeing that his friend was really anxious that he should not go farther, he did not persist.

All the world was now at his feet, and all the stars were open to him.

“Dear Bella!” echoed Mr. Gibson.

What flagrant inconsistency!

It must be remembered that up to the ides of March he had heard of no conspiracy.

For the Scripture says, And Abraham stretched forth his hand to take the knife, that he might slay his son.

After full consideration, the Committee absolutely resolved to exterminate the inhabitants of the country—utterly to destroy them all, men, women, and children—to burn every town, every village, and every house—to put an end to all life in the doomed district, and to sweep from the face of the country man, beast, and vegetable.

“I cannot do it. Consider of it, Anton. Could you treat your own father in such a way?”

He would never allow himself to think of it with lessened reverence, or with changed ideas as to her nature.

Since you said, Show me your God, this is my God, and I counsel you to fear Him and to trust Him.

We have always felt some slight doubts as to the details of the affair said to have happened about a fortnight ago, just at midnight, in St. James’s Park.

For I did not wait for an opportunity of seizing them: I both stirred up the priests, and undertook journeys: I did not confine my attacks, as you did, to men, I extended them to women also: both binding, and casting into prisons both men and women.

At last, however, he was made to understand the nature of his companion’s want, and expressed his belief that “John Applethwaite, up at the Craigs yon, had got a mickle cart.” But the Craigs was a farmhouse, which now came in view about a mile off, up across the valley; and Vavasor, hoping that he might still find a speedier conveyance than John Applethwaite’s mickle cart, went on to the public-house in the village.

Then the satirist moralises; “Did you ever know a right-minded woman pardon another for being handsomer and more love-worthy than herself?” Rowena is “always flinging Rebecca into Ivanhoe’s teeth;” and altogether life at Rotherwood, as described by the later chronicles, is not very happy even when most domestic.

But he appeared to be always in a hurry to leave it.

Whoso are not antichrists, it cannot be that they should continue without.

And he is said to have made this advance, especially after he had brought back the ark into the city.

But in what way repelled He the tempter, and taught his soldier how to fight?

Only, Stubbs will let you have his beefsteak if you will pay him—him or his master.

There was but one other member of the Board, Major Fiasco by name, a discontented, brokenhearted, silent man, who had been sent to the General Committee Office some few years before because he was not wanted anywhere else.

“Yes; your father’s Mr. Bertram. Therefore, if old Mr. Bertram should die, and this young man should be his heir, he would have the charge of all your money. You’d better be gracious to him.”

Again, God threatening and admonishing day by day is not heard; but the common people, full of disorder, made up of all manner of dregs, has no occasion for one word of command; enough for it only to signify with what it is well pleased, and in all things we obey immediately.

Whatever might happen, he must show a spirit.

“I say you did,—over and over again.” Here Lord Augustus got out of his chair, and made a little attempt to reach the recreant lover;—but he failed and fell back again into his armchair. “It was first at Rufford, and then you made an appointment to meet her at Mistletoe. How do you explain that?”

“Girls do not do like that,” he said.

But if, even when you have lost the pallium, you still persist in your contumacy, know that you are deprived of participation of the body and blood of the Lord.

And of these points he gives a clear demonstration, by introducing a comparison drawn both from the persons so advanced ([κατορθούντων]) and from what was given them, and from what was to come.

He would condescend to ask a vote as a favour from no man.

A great amount of wisdom such as this came to him at the spur of the moment.

Ralph would go there on the 10th of December, and be back at his own house before Christmas.

Miss Altifiorla acknowledged to herself that it was her nature always to remain outwardly the same to all men.

“I have thought much of what the archdeacon has said, and of what this paper says; and I do believe I have no right to be here.”

So do they truly believe who hold fast to the pure faith.

Neither the fear of the Convention, nor the arms of the Directory, nor the strength of the Consul, nor the flattery of the Emperor could conquer La Vendée, or put down the passionate longing for the return of the royal family, which has always burnt in the bosom of the people.

Now Mr. Froude has followed with his Cæsar, which might well have been called Anti-Cicero.

Perhaps a pig is the same among symbols as a fool is among real things.

And if it can be recovered it is our duty to get it back again.

But we, on the contrary, are ever engaged in our own affairs, in our Master's hardly at all, and that too, though He needs not our services, as masters need those of their servants, but those very acts redound to our own benefit.

Their object is to praise concupiscence as a natural good, that so they may defend their own baneful dogma, which asserts that those who are born by its means do not contract original sin.

And lower down, In the defence of heresy you kindle hatred against me, and destroy that love which I had towards you; insomuch that you would make us even repent of holding communion with you who so resolutely defend the errors and doctrines of Origen.

I’ve found out one or two that you don’t love.

But whatever is subjected to the eyes and to the hands, that, in truth, because it is perishable, is inconsistent with the whole subject of immortality.

Lizzie, since the reader first knew her, had begun to use a little colouring in the arrangement of her face, and now, in honour of her sickness, she was very pale indeed.

Chapter 10.— Concerning the Word of the Mind, in Which We See the Word of God, as in a Glass and an Enigma.

And sings like a bird serene,

Chapter 14. The Power of This Twofold Patience, the Spiritual and the Bodily. Exemplified in the Saints of Old

“Anything the matter, Apjohn?” said Mr Fothergill, kindly, seeing the utter despair written on the poor man’s countenance; “can I get anything for you?”

“Of course she is Lady Peterborough, mamma; what else should she be?—though she does not so sign herself.” “We think,” said the American peeress, “that we shall be at Monkhams before the end of August, and Charles says that you are to come just the same.

She is to me the Countess Lovel, and she shall be treated by me with the honour suited to her rank.” And so he left the house without seeing the Countess again.

But the Peacock is more than a house.

It is not, then, enough for us to avoid saying that the soul is a part of God, but it is of indispensable importance that we should say that the soul and God are not of one and the self-same nature.

“Yes,” said Mary.

[John 13:35] And then, besides, there are doctrines to be found here, which we could not have known so surely as we now do, if this Book had not existed, but the very crowning point of our salvation would be hidden, alike for practice of life and for doctrine.

15. His feet were like yellow brass, as if burned in a furnace. He calls the apostles His feet, who, being wrought by suffering, preached His word in the whole world; for He rightly named those by whose means the preaching went forth, feet. Whence also the prophet anticipated this, and said: We will worship in the place where His feet have stood. Because where they first of all stood and confirmed the Church, that is, in Judea, all the saints shall assemble together, and will worship their Lord.

Orth.— Then the human race is no longer limited as heretofore?

Nor let it disturb us that to some of His children God does not give this perseverance.

He was a poor man, and a greedy man, but he would have abandoned his official salary at a moment’s notice, rather than there should have fallen on him a breath of public opinion hinting that it ought to be abandoned.

She heard Mrs. MacHugh’s clear, sharp, merry voice, and she heard her aunt’s tone of pretended anger, and she heard Sir Peter’s continued laughter, and Brooke Burgess as he continued the telling of some story; but her own trouble was too great to allow of her attending to what was going on at the other end of the room.

[Luke 5:15] And much people came unto him from one place and another, to hear [8] his word, and that they might be healed of their pains.

And this is announced to us not by the catalogue of the tribes, nor by the mixing of the registered generations, but by the patriarchs and prophets.

They used to say of him that “at home” he was kindly and forbearing, simple and unostentatious.

The emperor perceiving that Liberius was not disposed to comply with his mandate, commanded that he should be conveyed to Thrace, unless he would change his mind within two days.

Wilkinson went over to bring her to the vicarage.

And yet it made her somewhat melancholy to think that he should marry Guss Mildmay.

“Oh, Mr. Brown, you should forget all that!”

If there is a mean in food which when we overpass we are injured, and yet even so you can not bear the curb, but snapping it as under seizest on what every body else has, to minister to the wicked tyranny of this gluttony; what would you not have done, if this natural mean were abolished?

She was fully alive to the fact that life in the Close at Exeter was better for her daughter than life in their little cottage at Nuncombe Putney.

[Mark 6:5] And Mark also does not say, that He could not do any mighty work there, and stop at that point, but added, Save that He laid His hands upon a few sick folk and healed them, [Mark 6:5] the power in Him thus overcoming the unbelief.

When Miss Reddie could get a-head with her lanky brute, there was nothing for it but to gallop after, regardless of danger.

For the prince of this world and of the present age is like an adulterer, who corrupts and violates the minds of men, and, seducing them from the love of the true bridegroom, allures them to strange lovers.

I will tell all Your marvels.

“We have better flowers in our balconies than any I see down here,” said Mr Melmotte.

Neither love nor drink—and Martin had, on the previous day, been much troubled with both—had affected his appetite; and he ate out his money with the true persevering prudence of a Connaught man, who firmly determines not to be done.

He speaks here of Nero, as if he were the type of Antichrist.

He who had been caught up into the third heaven and had heard unspeakable words , reveals to the perception of human understanding as much as human nature can receive.

[1 Corinthians 10:31] She remembered also the prophet's words, through your precepts I get understanding, and felt sure that only when she had fulfilled these would she be permitted to understand the scriptures.

[Exodus 20:12] Again, (the apostle writes:) Parents, bring up your children in the fear and admonition of the Lord.

“Surely you can, Mr. Gregory.”

Likewise at the end of Deuteronomy, [Deuteronomy 34:5-6] So Moses the servant of the Lord died there in the land of Moab, according to the word of the Lord.

I cannot bear after that to hear them speak of him as they do.

I have not known how to make it appear that it would be right for me to refuse, without absolutely making a party matter of it.

It is because of these views that we have in a former passage stated as a preliminary fact, that the mind is nothing else than an apparatus or instrument of the soul, and that the spirit is no other faculty, separate from the soul, but is the soul itself exercised in respiration; although that influence which either God on the one hand, or the devil on the other, has breathed upon it, must be regarded in the light of an additional element.

Or do you imagine that he committed a great crime, and was therefore justly condemned to a severer punishment?

I will tell you how her faith was this above all: it made her believe that her God preferred mercy even to sacrifice; she was certain that her God was working in Christ; she touched Him, therefore, nor as a holy man simply, nor as a prophet, whom she knew to be capable of contamination by reason of his human nature, but as very God, whom she assumed to be beyond all possibility of pollution by any uncleanness.

Or again, God, being power, has another power in Himself, and has dominion over the one by the other.

Book VII, Letter 31

And it is best to do so, for the advice is profitable.

On his arrival at Castle Richmond he was taken in to Sir Thomas before dinner.

For he has committed to women the greater part in the instruction of women, having appointed the elder to teach the younger.

There were more ribs in Adam, and hands that knew no weariness in God; but not more wives in the eye of God.

For of their slaying them, indeed, many tell us, but as to the souls of the slain being with them, whence do you know it, I pray you?

When he returned she was out in the garden with her hat on and a mallet in her hand; but she was seated on one of a cluster of garden-chairs under a great cedar tree.

73. Character of Ariannominees

How much truer and stronger, then, is the soul's corporeal essence, which carries about the body, which eventually assumes so great a weight with the nimblest motion!

They say that the things in the square, and the plate, and the carriages and horses, and all that, ought to fetch between twenty and thirty thousand.

“Shall I let him know that you say so?”

“Well, my lord,” he said with some spirit, “Miss Wyndham is at present your ward, and in your house, and I am obliged to postpone the exercise of the right, to which, at least, I am entitled, of hearing her decision from her own mouth. I cannot think that she expects I should be satisfied with such an answer as I have now received. I shall write to her this evening, and shall expect at any rate the courtesy of an answer from herself.”

“But I haven’t promised,” said Mr Cheesacre.

you may already, perhaps, surmise that George Bertram does not become a clergyman.

“And I am here too,” said Miss Boncassen, smiling her prettiest.

You have received so much.

For beauty which is heard of but not seen is more desired, there being two incentives to passion, love and knowledge— so long as nothing is met with which pleases less; and that which pleases is thought to be of more worth, because the eye is not in this case the judge by investigation, but the mind inflamed with love is full of longing.

At length he found a rocky mountain, at the foot of which, closed by a stone, was a cave of no great size.

It shall all be forgotten, Hetta,—as nearly as such things may be forgotten.

Such as he was he entirely gained the affection of Mary Roden.

Why the delay?

And gratitude to you forbids them too, lest while we weep for our loss we seem to despair concerning your merits.

For it is one thing not to have sin, and it is another not to abide in that goodness in which there is no sin.

“Nine times nine is eighty-one,” was printed on the top of all the flying advertisements issued by the firm, and the printing was all done in magenta.

For while according to the promises of God belonging to the Old Testament he was looking for earthly felicity, he observed it to abound with ungodly men; that they who worshipped not God were enriched with those things which he was looking for from God: and as though without cause he had served God, his feet tottered But opportunely it has chanced not by our own but by God's dispensation, that just now we heard out of the Gospel, that the Law was given by Moses, Grace and Truth came by Jesus Christ.

When Mr. Brown heard this from the clerk just before he was allowed to take his wife upstairs, while she was sitting on a sofa in a corner with her face hidden, a look of awful gloom came over his own countenance.

“We are speaking of what is impossible. It could not have been so. Your youth was different from mine.”

She threw herself back on the seat and closed her eyes and laughed.

It is better to pull the string at once when you are in the shower-bath, and not to stand shivering, thinking of the inevitable shock which you can only postpone for a few minutes.

For the further you go on, the easier will you see the way to be, and you will stand on the summit itself, and wilt at once enjoy many goods.

Rumor says that during the day, you take military and bodily exercise, and arrange affairs of state by giving judicial decisions, and by making note of what is necessary, and by observation, both in public and private, of the things which ought to be done; and at night that you busy yourself with books.

We have thought it proper to be exact in stating these matters, that we might not appear to be ignorant of those things which Celsus professed to know, but that we Christians, knowing them better than he, may demonstrate that these are not the words of Christians, but of those who are altogether alienated from salvation, and who neither acknowledge Jesus as Saviour, nor God, nor Teacher, nor Son of God.

But he has not lived long enough yet to be able to lie and tell the truth with the same eye.

The third was just entering the university, and was probably the proudest of the three.

Is not the mind's crookedness made straight?

And it must needs be that occasions of stumbling come, [Matthew 18:7] which I take to be different from the men by whom they come.

He had been fond of pleasure and had given way to temptation,—as is so customarily done by young men of six-and-twenty, who are placed beyond control and who have means at command.

Nay, He teaches us to give thanks and rejoice, over and above, at being thought worthy of divine chastisement.

Yea, upon the harp will I praise You, O God my God.

These two bodies of sectarians had hitherto been opposed to each other, but on perceiving that the priests of the Catholic Church were followed by the multitude, they became jealous and formed an alliance together, and manifested a common enmity to the clergy of Alexandria.

GG. What Paul endured, and what he said, and what he did exactly when he came down into the council.

Chapter 8. Joseph and Potiphar's Wife; Of What Kind Love to Females Ought to Be.

The dreariness of this aspect had been thought to be too much for the minds of those who waited, and therefore the bottom panes had been clouded, so that there was in fact no power of looking out at all.

“Do you mean to be threatening me, you ruffian?”

“I suppose he is not altogether indifferent to you?”

The total number of these was 187.

“Could he not come here?”

For he promised that if they would prefer fullness to fasting they should be immortal, as though it were an impossibility for them to fall; and while he promises they shall be as Gods, he drives them from Paradise, with the result that they who, while naked and unhampered, and as virgins unspotted enjoyed the fellowship of the Lord were cast down into the vale of tears, and sewed skins together to clothe themselves withal.

The rich stream of prudence ever flows back upon itself, and the more it has reached out to, so much the more active becomes all that remains.

There was the evil woman before her, already dancing.

But he found that she had the clue in her hand, and that the clue was one which required no further delicacy of investigation.

For this reason they are not chastened with those plagues which we have spoken of; they live to extreme old age, and die without sickness.

There is a distressing habitual humility in many unmarried ladies of an uncertain age, which at the first blush tells the tale against them which they are so painfully anxious to leave untold.

“Because I trust you as I trust no one else.”

“I should be afraid of myself in marrying a girl with money,” said he; “besides, that is altogether out of the question now.” Of course Bell did not ask him why it was out of the question, and for a time they went on walking in silence.

As it pleased the Lord, so is it come to pass.

The latter she would have declined, had it been possible; but it was not possible.

In the one case, he rendered due honor to that which had been the scene of the first manifestation of our Saviour's divine presence, when he submitted to be born in mortal flesh; while in the case of the second cavern he hallowed the remembrance of his ascension to heaven from the mountain top.

The Jews entered upon the undertaking, without reflecting that, according to the prediction of the holy prophets, it could not be accomplished.

But they are so difficult, that if the answering of even one of them were laid upon me, I would not hesitate to confess myself heavily burdened.

It is undoubted, so that we ought to inquire into the reason of the thing; but without prejudice to the practice, not for the purpose of overthrowing it, but rather of building it up, that you may all the more carefully observe it, when you are also satisfied as to its reason.

At that time, therefore, Basil remained in custody throughout the day.

From thence at least did these profane eyes look down and see all the mumblement and jumblement, which after all was little enough; but saw especially the idle clerical apprentice who, had that screen been down, and had he been called on to do his altar work before the public eye, would not have been so nearly asleep, as may perhaps be said of other clerical performers nearer home.

But because 166Cæsar boasted, and Cicero was complaisant, posterity is not to run away with the boast, and call it true.

It is impossible to say.

but I know very well why not.” But at last she gave way.

Chapter 17. Doctrine of Atoms Untenable.

“Yes. I’ll catch the 11.40 up-train at Downham. What’s the good of going unless I go at once? If I can be of any use it will be at the first. It may be that she will have nobody there to do anything for her.”

When she finds that everything will smile with her if she accepts him, and that her life will be made a burden to her if she still sticks to her Harry Annesley, she’ll come round, if she be like other girls.

But you will say, Then all others may (marry more than once), whom he excepts.

The Lord Jesus does, indeed, say to His disciples, as was read in the Gospel lection, if you loved Me, you would assuredly rejoice, because I go to the Father, because the Father is greater than I ; but those ears, which have often heard the words, I and the Father are One , and He that sees Me, sees the Father also , accept the saying without supposing a difference of Godhead or understanding it of that Essence which they know to be co-eternal and of the same nature with the Father.

These things were abominable no doubt in him, but more pardonably abominable than they would be in a woman.

His ears were severed by fine ropes; the boys who frequented the schools made game of him by tossing him aloft and rolling him over and over, sending him forward, catching him up, and unsparingly piercing him with their styles.

In truth, however, the great object of them all was to get Henry Jones into a witness-box, so that, if possible, the very truth might be extracted from him.

I must make you understand me, Mamma, and I want Papa to understand it too.

Because they then even removed to other countries, and still were called Levites.

You know the regard I have for you and Mr. Tudor.

The interview had taken place, and consequently the Marquis had been very unhappy when George Roden was shown up into his room.

for henceforth with confidence he extols the things of the New [Covenant] as indisputable.

Harry had been admitted into the London office on the footing of a paid clerk—on the same footing, indeed, as Burton himself though with a much smaller salary and inferior work.

[Matthew 16:22-23] This rebuke was not lost upon Peter, for, after his correction and full preparation, he preached even to his own death the truth of the death of Christ.

We find that from his letters.

Whom did I wait for but for the Lord?

I fear that many years must pass by before the Transvaal can become an operative part of an Anglo-South African Confederation.

This was Mrs. O’Neil’s house; and, as Mrs. O’Neil herself loudly boasted when Miss Todd came to inspect the premises, she rarely took single ladies, or any ladies that had not handles to their names.

And see how he excites himself to lust, as if by celestial authority, when he says:—

“And Madame?” asked the stranger.

He had never been studious.

Lady Julia, who had received her own letters that day from Guestwick, knew that nothing of importance had happened to her brother; but she felt that she was foiled for that time.

John 5:34

There ain’t nothing like it anywhere else,—not as I knows on.

For the apostle had done this at their request, in order that he might preserve for the Church's good his life, which the persecutor on that occasion specially sought to destroy.

“The doctor will reach Gangoil sooner than he could the mill. You are better here, and we will send for Mrs. Medlicot as soon as the men have had a rest. How was it all, Mr. Medlicot? Harry says that there was a fight, and that you came in just at the nick of time, and that but for you all the run would have been burned.”

Not from his own wife could he get real sympathy.

This lecture was given at Roxbury, one of the suburbs of Boston.

This most patent conclusion requires to be defended by us against the clamours of the opposite side.

What is done at Du Toit’s Pan is again done at Bultfontein.

But this thing he leaves untold, and only says that ungeneracy should not be predicated of God as a mere conception.

There had, too, they said, been a blackness in his face, so terrible to be seen, that it had taken from them all the power of conversation.

‘We won’t mind Gertrude,’ said Norman, with a little shade of black upon his brow.

Hence David says, He delivered their virtue into captivity, and their beauty into the enemy's hands [Psalm 67:61].

10. Thereupon, he of whom we are speaking, and that instantly, as might have been expected after so bold a deed, was torn by the governor and those who were with him as if by wild beasts. And having endured manfully innumerable blows over his entire body, he was straightway cast into prison.

Chapter 6. General Council of Nicæa

But dissensions arose among the Arians also on this account.

He was patriotic, but his patriotism did not disturb his digestion.

And she would be as tender to him as the circumstances would admit.

This he did without the slightest hesitation, as though it were the most natural thing in the world for him to do.

The amount of the bill was ultimately lost by the bankers who had advanced money on it.

What called the clay?

But all things remain as they were.

But here he does it in a way to abash them, saying,

Who worship Jove's fierce-eyed daughter, the working goddess,

For God will vouchsafe some occasion for his putting off the shape of Simon, and exhibiting again distinctly that of your father.

“Yes;—yes. I see. You punish me for my unpremeditated impertinence in suggesting that you are devoted to Lady Mabel by the premeditated impertinence of pretending to be devoted to me.”

And because I doubted of such manner of questions, I asked him whether he would go to Jerusalem, and there be judged of these matters.

There was no violent beating at his heart now, no dimness of the eyes, no feeling that the ground was turning round under his feet.

Whether Mr Gresham has ever asked or not, Emily Greenmantle did not incline her ear that way, and it came out while the affair was being discussed in Plumplington circles that the young lady much preferred one Mr Philip Hughes.

Now they had received her back into their favour.

“You are a slanderer!” said Sir Marmaduke, in his wrath.

“I didn’t take it back to my aunt.”

“Edith,” he said, “you surely know that I love you.”

But if in any man this is evil, i.e., not fortified by sound judgment and knowledge, or deceived by some error and presumption, it will make our whole body full of darkness, i.e., it will darken all our mental vision and our actions, as they will be involved in the darkness of vices and the gloom of disturbances.

She was aware also that the matter had been discussed at the family mansion in Piccadilly, the Duke having come up to London for the purpose, and that the Duke and his brother, who hardly ever spoke to each other, had absolutely had a conference.

Buying and selling is good and necessary; it is very necessary, and may, possibly, be very good; but it cannot be the noblest work of man; and let us hope that it may not in our time be esteemed the noblest work of an Englishman.

If he were not shot he might carry on his suit with Miss Effingham unfettered by any impediment on that side.

By his own spontaneous act he offered up his head to death;

The sound method of demonstrating a truth is to expose the fallacy of the objections raised against it; and the disgrace of the deceiver is complete if his own lie be converted into an evidence for the truth.

Can we indeed know whether there was anything in the way under cover of which he hid himself, or any opening in the earth?

But when there came the fullness of time, God sent His Son.

She still had her income, and she had great faith in income.

The son remembered the determination to which he had come, and resolved to adhere to it. “I didn’t,” he said after a pause.

“No; he have learned nothing. He does not know what to do with his hat. He is a fool. Come, Julie, will you take me out for a drive. It is melancholy for you to go alone; I came to ask you for a drive. Shall we go?” And they did go, Lady Ongar and Sophie Gordeloup together. Lady Ongar, as she submitted, despised herself for her submission; but what was she to do? It is sometimes very difficult to escape from the meshes of friendship.

You, if you will: all we, if we will: for Christ's Body is one

Yea, many of the like age with her whom he loves, and oftentimes also fairer, being dead, after the first or second day, have emitted an ill savor, and foul matter, and decay with worms.

What was the character of his brother in empire, Maximian, called [Herculius]?

The doctor bowed, and made up his mind that Lady Tringle was an ass.

She would send for Miss Mackenzie.

Drawing from this instance, one of the wise men among the Greeks uttered the maxim, Follow God.

With what truth?

“Certainly not. It would not be fair to her to ask her to live always under the wing of your mother and sisters. She would never learn to be a woman. She would always be in leading strings. Do you not feel that yourself?”

Is it not clear that the Father impressed the ideas of these same actions, and the Word brings them to pass, yet not in slavish or unskilful fashion, but with full knowledge and in a masterly way, or, to speak more properly, like the Father?

Mr Armstrong descended to the drawing-room, before dinner, looking most respectable, with a stiff white tie and the new suit expressly prepared for the occasion.

On receiving Lord St. George’s letter, he at once sat down and wrote to that nobleman, telling him that he would be happy to see him at lunch on the Monday at two o’clock.

‘But I am.’

But I cannot learn that any direct and absolute claim had ever been made to national dominion,—as is made by ourselves and other nations when on a new-found shore we fly our national flaps.

It is too true.

And therefore, as he trained Israel by subjecting it to many plagues and afflictions, so does He now admonish you by sending you trials of different kinds.

For He was wholly devoted and consecrated to the Lord; so well grown, and to such excessive size, as to reach and extend over all, and to fill those who eat Him and feed upon Him.

“My taste! I have neither taste nor time. If you won’t mind going to ——”

Let us henceforth hasten, by reproving, exhorting, persuading, soothing, comforting, to profit all we can.

This, then, in brief, is the interpretation of the Passover sacrificed for us, which is Christ, in accordance with the view taken of it by the Apostles, and with the Lamb in the Gospel.

JOHN. I don’t know nothing about the cheque, sir.

But the farmer never kills his horse, and seldom rides him even to distress.

And thus it has happened.

Now it would not at all have been consistent that any rule of holiness and righteousness should be especially enjoined for the flesh, if the reward of such a discipline were not also within its reach; nor could even baptism be properly ordered for the flesh, if by its regeneration a course were not inaugurated tending to its restitution; the apostle himself suggesting this idea: Do you not know, that so many of us as are baptized into Jesus Christ, are baptized into His death?

‘Is it any thought about George that makes you say so, child?’ Michel paused a moment for an answer. ‘Tell me,’ he continued, with almost angry energy, ‘is it because of George that you refuse yourself to this young man?’

For either they are by divine grace and power subject to the holiness of the faithful, or they are captivated by the sacrifices of sinners, and certain charms, and are flattered by them as their worshippers.

This was a job which the man did by contract, receiving so much an acre for the depopulation of the timber.

Roden was quite sure that some evil was to happen, so cold and unfriendly was the manner of the man; but still he followed, having now no means of escape.

[Petronius, ] bishop of Bologna in Italy a man of holy life and from his youth practised in monastic studies, is reputed to have written the Lives of the Fathers, to wit of the Egyptian monks, a work which the monks accept as the mirror and pattern of their profession.

Do you see who they are whom he mourns, and whom he does not spare?

He took whatever was profitable of the chastening that proceeds from the Devil, and left the rest alone; in order that you may learn that the Devil is not the cause of salvation, but that he hasted to destroy and devour mankind.

He says that from the moment they began to apply themselves to the study of philosophy, they gave up their property to their relatives, relinquished business and society, and dwelt outside of walls, in fields and in gardens.

For having a soul that is immortal and invisible to them, they make a likeness of God in things visible and mortal.

There were circumstances in his present position which made him feel that he would be gratified in escaping, even at the cost of some seeming incivility.

You have not, then, known that it would be your father’s duty to put down this turbulent ruffian.

To many the name of the poor is a pretext for their avarice; but compassion knows no artifices.

Her uncle had said no word to her on the matter, and had been confused and embarrassed when the idea of such a marriage was hinted to him.

Accordingly it is enjoined by the apostle: Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the Church.

There was doubtless risk; but then one must run some risk in everything, It might be, if he could play his cards wisely, that he would get it all—that he would be placed in a position to make even the solicitor-generalship beneath his notice.

For Christ altogether with His members is— for the Church's sake, which is His body— the fullness of Him.

But it is possible that he does not fail.

Not for its nature, but for its disposition.

‘What on earth is it you two want?

In another place it is also said and understood, and perhaps it is necessary that I should add it as follows to what has already been said, in order that I may impart to you also my wealth.

It was a miserable day to them all.

That to Miss Baker was very civil and friendly.

“ I have this moment come from the office as hard as a cab could bring me,” we said in answer to the mildest of reproaches, explaining nothing as to the nature of the cause which had kept us so long at our work.

And that he might warn his disciple Timothy with all needful admonition, he immediately added these words: the younger widows refuse: for when they have begun to wax wanton against Christ they will marry; having damnation because they have cast off their first faith.

‘No, not now; you certainly can’t do it now. If I am not very much mistaken, the chance is gone. I think you’ll find she engaged herself to that Frenchman tonight.’

He was a little, withered, shambling old man, with bent shoulders, dressed in knee-breeches and long black gaiters, which hung rather loosely about his poor old legs,—rubbing his hands one over the other as he went.

Further, if man is the author of no action, the faculty of deliberation is quite superfluous: for to what purpose could deliberation be put if man is the master of none of his actions? For all deliberation is for the sake of action. But to prove that the fairest and most precious of man's endowments is quite superfluous would be the height of absurdity. If then man deliberates, he deliberates with a view to action. For all deliberation is with a view to and on account of action.

“Let me first begin by assuring you, that you must not make light of my news. It is of the greatest importance, not only to me, but of some importance also to you.”

The lawyer is to see the men about the funeral.

“So were you, Ben, for the matter of that.” He did, however, before they parted, make her a solemn promise that their engagement should remain an established fact, in spite both of father and mother.

It is very seldom that a young man, unless he be tipsy, assumes an unwelcome familiarity in his early acquaintance with any girl; but when acquaintance has been long and intimate, familiarity must follow as a matter of course.

“I’m sure I do,” said Letty; “they’ve so much more to say for themselves, and they’re so much smarter.”

I think him so much above the average as to be the best of all.

None of the Prophets or Apostles has spoken of our Lord as Bread, or a Stone, or a Fountain, or an Axe, or Light, or a Shepherd!

During the last few years a special industry has developed itself at Uitenhage,—that of washing wool by machinery.

But, after all, by what proofs does Hermogenes persuade us that Matter is evil?

But I enjoin you, that you obey his commands, and you will have a cure for your former sins.

Mrs. Proudie, having received such satisfaction as was to be derived from slamming her husband’s door, did not at once betake herself to Mrs. Quiverful.

He was inclined to think that the whole case should immediately be taken out of the hands of Norton and Flick, without further notice, and another solicitor employed.

And if any one say, Why did not all men give heed to Him?

Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith you shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked.

And for this reason Plato rightly expelled from the state which he had founded in his discourse, the illustrious Homer whom he had praised and crowned.

Were not then the chastened unjustly dealt with says one?

“Anything you please, that’s not a falsehood. But I’ve got you here because I don’t think you will tell a falsehood. Oh, Alice, I do so want to go right, and it is so hard!”

The third might be a county squire,—high among county squires.

TOOGOOD. Who is his lawyer? That’s the question. Who is his lawyer?

In what does he glory?

For Scripture testifies, in regard to those who have a knowledge of those things of which Celsus speaks, and who profess a philosophy founded on these principles, that they, when they knew God, glorified Him not as God, neither were thankful, but became vain in their imaginations; and notwithstanding the bright light of knowledge with which God had enlightened them, their foolish heart was carried away, and became darkened.

But I am altogether departing from Madeline Staveley’s external graces.

6. Hurt not the wine and the oil. That is, strike not the spiritual man with your inflictions. This is the black horse.

For it is not becoming that any dissension or faction should be raised among you, contrary to the prosperity of our times.

But yet created, it may be said.

He wrote also two treatises, On the life of Saint Eusebius, bishop of Vercelli, and confessor, and On Saint Cyprian, and published a monograph On the grace of baptism.

‘I thought not; that was one reason why I selected you. What is wanted is a man of sharp intelligence and plain common sense, and one also who can write English; for it will fall to your lot to draw up the report on the matter. Mr. Neverbend, who is to be your colleague, cannot put two words together.’

Our food is mingled with weeping and our drink with tears, for you have given us the bread of tears as food, and tears to drink in large measure, nay, even beyond measure.

“You are thinking, then, of no second marriage?”

“How am I to help it? I don’t suppose anybody will be disturbed at all. He’ll come round to the side door, and one of the servants will be up to let him in. He always does things differently from anybody else.”

“Will it be for a month?”

Chapter 20. A Good Wife

[Luke 21:8-9] Let us observe the word of the Saviour, how He always admonished us with a view to our security: Take heed that you be not deceived: for many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ.

She shut her eyes, and gave the little horse his head.

Other clause in the will there was none, except that one substantial clause which bequeathed to her well-beloved nephew, Frederic Folliott Aylmer, everything of which the testatrix died possessed.

If reasoning move you not, at least let the plain aspect of the judgment move you!

I believe that the desire, even if it be as general as is here described, is no insanity.

Quite so, Lord Hampstead.

He answered, I told you that I Am. ([ John 18:5] And Judas also which betrayed Him stood with them.)

But let us go to the bottom of this illustration.

“If that be so,” said she, “I must speak out, though I should have preferred to hold my tongue.

Among them are the following On compunction of soul one book, That no one is injured except by himself, an excellent volume In praise of the blessed Paul the apostle, On the excesses and ill reputation of Eutropius a prætorian prefect and many others, as I have said, which may be found by the industrious.]

But nevertheless the warnings of her great friend, the poetess, had not been thrown away upon her.

“I think she’s the handsomest girl in London,” said Hoffmann, who was a young man of German parentage and perhaps of German taste.

And report goes that it is not from a desire of shedding blood that you constantly court these wars, but for the sake of extending the republic in which we see that God is worshipped, to the end that the name of Christ may be spread abroad through subject nations by preaching of the faith.

“You must not be hard on her, Perry.”

For I on My part have fulfilled all that it behooved a Shepherd to do, and if you follow Me not, it is not because I am not a Shepherd, but because you are not My sheep.

“Well, doctor, you see that I have come back to you,” she said, with a faint smile.

Would it not have been well for her to have a master who by his wisdom and strength could save her from such wretched doubtings as these?

In his epistle to the Romans the same apostle quotes these words from Isaiah: Behold I lay in Sion a stumbling-stone and rock of offense, [Romans 9:33] a rendering which is at variance with the Greek version yet agrees with the original Hebrew.

I maintain that answer has as much wisdom in it as any other that can be given;—or perhaps more.

Now, if from all these facts which are found in the Creator there is yet to be deduced another god and another Christ, let us go in quest of the Creator.

I tell you that she will not do it.

During the last ten years of his life, he spent nearly the half of his time in bed, suffering agony from sick headaches.

But in order that the vision of conception may come to be, there is wrought for the purpose, in the memory, from the vision of [sensuous] perception something like it, to which the eye of the mind may turn itself in conceiving, as the glance (acies) of the eyes turns itself in [sensuously] perceiving to the bodily object.

Whether the earth gave life to him as to worms and mice, being affected with decay through the action of some moisture; or whether he received these outlines of body, and this cast of face, from the hand of some maker and framer?

But now the Word having become man and having appropriated what pertains to the flesh, no longer do these things touch the body, because of the Word who has come in it, but they are destroyed by Him, and henceforth men no longer remain sinners and dead according to their proper affections, but having risen according to the Word's power, they abide ever immortal and incorruptible.

And in other parts of holy Scripture where it speaks of the mystery of the resurrection to those whose ears are divinely opened, it says that the temple which has been destroyed shall be built up again of living and most precious stones, thereby giving us to understand that each of those who are led by the word of God to strive together in the duties of piety, will be a precious stone in the one great temple of God.

The conviction that Major Rossiter had behaved badly to Alice,—that Alice had been utterly thrown over by the Wanless “ alliance,” had been so strong, that even Lady Deepbell had not dared to go and probe wilfully that wound.

De Lescure and Henri together agreed to give Santerre his unconditional liberty.

And they err in seeking to liken (them) to God whom man has not at any time seen nor can see unto what He is like.

In that case, they are better protected from impurity than the saints, who are polluted both by what goes in and by what comes out.

No hint is given of an alternative meaning.

“Suppose I were to see Mr Harding first,” suggested Bold.

If you will name the day we will send the carriage for you at Matching Station, and I dare say I can manage to come myself.

If any one be chaste, he is able also to be philanthropic, on account of which he shall obtain eternal mercy.

Jerome intimates in the same passage that it was only one of several letters of the same character which Anastasius wrote to the East.

A fortnight gained was something; and as Mr Fisker had come to England on business, and as business is always uncertain, there might possibly be further delay.

Although human nature at first received a union of intelligence and safety to discern the truth, and the worship due to the one Lord of all, yet envy, insinuating the excellence of human greatness, turned men away to the making of idols; and this superstitious custom, after continuing for a long period, is handed down to the majority as if it were natural and true.

‘My mind is clear about it. We must get that man out, if it be only for the sake of the lady.’

There has been, too, no punishment for him, and no probability of punishment.

And Eudemus, in the Astrological Histories, says that Thales foretold the eclipse of the sun, which took place at the time that the Medians and the Lydians fought, in the reign of Cyaxares the father of Astyages over the Medes, and of Alyattus the son of Crœsus over the Lydians.

“How am I to control my thoughts? Do you think, mamma, that after I had owned to you that I loved a man,—after I had owned it to him and, worst of all, to myself,—I could have myself separated from him, and then not think about it? It is a cloud upon everything. It is as though I had lost my eyesight and my speech. It is as it would be to you if Felix were to die. It crushes me.”

We all know that Mademoiselle is an angel.

He that loves life must be sparing to his mouth.

“Not quite that, I believe.”

Others, again, meet together for vain and trifling conversation and merriment, and that they may speak evil of one another; and they hunt up tales against one another, and are idle: persons with whom we do not allow you even to eat bread.

Unto all patience and long-suffering.

“And if you had married an English girl, a Lady Augusta Somebody,—would they pick her to pieces?”

All the homage paid to her she received as though it were clearly her due.

For the present let me beg of you, for your own sake as well as for her who is to be your wife, that you will not repudiate civility offered to you by her family.

He has never said so, but there is a nervousness about him when I suggest to him the name of this or that man as his successor which alarms me.

A portion was lost at cards.

With all our strength, therefore, let us beware lest we receive communion from or grant it to heretics; Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, says the Lord, neither cast ye your pearls before swine [Matthew 7:6], lest we become partakers in their dishonour and condemnation.

They’ve been in such a hurry to punish you, that they’ve gone on a mere verbal permission.

So far Nina had performed but a small part of the task which she had before her. She found it easier to talk to the old man about the title-deeds of the house in the Kleinseite than she did to tell him of her own affairs. But the thing was to be done, though the doing of it was difficult; and, after a pause, she persevered. “And I told aunt Sophie,” she said, with her eyes turned upon the ground, “of my engagement with Anton.”

Three out of six books as to the best laws for governing the Republic. They are carried on between Atticus, Quintus, and Marcus. They are supposed to have been written b.c. 52 (ætat. 55 but were not published till after his death.‡

For there is no man that does anything in secret, and seeks himself to be manifest; when also He Himself rebuked them, attributing it to their carnal mind.

The woman would not even tell him when the girl had left her house, or give him any assistance towards finding her.

I have often thought about that a good deal, Glencora.

“Are you going this morning?” I said to a mail-driver in Vermont.

Who then is really akin to Sabellius let the judgment of those who read our argument decide.

“Why has all this been done?” demanded Frank.

The billows became rigid and were awaiting the vengeance, when the people should have passed over.

Why do you take that away with you?

Heraclitus, then, rightly said, Men are gods, and gods are men.

“I think not,” said Priscilla. “It is quite as likely to be yours, aunt.” This, Miss Stanbury thought, was almost an insult, and she said nothing more on the occasion.

He roars out the most horrible curses at John for not bringing the pickles.

Again he brings them down, making everything depend thereupon.

Kingston, on a map—for there is a map even of Kingston—looks admirably well.

As he had been up in London I suppose he thought Exeter was no better than a village, and he might do just as he pleased.

Going to the wall with Undy would mean absolute ruin; he lived but on the cheekiness of his gait and habits; he had become member of Parliament, Government official, railway director, and club aristocrat, merely by dint of cheek.

But Jack Neville did think it very probable that his brother might do so;—and, indeed, felt sure that he would do so if years were allowed to intervene.

“Then it tells no story, because it is an invitation. It is from the officers of the West Bromwich regiment; and it asks us to a dance on the 20th of May.”

For He so well knew that this is the better way of virtue, as even to go that way Himself, not having need thereof: He knew so well that tribulation is expedient for us, and that it becomes rather a foundation for repose.

This however I may briefly say, that the infection of a noxious humour so drinks me up that it is pain to me to live, and I anxiously look for death, which alone I can hope for to relieve my groans.

[Numbers 14:37] Joshua and Caleb [Joshua 14:6] entered the land of promise together with those who were innocent by reason of age or sex.

He did his best to bear all this with no more than an inward smile, telling himself that it behoved him as a man to allow her to have her little revenge.

From all these truths, of which they doubt not whose inner eye You have granted to see such things, and who immoveably believe Moses, Your servant, to have spoken in the spirit of truth; from all these, then, he takes one who says, In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth,— that is, In His Word, co-eternal with Himself, God made the intelligible and the sensible, or the spiritual and corporeal creature.

Jephtha held the chief power for six years.

Chapter 22. Acesius, Bishop of the Novatians, is summoned by the Emperor to be present at the First Council.

But in singleness of heart, he says, fearing God.

This was no injury to Miss Petrie, as her mind at once set itself to work on a sonnet touching the frivolity of modern social gatherings; and when she complained afterwards to Caroline that it was the curse of their mode of life that no moment could be allowed for thought,—in which she referred specially to a few words that Mr. Gore had addressed to her at this moment of her meditations,—she was not wilfully a hypocrite.

“I made a sort of promise about this particular affair at Clady, and I must carry it out,” said Herbert.

“Haven’t I?” said the doctor. “You see Sowerby had been at it all his days, and never did anything else. I only began late in life.”

I have loved, and do love; but my love can only be a sorrow to me.

But such is not the case with the fishmonger.

“Well; I understand very little about all that; but, George, I had hoped something better for you. Now, the army is a beggarly profession unless a man has a private fortune; but, upon my word, I look on the church as the worst of the two. A man may be a bishop of course; but I take it he has to eat a deal of dirt first.”

“So would I,” said he.

That which in the book of Wisdom is, They said, thinking, is the same here with, They thought, saying.

You would blush, if your wife for the sake of riches were to love you, and perchance if poverty should befall you, should begin to think of adultery.

What reward will you give the Lord, for His having created you above all the cattle; and above all the fowls of the air, in His image and likeness?

But everything which is against nature deserves to be branded as monstrous among all men; but with us it is to be condemned also as sacrilege against God, the Lord and Creator of nature.

So now Jesus, after the testimonies of John to Him which we have examined, is Himself seen by the Baptist coming to him.

“No, nothing; nothing that matters. It is an affair quite private to myself.”

[Matthew 5:9] If, however, peace among men be so sweet as procuring temporal safety, how much sweeter is that peace with God which procures for men the eternal felicity of the angels!

This allusion to the creation of difficulties by Dolly, accompanied, as it was supposed to have been, by Dolly’s letter doing away with all difficulties, should have attracted notice.

To describe such a building would be an absurd waste of time and patience.

But I myself am inclined to think that there was but little of a young man’s selfishness, with nothing of falseness or dishonesty; and I am therefore tempted to tell his story.

I must not lie to you, Adela.

His words had been words of assurance; but, considering the subject, his tone had contained no assurance.

“I am not angry with your brother—not in the least. But I hope you did not send for me here to talk about him.”

It was the first recognised meet of the season, and the Squire had not been out before.

But, on looking back at what he had done, and indeed on looking forward into his future intentions, he could not see why he, of all men, should be Prime Minister.

This principal species in the category of dietary restriction may already afford a prejudgment concerning the inferior operations of abstinence also, as being themselves too, in proportion to their measure, useful or necessary.

This may be true, it may be false: yet if it be true, see how it agrees with Him, who gave us life by His blood.

All our work becomes a laughing-stock, and a ruin: all that we have built, and a mockery, all that we have taught.— 22.

But she could not see her way so clearly out of that further difficulty with regard to her cousin.

But he had no conversation, none of that imagination which in such a time as this might have assisted in devising safeguards, and but little enthusiasm.

From the spot on which they had been standing the walk down to Granpere would take them more than an hour.

“Of course he would, if he pleased,” said Martha.

For when he speaks of those persons as deserving reward who make a good use of their free will, and as therefore meriting the Lord's grace, he asserts in fact that a debt is paid to them.

“There shall be none, then. I have told him that I cannot bring myself to marry him instantly;—that he must allow me twelve months to wear off, if I can in that time, much of sadness and of self-reproach which has fallen to my lot.”

[Isaiah 5:18] And why is it called a cord?

For if He is a creature, He will be First-born of Himself.

Why, Peter, who calls Christ a man capable of suffering, at once went on [Acts 3:15] to add, 'He is Prince of Life,' while in the Gospel he confesses, 'You are the Christ, the Son of the living God.'

There was something picturesque about the cap, which might not have been incongruous with lovemaking.

[54, 55] [John 11:9] Jesus said unto them, Is not the day of twelve hours?

Persons attending to these numbers reckon as many as are homogeneous according to this principle; some, however, according to vowels alone; whereas others according to the entire number.

Rachel considered her words for a moment or two before she spoke, and then she endeavoured to explain herself. “It isn’t that I care for this party especially, mamma, though I own that, after what the girls have said, I should like to be there; but I feel—”

For this would be the greatest of miracles, that without any miracles, the whole world should have eagerly come to be taken in the nets of twelve poor and illiterate men.

But not men only, but women also practise this self-denial, overcoming the weakness of their nature by the abundance of their zeal.

That Mr. Maurice Maule was a real gentleman no judge in such matters had ever doubted.

And they were the pleasanter because a special arrangement had been made for their meeting once again before they left London.

Your first odour is above all spices, which were used upon the burying of the Saviour, [John 19:39] and the fragrance arises from the mortified motions of the body, and the perishing of the delights of the members.

For as it is a sign of power to know the greatest things, it seems rather to be a sign of inferior work to look upon what is worth less.

“I suppose you know what I’m come about, my dear,” she said.

For there, by Minister, he means Fulfiller, ([πληρωτὴν], i.e.

But he has reached the irrefutable argument which we long ago detected lurking in the sequel of his statements , but which is here proclaimed aloud without disguise.

A brother clergyman will be best, and I’ll have some other gentleman with me.” Then he left her, not waiting for any answer.

The five first are Grecian, and the last in Washington is called—Romanesque.

“She’ll know what to say to Mr. Saul.”

“I could have done very well without it, Mr. Pritchett.”

People say all manner of things about the folly of girls; but nothing but this—nothing short of this—would have convinced me that it was possible that Fanny should have been such a fool.

Darius is related to have reigned eighteen years; after which date Astyages began to rule over the Medes.

Just reflect then what a word Paul has uttered about the faithful, and those who are truly ([ἀ] [κριβὥς]) crucified, such as not even the Emperor with his diadem can achieve.

On Anonymous Literature

“What is that to me? But look here, Sophie, far you may as well understand me at once, if I were ever to think of Lady Ongar again as my wife, I should not tell you.”

In acquiring that power she had also acquired the much greater power of exercising rule over herself.

He never made her a subject of heartless satire, as cynical fabulists of other lands have been known to make the shining daughters of those climes; he bestowed upon her the most serious, the most patient, the most tender, the most copious consideration.

Miss Stanbury would say so if she were here, no doubt.

After breakfast on that day Bessy was summoned into her father’s bookroom, and found him there, and her mother also. “Bessy,” said he, “sit down, my dear. You know why Godfrey has left us this morning?”

Nor in arranging a franchise does it seem to me that we have a right to regard any other view.

With what a grace she swept the brown locks from her marble brow, as tho’ the silken covering stayed her thoughts!

That which wickedness suppresses, torture extracts.

For what does it matter to him who lacks charity, whether he be carried away outside the Church at once by some blast of temptation, or remain within the Lord's harvest, so as to be separated only at the final winnowing?

15. About this time, while he was still at Alexandria, a soldier came and delivered a letter from the governor of Arabia to Demetrius, bishop of the parish, and to the prefect of Egypt who was in office at that time, requesting that they would with all speed send Origen to him for an interview. Being sent by them, he went to Arabia. And having in a short time accomplished the object of his visit, he returned to Alexandria.

Then to show also the ease with which the power of God works, he says, And translated us, just as if one were to lead over a soldier from one position to another.

And, as he had a peculiar love for his master Socrates, he made him the speaker in all his dialogues, putting into his mouth whatever he had learned, either from others, or from the efforts of his own powerful intellect, tempering even his moral disputations with the grace and politeness of the Socratic style.

I live not, he says, the common life.

For their fear is not that with which the Hebrews feared, but that with which they were feared.

Having tempted him away from the safety of permanent income, the party could not do less than provide for him.

Why do you still ascribe to these latter the honor of declaring divine truth?

But if that be too much, then write to her.

And observe how, while seeking to turn us away from our faith in the God of all through Jesus Christ, he exhorts us for the welfare of our bodies to faith in six-and-thirty barbarous demons, whom the Egyptian magi alone call upon in some unknown way, and promise us in return great benefits.

Her hands and feet were large,—as was her whole frame.

She sought no amusement.

The Son of God suffers no such change of kind, that the truth of His Father's nature does not abide in Him.

Van Hoppen. Oh, no—of course not—a principle is… . But, Mark—

Others, with prudent foresight, suggested that the hounds might run back from some distant covert to Dillsborough, and that there should be no hunting till the wood had been thoroughly searched.

Christ, therefore, was at one and the same time with the apostles and with the angels; in the Father and in the uttermost parts of the sea.

And of this father Scripture says to Jerusalem which had despised God the true Father, Your father was an Amorite, and your mother a Hittite; [Ezekiel 16:3] and in the gospel we read You are of your father the devil and the lusts of your father you love to do.

Wherefore, as it is quite clear that these two seasons of which we have been speaking are the rightful ones for baptizing the chosen in Church, we admonish you, beloved, not to add other days to this observance.

For he who is proud cannot bear to be insulted even by his superiors, much less by his inferiors.

The interview took place in Sir William’s chambers, and no one was present but Sir William, Miss Lovel, and Mr. Flick. Mr. Flick had been instructed to sit still and say nothing, unless he were asked a question; and he obeyed his instructions. After some apologies, which were perhaps too soft and sweet,—and which were by no means needed, as Miss Lovel herself, though very wise, was neither soft nor sweet,—the great man thus opened his case. “This is a very serious matter, Miss Lovel.”

Had he begun about his office Lily would have been ready for him, but Alexandrina had never yet asked him a single question about his official life.

And surely, as all things rise again for man, for whose use they have been provided— but not for man except for his flesh also— how happens it that (the flesh) itself can perish utterly, because of which and for the service of which nothing comes to nought?

He had prepared himself to bow humbly before the great man, before the Duke, before the Crœsus, before the late Prime Minister, before the man who was to be regarded as certainly one of the most exalted of the earth; but he had not prepared himself to be looked at as the Duke looked at him.

Westerman sat at the window a little away from the others.

For, if our ship is wafted by the surf into the wished-for haven, I shall be content to be told that the pilotage was poor.

Does any one want to quarrel?

Curlydown’s mind was vacillating between the New River and a pension,—between death in the breach and acknowledged defeat,—when a new interest was lent to his life by the Caldigate envelope.

“Oh yes; we were all talking of it at your table;—I think it was the night, or a night or two, before my accident.”

The love of many has waxed cold; [Matthew 24:12] brotherly concord is destroyed, the very name of unity is ignored, brotherly admonitions are heard no more, nowhere is there Christian pity, nowhere falls the tear of sympathy.

[1 Corinthians 2:9] Let us be anxious to obtain those things, and let us despise all these.

Then also the air becomes colder than it is during the day; so that the failing natural warmth requires to be nourished by the introduction of heat.

She should have everything—his house, his fortune; and he, John Gordon, as being a part of her, should have them also.

I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all things whatsoever I possess.

You had better know that for certain, and then there will be less cause for unhappiness between us.” So saying, the angry ghost with the nightcap on stalked out of the room.

The annoyances of Crocker had been abominable to him.

This is it that is loved in friends; and so loved that a man's conscience accuses itself if he love not him by whom he is beloved, or love not again him that loves him, expecting nothing from him but indications of his love.

[Hebrews 1:6] You do not find, Let the Holy Spirit worship.

But what is By faith that I may know Him?

The young tailor had got an influence over the girl when she was a child, was doubtless in pursuit of money, and must be paid.

And so the lesson had been given.

Consider his words; You have rejected and brought him down to nothing.

The horse cleared the rail, seemed just to touch the bank on the other side, while she threw herself back almost on to his crupper, and so came down with perfect ease.

Chapter LV. The Will

“Bell told me that it was to be so,” said Mrs Dale. “But I could hardly bring myself at first to think that he was good enough for my darling.”

These tears did Christ pronounce blessed, saying, Blessed are they that mourn, and blessed are they that weep, for they shall laugh.

“I like Brotherton very much, my lady.” Lady Sarah smiled as graciously as she knew how. “I came when they first made Henry dean, a long time ago now it seems. But he had not then the honour of knowing your mamma or the family.”

For, lo, sinners have bent the bow, that they may in the obscure moon shoot at the upright in heart.

Even if he could bring himself to believe that the money was nothing to Marie, it would be so much to all those by whom Marie would be surrounded, that it would be impossible that she should be preserved from its influence.

I feel what I say; I know what I ask.

It shows that it is the duty of one who, already living in marriage with an unbelieving woman, has presently been by the grace of God converted, to continue with his wife; for this reason, to be sure, in order that no one, after attaining to faith, should think that he must turn away from a woman who is now in some sense an alien and stranger.

For it will no longer be possible for them, if they apply the opposition of generate and ungenerate to the essence of the Father and the Son, to apply at the same time to the things themselves the mutual conflict between these names.

It seemed to her that those to whom in their difficulties she had been most kind were now turning upon her in her difficulty.

I thought that perhaps you could do it.” Then Miss Scarborough promised that she would do it, and, having her brother’s health very much at heart, she did do it.

While these kings reigned in the places mentioned, the period of the judges being ended, the kingdom of Israel next began with king Saul, when Samuel the prophet lived.

When one knew that he was a Jew one saw that he was a Jew; but in the absence of such previous knowledge he might have been taken for as good a Christian as any other attorney.

Again at Killancodlem

[1 Corinthians 2:9] What will be the glory of that day when Mary, the mother of the Lord, shall come to meet you, accompanied by her virgin choirs!

“Ungrateful child! Where else could I take you then?”

Then, if the Saviour is neither a man simply, nor a magician, nor some demon, but has by His own Godhead brought to nought and cast into the shade both the doctrine found in the poets and the delusion of the demons and the wisdom of the Gentiles, it must be plain and will be owned by all, that this is the true Son of God, even the Word and Wisdom and Power of the Father from the beginning.

I said to him, Sir, be with me, and I will be able to bear all affliction.

On the other hand, if at any time we get men of your party into our power, we keep them unharmed, showing great love towards them; and we tell them everything by which the error which has severed brother from brother is refuted.

When this message was circulated it not only comforted the residents of the city, but rendered the soldiers more courageous.

“And is that all you can say to me, Alice?”

For, as we said, the mind cannot continue in one and the same condition, I mean without receiving addition to or diminution of its good qualities.

For it was gluttony through which he took the fruit of the forbidden tree, vainglory through which it was said Your eyes shall be opened, and pride through which it was said You shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.

It was thought by those who had analyzed the subject that the great secret of Madame Bauche’s power lay in her green spectacles.

And yet he knew Hebrew well, whereas the dean knew but very little Hebrew.

Chapter XV. Matthew 11:25 Discussed

As he was, his condition was hopeless.

I speak according to their notions, for according to ours, both are good.

But they were very tame, those hours. The widow still felt an undefined fear that she was wrong, and though her heart yearned to know that her daughter was happy in the sweet happiness of accepted love, yet she dreaded to be too confident. Not a word had been said about money matters; not a word of Aaron Dunn’s relatives. So she did not leave them by themselves, but waited with what patience she could for the return of her wise counsellors.

Besides, the two treatises are distinct in their subject-matter.

You have seen by facts, that riches are no good, poverty no evil, but they are things indifferent.

“There will be some things left about, Mrs Bunsby,” he said, “and I will get you to keep them till I call or send.” Mrs Bunsby said that she would, and then looked her last at him.

“You would not have repented it if you had come down with me,” he said to Nora.

This was indicated by his downcast eyes, the blush on his countenance, and his gait.

But Locock was quite sure that the balance ought not to be much further reduced,—and that steps must be taken.

“I cannot tell you at once. Rebecca Loth is friendly to you, and I will send her to you tomorrow.”

6. We must not, then, on this account ascribe the ruling principle any more to the liver than we must think, because of the heated state of the blood about the heart in wrathful dispositions, that the seat of the mind is in the heart; but we must refer these matters to the character of our bodily organization, and consider that the mind is equally in contact with each of the parts according to a kind of combination which is indescribable.

You women can be so careful, while we men are always off our guard!

As regarded the cigar, it may be said that both Sir Raffle and Mr.

And then, also, it is so frequently the actual fact.

“Oh, yes, it is. Parsons’ marriages are often very grand affairs. They come in among county people. That’s their luck in life. Doctors never do; nor lawyers. I don’t think lawyers ever get married in the country. They’re supposed to do it up in London. But a country doctor’s wedding is not a thing to be talked about much.”

But after You had fomented the head of me unconscious of it, and closed my eyes lest they should behold vanity, I ceased from myself a little, and my madness was lulled to sleep; and I awoke in You, and saw You to be infinite, though in another way; and this sight was not derived from the flesh.

For consider what I say.

“Were you right to see him in Devonshire?”

This is nothing wonderful; for He Himself made out of five loaves bread enough for so many thousands, who also every day out of a few seeds raises up on earth immense harvests.

It proved that had he chosen to devote himself to that branch of politics, he could have become a great orator.

‘O dear, yes. It was settled last week when he was there.’

“You understand, Lady Lufton, that I have by no means got it as yet.”

As he stood there, with his slouched hat over his eyes, one of the college servants recognised him, and called him by his name.

But now he was quite sure,—almost quite sure,—that Phineas was as innocent as himself.

Although why should we be surprised that so great a patriarch unhesitatingly believed what God Himself so plainly showed in His own Person to him, when he said, I have seen God face to face and my life is preserved.

She was a deal too flighty-looking.

There were left there one regiment and one colonel, who kindly described to us the battles he had fought, and gave us permission to see everything that was to be seen.

“Anywhere will do. Come in here,” and he led the way into a small parlor which was not often used.

Let us magnify gloriously the King's Son Who is with us, because a hostage for Him has been taken from us.

Was it fitting that she should be cross with him, seeing that he was resolved to throw at her feet all the good things that he had in the world?

Meantime an aged woman, supported out of the funds of the church, gave back her spirit to heaven from which it came.

In answer to this, I say that the man who dares to be a critic should dare to face all that his criticism may bring upon him.

What is the meaning of this marvel?

“How can I say? There are various reasons,—and, perhaps, very good reasons. What I did before makes men think that they can’t depend on me. At any rate it is so.”

The murderer’s disguise had been discovered.

“I don’t think he has been unreasonable; I don’t, indeed, Miss Vavasor. He has certainly been vexed. Sometimes he has much to vex him. You see, Glencora is very young.”

How, again, is this dictum of his corroborated by facts?

But he need not weight his own character with the further burden of cowardice.

['For we,' said I, 'have ascertained beyond doubt that God is much rather displeased with the sacrifices which you offer, the time of sacrifices having now passed away; and because ye will not acknowledge that the time for offering victims is now past, therefore the temple shall be destroyed, and the abomination of desolation shall stand in the holy place; and then the Gospel shall be preached to the Gentiles for a testimony against you, that your unbelief may be judged by their faith.

But those who understand, that in whatever abundance of wealth and pleasures, though all things obey their beck, though nothing troublesome creep in, nothing adverse terrify, yet that they are in a bad case as long as they are absent from the Lord; with a most keen eye these have found trouble, and grief, and have called on the name of the Lord.

“Well; if you’ll allow me I’ll go back with you for a moment. What do you think I have been doing?”

Twos on the game I suppose.” But Mountjoy would not play piquet.

The last time he had been there he had come to plead with the Earl on behalf of Lord Chiltern, and the Earl had then been a stern self-willed man, vigorous from a sense of power, and very able to maintain and to express his own feelings.

“Is there any law against dancing three times?”

Therefore the blessed Paul, desiring to prove the insignificance both of the pleasures and sorrows relating to this life, declared the whole truth in one sentence when he said— For the things which are seen are temporal.

Men Are So Wicked

The man was such a blackguard that his entire story would probably not be believed; and then was it not almost necessary that Sir Harry should hear it?

He was neither bold nor honest, as Emerson had been, and I could not but feel that every tyro of a politician before him would thus recognize his want of boldness and of honesty.

“But do you love me?” Then there was a pause, as they stood leaning upon a gateway. “Come, Polly; tell a fellow. Do you love me?”

But he did not know her.

It had come to be understood that Mrs. Bolton would not allow herself to give any assent to the marriage, but that the marriage was to go on without such assent.

She did not answer him at once, as she perceived that he had not finished his address;—and, after a moment’s pause, he continued.

But to be loved by such a man as Abraham Hall, to be chosen by him as his companion, to be removed from the hard, outside, unwomanly work of the world to the indoor occupations which a husband would require from her; how much better a life according to her real tastes would that be, than anything which she now saw before her!

“That’s nonsense. I’ve smoked hundreds of cigars with you before dinner. Are you going to turn curmudgeon, too, like George and the rest of them? I don’t know what’s coming to the world! I suppose the fact is, that little girl at Allington won’t let you smoke.”

See how I have made you two replies, of which you were desirous that we should be reduced to choose the one.

There is then, I say, a Master within that teaches: Christ teaches; His inspiration teaches.

How one formed out of many?

For neither should we fear, if we were going to a judge who was about to judge us, and who had shown so much love for us, as to have sacrificed his son.

For had it been lawful when prosecution befell them to drink hemlock and depart, all had become more famous than he.

Meg it appears had gone out.

As regarded this Belton estate, which was now altogether his own, he had always had doubts and qualms,—qualms of feeling rather than of conscience; and he had, also, always entertained a strong family ambition.

And thus God is neither unable to aid us, nor does He despise us, since He is both the ruler of all men and the lover of His own people.

Hard they were, and soft they have been made.

“If he did I should accept him.”

Barbados, that makes money, and is in all respects so respectable a little island!

“It’s nothing at all,” continued Clara. “And indeed I shall go home to-day; indeed I shall.”

He was alive to the necessity of ridding himself of the Major; but it had been acknowledged that that duty could not be performed till after this race had been run.

Where He seems to speak of some Jewish precepts, instead of fulfilling them, He substitutes for them precepts of an opposite tendency.

“Your’s ain’t French then?”

“And where are you going?”

perhaps, now also citizens of the new Southern flag, with the palmetto leaf.

What, therefore, is the Creator about, that He should detain outside for punishment those whom His adversary shut out, when He ought rather to have kindly received them, if they must come into His hands, for the greater irritation of His rival?

“It’s your own is in most danger, I’m thinking,” replied Pat; “faith, I wouldn’t take all the pick up tomorrow, to ride that devil you’re to ride over the course.”

He did not yet believe that these men would consent to such an outrage as his banishment.

But if it sends us on to Him, it is no longer so.

I say this, not to set up a law against Christ's law; God forbid; for it is said.

And what marvel is it, if He does this towards us, listless as we are; since even Paul declares that with regard to himself and his disciples, this was the cause of their trials?

So also God is said to know when He causes us to know.

And Jesus, when He had cried with a loud voice, yielded up the Ghost. This is what He said, I have power to lay down my life, and I have power to take it again, and, I lay it down of myself. [John 10:18] So for this cause He cried with the voice, that it might be shown that the act is done by power. Mark at any rate says, that Pilate marvelled if He were already dead: [Mark 15:44] and that the centurion for this cause above all believed, because He died with power. [Mark 15:39]

There was at Constantinople an immense mansion called Carya; for in the court of it there is a walnut tree on which it is said Acacius suffered martyrdom by hanging; on which account a chapel was built near it, which the Emperor Arcadius one day thought fit to visit, and after having prayed there, left again.

Ussher looked very hard at Thady’s face, but it was much too dark for him to see anything that was there.

And what could be so fitly chosen by men to be offered for them as human flesh?

For Christ, had He willed, need not have died, but He neither thought that death should be shunned as though there were any cowardice in it, nor could He have saved us better than by dying.

See, I said, what your not keeping silence amounts to, since not even those who are so familiar with you know of it.

You do not affect a stilted eloquence, nor boylike balance shallow sentences in clauses neatly-turned.

But, in this matter, if you want to find out the cause, if you cannot satisfy your mind without knowing why it is that you must pay more for everything, and must, therefore, charge more to other people, it is because the gold which your notes represent has become more common in the world during the last thirty years.

But it is itself above mind and reason and life and essence.

Still it was the self-same faith in the Mediator which saved the saints of old, both small and great— not the old covenant, which genders to bondage; [Galatians 4:24] not the law, which was not so given as to be able to give life; [Galatians 3:21] but the grace of God through Jesus Christ our Lord.

And when the parties who proposed to speak in opposition to each other had taken their places in view of all, then those who had been elected as judges took their seats in a position elevated above all others: and the task of commencing the disputation was assigned to Manes.

“Come and have a glass of champagne, Alfred,” Melmotte said, as the two cut out together.

There are also others which provide us with none of these, but which call our powers into active exercise.

It offers for the grasp of the senses a smooth surface of delights, like a hilt of rare polish and beautiful workmanship; but when a man has taken it up and has got it into his hands, he finds the pain that has been wedded to it is in his hands as well; and it becomes to him the worker of mourning and of loss.

Nevertheless, they spoke of him occasionally with some little dash of merriment,—as is not unusual with pretty girls who have hobbledehoys among their intimate friends, and who are not themselves unaccustomed to the grace of an Apollo.

Therefore, Beatrice, though she was Mary’s great friend, though she was her brother’s favourite sister, could give Frank no encouragement.

It is evident that Paul and those like him were not elected because they were holy and without blemish, but they were elected and predestinated so that in their after life, by means of their works and their virtues, they should become holy and without blemish.

It was, she thought, the natural end to such an affair.

It was admitted in County Galway that among the Galway lasses no girl exceeded Ada Jones in brightness of beauty.

“I don’t know that it’s irregular at all.”

In closing this letter, I beseech you to have some consideration for a soldier who is now old and has long retired from active service, and not to force him to take the field and again expose his life to the chances of war.

“And that’s not all, yer honer; but they’ve squoze the very toes of me into a jelly.”

Therefore I speak again and shall not cease speaking, until I have persuaded you.

“Better the d–––– you know than the d–––– you don’t know,” is an old saying, and perhaps a true one; but the bishop had not yet realized the truth of it.

I would not wish to say a word animadverting on yourself.

What cause made the kingdoms to bow?

Certainly, on that account: for the Lord rose again in that which He assumed from you.

I knew that he would come.

And do they not encourage young men to exchange a wicked life for a better?

But, as when we say that Father and Son are two, we still confess one God, so when we say that there is one God, let us consider Father and Son two, while they are one in the Godhead, and in the Father's Word being indissoluble and indivisible and inseparable from Him.

This was done with much profusion at Syracuse, a Greek city in Sicily, and spread from them over the whole island.

Uncle Reginald, on his return home, took his niece aside and talked to her very gently and very kindly.

“We may as well,” said the elder, “make out some small provisional list, and you can ask those you name to be with you early tomorrow.

The Countess went on to explain that it might be expedient to postpone this movement for a week or two.

You wouldn’t mind that?

He scolded the maidservant till the poor girl didn’t know the spoons from the forks.

But if the defendant were to call into court authorities accused by the prosecutors, even the judge himself would not consent to receive them.

Chapter 66.

And I have come to announce to you, because you are a man of desires; and ponder on the word, and understand in the vision.

“Perhaps he doesn’t mind it,” said Mr. Camperdown to himself, “but I wouldn’t marry such a woman myself, though she owned all Scotland.”

The relations of these dignitaries to each other, the relation of their womankind to each other, the relation of the clerical world to the town world and to the county world, their conventional etiquette, their jealousies, their feuds, their scandals, and their entertainments, are all marked with admirable truth and a refined touch.

When others of his own order were abandoned to lust, iniquity, and shamelessness, he lived in purity, with clean hands, doing good as far as was in his power to those around him.

To whom Bartholomew, answering, boldly declared that we do not only say that Jesus was equal to Moses, but that He was greater than he, because Moses was indeed a prophet, as Jesus was also, but that Moses was not the Christ, as Jesus was, and therefore He is doubtless greater who is both a prophet and the Christ, than he who is only a prophet.

Hear the Apostle's words: Who is weak, and I am not weak?

In the capacity of brides.

I have duties plainly marked out for me; and as I should never allow myself to be withdrawn from them by pleasure, so neither should I by sorrow.

Dear old John Leech!

He was about to leave the room when the Earl stopped him. “Will you give me your word,” said the Earl, “that you will think no more of Miss Effingham?” Phineas stood silent, considering how he might answer this proposal, resolving that nothing should bring him to such a pledge as that suggested while there was yet a ledge for hope to stand on. “Say that, Mr. Finn, and I will forgive everything.”

Letter 41

Hermes foretold these things with grief, the prophet with joyfulness; and because the Spirit is victorious who sang these things through the ancient prophets, even Hermes himself was compelled in a wonderful manner to confess, that those very things which he wished not to be removed, and at the prospect of whose removal he was sorrowful, had been instituted, not by prudent, faithful, and religious, but by erring and unbelieving men, averse to the worship and service of the gods.

“What does who mean, aunt?”

“Be brought together as brothers and friends.”

For where do we find anything like this written of Esaias, or Jeremias, or any of the twelve, or Daniel?

If she were wanted thus again, the action must be his,—not hers.

Now, what that was which they preached— in other words, what it was which Christ revealed to them— can, as I must here likewise prescribe, properly be proved in no other way than by those very churches which the apostles founded in person, by declaring the gospel to them directly themselves, both vivâ voce, as the phrase is, and subsequently by their epistles.

Man, then, was thus snared by the assault of the arch-fiend, and broke his Creator's command, and was stripped of grace and put off his confidence with God, and covered himself with the asperities of a toilsome life (for this is the meaning of the fig-leaves ); and was clothed about with death, that is, mortality and the grossness of flesh (for this is what the garment of skins signifies); and was banished from Paradise by God's just judgment, and condemned to death, and made subject to corruption.

It is fulfilled, sweet daughter, it is fulfilled, what was promised to us by the prophetic voice concerning this time of the holy Church: And in that day the house of David shall be an open fountain for ablution of the sinner and of her that is unclean [Zechariah 13:1].

Such cessation, however, arising from political causes, is no disappointment to a man.

But wherefore did He at all make worthless men, when He might have made all men good? Whence then are the evil things? says he. Ask yourself; for it is my part to show they are not of nature, nor from God.

“The great! Oh dear!”

For this too the prophet foretold.

Since what happened both made them more glorious, and besides in this way he protected himself against the despiteful usage.

He lunched with the Dean, and then told his story.

Fowler Pratt was the man who had first brought him into Sebright’s, and had given him almost his earliest start on his successful career in life.

And as we by our prayers vanquish all demons who stir up war, and lead to the violation of oaths, and disturb the peace, we in this way are much more helpful to the kings than those who go into the field to fight for them.

To Richmond he never went at all, and in his own house in town very rarely even passed through the door that led into the reception rooms.

Let us then repeat to ourselves soothing charms drawn from the holy Scripture, and say, You are earth and ashes.

Mr. Buxton grounded his motion on these two pleas:- Firstly, That the distress of the West Indian planters had been brought about by their own apathy and indiscretion. And secondly, That that distress was in course of relief, would quickly be relieved, without any further special measures for its mitigation. I think that he was substantially wrong in both these allegations.

To say, as I have done, that virginity is cleaner than wedlock, that the even numbers must give way to the odd, that the types of the Old Testament establish the truth of the Gospel: this, it appears, is a great sin subversive of the churches and intolerable to the world.

But these filthy garments, which have been put by you on all who have become Christians by the name of Jesus, God shows shall be taken away from us, when He shall raise all men from the dead, and appoint some to be incorruptible, immortal, and free from sorrow in the everlasting and imperishable kingdom; but shall send others away to the everlasting punishment of fire.

We found him seated behind a half-formed model, or rather a mere lump of clay punched into something resembling the shape of a head, with a pipe in his mouth and a bit of stick in his hand.

Then there had arisen quarrels about the money between the two females, and between Crinkett and Adamson.

The Americans are proud of much that they have done in this war, and indeed much has been done which may justify pride; but of nothing are they so proud as of the noble dimensions and quick growth of their government debt.

Perpetua sang psalms, already treading under foot the head of the Egyptian; Revocatus, and Saturninus, and Saturus uttered threatenings against the gazing people about this martyrdom.

But now,—now it seemed to be brought in upon him very forcibly that he must rid his thoughts of Hester Bolton,—or else rid his life of Mrs. Smith.

L. If he confesses his error why does he continue a bishop? Let him lay aside his episcopal functions, and I grant pardon to the penitent.

But this man, though he sees something, and sees that very clearly, sees only a little.

Why are there times in which, speaking, we do not fear death, and, silent, even desire it?

So we find him pronouncing a curse on all youths of both sexes, when he says: "Cursed is every one that raises not up a seed in Israel."

The tenant agrees.

The meaning of Leviticus is of course self-evident, although every sacrifice that it describes, nay more every word that it contains, the description of Aaron's vestments, and all the regulations connected with the Levites are symbols of things heavenly!

She felt that she could not see Margaret without saying something of what had passed between herself and Sir John, and that it would be better that nothing should be said.

And since he who has imbibed this truth into his mind and soul, and has believed of all things that thus it shall be, he shall even now see, as it were, in some measure the Father whom he will see hereafter; and he may so regard it, as if he actually held, what he knows for certain that he shall one day hold.

For this he supposes the end of supreme wisdom and virtue.

For a marriage has been made, a spiritual marriage.

And he has sufficiently explained the sense of the above words, In place of loving me, since they owed love not as a general duty only, but in return for His love: in that he has here added, for my good will.

But because He is also just, He has not put those things that He has made out of nothing on an equality with that which He begot out of Himself.

He found them all at breakfast, and the first to welcome him at the hall door was Marian. “Oh, Mr. Cumming, we are so glad to see you;” and she looked into his eyes with a way she had, that was enough to make a man’s heart wild. But she not call him Maurice now.

I should feel in that case that she would yield to your wishes, and I should then, as I have said before, just take myself out of the way.

From the birth of Christ, therefore, to the death of Commodus are, in all, a hundred and ninety-four years, one month, thirteen days.

The little back-parlour in Lombard Street was sweeter to him than Merle Park, with all its charms.

By what words could she so quickly make him know the circumstances of that strange occurrence that he should accept it all before he had said a word that might offend her?

And indeed we know of many holy persons who have both previously led continent lives with their consorts, and have afterwards passed over to the rules of holy Church.

There had been no words about the tea-making, and Lady Ball had been silent also.

“I thought not, Aunt Emmeline, and therefore I have told you.”

So the party was made up.

But after all that had passed I certainly owed it to her not to neglect her;—and this duty was the more incumbent on me as she was a foreigner and unknown to any one.

And whatsoever our sufferings may be, let us think upon things yet more fearful, and we shall have comfort sufficient, and let us ever look around us on those who have undergone more terrible things, and if we ourselves have ever suffered heavier calamities.

Here he has glanced at the retribution on either side, both of those who do the ill, and of those who suffer it, as if he had said, that the justice of God may be shown when He crowns you indeed, but punishes them.

So from all these things it is plain, that it is of the Law of Moses that he here speaks.

Is it not these?

“I knew a girl who was engaged for seven years,” said Mrs. Tappitt, “and she wore herself to a thread-paper,—so she did. And then he married his housekeeper after all.”

And if so, was it well that that sum should go into the pocket of a near relative of the minister whose special business it was to protect the government?

I too barked and was a dog; and then, as was right, instead of the food of teaching, I got the rod of correction.

Is any one so rash as to believe your words, of which he sees that you are yourself doubtful, and to admit that there is a certain power unknown to God the Creator, and to Moses, and the prophets, and the law, and even to Jesus our Master, which power is so good, that it will not make itself known to any but to one only, and that one such an one as you!

The castle stood upon a bluff of land, with a fine prospect of the Firth of Clyde, and with a distant view of the Isle of Arran.

Rowan was then taken into the house and introduced to the old squire, who received him with the stiff urbanity of former days.

Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feeds them.

“I suppose not, sir.”

John 8:55

She would stand sometimes for a minute leaning on the back of her uncle’s chair as he sat at his supper, and would say, when he bade her to take her chair and eat with them, that she preferred picking and stealing.

Wide as the difference between the Spirit and ink, and a stony table and a fleshy, so wide is that between these and those; consequently between themselves who ministered, and him who ministered to them. Yet because it was a great thing he had uttered, he therefore quickly checks himself, saying,

Nay, all things, whatever they are, which in holy Scripture are compared with the hostile power, the devil is said to be perpetually finding cold; and what is found to be colder than he?

Surely any one who thinks this is unmistakeably without a head.

For if you object to my being rid of that corruption which is by nature, see that you object not to God's Word having taken my form of servitude; for as the Lord, putting on the body, became man, so we men are deified by the Word as being taken to Him through His flesh, and henceforward inherit life 'everlasting.'

Every slight from a friend is a dagger in his side.

Sir, your net is not strong enough to hold him; sir, your net has fallen to pieces, and you knew that well enough before I told you;—and now, sir, I’ll wish you good-morning, for I’m busy.

Theodosius publicly confessed his sin in the church, and during the time set apart for penance, refrained from wearing his imperial ornaments, according to the usage of mourners.

For many things are called spirits.

“You know that I love you.”

[Isaiah 45:11-16] Is any opening left for gainsaying, or excuse for ignorance?

But she had laughed at him.

These were gentlemen whose duty it then was to make up and receive the foreign mails.

And thus when he did go into the drawing-room at some time in the evening not much before ten, he was not in a frame of mind likely to bring about domestic comfort.

Here he remained till 1875, encumbered by hardships of which the difficulty of raising a sufficient revenue to pay the expenses of the place was not the least.

Which would the thirsty man rather choose for the supply of his own need, to see marbles beautifully disposed or to find good spring water, even if it flowed through a wooden pipe, as long as the stream which it poured forth was clear and drinkable?

2 Corinthians 5:3

Then what perversity is this, to refuse to be ruled by his reading while he wishes to give up his time thereto; and that he may spend more time in reading what is good, therefore to refuse to do what is read?

“Upon my word she is very kind. And what was the message—unless it be a secret between you three?”

I, for my part, feeling that I should be wrong to keep silent and not offer you my thanks, have availed myself of this letter, whereby I beseech your excellency to speak in warm terms in my behalf both to the victorious and Christian emperor and to the very godly and pious Augusta.

For either all these things are false which you bring forward about them individually, lessening their credit and reputation; and it is in that case a matter quite deserving, that the gods should utterly destroy the race of men; or if they are true and certain, and perceived without any reasons for doubt, it comes to this issue, that, however unwilling you may be, we believe them to be not of heavenly, but of earthly birth.

But when two brethren were coming to him, the water failed on the way, and one died and the other was at the point of death, for he had no strength to go on, but lay upon the ground expecting to die.

But he wouldn’t stir while his fate was as yet unfixed in reference to Polly Neefit.

At this very minute Mr. Horne was somewhat embarrassed in his attempts, and was not fully in possession of his usual active powers of movement, nor of his usual presence of mind.

The results of 'following' belong, he tells us, not to the being, but to the title.

And this meaning is evident also in the clauses which follow.

But I suppose it is best not to shoot a man.

For the present, they would let her put on what clothes she pleased, and make no remark.

For all things are of one God.

But with beautiful women he got into no troubles.

Then praise God, dearly beloved, in all His works and judgments.

“I shall call you Mary, and all that kind of thing.”

Both words, Us and Our are inconsistent with the notion of a solitary God speaking to Himself, and equally inconsistent with that of the address being made to a stranger who has nothing in common with the Speaker.

And what is worldly?

But such are the things which happened at that time to Dionysius.

I add, that perchance you will change conditions.

Even in Christ, knowledge had its stages of growth; through which stages the apostle, too, passed.

Have You come to destroy us before the time?

Adolphe had been quite right, when he said that they were not at all like Henri. There was not one of the whole party who did not strive, heartily and truly, to forgive the treason and iniquity of which he had been guilty; but there was not one there who did not, at the same time, feel a secret wish that he or she might never again be under the same roof with the man who had been a traitor, both to his friends and to his King.

The sources of the Nile, of which men now talk so much,—I see it in the papers and reviews which the ladies at Framley are so good as to send to my wife,—do not interest me much.

I renounce you, Satan, and your pomp, has included all.

'says Moses in his great song in Deuteronomy.

How the first of these calls is of no use to a sluggard, and the last is no hindrance to one who is in earnest.

“It isn’t my doing, Brotherton.”

There were also a few words of parting between Anton Trendellsohn and the girl who had been brought up to believe that she was to be his wife; but though there was friendship in them, there was not much of tenderness. “I hope you will prosper where you are going,” said Rebecca, as she gave the man her hand.

The rector hurried home full of indignation, but he had a word or two with his nephew before he started. “What do you mean to do now, Frederic?” asked the rector with a very grave demeanour.

Meat was about 6d.

He did not answer the note, but, nevertheless, it annoyed him much.

BY CLEMENT OF ALEXANDRIA

They were quite unaware of anything of the kind being imputed to Christians, or they would certainly have looked into it for themselves, and searched the matter out.

For He who healed the sick, and taught the most excellent way of life, and commanded men to obey their rulers, was not establishing but undoing a tyranny.

What shall I say of the Romans themselves, who fortify their own empire with garrisons of their own legions, nor can extend the might of their kingdom beyond these nations?

But by reading what he has last written, just before he recommences his task, the writer will catch the tone and spirit of what he is then saying, and will avoid the fault of seeming to be unlike himself.

Let us not lull ourselves with the delusion that we can always fall back on penitence.

Abraham saw this and recognized the mystery, that salvation should be to us from the Tree, nor did it escape his notice that in one and the same sacrifice it was One that seemed to be offered, Another which could be slain.

“He did write a note, I suppose?”

Beware of the very day up to that on which the moon passes out from these stars, and then baptize and enter on every beginning of your works.

[Matthew 19:12] But what need, says one, was there of wickedness?

Neither said he, what any one may have gained, but, as he may prosper: signifying that the supply is of God.

And to myself many have sent intimations regarding such persons, to whom I also replied in pursuance of my father's judgment.

This very kind of thing accordingly Christ declares to be the greatest praise of virtue, thus saying, What went ye out for to see?

Thus it is a duty of virtue to live for one's country, and for its sake to beget children, neither of which can be done without bodily pleasure.

[Revelation 5:5] Who among us dare unseal the book of the priesthood, sealed by confessors, and long hallowed by the testimony of many?

For they have only these words of the woman, But say a word against God, and die.

Therefore also, a certain wise man exhorts, saying, Seek not out the things that are too hard for you; neither search the things that are too deep for you.

But that feeling regarded himself rather than his sister; and if properly analyzed would merely have signified that, though proud enough of his own rank, he did not require that his friends should be of the same standing.

And these three sorts give a monk no little trouble, unless he tries to free himself from all of them with the same care and scrupulousness.

Justice requires that you inquire into the life both of him who confesses and of him who denies, that by his deeds it may be apparent what kind of man each is.

So then this order of its arrangement, and the concordant harmony of all things, shows that the Word, its Ruler and Governor, is not many, but One.

‘I think that his conduct has given him a right to demand it,’ he said to Mr. Bolton.

“They won’t fight, Jeannette. Gentlemen have given over fighting.”

On the following morning Lady Anna did not come down to breakfast, and the Countess began to fear that she would be unable to induce her girl to rise in time to receive their visitor.

But during the whole time, his chief wish, his longing desire, was to finish the interview, and get out of that horrid room.

Jesus answered and said to him, If a man love me, he will keep my words: and my Father will love him, and we will come unto him, and make our abode with him.

Yet what sane man would agree with the statement that of those things of which the names are different the essences must needs be divergent also?

The Duke of St. Bungay ventured to say to his friend that no other selection was possible.

“I’m not a god,” she said, “or a Pitt, or an Italian with a long name beginning with M., that I should be able to do these things without ever making a mistake.

The true ‘Falernian grape,’“ she said, as she deposited the empty beaker on the grass beneath her elbow.

‘Come, give me the other,’ said Charley roughly.

Possibly it was this great power of vision which was temporarily communicated to the eyes of the holy Job while yet in this mortal body, when he says to God, I have heard of You by the hearing of the ear; but now my eye sees You: wherefore I abhor myself, and melt away, and count myself dust and ashes; [Job 42:5-6] although there is no reason why we should not understand this of the eye of the heart, of which the apostle says, Having the eyes of your heart illuminated.

For this custom is generally observed between the buyer and seller, that one who wants to make himself over to the power of another, receives from his buyer a price for the loss of his liberty, and his consignment to perpetual slavery.

But even with such reduction, the price is very high, and at once makes the American hotel expensive.

“Don’t mind him, my lord. He’s not like one of those English cats, with jist a dash of speed about ‘em, and nothing more—brutes that they put in training half a dozen times in as many months. Thim animals pick up a lot of loose, flabby flesh in no time, and loses it in less; and, in course, av’ they gets a sweat too much, there’s nothin left in ‘em; not a hapoth. Brien’s a different guess sort of animal from that.”

And, again, all men and all spirits who humbly seek the glory of God and not their own, and who follow Him in piety, belong to one fellowship.

[Matthew 27:28] And they stripped him, and put on [40] him a scarlet cloak.

1. There flourished many learned men in the Church at that time, whose letters to each other have been preserved and are easily accessible. They have been kept until our time in the library at Ælia, which was established by Alexander, who at that time presided over that church. We have been able to gather from that library material for our present work.

If it comes by post, you throw it into the waste-paper basket.

But the woman was his wife, and he comes back and finds that she had gone astray.

But if, indeed, this is not the case, as we all think that it is not, what, pray, is the meaning of so great audacity to fashion to yourself whatever form you please, and to say that it is an image of a god whom you cannot prove to exist at all?

If you are quite disengaged at twelve o’clock tomorrow, I will walk over to The Cleeve at that hour. Or if it would suit you better to call here as you are riding, I would remain within till you come. I want your kind advice on a certain matter.

Also in the same place: If any one shall say that he loves God, and hates his brother, he is a liar: for he who loves not his brother whom he sees, how can he love God whom he sees not?

But the God of all is good and exceeding noble by nature,— and therefore is kind.

And I examined diligently, and considered discreetly, the nature of all that is on earth, and I perceived it to be most various; and I saw that to man it is given to labour upon earth, ever carried about by all different occasions of toil, and with no result of his work.

Even the omnibuses from the railway-station never came there unless they were ordered to call at Mrs. Winterfield’s door.

The day was one of those from which all the men and women return home cross, and which induce some half-hearted folk to declare to themselves that they never will hunt again.

Vision 4

“I always vote Blue myself,” said Mr. Pile, “and I don’t suppose I shall do otherwise this time.

For to this locality there is one descent, at the gate whereof we believe an archangel is stationed with a host.

But he is a man of wealth, power, and genius, and Alf will get the worst of it.” Under such teaching as this, Lady Carbury was almost obliged to give up Mr Alf.

For great pursuits are liable to great falls, and evil is more opposed to that which is really good than to that which is not good.

Then there is Naomi, in Greek [παρακεκλημένη] or she who is consoled, who, when her husband and her children died abroad, carried her chastity back home and, being supported on the road by its aid, kept with her her Moabitish daughter-in-law, that in her the prophecy of Isaiah might find a fulfilment.

“I only know that he was standing there with a whip in his hand,” said Mr. Gresham.

“‘Is it in his office?’ thought Crinoline to herself; ‘or is it here? Is it anywhere?’

Had a tear the power to crush that soul of adamant?

And then he began with a sweet low voice, almost modest in its tones.

Now, how was it likely that He who had called mammon a master, and had associated him with God, should say nothing of Him who was really the Master of even these, that is, the Creator?

When the police came on board the Julius Vogel, Anna Young had as yet received nothing.

It seemed hardly possible to his imagination that Violet Effingham should love such a nobody as he.

I thought it war poking his fun at me, yer honours—for I knowed the Captain hadn’t been at Ballycloran that night, and that the masther had been ating his dinner at home, so I didn’t be taking much notice of what he war saying, till we war mostly half down the avenue, when Mr. Thady told me the body war there.

It was very generous of her; and the more so, as Mr. Kennedy had, in a half-hesitating manner, prepared to seat himself in that very place.

Put off, I pray you, fornication and uncleanness, and put on the brightest robe of chastity.

But he may be supposed to have the appearance of announcing something of greater importance (than those who preceded him), as if the Jews had been committing sin, or corrupting their religion, or doing deeds of impiety; for these things are obscurely hinted at.

Book VIII, Letter 13

For Jeremiah said concerning them:— Call them rejected silver, for the Lord has rejected them.

“My comfort!” said the Prime Minister. “That has vanished long ago;—and my peace of mind, and my happiness.”

Learn therefore ye to be poor and needy, whether you have anything in this world, or whether you have not

Suffice it for me to say, that the Lord of all is God; and I say the Lord of all absolutely, nothing being left by way of exception.

For why should he undo the clothes?

So is it the nature of goodness to put even those who are most opposed to it to the blush and vanquish them.

But many young fail also, because they endeavour to tell stories when they have none to tell.

“Then there is so much more reason for having it said quickly. Unpleasant things should always be got over without delay.”

On the Wednesday and Thursday Lizzie had been triumphant; for she had certainly come out unscathed from Mr. Camperdown’s chambers, and a lady may surely be said to triumph when a gentleman lays his hand, his heart, his fortunes, and all that he has got, at her feet.

Believe Him who willgive to all that believe the reward of eternal life.

“I do,” said he.

Honour is a cold word.

God, therefore, knowing that the false opinion about the plurality of gods was burdening the soul of man like some disease, and wishing to remove and eradicate it, appeared first to Moses, and said to him, I am He who is.

As for prosecuting the miscreant, had not his own lawyer told him over and over again that such a prosecution was the very thing which the miscreant desired.

If it be so, He ought to have said, 'For whom the Word was made but He says not so, but, 'For whom are all things, and by whom are all things,' thus proving these men to be heretical and false.

We discern how: for what was not made by the Father through the Son?

My dear Madam,—[began the letter]

Since that, and since his marriage, surely the protestations of affection had come almost exclusively from the lady!

Neither had he told them there how often Mr. Sowerby and Lord Lufton were together in London.

Now, certainly this result is present to the foreknowledge of him who predicts an event, when it is possible that it may or may not happen, viz., that one or other of these things will take place.

[Numbers 12:1, etc.]

In what, then, do you say that the Son will be made subject?

That judge was still living, a poor old bedridden man, and in the course of this latter trial his statement was given in evidence.

One is constrained by mysteries and hemmed in by difficulties, knowing, however, that the mysteries will be made clear, and the difficulties overcome at the end of the third volume.

And as to the question, why does he cite the testimonies of the Greeks?

She was not contented unless she could go beyond the Saxons, and would certainly have christened her children, had she had children, by the names of the ancient Britons.

His Royal Highness the Duke of Windsor had signified through young Lord Brabazon that he would stand as one of the sponsors.

Commandment 10

‘And she has disgraced herself,’ said Adrian Urmand, with all the emphasis that he had at command.

You reply, it is not from the animal food that the good part comes which those people bring into bondage, but from the vegetables which they take with their meat.

She always knows, by instinct, when I am coming.

“I don’t like to stay here and make you unhappy. I can’t think that I ought to have done what you asked me, because I did not feel at all in that way about Mr. Gibson. But as I have only disappointed you, it will be better that I should go home. I have been very happy here,—very.”

And if we believe that God is always present in this temple, to whose divinity the secrets of the heart are open, we shall so live as always to have Him propitious, and never to fear His anger.

In chaff with me they were, in wheat with me they were not.

— which is a male monad, begetting after the manner of a parent all the rest of the numbers.

Such being the state of his mind, his father’s arrival did not contribute much to his comfort.

[1 Corinthians 9:20-21] Also in the Epistle to the Colossians he writes, Admonishing every man, and teaching every man in all wisdom, that we may present every man perfect in Christ.

But if you beforehand puttest it out to interest with God, the treasure henceforward remains unassailable, and great is the facility wherewith that repayment will be made.

For although what they said was true, and they lied not then, saying, 'You are the Son of God,' and 'the Holy One of God [Matthew 8:29; Mark 1:24 yet He would not that the truth should proceed from an unclean mouth, and especially from such as them, lest under pretence thereof they should mingle with it their own malicious devices, and sow these also while men slept.

Mr. Thwaite of course understood that the family had been averse to this marriage,—naturally very averse.

At what time have they been set under such bondage?

Sir Harry and Lady Elizabeth both felt that it must be infinitely better for their girl to be away; and then there came the doctor’s slow advice.

Let his father come forward, and say that they meant nothing, that he abandoned all right to any interference as to his son’s marriage, and then the son—would dutifully consent to accept his father’s bounty!

What Was Not Done With the Funds

They were less loud, and, as other boys would have said of them, less “cocky” than of yore.

For these alone are holy, and those hence-forward profane.

And if you can receive it, he is Elijah, who was to come.

Hymn 65.

What we have already said concerning Peter and John, Anna and Mary, may be of service here.

[1 Corinthians 4:4] Do you see that he does not exalt himself, but by every means abases and humbles himself, and that too when he had arrived at the very summit.

Charley declined dealing on these terms; and then Mr. M’Ruen at last went away, leaving Charley to his fate, and lamenting quite pathetically that he was such an unpunctual young man, so very unpunctual that it was impossible to do anything to assist him. Charley, however, manfully resisted the second attack upon his devoted watch.

Therefore Martyrs, not the punishment, but the cause makes, for if punishment made Martyrs, all the mines would be full of Martyrs, every chain would drag Martyrs, all that are executed with the sword would be crowned.

Other men before Lopez have had to pick up what courage they could in their attacks upon women by remembering that fact.

How then are we to get free from this hard bondage?

Mrs. Garrow, though she had known him since he was a boy, had taken an aversion to him since he had quarrelled with her daughter; but there was no room on this first night for showing such aversion, and everything went off well.

But Abraham, (you say,) was circumcised.

Neither in this way only does He soften the apparent novelty of His doctrine, but also by speaking of Abraham's bosom instead of the kingdom. For neither was that term familiar to them: moreover, the introduction of Abraham would be a sharper sting to them. Wherefore John also spoke nothing at first concerning hell, but, what was most apt to grieve them, He says, Think not to say, we are children of Abraham. [Matthew 3:9]

And not only in the case of sensible things posited in place, there abide also intelligible and incorporeal reasons of them apart from local space; but also of motions that pass by in successive times, apart from any transit in time, there stand also like reasons, themselves certainly intelligible, and not sensible.

“Bishop, did you ever hear a more sublime, more spirit-moving, more appropriate discourse than that?”

If so, then listen to the blast of the gospel trumpet, that son of thunder, [Mark 3:17] the disciple whom Jesus loved [John 13:23] and who reclining on the Saviour's breast drank in the waters of sound doctrine.

‘Safe enough, I should think,’ said the clergyman.

[2 Corinthians 6:8-10] And again, Of the Jews five times received I forty stripes save one; thrice was I beaten with rods, once was I stoned, a night and a day have I been in the deep; in journeyings often, in tribulations, in distress, in hunger.

Indeed the substance is one thing which no definition has been found to express, and the significance of the names employed concerning it varies, as the names are given from some operation or accident.

He brings forth three measures of fine meal, and slays one victim, considering that one sacrifice is sufficient, but a triple gift; one victim, an offering of three.

There was a degree of triumph in these lamentations, a tone of self-satisfied assurance in the truth of her melancholy predictions, which showed that the widow was not ill at ease with herself. When Anty was declared out of danger, her joy was expressed with much more moderation.

7. We said, then, among other things in the tenth book, that the mind of man knows itself. For the mind knows nothing so much as that which is close to itself; and nothing is more close to the mind than itself. We adduced also other evidences, as much as seemed sufficient, whereby this might be most certainly proved.

On account of the relaxing of sins that were before.

“We may see Popenjoy!” she exclaimed through her sobs.

But then she was so stern,—and her very strength was so oppressive!

John, however, with more sublimity and propriety, says in the beginning of his Gospel, when defining God by a special definition to be the Word, And God was the Word, and this was in the beginning with God.

“But a Jew!” said Madame Zamenoy. “If it had been any kind of a Christian, I could understand it.”

Ignatius, who is also called Theophorus, to Hero, the deacon of Christ, and the servant of God, a man honoured by God, and most dearly loved as well as esteemed, who carries Christ and the Spirit within him, and who is my own son in faith and love: Grace, mercy, and peace from Almighty God, and from Christ Jesus our Lord, His only-begotten Son, who gave Himself for our sins, that He might deliver us from the present evil world, [Galatians 1:4] and preserve us unto His heavenly kingdom.

I never saw him in my life, but that’s what Sir Magnus says.

Few parish churches in England are in better repair, or better worth keeping so, than that at Plumstead Episcopi; and yet it is built in a faulty style: the body of the church is low,—so low, that the nearly flat leaden roof would be visible from the churchyard, were it not for the carved parapet with which it is surrounded.

With this man stirring the pot, and with one of the blasphemers from Illyricum, letters in hand, assembling the authorities with this end in view, and with Modestus kindling passion to a greater heat than in the previous excitement, every one joined the movement of the Emperor's anger, making his fury their own, and yielding to the temper of authority; and on the other hand all felt their hopes sink at the prospect of what might happen.

But if according to them the faith had its beginning from the present consulate, what will the fathers and the blessed martyrs do?

Nevertheless Eunomius, in open contempt of truth, does assert that the title cannot mean the 'having begotten a son' any longer, when once the word has conveyed to us the idea of 'never having been generated.'

Our body too might be said to be a prison, not because that is a prison which God has made, but because it is under punishment and liable to death.

Here again, not as wondering at man, has He withdrawn him from swearing by his head (for so man himself would be worshipped), but as referring the glory to God, and signifying that you are not master even of yourself, and of course therefore not of the oaths made by your head.

[Romans 9:5] It is true that here he has mentioned the Son, without the article; but he does the same with the Father also, at least in his Epistle to the Philippians [Philippians 2:6], he says, Who being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God; and again to the Romans, Grace to you, and peace, from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

Thus burdened, the Rev.

[Acts 12:11] Why is not this effected by themselves?

But here in his bookroom they would be disgraceful.

For, by this time, in this respect as well as others, you are reigning in wealth and satiety — not making inroads upon such sins as fasts diminish, nor feeling need of such revelations as xerophagies extort, nor apprehending such wars of your own as Stations dispel.

That, indeed, is possible.

The reason of his beginning that most unrighteous struggle was because he coveted the sovereignty.

Moreover he calls him a righteous man, who has attained unto virtue.

“I don’t think that would do at all, my dear.”

Taking the simple sense of the words, we have a command, following on the precept of mutual kindness between man and wife, that we should nourish and cherish our wives: that is, that we should supply them with the food and clothing which are necessary.

On my honour I don’t understand it.

To Virgilius, Bishop.

granted the province to his brother, James II., then Duke of York, and possession was taken of the country on his behalf by one Colonel Nichols.

His dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and His kingdom shall not be destroyed.

‘Nor I, either,’ said Miss Viner.

What way are you seeking?

“When you condescend to tell me that you are devoted to me, as though that were the kind of thing that I expect to have said when I take a walk with a young man in a wood, is not that the tomfoolery of lovemaking?” She stopped and looked at him, so that he was obliged to answer.

(As it is written, For Your sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter.)

In the ordinary course of his life he was used to solitude.

He had the right to do so, and she would not complain.

Yet he had been so disgraced that he could hardly venture to walk about the streets of London in the daylight.

“Or call you the Saviour of St. Florent!” added the laundress.

Imagine not that His truth is not here, if His truth were not here, he would not say in another Psalm: Truth is risen out of the earth; nor would Truth Itself say, Lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world.

But as I was saying,—then he fell to talking about the books, and I was angered.

But the sun blazed even fiercer and fiercer.

For I think that God has set forth us the Apostles last of all, as men doomed to death.

Whether in the so-called Popish days of Henry VIII and his ancestors, or in the so-called Protestant days that had followed, the state of society had required that spiritual teaching should be supplied from funds fixed and devoted to the purpose.

If the Sabines were wrong to deny their daughters when the Romans asked for them, was it not a greater wrong in the Romans to carry them off after that denial?

“Try, my dear,” said Madame Staubach.

Would Miss O’Mahony condescend to take a seat in the carriage which was waiting for her?

But if it be incorporeal, must it not also be incapable of passion?

He hated that man Mason, as he declared to himself when providing himself with reasons for his resolve, and regarded his bitter, malicious justice as more criminal than any crime of which Lady Mason might have been guilty.

And He says again, Then shall the Son of man send His angels, and they shall gather together His elect from the four winds of heaven.

When you first loved me;—for you did love me.

For I have chosen to be mean in Your house; I desire to be a member, no matter what, or how small, of Your priesthood.

The wires are there always of course, but by some lights they are hardly visible.

“No, I should say not,” said he. “But, Bell—”

“I want you to say that you won’t take any office unless you are allowed to bring in one or two friends with you.”

If, on the one hand, those gods are enraged at the keeping of faith, let them enlist perjured persons as their worshippers.

Chapter 3. Plagiarism by the Greeks of the Miracles Related in the Sacred Books of the Hebrews

But Aby’s look had quelled, or at any rate silenced him; and though he did advance another stage in tipsiness before they succeeded in getting him off to bed, he said no more about Sir Thomas Fitzgerald or his Castle Richmond secrets.

What then is the gain?

Chapter 17. The Persecution under Domitian.

They affirm that they are showing great reverence for God, to Whom alone they reserve the power of forgiving sins.

Hence he calls those acts which the soul performs of herself, natural; [ψυχικά] and those which the body performs of itself carnal.

In honoring Him, therefore, we do honor to ourselves.

On the morning but one following, there came a note from Sir Griffin to Lucinda,—just as they were leaving home for their journey up to London,—in which Sir Griffin expressed his regret if he had said anything displeasing to Mrs. Carbuncle.

Do you see too that the Spirit is Infinite?

They indeed rightly, from the predictions of Moses, expect the one true Prophet; but by the wickedness of Dositheus they were hindered from believing that Jesus is He whom they were expecting.

Fred Neville had been at an excellent school, but it may be doubted whether he could have explained his own written language.

Does not the earth itself remain under the fear of precept, which it testifies by its motion and quaking?

“What is all over?”

It is however to be hoped that the under-secretary for the Home Office knew, for to him had the matter been confided.

“I can be very resolute if I please, my dear,” she said, looking at Caroline.

And what loss will you sustain if you do well without reward?

There are many forsooth, who, besides what has been already referred to, bring forward this objection.

Sooner than that, he would give up every stick in his possession, and go and live in New Zealand if it were necessary.

He has not said, What great things do the Martyrs do?

She thought that she rather liked Lady Eustace.

“You can’t in reality be poorer now than you were last year. You have not spent anything to speak of. There can be no doubt that Chaldicotes will be ample to pay all you owe the duke.”

“It was not by any will of my own,” continued the eager woman, “that I married Ferdinand Lefroy.

Whereas, let him not go to church, let him drink too much wine, let him go astray in his conversation, and her wrath arises against these faults.

The autumnal tints are fine with us.

It was Ralph Newton who did it, and nobody quite understood how it was done.

But to see a young man like you, Mr Cradell, dangling after an old married woman, who doesn’t know how to behave herself; and all just because she lets him to do it;—ugh!—an old broomstick with a petticoat on would do just as well!

For what Marcellus had advanced by way of enquiry , they falsely represented as his professed opinion; but when the subsequent parts of the book were read, and the parts preceding the queries themselves, his faith was found to be correct.

To threaten while the life is in the man is human To believe in the execution of those threats when the life has passed away is almost beyond the power of humanity At the hour fixed we were at the Spotted Dog, and found there a crowd assembled.

A great good is philosophy; the philosophy, I mean, which is with us.

“Yes, I think that Silverbridge would do. You, no doubt, will say that I am flying high?”

“There will be too many of us for that, Jacques. Five hundred throats will dispose of much good wine, so as to do but little injury.”

The whole world is now the chorus of Christ.

But then what did it signify?

It was at this time past seven o’clock, and Lady Tringle when she heard the news was so astounded that she did not at first know how to act.

Inasmuch as (Elchasai) considers, then, that it would be an insult to reason that these mighty and ineffable mysteries should be trampled under foot, or that they should be committed to many, he advises that as valuable pearls [Matthew 7:6] they should be preserved, expressing himself thus: Do not recite this account to all men, and guard carefully these precepts, because all men are not faithful, nor are all women straightforward.

“I hope it will never be off.”

One Cluvius has left him a prop 183erty at Puteoli, and the house has tumbled down; but he has sent for Chrysippus, an architect.

“Didn’t he?” said Mrs. Robarts, putting out her hand to get it back, but in vain. “I thought it was for the best; I did indeed.”

He has not permitted all things to be known to you, lest the greatness of your knowledge should excite you to pride.

“Upon my soul, you are too good.”

Then when the messenger sent by the king would not believe it, saying: If the Lord would rain abundance of grain from heaven, not even so would that come about, Elisha said to him: Because you have not believed, you shall see it with your eyes, but shall not eat of it.

Lord George, as he went down to lunch, felt himself to be almost guilty, and hardly did more than creep into the room where his wife and sisters were seated.

“ Sophronie,” said I, taking courage, and speaking with a voice from which all sense of shame and fear of failure were intended to be banished; “ Sophronie will tell us what she intends to do for us herself:”

“I know, Rosina, he never did; and yet where would he have been but for the de Courcys?” So exclaimed, in her gratitude, the Lady Arabella; to speak the truth, however, but for the de Courcys, Mr Gresham might have been at this moment on the top of Boxall Hill, monarch of all he surveyed.

Listen to me.

Up to the present point then it is uncircumcision that the contest is against, and this is why he advances in His discourse in a subdued tone, and says,

These are artifices of the Jews who wish to calumniate us, that because of their complaints, an extraordinary military inquiry may be ordered, and a soldier sent, who will, perhaps, say what one said once here, O Emperor, before your accession: How will Christ be able to help us who fight for the Jews against Christ, who are sent to avenge the Jews?

The regard in which one is held is also very much enhanced when one rescues a poor man out of the hands of a powerful one, or saves a condemned criminal from death; so long as it can be done without disturbance, for fear that we might seem to be doing it rather for the sake of showing off than for pity's sake, and so might inflict severer wounds while desiring to heal slighter ones.

26. For if those who run in a race are, as one hears, instructed and warned each one to win the race by swiftness of foot and not by any foul play, and to hasten on to victory by running as hard as they can, but not to dare to trip up another or push him aside with their hand, how much more in the course of this life ought the victory to be won by us, without falseness to another and cheating?

So Bell is going to marry Dr Crofts!

But Mr. Crawley,—so he told himself,—could have encountered all that without flinching.

So-and-so has made a good speech, so-and-so a bad one; this man knows the Scriptures, that one is crazy; this man talks glibly, that never says a word at all.

[Psalm 101:6, Septuagint]

“But, George, when you thought that that little boy was not Popenjoy you were as anxious as papa to find it all out.”

‘That will get him out at once, of course,’ said Hester, triumphantly, as soon as she heard it.

For it is but reasonable, since you were commissioned by his Majesty, that you should reserve the matter for him upon our appealing to his piety.

As soldiers, fit or capable of being made fit for the duties they had undertaken, I could find but one fault with them.

[Colossians 1:13] For what Christian is not aware that he seduces nations even now, and draws them with himself to eternal punishment, but not those predestined to eternal life?

Lucretius, whose language we regard as almost archaic, so unlike is it to that of Virgil or Horace, was born eight years after Cicero.

[Jeremiah 5:8] Quod si dicat serpentera, a brutis animantibus accepta consilii sui ratione, Adamo persuasisse ut cum Eva coire consentiret, tanquam alioqui, ut quidam existimant, protoplasti hac natura usuri non fuissent: rursus vituperatur creatio, ut quæ rationis expertium animantium natura homines fecerit imbecilliores, quorum exempla consecuti sunt, qui a Deo primi formati fuere.

Was there anything of truth in the opinion expressed by Mrs. Hittaway that her brother was beginning to become tired of his bargain?

And I fear lest, in flying for your own sake, you prove to be in peril in the sight of the Lord on account of others.

It was the first love letter she had ever written,—probably the first letter she had ever written to a man, except those short notes which she would occasionally scrawl to Father Marty in compliance with her mother’s directions.

“Capital!” said Mr. Tappitt. “I don’t know that you’ve brought in any capital.”

In this terrible emergency of her life, Mrs. Vincent sent over to her a solicitor from London, between whom and the Italian man of business a bargain was struck.

For God shall not be hidden, as before, and in the judgment of men not opening His mouth; but God shall come manifest, our God, and He shall not be silent.

Celsus, indeed, evinced a slight knowledge of Scripture when he made Jesus say, that it is a certain Satan who contrives such devices; although he begs the question when he asserts that Jesus did not deny that these works have in them nothing of divinity, but proceed from wicked men, for he makes things which differ in kind to be the same.

For being raised from the dead He dies no more, and death has no more dominion over Him.

What meaning for us have those themes of the Lord's parables?

On receiving your Excellency's letters I was glad to hear that you had reached Mount Sinai.

“Oh yes; that’s all very well. He’d have left you behind if he’d been of my way of thinking. Mr Gordon here, and Mr Gordon there! I wonder what’s Mr Gordon! He ain’t no better than an ordinary miner. Coals and diamonds is all one to me;—I’d rather have the coals for choice.” But Mary was not in a humour to contest the matter with Mrs Baggett, and left the old woman the mistress of the field.

“I take it there is a difficulty about money, Mr. Solicitor.”

And, because of this, touching their faith were they solicitous,

“No, uncle,” she answered, turning away her head to hide her tears.

Nevertheless, I am much obliged to you for writing to me.

“Oh, yes; I am not aware that she thinks of leaving just yet.”

Behold how well Moses legislated.

[John 14:8-9] Because He is Himself the eternal life, in order that men may know the one true God, You and whom You have sent, Jesus Christ.

And then, though the Captain may be a little free, I don’t doubt but what I shall get the upper hand with him at last.

The stone which the builders declared to be base,

for these utterances also belong to the Son.

If therefore wisdom is taken away from the philosophers by their own confession, and justice is taken away from those who are regarded as just, it follows that all those descriptions of virtue must be false, because no one can know what true virtue is but he who is just and wise.

He refers also in the same letter to the heretical teachings of Sabellius, which were in his time becoming prominent, and says:

“But I must find the carriage for you, Mrs. Bold; and I must tell my father that you will return with him alone; and I must make some excuse to him for not going with you; and I must bid the servant put you down at your own house, for I suppose you will not now choose to see them again in the close.”

All such things are either true, and therefore helpful to the inquiry which we are now making, or are mere fables, in which case the fact of their invention is wonderful; nevertheless I would desire to get some information from the fact that they come and visit men, and are seen otherwise than in dreams.

If, therefore, our own God is the true God, and if, as the heretics say, the Only-begotten God is not of the nature of the true God, He is a strange God, and not our God.

“Of course I was a villain. But it was only once; and your Lordship was so rough to me! I am not saying but what I was a villain. Think of what I did for myself by that one piece of wickedness! Master of hounds! member of the club! And the horse would have run in my name and won the Leger! And everybody knew as your Lordship and me was together in him!” Then he burst out into a paroxysm of tears and sobbing.

For He, it is said, is merciful; He will heal their sins, and not destroy them, and fully turn away His anger, and not kindle all His wrath.

He knew it indeed through the Latin version only; his critical knowledge is frequently at fault; and far-fetched mystical interpretations, such as he delighted in, abound.

He does not make an open show of the insult, but he does it privately and with much address, and grieving, as hurt, and weeping and lamenting.

Chapter 10. Exhortation to the practice of virtue

At last, however, seeing Lord Rufford standing alone,—he had then just left the sofa on which Arabella was still lying,—without any apparent effort she made her way up to his side.

Herr Crippel seated himself on his stool and looked once or twice round about upon the room almost with dismay.

For the nourishment of the body is rest.

We are enjoined nothing difficult, nothing burdensome, if we have the will.

And know thou that it cannot be renewed, except your old man on the Rock shall have been broken off: that is, except by the aid of the Rock, except by the aid of Christ, you will not be able to be renewed.

How pleasant it is to see her in her pride of place, achieving her mastery over the difficulties in her way by her own wit, as all men, and all women also, must really do who intend to ride to hounds; and doing it all without any sign that the difficulties are too great for her!

The brethren, it says, received us gladly.

If this is true, why could they learn nothing from the apostle of light?

Not as yet, says he, have I completed all.

“And the discount?” asked Lady Amelia.

Since before this also they said, Truly He is Son of God, [Matthew 14:33] those, I mean, who were in the vessel after the tempest, which they saw, and were not blessed, although of course they spoke truly.

Were she to consent to marry him, then he thought he might find courage to destroy the paper.

“Indeed it shall not,” said he, laying the embargo of half a stone weight of human flesh and blood upon the devoted paper. “Nothing that you write for my eyes, signora, shall be so desecrated,” and he took up the letter, put that also among the carrots and fed on it, and then proceeded to read it.

Idolatry is condemned, not on account of the persons which are set up for worship, but on account of those its observances, which pertain to demons.

Of course she thought that it referred to the old overtures made to her by Lord George; but in that case, had she married Lord George, she could only have been made a marchioness by his own death,—by that and by the death of the little Popenjoy of whom she had heard so much.

For, so far as concerns themselves, their piety and probity, which are great gifts of God, suffice to give them true felicity, enabling them to live well the life that now is, and afterwards to receive that which is eternal.

There must-be sorrow and trouble, and perhaps some ill blood, in this return.

But it was the look of age, and the almost masculine strength of the lower face which astonished Lady Ushant the most.

She had bade him not to desert her; and he had not only given her his promise, but he had converted that promise to a sacred pledge by a kiss.

For when once it is made clear that there are two unbegotten natures, then others of your averments may also gain our assent, even although something in them may not seem to fit in very readily with what is credible.

10. And lead us not into temptation; but deliver us from the evil one: for Yours is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.

“No, indeed, then,” replied Daly; “I have a client there now—a thing I never had in that part of the country before yesterday.”

Wherefore those who follow Him, and know Him, having faith in Him as their proof, shall rest in Him.

On the following morning he came, and was soon closeted with her.

Not indeed charged with anything monstrous, but because being freed from error, they hastened to piety; because they abstained from the service of demons, because they recognized the true God, and worshipped his only begotten Son, and for things for which they ought to have been crowned, and admired and honoured, for these they were punished and encountered countless tortures, all who embraced the faith, and much more they who had the oversight of the churches.

For his having no sin, which they suppose was completed when he spoke these words, pertained to the finishing of his course; just in the same way as his triumphing over his adversary in the decisive conflict of his suffering had also reference to the finishing of his course, although this they must needs themselves allow remained yet to be effected, when he was speaking these words.

And this he does everywhere: when he is about writing to any with somewhat to blame them for, and somewhat to praise, he first praises them, and then comes down to his charges.

And upon this hint he spake. “Yes, your father I am sure has been a happy man, and he is an excellent clergyman.”

Or if the region of darkness had a curved line, and the region of light a straight one, they cannot have touched at all points.

“You had better read it.”

“It is I that have to suffer,” continued Georgiana. “Does he expect me to find anybody here that I could take? Poor George Whitstable is not much; but there is nobody else at all.”

[Exodus 32:31-32] He sought to imitate the Shepherd who would, he knew, carry on his shoulders even the wandering sheep.

Were he to prove himself the worst of men she would still love him.

[Luke 7:49] And those that were invited [11] began to say within themselves, Who is this that forgives sins also?

It is true he said this, but how long was it possible for him to remain here?

Why, O witlings, do you speak of things which you have not examined, and which are unknown to you, prating with the garrulity of a rash tongue?

So that one can see that they not only are unable to understand our earthly matters, but also, being at variance among themselves regarding these things, they will appear unworthy of credit when they treat of things heavenly.

In course of time, owing to the certain discovery of the truth, that doubt was taken away.

Had nothing of this kind taken place, he would not have forbidden them.

For, before that, it was upon the prophets alone, and upon a few individuals— if there happened to be any among the people deserving of it— that the gift of the Holy Spirit was conferred; but after the advent of the Saviour, it is written that the prediction of the prophet Joel was fulfilled, In the last days it shall come to pass, and I will pour out my Spirit upon all flesh, and they shall prophesy, which is similar to the well-known statement, All nations shall serve Him.

Come, Crawley, I’ll talk to you every evening about Jerusalem for as long as you please;—and then there will perhaps come back to us something of the pleasantness of old days.” As she heard this Mrs. Crawley’s eyes became full of tears, and she could not altogether hide them.

The immediate neighbourhood of Millbank Penitentiary is not one which we should, for its own sake, choose for our residence, either on account of its natural beauty, or the excellence of its habitations. That it is a salubrious locality must be presumed from the fact that it has been selected for the site of the institution in question; but salubrity, though doubtless a great recommendation, would hardly reconcile us to the extremely dull, and one might almost say, ugly aspect which this district bears.

‘But I am not. My husband gives me a house to live in, and I want none other.’

But if it were not so, but the ruin was the effect of the offenses, all must have perished.

He is certainly speaking unto those, who had risen again with Christ, not yet surely in the flesh, but in the mind: whom he calls dead, and on this account the more living: for your life, says he, is hid with Christ in God.

“Well, he turned there, and ran back very near the corner; but he was headed by a sheep-dog, luckily, and went to the left across the brook.” “Ah, that’s where I lost them,” says one unfortunate.

Such is the account as given by Asconius, who goes on to tell us that out of the fifty-one judges thirty-eight condemned Milo and only thirteen were for acquitting him. Milo, therefore, was condemned, and had to retire at once into exile at Marseilles.

What a storm of words has resounded on this point!

Foolish and inconsiderate men, who have neither wisdom nor instruction, mock and deride us, being eager to exalt themselves in their own conceits.

As, therefore, we do not say three essences, so we do not say three greatnesses, or three who are great.

[Proverbs 27:6] Rebuke, then, your erring friend; forsake not an innocent one.

For it is not stress of circumstances, nor variation of seasons, nor insults of men in power, nor intrigues besetting you like snow storms, nor a crowd of calamities, nor a promiscuous collection of all the ills to which mankind is subject, which can disturb even slightly the man who is brave, and temperate, and watchful; just as on the contrary the indolent and supine man who is his own betrayer cannot be made better, even with the aid of innumerable ministrations.

I will venture to say, that even if the soul was a good deal prior to the flesh, by the very circumstance that the soul had to wait to be itself completed, it made the other really the former.

But because thus you ought to withdraw from sins, with the first thought after having confessed to God, that it may not escape your memory that you have been a sinner; in that you have been a sinner, thou dost celebrate solemnities to God.

These three days had been dreadful to Sir Peregrine.

15. Greeting to you, our most esteemed Anulinus. It is the custom of our benevolence, most esteemed Anulinus, to will that those things which belong of right to another should not only be left unmolested, but should also be restored.

The other pair of course followed them.

God forbid; for where the Godhead is understood as one, one God is spoken of.

Both Erle and Fitzgibbon described the quarrel at the club, and described also the anger which Finn had expressed against the wretched man as he stood talking at the club door.

For if we once teach the tongue to sing, the soul will be ashamed to be devising the opposite of what this sings.

Whether they be rich or whether they be poor, whether one mock at him, or praise him, whether one insult, or cast stones at him, or plunder his house, whether he see children, or wife, or anything whatever.

Tuesday, 2nd July, 1873.

Of John, however, what else I have to say will be found in another passage.

“She would rather not,” said Mrs. Dosett. “She thinks that it would only be painful to both of you. As she has quite made up her mind that she cannot accept the honour you propose to do her, what good would it serve?”

On the Sunday after this Lady George dined again with her father at Mr. Houghton’s house, the dinner having been made up especially for the Dean.

What need have I of a multitude?

Of course he was conquered for that night, and could only have that solace which a most injurious reprieve could give him. “I will not harass you, if you are ill,” he said.

She was very fond of her protégé —so much so that she would listen to her in affairs about the house when she would listen to no one else;—but Marie’s prettiness and grace and sweetness as a girl had all been thrown away upon Maman Bauche, as Marie used to call her.

Matter, then, is immutable.

Two old women.

But this was not the end of his aspirations.

Do you pluck asunder the limbs of your Lord and Master, and not tremble?

For then, he says, The powers of the heavens shall be shaken.

Did the meaning of those words impose on her any duty?

When I got upon my legs I could still see him.

23. Nay more, the Epistle— for I pass by the Gospel— does not mention nor does it contain any intimation of the Apocalypse, nor does the Apocalypse of the Epistle. But Paul, in his epistles, gives some indication of his revelations, though he has not written them out by themselves.

For they are not to be heard who feign him to have had a wife; for, when he is discussing continence and commending perpetual chastity, he uses the words, I would that all men were even as I myself.

Of all the flock he should be the least black.

And so also the courage of Epicures is one thing, who would undergo some labours in order to escape from a greater number; and a different thing that of the philosopher of the Porch, who would choose all virtue for its own sake; and a different thing still that of Plato, who maintains that virtue itself is the act of the irascible part of the soul, and who assigns to it a place about the breast.

7. But Hyrcanus, who was the last of the regular line of high priests, was very soon afterward taken prisoner by the Parthians, and Herod, the first foreigner, as I have already said, was made King of the Jewish nation by the Roman senate and by Augustus.

And he said not, to the branches, nor to the fruits, but to the root.

He still had hold of her as she rose to her feet, and, though he had become acquainted with her weapon before, he certainly did not fear it now.

It was not only Sir Felix that was admitted into these good things after this fashion.

335,000

Then Mary Masters, who had lived for more than a dozen years at Bragton, went back to her father’s house in Dillsborough.

For all things have been made for their uses.

Geraldine Persiflage.

You see how much he insists upon charity.

Not even to their own disciples do they commit a secret before they have made sure of them.

So long as that law remained, [Genesis 1:28] Be fruitful, and multiply and replenish the earth; and Cursed is the barren woman that bears not seed in Israel, they all married and were given in marriage, left father and mother, and became one flesh.

His words are: "A glorious high throne is our sanctuary."

[Sirach 35:20] That which there he says to be beautiful, the same he says here to be sweet.

In the spring of the next year Marcellus, on his way back to Rome, is at Athens.

Now he must prepare his message for the ladies at Ardkill,—especially to the lady whom on his last visit to the cottage he had found armed with a dagger for the reception of her husband.

My present argument is that a successful result implies a sufficient cause; some clear and cogent motive must underlie every effectual performance.

I could not marry a woman who had fought a duel,—certainly not a woman who had fought with her own husband.

Then she stood up also.

I never knew anything of him except that he was, or had been, in the Blues, and that he was about the best man in England to hounds on a bad horse.

“ Of course I will hear it read,” said her cousin.

1. The shepherd's tent belonging to Jacob, which was preserved at Edessa to the time of Antonine Emperor of the Romans, was destroyed by a thunderbolt.

“Then she knew it?”

And when he was set before the Emperor Trajan, [that prince] said unto him, Who are you, wicked wretch, who settest yourself to transgress our commands, and persuadest others to do the same, so that they should miserably perish?

Christ is said to have made a show or example of these, because in Himself, our Head, He gave an example which will be fully realized in the liberation of His whole body, the Church, from the power of the devil at the last resurrection.

Such are the ways of women; not, indeed, that men are any better.

Mrs. Boncassen was in the drawing-room alone.

He (it is said) that stops his ears that he may not hear the poor [Proverbs 21:13], his prayer God will not hearken to.

He had so far advanced in this reading as to have learned to think that he could get the better of Mr. Jerningham by being loud and impudent.

For there is no other Name given under heaven wherein we must be saved.

And let all rejoice that hope in You; those of course to whose taste the Lord is sweet.

Though their papers are always loaded with sensation headings, there are seldom sensation paragraphs to follow.

Afterwards we read, [1 Corinthians 15:22] As in Adam all die, so also in Christ shall all be now alive.

Around this pool lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blind, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water; but then infirmity was a hindrance to him who desired to be healed, now each has power to approach, for now it is not an Angel that troubles, it is the Lord of Angels who works all.

But all these things happened unto them in a figure.

2. Lest there be any fornicator: or profane person, as Esau, who for one morsel of meat sold his birthright.

His reputation may perhaps partially revive, and some of his best work may be read in the next century.

“Oh! you have changed your mind, then,” said he; and his face acquired the look that Feemy dreaded. “Ladies, you know, are at liberty to think twice.”

“He’s all right.”

“She has taken his money all the same.” This was said some weeks after the transaction as described in the last chapter, and was spoken by Madame Socani to Mr. Moss.

And therefore he who has received these things fortified by reason, can never lose them; whereas he who receives them without proofs, by an assent to a simple statement of them, can neither keep them safely, nor is certain if they are true; because he who easily believes, also easily yields.

The abuse of other people, and abuse of a nature that she felt to be unjust, imposed this necessity on her, and at last made Mr. Slope’s defence an habitual course of argument with her.

I dare say the man misbehaved himself in your employment.

I do not think that any person is to be found, as a rule, attached to English estates whose position is analogous to that of an Irish agent.

“You remember, of course, that it was her key-basket?” said Miss Waddington, with a smile that made M’Gabbery clench his walking-stick in his hand.

She could not go from Merle Park to Stalham and back in one day.

“I am true enough; but whether I am your own,—that is another question.”

Lord George had worn out his scruples, and was able to go about his old duties in his old fashion.

[Philippians 2:13] As God's righteousness is used not only of the righteousness wherewith He Himself is righteous, but also of that which He produces in the man whom He justifies, so also that is called His law, which, though given by God, is rather the law of men.

For he who says, Be without offense to Jews and to Greeks and to the Church of God, before what men he could possibly stand abashed, I know not.

This is the same thing as not to believe Christ, for He Himself said: You shall do greater things than these.

“Never mind,” said Mrs. Broughton.

Therefore, the God of all, 'Who makes His angels [spirits],' is a spirit, 'and His ministers a flame of fire. '

They had been hard words—quite unjustifiable unless he had made himself guilty of something worse than conduct that was simply despicable.

The woman had come there as a spy, and the woman should never be her friend.

That is, if there is enough to live on.

For He, Whom God had sealed, could be naught else than the form of God, and that which has been sealed in the form of God must needs present at the same time imaged forth within itself all that God possesses.

But it should more truly be understood, that of the angels that were subject to him, since he was still a prince when he descended from his estate, he seduced the third part; therefore what we said above, the Apocalypse says.

“What virtues she used to ascribe to you! What sins she forgave you! How hard she fought for you! Now, though she can fight no more, she does not think of it all the less.”

“And clever? I don’t know how it is; let there be who there may in the room, he is always the best talker.”

But many ask whither Enoch was translated, and why he was translated, and why he did not die, neither he nor Elijah, and, if they are still alive, how they live, and in what form.

When he found that an interloper was interfering with his peculiar property, he began to tax his conversational powers to the utmost.

For what one man cries from the ends of the earth?

But such as used women unlawfully, either the divine sentence in those Scriptures convicts them, or the reading sets them forth for us to condemn and shun, not to approve or imitate.

Mr. Thumble did not answer at once, thinking, probably, that the bishop might choose to explain the circumstances. But, neither did the bishop say any thing.

He carried his bill about the Canada Railway, with sundry other small bills appertaining to it, through the House in a manner which redounded infinitely to his credit.

“Safe with me! And do you doubt it now—do you doubt that you are safe with me?” and as she spoke, she laid her hand upon his arm, and attempted to appeal to his affection. He gently withdrew his arm from her grasp, and again concealed his face with his hand. “As I stand here alive before you,” continued she, speaking with a more assured voice than she had hitherto used, “I have not whispered a word to man or woman upon this subject, but yourself.”

She too had loved Bessy, but that should have had no weight.

In this condemnation there is no reproach of the law, or of God its author, but only of those who published their shocking superstitions under these names.

Miss Gregory, I do not think you ever met Mr. Launay.

“Oh, as for that, of course you can do without me.”

If then any one is willing to trust me at all—I speak as in the sight of God—let him believe what I say about the things which are falsely inserted in my letter.

For just as in a golden chain the links are so intimately joined and connected together, as that the one holds the other, and is fitted on to it, and so carries on the chain— even so the miracles that have been handed down by the holy Gospels, one after the other, lead on the Church of God, which delights in festivity, and refresh it, not with the meat that perishes, but with that which endures unto everlasting life.

She was quite sure that the idea of preparing a pit for such a one as Abraham Hall must be absurd.

Upon this Mrs. Crawley had looked beseechingly up into Mr. Walker’s face, and had asked him to undertake the duty.

The same which in another place it calls a famine of bread, and a thirst of water.

“You can’t have it; and there’s an end of it.”

So then it is the glory received from the Father that the Son has given to all who shall believe in Him, and certainly not will.

I hope that he too will enjoy your brotherly kindness, and will be forwarded with letters to other havens of refuge.

“Where have you been, Annot?” said Michael Stein, “you didn’t get your supper, yet child.”

[A woman] by name Eusebia, who was a deaconess of the Macedonian sect, had a house and garden without the walls of Constantinople, in which she kept the holy remains of forty soldiers, who had suffered martyrdom under Licinius at Sebaste in Armenia.

One of these twins was for a long time a hired servant; the other never served.

“You never do.” Lady Mountjoy, who had not yet undergone her painting, looked cross and illnatured. “At any rate, Sarah and her daughter are proposing to come here.”

He has propounded a good many other absurdities, which it would be evidently tedious to collect together, and to consider in this treatise.

“No doubt it does,” said Miss Demolines, with a nod of her head, which was intended to show that she was willing to give her friend the full benefit of any excuse which could be offered for her. “But don’t you think you could do something, Mr. Eames?”

Now the truth was declared exactly as she had surmised it.

A man, they say, trusts much of his honour into the hands of his wife.

[Mark 11:22] And Jesus answered and said [6] unto them, Let there be in you the faith of God.

“But it is not hers. She cannot give it up. It belongs to her son,—or is thought to belong to him. It is not for us to be informers, Edith—”

“My engagement was with Mrs. Burton,” said Harry.

If they make it themselves, they are animals endowed with the power of choice, whose acts will be free and voluntary.

But the question now was not only of her wants, but of her father’s.

What advantage, moreover, is reaped by him who reaches those celebrated spots themselves?

He had to show that he had learned the lesson he attempted to teach, and could do this only by daily industry and indomitable perseverance.

You have not heard me yet.

Wisdom, therefore, remained with me, and I remained in virtue of it.

“I hardly know what home means. Your own home I take it is in Munster Court.”

There are few of us who have not allowed our thoughts to work on this or that villany, arranging the method of its performance, though the performance itself is far enough from our purpose.

Who then, he means, is so wretched as not to wish to have Christ in the midst?

Two years ago he had known that he was the heir to it all, though even then that habit was so strong upon him he had felt that his tenure of it would be but slight.

All treaties made by the President must be sanctioned by the Senate; and all appointments made by the President must be confirmed by the Senate.

If I am a good one let them leave me in quiet: if I am a bad one, why do they desire to be in bad company?

He works the greatest things last, so as to render more intense their attachment, and to lay up for them beforehand much comfort, against the terrible things that were about to fall on them.

“Perhaps de Marquis would like it?”

And yet she was about to marry Lord Castlewell, simply because her doing so would be the severest possible blow to her old enemy, Mr. Moss.

Under the Constitution, as established in 1854, the power of voting supplies had been given, but the manner in which the supplies should be used was still within the Governor’s bosom.

Every manuscript that is not properly corrected and punctuated he must reject: for otherwise the difficulties in the text arising from the want of punctuation will make obscure arguments still more obscure to those who read them.

“You don’t mean to say that Miss Roanoke is not to be here?” demanded Lord George. “By George, I thought as much. I did indeed.”

Orth.— I will make you yourself testify to the truth of the promise. You know how the Patriarch Jacob, when he was addressing Judah, limited the sovereignty of Judah by the birth of the Lord. A prince shall not fail Judah, nor a leader from his loins until he shall have come to whom it is in store and he is the expectation of the Gentiles. You have already confessed that this prophecy was uttered about the saviour.

“It is quite as well that they should know her early. I only hope they will like her, as well as we like you. Now I’ll say goodnight—and good-by.” Then Harry went, and walking up and down the High Street of Stratton, thought of all that he had done during the past year.

Why [should He] also [die] ignominiously?

What then do you say?

And you, Antony, whom I have never injured by a word, why is it that, more brazen-faced than Catiline, more fierce than Clodius, you should attack me with your maledictions?

He did take off his hat, and was of course made hotter and more confused by doing so.

[Exodus 22:28] Thus the princes of the several nations are called gods.

So likewise on this occasion too, He both healed the disease of vainglory, and rendered the due honor to His mother, even though her request was unseasonable.

Whilst Damasus of holy memory was still living, I wrote a book against Helvidius On the Perpetual Virginity of the Blessed Mary, in which, duly to extol the bliss of virginity, I was forced to say much of the troubles of marriage.

It is a continuation of the three books De Oratore.

“But she loves you?”

Five hundred pounds!

Many of you have often beheld the Olympic games: and not only have beheld but have been zealous partisans and admirers of the combatants, one of this [combatant], one of that.

He opened Colonel Osborne’s note, and read it, and became, as he did so, almost more angry than before.

You have overthrown the testament of Your servant, and profaned His holiness on the ground [Psalm 88:39].

“I don’t think he’ll take less than ten,” said Honyman, “because his share is really worth as much as that.”

He says not, But I will not fear: but, Many men, that war against me, shall fear.

What is it then which Scripture says in many places: They shall call, and I will not hear them?

The two had been inseparable on the previous evening, for Mrs. Talboys had been urging on the young Irishman her counsels respecting his domestic troubles.

Hear your Redeemer Himself proclaiming openly by Isaiah the prophet: What is this bill of the divorce of your mother with which I have put her away?

Then came Lady Brabazon’s party.

As yet he had not seen her; but a message had been taken to her, saying that he would come soon.

‘Oh! they’re doing that already, every day,’ said Katie.

We can well believe that Cicero had studied many of these arts by his twenty-seventh year—that he knew how to hold his toga and how to drop it—how to make the proper angle with his elbow—how to comb his hair, and yet not be a fop—and to add to the glory of his voice all the personal graces which were at his command.

The Lovels had ever been true to the Lovels, with the exception of that late wretched Earl,—the Lady Anna’s father.

“That has never occurred to me.”

And from such members He is not ashamed to assume flesh, who is the framer of those very members.

They all of them knew that he was going into the midst of the hottest danger, where the visits of death would be thick and frequent; and they felt how probable it was that, before many hours were over, he might be brought back to them dead or dying.

As it was, he struggled hard to carry himself well.

Chapter 13. Of the Soul, and the Testimonies Concerning Its Eternity.

And yet—there he was, committed to take his trial for the murder of Mr. Bonteen.

For I was an hungred and you gave Me to eat, I was thirsty and you gave Me to drink, etc.

“What! for twenty pounds! Seven thousands of pounds per annum; and you give me twenty pounds! Fie, Captain Clavering. It is only just for me to speak to you—this! That is all. Come; when will you bring me fifty?”

“Well; as to that, I think we had better take some little time for consideration. But I think I may say that, if you will make our way easy for us, we will endeavour to make yours easy for you. You acknowledge this to be your uncle’s will as far as you know?”

“The fact is, that you may, if you please, make yourself popular in the county; but you cannot do it by obeying all Lady Lufton’s behests. She is a dear old woman, I am sure.”

Think thou not they are happy who flourish for a time.

In what way, then, an agreement shall be established between the apostle and the Law (which he is not impugning in its entirety), shall be shown when we shall have come to his own epistle.

We fail to understand the 'sequitur' of this; we notice in fact something very queer and incongruous about it.

“I only say that the doctor is the most looked after,” said Mary. “There’s another horrid message for you to go to Silverbridge, uncle. Why can’t that Dr Century manage his own people?”

This the man of the Gentiles may say too, If I had not been saved, you would not have been moved to jealousy.

The party met the next morning at breakfast; and a very sombre affair it was,—very unlike the breakfasts at Plumstead Episcopi.

For if persecution proceeds from God, in no way will it be our duty to flee from what has God as its author; a twofold reason opposing; for what proceeds from God ought not on the one hand to be avoided, and it cannot be evaded on the other.

“Then I’d take to the people who ran after me, and would not regard the others.”

It is now almost eighteen years since I composed those books, at a time when the name of Origen was highly esteemed in the world, and when as yet his work the [Περὶ ᾿Αρχῶν] had not reached the ears of the Latins: and yet I distinctly stated my belief and pointed out what I did not agree with.

“And she is old, and things have not always gone well with her. She says, too, that you have been impertinent to her.”

Rossiter was such a man that every Beethamite looked upon him as a hero,—so that Beetham was proud to have produced him.

For even he that is enamored of bodies, and is greatly affected at the sight of a beautiful damsel, if he will not learn by discourse the deformity of that substance, shall know it by the very sight.

Lord Alfred would have liked to remain, being a man who enjoyed tobacco and soda-and-brandy,—but momentous days had come upon him, and he thought well to cling to his Melmotte.

And since the Word is the gushing fountain of life, and has been called a river of olive oil, Paul, using appropriate figurative language, and calling Him milk, adds: I have given you to drink; [1 Corinthians 3:2] for we drink in the word, the nutriment of the truth.

“The strangeness, Rebecca, comes from no fault of my own. Few men, I fancy, are more constant to their homes than I am.”

Hamel is not fit to be acquainted with a lady who occupies the position of my daughter.” It was thus that her aunt had spoken.

“Yes, when the people, or person, is a man, and when the man has been told that he ought specially to love me.”

Let us live with all; let us be glad with them, out of community of nature, not of superstition.

Had any one told him that he was jealous of the preference shown by his client to Sir Peregrine, he would have fumed with anger, and thought that he was fuming justly.

For the satisfaction of his own honour, of his own feelings, it had become necessary that the money should be refunded.

Then, again, that hard and rugged rock,[Exodus 17:6] which imaged forth the grace and refreshment which has sprung out from you for all the world, brought forth abundantly in the desert out of its thirsty sides a healing draught for the fainting people.

I was educated at —, and was afterwards a scholar of — College, Cambridge.

I wrote to him so that he should know that nothing could come of it.

So shall we be able to cleanse our life, so to cut up the thorns; for such a thing is sin and worldly care, fruitless and painful.

But He is my witness, for whose sake I am in bonds, that I got no intelligence from any man.

Now there had come forth a law, not from the hand of the Landleaguers, but from the Government, who, it was believed, would protect those who did their duty by the country.

He, however, tempted and disturbed in no such conflict concerning himself against himself, in that position of blessedness enjoyed his peace with himself.

Or, if they say that the demons are not contaminated by associating and dealing with men, then they are better than the gods, for the gods, were they to do so, would be contaminated.

“Not tell him! Who then is to be my friend if you turn against me? Am I to be all alone among a set of people who think nothing but ill of me?”

But this, I think, is certain, that from the time in which his name appears prominent—from the period, namely, of the Catiline conspiracy—he had determined not to overthrow the Constitution, but so to carry himself, amid the great affairs of the day, as not to be overthrown himself.

What, then, are those teachings in which we are brought up?

Mr. Crawley, in his first plan, proposed that he should go up by night mail train, travelling in the third class, having walked over to Silverbridge to meet it; that he should then walk about London from 5 a.m. to 10 a.m., and afterwards come down by an afternoon train to which a third class was also attached.

But whosoever shall put his trust in Him, and yield himself up to Him, for the forgiveness of all his sins, for the cure of all his corruption, and for the kindling and illumination of his soul by His warmth and light, shall have good works by his grace; and by them he shall be even in his body redeemed from the corruption of death, crowned, satisfied with blessings,— not temporal, but eternal—above what we can ask or understand.

Let him not jump at all.

No, I don’t want to dance even with you.

“I only meant that father could not but feel that you were honouring him.”

An essence that from heaven derives,

The Grantly Triumph

For hours she sat there, all alone, putting out the candles which the servant had lighted for her, and leaving untasted the tea that was brought to her.

“What,—Sir Timothy on one side, and Sir Gregory on the other?”

For conscience greatly curbs men, if we believe that we are living in the sight of God; if we imagine not only that the actions which we perform are seen from above, but also that our thoughts and our words are heard by God.

When Moses was born, they concealed him that he might not be slain by his persecutors.

To these worshippers his breakings-out, as his periods of intemperance were called in his own set, were his moments of peculiar inspiration—his divine frenzies, in which he communicated most closely with those deities who preside over trade transactions; his Eleusinian mysteries, to approach him in which was permitted only to a few of the most favoured.

“I have felt that.”

And for much of that Silverbridge affair the Duchess herself was responsible.

And by these words He taught men that God must be worshipped not in the flesh, and with fleshly sacrifices, but in the spirit.

So she put the palm of her little hand full upon the cross, and then kissed it heartily, and after that raised it up again till it rested on the foot of the saint.

If, then, these things are vain, and are not supported by any reason, the very offering of sacrifices also is idle.

“Unfortunate, indeed! I wonder what you really thought of me when you were writing it?”

The bearers of these presents, the most distinguished men, Vicedominus and Defensor , came to us asserting that a certain bishop, by name John, coming from Pannonia, had been constituted in the castle which is called Novæ, to which castle their island, which is called Capritana, had been appended as a diocese .

She had lacked faith.

For sin is such, it is dead and offensive.

“Uncle Magnus will not be able to have us then.”

To My Lord, Holy and Venerable, and Worthy of Highest Praise in Christ, My Brother Paulinus, Augustine Sends Greeting in the Lord.

But now, as things had gone, he had been made very unhappy by the state of his own mind, and consequently was beginning to feel a great dislike for the merchant from Basle.

Henri’s horse was now ready, and he made no longer delay than to say adieu to his hostess, and to speak one or two last words to his cousin Marie, and then he made the best of his way to Chatillon and St. Laurent, hoping once more to see Cathelineau before he died. All his spurring and his hurrying was in vain.

And, that this is true, may be seen yet more clearly by a careful examination of the enactments of the Levitical law.

Not that he was becoming old, or weak, or worn; but his eye had lost its fire—except the fire peculiar to his profession; and there were wrinkles in his forehead and cheeks; and his upper lip, except when he was speaking, hung heavily over the lower; and the loose skin below his eye was forming into saucers; and his hair had become grizzled; and on his shoulders, except when in court, there was a slight stoop.

His first difficulty consisted in this,—that his hat was still in Mr. Kennedy’s room, and that Mrs. Macpherson altogether refused to go and fetch it.

She had gone on thinking of it till she had filled herself with a cloud of doubts which even the sunshine of love was unable to drive from her heavens.

I’ll tell you what it is”—and then he squeezed very close to Mr. Mason—”he and old Furnival understand each other in this matter like two brothers.

If you hear of my having beat a retreat from Grey Abbey, without giving you or any one else warning of my intention, you will know that I have lacked courage to comply with a second summons to those gloomy realms.

When the girls came he immediately resolved that he would never go up to London,—and kept his resolve.

Wherefore let the good feel you sweet, the bad a corrector.

They shall have no need there to build houses, for they shall abide in light, in the mansions of the saints.

But though her heart longed to speak freely, her judgment told her that it would be better that she should be reticent and tranquil in her language.

“Ah, thin, don’t bother,” said the policeman; “ shure, and you’ve given throuble enough this night!” The dawn was at that moment breaking so I turned myself on the stretcher, and resolved that I would put a bold face on it all when the day should come.

Deprived of the solace of her husband she has for twenty years trained her brother's child, teaching her the lessons which she has learned from her own mother.

“Undoubtedly she will be my wife. I am quite determined about that. She has my word,—and over and above that, she is dearer to me than anything else.”

Why does he not say, For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ, have been born of God? for this was what directly went to prove that they were sons—because he states it in a much more awful point of view; If Christ be the Son of God, and you have put on Him, thou who hast the Son within you, and art fashioned after His pattern, hast been brought into one kindred and nature with Him.

“Ill-usage you can bear; and violent ill-usage, such as that which Mrs. Proudie allowed herself to exhibit, you can repay with interest; but kindness seems to be too heavy a burden for you.”

And this is sufficient to lead us to pity.

But it is necessary that a whole age should be carried up to some proximity to the reformer before there is a space sufficiently large for his operations.

For a while, till the inquiry be made at Tankerville, your time must be vacant.

Actuated by such feelings as these, Undy heard with joy the tidings of M’Buffer’s stewardship, and determined to rush to the battle at once.

Was not the great charge against Jesus, which His accusers brought forward, this, that He said, I am able to destroy the temple of God, and after three days to raise it up again?

Thus, in your purpose to diminish His honour, you run into the blasphemy of exalting the nature of angels above the Son of God.

Is that your return for the love which he has borne you?

But I do not know that to either of these three is awarded any favor or is denied any justice because he is an American.

Rather slay the allurements to vice while they are still only thoughts; and dash the little ones of the daughter of Babylon against the stones where the serpent can leave no trail.

Section 6

Mr. Dove’s Opinion

“But if a girl sees nobody,” said Mr. Dosett, “she can have no,—no,—no chances.”

How can any created nature even see the Uncreated?

And there is nothing which makes friends so much, as the earnest endeavor to overcome one's neighbor in honoring him.

Her visit was made not to him, but to her boy.

The first measure is the easier, but the effect is but slight and soon passes away.

Towards the Christians, on the contrary, he openly manifested his aversion, refusing to honor them with his presence, or to receive their deputies who were delegated to report about grievances.

On the present occasion he nodded his head to Crocker, being careful not to lay the pen down from his fingers.

Mark, dearest Mark, my own dear, dearest husband!

It is not immunity from punishment that makes the body free, but perseverance in a life of righteousness.

Certainly all the worshippers of the Roman gods, when once they are possessed by what Persius calls the burning poison of lust, prefer to witness the deeds of Jupiter rather than to hear what Plato taught or Cato censured.

Another who was in the bloom of youth was taken by his command to some delightful pleasure gardens, and there amid white lilies and blushing roses, close by a gently murmuring stream, while overhead the soft whisper of the wind played among the leaves of the trees, was laid upon a deep luxurious feather-bed, bound with fetters of sweet garlands to prevent his escape.

“If you cannot withstand that sort of attraction you ought not to go in for shooting at all,” said Dobbes.

At half-past two o’clock so spoke—not my guide, for, as will be seen by-and-by, he never spoke at all—but my guide’s owner, who came accompanying the mules.

I will go and betray him.

Of course I am mercenary, and I don’t even pretend to old Tringle that I am not so.

All manner of rumours went through the town that night.

Let the Greeks, then, feel ashamed, and whoever else inveighs against the law; since it shows mildness in the case of the irrational creatures, while they expose the offspring of men; though long ago and prophetically, the law, in the above-mentioned commandment, threw a check in the way of their cruelty.

Central America. Costa Rica-Mount Irazu

This would only be a mark of true friendship on the part of Undy; and on Alaric’s part, it would be no more than one cousin would be bound to do for another.

“I will tell you the truth, Lady Arabella: for some considerable time past I have not thought you so.”

If Archie could induce Lady Ongar to marry him, he would not be called upon any longer to ring the bells and look after the stable.

Furthermore we notify to you that it has come to our ears that your Fraternity, seeing certain adorers of images, broke and threw down these same images in Churches.

Further, as to my having caused the sub-deacons to proceed disrobed, this was the ancient usage of the Church. But it pleased one of our pontiffs, I know not which, to order them to proceed in linen tunics. For have your Churches in any respect received their tradition from the Greeks? Whence, then, have they at the present day the custom of the subdeacons proceeding in linen tunics, except that they have received it from their mother, the Roman Church?

Tribute From Oileymead

The wicked old miser had declared that George should not be his heir; and had also said that which was tantamount to a similar declaration regarding Caroline.

But the world at large were beginning to observe that in this, as in all difficult cases, the Solicitor-General tempered the innocence of the dove with the wisdom of the serpent.

I told him that he had done me a greater service than can often be done by one man to another, but that I was under no obligation to him.

He shall drink of the brook in the way; therefore shall He lift up the head.'

And after the decapitation of the Gorgon, the beloved of Poseidon, whence sprang the horse Pegasus and Chrysaor, Athené and Asclepios divided between them the drops of blood; and, while he saved men's lives by means of them, she, by the same blood, became a homicide and the instigator of wars.

In this work he imitated Origen, but added also some original matter.

With what meaning, then, Eunomius asserts that the Father has none who has lot in His power, those perhaps can tell who are disciples of his folly: one who knows how to appreciate language confesses that he cannot understand phrases divorced from meaning.

She had said no word that would justify him in considering that there was any engagement between them; and, moreover, he had been warned not to come to the house by its mistress.

Nor would she tell her father anything of the marriage engagement which had been made on one day and unmade on the next.

Chapter XXVI. Mrs. Proudie Wrestles and Gets a Fall

For this cause two robbers were crucified with Him, and He in the midst, that He might share their ill repute, and that the Scripture might be fulfilled, And he was numbered with the transgressors.

For you are aware that the prophetic word says, 'And his wife shall be like a fruitful vine.'

Does it follow that the wheat will not have its peculiar purity, because such an one prefers barley to excrement?

“And what have you been doing there?”

But for the majority, I take it, who live all their lives with such obtuse faculties of thinking, it is a difficult thing to perform this feat of mental analysis and of discriminating the material vehicle from the immanent beauty, and thereby of grasping the actual nature of the Beautiful; and if any one wants to know the exact source of all the false and pernicious conceptions of it, he would find it in nothing else but this, viz.

The question still remains, How was it that the disciples did not know that He must rise from the dead?

But as our struggle lies against the rulers of this world, [Ephesians 6:12] what a host of Creator Gods there must be!

[Malachi 1:11] On this brother's sacrifice you show that you look with malignant eyes, over and above the respect which God pays to it; and if you have ever heard that "from the rising of the sun, unto the going down of the same, the Lord's name is to be praised," which is that living sacrifice of which it is said, "Offer unto God thanksgiving," then will your countenance fall like that of yonder murderer.

“You astounded me so, that I could hardly speak to you as I should have spoken. I did not mean to be uncourteous.”

For form of a servant is understood just as the form of God is understood to mean God's nature.

If you hear that He is incomprehensible, that is as much as to say that He is non-existent, since contact with Him is impossible.

Some misunderstand [ὁμοούσιον does that prevent me from understanding it?

I shall have to tell how it came to pass that Cicero was sent into exile by means of the misconduct of Clodius; but I shall have to show also that the misconduct of Clodius was but the tool which was used by those who were desirous of ridding themselves of the presence of Cicero.

So that each must not only be united to the body, but also occupy his proper place, since if you shall go beyond this, you are not united to it, neither do you receive the Spirit.

You see before you a man who ere long will be dust.

Financially, as a Company, we failed altogether.

But I think it better to regard the ark, so called from the Hebrew word Thebotha, as signifying something else.

As for the bishop, though he was not as angry as his wife, he was quite as unhappy, and therefore quite as hostile to Mr. Crawley; and was fully conscious that there could be no peace for him now until Mr. Crawley should be crushed.

Such is the prerogative of circumscribed food, that it makes God tent-fellow with man— peer, in truth, with peer!

“Pardon me,” I answered, “I think we are doing much, perhaps too much.

At Constantinople the Arians filled a boat with pious presbyters and drove her without ballast out to sea, putting some of their own men on another craft with orders to set the presbyters boat on fire. So, fighting at the same time against both sea and flames, at last they were delivered to the deep, and won the martyrs crown.

And then, as she finished speaking, she did pluck up courage to look him in the face. She was now standing as well as he; but she was so standing that the table, which was placed near the sofa, was still between him and her. As she finished speaking the door opened, and the Countess of Desmond walked slowly into the room.

Now thus speaking He signified the power of charity, and the weakness of separation and contentiousness. Wherefore He was Himself also continually charging His disciples, on every occasion, concerning charity, and teaching them that the devil, to subvert it, leaves nothing undone.

He strove to tear himself away from the noxious siren that had bewitched him.

Those who preach anything contrary to this creed, we regard as aliens from the catholic church.'

She thought of it all and then went down to lunch.

Mr. Tyrrell, who has been my Mentor hitherto in regard to the correspondence, has not, unfortunately, published the result of his labors beyond the year 53 b.c.

From these works if I were to extract even a few passages, a work which could not be altogether despised would be produced.

Mrs. Leslie came in gorgeous clothes, which, as she was known to be very poor, and to have attached herself lately with almost more than feminine affection to Lady Eustace, were at any rate open to suspicious cavil.

There was a broken spade here, and a hoe or two; and a small table in the corner was covered with the debris of tradesmen’s bills from Penrith, and dirty scraps which he was wont to call his farm accounts.—”Grandpapa,” said Alice, rushing away at once into the middle of her subject, “you told me the other day that you thought I ought to be—married.”

As far as the girl herself was concerned, she had, in these latter days, become much more attractive to him than when he had first known her.

“She is a jilt then?”

He says, then, that we preach two causeless Beings.

During the whole winter, while she was thus working, she was in a state of alarm about her lover.

Greater calamity, then, is to be apprehended in those places where such intercessors are promoted to places of rule, being such as to provoke the more the anger of God against themselves which they ought, through themselves, to have appeased in behalf of the people.

Not that Paul sought the glory that comes of men.

Were they then clean, who had not yet been delivered from their sins, nor deemed worthy of the Spirit, since sin still had the mastery, the handwriting of the curse still remaining, the victim not having yet been offered?

And the consequence of his not guarding against the begetting of children was, that he suffered from so doing the calamities described in the tragedies relating to Œdipus and Jocasta and their sons.

Let, I beg, virgins listen to that example, so that they shall, if they desire to close their doors to the wicked, even shut them against the good; and that the ill-disposed may have no free access to them, they shall not fear even to exclude priests from their society.

The nature of the task which came upon him made this fault almost unavoidable.

But, nevertheless, Lily was envied as she rode through the town with her handsome lover by her side.

Let us see what milk the Corinthians drank from Paul; to what rule of faith the Galatians were brought for correction; what the Philippians, the Thessalonians, the Ephesians read by it; what utterance also the Romans give, so very near (to the apostles), to whom Peter and Paul conjointly bequeathed the gospel even sealed with their own blood.

It is evident that there is one God, the Father Almighty, according as it is declared over the whole world; and his only-begotten Son Jesus Christ, our Lord, God, and Saviour, begotten of him before the ages.

But they did not cast them down.

I know your abilities; but even a man of dull mind is kept from disquietude if he sets his affections on heavenly things, whereas a man of acute mind has this gift in vain if he set his affections on earthly things.

There was the crowd of Englishmen, all going off to the vessel to see their bats and bicycles disposed of, and among them was Jack the hero.

In such matters Mrs. Proudie allows herself to be often guided by that eloquent preacher, the Rev.

And there was, too, almost a claim to superiority in Medlicot’s use of the word “hard.” When one man says that he has been hard to another, he almost boasts that, on that occasion, he got the better of him.

And cast the lot for my vesture.

Finally, I am aware that certain critics, in explaining the words used in the Gospel by the Saviour, My soul is sorrowful, even unto death, have interpreted them of the apostles, whom He termed His soul, as being better than the rest of His body.

This is that Moses: [Acts 7:37] he, that conversed with God; he, that had been saved out of situations so strange and wonderful; he, that wrought so great works, and had so great power.

“What could you expect from the ninth part of a man? Never mind, Snip—go on; don’t you be out by any of them. Stick to your wax and thread like a man—like the ninth part of a man—go on a little faster, Snip.”

The previous order of our discourse had brought us to the exposition of the system of spiritual gifts, which we have learned from the tradition of the Elders is a threefold one.

But sometimes, on a Saturday, he would be absent, when it was understood generally that he was preparing his sermon for the Sunday.

“That’s a good thing at any rate.”

It is to be understood that the loss to them is as nothing.

But when you feed your uncleanness by stripping orphans and wronging widows, consider how great a fire is prepared for those who dare such things.

Tell me, what kind of husband will you take?

“Then I shouldn’t have seen her at all.”

It was not only that she would see Emily Dunstable who was to be her cousin’s wife, and that she would go to the play and visit the new conjuror’s entertainment, but that she would be in the same city both with Adolphus Crosbie and with John Eames.

Accordingly, those fall from this eminence who follow not God whither He leads. And He leads us in the inspired Scriptures.

“You know you are: and as for the impropriety of discussing Miss Gresham’s marriage—”

Mary would not seem to take the allusion, even by a smile. “I always thought Gregory much nicer looking,” said Patience.

Into what has he fallen?

“And I say it’s not. That’s the difference between us.”

Say only, I have offended: say it from your soul and with a sincere mind, and all things are remitted to you.

I worship Him Who lightens for me, the darkness of Sheol: the splendour of Moses who was so great, was as the sun to me.

I ask you to tell me when the Father existed, the Son as yet being not; prove this, gather it from argument or evidence of Scripture.

Let us consider, beloved, how the Lord continually proves to us that there shall be a future resurrection, of which He has rendered the Lord Jesus Christ the first-fruits by raising Him from the dead.

They were just going to take lunch.

But after a day or two,—on one of which Mr. Daubeny had been seen sitting just below the gangway,—that gentleman returned to the place usually held by the Prime Minister’s rival, saying with a smile that it might be for the convenience of the House that the seat should be utilised.

She had thought that with a man beauty would be everything; but with this man beauty had been nothing; nor had good temper and a sense of duty availed anything.

On this matter he said much, which, had he been a better tactician, he might probably have left unspoken.

“Yes, make another will—or else alter that one. But as to Miss Thorne coming here—”

I will think of him not at all,” Lucy had replied.

“I suppose that is the Thames,” said Trevelyan; and they were nearly the only words he spoke in Nora’s hearing that evening.

“No, I’m not, Mr Eames,” said Mr Love, who rather liked John Eames, and hated Mr Kissing with his whole heart. “But I believe the indexes, on the whole, are very well done in this room. Some people don’t know how to find letters.”

There were two services on Sunday, at the first of which the males, and at both of which the females, were expected to attend.

He will answer, Lest perhaps I hear some one speaking, and understand him not; or perhaps read the word somewhere, and know not what the writer meant.

Does not truth, without any dubiety, testify that for no other reason are they carried by pious hands to Jesus (that is, to Christ, the Saviour and Physician), than that they may be healed of the plague of their sin by the medicine of His sacraments?

When Mr. Flick told them of the strength of their case, as based on various heads of evidence in their favour, Mr. Hardy believed Mr. Flick’s words and rejected Mr. Flick’s opinion.

But from the evening of the burial to the dawn of the resurrection are thirty-six hours which is six squared.

I render thanks to You, says he, that I am not even as the rest of men, unjust, extortioners, adulterers, even as also this publican.

of the Demon.

For how did He turn away the captivity of Jacob?

First, you have rejoiced God; next, you have shamed the devil; thirdly, you have even made that which has happened to be nothing; for all at once, thou both givest thanks, and God cuts short the pain, and the devil departs.

In answer to this she could only say that she cared but little for her own misery, and did not believe in his. “The question is,” she said, “whether it be fitting. As I feel that it is not fitting, I certainly shall not do it.” In answer to this he would again smile, and tell her that a month or two at furthest would see her absolutely conquered.

Nevertheless, not even on hearing these things, do we make up our minds to it, but where are fightings and wars, and wild struggles, and trials and suits of law, and false accusations, there do we hasten.

The Duke however declared that the money would not cause a moment’s regret, if only the whole thing could be got rid of at that cost.

Lest he should be unduly elated by his revelations, a reminder of his human weakness was given to him, just as in the triumphal car of the victorious general there was always a slave to whisper constantly, amid the cheerings of the multitude, Remember that you are but man.

“That’s my advice,” he said, getting up from his chair.

“And in the afternoon.”

And further: If you then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, not those things which are on the earth.

He said very much more about the envelope, clearly showing his own appreciation of its importance and declaring again and again that if he could show that a stain of perjury affected the evidence in any one point all the evidence must fall to the ground, and that if there were ground to suspect that the envelope had been tampered with, then that stain of perjury would exist.

Are weak to see Jove, reigning over all.

Thus do thou likewise dress your soul with the judicial robe (which is gentleness).

Thus was all the earth afflicted; and from east to west, except in the territories of Gaul, three ravenous wild beasts continued to rage.

“Oh dear yes. Perhaps you would like to ask Lady Albury about it. He did want it before, you know.”

For do you not hear the psalmist say, There is no peace in my bones, in the face of my sins?

Now the people of CP., desiring the most blessed Paul, raised continual riots to prevent his being taken from the city, for they loved his sound doctrine.

She could not remain in town by herself, nor could she even allude to her grievance to any one but her mother.

It would have suited him to be at Loughlinter with Violet Effingham, but Loughlinter was a barred house to him.

But daily do men believe through the miracles of Christ our Lord; daily the eyes of the blind, the ears of the deaf are opened, the nostrils of the senseless are breathed into, the tongues of the dumb are loosed, the hands of the palsied are strengthened, the feet of the lame are guided; sons of Abraham are raised up of these stones, [Matthew 3:9] to all of whom be it said, Bless the Lord, you house of Israel [Psalm 134:19].

My father has turned me out of the house.

This these dainty men could not endure.

“Indeed.”

For it is evident that she would have done sacrifice, had it been allowed her to do sacrifice; yea, rather, she has even now performed the act of sacrifice.

But as to reading the riddle, there was no accord among them.

But there are some of you who believe not.

Nor was it yet over.

Mr. Prendergast smiled, with a saturnine and somewhat bitter smile—the nearest approach to a laugh in which he was known to indulge,—for the same notion came also into his head.

4. The nature of men is compounded of body and soul. But it sinned and stood in need of a sacrifice free from every spot. So the Creator took a body and a soul, and keeping them clean from the stains of sin for men's bodies gave His body and for their souls His soul. If this is true, and true it is, for these are words of truth itself, then wild and blasphemous are they who ascribe passion to the divine nature.

Seeing, then, that we read in the Gospel, in the Apostle, in the Prophets, of Christ as begotten, how dare the Arians to say that He was created or made?

Or if you say that it is the heat rather than the light that they enjoy, it would be more reasonable to assign to fire serpents, which are naturally of rapid motion, than the slow-going asp.

Then he turned round, left the room, hurried down the stairs, and made his way out into the street, having again passed the girl on his way.

Beatrice could say nothing in answer to this; but she felt very sure that Mary, let her intention be what it might, would not undertake to make Frank understand anything at anybody’s bidding.

But neither may we see the other spectacles, lest our eyes and ears be defiled, participating in the utterances there sung.

“I won’t deny that Clara Van Siever has a certain beauty of her own. To me she is certainly the most unattractive woman that I ever came near. She is simply repulsive!” Hereupon Miss Demolines held up her hand as though she were banishing Miss Van Siever for ever from her sight, and shuddered slightly. “Men think her handsome, and she is handsome. But she is false, covetous, malicious, cruel, and dishonest.”

I think that she was unjust to him, and that it was natural that he should not bear himself beneath her remarks exactly as he had done when he was nobody.

Thus Peter the Apostle hinders Cornelius who would worship him, saying, 'I myself also am a man [Acts 10:26].'

It was a criticism on his own beer written in no friendly tone.

But one does like to be independent if one can, and for one fortnight I do think that Mr. Gresham might have managed it.

“I alluded to Surrey and Kent,” said Mr. Dockwrath.

Of the sun, of which it is said that it should not go down upon your wrath.

“My lord,” said Mr. Chaffanbrass, very solemnly, “look at your late friend and colleague, and remember that his life depends probably on the accuracy of your memory.

Had he, or you, said a word about his parliamentary duties?

‘Very likely not.’

But touch not any man upon whom is written the mark.

It’s that full of rabbits that the holes is all hairs.

If she is open to blame at all, it is—it is—” But here Mrs. Robarts stopped herself.

But he had certainly not been an idle man.

In these circumstances who can doubt that this victory was due to the saintly man?

I certainly am afraid of any such task; but I believe that there has been no period yet, since the world’s work began, when such a practice has not prevailed in a large portion, probably in the largest portion, of the world’s work fields.

Let us greet the day which assigns each of us to his own home, which snatches us hence, and sets us free from the snares of the world, and restores us to paradise and the kingdom.

Lizzie did come down rather badly at one wall, and Lucinda got herself jammed against a gate-post.

Early in life he had been taught to entertain certain ideas as to religion by those with whom he had lived at college, and had therefore refused to become a clergyman.

“No, no; do not go yet.” And he rose to stop her, but she was quite passive. “I do not know why you should be so much moved now.” But he did know. He did understand the very essence and core of her feelings;—as probably may the reader also. But it was impossible that he should allow her to leave him in her present state.

Thus in the Revelation of John it is said: These are they which have not defiled their clothes with women, — indicating, of course, virgins, and such as have become eunuchs for the kingdom of heaven's sake.

[Luke 15:16] What profit is it to me, then, that the image of Neptune is used with a reference to this explanation of it, unless indeed the result be that I worship neither?

More good is done by taking away food from one who is hungry, if, through freedom from care as to his food, he is forgetful of righteousness, than by providing bread for one who is hungry, in order that, being thereby bribed, he may consent to unrighteousness.

Thus the Greeks, as not witnessing to the same doctrines, but quarrelling one with another, have no truth of teaching; but the holy and veritable heralds of the truth agree together, and do not differ.

Had not secrecy been implied in that forgiveness which she had promised to Ludovic as the condition of his going?

“I can understand it; oh yes,—I can understand it.”

Let us desist then from things that are injurious and ruinous to our salvation, that we may obtain those blessings which as His friends we may obtain.

Chapter XXIII. The Marquis Sees His Brother

The Sacraments of the New Testament give Salvation, the Sacraments of the Old Testament did promise a Saviour.

Let us now see how we are to understand the expression invisible image, that we may in this way perceive how God is rightly called the Father of His Son; and let us, in the first place, draw our conclusions from what are customarily called images among men.

He needs nothing from us, but that we should adorn our temples for Him; that when the time is accomplished and He goes to His Father, He may give thanks to Him because of us, because we have honoured Him.

Your reason for affirming that there is not, you yourself probably know.

He spoke either before the judges—a large body of judges who sat collected round the Prætor, as in the case of Sextus Roscius—or in cases of civil law before a single judge, selected by the Prætor, who sat with an assessor, as in the case of Roscius the actor, which shall be mentioned just now.

Chapter 41. The oblation of fine flour was a figure of the Eucharist

Cicero could keep his hands clean with thousands around him, and with thousands going into the pockets of other men.

Then the old man had announced to him his change of mind; but had not announced it to others, had not declared his altered purpose to the world at Llanfeare, and had not at once sent him back to his London office.

“ No, tankee, massa, me tired now; me no want more money.” Or perhaps it is, “ No; workee no more; money no ‘nuff; workee no pay.” These are the answers which the suppliant planter receives when at ten o’clock he begs his negro neighbours to go a second time into the cane-fields and earn a second shilling, or implores them to work for him more than four days a week, or solicits them at Christmastime to put up with a short ten days’ holiday.

During this month, the month ensuing upon the death of Sir Thomas Fitzgerald, Herbert could of course pay no outward attention to the wants or relief of the people.

If you had sat there punctual all those Sunday evenings, do you think he would have believed it then?

And he also gives another story of a woman who was accused of many sins before the Lord, which is to be found in the Gospel according to the Hebrews.]

The faith of the Church does, as these insane propounders of error remind us, condemn Manichæus, for she knows nothing of the Son as a portion.

The faith and piety of souls, no doubt, remain, but this should be made known by the evidence of a letter, in order that an increase of affection may be gained by such mutual courtesy.

Was your Tresilian still true and still forbearing when truth and forbearance could avail him nothing?

He knew her to be prejudiced, ignorant, and falsely proud,—but he did not suppose her to be either wicked or cruel.

There was one small rickety table in the middle of the room, and one other chair besides that occupied by the host, and with these articles alone the room was furnished.

But the fifth motive, (for it is a fifth, besides those that have been mentioned), even the evangelist himself has revealed. Now what was this? To show the glory of the cross, and to console Peter and the others in their dread of the passion, and to raise up their minds. Since having come, they by no means held their peace, but spoke, it is said, of the glory which He was to accomplish at Jerusalem; [Luke 9:31] that is, of the passion, and the cross; for so they call it always.

For if no one mourns for Enoch, who was translated [Genesis 5:24] when the world was at peace and wars were not raging, but the people rather congratulated him, as Scripture says concerning him: He was taken away, lest that wickedness should alter his understanding, [Wisdom 4:11] with how much greater justice must this now be said, when to the dangers of the world is added the uncertainty of life.

It was the only revenge that she did take.

And lest you should weary the evangelist, or disturb him by continually asking these things, he has said who it was that wrought the miracle, and so withdrawn himself.

Verily foreknown before the foundation of the world. Inasmuch as He was foreknown before every creature, because He was Christ. But manifested in the last times by the generation of a body. Being born again, not of corruptible seed. The soul, then, which is produced along with the body is corruptible, as some think.

When he opened the door, he found Mr. Butterwell alone, reading The Times.

And what other punishment, he would say, can be greater than this, that when power is offered them to become sons of God, they do not become so, but willingly deprive themselves of such nobility and honor as this?

[John 6:38] Now if the Son was obedient to do His Father's will, how much more should the servant be obedient to do his Master's will!

“Well, Mary, my dear, what’s the time of day with you?” said a rough, bass voice, within the hearing of Mr. Dockwrath.

“Yes;—for ever. But I do not know why everybody is to be angry with me. Other girls may do as they please. If you are angry with me I had better go back to London at once.”

And that was everybody’s notion a few years ago.

We must now see how things went on in the enemy’s camp.

Let it be noted that Meletius was appointed his successor, of whom we shall hereafter speak.

Once more my wishes hovered in uncertainty and my mind wavered, till an Alexandrian monk who had some time previously been sent over by the dutiful zeal of the people to the Egyptian confessors (in will already martyrs ), impelled me by his presence to believe the tidings.

“Oh George, dear George! You have made me so happy!” Then she jumped up and threw her arms round him. “I never doubted you for a moment—never, never; but I was afraid you might have thought——. I don’t know what I was afraid of, but I was a fool. She is a nasty hardened creature, and I do hate her. Don’t you see how she covers herself with paint?”

It was for them rather to ask him to bestow upon them the gift of his time and such ability as he possessed.

He is entered into that within the veil, whither our forerunner Christ has entered for us.

An egg is a means of delightful support when properly administered; but it is not calculated to add much spirit to a man’s eloquence, or to ensure his powers of endurance, when supplied in the manner above described.

“Mr. Prendergast is coming here,” said Herbert to Mr. Somers.

There is besides a tenth reason to mention; and what is it, but the one I have before frequently referred to?

The prodigy of 1857, who is now destroying all the hopes of the man who was well enough in 1855, will be a dunce to the tyro of 1860.

Indeed her first glance at him had awed her.

Such I foresaw he would be beforehand as I found him afterwards from experience.

Sir Thomas could at any rate put himself into correspondence with the War Office.

And that God sees all, and that nothing escapes His notice, but that, being long-suffering, He refrains until the time when He is to judge— concerning this, too, Dionysius said:—

Had not he been abject in his petition for office,—and in what degree were such petitions less disgraceful than a request for money which had been hopelessly expended on an impossible object, attempted at the instance of the great Cr[oe]sus who, when asked to pay it, had at once acknowledged the necessity of doing so?

Solomon also received the same from God, and said, 'The Lord by wisdom founded the earth [Proverbs 3:19],' and John, knowing that the Word was the Hand and the Wisdom, thus preached, 'In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God; the same was in the beginning with God: all things were made by Him, and without Him was not anything made [John 1:1-3].'

Wherefore be thou urgent with the primate of your synod , that boys be in no wise admitted to sacred orders, lest they fall by so much the more dangerously as they hasten more speedily to mount to higher places. Let there be no venality in ordination: let not the influence or entreaty of any persons obtain anything in contravention of these our prohibitions. For without doubt God is offended if any one is promoted to sacred orders, not for merit, but by favour (which God forbid) or venality.

The hour would pass, though, alas, so slowly, and she could not expect that he should stand there to be rated much after the accustomed time for feeding.

By no means, say they; that is an old wife's fable.

“That’s just what I wanted to say to you, Miss Masters,—only a man never can do those things as well as a lady. I did behave badly, and I do beg your pardon. Of course I ought to have asked Mr. Twentyman to come with us. I know that he is a very good fellow.”

The officer required should be a man with two specialties—a specialty for military tactics and a specialty for national duty.

But in what he said at Edinburgh he hardly hit the nail on the head.

Nor have those philosophers, who have profiled better than others in that high and eternal science, been able to grasp such subjects with the understanding; otherwise they would not be inquiring as they could into past things of the kind, such as are in the province of historians, but rather would foreknow also things future; and those who are able to do this are called by them soothsayers, but by us prophets:

That you may consider that you are in a desert region, and in a pilgrimage of life; that so this present life may grow bitter to you, that you may long for the life to come: or else that you may be scourged, punished, amended.

Denot had risen two or three times during the night, and paced rapidly and uneasily about.

He said not simply praying, but striving, trembling and fearing.

When she was told that under the new order of things promises from gentlemen were not to be looked upon as binding, that love was to go for nothing, that girls were to be made contented by being told that when one lover was lost another could be found, she was very unhappy.

Let us mark the difference between these two fears, and so understand the harmony of the flutes.

The widow, by daily importunity, prevailed with him: for the judge said within himself, Though I fear not God; neither regard man, yet because this woman troubles me, I will avenge her.

And then, what would it be his duty to do?

But who would have ventured to risk her,—I will not say her and her vast inheritances,—on such a chance?

Such were Mr. Thorne’s impressions for the first two or three years after Sir Robert Peel’s apostasy, but by degrees his temper, as did that of others, cooled down.

“But if he be aware of it?”

“Of course I do. How can I wish anything else?”

After all, who shall say that the man was selfish?

The first way of repentance is condemnation of sins.

In this poem the early loves of a young married couple were handled with much delicacy and some pathos of expression, so that Mary thought that her husband would assuredly drive Tennyson out of the field.

“Good heaven, Myles, there’s Thady! what can he be wanting here?”

“None;—as yet! She has told me to come again another day.”

Such trouble is the evil consequence of having liars in the world.” Lord George winced at the rough word as applied by inference to his own brother.

“Mr Bold,” said she, “I have come here to implore you to abandon this proceeding.” He stood up from his seat, and looked beyond measure distressed.

She was already aware that her Frank had—just an artist’s eye for feminine beauty in its various shapes, and thought that in the present condition of things he would be better at Glenbogie than in the Tyrol.

And now,—almost immediately,—he was again in the same position.

Et in Spiritu Sancto (And in the Holy Ghost)

For that he had not pressed on in the law, and changed his character so as to be without reproach after this hateful life, he plainly shows in what follows, when he says that he was not changed from these evils except by the grace of the Saviour.

He has reminded us of a Psalm which abounds in heavenly wisdom , and is especially fitted to encourage in dangers.

And why care for those who do not know you?

[Isaiah 11:5] Therefore rejoice with me this day, you heavens, for the Lord has showed mercy to His people.

But mark, I pray you, how even by the question itself they are convicted; in not saying, Why do they transgress the law of Moses, but, the tradition of the elders. Whence it is evident that the priests were inventing many novelties, although Moses, with much terror and with much threatening, had enjoined neither to add nor take away. For you shall not add, says he, unto the word which I command you this day, and you shall not take away from it. [Deuteronomy 4:2]

“No; exactly. Are they real gold?”

That French name so correctly spelt, so elaborately accented, so beautifully finished in gold letters, which from their form, however, one would say that the cordonnier must have imported from England, was only visible to those favoured knights who were occasionally permitted to carry the shoes home in their pockets.

For her sake I would not yield, for I know she loves me.

“I hope you will learn to like this other man much better. Think how nice it will be to be mistress of the old place after all. And then to go back to the old family name! If I were you I would make up my mind not to let him leave the place till I had brought him to my feet.”

The newcomer begins to feel that he too is entitled to rub his shoulders among those who rule the world of Great Britain.

If, then, we have shown that the plan of dealing stringently with humanity is good and salutary, and necessarily adopted by the Word, and conducive to repentance and the prevention of sins; we shall have now to look in order at the mildness of the Word.

My object in referring to these women is, that you may not regard as something strange what you find among us, and that, comparing the statues which are before your eyes, you may not treat the women with scorn who among us pursue philosophy.

But the Lord, concerning that greater and more glorious Continence itself, whereby there is continence from the marriage bond, says, Not all can receive this saying, but they to whom it is given.

“But ‘papa,’ as you call him, isn’t going to meet her.”

The men were brave, and, if intended to be represented as good, were constant in their loves.

(c) See how by their envy they bring about great things, other (than they looked for): they brought it about that the Apostles spoke out boldly, and came to the Gentiles!

If once the jewels were safe, locked up in Mr. Garnett’s strong box, Mr. Camperdown would not care how long it might be before a jury or a judge should have decided on the case.

The words that had been spoken between them on that occasion had been but trifling,—very few and of small moment; but now they seemed to her to have contained all her destiny.

xvii.

From this, therefore, it sometimes happens, that if any persons have acted incontinently, and have been willing not so much to resist as to yield, and to give harbour to these demons in themselves, by their noxious breath an intemperate, ill-conditioned, and diseased progeny is begotten.

Then, he grounds this on what had already happened, not upon what was to come only.

“It wasn’t terrible at all,” said Johnny.

And yet, though he liked the man, he did not altogether approve of him.

But to the SouthWest there is another problem to be solved.

If any one lays upon his personal incapacity his failure to solve the mystery, in spite of the certainty that Father and Son stand to Each Other in those relations, he will be still more pained at the ignorance to which I confess.

It may be a comfort to you to hear me say that you, at least, in all things have done your duty.” Then, at last, there were more tears, more embracings, and, before either of them went to their rest, a perfect ecstacy of love.

Although not all in fact, yet in consciousness all are alike incestuous, since by the desire of all of them everything is sought for which can happen in the act of each individual.

For he who comes the first it is, who reaps all the fruit; and when at the entreaty of another you lay aside your anger, the good work is to be accounted his; for you have discharged the law as doing a favour to him, not as obeying God.

“Oh dear, yes.”

But Moses said, Far be it from You, Lord: pardon the sin of this people; else blot me also out of the book of the living.

If God permits, we will say later in what way man was created in the image of God, and how he shares this resemblance.

On reaching home, he found a note from Lady Scatcherd, informing him that Dr Fillgrave had once more been at Boxall Hill, and that, on this occasion, he had left the house without anger.

For though both are found in both Testaments, still fear is prominent in the Old, and love in the New; which the apostle calls bondage in the one, and liberty in the other.

CHAPTER, XII. Bloemfontein

Then the Passion, and the reason why they do not believe: Whom also they slew, and hanged on a tree.

called gentlemen amidst the liberty of the lower orders.” His life, as he had himself owned, had indeed been a mistake.

Her other jewels,—the jewels which she had possessed over and above the fatal diamond necklace,—were in her dressing-case.

A girl if she has had a former love passage says nothing of it to her new lover; but a man is not so reticent.

And observe how he calls it a ministration ([διακονία]), and not directly alms: extolling by this at once the doers, and those to whom it was done.

“But if you do, you will perhaps have discovered that a woman may be as changeable as the moon, and yet as true as the sun;—that she may flit from flower to flower, quite unheeding while no passion exists, but that a passion fixes her at once. Do you believe me?” Now she looked into his eyes again, but did not smile and did not shake her locks.

Now, goodnight.

She gave him all gifts of manliness, honesty, truth, and energy, and felt regarding him that he was a Paladin,—such as Paladins are in this age, that he was indomitable, sure of success, and fitted in all respects to take the high position which he would certainly win for himself.

Where Peter endures a passion like his Lord's!

There is then on the one hand a natural glory, as light is the glory of the sun; and on the other a glory bestowed judicially and of free will ' ab extra' on them that are worthy.

Johnny was not ecstatic, nor heroic, nor transcendental, nor very beautiful in his manliness; he was not a man to break his heart for love, or to have his story written in an epic; but he was an affectionate, kindly, honest young man; and I think most girls might have done worse than take him.

I have known Tom for twenty years, and I think that if he loves any man he loves me.

“Yes, indeed;—and so thoughtful! That she will have an exceeding great reward, who can doubt? Since I knew her she always lived as a saint upon earth. I suppose there’s nothing known as to who will live in this house, Miss Amedroz?”

Of course you are your own master and can do as you please.” Then she left him, refusing his escort, and in the last fading light of the long summer evening, made her way back to the brewery.

It had been agreed between them that Crosbie should come down to the Small House on the next day after breakfast, and remain there till the time came for riding. But Lily determined to alter this arrangement, and accordingly put on her hat immediately after breakfast, and posted herself at the bridge, so as to intercept her lover as he came. He soon appeared with his friend Dale, and she at once told him her purpose.

And this is why he dwells at large upon what were supposed to be their praises, well knowing that what was said gave ground for greater accusation; Which hast the form of knowledge and of the truth in the Law.

I told her that I was the promised wife of one Paul Montague, who was joined with Mr Melmotte in managing the new great American railway, and that Mr Paul Montague would be with me this morning.

One feels that no price would be too high to pay for seeing them as long as time and distance, and the world’s inexorable task-work, forbid such a visit.

In that little project he had been interrupted, and the reader knows what had come of it.

“Well, I suppose he would. That’s the very meaning of the story. But how moral you’ve become all of a sudden at twelve o’clock at night! Instead of being Mrs Radcliffe, I shall think you’re Mr Æsop.”

Lady Anna will be at home, at No.

When Barnabas departed ([ἀ] [πέστη]), he finds another, equivalent to him.

A further attempt at murder had been made in the neighbourhood, and was so talked of that it seemed that all kindly feeling had been severed.

Presently going out, he addressed the king from a safe position behind, recounting the services he had done him, how often he had exposed his life to peril for the sake of the kingdom, and how last of all, he had not, on the present occasion, sought to kill him when he was given over to him by God.

“Because he has made a mistake which has honoured me, shall I mistake also, so as to dishonour him? Because he has not seen the distance, shall I be blind to it? He would have given himself up for me. Shall I not be able to make a sacrifice? To such a one as I am to sacrifice myself is all that I can do in the world.”

But they are not noble nor decent women, you will say, who do these things.

He has spoken loftily, and accumulated emphasis, seeking, out of his great earnestness, for amplification upon amplification.

They all had helped, or might have helped, or, if left to themselves, might at some future time give help to Ambiorix and the Eburones.

Again, there is a stronger and sadder reason still.

The averting of evils is a species of prayer; but such prayer is never to be used for the injury of men, except that the Gnostic, in devoting attention to righteousness, may make use of this petition in the case of those who are past feeling.

And when she had loved him, was it not right that she should cling to her love?

Grant that a man has no imagination, and he cannot fear; but when a man does fear, and yet is brave—” Then for awhile he stopped himself.

Therefore it is nothing so repugnant or contradictory, that either reason or the condition of nature should of necessity prepare each animal.

Chapter L. How Lady Glencora Came Back From Lady Monk’s Party

The idea seems to be that a gentleman may, in heart and in action, be as vulgar as a footman.

Sir Peregrine at present stood high before the world.

These things did I follow eagerly, and practise with my friends— by me and with me deceived.

Chapter 22.— Names Do Not Imply Corporeity.

“You think, then, there can be no hope?”

Let her rather listen to the apostle when he says: I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ.

If the reader does not understand so much from her letters to the three editors they have been written in vain.

Ver. 3. We are bound to give thanks to God always for you, brethren, even as it is meet.

Then there arises the great demagogue, who heads a party, having probably been disappointed in early life,—that is, in his first endeavours on board the ship.

For on another side you are beginning to do an injury to our Lord Jesus Christ Himself.

To this we reply, that it was not suitable for man to be burdened with any further special law of abstinence, who so recently showed himself unable to tolerate so light an interdiction— of one single fruit, to wit; that, accordingly, having had the rein relaxed, he was to be strengthened by his very liberty; that equally after the deluge, in the reformation of the human race, (as before it), one law— of abstaining from blood— was sufficient, the use of all things else being allowed.

He that is of the earth, says he, is earthly.

And what we have already said is enough, at any rate on this part of the subject, both for the exposition of the Creed, and for the requirements of our case, and for the limits of our book.

I shall always remember your great kindness to me.

“The pony is not quite like that,” said Ayala, smiling, as she followed the other ladies out of the room.

Mary’s Letter

The kings of the earth set themselves, and the rulers take counsel together, against the Lord, and against His Anointed, saying, Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us.

And yet, as I said, He both gives here, and along with the reason mentioned, as planning also some other greater advantage to us, He there keeps the whole in store.

For the Gentiles who formerly worshipped idols knew not God; and the Jews who denied the Lord, knew not the Son of God.

On all hands we experience these slights, suspicions, quarrels, war, all of which are undoubted evils; while, on the other hand, peace is a doubtful good, because we do not know the heart of our friend, and though we did know it today, we should be as ignorant of what it might be tomorrow.

In the same passage it is added, He came for witness, to bear witness of the light.

“There’s no accounting for tastes, Mrs Pipkin.”

I went to Mr. Bentley and demanded 400,—for the copyright.

She had vindicated herself, and if he made no further accusation, she was willing to be appeased.

“There has been nothing done which cannot be explained with perfect truth. There has been no impropriety.”

For behold, the Scribes and Pharisees, who seemed forsooth to be wiser than other men, being ever with Christ for the sake of plotting against Him, and beholding His miracles, and reading the Scriptures, were nothing profited, but were even harmed; while the officers, who could not claim one of these privileges, were subdued by one single sermon, and they who had gone forth to bind Him, came back bound themselves by wonder.

It is as though passengers from Liverpool and passengers from Bristol were carried on from Euston Square and Paddington along the New Road, Portland Place, and Regent Street to Pall Mall, or up the City Road to the Bank.

She had once, indeed, been approached by a lover since she had been married,—Mr Palliser himself having been the offender,—but she had turned the affair to infinite credit and profit, had gained her husband’s closest confidence by telling him of it all, had yet not brought on any hostile collision, and had even dismissed her lover without annoying him.

“You are Mr. Grey, I believe?”

Then, indeed, she might have done something; but she was not like other titled mothers.

She did not, therefore, think much about it when her son told her upon her return home from the parsonage on that afternoon that Major Grantly had come over from Cosby Lodge, and that he was going to dine and sleep at Framley Court.

From Peter, from Paul, from the other stewards of the truth.

Then shall appear the sign of the Son of Man in Heaven; [Matthew 24:30] that is, the cross being brighter than the sun, since this last will be darkened, and hide himself, and that will appear when it would not appear, unless it were far brighter than the beams of the sun.

It is fit, indeed, that over every one of these which has been spoken of, we should say, O Lord, how have You magnified Your works; in wisdom have You made them all.

See the two sides.

For when Christ thus ordained them that they should go and bring forth fruit, and that their fruit should remain, who would dare to say, It shall not remain?

“It is late now, Linda.”

Leave not indeed him who seeks you empty, for, give to every one that asks of you; yet still there is another whom you ought to seek; find a righteous man to whom to give it.

“Pretty well, Mrs. Proudie.”

“There was no hoax at all. I was quite in earnest. Was not every word true that I said? Now come and get into the carriage quickly, or you will be as bad as the old gentleman himself.”

“The floods had done him a great injury,” he said laughingly among his companions, “so that it was unreasonable to expect that he should pay.” It was true he had owed a half-year’s rent last November; but then it had become customary with Mr. Jones’s tenants to be allowed the indulgence of six months.

“For whom then?”

“Nonsense;—then I oughtn’t to have asked you. I am so sorry.”

And by baptism let him be purified and cleansed, and let him adjure for himself those seven witnesses that have been described in this book— the heaven, and the water, and the holy spirits, and the angels of prayer, and the oil, and the salt, and the earth.

She would fain have postponed any choice, and would then fain have herself made the choice.

This comes from the man who always took glory to himself in declaring that the “toga” was superior to helmet and shield.

A gentleman of enterprise driven very hard in this respect used to declare that there was no remedy for April but to go and fly hawks in Holland.

[Matthew 23:27] True, you will say: but if he had said it before he had been beaten, it would have betokened not anger, but boldness.

She feared that it was not the same.

Answer me that.

And other tidings had reached him also; or rather perhaps it would be truer to him to say that another idea had come to him.

Before that day was over she was telling the story to Captain Marrable.

And these declarations, though they seem contrary to one another, have yet an entire agreement.

For when he says in another book, which is called Ecclesiastes, There is no good for a man, except that he should eat and drink, what can he be more credibly understood to say, than what belongs to the participation of this table which the Mediator of the New Testament Himself, the Priest after the order of Melchizedek, furnishes with His own body and blood?

‘If a person goes away for more than twelve months and never sends a word or a message or a sign, what is a person to think, George?’ He could only promise her that he would never leave her again even for a month.

[Deuteronomy 8:12-14] In similar terms, when king Hezekiah became proud of his treasures, and gloried in them rather than in God before those who had come on an embassy from Babylon, (the Creator) breaks forth against him by the mouth of Isaiah: Behold, the days come when all that is in your house, and that which your fathers have laid up in store, shall be carried to Babylon.

For seeing God has bestowed upon us benefits surpassing man's reasoning, suitably enough He has brought in faith.

Homily 52 on the Gospel of John

He at any rate was known to have been guilty in the matter.

Westmacott also spoke; but announcement was made on behalf of the members of the borough that they were, both of them, in their beds.

For men, because they loved not their brethren, have envied those who were in high repute, and from envying, they have become eager for power, and from a love of power have introduced heresies.

Then Sylla entered the city victorious, after having slaughtered in the Villa Publica, not by combat, but by an order, 7000 men who had surrendered, and were therefore unarmed; so fierce was the rage of peace itself, even after the rage of war was extinct.

“Say fifty,” said the earl. And then he continued the reading of his letter.

Do you not see what you are doing?

“What’s the matter?” said Miss Todd.

Did her heart beat as high now, when his cousin was beside her? No; she felt that it did not. And sometimes she felt, or feared to feel, that it might beat high again when she should again see the lover whom her judgment had rejected.

Likewise in the same place: And if I should have all faith, so that I can remove mountains, but have not charity, I am nothing.

And does not David, while asking the abundant experience of knowledge, write, Teach me gentleness, and discipline, and knowledge: for I have believed in Your commandments?

And these who have been the leaders of sedition and disagreement ought to have respect to the common hope.

[1 John 5:1] Who is he that believes not that Jesus is the Christ?

46. He gave also their fruits to the mildew, and their labours to the locust.

In Washington there is but one post-office.

For all the things of which the world is composed, and which it produces from itself, are adapted to the use of man.

Nevertheless, at her lover’s instance, she promised, and declared, in twenty different loving phrases, that nothing on earth should ever make her false to her love or to her lover.

It was in truth Alypius who prevented me from marrying, alleging that thus we could by no means live together, having so much undistracted leisure in the love of wisdom, as we had long desired.

Whether therefore the Son made the heavens, as also the Apostle would have it understood, while He Himself certainly did not alone spread out the heavens without the Father; or as it stands in the Book of Proverbs: The Lord in wisdom has founded the earth, in understanding has He prepared the heavens; [Proverbs 3:19] it is proved that neither the Father made the heavens alone without the Son, nor yet the Son without the Father.

He could not find an individual so enterprising as to venture to deal in a cargo of Kauri gum after his fashion.

With the close economy common among his class in the islands, all comestibles were kept under close lock and key in the house of Mr. Bergen.

Poor Katie was kept in bed till the afternoon. Charley and Harry, however, were allowed to come up to her bedroom door, and hear her pronounce herself quite well.

There is no young man of the day of whom Sir Walter thinks so much.” Then he had thanked her.

[Luke 2:14] It is enough, I say, to have shown you that there is no way of solving the religious question of good and evil, unless whatever is, as far as it is, is from God; while as far as it falls away from being it is not of God, and yet is always ordered by Divine Providence in agreement with the whole system.

Chapter XI. Mrs Baggett Trusts Only in the Funds

This is well put.

For unless the Lord had built the house, and kept the city, in vain did the builders toil, and the keepers watch.

He was one of an order of barristers by no means yet extinct, but of whom it may be said that their peculiarities are somewhat less often seen than they were when Mr. Chaffanbrass was in his prime.

Some other woman,—so he was informed that the lady said,—out in a strange country was really his wife.

“Indeed yes,” she said, shaking her head, while she still left her hand in his.

Do you see his exact consideration?

And if I fail totally,—for, of course, I may fail altogether—

Yours always affectionately,

He is bored frightfully by every speech to which he listens.

And what have we done, say they?

That suggestion as to simony perplexed him.

3. Will you that I show you them that are clad thus, them that have on a marriage garment?

The Cartwrights need know nothing as to the demands made on the Weisses and Tendels.

[Hebrews 8:7] How?

and is now a lying at the Spotted Dog!”

“Upon my word, Fanny, I didn’t think that you would be so foolish,” said her aunt.

Had she fallen like a ripe plum into his mouth, or shown herself ready so to fall, he would probably have closed his lips and backed out of the affair.

[Matthew 6:12] Remember then that Day when we shall all give an account of our actions!

But not so these true philosophers; they do all with mildness and with gentleness.

What does your Plato say in the Theoetetus, to mention him especially?

None could be too old for her, and hardly any too young.

I thought that perhaps you would have written to me from Harrington. Violet has told me of the meeting between you and Madame Goesler, and says that the old friendship seems to have been perfectly re-established. She used to think once that there might be more than friendship, but I never quite believed that. She tells me that Chiltern is quarrelling with the Pallisers. You ought not to let him quarrel with people. I know that he would listen to you. He always did.

I have already spoken of the rivalry between South African ports, as between Port Alfred and Port Elizabeth, and between South African towns, as between Capetown and Grahamstown.

For we know that palm-bearing steeds, when they have retired from the circus, rest with the utmost quietness in their stables.

He had felt that his brother clergymen, men whom he had known for the last twenty years, looked coldly on him from the first moment that he had shown himself willing to sit at the feet of Mr. Slope; he had seen that their looks grew colder still when it became bruited about that he was to be the bishop’s new warden at Hiram’s Hospital.

But where are the wicked [mentioned] who receive their good things here, and there are utterly punished?

“I did;—not with the ears of my head, but with the fibres of my breast.”

But the important subject is the last handled: “It will be mean in you if I should have no Greek panthers.” The next refers to the marriages and divorces of certain ladies, and ends with an anecdote told as to a gentleman with just such illnatured wit as is common in London.

For indeed it is too bad, if these who have been made preachers of humility should glory in the elation of a vain name, when the true preacher says, But God forbid that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ [Galatians 6:14].

The elder Hamel had been a man of mark, who had a fine suite of rooms in the city and a villa on one of the lakes, but who never came to England.

How sea?

But how should they be feared, when by the blood of the martyrs in Christ, as by oil, the ardour of love is inflamed?

Because, what avails it if it be abundant, yet not sweet?

‘Like enough, squoire; like enough. But I wasn’t making bold to say nothing about that. For a young gentleman to go out a while and then to come back was all very well. Most of ‘em does it. But when there was a talk as you wern’t to come back, and that Master George was to take the place;—why then it did seem as things was very wrong.’

But God raised up the Lord, and will raise us up also by His own power.

They all have their transient bloom, and then melt away into their opposites.

Why can’t you trust Mr Bideawhile?

“She wouldn’t correspond with him at Naples.”

It is all in all to me.” And so he was left alone in the billiard-room.

Mr. Jones was also in Jerusalem, but could not be persuaded to attend at Miss Todd’s behest.

“Heaven and earth! And why am I to marry Phineas Finn?”

But at this moment he was compelled to swallow his anger, as Mrs Greenow, accompanied by her lady guest, came into the room. “Whoever would have expected two gentlemen to be so punctual,” said she, “especially on market-day!”

Learn to do well, seek judgment, do justice for the poor and lowly.

“I don’t suppose we can do anything better,” said Mr. Robarts. “I think it a pity, however, that any steps should have been taken by the bishop before the trial.”

And if it is this that you have propounded, you are answered.

For although things future, in so far as they are to be created, are still to be made, yet to God, with Whom there is nothing new or sudden in creation, they have already been made; since there is a dispensation of times for their creation, and in the prescient working of the divine power they have already been made.

(a) But which am I to believe, knowing as I do nothing at all of the Scriptures?

There were ten virgins he says.

He ate of the fruit of the tree, contrary to the commandment.

by generation.

As to Touching Pitch

If dead men's bones defile those that touch them, how came it that the dead Elisha raised another man also dead, and that life came to this latter from the body of the prophet which according to Vigilantius must have been unclean?

But do you, who have not the perception of these things, be instructed by us who know them: though you do profess to despise death, and to be sufficient of yourselves for everything.

— that is, they, having neither hope nor love, but believing that what we love and hope for is about to come, are in terror.

But the actual results of the son’s industry and the son’s thrift were still in the possession of the father.

Nevertheless, that the evil will arose out of good, could not be, because that good was made by the good God, but because it was created out of nothing— not out of God.

So she sat and dreamed far into the night.

Instead of children, one says, my house becomes the immortal memorial of my glory.

And when after so many noble deeds on his part, he saw the tyrant, the parricide, the murderer of his own brother, that injurious, that frenzied one, possessing in his stead his own kingdom, not even so was he offended.

We remember Mommsen’s verdict: “On the Roman oligarchy of this period no judgment can be pass227ed save one of inexorable and remorseless condemnation.” The farther we see into the facts of Roman history in our endeavors to read the life of Cicero, the more apparent becomes its truth.

Chapter II. “Now What Have You Got to Say?”

Her heart beat so that she could hardly support herself.

What do you think is the state of their souls, as they are going on the way to the gate?

‘As to beer,’ said Mr. Halfacre, ‘we’d ‘ave found the beer at Utterden. There wouldn’t have been no grudging the beer, Mr. Brownby, no more than there is in the lower parish; but you can’t get up a peal merely on beer. You’ve got to have bells.’

“She will feel it some day. She is no more than a child now. I feel it, George;—I feel it; and you ought to feel it.”

And how will you show Him to me?

It is my opinion that every movement of the mind affects in some degree the body.

If at the deluge Noah was delivered, and the whole world perished, all men were flesh, and therefore were destroyed.

For always flesh has been grass, and the glory of flesh as the flower of grass: but because it was not clearly proved what felicity ought to have been chosen and preferred, the flower of grass was esteemed for a great matter: not only it was by no means despised, but it was even chiefly sought after.

But if things are uncreated they must in all consistency be also wholly immutable.

Do you say that these are the words of a single weak woman giving thanks for the birth of a son?

It would fall to my lot to take the second reading, as coming next to Mrs. St. Quinten, and I should, at any rate, not be subjected to a weary audience.

Then he had determined that friends could not become friends without seeing each other, and he had concocted his scheme without being aware of the feelings which she had excited.

You have brought forth, before the eyes of those in heaven and earth, a pre-eminent wonder.

He was introduced by two leading Members on the Conservative side, but immediately afterwards found himself seated next to his friend Silverbridge on the top bench behind the ministers.

Among the neighbouring gentry in the lake country he kept no friendly relations.

There have been guests there rash enough to find some trifling faults with the comforts provided for them,—whose beds perhaps have been too hard, or their towels too limited, or perhaps their hours not agreeably arranged for them.

“And yet it is essential to your interests that he should know it. When your enemies are undermining you, you must countermine or you’ll be blown up.”

Lord Ellenborough, when he was Secretary for India, had found fault with Lord Canning, and had been forced to resign, Lord Palmerston in the Mansion House had to blow England’s trumpet in addressing the normal Mansion House audience.

“Well, well—for heaven’s sake don’t speechify about it.”

“On Marie;—money which he can’t get back again.”

And do you not know that you are (each) an Eve?

I had known it, but acted as though I knew it not—winked at it, and forgot it.

In midwinter there are but seven hours of daylight at Thorshavn; but that deficiency is made up to the inhabitants by the possession of twenty-four hours of light in June.

After such a course, as taught and teacher, that his life and habits form the ideal of an Episcopate, and his teaching the law of orthodoxy, what reward does he win for his piety?

He was a younger son, and not possessed of any large fortune.

[Luke 6:31] And as you desire that men should do to you, so do ye also to them.

But here, in place of following Porphyry, you ought rather to have corrected him, especially since you agree with him in believing such incredible things about the soul of this visible world and huge material frame.

He feared, indeed, that she was very much in love, but it would not be prudent to tell her secret to all the world.

It never occurred to us at the moment to suspect that she hurried away before we should have had time to repudiate certain suggestions which she had made.

Behold me still grieving over this, although he has now returned to you; and we do not regret that in our consenting to his return we obeyed your will.

Do you not see Him, in order that none may imagine Him not to have been begotten, doing and saying everything to show that He was so, uttering words unworthy both of His dignity and His essence, and descending to the humble character of a Prophet?

“And if he doesn’t know who does?” he asked.

But if he were to hear this who beyond all doubt knew what he was saying, he might answer and say: These things are true.

“And I did my best with it too. You would hardly believe how hard I worked at it. There is not a line that has not been weighed and written, perhaps, three times over. I do not think I am conceited; but I cannot but believe that there is something in it. The reviewers are so jealous! if a man has not a name, they will give him credit for nothing; and it is so hard to begin.”

Unless any defilement contracted in human intercourse be a conscientious cause for washing them, they are otherwise clean enough, which together with our whole body we once washed in Christ.

I do not know that anything was said between them which deserves to be specially chronicled.

What she would have done, had you not come to us, I am at a loss to think.

Your foot shall not stumble is said with reference to some who seem to oppose the one divine administration of Providence.

“Anything that was not wrong I would. Why should I not, when he is so good to me?”

We are perfectly aware that Dr. Wortle himself is a scholar, and that his school has been deservedly successful.

Let us cut off then this evil habit, and let us hear Paul saying, Use a little wine.

And if certain expressions indicate a kind of motion, as it were, on His part, such as this, They heard the voice of the Lord God walking in the garden in the cool of the day, we must understand them in this way, that it is by sinners that God is understood as moving, or as we understand the sleep of God, which is taken in a figurative sense, or His anger, or any other similar attribute.

He also had been disposed to think that Dick Shand and Bagwax might have been bribed by the squire.

“If it be inconvenient, sir, I can do without it.” He had not as yet paid for his gun, or for that velvet coat in which he had been shooting, or, most probably, for the knickerbockers. He knew he wanted the hundred pounds badly; but he felt ashamed of himself in asking for it. If he were once in office,—though the office were but a sorry junior lordship,—he would repay his father instantly.

Lately, I addressed to your Charity many things concerning the snares lying on all sides of us; and concerning fear and sadness, sorrow and pleasure; and also concerning the sickle that flies down upon the houses of swearers.

And he calls it, Tabernacle of witness: i.e.

And I spoke many things loudly and earnestly, in the sorrow of my remembrance, which, would that they who yet love vanity and seek after leasing had heard!

Of King-Charles Street, Brown could not remember that he had ever heard, and he looked it out at once in the Directory.

[1 Corinthians 11:6] He imitated the Lord; and will not thou who hast been educated in piety from the first, imitate a fellow-servant; one who by conversion was brought to the faith at a later period of life?

Moreover if He that was fashioned in the Virgin's womb was not man but God the Word Who is before the ages, then God the Word is a creature of the Holy Ghost.

“Indeed, I will,” said Miss Baker. After that they were parted by a general return to the front room.

Larry Twentyman, of whom they had never heard before, was now the god of their idolatry.

Now touching the Holy Spirit also the blasphemers make the same statement as they do concerning the Lord, saying that He too is created.

He was still sure of his pearl, and quite determined that he would wear it.

The Mr.

I will make you as Admah, and as Zeboim.

He felt all but sure that the foolish mother had given her son money for his abortive attempt, and that therefore this appeal had been made to him.

When Dorothy assured him that not for worlds would she, though she loved him dearly, injure his material prospects, he had thrown it all aside, after a grand fashion, that had really made the girl think that all Miss Stanbury’s money was as nothing to his love for her.

But should anything, which God forbid, hinder the coming together of a general council of Gallicia , at least let the priests come together, the assembling of whom our brothers Idacius and Ceponius shall look to, assisted by your own strenuous efforts to hasten the applying of remedies to these serious wounds by a provincial synod also.

But he stopped her. “Miss Morris, if it will suit you to stay with my mother, I will never say a word against it.”

Or is there abundance?

Here some one will say: What then, or where, or of what character is piety?

And we do this, not because our discourse about the Devil is sweet to us, but because the doctrine about him is full of security for you.

In Crete they did likewise, offering human sacrifices to Saturn.

In one respect both the sublime and ludicrous are easier than the realistic.

Which he was wont to use after his Sermons and Lectures.

And I knew not God to be a Spirit, [John 4:24] not one who has parts extended in length and breadth, nor whose being was bulk; for every bulk is less in a part than in the whole, and, if it be infinite, it must be less in such part as is limited by a certain space than in its infinity; and cannot be wholly everywhere, as Spirit, as God is.

Giving thanks (he says) to His Name.

For never was the Father at any time lacking in the Word, nor the Word in the Spirit.

But there Mr. Saul composed his sermons, and studied his Bible, and followed up, no doubt, some special darling pursuit, which his ambition dictated.

For these poor receive it from that Rich One, to Whom is said, My God are You, because my goods You need not: of Whom is every good gift, and every perfect gift; to Whom cries the needy and the poor, and in asking, seeking, knocking, says, My God, deliver me from the hand of the sinner, and from the hand of the lawless and unjust: because You are my patience, O Lord, my hope from my youth up.

“I can’t do that, sir.”

“Roby used to think that he was a very bad fellow,” said Mr. Bonteen. “Roby used to swear that it was hopeless trying to catch him.” It may be as well to explain that Mr. Roby was a Conservative gentleman of great fame who had for years acted as Whip under Mr. Daubeny, and who now filled the high office of Patronage Secretary to the Treasury. “I believe in my heart,” continued Mr. Bonteen, “that Roby is rejoiced that poor George Morris should be out in the cold.”

The most religious Constans had also written to his brother , and supported the cause of the Bishops.

Let us then transfer this argument to the subject of grief; and we shall find, that in none of those things which happen to us, is it of any advantage, except to correct sin; whence it is apparent that it has had its existence only for the destruction of this.

Why do you not do all that eager lust has required or demanded?

She was not sorry to find them together.

Excelsior

Castle Richmond was at this period the abode of Sir Thomas Fitzgerald, who resided there, ever and always, with his wife, Lady Fitzgerald, his two daughters, Mary and Emmeline Fitzgerald, and, as often as purposes of education and pleasure suited, with his son Herbert Fitzgerald.

‘She will not make the worse wife, my friend, because she is not much given to such talking as that. When she is out with me on a Sunday afternoon she has chat enough. By St. James, she’ll talk for two hours without stopping when I’m so out of breath with the hill that I haven’t a word.’

30. The Jews used to say: He is good. Though some said: He is not, yet others said: He is good,— and you do all deny His goodness.

If the choice could be put to him plainly by some supernal power, what then would he choose?

“What would you think of Miss Mary Thorne?” Sir Louis had asked; and the doctor, instead of answering him with ready and pleased alacrity, stood silent, thunderstruck with amazement.

“Impudent puppy! He thinks because he has got an unmeaning handle to his name, that everybody is to come to his whistle. They tell me that his father was made what they call a baronet because he set a broken arm for one of those twenty royal dukes that England has to pay for.”

For He is declared to be God.

Hear what Christ says: The world shall rejoice, but you shall be sorrowful.

Onto a beautiful mirror does she look, for she looks into God.

Chapter 15.— The Doctrine of Manichæus Not Only Uncertain, But False. His Absurd Fancy of a Land and Race of Darkness Bordering on the Holy Region and the Substance of God. The Error, First of All, of Giving to the Nature of God Limits and Borders, as If God Were a Material Substance, Having Extension in Space

Altogether the young man appeared to him in a light different from that through which he had viewed the presumptuous, arrogant, utterly unjustifiable suitor who had come to him, now nearly a year since, in Carlton Terrace.

who was the motive power of the second coalition, could have had no personal hand in that of 71.

With how many arguments can this trifling be refuted!

He therefore gave the partisans of Ursacius unbounded license to act as they pleased in regard to the churches: and directed that the revised form of creed which had been read at Ariminum should be sent to the churches throughout Italy; ordering that whoever would not subscribe it should be ejected from their sees, and that others should be substituted in their place.

Chapter 20 Of the Question as to the Consistency of the Several Notices Given by Matthew, Mark, and Luke, on the Subject of the Astonishment Felt by the Centurion and Those Who Were with Him.

Perhæc enim significat, esse in nostra potestate, et non esse necessarium ex prohibitione præcepti, vel continentiam, vel etiam matrimonium; et quod matrimonium creationi aliquid affert auxilii, præterea explicans.

But what would be achieved by that if she were to walk out only to encounter misery?

“She is earning her bread honestly.”

“Oh, Harry; what has she done?”

“Well—till October?”

It was half-past three when the judge began his charge.

She got a glimmer of light from it all, nearly understanding what Lady Albury intended.

“I never knew a man so imperturbable, and who had yet so much to say for himself. I wonder what he is! Perhaps he’s on business, and that man was a kind of a clerk.”

Belief in the Father and in the Son and in the Holy Ghost, when they renounced the devil and his angels, and uttered those saving words.

How much more manifest (and how much better than all these inventions!)

Unhappy being!

Do then nothing, speak nothing of things upon earth.

They make my daily life unpleasant.

I will bless her widow with blessings, and will satisfy her poor with bread [Psalm 131:15].

[Matthew 19:12] That which springs from a virtue of the mind is perfected in the flesh; and, finally, by the patience of the flesh, does battle under persecution.

But if she could only escape the wrongs, if she could find some niche in the world which would be bearable to her, in which, free from harsh treatment, she could pour forth all the genuine kindness of her woman’s nature,—then, she thought she could put away violence and be gentle as a young girl.

Our rest is our place.

Why am I thus interrupted?

We cannot understand that other nations look upon such doings as we regard the human sacrifices of the Brahmins; but the fact is that we drive a Juggernaut’s car through every assize town in the country, three times a year, and allow it to be dragged ruthlessly through the streets of the metropolis at all times and seasons.

so emulous, so strong, and already so contentious; and all this, I suppose, because even now full of life!

Laws, aunt, I can’t believe it!” In her tone, also, there was something almost of exultation.

Epistle 46. To Basil.

To the utter amazement of Mrs Umbleby and Miss Gushing, the doctor did it all very well. He said nothing about it to any one—he never did say much about such things—but he furnished his house well and discreetly; and when Mary Thorne came home from her school at Bath, to which she had been taken some six years previously, she found herself called upon to be the presiding genius of a perfect paradise.

Colonel Osborne was always so dressed that no one ever observed the nature of his garments, being no doubt well aware that no man after twenty-five can afford to call special attention to his coat, his hat, his cravat, or his trousers; but nevertheless the matter was one to which he paid much attention, and he was by no means lax in ascertaining what his tailor did for him.

But you, vile and wretched blasphemy, whose glory is in lies and rumors and calumny; your power is to deceive and prevail with the inexperience of youth, and with men who still retain the folly of youth.

Monasteries are indeed houses of mourning.

“None;—certainly none. If you want promises from me, there can be no hope for the future. What am I to promise? That I will not have—a lover? What respect can I enjoy as your wife if such a promise be needed? If you should choose to fancy that it had been broken you would set your policeman to watch me again! Louis, we can never live together again ever with comfort, unless you acknowledge in your own heart that you have used me shamefully.”

He might, perhaps, have done so had it not been for the absence of Lady Eustace; but as that was thought to give him a possible chance of escape, he stood his ground.

She declared to herself that it would be strong enough both for him, and for her, if they would only guide themselves by prudence.

It should be nothing at all in such matters.

Steinmark. “ and swear—”

Or how did it benefit Adam to say, 'The woman beguiled me [Genesis 3:12]?'

“How could she help it? I am not such a fool as to suppose that people are to hold their tongues about me more than they do about others. Intimate as she is with you, of course she has spoken to you.”

When she left the drawing-room, the conversation turned again upon the great Popenjoy question, and from certain words which fell from the Dean, Jack was enabled to surmise that Lord George had reason to hope that an heir might be born to him.

There ain’t a many runs as long as that.

Let us speak then first to these who fear God, just in the manner of that woman who delights in wickedness; namely, she fears her husband lest he condemn her; to such let us first speak.

14. This was decreed at the Synod of Ariminum, and rightly do I detest that council, following the rule of the Nicene Council, from which neither death nor the sword can detach me, which faith the father of your Clemency also, Theodosius, the most blessed Emperor, both approved and follows. The Gauls hold this faith, and Spain, and keep it with the pious confession of the Divine Spirit.

Whence it resulted that whatever they said, as if affected by certain strange disorders, I approved of as true, not because I knew it to be true, but because I wished it to be.

Chapter XVIII. Crocker’s Tale

But immersed as she was here at Caversham, how could she strike at all?

[Matthew 7:1] For the sin, of whatever kind, will not there appear any more such as it was when committed, but will receive a great and unpardonable addition from the judgment passed by you upon your fellow servants.

Hitherto they had passively obeyed their leaders.

The nipples also gently rising, and crowned with darker and small orbs, add something of beauty; being given to females for the nourishment of their young, to males for grace only, that the breast might not appear misshapen, and, as it were, mutilated.

“I don’t know about that; but it seems he had the power. But to tell you the truth, Nelly, I am as well satisfied as it is. When the affair became the subject of angry discussion, I thoroughly wished to be rid of it altogether.”

Two perfidious Gauls to whom Caesar had been very kind, but whom he had been obliged to check on account of certain gross peculations of which they had been guilty, though, as he tells us, he had not time to punish them, went over to Pompey, and told Pompey all the secrets of Caesar’s ditches, and forts, and mounds, —finished and unfinished.

Now he has here propounded the soul and the body as two several and distinct things.

When he had declared that he did not want his cousin’s inheritance, he had spoken the simple truth.

The treasury would suffer no loss, while it is unjust that the Vestal Virgins and priests should be deprived of ancient legacies, a sacrilege which the gods punished by a famine.

Sulla, too, was born thirty-two years before Cicero—a patrician of the bluest blood—and having gone, as we say, into public life, and having been elected Quæstor, became a soldier by dint of office, as a man with us may become head of the Admiralty.

Was it extinct?

Wherefore forasmuch as the Truth has spoken the truth, that he, unto whom little is forgiven, loves little; do ye, in order that you may love with full glow of affection Him, Whom you are free to love, being loosened from ties of marriage, account as altogether forgiven unto you, whatever of evil, by His governance, you have not committed.

He wore the same tattered gloves.

“How did you learn all about him?”

For both desire takes its beginning from the inclination, and caution arises from fear, and joy is nothing else than the expression of gladness.

And to let you see the hidden meaning of Scripture in all its fullness (for the word of God is a pearl and may be pierced on every side) after his drunkenness came the uncovering of his body; self-indulgence culminated in lust.

I am He who nurtured you, and you served another.

A parcel sent by express over a distance of forty miles will not be delivered within twenty-four hours.

Nor, again, do we predicate of His flesh or of His humanity the properties of divinity: for we do not say that His flesh or His humanity is uncreated.

“For shooting here, how much have you ever contributed?”

All minds does faith reduce to silence and despise—

For if one, whose servant had committed many offenses, instead of scourging him with thongs, should grant him a pardon for all those, but should require an account of his future conduct, and bid him beware of falling into the same faults again, and should bestow high favors upon him, who do you think would not be overcome at hearing of such kindness?

What then is to be done?

Blessed is the man that has not gone away in the counsel of the ungodly [Psalm 1:1].

For it is neither the number of their years nor the dignity of their maker that commends them, but simply that they are just; and therefore, when their injustice is recognized, they are deservedly condemned, even though they condemn.

It is necessary for me, however, in attempting to show who they are that produce the effects ascribed to the idols, and that they are not gods, to have recourse to some witnesses from among the philosophers.

And do you, as my reward, pay off those blessed and empty hopes, which you devised against the evil speakers, who accused you of insulting me on pretence of honouring me, as though I were lightminded and easily taken in by such treatment.

Of great criminals and hidden crimes she tells us nothing.

Yet you alone, O purest virgin, are now made the recipient of things of which all these were kept in ignorance, and you learn the origin of them.

Directly she saw his face, she closed them again, and buried her own in the clothes; however, he saw that she was awake, and, bending his head, he muttered, loud enough for her to hear, but in a thick, harsh, hurried, drunken voice, “Anty—d’ye hear?

For anything that he knew, Mrs. Winterfield might leave everything she possessed to her niece.

But the fact might not have mattered if it had never been told.

He does not say, Took no notice ([παρεἵδεν]); does not say, Permitted: but, You were ignorant.

But the evil spirits were not satisfied with saying, before Christ's appearance, that those who were said to be sons of Jupiter were born of him; but after He had appeared, and been born among men, and when they learned how He had been foretold by the prophets, and knew that He should be believed on and looked for by every nation, they again, as was said above, put forward other men, the Samaritans Simon and Menander, who did many mighty works by magic, and deceived many, and still keep them deceived.

The emperor hastened to correct this evil which had long prevailed among them.

[1 Samuel i] It is not easy, however, to find to what petition of the Lord's Prayer her petition could be referred, unless it be to the last, Deliver us from evil, because it was esteemed to be an evil to be married and not to have offspring as the fruit of marriage.

“Your impression, you say, has always been—” said Mr. Mason, repeating the words of his companion, and looking as ponderous and grave as ever. His countenance, however, expressed nothing but his usual ponderous solemnity.

Let us not therefore be impatient, nor think ourselves only to be unhappy.

Epicurus indeed, and the Cyrenaics, say that pleasure is the first duty; for it is for the sake of pleasure, they say, that virtue was introduced, and produced pleasure.

I have just come, he replied, from the festival of the Martyr Eupsychius , (and so it really was), and there I heard the great Basil speak most beautifully and perfectly upon the Godhead of the Father and the Son, as hardly anyone else could speak; but he slurred over the Spirit.

I say, satanical: for the expression, What care I, though such an one stumble, and such another perish?

Hugh had not spoken to Osborne since the day, now a fortnight since, on which both of them had witnessed the scene in the park; but on that occasion they had been left together, and it had been impossible for them not to say a few words about their mutual friends.

I hastened on with a precipitate, though devout, zeal to the true sense in which we hold the unity of God.

For almost no one's conscience can hate God; but he despises, i.e.

Nisibene Hymns

Then do bishops and rulers not ask for the people?

They see Him walking upon the sea. And when they were greatly troubled,

The room had no present occupant but himself, and therefore he was able to make the most of all its comforts.

We will not ask as to her past life; but for the future she will be what she is,—only till the chance comes to her of being something better.

“Oh no,” said Mrs. Orme. “I must return home, you know. How many days will it be, sir?”

Nay, the opinions of Plato might be chargeable with error, on account of Aristotle's having separated from his school, and founded a new one—on which subject we have remarked in the preceding book.

But if any man love God, the same, he does not say, knows Him, but, is known of Him. For we have not known Him, but He has known us. And therefore did Christ say, You have not chosen Me, but I have chosen you. And Paul elsewhere, Then shall I know fully, even as also I have been known.

“Well, now;—that’s just what I wanted to know. One couldn’t write and ask such a question; but I was sure I should find out if I came.”

He had a right to receive, but he did not receive; here is good work the first: and this, though in want; [good work] the second; and though preaching to them, the third; he gives besides, the fourth; and not merely gives, but lavishly too, the fifth; not money only, but himself, the sixth; for those who loved him not greatly, the seventh; and for those whom he greatly loved, the eighth.

“I wish you would not come so often,” Bell said to him one evening, as he stood with her at the drawing-room fire, after he had left the patient’s room; “you are overloading us with obligations.” On that day Lily was over the worst of the fever, and he had been able to tell Mrs Dale that he did not think that she was now in danger.

For the large number of those who fail of the end that belongs to them does not make void the common lot, since the examination relates to individuals, and the reward or punishment of lives ill or well spent is proportioned to the merit of each.

He would have a bottle of champagne and a devilled biscuit.

My mother's name was Matthidia, my father's Faustinianus: my brothers', Faustinus and Faustus.

He was a barbarian in life, both in word and deed; and in his nature demoniacal and insane.

Why is the name added, except perchance lest one might seem to be raised instead of another, or that the resurrection were rather accidental than commanded.

And not only this but he also relates they gave Him gall to eat, and vinegar to drink.

When in London, or out of it, she gave a modicum of her slender income to the poor.

And this kind of faith, if indeed it too is to be called faith, perishes from the heart without blame, when truth is found and expels it.

In both passages their foreheads are said to have the seal; in one the seal is spoken of, in the other it appears to contain the letters forming the name of the Lamb, and the name of His Father.

It will be remembered that Mr. Prendergast and Matthew Mollett had met once before, in the room usually occupied by Sir Thomas Fitzgerald.

“Then he’d better pay up, like anybody else,” said Dolly as he left the room. The father knew the son, and was quite sure that Squercum would have his finger in the pie unless the money were paid quickly. When Dolly had taken an idea into his head, no power on earth,—no power at least of which the father could avail himself,—would turn him.

Justin: In addition to the questions I have just now put to you, I wish to put more: for by means of these questions I shall strive to bring the discourse to a speedy termination.

But Priscilla, seeing from the fire in her eyes that she was much moved, made no reply, but turned to listen to what might further be said.

“What can it be?”

Old Mr Slow, as he explained this now for the seventh or eighth time, did it without a tone of regret in his voice, or a sign of sorrow in his eye.

For He Who was omnipotent did not in His omnipotent authority and might lack the power to rescue man out of the hands of the tyrant.

Mr. Chaffanbrass was, perhaps, right in thinking that her evidence might be as serviceable as that of the lords and countesses.

And Adah bare Jabal: he was the father of the shepherds that dwell in tents.

Accordingly the one Light is not divergent from the other.

Thus, again, he who speaks in the book Ecclesiasticus says: Who sees me?

For this also we greatly rejoice, that the gifts which you sent us were not unlike your character. For indeed we received oil of the holy cross , and wood of aloes; one to bless by the touch, the other to give a sweet smell when kindled. For it was becoming that a good man should send us things that might appease the wrath of God against us.

So, I hope, do I.

While Lady Dumbello was still dressing in the evening this was brought to her with her lord’s love, as his token of renewed confidence; and Lady Dumbello, as she counted the sparkles, triumphed inwardly, telling herself that she had played her cards well.

[Matthew 11:28-30] In Jeremiah: In that day I will shatter the yoke from their neck, and will burst their fetters; and they shall not labour for others, but they shall labour for the Lord God; and I will raise up David a king unto them.

In what sense then does he say, I should not have known sin but by the Law?

He could not allow it to be said of him that he had voted for the permanence of the Church establishment, and he must therefore support the Government.

How might it be possible for her to place a portion of her income at the command of the man she loved so that he should not feel disgraced by receiving it from her hand?

“I suppose it’s his business. I don’t quite understand all the ins and outs of it. I believe he’s to be one of Mr Palliser’s private secretaries if he becomes Chancellor of the Exchequer. Perhaps he doesn’t tell;—only I think he does all the same. He always calls me Lady Glencowrer. He comes out of Lancashire, and made calico as long as he could get any cotton.” But this happened in the bedroom, and we must go back for a while to the drawing-room.

Dionysius to Novatus his brother, greeting.

How long shall it be before you are dried up?

“A lie? As I know her truth when she tells me her creed, so would she know my falsehood, and the lie would be vain.”

Ladies who doubt always solve their doubts in the one direction.

If bounty is to be distributed to any, the granaries, the storehouses, are foreclosed.

Then the “new” had gone away to Brussels,—or heaven only knows where,—and there seemed to be an opportunity of renewing matters with the “old.” Having perceived the desirability of matrimony, she simply carried out her purpose with a determined will.

But if the world be not made from it, [this theory] entirely excludes God from exercising power on the creation [of the world].

Coming in His Father's name: what does that mean but coming in the name of God?

Nay, things even far less than these we fear to do before men: but in God's sight we fear no longer.

By this means power was given to the demons to enter into minds of this sort, so that they seemed to lead insane dances and to rave like Bacchanalians; hence were invented the gnashing of teeth, and bellowing from the depth of their bowels; hence a terrible countenance and a fierce aspect in men, so that he whom drunkenness had subverted and a demon had instigated, was believed by the deceived and the erring to be filled with the Deity.

For when these things were being sung in the times of King David, nothing of such sort, by the hostility of the Gentiles, as yet had befallen the city Jerusalem, nor the Temple of God, which as yet was not even built.

Would not all the world know and say that he had done it solely for the money,—even should he succeed in doing it?

This the reader must do before he can understand Cicero’s state of mind when writing it, or his relation to Atticus; or the thoughts which distracted him when, in accordance with the advice of Atticus, he resolved, while yet uncondemned, to retire into banishment.

That he was at this present period of his life behaving badly to his wife must be allowed, but on this special evening he had intended to behave well.

“You,” she said, “among young men in England are about the foremost, and therefore,—as I think,—about the foremost in the world.

The word Lord, he says, is spoken of the essence.

When yams, avocado pears, the mountain cabbage, plaintains, and twenty other delicious vegetables may be had for the gathering, people will insist on eating bad English potatoes; and the desire for English pickles is quite a passion.

At last she feared he might already have passed away, and she put her hand upon his shoulder, and down his arm.

But who is there that has his heart clean from the impurities of sin, and does not offend in his tongue?

And then Sir Richard began.

In the third year of this emperor, Heraclas died, having held his office for sixteen years, and Dionysius received the episcopate of the churches of Alexandria.

As they continued to dance he said very little to her, and before the last figure was over she had almost settled down to enjoyment.

There is then one God and Father, and not two or three; One who is; and there is no other besides Him, the only true [God].

“How can she obey them, unless she knows them?”

meaning by the earth our bodies, in which He wished the swift-moving and fiery operation of His doctrine to be kindled.

What, then, if our word is true and therefore is rightly called a word?

Let her read the books of Moses and she will find that if violence is offered to a betrothed virgin in a city and she does not cry out, she is punished as an adulteress: but if she is forced in the field, she is innocent of sin and her ravisher alone is amenable to the laws.

For we do not impose upon our slaves such tasks, as glory exacts from her captives.

This charity, then, should be retained in the mind, so that nothing at all be done beyond the rule of reason.

But when we find bad and good actions recorded of the same person, we must take warning from the one, and example from the other.

Comfort was brought round to condemn him as thoroughly as did Dr. Harford,—not reflecting, as he did so, how fatal his condemnation might be to the happiness of poor Rachel Ray.

As if we believed that the divine nature came from the womb of a woman.

“Why, to tell you the truth, Patty Coverdale has promised. As for Miss Holmes, if she won’t, why you must leave her at home with mamma. But Kate and Patty can’t come without you.”

“I shall give it up, at any rate,” he said, after a pause.

And therefore some suppose that, though he was not on earth (in which it is agreed that every living thing which could not naturally live in water perished), he was for a time with his father, who had been translated, and that he lived there till the flood had passed away.

Then Madame Staubach had prayed that her niece’s heart might be softened, and had called upon Linda to join her in these prayers.

A feeling that the love of that city created in them: that love the Spirit of God inspired; the love of God, he says, shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost, which is given unto us.

He speaks as follows: And there is a certain Marcion of Pontus, who is even now still teaching his followers to think that there is some other God greater than the Creator.

Whoso privily slandered his neighbour, him I persecuted [Psalm 100:5].

While he was still in bed with his broken arm at the Percy Standard, many applications for money had been made to him.

“What has happened, Felix?”

For by means of this mortality the hostile powers of hell ruled over us.

“Had every volume off the shelves, sir.”

Therefore hospitality is a principal virtue, as the philosophers also say; but they turn it aside from true justice, and forcibly apply it to advantage.

“But I didn’t even speak to him,” said Paul.

So also it seemed to Heraclitus.

Be not deceived, God is not mocked.

Providence, however, could reach the circumstances even here, and with ease restored whatever had been disordered by violence and the licentiousness of human passion.

His aversion is carried to things outward as well as inward.

“If two men have equal pluck, strength isn’t much needed. One is a brave man, and the other—a coward. Which do you think is which?”

For He came indeed in the way of sinners, by being born as sinners are; but He stood not therein, for that the enticements of the world held Him not.

For what a thing it is to see the loves and licentious actions of Zeus in the poets!

When that cluster by passion was pressed out, [Isaiah 63:3] there flowed that whence the cup inebriating is how passing beautiful!

“If he chooses to be guided by her, who shall say that he is wrong? Get it out of your mind. The very thinking about such things is dirtiness!” The poor old lady submitted to the rebuke and did not dare to say another word.

He was aware that there was some secret unknown to him, and was anxious to be informed.

When, however, an initial act had been once done by it, the scheme of temporal seasons began, for distinguishing and noting which, the stars and luminaries of heaven were arranged in their order.

I am not sure but that the same may be said of an author’s written language.

Not only as God's enemies, but as his own too does he now describe them.

But since the matter appears to some to be one of indifference, which moreover is difficult to be guarded against, let us discuss this point a little, to show you how vast an evil it is.

For as there is no believing without elementary instruction, so neither is there comprehension without science.

For the cases are not alike, for (all) to bear the calamity in common, and, while all (the rest) abound, for the poorer to be famishing.

It had a straggling, ill-conditioned, uncommercial aspect, very different from the look of Detroit, Milwaukee, or St. Paul.

Now either their days are appointed to all men severally, and if so appointed, I cannot suppose them capable of being shortened; or if, notwithstanding such appointment, they may be shortened by the will of God, or some other powerful influence, then (I say) such shortening is of no validity, if they still may be accomplished in some other way.

Reverence the honor with which God has honoured it, and bring it not down to the vileness of sin, but having reflected again that after the hand and the tongue, the heart receives this dread mystery, do not ever weave a plot against your neighbor, but keep your thoughts pure from all evil.

It is very easy to depict a hero,—a man absolutely stainless, perfect as an Arthur,—a man honest in all his dealings, equal to all trials, true in all his speech, indifferent to his own prosperity, struggling for the general good, and, above all, faithful in love.

And Matthew again admirably describes the submission and the humility, when he says, if it be possible.

It is enough for my position, that, as I said before, and as you are obliged to confess, before the coming of our Lord all the patriarchs and prophets of Israel lay in infernal darkness for their sins.

Moreover, the Lord Himself, in the parable to the apostles, when the labourers had come to Him and said, Lord, did not we sow good seed in Your field?

Again, the eagle has his light pinion; but I have reason and art, by which I am enabled to bring down and master all the winged animals.

Then, when he had learned to know what it was to have a home without a “presiding genius,” he might, if duly penitent and open in his confession, be forgiven.

But he did not use the boon aright.

See ye not ambassadors, how all pay court to them?

It is true, that the formlessness, which is almost nothing, cannot have changes, of times.

She had no new argument to offer,—except this last interposition of Providence in her favour.

Such is the reply of Ariovistus.

“I know nothing about it,” Mr Love would say, not lifting his face from his desk for a moment.

After the death of the two, however, the beggar was in Abraham's bosom in rest; the rich man was in torment.

She has made a position for herself in the world of fiction, and is one of our established personages.

But nevertheless all these things have been hidden from them; but had been hidden because they disbelieved first.

For the men here bid you be at charges to please them, but Christ, on the contrary, gives you an hundredfold for what you give Him, and adds moreover eternal life.

Whether these hold the truth, is a great question: but ought we not to make full trial of them first, in order that, so long as we err, being as we are men, we may seem to err with the human race itself?

First of all, then, it is necessary that we should be led by the fear of God to seek the knowledge of His will, what He commands us to desire and what to avoid.

“I don’t suppose she cares for him,” he said to his wife.

In such a narrative as this, any proceeding of that kind would be unusual,—and therefore the poor narrator has been driven to expend his first four chapters in the mere task of introducing his characters.

We lawyers are not like bishops, who are always for giving up, and going out on a pension.’

So it is: but we disgrace ourselves.

When his officers besought him to eat bread he would not listen.

We must not then say that God is perfect, and Creator, and Almighty, through the world?

There may have been letters but if so they have been kept from me.” She was so angry that she could not even attempt to conceal her wrath.

Feemy could not say a word to her father: his absolute idiotcy, and the manner in which he referred to Ussher, quite upset her, and she sat down and wept bitterly.

Having first used the expression, to them that are called according to a purpose, and at the same time wishing to declare their privilege compared with the rest of mankind, he speaks also of inheritance by lot, yet so as not to divest them of free will.

There we saw no shame-faced mimes, no actress over-burdened with modesty; all that the obscene rites demanded was fully complied with.

“I have been foolish, Lady de Courcy.”

“The sooner the better for all parties,” said Alice cheerily. “ When a man and a woman have agreed together, I can’t see why they shouldn’t at once walk off to the church arm in arm.”

I have no ambition to surprise my reader.

He has been a slave to it for years,—all his life I believe,—in order that he might sit in the Cabinet, and be a minister and a Chancellor of the Exchequer.

For they were rendering evil things for good things: for them was I thirsting: mine honour they thought to drive back: I was thirsting to bring them over into my body.

For he that does, says He, the will of my Father, this is my brother, and sister, and mother.

He is comforting the man that groans, and chiefly by an admonition, lest by imitating evil men, who ofttimes prosper, they delight in evil doing.

If any think so, let them ask To which was death terrible, to His Spirit or to His body?

But God has not furnished the nature of my body with weapons, but has made these to be extraneous to it, for the purpose of showing that man is a gentle animal; and that I have not always occasion to use my weapons, for from time to time I lay these aside, and from time to time resume them.

61. The physician, therefore, ought not to wound a mother who has been deprived of all, nor a suffering mind, with shameful reproaches, lest when the request had been made and had been proudly denied, she should grieve over the condemnation of her petition as being unreasonable.

Dionysius, deacon

But in order that you may assign to God a beginning of His being a Father, first determine the starting-point at which the times must have begun.

He may be sure that he will not find himself alone; and he may be sure also that he will incur none of that ridicule which the non-hunting man is disposed to think must be attached to such a pursuit.

Arius and Eunomius maintain that God the Word assumed only a body of the Virgin.

“And this is the middle to the right,” said Mrs Conway Sparkes. But the duchess had turned round since she came in, and could not at all understand where she was.

Then there was a jaunty jacket, partly open in the centre, with large bright buttons down the front and on the sleeves.

Now the Greeks, O King, as they follow base practises in intercourse with males, and a mother and a sister and a daughter, impute their monstrous impurity in turn to the Christians.

I do not know whether I am right in thinking that I ought myself to tell you of the step which I am going to take. If it is unnecessary, I know you will forgive me, and will be certain that I have intended to do what is right. Sir Henry Harcourt has proposed to me, and I have accepted him. I believe we shall be married some time before Christmas.

“She is a mischief-making gossiping old maid,” said Neville angrily.

The philosopher loves and likes the truth, being now considered as a friend, on account of his love, from his being a true servant.

The task of seeing an important trial at the Old Bailey is by no means a pleasant business, unless you be what the denizens of the Court would call “one of the swells,”—so as to enjoy the privilege of being a benchfellow with the judge on the seat of judgment.

Falling sick, he continued three successive days dumb and senseless.

As we desire to introduce to earnest minds the Abbot Serenus, a man of the greatest holiness and continence, and one who answers like a mirror to his name, whom we admired above all others with peculiar veneration, we think that we only carry out our desire by the attempt to insert his conferences in our book.

Mr. Slope was madly in love but hardly knew it. The Signora spitted him, as a boy does a cockchafer on a cork, that she might enjoy the energetic agony of his gyrations. And she knew very well what she was doing.

And, besides, it is not congruous that he, who had above asserted that there was no communion between light and darkness, righteousness and iniquity, should in this place have been indicating somewhat touching communion.

I observe, however, that you have expressed your opinion on the point in writing, calling the inner man the soul; for of this you spoke when you said: And as the substance congealed, which was incapable of comprehension, it would produce another body within the body rounded and amassed by the force and twirl of its own nature, and thus an inner man would begin to appear, who, being moulded in a corporeal sheath would in its lineaments be shaped after the likeness of its outer man.

Let virtue then be our study: for abundant are her riches, and great the wonder wrought in her. She bestows the true freedom, and causes the same to be discerned even in slavery, not releasing from slavery, but while men continue slaves, exhibiting them more honorable than freemen; which is much more than giving them freedom: not making the poor man rich, but while he continues poor, exhibiting him wealthier than the rich.

There are many who can never bring themselves really to think at all, but do whatever thinking is done by them in a chance fashion, with no effort, using the faculty which the Lord has given them because they cannot, as it were, help themselves.

Was it not as though beast had met beast in the forest between whom nothing but internecine fight to the end was possible?

Adelaide Palliser turned round and looked at him, still understanding nothing.

But on the other side of Mr. Brown stood a pair, for whose presence there George Robinson had not expressed his approbation, and as to one of whom it may be said that better taste would have been shown on all sides had he not thus intruded himself.

For if they are bad, and therefore in no way to be believed concerning the majority of the gods, the greater is the wrong done the gods about whom they are feigned with impunity.

If you wish to say any word as from yourself, let it be done in the shape of a preface or introductory chapter.” At the end there is a postscript: “The publication, if made at all, should be effected as soon as possible after my death.” My father died on the 6th of December, 1882.

For of those creatures which divide the foot into two hoofs the walk is always vigorous; the tendency to slip of one part of the hoof being sustained by the firmness of the other, and so retained in the substantial footstep.

‘How on earth do you know?’

And ours we call what the Creator formed in us from the beginning and what He undertook to repair.

He says so clearly to Atticus.

There being then so many good effects— and yet we have not mentioned all— does any one think it superfluous that this Epistle was inserted?

Now what are we to make of this?

[John 4:27] Is He not a rule, such as may not be set aside, an example, and a pattern to all the tribes of men?

Mordecai trod upon the neck of Haman, his persecutor; and as for Jesus, His enemies shall be put under His feet.

“Nullius addictus jurare in verba magistri”

By some He is honoured as God but confused with the Father; by others He is dishonoured as Flesh, and is severed from God.

'Grant me then this favor,' he says, 'that you compel me not to show, that even when present I am able to be bold against whomsoever it may be necessary; that is, to chastise and punish them.'

The country certainly is flat.

Actions are followed by praise or blame, and some of them are accompanied with pleasure and others with pain; some are to be desired by the actor, others are to be shunned: further, of those that are desirable, some are always so, others only at some particular time.

Although the Victim had not yet been offered, nor had The Sacrifice as yet been made, nor was sin as yet-taken away, it still had the rule and sovereignty.

One day, however, as he was leaving his garden, he saw a man completely paralysed lying in front of the gates.

“Exactly. You might say it isn’t Christian to hang a man.”

And not only males are produced, but females also, that by means of both the race may be perpetuated.

Justin: Then what follows of the Psalm is this, in which He says: 'Our fathers trusted in You; they trusted, and You delivered them.

But in these shiftings Balatka became a ruined man, and at the time of which I write he and his daughter were almost penniless.

“And what shall I say to her?”

He was determined, if possible, to be revenged that same night for the defeat which he had experienced.

On the 22d of October, the new Consuls, Silanus and Murena, were elected.

They hold, in short, that they are a forgery, and alleged to be the prophecies of the Sibyl on the ground of their containing useful moral sentiments, tending to restrain licentiousness, and to lead man to a life of sobriety and decorum.

If the heathen suffered this how would they urge their complaint, that a priest must purchase the free time necessary for his ministry by the loss of all his patrimony, and buy the power to exercise his public ministry at the expense of all his private means; and, alleging his vigils for the public safety, must console himself with the reward of domestic want, because he has not sold a service but obtained a favour.

Thus, at the Crucifixion, the earth was shaken: and the Lord Himself says, Then there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes in various places.

“I shall know how to right myself,” said Juniper, with another oath. And he then walked out of the room.

These crimes in (mere) words and names are just like barbarous words and phrases, which have their fault, and their solecism, and their absurdity of figure.

But that keenness became so aggravated by the intenseness of his search that the slightest speck of dust became to his eyes as a foul stain.

For He is a certain Mind generating and filling all things, which, without any beginning or end of time, controls, by the highest and most perfect reason, the naturally linked causes of things, so as to result in benefit to all.

For the spirits of the Prophets, it says, are subject to the prophets.

It might be necessary for him to go down to Bobsborough;—but in the meantime he would see Frank Greystock.

Among the many passages in which he treats of this subject, occurs the following: I once more repeat my position: I say that it is possible for a man to be without sin.

A question why he has called the feeling of fear and hope imperfect.

And if we leave those, and stand gaping at these useless things, all our time will be wasted in vain and to no profit, and we shall suffer the extreme of punishment.

“Come into the house, Fanny,” he said, “and write a line to your brother, and then get a money order at the post-office for four pounds, and send it to your brother; and tell him that I lend it to him till times shall be better with him. Do not give him your father’s money without your father’s leave. Sam will pay me some day, unless I be mistaken in him.”

She had not wished to throw her cousin Jack and Miss Mildmay together.

For not one man under heaven, if brought up from his youth in such practices, will ever turn out a wise man, with however admirable a natural genius he may be endowed.

Having declared these things, and more to the same effect, they ceased.

She had fled from the house in sad tears, and after a while her brother had joined her,—bloody, with his lip cut and a black eye.

The man was a waiter of the ancient class, a gray-haired waiter, with seedy clothes, and a dirty towel under his arm; not a dapper waiter, with black shiny hair, and dressed like a guest for a dinner-party.

There is no iniquity, no breach of promise, no treason that a woman will not excuse to herself,—or a man either,—by the comfortable self-assurance that the person to be injured is—mad.

Whilst you are yet speaking, says the Scripture, I will say, Lo, here I am. [Isaiah 65:24]

Tappitt and some few others were of a different opinion.

“Only that he’s the managing man on the Education Board, and he’s giving up his time very much to that at present. I dare say he’ll come, but he won’t stay long.”

Do not, my son, let senile timidity displease your youthful confidence.

He was one of those who, though noble by birth, had flung themselves among the people, as Catiline had done and Clodius,—unsteady, turbulent, unscrupulous, vicious, needy, fond of pleasure, rapacious, but well educated, brave, and clever.

It was true that he had despised Charlie, and had spoken his contempt openly;—that he had seen the girl on the sands at Yarmouth every summer for the last ten years, and about the streets of Norwich every winter, and had learned to regard her as a thing poor and despicable, because she was common in his eyes.

He therefore already knew Him.

Lately he had made himself comfortable in this respect, and he sorrowed over the fine linen which he had worn but once or twice since it had been bought with the last instalment from Sir Thomas.

He has not enough with him for a long journey.” For Stanbury had suggested that he might be off to seek another residence in another country, and that they would find Casalunga vacant when they reached it on the following Tuesday.

This consists of a pool of boiling water about fifty yards in circumference, two or three feet deep, in the midst of which there is a round funnel about eight feet broad, descending, as far as the eye can judge, into the very bowels of the earth; up this the boiling water is emitted.

Again though he was the friend, companion, and cousin of princes and had been educated along with them— a thing which makes even strangers intimate— he did not allow pride to inflate him or frown with contempt upon others who were less fortunate than he: no, he was kind to all, and while he loved the princes as brothers he revered them as sovereigns.

I will endeavour to do nothing wrong, but it is so.

At first he said nothing of the letter to his daughter.

“Yes, he did speak to me,” said Mrs. Orme, almost trembling with anxiety.

For the persecution was said to be so violent in those parts, that at Alexandria, while the brethren were praying during Easter and on the Lord's days in a desert place near the cemetery, the General came upon them with a force of soldiery, more than three thousand in number, with arms, drawn swords, and spears; whereupon outrages, such as might be expected to follow so unprovoked an attack, were committed against women and children, who were doing nothing more than praying to God.

But although John then contended that this was a canon of the Arians, and not of the catholic church, and therefore it was inoperative against him— for it had been framed in the council convened against Athanasius at Antioch, for the subversion of the doctrine of consubstantiality — the bishops would not listen to his defence, but immediately condemned him, without considering that by using this canon they were sanctioning the deposition of Athanasius himself.

Here he discourses concerning the Antichrist, and reveals great mysteries.

How was he to escape from the mess of trouble which he had prepared for himself by his adventures in Ireland.

Chapter 14. Letter written by the Emperor Constantine respecting the building of Churches.

Then Adelaide became still more grave. She had now removed herself from his embrace, and was standing a little apart from him on the rug. She did not answer him at first; and when she did so, she spoke very slowly. “We have been rash, I fear; and have done what we have done without sufficient thought.”

And now they treated him with that courteousness of manner which success in life always begets.

Being such in disposition and manners, and promoted to the episcopacy, John was led to conduct himself toward his clergy with more than proper superciliousness, designing to correct the morals of the clergy under him.

When Crocker attended Lady Amaldina’s wedding in his best coat and gloves he was still under suspension; but trusting to the conviction that after so long a reprieve capital punishment would not be carried out.

After a while he walked off to his wife’s room, still perturbed in spirit.

If he had ever loved any woman he loved her.

“Ah, there’s nothing like hanging of ‘em long enough, and watching of ‘em well. It’s that vinegar as done it;” and then they went seriously to work, and there was nothing more said of any importance until the eating was nearly over.

He remained five weeks at Humblethwaite, and showed himself willing to receive amusement from old Mrs. Crutchley and from young Mrs. Latheby.

How much better would it have been had he acceded to the man’s first demand as to restitution of a portion of the sum paid for Polyeuka, before the woman’s name had been brought into the matter at all?

And in the case of a house, we seek what is good for it, and we would not endure to see it decaying with age, or tottering, or hurt by storms: but for our soul we make no account: nay, even should we see its foundations rotting, or the fabric and the roof, we make no account of it.

But Light, he says, is not equal to Light, because the one he calls true, and the other unapproachable.

If, however, that unspeakable mystery did leak out, and become known to any man, and if any heresy affirms that it does itself follow the same, (then) either Paul must be charged with having betrayed the secret, or some other man must actually be shown to have been afterwards caught up into paradise, who had permission to speak out plainly what Paul was not allowed (even) to mutter.

And Rachel O’Mahony cried bitterly for hers.

As to myself I raised an humble word only in regard to the liquor, gently advising J.B. not to be too profuse!

Still Mr. Saul looked unhappy.

Him certainly!

At St. Louis, on the Mississippi, it reaches commonly to ninety degrees, and very frequently goes above that.

Those who examined him most closely (among whom, perhaps, Mr. Wilkinson was not included) might have observed that he was hardly as steady as he might have been in his likings and dislikings; that he made too little of the tasks which he learnt without trouble; and that, in fact, he was not sufficiently solicitous about anything.

I do not say that; but I affirm that He announced beforehand the future salvation for the human race through the blood of Christ.

Life of Constantine

For what shame is it to say, Give unto your Lord in His hunger: Put raiment on Him going about naked; Receive Him being a stranger?

That it might not be supposed that a promise so strongly expressed and confirmed was fulfilled in Solomon, as if he hoped for, yet did not find it, he says, But You have cast off, and have brought to nothing, O Lord.

It was past eleven before Lady Glencora arrived, and Burgo Fitzgerald had begun to think that his evil stars intended that he should never see her again.

In truth she had not sinned at all.

I will never allude to the place again,—unless, perhaps, you should come and stay with me too long when I am particularly anxious to get rid of you.

[Isaiah 58:3-9] You see then that fasting is certainly not considered by the Lord as a thing that is good in its own nature, because it becomes good and well-pleasing to God not by itself but by other works, and again from the surrounding circumstances it may be regarded as not merely vain but actually hateful, as the Lord says: When they fast I will not hear their prayers.

“I saw them yesterday, and she did not know it then; she may have heard it to-day.”

Harry Heathcote was as honest as the sun. Much as he disliked being cross-examined, he found himself compelled not only to say the exact truth, but the whole truth. “Certainly not. I barely saw a glimpse of a figure, and, till I spoke to Nokes just now, I almost doubted whether the lad could have distinguished him. I am sure he was right now.”

“And yet, M. Henri wasn’t wounded,” said Jean; “well it was wonderful. After all, General d’Elbée must be right; Providence must give a shake to a rebel’s arm, just as he’s firing, so as to send his bullet anywhere but where it’s meant to go.”

“With this object,” continued Daly, “I have already handed to Martin Kelly a notice of what your brother means to do; and I have another notice prepared in my pocket for his mother. The next step will be to swear the informations before a magistrate, and get the committals made out; Mrs Kelly and her son will then have to give bail for their appearance at the assizes.”

Poor member!

Tom Towers was as good, if not better, than his promise. On the following morning “The Jupiter,” spouting forth public opinion with sixty thousand loud clarions, did proclaim to the world that Mr. Slope was the fitting man for the vacant post. It was pleasant for Mr. Slope to read the following lines in the Barchester news-room, which he did within thirty minutes after the morning train from London had reached the city.

Now this is again a much greater honor than the first.

But, then, how few who were married complied with all those behests?

“And I don’t mean to give her up.”

Our dear Wamba disturbs his mistress in some devotional conversation with her chaplain, and the stern lady orders that the fool shall have three-dozen lashes. “I got you out of Front de Bœuf’s castle,” said poor Wamba, piteously, appealing to Sir Wilfrid of Ivanhoe, “and canst thou not save me from the lash?”

Their first conversation, as it took place in the carriage which bore them from Mr. Bertram’s door, has been given.

“Græcia capta ferum victorem cepit, et artes, Intulit agresti Latio.”

“No,” she said, “she could not, and would not, listen to that.

No sober person will decide against reason, no Christian against the Scriptures, no peaceable person against the church.

From Syria even unto Rome I fight with beasts: not that I am devoured by brute beasts, for these, as you know, by the will of God, spared Daniel, but by beasts in the shape of men, in whom the merciless wild beast himself lies hid, and pricks and wounds me day by day.

No one should ever go near the House of Commons who wishes to enjoy all this.

“The days are short and he’ll want all his time for the boating,” said Kate with a little pout.

What will they find by asking?

For he has a great rebuke when it is administered unsuspected.

“It would not have suited. There are so many things here that will want her eye.”

For He suffered to prepare freedom from suffering for those who suffer in Him, He descended that He might raise us up, He took on Him the trial of being born, that we might love Him Who is unbegotten, He went down to corruption, that corruption might put on immortality, He became weak for us, that we might rise with power, He descended to death, that He might bestow on us immortality, and give life to the dead.

We all hoped that he would refuse to come in without a seat in the Cabinet;—but that was too good to be true.

Mamma Tudor had implored and coaxed, and probably bribed Mrs. Richards to do something more than ‘take her son in and do for him’; and Mrs. Richards, as her first compliance with these requests, had kept the latchkey in her own pocket.

“He put his arm round me and kissed me, and,—and,—I cannot tell you all that he said. But it ended in this,—that if Chiltern can be made to go to Saulsby, fatted calves without stint will be killed. I shall do all I can to make him go; and so must you, Mr. Finn. Of course that silly affair in foreign parts is not to make any difference between you two.”

But You are the same, and Your years shall not fail.

The righteous Lord shall hew the necks of the sinners [Psalm 128:4] Which of us does not fix his eyes upon the earth, like the Publican, and say, Lord, be merciful unto me a sinner?

Then he further declares him victor, by saying, be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with good.

The one event no less than the other gives you boldness.

Hear wherefore with fear and trembling: for it is God that works in you both to will and to do, of His good pleasure.

Therefore we are not born for this purpose, that we may see those things which are created, but that we may contemplate, that is, behold with our mind, the Creator of all things Himself.

For, in respect to this infirmity, that little righteousness of man's is perfect according to its measure, when it understands even what it lacks.

As to any difference in the kind of murder, it is certainly the more cruel way to kill by drowning, or by exposure to cold and hunger and dogs.

Or if souls remain after death, what do they do or are they about to do respecting them?

Here Captain M’Gramm joined them. “Well, Mac,” said the doctor, “what news with the widow?”

Croll had some money saved.

For whenever He raised anyone from the dead He ordered that food should be given him to eat, lest the resurrection should be thought a delusion.

Chapter 18. David as an Example of Humility.

For as if a foot, they say, had been always from eternity in dust, there would always have been a print underneath it; and yet no one would doubt that this print was made by the pressure of the foot, nor that, though the one was made by the other, neither was prior to the other; so, they say, the world and the gods created in it have always been, their Creator always existing, and yet they were made.

Do you see, that if he had expressed it for the Gentiles, he would not have been shown to be doing this so purely for Christ's glory?

The end then, is one, but many things must be gone through for the sake of it.

Mr Cheesacre, though he could spend his money liberally when occasion required such spending, knew well the value of domestic economy.

For if men when they are honored, render honor in return, will not God much more, He who does this, even without being honored?

And he commanded them each one to stand apart, some towards their own rows, and others apart from them.

“May God bless you,” said Lady Laura.

I had suffered at Beverley, but I had suffered as a part of the work which I was desirous of doing, and I had gained my experience.

“The brain, you see, clean gone—and not a particle of coating left to the stomach; and yet what a struggle he makes—an interesting case, isn’t it?”

“Nobody will dare to wear a diamond at all next season,” said Lady Glencora. “As for my own, I sha’n’t think of having them out. I should always feel that I was being inspected.”

If everlasting were our virtue, we should not have slipped, should not have fallen into sin, we should not have deserved penal mortality.

2. Mission of Eusebius and Asterius.

She would not have allowed a dog to depart from her house at this season of the year, without suggesting to him that he had better take his Christmas bone in her yard.

To Him terrible, and to Him that takes away the spirit of princes [Psalm 75:12].

For the fact that the chief pontiff himself must not iterate marriage is, of course, a glory to monogamy.

She was his before; but now she was more than ever his.

For as he who comes into a house, is not part of the house, but is other than the house, so He who is created for the works, must be by nature other than the works.

Because, as light is born of light, and truth of truth, so Almighty is born of Almighty.

If anything has to be discussed I have learned to discuss it in church as those before me did.

It was all right.

But she had lived to acknowledge that such coercion might be proper, and was now prepared to use it in any shape in which it might be made available.

Early, therefore, on the morning of the election, he sauntered down the cross street in which hung out the sign of the Brown Bear, and, as he expected, found Mr Reddypalm near his own door.

It was the love of God that made the Lord a servant.

And in this also He fulfills the law; for what we fail in through weakness is supplied by His perfection, who is the Head, while we are His members.

You observe the gentleness of Paul, and how on all occasions he encourages the hearer, not bearing too hard upon him.

But on His looking away, evil arises spontaneously through human unbelief.

He soon found the paragraph alluding to himself in the “Pulpit,” and read it without a quiver in his face or the slightest change in his colour.

To Apellion.

He had had honour there, and friendship; he had recognised his master, and been recognised; all his wants, both of soul and body, had been supplied, and he had been a happy man.

Mrs. Crawley did undertake either that her husband should appear on the Thursday, or else that she would send over in the early part of the week and declare her inability to ensure his appearance.

He refers to Moses and the leprosy of Miriam, who, because she chided her brother on account of his wife, was stricken by the avenging hand of God.

For those in whom the Holy One dwells, He makes holy, even as the Good One makes men good.

If it is not deficient in moderation, upon what does He impose the measure of law?

Æolus himself could suspend, but it required an act on the part of the senior officer to dismiss,—or even to deprive the sinner of any part of his official emoluments.

Wherefore, since the Apostle Paul says in another place, that even Satan transforms himself into an angel of light, and that therefore it is not strange that his servants should assume the guise of ministers of righteousness: [2 Corinthians 11:13-15] if your correspondent did indeed see an angel teaching him error, and desiring to separate Christians from the Catholic unity, he has met with an angel of Satan transforming himself into an angel of light.

I think there is nothing in the world so pretty as the conscious little tricks of love played off by a girl towards the man she loves, when she has made up her mind boldly that all the world may know that she has given herself away to him.

As, for instance, when he says, He couched, he lay down as a lion; [Numbers 24:9] let us take out the indomitable and fearful part, not the brutality, nor any other of the things belonging to a lion.

She knew that her father was never later than five.

Now, if we knew nothing of what follows this outburst of his, and formed our opinion on simply hearing these words, we might suppose that we had been led to a wrong view of our opponents by the spread of report and by the asseveration of some suitable witnesses among the brethren.

“Who do you think was at our place yesterday?” said Ruby one evening to her lover.

And Moses said, I will now turn aside, and see this great sight, why the bush is not burnt.

Our hands are, of course, tied.

“If we are enemies, Captain Aylmer, I don’t know it.”

If a man mayn’t take the liberty with such a brute as that, when is he to take a liberty?” So had he expressed himself plaintively, endeavoring to excuse himself when on some occasion a race had been won by some outside horse which Captain Boodle had omitted to make safe in his betting-book.

Our High Priest endured all things.

For I am aware that you are full of goodness.

Chapter 3. The Newly Erected Statue at Antioch.

After him Barnabas, who also is called Matthias, who was substituted as an apostle in the place of Judas, began to exhort the people that they should not regard Jesus with hatred, nor speak evil of Him.

I am cross.

But to whom of men is virtue at hand, save to the mind of the wise?

“Let Thomas come to me before church.” And then they proceeded to prayers.

Chapter 4. Opinions of Pythagoras and Epicurus

“Faix I may.”

How else shall any wreck of the Republic be preserved?

Indeed there was no measure in her giving,—unless when the idea came upon her that the recipient of her favours was trading on them.

And because, when the other races were divided by their own peculiar languages, his family preserved that language which is not unreasonably believed to have been the common language of the race, it was on this account thenceforth named Hebrew.

For I see that, having tried all things as far as we could, we found nothing to remain, which could rightly be called false, except what either feigns itself to be what it is not, or, to include all, tends to be and is not.

Moreover he draws his consolation, not from things future, but again from the past, which indeed would the rather persuade them.

neither to David, who prayed concerning such as these, and sang, 'All those that make them are like them, and all those who put their trust in them. '

But if God is here the Saviour of the unbelieving, much more is He of the faithful hereafter.

“He has talked her into it.”

Why should Lefroy wish to go to St. Louis?

I should have done as he did.” But, as she came to this, she shuddered, thinking of the Lady Alexandrina.

To be angry on such a subject would be futile, foolish, and almost indecorous.

Mrs. Dall is a strong advocate for the increased employment of women, and I, with great deference, disagree with her.

‘Linda, dear Linda,’ she said, embracing her sister convulsively.

It had probably been brought from the bed of the stream or from the other side of the river.

Goodbye, Lily.” Then he left her, returning to the house, and she continued her walk, wandering down among the trees in the shrubbery, and not showing herself for the next half hour.

Chapter 30. Christians possess the true righteousness

Let us hear the Father, when the baptism of Jesus Christ was accomplished, speaking, as often, concerning His Only-begotten, in order to save us from being misled by His visible body into a failure to recognise Him as the Son.

Neither by the blood, he says, of goats and calves (All things are changed) but by His own Blood (he says) He entered in once for all into the Holy Place. See thus he called Heaven. Once for all (he says) He entered into the Holy Place, having obtained eternal redemption. And this [expression] having obtained, was [expressive] of things very difficult, and that are beyond expectation, how by one entering in, He obtained everlasting redemption.

“It is very much to me, though. I wish, Lady George, you could bring yourself to tell me the truth.” He paused, but she did not speak. “If it were as I fear, you must know how much I am implicated. I would not for the world that you should think I am behaving badly.”

Then, having smitten and overthrown him, he took the enemy's sword, and with it cut off his head.

But of all British bishops we commit the charge to your Fraternity, that the unlearned may be taught, the weak strengthened by persuasion, the perverse corrected by authority.

The immutability of God the Word is plainly proclaimed by the most wise Evangelist, for after saying the Word was made flesh and dwelt among us, he immediately adds, And we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only-begotten of the Father, full of grace and truth.

“I am no lawyer. I can’t say how it might have been. But I may have my doubts if I like. I have always understood that Lady Lovel, as you choose to call her, was never Lord Lovel’s wife. For twenty years I have been sure of it, and I can’t change so quickly as some other people.”

“Now I’ll look for this child,” said Uncle Reginald, in his cheeriest voice as he left Tom alone in the room.

But there was much more of passion than of thought within her breast.

That the new warden could not be a kinder man they all knew; that he would be a less friendly one most suspected; and then came the bitter information that, from the moment of Mr Harding’s departure, the twopence a day, his own peculiar gift, must of necessity be withdrawn.

Therefore, my dearly beloved brother, put away all your prejudice.

Let us collect ourselves, I exhort you: there are daily wars, submersions [of towns], destructions innumerable all around us, and on every side the wrath of God is enclosing us as in a net.

The first, Constantinus, who bore his father's name, obtained this distinction about the tenth year of his reign.

But after a while she called to mind all that she knew of great efforts successfully made in opposition to almost overwhelming difficulties.

On the other hand His essential existence before the ages, and His ceaseless abiding with Son and Father, cannot be contemplated without requiring titles expressive of eternal conjunction.

“He is willing to undertake the charge, I say. We shall then still live together, and may hope to be able to maintain a God-fearing household, in which there may be as little opening to the temptations of the world as may be found in any well-ordered house.”

“Lily, my love,” said Mrs Dale, when they were all together in her bedroom, “it seems to me that you are very hard upon Mr Crosbie.”

A ruler shall not depart from Judah, nor a leader from his thighs, until what is in store for him shall come, and he is the expectation of the nations.

“But our brains are not knocked out yet,” said Butler Cornbury.

The ‘Legio Martia’ has blunted the edge of his rage, and the ‘Legio Quarta’ has attacked him.

It is sad to say so, but I fear—I fear that such was the case.

Knowing then these things, let us flee luxury, let us study moderation, that we may both enjoy health of body, and having delivered our soul from all infirmity, may attain unto the good things to come, by the grace and love towards man of our Lord Jesus Christ, to whom be glory and might forever and ever. Amen.

For had He showed Himself, the Jews would have seen and known Him; but had they known Him, they would never have crucified the Lord of Glory.

For great indeed is the labor of this achievement, and well near surpassing nature itself, and this is well known to such as have had these crowns vouchsafed to them.

If the number of the Trinity also offends you, as if it were not connected in the simple Unity, I ask you how it is possible for a Being who is merely and absolutely One and Singular, to speak in plural phrase, saying, Let us make man in our own image, and after our own likeness; [Genesis 1:26] whereas He ought to have said, Let me make man in my own image, and after my own likeness, as being a unique and singular Being?

“What, Owen?”

And then, since these wonders were doing invisibly, others took place visibly, showing that He was of a truth the Only-Begotten Son of God, the Lord of all creation.

Old Brattle, of course, won’t say a word.

To men of this sort, God says, Woe unto you that are wise in your own eyes, and prudent in your own sight.

[Then, after saying that this discussion of but a few sentences of the Gospel have run to four volumes, he goes on:]

But could she marry Captain Aylmer at all in her present mood?

Clench your nail;—that’s what I say; be it even so.

“Were there women killed?”

The Bozzlian mind would have regarded any such suggestion as the product of a green softness, the possession of which would have made him quite unfit for his profession.

I do not think that it becomes either of us to be afraid of it.

[1 Thessalonians 5:19] And It is quenched when It has not oil, when there is any violent gust of wind, when It is cramped and confined, (for so fire is quenched,) and It is cramped by worldly cares, and quenched by evil desires.

She had a certain brightness of eye when she was awakened to enthusiasm, and she knew how to make the best of herself.

“I don’t see why it should be over. I’m told she has got her own money.” Then Nidderdale described to his father Melmotte’s behaviour in the House on the preceding evening. “What the devil does that matter?” said the old man. “You’re not going to marry the man himself.”

More than once she was half-minded to speak openly to the Duke, to tell him all that Silverbridge had said to her and all that he had not said, and to ask the father’s help in scheming against that rival.

And some indeed fully concurred in and subscribed to the sentiments expressed in this letter, while others did the reverse.

So also with this phrase of his manner of likeness; it is devoid of any vestige of meaning, if we fix our attention on the examples familiarly known to us.

Or else, by this silence respecting Him did He concede that service might be rendered to Him, since it was to Himself alone and to mammon that He said service could not be (simultaneously) rendered?

“And you know he means it now?”

Were they not drunken, whose heart had been changed?

“Just explain it all to Lady Anna. I think it will be clear then.”

“My dear,” she said, “you have probably not yet had time to think of the marriage which I have proposed to you.”

Moses: Just as all young men are not alike in fervour of spirit nor equally instructed in learning and good morals, so too we cannot find that all old men are equally perfect and excellent.

In doing so, he was of course much reviled.

They think also that they have a compendious refutation of Prophets, Evangelists and Apostles alike, in their assertion that the Son was born within time.

And indeed prayer is a great good, salutary, and preservative of our souls.

Ralph re-entered the park, and hurried across to the house as though he were afraid that he would be too late to receive the heir; but there had been no arrival, nor had there come any message from the other Ralph.

By George, yes!

Or dishonour?

[Jeremiah 15:19] What can be equal to this in point of honour or security?

He is perished and is corrupted, and is now in Hades, awaiting the inevitable punishment.

What then is the meaning of the letter kills?

And lastly, we often find in holy Scripture the one inserted and the other understood, as it is written: I will enter into Your house in whole burnt-offerings, that is, with whole burnt-offerings; and in another place: He brought them forth in silver and gold, that is, with silver and gold.

Why had he not taken Colonel Osborne by the throat, instead of going to a lowborn, vile, mercenary spy for assistance?

I gathered my manifold memories, from all quarters: and I collected my spirit to marvel, at that illustrious one.— 5.

[From Luke 17:7-8] Do we return thanks to our servants, for waiting upon us?

They that are under instruction, are not for ever learning; for then they are not taught.

He could measure the whole thing at its worth,—Courcy Castle with its privileges, Lady Dumbello, Lady Clandidlem, and the whole of it.

This capability of dispensing with a generally untractable element of support was felt to be a great comfort.

Now, if this be the case, it seems to me that this very decay and falling away of the understanding is not the same in all, but that this conversion into a soul is carried to a greater or less degree in different instances, and that certain understandings retain something even of their former vigour, and others again either nothing or a very small amount.

For Isaac said 'Become' and 'I have made,' signifying neither the coming into being nor the essence of Jacob (for after thirty years and more from his birth he said this); but his authority over his brother, which came to pass subsequently.

“Surely not. I would not be so presumptuous as to name my own wishes in my prayers to the Creator.”

“Suppose we leave at half-past ten.”

Then, being in suspense between joy and fear, I acknowledge that I am altogether unworthy to sit upon such a seat, and if I did not hesitate to cause an occasion of offense to the people, without doubt I should not even venture to sit upon the stool itself.

She was almost proud of his vices, and had taken delight in hearing of doings which if not vicious of themselves had been ruinous from their extravagance.

“Certainly it is so. Certainly I have.”

A. I do not dispute it.

There are also ten books which relate to the honour paid by them to their gods, and containing the Egyptian worship; as that relating to sacrifices, first-fruits, hymns, prayers, processions, festivals, and the like.

Mr. Lincoln was elected President of the United States in the autumn of 1860, and any steps taken by him or his party toward a peaceable solution of the difficulties which broke out immediately on his election must have been taken before he entered upon his office.

Pride extinguishes charity: therefore humility strengthens charity; charity extinguishes sins.

The greater part of men do and devise all things with a view to ingratiate themselves with rulers, and with those who are greater than themselves; and they account it a great thing, and think themselves happy, if they can obtain that object.

We sent up our name, and in a few minutes were ushered into a sitting-room up two flights of stairs.

Answer, then, concerning the merits of infants, why some should depart from their bodies baptized, others not baptized, and by the merits of their parents neither possess nor fail of so excellent a gift that they should become sons of God from sons of men, by no deserving of their parents, by no deservings of their own.

Truly if Christians they are, they are poor; in comparison with the riches celestial for which they hope, all their gold they count for sand.

Send to us the payments of Xenodochius of Via Nova to the amount you have told us of, since you have them by you. But give something, according to your discretion, to the agent whom you have deputed in the same patrimony.

“Well,—never mind. Some people fall on their feet like cats; but you are one of those who never fall at all. Others tumble about in the most unfortunate way, without any great fault of their own. Think of that poor Lady Laura.”

Afterwards, however, after enumerating to Noah the subjection (to him) of 'all beasts of the earth, and fowls of the heaven, and things moving on earth, and the fish of the sea, and every creeping thing,' He says, 'They shall be to you for food: just like grassy vegetables have I given (them) you universally: but flesh in the blood of its own soul shall you not eat.'

Vos autem non legistis, quod protoplasto Deus dixit: 'Eritis duo in carne una?

“One word, Mr. Finn,” said Lady Laura, hardly looking him in the face and yet making an effort to do so. “I wish you to forget what I said to you at Loughlinter.”

From these words, moreover, they endeavour notwithstanding to make good the declaration in Leviticus: The life of all flesh is the blood thereof.

And the water under the earth, which is in nature indeed one, but which flows through all the paths of earth, and is divided into many parts, they called Osiris, as being cut in pieces.

But when they came to set up the pillars, Divine Providence interposed for the confirmation of the inhabitants in the faith; for one of the columns remained immovable, and no means were found capable of moving it; but their ropes broke and their machinery fell to pieces; at length the workmen gave up all further effort and departed.

Women do not faint under such shocks.

In short, it was all ruin, roguery, and wretchedness.

Like wax that melts, they shall be carried away; the fire has fallen upon them and they have not seen the sun.

I changed my publisher, but did not change my fortune.

I will give you a letter.” He gave her the fatal letter, and she came to us.

The law might give the police no power over her; but was there not a power in the hands of those armed men whom she saw around her on every side, and who were seldom countrymen of her own, over and above the law?

She might surely as well be called feudal England, or chivalrous England.

[Proverbs 15:17] This well reminds us of what was said above, that herbs are not love, but that our meals are to be taken with love; and in these the medium state is good.

My jurisdiction in it is over.

“There’s no knowing about that,” said Mr. Hart.

Now, to show that there He received no honor, hear Him say, And thou, Capernaum, which art exalted unto heaven, shall be brought down to hell.

And further, when God proclaimed the goodness of light, it was not in regard to the charm of the eye but as a provision for future advantage, because at that time there were as yet no eyes to judge of its beauty.

Then this most gentle teacher going to the rest of the clergy, who, as I have said, had come in to him to speak in behalf of Arius, spoke to them his last consoling words, and such as were necessary; then pouring forth his prayers to God, and bidding them adieu, he dismissed them all in peace.

She was a queen in the house, a queen among her busy toils; and she liked being a queen, and liked being busy.

The Marquis had been very bad, and had had one and another doctor with him almost continually; but Mrs. Walker could not take upon herself to say that “it was dangerous.” She thought it was “in’ard.” Mrs. Walkers always do think that it is “in’ard” when there is nothing palpable outward.

But if you have any brother after the flesh, if he should perpetrate ten thousand evil deeds, you labor to conceal him, and accountest yourself also to partake of the shame, when he is disgraced; but as to your spiritual brother, when you ought to free him from calumny, thou dost rather encompass him with ten thousand charges against him?

Marie, indeed, had a grand plan of her own, with reference to that settled income; but then Marie might be mistaken,—or she might be lying.

There was indeed no restriction placed upon her at all.

He did love her—not perhaps as she loved him.

“He doesn’t wish it. How can a man wish it?”

You see where the difficulty is.

The Diatessaron (Section 53)

They have consequently poured out their insults on my head, and allege that I preach two sons.

And since no one is evil by nature, but whoever is evil is evil by vice, he who lives according to God ought to cherish towards evil men a perfect hatred, so that he shall neither hate the man because of his vice, nor love the vice because of the man, but hate the vice and love the man.

(Tell me not that it was God's dispensation, for this belongs not to the devil, but His wisdom; for the present let the disposition of that evil one be enquired into.)

“Yes, and therefore I will not be there to vex his sight. I will tell you the truth, Patience. I can never be in that house again till Frank Gresham is a married man, or till I am about to be a married woman. I do not think they have treated me well, but I will not treat them ill.”

Those who were compelled by necessities of nature, as is wont to be the case in a crowd, to visit the public place, when they entered, spoke to one another to avoid the seat, and the place was shunned afterwards, because Arius had there received the punishment of his impiety.

She went on into the house, merely touching her father’s arm, as she passed him, and hurried up to her own room.

At that time his household gods consisted of a wife and two daughters;—but the wife had died before the time came at which she could have taken on herself the name of Lady Underwood.

You will destroy all who not only work what You hate, but also speak leasing; in holding out before them false righteousness, and not confessing their sins in penitence.

Then shall the captive bring to you many children; from a Moabitess she shall become an Israelitish woman.

To the People of Madaura, My Lords Worthy of Praise, and Brethren Most Beloved, Augustine Sends Greeting, in Reply to the Letter Received by the Hands of Brother Florentinus.

As the war was still pursued with vigor, the Romans found it necessary to send an embassy to Mania to solicit peace.

Firmly believe, therefore, that He produced it wholly out of nothing, and then you have found the knowledge of God, by believing that He possesses such mighty power.

The fornicator and the covetous man become earthen vessels.

“I know that, Sir Thomas.”

John 11:14

She was an Irish woman, and when seen on shore, in her natural state, and with all her wits about her, was by no means without attraction.

Our Lord Jesus Christ erewhile became Man, but by the many He was unknown.

We believe both, for we believe the sacred narrative in which both are contained.

Madame Brudo. They’re all the same to me, child. I have never regarded the shape of a man, since the day poor Brudo died.

If, however, a good frosty air is to the soul so indispensable a treasure, then beyond the German and the Scythian tribes, and the Alpine and the Argæan heights, nobody ought ever to be born!

“I suppose Septimus can leave his things here?”

This he expresses in another place, If we sowed unto you spiritual things, is it a great matter if we shall reap your carnal things?

And now in his trouble they were very true to him.

And what about the Dog, now terrestrial, now aquatic, now celestial?

A stranger who had never heard of Bishop Colenso would have imagined that he had entered a simple church in which the service was pleasantly performed,—all completed including the sermon within an hour and a half,—and would have had his special attention only called to the two facts that one of the clergymen wore lawn sleeves, and that the other was so singularly like Charles Dickens as to make him expect to hear the tones of that wonderful voice when ever a verse of the Bible was commenced.

Mr. Neefit certainly was not a delicate man.

As to time the doctor would say nothing certain; but he had declared that it might occur any day.

Although, therefore, the apostle is here arguing broadly, and with great and lasting conflict maintaining grace against those who were boasting in the law, yet we do come upon a few matters which pertain to the matter in hand.

Even Ayala was gone from her!

But if you eliminate the idea of a beginning from time, He is also without beginning: for the creator of times cannot be subject to time.

For as long as they remained firm and stable, of that which they had done contrary to reason, of this indulgence was accorded them.

He has none, and is falsely attacked.

But we, walking along the royal road which lies between the two extremes, which is the seat of the virtues, as the authorities say, believe in the Father, the Son and the Holy Ghost, of one Substance and glory; in Whom also baptism has its perfection, both nominally and really you know who hast been initiated!

“You will promise that?”

In like manner, also, when we read that God is within or without, we certainly do not either enclose God within anybody or separate Him from anybody, but weighing these things in a deep and ineffable estimation, we comprehend the hiddenness of the divine nature.

What then has enabled it to last so long without rotting, though buried in the damp earth in which [its original] wood rots, except this same fire which consumes all things?

They are very wild and picturesque, being thickly wooded, but so deep that from a little distance the wood can hardly be seen.

Is it because He declared that He was sent by the only true King to be your soul's guardian.

Then it was that Sir Hugh had made a diversion by calling to his wife. “I wish you’d stay with us, and not go off alone with one person in particular, in that way.” Lady Clavering looked round and immediately saw that things were unpleasant. “Archie,” she said, “will you ring for tea?” And Archie did ring. The tea was brought, and a cup was taken all round, almost in silence.

“But if she loves me! Oh, sir, she did love me once. If she loves me, should I leave her to think, as time goes on, that I have forgotten her? What chance can she have if I do not interfere to let her know that I am true to her?”

She told Clara, with a very serious air, that she was delighted, bidding Clara, at the same time, to be very cautious, as men were so fickle, and as Conway, though the best fellow in the world, was not, perhaps, altogether free from that common vice of men.

But we ought rather to believe, that the intellectual mind is so formed in its nature as to see those things, which by the disposition of the Creator are subjoined to things intelligible in a natural order, by a sort of incorporeal light of an unique kind; as the eye of the flesh sees things adjacent to itself in this bodily light, of which light it is made to be receptive, and adapted to it.

Crocker was in every way distasteful to him.

And this we shall succeed in doing when, while we walk in the flesh, we are no longer at war with the Lord according to the flesh, proclaiming in deed and actions the truth of that saying of the blessed Apostle Our conversation is in heaven.

For the lessons of the truth are like this; and the actual result bears witness thereto.

It was still dark night, and the violent rain was pattering against the glass, and the damp came in through the crevices, and the wind blew bitterly upon her; and then as she turned a little to ask her lover to find some comfort for her, some mitigation of her pain, she perceived that he was asleep.

This sin shall not be remitted to you even until you die.

For as the mad dog destroys all that he touches, infecting them with the unseen madness, so also the hidden evil of adultery, though it be not known, effects the cutting off of posterity.

Mrs. Baxter thought that there was nothing “to fright” Mrs. Grantly, and she wasn’t sure that she should have written at all only that Dick was bound to go over to Plumstead with the wool; but as Dick was going, Mrs. Baxter thought it proper to send her duty, and to say that to her humble way of thinking perhaps it might be best that Mr. Harding shouldn’t go alone to the cathedral every morning.

For the Son of God, he says, is born of a Virgin, not chiefly allied to the flesh alone, but generated in the soul which is the medium between the flesh and God.

Our Lord has hired us for His vineyard.

Of old, after the flood, it came to pass that Noah and his sons were left for seed of the human race.

There were around Greshamsbury very many unmarried ladies—I believe there generally are so round most such villages.

For as His own Subsistence is by His pleasure, so also the Son, being proper to His Essence, is not without His pleasure.

Do we when we say, for example, thirty days have gone by, mention the nights also; do we not under the very term days include the nights also?

She observed, or thought that she observed, that her father was more silent with her,—perhaps less tender than he had been since the day on which her husband had perished.

And I ask this all the more earnestly because, as you know, I dictated with great rapidity to my amanuensis; and how difficult the task is, the sacred records testify; for the old flavour is not preserved in the Greek version by the Seventy.

“I consider that to be actual wickedness,—wickedness against your own father.”

These people were not allowed to pass the lines either of one army or of the other; or if they did so pass, they were not allowed to return to their homes.

“Thank ye; if I take anything, it’ll be a glass of punch. But as we’ve business to talk of, may-be I’d better keep my head clear.”

Upsel. I am amazed, and beyond my wont put past all sober thinking. What, not mine! Not be my wife, my friend, my soul, my all! Hearts then are naught, and nothing can be trusted.

As for expense, you know,”—then she turned to Mrs. Dosett with a smile,—”that of course would be our affair.

To the beloved brother John, Innocent

Therefore, when Trollope suddenly winks at us and reminds us that he is telling us an arbitrary thing, we are startled and shocked in quite the same way as if Macaulay or Motley were to drop the historic mask and intimate that William of Orange was a myth or the Duke of Alva an invention.

“Well?” said Archie.

It would have been so wrong.

“Thank ye, Captain; and I’m to congratulate you too. I hear you’re promoted, and going away from us—very glad for one, sorry for t’other. Take a bit of cold pie; d——n it, I forgot—the pie’s all gone, but there’s cold mutton and plenty of sherry. Lyddy, give Captain Ussher a glass of sherry.”

A right feeling of duty avoids arbiters even in the division of an inheritance.

In becoming the son-in-law of a millionaire he would receive the honest congratulations of all his friends,—on condition that he received some comfortable fraction out of the millions, but he knew well that he would subject himself to their ridicule were he to take the girl and lose the plunder.

Since then it is evident, that many are to judge with the Lord, but that others are to be judged, not however on equality, but according to their deserts; He will come with all His Angels, [Matthew 25:31] when before Him shall be gathered all nations, and among all the Angels are to be reckoned those that have been made so perfect, that sitting upon twelve thrones they judge the twelve tribes of Israel.

‘Who is its owner? Old Mr. Caldigate is its owner.’

“I told you you should not be here,—because of her and because of me. And I tell you again, I hate her. Do you think I can hear you speak of her as though she were the only woman you had ever seen without feeling it? Did you ever swear that you loved any one else?”

He had got into the place over the area gate, had opened the front door from within, and then the robbery had been discovered.

And if any spared him on account of the name of Roman citizenship, yet he did not on that account refrain from offering an object they might strike at, since he wished by his patience to cure of so great perversity those whom he saw honouring in him what belonged to the left members rather than the right.

Great are the evils theatres cause to cities, great indeed, and we do not even know that they are great.

Such a banqueter is God's guest: these are the feasts that feed the angels, these are the tables which the martyrs make.

Her maids too made signs to me to offer no resistance, and to accept her answer at once, lest she should be thrown back into despondency, if the truth were laid bare.

M. Cato, the Censor, had a wife Actoria Paula, a woman of low origin, fond of drink, violent, and (who would believe it?)

“Is he engaged to marry you?”

But if they are punished, they are punished that you may not suppose their sins are unavenged.

“I heard what you said,” continued Mrs. Ray; “and I don’t see why you should be speaking against Rachel in that way. The young man isn’t your son.”

That has yet to come with me.” “You have come abroad for consolation.

A. I now grasp that; but what good is to come of it, I do not yet see.

For often, as was said above, men of corrupt minds, reprobate concerning the truth, both cast out devils and perform the greatest miracles in the name of the Lord.

For I do not see how such a walking and conversation of God can be understood literally, except He appeared as a man.

You have Christ's.

“Philology,” said he; “or as a profession, perhaps literature.

“I know it is very bad,” said Aunt Letty. “But there will always be a remnant left. The Lord will not utterly desert us.” And then she took her departure, leaving Mrs. Townsend with the conviction that the land to which her friend was going was one in which the light of the gospel no longer shone in its purity.

The Major with much pluck had carried on his operations in opposition to the wishes of the resident members of the hunt.

Moreover, in giving advice, He said, 'Let your yea be yea, and your nay nay; for what is more than these is of the evil one.'

Our two sisters will, it is trusted, be happy.

But it is a thing impossible that all those in Gaul who are branded with this disgrace should at their Nativities have had Mercury posited with Venus in the house of Saturn, and within the limits of Mars, and in the signs of the zodiac to the west.

“If you will listen to me for a moment it will be better. No anger between you and me, let it arise as it might, should be allowed to interfere with the happiness of her whom I suppose we both love better than all the rest of the world put together.”

In truth, he had simply thrown it away.

“You had better go to your room,” said the aunt. Then Ayala, lifting her head as high as she knew how, walked towards the door. “You had better leave that letter with me.” Ayala considered the matter for a moment, and then handed the letter a second time to her aunt. It could be nothing to her who saw the letter. She did not want it. Having thus given it up she stalked off in silent disdain and went to her chamber.

There shall be a time when you shall know all things clearly. He speaks of the time of the Resurrection. Then,

“Why mine?”

She could not very well make her appearance at Plaistow Hall, and say that she had come there for shelter and succour.

He knew enough of the world already to feel that the hope was vain.

So that nobody can doubt that our very homes lie open to these diabolical spirits, who beset their human prey with their fantasies not only in their chapels but also in their chambers.

The whips, nevertheless, cantered on to the corner of the covert, and Tony put in his hounds with a cheery voice.

I have done them no evil, I have hurt them not at all.

You in your Preface to the [Περὶ ᾿Αρχῶν] speak of me as your brother and call me your most eloquent colleague, and proclaim my soundness in the faith.

“But it’s the same thing,” said Amelia. “Hearts is divided. Hearts that have been joined together ought never to be divided; ought they?” And then she hung upon his arm just as they got to the drawing-room door.

And yet it is necessary that rulers should be feared by their subjects, when they find that God is not feared by them; so that those who have no dread of divine judgments may at any rate, through human dread, be afraid to sin.

He afterward defended a woman of Arretium in the spirit of antagonism to Sulla.

Sir Thomas, as he looked up at the young man, leaning back in his armchair and holding his glass half full of wine in his hand, could not but tell himself that the greater was the pity.

We have heard a good deal of the incompetence of young women for certain work at which they have been tried.

He hardly spoke a word as he proceeded on his business, feeling that they upon whom he had to depend were sufficiently instructed, if only they would be sufficiently energetic.

The women of Gergovia, thinking that their town is taken also, leaning over the walls, implore mercy from the Romans, and beg that they may not be treated as have the women of Avaricum.

Then the Lamb is slain, and act and word are sealed with the Precious Blood; that is, habit and action, the sideposts of our doors; I mean, of course, of the movements of mind and opinion, which are rightly opened and closed by contemplation, since there is a limit even to thoughts.

Lady Fawn was to say the word, and on the following morning she was closeted with Lucy.

Now without knowledge there can be no making like; and knowledge is not got without lessons.

For although their preaching was accompanied with the power of working miracles, the miracles would have been ascribed to magic, as some even now venture to insinuate, unless the apostles had shown that the authority of the prophets was in their favor.

And any persistent tradesman did get it.

Indeed, Mr. Brown was under great obligations to Sir Peregrine, and Sir Peregrine had promised to use his influence.

Chapter 10. Concerning Faith.

And Hosea delivered it to Joiel the prophet.

“That will be as he pleases.”

Love still is lord of all.

For this he had lifted up the stone, in order that from this too they might receive the proof.

“Yes, Frank, your duty. It all depends on you now. Of course you know that your father owes a great deal of money.”

[John 15:19] And then she turned to the Lord Himself, saying, You know the secrets of the heart, and all this has come upon us; yet have we not forgotten you, neither have we dealt falsely in your covenant; our heart is not turned back.

Now when He had washed their feet, and taken His garments, and sat down, He said, Know ye what I have done unto you?

And why cannot He cause the body to rise again, and live for ever?

They were nervous enough, and in some moods frightened.

These curious designs she recounts, saying, The bow of the mighty is made weak, and the weak are girded with strength.

The emotion is increased by the associations of the place, and love is excited both towards those who are our examples, and towards Him by whose help we may follow such examples.

And Bunce knew it,—after his fashion.

He that sits in the heavens shall laugh: the Lord shall have them in derision.

In the next place, he has taken occasion of the names of the sorcerers Simon and Barjesus to vent against us what insults he thought fit.

Since then He had shown forth many tokens of human nature, He did not seem likely to speak so as to be believed, if He had said, Think ye that I cannot destroy them.

And he attained the top of the ladder, and turned towards me, and said to me, 'Perpetua, I am waiting for you; but be careful that the dragon do not bite you.'

For, behold, in iniquities I was conceived [Psalm 50:5].

For as one who is well known and approved is sought out in peace, so must one who is unknown, when brought forward, be established by violence.

And thus you shall greatly rejoice, because you have now lent a small favour; I mean the kindness of good words.

It was not by any means a charming house, having but few of those luxuries and elegancies which have been added of late years to newly-built London residences.

“Where’s George?” said John Vavasor. “Has he come back with you, or are we to wait for him?”

He had been enticed over to England almost with a promise of office, and he was sure that he had done nothing which deserved punishment, or even censure.

“Why should it be a nuisance for me? Cannot a woman understand her duties as well as a man?”

I do not understand them to say, that God's grace so co-operates with man, that his abstinence from sin is due, not to 'him that wills, nor to him that runs, but to God that shows mercy.'

What then is the fact? Were all these sayings a kind of fraud: a stage play and fables? Nay, who that has any understanding would say so? I say not, John, who leaped in the womb, who before his own birth proclaimed Him, the citizen of the wilderness, the exhibitor of the conversation of angels; but even though he were one of the common sort, and of them that are utterly outcast, he would not have hesitated, after so many testimonies, both on his own part and on the part of others.

and that such an insult should be offered to the deities as not even we men endure, if any one applies and turns our haines to trifling objects?

And it was for this cause, let me add, that although they that committed revolt in the wilderness, those in the company of Judas, and of Theudas, [Acts 5:36-37] had been all of them slain no great while before, yet they were not the more backward to go out there.

For though he leaves them for whom he will, he keeps them not for whom he will.

Of necessity must you who lovest your brother, love Love itself: but Love is God: therefore of necessity must he love God, whoso loves his brother.

1 Corinthians 15:56

During the whole of the long journey home there was hardly a word spoken.

He also was sprung from the seven sects among the people, like Simon, from whom came the Simonians, and Cleobius, from whom came the Cleobians, and Dositheus, from whom came the Dositheans, and Gorthæus, from whom came the Goratheni, and Masbotheus, from whom came the Masbothæans.

The hound suffers you not to surpass him.

But you are far worse than Pagans, for they worship things which exist, though they should not be worshipped: for idols have an existence, though for salvation they are nought.

The truth is very well, but he would have liked it better had the truth come to him by slower degrees. When his aunt had told him to marry Clara Amedroz, he had been at once reconciled to the order by a feeling on his own part that the conquest of Clara would not be too facile. She was a woman of value, not to be snapped up easily,—or by any one. So he had thought then; but he began to fancy now that he had been wrong in that opinion.

When wars come, and pestilence, and famine; when the people of a land are worse than decimated, and the living hardly able to bury the dead, I cannot coincide with those who would deprecate God’s wrath by prayers.

The men helped us along the slippery rocks, and took us by the hand over and over again.

It will be to me as though I were passing through a grave to a new world.

I assured her that my own Clara was the last person to be remiss in such a matter, and reminded her that young ladies are seldom very careful in their mode of answering letters.

“That’s what Mason, the man down in Yorkshire, is thinking of. There’s no doubt of course about that partnership deed?”

If any of you has crucified the Christ by blasphemous words; if any of you in ignorance has denied Him before men; if any by wicked works has caused the doctrine to be blasphemed; let him repent and be of good hope, for the same grace is present even now.

Suppose that we choose that course which the apostle does not wish but to which he only consents against his will, allowing those who seek lower ends to have their own way; in this case we carry out not the apostle's wish but our own.

But the doctor who attended him thought otherwise, as did also Mrs. Grantly, and as did Mrs. Baxter, and as also did Posy.

Wherefore I beseech you to apply the same reason which you think you have for receiving the few to the salvation of the whole world.

Was Miss Lowther at home?

“I want nothing for myself, Lady Milborough.”

“There was never anything in that, Mrs. Broughton.”

Sensation is that faculty of the soul whereby material objects can be apprehended or discriminated. And the sensoria are the organs or members through which sensations are conveyed. And the objects of sense are the things that come within the province of sensation. And lastly, the subject of sense is the living animal which possesses the faculty of sensation. Now there are five senses, and likewise five organs of sense.

Mrs. Sturt had very decided views on the matter.

The matter ended in a party much as usual being collected at Matching about the middle of October,—Telemachus having spent the early part of the autumn with Mentor at Long Royston.

The Serjeant, to give him his due, cared as little as most men for the peerage.

He calls little ones not them that are really little, but them that are so esteemed by the multitude, the poor, the objects of contempt, the unknown (for how should he be little who is equal in value to the whole world; how should he be little, who is dear to God?); but them who in the imagination of the multitude are so esteemed.

“It was your doing to surround me with these things, and your reproach is not just. Nay, it is not manly.”

8. And the two elders saw her. These things the rulers of the Jews wish now to expunge from the book, and assert that these things did not happen in Babylon, because they are ashamed of what was done then by the elders.

Chapter 13. On First and Second Repentance

They are all the result of your bitter vengeance, and though I must say that she in sort deserves it, I think that you might have spared her.

“Mr. Monk.”

And they have failed to perceive that the Word has become Flesh, not by reason of an addition to the Godhead, but in order that the flesh may rise again.

They are not so frequent behind counters in the shops, and are rarely seen as servants in hotels.

Look at other matters.

If you were fainting in the labors, upon the promised wages be strong.

The heretics confess all this, and perish.

And if the word which we now dispense to you keeps your weak flesh standing so long, what will be the effect of that joy?

For exactly did He know the end of the mystery of the œconomy Who for this very reason came among us, Who of His own accord took our nature, Who emptied Himself.

Die and Mr. Prendergast were certainly going about, still drawing all coverts far and near, lest their fox might not have been fairly run to his last earth.

He, therefore, who has God resting in him will not desire anything else.

But with his coins and his flags and his railway he seems to have lost that power of inducing his Dutchmen to fight which the Dutch leaders before his LORD CARNARVON TO MR. BURGERS.

Expounding again the law to that generation which followed those who were slain in the wilderness, he published Deuteronomy; not as giving to them a different law from that which had been appointed for their fathers, but as recapitulating this latter, in order that they, by hearing what had happened to their fathers, might fear God with their whole heart.

The old man within well knew the sign, and, getting out of bed, drew the wooden bolt, and admitted the three into the cabin.

Through care it becomes incapable of being lost.

It requires no more thinking with me, Lucinda.

Chapter 1. When the Romans are pressed by the Barbarians, Mavia sends Assistance, and some of the Populace effect a Victory. Gratian commands each to believeas he wishes.

They are a unity: an absolute Existence having all things in perfect communion with that absolute Existence, from Whom He is.

That Major Biffin had a snug little income over and above that derived from his profession was a fact that had been very well ascertained.

He was heard through his thirty minutes of eloquence with mute attention and open ears, but with angry eyes, which glared round from one enraged parson to another, with widespread nostrils from which already burst forth fumes of indignation, and with many shufflings of the feet and uneasy motions of the body, which betokened minds disturbed, and hearts not at peace with all the world.

We should be sorry to disturb them at their trade, but we cannot but think that that concourse of fishmongers’ carts at one place is unnecessary.

For the women occupy and maintain themselves by working in wool, and hand over the cloth to the brethren, from whom, in return, they get what they need for food.

And while he thus exaggerates what relates to the tribune, see how he extenuates the part of the accusers themselves.

But to them from whom the kingdom is taken away, of course the life which exists in the kingdom is not permitted either.

Chapter 33.— In What Way Man Should Be Enjoyed.

It appeared that in the event of Mr. Scarborough having died, as was expected, in the course of the early summer, and of Captain Scarborough succeeding to the property in the accustomed manner, Mr. Juniper would have been one of those who would have come forward with a small claim upon the estate.

“Lady Baldock is blooming,” said Lord Fawn; “certainly blooming;—that is, if evergreens may be said to bloom.”

“She’s always ghost,” said Marian.

And then she gave out various little statements as having been made in that letter.

What is His way wherein we have desired, That we may know on earth Your way?

For this reason they do all things with authority, even as Elias did.

But lust of the world has its beginning from choice of the will, its progress from enjoyableness of pleasure, its confirmation from the chain of custom, whereas the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts, not verily from ourselves, but by the Holy Spirit which is given unto us.

The largeness of the divine bounty has granted me to become a martyr of His precious cross and joyful resurrection, giving to my devotion the sweet and pleasant odour of His passion, that I should be made meet to pour out unto Him the offering of my blood.

Of this evil, nevertheless, virtuous marriage makes good use for the sake of the benefit of the begetting of children.

He arrived in the middle of the day,—not timing his return at all after the usual manner of Government clerks, who generally manage to reach the metropolis not more than half an hour before the moment at which they are bound to show themselves in their seats.

R. N.

The rustic Trullo was quite sufficient for her.

XX. If any man denies that, as the Lord has taught us, the Paraclete is different from the Son; for He said, And the Father shall send you another Comforter, whom I shall ask [John 14:16]: let him be anathema.

It is not probable that the fifteen elected members will combine themselves together to create a difficulty.

That was the tenor of Sir Peter’s replies,—and they were read in any light, according to the idiosyncracies of the reader.

He had already made up his mind that he would quarrel with the countess also, very shortly after his marriage; indeed, that he would separate himself from the whole family if it were possible.

It is therefore exactly in the confines, and has been chosen as the site of the new government capital very much for this reason.

As the smoke cleared away, and he could look about him, he saw that he was close to an uneven, irregular line of Federal soldiers. But there was still a chance, and he had turned for a rush, with his pistol ready for use in his hand, when he found himself confronted by a Federal Officer. The pistol was already raised, and his finger was on the trigger, when he saw that the man before him was his brother.

“I don’t know about that, sir. A man may do a deal worse than ‘The Dragon of Wantly.’ Them as goes away to better themselves, often worses themselves, as I call it. I’ve seen a good deal of that.”

In other words, the bee makes honey, not because it has learned this by reason and reflection, but because it is instructed by nature.

He had no conscience in the matter.

For things offered to idols, and what dies of itself, to mention nothing else, are regarded by you all as great defilement.

“It will be no good for you to hang on about Bolton Street, off and on, as though she were a girl of seventeen,” he said.

[1 Timothy 2:5] Christ is unlike a sinner, for He is ever holy; and He is like a sinner, for "God sent His Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, that by sin He might condemn sin in the flesh."

“They is both free enough with their money, father,” said the prudent daughter.

“I do not want to make any mischief,” said Crosbie.

Behold, therefore, in that they were thus engaged in conflict with their enemies, they passed not the time of their flight unprofitably, nor while they were persecuted, did they forget the welfare of others: but as being ministers of the good word, they grudged not to communicate it to all men; so that even while they fled, they preached the Gospel, and gave warning of the wickedness of those who conspired against them, and confirmed the faithful by their exhortations.

When, however, the unhappy are not permitted to die, then, if I may so speak, death itself dies not; and where pain without intermission afflicts the soul, and never comes to an end, corruption itself is not completed.

It would be impossible in a short sketch such as this to give any individual interest to these struggles of the natives against their invaders.

The man who hunts and likes it, either takes a small hurting seat away from the comforts of his own home, or he locates himself miserably at an inn, or he undergoes the purgatory of daily journeys up and down from London, doing that for his hunting which no consideration of money-making would induce him to do for his business.

Is not He who causes the sun to rise on the evil and the good, and sends rain on the just and on the unjust, the same who also breaks off the natural branches, and engrafts contrary to nature the wild olive tree?

While Peter was thus speaking, the multitudes, as if they had been called by some one, entered into the place where Peter was.

He was told that Lord Alfred was allowed to do it to a small extent; and that Melmotte was doing it to an enormous extent.

But this weakness with which we contend, with alternating failure and progress, even to the death of the body, and which is of great importance as to what it can overcome in us, shall be consumed by another regeneration, of which the Lord says, In the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit on the throne of His glory, you also shall sit upon twelve thrones, [Matthew 19:28] etc.

The Marquis made no allusion to this, but went on. “If that be done,—and I must say that I think no such step would be taken by the bench at Westbury,—whither will the young man betake himself?”

Still I would not on this account cast a slight upon a praiseworthy class of Christians—those, namely, who live together in cities, quite apart from common life.

Nora said something about Marshall and Snellgrove, and tried to make believe that she was very anxious for her sister’s answer.

The true wisdom of man is piety.

I am sure that he did not wrong me in that he paid me nothing.

For in each of these cases there is a different kind of anxiety, and the fear is greater than the anxiety.

Of Churchill Smith I asked no question.

When her mother told her that Lord Alfred was coming, having been instructed to do so by Sir Harry; and hinted, with a caress and a kiss, and a soft whisper, that Lord Alfred was one of whom Sir Harry approved greatly, and that if further approval could be bestowed Sir Harry would not be displeased, Emily as she returned her mother’s embrace, felt that she had a possession of her own with which neither father nor mother might be allowed to interfere.

“Any arrangements that you choose as to settlements or the like of that, could of course be made.” Mr. Prong when he began, or rather when he made up his mind to begin, had determined that he would use all his best power of language in pressing his suit; but the work had been so hard that his fine language had got itself lost in the struggle.

The next day was Thursday,—one of Mrs Stumfold’s Thursdays,—and in the course of the morning Miss Baker came to her, supposing that, as a matter of course, she would go to the meeting.

There is one death, sin, for it is the destruction of the soul.

Of beard, he had very little, carrying the smallest possible grey whiskers, which hardly fell below the points of his ears.

Shall not be what?

Who can say?

If remission of sins is there conferred by the sacredness of baptism, the sins return again through obstinate perseverance in heresy or schism; and therefore such men must needs return to the peace of the Catholic Church, that they may cease to be heretics and schismatics, and deserve that those sins which had returned on them should be cleansed away by love working in the bond of unity.

For at this time the words of one Helpidius, speaking and disputing face to face against the said Manichæans, had begun to move me even at Carthage, in that he brought forth things from the Scriptures not easily withstood, to which their answer appeared to me feeble.

And she didn’t say a word to him to encourage him till those she had a right to look to had encouraged him too.

He had done this because she had expressed a wish that these people should be kindly treated,—had done it without a syllable spoken to her or to any one,—had taken trouble, sending all the way to Grassington for Mrs. Mucklewort’s beef!

Your Nature is like a silent lamb in its sweetness, of which if a man is to lay hold, he lifts it in a crucial form by its ears, as it was on Golgotha. He cast out abundantly all His gleams upon them that looked upon Him.

And this came from a man to whom she had once thought that she might bring herself to give her hand and her heart, and her money also.

“I don’t like Lopez, you know,” Mr. Wharton said to John Fletcher afterwards. “How would it be possible that I should like such a man? But there can be no good got by complaints. It is not what your mother suffers, or what even I may suffer,—or worse again, what Arthur may suffer, that makes the sadness of all this. What will be her life? That is the question. And it is too near me, too important to me, for the endurance either of scorn or pity. I was glad that you asked your mother to be silent.”

It is to gird up their slothful mind, and to impress them with deeper fear, and to ratify the laws enacted by himself, and to restrain their perpetual fluctuations.

In defiance of the most recent laws, certain impious rites were celebrated on the Pagan feast-day, the calends of June, no one interfering to forbid them, and with such unbounded effrontery that a most insolent multitude passed along the street in which the church is situated, and went on dancing in front of the building—an outrage which was never committed even in the time of Julian.

I pass over those manuscripts which are associated with the names of Lucian and Hesychius, and the authority of which is perversely maintained by a handful of disputatious persons.

And along with these you will investigate when the Saviour heals of Himself and unasked by any one, as for example, the paralytic; for these cures, when compared with one another for this very purpose, and examined together, will exhibit to him who is able to hear the wisdom of God hidden in a mystery, [1 Corinthians 2:7] many dogmas concerning the different diseases of souls, as well as the method of their healing.

For do not, says he, because you have heard that He will abolish all rule, and authority and power, to wit, the devil, and the bands of demons, (many as there are,) and the multitudes of unbelievers, and the tyranny of death, and all evils: do not thou fear as though His strength was exhausted.

And she settled matters with Young.

But when the old man urged him, for the third time, to take that pernicious draught with his cheese, he angrily demanded a glass of beer.

The vessel is in port.

He knew, however, that there was much in his feelings of which he could not but be ashamed.

There was nothing he disliked so much as being on bad terms with those around him, and with none more so than with his grandson.

Let us, therefore, turn now to the delivering of the Kingdom, and see whether it means a surrender of rule, whether the Son by delivering ceases to possess that which He delivers to the Father.

“What news of your patient, Dr Fillgrave?” said our doctor, still seated on his sweating horse, and putting his hand lightly to his hat.

But it is always lawful for the pure to touch the pure.

He loomed upon us very tall, although his legs were crooked, and his back bent.

For the first principle of existing things is One, creating through the Son and perfecting through the Spirit.

Maximian advised the unsuspecting Constantine not to lead all his troops against them, and he said that a few soldiers would suffice to subdue those barbarians.

I could have wished him to transfer divine things to us.

His lady friends had been so true to him!

But he knows also that the dealing was not with him, nor even with his brother, and he will be prepared to swear that he gave value for both.

“Captain Aylmer won’t keep it in his own hands?”

“Still it should not be accepted from the old Church-and-State party.”

[John 1:33] And John bore witness of Him, and said: I saw the Spirit descending from heaven like a dove and abiding upon Him.

Around the table upon the pavement there stood perhaps thirty or forty persons, most of them children, and the remainder girls perhaps of Nina’s age.

And similarly is it true what the same preacher added: the Word became flesh and dwelt in us: and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only-begotten of the Father.

“I have thought of you always,—every hour.” And so he swore to her that she was as much to him as he could possibly be to her. She hung on his arm as she went down to the cottage, and believed herself to be the happiest and most fortunate girl in Ireland. As yet no touch of the sorrows of love had fallen upon her.

What mean pedagogues, masters, the birch, the strap, the cane, the schooling which Scripture says must be given a child, beating him on the sides lest he wax stubborn, [Sirach 30:12] and it be hardly possible or not possible at all to subdue him?

As souls are separately given to infants as they are born, so to peoples the genius of their destiny.

For Mrs. Holt the assertion had been quite enthusiastic.

Cicero has told us of his ideas of the Godhead, and has given us his theory as to those deeds by which a man may hope to achieve the heaven in which that God will reward with everlasting life those who have deserved such bliss.

That the one was immeasurably above the other in all those respects which in his estimation tended towards female perfection, he knew to be true enough; but the fruit which he had been forbidden to gather hung no higher on the social tree than that other fruit which he had been specially invited to pluck and garner.

Had her aunt since her coming given her orders as to her mode of life,—enjoined, for instance, additional church attendances, or desired her to perform menial services in the house,—she would have obeyed, from custom, without a word.

Don’t you know, Mrs. Dosett, it will do her good to be with her young friend for a few days.” Mrs. Dosett had not succeeded in her remonstrances when Sir Thomas Tringle was shown into the room, and then the Marchesa took her leave.

“You won’t be angry if I ask?”

And then Frank, in voluble language, which he hardly, however, had quite under his command, told his father all that had passed between him and Mary.

“My Clarissa must not say that nobody cares for her. Has any person ever been false to you but he? Is not your sister true to you?”

Altogether it seems to be very sad,—though not quite so sad as before.

How our fourth conflict is against the sin of anger, and how many evils this passion produces.

He was at once shown into the drawing-room, where he found the two sisters, and Mrs. Trevelyan, as soon as she saw him, understood the purpose of his coming.

He would make one struggle more; he would first go down to the widow, and claim his sister, as a poor simple young woman, inveigled away from her natural guardian; and, if this were unsuccessful, as he felt pretty sure it would be, he would take proceedings to prove her a lunatic.

“Father,” said Herbert, in a cheerful everyday voice, as though he had nothing special to communicate, “there is a man in a gig out there. He says he wants to see you.”

A man is born in a stated time; and a particular place must be the receptacle of his life; without it it is not in nature that he should have any concrete substance: whence also it is inevitable that sections of time are found enveloping his life; there is a Before, and With, and After him.

After that the visit was soon brought to an end, and the three ladies from the rectory returned across the park to their house.

The opposition he means is this, that the Gentiles believe in a single principle, whereas the Manichæans believe also in the principle of the race of darkness.

That man may himself delight in the Lord's way, his steps are ordered by the Lord Himself.

You have denied your Lord, and crucified the Son of your Lord.— 6.

“What the deuce have I done?” said he to himself as he walked on—”I didn’t tell her not to go up to the house.

Now the gas company at Exeter was the better investment of the two, and was considered to be subject to less uncertainty than the cottages.

But evening, which long ago sent the sun to the west, imposes silence upon me.

In like manner, albeit He calls the remaining number of the heathens righteous, it does not follow that He shows them to be Christians; dealing as He is with Jews, and at that very moment refuting them, because they were indignant at the hope of the heathens.

What, then, shall we point to?

He gave himself a ransom, he says, how then was He delivered up by the Father?

Could it be possible that Fanny Robarts, her own friend Fanny, would be so untrue to her as to lend any assistance to such a marriage as this; as not to use all her power in preventing it?

He certainly spoke no word which would give her a right to think that he himself was attached to her.

Thady was warmly attached to his sister; he had had no one else really to love; he was too sullen at his prospects, too gloomy from his situation, to have chosen for himself any loved one on whom to expend his heart; he was of a disposition too saturnine, though an Irishman, to go and look for love when it did not fall in his way, and all that he had to give he gave to his sister.

For although, in the diseases and wounds of the body, there are some which no medical skill can cure, yet we hold that in the mind there is no evil so strong that it may not be overcome by the Supreme Word and God.

‘Then he may lump it.

She did not feel quite assured of her fate at the end of those six months, but she believed that there would come to her a residence in a sort of outer garden to that sweet Elysium in which she was to pass her life.

And all these things the Holy Spirit teaches us, who speaks through Moses and the rest of the prophets, so that the writings which belong to us godly people are more ancient, yea, and are shown to be more truthful, than all writers and poets.

[Jeremiah 22:14] But not yet is this loftier than my faith, and than the heavens to which I am being borne onwards.

For an object, which has by birth an existence of its own, cannot be regarded as a property; a property is necessarily inherent in some being and can have no independent existence.

In spite of his bold resolution with reference to his eye, and his intention not to be debarred from the pleasures of society by the marks of the late combat, he had not, since that occurrence, frequented his club very closely; and though London was now again becoming fairly full, he did not find himself going out so much as had been his wont.

While the shamelessness of men is such, that many care not to pay that respect to the religious feelings of their minds, which they do to the pleasure of their ears.

So then let us give thanks also for the confidence of others [toward God].

Of this city which served as an image, and of that free city it typified, Paul writes to the Galatians in these terms: Tell me, you that desire to be under the law, do ye not hear the law?

Now we in the first place wrote the first two books of our history following Rufinus; but in writing our history from the third to the seventh, some facts we collected from Rufinus, others from different authors, and some from the narration of individuals still living.

Pelagius, however, answered, that he did not annul the diversity of gifts, but declared that God gives to the man who has proved himself worthy to receive them, all graces, even as He gave the Apostle Paul.

[ Wisdom Hath Builded Her House. ]

[Ephesians 6:12] Have you observed the wrestler?

[Genesis 1:31] But what is vain?

If she will not consent by the end of this month I shall go over to you, and we must contrive to be married at Avranches.

For how came we to that mountain?

Put yourself in Mr Whittlestaff’s case; would you wish the girl to whom you were engaged to say kind words behind your back to some other man?

[2 Corinthians 7:1] Zelo enim vos zelo Dei; despondi enim vos uni viro, virginem castam exhibere Christo.

For he says, Withdraw from every brother that walks disorderly [2 Thessalonians 3:6]: and in speaking to Timothy about the coppersmith, he gives him the like advice, and says, Of whom also beware.

Since therefore it behooves us to be good not of necessity but voluntarily, it behooved God to give to the soul free will.

[Romans 7:23] Hence comes that cry of his: O wretched man that I am!

Falsehood has become so much a matter of course with American newspapers that it has almost ceased to be falsehood.

From that time: what time? After John was cast into prison. And wherefore did He not preach to them from the beginning? Indeed what occasion for John at all, when the witness of His works was proclaiming Him?

“You oughtn’t to begrudge me one run of luck, when I’ve lost so much,” said Miles, who, since he began, had destroyed paper counters of his own making, supposed to represent considerably above £1,000, and had also,—which was of infinitely greater concern to him,—received an amount of ready money which was quite a godsend to him.

This he did early on the next morning and was shown into the bishop’s study, in which he found both his lordship and Mrs. Proudie.

For both by His walking on the sea, and by His commanding another to do so, and preserving him in jeopardy; their faith was henceforth great.

I find that your Fraternity is greatly distressed on account of being forbidden by the censure of reason to wear the pallium in litanies.

Whose was the loss on both sides?

“But she has quarrelled with him, Lady Chiltern.”

Indeed is it not evidently unfair in you, when David and Paul say 'He created,' then indeed not to understand it of the essence and the generation, but the renewal; yet, when the Lord says 'He created' to number His essence with the creatures?

Chapter I. The Squire of Allington

It is not so with God.

This Judge is the Lord, to Whom all things are possible, the Promiser of eternal blessings, Judge of righteous and of wicked.

But these appearances were indications of that Man whose reality it was announced by mystic predictions would be assumed from the stock of preceding patriarchs.

But at last there came a grand day, on which the man of business was to come out hunting himself.

For easy is it to avoid open enmities, easy is it to turn aside from an enemy declared and manifest, while iniquity is in his lips as well as his heart; he is a troublesome enemy, he is secret, he is with difficulty avoided, who bears good things in his lips, while in his heart he conceals evil things.

Augusta Mildmay was blushing too, but the blush on her face consisted in two red spots beneath the eyes.

Again, Sion is as it were the country of the Jews; the true Sion is the Church of Christians.

You are right, my son; it is the heart that God regards; and where that is in earnest, his mercy will dispense with the outward symbols of our religion; but still it is our especial duty to preserve to his use everything which the piety of former ages has sanctified; to part willingly with nothing which appertains in any way to His church.

“Well, there isn’t much shame about them generally.”

Rufinus, as we see by his Preface to the former book, considered it unsatisfactory to expound the Blessing upon Judah apart from those on his brethren. Paulinus therefore, taking the occasion of their common friend Cerealis' journey to Rome, sends the following letter to induce Rufinus to expound the remaining Benedictions.

Even Protagoras likewise, and Apollodorus, and Chrysippus, entertain this same view, so that (our friend) Asclepiades may go in quest of his goats bleating without a heart, and hunt his flies without their heads; and let all those (worthies), too, who have predetermined the character of the human soul from the condition of brute animals, be quite sure that it is themselves rather who are alive in a heartless and brainless state.

How was this marriage to be brought about if the young people were not allowed to see each other?

The barrister shook his head.

She had married him, and all idea of love had flown from her heart.

For while following after the bodily Law, he has not attained to the spiritual Law.

Mrs. Bones had been injured, after some ship fashion, by Mrs. Crompton, and would have made herself pleasant.

And this we shall show better if we bring forward what was done by Abner.

“A great friend. I’ll tell you what I want you to do. You must have some place found for him.”

“Oh;—on account of her health. And did you go to the play with her?”

Did not David come to the throne at thirty years of age, and Solomon, when he had grown to be a young man?

It is suitable, therefore, for women who serve Christ to adopt simplicity.

You will answer me what you think of this question also.

“Yes;—that is, he knows him, and is interested about him. Alice, shall we go home? Oh! Mr Grey, you must not ask any questions. He,—Mr Palliser, will tell you everything when he sees you,—that is, if there is anything to be told.” Then they all went home, and soon separated for the night. “Of course I shall sit up for him,” said Lady Glencora to Alice, “but I will do it in my own room. You can tell Mr Grey, if you like.” But Alice told nothing to Mr Grey, nor did Mr Grey ask any questions.

“Does it not? Just a little ‘yes,’ or ‘no.’ A ‘no’ is said when a ‘yes’ is meant, and then there comes no second chance, and what a change that may be from bright hopes to desolation! Or, worse again, a ‘yes’ is said when a ‘no’ should be said,—when the speaker knows that it should be ‘no.’ What a difference that ‘no’ makes! When one thinks of it, one wonders that a woman should ever say anything but ‘no.’“

“Do you suppose then that men never sit still in the morning?” said Augustus.

To the end, for the servant of the Lord, David himself.

As your Grace’s wife, I should be easy no longer;—nor would your Grace.

“You’d better go and live among them, if that’s your way of thinking,” said Miss Todd.

Chapter XVIII. Cousin Henry Goes to Carmarthen

Even for his wickedness you ought to feel grateful to him: even should he be evil after receiving ten thousand kindnesses.

It was very hard to put Mr. Gotobed down; or it might be more correctly said,—as there was no effort to put him down,—that it was not often that he failed in coming to the surface.

That was the beginning and the end of the Dean’s comforting.

For do not speak to me of those who by nature are good and orderly, (this is not virtue,) but tell me of the man who can endure the exceeding violence of his passions and (yet) be temperate.

If those had not stirred the question, these things would not have been spoken, nor what follows.

“Not odd at all.”

The righteous, says it, shall chasten me in mercy, and reprove me; but let not the oil of sinners make fat my head.

He felt that it would hardly be wise to attempt any entire concealment of the nature of his catastrophe, as some of the circumstances would assuredly become known.

A day or two after his engagement, Ralph did write his letter to Sir Thomas, and found when the moment came that the task was difficult. But he wrote it. The thing had to be done, and there was nothing to be gained by postponing it.

But blest air through the clouds send Anticyra

But still they went on, and the men carried their burden without complaining.

In like manner, between John and a heretic there is a great difference, as of opposites; and between the baptism of John and the baptism of Christ which a heretic administers there is no contrariety, but there is a great difference.

Lo, they had received a cup wherewith they were satiated.

In this way He bade others teach.

Whence is it that throughout life we continually fail (in every encounter)?

But, dearest, it is different when we talk of marriage.

“The fact is I must have a bit of land at Baslehurst for building. Tappitt will go on fighting; and as I don’t mean to be beaten, I’ll have a place of my own there.”

Then You will not march forth in our powers: against them You will not show Yourself, You will not show Your power, such as You have shown in David, in Moses, in Joshua the son of Nun, when to their might the Gentiles yielded, and when the slaughter had been ended, and the great laying waste repaired, into the land which Thou promised Thou leddest in Your people.

“Well, Hopkins, what is it? Mamma has got a headache.”

That can only be done by wary walking, and is hardly consistent with a wife and children.

“And Hugh must be told,” said Mrs. Stanbury.

And again, Ezekiel makes this an accusation against them, that they did not grieve for (the afflicted).

And when she had grouped her bunches properly she carried the jar from one part of the room to another, backwards and forwards, trying the effect of the colours, as though her mind was quite intent upon her flowers, and was for the moment wholly unoccupied with any other subject.

Since Lucius had become master of the house he had presented her with such a vehicle, and also with the pony and harness complete; but as yet she had never used it, being afraid, as she said to him with a smile, of appearing ambitious before the stern citizens of Hamworth.

[Leviticus 21:7, 13] He gave commandment therefore that the priests of the church should not claim this liberty, that they should not take two wives or three together, but that they should each have but one wife at one time.

For after these things he enjoyed greater confidence inasmuch as he had contended in a more severe contest.

Do you see how on every occasion He denies not the affinity by nature, but adds that by virtue?

[Acts 26:2-3] But had he thought it his duty to insult the ruler, he would have spoiled everything.

“I heard you were there, Mr. Morton, and so I thought I would come to you. You didn’t see Mary?”

There is therefore no doubt that, according to the Hebrew and Christian canonical Scriptures, there were many giants before the deluge, and that these were citizens of the earthly society of men, and that the sons of God, who were according to the flesh the sons of Seth, sunk into this community when they forsook righteousness.

‘They will all have sworn falsely, and then somebody must have obtained the postmark surreptitiously. There must have been a regular plant. The stamp must have been made up and dated on purpose,—so as to give a false date. Some official in the Sydney post-office must have been employed.’

“Can I help what that thief of an editor puts into his paper? Flogged! Huffle Scuffle told me I was a felon, but that wasn’t half so bad as this fellow;” and Johnny kicked the newspaper across the room.

“If he doesn’t have too much to eat,—which disagrees with him,—he does. He’s always better down at Glenbogie because he’s out of doors a good deal, and then he can digest things.”

a day for single days.

By the grace of God none of those things dismayed me.

“And you wish to have it published?”

The collector at Nazianzus tried to do this in the case of a Deacon named Euthalius, in whose behalf Gregory wrote the following letter to Amphilochius, who was at the time one of the principal magistrates of the province.

If the Italian Countess were to succeed in proving that the Earl had a wife living when he married Miss Murray,—which I feel sure he had not,—then we should come forward again with our endeavours to show that that first wife had died since,—as the Earl himself undoubtedly declared more than once.

There was this other route by the Serapiqui river, and by Greytown.

Nineteen among them were “Consulares,” or past-Consuls.

He has God (to look to), the Foster-father even of ravens, the Rearer even of flowers.

What god or hero, exposed, as our Saviour was, to so sore a conflict, has raised the trophy of victory over every foe?

“Not absolutely necessary.”

Imagine to yourselves fire as father, its shining as son; see, we have found the coevals.

Something of the sublimity of the transcendent, something of the mysery of the unfathomable, something of the brightness of the celestial, will have attached itself to you, and you will all but think that you too ought to live to be sublime and revel in mingled light and mystery.

He was an older man by ten years than either of his partners, but yet Grundle’s eldest son Abraham was older than Eva when Crasweller lent his money to the firm.

Nidderdale, whose sense and temper were alike good, saw the thing quite in the proper light.

He fills your letterbox and forces upon you the necessity of some discrimination before you destroy his notice.

“I will. I do. If there has been anything amiss, it shall not be looked on again as amiss. But there has been only one thing amiss.”

For that city received his blood as it dropped, but you were honoured with his remains, you enjoyed his episcopate, they enjoyed his martyrdom.

“And why don’t you fix it?”

Heortasius was deposed because he had been ordained bishop of Sardis without the sanction of the bishops of Lydia.

They said he was worthy of death.

Remember therefore from whence you are fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto you quickly, and will remove your candlestick out of his place, unless you repent.

Lady Albury, who was now in London, was determined that Ayala’s marriage should take place from her own house; and, as Aunt Margaret and Uncle Reginald had consented, that matter was considered as settled.

They were taught by the whole tenor of their lives to submit,—unless they could conquer by underhand unseen means, by little arts, by coaxing, and by tears.

Nevertheless Lady Banbury was, as he knew well, a person whose opinion about young people was supposed to be very good.

And not from this only are they shown to be all corrupt, but because when He had not yet come, nor exhibited any action, they prevent Him with their accusations without waiting the end of the matter.

“It was all Sir Thomas’s doing.” It was thus that Lady Tringle endeavoured to console herself when discussing the matter with her daughters.

But consider whether he was injuring others: He who loves iniquity, he says, hates his own soul.

It comes more within the scope of a woman’s mind, than that of a man’s, to think closely and decide sharply on such a matter.

I mean to do it;—and what the Dean will think when I use a little plain language about his daughter.

[Isaiah 57:i] When does this more frequently happen than in the persecution of His saints?

“Oh,—was that you?”

“Well, Sowerby, I can’t see it.”

But if you do not believe his writings, how shall you believe My words?

But he answered them that it was no small proof of strength to wrest the club of Hercules from his hands.

Austria, as I take it, is succumbing to monetary difficulties, not because she has been extravagant, but because she has been slow at progress; because it has been the work of her rulers to repress rather than encourage the energies of her people; because she does not improve, utilize, and create.

But you will not cease to love, because He whom you see is such an One as offends you not by any weariness: He both satisfies you, and satisfies you not.

In 1819 the Kafirs were driven back behind the Keiskamma River; where is the region now called British Kafraria,- which was then allowed to be Kafirs’ land.

“Meaning for the best is trash. I don’t know that I did mean it for the best. While we were at the cottage we paid our way and were honest. What is it people say of us now?”

But as to this fellow, Manes by name, who has at present burst boastfully forth upon us from the province of Persia, and between whom and me disputation has now for the second time been stirred, I shall tell you about his lineage, and that, too, in all fullness; and I shall also show you most lucidly the source from width his doctrine has descended.

“If we could get papa to ask him, I think he would change his mind,” said Lady Laura.

Which dwelt first in your grandmother Lois, and your mother Eunice.

“Ask him the Curé’s name, Chapeau,” said Marie: “we will go there and tell him, who we are.’

What a word has escaped the fence of your teeth, or how could you dare to say such a thing, if I too may be somewhat daring?

Some said that as Mr Alf had a large share in the newspaper, and as its success was now an established fact, he himself intended to retire from the laborious position which he filled, and was therefore free to go into Parliament.

“I explained to him after that,” said Phineas, “that I should not return. I shall go over to Ireland. I have a deal of hard reading to do, and I can get through it there without interruption.”

“And I grieved, because I thought that she was not worthy of you.”

For who comforts you save the Lord?

The Logos alone of this God is from God himself; wherefore also the Logos is God, being the substance of God.

What would a man be unless he took the place which his personal strength has obtained for him?

“Beautifully pretty.”

“I only hope you won’t have a fever,” she said.

“What geese you girls are!—you are always thinking of love, and weddings, and orange-blossoms.”

Wherever arms can be prepared, or gunpowder; where clothes or blankets fit for soldiers can be made, or tents or standards, or things appertaining in any way to warfare, there trade was still brisk.

This man on account of his purity and gentleness, though in age the junior of most, was preferred to the office of the diaconate by the blessed Paphnutius, presbyter in the same desert: for the blessed Paphnutius was so delighted with his excellent qualities, that, as he knew that he was his equal in virtue and grace of life, he was anxious also to make him his equal in the order of the priesthood.

And if he call them divisions, marvel not.

And then Mrs. Thomas wanted money,—more money than she had a right to want in accordance with the terms of their mutual agreement.

He dressed himself in ten minutes, and joined the party as they had finished their fish.

He has quoted the following words of our Teacher: For my part I should be inclined to say that this title of the Ungenerate, however fitting it may seem to express our ideas, yet, as nowhere found in Scripture and as forming the alphabet of Eunomius' blasphemy, may very well be suppressed, when we have the word Father meaning the same thing; for One who essentially and alone is Father comes from none else; and that which comes from none else is equivalent to the Ungenerate.

‘And wear -’ Miss Greenmantle had intended to inquire whether it was Polly’s purpose to go about in her second-rate clothes, but had hesitated, not quite liking to ask the question.

“Very well. Then I have only to tell you what I must do. Of course, I shall remain here. You cannot turn me out of your house, or refuse me a seat at your table.”

“Nobody loves me now,” she said, talking at him over her shoulder, which was turned to him.

Thus she was so tossed to and fro between a prospect of glorious prosperity for her child on one side, and the fear of terrible misfortune for her child on the other, that she was altogether unable to give any salutary advice.

By no means, Lord.

[Hebrews 4:9] There remains therefore a rest for the people of God.

Why had John Eames, at the very moment when he should have been doing his best to drive from her breast the memory of past follies,—when he would have striven to do so had he really been earnest in his suit,—why at such a moment had he allowed himself to correspond in terms of affection with such a woman as this M. D.?

“Have I offended her?”

“Pretty well, I thank you,” said Peter, as he was hurrying by.

I mean to do my duty, and I shall expect that my private secretary will do his.

Any warmth on her part would be in itself a reproach to him.

For therefore is it that we also press forward, knowing both the shortness and the suitableness of the time.

First then, being Himself God, He endured to suffer these things at the hands of men; that after this, we men, when we suffer such things at the hands of men for His sake, might not be ashamed.

“Oh, sir, that is generous!” Then he got up and took the old man’s hands. “Some day, when you are at liberty, I hope that you will allow me to explain to you the exact state of my affairs. When I wrote to you from Como I told you that I would wish to do so. You do not object?”

“I shan’t mind that, sir, in the least,” said Eames, brightening up a little under this view of the case.

Wherefore I entreat you to follow us with much diligence, so as to enter into the very ocean of the things written, with Christ for our guide at this our entering in.

In the first place, when we compare ourselves to them we must remember that we live in a tea-cup, and they in a washing-tub.

But there was and always has been this peculiar good point about the giants, that they are never too proud to follow in the footsteps of the gods.

[John 1:3] And David says: By the Word of the Lord were the heavens established.

And Maximinus himself, in reliance upon whose favor Urbanus was formerly so arrogantly insolent, as if he loved him exceedingly for his deeds against us, was set as a harsh and most severe judge in this same Cæsarea to pronounce sentence of death against him, for the great disgrace of the crimes of which he was convicted.

‘And that nobody should have been got to say that they weren’t man and wife.’

He cannot.

As in the Epistle to the Thessalonians, Let us not therefore sleep, as do others; but let us watch and be sober: for they who sleep, sleep in the night; and they who are drunken, are drunken in the night: but let us who are of the day, be sober.

And now he heard the advocate declare, without knowing on what ground the declaration was grounded, that the trial must be postponed, or that the jury must be instructed to acquit him.

“And if they did I don’t see what good it would do to us as to finding for us the money that we want.”

Dr. Wortle said that the little boy had better be taken away and the bill paid at once.

For when they saw the miracle that was wrought, thinking themselves unworthy of that deliverance, they were brought lower in humility.

At Portray no man was more voluble, no man more self-confident, no man more equal to his daily occupations than Andy Gowran; but the unaccustomed clothes, and the journey to London, and the town houses overcame him, and for a while almost silenced him.

That which had made so bold both Michel and his guest had not been allowed to have any more extended or more deleterious effect.

How Captain Ussher Succeeded

The following is the reason Varro gives when he confesses that he had written first concerning human things, and afterwards of divine things, because these divine things were instituted by men:— As the painter is before the painted tablet, the mason before the edifice, so states are before those things which are instituted by states.

III. He wishes to know the effect of his letter to the Empress Eudocia.

Confession and glorious deeds are His work [Psalm 110:3].

Who, therefore, denies that future things as yet are not?

For if you had believed Moses, says He, ye would have believed Me.

As it was, the evening found her and Alice together entering the park-gate at Matching, in Lady Glencora’s carriage.

There is this life of the body, there is the life of sin, as he himself elsewhere says, But if we died to sin, how shall we any longer live therein?

For nobody would feel surprise, and nobody would be perplexed, although there should arise rival predictions of a diverse deity, which should also mutually differ about modes of conduct, having a prior difference about the authorities upon which they were based.

So, taking the gospel which he himself composed, he went to Egypt and first preaching Christ at Alexandria he formed a church so admirable in doctrine and continence of living that he constrained all followers of Christ to his example.

She of course became aware at once that Mr. Lopez must be informed that she could not do for him what she had suggested that she would do.

Wherefore having apprehended Peter, they cast him into prison; and after dispersing the rest of the clergy, they placed Lucius in the episcopal chair.

These words were uttered then, but now they have been realized.

When a family of three persons has to live upon an income of three hundred a year, and, nevertheless, makes some pretence of going into society, it has to be very mindful of small details, even though that family may consist only of ladies.

Wherefore in all things it behooved Him to be made like His brethren, that He might be a merciful and faithful High Priest in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people.

It is for your infatuation to define this, since you are so anxious about His Generation too; but to us it will be a very great thing, if ever, even in the future, we learn this, when this darkness and dulness is done away for us, as He has promised Who cannot lie.

There are times in one’s life in which the absence of all savour seems to be sufficient for life in this world.

No one, I think, can doubt that the founders of the great American Commonwealth made an error in omitting to provide some means for the gradual extinction of slavery throughout the States.

“Isn’t it pretty?” she said, turning quickly on Alice.

For so that innocent blood was shed for the remission of our sins.

“Difficult is no word for it. But, after all, it consists chiefly in the knack of the thing. One must have the wit ‘from such a sharp and waspish word as No to pluck the sting.’ I do it every day, and I really think that the people like it.”

There were plenty of beggars, no doubt, in Ballymoy, but it never struck me that there was much distress in those days.

Being therefore banished from Paradise, and thinking that they were expelled on account of their disobedience only, not knowing that it was also because they had believed in the existence of gods which did not exist, they gave the name of gods even to the men who were afterwards born of themselves.

His justification, however, is obtained by faith; and concerning faith it is written, Say not in your heart, Who shall ascend into heaven?

‘If he has already reached Panama, he will be there. As far as I could learn the arrival up from Peru had not been telegraphed.’

He that is not in darkness, is pleasing in the light of the living.

“Something has occurred that has made the place not quite so comfortable to me; and as it is all my own I think I shall sell it.”

CRAWLEY. My daughter’s spirits, sir, at this moment are not equal to this encounter. And if you will allow me, I will, with expressions of heartfelt gratitude for your solicitude, beg you to leave me now to the performance of my duties. They will not long, I fear, be left in my charge; but while they appertain to me, I would fain perform them with carefulness.

‘And where them chimneys is,—is that yourn?’ This he said pointing along the straight line of the road to Farmer Holt’s homestead, which showed itself on the other side of the Wash.

Then there was again silence between them for a quarter of an hour, during which Curlydown was hurrying through his work, and Bagwax was meditating whether it was certainly his duty to make known the facts as to the postage-stamp.

With due attention and a full belief he had weekly knelt at God’s temple, and given, if not his mind, at least his heart, to the service of his church.

This was told to him very freely; but he had only laughed at it, and was generally called “the woodcock,” as he rode about among his daily employments.

But if you mean to be obstinate I do wish that the Melmottes should be made to understand that the property and title and name of the place will all go together.

“And do you hear that he has defied the bishop? I do so like him for that. Not but what poor Mrs. Proudie is the dearest friend I have in the world, and I’m always fighting a battle with old Lady Lufton on her behalf. But one likes to see one’s friends worsted sometimes, you know.”

And if it be meet for me to go also, they shall go with me.

“I never could bear to live in two rooms,” said the old man. “When one is just warm and comfortable, one has to go out into all the draughts of the house. That’s the fashion, I know. But I hope you’ll excuse me, Sir Henry, for not liking it.”

And perfect Thou her whom Your right hand has planted [Psalm 79:15].

The ground hereabouts is nearly level, but it falls away a little and becomes broken and pretty where the river Dill runs through the park, about half a mile from the house.

[Genesis 2:24] This (says the Apostle) is a great mystery; but I speak concerning Christ and the Church For why should He not say, my sins, who said, I was an hungred, and you gave Me no meat; I was thirsty, and you gave Me no drink; I was a stranger, and you took Me not in.

“Thim ladies up there are as poor as Job, but anybody that should say that they weren’t ladies would just be shewing that he didn’t know the difference. The Captain was well born, Mr. Neville, av’ that makes ony odds.”

But I should be glad to think that I could tell you how things are going on.

There be three things which go well, and the fourth which is comely in going; that is, the angels in heaven, the saints upon earth, and the souls of the righteous under the earth. And the fourth, viz. God, the Word Incarnate, passed in honour through the Virgin's womb; and creating our Adam anew, he passed through the gates of heaven, and became the first-fruits of the resurrection and of the ascension for all.

But if by any chance there are matters of difficulty which can by no means be settled by the judgment of your Fraternity, in these only let our judgment be solicited, that so we may occupy ourselves more efficaciously in greater causes, being relieved from the least.

Men ought to be appointed who are at my disposal, who will dread me, and never do anything unless by my orders.— Whom then shall we appoint?— Severus.— How!

It was so probable that such a man should have done something horrible!

He had learned the headings of his speech,—so that one heading might follow the other, and nothing be forgotten.

In God the Father, he says, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

To watch over her, to worship her, to hover round her, so that no wind should be allowed to blow too strongly on her, to teach her that she was the one treasure in the world that could be of real value to him,—but at the same time to make a property of her, so that she should be altogether his own,—that had been his idea of the bond which should unite him and Marion Fay together.

[2 Corinthians 9:12] And again; Whiles they glorify God for your professed subjection unto the Gospel of Christ, and for your liberal distribution unto them, and unto all men; and by their prayer for you, which long after you.

Every friend I had in the world told me that I was wrong, and yet I could not help myself.

It rather adds to the intensity of our own sufferings!

And yet, though she was in so illustrious and honorable estate, this woman kneaded the flour, and did all the other servant's offices, and stood by them as they banqueted too in the rank of a servant.

It is, I think, evident from this that the greatest incentives to high excellence are wanting at Harvard College.

Colonel Osborne had not been at Nuncombe when the accusation had been made, and the accusation had been unjust and false.

Such men, if they devote their time to Scripture history, will not be arrested by the sun’s standing on Gibeon.

Cathelineau had expected that this would be the case, and though he had been one of the first within the camp, he was prepared to leave it again as soon as he could make the men, who were with him, understand that it was necessary they should do so.

From this passage it is manifest that the power of the Son and Spirit is one, for being commissioned by the Spirit, he says that he was commissioned by Christ.

Did not the weight of the theft sit so heavy on her, that her brightest thought was one which prompted her to abandon it?

How much was there in this man that she knew that she could learn to love?

As to the first of these: In the midst of two living creatures you shall be known, [Habakkuk 3:2] he refers to that overshadowing of the divine glory which, in the time of the law, rested in the Holy of holies upon the covering of the ark, between the typical cherubim, as He says to Moses, There will I be known to you.

All this time Norman was at Normansgrove; but there were three of the party who felt that it behoved them to let him know what was going on. Mrs. Woodward wrote first, and on the following day both Gertrude and Alaric wrote to him, the former from Hampton, and the latter from his office in London.

Thus she delivered herself; and Louis Trevelyan, though he was sore and angry, could not but feel that she had taken the part of a friend.

There are two classes of women who ride to hounds, or, rather, among many possible classifications, there are two to which I will now call attention.

For if all Christians who are faithful and have been baptized in Him have put Him on, as the Apostle says, As many as are baptized in Christ have put on Christ: [Galatians 3:27] if they have been made members of His body, and say that they are not holy, they do injury to their Head, of whom they are members, and yet not holy.

He anticipates us that we may be called; He will follow us that we may be glorified.

Yes, rank has its responsibilities as well as its privileges. I will remember that. It is necessary to do so, as otherwise one would be without consolation for what one has to suffer. For I find that one has to suffer, Amelia. I know papa would have advised me to marry this man; and so, I dare say, mamma would, and Frank, and Beatrice, if they knew that I liked him. It would not be so bad if we all thought alike about it; but it is hard to have the responsibilities all on one’s own shoulder; is it not?

In like manner the great Elias when he had learned Jezebel's threats did not give himself up to them which wished to kill him, but left the world and hurried to the desert.

[2 Corinthians 9:4] And again, in another place, having said, Or what I purpose do I purpose according to the flesh, that with me there should be the yea yea, and the nay nay?

An enormous poplar had been planted by the townspeople in the centre of the marketplace, which they called the tree of liberty.

And He entered into a ship, and passed over, and came into His own city. And, behold, they brought to Him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed: and Jesus seeing their faith said unto the sick of the palsy; Son, be of good cheer; your sins be forgiven you.

Do you not know that the apostle says, "If I distribute all my goods to the poor, and give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profits me nothing?"

The best Physicians after they have made a deep incision, and have increased the pains by the wound, soothing the afflicted part, and giving rest and refreshment to the disturbed soul, proceed not to make a second incision, but rather soothe that which has been made with gentle remedies, and such as are suited to remove the violence of the pain.

And we shall follow him, if we rid ourselves of earth, and of things on earth.

“Where did you get it?”

Exactly;—but how is a man to help it?

Septimus Harding was, a few years since, a beneficed clergyman residing in the cathedral town of ––––; let us call it Barchester.

There were many others, no doubt necessary for the case, but hardly necessary for the telling of the story.

Alaric went into the city, and found that the shares were still rising.

His seat shall be made perfect as the moon, but that moon is one which will be perfect for evermore.

For it is not things present merely that He promises, but also things to come.

We have judged.

For hereby He signifies, that what they did was not of gluttony, but pertained to some marvellous dispensation.

We both of us have our hands full of work, and of work which in many respects is the same.

“He will become as nobody in the eye of the law,” said I, with all the authority of a President.

“I dare say they will be in soon.” Sir Marmaduke looked round sharply at the man.

For says the apostle, There is one God, the Father, of whom are all things; and one Lord Jesus Christ, by whom are all things.

“Grimes never could have done it so fast,” said the Vicar.

He has already, in an earlier part of this very discourse unfolded in all its aspects the teaching of His divine nature: can we, then, on the strength of this confession deprive the Son of that equality, which His true birth has perfected in Him?

Then, when the servants withdrew, before he offered violence to the woman, he fell asleep.

The Epitome of the Divine Institutes

By, fellowship therefore with the good it is that they become so.

For He wills it not to be of rapine or fraud.

By pride of life how was the Lord tempted?

Everything was therefore thrown into confusion by the noise of men speaking loudly, and each according to the unchecked impulse of his own feelings; and though both Fortunius and I used entreaty and remonstrance, we utterly failed in persuading them to listen silently to what was spoken.

But his weakness increased upon him very quickly just at that time.

Something of this feeling came upon her now, when she heard that he had been betting and had been unfortunate.

No, Mr. Heathcote.

This is the Spirit that was given to the apostles in the form of fiery tongues.

“Have you ever said that nothing could alter that love?”

But then you have rejected that other gospel which witnesses to the same verity and the same Christ.

Nor can the reference to the resurrection keep its place, unless belief in His death has first preceded it.

For it is said of it in the Psalms, And He led me forth out of the lake of misery, and from the miry clay.

And what confidence remains for you, if you are ashamed of these things, and fliest from them, and this before so great a multitude?

All my comfort for the next six weeks, and perhaps more than my comfort, depended on the manner in which he had executed his commission.

When you have been up the Great Pyramid with a lady, the chances are you know more about her than you would do from a year’s acquaintance fostered by a dozen London parties; and a journey up the Nile with a man may be considered quite equal to three years spent together at the same college,—that is, if the fellow-travellers be young.

So I, most miserable, ever sick with the heats of impatience, must of necessity sigh after, and invoke, and persistently plead for, that health of patience which I possess not; while I recall to mind, and, in the contemplation of my own weakness, digest, the truth, that the good health of faith, and the soundness of the Lord's discipline, accrue not easily to any unless patience sit by his side.

For it we have invented a roofed house,

“Give me one gleam of hope, and I will rise,” said he, still remaining on his knees, but now looking up into her face; “tell me not to despair, and I will then accomplish any feat of manhood. Give me one look of comfort, and I will again be the warrior ready for the battle; it is you only who can give me back my courage; it is you only who can restore to me the privilege of standing erect before all mankind.”

The following are the name of those who have been anathematized as heretics: among the presbyters, Arius; among the deacons, Achillas, Euzoius, Aïthales, Lucius, Sarmates, Julius, Menas, another Arius, and Helladius.

Those who desire to form an adequate idea of them, must read for themselves, and will thereby derive both pleasure and profit.

And Captain Clayton was of opinion that Peter was beginning to be moved from the determined know-nothingness of his primary evidence. He had seen the flash. And then, as his master had run up the bank, he didn’t know whether he hadn’t caught the flying figure of a man.

“No fortune!”

For certain persons have come to me, among whom were some aged mendicants, who were questioned by me as to what they had received and from whom they had received it; and they told me particularly how much had been given them on their journey, and by whom it had been given.

“Is it not so? This morning you were to me of all God’s creatures the brightest and the best. When I entered your room just now it was so that I regarded you. Can you now be the brightest and the best? Has not all that romance been changed at a moment’s notice? But, alas! love does not go after the same fashion.” Then he turned shortly round and left the room.

The righteous are delivered, the sinners are consumed by the same fire.

Which things, all, he makes clear to us by the next words, saying,

For of Him who desires to give it is always seasonable to ask: yea, as breathing is never out of season, so neither is praying unseasonable, but rather not praying.

He would do his duty by Lord Chiltern; and then, when that had been adequately done, he would, if occasion served, fight a battle for himself.

“I don’t think much of you as a bookkeeper, you know,” Fisker said to Miles Grendall in the now almost deserted Board-room of the South Central Pacific and Mexican Railway.

These proud and haughty people will not have this; and yet they do not maintain free will by purifying it, but demolish it by exaggerating it.

“No,” she said. “ I cannot wait longer. I have kept my promise. Venice is no longer Austrian, and I will seek him. I have kept my word to Carlo, and now I will keep my word to Hubert.”

He went direct from thence to Mrs. Poppins’ lodgings, where he knew that he would find Miss Brown. Poppins himself was, of course, at his work, and the two ladies were together.

And, unless the fire of temptation has passed away, he should feel himself to be guilty, as it were, until the evening.

And the wood of the Cross is of saving efficacy for all men, though it is, as I am informed, a piece of a poor tree, less valuable than most trees are.

And, in truth, to speak briefly: Among many small pearls there is the one; and in a great take of fish there is the beauty-fish; and by time and toil truth will gleam forth, if a good helper is at hand.

No, I will not tell him that.

Let not him that eats despise him that eats not; and let not him that eats not judge him that eats, for God has received him.

Therefore, as we spoke in the fourth book concerning His first advent, so in this book we will relate His second advent, which the Jews also both confess and hope for; but in vain, since He must return to the confusion of those for whose call He had before come.

“He was still at school, though just leaving it. He is seven years older than I am.”

One from Jerusalem, for Jerusalem is interpreted, A vision of Peace.

But not hence alone may one see the victory, and the defeat, but by the end itself. For which accomplished his desired object? The prisoner, not the high born lady? For he strove to keep his chastity, but she to destroy it. Which then accomplished what he desired? He who suffered wrong, or she who did the wrong. It is quite plain, that it is he who suffered. Surely then this is the one who has conquered.

Then, as they expect Elijah to come at the consummation before Christ, and Christ to follow him, perhaps their question was meant less in a literal than in a tropical sense: Are you he who announces beforehand the word which is to come before Christ, at the consummation?

[1 Thessalonians 5:14] Let her cheerfully observe and cautiously impose rules.

On the next morning his breakfast was brought to him in his own room, and he inquired from the servant after Lord Hampstead and his purposes.

Just let her go to the races, and the ball; and your kindness and the girls’ society will soon bring her round.

The Kings of the earth stood up, and the rulers were gathered together against the Lord and against his Christ.

“Why not? It’s what other men do. I mean it to be something handsome;—about three hundred pounds.”

Thereupon Dositheus, being confounded, said to him, 'If you are the Standing One, I also will worship you.'

They are more modest than those of New York, and less commodious than those of Boston.

Mr. Burgers rushed at once to the fruition of all the good things which a country can possess without stopping to see whether they were there, to be enjoyed.

To go through the world comfortably with a rather large family and a rather small income was the extent of his ambition.

And that you may see that this is strictly the case, look how many things I shall enumerate.

At the same time, because already my mind was inflamed with the desire of writing his life, I obtained my information partly from himself, in so far as I could venture to question him, and partly from those who had lived with him, or well knew the facts of the case.

On finding that he could not remain in Tyre without peril of his life, and that there was no hope of obtaining justice against his numerous accusers, from judges who were inimical to him, he fled to Constantinople.

It is to be seen more often in second-rate French towns, and among fourth-rate French women.

His disciples, all fishermen, all poor, all weak,

In fact no payment was made, other than that of his being lifted into a position in which he was able to hold his head high among gentlemen of property.

“We don’t know. She has a mother, Lady Augustus Trefoil,—but whether Lady Augustus will accompany her daughter we have not heard. Reginald says certainly not, or they would have told us so. You have seen Reginald?”

She threw her head a little back as she accosted him, and he instantly perceived that he was enveloped in the fumes of an affectionate but somewhat contemptuous patronage.

It was sad work for the old man.

For when He said, Blessed are they that are persecuted for righteousness' sake, [Matthew 5:10] He clearly taught us in every circumstance to seek for the martyr who, if poor for righteousness' sake, witnesses that the righteousness which he loves is a good thing; and if he hunger and thirst for righteousness' sake, testifies that righteousness is the best thing.

For if this is so, then the mind had not these three things: viz.

All things belonging to him had gone to ruin.

So, according to my interpretation, there is in both cases a guard against sin, either of false swearing or of unjust revenge; though, as regards giving up the right to revenge, there is the additional consideration that, by forgiving such debts, we shall obtain the forgiveness of our debts.

For although very much good is conferred on the good by means of death, whence some have fitly argued even of the benefit of death; yet from this what can be declared except the mercy of God, since the punishment of sin is converted into beneficent uses?

Eusebius, Presbyter, likewise

I would, therefore, further examine our opponents, who esteem themselves so cunning, and have them make good the application of their theory to human existence, seeing that they use it to disparage the glory of God's Existence, and keep far away from any confession of an inscrutable mystery in the Divine Generation.

The water was deliciously tranquil, deliciously warm, deliciously cool, - beautifully pellucid as sea water can only be when it is altogether tranquil.

For indeed you are not so rich in money as you are in cares.

But his boast was an untrue boast, and he could not carry himself at The Cleeve as he would have done and did in Mrs. Arkwright’s little drawing-room.

Oh, George, she is so ugly!” And yet before this little affair, she had been quite content that Adelaide Houghton should be her intimate friend.

Why did he write to her?

It is assuredly a matter of my own inclination, being a Christian.

On the tree depends the life that bears fruits— precepts.

His bright chestnut hair clustered round his forehead, and his eye shone like that of a hawk.

From what other quarter ought one to learn the enemy and the foe, than from his answer returned to God?

And these too hazard the fullness of the mystery, I mean Baptism; for if the consecration is given to us into the Name of Father and Son, and they do not confess a true Father, because they deny what is from Him and like His Essence, and deny also the true Son, and name another of their own framing as created out of nothing, is not the rite administered by them altogether empty and unprofitable, making a show, but in reality being no help towards religion?

They both sat silent for a while, Undy bethinking himself what arguments would be most efficacious towards inducing Alaric to strip himself of every available shilling that he had; and Alaric debating in his own mind that great question which he so often debated, as to whether men, men of the world, the great and best men whom he saw around him, really endeavoured to be honest, or endeavoured only to seem so.

What is this name?

[1 Corinthians 10:23] For the rest, if you dress your hair sumptuously, and walk so as to draw attention in public, and attract the eyes of youth upon you, and draw the sighs of young men after you, nourish the lust of concupiscence, and inflame the fuel of sighs, so that, although you yourself perish not, yet you cause others to perish, and offer yourself, as it were, a sword or poison to the spectators; you cannot be excused on the pretence that you are chaste and modest in mind.

For if it were incorruptible it was not really, but only apparently, of the same essence as ours, and what the Gospel tells us happened, viz.

It must of course be remembered that the sum above named includes simply the wages, clothes, and food of the men.

“We think that we can dispose of any counter-claim in much less time than that,” said the Serjeant.

Nevertheless there were those who were ready to bet on the Cornbury side of the question.

And the ancient thinkers who called their science Natural Philosophy, were those mentioned in book i.

Wherefore let us be ashamed at least to ask these things, if we be not ashamed to desire them.

Again, I ask, if the distance of time between the births of twins is so great as to occasion a difference of their constellations on account of the difference of their horoscopes, and therefore of all the cardinal points to which so much influence is attributed, that even from such change there comes a difference of destiny, how is it possible that this should be so, since they cannot have been conceived at different times?

They become old sooner, and die at an earlier age.

O sweet exchange!

[Luke 9:61] And another said unto him, I will follow [Arabic, p. 44] you, my Lord; but first suffer me to go and salute my household and [30] come.

It did seem to him, as he thought of it, that life would be impossible to him in any room but that as long as the will remained among the leaves of the volume.

And first, let us fix our attention on the words of John, beginning, And Jesus went up to Jerusalem.

He throws his load down on the roadside, and does not care who may bear it, or who may suffer because he is too poor a creature to struggle on!

Several bishops arrived soon after at Constantinople, and among them were Leontius, bishop of Ancyra, and Acacius, bishop of Berea.

Here, in Bloemfontein, the Church is English, and prays for the Queen before the President,—for which latter it sometimes does pray and sometimes does not.

The Marchioness was told and really fell into a very bad way.

As for the inside of these vehicles the women of New York were, I must confess, too much for me.

This was about twelve years after Nicomedia had been visited by a similar catastrophe.

How highly finished the image, when he can even exhort others hereunto!

When this remark became generally known, it subdued the violence of those who were desirous of altercation and thus was realized in the design of the emperor.

Orth.— The divine David charges us to give heed to the divine oracles by night and by day; but let it be as you say, and let us keep the investigation of the remainder of our subject till tomorrow.

The other room seemed to be the exclusive property of Feemy; here she made and mended her clothes, and sometimes even washed and ironed them too; here she read her novels, received the two Miss McKeons, and thought of Captain Ussher; and here also it was, that he would tell her all the soft things which had filled her young heart, and made her dislike Ballycloran.

For elsewhere, again, (we read): Be holy, just as He withal was holy — in the flesh, namely.

I have seen the lines of the craftsmen, even the finest, like a spider's web; but these are of another kind, they are not the images of those which the eye of my flesh showed me; he knows them who, without any idea whatsoever of a body, perceives them within himself.

If Christ has one energy, it must be one and the same energy that performs both divine and human actions. But there is no existing thing which abiding in its natural state can act in opposite ways: for fire does not freeze and boil, nor does water dry up and make wet. How then could He Who is by nature God, and Who became by nature man, have both performed miracles, and endured passions with one and the same energy?

“Is that all you’ve to say to me, Captain Ussher?”

35. That God is patient for this end, that we may repent of our sin, and be reformed

But it flows over against (the country of) the Assyrians, because in every act of respiration following upon expiration, the breath drawn in from the external atmosphere enters with swifter motion and greater force.

It has been told how Lord Stanley, whom we remember better now as Lord Derby, and Lord Aberdeen, had risen in their wrath, backed by Lord Cardigan and the majority of the Peers generally.

It seems to me that many men,—men whom you and I know,—embrace the profession of politics not only without political convictions, but without seeing that it is proper that they should entertain them.

For it is monstrous and most utterly foreign to the truth that what would not be unless it were in the subject, could be even when the subject itself was no more.

I laid my hand on my heart, and made a solemn asseveration that I would not divulge her secret. I need not, however, have troubled myself much on that head, for as I walked up stairs, keeping my eye upon the precious trunk, Mr. Greene addressed me.

But since Enoch in the same Scripture has preached likewise concerning the Lord, nothing at all must be rejected by us which pertains to us; and we read that every Scripture suitable for edification is divinely inspired.

They would do so for his daughter and his son-in-law; but in these circumstances, it would have been well for him to have left the flocks to his son-in-law, and to have turned his mind to the consideration of other matters.

“I hope so,—sooner or later.”

There was no time then either for giving love or for refusing it. The paper was handed to her lover to read, and then she rushed out of the room as though the train which was to carry her would start instantly.

It is he, then, with whom is the dominion of all sowings. What is Genius? He is the god who is set over, and has the power of begetting, all things. Who else than the world do they believe to have this power, to which it has been said:

But his children soon made him understand that it was impossible that they could abandon him, a cripple as he was, unattended, and exposed to the certain fury of the republicans.

“Ah, but it would. If he, in his position, should be the first to speak, the first to suggest that this affair between you is a foolish one, what would people say?”

Each of these men had held a torch.

Yea, rather, with the greatest foresight, He wished those things which are divine to be without adornment, that all might understand the things which He Himself spoke to all.

For he, for his wickedness, was condemned from the beginning to eat dust, for that he caused to be again resolved into dust him who had been taken from the dust, even till the time when your souls shall be restored, being brought through the fire; as we shall instruct you more fully at another time.

Now there are some who say that the words, the covetous man is an idolater, are hyperbolical.

“Well;—I can’t explain myself,” he said, blushing as was his wont. “I daresay it wouldn’t make any difference.”

And then what should he say, and how should he act, if the man addressed him in the church?

Read that, my dear.” The warden, doubling up a number of The Jupiter, pointed to the peculiar article which she was to read.

Drive delusion from me, that I may recognize You.

‘I suppose the truth is that Miss Emily is disposed to run counter to your wishes in regard to her marriage, and that she is to be taken away not from consumption or a weak throat, but from a dangerous lover.’ Here Mr Greenmantle’s face became black as thunder.

Who is this man?

That we should never be discontented or vexed if any sickness happen to good men, and such as are dear to God.

“No subterfuges, no escaping by a side wind, no advantage taken of little forms, no objection taken to this and that as though delay would avail us anything.”

The water beneath was still as death, and as dark,—and looked almost as cold.

But he shook hands with more apparent’ zeal than he would have done but for the quarrel, and when he pressed Wilfred Horton to eat some devilled turkey, he did it with more ardour than was usual with him.

He was standing there close to the house, which stood a little back from the road, between nine and ten in the morning, as drunk as a lord.

“Every man ought to have a regard to his country;—but a stronger regard, if it be possible, to the world at large.”

The reader may remember that he had absolutely refused to make any promise, and that there had consequently been some sharp words spoken between the two friends.

“But why not?”

“How can I work now?” he said again. “I shall be called to the bar of course; there is no difficulty in that; and may perhaps earn what will make us decently respectable. But the spirit, the high spirit is gone. She is better pleased that it should be so. She is intolerant of enthusiasm. Is it not a pity, Miss Gauntlet, that we should be so different?”

“You would not have me marry any one for that reason;—would you, papa?”

In these words he verities the prophecy.

When Mrs. Grantly returned she found him in jocund spirits.

“You should have held your tongue and said nothing,” growled her brother.

This sees not the contentious tumult of man's soul; to which contentious tumult is it said, Be still.

He said, 'Clement.'

For what else is it that is sung in His person in the 3d Psalm, I laid me down and took a sleep, [and] I awaked, for the Lord shall sustain me?

She was aware that in this her father had condemned her husband.

And if the obvious meaning of the words denotes humility, marvel not; for after having first said, Do you not believe?

Hence gorging gives rise to disease: and many persons find relief for the discomfort of gluttony in emetics,— what they disgraced themselves by putting in, they with still greater disgrace put out.

But mark how tractable the colt, how being unbroken, and having never known the rein, he was not restive, but went on orderly; which thing itself was a prophecy of the future, signifying the submissiveness of the Gentiles, and their sudden conversion to good order. For all things did that word work, which said, Loose him, and bring him to me: so that the unmanageable became orderly, and the unclean thenceforth clean.

About nine o’clock the waiter announced that a few gentlemen below desired to see Sir Thomas.

“I wonder whether it can ever come to a person to be so placed that there can be no doing right, let what will be done;—that, do or not do, as you may, it must be wrong?”

“There would be nothing to tell.”

“My daughters!”

I have spoken of one of the schools of New York.

There could hardly be a better opening than this for him had he chosen to accept it. But it was not thus that he had arranged it,—for he had made his arrangements. “There would be no feeling of that kind, I am sure,” he said. And then he was silent. How was he to deploy himself on the ground before him so as to make the strategy which he had prepared answer the occasion of the day? “Lady Eustace,” he said, “I don’t know what your views of life may be.”

Covetous.

“Not at all. Their feet have nothing to do with it. But they think it economical to hold up their petticoats.

And a stranger will they not follow, for they know not the voice of strangers.

Hence in the first place arises a question about abortive conceptions, which have indeed been born in the mother's womb, but not so born that they could be born again.

So it is for this cause He introduces also others displeased at their blessings, not to represent those men as pining or vexed, away with the thought!

Her hostess was a widow, was not a woman of high birth, was a woman of whom her uncle spoke well; and, for all these reasons, Mary was determined to respect her, and pay to her every consideration.

Children, obey your parents in all things: for this is well pleasing to the Lord.

“Oh! I thought that you did not mean to speak to me at all,” said Amelia. “I supposed the cut was to be extended from papa to me.”

He inspired the blessed Moses; He engraved the tables, He detained him on the mount forty days; and again as many [more] to give the Law.

For this is to be termed prudent prevention, not punishment of crime; this is not to impose penalties, but to protect men from becoming liable to penalties.

Cicero describes him as a middle-aged man, who never left his farm, doing his duty well by his father, as whose agent he acted on the land—a simple, unambitious, ignorant man, to whom one’s sympathies are due rather than our antipathy, because of his devotion to agriculture.

It was a great triumph to Sir Gregory to see the darling object of his heart thus commencing its existence in the very cradle in which he, as an infant Hercules, had made his first exertions in the cause.

So after certain days he went in again to the mountain.

I speak of Maria Edgeworth and of Miss Austen.

Baggett has sent for me, and I must go.

Then, just at the close of the interview, he asked a question about the jewels.

I cannot say that the Englishmen seemed to hate us, or we them; but that the affair was too serious to admit of playful words between the parties.

Mr. Glascock, thinking that his father intended to kiss him over the door, held him by his frock; but the doing of this made Trevelyan very angry.

“Oh, no; you mustn’t do that. I am wrong to tell you all this, for he told me to talk to no one. But it would kill me if I didn’t speak of it to you.”

I feel quite sure he would come to us if you were here; and this, I think, should bring you, if no other consideration does so.

Lord Desmond pondered over the matter some time, standing alone near the lodge; and then walked slowly back towards the mansion.

For He desires and looks for our perfection and salvation far more than we do ourselves.

Howbeit the Most High dwells not in (places) made with hands.

In answer to this, Margaret burst out into tears. It was not the unkindness of her aunt’s voice that upset her so much as her own weakness, and the terrible struggle of the long day.

Making such allowance and deduction from the force of these words as the slang expression requires, we may say that John Eustace was right.

We are obliged, therefore, to say that whoever speaks that which is foreign to religion is using many words, while he who speaks the words of truth, even should he go over the whole field and omit nothing, is always speaking the one word.

If perchance you live in the country, far removed from the resort of plumbers, where molten lead is a thing almost unknown, you shall hardly hear of him; and yet you live.

Thus Jacob says: I, Jacob, who speak to you, and Israel, I am an angel of God, a ruling spirit, and Abraham and Isaac were created before every work of God; and I am Jacob, called Jacob by men, but my name is Israel, called Israel by God, a man seeing God, because I am the first-born of every creature which God caused to live.

This is not my word, it is a prophetic promise, They who sow in tears, shall reap in joy.

And with the same flashing thoughts she declared to herself that she did love him, and that therefore this arrangement would be so much better than that other one which she had proposed to herself.

We know too that the flesh is subject to death because of sin, but the Spirit of God is both incorruptible, and life-giving, and deathless.

Quibus responderimus quoque, quod pseudoprophetas, et eos qui veritatem simulant, ex operibus cognosci accepimus: si male audiunt autem vestra opera, quomodo adhuc dicetis vos veritatem tenere?

I digg him in the ribbs, or clap his padded old shoulders.

Nor on her behalf would he have hesitated, though the misery might have continued for three months.

“For the shorn lamb—” she had said, and he had known her thoughts, as they followed, quick, one upon another, through her mind.

“I have not given him any money,” said Mr Palliser, not quite knowing what he had better do or say under such circumstances.

“Heard you were here,” continued the Honourable John; “so I thought I would come up and look after you. Going to be married, ain’t you?”

If it was not lawful for him to utter them, to whom is it lawful to hear them?

If along with themselves, then doubtless it was created by Him who created them, and, as soon as ever they were created, they attached themselves to Him who created them, with the love He created in them.

As if the whole world had been one house, they divided it among themselves, administering its affairs everywhere, each taking care of his several portion of it.

Let them find the will if they wanted it!

“It will soon pass away,” she said.

No one envies such an one when he is in prosperity, no one tramples upon him when he is in adversity, but all rejoice with him when he does well, and grieve with him in misfortune.

And let us once more come to illustrations.

“That would have been very bad.”

“Therefore the man is a liar. A long story has to be told, as to which at present I can only guess what may be the nature. I presume the story will be the same as that you would have told had the man never come here.”

He had no preconceived plan in coming to her. He was possessed by that desire, which we all of us so often feel, to be comforted by sympathy; but he hardly knew even how to describe the want of it.

They answer, To know the glory of God.

Nor is it to be wondered at, if He thus teaches who forbids your refusing to bring back even your brother's cattle, if you find them astray in the road; much more should you bring back your erring brother to himself.

And this, too, ought to be remarked: I understand that you conquer the desire for all food and drink; neither the sweeter figs, to speak poetically, nor any other kind of fruit in its season, can take you prisoner, except the little that you touch and taste, after you have returned thanks to the Maker of all things.

Wherefore I preach to this effect: Come, all you kindreds of the nations, to the immortality of the baptism.

For man and wife are not two men, but one Man.

Since, then, you have recalled to our remembrance by your letter these and other things which I think it better to pass over meanwhile, why may not we make sport of your gods, which, as every one who knows your mind, and has read your letters, is well aware, are made sport of abundantly by yourself?

But she was not successful.

“I ain’t a betting man, Mr. Moulder. I don’t think it’s right. And on such a matter as this, touching the liberty and almost life of a lady whom I’ve had the honour of seeing, and acquainted as I am with the lady of the other party, Mrs. Mason that is of Groby Park, I should rather, if it’s no offence to you, decline the subject of—betting.”

For the natural man receives not the things of the Spirit.

He was ever conscious, too, of his own superiority,—falsely conscious,—and did feel that if Harry’s character were really known, no girl would in truth prefer him.

If any has been living in remembrance of sins, he knows the anguish thence arising.

Here he did not altogether fail as regarded the coveted object of his becoming the companion of gentlemen.

For her Mr.

This salutary advice gained him the ill-will of many avaricious bishops and clergy who had profited, or hoped to profit, by her gifts.

There’s lots of them schamers about now,’ says I.

“Oh, Adolphus, I am so glad he has come,” said Lily.

But it is likely that He appeared even after He was received up.

Understand, therefore, that the way is this course of our life; the travellers are those who do good works; the gate is the true Prophet, of whom we speak; the city is the kingdom in which dwells the Almighty Father, whom only those can see who are of pure heart.

“Did Mr. Griffenbottom intend to fight the battle with clean hands?” The gentleman from the club was eager in declaring that everything would be done in strict accordance with the law.

and it therefore follows that those who have been polluted by being baptized by men opposed to Christ should first be cleansed, and only then baptized."

‘Yes; he came,—and he has disturbed everything that I had arranged so happily.

[Acts 10:42] This is great.

“I think, sir,” said Tregear, “that they are learning to do the same sort of thing at the American Universities.”

And He shall live, and there shall be given to Him of the gold of Arabia [Psalm 71:15].

“You said something in your letter,” he continued, “about my affairs here in Baslehurst being unsettled. I would not show myself here again till that matter was arranged.”

For he that speaks a lie, speaks of his own.

And why do I speak of prisoners?

But the faith of the Church, while confessing the only true God the Father, confesses Christ also.

Or was he not made?]

“No, I think not,” said he. “I think I shall start before the archdeacon could be ready;—I shall go early tomorrow morning.”

Although, however, this is so, and though we desire all heretics to be repressed always with vigour and reason by Catholic priests, yet, on looking thoroughly into what has been done among you, we are in fact apprehensive lest offense should thereby be caused (which thing may the Lord avert) to the primates of other councils.

Chapter 17. Type of Those Born Under Gemini.

If, however, as they would have it, the faith dates from the present Consulate, what will the Fathers do, and the blessed Martyrs?

Now four times ten [seven added to three] are forty; but the number forty reckoned in along with [one of] its parts adds the number ten, [as seven reckoned in along with one of its parts adds the unit,] and the total is fifty—the symbol, as it were, of the reward of the toil and self-control.

For it is for the support of life that we all have received what we possess; and after enjoying merely the use of it, each one departs, obtaining from life a brief remembrance.

The frequenters of the ferry were found to outnumber the passengers over Waterloo Bridge by ten to one.

I am afraid you suspect that some injury has been done you.

[Ecclesiastes 7:21] For who, even if he be the chief of all righteous and holy men, can we ever think could, while bound in the chains of this life, so acquire this chief good, as never to cease from divine contemplation, or be thought to be drawn away by earthly thoughts even for a short time from Him Who alone is good?

“I shall be a bear to that brute of a bird before long.”

Of what sort had been the life of the man who had stood for years on the top of a pillar?

So it was at Trafford Park for three hours. Then there came a postboy galloping on horseback, and the truth was known. Lady Kingsbury went again to her children, but this time she did not kiss them. A gleam of glory had come there and had passed away;—but yet there was something of relief.

Had I not better tell the truth of her at once?

“Of course you have. Goodness gracious me! Why else would you come? You have got Buston, which I suppose is two thousand a year. At any rate it has that name. But it isn’t your own.”

But it seemed to her that this duty of which Mrs Baggett spoke was due rather to John Gordon than to Mr Whittlestaff.

“His father wrote to me.”

But how could a premature death be absent from him, for whom a mature death had been appointed?

Anything like this he did not say, he did not think of; but, in proportion as he abounded with innumerable good works, so much the more did he fear and tremble.

“Oh, did I not tell you? He’s going to Framley Court at once; you’ll find him there when you return.”

And not now only has he done this, but also last year, after that two persons infected with the Apollinarian disorder had come hither and laid false information against us, he rose up in church and anathematized us, and that when I had written to him and expressed what I hold in a letter.

The foolish and unwise.

But let not any suppliant doubt that he certainly will not be heard, so long as he doubts whether he is heard.

But the reasons for marrying one were to her thinking as strong as for marrying the other.

But shall I tell you of famines and pestilences?

But those many, who say, Who shows us good things?

There lacked, however, to him, that peculiar aspect of firmness about the temples which so strongly marked the countenance of Sir Harry and his daughter; and there had come upon him a blasé look, and certain outer signs of a bad life, which, however, did not mar his beauty, nor were they always apparent.

The greedy survey of the eyes is never satisfied.

On the 5th of June I find him dining with Macready, to meet Sir J. Wilson, Panizzi, Landseer, and others.

He had a very bad day’s sport with the West Barsetshire.

Does he clothe the nakedness of the wood with a shady covering of leaves?

“You have given it back!” said her sister.

And what He did towards Job, He performed here.

Suppose any brother dwelling in the same house with a virgin, in honor and chastity, and yet not even so quite escaping evil report.

It was Easter time and the courts were not sitting, but Mr. Wharton was in his chamber as a matter of course at ten o’clock.

On that, the day of Frank’s arrival, not a word was said about the necklace, nor of Lord Fawn, nor of that mutual pledge which had been taken and given down among the rocks.

On the following day most of them returned; some without arms, some without legs, some even without heads; a wretched, wounded, mutilated, sore-struck body of filibusters.

He, too, liked his party, and was fond of loyal men; but he had learned at last that all loyalty must be built on a basis of self-advantage.

She had no plan of revenge yet formed.

I didn’t want to talk nonsense, but just to settle something.

When he had spoken he left her, and she began to think of her £120,000.

Of course, if you think well of him you’re right to keep him.

And the man who hurried by him might not have been the man who murdered Mr. Bonteen.

This was John Eustace.

As for instance:— That God is everywhere, we know; but how, we no longer understand.

I have kept my word as fairly as I have been able.

Sir Peregrine had turned to the window, where he stood shading his eyes with his hand.

But it is said it was on account of modesty that they called themselves devoted to wisdom, and not wise.

Whether he asked advice on the subject, I do not know.

“Why not? There is nothing my father would like so much.” Then he was silent for awhile, but, as his cousin made no further immediate reply, Gregory Marrable went on with his plan. “Ten years ago, when she was not much more than a little girl, and when it was first arranged that she should come here, my father proposed—that I should marry her.”

At this time a silver statue of the Empress Eudoxia covered with a long robe was erected upon a column of porphyry supported by a lofty base.

That of contemplation.

Chapter XIII. How the Tringles Fell Into Trouble

But it was not so with Mrs.

Must he not tell Mr. Furnival?

It is simply the national court of last appeal.

After this He instructs us, not to aim at all at such ornament. See at least the end thereof; after its triumph it is cast into the oven: and if of things mean, and worthless, and of no great use, God has displayed so great care, how shall He give up you, of all living creatures the most important?

And I will utter secrets which were before the foundations of the world.

“But when he looks at me in that way, I can’t help stopping, as I think he is going to speak; and then he always says, ‘Can I do anything for you, Lady Glencowrer?’“

For as the Father has life in Himself; so has He given to the Son to have life in Himself.

Then had come the absurdity of his challenge to Colonel Stubbs, the folly of which had been made plain to him by the very letter which his rival had written to him.

Since, then, the passage already quoted would not be true even if it had been written by Matthew, since he was not present when Jesus spoke on the mount; much more is its falsehood evident from the fact that the writer was not Matthew himself, but some one borrowing the names both of Jesus and of Matthew.

This is the discipline which I no longer say foretold that heresies should come, but from which they proceeded.

There were a great many speeches made that day from the hustings,—thirteen in all.

I want to know.

For if their forefathers, by erring very far with respect to the knowledge of the gods, through incredulity and aversion of mind from their worship and service, invented the art of making gods, what wonder is it that all that is done by this detestable art, which is opposed to the divine religion, should be taken away by that religion, when truth corrects error, faith refutes incredulity, and conversion rectifies aversion?

He had, at last, been allowed to bring them home from Rome, there having been no other gentleman whose services were available for the occasion.

Wherefore it was because He intended man to be man, that He originally made him so.

So he received the treasure, which they willingly gave up to him; and in the sequel got into troubles without end, and learned by actual experience that they had done well to have nothing to do with it.

This note touched the poor woman to whom it was written, not because she herself was solicitous to be acquainted with the Duchess of Omnium, but because the application seemed to her to contain something like an acquittal, or at any rate a pardon, of her husband.

Fortunatus said: He does not suffer, but prevents evil.

In return for which Rachel scorned Mr. Prong and sneered at him.

I affirm according to position, when I say he lies down; I deny according to position, when I say he does not lie down.

Now and then she addressed a word or two to her sister.

“What; about her ladyship?” said the attorney.

But that he is to receive the power of Damascus and the spoils of Samaria in opposition to the king of the Assyrians, this is a wondrous sign.

The earl bowed, and rubbed his hands, and felt more comfortable than he had done for the last week. He liked delicate missions coming to him, for he flattered himself that he knew how to receive them in a delicate manner; he liked, also, displaying his dignity to strangers, for he felt that strangers stood rather in awe of him: he also felt, though he did not own it to himself, that his manner was not so effective with people who had known him some time.

The universal medicine in which his consolation consists is that out of the same root, out of the same treasures, out of the same streams, they all receive. And accordingly, from time to time dwelling on this expression, he levels the apparent inequality, and consoles them. And above indeed he points out both the Spirit, and the Son, and the Father, as supplying the gifts, but here he was content to make the Spirit, that even hence again you may understand their dignity to be the same.

Sir Lionel drew a long breath. After all, five thousand pounds was the whole sum total that was rescued out of the fire. What was five thousand pounds? How much could he expect to get from such a sum as that? Perhaps, after all, he had better take Miss Baker. But then her pittance was only for her life. How he did hate his departed brother at that moment!

The other arguments which he has adduced rather favor our position.

No notice should be taken of what she had done.

The same tract of country is known by three names, Negebh, Teman, and Darom in Ezekiel.

The words of the Apostle are, For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead.

That Quintus was a scholar and a man of parts there can be no doubt; one, too, who rose to high office in the Republic.

For without discovering his object, he simply asked the chiefs of the heretics whether they had any respect for and would accept the teachings of those teachers who lived previous to the dissension in the church?

“By all means. But I could give them no strength. They may be sure at any rate of what little I can do for them out of office.”

His purpose, his diligence, his skill, his eloquence, his honesty were known.

Permit me to call to mind what I have omitted above, lest I seem to break off the train of impending thoughts in the middle.

Dated 9th of June in the consulship of the illustrious Adelfius (451).

Mr. Harding thought that all porters and stokers, guards, brakesmen, and pointsmen ought to have an opportunity of going to church, and he hoped that they all had.

A scoffing and derision: or, as some have interpreted it, a mockery to them that are in our circuit.

Then at last she wrote that comprehensive letter of five lines,—as Houston had called it.

[Romans 13:9] Now, if this is the recapitulation of the law from the very law itself, I am at a loss to know who is the God of the law.

The governor’s right-hand man is confined to an island, and dances with a planter’s daughter.

He escapes from the prison, and comes into Mesopotamia: but there Bishop Archelaus, a shield of righteousness, encounters him : and having accused him before philosophers as judges, and having assembled an audience of Gentiles, lest if Christians gave judgment, the judges might be thought to show favour—Tell us what you preach, said Archelaus to Manes.

“Then I will call you Frank, if you will allow me. The use of Christian names is, I think, pleasant and hardly common enough among us. I almost forget my own boy’s name because the practice has grown up of calling him by a title.”

John Gordon.

Therefore He saw, what they said.

In the meantime the Duke and his son were seated in close conversation on one of the upstairs sofas.

The little episode of Mrs. Proudie’s address in the lecture-room had already reached Framley, and it was only to be expected that Lady Lufton should enjoy the joke.

And its music within,—who does not know that there are to be heard sounds in a greater perfection of orchestral melody than are to be procured by money and trouble combined in the great capitals of Europe?

[Romans 3:23] But the new thing is, that when all were unworthy, the Gentiles were saved alone.

‘I am afraid not, John. The man applied to you for the money, and was refused. That was the beginning of it. Then the application was repeated by the woman with a threat; and you again refused. Then they present themselves to the magistrates, and make the accusation; and, upon that, you pay the money. Of course it will come out at the trial that you paid it immediately after this renewed application from Bollum. It would have been better to have defied them.’

That she did answer with sufficient spirit, no one, I should say, need doubt; and it may be surmised that things in Gower Street were not comfortable that evening.

Contra Faustum, Book XI

‘I think it is as good as settled,’ Michel answered. Before they got back to the inn, George had thanked his father for his liberal offer, had declared that he would accede to Madame Faragon’s proposition, and had made his father understand that he must return to Colmar on the next Monday,—two days before that on which Urmand was expected at Granpere.

Thoughts as to great successes crowded themselves upon his heated brain.

Lady Sarah was more stanch.

“Then I shall put the matter into the hands of the Duke of Omnium,” said Lizzie boldly. “I will not have my whole life ruined, my good name blasted—”

No one who knows by sight what an English gentleman is, could have doubted that; but I did acknowledge to myself that they should have remembered that the edifice they were treading was a church, and that the silence they were invading was the cherished property of a courteous people.

For they did not go forth to argue with Pharaoh, but to wrestle with the devil.

“But you will not go?”

And again there are men, fewer in number, who will work though they hate it, from sheer conscience and from conviction that idleness will not suit them or make them happy.

The pity of the county fell to the share of the poor beautiful girl, whose welfare and happiness were absolutely ruined; and the parson was pulled to pieces for his sordid parsimony in having endeavoured to rid himself in so disgraceful a manner of the charge of one of his children.

Could it be that now at last real peace should be within her reach, and that tranquillity which comes from an anchor holding to a firm bottom?

Of what kind of man ?

Whence lions, horses, dogs, wolves, panthers; and what or whence are the souls of these creatures?

Charity therefore is compared with its strength, in the words, Love is strong as death.

If you make an offering for sin, your soul shall see a long-lived seed.

For that spirit which is given to man as appertaining to his nature, whether it be given by propagation or be inbreathed as something new to individuals (and I do not determine which of these two modes ought to be affirmed, at least until one of the two can be clearly ascertained beyond a doubt), is not given to men when they walk over the earth, but while they are still shut up in their mother's womb.

Chapter 4. What the Oil in the Lamps Means.

Chapter XLIII. Life at Portray

And yet he had become a Knight of the Garter, and was therefore, presumably, one of those noble Englishmen to whom the majesty of the day was willing to confide the honour, and glory, and safety of the Crown.

“Of course it do; and there ain’t one in London knows so much about it as you do, Mr Scruby. I will say that for you. But the long and the short of it is this;—business is business, and money is money.”

Because of this he said that his kingdom was inferior.

WE all remember the day when Mr. Smith landed at Newhaven and took up his abode quietly at the inn there. Poor Mr. Smith! In the ripeness of time he has betaken himself a stage further on his long journey, travelling now probably without disguise, either that of a citizen King or of a citizen Smith.

[1 Timothy 6:6-10] This competent portion he desires without impropriety who desires it and nothing beyond it; for if his desires go beyond it, he is not desiring it, and therefore his desire is improper.

And what shall I say of him who claims to be the heir or legatee, on the proof of a will which, though falsified by others, yet was known to be so by him, and who tries to make a gain through another's crime, though even the laws of the state convict him who knowingly makes use of a false will, as guilty of a wrong action.

Although not for this reason only did he so name Him; this was the first reason, and the second was because He was about to declare to us the things of the Father.

what further need was there that another priest should arise after the order of Melchisedec, and not be called after the order of Aaron?

See, at any rate, these words bearing witness to every one of these facts.

We know, says the divine Apostle in part, and again he says, If any man think that he knows anything he knows nothing yet as he ought to know.

Neither should you think that he is father to your children who is both changeable and infirm, but you should obtain Him who is the eternal and unchanging Father of spiritual children.

He took away by law the crucifixion customary among the Romans, from the usage of the courts.

There was still a little delay.

For if, as you assert, the fact that the Father alone is God has not left to Christ the possibility of Godhead, it must needs be also according to you that the fact of Christ being one Lord does not leave God the possibility of being Lord, seeing that you will have it that to be One must be the essential property of Him Who is One.

“You are not going to talk about Mr. Camperdown to-day?”

He seldom drank too much, and never was late for business, or huddled over his toilet, however brief his sleep or severe his headache.

In the same way, Heber himself did not transmit that language to all his posterity, but only to the line from which Abraham sprang.

He had been secretary to Aëtius, surnamed Atheus, of whom we have before spoken, and had learned from conversing with him, to imitate his sophistical mode of reasoning; being little aware that while exercising himself in framing fallacious arguments, and in the use of certain insignificant terms, he was really deceiving himself.

“She’d better remain where she is,” said he.

As far as I can judge of his words and doings throughout his life, he was not harassed by constitutional timidity.

In the religion of to-day moderation is everything.

If you can’t bring yourself to do that, you—and—I—must—part.

They could get her there in little over a mile.

“Those sort of rules are all gone by now,” said Mr. Arabin.

Wherein the truth of predestination and grace is defended against the semi-Pelagians—those people to wit, who by no means withdraw altogether from the Pelagian heresy, in that they contend that the beginning of salvation and of faith is of ourselves; so that in virtue, as it were, of this precedent merit, the other good gifts of God are attained.

To what I see, to that will I live: let us eat and drink, for tomorrow we die.

But good-will also goes in conjunction with liberality, for liberality really starts from it, seeing that the habit of giving comes after the desire to give.

“If I had known you were coming, papa, I would have got up.”

In the second book of his De Natura Deorum, he introduces Lucilius Balbus, who, after showing that superstitions have their origin in physical and philosophical truths, expresses his indignation at the setting up of images and fabulous notions, speaking thus: Do you not therefore see that from true and useful physical discoveries the reason may be drawn away to fabulous and imaginary gods?

The Son of God, therefore, having the charge of mankind, was first made man, that men might believe in Him; that He might be to us a witness, sprung from ourselves, of things Divine, and preach to us, weak and carnal as we are, through the weakness of the flesh concerning God the Father, so fulfilling the Father's will, even as He says, I came not to do My own will, but the will of Him that sent Me.

Peaches!

What, then, must I do?

God loves confession, loves humility.

But that this is more pleasant— let us look to this; for this is the question.

The violence of fire it has softened by the atmosphere, as the Dorian is blended with the Lydian strain; and the harsh cold of the air it has moderated by the embrace of fire, harmoniously arranging these the extreme tones of the universe.

But we confess a birth; we reject this confusion of two Persons in One, while yet we cleave to the Divine unity.

But if you remain the same, and hearing, hear not, and seeing, perceive not,[Isaiah 6:10] and to no purpose dissent from your children, then shall they be your judges [Matthew 12:27] according to the Saviour's word.

The day went by, and the supper was eaten, and the cigars were smoked, and then they all went to bed. But nothing more had been settled. That obstinate young man, M. Adrian Urmand, though he had talked of his lawyer, had said not a word of going back to Basle.

To struggle in vain always hurts the pride; but the wound made by the vain struggle for a woman is sorer than any other wound so made.

She had done so on the previous year; and as I had accepted his little present I was bound to acknowledge him as my friend.” All this was very pretty, and of course I said that I would go, but I had not at that time the slightest intention of doing so.

Forasmuch, then, as Peter was rebuked because, after he had lived with the Gentiles, he proceeded to separate himself from their company out of respect for persons, the fault surely was one of conversation, not of preaching.

Again, can anything be hoped for which is not an object of faith?

Well, let that pass.

Or why again does another utterly despise himself?

Miserable as she had been made by the manner in which this woman had executed the trust which circumstances had placed in her hands, Linda had hardly blamed her aunt even within her own bosom.

Though they should hang him, she would bathe his body with her tears, and live as a woman should live who had loved a murderer to the last.

For instance it will do me no harm to say as I have said, Whereas in his other books Origen has surpassed all other writers, in commenting on the Song of Songs he has surpassed himself; nor will I fear to face the words with which formerly in my younger days I spoke of him as a doctor of the churches.

How shall he hold his ground against such billows?

3. For when all the brethren had assembled to select by vote him who should succeed to the episcopate of the church, several renowned and honorable men were in the minds of many, but Fabianus, although present, was in the mind of none. But they relate that suddenly a dove flying down lighted on his head, resembling the descent of the Holy Spirit on the Saviour in the form of a dove.

And this is no small achievement: since many will even be entirely delivered from their evil way; there being nothing that has such power to allure men as love.

“Well! eh! what is it?”

He came in with a jaunty laughing air, as though nothing particular had happened, and as if he had not a care in the world.

Let us see how the Lord Himself in the gospel has taught us to live; how, too, Paul the apostle,— for the Manichæans dare not reject these Scriptures.

Hope and patience are to be the staffs to lean upon, whenever we are weary with the trials of the world.

The one matter in which, as far as my judgment goes, the people of the United States have excelled us Englishmen, so as to justify them in taking to themselves praise which we cannot take to ourselves or refuse to them, is the matter of Education.

“I had hoped Jack would have come to see me at my lodgings.”

To mind their steps,—and at the same time their dresses, lest they should be trod upon,—to keep full pace with the music, to make all the proper turns at every proper time, and to have the foot fall on the floor at the exact instant; all this is enough, without further excitement.

“Good night, Frank.”

We all sat by, edging in a word now and then, but the general was the talker of the evening.

And [there He] opened to His disciples again assembled the writings of Holy Scripture, that is, the secrets of the prophets; which before His suffering could by no means be understood, for they told of Him and of His passion.

There’ll be a question or two about the old breeches-maker as the Squire of Newton mayn’t like to see in the papers the next morning.

it was straightway replied, I am Jesus of Nazareth, whom you persecute.

To Boniface, Deacon.

It was acknowledged on all sides that Crocker had,—as Miss Demijohn properly described it,—destroyed Her Majesty’s Mail papers.

It hardly occurred to him to believe that after all he might perhaps cure the evil.

His daughter!

“No;—I think not. He is never at home, and the ladies are always surrounded by the children.”

Lo, this was fulfilled which was spoken by Christ, that they which kill you shall think they offer worship to God.

Some poems had been produced, and a history of his own Consulship in Greek; but these are unknown to us.

But, as Barrington says, a horse won’t get oats unless he works steady between the traces.

Chapter 7 Created things are not the images of those aeons who are within the Pleroma

“But having removed herself into that position, being as she would be, a Countess, or a Duchess, or what not, how could she be happy if she were excluded from the community of Countesses and Duchesses?”

If piety, truth, and righteousness are found on earth nowhere but in one woman, where shall we find your righteous followers, who, you boast, are sinless on earth?

“Nonsense,” said the mother, when Hetta objected; “Mr Broune sees it quite in the right light.

There is a mystery about hotels in the British West Indies.

From his voluntary poverty?

“In a week or two.”

Conquer in your wisdom the claims of kinsmanship and the memory of a noble and generous character, a memory which must always recall something beyond painter's art or rhetorician's skill.

I told you how it would be, Lady Kingsbury; and now it has come to pass.” He stood standing a minute or two longer, but as she sat hiding her face, and unable to speak, he left the room without absolutely asking her to thank him for his news.

She was far too proud to give the slightest hint that she too had her grievance.

Now, the 4th September had been the day preceding Sir Florian’s marriage.

For you may be quite sure that, amidst all her vexations, she must have had a good deal of fever.

And in this way He was then employed. For it is said, that He opened His mouth, and taught them. And wherefore is the clause added, He opened His mouth? To inform you that in His very silence He gave instruction, and not when He spoke only: but at one time by opening His mouth, at another uttering His voice by the works which He did.

If, however, power approaches power, the dissimilarity of (what is set in) juxtaposition produces a certain motion and energy, which are formed from the motion resulting from the concourse effected by the juxtaposition of the coalescing powers.

What palaces, save the palace of Satan, of whom the Lord said: How shall His kingdom stand?

Arms and battles were to him abominable, as they are to us.

“I was only wanting the thingumbob, yer honour,” said Tom, pretending to search diligently in the drawer for some required article.

Many other things does she say which here I pass over; she prays also to God for you.

That is understood, though there may sometimes be mistakes.

“Wesleyan minister,” whispered the Percycross bear-leader into the ear of his bear;—”and has a deal to say to many of the men, and more to the women.

[2 Corinthians 5:14-21] We then, as workers together with Him, beseech you also that you receive not the grace of God in vain.

It was not in the nature of things that His birth should avail to put His beginning back, until it was equivalent to the existence which is unbegotten, and had no beginning; and the Father reserves as His prerogative, to demonstrate His authority as the Unbegotten, the fixing of this still undetermined day.

For so that state tax is commonly called, from which the same proportion of the increment is assigned for the king's use, as the legal tribute of Quadragesima, which is required of us by the King of all the ages for the use of our life.

Another offends, yet is not deserving of death; he is put in bonds until he is judged; and is chastised, and the king remits his offense.

That which the man had done, and that which he had not done, had been of such a nature as to solve all bonds of affection.

But instead of instructing us as he ought, he abuses us; and while he should have shown his goodwill to those whom he addresses at the outset of his discourse, he stigmatizes as a cowardly race men who would rather die than abjure Christianity even by a word, and who are ready to suffer every form of torture, or any kind of death.

“ I shall remain and not allow the tin box to enter the cart.” “ Not allow I “ said the custodian of the mails.

Although he possessed these defects of character, the prophet stood by him in a dream, and manifested himself; pointing out a particular garden, he said to him, Go, dig in that garden at the distance of two cubits from the hedge of the garden by the road leading to the city of Bitheribis.

He had seen that Mrs.

“Why not? There’s poor Mountjoy Scarborough, he has gone astray.”

He learns to perceive the peculiar manner of certain artists who painted peculiarly; and though by the knowledge he so attains he may be led into error,—as when he takes a Lancret for a Wat-teau,—still the error is never disgracefully erroneous.

They accordingly, having received this answer, fulfilled the injunctions.

“That is what we must find out. Your uncle was silent. He said nothing, or next to nothing.”

Nevertheless it was His pleasure that He should be born as a man, that in all things He might be like His supreme Father.

Why should he respect any but himself?

Now you are free again,—free, I mean, from Captain Aylmer;—and how is it possible that I should not again have a hope?

Omnia enim licent, sed non omnia expediunt, ait Apostolus.

The law is very severe on them, imprisoning them, and subjecting them to lashes if in any case it can be proved that a delinquent has instigated a Kafir to steal.

“Do not judge of him too quickly, Josiah,” his wife said. “There is so much of good in him! He is kind, and generous, and I think affectionate.”

He, Mr. Quiverful, had not asked for the wardenship; he had not even accepted it till he had been assured that Mr. Harding had refused it.

To her mind the acquittal was perfect; but she never explained to human ears,—not even to those of her sister,—the manner in which it had been given.

For this is the distinctive relation of a Son to a Father, and he who denies this, does not hold that the Word is Son in nature and in truth.

She never for a moment doubted that Mr Maguire’s statement was true.

Chapter 33. Vindication of Christian Women

It was to be Llanfeare or nothing.

The two cousins were at Clisson when they first heard that Westerman was actually on his road towards Bressuire, and they had lost no time in taking the best measures in their power to stop his progress, but they had not even hoped that their effort would have been so successful as it proved.

2. Blessed are they whose unrighteousness is forgiven, and whose sins are covered [Psalm 31:1]: and whose sins are buried in oblivion. Blessed is the man to whom the Lord has not imputed sin, nor is there guile in his mouth [Psalm 31:2]: nor has he in his mouth boastings of righteousness, when his conscience is full of sins.

But still what could Clara have done or said?

Thus, so far am I from wishing you not to possess them, that I even wish you to abound in them, only so that you handle them with a view to the common advantage.

And then, at last, George Vavasor was to be made to surrender his bride, taking or having taken the price of his bargain.

London was very empty, and he passed a wretched evening at his club. There were not men enough to make up a pool, and he was obliged to content himself with a game of billiards with an old half-pay naval captain, who never left London, and who would bet nothing beyond a shilling on the game. The half-pay navy captain won four games, thereby paying for his dinner, and then Cousin George went sulkily to bed.

After this Mrs. Winterfield continued to hope for the best, till the platform was filled and the proceedings had commenced.

What is the first thought?

Oh, my political economist, master of supply and demand, division of labour and high pressure,—oh, my loudspeaking friend, tell me, if so much be in you, what is the demand for poets in these kingdoms of Queen Victoria, and what the vouchsafed supply?

“You shall have it again in two months as sure as the sun rises.” That is generally the plea piteous with a lie.

Therefore seek not from the Lord anything without, but seek the Lord Himself, and He will hear you, and while thou yet speakest, He will say, Lo, here I am.

For there is no man who can in the present life very well hope to attain to the great revelations which were given to the Apostle Paul; and of course it is impossible to suppose that anything was accustomed in these revelations to be made known to him but what appertained to wisdom.

‘He used to think,’ continued Madame Faragon, ‘that there was nothing better than a good house in the public line, with a well-spirited woman inside it to stand her ground and hold her own.

There had been an ease in this, an absence of that delay which generally took place between the expression of his desire for money and the acquisition of it,—and this had gratified him.

She would sternly refuse to give any reply; but she would make her refusal in such a manner as to tell the whole truth.

But if you wish it to be altogether unknown that you have authority of administration, you seem to me to be ignorant that the acknowledged authority of the president has great influence as regards the respect of the multitude.

Let these things, then, be so.

Are you afraid that your patrimony perchance may fall short, if you should begin to do liberally from it?

A Cabinet Minister will persuade with words which from an Under Secretary would be inoperative.

This was the abomination discovered at Carræ.

But the life was galvanic in its nature, created by a war galvanism of which the shocks were almost neutralized by mud.

Thus before long they all were satisfied that Aaron Trow was in the cavern before them.

(though he might justly have said so,) but assigned him likewise his crown.

And throughout he is showing that the Angels had no power in the successive times, forasmuch as men continued enemies; they could neither persuade them, nor, if persuaded, could they deliver them from the devil.

All history, all romance, all poetry and all prose, taught him that perseverance in love was generally crowned with success,—that true love rarely was crowned with success except by perseverance.

“Comfortable!” said he.

It means, Rise above the flesh, think not of carnal things.

He comes to it, however, in the last place, because it is last in dignity and rank.

In this way the people of God after they sat down to eat and drink denied God.

And concerning these, he says, the Scripture speaks: Awake you that sleep, and arise, and Christ will give you light.

They were then being preached, they have now been fulfilled: in many things we have God's promise fulfilled already; in some few we have to claim its fulfilment yet.

If any mortal thinks, that day by day,

That point excepted, he had sufficiently learned and believed the Nazarene to be the Lord, the Son of God.

Lord Lovel thought that there had been no correspondence while the young lady had been at Yoxham.

You shall not bear false witness.

Ver. 22. You know the proof of him, that as a child serves a father, so he served with me in furtherance of the Gospel.

This too again rendered them more forward.

The Samothracian and Eleusinian make no disclosures— how much more will silence be kept in regard to such as are sure, in their unveiling, to call forth punishment from man at once, while wrath divine is kept in store for the future?

Cato had found himself obliged to go.

“Isn’t it stupid,—half-a-dozen men getting together in that way?” asked Lady Cantrip.

The merchants and persons in trade have boxes at the windows, for which they pay.

We must see the injured Grecian sooner or later; and we had resolved, much as we feared, that the evil hour should not be postponed.

And added to all this it is said that the Boer is particularly averse to all change, resolving not only to do as his father has done before him, but also that his son shall do the like for the future.

“I haven’t thrown down any torch,” said I.

Mackinnon!

It is also worth while to enquire, whether as the Word and wisdom permeated the whole world, and as the Father was in the Son, the words are to be understood as above or in this way, that He who first of all was girded about with the whole creation, in addition to the Son's being in Him, granted to the Saviour, as being second after Him and being God the Word, to pervade the whole creation.

But the provocation was strong; and she felt that Sir Francis was a man with whom it would be pleasant to form an alliance.

And as you do not know where your flesh went away and disappeared to, so neither do you know whence it grew, Or whence it came again.

Augustus had declared that he intended to dine out.

Had an equal balance been preserved, the South, with its ninety Representatives in the Lower House, would have but twenty-three Senators, instead of thirty, in the Upper.

For the Holy Spirit, indeed, in the person of the apostles, has testified to this, saying, And who has believed our report?

“Yes;—I am getting right. I am not in any fear, if you mean that. I don’t mind telling you everything as it is settled now that you are to be Marie’s husband. I know that you are honest, and that if you could hurt me by repeating what I say you wouldn’t do it.”

Poor Mary was troubled much by these messages.

If this is to be tolerated, your Excellency will tolerate it, and I too will bear it, as I have often before.

Mr. Glascock at once made a decided attempt to bolt; but the minister was on the alert, and was too quick for him.

And what is there to be admired in the honor which is from men?

On your part, however, no example can throughout nature be produced of such a monstrosity as you have imagined, where there is a woman's real and living body, but not a woman's sex.

In September, indeed, the eldest son himself was wont to be there,—probably with a friend or two,—and the fat old servants bestirred themselves, and there was something of life about the place.

Ver. 19. They went out from us; but they were not of us— neither the apostate angels, nor men falling away—but that they may be manifested that they are not of us. With sufficient clearness he distinguishes the class of the elect and that of the lost, and that which remaining in faith has an unction from the Holy One, which comes through faith. He that abides not in faith.

And some indeed were slain by the enemy, but others were placed at Narnii and Perusium (Perugia); and Rome was left, that Perusium might be held.

And he who encourages, does thus especially encourage them from their own example.

Moreover, it is more difficult to begin that which is not, than to repeat that which has been.

Separate them, separate them, ay, and may God separate you from the party of Donatus, and call you back again into the Catholic Church, whence you were torn by them while yet a catechumen, to be bound by them in the bond of a deadly distinction.

Herbert got off his horse at the gate, and gave it to one of the children at the lodge to lead after him.

“No; I will not have you lay your hand upon me. Good night, Mr Montague.” And so she left him.

And I, who chronicle her deeds and endeavour to chronicle her thoughts, feel equally sure that it would have been so.

Something less than twenty hours took them from London to Killaloe, and during four or five of those twenty hours Mr. Monk was unfitted for any conversation by the uncomfortable feelings incidental to the passage from Holyhead to Kingstown.

“I said nothing; as you would have known, only you are so hot. Miss Mackenzie, you quite astonish me; you do, indeed. I had expected to find you temperate and calm; instead of that, you are so impetuous, that you will not listen to a word. When it first came to my ears that there might be something between you and Mr Maguire—”

His walk across the Parks was not made happy by much self-triumph. In spite of his commissionership and coming parliamentary honours, his solitary moments were seldom very happy. It was at his club, when living with Undy and Undy’s peers, that he was best able to throw off his cares and enjoy himself. But even then, high as he was mounted on his fast-trotting horse, black Care would sit behind him, ever mounted on the same steed.

Nevertheless, he was not comfortable, and certainly did not shine at Sir Harry’s table.

He means to say, when we were in the hope of fleshly things, referring to the time when the law, which can be fulfilled only by spiritual love, was in force, in order that by transgression the offense might abound, that after the revelation of the New Testament, grace and the gift by grace might much more abound.

Or how is the rejection of what is false praiseworthy?

The parts of the Law are linked one to the other.

“I do so fear that you will be disappointed,” he said.

For if any one be mean, he that is great sees not this, but has accounted himself again to be inferior even to him, and so becomes great.

Do you call such an one happy, tell me?

And he does not say merely that I could be willing, but using a stronger term, he says even, I could wish (or pray [ηὐχόμην]).

This He said to the prophets also in the Old Testament continually, as well to Jeremiah objecting his youth, [Jeremiah 1:6, 8] as to Moses and Ezekiel shrinking from the office, I am with you, this here also to these men.

But he was not a prophet unto the nations; and thus the truthful word of God makes it necessary, which it has promised to set forth, that he should be a prophet to the nations.

Do not then suppose that we do not fear demons on this account, that we are of a different nature from you. For we are of the same nature, but not of the same worship. Wherefore, being not only much but altogether superior to you, we do not grudge you becoming such as we are; but, on the other hand, counsel you, knowing that all these demons beyond measure honour and fear those who are reconciled to God.

He did not, however, perceive that this was a plausible argument to be advanced against the Christians only by one who was an opponent of the prophetic writings; but Celsus has here put in the mouth of a Jew an objection which a Jew would not have made.

Say but one word to me, Paul, as you know how to say it, and there will be soon an end to that bitterness.

At Du Toit’s Pan there are 1441 mining claims which are possessed by 214 claimholders.

“But Mr Maguire was, of course, aware,” said Solomon Walker, “that there was a prejudice in the public mind against gentlemen appearing as parties to such suits.” Mr Maguire was also aware that he could adduce no evidence of the fact beyond his own unsupported, and, in such case, untrue word, and declared therefore to the attorney, in a very high tone indeed, that on no account would he take any step to harass the lady.

Nothing, however, will tend so much to this as the lessening of the value of diamonds.

His mother and sisters were in favour of Mr. Prendergast’s views, and as it was gradually found by them all that there would not be any immediate pressure as regarded pecuniary means, that seemed at last to be their decision.

One is that of the Hebrews, which the apostle calls the law of sin and death.

And of Dionysus, Homer writes without reserve:—

And what shall I say of Jephthah, who offered up his daughter in sacrifice, she having been the first to meet him as he returned home victorious; whereby he fulfilled the vow which he had made that he would offer to God whatever should meet him first.

But he who proceeds from him is again united to him; and this separation from and union with him is not local, but intellectual in its character.

She sighed deeply and almost sobbed, as she clasped her hands together.

(c) And see how he would put up the judge to a desire of punishing, seeing he had here an opportunity to coerce the man that turned the world upside down!

But she declared that it would suit the next year better than this.

“You are not saying it on your own authority. You have never seen me and Miss Trefoil in a room together.”

Shall we perchance think this, that the ravens call upon God to give them their food?

There was nothing more that either of them could say to the other at the moment, and they went back in silence to the inn.

A cycle of two hundred and eighty-five years from the incarnation of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ had rolled round, when the venerable Theonas, the bishop of this city, by an ethereal flight, mounted upwards to the celestial kingdoms.

Mrs. Proudie is ushered into a world in which she was to make so great an impression.

For I say nothing of the fact that Aaron's rod also produced in a single night what other trees produce in several years.

Here they merely found Abraham, the cripple, harmlessly employed in superintending the boiling of some lumpers, and Andy McEvoy in the other cabin, sitting on his bed; not a drop of potheen—not a grain of malt—not a utensil used in distillation was found, and they had to return foiled and beaten.

For so long as you have many servants, and garments of silk, these things are all superfluities.

To say that Cæsar was justified in the armed position which he took in Northern Italy in the autumn of this year, is to rob him of his praise.

Our hero’s search after his father was not quite of so intricate a nature as was supposed by his uncle, nor so difficult as that made by Japhet under similar circumstances.

trates of the town, when called upon for their adhesion, gave a most sensible answer.

It was a weary journey both for the poor girl and for the old man; but anything was better than delay for another night in Trotter’s Buildings.

She told herself that they were commonplace; but she told herself, also, after his first visit, that she had no right to expect anything else but commonplace words.

But always he gave the Lord thanks and besought the sufferer to be patient, and to know that healing belonged neither to him nor to man at all, but only to the Lord, who does good when and to whom He will.

But yet Brutus was accounted one of the noblest Romans of the day, only second, if second, to Cato in general virtue and philosophy.

Chapter 24.— Passages from the Psalms of David Which Predict the End of the World and the Last Judgment.

But to those who obediently hear the exhortation of truth is given the gift of God itself— that is, to hear obediently; while to those who do not thus hear it is not given.

That all these things should come to pass, I say, our Teacher foretold, He who is both Son and Apostle of God the Father of all and the Ruler, Jesus Christ; from whom also we have the name of Christians.

Large sums were named, and at last in three successive bets Lord Silverbridge backed his horse for more than forty thousand pounds.

A somewhat heroic hero of romance,—such a one, let us say, as Waverley, or Lovel in The Antiquary, or Morton in Old Mortality,—was revolting to him, as lacking those foibles which human nature seemed to him to demand.

“But you agree that we ought to do something about these shares?” said Sir Felix, thinking that this doctrine of forgiveness might be carried too far.

But even robbers have their qualms now and then.

Whom having arrested, he put in ward, having delivered him to four quaternions of soldiers.

We will not admit Their identity nor allow, as a compromise, that Christ is God in some imperfect sense; for God, born of God, cannot be the same as His Father, since He is His Son, nor yet can He be different in nature.

We determined to go to Portland, in Maine, from thence to the White Mountains in New Hampshire—the American Alps, as they love to call them—and then on to Quebec, and up through the two Canadas to Niagara; and this route we followed.

Homily 35 on Matthew

I do not think that New York has been less generous in the use of its money than other cities, or that the men of New York generally are so.

It was to Adam that God said Dust you are and to dust you shall return.

Yet nevertheless the Lord rebuked not his unseasonable confidence, teaching us to bear even with such as these.

And the morrow after, they entered into Cæsarea.

But the words were at once rejected.

[Exodus 31:19] O wondrous circumstance!

And he says that what is filthy and what is pure are one and the same, and what is drinkable and unfit for drink are one and the same.

“Can we do that in one day?”

He almost doubted whether it would not have been better for him to have gone to an hotel in the first instance.

Of course I don’t pretend to understand, but I think there is more fuss about these things than they deserve.

And yet there are simple individuals, who think that our Saviour gave this command to His apostles!

But then had come that terrible fear, and now had come these golden prospects.

Blessed is he whose Helper is the God of Jacob; of this Jacob.

But every act of friendship that he might do for her would be used as proof of the accusation that had been made against him.

She had had no experience of feminine difficulties, and would have no mercy for such labours as those to which her less fortunate niece was driven.

It was thus he argued with himself, but yet, no doubt, he knew well that he did not declare the truth because it would take away something of its sweetness from this friendship with his cousin Lizzie.

How could it be so when they were Gentiles?

They did not start till nine o’clock in the evening, and Madame Melmotte at the moment would fain have been allowed to rest one other night in Bruton Street.

The mother thought that she had discovered in her son something which seemed to indicate a possibility that this very imprudent match might at last be abandoned; and if there were such possibility, surely Lucy ought not now to be brought to the deanery.

And if a man has forgotten anything, when he is reminded of it he is taught.

For light does not produce substantial brightness, nor the understanding generate a substantial word, but the Son of God, it is affirmed, was generated substantially.

But, beyond this, such ground under the tropics offers every inducement to the negro squatter.

When Peter thus spoke, they of course acquiesced, saying: [It does not greatly sadden us to do this, because we are ordered by you, who have been chosen by the foresight of Christ to do and to counsel well in all things; but also because, while it is a heavy loss not to see our lord Peter for one, or it may be two days, yet it is not intolerable.

First be reconciled to him; and should he have any thing against you, yet desist not, before you have reunited the member in friendly concord.

“I never have any tankards or any oysters.”

Mr. Hardy was anxious that everything should be straightforward,—and Sir William assented, with a certain inward peevishness at Mr. Hardy’s stiffnecked propriety.

As he thought of this he cursed his ill luck.

For as soon as Zion travailed, she brought forth her children.

3. Having now, you see, finished all, having discoursed accurately of all virtue, and pointed out the pretenders to it, of various kinds, both such as for display fast and make prayers, and such as come in the sheep's hide; and them too that spoil it, whom He also called swine and dogs: He proceeds to signify how great is the profit of virtue even here, and how great the mischief of wickedness, by saying,

Which, indeed, it might have had, but lost; and lost by that very means whereby it might have had them, that is, by its free will; on account of which there remains nothing to those who are to be delivered, save the grace of the Deliverer.

I began to inquire what had been the nature of English novels since they first became common in our own language, and to be desirous of ascertaining whether they had done harm or good.

“Mamma,—you, you—cursed me.”

The lady stood by unhappy, but still patient, and, as the man was stooping to his work, her eye was on the mustard pot.

The lady, whose name was soon known to be Mrs. Vincent, came in a brougham, which for a time was supposed to be her own peculiar property.

She had thought at first when she saw her father and Ralph together, that Ralph had spoken of his love to Sir Thomas, and that Sir Thomas had allowed him to come; but she soon perceived that this was not the case: and so they walked about together, each knowing that their intercourse was not as it always had been, and each feeling powerless to resume an appearance of composure.

Why, then, do not you constantly preach, Let us eat and drink, for tomorrow we shall die?

For my strength is brought down in need, so that I cannot endure my blessings, until Thou, O Lord, who hast been gracious to all mine iniquities, heal also all mine infirmities; because You shall also redeem my life from corruption, and crown me with Your loving-kindness and mercy, and shall satisfy my desire with good things, because my youth shall be renewed like the eagle's.

And the Lord God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; let Us make him an helpmeet for him.

I should not dare to meet any of your great friends, knowing that I had brought nothing with me but disgrace.

Who of those that know what pleasure really is would say so?

Your most affectionate father,

“He is a mean brute.”

But heretics, in holding false opinions regarding God, do injury to the faith itself; while schismatics, on the other hand, in wicked separations break off from brotherly charity, although they may believe just what we believe.

Well, if of good, why does it cease through amazement?

‘Thank God, we are once more all well,’ she said; ‘and Alaric’s spirits are higher than they were.

It would be absurd to talk about him as dishonest.

Manes said: But tell me, I ask you in turn, how it obtained its kingdom over both the righteous and the sinful.

For begetting alone constitutes not a father; but after begetting, also loving.

For they have marvellously cohered with it by the close adhesion of love.

And yet truly the being able by one's virtue to overcome the incorporeal powers, that were enough to lead to arrogance; or rather arrogance it would not be, for with good reason am I high-minded, and exceedingly high-minded against the evil spirit.

It was a burden to kill any man, and he was not going to kill himself,—at any rate without the reward for which he had been working all his life, and to which he was fully entitled, namely, a seat in the Cabinet.

“I never like to bother your papa about law business.” Particularly not, Mrs. Furnival, when he has a pretty woman for his client!

These three men follow the leading of the light above, and with steadfast gaze obeying the indications of the guiding splendour, are led to the recognition of the Truth by the brilliance of Grace, for they supposed that a king's birth was notified in a human sense , and that it must be sought in a royal city.

“What shall I do? Carry on the battle as long as I can without getting into debt, and then—vanish.”

“Pardon me, my lord,” continued the son, standing just before his father, so as to prevent his leaving the room; “pardon me, but you must listen to what I have to say.”

In that she was right; for whatever favour the young heir to the family honours might retain for his fair cousin, who was at any rate a Trefoil, he had none for his uncle’s wife.

Of the herald of the world, of him who has suffered so much, of him who is equal to assisting tens of thousands ([μυρίοις ἀρκοὕντος]).

One can imagine that they should again have been driven by famine to that cannibalism of which Mr. Bowker saw the recent marks.

The partisans of Meletius, therefore, proposed his association with Paulinus, who condemned the ordination of Meletius, because it had been conferred by Arian bishops; and yet the supporters of Meletius went forward by force into the work they had devised; for they were not few in number, and so placed Meletius on the episcopal throne in one of the suburban churches.

Do we strive and toil to obtain such results by arguments?

And the prophets had predicted that all these things would thus come to pass.

“Neither, thank you.”

James and Boots stood by admiring, with open mouths, and Mr. Dockwrath, with his hands in his pockets, was meditating whether he could not give the order without complying with the terms as to ready money.

I wish you would consider this over and over again, and take care to let me know the product of your consideration.

And again, The grace of the Lord Jesus, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghost be with you all [2 Corinthians 13:14] .

Early in the morning [Luke 21:38] must they resort to Him, who (having said by Isaiah, The Lord gives me the tongue of the learned) added, He has appointed me the morning, and has also given me an ear to hear.

Suppose he could be made to go out yachting, and she be married to somebody else when he’s at sea!” Lady Kingsbury felt that her friend was but little good at a stratagem.

Flesh is flesh after all and human nature no stronger than human nature. Cecilia had consented to bear in silence the idea that she had been jilted, and had endured her mother’s tender little sympathies on the subject. But there was a difficulty to her in suffering this direct statement from her friend. Why would not her friend let the matter be passed by in silence? “It is well,” she said, “that we both repented.”

[Isaiah 58:3] As though they would say, We have done what You have commanded, why do You not render to us what You have promised?

But that was now some months ago, before baby was born; and she was aware also that he had not called her so latterly in presence of her husband.

Isabella’s visit had been partly one of business, it being necessary that certain money affairs should be arranged between her, her brother, and the Major.

She knew that such was her position now.

For every celebration is a celebration of marriage: the Church's nuptials are celebrated.

Thence at any rate it was that Herod was troubled, and sought, and pried, and took in hand to slay Him.

In like manner Claudius teaches; when he tells us that soldiers are wont too to be wreathed in myrtle.

She hesitated, and then the croupier asked her, in that low, indifferent voice which these men always use, whether she desired that her money should remain.

So mildly did the woman speak.

She knew that it behoved her to be very clever at this interview.

“I cannot answer you now;—indeed, I cannot. That is I cannot answer in the affirmative. It is such a solemn thing.”

When He had then raised the spirit of all, and had persuaded them to feel confidence both with respect to themselves and to all the world, He added, that Many that were first shall be last, and last first.

In fact, he knew Wilfred Horton to be a fine fellow.

“When they have settled professions, Nora.”

Or who withholds the hand from its natural activity of touching something, or turns aside the sense of smell from its normal exercise ?

What then is Procession?

But we have this treasure in earthen vessels, that the exceeding greatness of the power may be of God, and not from ourselves.

But when his son told him one evening that the postchaise had been ordered for seven o’clock the next morning, he felt that his son was ungracious and abrupt.

“Well, Roger, what’s in the wind?” said Henry Thorne.

“It’s my own watch, that I have been wearing for some time; but I’ve got another,—two or three, I believe, somewhere upstairs. You mustn’t refuse me. I can’t bear being refused. There are two or three little seals, too, which I have worn. I have taken off the one with my arms, because that’s of no use to you, and it is to me. It doesn’t want a key, but winds up at the handle, in this way,” and the earl proceeded to explain the nature of the toy.

Whether we may decide the question by the parallel of human sons, which are born later than their parents.

Chapter 20 [XIX.]— How a Man Makes a Good or a Bad Tree.

Next, St. Ambrose treats of His oneness with the other two Persons of the Holy Trinity, and shows that His mission in no way detracts from this oneness, but that there is in all the Divine Persons a perfect unity of peace, love, and other virtues.

Gertrude, mindful of their midnight conclaves on Saturdays and

“What is the good of any secret, Laura, when we have been already so open? He tried his ‘prentice hand on you; and then he came to me. Let us watch him, and see who’ll be the third. I too like him well enough to hope that he’ll land himself safely at last.”

“My acquaintance with Mr. Newton is very, very slight. I liked him,—oh, so much. I thought him to be highspirited, manly, and a fine gentleman. I never saw any man who so much impressed me.”

“To go and shoot arrows?”

[1 Corinthians 11:16] We observe patiently and gently charity of spirit, the honor of our brotherhood, the bond of faith, the harmony of the priesthood.

“Of course he’s a prig,” said Sir Francis, as they seated themselves opposite to one another. “But then his wife is a prig too, and I do not see why they should not suit each other.”

For whatever be the knowledge which we are able to obtain of God, either by perception or reflection, we must of necessity believe that He is by many degrees far better than what we perceive Him to be.

Rejoice, you barren that bearest not; break forth and cry, you that travailest not; for she that is desolate has many more children than she that has an husband.

He, too, in his manner, assured himself that a great part of him would escape Oblivion.

With what hope?

A more advanced age was sacrificed to Mercury in Gaul.

At another time we may explain the several parts of the prophecy, leaving none of them unexamined.

Whatsoever you shall bind on earth shall be bound in Heaven.

She would have drawn back, and he would have had the full advantage of the offer.

Further, because he said, a communion of the Body, and that which communicates is another thing from that whereof it communicates; even this which seems to be but a small difference, he took away. For having said, a communion of the Body, he sought again to express something nearer. Wherefore also he added,

The banks on every side were lined with leaning willows, which had been pollarded over and over again, and which with their light-green wavy heads gave the place, from a distance, the appearance of a grove.

Such a feeling as this is very bitter when it first impresses itself on a young mind.

But why do I speak of these trivial things?

From which it is plain that the thunder of the divine voice dwells in old men's ears with a volume of sound beyond the voices of men.

For it was in His power by other means to show at once His agreement with the Father and His own dignity, but the multitude could not ascend so far.

Why did he reveal himself before Christ, whom he could not hinder from appearing?

“If you will let me. I suppose he must know it soon.”

And how could He have become known without miracles?

“Old Mrs. Sneyd, the lady’s mother, was then present?” said Quaverdale.

To David himself; for understanding.

It is forbidden to mortals uninitiated in the Bacchic rites to know.

Eames, as he had purposed, made a leap almost sideways at a thick hedge which divided the field from one of the Guestwick copses.

And are they not proved to be 'an abomination' also 'unto the Lord,' as having 'diverse weights [Proverbs 20:23] ' with them, and with this estimating those other instances, and with that blaspheming the Lord?

But it could not be done on the very day on which the American had gone.

When her father had been with her half-an-hour, and was beginning to think that he could escape and go down to the House,—and he had a rod in pickle for the Speaker’s back, such a rod that the Speaker’s back should be sore for the rest of the session—Rachel began her lengthened conversation with him.

And they worshipped Him.

But, without any delusive representation of images or phantasms, I am most certain that I am, and that I know and delight in this.

A woman who has resorted to a second marriage is held unworthy to be supported by the faithful.

Have they not already sovereignty?

He is moved to tell of things of which he omits to learn the nature before he tells of them—as should be done by a strictly honest fictionist.

Well, if the term imperishable or indestructible is not considered by this maker of an empty system to be privative of destruction, then by a stern necessity it must follow that this shape given to the word indicates the very reverse (of the privation of destruction).

He was to be absent himself for the first week in September, but was to return immediately after that.

Therefore these were not produced for use; but use was produced from them.

Which are bound in the great river Euphrates. By the corners of the earth, or the four winds across the river Euphrates, are [meant] four nations, because to every nation is sent an angel; as said the law, He determined them by the number of the angels of God, until the number of the saints should be filled up. They do not overpass their bounds, because at the last they shall come with Antichrist.

Argument 17.— Gregory Consoles Himself

If, then, in future you have anything to say in accordance with this belief, say it, as you promised.

Is there anything beyond this villainy of the Devil, to contrive the punishment of the preaching, and vengeance for the toils?

(p) And mark Paul's ardor.

And then she saw Mr Bott looming large before her on the top of the staircase.

Such a man was Lord George.

And not only this, but we shall take also the sword of the Spirit, and thus not only ward off his missiles, but smite the devil himself. For a soul that does not despair of herself, and is proof against those fiery darts, will stand with all intrepidity to face the enemy, and will cleave open his breastplate with this very sword with which Paul also burst through it, and brought into captivity his devices [2 Corinthians 10:5]; he will cut off and behead the serpent.

We may believe them to be ambitious, unjust, self-idolatrous, or irreligious; but unless we throw our judgment altogether overboard, we cannot believe them to be a weak people, a poor people, a people with low spirits or with idle hands.

But what, in all parts of the world, can be found nearer to a total formlessness than the earth and the deep?

Anthony Trollope

He would not engage in the battle himself lest he should seem to be taking up arms against one who was still his son, though attempting to destroy his father.

His huntsman was always well mounted, with two horses; but Lord Chiltern would give up his own to the man and take charge of a weary animal as a common groom when he found that he might thus further the object of the day’s sport.

It would be expedient that they should be married from the Melmottes’ house, and the Melmottes would leave town some time in August.

As soon as the money could be raised on the property, the full sum of £4000 was paid to him, that having been the amount with which the Squire had intended to burden the property on behalf of his niece when he was minded to put her out of the inheritance.

If they had seen what death is; if they had seen, I say.

But in the kingdom of Him who came to fulfil the law, not to destroy it, he will bring benevolence and kindness to perfection, when he has carried it out so far as to love an enemy.

And the light of her eyes, made more bright by her tears, shone into his with a heavenly brightness.

In such a community there is no disorder nor diversity, for all the members of the whole body agree in one strong purpose of godliness, and he who glories in the wealth of others is not put to shame at his own poverty.

Surely one may declare as a fact that a Roman Catholic population can never hold its ground against one that is Protestant.

Who would say that He decided anything clearly?

She had never seen Mr. Tregear, but she fancied that she had heard his name, and that the name had been connected with a character different from that which the Duke had given him.

Much rather is the Ruler of the world one; who commands all things, whatsoever they are, with His word, disposes them by His wisdom, and accomplishes them by His power.

“It suited the Italian nobleman for a time to be a Post Office clerk. That is what you mean.”

For the latter failure there is ample excuse.

But to have given and then to refuse—that was the difficulty.

Let those who are wives keep the place and the time that properly belong to them.

But if we are not on a journey, and cannot endure bare feet, we may use slippers or white shoes; dusty-foots the Attics called them, on account of their bringing the feet near the dust, as I think.

But as it is, instead of selecting one of them a man may say that they are both true.

May therefore the Lord our God, who makes men blessed, grant me to understand what to say, and grant you to understand what ye hear: Blessed is the people that understands jubilance.

“You degraded yourself, and her too.”

But he did so;—and told me that Mr. Kennedy was in town.

Of which may we all be deemed worthy, through the grace and lovingkindness of our Lord Jesus Christ, through whom, and with whom, to the Father together with the Holy Ghost, be glory, now and always, for ever and ever.

In bidding her visitor welcome she called her Miss Greenmantle.

But in order that He may thus hold fellowship with God and pray to the Father, He goes up into the mountain; and then, according to Mark, His garments become white and glistening as the light, so as no fuller on earth can whiten them.

Thus, in the case of Pharaoh, He is said to have hardened his heart, and so it is with those who are at all contentious against the words of God.

A few grand trees had been left standing near the house, and the grass around was rich and park-like.

At another time than this, the point would certainly call for a careful enquiry, and the argument would have to be well weighed as to the essence of the soul, as to the principle of her composition, and as to her entering into this body of earth.

And the witness of three is certain.

Christmas had again come around, and it was just a year, — a year and a day, — since she had put her hand out to him through the closed door and had bade him goodbye.

But this creative power itself, while circumscribing by itself the growth of things, has itself no circumscribing bounds; it buries in itself every effort of thought to mount up to the source of God's life, and it eludes the busy and ambitious strivings to get to the end of the Infinite.

There had been such a woman, who had been much illtreated because of her poverty.

The bookroom itself had caught a darker gloom; the backs of the books seemed to have lost their gilding, and the mahogany furniture its French polish.

“Tell her,” said he, “that I am constrained to leave the house because Mr. Tappitt and I cannot agree at the present moment about matters of business.” When this was done he looked at his watch, and started off on his walk to Bragg’s End.

And if one smear the ears of goats over with cerate, they say that they expire a little afterwards, by having their breathing obstructed.

“She won’t care for my boots being dirty.” So at last he elected to walk.

Again; if you retain envy and hatred, what apology have you then I ask?

“So I should, Dorothea,—of course. I have never wanted to be divided from my children. Your going away was your own doing, not mine. I’m sure it made me so wretched I didn’t know what to do at the time. Only other things have come since, that have pretty nearly put all that out of my mind.”

And remember that which I pointed out to you, that I have not brought these matters to an end, but short of the end.

The Scripture further gives the name of gates of death to those sins which lead to destruction, as it terms, on the contrary, good actions the gates of Zion.

Perfections: for to be consummated, is to be perfected.

Scipio, therefore, was not the first to know that he was not alone when he was alone, or that he was least at leisure when he was at leisure.

He appointed the younger one his cup-bearer; the older, Frumentius, he put over his house and made him administrator of his treasures; for he perceived that he was intelligent and very capable in business.

During a few short weeks, he had almost been master, so absolute had been the determination of the old Squire to show to all around him that his son, in spite of the blot upon the young man’s birth, was now the heir in all things, and possessed of every privilege which would attach itself to an elder son.

She could not interest herself in Hetta’s coming marriage, as that marriage was in direct opposition to one of her broken schemes.

And this scrutiny is succeeded by no small anxiety of another kind, to ensure an abundant and unfailing stream of supply as from a fountain; for compulsory poverty is an insatiable kind of evil, querulous and ungrateful.

But now, when the evil has some good mixed with it, the smoke has become more hurtful, so that we, who certainly are bipeds, instead of being sustained by it, are blinded, and suffocated, and killed by it.

Therefore let us also fear, lest now we are liberated from our former evils, we afterwards by our listlessness draw upon us those which are greater!

But not only was his victory purchased with great bloodshed; but when hostilities were finished, hostility survived, and the subsequent peace was bloody as the war.

Again: "It has been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife, let him give her a writing of divorcement; but I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causes her to commit adultery, and is himself an adulterer if he afterwards marries another woman."

For after they have ended the choir, one takes Isaiah and discourses with him, another converses with the apostles, and another goes over the labors of other men, and seeks wisdom concerning God, concerning this universe, concerning the things that are seen, concerning the things that are not seen, concerning the objects of sense, and the objects of intellect, concerning the vileness of this present life, and the greatness of that to come.

And truly may he deserve the imperial title, who has formed his soul to royal virtues, according to the standard of that celestial kingdom.

And that which the barbarian threatened, saying, You shall eat your own dung, and what follows; [Isaiah 36:12] this do these men also make you undergo, not in word, but in deeds; or rather, somewhat even much worse.

The Sicilians, if he could manage the case as he thought it might be managed, would not have a leg to stand upon.

There had been offence to him in this, but that offence he had, in truth, forgiven.

She wrote a piteous letter to him, in which she implored him to allow her to take her two boys away.

What then shall we be, when we shall see face to face?

“I impute nothing to Miss Brown, except that she is false, and mercenary, and cruel.”

Dalrymple paused for a moment. It was certainly true that he had regarded Clara Van Siever as an heiress, and had at first been attracted to her because he thought it expedient to marry an heiress. But there had since come something beyond that, and there was perhaps less of regret than most men would have felt as he gave up his golden hopes. He took her into his arms and kissed her, and called her his own. “Now we understand each other,” he said.

Guests invited to stay a week, and who were conscious of arriving after the first dinner-bell, would probably approach in such a manner.

A tree of a good stock is known by the sweetness of its fruit.

“Indeed I do,—eight hundred a year.”

John then came into the world from grace of God (=Joa=Joannes), and his parents were Memory (about God) and the Oath of our God, about the fathers.

Miss Thoroughbung would not come to Buston again quite at once to disturb him by a farther visit.

But as he was shaving himself, the habitual impatience of his nature predominated, and he became disposed to think that delay would be useless, and might perhaps be dangerous.

Chapter 8. The same continued

“I don’t dislike anybody. Goodnight.”

It was the second which she had received from her friend since she had made it known that she was no longer engaged to her cousin.

By what name, therefore, shall he be called who excels God in power?— since it is greater to make that which is one's own, than to arrange those things which are another's.

No such calculation was made for me or by me.

On the next two days Mr. Grey went to his chambers and returned, without any new word as to Mr. Scarborough and his affairs. One day he did bring back some tidings as to Juniper. “Juniper has got into some row about a horse,” he said, “and is, I fear, in prison. All the same, he’ll get his five hundred pounds; and if he knew that fact it would help him.”

For my first intention was to indicate his principal objections, and then briefly the answers that were returned to them, and subsequently to make a systematic treatise of the whole discourse.

My dearest child, I think you can imagine with what agony I write these words,—with what terrible grief I must have been oppressed before I could have allowed myself to entertain the thoughts which have produced them.

No one looking at them could have imagined that such a father could have told such a daughter that she must marry herself out of the way because as an unmarried girl she was a burden.

“Think it! I know it. It was not likely that there should be much talk about Sir Francis either in the cathedral or at the breakfast; but one can tell from other things whether a subject has been avoided. These are plain when little things would have been said but are not said. There has been no allusion made to their reason for leaving the house.”

For in the 18th book of his Antiquities of the Jews, Josephus bears witness to John as having been a Baptist, and as promising purification to those who underwent the rite.

For although we have a word and wisdom and power of our own, the product of our free inward activity, yet Yours is the absolute generation of perfect God, Who is Your Word and Wisdom and Power; so that He can never be separated from You, Who in these names of Your eternal properties is shown to be born of You.

Then why did it not rest with Peter to make the election himself: what was the motive?

That “ignorant impatience of taxation,” to which it is supposed that we Britons are subject, has not been a complaint rife among the Americans generally.

Yours always sincerely,

Then he paused, looked into her face for a moment, and after that, allowed his eyes again to fall on the ground.

To have been attacked at all in that way would have been too much for her, but to have been called old and unsuitable—for that was, in truth, the case; to hear herself accused of being courted solely for her money, and that when in truth she had not been courted at all; to have been informed that a lover for her must have been impossible in those days when she had no money!

One may also gather the same conclusion from this consideration, above all: since you worship various gods, some one and some another, you of course despise those which you do not worship.

And her quondam husband, since he was now no longer able to prosecute her, directed his assaults against a man, Ptolemæus, whom Urbicus punished, and who had been her teacher in the Christian doctrines.

Since if prayers availed even for the extremely wicked, why did not God say this also when Nebuchadnezzar came, and why did He give up the city?

The figures in the pediment are mean.

Wherefore also waiting is no small reward.

Mr Winterbones was confidential clerk to Sir Roger.

For the truth is simply this, that just as we trace the purple in a robe, so, if we may thus express it, we can discern the New Testament in the texture of the Old Testament; for we see the glory of the Lord mirrored in the same.

They will never certainly, in my opinion, be so foolish as to deny that justice is a virtue.

Rebels from God, they uttered words against Him.

Rom. VI. 19

Fred himself, our hero, was six years older, and should have known better and have conducted his affairs with more wisdom.

[1 Corinthians 10:4] Which certainly refers not to His Godhead, but to His Flesh, which watered the hearts of the thirsting people with the perpetual stream of His Blood.

And these things were not merely promised (he says).

For there will be, as the Lord said, false apostles, false prophets, heresies, desires for supremacy, who, as I conjecture, finding their beginning in Simon, who blasphemes God, will work together in the assertion of the same opinions against God as those of Simon.

But if we ought not to accuse men of things which are acknowledged, much less of those which are disputed; nay, for the offender has a judge. Do not now, I warn you, seize upon the privilege of the Only Begotten. For Him is the throne of judgment reserved.

But He did not merely say, I will, be thou clean, but He also put forth His hand, and touched him; a thing especially worthy of inquiry.

Chapter I. Two Bands

For it was no human power that could set us free from all those evils, but, thanks be to God, who was willing and able to do such great things.

Hence is what the Lord said, when, speaking to those who had their fleshly ears open, He nevertheless told them, He that has ears to hear let him hear; [Luke 8:8] which beyond a doubt he knew that not all had.

It was not right to sit down: for no harm came of this (their not doing it).

The greater part of the population are French in manner, religion, and language, and one would be so glad to attribute to that fact this wretched look of apathetic poverty—if it were only possible.

I have said that Alice Vavasor’s big relatives cared but little for her in her early years; but I have also said that they were careful to undertake the charge of her education, and I must explain away this little discrepancy.

But the whole world, and the parts of it, are in all respects similarly framed in conformity with proportion and harmony.

“I hadn’t so much to try my temper as I have now, and then you must remember, Madame Goesler, that I regard these people as being especially my enemies.”

Mrs. Bold got up from her seat and stood speechless before the woman who was now addressing her in this impassioned way. When the signora thus alluded to herself, the widow’s heart was softened, and she put her own hand, as though caressingly, on that of her companion, which was resting on the table. The signora grasped it and went on speaking.

For of late the infection of a mortal evil has gone abroad among mankind, whose ravages have dealt destruction and death on every hand.

We can never be sure.

Sir—

You had one talent.

‘I never thought the cover went for much,’ said Honybun.

It need not be accounted as quite unnatural that she should have done so without her husband.

And His divinely-inspired disciple, Dionysius, who had so deep a knowledge of things divine, said that the Godhead as a whole had fellowship with us in one of its own subsistences.

But he said to the messengers, 'Tell Narsæus that the Roman emperors will not fight when it pleases him.'

Of course that other “him” is the person she loves the best in the world.

Now that he looked nearer at it all, the difficulties loomed larger than ever, and the rewards seemed to be less, more difficult of approach, and more evanescent.

“We are very lonely, ain’t we, miss, without Mr. Graham to look after?” said Mrs. Baker.

As he crossed quickly by the slippery stones he saw old Jacob Brattle standing before the mill looking on, with his hands in his breeches pockets.

'Did not our heart burn within us,' said the disciples, 'while he opened to us the Scriptures?'

And Mrs. Mountjoy was already prowling round the room after her daughter.

It was agreed between her and Fisker that they were to be taken to New York.

“Don’t talk of yourself in that horrid way, Captain De Baron.”

He endured the censure of having embraced the doctrines of Sabellius.

Lady Ball in Arundel Street

And a wife, Scripture says, that agrees with her husband.

And in another place He says, The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and, behold, a greater than Jonas is here.

But the mistress of the house would not consent to this.

“Then, why on earth—?” But he refrained from finishing his question.

But my dear, marriage is a comfortable thing.

And then in Jerusalem there shall be great lamentation, not the lamentation of mouths or of lips, but the lamentation of the heart; and they shall rend not their garments, but their hearts.

Then ask again; Does He see and know Him with exact vision and knowledge?

One day Mrs. Woodward was sitting with a book in her usual place at the side of Katie’s bed; she looked every now and again at her patient, and thought that she was slumbering; and at last she rose from her chair to creep away, so sure was she that she might be spared for a moment. But just as she was silently rising, a thin, slight, pale hand crept out from beneath the clothes, and laid itself on her arm.

For the water of the deluge was for salvation unto those who were placed within the ark, but it brought death to those without, and yet it was the same water.

But when the Jews perceived so great signs to be wrought in the name of Him, whom, partly through ill-will and partly in ignorance, they crucified, some of them were provoked to persecute the apostles, who were His preachers; while others, on the contrary, marvelling the more at this very circumstance, that so great miracles were being performed in the name of Him whom they had derided as one overborne and conquered by themselves, repented, and were converted, so that thousands of Jews believed on Him.

For the love of Semele proved both his unchastity and the jealousy of Semele.

[1 Corinthians 6:1-9] Why is it that the apostle is so indignant, and that he thus accuses, and upbraids, and chides, and threatens?

and won’t you and Feemy be poor things?

[Genesis 1:18] Now angels are called days.

But she did fear that if she simply told him that it must be done, he would have such a power over her that she would not succeed.

Thus, if all things were made, as in this passage also, through the Logos, then they were not made by the Logos, but by a stronger and greater than He.

[1 Timothy 2:1] But that all were not then believers, is, I suppose, evident unto every one.

On the following day, about one o’clock, Cæsar comes.

Perchance alienated they are from the very womb.

“Lufton is so dilatory,” Mr. Sowerby said.

It is all for nothing then that I have studied so long; that, as Juvenal says, I have so often withdrawn my hand from the ferule.

I have heard also that the Jews murmur against You and wish to deliver You up to torments: I have a city small but pleasant, it would be sufficient for us both.

Having passed over this river, I came to a plain.

“Florence Burton is always clear in what she says.”

Whereupon he wrote to Lizzie, telling her what she had better do, in the kindest manner,—as though there had been no cessation of their friendly intercourse, offering to go with her into court,—and naming an hotel at which he would advise her to stay during the very short time that she need remain in London.

“You may be quite sure of that. And I love you.”

But I know the distinction between flesh and Godhead, and regard as impious all who divide our one Lord Jesus Christ into two sons, as well as those who, travelling in an opposite direction, call the Godhead and manhood of the master Christ one nature.

Whither will you go, if things here are destroyed?

George Vavasor, with much labour, actually did get up the subject of the River Bank.

I give this information to your piety in the confidence that you will both accept what has been resolved upon, and not charge those who assembled, as I have said, with remissness.

“Do you want to murder the man, sir; to murder him?” said the stout gentleman over his shoulder, speaking solemnly into his very ear.

“My dear, you must not hinder me in doing what I think to be a duty. I heard what he said to you and what you replied, and of course I cannot but have my mind full of the subject. Why should you set yourself against him in so fixed a manner?”

I could wish, brethren, that we were rather listening to our father: but even this is a good thing, to obey our father.

The will was very short, and the upshot of it was that every shilling of which the Marquis died possessed, together with his house at Como and the furniture contained in the three houses, was left to our old friend Jack De Baron.

And then you must bear in mind that speaking in the House is but a very small part of a member’s work, perhaps that part which he may lay aside altogether with the least strain on his conscience.

Then he turned his thoughts upon Bozzle, and there came over him a crushing feeling of ignominy, shame, moral dirt, and utter degradation, as he reconsidered his dealings with that ingenious gentleman.

Then again: Be kindly affectioned one to another with brotherly love.

As long as Judæa and the city existed, there were a type, and a lamb, and a shadow, since the law thus commanded : These things shall not be done in another city; but in the land of Judæa, and in no place without [the land of Judæa].

I think I could at least.

“Wherever the hounds go, I’ll follow,” said I.

O then, before he comes, let us send away everything before us to our native country; but here let us be well girded, that we may be enabled to overcome our enemies, whom God grant that we may overcome, through the grace and lovingkindness of our Lord Jesus Christ, with Whom together with the Holy Ghost, be unto the Father glory, strength, honor forever and ever.

And yet he was frequently with her. He was with her aunt, rather, and thus she became used to have him sitting in the room beside her. When in her presence, he would talk of their money-matters, of the old man and his will, in which, luckily, the name of Sir Henry Harcourt was not mentioned; and at last they brought themselves to better subjects, higher hopes—hopes that might yet be high, and solace that was trustworthy, in spite of all that was come and gone.

“Don’t. That’s my advice to ye. Don’t. On any other matter Laurence is the best creature in the world,—but he’s bad to lend money to. You ain’t in any hobble with him, then?”

He can tell of the absolute destruction of a legion through the folly and perhaps cowardice of one of his lieutenants, without heaping a word of reproach on the name of the unfortunate.

For love is not loved, unless as already loving something; since where nothing is loved there is no love.

“Lady Carbury,” said Mr Broune, standing up a second time, “we are neither of us so young as we used to be.”

[Luke 18:13] Both this was a sinner, and that: but the one mocked, the other mourned: the one was a despiser, the other a confessor, of his sins.

And thus it is to be understood that the Scripture, according to its custom, has gone back to the time which had already been passed by the narrative; just as above, when it had mentioned the grandsons of Noah, it said that they were in their nations and tongues; and yet afterwards, as if this also had followed in order of time, it says, And the whole earth was of one lip, and one speech for all.

Were I to die this minute you would find that everything inside the house is your own,—and everything outside except the bare acres.

It was a stiff, uncomfortable letter, unnatural in its phraseology, telling its own tale of grief and shame.

“They is all large, ma’am,” said the driver.

You must look only to God, to the praise that is from Him, perform all things which are pleasing to Him, and go after the good things (that are with Him), not be gaping for anything that is of man: for this mars both fasting and prayer and almsgiving, and makes all our good deeds void.

In the same way, if he asserts that he can perceive the nature of the Only-begotten in the Spirit (Whom he styles the work of an energy which 'follows' the Son), his assertion has no foundation; for here again the energy, while it extends itself into its work, does not reveal therein the nature either of itself or of the agent who exerts it.

But she was strangely deficient in this,—that she could not call these qualities by other names, even to the owners of them.

It is almost impossible to give the meaning of Caesar in English without using thrice as many words as he uses.

On the appointed day, or rather on the night of the appointed day, Lord Kilcullen reached Grey Abbey; for it was about eleven o’clock when his travelling-phaëton rattled up to the door.

And thus there is a whole and perfect cleansing, in the self-same baptismal laver, not only of all the sins remitted now in our baptism, which make us guilty owing to the consent we yield to wrong desires, and to the sinful acts in which they issue; but of these said wrong desires also, which, if not consented to by us, would contract no guilt of sin, and which, though not in this present life removed, will yet have no existence in the life beyond.

She was, she said, Mrs. Quiverful of Puddingdale, the wife of the Rev.

And while frequenting them, He did not preach only, but also showed forth miracles.

And should one say that an antidote cannot heal or hemlock kill, he is unwittingly deceived.

But yet God willing us not to have love but of life eternal, even with these, though innocent delights, mixes bitterness, that even in these we may suffer tribulation, and so He turns all our bed in our infirmity.

So he entered the palace, rather cross, very much soiled as to his outer man; and in this condition went up a certain small staircase which was familiar to him, to a small parlour which adjoined Mrs. Proudie’s room, and there awaited the arrival of the lady.

Do you see how savage he was?

Nay, covet not a pin, O Pamphilus,

The doctor, as he re-entered the house, could not avoid smiling, for he thought of Dr Fillgrave’s last patient at Boxall Hill. “It’s a question to me,” said he to himself, “whether Dr Fillgrave will ever be induced to make another visit to that house, even with the object of rescuing a baronet out of my hands.”

As she was thinking of all this, Mr. Emilius, the clergyman, was announced.

On the Saturday morning it became known to him and his sister that the false report had been in the London newspapers, and then they had found themselves compelled to send telegrams to every one who knew them, to the Marquis, and to the lawyer in London, to Mr. Roberts, and to the housekeeper at Hendon Hall.

An explanation that we may not appear to recommend separation from wives.

I begrudge the black men nothing that they can honestly lay hands on; but I think that we shall benefit neither them nor ourselves by attempting with a false philanthropy to make them out to be other than they are.

“And nothing that he would not do for you, my dear. But that is all as it should be. He is a highspirited, good boy; and if he will think a little more of the business and a little less of cricket, he will make an excellent husband.”

As for going among a people whose whole minds were filled with affairs of the war, and saying nothing about the war, I knew that no resolution to such an effect could be carried out.

You will also give us confidence, if you will return to us an answer in writing.

She had not been long there before Sir Lionel had heard all the news.

Up above the falls for more than a mile the waters leap and burst over rapids, as though conscious of the destiny that awaits them.

She would face it all.

It is indeed a great disgrace that any human being should be so mad, but for the present let us consider the matter according to the opinion of the multitude.

On his short upper lip he had a moustache as well formed as his eyebrows, but he wore no other beard.

“ Look at me,” says one; “ I have been thirty years without leaving it, and have never had a headache.” I look and see a remarkably hale man, of forty I should say, but he says fifty.

14. How great is that excellence! As a servant, You wash the feet of Your disciples; as God, You send dew from heaven. Nor do You wash the feet only, but also invitest us to sit down with You, and by the example of Your dignity dost exhort us, saying: You call Me Master and Lord, and you do well, for so I am. If, then, I the Lord and Master have washed your feet, you ought also to wash one another's feet. [John 13:13-14]

Or me to whom you did not write?

When that shall be fulfilled in us which he says, When this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality.

The weapons of the lion are a hairy mane, pointed claws, and sharp teeth.

I had to get special leave before I could ask so dear an old friend as your Grace.

“And why should he think that I can manage his wife? She was the mistress out there as she is in here. Mr Palliser has been unreasonable. Not that it signifies.”

Very late that night the servants heard him as he opened the door and walked across the hall, and made his way up to his own room.

If you will believe me, I have never been an Origenist: if you will not believe me, I have now ceased to be one.

From the Fifth Chapter

“I don’t know, sir,” said Charlie, again moving away with excellent dignity, and she at once attached herself to Alice who was close by.

“Sir Thomas knows you are giving it?”

You hear of God and God; you hear of Our image.

Neither do they say that adultery is an evil; for if the husband does not know, or does not care, there is, they say, no evil in it.

She wrote to him, because she possessed information which it was necessary that she should communicate.

How one traces the effect of her training in the life of our Scotch Mary.

For I am but a servant, and the Jews still call my master a magician.

“It must do,” said Arabella.

You, wandering through the market down to the river, are as much in your rights as the man who is at work.

And a great element of happiness was added to us all in the affectionate and life-enduring friendship of the family of our close neighbour Colonel Grant.

Volume II Chapter XIII. at Little Alresford

I’m always able to work, and few men work much harder.

Scripture passages explained.

For all things which are not in our hands He has predetermined by His foreknowledge, each in its own proper and peculiar time and place.

“Then I trust that you may never be his wife,” said Carlo.

Aurelius of Utica said: Since the apostle says that we are not to communicate with other people's sins, what else does he do but communicate with other people's sins, who holds communion with heretics without the Church's baptism? And therefore I judge that heretics must be baptized, that they may receive forgiveness of their sins; and thus communion may be had with them.

What then says the woman?

While she was yet in London she had hardly realized her satisfaction, and there were doubts then whether the cup might not be dashed from her lips before it was tasted.

He does not anger you by his intrusion, which is not specially addressed against yourself.

But he hardly arrested the torrent of his maledictions as he did so.

For God neither made the sheep scarlet or purple, nor taught the juices of herbs and shell-fish to dye and colour wool, nor arranged necklaces with stones set in gold, and with pearls distributed in a woven series or numerous cluster, wherewith you would hide the neck which He made; that what God formed in man may be covered, and that may be seen upon it which the devil has invented in addition.

Sir Thomas, who was much pressed as to time, took a day to consider.

[Isaiah 40:8] Let the disciples also be warned, lest their hearts be overcharged with surfeiting and drunkenness, and cares of this world; and so that day come upon them unawares, like a snare — if indeed they should forget God amidst the abundance and occupation of the world.

“When did you see her?”

And this, although it is contrary to the truth of the Scriptures, is still a great and excellent argument for the divinity of Christ, who is so far God, except as Son of God, born of God, that very many heretics— as we have said— have so accepted Him as God, as to think that He must be pronounced not the Son, but the Father.

This also she pulled, and waited till some one should come.

Nay not of a rude savage only, but of any who is more savage than men of the present day.

But I deny that it is true virtue; because it is not that heavenly principle, but is altogether of the earth, since it produces no effect but that which remains on the earth.

We, indeed, on our part, could not possibly doubt that in Christ there was no sin to conquer—born as He was in the likeness of sinful flesh, not in sinful flesh itself.

And when they saw the star above Pege, and the diadem with the star and the stone, and the statues lying on the floor, they said: O king, a root (offspring) divine and princely has risen, bearing the image of the King of heaven and earth.

Tears show even this bodily countenance beautiful; for they win the spectator to pity, they make it respected in our eyes.

Sowerby walked up the stairs.

From these cottages there was a path across the fields back to Bullhampton, which led by the side of a small wood belonging to the Marquis.

“And said things,—well,—things which he ought not to have said.”

He is unwilling to pay any wages, but is always ready to work himself and to make his children work.

“It’s the poetry of euphemism,” Robinson once said to Poppins;—but he might as well have talked Greek to him.

But if we are to rely only on that sentence which you quote in your letter, wherein the Lord says, When they deliver you up, take no thought how or what you shall speak, for it shall be given you in that hour what you shall speak; for it is not you that speak, but the Spirit of your Father that speaks in you [Matthew 10:19], I say that Holy Scriptures have been given us in vain, if, being filled with the Spirit, we have no need of external words.

Divine, that he might establish the adherents of the faith.

They are in a measure passionate, and this again is common to them with men.

“It will be best that I should tell her the whole,” Florence had said, “and then I shall be saved the pain of any direct communication with him.” Her brother, to whom Cecilia had repeated this, applauded his sister’s resolution.

HOGGETT. For the matter o’ that, if a man ain’t paid by them as employs him, he must pay hisself. Them’s my notions. Look at that. (Shows the sixpence.)

His hair, which had been jet black, was now tinged with gray, but his face bore no sign of years.

And what the fruits are by which we may know a good tree, the very same apostle goes on to tell us: But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, long-suffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, meekness, temperance.

He is describing Pompey when Cæsar after his Gallic wars had crossed the Rubicon, and the two late Triumvirates—the third having perished miserably in the East—were in arms against each other.

I didn’t doubt it was sharp work; but even with valour, or without valour, what could sedition and perjury avail against truth and loyalty!

No; she would have scorned to betray any woman; and that woman whom she had not betrayed should have shown the same feeling towards her.

He and his father led her the divil’s own life mewed up there, because she wouldn’t be a nun.

But he had not as yet seen Violet Effingham, and he was beginning to think that this romance about Violet might as well be brought to a close.

They remained behind to whom they were sent, carrying the books, understanding not the truth: having the tables of the Testament, and not holding the inheritance.

It was fourteen days from that time before I reached London, but the fourteen days to me were not unpleasant.

Yet it is still more a matter of wonder, how it was that the power of those magicians, which was able to make serpents, when it came to very small flies, failed altogether.

Nor was this merely the issuing of a bare command but the emperor's good will contributed much to its being carried into effect: for he allowed some the use of the public means of conveyance, while he afforded to others an ample supply of horses for their transport.

For as the Son of man is Lord of the sabbath, [Matthew 12:8] and not the slave of the sabbath as the people are, so He who gives the law has power to give it until a time of reformation, [Hebrews 9:10] and to change the law, and, when the time of the reformation is at hand, also to give after the former way and after the former heart another way and another heart, in an acceptable time, and in a day of salvation.

“There is time enough for all that, Mary,” he said, with his pleasantest smile, and then left her.

There had been a sort of quasi-connection between Miss Baker and the elder Miss Gauntlet—a connection of a very faint local character—in years gone by.

“See,” he would muse, “how cunningly the creature works, now back to his earth, anon stealing an unsuspected run across country, the clever rascal;” and his ethical disapproval ever, as usual, with English critics of life, in the foreground, clearly enhanced a primitive predatory instinct not obscurely akin, a cynic might say, to those dark impulses he holds up to our reprobation.

TOOGOOD. And you just asked her,-for a loan?

The next session came, and, contrary to custom, the bill came also.

But I do say that although they were free from consent to depraved lusts, they nevertheless groaned concerning the concupiscence of the flesh, which they bridled by restraint with such humility and piety, that they desired rather not to have it than to subdue it.

Justly did he turn out so great a man, whom the whole Church elected, justly was it believed that he whom all had demanded was elected by the judgment of God.

“He is an active man.”

I did not like Mrs. Brumby, but it might be that in her the age would find another De Stag.

For this also is the work of the loving-kindness of God, that our struggles are not protracted to a great length, but that after struggling for a brief, and tiny twinkling of an eye (for such is present life compared with the other) we receive crowns of victory for endless ages.

He that did evil shall not draw near unto the Judge.

“Ah, Henri!” said the Marquis. It was the only reproach he uttered, though the words of his son, intended as they were to excite hope, and to give comfort, had been to him most distasteful.

Threefold was our partition; each obtained

“I don’t say that, Frank. This is an important business, and let us go through it steadily. I would certainly like to have him again at my feet. Whether I would deign to lift him up again is another thing. Is not that natural, after what he has done to me?”

She paused a moment before she replied. “Sam hasn’t done any harm to nobody,” she said.

To whom knock, that it may be opened to me?

Of what use to her would be a necklace always locked up in an iron box, which box, for aught she knew, myrmidons from Mr. Camperdown might carry off during her absence from the house?

And there will not prevail any rumour or knowledge in regions below, concerning beings whose dwelling is placed above, lest subjacent souls should be wrung with torture from longing after impossibilities.

But no man now presumes, let the contest go as it will, that Maryland and Delaware will go with the South.

“Questions to be asked in Parliament? Notices of motions, Amendments in Committee, and that kind of thing?”

Do you not know, that if you praise yourself, God will no more praise you?

“The fact is,” said Harold Smith, recurring again to his own situation as an ejected god, “that the House does not in the least understand what it is about;—doesn’t know what it wants.

“But I think he’s all right—eh, Grady?”

The mountains burn, and last.

But what is the fruit of righteousness, but tranquillity of mind?

16. He therefore punished her with exile, and took away all her property. Many others, unable even to listen to the threats of violation from the heathen rulers, endured every form of tortures, and rackings, and deadly punishment.

[John 20:6] And Simon came after him, and entered into the [14] [Arabic, p. 201] sepulchre, and saw the linen laid; [John 20:7] and the scarf with which his head was bound was not with the linen, but wrapped and laid aside in a certain place.

Of that which we are now living?

The same style of Scriptural narrative occurs abundantly in the Gospels, as when the devil is said to have placed Jesus on a lofty mountain, that he might show Him from thence all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them.

For in that lesson of the Prophet, wherein is written, many more are the sons of her that was forsaken, than of her that has the husband: a little after unto the same is said, and He that has delivered you, shall be called the God of Israel of the universal earth.

And had she accepted this pearl of men, with her position, with her manners and beauty and appearance, such a connection would have been as good as an assured marriage for every one of Sir Marmaduke’s numerous daughters.

I have also written a considerable book against the heresy of Pelagius, being constrained to do this by some brethren whom he had persuaded to adopt his fatal error, denying the grace of Christ.

“At any rate, Adela, I could not withstand the offer when it was made to me.”

Those lessons were sometimes prosecuted in the evening, and those evening studies sometimes resulted in a little dance.

“And a kiss.” She just turned herself a little round, with her eyes bent upon the ground.

[Isaiah 50:3] This will be the day, concerning which Amos also writes: And it shall come to pass in that day, says the Lord, that the sun shall go down at noon and the earth shall be dark in the clear day.

Are not the Arians, who are so zealous against Athanasius, and scruple not to speak and write anything against him?

Another Fragment

[Ι] Judgment shall moisten the earth with the sweat of its standard,

Let us see, therefore, whether that is not some other sword, which has so different an action.

All vices when overcome grow feeble, and when beaten are day by day rendered weaker, and both in regard to place and time grow less and subside, or at any rate, as they are unlike the opposite virtues, are more easily shunned and avoided: but this one when it is beaten rises again keener than ever for the struggle; and when we think that it is destroyed, it revives again, the stronger for its death.

In this condition he went back to the house, and so bitter to him were the misfortunes of the world that he would hardly condescend to speak while enduring them.

Gus was very kind to him, and he felt grateful to her.

He was worsted before the Philistines, and he slew himself with his own sword, when he saw that the battle had overcome him.

I have the strength of which I tell you.

For if the Lord did not order the steps of man, so crooked are they naturally, that they would always be going through crooked paths, and by pursuing crooked ways, would be unable to return again.

For the soldier, when his time is ended, lays aside his arms, and leaving the rank which he held, is dismissed as a veteran to his own land, that he may obtain rest after the toils of a laborious life, and cause others to be more ready to undergo labour in the hope of future repose.

After all this could he refuse to grant the favour of a last interview?

It was not surprising that Lord Kingsbury should have been unhappy when Roden was shown up into his room, as Mr. Greenwood had been with him.

For God makes His sun to shine on the just and on the unjust, [Matthew 5:45] and sent the Lord Himself to the just and the unjust.

Look on them; let faith be the eye of him who would behold them.

This we have done.

“She would not come with me,” he said, pointing up the stairs on which Mrs. Roden was now standing.

Since, according to my opinion, the grades here in the Church, of bishops, presbyters, deacons, are imitations of the angelic glory, and of that economy which, the Scriptures say, awaits those who, following the footsteps of the apostles, have lived in perfection of righteousness according to the Gospel.

Since then the man, not the god, of the world in his wisdom knew not God, whom indeed he ought to have known (both the Jew by his knowledge of the Scriptures, and all the human race by their knowledge of God's works), therefore that God, who was not acknowledged in His wisdom, resolved to smite men's knowledge with His foolishness, by saving all those who believe in the folly of the preached cross.

13. That we must not curse

For, As far as the east, he says, is from the west, so far has He set our iniquities from us.

No attempt shall here be made to award the palm of superior merit; but it shall be asserted boldly, that no man need desire a prettier girl with whom to fall in love than was Isabel Lownd.

As he cantered on among the trees, twisting here and there, and regulating his way by the stars, he asked himself whether it would not be better for him to go home and lay himself down by his wife and sleep, and await the worst that these men could do to him.

“Do not scold her,” said the old man. “She is a good girl.”

[John 6:60] were confounded, and waited not until He should flow and stream upon them when the Scriptures were revealed.

As soon as they were gone, Feemy made her father understand who had been there, and obtained his consent to her proposed visit, which he gave, saying at the time, “God knows, my dear, whether you’ll ever come back, for your brother’s determined to part with the owld place if he can, in spite of all your poor father can say to the contrary.”

And perhaps some one may wonder why I, who cannot speak, venture to write.

But who can go into everything of this sort?

[John 6:41] You have therefore learned to answer the tempter, when pressed with hunger.

For since in this consists all the faith and all the worship of the Church; viz., to confess that Jesus is very God; who can more dissolve His glory and worship than one who denies the existence in Him of all that we all worship?

It must be so I suppose.’ So Emily had argued to herself, making the excuse altogether on behalf of her friend.

He Who raised David His servant from the Shepherd's work to the Throne, and Your Reverence from the flock to the Work of the Shepherd: He that orders our affairs and those of all who hope in Him according to His own Will: may He now put it into the mind of Your Reverence to know the dishonour which I have suffered at the hands of my Lords the Bishops in the matter of their votes, in that they have agreed to the Election, but have excluded us.

I thanked my friend for the caution and did not ascend the mountain.

Jacob therefore wrestled, and prevailed: he held Him and when he seemed to have conquered Him asked to be blessed of Him.

“That is all—at least I believe so. I had heard myself that some such threat had been made, but I did not think that any tidings of it had got abroad.”

“It should have had no force. We should not have taken the man’s good things, and have subjected him to the injury which may come to him by our bad name.”

This then He establishes here also, but in a manner less invidious, and more measured, as became Him speaking to His mother. For He said not at all, She is not my mother, nor are those my brethren, because they do not my will; neither did He declare and pronounce judgment against them; but He yet left in it their own power to choose, speaking with the gentleness that becomes Him.

At last the two ladies came down the stairs, and the boy was with them,—and the woman of the house.

[Colossians 2:4, 8] And again, Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ; [Colossians 2:8] branding not all philosophy, but the Epicurean, which Paul mentions in the Acts of the Apostles, [Acts 17:18] which abolishes providence and deifies pleasure, and whatever other philosophy honours the elements, but places not over them the efficient cause, nor apprehends the Creator.

Having, says he, the same conflict which you both saw in me, and now hear to be in me.

He himself reached the place late in the evening by train from London.

Do not act in this way today, and desist tomorrow.

I’ve tried to go alone and I find that does not answer.

If I can find myself here of an afternoon when there shall be another two hours for me, safe before the sun shall set, with my stick in my hand, and my story half-conceived in my mind, with some blotch of a character or two, just daubed out roughly on the canvas, then if ever I can go to work, and decide how he and she, and they shall do their work.

Indeed, in those days Lily reigned as a queen at the Small House.

As he went he gave sundry directions to porters and clerks, as was his wont, and then walked off intent upon his usual exercise before he should reach his home.

And no wonder, since the storehouses of the good liberally lay open to all. Nor did avarice intercept the divine bounty, and thus cause hunger and thirst in common; but all alike had abundance, since they who had possessions gave liberally and bountifully to those who had not. But after that Saturnus had been banished from heaven, and had arrived in Latium,—

[Matthew 5:5] And the meek are those who have quelled the battle of unbelief in the soul, the battle of wrath, and lust, and the other forms that are subject to them.

Homily 4 on Titus

He was well educated, given to reading, prudent, steady in his habits, a man likely to rise in the world; and she loved him.

But here I think that it becomes the writer, whether he be historian, biographer, or fill whatever meaner position he may in literature, to declare that no beneficence can accompany such a form of government.

For should the waves of temptation rise, they cannot reach to his feet.

All the sisters were clothed alike.

Now the Lord is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.

For the Father begot the Son Very God, called Emmanuel; and Emmanuel being interpreted is, God with us [Matthew 1:23] .

“He has dared to tell us nothing,” said Mrs. O’Hara.

This would have been plainly to show ingratitude to the Lord, and to act against His commandment, and in contradiction to the practice of the Saints.

Chapter 34 [XXX.]— A Man's Sin is His Own, But He Needs Grace for His Cure

TOOGOOD. And had been lost by one Soames with his pocketbook.

73. Moreover, that masters should be the more gentle

[When I had thus spoken, the whole multitude of the priests were in a rage, because I had foretold to them the overthrow of the temple.

For what mortal is he who shall worthily declare your praise, of whom we learn that you from nothing called creation into being, and illumined it with your light; that you regulated the confusion of the elements by the laws of harmony and order?

The thing was settled, and that was enough for her.

When Isdigerdes— for that was the king's name— heard these words, he determined to dismiss Maruthas, notwithstanding the reverence with which he regarded him.

But ye seek to kill Me.

Again, if those who insult us be our friends, in that case too we bear it: or also our superiors, in that case also we bear it: how then is it not absurd, that in the case of these three, friends, madmen, and superiors, we bear it, but where they are of the same rank or our inferiors, we do not bear it?

Use not filthy communication.

“I think Sir Abraham will not be long in letting Master Bold know what he’s about. I fancy I hear Sir Abraham cross-questioning him at the Common Pleas.”

“Well, the born ruffian! Does he dare to accuse me of wishing to rob his sister! Now, Mr Daly, av’ the blessed thruth is in you this minute, don’t your own heart know who it is, is most likely to rob Anty Lynch?—Isn’t it Barry Lynch himself is thrying to rob his own sisther this minute? ay, and he’d murdher her too, only the heart within him isn’t sthrong enough.”

“And why not I as far as you?”

Alaric had, as he thought, answered his love by treachery; and there was that in Norman’s heart which would not allow him to forgive one who had been a traitor to him.

What then is, Understanding to David himself?

Let us become compassionate, let us become pitiful, that so we may be well-pleasing to God, and obtain the good things promised to those that love Him, by the grace and lovingkindness of our Lord Jesus Christ, with whom, etc.

It is of the hotels that I speak; and of them I again say that eating in them is a disagreeable task—a painful labor.

But and if any doubt, let him hear a more open sentence.

And I say this, not because I exhort you to worship images, but because Peter, seeming to free your souls from terrible images, drives mad the mind of each one of you by a more terrible image, introducing God in a shape, and that, too, a God extremely just,—an image which is accompanied by what is terrible and awful to the contemplative soul, by that which can entirely destroy the energy of a sound mind.

In the third place, with respect to the mile, to which He says that two miles are to be added, He enjoins that you should bear with even twice as much more: thus signifying that whether it be somewhat less than the original demand, or just as much, or more, that any wicked man shall wish to take from you, it is to be borne with tranquil mind.

Didcot, eh?

Not far removed from Mount Olympus, but somewhat nearer to the blessed regions of the West, is the most favoured abode of Themis.

But on the following day there came a worse blow than Sir Alured’s single line.

But what means, The Scribes and Pharisees, which were of Jerusalem? In every one of the tribes were they scattered abroad, and divided into twelve parts; but they who occupied the chief city were worse than the others, as both enjoying more honor, and having contracted much haughtiness.

Your own F. N.

“I hope they will,” said Dorothy, “and I do not see any reason against it. They have known each other a long time.”

For, having set forth the praises of the Supreme God, whom you confessed to be king, most mighty, the maker of all things, the fountain of honours, the parent of all, the creator and preserver of all living creatures, you took away the kingdom from your own Jupiter; and when you had driven him from the supreme power, you reduced him to the rank of servants.

Now this he said, both to show his love of him, and to prepare them to look on him with respect.

[Luke 22:41a] And he withdrew from them a little, [8] the space of a stone's throw; [Mark 14:35b] and he kneeled, and fell on his face, and prayed, so [9] that, if it were possible, this hour might pass him.

“So they tell me. A dean can go where he likes. He has no cure of souls to stand in the way of his pleasures.”

And if these things be not added, the rest are useless.

For He needs nothing; and the beneficence and benignity which flow from the Lord terminate in us, being divine benevolence, and benevolence resulting in beneficence.

In regard to all those various interests with which he was brought in contact, he knew when to hold fast to his own claims, and when to make no claims at all.

Through him our forefather Adam was cast out for disobedience, and exchanged a Paradise bringing forth wondrous fruits of its own accord for the ground which brings forth thorns.

But now whom shall we even entreat, when God is outraged by us?

Surely that is enough to say in answer to their talk about Greater.

“I’m sure, Madame, I don’t know why any girl should try to make herself look ugly, if God has made her as beautiful as Mademoiselle Agatha.”

An old gentleman who had been connected with the turf all his life, and who would not have scrupled, by square betting, to rob his dearest friend of his last shilling, seconded the proposition,—telling all the story over again.

Xystus likewise, the successor of Caelestinus, wrote on the same subject and to the same Nestorius and the Eastern bishops, giving the views of the Western bishops against his error.

But even Quintus Slide, as he wrote his article, felt that he was hoping against hope.

In the first book are the certain gods, in the second the uncertain, in the third, and last of all, the chief and select gods.

She did think that he was dying.

For requiring their blood He has remembered [Psalm 9:12].

‘A letter to Urmand,’ he said, as he took the paper suspiciously into his hands.

Lady Tringle was driven up to the house, and then taken through the hall into a small sitting-room, where for a moment she was alone.

“ She’ll have to own he’s been and .done it now,” said Grimes, looking down upon the man, and alluding to his wife’s goodnatured obstinacy.

Part IV Chapter X. Mr. Peacocke Goes

Sed tamen ne quis divina præ cepta circumscribere se putet posse, adduntur ilia, ut omnis calumnia, et occasio fraudis removeatur, adulterum esse, qui a marito dimissam duxerit, et eum qui præ tercrimen adulterii uxorem dimiserit, ut alteram ducat; dissociari enim corpus et distrahi Deus noluit.

That is, the bounty of the giver is more blessed than the need of the receiver, where the gift is not supplied from money that has been kept back through unbelief or faithlessness, nor from the stored-up treasures of avarice, but is produced from the fruits of our own labour and honest toil.

At the end of an hour and a half the two ladies retired, and Jael disrobed herself, and Miss Van Siever put on her customary raiment.

Upon Him shall My sanctification flourish [Psalm 131:18].

Nor did she hear from her sister till after Sir Hugh had left her.

It was thus agreed between them that the necessary information should be at once given to the squire, and that the old, well-loved house should be left for ever.

And therefore of his own will did he present himself

In alleging that what is just constitutes a third principle, and that it is placed intermediate between what is good and bad, Prepon of course is not able to avoid (the imputation of inculcating) the opinion of Empedocles.

[Romans 13:8-10] So also is it said, You shall love the Lord your God with all your heart, and you shall love your neighbour as yourself.

“What I mean is that Mr. Greystock is,—at least, I should think so from what I hear,—the very last man in the world to marry for money.”

When He willed, and as He willed, He manifested His word in the times determined by Him, and by Him He made all things.

Through the assisting mercy of God, the snares of the Manichæans having been broken to pieces and left behind, having been restored at length to the bosom of the Catholic Church, I am disposed now at least to consider and to deplore my recent wretchedness.

For it has, At the end, corrupt not for David himself unto the inscription of the title.

Then, as if not satisfied with his conjectures, he cites Homer as a most trustworthy testimony, who speaks thus:—

“Oh, by-the-by, Crosbie,” said Butterwell, coming into his room, soon after his arrival at his office on that day of his solitary breakfast, “I want to say just a few words to you.” And Butterwell turned round and closed the door, the lock of which had not previously been fastened. Crosbie, without much thinking, immediately foretold himself the nature of the coming conversation.

She read the beginning—”Dearest Grace.”

XLVII. The Word does not bid us renounce property; but to manage property without inordinate affection; and on anything happening, not to be vexed or grieved; and not to desire to acquire. Divine Providence bids keep away from possession accompanied with passion, and from all inordinate affection, and from this turns back those still remaining in the flesh.

The two widowed sisters were still at the great house when Sir Henry Clavering, with Harry and Fanny, went to Stratton, but they left it on the following day.

Let us run then, my brethren, let us run, and love Christ.

And so you see that there speaks through the Creed the Scripture itself, from which the Creed acknowledges that it is itself derived.

‘Payment!’ said the editor.

[41] [Luke 11:43] Woe unto you, Pharisees! Because ye love the highest places in the synagogues, and salutation in the marketplaces.

Of both of these will void the age eternal be.

On this subject she must make up her mind, and in doing so she laboured with all her power.

This I think is to be accepted, for the author of the work describes himself as a prætorian prefect.

Mr. Fenwick therefore was all but convinced that Jack the Grinder was the gentleman with whom he had had the encounter, and that the grinder’s back had withstood that swinging blow from the life-preserver.

The friends of this man, that remain to our day, relate many other facts concerning him.

(The Spirit) combines that Church which the Lord has made to consist in three.

“But I think that, after all, they are juster than we are,” continued Lady Ongar—”juster and truer, though not so tender-hearted.

“My dear boy, he is quite at your service; for goodness’ sake do let me have a little wine, Frank—quite at your service; any riding I have now is after the haymakers, and that’s all on the grass.”

He is said to be living in exile, still an heresiarch, and it is most likely so.

And in his triumph chaplets were brought to him by those who beheld.

“Very sad, very sad indeed. How Fillgrave would have liked to have seen this case. He is a clever man, is Fillgrave—in his way, you know.”

Nor, even were Folking his own at this moment, would he live there!

His step was so rapid and his hand and arm moved so dexterously, that no conceivable number would have been too many for him.

She tried to escape from his embrace,—not with persistency, not with the strength which always suffices for a woman when the embrace is in truth a thing to be avoided, but clutching at his fingers with hers, pressing them rather than loosening their grasp.

And our distrust would not be diminished if the pay accorded to the work were so small that no lawyer in good practice could afford to accept the situation.

“Well, Mrs. Cox,” said the major, accosting her.

For neither is the toil the same to pluck up first what has taken root amiss, and then to sow, as to plant a clear ground.

The number twelve four times three do make.

But nothing happening after could make it right that a young lady should come home from hunting in a postchaise alone with a young unmarried man.

When by these and other arguments she had wrought herself to the necessary pitch of resolution, she cast from her as so many hindrances all her ornaments and worldly attire.

For no one was comparable to him for grace and beauty of person, or height of stature; and he so far surpassed his compeers in personal strength as to be a terror to them.

“Isa, are you in love with Herbert?” Agnes asked her, as they were together in their room one night.

Fare you well.'

By these he unites himself to the divine choir, from continual recollection, engaged in contemplation which has everlasting remembrance.

Bold was now choking with passion. He had let the archdeacon run on because he knew not with what words to interrupt him; but now that he had been so defied and insulted, he could not leave the room without some reply.

“You will do nothing, Frank?”

For at this period of his life such rumours were afloat about him, originating probably in his hopes as to Violet Effingham and his intimacy with Madame Goesler.

Now this seemed to be a great gift because both the Apostles received it first, and the most among the Corinthians had obtained it.

Lady Persiflage had never believed in the obstacles from the first.

And hence they are not therefore not one essence, because the Father is not the Son, and the Son is not the Father, or because the Father is un-begotten, but the Son is begotten: since by these names only their relative attributes are expressed.

If then in respect to the doctrines and the teaching the Son is like the Father, then the Father according to them will be Father in name only, and the Son will not be an exact Image, or rather will be seen to have no propriety at all or likeness of the Father; for what likeness or propriety has he who is so utterly different from the Father?

And so, since we men would not acknowledge God through His Word, nor serve the Word of God our natural Master, it pleased God to show in man His own Lordship, and so to draw all men to Himself.

[The faith which is by Him [ἡ] [δι᾿ αὐτοὕ πίστις] .]

She was unhappy because she knew that she could not rule herself to her own happiness; because, even at this moment, she was aware that she was wrong.

All they that go by the way have spoiled him: that is, all the heathen that go by the way, meaning, all who pass through this life, have spoiled Israel, have spoiled David.

“That depends, sir, on how things eventuate. But, Mr. Green, satisfaction of that description is not what I desiderate on the present occasion. I wish to know whether. Mr. Pryor is, or is not, engaged to marry Miss Ophelia Gledd.”

But you do not believe that the dead are raised.

For not only the bodies of men, but their very buildings are liable to untimely deaths.

He then speaks of the manners of the ancient Romans, and shows in what sense it was due to the virtue of the Romans themselves, and in how far to the counsel of God, that he increased their dominion, though they did not worship him.

“Forget what?”

He says that he has in his own discourse spoken of two matters—one, that the essence of the Only-begotten was not before Its own generation, the other, that, being generated, It was before all things.

Truly he did.

At last I was driven to rebellion, and there came a great fight,—at the end of which my opponent had to be taken home for a while.

For indeed it is more easy for men to fly, than to make this lust cease by an addition of more.

Wherefore the serpent which conceived him in its womb, and bore him, and brought him forth to the light of day, is constituted the devil's first father; and Cain is made his second father, who through the conception of iniquities produced pains and parricide: for truly the taking of life was the perpetrating of iniquity, unrighteousness, and impiety all together.

If the Son, then, is not begotten within limits of time, we are free to judge that nothing can have existed before the Son, Whose being is not confined by time.

One little word would have done it all for her, would have enabled her to take the step by which she would be placed among the bright ones of the earth.

For, woe unto you, it is written, through whom the name of God is blasphemed.

“Well, Dolly,” said he, “what’s the matter now?”

The coherence of your soul is lessened if you do not believe the unity of Godhead in the Trinity.

And if to have made you sorry was out of love, much more my gladness at that sorrow.

“Miss Altifiorla,” she said, “I must request that there be no further conversation between us in reference to the difference between me and my husband.”

“I don’t see it,” said Lord Lufton. “I might have a lot of paper money by me, and not know from Adam where I got it.”

As far as it was fitting and possible, dearest brethren, the general Council and the holy Church have had patience, and have generously displayed the Church's forbearance towards Ursacius and Valens, Gaius, Germinius, and Auxentius; who by so often changing what they had believed, have troubled all the Churches, and still are endeavouring to foist their heretical spirit upon the faith of the orthodox.

Were you and he to become man and wife, such a marriage would tend to the happiness neither of him nor of you.” It was clear that the whole lecture was now coming; and as Lucy had openly declared her own weakness, and thrown all the power of decision into the hands of Lady Lufton, she did not see why she should endure this.

The history of the matter is as follows:—

And thus, he says, he has well termed it 'a New Covenant.'

What is all this about Prime Minister?

They were created for the most part as they were described.

But Cicero, though he saw far toward it, never altogether acknowledged it.

Some say that it arose from the thick hair of one of the Julian tribe; others that a certain scion of the family, like Macduff, “ was from his mother’s womb untimely ripped,” for which derivations Latin words are found to be opportune.

Why maintain a business without a profit, simply that there may be an Hôtel de la Poste at Colmar?

He knew that there was such change, and with bitter internal upbraidings he acknowledged to himself that this woman was getting the mastery over him.

What proof is afforded to us, notwithstanding the strong confidence of its assertions, by the useless affectation of a scrupulous curiosity, which is tricked out with an artful show of language?

For it is said that the Pharisees gave a tenth; I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess.

For the Passover is indeed abstinence from evil for exercise of virtue, and a departure from death unto life.

To preach unto the Gentiles the unsearchable riches of Christ.

Thus also the Father of the universe cherishes affection towards those who have fled to Him; and having begotten them again by His Spirit to the adoption of children, knows them as gentle, and loves those alone, and aids and fights for them; and therefore He bestows on them the name of child.

We have learned that it is the custom of your island after the paschal festival, for you to go, or to send your representatives to your Metropolitan, and for him, whether you know the time or not, to give you directions by a written announcement concerning the following Easter.

He is said to be one neuter, not one masculine, because the expression is not referred to the number, but it is declared with reference to the association of another.

“Oh, Tom,” she said, going back into the memory of very far distant days in her nomenclature, “how can you speak to me so cruelly as that! That it should come to that between you and me, after all!”

In regard to Frank, whom she now believed that she had loved with all the warmth of her young affections from the first moment in which she had seen him after Sir Florian’s death,—she had been at great trouble to clear the way for him.

“Peekish?” said the squire, inquisitively.

But the nature thus constituted, having sinned when it had the ability to do so, it is by a more abundant grace that it is delivered so as to reach that freedom in which it cannot sin.

As he went, he expressed sundry wishes that he was back at the Mandarins, and told himself that it would be well that he should remain there till he died.

Wherefore, since the Father sent Him by a word, His being sent was the work of both the Father and His Word; therefore the same Son was sent by the Father and the Son, because the Son Himself is the Word of the Father.

“Yes, it is,—a very large sum. Half that is what I want at once; but I shall want the other half in a month.”

How few, perhaps, had done so!

Miss Stanbury was very unhappy, and at last sent for Giles Hickbody.

“The seat! and is it expected that I am to pay for that?”

And why should I further spend time on them, since even of those they call gods they relate similar things?

“Is impossible.”

It was believed by all concerned, by the Bluestones, and the Goffes, by Sir William Patterson who had been told of the coming interview, and by the Countess herself, that this would not be the case.

For they see nothing more than is seen, namely the body; and because this is to be seen and handled, it is weak, frail, and mortal; and to this belong all those goods which are their desire and admiration, wealth, honours, and governments, since they bring pleasures to the body, and therefore are as liable to decay as the body itself.

“Yes, it is.”

[Matthew 23:12] That we then may not be abused but exalted, let us approach towards that exaltation.

But even Mr. Curlydown had found more favour with the judge than Samuel Bagwax, the junior of the two post-office witnesses.

But if [the burden of government] be imposed, it is to be undertaken on account of the obligation of charity.

For though sold by his brothers into slavery, [Genesis 37:28] he took no revenge for this wrong, but put an end to their want.

To be hungry and thirsty, to be weary, and to sleep, is clearly human: but to satisfy 5,000 men with five loaves, and to bestow on the woman of Samaria living water, droughts of which can secure the drinker from thirsting any more, to walk upon the surface of the sea with feet that do not sink, and to quell the risings of the waves by rebuking the winds, is, without any doubt, Divine.

The things would certainly be sent.

“Mad!” he said to himself, as he walked home from the station that night.

She had devoted herself to this old man who was now dead, and there had been moments in which she had thought that that sufficed.

Time went by and the conquered people were still allowed to live on the land, but the Dutch still claimed it as a part of their empire.

With these ideas she wrote a long letter to Hester, in which she promised to have herself taken out to Folking in order that she might be present as godmother at the baby’s baptism.

You, on the other hand, find fault with everything in the New Testament which you do not receive, and assert that these passages were not spoken or written by Christ or His apostles.

During the next month, when we were in the middle of March, a gleam of real success came to her.

But her husband had always pleaded a certain weakness about his throat and chest as a reason for remaining atpong the delights of Pau.

“Oh, yes, quite safe,” said M. Lacordaire; and then there was another little pause.

Here he had a cup of tea and a morsel of bread-and-butter, and in the morning he breakfasted again on the same fare.

When I tell you that you ought not to choose such a one as me for your wife because my manners of life have not fitted me for such a position, then you sometimes laugh at me, and sometimes are half angry,—with that fine way you have of commanding those that are about you.

There had not been sufficient time for inquiry as to the truth of that blast.

And yet he had pretended to be anxious about the girl’s marriage, and had spoken of it as though he still believed that it would be accomplished!

“Indeed, my lord, I’m afraid Jervis is right.”

I, Ingenius Presbyter, pray you health in the Lord, beloved fathers. Theon Presbyter, Ammonas P., Heraclius P., Boccon P., Tryphon P., Peter P., Hierax P., Sarapion P., Marcus P., Ptollarion P., Gaius P., Dioscorus P., Demetrius P., Thyrsus P.

For you are made the mother of Him who is at once Judge and Redeemer.

They did not however escape detection; the whole city perceived it, and all men withdrew from them as executioners, as malefactors and robbers.

Why do you slip, and yet sayest, I am firm?

“Yes;—to the Mackenzie of Linn, as he was called. It was Mr. Kennedy, the old man, who was first called Loughlinter. That is Linn Castle, and they lived there for hundreds of years. But these Highlanders, with all that is said of their family pride, have forgotten the Mackenzies already, and are quite proud of their rich landlord.”

Indeed, just at this moment, when he was a good deal over at Barchester, going through those deep mysteries and rigid ecclesiastical examinations which are necessary before a clergyman can become one of a chapter, Dandy was rather a thorn in his side.

And now, we who knew these and similar sayings wish to observe this precept with the mystical meaning, viz., Keep your heart with all diligence, that nothing of a demoniacal nature may enter into our minds, or any spirit of our adversaries turn our imagination whither it chooses.

And he says that eight human beings were preserved in the ark, in that which had been prepared by God's direction, not by Deucalion, but by Noah; which Hebrew word means rest, as we have elsewhere shown that Noah, when he announced to the men then alive that there was a flood coming, prophesied to them, saying, Come there, God calls you to repentance.

He had told himself over and over again within the last five minutes, that he would have long since said what he had to say had it not been for the turban.

“You were not so weak when he came to you.”

It was not exactly known when 224the distant battles were being fought.

Once on a time our city gave offense to the Emperor, and he gave orders that the whole of it should utterly be destroyed, men, children, houses, and all.

But now all this had come upon her so suddenly, that she was unable to think whether it would be well that she should become the depositary of such a secret—not to be mentioned to Lucy’s brother, not to be mentioned to her own husband.

For, a son not being, one cannot say father; whereas when we call God a Maker, we do not of necessity intimate the things which have come to be; for a maker is before his works.

Pelagius ought to listen to the teaching of so eminent a man, and should follow his faith, since he has commended his teaching and faith.

I wish you every success. I don’t know that I can help you, but if I can, I will.

“That’s as may be, Johnny. As far as I know, not half of them accept their lovers the first time of asking.”

But a true woman will forgive him, because of the truth of Lady Castlewood’s heart.

Comfort should be regarded as the family counsellor.

We, on the contrary, maintain that as that which by nature possesses the property of sweetening other things through its own inherent sweetness cannot produce bitterness contrary to its own peculiar nature, nor that whose nature it is to produce light through its being light can cause darkness; so neither is God able to commit wickedness, for the power of doing evil is contrary to His deity and its omnipotence.

It was no wonder that she should sit silent.

Do not therefore fear the tempter permitted to do somewhat: for you have a most merciful Saviour.

Gregory to all bishops in the matter of the Three Chapters.

He got up late and breakfasted late, in order that he might feel what it was to be an idle man.

It was not the kind of Elysium for which he had tutored himself.

But as the prophetic utterance has been applied by all in this way, let us see if there was not a necessity that the daughter of Zion should rejoice greatly and that the greater than she, the daughter of Jerusalem, should not only rejoice greatly but should also proclaim it when her king was coming to her, just and bringing salvation, and meek, having mounted an ass and a young colt.

Ver. 19. And it was ordained through Angels by the hand of a Mediator.

In this I praise you not.

Pretty, indeed!

“Full of dread, of awe, and of horror, were those fiery days of indiscriminate slaughter; but they were not days of desolation, because hope was always there by our side. There was a hope in which the soul could trust, and the trusting soul is ever light and buoyant.”

Eran.— Your series of arguments forces us to this conclusion.

“I blame myself more than I do you; but I look to you as a second self, and I make you a sharer with me of my own folly.” I take this letter out of its course, and speak of it as connected with that terrible period of doubt to which it refers, in which he had to decide whether he would remain in Rome and fight it out, or run before his enemies.

And there the disciples make request concerning the five thousand; [Matthew 14:15] but here He speaks of His own accord about the four thousand.

The sight of a vine, when observed by an intelligent eye, serves to remind you of your nature.

“I’d teach myself to believe she did. But dear me, that isn’t everything. It nearly gave me the horrors to look at it. Room after room,—room after room,—and nobody living in any of them.”

“ You may put her about,” says the skipper; for be it known that for some hours past her head has been lying back towards Port Royal.

Learn thus to understand, when these things are spoken figuratively; lest perchance when you have read that the Rock signifies Christ, [1 Corinthians 10:4] ye may understand it to mean Him in every passage.

Again, he casts down their pride who thought highly of their knowledge.

There was a subject on which, in spite of all her respect, Mrs Buggins ventured to give Miss Mackenzie much advice, and to insist on that advice strongly.

Around are the corrugated iron shops of the ordinary dealers in provisions.

And sought in an evil way; nor saw I the evil in my very search.

Thus, too, repute yourselves dead indeed to sin, but living to God through Christ Jesus.

“And why don’t you marry, Arthur?” he asked the next morning.

The fourth petition is, Give us this day our daily bread.

“If you are not afraid of what he may say to you—?” said Mr Whittlestaff.

And he that dared this would assuredly have destroyed the man too, unless even in so great madness God had put on him His strong curb: as indeed was the case with those naked men that were running in the deserts and cutting themselves with stones.

He acts without any majority in either of the legislative houses.

Ver. 4. So that we ourselves glory in you in the Churches of God.

“I shall leave you if you do,” said Alice.

Don’t try me; that’s all.

The Devil made answer to this and said you shall not die the death.

He had acknowledged to himself, in some indistinct way, that he was no more than a hobbledehoy, awkward, silent, ungainly, with a face unfinished, as it were, or unripe.

And in this respect he bore many testimonies to them.

He had not hunted.

Crocker was dressed up to the eyes, and wore yellow kid gloves. “Lady Frances,” he said, “I am Mr. Crocker, Mr. Samuel Crocker, of the General Post Office. You may not perhaps have heard of me from my friend, Mr. Roden?”

We have believed.

Always easy, always lucid, always correct, we may find them; but who is the writer, easy, lucid, and correct, who has not impregnated his writing with something of that personal flavour which we call mannerism?

But, nevertheless, she arranged the drapery with all her skill, piling the fagots ever so high for her own pyre.

But the huge ox has no sense of chivalry.

Would that £5000 be saved for him, or must he again go out to India and be heard of no more at home in his own England?

Meanwhile a message is delivered that the husband and his friends have arrived.

Yes, she said—she had been sorely tried—tried, she thought, beyond the common endurance of humanity; but while her child was left to her, everything was left.

At that time the Jews paid an annual tribute of three hundred talents of silver to the king; but they were governed not by foreign magistrates but by their own priests.

For where there is an Agent there must also be an Effect.

But this special fault was certainly found with Vanity Fair at the time.

Forsaking Him, you all have turned aside,

“It’s just a thin crust of frost, sir, and the s’mometer is a standing at the pint.” That is the answer which the man makes, and on that he has to come to a decision!

As to Alexandrina, he knew the thinness of her character.

The course was now before him, and he had no choice but to walk in it.

[Malachi 2:10] And there is also one Son, God the Word.

Quareegredimini e medio ipsorum, et separamini, dicit Dominus, et immundum ne tangatis; et ego vos suscipiam, et ero vobis in patrem, et vos eritis mihi in filios et filias, dicit Dominus omnipotens.

Well, I assert, simultaneously with His baptism by John, He becomes perfect?

For men shall be lovers of their own selves.

He now begged to express his great delight that she who had so well deserved success had been successful, and to offer her his hand in friendship, should she be inclined to accept it.

Do you see into what an eddy the eye of your mind is plunged, unless you quickly take refuge in faith and the incomprehensible power of the Maker?

Chapter LXIV. The Last of Florence Mountjoy

And to this He added: 'If your right eye offend you, pluck it out, and cast it from you: for it is profitable for you that one of your members perish, rather than your whole body be cast into hell-fire.'

Phineas was quick to observe that every male guest was in Parliament, and to tell himself that he would not have been there unless he also had had a seat.

Have the pleasure of them in as many ways as they appeal to your senses.

Mr. Greenwood had been anxious to give up his own rooms as being more spacious; but the offer had been peremptorily and almost indignantly refused.

, that the king might first pronounce sentence, and afterwards hear of his own guilt, to the end that he might by no means contradict the righteous doom that he had uttered against himself.

And if virtue shall have overcome and put to flight these, the soul will be pure and free from stain.

1 Timothy 2:1-4

But how He became better in His ministry, being better in nature than things originate, appears from what has been said before, which, I consider, is sufficient in itself to put them to shame.

It is indeed a greater fight of patience, when it is not a visible enemy that by persecution and rage would urge us into crime which enemy may openly and in broad day be by not consenting overcome; but the devil himself, (he who does likewise by means of the children of infidelity, as by his vessels, persecute the children of light) does by himself hiddenly attack us, by his rage putting us on to do or say something against God.

For in this point also Scripture has provided for us; for the Son of God says: He that shall drink of the water which I will give him, it shall become in him a well of water springing up unto everlasting life.

He had given up his occupation when this hindrance befell him.

He had walked to the shrine of St. Finbar, up in the little island of the Gougane Barra, with unboiled peas in his shoes; had forgiven his tenants five years’ rent all round, and never drank wine or washed himself after the death of his lady wife.

For I maintain that on his principles men who have denied Christ under persecution have only spoken against the Son of Man, and have not blasphemed the Holy Ghost.

Certainly nothing fraudulent had been intended on this occasion,—or it would have been arranged that the father should sit on the same side of the table with the lover, so that he should see nothing of what was going on.

“Did he say what he meant to give her?”

The two young men were going out as miners, and took a delight in preparing themselves to be rough.

There he found that the old set had for the moment broken itself up.

The devil answered the Lord and said: Skin for skin, yea, all that a man has will he give for his life.

He had already used strong language, calling the man vulgar and ungentlemanlike, but if a man does not regard strong language what further can an angry victim do to him?

“Not a word?”

Is not frenzy from excess of fever?

“I think not. I am sure he never has.” But he had, though it had passed by her at the moment without attention. “It all came from him so suddenly. And yet I expected it. But it was too sudden for Christian names and pretty talk. I do not even know what his name is.”

‘I suppose you will say it was my own. Perhaps it was. But I could not feel comfortable while he was drinking gin-and-water—’

But he had been so full of passion, so beside himself with excitement, so disturbed by all that he had heard, that he had hardly waited with Marie long enough to obtain such pledge, or to learn from her that she refused to give it.

“There are men who must have what you call a terribly bad life of it, whatever way it goes with them. The bishop is weak, and he wants somebody near to him to be strong. She was strong,—perhaps too strong; but he had his advantage out of it. After all I don’t know that his life has been so terribly bad. I daresay he’s had everything very comfortable about him. And a man ought to be grateful for that, though very few men ever are.”

“In the first place I can’t afford the time,” said Lucius, “and in the next place I can’t afford the money.” This was plucky on his part, and it was felt to be so by everybody in the room; but perhaps had he spoken all the truth, he would have said also that he was not accustomed to horsemanship.

psha!

10. Who is wise?

Now, Reason, speak, and speak wisely.

Nor can there be said in any way to be a turning of the heart to God when the sacrament of God is treated with contempt.

Who heals the bruised in heart [Psalm 146:3].

She was a year younger.

What then can have forced him— I use his own word— publicly to argue a point which no one had yet raised?

The other power was the Postmaster-General and Mr. Rowland Hill, the Secretary of the Post Office.

The thing came, and has gone, and there is an end of it.” Then Jane opened the door, with a little piece of whispered information.

Of the soul as being immortal he said nothing in order to exhibit the boundlessness of the kindness.

The documents making over the property were all right, but the Earl would believe nothing of the murder.

For, Your prayers, says he, and your alms have come up before God.

Respecting imparting and communicating, though much might be said, let it suffice to remark that the law prohibits a brother from taking usury: designating as a brother not only him who is born of the same parents, but also one of the same race and sentiments, and a participator in the same word; deeming it right not to take usury for money, but with open hands and heart to bestow on those who need.

It is certain, says he, that in the earliest age Adam and Eve, and Cain and Abel their sons, are mentioned as being the only four persons then in being.

Of course he knew that she was there.

Indeed it may be said of her, that she had come so late in life to whatever of ripeness was to be vouchsafed to her, that perhaps the period of her thraldom had not terminated itself a day too soon for her advantage.

Now if they received it, why do they glory as if they had not received it?

“And you think that is justice to me?”

It is too sad!

Why is it that he can never get over a ditch without some struggle in his saddle, some scramble with his horse?

Nora, as soon as she was alone and could think about it all, felt quite sure that Mr. Glascock would never make her another offer.

For I hear many saying these words worthy of all scorn, 'Give me today and take tomorrow.'

If there is any one who pays attention to silly things like this, I must tell him loudly and freely that no one is compelled to read what he does not want; that I wrote for those who asked me, not for those who would scorn me, for the grateful not the carping, for the earnest not the indifferent.

For He made all things by His word, which Word we know, by the right rule of faith, to be His only Son.

For it is equally impious to confuse the Persons with the Sabellians, or to divide the Natures with the Arians.

We cannot fancy her to have been ever young.

I saw the monasteries of Nitria, and perceived the snakes which lurked among the choirs of the monks.

“It is hard upon them. It’s a sort of offshoot from that very tyrannical law of noblesse oblige. I don’t think you ought to go away from Allington, unless the circumstances are very imperative.”

Far be it, O Lord, this thing shall not be done.

“And what did Neefit say?”

And yet everything was to be broken down because his nerves had received a shock!

We have an idea of what was Cicero’s real notion of that “dominans in nobis deus” —that god which reigns within us—and which he declares in Scipio’s dream to have forbidden us to commit suicide.

He had written to Sir Harry, refusing altogether the offer made to him.

“I don’t quite say that.”

To this is added, that no one can be without fault as long as he is burthened with a covering of flesh, the infirmity of which is subject to the dominion of sin in a threefold manner— in deeds, in words, and thoughts.

Both Mrs. Proudie and the bishop had called at Plumstead since Mrs. Grantly had come back from London, and the ladies from Plumstead, of course, returned the visit.

For what power worthy of God those imagine who say, that each thing returns to that from which it was produced, and that beyond this not even God Himself can do anything, we are unable to conceive; but this we see clearly, that they would not have believed it possible that they could have become such and produced from such materials, as they now see both themselves and the whole world to be.

For in the Acts of the Apostles, a work universally acknowledged as authentic, it is recorded that all the companions of the apostles sold their possessions and their property and distributed to all according to the necessity of each one, so that no one among them was in want.

“She’s been and set up her carriage as sure as my name’s Cheesacre!”

But the completion of the prophecy took place afterwards.

“Have you never given her a right to think that she would be more?”

“If you call it all right. You will understand of course that you are acting in opposition to my advice,—and my wishes.”

“Will you let me write to Mrs Greenow?”

It enhances my difficulty, that you also are anxious to hear very much, or if it be possible every thing, about him, longing with eager warmth at least to become acquainted with his deeds, although now his living words are silent.

“Oh, certainly, Mrs. Rowan.”

“Nay, Agatha; but is he not Bayard complete?” said Marie laughing. “I am sure we should be obliged; it is an age since we received a compliment here in the Bocage.”

Like the Jews who persecuted Christ, they imagined their observance of the Law was acceptable to the Father, and he therefore shows that in doing this they displeased not only Christ, but the Father also, for that they fell away thereby not from Christ only, but from the Father also.

And he began the process of thinking about it immediately,—before the door was closed behind her.

And of those very worshippers of base and senseless things, many becoming sober have ceased to worship these things and to sin, and many Greeks have been saved so as to pray to the true God.

Now, since it is through the flesh that we suffer with Christ— for it is the property of the flesh to be worn by sufferings— to the same flesh belongs the recompense which is promised for suffering with Christ.

“Then you thought you might as well send the others after it.”

And I am aware that it is my duty, as it is the duty of us all, to see that no injury be done to him, and, if possible, to assist him in his condition.

“So good of you, Mrs. Jones, to ask me.”

For whereas, when you give, you receive reward for the gift only: when you yourself also go, for this again is appointed you a recompense.

For we have assigned our whole life to this purpose.

He had a feeling that the lion would be torn to pieces, if only a properly truculent barrister could be got to fix his claws into him.

The Father is Father and not Son : the Son is Son and not Father: the Holy Spirit is Spirit and not Father or Son. For the individuality is unchangeable. How, indeed, could individuality continue to exist at all if it were ever changing and altering? Wherefore the Son of God became Son of Man in order that His individuality might endure. For since He was the Son of God, He became Son of Man, being made flesh of the holy Virgin and not losing the individuality of Sonship.

[2 Samuel 15:26] And yet he had an infinite number of good things to speak of.

“She keeps lodgings;—a very decent sort of a woman I should say.”

“Well, if you come to that, I don’t suppose we have. How much has Lord Alfred put into it?”

Before they grow stiffnecked, preoccupy them all. For this reason he says, in season, out of season; do everything, so as to have willing disciples.

For we wish the causes of the aforesaid woman, whether now or in future, to be terminated by your judgment, that she may be relieved from the annoyance of legal proceedings, and yet be by no means excused from submitting to a just judgment.

The excitement was nearly as good as that of loo.

Madame Brudo. Jeannette, a chair! Reach me a fan, child. You and Upsel strangers? ‘Tis more than failing nature can endure. Your father dreams and has no touch of wisdom; he cannot give you counsel. I have seen and know the world and have a right to speak; so mark me, Margaret.—Did you ever think what ‘tis to be a countess?

Touch all that he has; no doubt, he will renounce You to Your face!

Now, if the invitation was not a sudden one, it must have been given by the Creator— even by Him of old time, whose call they had at last refused.

“What would you wish to have done, Frederic?” his mother said to him on his return.

“I am happy to think it won’t hurt you, Herr Weiss, as you have had your salary raised.”

“He does not expect it any more than my butler.”

I heard Your voice behind me bidding me return, and scarcely did I hear it for the tumults of the unquiet ones.

But he that has but a little is quit of either of these domineering passions: hence he finds more occasions for doing well.

Cicero was insincere: I cannot say otherwise.

Mary Lawrie

She having long been barren, is said, when she asked a child from God, to have vowed that, if it were a boy, it should be dedicated to God.

Now, even those (of the heretics) who are of a more serious turn in regard of the Divinity, and have derived their systems of speculation from the Greeks, must stand convicted (of these charges).

And if he had told it to any one, then must that “any one” know where and how he had disappeared.

Upon our expressing astonishment, he called God to witness that he had no idea of this ability of his previous to that trial.

Why can I not write two sentences together?

Who in Isaac carried the wood for His own sacrifice, but He who carried His own cross?

If so it will be well for thee; but did I not see thine eyes hankering the other day after the precious stones of Ophir, and thy mouth watering for the fleshpots of Egypt?

He would see her, without telling any one what was his purpose, and put it to her whether she would bring down this destruction on so noble a gentleman.

As for himself, Moggs, he explained in his speech,—analysing the big board which adorned the house,—it mattered little whether they did or did not return him.

Tell him also, that though I would fain that this unfortunate affair might burden the tongue of none among my neighbours,—at least till I shall have stood before the judge to receive the verdict of the jury, and, if needful, his lordship’s sentence—still I am convinced that in what he has spoken, as also in what he has done, he has not yielded to the idleness of gossip, but has exercised his judgment with intended kindness.

This faith was now destroyed; and when the rumour spread along their lines that he had been killed, they threw down their arms, and refused to return to the charge.

The Prime Minister had not forgotten the man, nor had Quintus Slide.

For myself I was determined that though I would be gentle with him I would not yield an inch.

Martin performs Various Miracles.

And what we may mention besides as especially deserving our admiration is, that John, though he gave himself up to the higher doctrine, yet did not neglect the Dispensation; nor were the others, though intent upon the relation of this, silent as to the subsistence before the ages.

They who have become heaven.

Alaric’s juniors wished him joy with some show of reality in their manner; but the congratulations of his seniors, including the Secretary and Assistant-Secretaries, the new Chief Clerk and the men in the class to which he was now promoted, were very cold indeed.

Cyrinus was at that time bishop of Chalcedon, an Egyptian by birth, who said many things to the bishops in disparagement of John, denouncing him as 'the impious,' 'the haughty,' 'the inexorable.'

That the truth of grace and perseverance shines forth in the case of infants that are saved, who are distinguished by no merits of their own from others who perish.

“You shall go alone to London.”

“You needn’t tell me that, Clara, and remind me about the shooting when you know how unhappy it makes me.”

Chapter 10. Exhortations to prayer, humility, etc

Amelia replied only by shaking her head.

Chapter IX. Thackeray’s Style And Manner Of Work

How, then, are these images at the same moment in their whole extent objects of thought, if they become objects of thought only in so far as, coming and entering into the mind, they touch it, seeing that they cannot in their whole extent either find entrance into so small a body or come in contact with so small a mind?

The Earl’s brow became very black. “I don’t think that he would treat me in that way.”

Did they perchance refuse to be sacrificed to, because they abhorred to be compared to devils?

I say this not that those coming down may frighten you but that those going up may stimulate you.

A thing may indeed be known or believed, and yet not loved; but it is an impossibility that a thing can be loved which is neither known nor believed.

In the few moments that they stood there gazing it might almost have been believed that some portentous miracle had happened, so deep and dark, and yet so bright, were the hues of the horizon.

“If you please, sir, I was to wait for an answer,” said the girl.

Was it not that of which David speaks: Like the ointment upon the head, which went down to the beard, even Aaron's beard?

If she could only get him to say that he would watch over the unhappy one, she herself would not be unhappy.

“You can say nothing hard of her. She is perfect.”

His ears would still tingle with the sound of the laughter of which he had supposed himself to have been the subject at the rectory.

He could have destroyed, before the ark of Noah, the then transgressors; but He did it after the ark.

On the contrary, the habit of the body is imaged forth by the operation of the soul, and any one who is active in any way whatever will appear to be of that nature as long as he may be thus actively engaged.

But the drollery of the circumstances, his own mingled folly and young ambition, struck him as being worth narration, and the more forcibly as he remembered all the ins and outs of his own reflections at the time,—how he had meant to enchant the world, and make his fortune.

Such in some sort is the court.

The Marchioness was paralyzed when she heard that Lady Frances was to be taken away,—to be taken into the direct neighbourhood of London and the Post Office.

There was something terrible in this to young Bertram.

For we all shall rise again, says the Apostle, but we shall not all be changed Where is, O death, your sting?

As if he had said, I call to witness God and His Son and His servants, that I have charged you: so before them I charge you.

He could lie in bed.

‘That you mean is your present opinion, Sir Gregory?’

Thus also the Ascræan Hesiod dimly speaks of God:—

Is it quite so?

From the years to which his earliest memory could fall back, he had been fighting an earnest, hard battle with the world’s cares, and though not thoroughly vanquished, he had always been worsted.

And (Justinus asserts) that Edem plotted against this (Jesus), but could not deceive him; and for this reason, that she caused him to be crucified.

Do you see how both the gospel is hid in the world, and the good things in the gospel?

Royalty had twenty tickets, each ticket for guest and wife.

What shall he do that he may be beautiful?

You deny that you wish this!

Do you see their extreme ridiculousness?

And we know Plato's city placed as a pattern in heaven.

Hellanicus, accordingly, relates that he lived in the time of Midas: but Phanias, who places Lesches the Lesbian before Terpander, makes Terpander younger than Archilochus, and relates that Lesches contended with Arctinus, and gained the victory.

[Psalm 106:32] How often did they wax wanton?

And as, where friendship is, even those evils which are true appear false, so where there is enmity, even the false appear true.

Many have perished,—as a matter of course in so many battles.

Oh, man, now you have been made clean in the laver, and of you it is said, Who is this that comes up all white, leaning upon her beloved?

In that matter of manners I have found those with whom it seemed to me natural that I should associate very pleasant according to my standard.

But wherefore, good man, do you fear the bitter person?

There are also other arts, the inventors of which greatly profited the life of man.

“Such things are very dreadful, Lucy, but they do happen.”

“Jacko?”

And my father was very ill,—ill to dying, though I did not know it.

Now again He names me His son, not begetting me into natural life, but into spiritual life.

And together with what has been said, all the time also since these things is sufficient to establish the testimony.

And when the strange and unheard-of things which were held out staggered the minds of those who heard Him, and made them hesitate to believe, though master of every power and destroyer of death itself He suffered His human form to be slain, that from the result they might know that the hopes were safe which they had long entertained about the soul's salvation, and that in no other way could they avoid the danger of death.

I do not dwell on the philosophers, contenting myself with a reference to Socrates, who, in contempt of the gods, was in the habit of swearing by an oak, and a goat, and a dog.

But the names of some of these cannot be said to be great in history.

Sir Orlando, also, had taken with him a few, and it may be that two or three had told themselves that there could not be all that smoke raised by the “People’s Banner” without some fire below it.

It debars him also from illegitimate license and dishonest assertions.

He soon made the necessary explanation to Mr Daly, who made no objection to the proposal; and he also throwing a somewhat diminutive carpetbag into the same well, placed himself alongside of our friend, and they proceeded on their journey, with the most amicable feelings towards each other.

At all events, this hostelry of ours is versiform,— a fact which is patent to eyes that are closed, or utterly Homeric.

For he holds that the Father is He who speaks, and that the Son is the Word that abides in the Father, and becomes manifest at the time of the creation, and thereafter reverts to God on the fulfilling of all things.

“Ah; a little private business. You do not owe him a little money, I am afraid, or you would not want to see him. Ha, ha! You write to him, and he will see you. There; there is paper and pen and ink. He shall get your letter this day.”

It has nothing carnal, all spiritual things become the offerings.

I had superintended the making of these shoes in Burlington Arcade with the greatest diligence.

But where it is said, the God of gods, it cannot be understood as the god of the demons; and far be it from us to say that great King above all gods means great King above all demons.

For these things also are enough to beget suspicion.

“And we shall have time for one glass of claret,” said the bishop.

Then is His power exhausted in the begetting of One?

Agar, Sarah's maid, was proud, and she was afflicted by her mistress for her pride.

Let, then, your Experience act with zeal and solicitude for the observance of what we have ordered to be prohibited.

“I am sure I don’t.”

[Ephesians 4:26] And how was I moved, O my God, who had now learned to be angry with myself for the things past, so that in the future I might not sin!

“I can only say,” said Lord Llwddythlw, rising from his chair, “that you have made your confidence most unfortunately.

We know the nature of the new trouble in which he found Phineas Finn enveloped.

“Of course you must see him before he goes,” said Mrs. Trevelyan to her sister.

“Why shouldn’t he love her as well as any one else? A girl need not be odious because she has money. There is nothing disagreeable about her.”

“And we’ve three young ones.” We knew the argument that was coming;—knew it so well, and yet were so unable to accept it as any argument!

15. Thrust in your sharp sickle, and gather in the grapes of the vine, he signifies it of the nations that should perish on the advent of the Lord. And indeed in many forms he shows this same thing, as if to the dry harvest, and the seed for the coming of the Lord, and the consummation of the world, and the kingdom of Christ, and the future appearance of the kingdom of the blessed.

“I do not know that they can do you the slightest service,” said he; “but I give them to you, because you ask me.

Chapter 3 A refutation of the heretics, from the fact that, in the various churches, a perpetual succession of bishops was kept up

“You do not know what starving is yet, my dear. Tell me the truth at once. Are you engaged to that painter?” Clara paused a moment before she answered, not hesitating as to the expediency of telling her mother any truth on the matter in question, but doubting what the truth might really be. Could she say that she was engaged to Mr. Dalrymple, or could she say that she was not? “If you tell me a lie, miss, I’ll have you put out of the house.”

And Peter said: Since, then, you are eager henceforth to learn what relates to our religion, I ought to explain it in order, beginning with God Himself, and showing that we ought to call Him alone God, and that we neither ought to speak of the others as gods nor deem them such, and that he who acts contrary to this will be punished eternally, as having shown the greatest impiety to Him who is the Lord of all.

For this cause we also place in front of our epistles the Name of the Lord.

And the Lord said unto me, Arise, and go into Damascus; and there it shall be told you of all things which are appointed for you to do.

For as the soul dies when God leaves it, so the body dies when the soul leaves it; whereby the former becomes foolish, the latter lifeless.

The groom poked up his hat, and scratched his head, and bethought himself. A servant generally wishes to do what honour he can to his master. This man had no desire to gratify an inquisitive old woman, but he thought it derogatory to his master and to himself to seem to deny their joint name. “‘Ampstead!” he said, looking down very serenely on the lady, and then moved on, not wasting another word.

And you yourself hast in no wavering voice passed judgment on them, when you pacified them with games, and yet accounted as infamous the men by whom the plays were acted.

[1 Corinthians 12:28] Thus he ascribes indifferently the things of the Spirit to God, and the things of God to the Spirit.

And so he that, for their sakes, thinks little of money, is even on this account an object of love, that he is merciful and kind to man.

And through remission, moreover, are iniquities, along with offenses, blotted out by expiation; and an everlasting righteousness is preached, different from that which is by the law, and visions and prophecies (are) until John, and the Most Holy is anointed.

They returned to Dunmore in the early autumn, and took up their residence at Sim Lynch’s big house, as had been arranged. Martin was very shy about it: it was long before he talked about it as his house, or his ground, or his farm; and it was long before he could find himself quite at home in his own parlour.

Then Mrs Dale, in her anxiety to repair what injury might have been done to her daughter by over-exertion, omitted any further mention of the farewell speech.

[Valentinianus, ] who shortly afterwards became emperor, was at that time a Tribune and commanded the Hastati quartered in the palace.

A power worthy of admiration, even when it was in operation: but there was contained in this display of power another meaning, which showed that it would shortly come to pass that those who were lately ignorant of heavenly things, having received the instruction of wisdom, might speak respecting God and the truth.

“But suppose the Jonathan Stubbs of the occasion were to decline the honour. Where would you be then?”

Just alike.

So immediately did the imperial hill tower over the spot on which Balatka lived, that it would seem at night, when the moon was shining as it shines only at Prague, that the colonnades of the palace were the upper storeys of some enormous edifice, of which the broken merchant’s small courtyard formed a lower portion.

Neither need we be surprised that God, invisible as He is, should often have appeared visibly to the patriarchs.

And the Father is good, the Son good, and the Holy Spirit good; yet not three goods, but one good, of whom it is said, None is good, save one, that is, God.

Crosbie, as he was being driven from the castle to the nearest station, in a dog-cart hired from the hotel, could not keep himself from thinking of that other morning, not yet a fortnight past, on which he had left Allington; and as he thought of it he knew that he was a villain.

Hampstead had refused to join the party.

God has ordered all things to be produced, so that there should be food in common to all, and that the earth should be a common possession for all.

I might affirm, too, that he is five hundred years earlier than Homer, and have supporters of that view.

That the money should come without the wife would indeed have been a triumph!

When hounds are running, the hunting man should always, at any rate, be able to ride on, to ride in some direction, even though it be in a wrong direction.

For Their Being itself is common and equal, even though the Son receive it from the Father.

But there are many forms of fornication, as also Clement himself will explain to you.

“You will give me your hand at parting,” he said, whereupon she tendered it to him with her eyes fixed upon the ground.

He had been on the brink, but had been wise in time.

For created as we are in the image of God and after His likeness, [Genesis 1:26] it is our own wickedness which makes us assume masks.

“I do wish it.” Then he made an appointment and she promised to keep it.

For He has a sword twice whetted: [Revelation 1:16] and rising again He has smitten them, and has severed from them those whom He would make His faithful people.

“What is the good of staying, Frank, if we are to be made wretched?”

Reply to Faustus the Manichaean

MRS. G. Sir!

And he who has reared a trophy over these, alone goes to God; wherefore the Brachmans deify Dandamis, to whom Alexander the Macedonian paid a visit, as one who had proved victorious in the bodily conflict.

“It took me four days,” said the woman.

She was beautiful, intelligent, sweet-minded, and possessed of natural delicacy,—so much so that to Mrs. Roden herself she had become as dear almost as a daughter; but it was impossible that she should have either the education or the manners fit for the wife of a great English peer.

Chapter 12. Final Considerations to Induce to Exomologesis

She was perhaps struck by neglect, or something which appeared to her to be almost scorn.

He, who seeks to be good, err in many things.

In 1873 gold was found in the Lydenburg district which is south of the Olifant’s river.

Were he to present himself at once at the castle and be refused admittance, he would hardly know how to repeat his application or to force himself upon her presence.

Of the privileges of Monasteries.

“Why don’t he say one kind word to me, then? I know I’ve been bad. But I ain’t a done a single thing since I’ve been home as ‘d a’ made him angry if he seed it, or said a word as he mightn’t a’ heard.”

“As to the duties of your new office”—and Mr Optimist continued his speech, taking no other notice of the departure of his enemy than what was indicated by an increased brightness of his eye and a more satisfactory tone of voice—”you will find yourself quite familiar with them.”

For a good emperor seeks the aid of the Church and does not refuse it.

“But he wants to be a member of Parliament; and, as he hasn’t thought much about anything, he is quite willing to lend a hand to communism, radicalism, socialism, chopping people’s heads off, or anything else.”

How was he to arrange that Lily should be left alone with him?

She did it all very well, and it may be surmised that she had rehearsed the little scene, perhaps more than once, when nobody was looking at her.

He was the beloved and the accepted suitor of Marie Melmotte.

Thus it comes to pass, that if you depart from that sum of things which we comprised above, all system is destroyed, and all things return to nothing.

[1 Corinthians 15:50] He means the works of the flesh and blood, which, in his Epistle to the Galatians, deprive men of the kingdom of God.

What’s furniture to me? Can chairs and sofas soothe a widowed heart? Can rosewood tables ease a mind diseased? What’s furniture to me?

Chapter 6. Peter's Simplicity of Life.

“Ah, that’s your opinion—because you can’t see into a millstone. I tell you that Harry knows more about this Captain Scarborough than any one else. They were very intimate together.”

For these too being taken with a sore famine of virtue, dance a dance more ridiculous than theirs, led and carried round at one time to costly tables, at another to the lodging of prostitute women, and at another to a swarm of flatterers and a host of hangers-on.

It was understood that Mr. Daubeny, the accredited leader of the Conservatives, was about to bring in the bill, but no one as yet knew who would support the bill.

Now he has, next to Atticus, become his most chosen friend.

And he who knew the remedy groaned that his sojourn was prolonged, and that he must dwell with the unjust and sinners.

“As to what, Uncle Indefer?” She knew very well what was the matter in which, as he said, he could not help himself. Had there been anything in which his age had wanted assistance from her youth there would have been no hesitation between them; no daughter was ever more tender; no father was ever more trusting. But on this subject it was necessary that he should speak more plainly before she could reply to him.

Let things go as they may with a man in an affair of love, let him be as far as possible from the attainment of his wishes, there will always be consolation to him if he knows that he is loved.

How thankful he had been when first the tidings reached him that he was to come home at the expense of the Crown, and without diminution of his official income!

The instances hitherto are, I am aware, but rare; but then the immigration of these classes is as yet but recent; and custom is necessary, and a language commonly understood, and habits, which the similitude of position will also make common, before such races will amalgamate.

“Yes; you must see him. If we are to be expelled from the family house, let it be his doing, and not ours. We have to take care, George, that we do not make a single false step. We must be courteous to him, but above all we must not be afraid of him.”

‘It is almost conclusive.’ Now the argument with Bagwax was this,—that if he found in the Sydney postmarks of 7th May, and in those of 13th May, the same deviations or bruises in the die, those deviations must have existed also on the days between these two dates;—and as the impression before him was quite perfect, without any deviation, did it not follow that it must have been obtained in some manner outside the ordinary course of business?

“You are not his sisters.”

At this time he wrote to his friend Atticus various letters full of agonizing doubts as to what was demanded from him by his duty to his country, by his friendship for Pompey, by loyalty to his party, and by his own dignity.

“Sir, if you think your name is shamed by me, we had better part,” said Mrs. Trevelyan, rising from her chair, and confronting him with a look before which his own almost quailed.

And to convince you that these laws contribute not to any virtue, but were given to them as a sort of curb, providing them with an occasion of perpetual labor; hear what says the prophet concerning them; I gave them statutes which were not good.

The Lord they seemed as it were to call unto themselves and they besought Him about inheritances, about increasing money, about lengthening this life, about the rest of temporal things: and concerning them the Scripture says what?

“The fact is my nieces are in grief and trouble, and this is no time or place for lovemaking. I am sorry to be uncivil, but I must ask you not to come here any more.”

She would protect her in opposition to Augusta’s more declared malignity; but she did wish to be rid of Ayala, if she only knew how.

In everything, therefore, good faith is seemly, justice is pleasing, due measure in equity is delightful.

But to have been born Squire of Buston was something, and to have reached the age of fifty unmarried, so as to leave the position of heir open to her own son, was more.

She had tried her skill also upon Laurence Fitzgibbon,—but altogether in vain.

He was a tall, handsome man, at this time of some thirty years of age, of a presence which might almost have been called commanding.

In conversing at entertainments his habit was to propose some topic from scripture, to listen modestly, to answer diffidently, to support the right, to refute the wrong, but both without bitterness; to instruct his opponent rather than to vanquish him.

Since we have spoken of the immortality of the soul, it follows that we teach how and when it is given to man; that in this also they may see the errors of their perverseness and folly, who imagine that some mortals have become gods by the decrees and dogmas of mortals; either because they had invented arts, or because they had taught the use of certain productions of the earth, or because they had discovered things useful for the life of men, or because they had slain savage beasts.

At the station at London he put her into the cab that was to take her to Gower Street, and as he shook hands with her through the window, he once more said the same words:

He has unlocked the mouths of the springs, and has poured them into the flowing rivers.

Lord Palmerston was now to go out of office and to remain for two years in opposition; but the circumstances of his going were of a nature to bring about a violent decision of the “ Catholic “ claims, though it cannot be said that he himself was in any way responsible for doing so.

‘Shall it be you or I next?’ said Alaric very civilly. Neverbend could only pant and grunt, and Alaric, with a courteous nod, placed himself on the ladder, and went down, down, down, till of him also nothing was left but the faintest glimmer. Mr. Neverbend remained above with one of the mining authorities; one attendant miner also remained with them.

“Not for long, I hope, sir.”

“What is it to me?” said the ruined man. “It is all gone. They have satisfied me that nothing more can be done.” Parson John whistled with a long-drawn note of wonder. “The people they were dealing with would be willing enough to give up the money, but it’s all gone. It’s spent, and there’s no trace of it.”

He forsooth who had fulfilled all the demands of the law from his youth, and had gloried in what was magnificent, was not able to complete the whole with this one thing which was specially required by the Saviour, so as to receive the eternal life which he desired.

The Duke never went at that time nor was it expected that any of the gentlemen would do so; but women are supposed to require more church than men, and the Duchess rather made it a point that at any rate the young ladies staying in the house should accompany her.

The Chilterns are surprised that you shouldn’t have come back, and seen the end of the season.

It has made me so ill that I am obliged to go down to Scotland to recruit my health.

Since then the aforesaid republic is both the subject on which this book was written, and it is now proposed for us to speak thereof, let us give careful heed to Matthew, discoursing plainly concerning this: for what he says is not his own, but all Christ's, who has made the laws of this city.

When the doctor declared that he expected an honest answer the squire listened with all his ears; but the question, when finished, seemed to have no bearing on the present case.

When we were at Louisville we heard of the success of that gunboat expedition up the Tennessee river by which Fort Henry was taken.

[Exodus 15:10] By which is signified the unity of the Godhead, not an inequality of the Trinity.

For the dead, he says, are a pollution.

[Immediately] after the death of Constantius, the dread of a persecution arose in the Church, and Christians suffered more anguish from the anticipation of this calamity than they would have experienced from its actual occurrence.

“He’d ‘ve had my axe at his head,” said Boscobel.

And so, with a mixture of fast-scribbling pens and blank faces, our five friends went to work. The examination lasted for four days, and it was arranged that on each of the four days each of the five candidates should be called up to undergo a certain quantum of Mr. Jobbles’ viva voce. This part of his duty Mr. Jobbles performed with a mildness of manner that was beyond all praise. A mother training her first-born to say ‘papa,’ could not do so with a softer voice, or more affectionate demeanour.

It was only when her eyes rested on Dorothy, and she saw how supremely happy was the one person whom she had taken most closely to her heart, that she could feel that she had done anything that should not have been left undone.

One goodness, wisdom, justice, providence, power, incorruptibility—all other attributes of exalted significance are similarly predicated of each, and the one has in a certain sense His strength in the other; for on the one hand the Father makes all things through the Son, and on the other hand the Only-begotten works all in Himself, being the Power of the Father.

Howsoever a man may cultivate his heart and apply himself to apprehend mysteries, so long as we see through the corruption of this flesh, we see but in part But as He was seen by those who believed, and by those who crucified Him, when He was judged; so will He be seen, when He shall have begun to be judge, both by those whom He shall condemn, and by those whom He shall crown.

“Oh, Peter, how can you say so!” He shrunk visibly from the sound of his own Christian name. But she determined to persevere. The time must come when she should call him Peter, and why not commence the practice now, at once? Lovers always do call each other Peter and Matilda. She wasn’t going to stand any nonsense, and if he intended to marry her and use a large proportion of her fortune, Peter he should be to her. “You did, Peter. You know you told me how much attached you were to her.”

And then, with some further pressing of the hand, and further words of encouragement which were partly tender as from the man, and partly forensic as from the lawyer, Mr. Furnival permitted her to go, and she found her son at the chemist’s shop in Holborn as she had appointed. There were no traces of tears or of sorrow in her face as she smiled on Lucius while giving him her hand, and then when they were in a cab together she asked him as to his success at Liverpool.

[Genesis 1:4] How can we worthily praise light after the testimony given by the Creator to its goodness?

My readers will guess from what I have written that I myself do not like Mr. Slope, but I am constrained to admit that he is a man of parts. He knows how to say a soft word in the proper place; he knows how to adapt his flattery to the ears of his hearers; he knows the wiles of the serpent, and he uses them. Could Mr. Slope have adapted his manners to men as well as to women, could he ever have learnt the ways of a gentleman, he might have risen to great things.

Here I interrupted her discourse: If you leave all these out of the account I do not see how you can possibly avoid cancelling along with them the very thing which you are in search of.

And she was guilty of one weakness which was almost unworthy of her.

We are all conscious of trespassers against ourselves whom we especially bar when we say our prayers.

That Kentucky will speedily rid herself of the institution, I believe firmly.

Oh how full of true wisdom, how universal a gathering-word of our salvation is the lesson he has put forth!

But yet when the moment came she was unable to give him an answer.

Yet Moses, who orders that the Law be broken by a commandment which is not of the Law, is more worthy of confidence than you.

Yes, certainly; it had been his own doing.

For to a heathen we do not explain the mysteries concerning Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, nor before Catechumens do we speak plainly of the mysteries: but many things we often speak in a veiled way, that the believers who know may understand, and they who know not may get no hurt.

For if matter be simple and uniform, and the universe compound, and composed of different substances, it is impossible to say that it is made of matter, because compound things cannot be composed of one pure and simple ingredient.

For every vessel or every instrument becomes useful from without, consisting as it does of material perfectly extraneous to the substance of the human owner or employer; whereas the flesh, being conceived, formed, and generated along with the soul from its earliest existence in the womb, is mixed up with it likewise in all its operations.

Yours respectfully,

Had he not for her sake consented to be very uncomfortable at that old house at Stratton?

And then the gong sounded, and, Sir Peregrine led Lady Mason into the dining-room.

“This is so kind of you, Mr Griffith.”

Some arguments may, of course, be thus retorted easily enough; but it does not follow that they are on that account fairly admissible, where there is a diversity in the cause.

[Exit Mrs. Goshawk.

7. Thus this doctrine of theirs, which maintains that souls have a life by themselves before their life in the flesh, and that they are by reason of wickedness bound to their bodies, is shown to have neither beginning nor conclusion: and as for those who assert that the soul is of later creation than the body, their absurdity was already demonstrated above.

Having spoken of one, and that the chief ground of comfort and consolation, namely, having fellowship [by sufferings] with Christ: he lays down as second this which he now mentions, namely, that the salvation of the disciples themselves was procured thereby.

“I haven’t got it,” said Martin.

They were confounded, for God has despised them.

Congreve is the next who, however truly he may have been a humorist, is described here rather as a man of fashion.

And [Ecclesiastes 11:2] Ecclesiastes bids us give a portion to seven yea, even unto eight, that is to believe both Testaments.

When, however, as though in a fit of repentance, he straightway proceeded to add to what he had said that the essence preserves its relation to its Generator, Maker, and Creator, he polluted his first statement by his second, vomiting forth his blasphemous utterance upon the pure doctrine.

We cannot assert that.

Wherefore Peter says, that the Lord said to the apostles: If any one of Israel then, wishes to repent, and by my name to believe in God, his sins shall be forgiven him, after twelve years.

For to make the loving kindness of your benefactor a ground of ingratitude were indeed a very extravagance of unfairness.

Chapter 47.— Of the Resurrection of Jesus Christ, the Sending of the Apostles, and the Ascension of the Saviour into Heaven.

For there is no credit in being that from which the necessity of your nature does not admit of your changing.

I say this not from any dread of the sword of your accusation, but because I prefer to be accused than to be the accuser, to suffer an injury than to do one.

“I was unprepared, and therefore I have not answered you as I should have done. But as it has gone so far, I cannot let you leave me in uncertainty. It is not necessary that I should keep you waiting. In this matter I do know my own mind. Dear Bernard, indeed it cannot be as you have proposed.”

I knew the circumstances—how her husband had become ill and incapable, and how she had been allowed to earn the wages; but nevertheless the sight was to me disagreeable, and seemed, as far as it went, to degrade the sex.

Madame Brudo. Speak then, my friend. Unbosom yourself to me. Pour into my friendly ears all your hopes and all your fears, and I will give you encouragement—or at any rate consolation. Who is the she for whom your faithful heart is sighing?

“I wish you had never known her.”

She had learnt the wants of the poor, and the requirements of the little school.

’Twas just discovered that—THE LINES WERE PINDAR’S!”

After this, he said, He was seen upon earth and conversed with men.

“It comes from the man whom he supposes to be my lover.”

Sir Peregrine’s courtesy would not permit him to impose any trouble on a lady when the alternative of taking that trouble on himself was given to him.

For such an one uses it, but not to his own profit.

On that Sunday, as he had left the house in Curzon Street, he had told Stanbury that Trevelyan had just gone off in a huff, which was true enough, and he had walked from thence down Clarges Street, and across Piccadilly to St. James’s Street, with a jauntier step than usual, because he was aware that he himself had been the occasion of that trouble.

But it is quite possible that he may, by the very arguments of those who deny the transmission of sin, be still so far distressed as to be anxious to hear or know what can be said in reply to them; and on this account he was both unwilling to keep silent the tenets propounded by them who deny the transmission of sin, in order that he might get the question in due time discussed, and, at the same time, declined to report the opinions in his own person, lest he should be supposed to entertain them himself.

Had she not expressly told him that her love had been set upon another person?

[Matthew 18:8-9] To spare your soul spare nothing else.

But in the second meaning of the word corruption, we confess that our Lord's body is incorruptible, that is, indestructible, for such is the tradition of the inspired Fathers.

I shouldn’t wonder if they ask you.” At this moment a waiter handed a large official letter to Lord Nidderdale, saying that the messenger who had brought it was waiting for an answer in the hall.

; for it was necessary that investigation should be made in regard to the censure of things in secret and correlatively to the praise of things in secret.

If the ravening wolves are to be frightened away it must be by the barking of dogs and by the staff of the shepherd.

He had been willing at first to fight the battle fairly without personal animosity.

“I am glad that your headache is better,” he said to his wife, who had risen from her seat to meet him.

Greet the brethren. They that are with me greet you. I pray that you may be well in the Lord, beloved and much-desired sons.

This is unfinished, and should not therefore yet be judged; but I cannot think that the increased height will be an improvement.

Chapter 17.— Appeal to the Manichæans, Calling on Them to Repent

Since even physicians relieve their feverish patients from their heat, not that they may abuse their health to their injury and disorder, (since it would be better to be sick, if one was about to use his health only that he might confine himself again to his bed,) but having learned the evils that arise from sickness, they may no longer fall into the same, that they may the more securely preserve their health, that they may do everything that conduces to its preservation.

Now let us carefully attend to the sense of these passages.

As he thought of it he became hot, and was conscious of a quivering feeling round his heart.

As the inhabitants of Central America found it necessary to break up their state into different republics, so also did the people of Columbia.

Turbo, for his part, was not at all thinking of leaving the house of Marcellus; neither did he omit any opportunity of conversing with Archelaus the bishop.

“Well now, I really think he’s not so nice as Mr Battersby,” said Letty. “I’m sure he’s not so good-looking.”

So, then, if death frees us from the miseries of this world, it is certainly no evil, inasmuch as it restores liberty and excludes suffering.

Ruby was to be allowed to stay at any rate for a month, and was to work in the house for her bread.

But with respect to those predictions which are found in Ezekiel concerning Egypt, such as that it is to be destroyed in forty years, so that the foot of man should not be found within it, and that it should suffer such devastation, that throughout the whole land the blood of men should rise to the knees, I do not know that anyone possessed of understanding could refer this to that earthly Egypt which adjoins Ethiopia.

Though she had objected to Owen Fitzgerald for her daughter, she had no objection to the Fitzgerald name.

And I will keep my word.” But she said nothing to Mrs. Robarts of the pledge which the archdeacon had made to her.

Therefore their arms shall be broken; but the Lord upholds the righteous.

Depending thus on the bishop, he lives strictly, works with energy, is constant in his adherence to all the exigencies of his cloth, and in the ripeness of time is blessed with a living of, we will say, two hundred and fifty pounds a year with a glebe.

“I cannot bear to give pain; and Adolphe will be pained; his self-love will be wounded at the idea of being rejected.”

Matthew 24:1-2.

The Republic was done, his dream was over, and he could only die.

My father’s clients deserted him.

The rest saluted the emperor with uncovered head and very reverently.

Mrs. Toff’s correspondent declared that the Marquis had hardly been out of his bed since he had been knocked into the fireplace.

But, not to be tedious to my reader, the introduction to his second book, of which he has discharged himself like a sot after a night's debauch, will show the character of his eloquence, and through what bright flowers of rhetoric he takes his stately course.

For the tithe of the number of all the days included in the revolving circle of the year is thirty-six days and a half.

How deeply this self-exaltation in the abundance of graces is to be feared, that no man may pride himself in the gift of God, but may rather preserve humility, and may do what is written: The greater you are, the more humble yourself, and you shall find favour before the Lord: [Sirach 3:18] how deeply pride in God's gift should be feared, we must again and again impress upon you

The Jews of late sought to stone You, and You are going there again?

Nor is our commemoration one of Dionysus, and the thigh that travailed with an incomplete birth, as before a head had travailed with another; nor of the hermaphrodite god, nor a chorus of the drunken and enervated host; nor of the folly of the Thebans which honours him; nor the thunderbolt of Semele which they adore.

If matter were possessed of qualities from eternity, of what will God be the creator?

At the English houses,—or German,—it was possible to go to bed.

Chapter 29. Christ is useless to those who observe the law

However, a certain brother induced him to lend the manuscript to him for a short time; and then, when he had got it into his hands, had a hasty and incorrect transcript made, which he immediately published much to the chagrin of Pammachius.

“And of fine generous feeling. He would not change like a weathercock.”

And, if perchance any fault of theirs should require notice, you will be careful so to correct their transgressions as by no means to discard paternal affection from your mind.

“Out of two evils you must choose the least. You have heard of that, have you not?”

Mr. Bonteen made himself very disagreeable indeed.

“I don’t in the least believe in it;—nor do I believe in any man who thinks to redeem himself after such a fashion. It may still be possible that I shall not go back.”

For Scripture often personifies many even lifeless objects; as for instance, "The Sea said" so and so; and, "The Depth says, It is not in me;" and "The Heavens declare the glory of God ;" and again a command is given to the Sword; and the Mountains and Hills are asked the reason of their skipping.

Mr. Gresham was determined to introduce that fashion on the present occasion.

I am moreover stimulated by the longing regret left with me by the short taste I had of your society.

“You could explain, you know, that you are a little short in your own payments to me.” This Sir Felix said, thinking it to be a delicate mode of introducing his claim upon the Secretary.

All that now devolves upon your holinesses is to decide with unanimous judgment, without partiality or prejudice, in accordance with the ecclesiastical and rule, and to devise suitable remedies for the offenses which may have resulted from error; in order that the Church may be freed from all reproach, that my anxiety may be diminished, that peace may be restored to those now at variance, and that your renown may be increased. May God preserve you, beloved brethren.

“No magistrate would listen to such a charge,” said Sir Peregrine.

But Mr Fisker liked to have his amusement as well as did the others, and went up resolutely into the cardroom.

Attend now a little while to the letters of Cyprian, that you may see how he proves the man to be inexcusable who desires ostensibly on the ground of his own righteousness to withdraw himself from the unity of the Church (which God promised and has fulfilled in all nations), and that you may more clearly apprehend the truth of the text quoted by me shortly before: There is a generation that esteem themselves righteous, and have not cleansed themselves from the guilt of their going forth.

“Oh, no! how could I speak to him about it?”

You will see me, I trust, the day after this letter reaches you; but nevertheless I cannot debar myself from the satisfaction of writing.

And, the Son being in the Father and the Father in the Son, in oneness and power of spirit, the understanding and reason ([νοῦς καὶ λόγος]) of the Father is the Son of God.

In their frenzy the starving people had recourse to hideous food; and tore each other limb from limb that they might have flesh to eat.

“When men get so high as that, there’s no knowing whether they work or whether they don’t. There isn’t much for them to do, as far as I can see. They have to look beautiful, and frighten the young ones.”

2. Who then is this, save the Father of Christ, most holy and above all created existence , Who like an excellent pilot, by His own Wisdom and His own Word, our Lord and Saviour Christ, steers and preserves and orders all things, and does as seems to Him best?

But whichever of these be the cause, God is not the cause.

GRACE CRAWLEY, their daughter.

A night on the box of a mail-coach was but a bad time, and a night inside a mail-coach was a night in purgatory.

And we are His members and His heritage, and building, and branches, and fellow-workers.

“You do not mean to say that after all this you will desert me?”

I hear the common people, when they lift their hands to heaven, say nothing else but Oh God, and God is great, and God is true, and if God shall permit.

[Matthew 24:16] But if any man is conscious that he is very stout-hearted, to encounter Satan, let him stand (for I do not despair of the Church's nerves), and let him say, Who shall separate us from the love of Christ and the rest [Romans 8:35]?

Pope is a most amiable, agreeable, and honest man, and sincerely pious to boot, which is much for a Pope; but he is not made to drive the State coach.

That had been all!

Come now, let our opponents sever the connection of the flesh with the soul in the affairs of life, that they may be emboldened to sunder it also in the recompense of life.

Hearing the thunder then, you shall not fear,

He can begin a new work with (not a new, but) an eternal design; and what He has not made before, He does not now begin to make because He repents of His former repose.

“That fellow has got no touch of poetry in him!” said Poojean to himself.

In order that a raging fire from without may not burn up the fragrant blossoms of chastity, I must cry out: O God, make speed to save me: O Lord, make haste to help me.

Yes; he must go now.

For many meanings of the holy Scriptures are concealed, and are known only to a few of singular intelligence, and are never vindicated so suitably and acceptably as when our diligence to make answer to heretics constrains us.

And if there are some, Christ may have asserted that there were.

M. Lufton.

He is then wholly perfect God, but yet is not simply God: for He is not only God but also man. And He is also wholly perfect man but not simply man, for He is not only man but also God. For simply here has reference to His nature, and wholly to His subsistence, just as another thing would refer to nature, while another would refer to subsistence.

[Genesis 3:16] It is not the widow, then, but the bride, who is handed over to labor and sorrow in childbearing.

Is it true?

It was a lovely summer evening, and at about eight o’clock hardly a person in the whole village was to be found within doors; the elderly were sitting smoking at their doors, husbands were saying a thousand last words to their weeping wives, young men were sharpening their swords, and preparing their little kit for the morrow’s march, and the girls were helping them; but everything was done in the open air.

But if you will, let us try this same point over again by an example in the proper subject matter.

Are the heathen more detestable than these?

It is this which happens to all of us Hetero-skii (shadowed-on-one-side) who inhabit the northern regions of the earth.

And why should it be assumed that so suicidal a power of destroying a nationality should be inherent in every portion of the nation?

Why should I mention his debaucheries of virgins?

While the body continues you may see the difference too, but when it perishes, no longer.

And it must also be explained that there was a third path out of the churchyard, not leading into any road, but going right away across the fields.

The spare bedroom is empty.” That was nearly the whole of it.

There is a wonderful difference in these writers, though each of them is perfect in his own line.

There was but little doubt that such had been the fate of Dick,—unless, perhaps, in the bosom of Maria and of his mother.

Who could doubt for a moment with which lay the greater power?

The old squire had left no will, nor was there anything belonging to him at the time of his death that he could bequeath.

Chapter 26. After the Death of Constans, the Western Emperor, Paul and Athanasius are again ejected from their Sees: the Former on his Way into Exile is slain; but the Latter escapes by Flight.

And even here it is a subject of melancholy to you that you see not your heirs retain their possessions, but there you need apprehend nothing of the sort; the possession remains immovable, to you, to your children, and to their descendants, if they imitate the same goodness.

“Ah! on that we must decide. He would be friendly with me. Though he might think it necessary that I should leave Bowick, he would not turn against me violently.”

Be this as it may, it is a handsome building, and would not disgrace any European capital.

I thought it best to save you from that; but, I declare, I believe I might have left him to do it; it would have had no effect upon you.

Then hastily went she forth in sadness to the perfumer.

Divested of all responsibility, and fearing no further trouble to himself, he had ventured to tell this girl that her work was full of promise.

If that were to be so, they must all go to work again, and Mr Slow must be told to do the best in his power for his own client.

Why, when appointed to one office, does he enable some to win the victory, while he suffers others to be ridiculed for their disgraceful weakness?

Preface to the Translation of Origen's Two Homilies on the Song of Songs

There is in these words yet another sense: which seems to me more to approve itself.

He spent much of his time at the Spaldings’ house, and was always to be seen with them in the Cascine and at the Opera.

How shall we answer him?

For, says Scripture, Jesus said to them, 'Verily, verily, I say unto you, before Abraham was, I am [John 8:58].'

It is on the inner man, on his nature and disposition, that the happiness of a wife must depend.

Sir Alured, with all his foibles and with all his faults, was a pure-minded, simple gentleman, who could not tell a lie, who could not do a wrong, and who was earnest in his desire to make those who were dependent on him comfortable, and, if possible, happy.

“Yes, Plantagenet; the gambling-rooms. If you had been with me before, I should not have made a fool of myself by putting my piece of money on the table. I want to see the place; but then I saw nothing, because I was so frightened when I found that I was winning.”

He had been blackballed at three or four clubs, but had effected an entrance at two or three others, and had learned a manner of speaking of those which had rejected him calculated to leave on the minds of hearers a conviction that the societies in question were antiquated, imbecile, and moribund.

He had chosen to be rebellious, and therefore he was not only turned out of the house, but told that he must live on an uncomfortably small income.

But she is to be your wife.

For they see that they were blind who believed Christ to have been exalted above the heavens although they saw Him not, and yet denied that His glory is spread over all the earth although they saw it; whereas the prophet has with so great plainness included both in one sentence, Be exalted, O God, above the heavens, and Your glory above all the earth.

He had left without taking a degree, in consequence, as it was believed, of some such notions, and had now been called to the bar with a fixed resolve to open the oyster with such weapons, offensive and defensive, as nature had given to him.

Now you’ll hear them from the body of the House, and you’ll find how very different it is.

“And have you seen him?”

4d., and that a cheque to that amount should be at once handed to him,—Daniel Thwaite the son,—if he would call at the chambers of Messrs. Goffe and Goffe, with a certified copy of the probate of the will of Thomas Thwaite the father.

Mr. Maule, Senior, not understanding much of all this, but still understanding something, thought that he might perhaps be the saint.

And again: It is no longer I that live, but Christ lives in me.

R. Be with me now, as far as you may, in most diligent attention.

They did not yet well know the power of Christ.

But Theophilus gave this answer without reflecting on the saying of the wise Solomon, [Ecclesiastes 12:11] that 'the words of the wise are as goads and those who are pricked by the precepts they contain, ought not to kick against them.

The cause of his separation was singular in its nature.

“Love you! Yes, I love you. You do not doubt that, Anna. How could it be possible that you should doubt it after twenty years of a mother’s care? You know I love you.”

Wherefore our Lord Jesus Christ permitted the first of the apostles, whose confession He had fixed as a kind of groundwork and foundation of the Church, to waver to and fro, and to deny Him, and then raised Him up again.

For it is not possible for any one to cure a man by compulsion against his will.

“Were you not betrothed to me?”

[John 14:2] But if He anywhere also calls the resting places of the saints tabernacles; He calls them not tabernacles simply, but adds an epithet; for he said not, that they may receive you into their tabernacles, but into the eternal tabernacles.

In my younger days I was carried away with a great passion for learning, yet I was not like some presumptuous enough to teach myself.

“No indeed. What a bitter creature you would be if you did.”

“But every right to accept it, my dear, when it is made. That is if it suits you.”

If it shall turn out that she is rich, let him take her; if not, why, he can desert her then as well as now.” He could not bring himself to put his niece into such a position as this.

“Perhaps so; but, at any rate, I mean to try. We Vavasors don’t seem to be good at marrying.”

It had been decided, as the reader has been told, that no direct advantage should be taken of that loud blast of accusation which had been heard throughout the town on the previous afternoon.

“Hindered,—hindered from what?” said Rachel, who felt that her tears were coming, but struggled hard to retain them. “Mamma, I have done nothing that was wrong. Mamma, you will believe me, will you not?”

And they were continually harping on these things, putting them forward as cloaks for their own passions.

A faggot for the coals, and wood for the fire, and a man of evil words for the tumult of strife.

And sometimes by saying to him, A great deed it will be if you make away with such an one!

They were commenced of course by soup,—real soup, not barley broth with a strong prevalence of the barley.

And, if the complaint of the petitioners stands with truth, so correct ye this thing by a regular reformation, that he may both be made aware what evil thing he has done and learn for the future not to exceed the limits of his office.

It is the height of foolish ostentation to be in a flutter about peploi, and xystides, and ephaptides, and cloaks, and tunics, and what covers shame, says Homer.

It tries to lift up with pride one man because of his great endurance of work and labour, another because of his extreme readiness to obey, another because he outstrips other men in humility.

Chapter 3. The Soul's Origin Defined Out of the Simple Words of Scripture

Behold, happier times will come, and I am doing this, and purchasing this.

And of this humility the first proof is given by reserving everything (not only what you do but also what you think), for the scrutiny of the elders, so as not to trust at all in your own judgment but to acquiesce in their decisions in all points, and to acknowledge what ought to be considered good or bad by their traditions.

As to Marie, she was to be married after another week, and of course she would dance with no one but Carl Stobel.

Therefore he now sat himself to work, while his pen yet remained dry in his hand, to remodel his thoughts, which had been turned against Lily and Allington by the craft of Lady de Courcy.

“It isn’t mine, you know.”

As to the child, Mr. Outhouse expressed a strong opinion that the father was legally entitled to the custody of his boy, and that nothing could be done to recover the child, except what might be done with the father’s consent.

If he hates his own soul, how shall he love my soul?

Lady Wanless was by far too good a mother to have favourites among her own children.

That lad was your brother, him whom you so dearly loved.

And again, he hints at that which had been said in another place, that If we suffer, we shall also reign with Him.

He says, He judges between the gods.

He would certainly do it as Jael; and he would, if he dared, insert dimly in the background some idea of the face of the mother, half-appearing, half-vanishing, as the spirit of the sacrifice.

She too had felt that her aunt could “take her skin off her,” as Sir Magnus had said.

For the articles of the Faith were not composed as seemed good to men; but the most important points collected out of all the Scripture make up one complete teaching of the Faith.

Since art is greatly superior to strength,—

Yoicks, Merrylass!

And though she wrote no such letter she thought of it,—of the words she would use were she to write it, and of the tale which she would have to tell.

Now let the following statement be offered as a mere exercise (in interpretation).

The Church was in the park, not very far from the house, but nearer to the gate leading to Brotherton. On that Sunday morning the Marchioness and her youngest daughter went there in the carriage, and in doing so, had to pass the front doors. The previous Sunday had been cold, and this was the first time that the Marchioness had seen Manor Cross since her son had been there. “Oh, dear! if I could only go in and see the dear child,” she said.

For because we have strength of body, we are not therefore manly persons.

[Revelation 6:10] for, of course, their avenging is regulated by the end of the age.

It was known to some few that he occupied rooms in a flat at Westminster,—but to very few exactly where the rooms were situate.

Not of His essence then is 'He created' indicative, as has many times been said, but of His bodily generation.

For, as you know, grain springs from land that is full of thistles, and the rose is produced from thorns.

“And that is to be sufficient for my poor girl?”

“I shall be proud to renew my acquaintance.”

Augustine replied: After the long reply of last book, a short answer may suffice here.

Therefore it is not a disease to be angry, nor to desire, nor to be excited by lust; but to be passionate, to be covetous or licentious, is a disease.

You have now received the definition.

Come with gifts to Him that says, I will have mercy rather than sacrifice.

‘By jingo! And how I remember your acoming and talking to me across the gate at Polyeuka Hall!’

The “sagum” was a common military cloak, which the early Romans wore instead of the toga when they went out to war.

But why restrict such censure to this form of sin alone?

They received him, and conducted him to the house of Maroones.

Polly after that began the battle in a fashion that had been invented by herself.

Nevertheless, even he, when still a young man, and most zealous in these charitable acts, had sometimes, as he himself told me, doubts as to whether there was any life after death.

When Mrs. McKeon and her daughters came for her about one o’clock on Monday, the small exertion necessary for putting up her clothes, had made her somewhat better—something more able to talk than she had been before, and they did not then observe anything particular about her; but she had been but a very short time at Drumsna, before it was evident to Mrs. McKeon, that something was the matter with her.

“Tell me,” she said, “what my aunt has been saying to you about that man that came here to-day.”

3. My defence to them that examine me is this. What is, My defence to them that examine me is this? To those who seek to know whereby I am proved to be an Apostle, or who accuse me as receiving money, or inquire the cause of my not receiving, or would fain show that I am not an Apostle: to all such, my instruction given to you and these things which I am about to say, may stand for a full explanation and defence. What then are these?

“Why, having Meg and Jane here: I wasn’t ever used to anyone to talk to, only just the servants.”

Titus also he admonishes, saying, These things speak, and exhort, and rebuke with all authority [Titus 2:15].

Havens of peace, a place also of retreat for all that were distressed,

The first calls for a disputant, the second for a teacher.

For there is one essence, one goodness, one power, one will, one energy, one authority, one and the same, I repeat, not three resembling each other.

“I am quite sure that I shall not discuss it with you,” said the doctor, very brusquely.

Proclaimed the noblest sons, and named them so,

To seat the bishop on an armchair on the lawn and place Farmer Greenacre at the end of a long table in the paddock is easy enough, but where will you put Mrs. Lookaloft, whose husband, though a tenant on the estate, hunts in a red coat, whose daughters go to a fashionable seminary in Barchester, who calls her farmhouse Rosebank, and who has a pianoforte in her drawing-room?

But if you condescend to him, then he will love you, and will not suspect you as a teacher, and you will afterwards gain the power of sowing imperceptibly in him the right views.

The Lord, however, knew how to reserve Paradise for him.

Since in fact both old and young, and men having wives, and bringing up children, and working at crafts, and serving as soldiers, have duly performed all that is enjoined.

And who would not will, that the life whatsoever it be, with which he is delighted, and which he therefore calls blessed, were so in his own power, that he could have it continually?

For do you come to another God?

The manager did not behave nearly as well as he did, and the clerks manifestly betrayed their emotion.

And when we came to Rome, Paul was suffered to dwell by himself with a soldier that kept him.

Sitting there, and turning it all over in my mind, while my eyes rested on the bright expanse of the glass-clear sea, I did perceive that the Fixed Period, with all its advantages, was of such a nature that it must necessarily be postponed to an age prepared for it.

The first Adam was married once: the second was unmarried.

And this one might learn from many instances, both of the early ones, and of those who came after them, as Elisha knew not concerning the woman [2 Kings 4:27 as Elijah said to God, I only am left, and they seek my life.

But what is well?

The league was accordingly broken, and a fierce war followed.

The ruler of the lower regions, insatiably opening his hollow jaws, who has always been a spoiler, becomes a prey to You.

Mr Hall knew well that if he was anxious to save himself from headaches in that line, he had better let his lands on easy terms.

“Everything has to be broken up sooner or later. One feels that as one grows older.”

For whom God loves, He rebukes.

“But, T., I don’t choose to be misunderstood, nor yet misrepresented.”

And what is the object of all this?

Eustathius, they said, was deposed because, when a presbyter, he had been condemned, and put away from the communion of prayers by Eulalius, his own father, who was bishop of the church of Cæsarea, in Cappadocia; and also because he had been excommunicated by a council held at Neocæsarea, a city of Pontus, and deposed by Eusebius, bishop of Constantinople, for unfaithfulness in the discharge of certain duties that had devolved upon him.

So also had Frank travelled all night, but the pony and the fresh air kept him awake.

Here he concealed himself during three years, and afterwards erected a small dwelling on the spot, in which he dwelt twenty-five years.

The second was the giants and Noah; the third, Pharaoh and Abraham; the fourth, the Philistines and Isaac; the fifth, Esau and Jacob; the sixth, the magicians and Moses the lawgiver; the seventh, the tempter and the Son of man; the eighth, Simon and I, Peter; the ninth, all nations, and he who shall be sent to sow the word among the nations; the tenth, Antichrist and Christ.

For it is very certain that Plato wrote that the souls of men return after death to the bodies of beasts.

And so on Monday after the Mattin hymns they hand over to others who take their place the vessels and utensils with which they have ministered, which these receive and keep with the utmost care and anxiety, that none of them may be injured or destroyed, as they believe that even for the smallest vessels they must give an account, as sacred things, not only to a present steward, but to the Lord, if by chance any of them is injured through their carelessness.

Dr Thorne did not answer this question, but went on nursing his leg.

He began to fear now that possibly he had been wrong in the favours shown to Sam Brattle.

“If so he would have to spare me altogether,” said Mabel, “for I must meet my father in London in the middle of January.”

Concomitant with Cicero’s return there had come a famine in Rome.

I must tell him that I believe him or that I do not.

“Well, you see, George has been so much knocked about! There was his fellowship. I think they behaved shabbily enough to him.”

The motive follows which caused the lights to be created.

For a mention of this kind implies destruction of both parts; but Christ Himself, containing but not contained, who examines us but is Himself beyond examination, making full but not made full, everywhere at one and the same time being Himself whole and pervading the universe, through His pouring out His own power, as being moved with mercy, was mingled with the nature of man, though the nature of man was not mingled with the divine.

He who consigns to oblivion his own excellences, and looks at his failings only, while he is a curious enquirer of the excellences, not the sins, of others, is profited in many ways.

“There must be an inquiry first,—by his brother clergy. There must indeed. It’s the only way of proceeding.”

This waiting-room was very dingy, much more so than the clerk’s room, and boasted of no furniture but eight old leathern chairs and two old tables.

But what he was with his brother and sister, though all men were embraced in his good-will, our undivided patrimony testifies, and the inheritance neither distributed nor diminished, but preserved.

Whatever he might do towards obeying her in striving to form some manly purpose for his life, he would never ask another woman to be his wife, he would never look for other love.

And if they venture to advance the opinions of Arius, when they see themselves proceeding in a prosperous course, nothing remains for us but to use great boldness of speech, remembering the predictions of the Apostle, which he wrote to forewarn us of such like heresies, and which it becomes us to repeat.

Make the experiment, if you doubt me; take it into consideration, I beseech you.

Were not all Jews necessarily an abomination?

Her coming among them had not been a success.

Haste, Tiresias; believe, and you will see.

But if that sacred name be peculiarly significant of deity, and be simply true and not of a forced interpretation in the case of the true God, but transferred in a borrowed sense to those other objects which you choose to call gods, then you ought to show to us that there is also a community of character between them, so that their common designation may rightly depend on their union of essence.

but when the work in its integrity was perused by Pammachius he thought it so erroneous in doctrine that he determined not to circulate it.

So, too, it is written in the book of Ecclesiasticus: All things are known to Him ere ever they were created: so also after they were perfected.

She had told him that she did not love him.

For even the diver pries not into his pearl. In it do all merchants rejoice without prying into whence it came; even the king who is crowned therewith does not explore it.

Whether He indulge, or whether He chasten, He is instructing one for whom He is preparing an inheritance.

Galaad has the voice of an interpretation of its own and of a great Mystery: for it is interpreted the heap of testimony.

He was wont to vanish in April, and would always turn up again in October.

For concerning the Word, the divine David says, For ever, O Lord, Your Word is settled in heaven.

And then it might be more than probable that in Farmer Griggs’s establishment there was not always a horse ready in harness, or a groom at hand prepared to yoke him.

The reflection which perplexed him most was the consciousness that he must quarrel with his brother, and that after such a quarrel he would become nobody in the world.

He will look after the property and shall have whatever income old Mellerby thinks proper.

If Lady Staveley were really angry with him for loving her daughter,—if his friend Staveley were in very truth determined that such love must under no circumstances be sanctioned,—would they treat him as they were treating him?

What master was there who was not compelled to live in dread of his own servant, if he had put himself under the guardianship of the Donatists?

I specify also the deacons who survived those who died in the sickness, viz., Faustus, Eusebius, and Chaeremon.

“I was saying that divil another potato he should dig in Drumleesh, nor another grain of corn shall he sow or rape; that’s what I was saying.”

Now, at any rate, when her lover was at the door, she could not turn him away.

For the things that form the substance of innumerable evils are these: to be a slave to the belly, to do anything for vainglory, to be in subjection to the madness of riches.

“I don’t know what he says. Of course he swears that he never spoke a word to her.”

But it is the centre of a rich farming district, and the land in the valleys around it is very fertile.

“Listen, yes; it’s my business to listen. Would you like that I should give this house up for her, and go into lodgings somewhere? I shall have very little objection as matters are going now. Oh dear, oh dear, that things should ever have come to this!”

“Had I done that all this trouble would have been saved!”

For it is the custom of the prophetic Word to compare the Church to a flower covered and variegated meadow, adorned and crowned not only with the flowers of virginity, but also with those of child-bearing and of continence; for it is written, Upon your right hand stood the queen in a vesture of gold, wrought about with various colours.

Orth.— If then even the very inventor and teacher of iniquity did not incur death on account of the immortality of his nature, do you not shudder at the thought of saying that the fount of immortality and righteousness shared death?

Alice, when she came down to the drawing-room, before dinner, found Mr Bott there alone. She had dressed more quickly than her friend, and Mr Palliser had not yet made his appearance.

For he says, I was established King by Him on His holy hill of Sion, declaring the ordinance of the Lord.

“I shall, I know. I can’t pretend to such strength as to say that I can lose what I want, and not feel it.”

Those who know Winchester will understand, that though, as regarded school business and school hours, they were at the same establishment, they were not together at the much more important hours of eating, sleeping, and playing.

And then, if all this were done, and Lord Rufford were to assure the Duke that the young lady had made a mistake, how derogatory would all that be to the exalted quiescence of the house of Mayfair!

2. He then ingeniously shows that the generation of the Son is not according to the phrase of Eunomius, The Father begot Him at that time when He chose, and not before: but that the Son, being the fullness of all that is good and excellent, is always contemplated in the Father; using for this demonstration the support of Eunomius' own arguments.

For if a man who passes by an ointment-maker's shop, or sits in one, is impregnated with the perfume even against his will, much more is this the case with one who comes to church.

It ain’t nice for you to have me sitting here.

God bless you, Ludovic.

“I can tell you nobody else will think much of you if you remain here. I could hardly believe it when Nidderdale told me.”

That he had done right in utterly repudiating all idea of a marriage between Mary and her cousin—of that he was certain enough; that no earthly consideration would have induced Mary to plight her troth to such a man—that, with him, was as certain as doom.

Nevertheless, we have no testimony but his own as to what Cicero did in Cilicia.

The Duke’s property, indeed!

[Jeremiah 31:34] Now this may be understood in several ways: Either, that in that life the saints shall differ one from another in glory, as star from star.

The making of money is the work of man; but he need not take his work to bed with him, and have it ever by his side at table, amid his family, in church, while he disports himself, as he declares his passion to the girl of his heart, in the moments of his softest bliss, and at the periods of his most solemn ceremonies.

If there be one class of men whose names would be found more frequent on the backs of bills in the provincial banks than another, clergymen are that class.

“Yes;—Plaistow is in Norfolk.”

But there comes to his help a barbarian ally,—a certain Mithridates of Pergamus, a putative son of the great Mithridates of Pontus.

For it was not by angels or archangels, but by His Only-begotten Son Himself, that He saved us.

But the determination to produce good steady work, of whatever colour, has I think been recognised, and I think it may be granted that the Review has done very much toward introducing the French system of adding the signature of the authors to magazine writing.

There it is all right-hand, because no misery is there.

Such a thing is marriage.

Then 'the very powers of the heavens shall be shaken,' [Matthew 24:29] and the manifestation of my coming shall imitate lightning that appears at once to all.

To the end, for the taking up of the morning, a psalm of David.

She could not get him into the humour in which it was proper that he should be told.

I explained to him that if you were left in possession of a comfortable home, such as would have been that of your father, I should think it best for your sake to delay our marriage till I should be prepared to do something better for you than I can at present; but that I hold myself ready to give you all that I have to give at a moment’s notice, should you be required to leave his house.

You can not make clear the purity of your conscience in some accusation, and sufferest wrong and violence, because false witnesses are listened to against you.

She went through the big gates, and along the slanting path to the door, not doubting of her way;—for Mr. Glascock had described it all to her, making a small plan of the premises, and even explaining to her the position of the room in which her boy and her husband slept.

And he said to me, Gird yourself with pure, undressed linen made of sackcloth; and seeing me girded, and ready to minister to him, Summon, he said, the men to whom belong the branches that were planted, according to the order in which each one gave them in.

Just as this passage also says: The Lord swore, and will not repent, You are a Priest for ever after the order of Melchizedec; so also since this was promised so that it should not be changed, because it must needs happen and be permanent; he says, The Lord has made a faithful oath unto David, and He shall not repent; Of the fruit of your body shall I set upon your seat.

“He didn’t give himself airs?”

There remained therefore the twelve.

I speak not thus, that it should be so done unto me.

This is corroborated still further by the fact that in the eighth generation, while the Hebrew books assign 182 years to Methuselah before Lamech's birth, ours assign to him twenty less, though usually 100 years are added to this period; then, after Lamech's birth, the twenty years are restored, so as to equalize the total in the two books.

But by saying cease, a term which deprecates violence, he admirably denotes the disturbance of persecution.

So far have I been from misdoubting the dean,—whom I have long known to be in all things a true and honest gentleman,—that I postponed the elaborated result of my own memory to his word.

It is impossible that human nature should endure such a struggle and not rebel.

All this was communicated by letter to the Countess, but Mr. Goffe especially requested that the letter might be shown to Lady Anna, and that he might receive a reply intimating that Lady Anna understood its purport.

It was a moderate-sized house, surrounded by pretty gardens and shrubberies, close down upon the river Eamont, on the Westmoreland side of the river, looking over to a lovely wooded bank in Cumberland.

[Matthew 5:41] We believe, nevertheless, that He before whom the sighing of the prisoner comes will look on us persevering in the ministry in which He was pleased to put us, with promise of reward, and, by the assistance of your prayers, will set us free from all distress.

Before, there was much benignity to his fellow-servants; now, there was exceeding love shown towards the Lord!

Be separate who bear the vessels of the Lord.

The only man there not so furnished was Montague, and while the sums won were quite small he was allowed to pay with cash.

But one who has been able to gain the victory by stratagem involves the enemy in ridicule as well as disaster.

To this we say, that if any one consider the reason of the whole mystery, he will pronounce these things to be more just than those that we have already explained.

But I was under contract.

I believe that Sparrowsky is a penniless adventurer.

[Matthew 5:16] Now nothing is more full of light than a most excellent conversation.

“I don’t know,” said Tappitt. “I’m not for persecuting even the Jews;—not when they pay their way and push themselves honourably in commerce.”

Now it is Celsus who made us discuss these topics, by the unfair manner in which he deals with Jesus, in giving his assent to what is related about His death and burial, but regarding as an invention His resurrection from the dead, although this was not only foretold by innumerable prophets, but many proofs also were given of His having appeared after death.

It is one question as to the enormity of my action, which you never prove with any truth, another as to the baptism of your blood, from whence you derive your boast.

But He exhibited faith towards God.

He who has but one, looks upon this as the greatest misery, because that one, being set too much store by, and never corrected, becomes willful, and brings grief upon his father.

Much was not therefore known of Mr. Daly, in his own house.

He soon received another blow which was also a severe one.

Lastly, here let us see the words following: And they loved Him, he says, in their mouth, and in their tongue they lied unto Him [Psalm 77:36].

For men could not without this have learned.

And again, another says, [Psalm 55:23] Cast upon the Lord your care, and He will nourish you.

Say, I pray you—that Peta, Puta, Patella may graciously favour you—if there were no bees at all on the earth then, or if we men were born without bones, like some worms, would there be no goddess Mellonia; or would Ossilago, who gives bones their solidity, be without a name of her own?

And were it not necessary to keep my work to a moderate size, I might launch forth also into the proof of this.

Because there they shall suffer a severer one.

It was only early on that morning that she had given her answer to George Roden,—and early on that morning she had summoned up her courage, and told her whole story.

Hence the Apostle's choice is rather to aim at what is before, [Philippians 3:13] that is, to desire things eternal, and to forget things behind, by which temporal matters should be understood.

Seeing, then, that this life of sensation could not possibly exist apart from the matter which is the subject of it, and the intellectual life could not be embodied, either, without growing in the sentient, on this account the creation of man is related as coming last, as of one who took up into himself every single form of life, both that of plants and that which is seen in brutes.

“Mother, it was you who brought us together, and you cannot separate us now.” That had always been Clara’s argument, leaving the countess helpless, except as far as she could work on Herbert’s generosity.

And for this cause, he says, He is the Mediator of the New Testament.

There was, moreover, now, at this present moment, a clear duty on him to be true to the young man who with his consent, and indeed very much at his instance, had become betrothed to Marie Bromar.

It is therefore possible that a man may be worse than a heathen, and yet that the sacrament of Christ may not only be in him, but be not a whit inferior to what it is in a holy and righteous man.

The whole place was then one camp.

For they of the multitude said, When Christ comes, will He do more miracles?

Chapter XV. Mr Whittlestaff Goes Out to Dinner

For among them there are from the monad three double (numbers), viz., 2, 4, 8, and three triple ones, viz., 3, 9, 27.

In this respect also our [privileges] are more gentle and more admirable.

“Bores of that sort, however,” said Graham, “will show themselves from time to time and are not easily put down. Some one will have a mission to reform our courts of law, and will do it too.”

[Mark 10:51] Jesus said unto him, What do you wish that I should do unto you?

While you were still quite small, bishop Anastasius of holy and blessed memory ruled the Roman church.

For who at any time has stirred any question of these matters against them?

“Who’s there? Where’s Bell?” and Mrs Dale went into the parlour as she was bidden. “But who is there?” she repeated.

“The one is always under cover,” said the Canon. “The other, I believe, is generally held out of doors.”

Now I am much astonished that neither his former conversation, nor his advanced age, nor his long-continued sickness, could turn your mind from wrath.

Linda saw and knew all this, and was disgusted.

He blessed also those that mourn, not simply for the loss of relatives, but those who are pricked at heart, who mourn their own faults, and take count of their own sins, or even those of others.

It is singular, or perhaps if rightly considered not singular, that both the railways have been constructed mainly by Anglo-Saxon science and energy, and under the pressure of Anglo-Saxon influence; while both the canal schemes most prevalent at the present day owe their repute to French eloquence and French enthusiasm. M. Lesseps is the patron of the Suez canal, and M. Belly of that which is, or is not to be, constructed from San Juan del Norte, or Greytown, to the shores of the Pacific.

For it is fit that those men who are sent forth from God, as ambassadors now coming from heaven, should enjoy great honor.

“Has he spoken?”

“I’ll not repeat it—and you hadn’t betther, either. And now, do you choose to hear my professional advice, and behave to me as you ought and shall do? or will you go out of this and look out for another attorney? To tell you the truth, I’d jist as lieve you’d take your business to some one else.”

Between these two kinds of philosophy I see that there is disagreement, and as it were civil war.

And I will have a care for my sin.

The very same.

The first-fruits of them that slept.

He had set himself to wish to like her, and had been successful.

She was at Stalham for a fortnight before her marriage, in order, as Lady Albury said, that the buxom ladysmaid might see that everything had been done rightly in reference to the trousseau.

I do not fully understand what you mean by the words, without believing them to be at all necessary to salvation.

“That is mean,” he said, angrily. “That is imputing falseness, and greed, and dishonour to the girl I love. If she has liked some fellow clerk in her father’s office better than she likes me, shall she accept me merely because I am my father’s son?”

That Ayala was struggling Mrs. Dosett had been aware;—but she had thought that such struggles were good and had not been hopeless.

But at the festivals of Saturn, men could rather be slain by the hands of others than mutilated by their own.

“So it is,—if he has really got any. However, as your father is coming to London, I need not go down to Matching.”

The bishop thought that a great deal depended on a good lock and quite as much on the key. He had observed that the fault very often lay with the key, especially if the wards were in any way twisted.

For that you may not say, What shall we pray?

Have you given alms, and lavished your substance?

“Much indeed! Enough for a whole lifetime. And yet how slow the time has gone!”

It was not in reference to the passages of Scripture which you have quoted that I uttered the words: 'This is what I also believe.'

And sacrifices and vain festivals

“And yet this man calls himself a Liberal, and voted for the Reform Bill,” he said.

If it existed before it was born from Mary, then it was not yet the soul of Jesus; and it was employed in some way, and, for a reward of its virtues, it was made his soul.

Archie shook hands with her and then made his bow to Madam Gordeloup. “Au revoir, my friend,” she said, “and you remember all I say. It is not good for de wife to be alone in the country, while de husband walk about in the town and make an eye to every lady he see.” Archie would not trust himself to renew the argument, but bowing again, made his way off.

He, leaving all others, betook himself to Martin, and in a short time became distinguished for the most exalted faith, and for all sorts of excellence.

Men are persuasive, and imperious withal, who are unconscious that they use burning words to others, whose words to them are never even warm.

“Ah, Owen; we are to part now, part for ever,” she said; “speak to me once in your life as though we were equal friends. Cannot you forget for one minute that I am Countess of Desmond?”

Did he, my own, own brave little man?’ And she could boast of her own health too.

My eyes, he says, were upon such as are faithful in the land, that they might sit with me [Psalm 100:6].

Gradually the day dawned, and the two could look at each other in the grey light of the morning.

He was not a bad actor, and those who saw him and made reports as to his conduct on the following day declared that he had apparently been quite indifferent to the disagreeable incidents of his position.

“You see, my dear,” said Mrs. Carbuncle, “there can be no real reason for his seeing you up in your bedroom.

Now, if He had interposed, He would have rescinded the liberty of man's will, which He had permitted with set purpose, and in goodness.

For a couple of hours the warden remained thus in the garden, now walking, now standing motionless on the turf, and then, as his legs got weary, sitting unconsciously on the garden seats, and then walking again. And Eleanor, hidden behind the muslin curtains of the window, watched him through the trees as he now came in sight, and then again was concealed by the turnings of the walk; and thus the time passed away till five, when the warden crept back to the house and prepared for dinner.

Immediately on his arrival in Egypt, Athanasius displaced those whom he knew to be attached to Arianism, and placed the government of the Church and the confession of the Nicæan council in the hands of those whom he approved, and he exhorted them to hold to this with earnestness.

And after stating his reason, viz., that the unbeliever who is unwilling to leave the believer becomes thereby a candidate for the faith, he commands, on the other hand, that if the unbeliever reject the faithful one on account of the faith of Christ, the believer ought to depart, lest husband or wife be preferred to Christ, in comparison with Whom we must hold even life itself cheap.

I would never have allowed myself to marry even if I had chanced to love a poor man.

For there has come to us our brother Atticus, the metropolitan bishop of Old Epirus, with the bishops of his province, and with tearful pleading has complained of the undeserved contumely he has suffered, in the presence of your own deacons who, by giving no contradiction to these woeful complaints, showed that what was impressed upon us did not want for truth.

“Think now, my man; when you were trying to persuade your master to go to the widow Mulready’s, did you mention Mr. Jonas Brown’s name?”

Did she mean to show that letter to her cousin?

Devil hab him, and money too!” This, be it remembered, from a ferocious, almost blackened Arab, with his face within an inch of your own.

But, indeed, the state of affairs did not leave much time for waiting, or for the etiquette of the hunting-field.

Do you hear, then, the Word of God, and will you separate Him from the Father's Will and Power?

“And especially to the souls of the people,” said Mrs. Proudie.

But if, as I suspect, I gave in my reply no definite direction on the subject, you must not hesitate to advance money for the advantage of the peasants, since the ecclesiastical property will not thus be wasted, and out of it the peasants will derive advantage.

It is the words of our faith which you are turning into the instrument of your blasphemy, preserving the sound and perverting the sense.

For thus He is comprehensible and incomprehensible, near and far, being here and there, as being the only existent one, and as giving a share of that mind which is infinite on every hand, in consequence of which souls breathe and possess life; and if they be separated from the body and be found with a longing for Him, they are borne along into His bosom, as in the winter time the mists of the mountains, attracted by the rays of the sun, are borne along immortal to it.

Do not fear, because the Lord is great, that perhaps He will not condescend to come to one who is sick, for He often comes to us from heaven; and is wont to visit not only the rich but also the poor and the servants of the poor.

Then the Countess with great violence knocked the book out of her daughter’s grasp, and it was thrown to the other side of the room.

Poor Mr. Gibson,—we hardly know whether most to pity him, or the unfortunate, poor woman who ultimately became Mrs. Gibson.

Will it not be an image?

“The Melmottes are coming to them.” Lady Carbury, as she made the announcement, felt that her voice and countenance and self-possession were failing her, and that she could not mention the thing as she would any matter that was indifferent to her.

Months ago,—it seems to be years now,—when Cecilia Holt had caught your fancy, I did regard her as the most fortunate girl.

As for giving up Ongar Park, she took to herself no merit for that.

The Marquis, no doubt, he knew well, having lived with him for many years.

For this we used to hear from Pythagoras and Plato, even before we learned the truth.

Country gentlemen around him all had comfortable grates in their dining-rooms.

“That’s because you don’t understand things of that sort,” said his wife. Then the caution was repeated, the mother of the future duke was kissed, and Mr Palliser went off on his mission about the carriage, its cushions, and its springs. In the course of their walk Mr Palliser suggested that, as things were settled so pleasantly, Mr Grey might as well return with them to England, and to this suggestion Mr Grey assented.

Is earth immaterial, fire an object of pure reason, water incorporeal, air beyond the perception of the senses?

In the month of September, Indiction 5.

“Yes; you.”

And, what is stranger still in such a host, those coming out did not hinder those going in; nay rather, if they saw one fall beneath his burden they would put their shoulders to the load and give him assistance.

Trollope is equally successful with some other social problems and characters of unstable equilibrium.

Who that Saturnus presides over the sown crops?

She had not doubted but that it would be all well when they should be married;—but how if, even now, there should be no marriage for her?

Why not then pray against the devil, who injures us most of all.

For as the unharnessed colt was a symbol of the Gentiles even so the harnessed ass was a symbol of your nation.

For when it is needful to dismiss anger, to extinguish envy, to curb passion, to offer prayer, to exhibit forbearance and meekness, kindliness and charity, when would poverty be a bar?

Moreover, though the Marquis never opened his mouth in the House of Lords, it was, as he thought, imperative on him to give to the leader of his party the occasional support of his personal presence.

For in the case of seeds, when the ear is fully formed and has gained its proper strength, it easily despises rust, and drought, and every other thing; but it is not so with doctrines; in their case after all the work has been fully done, one storm and flood often comes on, and either by the attack of unpleasant circumstances, or by the plots of men skilled to deceive, or by various other temptations brought against them, brings them to ruin.

My only objection to the practice came from the appearance of literary ostentation, to which I felt myself to be subject when going to work before four or five fellow-passengers.

He had died at the age of sixty-seven, in the arms of the woman he had brought there.

Psalm 12

When they raged they were mountains: now they are appeased they have become plains: for He has founded a place for them.

There is no real difficulty in the case; and to make a difficulty shows want of thought, or of the ability to think.

Nora professed herself ready to start immediately on the journey, but was stopped by a proposition from her sister Lucy that in that case Hugh Stanbury would of course go with her.

But certain of the majority of them of Antioch took Lucius and brought him to the Emperor, saying: 'May it please your Might and your Majesty, look whom they wanted to make a Bishop!'

And top boots, when multiplied in such a locality, when seen in a phalanx tell such pleasant lies on their owner’s behalf.

In Spain the blind woman Agape led the blind man Elpidius into the ditch.

Candour must be shown, the truth must be made known.

We fear, indeed we know, you’re beyond the reach of the law, or we shouldn’t make the proposal.” Barry breathed freely again as he heard this avowal.

I beg of you, however, carefully to observe, as far as you can, what I am endeavouring to prove with so much effort.

And we do not reverence beyond measure one who has but lately appeared, as though He did not exist before; for we believe Himself when He says, Before Abraham was, I am.

And the apostle describes this bondage as being like to that of boys under the guidance of a schoolmaster.

For Dionysius, Bishop of Rome, having written also against those who said that the Son of God was a creature and a created thing, it is manifest that not now for the first time but from of old the heresy of the Arian adversaries of Christ has been anathematised by all.

And so Aby had given way,—partly perhaps in terror of Mr. Somers’ countenance; and Matthew Mollett started again in a covered car on that cold journey over the Boggeragh mountains.

You retain uncircumcision; you are bound to monogamy too.

Wherefore John, the forerunner of the Lord, who before knew not this mystery, on learning that He is Lord in truth, cried out, and spoke to those who came to be baptized of him, O generation of vipers, why do you look so earnestly at me?

For my own part, I think that I have said enough of him and of the other martyrs who suffered in Persia during the reign of Sapor; for it would be difficult to relate in detail every circumstance respecting them, such as their names, their country, the mode of completing their martyrdom, and the species of torture to which they were subjected; for they are innumerable, since such methods are jealously affected by the Persians, even to the extreme of cruelty.

For if we take it as though it had, the Apostles will differ in nothing from Christ.

What, then, can be more mad than to love footprints impressed on dust, but not to love him by whom they have been impressed?

“Never! When I declare that, I expect my word to be respected,” He paused for an answer, but what could she say? She did not at all respect his word on such a subject, but she did respect his conduct. “Yes; I call upon you to believe me when I say that for me all that is over. But it can be nothing to you.”

Is it not manifest, as the Apostle Paul says, that the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given us?

But if the benefit is returned, it is destroyed and brought to an end; for we cannot possess in its completeness that for which a price has been paid to us.

In like manner, I should not admit that anything but cement and stones and bricks form the body of a wall.

Neither was there any ground for your apprehending our inflicting a life of indigence and of dependence upon others for daily bread on those regarding whom I had said that we desired to secure to them the second of the possessions named above, viz.

“Just say to her all that you have said to me. You would soon find that her dimples are not more holy than another’s.”

Apart from God, there's nothing owned by men.

Why had he left Lily to go to Madalina?

“I am quite sure she was right in accepting him, Bell,” she said, putting down the book as the light was fading, and beginning to praise the story.

“I hope not; but think of all that before you preach to me. But I do love her; and it is because I love her that I would fain see her removed from the reproaches which her own madness will bring upon her. Let her die;—if it be God’s will. I can follow her without one wish for a prolonged life. Then will a noble family be again established, and her sorrowful tale will be told among the Lovels with a tear and without a curse.”

So within a trifle more than thirty days, about two hundred people, both men and women, came together to him.

But that spouse was ungrateful towards Him who had been an husband to her, whereas, the Church, when once delivered from the evils received from our fathers, continued to embrace the Bridegroom.

When he shall have strong boys round his hearth,—the hearth he spoke of as though it were almost mine,—and little girls with pink cheeks and bonny brows, and shall know, as he will then, what I might have done for him, will he not pray for me, and tell me in his prayers that when we shall meet hereafter I shall still be dear to him?

It was distinctly understood that they were both to go to New York under Mr Fisker’s guidance as soon as things should be sufficiently settled to allow of their departure; and Madame Melmotte was told, about the middle of August, that their places had been taken for the 3rd of September.

Here again it is so said as if the Son also would not send Him, but the Father only.

And first of all there was in him a want of foreknowledge not befitting a god; for had not Themis related to him future events, he would not have known them of his own accord.

Fecit enim rites communiter omnibus, quæ neque passerem, neque furem abnegant; et frumentum similiter, et alios fructus.

He talks very often about you. Of course you know what it is that we all wish. I love Arthur Fletcher almost as much as if he were my brother. He is my sister’s brother-in-law, and if he could become my husband’s brother-in-law too, I should be so happy. Of course we all know that he wishes it. Write immediately to wish me joy. Perhaps you could go to Howell and James’s about the veil. And promise to come to us in May. Sarah says the veil ought to cost about thirty pounds.

But I exhorted him to be of good courage, and to approach the partaking of the saints with firm faith and good hope.

“I think I said that idleness was not,—respectable, or something like that, taken out of a copy-book probably. But you are a man who do not like rebukes, even out of copy-books. A man so thin-skinned as you are must choose for himself a wife with a softer tongue than mine.”

Besides, He gave others the preference; and since He shows their title to this favour— even because they listened to the word (of God)— He points out in what sense He denied His mother and His brethren.

[Luke 10:29] And he, as his desire was to justify himself, said unto him, And who is my neighbour?

Mr. Furnival had been for many years acquainted with Judge Staveley,—had known the judge when he was a leading counsel; and now that Mr. Furnival was a rising man, and now that he had a pretty daughter, it was natural that the young Staveleys and Sophia Furnival should know each other.

“You are so heavy,” she said; “I cannot bear it;” when at last she succeeded in inducing him to sit upright.

You have seen what wicked schemes he laid and executed, and how, because of his passion for a woman, he perpetrated a murder— he, David, who was called the anointed of the Lord.

“I mean about Miss Roanoke’s marriage?”

All this he thought of now as, with devious steps, he made his way towards his old home,—with very devious steps, for he went backwards through the woods by a narrow path which led right away from the town down to a little watercourse, over which stood a wooden foot-bridge with a rail.

“That is to say, you endeavoured to persuade him to go?”

For, according to the official list of them, they are found to be three thousand in number.

If I attempted to discharge my burden thereon, that it might find rest, it sank into emptiness, and came rushing down again upon me, and I remained to myself an unhappy spot, where I could neither stay nor depart from.

XXXIV. Moreover, to Ignorant Gentiles.

A Letter of Martin effects a Cure, with Other Miracles.

“And you’ll go to-day?”

Perhaps some one says: what is it that he says?

“I don’t quite understand it all,” he said, laying his hand softly upon her shoulder. “I have been led to make so many statements to other people, which now seem to have been—incorrect! It was only the box that was taken at Carlisle?”

“A lady?”

“But you see, we might perish beneath the waves together.”

Now when much time was spent, and when sailing was now dangerous, because the fast was now already past, Paul admonished them.

And yet not even in the East is it to be believed that it was ever eclipsed where noble confessors have been found among your ranks: so that, when the old enemy was trying afresh, through the impenitent heart of a modern Pharaoh , to blot out the seed of faithful Abraham and the sons of promise, he grew weary, through God's mercy, and could harm no one save himself.

Cannot you come and see us?

For the Apostles, when they elected Matthias, had not yet received the Holy Spirit, but having committed the matter to prayer, they chose him into the number of the Apostles.

The young birds,—for they do not breed till they are three years old,— or those which are not paired, run in flocks of thirty or forty each.

But the girls had arranged that immediately after church they would start for a walk up the Beacon Hill, across the fells, towards Hawes Water.

now that we have arranged our affairs, and have settled down into the respectable position of an old gentleman whose estates, though deeply mortgaged, are not over mortgaged.

Nor, in that locality, would he have desired to be taken for anything else.

This also do thou.

We have made something of a digression in introducing this story about Jacob and appealing to a writing which we cannot well treat with contempt; but it certainly adds weight to our argument about John, to the effect that as Isaiah's voice declares [Isaiah 40:3] he is an angel who assumed a body for the sake of bearing witness to the light.

Wherefore either disown that book, if you are not its author, and give over urging me to reply to that which you never wrote; or if the book is yours, admit it frankly; so that if I write anything in self-defence, the responsibility may lie on you who gave, not on me who am forced to accept, the challenge.

Then under the appearance of solacing the Jews, he again by his accusation smites them of the Gentiles.

Therein exists unity of mercy and loving-kindness, unity of judgment and justice: nor is there any division in action where there is no divergence of will.

You seem to be about the best in of them all.

But Aby seldom gave away a penny.

The sacrifice for God is a broken spirit, a broken and a contrite heart God will not despise.

Cast upon the Lord your care, and hope in Him.

“A man’s life is of no real value,” said the Captain, “until he has got a wife and family—or at any rate, a wife.”

For God did not say that He had found a man who would unfailingly do His bidding and fulfil His will, but only one who would do all His will.

Next we find that all the different creatures are by nature wont to herd together, at first with fellows of their own class and sort, then also with others.

Fancy, if you like, the ships driven to and fro by a raging tempest, while thick darkness falls from the clouds and blackens all the scenes so that watchwords are indistinguishable in the confusion, and all distinction between friend and foe is lost.

[1 Corinthians 15:33-34] But when he says, Whereas there is among you envying, and strife, and divisions, are you not carnal, and walk as men?

Have you given an alms?

Book IV, Letter 33

For we have been much filled with contempt [Psalm 122:3].

Now the dull months were coming round again, and he was as far as ever from any help.

He entertained his neighbours at dinner perhaps once a month, and occasionally had a few guests staying with him.

And then the door opened, and a man appeared, clad from top to toe in hunting costume.

Do you see the modesty of the man?

In the purchase of great properties Mr. Burton’s opinion was supposed to be, or to have been, as good as any in the kingdom, and therefore there was very much to be learned in the office at Stratton.

And how do you and Minnie get on?

The Glaucus was a translation from the Greek done by a boy, probably as a boy’s lesson It is not uncommon that such exercises should be treasured by parents, or perhaps by the performer himself, and not impossible that they should be made to reappear afterward as original compositions.

Such suggestions are inconsistent with the clear sense of Scripture.

For this reason we also first giving you counsel, then offer prayers for you.

They started together; and as they went Caldigate told his story to the young lady’s half-brother.

And behold a woman, who was a sinner in the city, when she knew that Jesus sat at meat in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster box of ointment, and standing behind at His feet, began to wash His feet with her tears.

For inasmuch as he says that as far as the present question is concerned, it is not pertinent to inquire whether there have been or now are any men in this life without sin, but whether they had or have the ability to be such persons; so, were I even to allow that there have been or are any such, I should not by any means therefore affirm that they had or have the ability, unless justified by the grace of God through our Lord Jesus Christ and Him crucified.

I continued to love her long, but that image has passed from my mind.” He was thinking, as he said this, of Mrs Compas and her large family.

This may perhaps be possible in him who presides over the laws, because the deed is not committed before his eyes, but it is brought before him as a doubtful matter from another quarter.

He would have repudiated the notion that he was looking for a sinecure, but no doubt considered that the duties would be easy and light.

Your most affectionate wife,

For although the natures which came together in unity are regarded as different and unequal with one another, I mean of flesh and of God, nevertheless the Son, Who was made of both, is one.

1. And I saw another great and wonderful sign, seven angels having the seven last plagues; for in them is completed the indignation of God. For the wrath of God always strikes the obstinate people with seven plagues, that is, perfectly, as it is said in Leviticus; and these shall be in the last time, when the Church shall have gone out of the midst.

What if it were her soul?

God says to you, you would make you a patron, or a powerful friend: you seek a way to his favor by means of another inferior.

‘It is a little personal.’

For, in addition to the fact that things unconcealed are perceived in one way, the rays of light shining round reveal defects.

“Well!” said Eleanor, now sufficiently roused on the matter.

In this sense the angel said Come see the place where the Lord lay not because he shut the Godhead in the tomb, but because he spoke of the Lord's body by the Lord's name.

A man who should have read them and nothing else, even in the days of Augustus, would not have learned much of the preceding age.

For it is not without reason that John, the same apostle as wrote this Apocalypse, says in his epistle regarding certain persons, They went out from us, but they were not of us; for if they had been of us, they would no doubt have remained with us.

In December Mrs. Rowan came back to Baslehurst, and became the guest of her son, who was then keeping a bachelor’s house at the brewery.

For to these also He says, [John 8:19] You know neither Me nor My Father.

The thing, he thought, was to be done with courage and patience, and this might, probably, be the last time in his life that he would find himself in the house of a Prime Minister.

And why have you not crucified yourself to the world?

Besides, he was aware that his hands and coat were soiled with blood, and he was unwilling that the inmates of the cabin should see him in that plight.

The attorney had never said so much,—had never accused him.

For, on the only rational theory of creation, its purpose was that things non-existent should come into being, not that things existing should cease to be.

What are these promises but dreams?

“Don’t let’s have any of that kind of thing down here,” said Dolly. “If there is to be a row about cards, let it be in the cardroom.”

To which God grant that we may all attain, by the grace and love towards man of our Lord Jesus Christ, to whom be glory and might forever and ever.

I have long held my peace, because silence was imposed on me by one to whom I give pain when I speak of him.

To Mrs. Ray and to Rachel it had been one of the saddest, dreariest days that either of them had ever known.

What more immodest, more like a greedy dog?

The date of her death is uncertain, but it was probably subsequent to a.d. 381.

Chapter 14.— Error of Those Who Think that There is No Absolute Right and Wrong.

When He brought down His speech to a lowly strain, many believed on Him.

It is the everlasting effort which the horror makes to peep out of his cupboard that robs us of our ease.

They felt no shame at the thought that he is the father of the Bishops; they regarded not that he had been a Confessor ; they reverenced not the length of his Episcopate, in which he had continued more than sixty years; but they set aside everything, and looked only to the interests of their heresy, as being of a truth such as neither fear God, nor regard man.

Marie sat still, stunned by the harshness of these words.

Could any duty which he owed to the world be so high or so holy as that which was due from him to his child?

A little further is a more striking and impassioned strain.

“And how did he get ‘em?”

I did not think it right to pass the remark unnoticed, since it does in fact harmonize with the Chronicles, and thus its account agrees with us, to the effect that, through the succession of the kings, whose dates the record contained, it completed seventy years up to the first year of king Cyrus, and such in fact is the number of years which is stated in the sacred history to have elapsed from the captivity up to the time of Cyrus.

He knew this, and yet for the life of him he could not help being jealous.

Mackenzie shall come up here, and I’ll have the table fixed for him, just there by the window.” I hadn’t another word to say to her, and I could not keep myself from thinking for many an hour afterwards, whether it may not be a good thing for men, and for women also, to believe that they are always travelling among wild Indians.

Those who assisted at the Alexandrian Council examined also with great minuteness the question concerning 'Essence' or 'Substance,' and 'Existence,' 'Subsistence,' or 'Personality.'

(Then) take some spiritual wife.

Chapter 5. Good and Evil.

I shouldn’t dream of addressing the children with such magnificence of anger.

She had certainly said very little to encourage her forlorn suitor, and had so borne herself during the interview that even Crosbie could hardly have been dissatisfied; but now that Eames was gone her heart became very tender towards him.

“You mean her mother.”

And the sentence of judgment, and all bodily deaths;

“Circumstances, I believe, prevented it,” said the parson. “My friend, however, received, through Lord Cashel, a message from you, which—which—which has been very fatal to his happiness.”

The world might have done better for him,—had he been able to find favour in Violet Effingham’s sight.

She had sent him away from her, and now she knew nothing of his whereabouts.

And because in the time of the Lord's passion wrong alone had no part, which had made captive all of whom it had gained possession, captivity itself turning back upon itself was made captive, not now attached to Belial but to Christ, to serve Whom is liberty.

In September there came a letter to him to say that the room intended for him at Ingoldsby had been burnt down.

But because both the Son is born of God the Father, and the Holy Spirit proceeds from God the Father, it is rightly asked which of them we ought here to think is the rather called the love that is God.

Wherefore, letting alone these things, let us render our soul meet both for wealth and poverty.

I watched and became as a sparrow alone upon the housetop.

“I think we are all your friends, Twentyman. I’m sure Mary is. But that isn’t marrying;—is it?”

Perhaps you knew not whither you were coming, nor in what kind of net you are taken.

[Shortly after the synod of Diospolis the Pelagians exulting in their success made an attack upon Jerome's monasteries at Bethlehem which they pillaged and partially burned. This gained for him the sympathy of Innocent who now (A.D. 417) asks Aurelius to transmit to him the letter which follows this.]

Bones, now dead, and which even before dissolution had rehearsed their dying, the sad memorials of our affliction.

Clara could hardly make up her mind whether Captain Aylmer was or was not a sincere man.

Turning it all over in my own mind, as I have constantly done in after years, the tragedy has always been uppermost.

Why had he not stuck to Abchurch Lane instead of going into Parliament?

Wherefore by means of a few specimens we have illustrated what sort of a person he was, deeming these as sufficient.

But there are things which a nation can not do and hold up its head, and this would be one of them.

But she felt that she had failed; that she had failed altogether as regarded Fanny; and that as to her brother, she would more probably be the means of opening his eyes, than have any effect in keeping them closed.

You have a child, you have a neighbor, you have a friend, you have a brother, you have kinsmen.

“Of course, just back from Africa,” said the other.

And so the first month after the death of Sir Thomas passed by, and the misfortunes of the Fitzgerald family ceased to be the only subject spoken of by the inhabitants of county Cork.

I myself, also, learned of another custom in Thessaly.

First, there are the cœnobites, called in their Gentile language Sauses, or, as we should say, men living in a community.

When he had greeted the young woman and perceived that she wished to speak to him, he withdrew within his own gate, and asked her whether there was anything that he could do for her.

Did we produce and stir into action the causes, by reason of which one youth, starting from Macedonia, subjected the kingdoms and peoples of the East to captivity and to bondage?

Soon after we came to town I told him that we had better not go to that woman’s house.

I do not as yet speak of Him whom they deny to have come from God.

This statement is taken in a wrong sense by every uneducated as well as every perversely disposed person, as if it predicated a diversity, in such a sense as to imply a separation among the Father, and the Son, and the Spirit.

[Jeremiah 23:29] God forbid, then, God forbid that with us the priest should applaud the false prophet, and that God's people should love to have it so.

17. Exposition of the Details in the Narrative.

He received three votes, and at twelve o’clock withdrew.

8. I considered the horns. That is to say, I looked intently at the beast, and was astonished at everything about it, but especially at the number of the horns. For the appearance of this beast differed from that of the other beasts in kind.

[Exodus 32:32] He is not satisfied to secure his own salvation, he desires to perish with those that perish.

Marie Bromar should not become Adrian Urmand’s wife without some effort on his part.

Such, at the age of forty, was the worldly result of labour which the world had chosen to regard as successful.

And thus the tailor’s marriage received the sanction of all the lawyers.

“On a foolish footing! What does that mean?”

“Vulgarity!” she exclaimed, jumping up from her sofa.

Wine was given to make glad the heart of man : and Dionysus (Bacchus) was worshipped instead of God.

There was a universal titter at this, which made Barry wish himself at home again, with his brandy-bottle.

For the latter conduct their campaigns with greater expenditure of money and men, so that they gain nothing by the victory, but suffer just as much distress as those who have been defeated, both in the sacrifice of troops and the exhaustion of funds.

Before the evening of the party another memorable occurrence had taken place at Allington, which must be described, in order that the feelings of the different people on that evening may be understood.

Further, if any one presumes to speak or think anything contrary to the faith of the said synod, we detest his opinion, with interposition of anathema.

There might be infinite trouble as to time,—as to ten years, three years, or even one year; trouble in inducing her to promise that she would become his wife in opposition to her mother; but he had felt sure that she never would be the wife of any one else.

Translated from Latin of Rufinus

Well, these too belong entirely to the material creation.

For when He speaks of all power and all judgment, and says that all things were made by Him, and all things have been delivered into His hand, He allows no exception (in respect) of time, because they would not be all things unless they were the things of all time.

“Yes, Mr. Morton—it is all right. It is quite right. But your coming in this way is quite a compliment. I am so proud to see the owner of Bragton once more in this house. I respect the family as I always did; and as for the money—”

We for our part as men charge and teach you thus: but make not our building hay and stubble and chaff, lest we suffer loss, from our work being burnt up: but make our work gold, and silver, and precious stones!

According to the opinion of the Stoics, marriage and the rearing of children are a thing indifferent; and according to the Peripatetics, a good.

That you may not die.

One is conquered by service, even although there be an ancient anger.

Such had been the arguments Mr Apjohn had used; but he had considered also that if he could bind the man to prosecute the newspaper people on a criminal charge, then the poor victim would be less able to retreat.

In these sittings they were generally very silent, speaking only in short little sentences.

But at the present moment she had been so cowed by the manner in which the subject had been introduced that she did not know how to begin to be bold.

For though the Word has descended in order to be exalted, and so it is written, yet what need was there that He should humble Himself, as if to seek that which He had already?

As a mystic memorial of this incident, phalloi are raised aloft in honour of Dionysus through the various cities.

I hear from Clavering that you are to be up about your new profession in a day or two.

But the partisans of Ursacius and Valens having arrived before them, did their utmost to calumniate the council, exhibiting the exposition of the faith which they had brought with them.

‘And as for loving her,’ continued Alaric, ‘that’s all my eye.

Ask my own father.

But I am satisfied with having simply defended myself.

Psalm 39

But though she was very angry with him, she did not, even in her own mind, contradict him.

It sucks the sap out of men’s bones, and bends their backs, and sometimes breaks their hearts; but though it be so, I for one would not wish to throw any heavier share of it on to a woman’s shoulders.

How was her girl to have guarded herself from a love so unfortunate, or have avoided the rock on which her vessel had been shipwrecked?

To have an opinion from Mr. Dove, or some other learned gentleman, was the everyday practice of his life; and when he obtained, as he often did, little coigns of legal vantage and subtle definitions as to property which were comfortable to him, he would rejoice to think that he could always have a Dove at his hand to tell him exactly how far he was justified in going in defence of his clients’ interests.

As he stood bending down, with the poker in his right hand, with his eye still fixed on his guest’s face, his purpose was doubtful.

Why do you not do with sincerity what in treacherous falseness you promise?

“Don’t I!” said Gresham.

Understand, consequently, what kind of sin (that must be), the repression of which (the Law) ordained next to (that of) idolatry.

But the energy was lacking, and the price of the gig, if the gig were ordered, would certainly fall ultimately upon the bishop’s shoulders.

I would know, sir, I said, Of what nature are these diverse tortures and punishments?

At the same time, they do not recognize the bread as being of the shape common in Egypt.

“Unless they unravel the mystery,” said Madame Goesler.

There was a garrison in the city, established by Licinius to check any invasion that Daia might make.

I beseech you to do him that justice, which can now only be done by the strong expression of your unanimous assurance of absolute innocence.

But coming as it did while his heart was still throbbing with the effects of Mrs. Finn’s words, it was allowed to have a certain force.

Harry was coming. I was so glad, and I did every thing I could.”

For though Spirit be born of Spirit (consistently, be it remembered, with the true character of Spirit, through which itself is also Spirit), nevertheless its only cause for being born lies within those perfect and unchangeable causes.

“Whew-w-w.” Mr. Round at the moment made no other answer than this, which terminated in a low whistle.

From the smallest caskets is produced an ample patrimony.

Discourse awhile on our present heavy blow, about the just judgments of God, whether we grasp their meaning, or are ignorant of their great deep.

No man comes to the Father but through Me.

Why mercy?

So also the Supreme Word of God, pervading all things, everywhere existent, everywhere present in heaven and earth, governs and directs the visible and invisible creation, the sun, the heaven, and the universe itself, with an energy inexplicable in its nature, irresistible in its effects.

“But what the d––––l can I—”

“That depends. It is just possible that it should turn out to be unnecessary.”

For sin, taking occasion by the commandment, deceived me, and by it slew me.

She was one of those women who are ambitious of power, and not very scrupulous as to the manner in which they obtain it.

Let us gather also from the words of the Apostle by what Mystery Christ rose from the dead: Remember that Christ has risen from the dead, of the seed of David.

“You can’t stay here in this house. Sir Cosmo was speaking to me about you only yesterday morning.”

And why do I talk of substance?

“It’s a doosed disagreeable thing—a very disagreeable thing indeed,” said Doodles.

Orth.— Then let us pass on to another prophetic testimony and let us hear the same prophet saying There shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse and a branch shall grow out of his roots.

It is sensation that causes a passion, which is called presentation, to arise in the soul, and from presentation comes notion.

Oration 40

Therefore says the Apostle, Who is the liar, but he that denies that Jesus is the Christ [1 John 2:22]?

Whence it is clear that I could not have written to court favor; for I who, when the miracles were so many, have not even related so many as the others have, but omitting most of them, have brought forward the plots of the Jews, the stonings, the hatred, the insults, the revilings, and have shown how they called Him a demoniac and a deceiver, certainly could not have acted to gain favor.

When then we are discoursing with the Gentiles, we cite (4 manuscripts read or point to the reading, let us not cite) not the heavens before them, but the men, whom though they were in worse plight than brutes, He has persuaded to be the Angels' competitors.

Is it not to afford consolation?

Then in trying to conceal his falsehood he drives out one nail with another nail, as the proverb says, and puts one falsehood right by cancelling it with another.

Chapter 30.— Of False Wisdom.

Here, perhaps, some one will say, If the soul is immortal, how is it represented as capable of suffering, and sensible of punishment?

“But we should have painted it again this spring, if we’d stopped here.”

But let what follows also be presented as in outline to those who endeavour to inquire minutely into all things.

“I have not heard Gresham say as yet; Jones, I should think,” said Mr. Wilson.

Wherefore let your Love so proceed as to lose no time in accomplishing these things diligently.

And he knew that were he in trade he would become a bankrupt; and he was well aware that such an occurrence would prove him to be insolvent.

For everywhere He overcomes in what is righteous, as the Prophet also says, That You might prevail when You come into judgment.

“Heard what?” said his wife.

Doubtless his father was the more indulgent to him because of the injury that had been done to him.

In the middle of the day he had a bowl of soup brought to him, and by that time had managed to drag himself out of bed, and to clothe himself in his dressing-gown, and to seat himself in his armchair.

In the meantime the secret must be a secret.

“Don’t you say no more than you know,” said the elder. “Let him go and find it out for himself.”

Over and beyond these there was a clerk’s room;—for Sir Thomas, though he had given up the greater part of his business, had not given up his clerk; and here the old man, the clerk, passed his entire time, from half-past eight in the morning till ten at night, waiting upon his employer in various capacities with a sedulous personal attention to which he had probably not intended to devote himself when he first took upon himself the duties of clerk to a practising Chancery barrister.

Total Population.

But here is an arrangement which for her will be a very good one; you must admit that.

That this person suffered by being fastened to the tree, and that He commended His spirit unto Himself, having died to appearance, and not being (in reality) dead.

Or is despite done to tree and grain, if we prefer the fruit to root and foliage, or the grain to stalk and ear?

Hitherto the inquiries made at their house had had reference solely to the habits and doings of their lodger during the last few days; but now there came to them a visitor who made a more extended investigation; and this was one of their own sex.

But these being base, and lovers of life, and lovers of their bodies, are enemies of the Cross.

“I suppose it is the custom when the magistrates are sitting,” said his wife.

“Bernard and I’ll play together.” But this was not allowed.

‘I’m afraid she tired herself at the ball,’ said Mrs. Woodward.

Hath any one returned from the world below, and reported to you what is going on there?

But would it be well to sacrifice her as well as himself?

But here are we discoursing about swearing; and our case is just the same as if, when a person ought to be a philosopher, one should take him away from the great masters, and set him to spell syllables letter by letter!

Thou also art an object for tears, not because you are poor, but because you think yourself wretched.

“We must have perpetual curates, my dear,” the bishop had said.

When Hannah had once offered in the tabernacle the son whom she had vowed to God she never took him back; for she thought it unbecoming that one who was to be a prophet should grow up in the same house with her who still desired to have other children.

Thoroughly taught by these things, I instruct the ignorant in the truth.

“Well, yes; if there’s nothing else doing just then. I don’t know how it may be about this electioneering business. I shall go and smoke upstairs.”

Must one refuse to ordain him again, and to raise him to a higher degree of the ministry?

As Lady Elizabeth had said to her daughter, that question of admitting black sheep into society, or of refusing them admittance, is very difficult.

LVIII. The law of God is perfect, converting souls. The Saviour Himself is called Law and Word, as Peter in the Preaching, and the prophet: Out of Zion shall go forth the Law, and the Word of the Lord from Jerusalem. [Isaiah 2:3]

Let us therefore provide a nurse also, who shall come to him always naked, ever silent, uttering not a word, and shall not open her mouth and lips to speak at all, but after suckling him, and doing what else is necessary, shall leave him fast asleep, and remain day and night before the closed doors; for it is usually necessary that the nurse's care should be near at hand, and that she should watch his varying motions.

No attempt is made at the pleasures of conversation.

“I don’t know what it was; that something had happened to you since last season; that you were married, or dead, or gone abroad. By George, I’ve lost the trick after all! I hate dummy like the devil. I never hold a card in dummy’s hand. Yes, I know; that’s seven points on each side. Vavasor, come and cut. Upon my word if any one had asked me, I should have said you were dead.”

Young Rowan was not idle, nor did he lack intelligence; indeed he possessed more energy and cleverness than, in Tappitt’s opinion, were necessary to the position of a brewer in Baslehurst; but he was by no means willing to use these good gifts in the manner indicated by the sole existing owner of the concern.

Chapter 27. Of the piety of the emperor Arcadius and the ordination of John Chrysostom.

Part I.

“You can’t conceive how soon that appetite would pall upon you, after its first indulgence.”

It cannot tell what is man, what the world; what is man indeed, and what he who seems to be man, but is not; what is the nature of virtue, what of vice.

“They’re pretty nearly all alive,” said Graybody; “and they do give the place just an appearance like the cemetery at Old Christchurch.” He meant the capital in the province of Canterbury.

In regard to this young woman, the Florence whom he had loved, he had been over-modest.

For all these things, and more than these, were the good work of this judgment court, the doings of this rule.

There had been no selection, none had been rejected.

[25] [Luke 1:24] And after those days Elizabeth his wife conceived; and she hid herself five [26] months, and said, [Luke 1:25] This has the Lord done unto me in the days when he looked upon me, to remove my reproach from among men.

Plain speaking is fatal to friendship, and disagreement in opinion all the ground that is wanted for a quarrel.

As then the Divine goodness does not grant these rich crops to idle husbandmen who do not till their fields by frequent ploughing, so also toil all night long is of no use to the workers unless the mercy of the Lord prospers it.

For the fear of God is the beginning of wisdom.

“I don’t see what you can do. You have encountered a chimney sweeper, and of course you get some of the soot. What you do do, and what you do not do, must depend at any rate on the wishes of Lady Laura Kennedy and her father. It is a matter in which you must make yourself subordinate to them.”

“Just a few words.”

And against the claim of the Italian woman the Earl would again come forward.

Had he not given her the ring which she well knew he valued?

So when the names of good men and true were mustered, and weighed, and discussed, and scrutinised by some active members of the Liberal party in a certain very private room not far removed from our great seat of parliamentary warfare; and when the capabilities, and expediencies, and possibilities were tossed to and fro among these active members, it came to pass that the name of Mr. Finn was mentioned more than once.

For every one obeys him who has received authority, having conscience as a great constraint.

“I won’t say I’m not,” said the cautious baronet. “I didn’t look for very great things from a Coalition, and I didn’t look for very great things from the Duke.”

Into that great question of guarding the slave coast it would be futile here to enter; but this I believe is acknowledged, that if the Cuban market be closed against the trade, the trade must perish of exhaustion.

“I do not know what next. As so much has been told me, and as you had said that I might ask you, I have come to you, yourself. I shall believe your own story more thoroughly from yourself than from any other teller.”

“It is very far, Frederic.”

“It doesn’t trouble me at all. Of course you will tell us everything when you come to see us.”

Chapter 4. Of the Hindrances Which an Unbelieving Husband Puts in His Wife's Way

Who does not despise a foul life?

No,—nor anybody else.

Why then, again, is this?

And will you be such an one as he was?

“And did you see Florin, and Mr. Harkaway, and a lot of others? You yourself have been going on ahead for the last hour without speaking to me.”

Veterem autem dixit, non rescipiens ad generationem et regenerationem, sed ad vitam inobedientiæ et obedienti regeneraæ.

Let them think of it, and they will confess that it has been so.

On which account His sublime and mighty sayings are few, and those also hidden, but the humble and lowly are many, and abound through His discourses.

This is what we might expect, for you condemn the impious Manichæus, to make mention of whose name is pollution.

I am He: and they went backward and fell to the ground.

Not so man; but, when he finds you slavish instead of free, by gratifying you often by bare words with false praise, he snatches from you your true meed, and makes you more of a menial than a purchased slave.

Owen Fitzgerald had called him a prig; but Herbert was no prig.

I can’t help that.

Out of what earth?

For hence in the Gospel the Truth says, That they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven [Matthew 5:16].

By the delay He made them more attentive; for they who had sought Him on the first days and said, Where is He?

“Why, she is determined to have him, even now.”

But law is the opinion which is good, and what is good is that which is true, and what is true is that which finds true being, and attains to it.

It was natural that this girl of his should learn to love some youth; and how terrible was the danger of her loving amiss, when so much depended on her loving wisely!

These are the decorations of Christ the King, but those of mammon, the enemy of Christ.

This was roughing it indeed.

I suppose it is always the case at such times that the girl has the best of it, and on this occasion Emily Dunstable certainly made the most of her happiness.

When then we have kept the feast according to His will, let us add from that first day in the holy week, the seven weeks of Pentecost, and as we then receive the grace of the Spirit, let us at all times give thanks to the Lord; through Whom to the Father be glory and dominion, in the Holy Ghost, for ever and ever.

And papa says that there is no use in delaying, because he gets older every day.

But the faith in Moses and in the cloud is, as it were, in a shadow and type.

From this it appears that the church of those that believed in Christ at first, was such as now the monks desire to imitate, that is, such that nothing is the peculiar property of any one of them, none of them rich, none poor, that patrimonies are divided among the needy, that they have leisure for prayer and psalms, for doctrine also and ascetic practice, that they were in fact as Luke declares believers were at first at Jerusalem.

But here we do the opposite.

“Yes, of course; but I wish that nothing had occurred to make her so angry with you.”

“Exactly—that is just what I say. My advice to George was this. Don’t let money influence your conduct in any way. Thank God, there’s enough of that for all of us! What you have to think of, is her happiness and your own. That’s what I said; and I do believe he took my advice. I don’t think he had any sordid views with reference to Caroline’s fortune.”

Too much sugar spoils one’s tea; I think I have heard that even prosperity will cloy when it comes in overdoses; and a schoolboy has been known to be overdone with jam.

Madeline hardly spoke at all, nor did Lady Staveley say much.

“That is what I would advise.”

But this law is abolished.

Early on that same day Farringcourt had spoken in the House,—a man to whom no one would lend a shilling, whom the privilege of that House kept out of gaol, whose word no man believed; who was wifeless, childless, and unloved.

And we have seen that this did in fact take place.

I put out my head and declared my identity, when I was waited upon by a glorious personage dressed like a beau for a ball, with half-a-dozen others almost as glorious behind him, who informed me, with his hat in his hand, that he was the landlord of the “Due Torre.” It was a heating moment, but it became more hot when he asked after my people,—”mes gens.” I could only turn round, and point to my wife and brother-in-law.

From antecedent causes they have been made subject to vanity not willingly but for future reward, [Romans 8:20] and are forced to do not their own will but the creator's who has assigned to them their several spheres.

There was generally on Sundays a house dinner, so called, at eight o’clock. Five or six men would sit down, and would always gamble afterwards. On this occasion Dolly Longestaffe sauntered in at about seven in quest of sherry and bitters, and Felix found the opportunity a good one to speak of his money. “You couldn’t cash your I.O.U.’s for me tomorrow;—could you?”

Justin: As you wish, Trypho, I shall come to these proofs which you seek in the fitting place; but now you will permit me first to recount the prophecies, which I wish to do in order to prove that Christ is called both God and Lord of hosts, and Jacob, in parable by the Holy Spirit; and your interpreters, as God says, are foolish, since they say that reference is made to Solomon and not to Christ, when he bore the ark of testimony into the temple which he built. The Psalm of David is this:

But Johnny denied this.

The ballot would have been a safety-valve.

What difference there might be in his costume when at home at Staleybridge few of those who saw him in London had the means of knowing.

Die, under whose beneficent wing Herbert Fitzgerald was destined to learn all the mysteries of the Chancery bar.

Along with the other captives, he is carried off a prisoner to Babylon.

Hence also he despised the courts of kings, [Hebrews 11:24-26] since he was lowly indeed: for the sound mind and the high spirit are the fruit of humility.

Gregory to Paul, etc.

“But now you are not in despair.”

Now, we who are spiritual are sons, he says, who have been left here to arrange, and mould, and rectify, and complete the souls which, according to nature, are so constituted as to continue in this quarter of the universe.

To Mary Bonner, as she first saw him, he was infinitely more fascinating than the captains and lieutenants of West Indian regiments, or than Colonial secretaries generally.

Extracts from the Work on Things

In the place of one husband you have received two children, and thus your affection has more objects than before.

“Augustus did, papa; and Isabella, some time ago.”

Sometimes the tone of the mistress is inferred from the dress of the maid.

Then he had encountered Lady Mary Palliser.

“Why have things been said then?” asked the Serjeant, beginning to throw about his left arm.

[1 Samuel 17:34] And so likewise here the Apostles, Why do you look so earnestly on us, as though by our own power or holiness we had made this man to walk?

What name does she propose to bear?

It is an acceptable time, O Lord.

But says the Instructor: Hie away, and tarry not in the place; nor fix your eye on her: for thus shall you pass over a strange water, and cross to Acheron.

“Perhaps you had better speak to him about it.” Both the old Duke and the private Secretary were as fearful and nervous about the Prime Minister as a mother is for a weakly child.

You have loved malice above benignity [Psalm 51:4].

While looking at him riding in Rotten Row, you would hardly have taken him for an attorney; and had he heard that you had so taken him, he would have been very much surprised indeed.

She desired of all things to be able to talk to him of her coming hopes.

He succeeded in his task.

I utter a Word.

A religious belief was not expected from a322 gentleman.

When large tracts of land fell out of lease, Sim had represented that tenants could not be found—that the land was not worth cultivating—that the country was in a state which prevented the possibility of letting; and, ultimately put himself into possession, with a lease for ever, at a rent varying from half a crown to five shillings an acre.

The American girl was destined sooner or later to make her entrance into British fiction, and Trollope’s treatment of this complicated being is full of good humour and of that fatherly indulgence, that almost motherly sympathy, which characterises his attitude throughout toward the youthful feminine.

He had written things of which he was already ashamed, and had put forth with the ex cathedra air of an established master ideas which had already ceased to be his own.

Mrs Neverbend swore a solemn oath that Jack should be made to abandon his cricket; but Jack was playing again the next day, with his face strapped up athwart and across with republican black-silk adhesive.

But she well remembered the first words that struck her ear.

“Very well; now mind I’ve got your consent. Good night, sir. After all it will only be half a mite.”

If, on the other hand, our false apostles and Judaizing gospellers have introduced all these things out of their own stores, and Marcion has applied them to constitute the fullness of his own god, (this hypothesis, absurd though it be, alone would justify him;) for how, on any other supposition, could the rival and the destroyer of the Creator have been willing that His fullness should dwell in his Christ?

It is often the case with us that we make up our minds for great action,—that in some special crisis of our lives we resolve that something must be done, and that we make an energetic start; but we find very soon that we do not know how to go on doing anything.

“I only hope that there’ll be no quarrel.”

On this account, then, I beseech you to cleanse yourselves from this error, and to keep hold of this word as a staff; and just as without sandals, and cloak, no one of you would choose to go down to the market-place, so without this word never enter the market-place, but when you are about to pass over the threshold of the gateway, say this word first: I leave your ranks, Satan, and your pomp, and your service, and I join the ranks of Christ.

“Oh, mamma, do you?” said Mary, rushing at her mother and kissing her and embracing her.

His mother’s letter with the news had come to him in the morning, and on the same evening he called on Lady Ongar.

They, says he, will hear it too.

Exposition on Psalm 67

He then sent his oldest son, Constans, whom he had already nominated Cæsar, and whom he afterwards proclaimed emperor, into Spain.

[2 Corinthians 8:18] Again, when he says, He was seen of Cephas, then of the twelve, and, according to the Gospel which you received (1 Corinthians 15:5, 1), he means the Gospel of this Luke.

But as for the farm in Scotland, or a desk at an office in London,—his own New Zealand plan would be better than those.

Neither will Mr. Pretorius junior nor Mr. Burgers ever be regarded as benefactors of their country or as great statesmen; but the bosoms of each have no doubt swelled with the aspiration of being called the Dutch Washington of South Africa.

“And where is Caroline?” said George, when the introductions had been duly performed. He had to make a little effort to say this in a voice that should signify that he was at home there, but which should not savour too much of the lover. On the whole, he succeeded pretty well.

what had she not lost!

“If so, it must be answered as I have answered you. I certainly shall not shirk any responsibility that may be attached to me.”

‘I suppose it had better be so,’ said she, standing up and withdrawing her hand.

Some take it otherwise, and consider that the words from for of His fullness to He has declared Him are from the writer, John the Apostle.

“Because you hold my deputed authority.”

On the day of her return she had been very ill,—so ill that Caldigate and his father had been much frightened.

Chapter 5. Julian restores Liberty to the Christians, in order to execute Further Troubles in the Church. The Evil Treatment of Christianshe devised.

And if in another place we find Him saying, Go your way, and declare the glory of God, that is not contrary to this, but even highly in agreement herewith. For He instructs us to say nothing ourselves, concerning ourselves, but even to forbid them that would eulogise us: but if the glory be referred to God, then not only not to forbid, but to command men to do this.

No inquiries whatever were made by the police in reference to that attempt at murder, and we do expect that some member will ask a question on the subject in the House.

‘Perhaps it is.’

Next, to make clear the faith of the Unity, and the Union of the Trinity, He also said that He would be glorified by the Spirit, as it stands: He shall receive of Mine, and shall glorify Me.

Have you so mean conceptions of the gift of God, that you have imagined it to be altogether a thing of man?

Then they were again silent, and remained without exchanging more than a word or two for nearly half an hour.

Should such an one take to hunting once a week, even after years of toil, men would point their fingers at him and whisper among themselves that he was as good as ruined.

He has mentioned Christ's great and affectionate care; he now passes on to his own, insignificant indeed as it is, and a very nothing in comparison with that, and yet this is enough to engage them to himself.

“I could not get the car to come in without letting him know why I wanted it.”

I cannot imagine you are disposed to lose all that you have won for nothing.” Mary also wrote to him.

Justin: Let us consider that also together, whether one may now observe all the Mosaic institutions.

“Oh yes, I know the lady;—that is, as well as other people do. No one, I take it, knows much of her; and it seems to me that the world is becoming tired of her. A mystery is good for nothing if it remains always a mystery.”

1 Corinthians 16:18

On the whole, he was proud that he had been selected for the commission, as he liked to think of himself as one to whom things happened which were out of the ordinary course.

Captain Batsby was not to receive the Stalham interest;—but that interest was to be used on the part of Colonel Stubbs.

Why is this, if it be not that he is ashamed to name what he does not blush to praise?

The words were very harsh in the ears even of a loving sister.

Hope had been expressed in more than one quarter that this would be a short Session.

“I have just come from Curzon Street,” he said.

He became high in hope, and began to wish that even now, at this moment, he might be left alone with her and might learn his fate.

When Frank spoke of a profession, she instantly thought of what Lord de Courcy might do for him.

For is it right to be at rest, and in quiet, and not to be running about everywhere, and giving one's self up to endless deaths in behalf of these sheep?

Chapter XLIII. The Second Thunderbolt

“We have no Upper House with us, my lord,” said I.

Do you see that he shows that it is their duty to rejoice?

She hoped, for his sake, that her uncle might give some assistance, but was quite prepared to prove that she could be a good poor man’s wife.

An early retirement to the paradise of a fortune made is the only possible compensation; and therefore it has to be hurried on.

From this cause harsh tyrannies have always broken out against the citizens.

And even that who can deny?

If this postmark had not been made in the due course of business, and on the date as now seen, then the envelope had not passed regularly through the Sydney office.

But having no intimate acquaintance with the Highest, knowing Him only by natural revelation, and not as His friends— afar off, and not as those who have been brought near to Him— men cannot but be in ignorance alike of what He enjoins and what He forbids in regard to the administration of His world.

This trade has stood very many; but I doubt whether it can stand more.

After that Caldigate did not allow the grass to grow under his feet, and before the end of November the two young people were engaged.

“ Not so the mules,” said the muleteer; and as his words were law, we prepared to spend the night at Assumption.

On that same afternoon he sent to make an appointment with Mr. Chaffanbrass, and immediately after breakfast, on the following morning, had himself taken to that gentleman’s chambers.

This whole confession of these beings, in which they declare that they are not gods, and in which they tell you that there is no God but one, the God whom we adore, is quite sufficient to clear us from the crime of treason, chiefly against the Roman religion.

Whence it must before all things be known, that nowhere can truth be found unless from a prophet of truth.

This you should write on the threshold and door of your mouth, this you should place on the walls of your house and in the recesses of your heart so that when you fall on your knees in prayer this may be your chant as you kneel, and when you rise up from it to go forth to all the necessary business of life it may be your constant prayer as you stand.

But if these suffer punishment, much more they that are eager about unnecessary things; who build houses of two and three stories, but despise the hungry; who give heed to covetousness, but neglect almsgiving.

“Not very well, my lord. There is something—and I have a fellowship.”

He will be less arrogant, more sober-minded, graver, more equitable, more considerate: but he that is in wealth, has many impediments to these things.

She had been quite sure that she would never sell herself.

For he knows, he knows clearly, that if they have come to him in a sober spirit, and have told the sins committed, and have mourned with their soul fervent, they will depart having received full forgiveness; for God loves mankind; and on this account he is beforehand with them, and debars them from access, in order that they may obtain no one of the things which they need.

Christ is Himself present in Baptism, so that we need not consider the person of His ministers. A brief explanation of the confession of the Trinity as usually uttered by those about to be baptized.

He cannot, when he wakes, declare that he has changed his mind, and postpone the hour.

Of some such it might be said, that though they were above the arts by which the Brownbies lived, they were not very scrupulous themselves; and it perhaps served them to have within their ken neighbours whose morality was lower even than their own.

He felt that this made all the difference in the world; so much difference that no one cognisant in such matters would hold that his assurance, obtained after such a fashion, meant anything at all.

When people get to be old, there’s a difficulty.

He could not now remember his words to her in those old days before Miss Boncassen had crossed his path; but he did know that he had once intended to make her understand that he loved her.

“She’ll be proud enough of Spoon Hall if she comes here,” said the Squire.

“But, nevertheless, she will some day marry some one; and why not you as well as another?” his sister had answered.

“It was to my talking that he referred.”

[Matthew 25:34, 41] In vain, therefore, do you indulge in your security, thinking it a trivial fault which separates you from the kingdom of God, and sends you into everlasting fire.

In former days he had been very intimate in that house, having received from both of them much kindness, mingled, perhaps, with some touch of severity on the part of the lady.

She would write her letter and post it,—so that it should be altogether beyond her mother’s control,—and then would tell her mother that she had written it.

But it was not the privations which he might suffer, but the disgrace, the additional disgrace which he would bring on his family, which afflicted him.

His name had become known among scientific experimentalists, not as that of one who had himself invented a cannon or an antidote to a cannon, but as of a man understanding in cannons and well fitted to look at those invented by others; who would honestly test this or that antidote; or, if not honestly, seeing that such thin-minded men can hardly go to the proof of any matter without some prejudgment in their minds, at any rate with such appearance of honesty that the world might be satisfied.

It was evident enough that when permission had been given for the visit of Mrs. Stanbury and Priscilla, Hugh’s name had been purposely kept back.

It does not seem that there was any preconceived idea that Caesar should reduce all Gallia beneath the Roman yoke.

Do you see that it was especially necessary to work the miracles at times when men were present of honest minds, and who would carefully give heed to what was done?

“You think I ought?”

Far be such arrogance from that humble piety and just estimate of yourself which I know you to have, and without which assuredly you would not have said, Would that I could receive your embrace, and that by converse we might aid each other in learning!

Thus also it appears to me that there are three effects of gnostic power: the knowledge of things; second, the performance of whatever the Word suggests; and the third, the capability of delivering, in a way suitable to God, the secrets veiled in the truth.

Therefore Vitumnus the life-giver, and Sentinus the sense-giver, ought to have been reckoned among the select gods, rather than Janus the admitter of seed, and Saturn the giver or sower of seed, and Liber and Libera the movers and liberators of seed; which seed is not worth a thought, unless it attain to life and sensation.

She hardly knew whether to be angry with herself or with him; but she did know very well that she had not intended really to quarrel with him.

[Galatians 4:21-22] And here he calls the Psalm the Law when he says, We know that what things soever the Law says, it says to them who are under the Law.

“He is unreasonable—about that. It is not reason with him. He always goes by his feelings. Had you been engaged to him—”

But then, fathers are so often doomed to find their sons not all that they wish, and mothers to see their girls falling in love with young men who are not Paladins.

“I know who would take you in, Emily.”

He who will value his life more than Me, is not worthy of Me; and he who takes not up his cross and follows Me, cannot be My disciple.

Who, then, speaks these words, the Father or the Son?

“I wish I could be invisible and hear it,” had been Jack’s last words.

Again, in another part of his letter, that is, towards the end of his own homilies, that he might cheat the ear of the ignorant, he makes a grand parade and noise about the Resurrection, but in ambiguous and balanced language.

Mr. Bozzle, though he had worked hard in the cause, had heard but a word or two.

That the matter might not become an object of strife, and they might not fall into contention about it.

On one occasion she sent Ayala upstairs, and on another she sent Ayala downstairs.

Enough it is for me for every recompense, to suffer evil for Christ's sake.

'Messenger' of great counsel [Isaiah 9:6, Septuagint], the Son of God is called, because of the other things which He taught, and principally because He announced the Father to men, as also now He says, I have manifested Your Name unto the men.

But begotten and unbegotten are both of them terms suitably employed; whereas in Latin we can use the word filius, but the custom of the language does not allow us to speak of infilius.

There are many things which such a woman will do to gain such an object.

Though princes and potentates have been arrayed against me, [the princes and potentates had no doubt been Lord Chiltern and Mr. Low] innocence has prevailed, and I have come out from the ordeal white as bleached linen or unsullied snow.

The emperor zealously endeavored to remove both these causes of dissension from the church; and thinking to be able to remove the evil before it advanced to greater proportions, he sent one who was honored for his faith, his virtuous life, and most approved in those former times for his confessions about this doctrine, to reconcile those who were divided on account of doctrine in Egypt, and those who in the East differed about the Passover.

Take it from the proper distance, and I think you will acknowledge that the grouping and colour of the chief personages of the picture can hardly be exceeded.

It is the work of divine grace, that this sex should be impeded only in the affairs of this life, or rather not even in them.

“I declare you said something about two or three wives; and if there is anything of that kind true of a gentleman and a clergyman, I don’t think he ought to be allowed to go about as a single gentleman. I mean as a curate. Mr Maguire is nothing to me,—nothing whatever; and I don’t see why I should have been mixed up with him; but if there is anything of that sort—”

Nina, when she was made to understand that the war was come, that her brother was leaving her and her mother and Venice, that he might fight for them, that an Austrian soldier must for the time be regarded as an enemy in that house, resolved with a slow, melancholy firmness that she would accept the circumstances of her destiny.

Hosea also, the first of the twelve prophets, testified of His resurrection: [Hosea 13:13-14] This my Son is wise, therefore He will not remain in the anguish of His sons: and I will redeem Him from the power of the grave.

You take thought that you have toil here: but take thought what sort of rest He promises.

My dear Emily,

‘Oh, ma’am—John!’

Believe it most surely, if indeed you believe in that God without whose will not even the sparrow, a penny can buy, falls to the ground.

“Well, I am very glad you chose me;—if it was you who chose,” said Beatrice, modestly; having, however, in her own mind a strong opinion that Mr Oriel had chosen for himself, and had never had any doubt in the matter. “And who was the other?”

She had tried to make herself believe that she felt for him that sort of affection which a woman should have for the man she is to marry, but she had failed.

There should be trees near, and the ground should be a little uneven, so as to mark some certain small space as the exact spot where the dogs and servants of the hunt should congregate.

“I have come here from Mr Tombe’s office in the City,” said Vavasor, “to ask you of what nature has been the interference which you have taken in my money matters?”

She soon surrounded herself with harder tasks than those embroidered slippers with which she indulged herself immediately after his departure.

The things to be done were so great, that he had not ceased to doubt concerning them when the moment came in which doubt was fatal.

She stood looking at him till he was out of sight, and then as she moved away,—let us hope to the bed which his bounty had provided, and not to a gin-shop,—she exclaimed to herself again and again—”Gracious, how beautiful he was!” “He’s a good un,” the woman at the public-house had said as soon as he left it; “but, my!

11, thinking that he might induce his friend’s mother to act on his behalf in a matter appertaining to peace and charity.

“Yes, my lord, he is dead. I understood you to say that you had already heard it; and, unless my ears deceived me, you explained that his demise was the immediate cause of your present visit. I cannot, however, go so far as to say that I think you have exercised a sound discretion in the matter. In expressing such an opinion, however, I am far from wishing to utter anything which may be irritating or offensive to your feelings.”

It would have been better that he should have waited till the letter was in his pocket before he returned home, because, when he reached Humblethwaite, the last argument was wanting to him to prove to Emily that her hope was vain.

We may with persuasion advise men to despise riches, to be meek, and the like.

Then he received a letter from his father.

The woman had been too many for him, and he found that he couldn’t cushion her.

But Euzoïus, the chief of the Arian heresy, had possession of the churches: Paulinus only retained a small church within the city, from which Euzoïus had not ejected him, on account of his personal respect for him.

“And will you contradict it, Margaret? Oh, Margaret! Margaret! you cannot contradict it.”

“It’s all true, dear, and I beg your pardon. If I have offended you, I will beg your pardon.”

The objects, then, of desires and aspirations, and, in a word, of the mind's impulses, are the subjects of prayers.

Apostles)?

You have seen that man Carroll doing the mischief, and have promised him to hold your tongue about it.

Placed, they say, in the middle of the universe and not being able to incline more to one side than the other because its centre is everywhere the same distance from the surface, it necessarily rests upon itself; since a weight which is everywhere equal cannot lean to either side.

They are a specially clean people, washing themselves often and using soap with a bountiful liberality unknown among many white men.

From the first then the divine Word firmly taught the Jewish people about the abolition of idols when it said [Exodus 20:4]: You shall not make to yourself a graven image, nor the likeness of anything that is in the heaven above or in the earth beneath.

[Ezekiel 18:3] And if your mind is puffed up by your years, that they are many; they are not more in number than those of the Prince of Tyre who ruled the Kingdom during the days of twenty-two Kings of the house of Judah, that is, for four hundred and forty years.

Was He a respecter of persons beforetime?

Grasp where there is a crown to be gained.

This went on through the whole of a long cigar; and afterwards, as Lord Alfred slowly paced his way back to his lodgings in Mount Street, he thought deeply whether there might not be means of escaping from his present servitude. “Beast! Brute! Pig!” he said to himself over and over again as he slowly went to Mount Street.

Men, though prone to lust, and inclined, through weakness of character, to yield to the allurements of sensual pleasures, still punish adultery by the laws, and visit with the penalty of death those whom they find to have possessed themselves of others rights by forcing the marriage-bed.

“And therefore you ought to take him at his word and retire. It would be the gentlemanlike thing to do. Of course you’d have the power of going over and seeing that things was straight. And if we was living comfortable at some genteel place, such as Torquay or the like, of course you wouldn’t want to be going out to Dragons every evening then. I shouldn’t wonder if, in two or three years, you didn’t find yourself as strong as ever again.”

Ruth was very intimate with them both, and Nina had been willing enough to be told of Rebecca, as had Rebecca also to be told of Nina.

[Matthew 6:12-13] The former petition we present that our sins may be forgiven; the latter, that they may be avoided or subdued—a favour which we should by no means beg of our Father who is in heaven if we were able to accomplish it by the virtue of our human will.

The whole Bolton family had conspired together to keep his wife from him, and had allured her away by the false promise of a friendly visit!

“Oh, dear! oh, dear! Read it, Adela. Oh, Mr. Bertram, here is such a misfortune!”

And whence do you come?

“He has. The old lady has been obliged to tell me, and she’s nearly brokenhearted about it. But that’s not the worst of it to my mind. All the world knows that Porlock had gone to the mischief. But he is going to bring an action against his father for some arrears of his allowance, and he threatens to have everything out in court, if he doesn’t get his money.”

And his son had an eye put out, from fear of what was to follow, though he had done no wrong.

[2 Corinthians 11:23-27] Which of us can claim the veriest fraction of the virtues here enumerated?

For the world is like the sea to us, my brethren, of which it is written, 'This is the great and wide sea, there go the ships; the Leviathan, which You have created to play therein. '

The trouble in civilized life of entertaining company, as it is called too generally without much regard to strict veracity, is so great that it cannot but be matter of wonder that people are so fond of attempting it.

“Why; won’t he talk to the young ladies?—I’m sure he was always fond of ladies’ society.”

For he says, The Lord Himself shall come into judgment with the elders and princes of the people.

You have for your Master One that loves man.

He was careful in his dress, but not so as to betray the care that he took; he was imperturbable in temper, though restless in spirit; and the one strong passion of his life was the desire of a good income at the cost of the public.

But nothing like this moodiness had ever come upon him before.

And this is the force of, in things which pertain to God.

I, confounded and confused, concealed all my emotions, till he should get well, and his health be strong enough to allow me to deal with him as I wished.

But if the soul cares for the body, and takes great forethought on its account, and suffers a thousand things in order not to leave it, and resists being separated from it, and if the body too ministers to the soul, and conveys to it much knowledge, and is adapted to its operations, how can they be contrary, and conflicting with each other?

Vavasor had struck him repeatedly, but the blows had fallen on his body or his head, and he was unconscious of them.

“Though I do sacrifice myself,” she would say, “I shall do more of good than harm, and I cannot be more wretched than I am now.” But yet she fled to London because she feared to leave herself at Matching when Burgo Fitzgerald should be there.

[Victor Constantinus, Maximus Augustus], to Macarius, and the rest of the bishops in Palestine.

“Adolphe and I will be together, and will do well. We shall have an absolute barrack at Durbellière. We shall have above one hundred men in the house. Agatha and the women are at work night and day.”

And having taken food, he recovered strength.

That which Mr. Scarborough would in this way be able to bequeath might, probably, be worth thirty thousand pounds.

His own soldiers, tired of their protracted absence, mutinied against him, and Glabrio, a later Consul, who had been sent to take the command out of his hands, had feared to encounter the difficulty.

For lest any one should say, Wherefore did Christ come?

Since, then, he could not destroy what he had built, we must assume that what he says was different from, but not contrary to, what had gone before.

And lo, I have now learned that your Fraternity in a fit of anger has excommunicated the most reverend abbot Eusebius.

A Stranger in Cambridge

We think of our Cavendishes, our Howards, and our Stanleys, and feel that there is nothing in such honesty as this.

‘You shouldn’t think it.’ Then Mr Greenmantle looked as though he had uttered a clenching argument. ‘You shouldn’t think it. Now go away, Emily, and turn in your mind what I have said to you.’

But the extent of his horror may be imagined when Bellfield got up and made a most brilliant speech in praise of Mrs Greenow.

But if you don’t take care she’ll be yours.” Then Dick got up and walked out of the room with his pipe in his mouth, and went into his bedroom, thinking that it might be as well for him to pack up and take his departure.

Or when He is shown as Judge of all: O God, give the King Your judgment, and Your righteousness to the King's Son.

Again, he reminds them of the Cross, thereby effecting two things; both showing His care [for them] and persuading them to bear all things nobly, looking to the Master.

He had returned to her simply as her cousin, and now he was walking with her and talking to her in this strain, to teach her that it was so.

“No, I couldn’t,” replied the father with a very determined aspect.

But (you say) I have often given.

And yet after this He said, My yoke is easy, and my burden is light.

“My mother would have consented to anything that I proposed. Do you think I don’t know how the land lies? Well; what have you learned in Italy?” Lord George was silent. “Of course, I know. I’m not such a fool as not to keep my ears and eyes open. As far as your enquiries have gone yet, are you justified in calling Popenjoy a bastard?”

But that was little to the offence he was giving to those who were to come many centuries after him, who would not look into the matter with sufficient accuracy to find that his vanity deserved forgiveness because of his humanity and desire for progress.

Wherefore we use both words, by the one expressing the dignity of the Spirit; by the other announcing the grace that is with us.

He is at once our foundation before the world to come, according to the words of Paul, who says, Other foundation can no man lay than that is laid [1 Corinthians 3:11], and it is true that before the springs of the waters came forth, before the mountains were settled, before He made the depths, and before all hills, He begets Me.

“Oh, she’s a woman of great nerve, Mr Armstrong. Mary is a woman of very great nerve. I can assure you we shall never forget that Thursday night. About seven in the evening it got darkish, but the horrid yells of the wild creatures had never ceased for one half-hour; and, a little after seven, twenty different bonfires illuminated the parish. There were bonfires on every side of us: huge masses of blazing turf were to be seen scattered through the whole country.”

“Do not go into that now, George. It is enough for you at present to be assured that such assistance as I can give you is at your command. I want you to feel the full joy of your success, and you will do so more thoroughly if you will banish all these money troubles from your mind for a while.”

“But what were you going to tell us, Mr. Kantwise?” said Mrs. Smiley.

“Don’t you like the moon?” she said, as she took his arm, to which she was now so accustomed that she hardly thought of it as she took it.

There was no doubt that Broughton had destroyed himself in the manner told by Musselboro, but the opinion in the City was that he had done so rather through the effects of drink than because of his losses.

And he speaks thus, not as if envy had any power of itself, but meaning, that the teachers of these doctrines did so from envious motives.

Fanny Clavering, while she was inquiring of her brother about his troubles, had not been without troubles of her own.

Now that many differences existed even in the apostolic age of the church occasioned by such subjects, was not unknown even to the apostles themselves, as the book of The Acts testifies.

He was more successful than any other sovereign in all his undertakings; for he formed no design, I am convinced, without God.

A. I will allow it, if they have been baptized into Christ; and if you will not then immediately bind me to agree with your opinion that a man can be without sin if he chooses; for they neither have the power nor the will; but they are free from all sin through the grace of God, which they received in their baptism.

Hitherto she had not even spoken to him during the day.

Is all this then, I pray you, matter of envyings, and not rather of lamentations and tears?

Chapter 7. We Must Strive in Order to Be Crowned

For if indeed they also had heard it, (the miracle) would not have been so great.

He said not, 'he,' but his bowels; that is, 'his love for you.'

“I means to see a deal of the Captain this season,” he said.

And yet it is for this latter reason that he so acts, and he shows it in what follows; but does not say it plainly, but throws it into the shade , leaving it to the conscience of his hearers.

Thus the waters were gathered together into their special collections and the dry land was brought to view.

He was followed by Gordius, in whose time Narcissus appeared again, as if raised from the dead.

Why does He forbid us to marvel, unless it be that, in truth, every one marvels who does not understand, that therefore He said the Father gave Him power also to execute judgment, because He is the Son of man; whereas, it might rather have been anticipated that He would say, since He is the Son of God?

Would it not have been far more marvellous, some one may say, had he been led forth, and delivered over into the king's hands, and then had been snatched away from the very midst of his imminent peril, and sustained no harm?

“He must go from here; that’s the long and the short of it,” said Mr. Jawstock.

The cheque, if stolen, had not been stolen from him.

An attempt was made to garrison the town; and for this purpose, the leaders undertook to pay about one thousand men, at a certain rate per day, for their services, while they remained under arms in Saumur, but the idea, after a very short time, was abandoned; the men would not stay away from their homes, and in spite of the comforts which were procured for them, and the pay which was promised, the garrison very quickly dissolved.

It was not in the power of the Platonists, however, to be so efficient in supporting the side of reason enlightened by truth, as the others were in supporting their own errors.

And there was Gatherum Castle.

But if they have lent an existence to the Son and the Spirit, only to furnish a material on which to erect their blasphemy, perhaps it might have been better for them, though it is a bold thing to say, to abjure the Faith and apostatize to the Jewish religion, rather than to insult the name of Christian by this mock assent.

‘Poor, poor Emma!’ exclaimed the ecclesiastic, casting his eyes towards the chandelier and passing a white cambric pockethandkerchief gracefully before them.

Mrs. Clavering thought that Harry had better run down to Clavering, and see Mr. Saul.

“I should prefer to be warned of the coming of my master. I will see to that in future. Such little ceremonies do have their uses.”

If they are mortal on account of whom it was made, it must also itself be mortal and subject to dissolution, for it is not of more value than those for whose sake it was made.

[Luke 2:9] And behold, the angel of God came unto them, and the glory of the [18] Lord shone upon them; and they were greatly terrified.

It is to the free will of man that the words are addressed: My son, remove not yourself from the chastening of the Lord.

Why is the grass proud that flourishes only for a brief season, until the sun be hot?

And see how carefully, and without any hold for exception, He has expressed His accusations: in that He said not, How can you speak good things, being a generation of vipers? (for this latter is nothing to the former): but, How can you, being evil, speak good things?

And that Ananias was no very distinguished person, is plain.

He had not chosen to let her know his address; nor was it fitting to her feelings to communicate such a fact in a letter which she must address secretly to his banker or to his club.

Be drowned. My mother bore and hid me then

And he said unto me, I am Jesus of Nazareth, Whom you persecute.

But what kind of (hypothesis) is it that one who, with an eye to the future, was called by a definite name, at the present time should have nothing for a surname?

He did not feel quite sure that he had been right, but he did feel quite sure that the thing had been done.

Now since these things are written about the net and about those in the net, we say that he who desires that, before the consummation of the age, and before the coming of the angels to sever the wicked from among the righteous, there should be no evil persons of every kind in the net, seems not to have understood the Scripture, and to desire the impossible.

When the clatter of the knives and cups was over, and the eating and drinking was at an end, Lady Ball left the room and Margaret began to think what she would do.

And my servant David shall be king over them, and there shall be one Shepherd for them all.

For the dead bury their dead. Whence Jeremiah says: I will fill it with the earth-born dead whom mine anger has smitten. [Jeremiah 33:5]

For what that He has done, tell, I pray you, for what crime?

But he stood out against them, saying, What evil, then, am I doing in glorifying Christ?

If we can’t get you leave of absence in any other way, we’ll make old Buffle come too.

2. They all with one consent pronounced Symeon, the son of Clopas, of whom the Gospel also makes mention; to be worthy of the episcopal throne of that parish. He was a cousin, as they say, of the Saviour. For Hegesippus records that Clopas was a brother of Joseph.

'For never was there a time when God was not a father.'

Of these, Eustasius has gone before us to that land of rest, on the shore of which beat no rude waves such as those which encompass your island home, and in which he does not regret Caprera, for the homely raiment with which it furnished him he wears no more.

It is one singularity of places strange and out of the way like such forest tracks as these, that money in small sums is hardly valued.

If He is fond of fat, and sacrifices, and offerings, and drink-offerings, who then is without need, and who is holy, and pure, and perfect?

Haply the sons of the Bridegroom.

He did remember that something had been suggested about a brother and sister which had implied that Adelaide might want protection, but there was nothing unnatural or other than kind in the position which Lord Chiltern had declared that he would assume.

“You parsons always have your own luck,” said Sir Louis. “You get all the beauty, and generally all the money, too. Not much of the latter in this case, though—eh?”

Solutus es ab uxore?

And if besides he partakes of the same faith, behold he has also become a member of you: for what friendship could work such union, as the relationship of faith?

One month’s pay-day had already passed since the suspension, and the next was at hand.

men to look to other productions to supplement their vines.

This (second vice) will be ambition; and hence, too, its name is to be interpreted, in that from concupiscence ambient in the mind it is born, with a view to the desire of glory—a grand desire, forsooth, which (as we have said) is recommended neither by nature nor by truth, but by a vicious passion of the mind—(namely,) concupiscence.

There are also some who come from the commonest schools of the grammarians and professional speakers, whom you may not venture to reckon either among the uneducated or among those very learned classes whose minds have been exercised in questions of real magnitude.

Your inner feelings give the name to your acts.

In such a manner this celebrated victory is managed.

Homily 26 on First Corinthians

As far as he knew, Colonel Stubbs was and would remain a very much less rich man than himself.

'Let the emperor,' said he, 'demand of the heads of each sect, whether they would pay any deference to the ancients who flourished before schism distracted the church; or whether they would repudiate them, as alienated from the Christian faith?

[1 Corinthians 15:45] And as it is admitted that the second came by the first according to the flesh, for which reason also Christ is called man and the Son of man; so is the witness given that the second is the Savior of the first, for whose sake He came down from heaven.

Never, that is, does a man, by thinking of things at a distance, by that fact either move or displace them; nor if a man were to sit in his own house and reason about the heavenly bodies, would he by that fact either move the sun or make the heavens revolve.

“Yes, Lady On—, Julia, that is; I thought I might as well come and call, as I found we weren’t to see you at Clavering when we were all there at Easter.” When she had been living in his brother’s house as one of the family, he had called her Julia as Hugh had done.

Moreover, the judgment will be not only for deeds, but for thoughts also, as the same Apostle says, Their thoughts mutually accusing or else excusing one another, in the day when God shall judge the secrets of men.

In conclusion, I will only again say that Ralph himself is clever, well-conditioned, and, as I most truly believe, a thorough gentleman.

Virgin, you are taken, you are exposed, you boast one thing and affect another.

For they were created, and are different from their Creator.

“Look here, Papa; you know what it is I have promised you.”

Things were going better with her now.

He could not say this either rashly or falsely; what, then, do we suppose to be his reason for the statement?

Caroline Spalding, when she received Nora’s letter, was not disposed to give much weight to it.

When I first saw you I made a picture to myself of what my life might be, and I cannot get that moved from before my eyes.

The loud trumpet, when sounded, collects the soldiers, and proclaims war.

But he still kept on a diminished business in the north, and it was now needful that he should return to Cumberland.

For by saying another, He shows the difference of Person, and by Paraclete, the connection of Substance.

For fifteen years, though he had been passionate, imperious, and often cruel, he had never been jealous.

It was known too at Pollington, as well as elsewhere in the month of August, that efforts were still to be made with the view of upsetting the verdict.

Of evil men, whom he suffers, he has made mention, and the same suffering of evil men he has called his exercise.

(5.) Whosoever says that according to foreknowledge the Son is before Mary and not that, generated from the Father before ages, He was with God, and that through Him all things were originated, be he anathema.

It was accordingly recited, 'That the sin of Adam was injurious to him alone, and not to the human race.'

But, as to the sum of money to be thus sent, be assured that whatever you determine will please me.

It went directly to his pride.

Mr Palliser had barely spoken to Mr Crosbie at Courcy, but then in the usual course of his social life he seldom did more than barely speak to anybody.

The dear old parson!

There were there swords, lances, hooks, daggers; so that if any one went up carelessly, or not looking upwards, he would be torn to pieces and his flesh would cleave to the iron weapons.

Upon the love of such friends I readily cast myself without reservation, especially when chafed and wearied by the scandals of this world; and in their love I rest without any disturbing care: for I perceive that God is there, on whom I confidingly cast myself, and in whom I confidingly rest.

For the first four or five miles their route lay along the high road which leads from San Jose to Punt’ Arenas, and so far a group of acquaintances followed them, all mounted on mules.

And in this also there had been some craft. She had been as it were forced to guard the thoughts of her own heart; and had, therefore, turned the river of the conversation right through the heart of her companion.

I sank away from You, O my God, and I wandered too far from You, my stay, in my youth, and became to myself an unfruitful land.

When the prophet says, concerning the Father, You are from everlasting and to everlasting [Psalm 90:2], and concerning the Son, that He is before all ages, and the maker of all things— what can they say?

In the first chapter, then, of Cœlestius' book they alleged that the following was written: That we do more than is commanded us in the law and the gospel.

Thou dost not relieve the poverty, why make it even more grinding?

For He has been gracious towards the Gentiles also; and our sacrifices He esteems more grateful than yours.

Minnie and the curate sat on the box, and there was a servant in the rumble.

At three o’clock in the morning Clara had been called into his room, and at five o’clock she was alone in the world,—having neither father, mother, nor brother; without a home, without a shilling that she could call her own;—with no hope as to her future life, if,—as she had so much reason to suppose,—Captain Aylmer should have chosen to accept her last letter as a ground for permanent separation.

It is sufficient merely for you to open your lips, and you will restore to life the city which at present lies in darkness.

And this peace, as is said, passes all understanding; but this, of course, means our understanding, not that of those who always behold the face of their Father.

“Why do you ask me?” said she. “Why don’t you ask himself?”

Chapter XIV. Crocker’s Distress

What actually did happen at Gatherum Castle, she never knew.

It was supposed to be Mrs Burns’s peculiar property where she might summon her ladies around her and occasionally admit the visit of a favourite virile visitor.

But if any one thinks that these charges are brought against them by us ungenerously and unfairly, let him consider independently our author's writings, both what we have previously alleged, and what is inferred in logical connection with our citations.

So much could not be said for his wife, with whom the Duke attempted to place himself on terms of family equality.

His lordship’s mind was one utterly incapable of sifting evidence,—unable even to understand evidence when it came to him.

When the judge had finished, the jury retired to consider their verdict; and the other business of the assizes was proceeded with, as if nothing peculiar had happened to check the regular routine duties of the court.

Is he to have all, because he gave some aid?

“An Adonis! No; she did not expect an Adonis; but she thought he would have something of the honor and feelings of a man.”

I have myself said the same thing in other words, when I have spoken of virginity as gold and of wedlock as silver.

“Grice indeed! What’s Grice?”

He seems to me to refer everything to the Father, that what he has to say may not at once offend them.

They lend authority to the wrath, and protection to the wit of the wigged.

“Shall we defend the deeds of him at whose death we are rejoiced?” he says: and again, he deplores the feeling of regret which was growing in Rome on account of Cæsar’s death, “lest it should be dangerous to those who have slain the tyrant for us.” We find that Quintilian, among his stock lessons in oratory, constantly refers to the old established rule that a man did a good deed who had killed a tyrant—a lesson which he had taken from the Greek teachers.

And what is the brawling of frogs to the thunder of the clouds?

The very fact that Miss Prettyman should write to him on such a subject made him feel that he was bound to Grace Crawley.

[2 Corinthians 12:4] Now then what use is it for you to ask, either of me or of any one, the things which it is not lawful for man to utter.

And yet he has not declared himself,—and, which is worse, is very anxious to marry a rival.

He found her sitting with her account-books before her, nibbling the end of her pencil, evidently immersed in pecuniary difficulties, and harassed in mind by the multiplicity of palatial expenses and the heavy cost of episcopal grandeur.

But not even this can we see in an incorporeal way, though it is incorporeal, since it is called— or is— Fire and Spirit.

‘But I am not alone. Oh, mamma, mamma, do you not know that I am going to become a mother?’

It was necessary that she should first state her request plainly before she began to urge it with such eloquence as she had at her command.

“Just so; just so,” said Lord Brentford, delighted to see that his young pupil,—as he regarded him,—understood so well the system of parliamentary management. “By-the-bye, Finn, have you seen Chiltern lately?”

On the table there stood a row of official books, placed lengthways on their edges: the “Post-Office Directory,” the “Court Circular,” a “Directory to the Inns of Court,” a dusty volume of Acts of Parliament, which had reference to Chancery accounts,—a volume which Mr Vavasor never opened; and there were some others; but there was no book there in which any Christian man or woman could take delight, either for amusement or for recreation.

These words convey both praise and blame; praise, for their implicit acceptance of the truth; blame, because Him whom they had seen, for their sakes, stripped naked, transfixed, nailed to the cross, spit upon, mocked, fed with vinegar, upbraided by thieves, pierced with a spear; (for all this is implied in the words, openly set forth, crucified,) Him had they left, and betaken themselves to the Law, unshamed by any of those sufferings.

Philosophy, says Cicero, is contented with a few judges, of its own accord designedly avoiding the multitude.

And woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck, in those days!

There had been sometimes a few words,—not quite a quarrel but nearly so,—on the subject of dining out.

Rumors had made their way through even to her condition of life, and she in her innocence had gradually been taught to believe that Captain Scarborough was not a man whom she could be safe in loving.

Though there was in her face an aspect almost of terror as she owned to her name in the stranger’s presence, yet there was also about her a certain amount of female dignity, which made Mr. Prendergast feel that it behoved him to treat her not only with gentleness, but also with respect.

For, after He had said concerning eunuchs, I will give unto them in My house and in My wall a named place, much better than of sons and daughters; lest any too carnal should think that there was any thing temporal to be hoped for in these words, straightway He added, An eternal name I will give unto them, nor shall it ever fail: as though He should say, Why do you draw back, impious blindness?

All this to me was very melancholy.

“Quite Settled”

[Σ] Seated before Him are souls in the flesh for His judgment.

“You have gone farther than I thought you would, Sir William,” said Mr. Flick.

How rancorous were our tongues!

This lion, then, Samson as a Jew slew, but in it he found honey, as in the figure of the heritage which was to be redeemed, that the remnant might be saved according to the election of grace.

It certainly was a pity that Mr. Prong had not made himself happy, with that happiness for which he sighed, in the bosom of his family at Geelong.

She might know that her father was innocent; she might be sure, at any rate, that he had been innocent in intention; but the world thought differently, and she, her brother and sister, and her mother and her poor father, must bend to the world’s opinion.

And so we ought to know what is properly good, and what is bad, and what is indifferent, that our faith may be supported by true knowledge and stand firm in all temptations.

“I am not at liberty to say anything on the subject,” said Fitzgibbon; “but I have no doubt Phineas will tell you.”

The reader also knows what had come of that,—how at last he had not been reticent.

I don’t suppose that Mr. Twentyman is a fit companion for any of the Mortons, but for all that he may be a fit companion for me,—and my sisters.” Surely she must have said this with the express object of declaring to him that in spite of the advantages of her education she chose to put herself in the ranks of the Twentymans, Runcimans and such like.

But in order to learn the dispositions of ripe widowhood, run through the course of the Scriptures.

For indeed in every case it is for what is needed; and sometimes not even for that.

Turn Thou away Your face from my sins, and all mine iniquities blot out [Psalm 50:9].

Let those rage against you who know not with what labor the truth is to be found and with what difficulty error is to be avoided.

2 Corinthians 2:17

But I can understand that it would be very hot in summer and that then the unshaded expanse would not be attractive.

Otherwise,—so said the Liberals,—the whole Conservative party would have been called upon to disavow at the hustings the conclusion to which Mr. Daubeny hinted in East Barsetshire that he had arrived.

The actor, taking off his mask in great alarm, said, Gentlemen, have I displeased you?

I don’t think you’d see anything like that model farm in our country, Sir.

When, however, he condemns the man to be delivered unto Satan, [1 Corinthians 5:5] he becomes the herald of an avenging God.

I hoped you would,—and yet I knew that I was wrong.

Hear what Paul says, I am not meet to be called an Apostle [1 Corinthians 15:9], because I persecuted the Church of God and made havoc of it.

“I don’t know,” said Mary, with some little exultation at her heart.

It was all going from bad to worse. He was allowed by the mother to be at the cottage as much as he pleased, and the girl was allowed to wander with him when she would among the cliffs. It was so, although Father Marty himself had more than once cautioned Mrs. O’Hara that she was imprudent. “What can I do?” she said. “Have not you yourself taught me to believe that he is true?”

The one was a law of fear, the other is a law of love.

“Is that fair, Guss?”

[Matthew 20:16] For whoever are elected are without doubt also called; but not whosoever are called are as a consequence elected.

Whom may we suppose to be here speaking, but God?

“Is that lady a great friend of yours?” asked Miss Boncassen.

This that those who would have it that the soul migrates into natures divergent from each other seem to me to obliterate all natural distinctions; to blend and confuse together, in every possible respect, the rational, the irrational, the sentient, and the insensate; if, that is, all these are to pass into each other, with no distinct natural order secluding them from mutual transition.

Every now and then Harry extended his own line, moving always forward toward Gangoil as he did so, though he and his men were always on Brownbie’s territory.

The anniversary of the reign of Maxentius approached, that is, the sixth of the kalends of November, and the fifth year of his reign was drawing to an end.

Now, if you’ll do that, and take my turnip down, I’ll let you have the turnip to wear, if you’ll let me have ten shillings of the money.

Chapter 19.— Of the 69th Psalm, in Which the Obstinate Unbelief of the Jews is Declared.

The God whom Moses taught the people to love and serve, is the God of Abraham, of Isaac, and of Jacob, whom the Lord Jesus Christ speaks of by this name, using the name in refutation of the Sadducees, who denied the resurrection of the dead.

“He went so far as to suggest,” said the Senator with indignant energy, “that if I contested my liability to the man’s charges, the matter would go against me because I had interfered in such a case on the unpopular side.

What then is [meant]?

It was one great desire of his heart to have Pat Carroll incarcerated as a penal felon.

For He goes on to say, And has given Him authority to execute judgment also, because He is the Son of man.

Just at this time another literary project loomed before my eyes, and for six or eight months had considerable size.

It has been said that Bertie Stanhope was a man without principle.

“Why, thin, Mr. Thady, she’s nothing much to boast of; since she was in Carrick, yesterday, she’s been very bad intirely.”

Learn what are really goods.

Come, draw we our pair of swords, against mankind: I secretly, you openly, and lo!

He was a thriving man, and what might not they two do in Norfolk if they put their wealth together?

Remember that you are fathers: if you forget Him that is from the beginning, you have lost your fatherhood.

‘I should be sorry to quarrel with them, because they were kind to me when I was a boy. They are not very wise.’

That street had formed part of the main line of road from Salisbury to Taunton, and coaches, waggons, and posting-carriages had been frequent on it; but now, alas!

We thought that her intrusion was altogether unwarrantable, and that it behoved us to let her know that such was the case.

“This is the most fearful thing I ever heard of,” said Sir Marmaduke. “What are we to do with him?”

It was nearly dark as Mark Robarts drove up through the avenue of lime-trees to the hall-door; but it was easy to see that the house, which was dead and silent as the grave through nine months of the year, was now alive in all its parts. There were lights in many of the windows, and a noise of voices came from the stables, and servants were moving about, and dogs barked, and the dark gravel before the front steps was cut up with many a coach-wheel.

‘There’s nothing against my manner, I hope, Mr Peppercorn.’

When young men and young women neglect their duty, hearts have to be broken.

Thus God out of regard for human weakness has not set forth the faith in bare and uncertain statements.

For unless it were so, how could it be discerned whether the soul recalls to memory or learns for the first time that which it hears; seeing that it is much easier to believe that it learns what it is unacquainted with, than that it has forgot what it knew but a little before, and that its power of recalling former things is lost through the interposition of the body?

And that these things were done for their instruction is plain from what is said afterwards, when He reminded them, saying, Do ye not yet understand— how many baskets ye took up?

How do you suffer persecution and enmity for righteousness' sake, when, according to you, it is righteous to preach and teach these impieties?

[Acts 4:9] He hits them hard, that they are always making a crime of such acts, finding fault with works of beneficence done to men: and he reminds them of their former doings, that they run to do murder, and not only so, but make a crime of doing good deeds.

And what is it, to become afar from God?

As it is a man who goes, so it is He Himself Who comes.

For why does he not say at first what he will say afterwards, when some one shall put the question to him, What he means by fate?

“You do not mean to say that you will throw me over? But the truth is, Mrs. Askerton, that I do not mean to be thrown over. I look upon him as my brother, and I intend to cling to him as sisters do cling.”

For we hold in abhorrence with them what is rightly offensive to them also; just as, nevertheless, we hold in abhorrence in them that for which they themselves are rightly offensive.

But it will again, by the same route, return to the beginning, and from thence in like manner to the end; nor will it ever cease from doing this.

“Oh, please yourself,” said Skulpit: “please yourself, and you’ll please me.”

“I’ll pay your debts, Captain.”

“Might I ask then what it is you propose to effect by the visit with which you have honoured me? Of course you are aware that these are very private matters; and although I should feel myself under an obligation to you, or to any man who might assist me to arrive at any true facts which have hitherto been concealed, I am not disposed to discuss the affair with a stranger on grounds of mere suspicion.”

I don’t love him.

Chapter 6. That in one of its subsistences the divine nature is united in its entirety to the human nature, in its entirety and not only part to part.

But come into my dressingroom, and see the ruins out of the window.

Chapter 21. Advantage of the Delay.

I know nothing of Mr. Scrobby and don’t want.

“I could not write an answer, and so I came.”

Surely before the expiration of half a century since the return of

Chapter 11 [X.]— Pelagius' Definition of How God Helps Us: He Promises Us Future Glory.

Chapter 15 Proofs of the Resurrection from Isaiah and Ezekiel; the same God Who created us will also raise us up.

For if he was himself present to her in her dream, of course it was by miraculous grace that he was enabled so to do, not by nature; and by God's gift, not by faculty of his own.

With the mother the Vicar had often spoken of her lost child, and had learned from her how sad it was to her that she could never dare to mention Carry’s name to her husband.

But things would be terribly astray now that the right heir was extruded.

“No excitement in a young man’s coming into the house! Without shocking your propriety, allow me to say that that is impossible. Of course, he is coming to see whether he can’t make matters all right by marrying you.”

And remember this also, Clara Desmond is not your wife as yet.

Books are lugged into court—dirty papers overhauled—thick volumes quoted and consulted—precedents urged—objections answered—a great deal of self-confidence shown.

That very day now present to her was the 24th December, and on that very evening she would be sitting in Christmas joy among all her uncles and cousins, holding her new brother-in-law affectionately by the hand.

Mrs. Rossiter was ambitious for her son, and in this matter sympathised with the county people.

Love

Now this indeed describes the origin of created things.

And as for the heretic Arius and his supporters, who say that once the Son was not, and that the Son was made of that which was not, and who deny that Christ is God and the Son of God before the worlds, we anathematize them both now and for evermore, as also we have set forth in our former declaration at Milan.

“None at all;—only I was surprised. Did she know that I was coming?”

Nay, that very repose of the wicked, which even while they live is only seeming, is now in hell, for alive they go down into hell.

I have told her that I do get a good deal.

But the Son, having all things which are the Father's, is Himself proclaimed a King by Holy Scripture.

What says Cyprian?

surely none at all was paid, since Christ was a phantom, nor had He any corporeal substance which He could pay for our bodies!

Indeed, Lily had already told him, that as far as she was concerned, she was in no hurry.

But we did get him on to San Francisco; and when he was able to walk into the city on his own legs, I thought that, might be, he would rally and come round.

Another Journey to Bowes

(For indeed it was irrelevant, and superfluous, when he had mentioned Phares, from whom he was to trace Christ's genealogy, to mention Zara also.)

‘Nothing, George. Of course I will marry him. He has my word. And I have promised my uncle also. But, George, you will say that you forgive me?’

Their violence indeed was scarcely less than that of those who had formerly obliged the Christians to worship idols; for they applied all kinds of scourgings, a variety of tortures, and confiscation of property.

He arrived about five o’clock in a gig from Taunton.

How can you, hale in sin, obey Him Who died to sin?

It is said that Pachomius at first practiced philosophy alone in a cave, but that a holy angel appeared to him, and commanded him to call together some young monks, and live with them, for he had succeeded well in pursuing philosophy by himself, and to train them by the laws which were about to be delivered to him, and now he was to possess and benefit many as a leader of communities.

Why then did he not say, Pity us O Lord, see our humiliation at the hands of our enemies, as if many poor were crying; but as if one, Pity me, O Lord?

“Yes; it was.”

The Paragon wrote two very diplomatic notes, explaining his temporary residence and expressing his great desire to become acquainted with his neighbours.

Not improbably, however, these pages may be printed first.

There could be no one else now, whether Tom or another,—whether such as Tom or such as any other.

The landlord is anxious if possible to save for himself and those who may come after him something of the reality of his property, and the tenant feels that, though something of the nobility of property has been promised to him by the Landleaguers, he may after all make the best bargain by so far submitting himself to his shorn landlord.

The Chairman gave his directions in a solemn, pompous voice, which was by no means usual to him when he was in good humour.

Who could tell how soon that wicked Marquis would die; and then,—then how great would not be the glory of the Dean’s daughter!

And let your Love so give the matter your close and careful attention, that the things that have been reported to us may not pass without a hearing, lest discord should be fomented in the Church, whence it ought by all means to be banished.

I will love you very dearly, and do all that I can to make you happy.

Macedonius pleaded indisposition, and failed to attend; Patrophilus said he had some trouble with his eyes, and that on this account it was needful for him to remain in the suburbs of Seleucia; and the rest offered various pretexts to account for their absence.

Wherefore He Himself adds and says, that He is his Lord.

I could not enforce the law vi et armis against Crasweller.

The emperor, who had confidence in the clergy, ordered him to be banished. So Chrysostom, without having heard the charges brought against him, or brought forward his defence, was forced as though convicted on the accusations advanced against him to quit Constantinople, and departed to Hieron at the mouth of the Euxine, for so the naval station is named.

I couldn’t very well alter my plan now.” There was a dash of manliness about him, and he could show some gallantry before the traitor friend who had become his foe.

Would you not leap into fire?

but, Where is that man?

They have not a leathern girdle about their loins, but that glory which is unspeakable, and they are more splendid than kings, or whoever have been most illustrious.

Even as nothing God shall save men, of whom we dare to despair.

If he could have declared it all at once,—at first, with a smile on his face, then expressing his disgust at the woman’s falsehood,—it would have been better.

Chapter 106

The interview was ended by Mr Palliser taking the name of the hotel, and promising to call before Mr Fitzgerald should be up in the morning—a purposed visit, which we need not regard as requiring any very early energy on Mr Palliser’s part, when we remember Burgo’s own programme for the following day.

But power ought to follow righteousness, not to go before it; and accordingly it is placed in second, that is, prosperous fortune; and this is called second, from following.

For not in vain had the Holy Ghost said by Isaiah: Behold!

The dean had given him money, covered up, in an enclosure, “so that the touch of the coin might not add to my disgrace in taking his alms,” said the wretched man, thus speaking openly and freely in his agony of the shame which he had striven so persistently to hide.

I have not found in him any cause to necessitate death: I will chastise him and [36] let him go.

But as to that dollar-worshiping, it will of course seem that I am abusing the New Yorkers.

It would be a lengthened task to draw forth all the appearances of virtue, to show respecting each how necessary it is for a wise and just man to be far removed from those goods, the enjoyment of which by the unjust causes the worship of their gods to be regarded as true and efficacious.

The fact that nobody would comprehend that “ H. B. P.” intended to express the general opinion of the shareholders that “ Honesty is the Best Policy,” was felt to be a recommendation rather than otherwise.

With what object he had called he hardly knew himself; but he thought that he intended to assure the Duchess that he was not a candidate for office, and that he must deprecate her interference.

All around appear pleasures attracting the eyes of the soul.

“And your ladyship knew that the information was untrue?” “Yes,” said Lizzie.

As to conditions limiting Her Majesty’s power, the mere allusion to such a condition of things seems to be absurd now that we know what has been done.

Mr. Brown indulged a notion, whether correctly or not I am unable to say, but one which I believe to be not uncommon, that by presenting his side instead of his front to his adversary’s fire, he exposed fewer vital parts to danger; and if destiny intended him to be wounded, he certainly, in the present instance, was benefited by the above arrangement, for he received the bullet in perhaps the least dangerous part of his body.

She could not even now say of what she accused him, having rejected him.

And we may find many that perform the more irksome part ([πεικρότερον]), and yet want vigor for this.

“When I found how very superior a person your daughter was!”

He sees, too, those that have lapsed, and have been deceived by his treacherous snares, washed in the tears of penitence and, by the Apostle's key unlocking the gates of mercy, admitted to the benefit of reconciliation.

The former does not intend to be prescient, nor the latter accurate.

Without detriment therefore to the properties of either nature and substance which then came together in one person , majesty took on humility, strength weakness, eternity mortality: and for the paying off of the debt belonging to our condition inviolable nature was united with possible nature, so that, as suited the needs of our case , one and the same Mediator between God and men, the Man Christ Jesus, could both die with the one and not die with the other.

On all animals Adam imposed names; and on none on the ground of future condition, but on the ground of the present purpose which each particular nature served; called (as each nature was) by that to which from the beginning it showed a propensity.

He waited for four-and-twenty hours before he spoke, and during that time was subject to none of those terrors which were now making Miss Marrable’s life a burden to her.

“Who says that I acknowledge it? I acknowledge nothing in the will. But it is clear, from that document, that she presumes herself to be under his protection. It is manifest that that silly fool intended that she should be so. Now I am not the man to put up with this. I ask you once more, Mr. Bertram, will you tell me where I shall find Lady Harcourt?”

Miss Tallowax became rather frightened as she drew near to the scene of her coming grandeur.

When she was told that the master of Lazarus had desired that her son should be removed from his college, she had accused the tyrant of unrelenting, persecuting tyranny; and the gentle arguments of Sir Peregrine had no effect towards changing her ideas.

Knowing as they did the unusual nature of such a proceeding, yet being constrained by the promises they had given in return for his false impeachment of me, they submitted even to this, lest that abandoned person, if he were ungratefully treated by them, should disclose the truth, and thereby show the wickedness of Eusebius and his fellows.

She had longed to go once again to Stalham,—”dear Stalham,” as she called it to herself.

Would you set a measure to my tears, when I see no measure of my misery?

[Jerome advises Exuperantius, a Roman soldier, to come to Bethlehem and with his brother Quintilian to become a monk. According to Palladius (H. L. c. lxxx.) Exuperantius came to Jerome but went away again 'unable to endure his violence and ill-will.' The date of the letter is unknown.]

“I haven’t been good at all; but I will be good if you’ll trust me.”

And the copious mess of meat which was prepared for the family supper was not appetising.

But not so; Jesus says unto her, Touch me not, for I am not yet ascended to my Father; but go to my brethren (and even in this He proves Himself to be the Son; for if He had been the Father, He would have called them His children, (instead of His brethren), and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father and your Father, and to my God and your God.

Chapter 14. Knowledge Deadens Lusts.

No one would lightly choose, he means, to make so long a journey for this purpose.

“My lord, I think the truth is that you hardly know how strong in such a matter as this our Marion herself can be. Neither have I nor has her father prevailed upon her. I can go back now, and tell you without breach of confidence all that passed between her and me. When first your name was discussed between us; when first I saw that you seemed to make much of her—”

In the next place, since our opponents keep repeating those statements about faith, we must say that, considering it as a useful thing for the multitude, we admit that we teach those men to believe without reasons, who are unable to abandon all other employments, and give themselves to an examination of arguments; and our opponents, although they do not acknowledge it, yet practically do the same.

“Very much indeed,” said Lord Rufford, filling his mouth with pigeon-pie as he spoke, and not lifting his eyes from his plate.

“No, Harry; not angry. How should I be angry with you who alone are left to me of my old friends? But, Harry, you must think for me, and spare me in my difficulty.”

He had been a fortnight up at Oxford; and when at home, had been calling on all his parishioners.

If a mahogany table was to be made to shine, it was elbow-grease that the operation needed.

Tell me why are cards wicked?

“But it has been necessary for my honour, and for my purpose, that Lord Kingsbury should know that I had come to ask him for his daughter’s hand. I had not dared to expect that he would accept my proposal graciously.”

“I am sure it cannot do you any good to climb up here in the heat of the sun. Had you been here long, Finn?”

And propped with most advantage.

But I won’t run away.” Mrs. Fenwick said nothing more on the subject at that moment, but she felt that the glory and joy of the Vicarage were gone from it.

I am afraid that I myself was treated as an appendage to this scheme.

But her last thoughts, as she sat there thinking, were of him—Sir Peregrine.

Martin Kelly’s Courtship

No otherwise did Simon even try to do, when he offered the apostles money for the Spirit of Christ.

“Then you needn’t;—for it isn’t any good.”

We must then understand action to be rational energy.

39. Augustine answered: Consider in reply that these things have been said by us against you; and that you may know to which of us they are more appropriate, call to mind what I have said before.

In consequence of these things the people and their ministers are separated from one another, as one might expect, silenced by the violence of the Prefect, yet abhorring the impiety of the Arian madmen.

Now, when Joseph's own happiness is proclaimed, because he could see his great-grandchildren, it is by no means to be thought they already existed in the thirty-ninth year of their great-grandsire Joseph, when his father Jacob came to him in Egypt.

“Nor I—never; in a public place, too,” said Dr. Easyman, a medical gentleman, who also often accompanied her.

And if it were not profitable for us to believe this, the same apostle would not have made it so prominent as he does, when he says to Timothy, "Remember that Christ Jesus, of the seed of David, rose from the dead, according to my gospel."

And even yet she would not give up the battle, though she admitted to herself that Florence’s letter to Mrs. Clavering made the contest more difficult than ever.

Such are the names of the kings that were in former times.

Let us become beautiful, and let us do this, that we may always have lovers.

What name shall be given to the taking away of property which no law nor accident has made to fail.

And when we are told of passion and of the cross we must recognise the nature which submitted to the passion; we must avoid attributing it to the impassible, and must attribute it to that nature which was assumed for the distinct purpose of suffering.

[Galatians 4:19] After having previously said to them, The things which I write unto you, behold, before God, I lie not, could he in writing to these same persons state what was not true, and deceive them by a fraud which was in some way sanctioned by expediency, when he said that he had seen Peter and Barnabas not walking uprightly, according to the truth of the gospel, and that he had withstood Peter to the face because of this, that he was compelling the Gentiles to live after the manner of the Jews?

Ugh—” and she shuddered as she thought of the matrimonial torch which her friends had been so ready to light on her behalf.

Rest and a life free from care are very grateful to me. I have therefore blocked the door of the monastery, and decline intercourse with my friends.

To such a degree did he disregard his own interest, and fear for his Master.

For how could there be a God of Him Who is properly God?

Thou murmurest surely because the bad are not punished: yet do not murmur, lest you be among those who are punished.

“It would be no good if he did,” said Brisket. “And, I’ll tell you what it is, I’m not going to be made a fool of; I must know how it’s to be at once, or I’m off.” And he put out his hand as though to take up his hat.

[Matthew 28:20] Were they then to be here always, even to the end of the world?

But I cannot see what show of reason there is in this, that the name of "erring sheep" should be denied to one whose lot it has been that, while seeking the salvation which is in Christ, he has fallen into the error of heretics, and been baptized in their body; while he is held to have become a sheep already within the body of the Catholic Church herself, who has renounced the world in words and not in deeds, and has received baptism in such falseness of heart as this.

No, no; rather let us put away false pride and learn whatever can be learned from man; and let him who teaches another communicate what he has himself received without arrogance and without jealousy.

She said one soft gentle word of condolence to him, some little sentence that she had been studying to pronounce.

[1 Timothy 1:13] Because his goings are now established, because he now walks on the Rock?...Therefore, when he was saying, I press forward toward the prize of my high calling, because his feet were now set on the Rock, and his goings were ordered, because he was now walking on the right way, he had something to return thanks for; something to ask for still; returning thanks for what he had received already, while he was claiming that which still remained due.

But she would not allow that that which was offered to her was in any degree the more precious because of his outward worldly standing.

“I don’t know that; I should have begun younger. It’s a thousand pities that we are not taught anything useful when we are at school. Of what use is Latin and Greek to me?”

For you neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in [Matthew 23:13].

“And I hope you’ll never learn. They say women are to vote, and become doctors, and if so, there’s no knowing what devil’s tricks they mayn’t do. But it isn’t your fault about that filthy newspaper. How he can let himself down to write stuff that is to be printed on straw is what I can’t understand.”

Annot’s heart beat quickly as she heard him make the last important declaration; and beautifully she thought he made it. When Chapeau called her a little angel, she swore to herself that he was the dearest fellow that ever lived and when he finished by protesting that she was the girl of his heart, and that he loved her better than all the world, she longed to run out and throw her arms about his neck.

Were it not better for such an one never to have come at all?

What, then, is the soul itself which is beyond the bodily senses, that is to say, which resides in the understanding whereby it considers these mysteries?

There’s young Baker—Harry Baker, you know—he came of age last year, and he has as pretty a string of nags as any one would wish to set eyes on; four hunters and a hack.

Who has measured the water with [his] hand, and the heaven with a span, and all the earth with [his] fist?

“I’d earn my bread, if I knew how,” she began, putting her handkerchief up to her eyes, on the afternoon of the very day on which he was buried.

We do not bring in two Gods as some do, who say, God the Father and God the Son, but greater God the Father and lesser God the Son.

And he said not, We are within, but 'It has entered within,' which was more true and more persuasive.

I have passed through the contests of my prime.

There’s Stubbs, and Houston, and Batsby, all gone and drowned themselves.

Why separate what is perfectly matched?

The truth of the Unity of God has been delivered to you: learn to distinguish the pastures of doctrine.

His wife felt him to be so.

But who would hesitate every day to prostrate himself before God, at least in the first prayer with which we enter on the daylight?

Parson John had been thinking a good deal of Mary, but had resolved that it was best that he should hold his tongue for the present.

Whereupon these men, whose conduct is suspicious in all that they do, when they see that they are not likely to get the better in an Ecclesiastical trial, betake themselves to Constantius alone, and thenceforth bewail themselves, as to the patron of their heresy.

When the unfortunate moth in his semi-blindness whisks himself and his wings within the flame of the candle, and finds himself mutilated and tortured, he even then will not take the lesson, but returns again and again till he is destroyed.

We stopped at the Julien House, Dubuque.

That either sex is not of God, but of the devil.

Had he felt that the circumstances of his engagement with Lily made it expedient for him to stay with her till the end of his holidays, he could have thrown over the de Courcys without a struggle.

I myself have been taken for one.

Is then this also written?

For they say not, 'Bless, O Word, and praise, O Wisdom to show that all other things are both praising and are works; but the Word is not a work nor of those that praise, but is praised with the Father and worshipped and confessed as God , being His Word and Wisdom, and of the works the Framer.

For the land that is ploughed, into which seed is not cast, produces not fruit, even if that land drinks in all the rain.

Still, we are sure that all these things are due either to the mercy or the judgment of God, while the measures and numbers and weights by which the Creator of all natural productions arranges all things are concealed from our view.

Watch and pray, that you enter not into temptations: the spirit is [13] willing and ready, but the body is weak.

“Take them all out one by one, and shake them,” he said to the other attorney,—”that set like the one on the floor.

On the Fast of the Tenth Month.

For it is an undoubted fact that certain persons either originated the thing, or shed lustre on it.

Chapter 30. Of the church of the Goths

“He has got no lodge,” said the Marquis.

Throughout this country there are other “ locations,”—very much larger in extent of land and numerously inhabited,—on which the Natives reside by their own right, the use of the soil having been given to them by the Government.

He thought it a fine thing, although at the same moment he knew it to be an evil thing—this hurrying away from the young lady whom he really loved to another as to whom he thought it very likely that he should be called upon to pretend to love her.

Only, the fact that the divine precepts have either a moral and religious character or a prophetic meaning must be believed, whether intelligently or not.

He is still living, and his life is worthy of Christian profession, and his rank in the church.

Chapeau and four others had gone upstairs; and those below were not kept waiting long, before the heavy tread of the men descending was heard on the stairs, as though they were carrying down a weight among them.

Wherefore that he places first, but this last: for this was on account of that, and so indeed were all the rest; both prophecies, and working of miracles, and various kinds of tongues, and interpretation of tongues.

She went up to the window and stood there gazing out upon the gravel road, with her hand containing the letter pressed upon her heart.

Sir Thomas, in his first interview with Mr.

Would he, at his time of life, take that for doing nothing which he now got for working hard?

And how can this deserve excuse, when we see not the beam in our own eye, but are bitterly over-curious about the mote in another's?

The male is wholly truth, the female wholly falsehood.

“Whoever said so, said wrong,” began Father Cullen, rising up and putting his hands on the table, as if he was going to make a speech, “Whoever said so, said wrong. His father was a Catholic, and his mother was a Catholic, but he never was a Catholic; and how could he, for he never was a Christian,”—and as he sat down he turned round his large obtruding eyes for approval.

It had now become dark, but he would have no lights lit.

I shall go over to my friend on the Thursday, but shall return to Lessboro’.

Some details of the affair made their way into the metropolitan Press,—so that the expected trial became one of those causes célèbres by which the public is from time to time kept alive to the value and charm of newspapers.

And it cannot be said, that to you we act thus, but not so others.

For the Lord dreads not the face of any one, nor will He regard greatness; for He has made small and great, and cares alike for all.

CRAWLEY. It was he who handed his mistress the notes.

She perceived that the Duke himself had no suspicion of what was going on, and that he was strongly disposed in her favour.

In what way then will the period of one thousand years be counted which, according to Origen , is required for the complete restoration?

‘Have a leetle drop o’ rum in the tea, sir, and it’ll set you all to rights in two minutes.’

1. Thus Ignatius has done in the epistles which we have mentioned, and Clement in his epistle which is accepted by all, and which he wrote in the name of the church of Rome to the church of Corinth. In this epistle he gives many thoughts drawn from the Epistle to the Hebrews, and also quotes verbally some of its expressions, thus showing most plainly that it is not a recent production.

“How can it be postponed? As years creep on, you cannot postpone their step. If there might be postponement such as that, I doubt whether we should ever find the time for our inhabitants to come. No, Graybody; there can be no postponement for the Fixed Period.”

“And I am bound to acknowledge the very ready way in which you did what I asked you to do.”

I add still one case more, as it will be proper to show you how it was among the ancients also.

He has been asked to be candid, but he cannot bring himself to undertake a duty so onerous, so odious, and one as to which he sees so little reason that he personally should perform it.

Mr R. SHAW STEWART

But to have stood on Calvary!

“Because Lord Drummond always seems to me to have more on hand than he knows how to get through, and you never seem to have anything to do.”

Nothing about him surprised them all so much as the fact that after such great signs and wonders he had not accepted even a crust of bread from any one in the district.

For the other arts indeed hold their way through the diligence of men as well; but this gets the better as God determines the balance, and is throughout almost wholly dependent thereupon; and it needs rains from above, and the admixture of weathers, and, above all, His Providence.

Stunn'd in the whirl, and breathless with the fall.

Or what impediment was it to Your little ones to have a far slower wit, seeing that they departed not far from You, that in the nest of Your Church they might safely become fledged, and nourish the wings of charity by the food of a sound faith?

And Alice was glad to find that a hundred and fifty thousand female operatives were employed in Paris, while Lady Glencora said it was a great shame, and that they ought all to have husbands.

“But you must think something when everybody is talking about it, mamma.”

“But, Adelaide;—it is so.”

And though the proofs of these truths are clear and manifest to our sight, they appear in a still stronger light, when we collect, and as it were concentrate our thoughts within ourselves, and ponder their causes with deep attention.

Is a huge heap of bones,

She went off at once as soon as she was through the wicket gate, asking questions as to the division of the property of the parish between the two owners, as to this field and that field, and the little wood which they passed, till her sharp intelligence told her that she was overacting her part.

“Money will not make a girl fit, mamma.”

But at last I feel that I have him, — perhaps by the tail, as the Irishman drives his pig.

For not only does He satisfy them in the morning; neither does He give them only as much to drink as they ask; but He gives them abundantly according to the multitude of His lovingkindness, vouchsafing to them at all times the grace of the Spirit.

All the glory of that King's daughter is within, in fringes of gold, with raiment of various colors.

“Those are the speculations which people make. Only I should spite you by killing myself, so that he might marry again.”

And it is well there should be shops at which you shall be able to buy second-class goods if you do not wish to pay a first-class price.

“The fact is, you have been there and they’ve talked you over. It can’t be that you love children that you never saw till the other day; and as for the woman, you always hated her.”

The believer in the true doctrine of the gospel will understand that Christ is not reproached by Moses when he speaks of Him as cursed, not in His divine majesty, but as hanging on the tree as our substitute, bearing our punishment, any more than He is praised by the Manichæans when they deny that He had a mortal body, so as to suffer real death.

“I shall not go to church now,” she said, as she advanced across the lawn towards the hall door.

He was initiated and ordained at the same time, and immediately proceeded to bring the church under his sway to unanimity of opinion concerning the Divine nature; for, while under the guidance of Auxentius, it had long been rent by dissensions on this subject.

“Ah;—why indeed.”

Two hundred and seventy-two would be equally complaisant with Mr. Westmacott.

How then am I to prove the spirit?

Bellfield, who was sent on to the house, found Alice and Kate surveying the newly arrived carpet bag. “He knows ‘un,” said the boy who had driven the gig, pointing to the Captain.

One good Sunday against a Sunday that was not good left him, as he thought, properly poised in his intended condition of human infirmity.

They are for arousing, for gladness, to set forth the amazing nature of the things then doing, for grief to them that are left.

And Moses was succeeded by Joshua the son of Nun, and he by the Judges, and they not by one, but by a number of Kings.

Have you not then healed his wound?

See now what happened in the case of the fathers was shadow: They drank, it is said, of that Rock that followed them, and that Rock was Christ.

[Exodus 19:8] It is a remarkable thing indeed which he says, like their fathers: while throughout the whole text of the Psalm he was seeming to speak of the same men as it were, yet now it appears that the words did concern those who were already in the land of promise, and that the fathers spoken of were of those who did provoke in the desert.

And so there are some, as we have said, enriched with great gifts, who, while they are ardent for the studies of contemplation only, shrink from serving to their neighbour's benefit by preaching; they love a secret place of quiet, they long for a retreat for speculation.

“But I do like them,” she whispered to him.

And he believed and went.

But Father Jerome still maintained that it was good enough for the ordinary run of his present daily duties, though he jocosely apologized to Marie for appearing, on such an occasion, in so mean a garment.

Should such a one be doomed to pine for ever because a girl could not love him,—a man born to be loved, if nobility and tenderness and truth were lovely!

“When we’re done, and the things is out, we’ll have a look at the rent-book, and send for the boys to come in; and if they haven’t it, why, Pat Brady must go round agin, and see what he can do with the potatoes and oats, and the pigs; but the times, Larry, is very hard on them; too hard entirely, so it is, poor things—”

Her cousin’s letter to her had been very crafty.

We find the same language everywhere applied to the case of the Israelites.

“Oh, mother! do not say anything against him.”

It need hardly be said that with this contest England had no personal concern.

“Mountains! I should think so. I have to spend half my time among the mountains.”

For it is not the want of wisdom in the men that I complain of in this matter, but the want of ordinary understanding.

[Ecclesiastes 1:18] The more I long for what is not here, do I not so much the more groan for it until it comes?

In short, what patriarch, what prophet, what Levite, or priest, or ruler, or at a later period what apostle, or preacher of the gospel, or bishop, do you ever find the wearer of a crown?

I’m not afraid that he will recommend you to remain in the country, even should you dare to tell him of the horrid accusation which is brought against you.

To speak sooth British laws are not absolutely binding upon the Natives in any of the South African Colonies.

He looked about as though he expected still to find her there; but there was no one to be seen in the garden, and no sound to be heard.

And he was sure that Jack De Baron had had something to do with it.

And although not with you, yet through you I am still doing what I thought I had done sufficiently.

“A little I think—before you knew him. But he is not despicable.”

And much as they said, Let us put Him to death, lest the Romans come and take away our place and nation; and after they had put Him to death, this came to pass; so also here; their object was to crucify Him publicly, that they might injure His fame, and the contrary result took place.

Thady made no reply; the Captain twirled his hat, and ceremoniously bowing to the lady, took his leave.

I will see to him.” After that Hetta had said nothing during the whole day.

“To a certain extent my family, and to a certain extent Mr. Mason’s family. I don’t know how far I should be justified in laying all the facts before you—wonderful facts they are too—in an offhand way like that. These matters have to be considered a great deal. It is not only the extent of the property. There is much more than that in it, Mr. Round.”

[Sirach 22:27] Do you not see, each one fearing these falls and bewailing them, both giving advice, and praying that the tongue may have the benefit of much watchfulness?

There were many slips, in which the union was violently dissolved,—many cases in which the yellow meal allowed was not sufficient, or in which it did not reach the sufferer in time to prevent such dissolution,—cases which when numbered together amounted to thousands.

The Baroness did not wish to expend her eloquence on an unprofitable young lady, and Lady George could find no subject for small talk.

[Wisdom 2:24] Behold, He says, there comes the Prince of the world:— He said these words close upon His Passion:— and in Me he shall find nothing, nothing of sin, nothing worthy of death, nothing worthy of condemnation.

If I only knew!

While Mrs. Thomas was there she was prepared for war and her spirit was hot within her, but all that heat fled in a moment when she found herself alone with the man to whom it belonged to speak her doom.

Both good and bad are in the same honour,

Caleb Thumble.

O for heaven’s sake!’—Here he looked round with agony;—’give me a glass of bwandy-and-water, for this clawet is beginning to disagwee with me.’“ It was thus that Thackeray began that vein of satire on his contemporaries of which it may be said that the older he grew the more amusing it was, and at the same time less likely to hurt the feelings of the author satirised.

George particularly begged me in that letter not to talk to him any more; and yet I did this.

But he elicited the whole truth.

He looked at her, and there was no trace of a tear.

[Acts 2:42] And again in the same power of the Holy Ghost, Peter and John went up into the Temple at the hour of prayer, which was the ninth hour , and in the Name of Jesus healed the man at the Beautiful gate, who had been lame from his mother's womb for forty years; that it might be fulfilled which was spoken, Then shall the lame man leap as an hart.

I do feel that in my altered position I ought to give you back your troth, and tell you that things shall be as they used to be before that happy night at Mrs. Armitage’s party.

For they are said to have run in the odour of his ointments; and that soul was the vessel which contained that very ointment of whose fragrance all the worthy prophets and apostles were made partakers.

“Sir Peregrine, I am guilty.”

Further, what in it is so known to itself, as that it lives?

Under the name of Egypt or of Ethiopia, he has signified the faith of all nations, from a part the whole: calling the preachers of reconciliation ambassadors.

The woman taught once, and ruined all.

Indeed, I cannot suffer such a thing to be said to me.

He spends sleepless nights in the composition of his sermons.

Why, I pray you, have you assigned the prerogatives of God to what are no gods? Why, let me ask, have you forsaken heaven to pay divine honour to earth? What else is gold, or silver, or steel, or iron, or brass, or ivory, or precious stones? Are they not earth, and of the earth?

For I behold the mass of the Church prostrate now, as though it were a corpse.

Orth.— So when we hear the prophet saying, But you, Israel, art my servant, Jacob whom I have chosen, the seed of Abraham my friend, are we to understand the Jews to be bodies only? Are we not to understand them to be men consisting of bodies and souls?

He was a foreman - or rather more than a foreman - a kind of top sawyer in the brewery establishment of Messrs Du Boung and Co., a firm which has an establishment also in the town of Silverbridge.

When the blackness and the rumbling thunderclaps and the beating hailstones of a mountain storm have burst with all their fearful glories on the wanderer among the Alps, though he trembles and is awestruck and crouches with the cold, he is disappointed rather than gratified when a little space of blue sky shows itself for a moment through the clouds.

I know Him as exactly as He knows Me.

Now he could give her back the £20.

Lucy had behaved badly in allowing herself to be loved by a man who ought to have loved money, and Mrs. Greystock had resolved that she would show her feelings by silence.

O sacrilegious hands, which have had the hardihood to drag off a dress dedicated to God!

And yet there were certainly a dozen persons who had seen that offence committed in the light of day, and many other dozens who knew by whom the offence had been committed.

Or O Cyprian!

Nescu, translated literally, is Kiss.

It was the first time that Miss Grantly had been seen by the Proudie ladies since the fact of her engagement had become known.

, a talented man of great philosophical learning, was distinguished at Alexandria, at the same time. Among many and distinguished monuments of his genius, is the elaborate work which he composed On the harmony of Moses and Jesus, and the Gospel canons, which he worked out, and which Eusebius of Cæsarea, afterwards followed. Porphyry falsely accused him of having become a heathen again, after being a Christian, but it is certain that he continued a Christian until the very end of his life.

But what says the Saviour?

My dear, you must allow me to manage my own little affairs my own way.

For who knows not that the extreme parts of the earth under heaven, by excess in one direction or in the other, either by being too close to the sun's heat, or by being too far removed from it, are uninhabitable; some being excessively dry and parched, other parts superabounding in moisture, and chilled by frost, and that only so much is inhabited as is equally removed from the extreme of each of the two opposite conditions?

But that the dread of something after life,

“I love you dearly, and I love him,—Ludovic. Have I not done everything in my power to save you from the man you hate?”

Whence it is clear that Christ is in each individual in as great a degree as the amount of his deserts allows.

Let us marry daily, and in the midst of our marrying let us be overtaken, like Sodom and Gomorrha, by that day of fear!

The one organ then is the psaltery, the other the harp.

For he says: Finally, be all of one mind, having compassion one of another; love as brethren, be pitiful, be humble, and so forth, that you may inherit a blessing, excellent and desirable.

The disputation of the wise man extends thus far: he was silent as to the other things which follow; namely, that because there is in Him neither care nor providence, therefore there is no reflection nor any perception in Him, by which it is effected that He has no existence at all.

Fowls 2s.

“I’m not tied up like a dog, certainly; but who do you suppose will do my work if I do not do it myself? It is a fact, though the world does not believe it, that men in public offices have got something to do.”

But when we are examined, we make no denial, because we are not conscious of any evil, but count it impious not to speak the truth in all things, which also we know is pleasing to God, and because we are also now very desirous to deliver you from an unjust prejudice.

Well, devil a halfpenny I’ll pay him!” This thought was consolatory, and he began again to think of Boulogne.

She knew that she was betraying herself by her weakness.

They both entered together the sitting-room which Ralph used, and Cox was already calling for brandy and water, when the telegram was handed to Newton.

For they may be said to be called but not chosen, because they are not called according to the purpose.

For he who departs to the other world with many deeds both good and bad, will have some alleviation in respect of the punishment and the torment there; but if a man is destitute of these good works, and takes only the evil with him, it is impossible to say what great sufferings he will undergo, when he is conducted to everlasting punishment.

He made one or two trifling remarks on the subject of his projected visit to the archbishop, in order to show to all concerned that he intended to have his own way; the very servants, perceiving the change, transferred a little of their reverence from their mistress to their master. All which the master perceived, and so also did the mistress. But Mrs. Proudie bided her time.

Votes had been obtained by undue influence on the part of masters and landlords, and there had been treating of the most pernicious and corrupt description.

Bridle of untamed colts, Wing of unwandering birds, sure Helm of babes, Shepherd of royal lambs, assemble Your simple children to praise holily, to hymn guilelessly with innocent mouths, Christ the guide of children.

And they came to the chief priests, etc.

Do you wish that he should prepare for me, who is setting before him his burial?

“Not particular.” The old man turned round and gnashed his teeth at him. “The fact is, sir, I don’t drink. Everybody knows that.”

The white-robed cohort of Christ's soldiers is here, who in the fierce conflict have broken the ferocious turbulence of an urgent persecution, having been prepared for the suffering of the dungeon, armed for the endurance of death.

This, in truth, must be called most excellent and praiseworthy, which God Himself considers excellent, even if it be despised and scoffed at by all. For things are not what men think them to be.

‘John, my boy,’ said his uncle in a whisper, ‘what’s the matter between you and Madame?’ Mr. Babington would sometimes call his wife Madame when he was half inclined to laugh at her.

Wherefore begin now with better understanding to resist yourselves in those things which you do not rightly desire; if so be that you can in any way repair and restore in yourselves that purity of religion and innocence of life which at first were bestowed upon man by God, that thereby also the hope of immortal blessings may be restored to you.

Temptation does not overtake you, except such as is human.

“And what else will you do, Emily?”

I’ve helped him to pen many a line for bread.

“If I were you I would see my sister in spite of all the old viragos in Exeter,” said Mrs. Trevelyan. “I have no idea of anybody taking so much upon themselves.”

For our part, we dare not believe that God is affected in one way when He works, in another when He rests.

Let them know how to ask for salvation, that you may seem (at least) to have given to him that asks.

My mother must have three hundred and fifty pounds out of the living as long as she lives; and should I survive her, I must, of course, maintain the girls.

He demands the price of wheat with bold voice before a crowd of fellow-travellers; he asks his question as to the population of the country, and then answers it himself with a tone of conscious superiority, and he suggests his doubts as to the political action of the people around him with an air of omniscience that is intended to astonish all that stand within hearing of him.

[1 Samuel 1:10] I prevent you not, rather I earnestly exhort you to it.

What sort of sign of betrayal did he give?

But he that shall have persevered even unto the end, the same shall be saved.

Or, who ever came from below, to tell us this?

I thought so, and therefore thought that I should find you changed.

For what dead man is entire, although he dies entire?

He had many things belonging to us, and many He had not; for instance, He was not born of wedlock.

Maximus, Sermon III. p. 538, on Modesty and Chastity. Also, John of Damascus, Book III.— Parallel Chap. 27.

And now as he went along through his old haunts, he could not but look back and think of the thoughts which had filled his mind in his earlier wanderings.

She no longer suffered from want of money.

All these peculiarities of his character were not, however, known to Cradell; and when our friend saw him enter the drawing-room with his wife on his arm, he was astonished.

But then she was such “an infernal little liar.” Lord George was quite able to discover so much of her.

She was at first abusive and bitter, which was bad for Marie; and afterwards bitter and silent, which was worse.

Lizzie Returns to Scotland

When, however, the vehicle stopped at Ballycloran gate, and he heard the whistle twice repeated, his interest was excited, and he thought that something was not right.

Cæsar could talk literature as well as Cicero, and turned the conversation in that direction.

In their letter to the emperor, they dwelt largely upon this latter circumstance, and brought it forward as a charge, alleging that it was a personal insult to him to refuse attendance at the consecration of the temple which he had constructed at Jerusalem.

“It is only three doors off,” said Marion, “and in the other direction.” Nevertheless he did go with her to the house, though it was only three doors off. “Tell your father, with my compliments,” he said, “that George Roden can show you the way over. If you can get a cab to bring you across I will send you back in the waggonette. For the matter of that, there is no reason on earth why it should not be sent for you.”

For if there be no hope for the future, why should not mercy be given up, and men indulge in luxury and pleasures, from which it is manifest that all unrighteousness springs?

Hence he shows that it was permitted, not commanded; otherwise he will be held to have acted contrary to the precept of the Lord.

For God is a spirit.

Then he read the paper, and before he went away he wrote a dozen or two of private notes, presenting Sir Raffle’s compliments right and left, and giving in no one note a single word of information that could be of any use to any person.

But by keeping pleasures under command we prevent lusts.

From this it is clear, in great measure, that men are unable to know what God is, what is His essence, nature, substance, quality; whether He has a form, or is limited by no bodily outline, does anything or not, is ever watchful, or is at times sunk in slumbers, runs, sits, walks, or is free from such motions and inactivity.

[Romans 5:3] He was in oppressions, in chains, in prisons, in stripes, in hunger and thirst, in cold and nakedness, [2 Corinthians 11:27] in every wasting of toils and pains, and he was saying, We glory in tribulations.

“No, my dear, there’s nothing new;—I know that; but, at the present juncture of affairs, such imprudence is—is—I’ll tell you what, my dear, if he does not take care what he’s about, John Bold will be off with Eleanor.”

“Certainly; do;—go up and smooth your hair. I will tell him that you are coming to him. He will wait. But he is so much in earnest now,—and so sad,—that I know he will not come again.”

For from this nature is wrought a king's robe, from this a king's house, from this nature are fashioned a king's members: all are kingly.

If this was so, it only gives an additional proof of that determination to have his own way which governed him through all his life.

For so kindled was she by His words, that she left her water pot and the purpose for which she came, ran into the city, and drew all the people to Jesus.

And after being tortured for many days he suffered martyrdom, and all, including even the proconsul, marveled that, at the age of one hundred and twenty years, he could endure so much.

Let her gaze upon and love, let her from her earliest years admire one whose language and gait and dress are an education in virtue.

And yet the evidence went for what it was worth.

Roebury knew him no longer, nor Pall Mall, nor the Chelsea Districts.

“Oh! she’ll accept you. I don’t doubt about that.” How cheap girls do make themselves when talking of each other!

So it had come to pass that the attorney was not a wealthy man.

And Mary, at his instance, also cared for these things.

Then he appealed to Lizzie.

Therefore the body of the world alone is not God, but either the soul of it alone, or the soul and the body together, yet so as that it is God not by virtue of the body, but by virtue of the soul.

“I don’t want anything, mamma.”

Sir Peter Mancrudy, the great Devonshire chemist, was coming to dinner, and Mr. and Mrs. Powel from Haldon,—people of great distinction in that part of the county,—Mrs.

The triumph had been very dark to her; but still it had been a triumph.

This was said after Ralph had positively declared that he would not go actually with the Neefits and occupy the same apartments.

Now he takes down their haughtiness also in the Epistle to the Corinthians, but not in the same way there as here.

He raised also the widow's son from death.

At Belvidere we found an Inn and a ferry, and put them both to their appropriate use, drinking at the one and crossing the other.

But although I must postpone all discussion, and be content at present with the mere exposition (of the heresy), still, wherever any scandalous feature shall seem to require a castigation, it must be attacked by all means, if only with a passing thrust.

Be angry, and sin not.

All these the great Creator and Lord of all has appointed to exist in peace and harmony; while He does good to all, but most abundantly to us who have fled for refuge to His compassions through Jesus Christ our Lord, to whom be glory and majesty for ever and ever.

It was a most perplexing question.

Make me not this frigid reply, of saying, I am afraid of its being thought that I made an overture to him out of fear; and that he will therefore despise me the more.

So too the thrice blessed Timothy when sent by the divine Paul took his place.

He writes, like Mark, Make His ways straight; curtailing, as we saw before, the text, Make straight the ways of our God.

He pours into his sieve stolen corn beyond measure, but no grain will stay there.

Or how could the end of death, and the victory over it be proved, unless challenging it before the eyes of all He had shown it to be dead, annulled for the future by the incorruption of His body?

But observe, I pray you, how the blind man is not disturbed.

“There’s no other foolish thing left that you haven’t done,” said Madeline, “and therefore you are quite right to try that.”

Chapter 39. The Evil Spirit Has Marred the Purity of the Soul from the Very Birth

[2 Corinthians 13:2] But when you have done as you ought, then you will know how great the gain is, how great the advantage.

For you transform all these into lies.

5. Moreover, the Son alone, always co-existing with the Father, and filled with Him who is, Himself also is, since He is of the Father.

Take the millstone, grind meal, draw aside your veil, shave the grey hairs, make bare the legs, pass over the rivers.

But because Christian emperors decide against your wishes, since this appears to them most likely to contribute to the unity of Christ, therefore they are called the foes of Christianity?

For he knew that even the strongest kingdom of all, divided against itself, shall not stand.

There is no reason why Jack shouldn’t obey me as well as you.

He was sensible he had spoken more vehemently than his wont, and especially towards the end of the Epistle.

Nay, but with greater obedience you do all that they command you, whether it be your belly, or money, or the tyranny of lust.

That there is a certain incorporeal power the cause of all our good things, we know: but how it is, or what it is, we know not.

And so they all were gone, and Mr Harding was left alone with his daughter.

And since, in imitation of a rhetorician training a pupil, he introduces a Jew, who enters into a personal discussion with Jesus, and speaks in a very childish manner, altogether unworthy of the grey hairs of a philosopher, let me endeavour, to the best of my ability, to examine his statements, and show that he does not maintain, throughout the discussion, the consistency due to the character of a Jew.

That specially personal question which had been asked he did not answer at all.

would not you count it an insult?

Even Middleton repeats this accusation, and only faintly repels it.

What is meant by having a care of your sin?

The differences in colour, and the differences in all the other qualities which we judge of by means of the sense of hearing, or smell, or touch, or taste, can be known and named by all possessing our common humanity; and so it is with all the other things which appear to be more obvious to our apprehension, the things, that is, pertaining to the age in which we live, designed for political and moral ends.

But while we observe you to be still implicated in the ruinous conduct of pretenders, or in the advocacy of those who have gone astray, we see not of what sort your satisfaction is either to God or men.

“I suppose a heditor’s about the same as a Cabinet Minister. You’ve got to keep your place;—that’s about it, Mr. Slide.”

“It’s odd enough we should have a row the very first day you come,” said Silverbridge.

“Oh, no.” Then again she gave him her hand, and again there was the same look as he took his leave.

Perhaps, too, the conversion of her mother had some effect in making her feel that she had been wrong in supposing that there would be any difficulty in Caroline’s position in England.

“No; I don’t think he will. He is too much down in the world for arguing now.”

“My nephew, Reginald,” said Lady Ushant, supposing that some introduction might be necessary.

But we have shown that Paul was compelled by Christ; therefore the Church, in trying to compel the Donatists, is following the example of her Lord, though in the first instance she waited in the hopes of needing to compel no one, that the prediction of the prophet might be fulfilled concerning the faith of kings and peoples.

The manifold character of his ministry?

Polly is as good as gold; and if I put a house over my head with her money, of course her father and her mother will be made welcome there.

As if Mr Palliser could not bring down showers of money in any quarter of the globe by simply holding up his hand.

Was the oath, forsooth, observed?

“Yes; I’ve heard of her.”

It was not only that Mrs Stumfold, as judged by externals, was felt to be more severe than her husband evangelically, but she was more severe also ecclesiastically.

Having such a contempt of life, and preferring to end it by whatever torments excited enemies might contrive, rather than terminate it by his own hand, he could not more distinctly have declared how great a crime he judged suicide to be.

Book XII, Letter 8

After this, what else does He will that we should take?

Nevertheless, such as it was, she gave it to her friend Fanny, with many injunctions that it might, if possible, be placed in the hands of Ludovic.

And male and female assistants at the toilet are employed about the ladies— some for the mirrors, some for the head-dresses, others for the combs.

And not only this sin has these effects, but every misplaced affection as well.

“Quint’s a very easy word,” said Mr. Bonteen.

And by those who live by faith He is easily found; and to those of pure eye and holy heart, who desire to knock at the door, He opens immediately.

“She’s pretty well, thank you.”

Wherefore as this seems reasonable, and consistent with the equity of my government, I willingly gave instructions that these things should be written to you.

All this flashed across Julia’s mind as these tidings about Harry reached her.

I have told Sir Peregrine and Mrs. Orme that I am going; but he is too noble-minded to ask questions now that he thinks I may feel myself constrained to tell him.

Do you remember the young man who comes to Hotspur on the battlefield, or him whom the king sent to Hamlet about the wager?

Learn that the dress of woman is not that put about the body, but that which decorates the soul, which is never put off, which does not lie in a chest, but is laid up in the heavens.

She had no pleasure from her grandeur,—and probably no belief in her husband’s achievements.

Symmachus, after he had obtained his pardon, wrote an apologetic address to the Emperor Theodosius.

Mrs. Askerton was very gracious to him, and she knew well how to be both gracious and ungracious.

The son of the King of the Persians was sick, and a multitude of physicians were in attendance: but Manes promised, as if he were a godly man, to cure him by prayer.

Also in the same place: The hour shall come, that every one that kills you shall think he does service to God l but they shall do this also because they have not known the Father nor me.

I have sent to those bishops whom you specified, directing them to repair to the council for the purpose of deliberating with you upon ecclesiastical matters.

And then he spoke about the Sunday-school; and to tell the truth I agreed with him; and I thought you would have done so too.

“It’s a piece of d–––– impertinence,” said Maule, with most unusual energy.

For whenever you shall have said, O soul, that from yourself you have light, you will not distinguish.

But Peter is one of them Landleaguers, and is like to be bruk’, horse, foot, and dragoons, bekaise he wouldn’t serve the gentry.

But perchance it will have struck some of you all along, while we have been expounding to you this epistle of blessed John, why it is only brotherly love that he so emphatically commends.

The Dean had just come into the drawing-room to have his afternoon tea and a little gossip with his wife and his own sister, Mrs. Forrester, from London.

And when, half an hour after their meeting, Fitzgibbon had to be reminded that his companion was not in the House during the last session, Phineas was able to make the remark as though he thought as little about the House as did the old-accustomed member himself.

Do you not know that your members are the temple of the Holy Spirit which is in you, which you have of God, and you are not your own?

Which of the fathers in that Egyptian slavery, but Aaron, was his father, who, when they were set free, was chosen to the priesthood?

Actuated by these correct calculations, Mr. Neverbend was rather fussy to begin an immediate descent when he found himself on the spot. Two native gentlemen, who were to accompany the Commissioners, or the Commissioner, as appeared likely to be the case, were already there, as were also the men who were to attend upon them.

In half a minute the dividing rail,—the rail that had divided the blue from the yellow,—was down, and all those who had dared to show themselves there as supporters of Griffenbottom and Underwood were driven ignominiously from the marketplace.

[Luke 21:34] Drunkenness, it is far from me; You will have mercy, that it approach not near unto me.

Beholding these adulteries, to which sinners are prone, they therefore easily believe that sanctions of misdeed and of every filthiness are borrowed from their feigned god.

Therefore, those who have parted with evil will be united with Him; and so, as the Apostle says, God will be all in all ; for this utterance seems to me plainly to confirm the opinion we have already arrived at, for it means that God will be instead of all other things, and in all.

It means, a bad life, bad habits; for if by good habits we approach God, by bad habits we recede from God If therefore by unlikeness we recede from God, by likeness we approach unto God.

What judge has ever been so savage and inhuman as not only to try men, aye but to condemn men the sound of whose voice he has never heard, and this in most savage and inhuman fashion?

“We’ll try at least,” said Phineas, upon whom, however, such remarks as these cast a gloom which he could not succeed in shaking off, though he could summon vigour sufficient to save him from showing the gloom.

“That means that you are in love. And because you are in love, you are to throw over—not merely your father, because in such an affair that goes for nothing—”

Why should he take upon himself the terrible task of calling this insane relation to account for an act which he could not prove?

Of course in the ordinary way I would not have spared him; but the ordinary way would have sufficed.

But the public men in the States who are now devoting themselves to this matter of taxing the people have, as yet, no such experience.

“If you will at once free her from this thraldom in which you hold her, and allow her to act in accordance with the dictates of her own heart—”

As Grady said, he hadn’t yet been stretched; he had never yet tried his own pace, and he had that look so beautiful in a horse when running, of working at his ease, and much within his power.

But if you allege to me your habit; for this very reason most of all do I say, that your doing right is easy. For if you bring yourself to another habit, you had effected all.

Greek he thought might be tedious as he discovered that he would have to begin again from the very alphabet.

[Euboulios] . Deservedly, O Gregorion, has Thekla borne off the chief prize.

He had sworn to his wife that he would not bear it.

Then a plague followed which destroyed most of the men who were under him: and as if this was not sufficient, fire came down from heaven, and consumed many of the survivors.

Griselda was to stay and dine in Mount Street; so said the letter.

And that such are the facts of the case, is clear to him that is able to understand, as the prophet said.

Accordingly he puts the chief point last.

“Twenty years of possession,” he said to himself “and so excellent a character!” But, nevertheless, he repeated to himself over and over again that she was a wretched, miserable woman.

“Is he, Sir Anthony? That’s just the question. I’m not quite sure that he does know what he wants.”

Though her son is perhaps nearly thirty, and is very diligent in the affairs of the establishment, he has no real authority.

For if none of those (signs) had taken place, was not the success (itself) enough?

You were called being a slave, heed it not; but even if you can become free, use it rather.

The radical member for Staleybridge had suggested that the funds should be alienated for the education of the agricultural poor of the country, and he amused the house by some anecdotes touching the superstition and habits of the agriculturists in question.

When will he be of cowardly spirit?

He who satisfies your longing with good things [Psalm 102:5] Seek your own good, O soul.

See how the contrary is proved, of what they were attempting to establish.

If he have voted with the minority, he has no right to look for any influence at all.

The property is bisected by an immense straight dike, which is called the Middle Wash, and which is so sluggish, so straight, so ugly, and so deep, as to impress the mind of a stranger with the ideas of suicide.

“No,—nothing disagreeable. I do not know that she is especially attractive.”

The sermon takes high rank, even among S. Gregory's discourses, as the model of an ecclesiastical panegyric.

If you had known me, you would have known the Father also: but henceforth you know Him, and have seen Him.

“And so Father Barney and I have met at last,” said he, rather cheerily, as the hot fumes of the toddy regaled his nostrils.

Chapter 1. The Necessity of Praising Virtue, for Those Who Have the Power.

This now had gone so far that Mrs. Arabin conceived herself bound in duty to see her sister, and it was then settled in consultation at Plumstead that the archdeacon should call officially at the palace and beg that the rumour might be contradicted.

“Quite to that. I actually turned tail and ran away from him;—not as we ordinarily do in society when we sneak off under some pretence, leaving the pretender to think that he has made himself very pleasant; but with a full declaration of my opinion and intention.”

Chapter 12 The doctrines of the followers of Ptolemy and Colorbasus

I was thirsty when hanging on the Cross, I am thirsty also through the poor, that by the former as also by the latter I may draw you to Myself, and make you charitable to your own salvation.

“The quotation out of the Prayer Book which you finished just now. ‘If any of you know cause or just impediment why these two persons should not be joined together in holy matrimony, ye are to declare it. This is the first time of asking.’ Do you know any cause, Miss Dunstable?”

“I deny that,” exclaimed Hetta.

That the glory of God should be made manifest, and that, I must work the works of Him that sent Me.

Poor Ruby!

But it had fallen out of repair, and the new kitchen was considered necessary, though the number of men needed for the repair would not be very large, and they would be wanted only for a few months.

And yet he never had been “good to the governor”;—nor had Gerald;—and to all this was added his sister’s determined perversity.

“Oh, very well. I certainly knew that you were going out of town. I did not at all expect that you would remain at home; but I thought that you might, perhaps, like to have your dinner before you went. Good morning, Lady Mason; I hope you may be successful in your—lawsuit.” And then, curtsying to her husband’s client, she prepared to withdraw.

For as the Father is God, and the Son is God, and the Holy Spirit is God, which no one doubts to be said in respect to substance, yet we do not say that the very Supreme Trinity itself is three Gods, but one God.

I will struggle.

So thus, after drawing together and mingling every source of joyous exultation, how does he conclude?

Or who solidified the bones?

Against common enemies for the common safety all alike should exercise the same vigilance lest from one member's wound other members also be injured, and they that think such men should not be given up, in Christ's judgment be found guilty for their silence even though they are not contaminated by their approval.

[John 10:18] I laid Me down and slept, and rose up again.

What profit in such honor?

Do you want them out of the way?” What a question for a husband to have to ask his wife!

The true Sonship of Christ is further proved by the faith of the Apostles, whose certainty increased with their knowledge ( 31-35), and especially by that of St. Peter ( 36-38), of St. John ( 39-43), and of St. Paul ( 44, 45).

I wonder that in this letter he did not make me out as guilty of homicide, or adultery or sacrilege or parricide or any of the vile things which the silent working of the mind can revolve within itself.

For were they to assert, that they thought not that they ought thoroughly to receive them, because they had been written by persons, who they thought had not written the truth; any how their refusal would be more right, or their error more natural.

should have from the gospel the necessaries of this life; but yet that he has not made use of this power.

After his toil and suffering and tribulation and want, he thought on his father, and desired to return, and said, I will arise, and go to my father.

Our Gospel, therefore, which is in agreement with it, is equally the work of apostles, but also adulterated in its title.

“Yes, I have seen him. I was in London the day you left.”

“Well, dear—but just give me a little more of that tipple.”

It is proved, therefore, that neither in the present life is there a judgment according to men's deserts, nor after death.

[Acts 11:16] He means, that no new thing has happened, but just what the Lord foretold.

Ursacius and Valens, after having been suspected of participating in and advising about the Arian doctrine, were cut off from communion with us.

Of these, the earthly one has made to herself of whom she would, either from any other quarter, or even from among men, false gods whom she might serve by sacrifice; but she which is heavenly and is a pilgrim on the earth does not make false gods, but is herself made by the true God of whom she herself must be the true sacrifice.

He took his uncle’s part as well as he could, and then left Mrs. Toogood.

For the present life is nothing.

“A grandmother’s are not bad,” said Bertram, looking very grave.

He wore an old red English dressing-gown, which came down to his feet, and a small braided Italian cap on his head.

Again and again he entreated; yet she was not sent.

Then why don’t you give it up?

He who resolves to love God, and to love his neighbor as himself, not according to man but according to God, is on account of this love said to be of a good will; and this is in Scripture more commonly called charity, but it is also, even in the same books, called love.

And this is what He did even with the furnace at Babylon.

What of social comfort she had expected to obtain from her churchgoings I cannot quite define; but I think that she had unconsciously expected something from them in that direction, and that she had been disappointed.

Homily 18 on the Statues

There had been some understanding,—so he thought,—between his wife and Sir Francis Geraldine which was derogatory to his honour.

“Never! Never! I have thought it out, and I know that I am right. Things have been hard with me.”

“Indeed, I’d have no objection, if mamma pleases, Father John.”

(Opp. Ed. Schulze. V. I. seq. Migne, Lat. 76. col. 391.)

Perhaps our opponents will maintain that these parallel passages quoted from the New Testament are themselves neither authoritative nor true: for they claim the impious liberty of holding and teaching, that whatever they deem favorable to their heresy was said by Christ and the apostles; while they have the profane boldness to say, that whatever in the same writings is unfavorable to them is a spurious interpolation.

In fact, they gave themselves up to be perpetuated simply in the memory of mortals, whereas it is the duty of man rather to seek after eternal life than an eternal memorial and that, not by writing, or fighting, or philosophizing, but by living a pious, holy, and religious life.

So likewise Jacob among the flocks, not seeking his own gain, had exceeding riches for his portion.

Could a person see the sight without having heard any word of explanation it would be impossible, I think, to conceive the meaning of all those straight cut narrow dikes, of those mud walls all at right angles to each other, of those square separate pits, and again of those square upstanding blocks, looking like houses without doors or windows.

And she must tell her mother.

But such, I think, is not the case.

If then to the grass He has given that which it needs not (for what does the beauty thereof help to the feeding of the fire?)

The expression 'created me' is not to be understood of the divine and the undefiled, but, as has been said, of our created nature, according to the dispensation of the incarnation.

The course of love is laid bare in Plato's Phædrus from beginning to end, and Lysias explains all its drawbacks— how it is led not by reason, but by frenzy, and in particular is a harsh jailer over lovely wives.

But nevertheless, the leaders of the Jews, whom it nearly concerned both to spread abroad a lie, and keep back a people tributary and submissive to them from the faith, gave it out that the body of Christ had been stolen by His followers.

“At that time I could not be expected to have a word to say to it. And it has gone on ever since.”

[John 20:29] But that these here mentioned were not real disciples, the following passage shows, for it says, Jesus did not commit Himself unto them.

“I’ve seen her as sportive as a young fawn at the Hall of Harmony.”

She did not name an immediate day, because it would be well, she thought, to stave off the evil hour.

And it is the part of the good to teach what is salutary, and to point out what is deleterious; and to counsel the practice of the one, and to command to shun the other.

On this head I was determined to be firm. What! after preparing, and correcting, and publishing such thousands of advertisements in prose and verse and in every form of which the language is susceptible, to be told that I couldn’t write English! It was Jones all over. If there is a party envious of the genius of another party in this sublunary world that party is our Mr. Jones.

To those who desire it letters are brought out and delivered by carriers, who charge a separate porterage for that service; but the rule is that letters should be delivered from the window.

Rachel had formerly been everything to her mother;—her friend, her minister, her guide, her great comfort;—the subject on which could be lavished all the soft tenderness of her nature, the loving object to whom could be addressed all the little innocent petulances of her life.

Again, in the case of Cain and Abel, the same proceeding is observable.

That Book of Wisdom also which is read to us as the work of Solomon says: Into a malicious soul wisdom shall not enter, nor dwell in the body that is subject to sin. For the Holy Spirit of discipline will flee deceit and remove from thoughts which are without understanding. The case is different with those who only wish to be read by the vulgar, and do not care how they may offend the ears of the learned; and they despise the utterance of the poet which brands the forwardness of noisy ignorance.

But of the third and last four—although it is the same thing in God to be righteous that it is to be good or to be blessed; and the same thing to be a spirit that it is to be righteous, and good, and blessed; yet, because in men there can be a spirit that is not blessed, and there can be one both righteous and good, but not yet blessed; but that which is blessed is doubtless both just, and good, and a spirit,— let us rather choose that one which cannot exist even in men without the three others, viz.

As many therefore of you as are friends of Christ, as many as are disciples, as many as love him that is gone, draw near unto Jesus, and pray.

It must, however, be remembered that there are two modes of conducting business at these bazaars.

John says, 'I became,' or 'was in the island of Patmos on the Lord's day.'

It delays me in my efforts to come to the straw a day.” Nevertheless, the sisters are dear friends.

But if there was once a time when matter did not exist, and there was never a time when what is uncreated did not exist, then matter is not uncreated.

For another hour the conference was held.

It is a great nuisance, a loss that maims the whole life,—a misfortune to be much regretted.

My dear Trevelyan, you cannot have two ambassadors engaged in the same service without communication with each other.

It must not be forgotten, however, that the first fruits are not the same as the first growth.

For having set it higher than all the things of sense, than earth, than sea, than heaven, he leads it by the hand above the very angels, above cherubim and seraphim, above thrones and principalities and powers; in a word, persuades it to journey beyond all created things.

And, so much being fixed as the stars in heaven, might it be possible that she should even yet induce her cousin to take the place that had been intended for Lord Fawn?

“I have just been at Mistletoe, and he was there. My story is so hard to tell. I had better out with it at once. Lord Rufford has asked me to be his wife.”

What I would deprecate is, that aptness at reproach which we assume; the readiness with scorn, the quiet words of insult, the instant judgment and condemnation with which we are so inclined to visit, not the great outward acts, but the smaller inward politics of our neighbors.

and he said that he bare them about in his heart, and in his bonds.

It was not her fault, at any rate not now, that she loved her lover.

“You must decide for yourself here.”

Vavasor Hall was, by the road, about five miles from Shap, and it was not altogether an easy task for Kate to get over to the village without informing her grandfather that the visit was to be made, and what was its purport.

On that subject, however, I hardly venture here to give an opinion.

And yet he did not like to answer Arthur Fletcher without naming some period for the present mourning,—some time at which he might at least show himself in Manchester Square.

These tidings did not reach Arkwright and his wife together, or at any rate not till late amidst their preparations, or a change might still have been made.

And you tell me that the Father is invisible, the Son invisible, the Holy Ghost invisible, as though the angels, both cherubim and seraphim, were not also, in accordance with their nature, invisible to our eyes.

Yea (he says) it is a preparation for His being appointed by God.

This is done by Priscillianists and Manichæans alike; for there is such a close bond of union between the two that they are distinct only in name, but in their blasphemies are found at one: because although the Manichæans reject the Old Testament which the others pretend to accept, yet the purpose of both tends to the same end, seeing that the one side corrupts while receiving what the other assails and rejects.

Chapter LIX.

“Well?” said Mrs. Askerton as soon as Clara was inside the drawing-room.

“You will be used to us soon,” said Fanny, “and then I hope we shall make you comfortable.” And she took her sister-in-law’s hand and pressed it.

Chapter 5. On Rational Natures.

If he could allow himself to choose out of all the women he had ever seen, he would, he thought, instigated rather by the ambition of having the loveliest woman in the world for his wife than by any love, have endeavoured to win Mary Bonner as his own.

That is a picture which will not probably attract your attention if you merely pass it; but if you will stand over it and look into it, you will almost wonder that the old man should be so lifelike and yet not speak to you.

The bone of contention between them had at any rate been made to vanish.

“I know them of old, without reading them now.” Then he put forth his hand and took hers. “Had I murdered him in real truth, you would not have believed it.”

I state this on the credit of my excellent enterprising friend.

Finally, they mourned with a great and very sore lamentation.

I have received your Fraternity's letter, wherein you inform me that the most eloquent Martin has come from the African province and communicated something to you privately.

Our division this morning, on Disraeli’s motion ‘On the State of the Nation,’ was 296 to 156—a majority of 140.” And in the House of Lords, Lord Brougham fared no better.

“The truth is,” said he, “that you have saved us from ruin;—that’s the real truth. Damn all lying!”

What honest girl would not?

Why should she go, and where; and why have you proposed it?

The parson did not speak at once, but stepped over the ruins around him till he came immediately under the beam in question.

And the words of Matthew are as follow: And the high priest and the council sought false witness against Jesus to put Him to death, but found none, although many false witnesses came forward.

With reason he adds, Me Your right hand has taken up.

‘I don’t in the least know what you are talking about. I have heard nothing at all.’

30. Consider now why this is done, for the eyes of a wise man are in his head; [Ecclesiastes 2:14] therefore the ointment flows down to the beard, that is to say, to the beauty of youth; and therefore, Aaron's beard, that we, too, may become a chosen race, priestly and precious, for we are all anointed with spiritual grace for a share in the kingdom of God and in the priesthood.

“That means that I am to sit silent and obedient while you lecture me,” she said.

What does the name Paulus mean?

Two mornings after this the blow came very suddenly. It was now her habit to go into the bookroom after breakfast, and set herself down to, work—as her husband, the former vicar, had done in his time—and as Arthur, since his return, usually did the same, they naturally found themselves alone together. On the morning in question, she had no sooner seated herself, with her papers before her, than Arthur began. And, alas! he had to tell her, not what he was going to do, but what he had done.

And still he was not satisfied with this calling of them conformed thereto, but even adds another point, that He might be the first-born.

At dinner neither she nor Mr. Arabin were very bright, but their silence occasioned no remark.

Accordingly the times must be inquired into of the predicted and future nativity of the Christ, and of His passion, and of the extermination of the city of Jerusalem, that is, its devastation.

“He was not going to intrude any farther,” he said to the rector.

For He who prohibited the making of a graven image, would never Himself have made an image in the likeness of holy things. Nor is there at all any composite thing, and creature endowed with sensation, of the sort in heaven. But the face is a symbol of the rational soul, and the wings are the lofty ministers and energies of powers right and left; and the voice is delightsome glory in ceaseless contemplation. Let it suffice that the mystic interpretation has advanced so far.

There is an enlightening by faith, and an enlightening by sight.

Trotter’s Buildings

And on the sixth day God finished His works which He made, and rested on the seventh day from all His works which He made.

For this reason, therefore, the Word of God evinced his gracious character, and proved to man his own superiority over death, recalling his mortal body to a second life, displaying an immortal triumph over death in the eyes of all, and teaching them to acknowledge the Author of such a victory to be the only true God, even in death itself.

“You wouldn’t have me tell a lie?”

An Englishman going from a foreign land into a land which is in one sense his own, of course finds much in the change to gratify him.

It’s little either of us was the better for Kilbrack.

Consumption had swept a hecatomb of victims from the family.

But if you cannot gaze upon him, as the weak-sighted cannot gaze upon the sun, at all events watch that band of holy men who are ranged beneath him, and who by the illumination of their lives are a model for this age.

A man came all the way down from London for the purpose of serving Lady George with a subpœna to give evidence at the trial on the part of the Baroness.

The same remark will apply to the procession of the Munus, as we look at that in the pomp which is connected with these honours themselves; for the purple robes, the fasces, the fillets, the crowns, the proclamations too, and edicts, the sacred feasts of the day before, are not without the pomp of the devil, without invitation of demons.

He was sitting at the office of the D. R., in a very small and dirty room at the back of the house, and Sir Marmaduke found his way thither through a confused crowd of compositors, pressmen, and printers’ boys.

There was nothing in this especial, except that a portion of it was screened off by furs, behind which we did not of course penetrate.

So when, instead of this, he was made to smart under temporal correction, he saw that, while the pardon remained good, wholesome discipline was also provided.

And, in like manner, it matters not even if we understand the least to mean those who simply believe, and the greatest those who have been further able to understand— so far as may be in this world— the light which is incorporeal and unchangeable.

“Was your letter from Florence this morning?” Fanny asked.

Wherefore, I beseech you, let us even if but now become watchful.

For such is his character.

For she did not doubt, nor say in herself, Shall I indeed be delivered from the disease?

Whom do I find?

Jeannette. You think Madame will marry again so soon? Helen.

But to return to our subject.

Even I am sportsman enough to know that.

“Winifred,” he said, calling her by her name.

“Then nothing need be done,” said Lord George.

What is this to what was done by the Word, in driving away from man diseases and demons and death itself?

You shall imitate the righteous Hebrew king in his thanksgiving to God.

Yea, but mark the Scriptures, and see that rulers also commend themselves to the prayers of the people.

“Just so, Mr. Fitzgerald; just so. I know you will feel that—in such matters we can only sail safely by the truth. There is no other compass worth a man’s while to look at.”

I doubt whether he ever was a rich man.

“Lord Ongar—abroad! Oh, yes, very well; and for many years here in London; and at Vienna; and very early in life at St. Petersburg. I knew Lord Ongar first in Russia, when he was attached to the embassy as Frederic Courton. His father, Lord Courton, was then alive, as was also his grandfather. He was a nice, good-looking lad then.”

[Colossians 2:15] The flesh here said to be put off is that mortality of flesh on account of which the body is properly called flesh.

And then there was a long quarrel between them, and but an indifferent reconciliation. The baronet said that he would go to Boxall Hill, and was vehement in his intention to do so because the doctor opposed it. He had not, however, as yet ferreted out the squire, or given a bit of his mind to Mr Gazebee, and it behoved him to do this before he took himself off to his own country mansion. He ended, therefore, by deciding to go on the next day but one.

With them Alice had made some slight acquaintance during the last spring in London, and as they were now to attend upon her as the bride they were sufficiently gracious.

He had no idea that his own heart was still hard as the nether millstone against Alaric Tudor.

I do not accuse him of malice.

“Of course, you mean me. I cannot take any blame in the matter. In introducing George Roden to you, and to my mother, and to Frances, I brought you to the knowledge of a highly-educated and extremely well-mannered young man.”

“But, dear Lucinda,—everybody will be waiting for you,” said Lizzie.

And, as you observed with me, my beloved (for I saw that you attended most closely), nothing is said in its text either of any press, or wine-basket, or vat, or of any of the instruments or the building of a winepress; nothing of this kind did we hear read; so that it is no easy question what is the meaning of this title inscribed upon it, for the winepresses.

Chapter 20. Absurd Representations of the Gods.

“Hold your tongue, or I’ll drop into you. They’re all more or less false, no doubt; but I won’t have you say so of her. And since you’re so ready about the renouncing, suppose you put it on paper—’I renounce my right to the hand and heart of Maryanne Brown.’ You’ve got pen and ink there;—just put it down.”

And when they ceased, I again addressed them.

Looking at it with great seriousness, as in the midst of her joking she did look at these things, she told herself that Ada was very lovely, and that this man was certainly lovable.

I should be painting the Devil too black were I to say that revenge was his chief incentive in that which he was doing.

Wherefore he says not, It has been declared to me by certain, but he indicates also the household, lest they might suppose that he was inventing.

Orth.— And from Adam to Abraham how many generations went by?

“You found plenty of pheasants here, I suppose,” Augustus remarked.

Does not the conjunction, If I declare to you the things that happen day by day, the Lord created me, ring strangely in the ears of those who listen attentively?

Stand against your passions; be numbered with the alliance in the army of God: do valiantly against Goliath.

When everybody is suspected of being dishonest, dishonesty almost ceases to be regarded as disgraceful.

In speaking of the literature of any country we are, I think, too much inclined to regard the question as one appertaining exclusively to the writers of books—not acknowledging as we should do that the literary character of a people will depend much more upon what it reads than upon what it writes.

For, Unto whom shall I look, says He, but unto him that is meek and humble, and trembles at my words?

About an hour afterwards Lady Fawn went upstairs and found Lucy sitting all alone in the still so-called schoolroom. She had no candle, and had made no pretence to do anything since she had left the room downstairs. In the interval family prayers had been read, and Lucy’s absence was unusual and contrary to rule. “Lucy, my dear, why are you sitting here?” said Lady Fawn.

“Nor does she know it.”

But this had been taken amiss by the old squire, who, indeed, was too much disposed to take all things amiss and to suspect everybody.

Prigs and pedants, and hypocrites too, there are among them, no doubt—but there are also among them many stirred by an honourable ambition to do well for their country and themselves, and to two such men the reader is now requested to permit himself to be introduced.

“We Jews are used as yet to insolence from Christians, and do not mind it.”

As he went along his heart was warmer towards Grace than it had ever been before.

She humbled herself, or would have done so, had the doctor permitted her.

This man, who had not been without good nature in his dealings, had heard stories of the dean’s goodwill and such like, and had loudly expressed his opinion that the perpetual curate of Hogglestock would show a higher pride in allowing himself to be indebted to a rich brother clergyman, than in remaining under thrall to a butcher.

Accordingly, wedded to impurity, they adorn their bed-chambers with painted tablets hung up in them, regarding licentiousness as religion; and lying in bed, in the midst of their embraces, they look on that Aphrodite locked in the embrace of her paramour.

[Romans 1:25] For in the former part of this sentence he condemned idols; in the latter, the account they give of their idols: for by designating images wrought by an artificer by the names of the works of God's creation, they change the truth of God into a lie; while, by considering these works themselves as deities, and worshipping them as such, they serve the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever

He saw Mr. Bonteen, and he saw the other duke, and difficulties arose.

And the Egyptian Bishops who wrote to Julius our fellow-minister, positively affirmed that there had not arisen among them even any suspicion whatever of such a thing.

That, to be sure, the duties of the two were hardly compatible; but perhaps he might effect an exchange.

Let us be elevated in soul, and our alms will flow with a rapid stream: the elevated soul cannot but be merciful, and the merciful cannot but be elevated.

These also, illustrating by argument and creating testimony by letters, we shall unabashed proclaim.

There is one God, there is one Christ, the Son of God; when I say One, I mean a union, not a confusion; the one Nature did not degenerate into the other, but was united with it.

Any accident might discover it, and if the slightest suspicion were aroused, the police would come upon her with violence and discover it.

Do thou, therefore, when you see a man running by all worldly things, deem that he does so from no other motive than because he looks to a greater world.

And yet undoubtedly He incurred hence an evil report: first by eating with him, then in Matthew's house, and thirdly, in company with many publicans. See at least how they reproach Him with this. Behold a man gluttonous, and a wine-bibber, a friend of publicans and sinners. [Matthew 11:19]

On no less authority than this would I consider myself justified in bringing any such charge.

I think on the whole the bishop was right, for though the services required will not be of a very onerous nature, they will be more so than they were before.

In the presence of His glory: he means in the presence of the angels, to be presented faultless, having become angels.

But there were other dangers; and those friends of hers would indeed be dangerous if they brought her into any society that made her husband jealous.

“Debate, indeed! A parcel of geese as you call yourself! Only geese go to bed betimes, and never get beastly drunk as you was, Poppins.”

Oh, no.

For Kronos devoured his own children, and Zeus in like manner his own daughter.

Who would believe that, under so clear a confession, there is concealed a contrary meaning, if Cœlestius had not exposed it?

And thus knowledge comes to one, not because he has been instructed, but because he has understood.

And may I ask what he has told you?

96. So, then, as we read that all things are of the Father, so, too, that all things can be said to be of the Son, through Whom are all things; and we are taught by proof that all things are of the Spirit in Whom are all things.

For every man is clothed with his tunic, covered with his cloak; and what is this, save boasting in iniquity, even in the sight of men?

Can we then any more account such men Christians?

For while there are many other names by which Deity is indicated in the Historical Books, in the Prophets and in the Law, our Master Christ passes by all these and commits to us these titles as better able to bring us to the faith about the Self-Existent, declaring that it suffices us to cling to the title, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, in order to attain to the apprehension of Him Who is absolutely Existent, Who is one and yet not one.

For if 'he that offends one of the little ones, should rather choose that a mill stone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depths of the sea [Matthew 18:6],' what can be in store for you, if you prove an offense to so many?

I have changed,—in outward matters I mean,—and he has not.

The girl was already willing and anxious to jump into his arms.

“You going to Patagonia!” said Currie. “You’re chaffing,” said Glossop. “I never was so shot in my life,” said Hoffmann.

“What of that? If you mind that sort of thing—”

“I generally do find out what people think,” she said. “And so you’re Lily Dale?”

“I tell such a thing as that!”

Let her hear, the woman in the city a sinner, by so much the more full of tears at Your feet, the more alien she had been from Your steps.

Gregory to Januarius, archbishop of Caralis (Cagliari).

And when he speaks of the still unbelieving Jews, he rather extenuates their guilt.

“Would he be better abroad than here?”

To what, then, do you assign blasphemies?

“What be it, then?”

And the prophet Malachi thus speaks, [Malachi 2:11-12] Judah has dealt treacherously, and an abomination is committed in Israel and in Jerusalem; for Judah has profaned the holiness of the Lord which he loves, and has married the daughter of a strange god.

For the sun in twelve hours circles round, from the east unto the west; and when he has accomplished his course, his light is hidden in the night-time, and the night is not disturbed by his power.

Sometimes, but very rarely, Trollope is vulgar—for good old Anthony had a coarse vein: it was in the family:—but as a rule his language is conspicuous for its ease, simplicity, and unity of tone.

She was very anxious, at any rate for the present, to win golden opinions from Lady Fawn.

Wherefore, being reproached, are we vexed and disconcerted?

“H’angry! By George, I h’am angry! I’d like to pull that h’old sinner’s bones h’out of the ground!”

They were standing on their horses at the entrance to the wool-shed as they discussed the point, when suddenly Harry himself appeared out of the building.

While Adam slept.

Mimmy seated herself opposite to her mother, and M. Lacordaire also sat with his back to the horses, leaving the second place of honour for Lilian. “Pray make yourself comfortable, M. Lacordaire, and don’t mind her,” said Mrs. Thompson. But he was firm in his purpose of civility, perhaps making up his mind that when he should in truth stand in the place of papa to the young lady, then would be his time for having the back seat in the carnage.

He had travelled about and found Rummelsburg peculiarly fitted for his enterprise.

“You see,” he said, “I’m so much in the City that they might know me at the bank.” To this arrangement Marie assented and took back the cheque.

I stood by therefore in silence, while two of the men raised the trunk, and joined the procession which followed it as it was carried out of my room into that of the legitimate owner.

But, if not,—!

At such a period it was of course natural that the Squire should be daily at the vicarage, and on this Monday morning he came down while the minds of all his friends there were intent on the strange information received from Mr. Quickenham. The Vicar was not by when Mr. Gilmore was told, and he was thus easily induced to join in the opinion that the chapel should be made to disappear. He had a landlord’s idea about land, and was thoroughly well-disposed to stop any encroachment on the part of the Marquis.

And do you then, who burn with many desires, taken either by the beauty or by the fortune of some one, implore Christ, call in the Physician, stretch forth your right hand to Him, let the hand of God touch your inmost being, and the grace of the heavenly Word enter the veins of your inward desires, let God's right hand strike the secrets of your heart.

Therefore Paul justly praises the Corinthians [1 Corinthians 11:2], because their opinions were in accordance with his traditions.

For He Himself spoke and they were made: He Himself commanded and they were created.

Independently of his dreadful liability to Madame Jaquêtanàpe, he could not have been said to be in debt; but still, like most other men who live as he had done, when his career was thus brought to a sudden close, it was found that there were many people looking for money.

The maidens were afterwards ransomed by their kinsmen, and on seeing Aristomenes condemned for murder would not return to their country until clasping the knees of the judges they beheld the protector of their chastity acquitted.

Of the death of Amun, and Antony's vision thereof.

We can neither say that is, which does not continue; nor that it is not, when it has come and is passing.

I do not count them, taken altogether, worth the one crown of thorns which robbed our conqueror of his crown, for whose sake also I learn that I am crowned for the hardness of life.

After that he went out with a letter of introduction from Mr. Billings to the sub-editor of a penny newspaper.

Judging from what little she had seen of him she thought that he must have a heart in his bosom.

, predestination must be preached—that God's true grace, that is, the grace which is not given according to our merits, may be maintained with insuperable defence.

That also where he says, For what I do, I know not; what else is it than: I will not, I do not approve, I do not consent, I do not do?

[1 Timothy 5:10] You see how many practices of virtue he has included.

“Not that I remember.”

It is designed to save those who take no baths and whose heads and faces are strangers to all ointments, from accumulated dirt and from the tiny creatures which are sometimes generated about the roots of the hair.

For if we hold with a firm heart the grace of God which has been given us, we are Israel, the seed of Abraham: unto us the Apostle says, Therefore are you the seed of Abraham Let therefore no Christian consider himself alien to the name of Israel.

To us as a nation they are at the present moment unjust almost beyond belief; but I do not think that the feeling has ever taken the guise of personal discourtesy.

But I have been greatly astonished that among so many clergy and people of the Church of Salona hardly two in sacred orders have been found— to wit our brother and fellow bishop Paulinus and my most beloved son Honoratus, archdeacon of the same Church— who refused to communicate with Maximus when he seized the priesthood, and who remembered that they were Christians.

There was a whole heaven of delight in the thought of the very journey.

What the thief, but that he may commit more peculations?

I was assured that farmers were burning their Indian-corn in some places, finding it more available to them as fuel than it was for the market.

It was shocking to her pride that that should have appeared to be easy of achievement at Queen’s Gate which was too wicked to be attempted at Kingsbury Crescent.

He had come out on his tour with much compunction, dreading his solitude, believing in his heart of hearts that it would be better for him to go with his sisters to Broadstairs.

A railway along the banks of the San Juan would, I fear, be too expensive. The distance is above one hundred and fifty miles, and the line would be very costly. But a line of rails from the Lake to the Pacific might be made comparatively at a small outlay, and would greatly add to the comfort and rapidity of the Passage.

Chapter VII. The Walk Home

Do I in this matter, most pious lord, defend my own cause? Do I resent my own special wrong? Nay, the cause of Almighty God, the cause of the Universal Church.

Chapter 12. The Glory of the Six Days' Work.

It was simply a party conflict, in which Aristides had been too just.

Linda had swooned, her aunt being all unconscious of it, had dozed afterwards, and had then risen and struggled up, and was seated in her bed. “Aunt Charlotte,” she said, “what is it—that—you want of me?”

Chapter 13 Of the Baptism of Jesus.

But especially we should wish that these sentiments should be found in that book from which we have quoted the words in which the author, praising a virgin of Christ as if no one except herself could confer on her spiritual riches, and as if these could not exist except from herself, does not wish her to glory in the Lord, but to glory as if she had not received them.

But in some respects she was humble enough.

Moreover, he himself shall contrive that his servants and children should receive as a mark on their foreheads, or on their right hands, the number of his name, lest any one should buy or sell them.

We know how he and his son perished there, each of them probably avoiding the last extremity of misery to a Roman—that of falling into the hands of a barbarian enemy—by destroying himself.

In spite of her thousand a year the Honourable Mrs. Val was not ashamed to look after the pounds, shillings, and pence. And so, having made her arrangements, Mrs. Val took herself off, hurrying to appease the anger of Lady Howlaway, and followed by Clementina, who since her little outburst as to the new back step of M. Jaquêtanápes had not taken much part in the conversation.

He compelled both parties to offer worship in the mode he indicated, and where opposition was made, he enforced obedience by compulsion.

It is God then who has given it.

But because he showed such great love toward Christ, he went up above the Heavens, and stood with the Angels.

Both men were doing exactly that which was to have been expected of them.

think in earnest whether it would not be well to dispense with white silk and orange-wreaths while so many were dispensing with — were forced to dispense with bread and fuel.

“Will you grant me this—that I may speak to you again on the same subject after six months?”

“That was before you knew Mr. Harry Annesley.”

Charlotte tripped downstairs and took her bonnet from her, and Bertie came to relieve her from her shawl, and the signora smiled on her as she could smile when she chose to be gracious, and the old doctor shook hands with her in a kind benedictory manner that went to her heart at once and made her feel that he must be a good man.

The Connop Greens were lavish with sapphires, the De Brownes with pearls, and the Smijths with opal.

“I should never forgive myself were I to deceive you, or keep anything from you.”

For they have begun no longer to lay their plots against individuals, in which case they might be able to frame a lie against them; but they have set upon all in a body, so that if they merely choose to invent accusations against them, they must be condemned.

“That is the intended purport of your evidence?”

‘I have thought it to be my duty, sir,’ he said, ‘to make known to you William’s opinion and my own.

Every thing, however, is not also a sign.

“You have guessed it,” said he. “You always do guess everything.”

1 Corinthians 4:17

Even tiny infants will rise again; old men will also rise; the former to be nursed, the latter to be supported by the staff.

And how we say that the powers of the devil, and the unclean spirits, sow into the sinner's soul, requires no more words from me, on adducing as a witness the apostolic Barnabas (and he was one of the seventy, and a fellow-worker of Paul), who speaks in these words: Before we believed in God, the dwelling-place of our heart was unstable, truly a temple built with hands.

Whence any one might reasonably enquire, wherefore these seeds have above all others been sown in our nature, by which we melt at tears, by which we are turned to compassion, and are ready to pity.

These phenomena appear to be of rare occurrence throughout the world, being intended, I am persuaded, to afford to mankind convincing evidence of the power of that Providence which ordains that two directly opposite natures, heat and cold, should thus proceed from the self-same source.

And while man dwells far and wide, shall I shut up the power of such great majesty within one small building?

This Table Rock broke away from the cliff and fell, as up the whole course of the river the seceding rocks have split and fallen from time to time through countless years, and will continue to do till the bed of the upper lake is reached.

For if our argument has proved that the gods of the poets are no gods, and has convicted of error those that deify creation, and in general has shown that the idolatry of the heathen is godlessness and impiety, it strictly follows from the elimination of these that the true religion is with us, and that the God we worship and preach is the only true One, Who is Lord of Creation and Maker of all existence.

He assumed flesh, died, rose again, ascended into heaven.

The indisputability of a fact is not very easily settled while the circumstances are in course of action by which the fact is to be decided.

Wages (stipendium) is paid as a recompense for military service; it is not a gift: wherefore he says, the wages of sin is death, to show that death was not inflicted undeservedly, but as the due recompense of sin.

It is not possible, He says, to serve God and mammon.

He came again the next evening at nine, and I was then ill, and had gone to bed.

She was not minded to keep her suitor waiting.

For you are receiving armour against the adverse power, armour against heresies, against Jews, and Samaritans , and Gentiles.

“About what?” said the bishop.

Assuredly they are antichrists; for they went out from us, but were not of us.

Observe how in his accusing of the one he thrusts through the other, by first giving the solution, and then the objection.

Such a washing defiles; it does not purify nor cleanse the limbs, but stains them.

But there was a great deal said upon the matter both in Cambridge and at Chesterton. Robert Bolton found his father at the bank on the same afternoon, and performed his promise. ‘Did he see your stepmother?’ asked the old man.

1 Corinthians 15:46

“Any question,” he replied.

He could have taken the will and kept it safe, and certainly unseen, in the pocket of his coat.

Moreover, we do not assert that true physicians destroy those whom they promise to cure.

Everybody, she said, knew that she was to stay in London to the end of June.

“And how will the money—be paid?” said the poor clergyman.

But some dreamers have given another account of the aberration and recovery of Sophia.

For she was called Mary, and that, by interpretation, means illumination.

Exposition on Psalm 100

She was almost tempted to tear him with her hands, and inflict upon him at the moment some terrible vengeance which should be told of for ever in the annals of Exeter.

The King of the Cannibal Islands was to appear on a white charger.

Him the Father pointed out both in Jordan and on the Mount, saying, 'This is My beloved Son in whom I am well pleased. '

And he does not say, you that hast the Law and the circumcision, but yet more mildly, you who by the letter and circumcision dost transgress the Law.

But what is the use of it all, if you can lose it in one night or in one month among a pack of scoundrels?

When she was alone, she would tell herself that it was her lot to undergo that eternal condemnation with which her aunt threatened her; though in telling herself so she would declare to herself also that whatever that punishment could be, her Creator, let Him be ever so relentless, could inflict nothing on her worse than that state of agony with which His creatures had tormented her in this world.

“What do you suggest to do with yourself?”

Exposition on Psalm 56

I am ashamed, indeed, and I blush: But for your salvation's sake, I am, I am compelled to speak of it.

She was too much beside herself to know where she was going, no doubt.

But while I do live I will travel over the world’s surface to face injustice and to expose it, before I will put up with it.

‘Missus ain’t a-going home? Why, master expects her for certain!’

But by what death he was mulcted you know.

3. Since, then, most Christian Emperor, there is due from you to the true God both faith and zeal, care and devotion for the faith, I wonder how the hope has risen up to some, that you would feel it a duty to restore by your command altars to the gods of the heathen, and furnish the funds requisite for profane sacrifices; for whatsoever has long been claimed by either the imperial or the city treasury you will seem to give rather from your own funds, than to be restoring what is theirs.

The bishop, the archdeacon, the warden, the steward, and several other clerical allies, had daily meetings, discussing their tactics, and preparing for the great attack.

Thus in these things do I sin unknowing, but afterwards do I know it.

They had not means, she said, for such pleasures.

As therefore if one had parted the heaven and had brought you in there, though you should see your father or your brother, you would not venture to speak; so neither here ought one to utter any other sound but these which are spiritual.

Now let him be on the housetop, treading on his carnal house: he shall have a heavenly house, a perpetual home: that sparrow shall make an end of his complaints.

“Shure an’ here we are these siven hours,” said our friend of the hoe, “and mighty cowld we are.”

“Good morning, Mr. Chaffanbrass,” said Graham quite aloud as he took his seat; and then Chaffanbrass growled again.

These were not of the number to whom Churches had been entrusted, but of the number of his companions. But Apollos was the more vehement, being an eloquent man, and mighty in the Scriptures. [Acts 18:24] But if Zenas was a lawyer, you say, he ought not to have been supported by others. But by a lawyer here is meant one versed in the laws of the Jews. And he seems to say, supply their wants abundantly, that nothing may be lacking to them.

Just at the end of a cotillon he had said one word!

The protection of a lady’s shoulders from the cold is a useful purpose; and therefore a dozen fur-bearing animals may be snared in the snow and left to starve to death in the wires, in order that the lady may have the tippet,—though a tippet of wool would serve the purpose as well as a tippet of fur.

They all flutter me here, talking of it always, though they mean to be kind.

“But they told you he goes out every night?”

It is a prejudice which by no means exists in Cincinnati.

[Matthew 15:27] But she said, Yea, my Lord: the dogs also eat of the crumbs [55] that fall from their masters' tables, and live.

He and Mr Oriel were soon to be seen through the dining-room window, walking about the grounds with the two eldest Miss Greshams.

It might be very well to begin by talking politics at the Reform Club.

What we have said is clear to any one, that by the peculiar attributes of servitude is marked that which is by nature servile, and to be created is an attribute proper to servitude.

Book 7

I liked him when there did not seem to be much about him to like, and now that he is clever, and agreeable, and good-looking,—which he never was as a lad,—why shouldn’t I go on liking him?

To our lord, son, and most desired fellow-minister Rufinianus. Athanasius greeting in the Lord.

But it was one of the peculiar symptoms of his state, that as he partially recovered his bodily health, the tone of his mind recovered itself also, and his fears for the time were relieved.

“But even if so—. I do not now say anything of that; but even if so, surely you would not have her marry you if she does not love you still? You would not wish her to be your wife if her heart belongs to me?”

Surely the prophets had foretold Him a Saviour, and Benefactor, and a Deliverer from above.

‘I shall only be creating fuel for a feud,’ said Alaric. ‘To put you out of the question, no promotion could compensate to me for what I should lose at Hampton.’

A candid mind, if I may so speak, cannot but be anxious, for example, to ascertain what is meant by the fact that Moses and Elijah, and our Lord Himself, all fasted for forty days.

“I like this part of England so much the best for that very reason. What is the use of a crowded population?”

He then took out a short hunting-knife which he wore, and passing that also through the bars of the gate, he inserted it in the handle of the key, and then wrenching it round with all his force, broke the key in the wards: all the smiths in Poitou could not have locked the gate closer, or made it more impossible to open it.

Be not willing to be as it were your own and in your own control; but profess yourself to be the bondman of that most clement and most profitable Lord.

He means by borders the possession itself, in which he wishes that God should be exalted, that is, be honoured and glorified, rather than the devil, while the ungodly are justified and praise God.

“To this house next week?”

But though the great age of an expiring dean cannot be made matter of reproach, we are not inclined to look on such a fault as at all pardonable in a dean just brought to the birth.

She could not hope’ to find a home in Philip’s house as a real sister might have done.

The holy man, on his part, with a placid countenance and a tranquil mind, endeavored by gentle words to restrain the madness of the unhappy wretch.

Where is it not said unto men, Abandon your former wickedness, and turn yourselves to right paths?

This.

So they went on in peace and quietness for the next three months, during which not a single word was heard from the Marquis.

And in the same way, according to the appointed cycles, Phalaris must always play the tyrant, and Alexander of Pheræ commit the same acts of cruelty, and those condemned to the bull of Phalaris continually pour forth their wailings from it.

Did he suffer hunger, or did he not?

Insisting then upon this, he shows that it is not only he that succeeds in temperance, or any other virtue of this sort, but he that displays faith also who requires even greater power.

But as she did so she said continually, ‘Never, never, never, never!’

But they had not found much open fault with her, and she was aware that it was for her interest to remain on good terms with them.

There are establishments in the town, under the patronage of the university, at which dinner, breakfast, and supper are provided; and the young men frequent one of these houses or another as they, or their friends for them, may arrange.

Cissy wrote me word that you were a darling man.

She was a Hotspur as thoroughly as was he.

To listen is to be lost.

“It is no business of yours, Lord Popplecourt, whether I am fond of anybody or not. I have told you that Mr. Tregear is my brother’s friend, and that ought to be enough.”

18. Thereupon the worshipers of God again fled, and fields and deserts, forests and mountains, again received the servants of Christ. And when the impious tyrant had thus met with success in these measures, he finally planned to renew the persecution against all.

Whence they who practised wrestling, that they might acquire skill to strangle him?

It is, then, by the Son's works that the Father is glorified, in that He is recognised as God, as Father of God the Only-begotten, Who for our salvation willed that His Son should be born as man, even of a virgin; that Son Whose whole life, consummated in the Passion, was consistent with the humiliation of the virgin birth.

As infant boys believe that every statue of bronze is a living man, so these imagine that all things feigned are true: they believe that statues of bronze contain a heart.

After hesitating for a moment or two, Lefroy did put the knife down. “I didn’t mean anything, old fellow,” said he. “I only wanted to frighten you.”

These are the particulars which should be stated concerning Martyrius and Marcian.

With the devil alone we have nothing in common, but with all men we have many things in common; for they partake of the same nature with us; they inhabit the same earth, and they are nourished with the same food; they have the same Lord; they have received the same laws, and are invited to the same blessings with ourselves.

“Two thousand and two acres out of two thousand nine hundred and ten,” said Mr. Puddleham.

“Surely you wouldn’t let me go anywhere,” she said, “where such names as that are believed against me?” She had not heard the name, nor had he, and they were in the dark;—but she pleaded her cause well, and appealed again and again to her husband’s promise to take her to the deanery.

“Dr Crofts, from Guestwick. I do hope you will like him, Adolphus. We think he is the very perfection of a man.”

But the desire to punish Slide was almost as strong in his indignant mind as those other matters referring more especially to the profession of his life.

And in this there is a great proof of providence, from the necessary difference of members; but more in this, where, under a likeness of form there is found to be diversity of use and variety of office.

Thus, as he was the first to proclaim to all the sole sovereignty of God, so he himself, as sole sovereign of the Roman world, extended his authority over the whole human race.

Some glimmer of an idea of an Augustan rule was present to him; and with the view of producing it, he re-established many of the usages of the Republic, not reproducing the liberty but the forms of liberty.

Whence, when Paul saw the Corinthians to be forwardly puffed up one against another, so that one said he was of Paul, another of Apollos, another of Cephas, and another of Christ [1 Corinthians 1:12; 3:4], he brought forward the crime of incest, which had not only been perpetrated among them, but also remained uncorrected, saying, It is reported commonly that there is fornication among you, and such fornication as is not even among the Gentiles, that one should have his father's wife.

Her death, too, was glorious; for when, at the age of eighty, she quitted this life, she left her son and her descendants (like her of the race of Cæsar), masters of the Roman world.

Florida still belonged to Spain, and was all but unpopulated.

That he could not marry me!

“To come down to the country as soon as possible, and to avoid, as far as possible, seeing Captain De Baron before you go.”

So solemn a sanction, moreover, did God confer on the edict which enjoined that Station, that Jonathan the son of Saul, although it had been in ignorance of the fast having been appointed till a late hour that he had allowed himself a taste of honey, was both presently convicted, by lot, of sin, and with difficulty exempted from punishment through the prayer of the People: for he had been convicted of gluttony, although of a simple kind.

“Of course he is very young.”

It don’t find me in shoe-leather; no more it don’t.” As Mrs Crump was never seen out of her own house, unless it was in church once a month, this latter assertion about her shoe-leather could hardly have been true.

[Genesis 49:6] Who, then, would train us more lovingly than He?

He, then, understanding in this way the prophecy about himself spoken by Isaiah the prophet, says he is a voice, not crying in the wilderness, but of one crying in the wilderness, of Him, namely, who stood and cried, [John 7:37] If any man thirst, let him come unto Me and drink.

And he was justified by obedience; this was reaching manhood, as far as depended on him.

How will they be resolved into nothing?

“Love May Be a Great Misfortune”

But wherefore does He converse on nothing else with John, nor comfort him when desponding?

[2 Peter 2:4] Hence Peter shows that there is still due to them the penalty of the last judgment, concerning which the Lord says: "Go ye into everlasting fire, which has been prepared for the Devil and his angels."

However, as you think that some will make a bad use of the example thus furnished them, I shall only say that those will be truly happy if they do not fall short of the excellence of the example in question.

Charito said, I am a Christian by the grace of God.

Of course there is something precarious in such a business as mine;—but I am endeavouring to make it less so from day to day, and hope very shortly to bring it into that humdrum groove which best befits a married man.

“I’m not fond of Mr. Kissing at all.”

But if she be as steadfast in this matter as I am,—if her happiness be fixed on marrying me as mine is on marrying her,—then, I think, I am entitled to ask you whether you are justified in keeping us apart.

And so, to begin with, whether you like it or no, you cannot deny this; viz., that the Lord Jesus Christ is the Son of God, especially as the archangel declares in the gospels: That holy thing which shall be born of you shall be called the Son of God.

Behold, I will bring mine hand upon them, and they shall be a spoil to their servants: and you shall know that the Lord Almighty has sent me.

Learn we then, from what has been said, His kindness and gentleness; Learn of Me, for I am meek and lowly of heart [Matthew 11:29 and let us cast away all bitterness.

From Galla Placidia Augusta to Theodosius

And the eye cannot say unto the hand, I have no need of you; nor again the head to the feet, I have no need of you.

Ireland—my First Two Novels

[Romans 7:24] For there shall come the Grace of God, so that righteousness shall be your delight, as much as you delighted in iniquity; and you, a man that out of bonds has been loosed, shall cry out to God, You have broken asunder my bonds.

We are always glad to welcome those who come among us in a proper spirit.

You are not yet come to the necessity of calling in another in their behalf, but you have power to give advice at once to yourself and to others.

The word of His faith, the calling of His promise, the wisdom of His statutes, the commandments of His communication, [dwell in us].

There were moments in which I thought that I might never wear more the pretty things which he had given me.’ Then she rose from her seat again, and hung on his neck, and wept and sobbed till he feared that her heartstrings would break with joy.

She could do nothing towards comforting her child till there was perfect confidence between them.

Chapter 57 [XLIX.]— It Does Not Detract from God's Almighty Power, that He is Incapable of Either Sinning, or Dying, or Destroying Himself

Likewise in the same place: Now he who ministers seed to the sower, shall both supply bread to be eaten, and shall multiply your seed, and shall increase the growth of the fruits of your righteousness: that in all things you may be made rich.

What means, has made an oath?

Why is it more melodious at midday owing to the air that it breathes in dilating its chest?

As soon as the carriage was gone, she went to her own room and wept bitterly.

5. Who would give a pearl to the daughter of the poor? For when it hangs on her, it becomes her not. Gain without price that faith, all of which becomes all the limbs of men. But for no gold would a lady exchange her pearl.

At length, however, he was in the dock, and here the high wooden palings, twelve feet above the ground on which he had to stand, would screen him from the view of all, save the miserable prisoners beside him and the policemen who had brought him in,—until he should be called on to take his place at the bar.

He ate and drank in the house, and from time to time his father paid him small sums as wages.

“I have taken shares for Lord Alfred,” said Melmotte, putting very heavy emphasis on the personal pronoun. “If it suits me to advance money to Lord Alfred Grendall, I suppose I may do so without asking your lordship’s consent, or that of Sir Felix Carbury.”

The case is different if they have rejected passages which were afterward used against them by the Apostles, and the Latin texts are more correct than the Greek, the Greek than the Hebrew.

Let not those who have gone astray be allowed to make a fictitious show, and under the veil of the Christian name shirk the provisions of the imperial decrees.

Grant to them, O Lord, to think well what they say, and to see that where there is no time, they cannot say never.

Mary spoke of him as though he were some wild beast, whom her uncle insisted on having in his house.

For why, says he, do you grieve that you have not gifts of healing?

“He’s at Portsmouth now, sir.” And Mrs Baggett shook her head sadly.

On that day both Ayala and Nina had achieved great honour;—but this, to the great satisfaction of Captain Batsby, had not been achieved under the leadership of Colonel Stubbs.

“No one else. The presence of any one else at such a time would be very unusual.”

We want no curious disputation after possessing Christ Jesus, no inquisition after enjoying the gospel!

“Don’t make me go. I should only cry. I have been crying all day, and the whole of yesterday.” Then she buried her face upon his knees, and sobbed as though she would break her heart.

So then you, who are evil, are so kind and loving towards your servant; and will the Infinite Goodness, that is, God, the Unspeakable Love to man, the kindness so vast: will He overlook and leave uncrowned His own servants, Peter and Paul, and James, and John, those who every day for His sake suffered hunger, were bound, were scourged, were drowned in the sea, were given up to wild beasts, were dying, were suffering so great things as we cannot so much as reckon up?

You had better stop at home said the emperor and pray alone like a monk.

And, Wherefore do ye not rather take wrong?

“She was always arrogant and always hard. I can remember her just the same; but that was so many years ago. She left Bragton then because she could not banish his mother from the house. But to bear it all in her heart so long is not like a human being,—let alone a woman. What did he say to you going home yesterday?”

What kind of folly and insolence should it not annihilate!

He had heard that renewed offers of compromise were to be made,—though no idea of the proposed marriage between the distant cousins had been suggested to him.

Then Anton spoke a word of warm blessing to his friend, and went his way home.

At the club it was certainly believed that the case was going against the prisoner.

And why should I speak of the kinds of trees, which spring up from seed sown, and with revivified fruitfulness bear again their opening fruits, and repeat the old shape and likeness, and certain trees being renewed continue through many generations, and in their endurance overpass the very centuries?

We had to be in a hurry because a Cape Colony Resident Magistrate cannot be absent long from his scat of justice.

‘Mr. Tudor will be down in ten minutes,’ was the waiter’s false reply; for up to that moment poor Alaric had not yet succeeded in lifting his throbbing head from his pillow. The boots was now with him administering soda-water and brandy, and he was pondering in his sickened mind whether, by a manful effort, he could rise and dress himself; or whether he would not throw himself backwards on his coveted bed, and allow Neverbend the triumph of descending alone to the nether world.

How great a terror this sign is to the demons, he will know who shall see how, when adjured by Christ, they flee from the bodies which they have besieged.

When Captain Batsby had first learned at Merle Park that Ayala and Jonathan Stubbs were both at Stalham, he wrote very angrily to Lady Albury.

The Squire’s son felt that it was so, and rushed at the subject all in a hurry. “I told you what I have come up to town about.”

And as the thing went on, the periodical itself and the writer of the article became courageous by habit, till things were printed which Sir John Ball found it almost impossible to bear.

They took their flocks and horses with them, remaining here and there as water and grass would suit them.

By the marriage she had made she had overwhelmed her whole family with dishonour.

Victoria collects the duties on those goods, and, having computed their annual amount, pays a certain lump sum to New South Wales in lieu of the actual duties collected.

He spares them for one reason, they answer for another, because they still live.

I’m sure I have endeavoured to bear it well, though you must have known what I have suffered, Thomas.

And as if it were answered, What, then, has become of the promises of God to Israel?

But her daughter should not go to Patagonia with him if she could help it!

Were Archie to marry as many wives as Henry, and have as many children as Priam, it would be no offence to him.

On the following day the Doctor returned to the country, taking with him our black box, to the continued use of which, as a sarcophagus, he had been made very welcome.

He was known to be lodging close to the Marylebone Workhouse, in Northumberland Street, having removed to that somewhat obscure neighbourhood as soon as his house in Lowndes Square had been broken up by the running away of his wife and his consequent want of means.

He was surprised, therefore, one day when Phineas discussed the matter with him fully. Phineas had asked him what would be his chance of success if even now he were to give up politics and take to the Bar as the means of earning his livelihood. “You would have uphill work at first, as a matter of course,” said Mr. Low.

I added the Holy Spirit, but at the same time I further added both whence and through whom He proceeded.

That terrible retribution was to come upon her which, when sin has been mutual, falls with so crushing a weight upon her who of the two sinners has ever been by far the less sinful.

And if any one shall teach contrary to the sound and right faith of the Scriptures, affirming that there is or was a period or an age before the Son of God existed, let him be accursed.

My idea was to give to the mind some notion of an approach to good things to come, and I proposed to call the place “Aditus.” But men said that it was unmeaning, and declared that Britannulists should never be ashamed to own the truth.

As she progressed in the history of her wrongs she perceived that the heavier she leant upon Mr. Slope the blacker became Mrs. Proudie’s brow, but that such blackness was not injurious to her own case.

“But then there comes the reversed picture, the other side of the coin. On a sudden everything becomes flat, tedious, and unnatural. The heroine who was yesterday alive with the celestial spark is found to-day to be a lump of motionless clay. The dialogue that was so cheery on the first perusal is utterly uninteresting at a second reading. Yesterday I was sure that there was my monument,” and she put her hand upon the manuscript; “to-day I feel it to be only too heavy for a gravestone!”

And he wrote another to them on Peace, and likewise on Repentance; and yet another to the confessors there who still held to the opinion of Novatus.

He rarely consorted with dukes or county magnates, and he never lived in the centre of the political world.

If there be a place on God’s earth in which a man can thoroughly make or mar himself within that space of time, it is the town of Kimberley.

If we adopt possibility as the standard of judgment, we might maintain that Joseph had several wives because Abraham had, and so had Jacob, and that the Lord's brethren were the issue of those wives, an invention which some hold with a rashness which springs from audacity not from piety.

[Deuteronomy 13:6-10] And again the Lord speaks, and says, that neither must a city be spared, even though the whole city should consent to idolatry: Or if you shall hear in one of the cities which the Lord your God shall give you, to dwell there, saying, Let us go and serve other gods, which you have not known, slaying you shall kill all who are in the city with the slaughter of the sword, and bum the city with fire, and it shall be without habitation for ever.

But she desired to obey her lover where obedience was possible, and he had expressly forbidden her to ask any such question.

But if Celsus believe the Gospel accounts when he thinks that he can find in them matter of charge against the Christians, and refuse to believe them when they establish the divinity of Jesus, our answer to him is: Sir, either disbelieve all the Gospel narratives, and then no longer imagine that you can found charges upon them; or, in yielding your belief to their statements, look in admiration on the Logos of God, who became incarnate, and who desired to confer benefits upon the whole human race.

Peter of Hippo Diarrhytus said: Since there is one baptism in the Catholic Church, it is manifest that one cannot be baptized outside the Church. And therefore I judge that those who have been dipped in heresy or in schism, when they come to the Church, should be baptized.

Would any respectable keeper of lodgings take her in upon that principle?

Architecture comes easier, ns the time given to it is necessarily less, and the attention may be more vaguely applied.

But let them confess the faith confessed by the fathers at Nicæa, and that they put no other synod before that one.

The reader will understand that the fate of the necklace was very soon decided.

He is concerned with me in one or two things,—our American railway for instance, but he has no interest generally in my house.

But now that a suitable time for answering your letter has offered itself, I have not omitted what it was my duty to do.

He was pricked by the thorn of sin: you are decked with the flowers of virtue.

“He is the most generous man I ever met,” said Mrs Greenow.

He put him in fear, so that even if he wished, he could not sacrifice him to them; while also as an excuse to them he had Paul's appeal to allege.

But how shall his existence be called in question, whose active power and energy are greater than in those who are still alive?

“And your health?”

Only write to Mark, and say that I shall be there tomorrow,” and then, taking his hat, he hurried out of the office.

15. But the transgressors shall be destroyed in the self-same thing [Psalm 36:38]. What is meant by, in the self-same thing? It means for ever: or all together in one and the same destruction.

And then the party of the Arkwrights again started, and its steady work began.

“Just because mamma made a promise when in Washington to go to Bragton with that Mr. Gotobed. Don’t you find they marry you to everybody?”

“But I have never changed. Papa just told me that he would consent, and that I might write to him. So I did write, and he came. But papa looks at me as though I had broken his heart.”

Then in his early married days he lived in Albion Street, and from thence went to Great Coram Street, till his household there was broken up by his wife’s illness.

Hence arises that grief which affects the tender heart like a wound or a bruise, and which is healed by the application of kindly consolation.

14. From the Paschal Canons of Anatolius. There is then in the first year the new moon of the first month, which is the beginning of every cycle of nineteen years, on the twenty-sixth day of the Egyptian Phamenoth; but according to the months of the Macedonians, the twenty-second day of Dystrus, or, as the Romans would say, the eleventh before the Kalends of April.

“He is a darling—as true as gold. What would mamma do without him? Mamma would lie down and die if she had not her own Johnny Bold to give her comfort.” This and much more she said of the same kind, and for a time made no other answer to Mary’s inquiries.

[1 Corinthians 8:6] Therefore let Him be your hope, even the Lord your God; in Him let your hope be.

She quitted the railway a little after midnight, and she was told that she was to be on board before five in the morning.

“So I do. For to tell the truth, a man does get tired of this kind of thing quicker than a woman, and a man of forty much quicker than a woman of twenty. At any rate I’m off tomorrow.”

After that they none of them met for many months.

For to us many are the benefits hence arising, but to them the opposites.

What, then, is the case of those, (of whom I already believe you to be one,) who are able most easily to receive divine secrets by sure reason, will it, I ask, be to them any hindrance at all, if they so come as they who at the first believe?

Unless, perhaps, you thought it was weakness, you wretches, when you saw His wounds.

Trevelyan told himself that he suspected his wife of no sin.

“‘Oh, very!’ said Crinoline, with a rapturous expression which pervaded her whole head and shoulders as well as her face and bust—’very sweet, and so new.’

An explanation of the three callings.

For there is here pointedly addressed to us an exhortation to disregard this present life, since we are absent from the Lord as long as we are passing through it— walking by faith, not by sight; in other words, in hope, not in reality.

Then comes spring, which makes all the plants germinate, and gives to the greater part of the trees their new life, and, by successive generation, perpetuates all the land and water animals.

There is a governor and a judge, and there are elections; but were it not for the pas

Chapter LXXX. Conclusion

“So, thou’s off,” said Mrs. Sturt, coming in from the back regions of her territory, with the sleeves of her gown tucked up, enveloped in a large roundabout apron which covered almost all her dress. Mrs. Sturt would no more have thought of doing her work in the front kitchen than I should think of doing mine in the drawing-room. “So thou’s off home again, my lass,” said Mrs. Sturt.

For that teaching which brings to us the command to live in chastity and righteousness is the letter that kills, unless accompanied with the spirit that gives life.

[Isaiah 1:4] If, however, you would rather refer to God Himself, instead of to Christ, the whole imputation of Jewish ignorance from the first, through an unwillingness to allow that even anciently the Creator's word and Spirit— that is to say, His Christ— was despised and not acknowledged by them, you will even in this subterfuge be defeated.

The family that travels because it is the thing to do, is, I am sure, in the right.

Now, having discoursed sufficiently to the multitudes in parables, He sends them away and goes to His own house, where His disciples, who did not abide with those whom He had sent away, come to Him.

This also was what took place in the case of this paralytic, He makes the reproof without the presence of witnesses, or rather the utterance is not merely a reproof but also a justification; He justifies Himself as it were for evil-entreating him so long, telling him and proving to him that it was not without cause and purpose that He had suffered him to be so long afflicted, for He reminded him of his sins, and declared the cause of his infirmity.

Quick as lightning words of wrath and scorn flew from him, in which he painted the cowardice, the meanness, the falsehood of the ballot.

In Canada the vehicles are much better got up than they are in England, and the horses too look better.

In his own spirit, in his inner life, the blow had come to him; but it was due to her effort on his behalf that he had not been stricken in public.

Mr. M’Ruen had pulled the bill out of a heap of bills which he always carried in his huge pocketbook, and showed to Charley the name of an impoverished Irish peer on the back of it; and the sight of that name had made Charley quite in love with rum.

For you have heard many asking such questions, as, Why ever is it that such an one, a moderate and meek man, comes to be dragged daily before the seat of judgment by another who is lawless and wicked, and to suffer evils without number, and God permits this?

When he has begun to do well, let not him ascribe it unto himself: when he has not attributed it to himself, let him give thanks to Him from whom he has received it.

This is the story, a mere dream of his own, which he tells to his intimates; and he imagines his authority to be so great that no one will dare to contradict him when he says such things.

“Very likely not; but yet it sounds true.”

How then is it, that the soul, which is the real author of the works of the flesh, shall attain to the kingdom of God, after the deeds done in the body have been atoned for, while the body, which was nothing but (the soul's) ministering agent, must remain in condemnation?

This is plain to every one.

If any man's work shall be burned, he shall then suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire.

And if any one should say, wherefore did not Christ honor him in return?

The small gorse cover is the happy, much-envied bit of ground in which the gold is sure to show itself readily.

This agreeable document was very legibly addressed to Lawrence Macdermot, Esq., &c. &c. &c., Ballycloran; and its unusual dimensions and appearance made Thady at once feel that it was some infernal missile come still further to harass him, and leave him, if possible, more miserable than it found him. However, such as it was, it was necessary that it should be read; so he took it to his father, and having broken the seal, said,—

It was thus he read it, and he read it almost with exact accuracy.

We blew the breath out of our mouth with astonishment.

Mr. Puddicombe would have left the woman to break her heart and have gone away and done his duty like a Christian, feeling no tugging at his heartstrings.

“Your father has allowed me to come.”

Till he had gone beyond Oxford Street, and had wandered away into the far distance of Portman Square and Baker Street, he had not begun to think of any interest which Clara Amedroz might have in the matter on which his thoughts were employed.

I indeed thought with myself, that is, I determined, to do many things contrary to the name of Jesus of Nazareth.

It was true that the election would not take place till the summer; but there were preliminary expenses which needed ready money.

The Marchioness was determined that the idea of a prison should not be shaken off.

Nay, he was the more blessed, for he was rich toward God.

After this the sharpest kind of practice will be all that I shall seem to be fit for.

“Adolphus,” said Fanny, “I thought there was to be no flattering between us?”

[Matthew 6:33] Then Simon said: [Since these things are commanded to Hebrews, as having a right knowledge of God, and being of opinion that every one has it in his power to do these things concerning which he is to be judged,— but my opinion differs from theirs,— where do you wish me to begin?]

Moreover, he said not that He commanded, not that He enjoined, but that He said: for no other reason, than that you might not think Him without origin and without cause.

Not that He perished on that account, in order that the Scripture might be fulfilled.

How many (of the population) shall we say are Christians?

They can shine brightly even in kings' palaces.

“You do not think that she should have gone to papa at once?” Lady Mary asked.

But if any one believes that, he must receive this also as true, that some gods are fullers, some barbers; the former to cleanse the sacred garments, the latter to thin their locks when matted with a thick growth of hair.

If there are any now who think that the mind itself and the soul is a body, I wish they would tell me by way of answer how it receives reasons and assertions on subjects of such importance— of such difficulty and such subtlety?

“Yes;—I remember.”

But when Lord Lufton would ask him what on earth could be the harm of riding along the roads to look at the hounds, he hardly knew what sensible answer to give his lordship.

Worthily, without doubt, has she taken her seat between the two most conspicuous eminences of misdeeds, and has completely filled the vacant space, as it were, in their midst, with an equal majesty of crime.

Mr. Harding got as far as the library door on his way to the station, when he suddenly remembered the news with which he was fraught when he entered the poor bishop’s bedroom. He had found the moment so inopportune for any mundane tidings, that he had repressed the words which were on his tongue, and immediately afterwards all recollection of the circumstance was for the time banished by the scene which had occurred.

For consider how grave an error it is, to call God's Word a work.

Just so, there are these two marriages for our choice, the one effected in the flesh, the other in the spirit; and preoccupation in the one must cause of necessity alienation from the other.

But she would ask no impertinent questions in the first hour of her bliss.

Have two feet, be not lame.

“You must be connected with it.”

Were she to face the man, she would fear no personal danger from him.

When you have lived with her for ten months in the one, can you not bear to live with her for one day in the other?

There was once a family of three ancient maiden ladies, much respected and loved in the town in which they lived.

Then, that he might not seem to be flattering them, he added, that he has much zeal for you, and for them in Laodicea, and for them in Hierapolis.

It was his custom always to go up to his father before he left home, and on this occasion Margaret did not see him after he quitted the breakfast table.

Unless, perchance, he intends to affirm that in God's resting and hallowing of the Sabbath, joy was signified to the Jews, but grief to the Christians.

For you shall weep [Luke 6:25 but the latter hear from the teaching of the same Master, I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man shall take from you [John 16:22].

That, in two days, I should have been twice victorious with my cavalry; that I should have cut out two hundred transports from the enemy’s harbour; that I should have so harassed the enemy that neither by land nor sea could they get food to supply their wants?

While, however, correcting them, he observed that it would not be proper to destroy these, inasmuch as they are (in their nature) eternal, and peculiar to Sophia; and yet that neither was it seemly that Sophia should exist in the midst of such passions, in fear and sorrow, supplication (and) perplexity.

For we are taught that this new man was created— albeit of the Holy Ghost and of the power of the Highest— whom Paul, the hierophant of unspeakable mysteries, bids us to put on, using two phrases to express the garment that is to be put on, saying in one place, Put on the new man which after God is created [Ephesians 4:24], and in another, Put on the Lord Jesus Christ [Romans 13:14] .

Everybody had known that he had breakfasted at the Stag and Antlers.

He was shown up into a half-furnished room, two stories high, in Coleman Street, where he found two clerks sitting upon stools;—and when he asked for the Director was shown into the back room in which sat the Secretary.

It was not only to the Kellys that the idea occurred that Anty in her illness might make a will.

Sir Griffin would make some offensive speech; Lucinda would tell him that she had no desire ever to see him again; and then the baronet, usually under the instigation of Lord George, would make some awkward apology.

“Yes,” said Harold Smith, now verging on the bounds of parliamentary eloquence, although he still spoke with bated breath, and to one solitary hearer.

For what is more absurd than to deplore as though it were a special misfortune, what one knows is appointed unto all?

And yet in his solitude he thought very much of the marvellous love shown to him by his friends.

“The bargain, at any rate, was made,” said Lady Sarah, “before the engagement was settled; and as the money is hers, I do not think we have a right to complain. I am very sorry that it should be so. Her character is very far from being formed, and his tastes are so completely fixed that nothing will change them.”

The cross of Christ, he says, is to them that perish foolishness; but unto such as shall obtain salvation, it is the power of God and the wisdom of God.

Hence the propriety of his commencement.

For a neighbor's affairs are not yours at all; but heavenly things are yours.

Consider now if a ray of the sun alights upon a quagmire, does it receive any pollution from it?

“Not by complaining that I am poor. But how did it all begin?” She had to think for a moment before she could recollect how it did begin. “There has been something,” he said, “which you are ashamed to tell me.”

“I was just about to go upstairs to my mother,” said Florence, rising to leave the room.

Chapter XI. Sergeant Forrest

On these occasions Marion always joined him, making a journey into the City for the purpose.

Whence the money came I do not know, but the pocket-knives and the pepper-boxes were bought and the bazaar built.

But the soul of ([τούτου]) the former is like some mountain-top, with its delicate air, its pure sunshine, its limpid gushing fountains, its multitude of charming flowers, while the vernal meads and gardens put on their plumage of shrubs and flowers, and glance with rifling waters: and if any sound is heard there, it is sweet, and calculated to affect the ear with a sense of much delight.

For to commit things worthy of scourges when placed in the midst of scourges is to be peculiarly proud against the smiter, and provokes the incensed one to fiercer anger.

You will see Mr Gordon in a day or two, and will find out then what are his wishes.

“And the girls?”

“If you are not well, perhaps you are better here, dear.”

But we have ascertained that what the greater part complain of is the loss of their slaves, saying that, if any man's bondman, perhaps running away from his master, has declared himself to belong to the Church, the rectors of the Church have at once kept him as a bondman belonging to the Church, without any trial of the case, but supporting with a high hand the word of the bondman.

For these are what really concern us, the things of virtue.

I do not doubt but that you will turn it all over in your thoughts.” Then he escaped by a wicket-gate into the road at the far end of the long walk, and was no more heard of at Croker’s Hall on that day.

“Of course she did,” said Fanny; “and so would I, had I been treated as she has been.

Old Mr Thorne of Ullathorne offered again to open his arms to him; but he had conceived a foolish idea that his cousin’s severity had driven his brother on to his bad career, and he would consequently accept no kindness from Ullathorne.

But from all this he abstained, and hurried back to Rome with his evidence so quickly that he was able to produce it before the judges, so as to save the adjournments which he feared.

“It has been a troublesome matter from first to last,” said Mr. Slope, “and the bishop has hardly known how to act. Between ourselves—but mind this of course must go no further, Mr. Quiverful.”

Yes, Lady Staveley had known it before.

It was a religion to him that a landed estate in Britain should go from father to eldest son, and in default of a son to the first male heir.

“They’ve no liberty,” said Michael, “though they usually take a deal too much licence. They never are allowed to call their time their own, though they often misuse the time that ought to belong to other people.”

The Eyes of the Lord are upon the righteous: fear not then; labour; the eyes of the Lord are upon you.

Observing which things, who has not fancied that he has a sort of populace of souls crowded together in himself, each of the aforesaid passions differing widely from the rest, and, where it prevails, holding lordship over them all, so that even the rational faculty falls under and is subject to the predominating power of such forces, and contributes its own co-operation to such impulses, as to a despotic lord?

“Lilian Dale,—Old Maid.”

I used to expect these services at your hands, I used to long for them.

Was ever anything so base?

As many as are his idolatries.

“I don’t want to wound you, Emily, but I really think that that is nonsense. She is a very nice woman;—though I don’t think she ought to have said that Mr. Roby is dull. Did Mr. Wharton know that she was coming?”

It certainly was hard upon Lady Tringle.

But just in the same way as I should, if I had exhorted or enjoined, or even instructed him, simply have shown that all this appertained to free will, without, however, derogating from the grace of God; so in like manner, when I expressed the matter in the way of a wish, I asserted no doubt the grace of God, but at the same time I did not quench the liberty of the will.

“I have my own quarrel with him also.”

That night I secretly left, but she was not backward in prayers and weeping.

‘I hate anything out of the way,’ he said.

I will, however, add his noble acts with regard to the Sepulchre of our Saviour.

[Job 1:21] And add to this the apostolic saying for we brought nothing into this world; it is certain we can carry nothing out.

Chapter 36. The Main Points of Our Author's Subject. On the Sexes of the Human Race

He had fixed a late hour in the afternoon for his appointment in London, so that he might have an hour or two in Cambridge before he started by the mid-day train.

Now his pledge had been broken, and he felt himself called upon to tell his father of what had occurred.

If, writes he, we say that the Son is true God and uncreate, then we are in the way to confess Him to be of one substance ([ὁμοούσιος]) with the Father.

We have faith for a defence, if we are not smitten with distrust itself also, in immediately making the sign and adjuring, and besmearing the heel with the beast.

For let no one tell me that our children ought not to be occupied with these things; they ought not only to be occupied with them, but to be zealous about them only.

Moreover, what follows where it is said, But yet if any of you are not yet called, whom by his grace He has predestinated to be called, you shall receive that grace whereby you shall will to be, and be, elected, is said more hardly than it could be said if we consider that we are speaking not to men in general, but to the Church of Christ.

Almost all the barbarians had professed to hold the Christian doctrine in honor, from the time of the wars between the Romans and foreign tribes, under the government of Gallienus and the emperors who succeeded him.

“It’s no good thinking of that now, my dear. What I particularly wanted to say to you was this: I think you should know what are the ideas which Lady Lufton entertains.”

19. To deliver their souls from death, and to keep them alive in famine [Psalm 32:19]. To give them the nourishment of the Word, and of Everlasting Truth, which they lost while presuming on their own strength, and therefore have not even their own strength, from lack of righteousness.

These were followed by multitudes of every rank, who came with their wives and children to witness the spectacle.

Wherefore he speaks of something more dreadful still.

Book XI, Letter 78

It was grievous to them that a man with a wife and three daughters should have been threatened by a young unmarried man,—by a man whose shoulders were laden with no family burden.

There was a time, but the other day it seemed, when he had been glad to borrow from me such treasures as I had.

“Yes, he has a wife, certainly,” said Mrs. Arabin.

‘But you are not going yet?’

Every one who dissolves Jesus is not of God.

“Most abominable and most unjustifiable,” continued the archdeacon.

“At this moment we are only going as far as Halstadt.”

Nothing, she now told herself, could be worse than to hang like a millstone round the neck of a poor man.

He had been compelled to feel that he must wait for the fruition of his love; and therefore had waited.

Were he to lose £10 or £20 at a sitting his arrangements would be greatly disturbed, and his comfort seriously affected.

Hence, once more resuming his proclamation, he says, And the Word was with God.

14. And asking one another, they acknowledged their lust. Thus, in revealing themselves to each other, they foreshadow the time when they shall be proved by their thoughts, and shall have to give account to God for all the sin which they have done, as Solomon says: And scrutiny shall destroy the ungodly. For these are convicted by the scrutiny.

It is not every day that a man from County Clare gets on as you have done, and therefore we are bound to think of you.” Thus Mrs.

After collecting the forces already enumerated he set out against the Church, as though he were pressing forward to the subjugation of a foreign foe.

[Acts 23:5] Hear also Christ saying, All whatsoever they bid you observe [Matthew 23:3], that observe and do.

Isaiah 66:1, 2. On whom shall I rest but on him that is humble? Christ finds few on whom to rest. How then can His commands be said to be easy?

“Ah but, Smith, I do know that. Whatever may be this quarrel between you and him, you should not tremble at the thought of him; unless indeed—”

And for them see how He thirsts, see how He runs in thirst.

Out of forty thousand inhabitants, Caesar says that about eight hundred got safely to Vercingetorix.

And there is no escaping disease sent by Zeus,—

[Revelation 22:7-8] That it is a John, then, that writes these things we must believe, for he himself tells us.

Lady Augusta was very proud of her family, was a religious woman, and was anything but contented with her brother’s manner of life.

There was no reason why he should himself die for the next twenty or thirty years,—but were he to die Sir Felix would undoubtedly dissipate the acres, and then there would be an end of Carbury.

“There’s heaps of other coves, Barty,” said Mally to Barty Gunliffe, the farmer’s son.

Adela could only say that were she in her friend’s place she would not think so much about income; but her gentle speech, the eloquence of which had an inward, rather than an outward tendency, had no effect on Caroline. If Bertram could not persuade her, it certainly was not probable that Adela Gauntlet should do so.

Lord Brentford would not believe that his son was in that matter more sinned against than sinning.

Let it be granted, however, that we speak of the same descent into Egypt as they, and of their return thence, which was not a flight, as Celsus considers it to have been, what does that avail towards founding an accusation against us or against the Jews?

And whence should he be able to do this, had not Thou made that mind?

But if he had thought well of those to whom he spoke these things; if he had considered them to be men, he would never have claimed to himself the liberty of uttering such perverse falsehoods.

Thus it follows that the fullness and perfection of the judgment consists simply in representing the interests of the entire human being.

‘I daresay you would; but there might be trouble.’

I do mean it.

by English, or at any rate, by Colonial capital.

What I despise is a man as goes and tears up Her Majesty’s Mail papers.

And first I will inquire about the terms.

It was not till she spoke, and that her words came to his assistance, that he found that he had to deal with one who was not altogether a child.

For even the harbour has an entrance somewhere or other; if it had not, no ship could enter it; it must therefore be open on some side: but at times on this open side the wind rushes in; and where there are no rocks, ships dashed together shatter one another.

[Acts 9:5],— is he not a competent witness?

“Well;—yes. That’s the name they give me. It simply means that if any member wants to badger some one in the House about the Colonies, I am the man to be badgered. But if there is any credit to be had, I am not the man who is to have it.”

75. Arrival of George at Alexandria, and proceedings of Constantius in Italy

Of the Christians who were thus unsparingly sacrificed, many who were attached to the palace were slain, and among these was Azades, a eunuch, who was especially beloved by the king.

“I know he’s bad with the gout, and therefore if he’ll allow me, I’ll go to him instead of his coming to me.” Mr. Stringer was the landlord of the inn.

For He Who bestowed on all things that are, the power of being, is the God and overseer of what He has Himself produced.

“He also makes heads?”

Valentinus had included these in the very essence of the Deity, as senses and affections of motion.

As it happened, no one who had been at The Universe was at that moment present; but the whole affair was now quite well known, and was spoken of without a doubt.

For the creature was made subject to vanity, not willingly, but by reason of him who has subjected the same.

“I think she will come to us if it be possible,” said the Duke. “And you must write to Silverbridge.”

[Mark 1:37] And when they found him, they said unto him, All the people seek for [4] you.

The man was distasteful to him as being unlike his idea of an English gentleman, and as being without those far-reaching fibres and roots by which he thought that the solidity and stability of a human tree should be assured.

was an old fool, as poor Mary had done on a certain occasion,—but at the present moment he did not feel at all loyal to the Royal Family generally.

There was no system of attorneys.

Now the oath is couched in these terms: I swear by that Good One who is above all, to guard these mysteries, and to divulge them to no one, and not to relapse from the Good One to the creature.

As she rose from her seat her heart was softened towards him.

Would it not be a wilful throwing away of a chance not to avail himself of it?

That he had reduced Britain as he had reduced Gaul he certainly could not boast;—though Quintus Cicero had written to his brother to say that Britannia was,—” confecta,” —finished.

And when did He become man?

“Guilty!”

At last no one else would speak, and the House was about to negative the motion without a division,—when Melmotte was again on his legs, still persisting.

Twenty-five years ago there was no Chicago, and now it contains 120,000 inhabitants.

But at last the cabs were packed with luggage, and into one got Gertrude with her husband, her baby, and her mother; and into the other Charley handed Linda, then Alley, and lastly, the youthful maiden, who humbly begged his pardon as she stepped up to the vehicle; and then, having given due directions to the driver, he not without difficulty squeezed himself into the remaining space.

A word spoken to Crinkett, a word without consideration, might be fatal to him.

Weeping much and stretching out his hand to the prostrate man he said, I bid you in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ arise and walk.

“Not all, papa,” said Eleanor pleadingly.

Fred Botsey declared that he didn’t believe in men hunting unless they began young.

Well then, you love him, you act with this object in view?

For sinners also do likewise.

As that work, however, is lost, that this narrative is really to be ascribed to Africanus, I would not venture positively to assert, although at the same time there seems no ground for doubting its genuineness.

Mr Gazebee’s next task was to discuss the matter with the squire. Nor was this easy, for Mr Gazebee was no favourite with Mr Gresham. But the task was at last performed successfully. Mr Gresham was so glad at heart to find himself able, once more, to ask his old friend to his own house; and, though it would have pleased him better that this sign of relenting on his wife’s part should have reached him by other means, he did not refuse to take advantage of it; and so he wrote the above letter to Dr Thorne.

For he whose heart is polluted with no misbelief prepares himself with true and reasonable purification for the Paschal Feast, in which all the mysteries of our religion meet together.

And we will bring a multitude of proofs of this.

He then mentions that he has received from certain of their number a request that he would furnish them with an account of the creeds which had been composed in the East. He modestly accedes to this request beseeching his readers not to criticise his letter until they have read the whole letter and mastered the complete argument. His aim throughout is to frustrate the heretic and assist the Catholic.

He was shown up, and she received him very gracefully.

[Acts 7:59] Call upon Him as did the wife of Elkanah, with tears and sobs, and prayers.

When they had entered the park-gates, Sir Harry spoke. “You must understand, George”—he had not called him George before since the engagement had been made known to him—”that you cannot yet be admitted here as my daughter’s accepted suitor, as might have been the case had your past life been different.”

“He was desirous,” he said, “of explaining to the community at large the objects of H.M. Government in sending him to Britannula, and in requesting the inhabitants to revert to their old form of government.” “Request indeed,” I said to Crasweller, throwing all possible scorn into the tone of my voice,—”request!

[1 Corinthians 3:21-22] He makes the Creator, then the God of all things, from whom proceed both the world and life and death, which cannot possibly belong to the other god.

And these have known that You have sent Me.

[John 12:22] And Philip [8] came and told Andrew: and Andrew and Philip told Jesus.

“Of course I was right. Why should I not see him,—or any one?”

“I am so glad to see you,” said Madame Max.

And therefore he that speaks a lie, he speaks of his own; [John 8:44] therefore that I may speak the truth, I will speak of Yours.

Is it in a corner?

For these two indeed are chief sins, engendered of violent lust, the one of sexual desire, the other of the desire of money. And He indicates that this especially was hearing the law of God, to believe John. For it was not of grace only, that harlots entered in, but also of righteousness. For not, as continuing harlots, did they enter in, but having obeyed and believed, and having been purified and converted, so did they enter in.

It is one day there, but a day that is for ever and ever.

And he said unto Him, I heard Your voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked, and I hid myself.

1 Corinthians 16:4

Further, many attribute true involuntariness not only to suffering, but even to action.

He could hardly have done a kinder act than to show the men the way how they might quickly release Cicero from his agony.

“And very wide awake she is, is Miss Todd,” said the admiring Mr. Wutsanbeans, as he stood among his bandy-legged satellites.

On all occasions it behooves us in following the laws of God to take great pains that we give no matter of offense; that both ourselves may not have to answer for it, and may have mercy vouchsafed us from God, by the grace and loving-kindness of His only-begotten Son, with Whom to the Father and Holy Ghost together be glory, dominion, honor, now and ever, world without end.

She was afraid of Mr. Camperdown, and ever on the rack lest some dreadful thing should come upon her in respect of the necklace,—some horrible paper served upon her from a magistrate, ordering her appearance at Newgate, or perhaps before the Lord Chancellor, or a visit from policemen, who would be empowered to search for and carry off the iron box.

For in Virgil, Diana mourned for Camilla, and Hercules wept for Pallas doomed to die.

Thursday morning.

“Indeed they do,” said Miss Spruce.

“I hardly know what they’ll think, but I know it will be very disagreeable, sir;—very disagreeable to my feelings. I did think, sir, that perhaps—”

For how can you speak of self-control to a child who is eager for cakes, who babbles on her mother's knee, and to whom honey is sweeter than any words?

in which place, if they will have it that the Father was seen at that time to have been received with hospitality in company with two angels, the heretics have believed the Father to be visible.

Thus much we will hear Paul say about it, that we know in part and we prophesy in part.

Not thinking that you will care to go back to black-letter lore, I may say that the earliest English novels we know are The Euphues, by Lylie, and The Arcadia, by Sir Philip Sidney.

To give Mr. Plomacy his due, old as he was, he thoroughly understood such work as he had in hand, and did it well.

Matt. VII. 1.

For does any one represent fictitious children to a man who wishes for an heir?

In the early part of the winter, when I reached Washington, the feeling ran all the other way.

For if He had not become a servant, He would not have raised up the tribes of Jacob, nor have turned the heart of the diaspora of Israel, and neither would He have become a light of the Gentiles to be for salvation to the ends of the earth.

For He is called by that name as being of that nature.

And if you have pity on the widow, your sins are washed away.

He felt that he was bound to do it on the part of Mrs. Peacocke if not on his own.

To these they add also certain solemnities, and drunken banquets, in which men might with all freedom indulge; and demons, conveyed into them in the chariot of repletion, might be mixed with their very bowels, and holding a place there, might bind the acts and thoughts of men to their own will.

Their words, as well as the miracles which they performed, that men might have faith in their divine authority, we have still in the literary treasures they have left, and which are open to all.

And the fountains of water were seen.

“They may run for me, M. Chapeau, and run far enough, before I try to stop them; do you know I’m nearly ashamed of what I’ve been doing as it is.”

Because of the Jews, it says, which were in those parts: for they would not endure to hear the word from one uncircumcised.

The epistle itself, which I shall here transcribe, is recorded in The Acts of the Apostles.

“Those one loves best of all? Oh yes, so that one may do something. It wouldn’t do not to have you every day, would it, Bobby? “ Then she allowed the willing little urchin to struggle up into her arms and to kiss her, all smeared as was his face with bread-and- butter.

For if they reproach us on account of our heresies, what will they not say of these things?

By his changing and diversity of divine and most beautiful persons, the princes male and female of the moist and cold race are loosed, and what is vital in them escapes; but whatever should remain, having been relaxed, is conducted into the earth through cold, and is mingled with all the races of darkness" Who can endure this?

The old Greek proverb is quite true A lyre is of no use to an ass.

At the end of the week he received a reply from the Bishop, and found that it was not, at any rate, written by the chaplain.

To Pope Damasus

[27] [Matthew 14:15a] And when the evening approached, his disciples came to him, and said unto [28] him, [Mark 6:36] The place is desert, and the time is past; send away the multitudes of the people, that they may go to the towns and villages which are around us, and buy for [29] themselves bread; for they have nothing to eat.

Where is, O death, your contention?

The things of the world, which are in themselves but accidents, have been for a moment all in all to you; but knowing you as I do, I am aware how soon they will fade away, and have no more than their proper weight.

The mind therefore directs itself through these orbs that it may see, and the sight of both the eyes is mingled and joined together in a wonderful manner.

The very mystery with which the robberies were pervaded was acting in her favour.

There’s Adolphus—he’s had the good sense to get rid of his, and yet Fanny’s so foolish, she’d sooner have that other horrid man—and I’m sure he’s not half so good-looking, nor a quarter so agreeable as Adolphus.

There seemed to prevail an opinion during this interval that Mr. Gresham had been imprudent.

The great man, who loomed very large to me, was pleased to say that if the letters should recommend themselves by their style and matter, if they were not too long, and if,—every reader will know how on such occasions an editor will guard himself,—if this and if that, they should be favourably entertained.

1 Corinthians 15:34

I have with great joy studied and pondered the letter sent by your Holiness, because it exhibits both your Christian spirit unsullied by the guile of an evil age, and your heart full of kindly feeling towards myself.

[Genesis 16:6] He delivered up the partner of his bed, that he might not grieve Sarah.

And therefore He came after Christ, that a Comforter should not be lacking unto us; but Another Comforter, that you might acknowledge His co-equality.

I have not so much as handled a rowboat on a lake, and now I have to trust myself to the noise and turmoil of the Euxine.

“But I have taken your sister Madeline’s seat in the carriage,” protested Sophia with great dismay.

What, I ask, or whose is that sin?

From yours,

Now of Baptism and repentance I have spoken in the earliest Lectures; and my present remarks concerning the resurrection of the dead have been made with reference to the Article In the resurrection of the flesh.

And imitating Jupiter and the other gods in sodomy and shameless intercourse with woman, might we not bring as our apology the writings of Epicurus and the poets?

Turn to Him who exhibits spectacles far more wonderful.

For these things happen not, as your false complaining and ignorant inexperience of the truth asserts and repeats, because your gods are not worshipped by us, but because God is not worshipped by you.

She never accused her mother of cruelty, even within her own heart.

Who shall deliver me from the body of this death? In the face of His cold who shall stand?

“Violet,” said Lady Laura, after a moment’s pause;—and she spoke sharply; “Violet, I believe you are in love with Mr. Finn.”

Just as one might say of a house which has some part decayed and the other sound, He has rebuilt the house, that is to say, He has made it stronger, and laid a firmer foundation.

They who sat upon it ordinarily wore their wigs with decorum and lived the lives of gentlemen; but, looking back for many years, a churchman of the Church of England cannot boast of the clerical doings of its bishops.

Say, could He not have prevented these things had He wished, yet He permits them?

Similarly speaks he who composed the Danais respecting the daughters of Danaus:—

She herself had learned to hate the house and fields and widespread comforts of Ongar Park.

“It is what comes of living in a godless country like Italy,” said Lady Amelia.

For if He were not God in the Body, how came He, upon proceeding from Mary, straightway to be called 'Emmanuel, which is being interpreted God with us [Matthew 1:23]?'

Is it not a fact that dishonesty such as that runs very far and very wide, till men do not know dishonesty when they see it?

And then it turned out that Messrs.

And for every testimony from apostolic teaching I will bring a similar statement from the Old Testament, that if they ever become willing to wake up from their persistent dreams, and to rise towards the light of Christian faith, they may discover both how far from being Christian is the life which they profess, and how truly Christian is the Scripture which they cavil at.

Depart, and in the name of the Lord come not near this spot.'

Granted now that the understanding is superior to the senses, and a better discoverer of mysteries, what matters it, so long as it is only a peculiar faculty of the soul, just as the senses themselves are?

“I don’t know that you have occasion,” rejoined Mr. Merton.

Is not that manger-doggishness one of the most common phases of the human heart?

He would have much liked to be able to startle Sir Marmaduke by describing the Government House in the island, or by telling him something of his old carriage-horses.

As in the next age the Eclogues of Virgil and the Odes of Horace became dear to all the educated classes because of the charm of their expression, so in their time, I fancy, had become the language of Cicero.

“It makes a man almost feel that he had better not marry at all,” said Trevelyan.

“A hundred pounds down?” said Brisket to Jones the next day.

Another sense may however be given to the phrase, that just as the Father is seen in the Son, so is the Son in the Spirit.

And in the first place, the Sacred History seems to agree with the text in question, inasmuch as none of the saints composed several works, or set forth his views in a number of books.

“I don’t think I said quite so much as that. Indeed, I was careful to point out that the law does acknowledge heirlooms.”

He knew that good could not arise from a renewed correspondence.

2. But recently a class of persons, impelled by furious zeal, and backed by equal power and military force, evinced their enmity against God, by destroying his churches, and overthrowing from their foundations the buildings dedicated to his worship. In short, in every way they directed their attacks against the unseen God, and assailed him with a thousand shafts of impious words. But he who is invisible avenged himself with an invisible hand.

We get men into the House now who are clever, and all that sort of thing, and who force their way up, but who can’t be made to understand that everybody should not want to be Prime Minister.” The Duke, who was now a Nestor among politicians, though very green in his age, smiled as he heard remarks which had been familiar to him for the last forty years.

The Apostle having regard to the very sins which come of the corruption of flesh and blood, says, Flesh and blood shall not possess the kingdom of God.

He was to be Proconsul, not for one year, with perhaps a prolongation for two or three, but for an established period of five.

Hence, one star differs from another star in glory, [1 Corinthians 15:41], it says.

That is they will half do all these things,—with the exception of nursing the baby, whom the Kafir is never known to neglect or injure.

For who is so ignorant, who so foolish, as not to see that the health of this mortal body, and the strength of its corruptible members, and victory over men who are our enemies, and temporal honours and power, and all other mere earthly advantages are given both to the good and to the bad, and are taken away both from the good and from the bad alike?

“What my advice to you might be if you really came to me for advice, I am hardly prepared to say at so very short a notice. You seem to have made up your mind, and therefore I need not consider it. As it is, I wish you joy, and hope that it may turn out to your advantage in every way.”

“Mr. Hamel was a very intimate friend of her father’s.”

This man had robbed him of his happiness; and, though it would have been foolish in him to make a quarrel for a grievance such as that, there might have been some excuse had he done so.

But if he could be generous, so could she.

She had heard no ring at the bell, and having settled herself with a novel in the armchair, had almost ceased for the moment to think of Mr Maguire or of Mrs Stumfold.

I for my part think that, had he possessed so many Christian kinsfolk when he was a young man, he might then have been brought to believe in Christ.

Then they talked about Grex, and Killancodlem, about Gerald and the shooting, about Mary’s love for Tregear, and about the work of the coming Session.

General opinion declared that the nail had been driven in wilfully,—that it had been done by Tifto himself, and that Tifto had been instigated by Captain Green.

Clara did not care to ask any questions as to this something that was to be told, and therefore took her leave and went away.

“One is afraid even to speak to you now.”

You are now in my care.

Sir Thomas shrugged his shoulders, and did not tell the story to more than three or four confidential friends, to all of whom he remarked that on the matter of the visits made to the girl, there never was smoke without fire.

For these, too, had been received by the Council of Sardica: Asclepas, because he showed records from which it appeared that Eusebius Pamphilus, in conjunction with several others, after having investigated his case, had restored him to his former rank; and Lucius, because his accusers had fled.

Wages of privates, including sergeants and

They, however, who on the Sabbath carried the ark round Jericho, did it with impunity.

We do not however deny the properties of the natures.

For neither may the murderer make his anger a plea, nor the adulterer allege his lust, no, nor any other excuse; but here, by mentioning their hunger, He freed them from all blame.

That fish then which, at the command of the Lord, Peter caught, points to digestible and God-given and moderate food.

It is this man, whom God judged worthy to behold Him, face to face, like the angels, who imparts to us what he has learned from God.

Who has denied this, save Marcion and Manicheus, and such like pests?

Et deinde rursus:—

Broune had declared his very strong belief, his thorough conviction, that Melmotte had committed various forgeries, that his speculations had gone so much against him as to leave him a ruined man, and, in short, that the great Melmotte bubble was on the very point of bursting.

Latona in the skies; no— nor yourself

O murderer, how do you love God?

“No,” she said boldly.

But as he is a believer, he is not yet also righteous— I mean according to the righteousness of progress and perfection, according to which the Gnostic is called righteous.

But from great effeminacy many feel disgust even at this, and I hear many say, that it is weariness even to eat.

But that it says that when the thousand years are finished he is loosed, so the number of the perfect saints being completed, in whom there is the glory of virginity in body and mind, by the approaching advent of the kingdom of the hateful one, many, seduced by that love of earthly things, shall be overthrown, and together with him shall enter the lake of fire.

He would fain have been as other men, but he could not.

He could forgive the coldness of her conduct to himself—he himself not being by nature demonstrative or impassioned,—if only she were not more kind to any rival.

For we wish for the most part to flee, but if we do not wholly cast it out of our mind, we rather take it up than forsake it.

And what absurdity should there be in our system— that is, the Gospel— having the law for its foundation, when even the Lord Jesus Himself said to those who would not believe upon Him: If you had believed Moses, you would have believed Me, for he wrote of Me.

“What’s the use of that?” said Lady Tringle.

“I only told her that we expected her by the earlier train,” said Mrs Tom.

It would be so nice to consult a brother!

For such expressions are customary in the Scriptures; and yet some persons, while maintaining the Catholic faith, do not carefully attend to them, in such wise that they think the words, God made man in the image of God, to mean that the Father made man after the image of the Son; and they thus desire to assert that the Son also is called God in the divine Scriptures, as if there were not other most true and clear proofs wherein the Son is called not only God, but also the true God.

For that part of Him which is crying, Have pity on Me, is yours: from you this He received, for the sake of you, that you should be delivered, with Flesh He was clothed.

[Proverbs 15:3] And when we meet together with the brethren in one place, and celebrate divine sacrifices with God's priest, we ought to be mindful of modesty and discipline— not to throw abroad our prayers indiscriminately, with unsubdued voices, nor to cast to God with tumultuous wordiness a petition that ought to be commended to God by modesty; for God is the hearer, not of the voice, but of the heart.

But what sort of a fulfilment of his promise is it, to show that God existed before beings capable of speech?

For if you had been anything, you would have remembered it.

There was Mr. Sowerby himself; who ever saw a cloud on his brow?

Now he began to surround himself with an infinity of feminine belongings, and to promise himself an infinity of feminine blessings, wondering much that he should have been content to pass so long a portion of his life in the dull seclusion which he had endured.

Indeed, Adam did not use the words in question after his sexual intercourse, when he emitted his seed, but after his wife's confinement, in which he received his son by the gift of God.

“Joshua’s aunt!”

The bishop, in mortal dread of Bertie and the Jews, tried to converse with Charlotte Stanhope about the climate of Italy.

The edifice has but the ground floor with a clock tower rising from the centre.

Let us see then what it is to believe in Christ; what to believe that Jesus, He is the Christ.

Wherefore also they ought to be believed, being inspired, he added.

All that little world now around her knew that she had separated herself from her grand husband; and most of them had heard that she had no intention of returning to him.

For we do not so narrow and restrict the application of the term blessedness as to apply it to God only, though doubtless He is so truly blessed that greater blessedness cannot be; and, in comparison of His blessedness, what is that of the angels, though, according to their capacity, they be perfectly blessed?

Mr. Gledd had been a merchant all his life.

“There’s the Isle of Wight. The Isle of Wight is very pretty.”

She had ordered the carriage to take her to Mr. Camperdown’s chambers, and now she dressed herself for the occasion. He should not be made to think, at any rate by her outside appearance, that she was ashamed of herself. But before she started she had just a word with Mrs. Carbuncle. “I think I shall go down to Scotland on Saturday,” she said, proclaiming her news not in the most gracious manner.

For if you call on wisdom and knowledge with a loud voice, and seek it as treasures of silver, and eagerly track it out, you shall understand godliness and find divine knowledge.

He was her own, and let Lizzie Eustace do her worst, he would remain her own.

And with him there is his sister, a basket of roses and lilies, a mixture of ivory and purple.

But those things which are of men's devising, whether words or deeds, have no measure.

“He would be much better without his stall, and Fanny has the sense to know this. What does he want with two houses? Prebendal stalls are for older men than he—for men who have earned them, and who at the end of their lives want some ease. I wish with all my heart that he had never taken it.”

And therefore no one had remarked that he had but once been at West Putford. But he thought of it himself. He often longed to go thither, and as often feared to do so. When he next went, it must be to tell Adela, not that he loved her, but that such love was forbidden to him.

at least imitate the enemy of the Roman Empire.

“And where be she gone to, Mr. Fenwick? Cannot I go arter her?” He simply shook his head and took her by the arm to lead her away. “Do they know nothing of her, Mr. Fenwick?”

Let My eyes see equity: the eyes, of course, of the heart.

This is my property.

What, then, can be done for men who despise smaller evidences as inadequate, and reject greater evidences as incredible?

M. de l’Empereur, therefore, had his work before him, and he did it like a man—as long as he could.

What does it mean?—the measures, the grimaces, the bowing, shuffling, and retreating, the cavaliers seuls advancing upon their ladies, then ladies and men twirling round at the end in a mad galop, after which everybody bows and the quaint rite is celebrated?” It is always so with Congreve’s plays, and Etherege’s and Wycherley’s.

And they could not stand before him, until the he-goat came from the west and smote the ram and broke his horns and humbled the ram completely.

Yet the wise man is never partaker of the same end with the foolish.

For if we be men, it would be more fitting that we should grieve on account of the errors into which so many famous men fell, if we happen to hear of them, than that we should studiously investigate them, in order that, among men who are ignorant of them, we may enjoy the gratification of a most contemptible conceit of knowledge.

For we dwell in a house in one way, in another way God dwells in the Saints.

What then are the mischiefs resulting therefrom?

But I do not know if these commandments can be kept by man, because they are exceeding hard.

So resolving, he drove into the yard of the hotel at Colmar.

But, in fine, I shall require to use some such conclusion as this: O men, behold, I charge you now expressly and shortly, that you fear God, who is at once the Lord and the Overseer of all, and that you keep also His commandments; and that you believe that all shall be judged severally in the future, and that every man shall receive the just recompense for his deeds, whether they be good or whether they be evil.

'I should myself transgress,

If you do not like Friday, you shall come on Monday, or Tuesday, or Wednesday, or Thursday, or Saturday, or even on Sunday, if you wish it;—and at any hour, only let it be fixed.

While he was speaking, Ussher came up to the car, and began congratulating them.

Pat Regan, as I have said, produced his unfortunate translation, and promised with the greatest good-humour to do another when he was told that his last performance did not quite suit Mrs. St. Quinten’s views.

For if each and all have one and the same likeness of shape, there is nothing ridiculous in believing that they err, and are deceived in recognising each other.

You asked me whether I ever loved you?

For where there is a plea of love to man, He passes it over lightly, for this very reason, and because it was not yet time expressly and plainly to revoke the things of the law. But where it is an observance of bodily purification, He overthrows it more plainly.

“You tell me that you wish you had accepted Mr. Hoskins. Why do you not do so?” said I, continuing my cross-examination.

He passed an ordinance that no one should exercise humanity toward the sufferers in prison by giving them food, and that none should show mercy to those that were perishing of hunger in bonds; that no one should in any way be kind, or do any good act, even though moved by Nature herself to sympathize with one's neighbors.

Lady Di Peacocke married Mr. Billyboy, who was a clerk in one of the offices.

[Explains for what the Son of God was sent, viz, that by Christ's dying for sinners, we were to be convinced how great is God's love for us, and also what manner of men we are whom He loved.

For previous to proposing that question of his, and as introducing it, he affirms: There are other opprobrious expressions underlying the querulous murmurings of those who rail at us; and, shaken about as in a hurricane, we are again and again dashed among enormous rocks.

Beatrice did as she was bid, but with a presentiment that no good would come of it. The note was certainly unnecessary for the purpose assigned by Lady Arabella, as Mary was not given to be flustered by such occurrences; but, perhaps, it was as well that it was written, as it enabled her to make up her mind steadily as to what information should be given, and what should not be given to her coming visitor.

For our sins, says the Apostle; we had pierced ourselves with ten thousand evils, and had deserved the gravest punishment; and the Law not only did not deliver us, but it even condemned us, making sin more manifest, without the power to release us from it, or to stay the anger of God. But the Son of God made this impossibility possible for he remitted our sins, He restored us from enmity to the condition of friends, He freely bestowed on us numberless other blessings.

All this was based on his grand theory of live and let live.

The minutes will not go away, and utterly fail in making good their claim to be called winged.

Not even did the little lords, her brothers, chuck their books and toys about with less idea of demeanour.

Or if he thunders, the law would have been given by him.

He went fast to sleep in the carriage, and did not awake till the train was stopped at the Barchester Junction.

They had been exquisitely arranged, and were very fair.

I must go to her there, or she must come here to me.

Mr. Daubeny as soon as he had completed his speech took up his hat and stalked out of the House.

“But what did she ask? What did she say?”

Chapter 3. Argument: Octavius, Displeased at the Act of This Superstitious Man, Sharply Reproaches Minucius, on the Ground that the Disgrace of This Wicked Deed is Reflected Not Less on Himself, as Cæcilius' Host, Than on Cæcilius.

Not in the least, not at all, but for this later misfortune which had come upon her, a misfortune which she knew how to remedy at once if only she could bring herself to apply the remedy.

And to them it was a school.

When the application for return of the money had been first made to him from Australia, he hadn’t known what he knew now.

For having said In the Beginning God created the heaven and the earth, meaning that the Father made them in the Son (as the psalm testifies where it says, How manifold are Your works, O Lord!

“I don’t know what you call well,” said Mr. Mollett. “She hadn’t a leg to stand upon for the last three hours.”

Pat is a happy man when he can address his landlord as “Sir Patrick.”

And this taste is worse in their case than in that of brutes: for as with the mire and the dung the cause of pleasure is not in them, but in the irrational nature of the creatures who plunge into it; even so count it to be in the case of human beings.

Moses was holding a rod, he cast it down and it became a serpent.

How long shall you be rich, and that man poor?

“Coosins!” said Andy Gowran, stepping from behind the rock and showing his full figure.

Everything is so dull while you are away!

Mr. Jobbles read the note, and smiled with satisfaction as he put it into his pocket.

We have heard now, brethren, that which day by day is not kept secret: let us hear now what He has cried through these pillars He cries what?

She had dark-brown hair, which was never curled, but worn in plain braids, fastened at the back of her head, together with the long rich folds which were collected there under a simple comb.

But, somehow, He says simply Judas, using the proper name, which was the address that would be used by one who commiserated a person, or who wished to call him back, rather than of one in anger.

Had He been a man previously to this, and had He earned this unprecedented reward, that He should be thought worthy to become God?

'From the things that are seen,' he answers, 'from the fair order existing through the whole creation, from its being manifest to all.'

And (he states) that to him alone— that is, Naas— is dedicated every shrine and every initiatory rite, and every mystery; and, in general, that a religious ceremony could not be discovered under heaven, in which a temple (Naos) has no existence; and in the temple itself is Naas, from whom it has received its denomination of temple (Naos).

It had been a rule of life with him never to take advice.

“No;—exactly so,” said her father. “And therefore it will be better that you should postpone any such communication.”

If any among us are convicted of deeds the most disgraceful, and are about to meet with some penalty, great is the alarm, great is the fear on all sides, lest he should start away, people say, and join the other side.

And till you are somewhat settled again, I think that the change of scene would be good for all of you.

Constantius, Victor, Maximus, Augustus, to the Bishops and Presbyters of the Catholic Church.

If you were in a school, would you receive a task, and not repeat it?

This goes far to show, not that the border States desired secession, but that, when compelled to choose between secession and Union, when not allowed by circumstances to remain neutral, their sympathies were with their sister slave States rather than with the North.

Now the first duty of justice is to acknowledge God as a parent, and to fear Him as a master, to love Him as a father.

At last he burst out in his own defence.

He will think nothing of you, because I know that you are still friends with both of them.

“It’s a queer sort of Christmas we’ve all been having, Mr. Heathcote,” said the sergeant, as the remnant of a real English plum-pudding was put between him and his man by Mrs. Growler.

“It must be done,” I said in a tone of firm decision.

“But she has always been so good!” Then the Duke was again silent. “Have you not heard that, sir?”

“Did any of her friends know she was going with him?”

15. But when I first came to the East under favorable auspices and learned that in some places a great many men who were able to render public service had been banished by the judges for the above-mentioned cause, I gave command to each of the judges that henceforth none of them should treat the provincials with severity, but that they should rather recall them to the worship of the gods by flattery and exhortations.

Aunt Julia, who had become thoroughly ashamed of the Baroness, had wished to take her departure on the third day; but Guss had managed to stop her.

But, in this instance, money was no object;—such an amount of money, at least, as could by any possibility be spent on a lady’s clothes, independently of her jewels.

And he or she who repeated the rumour to you, lied also.

What reasoning now may set forth, how the loaves multiplied themselves; how they flowed together in the wilderness; how they were enough for so many (for there were five thousand men beside women and children; which was a very great commendation of the people, that both women and men attended Him); how the remnants had their being (for this again is not less than the former), and became so abundant, that the baskets were equal in number to the disciples, and neither more nor less?

For here they are not always to be: and nevertheless in defence of a temporal animosity they are fighting so fiercely.

What, I ask, is the fact which these works prove?

She was in this frame of mind when Robert Bolton was shown into the morning sitting-room. She was sitting with the Bible before her, but with some domestic needlework in her lap. He was doing nothing,—not even having a book ready to his hand. Thus he would sit the greater part of the day, listening to her when she would read to him, but much preferring to be left alone. His life had been active and prosperous, but the evening of his days was certainly not happy.

Chapter XVIII. Robert Bolton

The reed that grows never more again

Under her breath she was repeating a psalm— the last words of a psalm— to say the truth, a testimony to the boldness with which she was departing, and blessed is he who can fall asleep with these words, I will lay me down in peace, and take my rest.

See you what great service envy has done him?

Chapter XII. Mr George Vavasor at Home

We lost our military prestige, and have been submitting ever since to told that we are not a warlike nation.

Her lover would be there to meet her, and the appointment would be broken by her!

Thus then the substance of each individual flesh, though its particles have been variously and diversely scattered, has within it an immortal principle, since it is the flesh of an immortal soul, and at the time which God in His good pleasure shall appoint, there will be collected from the earth and drawn to it, its own component particles, which will be restored to that form which death had formerly dissolved.

“Like—I never know what a young man is like. He is like a man with red hair.”

He who partakes thereof discerns the good and the evil.

But Thady already felt his enemy’s blood heavy on his conscience, and he would have died himself to see him rise on his feet.

Parsons used to be considered little better than head servants; and though they were admitted to table, were expected to leave it when the puddings and pies came in.

He had been sad enough on that moonlight night in the avenue at Plaistow,—when he had leaned against the tree, striking his hands together as he thought of his great want; but his unhappiness then had been as nothing to his agony now.

“I am the worst hand in the world at guessing anything.”

Others express only relative usefulness; thus, Helper, Champion, Rescuer, and other words of that meaning; if you remove thence the idea of one in need of the help, all the force expressed by the word is gone.

21. For some of the heresies have a great many martyrs; but surely we shall not on that account agree with them or confess that they hold the truth. And first, indeed, those called Marcionites, from the heresy of Marcion, say that they have a multitude of martyrs for Christ; yet they do not confess Christ himself in truth.

Moreover, he had a certain disciple named Terebinthus, who wrote four books for him.

For we acknowledge the humility of our Lord, and of it are not ashamed.

In his early speeches, especially in that spoken against Verres, he denounces the corruption of the senatorial judges; but at that very period of his life he again and again expresses his own belief in the glory and majesty of the Senate.

A fish does not resist God's law, and we men cannot endure His precepts of salvation!

If we see a person coming to beg in a respectable dress, This is an impostor (you say), and he comes in this way that he may be supposed to be of good birth.

If you would attain the same things with them, why do you journey along a contrary road?

Chapter 61 [XXXII.]— The Serpent Lifted Up in the Wilderness Prefigured Christ Suspended on the Cross; Even Infants Themselves Poisoned by the Serpent's Bite.

Wherefore then says he, in the last day?

Poor Cairo!

Captain Scarborough, at any rate, was anxious for the marriage, and Mrs. Mountjoy was inclined to accept him, encumbered as he now was with his father’s wrath, in preference to poor Harry Annesley.

And why and how so?

And then they had fallen into different sets.

Behind the house the expanse of drained park land seemed to be interminable; and then, again, came the mountains.

She offered to refer the matter in dispute between us to the arbitration of the editor of the “ Curricle;” and when we indignantly declined such interference, protesting that there was no matter in dispute, she again informed us that if we thought to trample upon her we were very much mistaken.

If she would only be firm, they could not succeed in making her marry the linen-merchant.

Nor yet, because in that case divided is both woman and virgin, will this division exert its patronizing influence in the present case as well, as some will have it.

It may be said that no man could well be more dependent on another than Plantagenet Palliser was upon his uncle; and it may be said also that no father or uncle ever troubled his heir with less interference.

But He Who knows the things that are secret, beckoned to Simon and said to him:— Lo!

Fulfil, Christian judge, the duty of an affectionate father; let your indignation against their crimes be tempered by considerations of humanity; be not provoked by the atrocity of their sinful deeds to gratify the passion of revenge, but rather be moved by the wounds which these deeds have inflicted on their own souls to exercise a desire to heal them.

Ayala looked up into his face, also remembering everything as well as it were yesterday. “Mr. Twentyman rode over it,” she said, “and Colonel Stubbs rode into it.”

“Oh, yes,” she said; “I think we had finished. It was nobody’s fault.”

He had learned also from Miss Colza, that Miss Mackenzie had certainly quarrelled with Lady Ball, and that she had, so Miss Colza believed, been turned out of the house at the Cedars.

Should that will in truth be found to be the last will and testament of the old Squire, then it would be his duty to declare that the estate and everything upon it belonged to Cousin Henry, and that there would be, as he feared, no source from which any considerable part of the money nominally left to Miss Brodrick could be defrayed.

I hurried on by Montacué and Tiffauges to St. Laurent; and there, M. Henri, I saw Mademoiselle Agatha, and told her what had happened.

Men can be spared; and any employment may be serviceable, even though that employment be in itself so unproductive as that of fighting battles or preparing for them.

Homily I

Should she be less gaily attired because it would be unnecessary to please his eye?

To say that would indeed be to speak calumny of your country.

He always reached the appointed meet at five minutes before eleven, by his watch, and by his watch the hounds were always moved from their haunches at five minutes past eleven.

“He has been over the half-hour every Sunday since he has been here. His average is over forty minutes, and I say it’s a shame.”

I will not try the patience of anyone by stating in detail all the circumstances of the trial.

Mrs. Finn embraced her young friend, and asked after her welfare, and after the welfare of the house in which she was staying,—a house with which Mrs. Finn herself had been well acquainted,—and said half-a-dozen pretty little things in her own quiet pretty way, before she spoke of the matter which had really brought her to The Horns on that day.

Glad tidings did they give for you: their tongues before their bosoms did the poor [fishers] open, and produced and showed the new riches among the merchants: upon the wrists of men they put you as a medicine of life.

This is enough to make it a match for all, that for so long a time it had the benefit of that mouth, it first, and before all others: wherefore also it was there in the first place that men were accounted worthy of that name.

The example is so awful that it will surely deter.

Why, therefore, except through foolishness and miserable error should you humble yourself to worship a being to whom you desire to be unlike in your life?

“For the purpose of allowing my wife to pay my debts?”

[Matthew 13:36] When Jesus then is with the multitudes, He is not in His house, for the multitudes are outside of the house, and it is an act which springs from His love of men to leave the house and to go away to those who are not able to come to Him.

“Don’t do that.”

When we ought to keep before our eyes that fearful day, and to give heed to virtue; and after a little labor, obtain the incorruptible crowns?

In the New Testament both these things are ascribed to God.

I am not among those who say that this has been caused by our cruelty.

Wherefore he says, But let every man take heed how he builds thereon.

I always liked him the best, only I never thought of my own likings.

For wrath is nothing but an irrational impulse: and an irrational creature cannot possibly perform anything rational.

She was stouter, too, less careful to hide what grey hairs years might have produced, and showing manifestly by the nature of her bonnets and shawls that she despised the vanities of the world.

Why then does he calumniate me by spreading a rumour that I am infected with that awful malady and am in revolt against the Church?

[Luke 18:8] I say unto you, He will do vengeance for them speedily.

“Gentlemen,” said Mr Melmotte, in his usual hurried way, “is it your pleasure that I shall sign the record?” Paul Montague rose to say that it was not his pleasure that the record should be signed.

“And will not this anger her? Upon my word, Mr. Stanhope, I do not understand the policy of your family. Oh, how I wish I was at home!” And as she expressed the wish she could restrain herself no longer and burst out into a flood of tears.

Exult ye unto God our helper [Psalm 80:1].

When therefore you see an harlot tempting you, say, My body is not mine, but my wife's. The same also let the woman say to those who would undermine her chastity, My body is not mine, but my husband's.

I am jealous already, almost jealous of his goodness.

In fact, at this day the Corinthians do veil their virgins.

Ver. 21. It is good neither to eat flesh, nor to drink wine, nor anything whereby your brother stumbles, or is offended, or is made weak.

And we affirm that controversy with heretics should in most cases be conducted in this way.

“I would have told you then, when we were at Jerusalem, but we were not so well acquainted then as we are now, and I did not like to interfere.”

For, inasmuch as he is composed of bones, and nerves, and flesh, and blood, which of these can be so firm as to repel frailty and death?

You will make him happy, and you will be my dear child.

But assuredly they had not come to judges who could be persuaded to such madness.

For he alleviated the calamities of all, and took charge of those who were imprisoned as if they had been his own members, not only taking an interest in their misfortunes and consoling them, but if he saw any one absorbed in thought, he went to him and enquired the cause, and could not bear even to see any one dejected, or be easy till he had relieved his dejection.

That which referred to her aunt’s money, together with the postscript in Captain Aylmer’s letter on the same subject, would be of the least possible moment if she could bring herself to give a favourable answer to the other proposition.

[John 6:54] And they who maintain this as being theirs without regeneration, appear to me to wish to destroy baptism itself, since they proclaim that these have that which we believe is not to be conferred on them without baptism.

“He shouldn’t provoke his neighbours to look at his faults.”

...And he has done this; for he says how long labour is before him; until I enter into the sanctuary of God, and understand upon the last things [Psalm 72:17].

Indeed, He truly is in need of none; but you ought to know that the honour which you bestow upon God is profitable to yourselves.

To this the old man answered: [I both remember what was agreed upon, and I keep in memory the words which you spoke after the agreement was made, in which you taught that it is impossible for man to know any thing, unless he learn from the true Prophet.]

Not long after the marriage, perhaps six months, when Eleanor’s bridal-honours were fading, and persons were beginning to call her Mrs Bold without twittering, the archdeacon consented to meet John Bold at a dinner-party, and since that time they have become almost friends.

He thought he might venture—he really did think that he might venture—to bespeak a brilliant career for mademoiselle.

“Ah! that I cannot say. You know that I am one of her counsel, Lady Staveley?”

“He means all that he says.”

He placed his testament in the hands of the presbyter who constantly extolled Arius, and who had been recommended to him as a man of virtuous life by his sister Constantia in her last moments, and commanded him with an added oath to deliver it to Constantius on his return, for neither Constantius nor the other Cæsars were with their dying father.

Chapter 39.— The Reason Why Jacob Was Also Called Israel.

I speak of that which they specially love, that which they specially honour.

Whence also I doubt not that it has been brought about by Divine ordering that one who had administered the least things well should fitly undertake the greater, and should pass from the charge of affairs to the government of souls.

“No, it would not,” said Bell.

Observe what a plight you would be in, if by inhalation you did not regain what you had parted with by your breathing outwards.

The oftener we are mown down by you, the more in number we grow; the blood of Christians is seed.

“Isn’t it almost wicked to be married in such a time as this?” It was much later in the evening when Nora, still troubled in her mind about her widow’s mite, whispered these words into her lover’s ears.

And a prophet has said Death has entered through your windows.

He must deal with the man now or never.

From the power of him, that while he is raging, he lead me not unto consenting with him; that while he lies in wait, he persuade not to iniquity.

[2 Corinthians 6:14-15] How can Horace go with the psalter, Virgil with the gospels, Cicero with the apostle?

And perhaps on this account he added, in Your fear; which is a great defence to those that are advancing toward salvation.

But at the end of that joining together which we have said to resemble the keel of a ship, He placed the head, in which might be the government of the whole living creature; and this name was given to it, as indeed Varro writes to Cicero, because from this the senses and the nerves take their beginning.

Witnesses John Kenneby; and Bridget Bolster. Deed was prepared in the office of Jonathan Usbech, and probably executed in his presence.

Lopez, as he returned from Lincoln’s Inn, westward to his club, was, on the whole, contented with the interview. He had expected opposition. He had not thought that the cherry would fall easily into his mouth. But the conversation generally had not taken those turns which he had thought would be most detrimental to him.

“We have had a very pleasant month here,” said he; “at least I have; and I am sorry it should be so soon over.”

He did not arrive till eight.

“It is quite true that I have not a shilling.”

It drags you back and pulls you off from wickedness, by griefs and pains and labors and other such things.

We, Christ-born, the choir of peace;

When the illustrious emperor Theodosius had heard of the emperor's doings and what the tyrant Maximus had written to him he wrote to the fugitive youth to this effect: You must not be astonished if to you has come panic and to your enemy victory; for you have been fighting against piety, and he on its side. You abandoned it, and are running away naked. He in its panoply is getting the mastery of you stripped bare of it, for He who has given us the law of true religion is ever on its side.

23. In What Sense Necessary.

But not in such as Paul, who was tried by hunger, and thirst, and nakedness.

[Galatians 4:22-24] But there, one represents each; here, the application does not suit so well, as there are two and two.

I Paul, he says, instead of Although no others.

Sometimes, also, when very abandoned men are willing to accept the doctrine of (future) punishment, on account of the hope which is based upon repentance, they are prevented from so doing by their habit of sinning, being constantly dipped, and, as it were, dyed in wickedness, and possessing no longer the power to turn from it easily to a proper life, and one regulated according to right reason.

But his uncle, who had corresponded on the subject with Mr. Hardy, still objected.

Each of the ladies probably guessed something of the truth, but neither spoke a word to the other on the subject Before they left the Manor the squire again pleaded his cause with Henrietta, but he pleaded it in vain.

“Have you been about business now, uncle Anton?” said Ruth.

Unless she was wanted to examine the forlorn condition of his clothes, there was nothing that she could do.

Such had been the woman’s cleverness, such her charm, so great her power of adaptation, that he had passed weeks in her daily company, with still progressing intimacy and affection, without feeling that anything had been missing.

“Tell him, aunt Charlotte, from me,” she said, “that I prayed for him when I was dying, and that I forgave him.

But how remote is our (Catholic) verity from the artifices of this heretic, when it dreads to arouse the anger of God, and firmly believes that He produced all things out of nothing, and promises to us a restoration from the grave of the same flesh (that died) and holds without a blush that Christ was born of the virgin's womb!

From the exhortation, Harden not your hearts: for if there were no rest, these exhortations would not have been given.

Or how could he live when the sun was not yet established, and neither grain nor animals were produced?

Why, then, my daughter, do you seek again those sorrows which you dread, more than you look for children whom you no longer hope for?

She had been in the habit of riding with one of the Primero girls,—and old Primero would accompany them, or perhaps a brother Primero, or occasionally her own father.

That he had done so, or, at any rate, would have done so, but for this trial, would be proved to them.

Lady Glencora herself had a love for the mountains and lakes, but it was a love of that kind which requires to be stimulated by society, and which is keenest among cold chickens, picnic-pies, and the flying of champagne corks.

And the next day she journeyed with us, sitting with Peter's wife; and we came to Balaneæ, where we stayed three days, and then went on to Pathos, and afterwards to Gabala; and so we arrived at Laodicea, where Niceta and Aquila met us before the gates, and kissing us, conducted us to a lodging.

Plainly because we were regenerate through the grace given in our baptism.

There can be no doubt that he made himself wilfully distasteful to many of his stricter brethren.

Lady Scatcherd was not a refined woman, having in her early days been a labourer’s daughter, and having then married a labourer.

And, therefore, seeing that the blessed Apostle Paul says, the things which are seen are temporal, but the things which are not seen are eternal [2 Corinthians 4:18], the path of virtue lies hid and in concealment, to a certain extent, since by hope we were saved [Romans 8:24], and true faith loves that above all things, which it attains to without any intervention of the flesh.

But he likewise all at once stripped himself of the mischief, and quenched his thirst, and followed after spiritual gain.

“You shall not be kept waiting. I will write to you, almost at once. I will write to you,—tomorrow; say the day after tomorrow, on Thursday. I feel that I ought to have been prepared with an answer; but I am so surprised that I have none ready.” He took her hand in his, and kissing it, left her without another word.

Looking back through all the History of England and her worthies, I do not know the life of any man who has shown such a career of unchequered good fortune and jocund happiness,—or more unblemished honesty and truer courage.

That is what we should all say.

Thady returned home more comfortable than he had been in the morning, but he could not bring himself to that state of mind in which Father John had hoped to dismiss him.

Nor would he have complained, though he might have absented himself, had the witness been kept in the chair three weeks instead of three days.

I made your ears that you might hear the Scriptures; and you prepared them for the songs of demons, and lyres, and jesting.

If boys, if youths are improvident through their age, the mature and aged doubtless have a fixed judgment.

She had not seen what he was doing as plainly as Mrs. Broughton had done, having her attention naturally drawn towards her Sisera; and, besides this, she understood that she was to remain as she was placed till orders to move were given to her.

Mr. Peacocke bore his position as well as he could, and accompanied him up to the hotel.

Your Master kisses, and with His lips receives him who was on the very point of shedding His precious Blood.

And so, when the Duke asked her to remain after the departure of the other guests, she decided that it would be best to bide her time.

Hitherto there had perhaps been more smoke than fire, more calumny than sin.

“If they won’t come to us,” said Barrère, “we must go to them; they have gone too far now to recede. Whether they return to their homes, or again take up arms, matters little; they must all be destroyed, for blood alone can establish the Republic on a basis which can never be overturned.”

Upon this ground also we argue with unbelievers.

The result has been good; and though there is much in the now established principles of The Fortnightly with which I do not myself agree, I may safely say that the publication has assured an individuality, and asserted for itself a position in our periodical literature, which is well understood and highly respected.

They value the truth, that God the Father is One, only as a weapon against our faith in the Godhead of Christ; pleading that an incorporeal nature cannot be rationally conceived as generating another, and that our faith in One God is inconsistent with the confession of God from God.

The other Evangelists make mention of the older prophets, and at each successive thing that took place respecting Him refer the hearer to them.

For He gives us His own testimony that He came down from the Father's bosom; and again He says, He that receives me, receives Him that sent me; and.

The influence of the monks is of long standing, and it is directed against me.

Put off the old man, and put on the new.

Marie still kept her room; and it was stated to them that she was not well and was in bed.

“Not a foot, Joe.”

Timber there was none of size sufficient to make a raft; and though he sent messengers for leagues, both up and down the river, he could not get a barge.

The streets are not made, but there are the spaces.

For they dwelt on earth as those who were pilgrims and strangers; but in heaven, as citizens.

However much he finds fault with any vice of mine, I praise him in the same degree as my physician.

It was his duty,—and his pleasure to wait upon gentlemen; but this man he knew to be a tradesman who measured customers for hunting apparel in his own shop.

[Matthew 7:24-27] Hers however still stands in the Lord, and does not refuse its shelter to you; you can still be joined in spirit to her to whom you were once joined in body.

All this came from no fault of hers.

[Matthew 16:23] The fleshly character of your hope is evident from your fancies about the kingdom of God, and from your paying homage and devotion to the light of the sun, which the carnal eye perceives, as if it were an image of heaven.

“Nor do I wish that anything should be secret. I hate all secrecies. Miss Staveley, your father knows of my intention.”

[Luke 10:22] This mutual and reciprocal knowledge is the symbol of primeval justice.

There a modest people are contented with the fruition of their own moderate wealth.

“Reproach you, Lady Harcourt! No; my reproaches, silent or expressed, never fall on your head.”

This divine teacher desired to show that the Father and the Son are inseparable; and, therefore, he said, 'that the Son is in the bosom of the Father.'

[Song of Songs 4:16] For knowing even then, O holy Church, that from those also there would be fruitful works for you, you promised to your Christ fruit from such as they, thou who first said that you were brought into the King's chamber, loving His breast above wine, since you loved Him Who loved you, sought Him Who fed you, and despised dangers for religion's sake.

How many who only spoke to fail!

And therefore, when he lies as a man he sins as a man, and will be held by that sentence in which it is said, All men are liars; and, If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us.

And what is, anointed, and sealed?

If Mr. Gilmore will take her on these terms she will become his spouse; but she gives him all sorts of warnings.

Popham Villa, 10th November, 186—.

If, then, all things were made by Him, how is it that He who thus bestowed existence on all, could at any period have had no existence himself?

Come then, let us discuss this point, and as we have done with respect to the creation, having carried on the warfare against these objectors not only by the help of the Scriptures, but of reason, so also let us now do with respect to conscience.

In another part of Suffolk, not very far from Bungay, there was a lady whose friends had not managed her affairs as well as Ruby’s friends had done for Ruby.

The mails, and with the mails, the diamonds have been recovered; but in such a condition that they cannot be recognised and given up to the proper owners.

Accordingly turn over the prophets, and learn therefrom His entire course.

Who can be so presumptuous as to believe, and profess, and teach all this?

When he had finished his letter, he read it accurately over, and then having carefully wiped his pen, and laid it near his inkstand, he leant back in his chair, and with his hand resting on the table, turned over in his mind the names and deeds of those who were accounted as his friends, but whom he suspected to be his enemies.

[Matthew 18:22] Jesus said unto him, I say not unto you, Until seven; but, Until seventy [24] times seven, seven.

He had certainly thought that it would be a good thing that his father and mother and sister should go and live in foreign lands,—in order, in short, that they might never more be heard of to trouble him,—but he did not even contemplate their deaths, so sweet-minded was he.

Waved on the immortal head the ambrosial locks,

Similarly of the same: —

He has persuaded those who are perishing and wasting, that death is not death; they therefore do not act as perishing men, but as men who send the dead before them to a distant and better dwelling-place.

Do thou, therefore, imitate this tender care towards your neighbour.

He also applies to us that epithet carnal or flesh-indulging, although, as we are wont to say, we have known Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth we know Him no more, and although we are so ready to lay down our lives for the cause of religion, that no philosopher could lay aside his robes more readily.

It will be seen that the purport has been to make it as widely democratic as possible—to provide that all power of all description shall come directly from the people, and that such power shall return to the people at short intervals.

And if you showed the same resentment at being called uncircumcised, or negligent of the Sabbath, it would be evident that you considered both to be the law and the commandment of God.

And what is the good of love, if it gives itself easy things, and assigns the more difficult to its neighbour?

To me and to my girls, who know you as a lady, you are as dear a friend as though you were—were anything you may please to think.

Lizzie’s interview with the lawyer took place on the Wednesday afternoon, and, on her return to Hertford Street she found a note from Mrs. Carbuncle.

You go still further, and make this proposition: Another may have attacked buildings devoted to secular or to sacred purposes: he ought not for this crime to be placed beyond the reach of pardon.

“You be blowed,” said Broughton, who had taken the armchair as soon as Musselboro had left it.

See how again he has reminded them of what he said about the Angels, and about life.

For in and of itself, in that place, is understood of that chiefest and unchangeable good, which is God, and of His own wisdom and will.

‘But why does he not believe me?’ demanded Dick.

It is needless for me to bring once more to bear upon your grief the spells of the spirit.

And I don’t care twopence about worsted work.

“They have nothing to do but amuse themselves,” he said to himself; “but I have a man’s work before me, and a man’s misfortunes.

I knew, however, pretty well what she was doing and what I had to expect from her.

The same ceremony had taken place so short a time previously, that the whole affair was flat and uninteresting.

Chapter 15. Didymus the Blind, and Aëtius the Heretic.

And she was again free, and her old lover was again by her side.

As long as he was ignorant of the true motive for their departure, he earnestly begged them to abide with him; but when he perceived that they were dissatisfied with his conduct, he became excessively irritated, and threatened to do them all kinds of mischief.

“You must have had something to live upon, I suppose?” suggested the widow.

“Your affectionate sister,

It was clear enough that her father, though he had shown no sign to her of yielding, was nevertheless prepared to yield.

But he had allowed the chance to pass, and now he must go into Carmarthen!

When called upon to show it by any proper authority we shall be ready; but, knowing what we do know, we should not be justified in allowing the matter to sleep.

I do not think that Sir Joseph ever repented of the perilous deed he did in marrying that young wife.

Crosbie hated the house in St. John’s Wood, and therefore the coming of the countess was a relief to him.

The way in which she had fallen through from his arms on to the sofa when he had tried to sustain her, had been dreadful to him; and almost more dreadful the idea that the stout old woman with whom he had left her should be more powerful than he to help her.

Most pathetic secrets are told with the consciousness that they will be forgotten as soon as the ship is left.

When it has learned the mysteries of the Divine birth, and the name Emmanuel which the angel announced to Joseph, it must cry, You are God, and we knew it not, O God of Israel, the Saviour.

“Oh, Mr. Harry, you shouldn’t ask me, as is merely a servant.”

Mrs. Val. ‘I heard that from Mr. Neverbend, who is altogether in

She is not blinded by a spirit of controversy, but learns meekly from the apostle what is this law which we are not to be under; for "it was given," he says, "on account of transgression, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made."

Such tears spring not from senseless passion, but from true affection.

“Yes, Father Cullen, I know where Loch Sheen is.”

Every one sees that he had this also.

But why not also with respect to conception, which takes place undoubtedly with one act of copulation?

For if they charge him with falsehood, no wonder: for their custom is not only to charge with falsehood, but also to stone the Prophets.

This remark is far more piercing than the former, for the remembrance of their miracles would not be so powerful as the exhibition of their contests and endurance of sufferings for Christ's sake.

Have your bonds inspired not anxiety but confidence?

“I have settled it, my dear.”

Philolaus, too, when he says that all things are included in God as in a stronghold, teaches that He is one, and that He is superior to matter.

“Haven’t you, Mrs. Lopez? Oh dear!” exclaimed the softhearted woman, reduced at once to pity. “How was it then?”

[Luke 19:2-9] And yet because he was little of stature and could not reach the apostolic standard of height, he was not numbered with the twelve apostles.

And how was the victory procured if there was no deity in the Pessinuntine stone?

He, when he saw them, craftily concealed his recognition of them, and accused them of having come as enemies, subtly to spy out the land.

As to the similarity of disposition to the parents which is discovered in their children, he does not dispute its coming from the soul's seed.

I will only say this about him: that I should gladly have his knowledge of the Scriptures, even if accompanied with all the ill-will which clings to his name, and that I do not care a straw for these shades and spectral ghosts, whose nature is said to be to chatter in dark corners and be a terror to babies.

For you, a man of great judgment, and of great prudence, to be sure, are daily devising methods of acquiring money, by traffic, by agriculture, by eloquence perhaps, by making yourself learned in the law, by warfare, perhaps you even add that of usury.

It was a part of their religious convictions, and who dares to interfere with the religious convictions of a clergyman?

Or what is this Mars?

“But a man does not usually strive to dishonour himself because he is in a rage. And this man is incapable of rage. He must be cursed with one of those dark gloomy minds in which love always leads to jealousy. She will never return to him.”

Let us first achieve this point, that we may be loved, and the other will be easy.

When that run was talked about afterwards, as it often was, it was always admitted that Lord Llwddythlw had been the hero of the day. But no one ever heard him talk of it. Such a trifle was altogether beneath his notice.

As I continually hear that other men make money by buying and selling houses, I presume I am not well adapted for transactions of that sort.

Well, I thought the gentleman wouldn’t change his underclothes; but you did say “ everything.” Here are the other things, you know, and his boots, his gaiters, his umbrella, his stick, his snuffbox, his spectacles—and the little shawl you used to tie round his neck when the wind blew.

Having settled these little troubles Stanbury returned to his friend, and in the evening they dined together at a tavern.

If, however, elements which are added together must, as your theory requires, be consubstantial, and those which are separate be heterogeneous, then it will follow that the same things must be both consubstantial and heterogeneous.

Lady Albury says that you ought to be here, and so you ought.

“So he tells me.”

I cannot understand why you should think so much of me, but I suppose it is because you have felt for all our misfortunes.

For it is, yes, it is possible, if we will, to mitigate his punishment, if we make continual prayers for him, if for him we give alms.

But it behooved that an example should be set, teaching us that, at a time of pressure and persecution and whatsoever difficulty, we must live on xerophagies.

“What are you to say to me? Say that you’ll be mine. Say that I shall be yours. Say that all I have at Oileymead shall be yours. Say that the open carriage for a pair of ponies to be driven by a lady which I have been looking at this morning shall be yours. Yes, indeed; the sweetest thing you ever saw in your life,—just like one that the lady of the Lord Lieutenant drives about in always. That’s what you must say. Come, Mrs Greenow!”

But she would not be false to him; nor were her inclinations such as to make it likely that she should be fickle, even though her affection might be tried by a delay of years.

She kissed him, therefore, sparingly, and resolved that her words with him should be few.

You see what sort of person a widow is said to be, the wife of one man, tested also by the progress of age, vigorous in religion, and worn out in body, whose resting-place is the temple, whose conversation is prayer, whose life is fasting, who in the times of day and night by a service of unwearied devotion, though the body acknowledge old age, yet knows no age in her piety.

8. Thereupon the judge, enraged like a wild beast, inflicted on her such tortures in her sides as he never had on any one before, striving almost to glut himself with her raw flesh. But when his madness was satiated, he bound them both together, this one and her whom she called sister, and condemned them to death by fire. It is said that the first of these was from the country of Gaza; the other, by name Valentina, was of Cæsarea, and was well known to many.

Both these belong to Godhead.

Or should he go home to his own mother, and boldly tell it all to her?

Because you have eaten bread, and the teeth are in pain.

They did not use the gift rightly, but they lapsed to utter folly.

“Oh yes;—as good friends as ever.”

As also we hear that many brethren in the Church possess prophetic gifts, and speak, through the Spirit, with all kinds of tongues, and bring to light the secret things of men for their good, and declare the mysteries of God.

13. I believe to see the good things of the Lord in the land of the living [Psalm 26:13]. And since my Lord has first suffered these things, if I too despise the tongues of the dying (for the mouth that lies slays the soul [Wisdom 1:11]), I believe to see the good things of the Lord in the land of the living, where there is no place for falsity.

It was my first anxiety to get rid of these Englishmen before the subject should be again ventilated.

Also in Isaiah: And if you do not believe, neither shall you understand.

And so females, when they consider themselves as being in their habit of sickness, if they presume not to approach the sacrament of the body and blood of the Lord, are to be commended for their right consideration.

Now what does he say is the cause of all the evils?

“How can it be helped?”

It is not possible that He, who made the ages, cannot know the future, much less the day of judgment.

These conversations were never commenced by Patience, who would rather have omitted any mention of that base young man.

The attempt had been made and had utterly failed, and now there must be an end of it.

“Then, by ––––, she shall not under any circumstances ever have a shilling of mine. Give me some of that stuff there,” and he again pointed to the brandy bottle which stood ever within his sight.

And also because now he is hastening on towards the fornicator, while speaking about the Foundation, he adds, Do you not know that you are the Temple of God?

She did not bethink herself that had another young lady at another theatre accepted a loan from an unmarried lord of such a character, she would have thought ill of that young lady.

And let your good works shine before men, that they, seeing them, may glorify your Father which is in heaven.

Certainly Clodius, and Flaminius, and Junius lost their armies on this account, because they did not judge it well to wait for the very solemn omen given by the greedy pecking of the chickens.

She told herself that it was so, and that it would be better for her to be a hardworking, dependent woman, doing some tedious duty day by day, than to live a life of ease which prompted her to longings for things unfitted to her.

Had he remained with the Apostles, as he had nothing to learn, his preaching would have been straitened, for it behooved them to spread the word every where.

“Don’t I, though?” said she. “I do care very much about bonnets; especially since I saw Patience this morning. I asked how much it cost—guess.”

But now,—having waited till that had passed away, everything was a new happiness to her.

He—together with all the clerical world of England—had heard it rumoured about that Mrs. Proudie did not confine herself to her wardrobes, still-rooms, and laundries; but yet it had never occurred to him that if he called on a bishop at one o’clock in the day, he could by any possibility find him closeted with his wife; or that if he did so, the wife would remain longer than necessary to make her curtsey.

He had, of course, himself been taunted, and held up in the House to the execration of his own constituents; but he had enjoyed his fight, and had remembered how his friend Mr. Monk had once told him that the pleasure lay all on the side of opposition.

And he felt as he made the statement as to Lord Chiltern that he blushed up to his forehead, and that his voice was strange, and that he was telling the tale of his own disgrace.

“Colonel who?”

I take for granted that the rejection of Montreal was regarded as a sine qua non in the decision.

Once again the Egyptian is raging against God, and warring with Moses and Aaron His servants, and the more part of Israel are on the side of the foe; for all too few are the sound who willingly suffer for true religion's sake.

Why did he not arrange this at once, when he promised it?

For He is not Himself the Word, as He is not the Son nor the image.

This it was that first gave rise to that fretful anger against England which has gone so far toward ruining the Northern cause.

[Matthew 13:47-49] He shows what is the shore, He shows what is the end of the sea.

spoke not to glorify himself, but to bring about a great and admirable end.

, who, because he was blind in one eye, they nicknamed the one-eyed, bishop of the church of Cæsarea in Palestine, wrote seventeen volumes On Ecclesiastes and six of Miscellaneous questions, and many treatises besides on various subjects. He was so influential in the reign of the emperor Constantius that he made Felix bishop of Rome in the place of Liberius.

But (say I) in such a slaughter-heap of dead bodies, could they not even be buried?

For as doing comes of doing, so of not doing comes not doing.

They gave Him, it says, wine mingled with myrrh.

“You take it for granted that this does trouble me much.” He was smiling as he said this, but the smile passed very quickly from his face. “I will not, however, deceive you. It does trouble me.”

For Heaven and earth and sea did He make for him, and finds more pleasure in dwelling with him than in the Heaven.

He wrote as though there were no doubt about the matter.

Then the tempter, in order to try Him, promises Him abundance, and the Lord in order to overcome cherishes hunger.

But, in truth, she hardly knew which was the man she loved!

How else could we be?

It seems that nothing gave so grand a scope to the greed of a public functionary who was at the same time governor and judge as disputed wills.

Who could speak to her character, if he could not do so?

D., On Death there are many that call, as on a kind Power: on you, O Evil One, none has called or calls.— 14.

For they take commonplace men off-hand, and set them to preside over those things, for the sake of which the only begotten Son of God did not refuse to empty Himself of His glory and become man, and take the form of a servant, and be spat upon, and buffeted, and die a death of reproach in the flesh.

And those that had [14] plagues and unclean spirits, [Mark 3:11] as soon as they beheld him, would fall, and [15] cry out, and say, You are the Son of God.

And what afterwards says He to you?

I believe, Postumianus, you have either read this letter, or, if it is still unknown to you, you may easily obtain it, when you please, from the bookcase.

Basil: Do you then think this to be a great thing? And do you fancy that you will be saved when you are not profitable to any other?

So then, if souls lose all their knowledge on being lettered with the body, they must experience something of such a nature that it makes them become blindly forgetful.

For, at the end of his letter to Quintus, he thus shows how he has sought repose, if one may use the expression, for his weariness, in what might be termed the resting-place of authority.

After Athanasius had escaped, in the manner we have described, from those who sought to arrest him, his clergy and people remained for some time in possession of the churches; but eventually, the governor of Egypt and the commander of the army forcibly ejected all those who maintained the sentiments of Athanasius, in order to deliver up the government of the churches to those who favored George, whose arrival was then expected.

Peter, too, says that he is not capable of compelling or restraining the Holy Spirit.

And then there were other troubles at Greshamsbury. It had been decided that Augusta’s marriage was to take place in September; but Mr Moffat had, unfortunately, been obliged to postpone the happy day. He himself had told Augusta—not, of course, without protestations as to his regret—and had written to this effect to Mr Gresham, “Electioneering matters, and other troubles had,” he said, “made this peculiarly painful postponement absolutely necessary.”

This then is Christ Jesus, the only Son of God, who is also our Lord.

Nevertheless, Lady Carbury, when she left the publisher’s shop, did carry a cheque with her.

and the transmigration from Crete into Phœnicia.

“No, Emily; no,” said Nora.

“What do you expect me to say? Without knowing any of the facts of the case,—except the one, that you contributed £500 to my election expenses,—you take upon yourself to tell me that I am a shameless, fraudulent swindler. And then you ask for a further explanation! In such a position is it likely that I shall explain anything;—that I can be in a humour to be explanatory? Just turn it all over in your mind, and ask yourself the question.”

Hebrews 7:25

It was in vain that Mary endeavoured to explain that she had not alluded to Larry when she declared that no one had a right to ask her to do it.

“You paid me £15 on account, Mr. Gotobed.”

They were at the moment in the centre of the park, on the grass beneath the trees, and the moon was bright over their heads.

Moreover, these two leaders are the swift hands of God, eager to anticipate Him so as to accomplish His will.

Be afraid of the day of judgment, and keep yourself pure thereunto.

I am thinking now in a great measure as to the welfare of my own relative, Lady Frances.

Father, I will that they also whom You have given Me, be with Me where I am.

Return from heaven, and behold from the habitation of Your holiness and glory.

A little while ago we were of one mind and one tongue and now are divided into many tongues.

But she moped and was wretched, and when her mother questioned her, struggling to find out how strong this feeling might in truth be, Fanny would simply make her dutiful promises—promises which were wickedly dutiful—that she would never mention the name of Mr. Saul any more.

But she returned again and again to the subject, thinking to prevail by asserting that Alec had a friend, a most excellent young man, who would go with them,— and bring his sister. Alec was almost sure that the sister would come. Lucy, however, would have nothing to do with it. Lucy thought that there should be very great intimacy indeed before anything of that kind should be permitted.

Our domestic servants (perhaps) listened, and peeped through crevices and holes, and stealthily got information of our ways.

he says, that this very thing is indeed the chiefest marvel and a very great example of the power of God, that an earthen vessel has been enabled to bear so great a brightness and to keep so high a treasure.

Ver. 28. Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by faith without the deeds of the Law.

When I was called upon to admire it, I was lost in wonder; but acknowledged that it was well that necessity should produce such results.

“Read it yourself, Agatha,” said he, “and if you then tell me to sign it, I will do so.”

How much more heretics?

No such indulgence granted Paul, who endeavours to obliterate necessity of the flesh wholly from (the list of) even honourable pretexts (for marriage unions).

God proclaims this, Moses declares it to the people, Paul preaches it to the Gentiles.

As soon as Anton should desire her to declare her purpose, she would declare it; and as he who stands on a precipice, contemplating the expediency of throwing himself from the rock, will feel himself gradually seized by a mad desire to do the deed out of hand at once, so did Nina feel anxious to walk off to the Windberg-gasse, and dare and endure all that the Zamenoys could say or do.

s Wherefore I dare not make such a distinction as to say incorruptible, indeed, for ever and ever, but invisible- not for ever and ever, but only in this world.

Let sorrow be ever so deep, and love ever so true, a man will be cold who travels by winter, and hungry who has travelled by night.

For what say we, brethren, if the Father being greater begot a Son less than He?

She left her room a little earlier than usual, thinking that she might thus meet her cousin and receive his orders.

[John 2:19] Jesus answered and said unto [9] them, Destroy this temple, and I shall raise it in three days.

“Ha! ha! ha! And it has come to that, has it? What was it you said to Dr. O’Shaughnessey when we were off Point de Galle?”

“It is such a time since I have had a hold of you,—as you call it.”

The unimaginative nature of Fulham did not allow the Fulham mind to gather in the fact that, at the same time, she might possess two or three such hats.

And of her, if such had been her last deed, men would only say that the mad Countess had gone on in her madness.

A laugh will be raised at his expense in regard to that assertion of his that, even in the matter of arrogance, his conduct should be the opposite of that of Verres.

What sort of gods, then, are they to be reckoned, the imitation of whom would be execrable to their worshippers, and to have whose likeness would be a reproach?

Traitor,” she said again, smiling and weeping, “yes, traitor; when of course you knew it.” “Is his happiness in my hands?

A more empty existence, or, one would be inclined to say, less pleasurable, no one could pass; but he had always a decent coat on his back and a smile on his face, and five shillings in his pocket with which to pay for his dinner.

She sat the whole day in the drawing-room, close by the fire, with her friend’s cloak around her, without speaking to any one.

He is called Christ from Chrism, that is, Anointing Give to the Priest somewhat to offer.

No direct accusation of any special fault was made against him in consequence.

Testimony of the holy Basil, bishop of Cæsarea:—

He felt that his letter was running into mere gossip, and was not such as she would have a right to expect.

However, to prevent the evil arising from this carelessness in the performance of their duties as conspirators, Thady was requested to swear on a cross made with the handles of two knives, that he would not divulge anything that had occurred or been said in that room that night—with which request he complied.

[Ezekiel 18:21] Again Isaiah: You who take deep and wicked counsel, turn, that you may be saved.

Chapter LVII. The Beginning of the Search for the Key and the Coat

‘Anything you like to call it. Only, what a gentleman’s habits are in that respect needn’t be made the subject of general remark.’ It was evident he was a little sore, and Jane, therefore, offered him a dish full of gooseberries. He took the plate in his hand and ate them assiduously for a while in silence, as though unconscious of what he was doing. ‘You know all about it now, don’t you?’

And by faith, he here means that concerned not with doctrines, but with the subject in hand.

I am inclined to think that it would be well—at any rate for the North; but the South must have been aware that such division could only be effected in two ways: either by agreement, in which case the proposition must have been brought forward by the South and discussed by the North, or by violence.

And at last when the winter was over and the sea was open, and when the bishops were returning to their churches, she also sailed with them in her prayers and desires.

But, it is not even possible to suppose that the heavens should be formed of primitive bodies which we call elements, because the reunion of contrary forces could not produce an even and spontaneous motion, when each of the simple bodies is receiving a different impulse from nature.

Who are the earthborn?

Moreover by saying that He it is who has 'laid the foundation of all things [Hebrews 1:10],' he shows that He is other than all things originate.

For your remark, We must beware lest, in our efforts to obtain a right adjustment of a difficult question, we cause more serious wounds, applies with no less force if the half be conceded to them.

His neighbours could not be made to hate Rowan as he hated him.

[1 Corinthians 7:1] But since all men cannot receive this saying, save they to whom it is given, [Matthew 19:9] it remains that to avoid fornication, every man ought to have his own wife, and every woman her own husband.

“Does your mamma want to have you back?” asked aunt Julia.

There had generally been so large a number in their party that the work imposed on Mr. Dunn had been very light.

It was not that he had predetermined never to influence their thoughts, but he was so habitually idle that his time for doing so had never come till the opportunity for doing so was gone forever.

For so, should a son despise the pursuits which become his father and affect slavish ways, we should not commend him as lowly of heart, but as base and servile we should reproach him.

Still further He said, 'I am he concerning whom Moses prophesied, saying, A Prophet shall the Lord our God raise unto you of your brethren, like unto me: Him hear in all things; and whosoever will not hear that Prophet shall die.'

This says Christian, this says Jew, this says heathen: him he worships, and with him he curses!...

No man has any good, except he has received it from Him who alone is good.

Exactly: because she is a trump.

[From Matthew 24:24] And he calls him the man of sin.

[Matthew 12:35] Who is it that can make nature?

Only, as Lady Rowley was the first to find out, he liked to have his own way.

Gilmore had upon the whole been disposed to think that no such attack should be made.

I have known, do know, and mean to continue to know as far as in me may lie, American ladies as bright, as beautiful, as graceful, as sweet, as mortal limits for brightness, beauty, grace, and sweetness will permit.

“If I am willing to try to undertake a duty, why should I be debarred from it any more than you?”

“Well, you will know him then, and you’ll find he’s sharp enough; that is, unless I have some offer made to me that I may choose to accept.” Mr Gazebee declared that he was not instructed to make any offer, and so he took his leave.

But lest some should, without reason, and for the perversion of what we teach, maintain that we say that Christ was born one hundred and fifty years ago under Cyrenius, and subsequently, in the time of Pontius Pilate, taught what we say He taught; and should cry out against us as though all men who were born before Him were irresponsible — let us anticipate and solve the difficulty.

2. Exposition of the Details of the Miracle.

That is, her disposition being still rather imperfect, and they doubting about her; to revive her He said these things.

Surely you are aware that Christ our Lord spoke even to the devil concerning the law, [Matthew 4:4] and that by the Apostle Paul debates were held not only with Jews, but even with heathen philosophers of the sect of the Stoics and of the Epicureans.

He knew nothing of letters, nor did he need books to support his memory; for whatever he received into his mind was never afterwards forgotten.

Other hopes and other ambitions had come upon her.

The deceitful and treacherous guide of this way, that there may appear to be some distinction between truth and falsehood, good and evil, leads the luxurious in one direction, and those who are called temperate in another; the ignorant in one direction, the learned in another; the sluggish in one direction, the active in another; the foolish in one direction, the philosophers in another, and even these not in one path.

For that which happened at His passion, that mid-day grew dark, the prophet Amos announces, saying, And it shall be, he says, in that day, says the Lord, the sun shall set at mid-day, and the day of light shall grow dark over the land: and I will convert your festive days into grief, and all your canticles into lamentation; and I will lay upon your loins sackcloth, and upon every head baldness; and I will make the grief like that for a beloved (son), and them that are with him like a day of mourning.

Our mortality The Lord loves the righteous.

Sir Thomas took the real holiday of the year at Glenbogie,—where he was too far removed from Lombard Street to be drawn daily into the vortex of his millions.

It had been impossible for her to reject her uncle’s liberal offer when it had been made.

Wherefore he is compelled to place his own good deeds and their wickedness side by side, that the spurious may become evident by the comparison.

Farewell.

But the post did not go out during the night, and the note lay hidden in the Duke’s private drawer till the morning.

Then he added, Although I may have confidence in the flesh.

“I could shoot ‘un; not a doubt about that, Mister. I could shoot ‘un;—and I wull.”

[1 Corinthians 7:34] Follow peace, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord [Hebrews 12:14]: and, Perfecting holiness in the fear of God.

Now this objection would be more appropriate in the mouth of one who did not believe in Moses (as we might quote the instances of Zamolxis and Pythagoras, who were engaged in such juggling tricks) than in that of a Jew, who is not very learned in the histories of the Greeks.

If so, could she not let him know that he was,—well, forgiven?

“Listen to me. He said that such a one as you cannot endure the presence of an uneducated and ill-mannered motherin-law. Do not interrupt me, Lord Scroope. If you will marry her, my girl shall never see my face again; and I will cling to that man and will not leave him for a moment, so that he shall never put his foot near your door. Our name shall never be spoken in your hearing. She shall never even write to me if you think it better that we shall be so separated.”

“If we all caution him against it, he can hardly withstand us all!” said Lady Arabella to herself.

He inquired here and there in the musical world and the theatrical world, and could not arrive at what he believed to be positive truth.

“I am so glad that Mr. Finn has been made a lord of something,” said Madame Max Goesler. “I had the pleasure of a long political discussion with him the other night, and I quite approve of him.”

Another again, his successor, was destroyed by noxious drugs, and his cup was to him no longer drink, but death.

When I think of the parent I cannot blame you for weeping: but when I think of the Christian and the recluse, the mother disappears from my view.

Or they are unworthy to be reckoned with them that heard these words, and contribute not their own part, but He seeks for such as are like them; therefore He says of you, of the virtuous, of them that show forth an angelic rule of life.

For if you find fault with another who plots against you, why do you make yourself liable to this accusation? If he did amiss how do you come not to shun imitating him? And observe how he puts no difference here but lays down one law for all. For he does not say, recompense not evil to the believer, but to no man, be he heathen, be he contaminated, or what not. Provide things honest in the sight of all men.

Brady, the confidential servant of the prisoner, both saw and overheard what took place at this interview, as he has told you, and he afterwards,—as he will not deny, though he will not confess it,—incited his master, during the period of his natural irritation, to go down to the wedding party, to meet a number of his tenants who would be willing to assist him in revenging himself against his enemy Keegan, the attorney, if he would assist them against their enemy, Ussher, the Revenue officer.

Let him take the thousand a year and go out from the brewery.

“Never! I might have done so, had I not seen you. I should have done so, if she had been willing. But now I never can,—never, never.” Her hand had dropped from his arm, but now she put it up again for a moment, so that he might feel the pressure of her fingers. “Say that you believe me.”

Hence shall peace also be yours from His love; hence shall every evil be removed.

“And you are Mr. Abraham Mollett,” said Sir Thomas.

How then is it dispersed into the manifold divisions of the senses?

Then I remembered the word which I had heard, Doubt not, O Hermas.

For there are many good moral qualities, of which many are competent judges, although they are not possessed by many; and by those good moral qualities those men press on to glory, honor and domination, of whom Sallust says, But they press on by the true way.

Again, what is water? Is not that too, they say, a god? This again is a matter of truly absurd disputation. Is that not a god, they say, which we make use of for so many purposes? And so again, in like manner, of the earth. Truly they walk in the vanity of their mind, being darkened in their understanding.

That he might create in Himself of the two, one new man.

For, for example, a man who is grieved by a loss that has been caused to him, is healed by a liberal compensation: one who is sore owing to a wrong done to him, is appeased by humble satisfaction being made.

Or when did the art and the schools of magic begin to be trodden down, save when the divine manifestation of the Word took place among men?

And, indeed, these doings of his were such, and so great, and so admirable, that I am deterred by the contemplation of their greatness, and confess myself incompetent to discourse in a way that shall be worthy of the honour of his deserts, and unable to relate such noble deeds in such a way that they may appear as great as in fact they are, except that the multitude of his glories is itself sufficient for itself, and needs no other heraldry.

For the slavery to these things is worse than any bondage.

He walked straight through, after his old fashion, to the room behind the bank in which sat the manager and the manager’s one clerk, and stood upon the rug before the fireplace just as though nothing had happened,—or as nearly as though nothing had happened as was within the compass of his powers.

22. Because I have kept the ways of the Lord [Psalm 17:21]. That the breadth of good works, that are by faith, and the long-suffering of perseverance should follow after.

At the moment he had felt, with savage anger, that such was his wish.

For marvellous is the foreknowledge of God, and acquainted with all things before their beginning.

Emma is undoubtedly very tedious; — thereby showing rather the patience of readers in the author’s day than any incapacity on her part to avoid the fault. The dialogues are too long and some of them are unnecessary.

“Certainly you may send it.” And so the letter was sent across to Chowton Farm.

Mr. Bonteen, however, could not bring himself to believe that the Arch-enemy would on this occasion be successful.

For the eye in question is the eye of the heart.

“I don’t believe that Kate thinks much of that,” said Alice.

“Wanted what, mother? I don’t understand you.”

If he sees that he cannot overtake you, he will cease to pursue; as we, when we can no longer see those who have robbed us, despair of the pursuit, and do not pursue, nor call on others to stop thief, but suffer them to escape.

Even you surpass them, though you have not made these things, since you do what they cannot do.

Caesar suggests that before the blessing of his advent they were driven to the disagreeable necessity of fighting yearly with each other.

If the Father has never asserted this, nor the Son confirmed it, nor the Apostles proclaimed it, then the dating which prompts their allegation is bred not of ignorance, but of hatred for Christ.

Of that I myself will say nothing, but the Jamaicans speak of it in terms which are not flattering to their own land.

In 1-4, the words, I in the Father and the Father in Me, are taken as typical.

One great partition wall ran across the space, and the only ceiling was the bare high-pointed roof of the house.

He thanks him for his information about the revival of Nestorianism and commends his zeal.

[1 Corinthians 7:3-6] Now in a case where permission must be given, it cannot by any means be contended that there is not some amount of sin.

Whence, since the Spirit of both is a kind of consubstantial communion of Father and Son, He is not called, far be it from us to say so, the Son of both.

I have plenty of money, as I have not spent any since I have been here.

It was soon put beyond a rumour, and became manifest enough, that Mr. Sowerby did not intend to retire from the county in obedience to the duke’s behests.

'We believe in the being and continual existence of each of these; that the Father is in truth the Father; the Son in truth the Son; the Holy Ghost in truth the Holy Ghost; as our Lord, when sending out His disciples to preach the Gospel, said, ' Go forth and teach all nations, baptizing them into the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost. '

“Nor Mrs. Proudie either,” said Mr. Harding.

For again, on the other hand, we find the son of the wicked man flourish in the world, and sometimes become righteous, and flourish in Christ.

Her guards perhaps?

At last I entered the bedchamber of the general, and there I overtook my friend. He was inspecting, with much attention, an article of the great man’s wardrobe which he held in his hand. It was precisely that virile habiliment to which a well-known gallant captain alludes in his conversation with the posthumous appearance of Miss Bailey, as containing a Bank of England 5 pound note.

For whereas there is among you strife, and jealousy, and division, are you not carnal and walk as men?

He had been wickedly baulked at Monkshade, by what influence he had never yet ascertained; and now he thought that the same influence must be at work to keep her again away from his aunt’s house.

That He would unveil to them the Gospel of Righteousness.

Look to Him who does guide you, and you will not look back to the place whence He is leading you forth.

Various people will put forward various candidates, each according to his own inclinations and interests, as is usually the case at such times.

What was to be said to a young lady who spoke in this way, and who had become of age only a fortnight since?

“Laws, miss, you ain’t a quarrelled with your beau?” the poor girl said.

As he was carried home in the fly, his mind was so intent upon this, he was so anxious to resolve to bring himself to do the deed, that he hardly knew where he was when the fly stopped at his hall door. As he entered his house, he stared about him as though doubtful of his whereabouts, and then, without speaking a word, made his way into the bookroom, and seated himself on his accustomed chair. The woman came to him and asked him whether money should not be given to the driver.

And this we have learned from the Saviour.

Her fears did not lie in that direction, nor had she naturally any tendency to such uneasiness.

“Oh, sir! I have not come to ask you again to love me. Oh no! I am not thinking of that. But this, this would be a lie if I kept it now; it would choke me if I wore it as that man’s wife. Take it back;” and she tendered to him the little charm which she had always worn round her neck since he had given it to her. He took it abstractedly, without thinking what he did, and placed it on his dressing-table.

He suffers no division or change or diminution; for nothing can be either added to God or taken away from Him, for He is subject to no diminution of Divinity, as to no increase of It.

But his face was of a nobler stamp, bearing a surer impress of intellect, and in that respect telling certainly the truth.

Hesiod was able, for he comprised in the work of one book the generation of the gods; but yet he gave us no information, for he took his commencement not from God the Creator, but from chaos, which is a confused mass of rude and unarranged matter; whereas he ought first to have explained from what source, at what time, and in what manner, chaos itself had begun to exist or to have consistency.

“But your letter told her nothing. Mr. Somers came down almost as soon as your letter was here. He had heard also—from Mr. Prendergast, I think it was, and Mr. Prendergast said a great deal more than you did.”

And the other represents a melancholy, weak figure without any hair, but often covered with feathers, and is intended to typify the red Indian.

Which do you praise?

He stuttered and stammered, and quickly went away;—not, however, before he had promised to come and dine as usual on the next Sunday, and not without observing that the anniversary of that fatal day of release had done something to lighten the sombre load of mourning which the widow had hitherto worn.

Scatcherd, however, would not let him go, but held his hand fast. “Thorne,” said he, “if you like it, I’ll make them put Fillgrave under the pump directly he comes here. I will indeed, and pay all the damage myself.”

There is a correspondence moreover between the number of days and nights and the resurrection which followed, for after Isaac had been slain by his father's willing heart, on the third day after the bountiful God had ordered the deed to be done, he rose to new life at the voice of Him who loves mankind.

What inward, pious, devout prayers!

Neither has this man sinned, nor his parents.

“I did;—I did.”

And O’Connell and his counsel, their base artifices, falsehoods, delays, and unprofessional proceedings, were declared by the Saxon party to be equally abominable.

This Beard was under no bond, and none of the officers of the government knew anything of the terms under which he was working.

She had asked him to tell her that he was not angry, but he would tell her nothing of the kind.

The property invested in these four million slaves forms the entire wealth of the South.

I am engaged to marry a gentleman whom I love with all my heart, and all my strength, and all my body.

To the mourners comfort, as to those who know what they have lost, and in what evils they are sunk: Blessed are they that mourn, for they shall be comforted.

He that gathers not with you scatters; [Matthew 12:30] he that is not of Christ is of Antichrist.

Homily 8 on Philippians

As long as God shall bid me, and until the shadow of the present enmity and slander shall have passed away.

To begin with, I will address you in the words of the apostle, which certainly are true, whatever I myself may be: "Let a man so account of us as of the ministers of Christ, and stewards of the mysteries of God.

“Kiss me, dearest.” Then with something of slumber still about her, Dorothy raised herself in her bed, and placed her arm on her aunt’s shoulder and embraced her. “And now for my news,” said Miss Stanbury.

The first thing, O man, which you have to venerate, is the age of the waters in that their substance is ancient; the second, their dignity, in that they were the seat of the Divine Spirit, more pleasing to Him, no doubt, than all the other then existing elements.

Let us reckon that it is better to hate the things present, since they are trifling, and transient, and corruptible; and to love those [which are to come,] as being good and incorruptible.

“You know very well,” she said, “that the times are changed, and that if you were Bishop of Barchester yourself you would not have whist played in the palace.” “I only know,” said he, “that when we had the whist we had some true religion along with it, and some good sense and good feeling also.” “You cannot be right to sneer at others for doing what you would do yourself,” said his wife.

“I hardly expected such an argument from you, or I may say the suggestion of such a line of conduct,” said Mr. Slope with a great look of injured virtue.

That line, so drawn, would have given Virginia, Maryland, Kentucky, and Missouri to the Southern Republic.

“Yes;—I shall manage to get down there.”

We told her an absolute falsehood, as to some necessity which would take us in a cab to Euston Square on the afternoon of that Christmas Day, so that we could call and bring them both to our house without trouble or expense.

He desired, at any rate, that the thing should be perfected, and his publisher had therefore come to us offering £25 for the codification and index.

“But you treated me with especial disrespect,” said Lord Fawn.

Now, however, Myles was in so good a temper, and seemed so kind to her, that that, and her little prospect of pleasure, did make her happy.

He was concentrating his energies with a view to the battle.

For Paul, whereas he was not before, became afterwards an Apostle 'by the will of God and our own calling, as itself once not being, but now taking place afterwards, is preceded by will, and, as Paul himself says again, has been made 'according to the good pleasure of His will [Ephesians 1:5].'

But in us the preacher of the Gospel by the Spirit of Christ Who spoke through him, instils the knowledge of this His proper nature when he says, Who, being in the form of God, thought it not a thing to grasp at that He was equal with God, but emptied Himself, taking the form of a servant.

For he says that the world which then was perished, and not only the earth itself, but also the heavens, by which we understand the air, the place and room of which was occupied by the water.

“But Dr. Arabin loves you truly, dear papa.”

“Herbert,” he said at last, standing up from his chair, as he made an effort to begin his speech, “I don’t know how far you will believe me when I tell you that all this news has caused me great sorrow. I grieve for your father and your mother, and for you, from the very bottom of my heart.”

For if prayers could have done anything or any good, I myself should now be in better circumstances.

“And who will do it for me?” said Crosbie, almost in despair.

After the short conversation between father and son the breakfast passed over in silence.

There he wrote that valedictory letter to Gertrude which is given at the end of the last chapter.

To the miller no Apollo could have been more perfect in beauty, and no Hercules more useful in strength.

For what profits in eating spiritually to be fed with the word of God, if he do not thence work others' edification?

CEAWLEY. Give me my hat and cloak.

There is a different light which springs up to the righteous; of which light, that never rose upon themselves, the unrighteous shall in the end say, Therefore have we erred from the way of truth, and the light of righteousness has not shined upon us, and the sun of righteousness rose not upon us.

And its having a door made in the side of it certainly signified the wound which was made when the side of the Crucified was pierced with the spear; for by this those who come to Him enter; for thence flowed the sacraments by which those who believe are initiated.

She did not suggest what was to become of her when Sir Marmaduke’s leave of absence should be expired.

“We don’t want to be a burden upon you, my dear,” said the mother.

And we must interpret in the same way what our Lord says to the sons of Zebedee, one of whom wished to sit on His left hand, the other on His right: [Matthew 20:23] My cup indeed you shall drink: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left hand, is not mine to give, but it is for them for whom it has been prepared of my Father.

Therefore also the Psalmist, struck with astonishment at the equality of this distribution, exclaimed, Night unto night shows knowledge.

Having done that, he would let his foes do their worst.

These are the very things, it says, the philosophers counsel and profess— innocence, justice, patience, sobriety, chastity.

Book II, Letter 52

But if what you see distress you, say to yourself the while, This is [only] clothing and he has put it off to receive it back more precious; this is an house and it is taken down to be restored in greater splendor.

As the descendants of Puritans and other godly Protestants, they will submit to religious teaching, but as republicans they will have no priestcraft.

Labienus demanded of Pompey the Cwearean captives, and caused them all to be slaughtered, asking them with scorn whether veterans such as they were accustomed to run away.

It is also asked whether we are to believe that certain monstrous races of men, spoken of in secular history, have sprung from Noah's sons, or rather, I should say, from that one man from whom they themselves were descended.

I have believed, I have wept, I have been hearkened unto; I have found You merciful in promising, true in repaying.

As regards Crosbie, I am inclined to believe that he did again recover his power at his office.

Some information, however, beyond this has already been given to the reader respecting Mr. Rowan’s prospects.

“And papa thinks that Mr. Saul must leave him,” continued Mrs. Clavering.

You shall have them in both directions.

And why should it be grievous at all, to one who is soon to pass away?

“Oh no;—I did not see that. It would have haunted me for ever had I done so. But it was there that I thought he must kill himself. That was a terrible time, Lord Rufford.”

Thinking, we believe; thinking, we speak; thinking, we do whatever we do; [2 Corinthians 3:5] but, in respect of what concerns the way of piety and the true worship of God, we are not sufficient to think anything as of ourselves, but our sufficiency is of God.

“Fifty guineas!”

For either we shall have spoken in the ears of them that will hear, [Sirach 25:9] and our words will bear some fruit, namely an advantage to you (since the Sower sows the Word upon every kind of mind; and the good and fertile bears fruit), or else you will depart despising this discourse of ours as you have despised others, and having drawn from it further material for gainsaying and railing at us, upon which to feast yourselves yet more.

But, if they have relations, let their property be given to their legitimate relations; yet so that an allowance for those to whom they have been consigned for penance be sufficiently provided.

And he added another blasphemy also, saying that the Lord's body which sprang from Mary was not of our substance, nor of human matter: but, though he calls it human, he refuses to say it was consubstantial with us or with her who bare him, according to the flesh.

Were you forbidden?

If you have ever loved me you cannot cease to do so merely because I am unfortunate; and if you love me still, perhaps you will consent to wait.

He saw what he had done as soon as she was gone.

But since Scripture commands each of two things— namely, that we work for the Lord without the privity of any second person, and without pressure upon ourselves, it matters not in which quarter you sin; whether in regard to your husband's privity, if he be tolerant, or else in regard of your own affliction in avoiding his intolerance.

“I should rather ask you,” said Charlotte. “I left you both at Ullathorne when I came away. What have you done with Mrs. Bold?”

The gentleman whom we had just left would require, no doubt, altogether another style.

The truth is, that in all countries, every day, and at all hours, men are born under Nativities diverse from one another, and the laws of men prevail over the decree of the stars, and they are governed by their customs.

“It is nothing, Nina. We bear those things, and think that such of you Christians as use that liberty of a vulgar tongue, which is still possible towards a Jew in Prague, are simply poor in heart and ignorant.”

Nature was overcome, and the fire gave way; so that he, of whom it was thought that he would be burned to death, had reason to marvel at himself, besprinkled, as it were, with a cooling dew.

“I will go as a matter of course,” said Hugh. “I will start at once,—at any time. To tell the truth, when I got Lady Rowley’s note, I thought that it was to be so. Trevelyan and I were very intimate at one time, and it may be that he will receive me without displeasure.”

She understood the full horror of her position from that man’s hostile face, and from the little article which he held in his hand.

Do you know that the Squire recognised you that night as well as I?

For as He took upon Him the likeness of the flesh of sin, [Romans 8:3] why should He not take upon Him the voice of sin?

“There would be many expenses, which I need not explain to you more fully. The truth is, my dear, that poor people cannot afford to live with rich people, and had better not attempt it.”

or that father of the faithful before the old testament which is from Mount Sinai, of whom the apostle says, Brethren, I speak after the manner of men; yet even a man's testament, when it is confirmed, no man disannuls or adds thereto.

He is one who certainly should be mentioned as a very remarkable personage, having risen to high honours in an occupation perhaps of all the most esteemed among men, but for which he must have seemed by nature to be peculiarly ill adapted.

And to this end He draws no one by force or compulsion: but by persuasion and benefits He draws all that will, and wins them to Himself.

Who has made so many efforts, and has so well succeeded in them all?

You’re not able—that is, you’re too foolish and weak-headed to manage it yourself; and I mean, as your guardian, to put it into the hands of those that shall manage it for you.

Is thy heart free from all vanity?

“How I do hate that early work,” said George.

“Very well,” said Lady Staveley; and from that moment it may be said that she had given in her adhesion to the Graham connection. When some time after she gave her orders to Baker as to preparing a room for Mr. Graham, it was made quite clear to that excellent woman by her mistress’s manner and anxiety as to the airing of the sheets, that Miss Madeline was to have her own way in the matter.

One energetic friend there still was,—or we may say two, the tailor and his son Daniel.

If it was so, was she not bound to show her this letter?

It occurs to none (to consider) whether a man is not good and wise because he is a Christian, or therefore a Christian because he is wise and good, although it is more usual in human conduct to determine obscurities by what is manifest, than to prejudice what is manifest by what is obscure.

Therefore he added, Yet now your kingdom shall not continue for you.

I had not felt myself to be comfortable in my old residence as a married man.

Busied as he was after this 'about the cloke and the purse,' he saw it was all of little avail, and that nothing which he could amass by such work was adequate to the demands of his ambition.

He said not, shall freely give you, but, shall reward you; yea, for He has made Himself a debtor to you, and even from this has honored you with great honor. For because He Himself is invisible, He would have your prayer be so likewise.

Caesar, too proud to refuse payment of the debt, had sent that to his former friend, and had also sent another legion, as demanded, to the Senate.

Does he not acknowledge both man's free will and God's grace?

John Crumb

There are three proposed methods of crossing the isthmus, that by railway, that by canal, and a third by the ordinary use of such ordinary means of conveyance as the land and the waters of the country afford.

No doubt the last eighteen months of her life had been made wretched by those horrid diamonds;—but they were gone, and she had fair reason to hope that the very knowledge of them was gone also.

“I have got nothing that I wanted,” said the Earl in his despair.

John 7:17

He also blamed the pagans, who were few in number, but who ought, he said, to have hastened to the temple, and, if necessary, to have suffered cheerfully for Fortune.

And, it being thought not enough unless unlawfulness were added to unlawfulness, even the property of his church, as is said, has been taken away.

But Mary, when she found her friend lying in her sorrow and scraping herself with potsherds, forbore to argue and to exult.

What matters it to him whether it was only as an Academician, and merely for the purpose of confuting Anaximenes, who had said that God is a material existence—for air is material—that Cicero objected that God must have form and beauty?

When cast forth, He did more perfectly possess the place whence He was cast forth.

I venture to attach to them in parallel columns my own translation, acknowledging in despair how impossible I have found it to catch anything of the rhythm of the author.

For blood from the flesh going forth, is seen and shuddered at: who sees the blood of the heart in a man rebaptized?

On two or three occasions an overwrought official has muttered between his teeth that ten packages were a great many, and that some of those “light fixings” might have been made up into one.

The rich man plans to add to his possessions, and he knows not that he shall not continue to possess even that which he has acquired.

God, however, in His use of us, has reference to His own goodness.

There are, however, some (liturgical usages adopted) by these, which the Sadducees refuse to recognise, for they are not disposed to acquiesce in the existence of angels or spirits.

We are commanded to have only one enemy, the devil.

[1 Timothy 1:17] And the Apostle James: "Every best giving and every perfect gift is from above, descending from the Father of light, with whom there is no changeableness, neither obscuring of influence."

What are you displeased at in me, my father?

Observe, pray, the exact care: from the one substance of the tree there is part for shelter, and part for various fruits: and the Artificer is One.

By what places is he limited to whom the whole world of riches is a possession?

But when the fullness of the time had come, God sent forth His Only-begotten Son, made of a woman, made under the law, to redeem them that were under the law that we might receive the adoption of sons.

He carried himself obediently and graciously towards all who saw him, and he was careful not to have, nor seem to have, a supercilious nature.

Because to the title of this Psalm whereon is written, For them that shall be changed, they belonged not.

This induced the brethren to regard the statement as open to the objection, that it seemed so worded as to imply that all sinners whatever were to be punished with an eternal punishment, without excepting even those who hold Christ as their foundation, although they build thereupon wood, hay, stubble, [1 Corinthians 3:12] concerning whom the apostle writes: If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss; but he shall himself be saved, yet so as by fire.

The chairman was all wrong in his law.

“And, sure, what can ye do better for the periodical than print a paper like that, which there is not a lady at the West End of the town won’t be certain to read?”

And what will be the name of the will that is compounded out of two wills?

Chapter 16. The Second Epistle to the Thessalonians. An Absurd Erasure of Marcion; Its Object Transparent. The Final Judgment on the Heathen as Well as the Jews Could Not Be Administered by Marcion's Christ. The Man of Sin— What? Inconsistency of Marcion's View. The Antichrist. The Great Events of the Last Apostasy Within the Providence and Intention of the Creator, Whose are All Things from the Beginning. Similarity of the Pauline Precepts with Those of the Creator.

This successful, noisy, pushing, worldly man had won her by his success and his worldliness.

“Nevertheless, I expect an answer, Mr. Arabin. Why were women made beautiful if men are not to regard them?”

Eran.— I am exceedingly desirous of hearing their testimony too.

What better than the stars?

“Poor Harry!” she said. “I supposed his sins would be laid at my door. But my idea is, you know, that he will never do any good at such work as that.”

There are times when anger is useful; but this is when it barks against strangers.

Whatever pretence of business had been going on was stopped in a moment, and Mr. Gresham rose to make his statement.

I think he has made her believe that I’m deserting and illtreating her; and in this way she may be piqued and tormented into marrying Kilcullen.

And there was present to him through all this a feeling that the money ought to be paid independently of the accusation brought against him.

She looked at him furtively, and perceived that the gash on his face was nearly closed.

Therefore though He was able to take them away from you, He left them, that you might have opportunity to show forth virtue; that bringing us into need one of another, He might make our love for one another more fervent.

All this had Men done at Christmas, and during such severity of weather as had never before been experienced by living Parisians.

John 6:40

O. You are quite a rhetorician, and fly from the thicket of controversy to the open fields of declamation. But, I entreat you, refrain from common-places, and return to the ground and the lines marked out; afterwards, if you like, we will take a wider range.

Still they enumerate the sins of the flesh; surely, then, for its sinful conduct it must be consigned to punishment.

So true is that saying, which I am ever repeating, Ill to do, is ill to fare.

The archdeacon hardly knew how to begin his story.

Some of the philosophers of the Porch say that there is no God at all; or, if there is, they say that He cares for none but Himself; and these views the folly of Epicurus and Chrysippus has set forth at large.

But nations (Gentiles) also, like ourselves, had likewise their mention (by the prophet) as trusting in Christ.

Do you see how he shows in himself all at once his severity and his care over them and his self-denying mind?

“Cicero,” says Suetonius, “having at some trial complained of the state of the times, Cæsar, on the very same day, at the ninth hour, passed Clodius over from the Patrician to the Plebeian rank, in accordance with his own desire.” How did it come to pass that Cæsar, who, though Consul at the time, had no recognized power of that nature, was efficacious for any such work as this?

After that, the dean relented, and the comeliness of the coat was made perfect.

Of them He Himself said when I am lifted from the earth, I will draw all (things) unto Me.

For when the apostle was struck, instead of turning his other side to the man, or telling him to repeat the blow, he prayed to God to pardon his assailant in the next world, but not to leave the injury unpunished at the time.

There was a correspondence in which Sir B. D’Urban supported his own views,—but this ended in the withdrawal of the Governor in 1838, Lord Glenelg declaring that he was willing to take upon himself the full responsibility of what he had done, and of all that might come from it.

And, although in glory, everlastingness, virtue, dominion, power, He is what the Father is, yet all these He has not unoriginately as the Father, but from the Father, as the Son, without beginning and equal; and although He is the Head of all things, yet the Father is the Head of Him.

Who would take such a heart as that?

[John 13:35] And showing how, He mentioned not the miracles, but what?

Law was dissolved, and unbounded licence permitted to judges,— to judges chosen from among the soldiery, rude and illiterate men, and let loose upon the provinces, without assessors to guide or control them.

In 1-14 we have this advance from ignorance and fear to knowledge and peace.

There was one very thick, of various shapes, grotesque and daring, looking as though the base we’re some wondrous animal of hideous form that had been made to bear the superstructure from age to age.

I exhort you therefore, that although no one see what we do, yet that each of us enter into his own conscience, and set reason for his judge, and bring forward his transgressions, and if he desire them not to be exposed to public view then in that fearful day, let him now heal his wounds, let him apply to them the medicines of repentance.

And if so, how is this possible except in our body after its resurrection?

It was something that his own shoes should remain unpolluted; but the foul mud always clinging to the boots and leggings of those by whom he was daily surrounded must, I should think, have been offensive to him.

For the sun is a type of God, and the moon of man.

The breeches-maker was in truth very unhappy.

How Did He Get It?

And again, They Two are not different One from the Other, seeing that by Their inherent nature Each is in the Other; and They are One, seeing that He, Who speaks, speaks not of Himself, and He, Who speaks not of Himself, yet does speak.

What wrong had she done that she should be so grievously punished?

For this He does not here only, but through all the Gospel; and the Prophets also employ the same method, saying many things in a metaphorical manner.

Here he zealously defended the orthodox doctrines against the attacks of the Arian bishops, and after being plotted against and frequently beaten by the people, he was driven from the country.

Why trouble her with it?

But she had felt that her daughter would make that all straight.

“If you won’t take any more wine we will join the ladies,” said the baronet.

And it is clear that whatever is done to the disciples of Jesus is done to Him.

“Would I object to telling you what passed between us? The question is a very singular one;” and then she paused a moment. “Yes, Sir Henry, I should object.”

The mystery of that other timeless birth I will not yet touch upon: its treatment demands an ampler space than this.

Midwives, and doctors, and naturalists, can tell us, from the nature of women's breasts, whether they usually flow at any other time than when the womb is affected with pregnancy, when the veins convey therefrom the blood of the lower parts to the mamilla, and in the act of transference convert the secretion into the nutritious substance of milk.

Alaric had some portion of the amount himself, and he knew that Norman had money by him; he felt also a half-drunken conviction that if Norman failed him, Captain Cuttwater would not let him want such a sum; and so he said that he could, and the bargain was completed.

Granted that he ought to have done so; but, as a matter of fact, he did not, or he was not able: what is your verdict about him?

He, after harassing with war Egypt and Ethiopia, and subduing these countries, returned as victor to Persia, but accidentally hurt himself, and died from that wound.

The worst of the trade was this: that though he worked at it about twelve hours a day, to the exclusion of all other interests in life, he could only make out of it an income which would have been considered a beggarly failure at any other profession.

Therefore he hid the medicinal steel under his robe, which he suddenly drew out and plunged into the sore, that the patient might feel the cutting blade before he saw it, lest, seeing it first, he should refuse to feel it.

No longer is God One, for a second, indistinguishable from Himself, has arisen.

Now then having added to their fear, he next brings in the things of grace, as having brought them to a strong desire of the remission of their sins, and says,

She might make him unhappy by wearing dowdy clothes, but she would not quite break his heart.

At length they did expire, when, after many hours, the violent heat had consumed their skin and penetrated into their intestines.

I both remember, then, that I have often understood these things, and what I now distinguish and comprehend I store away in my memory, that hereafter I may remember that I understood it now.

Meanwhile it is otherwise.

While He Himself is still invisible.

Upon my word, whoever did that ought to make his fortune at some of these exhibitions.

At eleven o’clock she slowly dressed herself, and before twelve crept down into the one sitting-room which they occupied.

At that moment Sir Thomas opened the door, and grasping Hamel by the hand led him away into his own sanctum.

Then Mr Melmotte explained that Lord Alfred possessed peculiar aptitudes for the position.

“Yes,—his mistress was at home,” said the butler, still shrinking at the sound of the name which he hated.

Cicero himself selects certain passages out of these speeches as examples of eloquence or rhythm, thus showing the labor with which he composed them, polishing them by the exercise of his ear as well as by that of his intellect.

“It was so dreadful,” said Lady Pomona;—”so very dreadful. I never heard of anything so bad. When young what’s-his-name married the tallow-chandler’s daughter I thought it would have killed me if it had been Dolly; but this was worse than that. Her father was a methodist.”

“Well, a torero is a man engaged in bullfighting.”

For had He not become poor, you would not have become rich.

The landlord of the “Handsome Man” jeered him when he went there canvassing.

She now sat quite quiet, with her hands crossed on her knees before her, and her eyes immovably fixed on the table which stood in the centre of the court.

Yet for all this some are so cold and senseless, as to be always seeking only the things that are here, and uttering those absurd sayings, Let me enjoy all things present for a time, and then I will consider about things out of sight: I will gratify my belly, I will be a slave to pleasures, I will make full use of the present life; give me today, and take tomorrow.

Against this Lady Mason had expostulated, but in vain.

or Pat Brady!

He is accepted as a disagreeable necessity, and is dismissed as soon as the country can do better for itself.

He either got out of the room on some excuse, or made his mother interfere on the score that so much talking would be bad for his father.

“All we want to know is,” continued the sister, “that she promises to be guided by you in this matter; and of course we feel quite sure that she will.”

And therefore by him who is exercising anxious care over the purity of his inner man, those districts should be sought, which do not by their fruitfulness and fertility invite his mind to the trouble of cultivating them, nor drive him forth from his fixed and immovable position in his cell, and force him to go forth to some work in the open air, and so, his thoughts being as it were poured forth openly, scatter to the winds all his concentration of mind and all the keenness of his vision of his aim.

Long they argued and bargained, till each was surprised at the obstinacy of the other. They ended, however, by splitting the difference, and it was agreed, that Lord Cashel was at once to hand over thirty thousand pounds, and to take his son’s bond for the amount; that the other debts were to stand over till Fanny’s money was forthcoming; and that the income of the newly married pair was to be seven thousand five hundred a-year.

“Intemperance! It was brandy—sheer brandy. He brought himself to such a state that nothing but brandy would keep him alive, and in which brandy was sure to kill him—and it did kill him. Did you ever hear of the horrors of drink?”

Is, then, what has happened of small moment, and is my passionate grief unreasoning?

But the countenance of the Lord is upon men doing evil things, that He may destroy from the earth the remembrance of them: He shall destroy the remembrance of them, not by blotting out their sins.

196. Petilianus said: "Therefore I say, He ordained that we should undergo death for the faith, which each man should do for the communion of the Church. For Christianity makes progress by the deaths of its followers. For if death were feared by the faithful, no man would be found to live with perfect faith. For the Lord Christ says, ‘Except a grain of wheat fall into the ground and die, it abides alone: but if it die, it brings forth much fruit.'" [John 12:24]

He too thought of what the world would say, he too felt that such an affair, after having become known to the police, would be soon known to every one else.

He promised to come and dine with his daughter, and stay with her, and visit her, and do everything but absolutely live with her.

“But I should like you to see what I have said. You know about things, and if it is too much or too little, you can tell me.” Then he read her letter, which ran as follows.

She floods his house with her constant nagging and daily chatter, and ousts him from his own home, that is the Church.

“It has been most unfortunate,” continued the bishop. “I have never before had a clergyman in my diocese placed in so distressing a position.”

But when Barrington Erle said this, the great leaders of the Liberal party had not as yet decided on their ground of action.

Or, if we cannot adduce any instances, why should any one regard it as a sufficient proof that such and such syllables and words were appointed by God Himself?

For I do indeed desire to suffer, but I know not if I be worthy to do so.

“He has murdered me,” groaned the Marquis.

There are one or two other North American lines, perhaps open to the same objection.

How then, you will say, is such an one well off, who is wicked?

For the glory of the Son is referred again to Him.

Old Mr. Garnett stated that he would swear to them if he saw the necklace.

But Bertie went upstairs and spent a pleasant evening. He finished the Lookalofts, greatly to the delight of his sisters, though the manner of portraying their décolleté dresses was not the most refined. Finding how matters were going, he by degrees allowed it to escape from him that he had not pressed his suit upon the widow in a very urgent way.

To his well-beloved brother Flavian the bishop [of Constantinople], Leo the bishop.

Did He then wait first to hear, and then choose, and had He need of learning it?

Under these combined circumstances she had no alternative but to release him from the offer he had made.

For that is the word of one who signifies the desire which he has concerning the act.

Liberius, however, was, a little afterwards, restored to the city, in consequence of the disturbances at Rome.

The words Mine heart has uttered a good Word, then, are the same thing with, I speak of the things which I have made unto the King.

Desiithæc administratio?

Cæsar was not false.

But what does the Lord?

Therefore with more truth they killed at the time when they cried out.

“Maybe we shall have more if we don’t look to it,” said Bunce stoutly.

Let us lay hold of the opportunity, of the commandment of the Law, the mercy of our vocation, the desire of suffering.

Whence it follows that though conjugal fidelity in religious men and women is undoubtedly a virtue, for it is neither a nonentity nor a vice, yet it does not bring along with it all virtues, for if all virtues were there, there would be no vice, and if there were no vice, there would be no sin; but where is the man who is altogether without sin?

You can do yourself no good by remaining there.’ ‘No,’ she said, sullenly; ‘no; I will stay.’ ‘You will only make yourself ill,—you and your mother.’

Observe also the wisdom of God; for when Adam said, I heard Your voice, and I was afraid, for I was naked, and I hid myself, God does not at once convict him of what he had done, nor say, Why have you eaten of the tree?

Jones, she was sure, knew it all; but she did not ask a single question of her servant.

How this that is said of the devil in the gospel is to be understood; viz., that he is a liar, and his father.

And then the position which chance now offered to her was fortunate.

This Joseph would have fled, though after a certain fashion he liked the woman, had he been able to assure himself that the fault had in no degree been his.

And He who for this end came into the world, begs off from the cup of suffering.

“Yes; he will certainly be brought into it.”

How, save to be in Jacob?

However, as I have said, let us think shame even to refute this opinion, whereby sins are supposed to be punished in people who die or have died because they have been foreknown as certain to do them if they had lived; lest we also may seem to have thought it to be of some importance, although we would rather repress it by argument than pass it over in silence.

Having therefore crossed the lake, as if going over dry ground, they found the gates of the city open, and overpowered the usurper.

He, at any rate, had loved her, though his eagerness in love had been, as she told herself, but shortlived.

But her husband, in such emergencies, would become furious and quarrelsome, and would declare that Labour was going to the wall, and that something very strong must be done at once.

For no one could help believing what was proclaimed aloud by facts, while some would probably disbelieve what was told to them in words.

For nothing is so ridiculous and disgraceful as this passion, nothing so full of shame and dishonor.

Yet these things happen without our regarding it, and we live on in luxury and pleasure, and are ever furnishing ourselves with such things, as if we were immortal.

Now painters we know shut themselves up and execute all their works with great nicety and in quiet; not opening the doors to any one: but this man, setting forth his tablet in the view of the world, in the midst of universal opposition, clamor, disturbance, did under such circumstances work out this Royal Image, and was not hindered.

These memorials that I have written unto you, my beloved, concerning Jesus Who was persecuted, and the righteous who were persecuted, are in order that those who today are persecuted for the sake of the persecuted Jesus, may be comforted, for He wrote for us and comforted us Himself; for He said:— If they have persecuted Me, they will also persecute you.

But much more full of power are the words of the apostle: I die daily through your glory.

All these then whom I have named separated themselves from the Egyptians and celebrated divine service with the great Gregory.

You can’t always refuse when you’re asked, but you can always get out of an engagement afterwards if you know what you’re about.

Say, to be sure, what almost everybody says of it— that it is an imposture.

Carrying a trencher.

Chapter 14. A Farther Mention of his Prayers in the Tabernacle.

He neither had a beginning, nor will He have an end; but He was everlastingly ranged with and numbered with the Father and the Son.

We bite and devour one another.

Then, again, when He is designated by John (the Baptist) as the Lamb of God, [John 1:29] He is not described as Himself the same with Him of whom He is the beloved Son.

A good indeed is the wisdom of God, proclaimed along with the other good foresaid by those whose feet are beautiful.

Have you ever seen men led away to death?

And who else is able to save and conduct the soul of man to the God of all things, save God the Word, who, being in the beginning with God, became flesh for the sake of those who had cleaved to the flesh, and had become as flesh, that He might be received by those who could not behold Him, inasmuch as He was the Word, and was with God, and was God?

It had then become nearly midsummer and I made up my mind that it would be very hot.

For when these generated (bodies), by reason of Discord, cease to exist, Friendship, laying hold on them, brings them forward, and attaches and associates them herself with the universe.

But during the month of August Captain Clayton found occasion more than once to come into the neighbourhood of Headford.

For they condemn the creature's nature to the Creator's injury, and maintain that they are defiled by eating those things of which they contend the devil, not God, is the author: although absolutely nothing that exists is evil, nor is anything in nature included in the actually bad.

What further?

‘We had better say some day next month, my dear,’ said Madame Voss, again nodding her head. Michel, struck by the peculiarity of her voice, looked into her face, and saw the unaccustomed wisdom. He made no answer, but after a while nodded his head also, and went out of the room a man convinced. There were matters between women, he thought, which men can never quite understand. It would be very bad if there should be any slip here between the cup and the lip; and, no doubt, his wife was right.

Next we must inquire how He said to Peter, You are a stumbling-block unto Me, [Matthew 16:23] especially when David says, Great peace have they that love Your law, and there is no stumbling-block to them.

He was fond of making himself useful, and was a perfect master of all those little caressing modes of behaviour in which the caress is quite impalpable, and of which most women know the value and appreciate the comfort.

I have been thinking of looking for it.

“You can’t know them all, and yet keep yourself altogether separated from Arthur. Think what it would be to me never to be able to ask him to the house. He is the only one of the family that lives in London, and now it seems that Everett will spend most of his time down here. Of course it is better that you should meet him and have done with it.” There was no answer to be made to this, but still she was fixed in her resolution that she would never meet him as her lover.

“Take orders! You! You can no more swallow the thirty-nine articles than I can eat Twisleton’s dinner.”

There was, at any rate, quarrelling between Clodius and Pompey, in the course of which Pompey was induced to consent to Cicero’s return.

As yet that Israel perchance does not understand what are the holocausts thereof which He has in His sight always, and is still thinking of oxen, of sheep, of he-goats: let it not so think: I will not accept calves of your house.

For the Holy Spirit came upon a hundred and twenty men, without the laying on of any person's hands, and again upon Cornelius the centurion and those who were with him, even before they were baptized.

It never occurred to him that he had, in truth, been imprudent when paying his visits alone to Mrs. Peacocke.

For no one can feel confident regarding a good which he knows can be taken from him, although he wishes to keep and cherish it.

A letter addressed “poste restante, Venice,” will reach me here.

But, no; I will not see you again.

For that is true which is written, Pride goes before destruction, and before honor is humility; [Proverbs 18:12] that is to say, secret ruin precedes open ruin, while the former is not counted ruin.

But of the two men we think it probable that Lord Palmerston knew Eastern Europe the better, and had the clearer idea of what he intended to do.

What had he not done for Augustus?

Preface to the Commentary on Ecclesiastes

Because as long as we are in the body we are absent from the Lord.

Our God changed His purposes; in like manner yours did also.

I have believed you to be sweet, and pure, and innocent, and true;—one in whom my spirit might refresh itself as a man bathes his heated limbs in the cool water.

When I was sitting with the officers in their uniform around me it seemed as though a little block of England.

Famous in Saracen fight, Rode in his youth, the Good Knight, Scattering Paynims in flight.

A dangerous illness had then led to her conversion, and she was now famous throughout Rome for the length to which she carried her austerities.

And she shall bring forth, says he, a Son, and you shall call His name Jesus.

She must know before long that Crinkett, and probably the woman also, were in her neighbourhood.

And yet there was something about her which seemed to justify the soubriquet of duchess, which the girls had given to her. She had a certain grandeur about her cap, and a majestical set about the skirt of her dress, and a rigour in the lines of her mouth, which indicated a habit of command, and a confidence in her own dignity, which might be supposed to be the very clearest attribute of duchessdom.

“But then I might find myself dropped in a hole at last.”

Why should I pursue this part of the subject in more detail?

Not now, as we, perhaps, might have done but for this; but at some future time when he may think himself able to support a wife.

Dan shall judge his people, as himself also one tribe in Israel. And let Dan become a serpent by the way, lying on the path, stinging the horse's heel; and the horseman shall fall backward, waiting for the salvation of the Lord. Gad— a robber's troop shall rob him; and he shall spoil it at the heels. Aser— his bread shall be fat, and he shall furnish dainties to princes.

And a proof of it is this; that, when He had spoken humanly 'No, not the Son knows,' He yet shows that divinely He knew all things.

“And what do I believe, Phineas? Can you read my thoughts?”

Plato, indeed, spoke many things respecting the one God, by whom he said that the world was framed; but he spoke nothing respecting religion: for he had dreamed of God, but had not known Him.

He saw Gregory for a moment, but only nodded at him smiling, and passed on.

In short, he exercised a vigilant care over all alike, and interceded with God as much for the safety of his enemies as for that of his own subjects.

O Lord, by its flood it makes me mournful.

He was now fifty, and as fit, bodily and mentally, for hard work as ever he had been.

Where and when those initiated in the mysteries of Cœlestis received any good instructions, we know not.

Therefore Jesus was predestinated, so that He who was to be the Son of David according to the flesh should yet be in power the Son of God, according to the Spirit of sanctification, because He was born of the Holy Spirit and of the Virgin Mary.

Who is a liar, but he that denies that Jesus is the Christ?

The whole, therefore, of this revolving order of things bears witness to the resurrection of the dead.

[Genesis 3:5] Thus Jephtha too he persuaded, under the pretext of religion, to slay his daughter, and to offer the sacrifice the Law forbade.

“That is an attraction certainly,” said Lady Lufton. “I do like going to a house when I know that you will be there.”

Do you wish to receive kindness?

“Thank you, sir; I don’t know that there is anything you can do for us—except to spare him. The thief on the cross was forgiven, sir.”

She had let the moment go by,—the first moment,—when he was close to her, and now there would be half the room between them.

But how great an evil this is, you may learn from the affairs in which we are now involved.

She turned from him with scorn as he said this, and went into the hut. It was time for her to get ready for her work, and one of the great injuries done her lay in this, that such a one as Barty Gunliffe should come and look at her during her toil among the breakers.

And so a party absolutely formed itself in Barchester on Mr. Slope’s side of the question!

“There is no favour conferred,—none at all,” he had said; but speaking nevertheless in his usual sharp, ungenial tone.

There were houses to which I could have gone with my eyes blindfold; doors of which the latches were familiar to my hands; faces which I knew so well that they had ceased to put on for me the fictitious smiles of courtesy.

No indeed.

When a mare has been trained to her work, and knows what she’s at in her running, she’s all the better for feeling a fellow’s hands as she’s going.

Jacob, by putting rods into the water-troughs, caused the sheep of his uncle to conceive, so that he should obtain their young.

Now there had come upon the scene in London one who could drive him.

He was a man whose displeasure, when he was displeased, those around him were apt to fear.

But goodness greatly rejoices those who hold by it, and makes them strong, imparting to them the capacity of seeing through all things.

And so the arrangement of our treatise follows closely the order of the objections raised.

Alice had resolved, with great pain to herself, that in this matter she owed her father no obedience.

The servants had all heard of his intended marriage, and now they must also hear that that intention was abandoned.

And then they stretch their power, and crush at last

The next Sunday passed by very quietly, and nothing was seen of Mr. Gilmore at the Vicarage.

“Your hair cut!”

For we say, it may be, that the Deity is incorruptible, or powerful, or whatever else we are accustomed to say of Him.

If we assign priority to (the formation of) one of the natures, and a subsequent time to the other, we shall have further to determine the precise times of the semination, according to the condition and rank of each.

Stir up your soul also when it is shrinking, and backward, and bashful, and ashamed, by perpetually harping on this theme and saying, Why are you delaying?

For hear how he began: Having a great High Priest that is passed into the heavens [Hebrews 4:14 and omitting to say how He was great, he says again, For every High Priest taken from among men, is appointed for men in things pertaining to God.

And then he remembered, too, that if this man did anything amiss in the high office which he had been made to fill, he who had induced him to fill it was responsible.

It had never occurred to him that Mrs. Tappitt had regarded him as a possible son-in-law, or that, having so regarded him, she could hold him in displeasure because he had failed to fall into her views.

Of course, if there’s anything she fancies, we’ll take care to get it for her; but she must be kept quiet.” Upon this Alice left him, having had no moment of time to guess what had happened, or was about to happen; and he was again alone, contemplating the future glories of his house.

How came he then to be so severely punished?

My dear old friend Laurence Fitzgibbon, in the performance of his official duties, had to give an opinion on a matter affecting an expenditure of some thirty or forty thousand pounds of public money.

For then it might be long when there was that which could be long, but when past it no longer was; wherefore that could not be long which was not at all.

And it cannot be said that it is from ignorance that the Lord is not willing to save humanity, because He knows not how each one is to be cared for.

My heart was high on other matters, and why should I have sacrificed myself?

They seek something else from Him, but seek not Himself.

I was going to say that Sir Lionel’s appearance was the best thing about him; but in saying so I should belie his manner, with which it was certainly difficult for any one to find fault. It was what the world calls happy, meaning thereby, that so great was the possessor’s luck that he was able to make it pleasant to all men, and to all women—for a while. Mrs. Bertram—she had not lived to be my lady—had, I believe, not always found it so.

If in performing that duty he had sacrificed himself, he must bear his undeserved punishment like a man.

Even the Pythagoreans shunned company of this kind and were wont to dwell in solitary places in the desert.

[Galatians 3:23] The law was therefore given, in order that grace might be sought; grace was given, in order that the law might be fulfilled.

But it is fair that, as we condemn this heresy so we should also condemn the perverse doctrines of Origen.

To reject Him is to neglect the glory of the only God; is not, then, His glory the glory of the only God, if to receive Him steadfastly was to seek the glory of the only God?

It is a contest, this life present: if so, to fight is our business now: it is war and battle.

These men having gone through them all, were made more glorious by each one of them, yea more exceedingly illustrious, and increased the store of their treasures in Heaven.

And all these things accrued to us through His poverty.

“Suppose we join the ladies,” said the earl, awakened by the sudden lull in Mr O’Joscelyn’s voice. “But won’t you take a glass of Madeira first, Mr Armstrong?”

Instead of doing so, he took the girl in his arms and kissed her, and swore that, whether with fortune or no fortune, she should be his, and his only.

Perhaps one should say he was sitting at the feet of Gamaliel, and took no part with the multitude who conspired against Jesus: for Gamaliel does not appear to have been an ambitious man.

In the case of soul and body, which are of natures contemporary and naturally united, we are accustomed to make this distinction, describing the soul as simple, reasonable, and immortal, but the body as complex, passible, and mortal.

He taught, namely, to believe Him the Son of God, and exhorted to preach Him the Son of Man; man saying and doing all that belongs to God; God saying and doing all that belongs to man.

Because Peter believed this, he received the keys of the kingdom of heaven, and without anxiety for himself forgave sins.

She was eminently an intelligent woman, seeing far into character, and she knew pretty well the real condition of her nephew’s mind, and could foresee his conduct.

“Then, Fanny, I truly pity you.”

“Certainly not, Miss French.”

The word “lie” itself was offensive to him,—offensive, even though it might not be applied directly to himself; but he still quailed, and was unable to express his indignation,—as he had done to poor Lucy Morris, his mother’s governess.

VI. And this equality which the Son has with the Father, the Holy Ghost also has

I think that Mr. Freeman has failed to perceive that amusement is as needful and almost as necessary as food and raiment.

If the scorpion, swinging his tail in the air, still reproach us with having a murderer for our God, I shall shudder at the altogether foul breath of blasphemy which comes stinking from his heretical mouth; but I will embrace even such a God, with assurance derived from reason, by which reason even He Himself has, in the person of His own Wisdom, by the lips of Solomon, proclaimed Himself to be more than a murderer: Wisdom (Sophia), says He has slain her own children.

“I should simply take the key of the house from him,—or bolt the door if he will not give it up.”

He continues to say that neither have visible things been given to man (by God), but each individual thing comes into existence and perishes for the sake of the safety of the whole passing agreeably to the change, which I have already mentioned, from one thing to another.

Go, make disciples of all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you; giving the one charge with a view to doctrine, the other concerning commandments.

And what man is there so ignorant or what a god is, certainly, as to think that they are maintained by any kind of nourishment, and that it is the food given to them which causes them to live and endure throughout their endless immortality?

When his wars were over, he returned to Rome with a great treasure; and indeed during these wars in Gaul he expended large sums in bribing Romans.

Hear me, at any rate,” she continued, for there was a murmur among the more resolute of Denot’s enemies.

Yes, kind sir, a noble hall, if you will but observe it; a true old English hall of excellent dimensions for a country gentleman’s family; but, if you please, no dining-parlour.

But what is it to me, O my true Life, my God, that my declaiming was applauded above that of many who were my contemporaries and fellow-students?

Mrs. Brattle, when she heard her daughter’s voice, was so confounded, dismayed, and frightened, that for awhile she could give no direction as to what should be done.

“The old Duke?”

While I was saying these things to Appion, Peter drew near from Cæsarea, and in Tyre the people were flocking together, hurrying to meet him and unite in an expression of gratification at his visit.

In such case, Madeline Staveley must be no more to him than her sister.

The fourth was in defence of Rabirius.

But there had been traffic of marriage with this man, and even continued correspondence and an understanding as to things which had put her with all her loveliness on a level with him rather than with her existing husband.

The proposed conditions offer but one member for the Legislative Council, and four for the Assembly, to join twenty-one members in the former house, and sixty-eight in the latter.

“That’s what I should have done, too.”

Such a little trifle as this will not break our loves.” And so it was settled.

There was a prestige of success about her doings, and she felt almost confident that her dear son Ludovic must fall in love with Griselda.

He seemed comforted to feel her hand upon the bed, and was glad to pronounce her name, and spoke to her as though she had been the favourite of the family for years, instead of the one member of it who had been snubbed and disregarded.

And the wires seem to be the strings of some wonderful harp,—aerial or perhaps infernal,—from which the beholder expects that a louder twang win soon be heard.

“Ladies and gentlemen sometimes do change their minds;—but in this case I do not think it likely.”

Attend not solely to yourselves: but to those who are in want around you.

“Of course it is scandalous. And, moreover, I know the motives and the malice of the wretched man who is the editor. But the paper is read, and the foul charge if repeated will become known, and the allegation made is true. I did pay the man’s election expenses;—and, moreover, to tell the truth openly as I do not scruple to do to you, I am not prepared to state publicly the reason why I did so. And nothing but that reason could justify me.”

It is not as to them that the family is loud in its condemnation.

The parson of the parish in England, a few years since, was almost necessarily a man who had been educated at Oxford or Cambridge.

From the presence of wickedness is the righteous man taken, and his burial shall be in peace: he is taken from our midst.

“God knows how far he may be indulging a false hope, or deceiving himself altogether; but he thinks it possible that you might—might become fond of him. There, Margaret, that’s the long and the short of it. And when I told him that he had better say that himself, he declared that you would not bring yourself to listen to him while I am lying here dying.”

On their way they had not come across a single shred of vegetation, though here and there stood the bare trunks of a few dead and headless trees, the ghosts of the forest which had occupied the place six or seven years previously.

They had, I believe, devoted themselves with a true spirit of patriotism.

You have been, as it were, sent through the fire and purged of so much of of your dross.

Say to those who would persuade you differently, what I have written, I have written.

Does he, by what still remains, make at all more secure this headless and rootless statement of his, in which, in its earliest stage, nothing was laid down that had any force with regard to the point he is trying to establish?

Therefore our toil is excessive.

Thinking of all this, when the morning came, she left the letter lying within her desk.

I cannot part with the West without saying, in its favor, that there is a certain manliness about its men which gives them a dignity of their own.

[Luke 20:1] And it came to pass, on one of the days, as Jesus was walking in the temple, and teaching the people, and preaching the [28] gospel, [Luke 20:2a] that the chief priests and the scribes with the elders came upon him, and said unto him, Tell us: [Mark 11:28b] By what power do you do this?

That’s the way to win her.” Larry did go to the club and did think very much of it as he walked home.

[Galatians 3:21-22] But sin is not imputed where there is no law.

He saw his uncle daily,—probably twice a day; but the Earl never alluded to his Irish love.

He also had drunk, but not so as to obscure his mind.

The young politician hardly expects to be Prime Minister, but he does, within his own bosom, think it possible that he may achieve an entrance within those doors which enclose that mysterious entity which we call the Cabinet.

By robbery and concealing his robberies, by selling his judgments in such a way that he should maintain some reticence by ordinary precaution, he might have made much money, as other governors had done.

Since that, for twelve months he had been travelling abroad in quest, he said, not of consolation, but of some mitigation of his woe.

So both each are in each, and all in each, and each in all, and all in all, and all are one.

Of the same from his discourse on Elkanah and Hannah:—

But that he whom the Italians call Saturnus did lurk there, is clearly evidenced on the face of it, from the fact that from his lurking the Hesperian tongue is to this day called Latin, as likewise their author Virgil relates.

[Romans 5:5] And as he who is blessed in Christ is blessed in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit, because the Name is one and the Power one; so, too, when any divine operation, whether of the Father, or of the Son, or of the Holy Spirit, is treated of, it is not referred only to the Holy Spirit, but also to the Father and the Son, and not only to the Father, but also to the Son and the Spirit.

When at length it was decided that the council should be held in Seleucia, a city of Isauria, by Valens and his adherents, for Valens was then sojourning in Sirmium; since they favored the heresy of the Anomians, they urged the bishops who were present at the military court, to subscribe to a formulary of the faith which had been prepared, and in which there was no mention of the term substance.

For your blood-stained conscience makes your feeble prayers of no effect; because the Lord God regards purity of conscience more than the words of supplication, according to the saying of the Lord Christ, ‘Not every one that says unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that does the will of my Father which is in heaven.'

‘No, no, no!’ said Jabesh, covering the paper over with his hands; ‘you young men know nothing of filling bills; just sign it, Mr. Tudor, and I’ll do the rest.’ And so Charley signed it, and then M’Ruen, again taking the pen, wrote in ‘fifteen pounds’ as the recognized amount of the value of the document. He also took out his pocketbook and filled a cheque, but he was very careful that Charley should not see the amount there written. ‘And now,’ said he, ‘we will go to the bank.’

For if nothing but this capacity of ours were assisted by this grace, the Lord would rather have said, Every man that has heard and has learned of the Father may possibly come unto me.

One passage, accordingly, I shall in the briefest terms advert to, so as not to leave the topic unexplained.

And it might still be that he should win her;—for he had done nothing to disgrace himself in her sight.

“I am sure it was so.” Then the boy again plucked up his courage, and declared with a loud voice, that it was not so.

To say nothing of that life which is lived in the womb; for I do not think it to be none.

“Tom is here,” she said, “in the garden. He has encountered all this danger to pay us a visit because it is Christmas. Oh, aunt, what are we to do? He says that Frank would certainly give him up!”

“I promised to give you a message,” she said.

But the fault by which sin is committed is not yet in every respect healed, and the fact of its becoming permanently fixed in us arises from our not rightly using the healing virtue; and so out of this faulty condition the man who is now growing strong in depravity commits many sins, either through infirmity or blindness.

In the first years of his manhood, when he had been shut up at Manor Cross, looking after his mother’s limited means, with a full conviction that it was his duty to sacrifice himself to her convenience, he had been apt to tell himself that he was one of those men who have to go through life without marrying—or loving.

“Speak for yourself,” said her ladyship, with a laugh. “I, at any rate, can get about without any assistance,”—which, indeed, was true enough.

For though he said, Let us keep the feast, not with a view to the presence of the Passover or of Pentecost did he say it; but as pointing out that the whole of time is a festival unto Christians, because of the excellency of the good things which have been given.

Your difficulty is how Joseph could have two fathers.

“You know where the meet was; well, they drew Ballytowngal, and found no fox there. It was not expected, and nothing happened there. The people did not come into old Nick Bodkin’s demesne, but we had heard by the time that we were there that we should come across a lot of Landleaguers at Moytubber. There they were as thick as bees round the covert, and there was one man who had the impudence to tell Tom Daly that draw where he might, he would draw in vain for a fox to-day in County Galway.”

For these to believe, to hope, to love is enough.

To fill up their sins always.

He felt the occasion to be one on which he might endeavour to move even higher powers than that, and therefore he had opened the matter to the duke—not by direct application, but through Mr. Fothergill.

It was not now that he feared the task immediately before him, but that he was overcome by the feeling of general failure which had come upon him.

And though he had for a few weeks been perfectly contented with his Cecilia, there could be no doubt that he had experienced keenly the sense of relief when she had told him that the engagement must be at an end.

Grace Crawley Returns Home

“Oh yes. I call that good fun, because it did no harm. He had his lark. The lady was taken where she wanted to go, and she saved her money.”

“‘Well, go, Mr. Jones,’ said the senior clerk, ‘go, but as you go, resolve that tomorrow you will remain at your desk. Now go, and may prosperity attend you!’

Was it not very possible that she had been invited that she might meet Lady Midlothian there, and encounter all the strength of a personal battery from the Countess?

For He brings upon us the fire of tribulation, that He may purge us from the rust of vices; but we lose not our rust even by fire, when even amid scourges we lack not vice.

But even then we did not desist, supported as we were by a clear conscience, from making the same supplication again to the most devout Emperor: and he, acting as became his piety, sent to Theophilus again, summoning him from Egypt, and his associates, in order to give an account of the late proceedings, and informing him that he was not to suppose that the one-sided deeds which he had so unjustly perpetrated in our absence, and in violation of so many canons, would suffice for his defence.

And perhaps our knowledge of the whole number of the years is not quite accurate, because the odd months and days are not set down in the sacred books.

God bless you, my own one!

I rejoin that this is my belief.

These various retrenchments were highly lauded by some few, but strongly reprobated by all others, as tending to bring the imperial dignity into contempt, by stripping it of those appendages of pomp and magnificence which exercise so powerful an influence over the minds of the vulgar.

But what is it that He says, All that the Father gives Me shall come unto Me [John 6:37], and I will raise it up in the last day?

As for those who make up a mythology about the æons and arrange them in syzygies (yokes or pairs), and who consider the Logos and Life to have been emitted by Intellect and Truth, it may not be beside the point to state the following difficulties.

But who is it that announces the counsel of the Father to those of His creatures who are worthy and who have risen above themselves, who but the Saviour?

Among such as these, at that unstable period of my life, I studied books of eloquence, wherein I was eager to be eminent from a damnable and inflated purpose, even a delight in human vanity.

Dorothy was, in truth, very fond of the new friend she had made; but it had never occurred to her that he might be a possible suitor to her.

She had loved him, and was tormented by a feeling that she had had a more full delight in that love than in this other that had sprung up subsequently.

These were not Hollanders from Holland, but Dutchmen lately imported from the Cape Colony;—and as such were infinitely more antagonistic to the real Boer than would be any Englishman out from Europe.

“Not in the least. I then told you that you should still have the shares for the price named. But I did not offer them to any one else. So I came home,—and you chose to come with me. But before I started, and again after, I told you that the offer did not hold good, and that I should not make up my mind as to selling till after I got to England.”

Certain persons have devoted the whole of their energies and life to the single object of knowing the names, houses, and characters of married ladies.

“To me it is; not only a reason, but a law. I have given him my promise.”

He is utterly, utterly smashed.

For they are above the reach of the darts.

For this is the sin, whereof the Spirit does convict the world, as the Lord says, Of sin indeed because they have not believed on Me.

Her zeal for Christianity made her anxious to find the wood which had formed the adorable cross.

Our intention then was known to You; but to men— excepting our own friends— was it not known.

Knowing then these things, bring up your children in the chastening and admonition of the Lord.

“I don’t care a straw for any other person,” said Johnny.

“I don’t think you understand her, Madame Gordeloup.”

But I find these two Psalms, the CVth and CVIth so connected, that in one of them, the first, the people of God is praised in the person of the elect, of whom there is no complaint, whom I imagine to have been there in those with whom God was well pleased; [1 Corinthians 10:5] but in the following Psalm those are mentioned among the same people who have provoked God; though the mercy of God was not wanting even to these This Psalm therefore begins like the former; Confess ye unto the Lord.

Miss O’Mahony appeared to be one of them.

Chapter 13. It is Not Enough that God Know Us to Be Chaste: We Must Seem So Before Men. Especially in These Times of Persecution We Must Inure Our Bodies to the Hardships Which They May Not Improbably Be Called to Suffer

Why was He called the Word?

It should be our object to select for our own acquaintances the best we can find of all countries.

There was already a republican army in La Vendée, under the command of General Biron, but the troops of which it was composed were chiefly raw levies, recruits lately collected by the conscription, without discipline, and, in a great degree, without courage; but the men who were now brought to carry on the war, were the best soldiers whom France could supply.

Not that he believed that she loved him; but it seemed possible to him that she resented the absence of his attention.

Chapter 31. Of Hosius, Bishop of Cordova.

There came to be interest made for permission to serve, and boastings were heard of unparalleled success in the bazaar line.

And, to do your own business, you should not want to require curiously of the world's actions, or, examining the lives of others, want to spend your strength, not on bettering yourselves and aiming at virtue, but on depreciating your brethren.

I insist upon this in order that those who are personally interested as Civil servants may look the matter full in the face, and tell themselves the truth respecting their own positions.

Lately, however, at the lamented decease of Dr Stanhope—who had died of apoplexy at his villa in Italy—Mr Athill had been presented with the better preferment of Eiderdown, and had, therefore, removed to another part of the county.

The two men had known each other in London, and it was natural that Morton, as owner of the ground, should come out and speak to the only man who knew him.

For our self-contradictory friend would not indicate things differing in nature by identity of appellation, but it is surely for this reason, that the definition of essence in Father and Son is one, that he says that the one is most proper, and that the other also is most proper.

Were any one to know that she had assisted in arranging such a marriage, that any one would certainly condemn her.

For He who was born of her is not worshipped on her account, but she is honoured with the highest titles on account of Him Who was born from her.

Which of them did he love?

“I would not wish to think so.”

It was only within the last month that he had discovered that his father had succeeded in laying his hands on certainly the bulk of his money, and it might be upon all.

Mrs. Orme, as will have been seen, was sufficiently anxious to perform the task which she had given herself, but yet her heart sank within her as she descended to the parlour.

Who had a fuller knowledge of the things of God, both from the Divine oracles, and from her own understanding?

I will not therefore find fault with you for putting down that a document was acquired when you meant that it was bought; though acquiring is said of things like in kind, whereas buying implies the counting out of money: nor for such a sentence as as he who was returning to you was hurrying back again which is a redundancy worthy of the poorest style of diction.

How then is it said, in the passage which he has quoted and left unsolved, There is none that does good, no, not one, unless that the Psalmist there censures some one nation, among whom there was not a man that did good, wishing to remain children of men, and not sons of God, by whose grace man becomes good, in order to do good?

IX. The blessedness of peace-making

But Peter, hearing these things, said with tears: [Greatly do I wonder at the infinite patience of God, and, on the other hand, at the audacity of human rashness in some.

For unless He had been man, He could not have been slain; unless He had been God, men would not have believed that He would not do what He could, but that He could not do what He would; nor should we have thought that righteousness was preferred by Him to power, but that He lacked power.

A line to the North and NorthEast must be drawn;—but no possible line will satisfy the natives.

The great bulk of the correspondence is political, or quasi-political.

The Doctor himself remained quiescent in the corner of the room the farthest from the spectacle.

And so we understand the words, And the Word was made flesh, [John 1:14] — that is, man, which some not accepting in its right sense, have supposed that Christ had not a human soul.

The germ, however, of the world had all things in itself.

She was fair, with a somewhat thin oval face, with dark eyes, and an almost perfect Grecian nose.

[Matthew 23:37] And Paul writing to the Corinthians said that God was in Christ reconciling the world unto Himself, not reckoning their trespasses unto them, and having committed unto us the word of reconciliation.

He fully sympathized with her ladyship.

And from that day to the present there had been, if not ill blood, at least cold blood between Mr. Fenwick and old Brattle.

What then? Does nothing depend on God? All indeed depends on God, but not so that our free-will is hindered. 'If then it depend on God,' (one says), 'why does He blame us?' On this account I said, 'so that our free-will is not hindered.' It depends then on us, and on Him. For we must first choose the good; and then He leads us to His own. He does not anticipate our choice, lest our free-will should be outraged. But when we have chosen, then great is the assistance he brings to us.

“I don’t care what she’d say. I dare say she walked with somebody once;—only I should think the somebody must have found it very dull.”

As for Mr. Barry, I never should know him intimately, though I were married to him for ten years.

We beseech You to keep our soul holy, having a pure conscience; an end worthy of your lovingkindness.

We all wondered— we, that they were so great, and he, that we had never heard of them.

For this reason, consequently, he ordered that the scarlet should be dipped at the same time in the water, thus predicting that the flesh should no longer possess its natural [evil] properties. For this reason, also, were there the two birds, the one being sacrificed in the water, and the other dipped both in the blood and in the water and then sent away, just as is narrated also respecting the goats.

What perversity is this, that he who is punished, though innocent, should be called desperate and impious, and that the torturer, on the other hand, should be called just and pious!

‘But is it an affair of money, Mr. Caldigate? Is it not rather an affair of drink? He has had his money,—more than his share; more than he ought to have had. But even though I were able to send him more, what good would it do him?’

With Your beauty and Your glory.

[Malachi 4:2-3] And again, (Isaiah says): Your heart shall rejoice, and your bones shall spring up like the grass, [Isaiah 66:14] because the grass also is renewed by the dissolution and corruption of the seed.

Josiah Crawley,

“It is better as it is. I know now that I was not fit for it. When your sister came to me, I never thought of remonstrating. I knew then that I had seen it for the last time.”

[Luke 16:19] For it belongs to our nature to be cast down when we see persons in distress.

And shall I say moreover another thing?

When John, he says, had first preached before His entry— by entry he means the Incarnation— the baptism of repentance to all the people of Israel.

But yet when military efforts are made by those who govern Hungary, Poland, and Venice to prevent such separation, we do not say that Russia and Austria are fools.

Not even Madame Socani was more capable of spite than Mr. Moss, though he was better able to hide his rage.

Comfort and Mrs. Butler Cornbury should thus be made to understand him.

As he paced up and down the room he resolved in his misery and enthusiasm that he could with pleasure, if he were allowed, give up his place, abandon his pleasant home, leave the hospital, and live poorly, happily, and with an unsullied name, on the small remainder of his means.

The Lord grant him to find mercy from the Lord.

She made some steady resolves to do her duty by him, and told herself again and again that nothing should ever move her now that she had decided.

I might have had the hounds myself,—and might have ‘em now if I cared to take them.

And now George was constantly with his uncle. For the first two days nothing further was said about money. Mr. Bertram seemed to be content that matters should rest as they were then settled, and his nephew certainly had no intention of recurring to the subject on his own behalf. The old man, however, had become much kinder in his manner to him—kinder to him than to any one else in the house; and exacted from him various little promises of things to be done—of last wishes to be fulfilled.

If they are rough, and angular, and hooked, so that they may be able to cohere, then they are divisible, and capable of being cut; for hooks and angles must project, so that they may possibly be cut off.

He was “supra grammaticam.” It is well that some one should have arisen to sing the praises of such a man—some two or three in these latter days.

And he came, and tried to compel them, saying, Come forth, and do the commandment of the king, and you shall live.

“As for sacrificing myself, that’s done. I’m a man utterly ruined and would cut my throat tomorrow for the sake of my relations, if I cared enough about them. I know my own condition pretty well. I have made a shipwreck of everything, and have now only got to go down among the breakers.”

He knew that he was playing an intricate game,—that all was not quite on the square; but he thought that the enemy was playing him false, and that falsehood in return was therefore fair.

Those wretched bills were to come due early in May, and before the end of April Sowerby wrote to him saying that he was doing his utmost to provide for the evil day; but that if the price of Dandy could be remitted to him at once, it would greatly facilitate his object.

It was grievous to him that he should have as a guest in his own house a man whom he had been forced to insult.

“And what did Lady Ongar say to you?” He had now put down the towel, and was seated in his armchair, looking up into his wife’s face.

For the addition of His, is not superfluous.

Everything about her was calculated to attract those whom she could not value, and to scare from her the sort of friend to whom she would fain have linked her lot.

For that there are therein no several bulks, does not hinder our seeing that memory is greater than understanding in one man, but the contrary in another; and that in yet another these two are overpassed by the greatness of love; and this whether the two themselves are or are not equal to one another.

Therefore I conjure you before God and Jesus Christ and His elect angels to guard that which you have received, not readily exposing to the public gaze the vessels of the Lord's temple (which only the priests are by right allowed to see), that no profane person may look upon God's sanctuary.

I didn’t feel at all sure you would come.

To the Count Sporacius.

And (he says) that this power, having passed through all, and having obtained liberty in all, again ascended to God (Himself).

And now came this other news that this Apollo was to be an Apollo indeed!

It is the time to speak of other tongues— reverence them or fear them, when you see that they are of fire.

Or in what respect was my letter to you such?

“I did not mean to be uncomplimentary. Take any of the dangerous wild beasts you please. I merely intend to point out that he is a dangerous wild beast. I daresay he is noble-minded, and I will call him a lion if you like it better. But even with a lion there is risk.”

But there is nothing either barbarous or picturesque about the town incumbent.

But labor in England is uncertain, whereas in the States it is certain.

The evil one envies all progress in good, he tempts us in various way.

Phineas, not caring much about Lord Baldock and Miss Mouser, took Violet’s hand upon his arm, and very slowly made his way across the room to the spot indicated. There they found Lady Laura alone, sitting under the upas-tree influence of her husband’s gaze. There was a concourse of people between them, and Mr. Kennedy did not seem inclined to make any attempt to lessen the distance. But Lady Laura had found it impossible to move while she was under her husband’s eyes.

Her father grunted less audibly than usual under the operation.

“The whole damned thing is nothing to me,” he said bursting out into absolute tears, after vainly trying to reassure himself by a recollection of the good things which the world still had in store for him.

So that a man might possibly take a single one of them and set him right, but could not do so with them when together, because then their folly becomes intense, and they are led like sheep, and follow in every direction the opinions of one another.

Sir Harry vacillated, Lady Elizabeth doubted, and Cousin George was allowed to come to the ball.

But when in another passage we read: I came out from the Father, and have come into the world; again, I leave the world, and go to the Father, [John 16:28] how does He go, except through death, and how comes He, save by rising again?

For this reason also He named the time, the place, and the tree; because if He had only said, Before Philip came to you, I saw you, He might have been suspected of having sent him, and of saying nothing wonderful; but now, by mentioning both the place where he was when addressed by Philip, and the name of the tree, and the time of the conversation, He showed that His foreknowledge was unquestionable.

Lovel Grange and the few mountain farms attached to the Cumberland estate must become his, let the frantic Earl do what damage he might to those who bore his name; but the bulk of the property, the wealth of the Lovels, the great riches which had enabled this mighty lord to live as a beast of prey among his kind, were at his own disposal.

I believe there are times when anybody may walk into the President’s house without an introduction; but that, I take it, is not considered to be the proper way of doing the work.

how long a beggar?

And this, O my English brother who has traveled through the States and returned disgusted, is the fact throughout.

Or, if a person confess to us that he is going to commit a parricide, we commit it along with him, if, being able, we do not slay him before he can do the deed when we cannot in some other way prevent or thwart him.

Great measures require great means.

Chapter 41. That in the meantime he ordered a Council to be convened at Tyre, because of Controversies raised in Egypt.

You had penetrated our hearts with Your charity, and we carried Your words fixed, as it were, in our bowels; and the examples of Your servant, whom of black You had made bright, and of dead, alive, crowded in the bosom of our thoughts, burned and consumed our heavy torpor, that we might not topple into the abyss; and they enkindled us exceedingly, that every breath of the deceitful tongue of the gainsayer might inflame us the more, not extinguish us.

They could not be handled.

‘Did you ever know me flush of cash? You had better take them while you can get them,’ and as he pushed them across the table with his stick, he remembered that all he had left was ninepence.

And if this does not immediately appear, it is the more necessary to avoid her on that account, because she veils that destruction, and keeps that death concealed, and suffers it not to become manifest at the first.

Hear also a second testimony to Christ's Deity, that which has just now been read, Your throne, O God, is for ever and ever.

Accordingly the Father calls him, saying, Son, you are ever with me. And what greater joy and feast and festivity can be than being continually with God, standing by His side and serving Him? And all that is mine is yours. And blessed is the heir of God, for whom the Father holds possession,— the faithful, to whom the whole world of possessions belongs.

I will drench my bed with tears.

But what is the real authority of human laws, when it is in man's power both to evade them, by generally managing to hide himself out of sight in his crimes, and to despise them sometimes, if inclination or necessity leads him to offend?

And by you to pass into Macedonia, and to come again from Macedonia unto you, and of you to be set forward on my journey unto Judæa. When I therefore was thus minded, did I show fickleness?

Wherefore he proceeds:

Let them do what they would with her.

A man shouldn’t let hisself be put upon by circumstances so as to be only half hisself.

It may, perhaps, be admitted that the Miss Frenches had shown too much open ardour in their pursuit of Mr. Gibson.

For beyond doubt the merits of his father's faith and obedience were greater, inasmuch as God says it is for his sake He does Isaac good: In your seed, He says, shall all the nations of the earth be blessed, because that Abraham your father obeyed my voice, and kept my precepts, my commandments, my statutes, and my laws.

Then Mr. Gresham rose again.

“We could bring the Bishop into court?”

And my father said: [You say well, my son; and I know why you say this: it is because in the discussion yesterday on natural causes, you showed that some malignant power, transferring itself into the order of the stars, excites the lusts of men, provoking them in various ways to sin, yet not compelling or producing sins.]

Yet He did not say this, but desiring to establish the Consubstantiality, declared, he that knows My Essence, knows that of the Father also.

That is, I must manifest Myself, and do the things which may show that I do the same things with the Father; not things similar, but, the same, an expression which marks greater unvaryingness, and which is used of those who do not differ ever so little.

But we shall devote an entire treatise to the refutation of the philosophers.

Let them praise, he says, not let it praise.

I do not say only from our Scriptures (for almost all the commandments indicate them); but they will not even hear their own discourses.

“Yes, you did. You knocked down my little house, and I must build it all up again.”

To Pammachius and Oceanus

If I were hungry, I would not tell you; for the world is Mine, and the fullness thereof.

Is his thunderbolt ever at his hand to reduce a recreant god to order?

Trypho: This statement also seems to me paradoxical; namely, that the prophetic Spirit of God, who was in Elijah, was also in John.

He sat resting His body and cooling It by the fountain; for it was the very middle of the day, as the Evangelist has declared, when he says, It was about the sixth hour.

Peter abstained from swine; but a trance fell on him, as is written in the Acts of the Apostles, and he saw heaven opened, and a vessel let down on the earth by the four corners, and all the four-looted beasts and creeping things of the earth and the fowls of heaven in it; and there came a voice to him, Rise, and slay, and eat.

There were some words on the subject between himself and his father before the Marquis went abroad with his family, which, though they did not reconcile him to the match, lessened the dissatisfaction.

Even the writer never for a moment thought of descending to real life.

We should naturally be led to suppose that by holy and blessed men he meant Manichæus, Nicolaus, Colluthus, Aetius, Arius, and the rest of the same band, with whom he is in strict accord in laying down this principle, that neither the confession of sacred names, nor the customs of the Church, nor her sacramental tokens, are a ratification of godliness.

“I’m told he won’t. Now a man must be mad who won’t employ a lawyer when he wants one. You see, the point we should gain would be this,—if we tried to get him through as being a little touched in the upper story,—whatever we could do for him, we could do against his own will. The more he opposed us the stronger our case would be. He would swear he was not mad at all, and we should say that that was the greatest sign of his madness. But when I say we, of course I mean you. I must not appear in it.”

She was strong featured, tall, with pride clearly written in her face.

This both makes us more philosophical ourselves and procures a greater reward, and also benefits them.

I think that Cicero never wrote anything vainer than this: “He has been so changed,” he says, “by reading some of my writings which I happened to have by me, and by my words and precepts, that he is just such a citizen as I would have him.” Could it be that he should suppose that one whom he had a few days since described as the biggest knave he knew should be so changed by a few words well written and well pronounced?

“Write to him at once, and tell him to come and see me in Lombard Street on Tuesday, at two o’clock. Give me the letter, and I will take care it is sent to him directly I get to town. Now you had better go in, for it is getting very cold.”

Do you see by how many things He is urging to the care of our mean brethren.

Chapter 28. Of John's boldness for God

This then being shown, it follows that the Word is the Son.

But she had sad thoughts, and feared that even on this point there might be a contest between her and her son.

Even as death is in this our mortal body derived from the beginning, so from the beginning has sin been drawn into this sinful flesh of ours, for the cure of which, both as it is derived by propagation and augmented by wilful transgression, as well as for the quickening of our flesh itself, our Physician came in the likeness of sinful flesh, who is not needed by the sound, but only by the sick—and who came not to call the righteous, but sinners.

In fine, so evident a transition was being effected from the Law to the Gospel, from the synagogue to the Church, from many sacrifices to the One Victim , that, when the Lord gave up the ghost, that mystic veil which hung before and shut out the inner part of the Temple and its holy recess was by sudden force torn from top to bottom , for the reason that Truth was displacing figures, and forerunners were needless in the presence of Him they announced.

There’s young Jones.

“But, dear mamma, don’t you?”

81. Adelphius of Thasbalte said: "It is surely without cause that they find fault with the truth in false and invidious terms, saying that we rebaptize, since the Church does not rebaptize heretics, but baptizes them."

She would fain have kept the letter, and have opened it in the retirement of her own room.

But it could also assume an innkeeper’s frown, and on occasions did so—when bills were disputed, or unreasonable strangers thought that they knew the distance in posting miles round the neighbourhood of Leeds better than did he, Mr. Crump, who had lived at the Bull Inn all his life.

If it comes, tant mieux.

He cursed the mother that had borne him and the father that had left him poor.

How hard then that he should be blamed for doing that which not to have done would have argued a most insane imprudence!

“That is nonsense, Emily. There is Arthur Fletcher.”

That from which he has shrunk as evil when it was within his grasp, takes the color of good when it has been beyond his reach.

[14] [Matthew 17:6] And the disciples, when they heard the voice, fell on their faces from the fear which [15] took hold of them.

[Matthew 22:37] For the man who loves God with all the heart, and with all the strength, being filled with a God-fearing mind, will reverence no other god; and since God wishes it, he would reverence that angel who is beloved by the same Lord and God.

And there are three departments of counsel: That which takes examples from past times; as what the Hebrews suffered when they worshipped the golden calf, and what they suffered when they committed fornication, and the like.

[1 Corinthians 11:26] As, then, He was once slain for all, so whenever forgiveness of sins is granted, we receive the Sacrament of His Body, that through His Blood there may be remission of sins.

“I have allowed myself to fall into a weak state,” continued Sir Thomas, speaking slowly, “while by proper exertion I might have avoided it.”

It is in truth the same unchangeableness in it, which is referred to when it was said, Remaining in herself she makes all things new.

Let there be method in our giving, so that the poor may not go away empty nor the subsistence of the needy be done away and become the spoil of the dishonest.

This plan of throwing up £1,200 a year would badly assist him in getting rid of this incubus.

“Yes;—I have. I do not know how you have found it out; but I suppose you keep a watch on me.”

For they announced some marvellous wonders, of which neither the manner, nor the time, nor the author was signified.

In what manner shall they go around?

But the expression, He shall bring with Him, shows that they are brought from many places.

So having stirred their mind by the fear of God's judgment, and the expectation of His punishment, and by the mention of the axe, and by the loss of their ancestors, and by the bringing in of those other children, and by the double vengeance of cutting off and burning, and having by all means softened their hardness, and brought them to desire deliverance from so great evils; then he brings in what he has to say touching Christ; and not simply, but with a declaration of His great superiority.

Who would not be enticed by such promises, especially the mind of a young man desirous of the truth, and further a proud and talkative mind by discussions of certain learned men in the school?

He ate as man, verily like ourselves, for the flesh that He wore was of like passions with us; He fed the five thousand with five loaves as God.

For since there was no righteousness on earth, He sent a teacher, as it were a living law, to found a new name and temple, that by His words and example He might spread throughout the earth a true and holy worship.

He made no attempt at remonstrance.

Before he left Oxford he had seen the head of his college and the tutor; and had also felt himself bound to visit the tradesmen in whose black books he was written down as a debtor.

In answer to this he said that he would speak to John, and then that interview was over. On the Monday morning John Ball said something respecting Margaret to his mother which acerbated that lady more than ever against her niece. He had not proposed that anything special should be done; but he had hinted, when his mother complained of Margaret, that Margaret’s conduct was everything that it ought to be.

What shall I do in this matter, beloved brethren?

“So would not I. Louis Philippe will be all right by that time. That’s my lookout. And now, doctor, you know my will; and if I die tomorrow, you will know what I want you to do for me.”

And again respecting Dormitantius and his friends: Bind the jaws of them who draw not near unto you with bit and bridle.

“Not Mr. Reginald?”

Thus the nature of sacrifice as due only to God appears not only when God righteously claims it, but also when a false god proudly arrogates it.

[1 Corinthians 1:30] Hence it is that in this abode of miseries, where trial is the life of man upon the earth, strength is made perfect in weakness.

How then do you come not to be ashamed at having slaves of the belly for your teachers, when you are a brother of Christ?

Not only do I not grieve nor sink beneath these things, but I even rejoice, yea, and will rejoice, not for a season, but always will I rejoice for these things.

The widow, the widow needy in means, is found rich in works.

“He was the man who especially, above all others, threw me over at Silverbridge.” Then again there came upon his brow that angry frown which during the last few days had been dissipated by the innocence of Lady Rosina’s conversation. “Of course I don’t mean to ask you to take any interest in the borough again. You have said that you wouldn’t, and you are always as good as your word.”

Sometimes, as he had heard Mr. Smirkie inveigh against the enormity of bigamy and of this bigamist in particular, he had determined that some ‘odd-come-shortly,’ as he would call it, he would give the vicar of Plum-cum-Pippins a moral pat on the head which should silence him for a time.

But I do not say, he adds, that there is a man without sin; nor do you say, that there is not a man without sin.

He ascended to the housetop, then, with the purpose of engaging in some religious ceremony, or some art of his own; and he went up alone, so as not to be detected by any one: for he considered that, if he was convicted of playing false with, or holding of little account, the religious beliefs of the people, he would be liable to be punished by the real princes of the country.

For even suppose one should enjoy the shows in a moderate way, as befits his rank, age or nature, still he is not undisturbed in mind, without some unuttered movings of the inner man.

The axe of the woodsman is at rest; the plow is idle; the artificer has closed his shop.

Respecting the face of God, however, he had already heard, No man shall see me, and live.

“Surely, Lovel, you are bound to tell me.”

[Matthew 19:28] And to those who had faithfully preserved their talents He promises rewards indeed, though smaller saying: Because you have been faithful over a few things, I will make you ruler over many things.

But she was very innocent when she thought that Lady Albury would be blind to such a scheme as that.

He then goes on to say, But that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual.

There had previously been questions of the illtreatment of the Poles by Russia, and of the remodelling of the Treaty of Vienna.

Examples ought to be much greater than the subject, to which we are exhorting, for no one will be moved by what is foreign to the subject.

“If you ask me, Colonel Osborne, I should say that you can do nothing in the matter;—except to remain away from her. When Sir Marmaduke is in England, you can see him, if you please.”

“Fault on my part! Of course there has been fault on my part. No one can make any mistake without fault to some extent. I took him to be a man of sense, and he is a fool. Go to Naples indeed!”

What forsooth?

All should be endured, if by that all she could escape from the man she loathed.

Let him take care lest hardly a crust remain—or perhaps not a crust.

And yet, though it may seem an incredible thing to say, God spared this people in delivering them to their enemies; for He saw that they were incurably averse to any amendment, and were daily sinking deeper and deeper into evil.

But in the family of the just man who lives by faith and is as yet a pilgrim journeying on to the celestial city, even those who rule serve those whom they seem to command; for they rule not from a love of power, but from a sense of the duty they owe to others— not because they are proud of authority, but because they love mercy.

But "he that hates his brother is a murderer."

“I don’t see that he is particularly wretched,” said Johnny, pleading for his friend.

But these things cannot be separated from man.

Hence this blindness of eyes and dulness of hearing are more grievous than other inflictions of the evil one; for the one deprives them of heavenly vision, the other robs them of divine instruction.

One much stained.

I rejoice that I have found in our brother Florus also this faith, which without doubt is the true and prophetical and and catholic faith; whence those are the rather to be corrected— whom indeed I now think to have been corrected by the favour of God— who did not understand him.

It would avail nothing to argue now whether those deeds were sins or virtues, nor would it have availed then.

And so, moved by loving-kindness and by consideration of this case, we make you, Montana and Thomas, servants of the holy Roman Church which with the help of God we serve, free from this day, and Roman citizens, and we release to you all your private property.

Armed with rays traversing the liquid elements, in this brief night he stretches out the day in a circle.

And he seems to be stating one point, but he sets down at once two arguments for his proposition.

“But why is he going now? It isn’t often he goes to Carnlough; and when he does go, he is sure to say why.”

Whereupon Mr.

And when his brethren were alarmed after the death of his father, he removed their suspicions and terror by saying: Fear not: Can you resist the will of God?

Whereas, is it not the most foolish of all things to spare crocodiles, and to treat them as sacred to some fabulous divinity or other?

My work was my subsistence.

Orth.— You mean of the body and of the blood?

“Not for her,” said Hetta.

And again: Abstain from strange water, and from the fountain of another do not drink, that you may live a long time; also that the years of life may be added to you.

And it was the more sad, because Mrs Buggins somewhat resented the manner in which her husband was treated.

Let us now attend to the sequel of what has been before said.

“I hope you will both live to enjoy it many years,” said Mrs. Bluestone. “You will have much to say to each other, and I will leave you now. We shall have lunch, Lady Lovel, at half-past one, and I hope that you will join us.”

Your perplexities have, since I learned them by your letter, become mine also, not because all those things by which you tell me that you are disturbed, disturb my mind: but I have been much perplexed, I confess, by the question how your perplexities were to be removed; especially since you require me to give a conclusive answer, lest you should fall into greater doubts than you had before you applied to me to have them resolved.

Demonstration XXI

The names of Dobbs Broughton and of A. Musselboro,—the Christian name of Mr. Musselboro was Augustus,—were on one of those dirty posts, not joined together by any visible “and,” so as to declare boldly that they were partners; but in close vicinity,—showing at least that the two gentlemen would be found in apartments very near to each other.

And this was done that that which had been lost might be sought by Him who had created it, through that which had not been lost; whence the following words, For Your mercy is sweet.

For this cause Paul also expressed it with more exceeding earnestness, writing on this wise: If any man among you seems to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise.

Scatcherd accused him openly of having intoxicated her with drugs; and Thomas Thorne, who took up the case, ultimately believed the charge.

“Do you really think that that mitigates the injury done to my father?” said Lord St. George.

May the thing spoken by me prove false! I would rather myself in That Day bear the imputation of ill language, as having vainly and causelessly reproached you, than see you accused of such things.

And by so doing, would he not rob Lady Mason of her sole remaining tower of strength?—for if Mr. Furnival knew that she was guilty, Mr. Furnival must of course abandon her cause.

But I am a thorough republican, regarding our own English form of government as the most purely republican that I know, and as such I have a close and warm sympathy with those Transatlantic anti-monarchical republicans who are endeavoring to prove to the world that they have at length founded a political Utopia.

[Genesis 19:3] And how do you know that when you receive men, thou dost not receive Christ?

[Acts 17:32] They had, in fact, derided his announcement; but they would have indulged no such derision if they had heard from him nothing but the restoration of the soul, for they would have received that as the very common anticipation of their own native philosophy.

Or how did men called Christians venture even to doubt whether the Lord, Who proceeded from Mary, while Son of God by Essence and Nature, is of the seed of David according to the flesh [Romans 1:3], and of the flesh of the Holy Mary?

Fanny, too, had terrible doubts as to her mother’s powers of going to her bed and lying there without revealing to her husband that some cause of great excitement had arisen.

Put not off, my brethren; sow in wintry weather, sow good works, even while you weep; for, They that sow in tears, shall reap in joy.

It had been acknowledged to him that Mollett was living in that house, that he was now at home, and also that the younger woman present before him was the child of Mollett and of Mary Swan the elder.

(For 345.) Coss. Amantius, Albinus; Præf. Nestorius of Gaza; Indict. iii; Easter-day, vii Id. Apr., xii Pharmuthi; Moon 19; Æra Dioclet. 61.

On one occasion Lord Hampstead was in the Court having a word to say to Marion’s father, or, perhaps, a word to hear. “I’m sure you’ll excuse me, my lord,” said Tribbledale, following him out of the office.

“Why should he want to know anything?”

“I will never leave her, while she tells me that she loves me!”

And we rejoice with you that by your means Tyre also has learned the right word of piety.

And those, she, being with child, cries, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered, mean that the Church will not cease to bear from her heart the Word that is persecuted by the unbelieving in the world.

He sometimes complained of them; but it was only when their misconduct had been so loud as to make it no longer possible that he should not do so.

A man does not fly a kite in that fashion till things with him have reached a bad pass.

“‘Then it is at his office,’ said Crinoline to herself; and she sighed also.

[Joel 2:12] Let us return to the Lord with our whole heart.

At that time Jesus went on the Sabbath day through the grain; and His disciples were a hungered, and began to pluck the ears of grain, and to eat.

The earth received his body; his soul was given back to Christ.

“They say that we are paid by the husband to keep his wife, and paid again by the lover to betray the husband.”

For this purpose did He say to His servant, Let me alone, that I may consume them, in order that by his entreaty, and by offering himself, he might hinder (the threatened judgment), and that you might by such an instance learn how much privilege is vouchsafed with God to a faithful man and a prophet.

But how can Celsus and the enemies of the divine Word, and those who have not examined the doctrines of Christianity in the spirit of truth, know the meaning of the different appearances of Jesus?

In that they are great, they are mountains; in that they submit themselves unto God, they are valleys: and in that they have the capacity of piety, they receive the plenteousness of peace, and transmit the copious irrigation to the hills, only beware, at present, what mountains you love.

For heretics in their attempt to deceive others by the words, I and the Father are one [John 10:30], that there might not be acknowledged in them the unity and like essence of deity, but only a oneness arising from mutual love and an agreement of wills— these heretics, I say, have brought forward an instance of that unity, as we have shown above, even from the words of our Lord, That they all may be one, as Thou Father art in Me, and I in You, that they also may be in Us.

I cannot even name a day as yet; but I trust that it may be fixed soon.

And so, God's grace not only shows what ought to be done, but also helps to the possibility of doing what it shows.

He has but one legion with him, but that legion declares that it will obey him,—him and the tribunes of the people, some of whom, acting on Caesar’s side, have come over from Rome to Ravenna.

Peter was so told, and with some grumbling expressed himself as satisfied; but when would Linda come down to him?

But then comes the question, whether the mulatto is more capable of being educated than the negro, and more able to work under a hot sun than the Englishman; whether he does not rather lose the physical power of the one, and the intellectual power of the other.

Then follows the long courtship of Dobbin, the true hero,—he who has been the friend of George since their old schooldays; who has lived with him and served him, and has also loved Amelia.

Who is that other disciple?

And Sosthenes our brother. Another instance of his modesty; he puts in the same rank with himself one inferior to Apollos; for great was the interval between Paul and Sosthenes. Now if where the interval was so wide he stations with himself one far beneath him, what can they have to say who despise their equals?

Poor mamma!” And then she thought of the reception which would be given to Caroline, and of the place the future Lady Peterborough would fill in the world, and of the glories of Monkhams!

“Nay, my child, life is long for you yet. There will be many dreams, and much of reality.”

And now, behold, I return burning and panting after Your fountain.

There are two military snobs, Rag and Famish.

And he said not, Go not after them, but what is more, Do not admit them into your mind; which he says also in another place, I will not mention their names through my lips.

I need not tell you how sorry I am that the state of your affairs should make this necessary.

What golden chains will she be girded with!

She did not believe that the Jew was to be bought off at so cheap a price; but she did believe that it might be possible to create such a feeling in his mind as would make him abandon Nina out of the workings of his own heart.

Again she shook her head and smiled.

I might be content with those things which I have related, but there still remain many things which are necessary for the work which I have undertaken.

He is called Dead, not as having abode among the dead, as all in Hades, but as being alone free among the dead.

And then later, when cultivation begins once more, and the seed is sown for which the land seems suitable, it breaks forth again more fruitful than before with its products.

They to whom the subject is of real concern, and not they who make it a matter of pleasant gossip, like any other thing, after the races, or the theatre, or a concert, or a dinner, or still lower employments.

To the body of this death then is understood to be owing the circumstance that there is in our members another law which wars against the law of the mind, so long as the flesh lusts against the spirit— without, however, subjugating the mind, inasmuch as on its side, too, the spirit has a concupiscence contrary to the flesh.

But, if I were you, I don’t think that I should feel inclined to have much conversation with her about my private affairs.

O that there were an earthquake, he says, in the city, that all the rest being swallowed up, I might be left alone, to have, if possible, the possessions of all!

And so it was.

How large a portion of our orb has the present age reformed!

They dined together, and quite late in the evening they strolled out into St. James’s Park.

There they sealed the hidden fire with the sacred mark and in secret.

They do not, however, confess that there is but one Christ, but that there is one that is superior to the rest, and that He is transfused into many bodies frequently, and was now in Jesus.

Here, if any means could be found, I should wish to converse thus with all those who hate the name of Christ, turning aside for a little from the defence primarily set up:— If you think it no dishonour to answer when asked a question, explain to us and say what is the cause, what the reason, that you pursue Christ with so bitter hostility?

From which this lesson may surely be learned,—that though the way down Avernus may be, and customarily is, made with great celerity, the return journey, if made at all, must be made slowly.

For He who prevailed over this man's mind, so that he received them, and that by words; what would He not have done with them that crucified Him, if it had been His will not to suffer?

But Heathcote explained that any personal attack was not to be apprehended from these men.

For to those who do not see you at all in person fame discloses your goodness.

But it probably did him more good than any word that the earl had ever spoken to him,—or any other word that he could have used.

This is the strong weapon of the enemy, and the only way in which he holds down those who have been made captives is by binding them with this chain, which, if we choose, we shall speedily be able to break by the grace of God.

My travels hitherto had chiefly been made with the view of seeing people and studying the state of the country,—and at this time, as I have explained above, my task was nearly completed.

Why are we commanded to fall down before His footstool?

They sent the formulary read at Ariminum with various explanatory additions of their own, to every province of the empire, and procured from the emperor an edict for the banishment of all who should refuse to subscribe to it.

In a word, we men also, in training either our slaves or children, restrain them by threats and fear while they are, by reason of their tender age, incapable of using their reason; but when they have begun to understand what is good, and useful, and honourable, the fear of the lash being over, they acquiesce through the suasion of words and reason in all that is good.

For it is not the case, as you suppose, that the name of God is hard to bear; but possibly you entertain this opinion of God, because you are yourself yet unserviceable to Him.

He would not let go her hand till he had brought her so close to him that she could hide her blushes on his shoulder.

And if you speak of the Spirit, you name also God the Father, from Whom the Spirit proceeds, and the Son, inasmuch as He is also the Spirit of the Son.

“And has not she suffered herself? Is not her heart broken?”

For, if one who declares himself sound in the faith is scorned, the faith of all is brought into doubt, and fatal errors are generated from inconsiderate strictness.

Doubtless we shall in the course of our sojourn at Allington visit the vicarage now and then, but I do not know that any further detailed account of its comforts will be necessary to us.

Now do I begin to be a disciple, and desire none of the things visible that I may attain unto Jesus Christ.

He searches for it with his eyes; he feels for it with his finger; he applies every kind of scrutiny: he finds a perfectly firm cicatrix!

He had not ceased to love her, nor is the heart of any man made so like a weathercock that it needs must turn itself hither and thither, as the wind directs, and be altogether beyond the man’s control.

My uncle is a weak man, and has been predisposed against me from other circumstances.

The rain which comes down, does not so make the seeds to sprout and grow, as the shower of falling tears makes the seed of godliness to spring up and flourish.

But with how great tumults of business I am oppressed in this Church the very brevity of my epistle will signify to your Charity, seeing that I say so little to him whom more than all I love.

For he, after Nicanor, the general of King Demetrius, was defeated, boldly engaged 20,000 of the king's army with 900 men who were anxious to retire for fear of being overcome by so great a multitude, but whom he persuaded to endure a glorious death rather than to retire in disgraceful flight.

what would become of the women?

Hear St. Paul saying, God is faithful .

Consider, I pray you, how watchful it was likely that the other sick men there would be since the time when the water was troubled was uncertain.

For He is present with those who desire Him in the innocency of their spirits, who bear patiently, and draw sighs from the bottom of their hearts through love of the truth; but He deserts malevolent minds, [Wisdom 1:4] because as a prophet He knows the thoughts of every one.

I was thinking of Ostend only the other day.

And Lowell has supplied agents and mechanics for the later manufacturing places who have given tone to society, and extended the beneficial influence of Lowell through the United States.

However, what there also the Apostle says next after, Whereunto we have arrived, in that let us walk.

At this period of Cicero’s return food had become scarce and dear; and Clodius, who was now in arms against Pompey as well as against Cicero, caused it to be believed that19 the strangers flocking into Rome to welcome Cicero had eaten up the food which should have filled the bellies of the people.

See how Himself has willed to be your Advocate; Himself your Counsellor, Himself the Assessor of the Father, Himself your Judge has said, Otherwise you shall not receive.

The grey silk had been put on for the marriage ceremony and for that only.

Does not a comparison of doctrines show that those older heretics are less intolerable than these?

But while the rest of the spectators extolled the faith and virtue of the children, the Abbot, with deeper insight, and to prevent them at such a tender age from being puffed up with pride, subjected both to punishment.

For if they sinned because they wrought not, then had they not received power not to work, but to live instead by the Gospel.

Cease then your campaigning and stop the war.

There was no period after his Consulship in which he was not aware of his own failure.

X. Now those that dwell in a corrupt body, like those who sail in an old ship, do not lie on their back, but are ever praying, stretching their hands to God.

M., There is coming a reaping, O Death, that will leave you bare: and the Watchers shall go forth as reapers, and make you desolate.— 7.

You will not hear me told, at any rate, that I had better sit at home and darn my stockings, as you said the other day of that poor unfortunate Mrs Effington Stubbs.

There is no interval in His case between birth and maturity.

“It has been poor Lord Chiltern with a vengeance!” said he.

And instead of three places for the Trinity, you have four: one, the light inaccessible, which you know nothing about, for the Father; two, the sun and moon, for the Son; and again one, the circle of the atmosphere, for the Holy Spirit.

“I never saw such a fellow as you are,” said Barrington Erle to him.

Having thus again made the whole their act, he passes to his own authority, saying, For to this end did I write unto you, that I might know the proof of you, whether you are obedient in all things.

Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, and changed the glory of the incorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and four-footed beasts, and creeping things."

He never repined at the sacrifice he had made—I will not say for his King, for King at present he had none; the throne had been laid low, and the precious blood of him who should have filled it had been shed.

Should he attempt to fly, could we prevent his flying?

Why, tell me, is it that we do not trust some, no, not on their oath, while we deem others trustworthy even independently of oaths.

“I never doubted it when you had declared it. May I venture to say that I wish it had been otherwise?”

Whence I would have you understand— perceiving as you do that so many movements of the mind go on wholly independently of the images in question— that of all the movements of the mind by which it may conceivably attain to the knowledge of bodies, every other is more likely than the process of creating forms of sensible things by unaided thought, because I do not think that it is capable of any such conceptions before it uses the body and the senses.

if I might have read “ My New Inmate,” how different would the feeling have been!

Genesis 49:12-15

“Then who has, dearest?”

Or as when it says, complaining of those who have become such, 'Man, being in honour, has no understanding, but is compared unto the beasts that perish.'

1) that it was already the custom of the Church of Constantinople to observe annual festivals in honour of the Saints: and at present two days are kept by the Eastern Church, viz., Jan. 18th, as the day of the actual death of S. Athanasius, and May 2d, in memory of the translation of his remains to the church of S. Sophia at Constantinople.

But you shall listen to me.

To the small farmers, not only on the Gatherum property, but on others also, he spoke of the duke as a beneficent influence shedding prosperity on all around him, keeping up prices by his presence, and forbidding the poor rates to rise above one and fourpence in the pound by the general employment which he occasioned.

Again, is the body alone the man, having a relation to the soul such as the cup has to the drink?

For Christ, [Romans 6:10] in that He died, died unto sin once.

But I do say that in all cases it is well that a property should go to the natural heir of the life-tenant.

It was clear to me that he was very anxious on the subject, fearing that his uncle would be back upon his heels before he had started.

And those who were pronounced accursed in the words, Depart from me, you cursed, into everlasting fire, were not accused of any such crimes, but because they had not fed Christ.

But stronger is He that is in us than He that is against us [1 John 4:4], and through Him are we powerful in whose strength we rely: because it was for this that the Lord allowed Himself to be tempted by the tempter, that we might be taught by His example as well as fortified by His aid.

On the other hand, if You Yourself hast of Yourself made all things, vain are the assertions of the unbelieving, which ascribe progress in learning to the Maker of all, Who of Himself supplies the teaching of His craft.

Many wishes, surmises and anticipations had arisen as to who was to carry off this rich prize; who should be the happy husband of Agatha Larochejaquelin; but her friends had hitherto been anxious in vain; she still went “in maiden meditation fancy free.” Not that she was without professed admirers; but they had none of them yet touched her heart.

Of course Becky sets her cap at him, and of course succeeds.

By what device then or by what method was he deluded by the deceiver after so many labours, and falling by a most grievous downfall struck with profound grief all those who live in this desert?

We shall pass by the wild Bacchanalia also, which are named in Greek Omophagia, in which with seeming frenzy and the loss of your senses you twine snakes about you; and, to show yourselves full of the divinity and majesty of the god, tear in pieces with gory mouths the flesh of loudly-bleating goats.

Ps. cxviii. 6. The Lord is my keeper.

Do you take pleasure at a dancer, do you praise and admire him?

He had brought her to Salisbury, and had remained with her two days at the Three Honest Men, during which time the remainder of their four pounds had been spent; and then there had been a row.

And that you may see that it was not through a wish to turn him from it, but to shame them that He said this, hear what it says.

Less than a hundred a year could not have clothed Mrs. Vincent, whereas Mrs. Roden, as all the world perceived, did not spend half the money.

This, accordingly, is the language which Cœlestius used in the ecclesiastical process at Carthage: As touching the transmission of sin, he said, I have already said that I have heard many persons of acknowledged position in the catholic Church deny it, and on the other hand many affirm it; it may fairly, indeed, be deemed a matter for inquiry, but not a heresy.

Thereupon the same soothsayer Postumius interpreted this to signify a signal victory, and ordered that he only should eat of the entrails.

As no one gave any credit to his words, he urged a number of the brethren to believe by certain signs.

Blessed are they that mourn; imitate Him, Who wept over Jerusalem.

Of that brain so full of fancy the pen had lightly written all the fancies.

6. Therefore it should be your care to write to the curators and magistrates and district overseers of every city, that they may know that it is not necessary for them to give further attention to this matter.

He is possessed with madness, and knows not what he does; but when thou, seeing what he is, fallest into the same evils, and art not brought to your right senses by the sight, what excuse can there be for you?

But because he said this of the Roman empire, he naturally glanced at it, and speaks covertly and darkly.

My only comfort is in this,—that I have done the thing myself, and have not been turned out.” To the very last, however, Mr. Monk continued to express his opinion that Phineas would come back, declaring that he had known no instance of a young man who had made himself useful in Parliament, and then had been allowed to leave it in early life.

It is on this account, as appears to me, that the Instructor does not permit us to give utterance to anything unseemly, fortifying us at an early stage against licentiousness.

“That is all a matter of taste, I suppose,” she said, laughing.

For He says, I will see you, and you shall rejoice; and your joy no man takes from you.

While the expediency of putting Clodius on his trial was being discussed, Pompey had returned from the East, and taken up his residence outside the city, because he was awaiting his triumph.

Do we say that the radiant Cytherean Venus grew up, having taken form from the sea's foam and the severed genitals of Coelus?

What plea then shall deliver us, when with so great things set before us, and with so high a rule of self-denial laid open to us, we are not able even to do as they did, but ruin both ourselves and others besides?

“She is my mother’s first cousin.”

Florence Burton at the Rectory

This first and greatest sacrifice our emperor first dedicates to God; and then, as a faithful shepherd, he offers, not famous hecatombs of firstling lambs, but the souls of that flock which is the object of his care, those rational beings whom he leads to the knowledge and pious worship of God.

For when the disciples were pointed out, as eating and not first washing their hands, He replied and said, He that made that which is within, made also that which is without.

[Psalm 51:16-17] Not simply humility, but intense humility.

His first idea had prompted him to repudiate all present knowledge of the lawyer’s letter, seeing that the lawyer’s letter had been the ground of that charge against him of deceit.

He was a good-looking man, of fashionable appearance, and the young lady who attended him noticed him and was courteous to him.

And he affirms that all things have been subjected unto him, and this is that which has been spoken, Their sound is gone forth unto all the earth, [Romans 10:18] just as it agrees with the expressions, Mercury waving his wand, guides the souls, but they twittering follow.

“But I did think that after all that has passed, and when I am trying to be kind to you, you would have made yourself more pleasant to me. I can only tell your uncle that you say you won’t.”

“I wouldn’t spend my time and energies in whitewashing any rascal,” said Dolly, with vigor.

“Of all what, Mr Rubb?” said she.

For the names of the others I do not consider it modest even to mention, full as they are of all kind of grotesqueness.

Volume II

You have made me the reproach of the foolish.

Now the sensible light of the world is the sun, and after it comes very worthily the moon, and the same title may be applied to the stars; but those lights of the world are said in Moses to have come into existence on the fourth day, and as they shed light on the things on the earth, they are not the true light.

3. Why should we transcribe the catalogue of the witnesses given in the letter already mentioned, of whom some were beheaded, others cast to the wild beasts, and others fell asleep in prison, or give the number of confessors still surviving at that time? For whoever desires can readily find the full account by consulting the letter itself, which, as I have said, is recorded in our Collection of Martyrdoms. Such were the events which happened under Antoninus.

For the love which is the root of good things is quite different from the cupidity which is the root of evil things— as different, indeed, as virtue is from vice.

Those who do not even begin what is good, and those who fail entirely to complete the good begun.

Tyrannus, presbyter

He had even thrashed the man who had illtreated her.

“Mrs. Carbuncle,” began Sir Griffin, “if you will have the great kindness not to endeavour to teach me what my conduct should be now or at any future time, I shall take it as a kindness.”

For then shall come the desired of all nations, [Haggai 2:7] as we read in the Hebrew.

Linda, of course, did not submit to this in silence; but gradually she became more and more silent as her aunt continued in a low tone to drone forth her wishes and her convictions, and at last Linda would almost sleep while the salutary position of Peter Steinmarc’s wife was being explained to her.

He did not think that his girl in her present condition of mind would signify to Lord Popplecourt that “she supposed it was to be so.” Now that the time for the transaction was present he felt almost sure it would never be transacted.

“Nina has them, as I believe,” said Ziska, still hesitating.

For there he says that the creative mind is self-sprung. What follows applies to the universe, in which are the opposites of light and darkness.

For if the incompetency of the father had not been great, he would not have allowed those to become bad whom from the first he had under his power.

Though there was no diminution of affection among the Fawns, there was a general feeling that Lucy was behaving badly.

Composition must precede dissolution (and by composition I mean the coming into this world by being born); necessarily, therefore, if this synthesis does not precede, no dissolution will follow.

[Matthew 14:23] And you must observe this, that immediately after the five thousand had been fed, Jesus constrained the disciples to embark into the boat, and to go before Him unto the other side.

I want to get nothing by it.

In the mean while his father was overtaken by death, and left a debt of a hundred solidi.

For since it was likely that they, when they were scourged, and driven out, and suffering grievances without number, should be seeking a respite, and ask this favor of God, and think it was advantageous to them, by no means (he says) suppose that what seem blessings to you really are so.

You say the Bishops of Italy accept your views on the Resurrection. I doubtit.

the mischief they had done remained behind them.

‘Well, then, at any rate they ought,’ said Linda.

CC. Of the circuit of Paul, in which also we have the account of the death of Eutychus and his restoration by prayer in Troas; also Paul's own pastoral exhortations to the presbyters at Ephesus; also Paul's voyage from Ephesus to Caesareia in Palestine.

It is well indeed to know all.

If I ascend into heaven, You are there; if I go away to the uttermost parts of the sea, there is Your right hand; if I go down into the depths, there is Your Spirit.

And the salve to the qualm was always the same remembrance that the deed had not been done yet.

Curlydown was envious. He had, of course, been told of the civil things which Sir John Joram had said; and though he did not quite believe all, he was convinced that Bagwax was supposed to have distinguished himself. If there was anything to be known he would like to know it. Nor was he naturally quarrelsome. Bagwax was his old friend. ‘I don’t mean to be hard,’ he said. ‘Of course one does feel oneself fretted when one has been obliged to miss two trains.’

‘We all have that;—back to Adam.’

“He’s not married?”

Defraud ye not one the other, except it be by consent for a season, that you may give yourselves unto prayer.

In no way can I believe that, unless perchance a line be something else than length without breadth, and a circle something else than a circumscribed line everywhere verging equally to the centre.

He had become fairly easy in his circumstances.

The divine Athanasius returned to Alexandria, after having remained two years and four months at Treves. Constantine, the eldest son of Constantine the Great, whose imperial sway extended over Western Gaul, wrote the following letter to the church of Alexandria.

He rose from his chair now with a cloud of anger upon his brow. “I can see how it is,” said he; “because everything has not gone smooth with yourself; you choose to resent it upon me. I might have expected that you would not have forgotten in whose house you met Lord Ongar.”

Here you encounter in its most annoying form that necessity for eulogium which presses you everywhere.

It is said that an obligatory period of labour amounts to slavery, even though the contract shall have been entered into by the labourer of his own free will. I will not take on myself to deny this, as I might find it difficult to define the term slavery; but if this be so, English apprentices are slaves, and so are indentured clerks; so are hired agricultural servants in many parts of England and Wales; and so, certainly, are all our soldiers and sailors.

To me, however, it seems certain that every lie is a sin, though it makes a great difference with what intention and on what subject one lies.

“I know you did. I hadn’t seen it. I can only say I wish it had been the other way.”

Persons are still living who remember them—their own actual disciples and successors,— who cannot therefore deny the lateness of their date.

So that he may well (say), "Wherefore I take you to record (read [διὸ μαρτ] .

For where there is no creature whose changing movements admit of succession, there cannot be time at all.

All through, the main motive of his action has been the endeavour to achieve his heretical purpose by the force of numbers, for he does not reckon as he ought that in what relates to true religion, it is not numbers that are required, but rather correctness of doctrine and the truth of the doctrine of the apostles.

And after a while the Negroes of Griqualaud West will learn the powers which they possess as have the Negroes of the Southern American States, and thus there will spring up a contest as to the party in which is to be vested the political power of the district.

For thus the poet, in another passage, and employing another but equivalent word, to wit, a pronoun, made use of the same participle employed by Plato to designate the really existent God, concerning whom Plato said, What that is which always exists, and has no birth.

“I suppose we must bear it, Alice?” said Lady Glencora as she got into the carriage that was waiting for her.

“The worms conquer at last.”

“If I did not come and see you here, I suppose that I should never see you,” said he, seating himself. “I do not often go to parties, and when I do you are not likely to be there.”

Isabel was all this and infinitely more without any struggle.

Is not the solid grain for the barns, and the chaff for the fire?

In this way, you will show that you are really obedient to the voice which Peter is said to have heard.

As to putting confidence in her mother,—that idea never occurred to her.

When therefore you neglect a duty which infidels perform, have you not denied the faith?

“And Mr. Jones? I suppose they have not gone to the station. Just feel my pulse, Merton. I am afraid I am very weak.” Mr. Merton felt his pulse and shook his head. “There isn’t a pulse, so to speak.”

“Who would have to put up with it? Not you, or papa, or Dolly. I should have a house of my own at least, and I should know what I had to expect for the rest of my life. If I stay here I shall go mad or die.”

that even some who were dedicated to God as His handmaids have been by these heretics re-baptized, with what floods of tears ought this great calamity to be bewailed by us!

He knew, or thought he knew, that in no other country was wine so well understood, so diligently sought for, and so truly enjoyed as in England.

And I have represented to you, what has now been done, both for them and by them, with greater cruelty than is usual even in time of war, in order that after the example set before you in the history which I related at the beginning, you may entertain a zealous hatred of their wickedness, and reject those who have committed such enormities against the Church.

Chapter 13. Of Jesus, God and Man; And the Testimonies of the Prophets Concerning Him.

Mr. Calhoun would have been hung had he carried out his threats.

For that He had it in His power not to have been crucified He showed throughout; when He now cast men down prostrate, now turned back the beams of the sun, and withered a fig-tree, and blinded their eyes that came against Him, and wrought ten thousand other things.

when the Head recognised its limbs, and His love allowed not the Head to separate Himself from the union of the body: so, when He takes not away His mercies from Him, it is surely that He takes it not from us, who are His limbs and body.

He was content to be a High Churchman, if he could be so on principles of his own and could strike out a course showing a marked difference from those with whom he consorted.

No one, therefore, will be justified in seeking in that other life for the consequences in us of any passion.

Is not this enough to prove that He is the Christ of prophecy?

Do you not see that when sentinels have only given way a little to sleep, they derive no advantage from their long watch, for by that little they have ruined the whole, having given perfect security to him who is prepared to steal.

They were not as yet sufficiently advanced in life to be able to despise Crocker.

All this time Mr Longestaffe was necessarily detained in London while the three ladies of his family were living forlornly at Caversham. He had taken his younger daughter home on the day after his visit to Lady Monogram, and in all his intercourse with her had spoken of her suggested marriage with Mr Brehgert as a thing utterly out of the question. Georgiana had made one little fight for her independence at the Jermyn Street Hotel. “Indeed, papa, I think it’s very hard,” she said.

“That you should be to him as a son.”

Paul departed, and there was peace: there is no war nor disturbance.

“I never believes one word of what I hears, and never will. People are such liars; bean’t they, Mrs. Butler? And I didn’t believe a word again him. He’s as fine a young man as you’d wish to see in a hundred years, and of course that goes a long way with a young woman. Well, Mrs. Butler, I’ll tell Mrs. Ray what you say, but I’m afeard it’s too late; I’m afeard it is. He’s of a stubborn sort, I think. He’s one of them that says, ‘If you will not when you may, when you will you shall have nay.’“

“But, Mr. Fitzgerald, it is my tale that I wish you to hear.”

“Just so. But there is one little ceremony to be perfected before I can be allowed to enter upon so halcyon a state of existence. The £100 a share must be paid up.” Mr. Wharton simply stared at him. “I must have the £5000 to invest in the undertaking before I can start.”

And this is a clear proof that you either deny the grace which you banish from the parts of life; or if you concede its presence in the parts, a concession plainly much against your will, you must have come over to the views of us who preserve free will for man, but so limit it that we do not deny the assistance of God in each action.

“There,” said Mary, as the door closed behind the rustling muslins of the ladies. “There, I have made an enemy for ever, perhaps two; that’s satisfactory.”

[Matthew 12:43-45] Lo, just as in the former passages we read of seven nations besides that of the Egyptians from which the children of Israel had gone forth, so here too seven unclean spirits are said to return beside that one which we first hear of as going forth from the man.

But say, how can there be rejoicing, where these are not?

For if two men, each ignorant of the other's language, meet, and are not compelled to pass, but, on the contrary, to remain in company, dumb animals, though of different species, would more easily hold intercourse than they, human beings though they be.

[Exodus 17:12] And You, O God, goest not forth in our powers.

2. In the present book let us examine the events which took place after his ascension, confirming some of them from the divine Scriptures, and others from such writings as we shall refer to from time to time.

Instead of this, you not only tear them with your teeth, but, if it pleases your taste, mince them, inflicting a multitude of wounds in the most criminal manner.

[1 Corinthians 16:19] And when writing about Onesimus, Paul unto Philemon, and to the beloved Apphia, and to the Church that is in their house.

Why do we not rather call these things a dream?

After this the meal passed almost without a word.

But, in taking him, all that she wanted was that he should be true to her now and henceforward.

4. These are the bishops of Jerusalem that lived between the age of the apostles and the time referred to, all of them belonging to the circumcision.

But what if the offenses be notorious, and yet there are no witnesses, only a strong suspicion? It has been said above that he ought to have a good report of them which are without. [1 Timothy 3:7]

Then Bozzle came forward and introduced his wife.

The woman swore by all her gods that she knew nothing of Lax. But then she had already fallen into the difficulty of having been selected as capable of giving evidence. It generally happens that no one first person will be found even to indicate others, so that there is no finding a beginning to the case. But when a witness has been indicated, the witness must speak.

There will, of course, be some to say that a young widow should not be happy and comfortable,—that she should be weeping her lost lord, and subject to the desolation of bereavement.

Paul, Samuel, David, Elisha, all make mistakes, and holy men only know what God reveals to them.

Power is so pleasant that men quickly learn to be greedy in the enjoyment of it, and to flatter themselves that patriotism requires them to be imperious.

“No man was ever robbed as I have been,” said he.

And how might we cure those who are thus disposed?

“If you loved me, my lord, you would not torture me.” She had seated herself now on the sofa, turning her face away from him over her shoulder so that she might in some degree hide her tears. He sat himself at her side, and for a moment or two got possession of her hand.

Isn’t it a fair standup fight?

As though it were demanded, With what cry have you cried unto the Lord?

But Minnie did in truth understand the matter better than her father.

How opened he for you your eyes?

Now I do call that noos worse a Jews high Mr. Pindargrasp and I opes youll see me honestly delt with sein as how I coms forward and tels it hall without any haskin and cood keep it all to miself and no one coodent be the wiser only I chews to do the thing as is rite.

Furthermore, I inform you that I have received a letter from the most pious lord desiring me to be pacific towards my brother and fellow priest John.

But is not a choice of evils all that is left to us in many a contingency?

“Speak the word, and the thing will be done,” continued Sir Thomas, endeavouring to encourage the young man.

Both of these, therefore, are leagued together in Christ, and both are conjoined, and both are linked with one another.

Lady Anna was removed to Bedford Square, and there became subject to treatment that was milder, but not less persistent.

Chapter XCIV. A Real Christian

“Nor would I have you do so; we have a duty to do, and though it be painful we must do it. ‘God will temper the wind to the shorn lamb,’ and give us strength to bear our sufferings; but my heart shudders, when I am told that the Republic has let loose those wolves of Paris to shed the blood of our poor people.”

I venture to believe that your Holiness, who have been trained from your infancy in the strict principles of the Church, has refused to listen to any calumnies which may have been directed against an absent person, and one who has been favourably known to you as united with you in the faith and love of God.

They are being made so at this day; they have been, they shall be; the swords twice sharpened are not idle in the hands of the saints.

9. But he gave a second answer similar to the former, saying that Jerusalem was his country, meaning that of which Paul says, Jerusalem which is above is free, which is our mother, [Galatians 4:26] and, You have come unto Mount Sion, and unto the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem.

“Dearest Margaret,” said he, “what is this?” and he took both her hands.

She was transferred, and the mother had been left alone.

The measure of His kindness exceeds the measure of His discipline.

She could put on her ribbons for Mr. Hall, and wait for him in the street, and look up into his face, and call him Mr. Hall;—but she could not tell him how dearly she would love that little boy and what an excellent mother she would be to him, unless he gave her some encouragement.

And it came to pass, the third day after that I was delivered, that this woman was delivered also: and we were together; there is no one in our house except us two.

He had told himself that it would only be natural, and would not be unbecoming, that the bishop should allude to the meeting of the magistrates and to the alleged theft, and that therefore such allusion should be endured with patient humility.

What an unmitigated ass that cousin of yours must be!

Mrs. Brownlow in a mild way suggested that nothing should be said to Edith, and Sir Gregory gave half a promise that he would be silent. But it was against his nature not to speak. When the moment came the temptation to say something that could be easily said, and which would produce some mild excitement, was always too strong for him. “My dear,” he said, one evening, when Edith was hovering round his chair, “you remember what I once said to you about your cousin Walter?”

From this source sprung all those powerfully argued articles in The Field, Bell’s Life, and Land and Water;—for on this matter all the sporting papers were of one mind.

All power is given unto me in heaven and on earth.

Hear the women, who went about with the apostles, having taken unto themselves manly courage, Priscilla, Persis, and the rest; from whom our present women are as far removed as our men from their men.

With Mr. Green’s private residence we shall, I believe, have no further concern; but to him at his chambers in Stone Buildings I must now introduce the reader of these memoirs.

1. After all this it is fitting that we should know something in regard to the origin and family of Josephus, who has contributed so much to the history in hand. He himself gives us information on this point in the following words: Josephus, the son of Mattathias, a priest of Jerusalem, who himself fought against the Romans in the beginning and was compelled to be present at what happened afterward.

Our Mr. Oldbuck, of Oxney Colne, was sadly deficient in these.

M. Le Gros would be represented, no doubt, as a Jew twice more Jewish than Mr. Moss himself.

‘Then I think he ought not. But your father was always a romantic, headstrong man. At any rate, there she is,—barmaid, as we may say, in the hotel,—much the same as our Floschen here; and, of course, such a marriage as this is a great thing; a very great thing, indeed. How should they not wish it?’

“I am not brought in question,” he said slowly.

St. Thomas is very pretty as seen from the ships; and when that has been said, all has been said that can be said in its favour.

Wherefore, if in those words which were spoken in Exodus, and in all those corporeal appearances, the Lord Jesus Christ was manifested; or if in some cases Christ was manifested, as the consideration of this passage persuades us, in others the Holy Spirit, as that which we have said above admonishes us; at any rate no such result follows, as that God the Father never appeared in any such form to the Fathers.

yes, the second Psalm, which relates the Passion of Christ, says, Serve the Lord with fear, and rejoice unto Him with trembling — rejoice, because of the risen Lord; but with trembling, because of the earthquake, and the Angel who appeared as lightning.

Mr. Serjeant Bluestone presents his compliments to Mr. Daniel Thwaite.

[Philippians 4:4] Let, then, the Pelagians deny that these things shall be in the kingdom of God, where we shall live without end; or let them be so mad, if it appears good, as to contend that righteousness, peace, and joy, will be such there as they are here to the righteous.

Of course I’m aware that all this is only a prelude to some ignominious end.

“The bishop seems to be a quiet man enough,” suggested Mr. Harding, having acknowledged to himself his own failure.

May the Lord give aid.

Without a word he went up to his room, and then tore it asunder.

Each of them was zealous for the views of his own party; but when they had attained sovereign power, they manifested very different dispositions.

And it was clear that the bishop wished him to go to Gatherum Castle.

For there are no bad gods, and it is to the good that, as they say, the due honor of such rites is to be paid.

He had stayed a day or two in town and had also remained longer at the archbishop’s than he had intended.

Of which sword it is said again, And my sword shall devour flesh [Deuteronomy 32:42].

“Can’t there really, now?” said he.

But the conversation was soon turned from Mr. Prosper to Captain Vignolles and Mr. Grey.

Serve not with discontent; for your murmurs do not tend to release you from serving, but to make you a wicked servant.

Orders, then, should be risen to in an orderly way: for he courts a fall who seeks to rise to the topmost heights of a place by steep ascents, disregarding the steps that lead to it.

One of these propositions, says he, is true, the other false.

[Romans 9:1-5] Here is the most abundant and express testimony and the most solemn commendation.

[Acts 5:5] That man was punished, and others profited thereby.

He said not, a witness of the rest of his actions, but a witness of the resurrection alone.

Inasmuch, then, as it had to be believed in order to be of use, so far did it require, for the securing of this faith, a preparation built upon the foundations of pro-arrangement and fore-announcement.

“But was I not a fool? See how it is now. Were you and I to become man and wife, they would never give them up, though they are my own — my own. No; we must wait; and you — you must demand them from your uncle.”

What a strange mass of human beings one finds in this city of London!

But if the Word was made flesh of Himself without any communication with a womb, no mother's womb operating upon Him with its usual function and support, how could the lacteal fountain have been conveyed (from the womb) to the breasts, since (the womb) can only effect the change by actual possession of the proper substance?

But gods are not slaves; therefore whatever things are servile in character are not gods.

He had gone to Fawn Court in compliance with a promise to Lizzie Eustace, that he would call upon her there.

For we shall find him clearly and evidently saying that He who is unbegotten is eternal, but that those that are begotten and made are generated and perish — as he said of the same class, gods of gods, of whom I am maker— for he speaks in the following words: In my opinion, then, we must first define what that is which is always existent and has no birth, and what that is which is always being generated but never really is.

Therefore she herself bears them in her own womb and in the womb of her handmaids, by virtue of the same sacraments, as though by virtue of the seed of her husband.

But I must carry my argument yet further back.

She had simpered, had tried to laugh, and had then turned away her face.

how full of danger that of William!

I address my appeal to you, O judges, whom God has sent to us with the fullest plenitude of intelligence; judge which of these two could have erected the structure, or what the one could have been doing all the while that the other was engaged in the building.

Not Christ Himself; for it is impossible either that death should befall what is divine, or that that should waste away and disappear in death which is one in its substance, and not compounded, nor formed by bringing together any parts.

“And people get to know each other;”—in saying which Miss Demolines looked very pleasantly up into Johnny’s face.

Neither is there any ransoming of men from captivity, save in His blood, who gave Himself a ransom for all [1 Timothy 2:6]: who, as the blessed apostle proclaims, when He was in the form of God, thought it not robbery that He was equal with God; but emptied Himself, receiving the form of a slave, being made in the likeness of men, and being found in fashion as a man He humbled Himself, being made obedient even unto death, the death of the cross.

Let the police use such open means as they have—and, God knows, in Ireland they should be effective enough; but I cannot but think the system of secret informers—to which those in positions of inferior authority too often have recourse—has greatly increased crime in many districts of Ireland.

“Has he gone?” she asked.

But the misery, the agony, had been then present with him during all those hours,—and had been made the sharper by his endeavours to keep it down and banish it from his thoughts.

Lord Stanley had not forgotten the accusations of official ignorance made against him by Lord Palmerston; and Lord Aberdeen’s memory was still laden with the bitterness of that “ example of antiquated imbecility,” as which he had been represented to the House of Commons.

Pat Brady’s broken nose was all but flattened on to his face, as if it had never lifted its head after the fatal blow which had laid it low.

“I should like to hear him say one thing I know,” said Sophy. Then Lucy in her rage tore asunder some fragment of a garment on which she was working.

Was it not clear from what she had said that the archdeacon had been wrong in imputing to her any attachment to Mr. Slope?

“That’s my misfortune.”

III. The Faith and counsel of God in regard to the incarnation of the Word are set forth.

However, in two days he died;—and we buried him in the big cemetery just out of the town.

‘It is not quite as nice walking as the old Quad at Trinity,’ said Caldigate.

On one of these, Linda sat at the old man’s bidding; and he placed himself on another, with his hands still behind him, just seating himself on the edge of the chair.

The evil, however, at which even marriage blushes for shame is not the fault of marriage, but of the lust of the flesh.

Chapter 19.— God's Ways Past Finding Out.

There is a passage, too, in the Book of Job, of which the devil is the subject: This is the beginning of the creation of God, which He made to be a sport to His angels, which agrees with the psalm, where it is said, There is that dragon which You have made to be a sport therein.

In the mean time he did not say much to her, and did not quite understand all that she said to him.

And as it was already dawn, he addressed us shortly, saluting us according to his custom, and immediately proceeded to the usual place for the purpose of teaching; and when he saw that many had assembled there, having invoked peace upon them according to the first religious form, he began to speak as follows:—

“It will be quite new if he is,” replied Mrs. Smith.

And so could his father.

There fore they could not reach through the soul, wherefore they pass away and gradually withdraw.

Trollope will remain one of the most trustworthy, though not one of the most eloquent, of the writers who have helped the heart of man to know itself.

And as the several virtues are causes of the happiness of one individual; and as both the sun, and the fire, and the bath, and clothing are of one getting warm: so while truth is one, many things contribute to its investigation.

Good fruit came by Moses, that is the Law, but not so goodly as the Gospel.

“I thought I understood it.”

But she felt also the peculiar danger of her own position.

etiam voces Domini ementiuntur isti intemperantiæ communicatores, fratresque libidinis, non solum probrum philosophiæ, sed etiam totius vitæ; qui veritatem, quantum in eis situm est, adulterant ac corrumpunt, vel potius defodiunt; homines infelicissimi carnalem concubitus communionem consecrant, et hanc ipsos putant ad regnum Dei perducere.

Have repelled unto the end, in the person of the congregation which is properly called Synagogue.

The feeling that had made these few minutes so inexpressibly loathsome to her might, perhaps, be driven from her heart.

He makes, also, many other statements, which he has followed up at length in his three books On Virgins.

But now she loved him—with a sort of love, because he had been so good to Graham.

“It’s a story,” said Lizzie, in innocent amazement.

Life in Exeter would be impossible, if no way to social pardon could be opened for him.

Isaiah, again, who beheld the glory of the Seraphim, and after him Jeremiah, who was entrusted with great power against nations and kings; [Jeremiah 1:10] the one heard the divine voice and was cleansed by a live coal for his prophetic office, and the other was known before his formation and sanctified before his birth.

Take heed, therefore, children, that these dissensions of yours do not deprive you of your life.

The countess was very anxious that Frank should also accompany them.

But why need she sleep now that every thought was a new pleasure?

Yea, murders, and strifes, and wars, and divisions, and rapines, and frauds, and all evils would be removed, and vice be unknown even in name.

And while she was yet in perplexity as to these things, the angel placed shortly before her the summary of his whole message, and said to the pure virgin, The Holy Ghost shall come upon you, and the power of the Highest shall overshadow you; therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of you shall be called the Son of God.

[2 Corinthians 12:11] What indeed is more foolish than to debate over the majesty of God, which rather occasions questionings, than godly instruction which is in faith.

They are made of rough stone, or of mud and whitewash; and, if I do not mistake, one of them had two storeys.

If a believer teach literature, while he is teaching doubtless he commends, while he delivers he affirms, while he recalls he bears testimony to, the praises of idols interspersed therein.

I could only hope that they walked home together in the evening.

For the same God who created the world, also created man from the beginning: and man is not a part of the world, in the same manner in which a limb is a part of the body; for it is possible for the world to be without man, as it is for a city or house.

If I know anything of a man he’s not the man to do that because he’s a duke.

If they hate the Queen, hate the laws, hate all justice, these men learn to hate them too.

Here he found two ladies,—but only two ladies,—waiting to receive him.

“What on earth is to become of poor George?” said Mr. Fitzgibbon. “I wonder whether any one knows where he is. George wasn’t a bad sort of fellow.”

But some one says: Why, then, does the true God permit these things to be done?

There were two other Rosciuses, distant relatives, probably, both named Titus; Titus Roscius Magnus, who sojourned in Rome, and who seems to have exercised the trade of informer and assassin during the proscriptions, and Titus Roscius Capito, who, when at home, lived at Ameria, but of whom Cicero tells us that he had become an apt pupil of the other during this affair.

But what shall I say about chastity, when only one and no second union is allowed?

And the waters were gathered together into their places, and the dry land appeared.

For like as the well is not a river, nor the river a well, but both are one and the same water which is conveyed in a channel from the well to the river, so the Father's deity passes into the Son without flow and without division.

She was a fine young woman, and had she been a man, would have been a very fine young man.

At present, however, before entering upon his own praises and the comparison, he also reproaches the Corinthians with their great slavishness, because they were extravagantly submissive to them.

[Isaiah 1:17-18] What labor is there here?

And I trust that the fact of his being a clergyman will not be allowed to press against him unfairly.

In all their labors they aim chiefly at this, that their chosen way of life may have greater and wider renown, as having supplied the people with such leaders; as Jacob consents to go with Leah, that Rachel may obtain the sweet-smelling and good-looking fruit.

For what part of him could be contemned if he himself should be worshipped?

For that blessed person searching exactly into these things, ceased not until he had found the cause, and had declared it to all others.

As things had gone with her since, such obstinacy had become impossible to her.

But both expressions, although contrary to one another— that is, enemies and beloved— are appropriate, though not to the same men, yet to the same Jewish people, and to the same carnal seed of lsrael, of whom some belonged to the falling away, and some to the blessing of Israel himself.

Often when going forth from his own house he has seen a one-eyed or lame man, and has shunned him as an omen.

Nor even so are they beautiful, nor good, nor are they, as Thou their Creator art; compared with whom they are neither beautiful, nor good, nor are at all.

Now what he means is this; 'Since you are desirous of proving whether Christ dwells in me, and call me to an account, and on this score make a mock of me as mean and despicable, as if I were destitute of that Power; you shall know that we are not destitute, if you give us occasion, which God forbid.'

Nay, but I think it was my Quaker dress.

A Day With One of the Navvies.—evening

It will be better that you should.

Now, Thoroughbung was fond of his horses, and liked to have them talked about, and he knew that Harry Annesley was treating him badly.

It was all very well; but still, says Cicero, he was not such a guest as you would welcome back—not one to whom you would say, “Come again, I beg, when you return this way.” Once is enough.

If he handed her a plate, or cut for her a morsel of bread from the loaf, he showed by his manner, and by his brow, that the doing so was a nuisance to him.

Chapter 1. Reason of writing the epistle

Of these we may specially mention Mr. Lawrence Twentyman, who was quite the gentleman-farmer.

But the butler showed by his visage that he regarded £500 as a very serious matter, and that he was not at all astonished by the occupation which it gave to his master’s thoughts.

Lady George looked at the chair before she answered, feeling that she would not dare to speak a word if Aunt Ju were already on her legs; but Aunt Ju was taking advantage of the commotion which was still going on among those who were looking for seats to get her breath, and therefore she could whisper a reply. “I suppose it is,” she said.

[1 Corinthians 10:30] He does not find fault with sacrifices, but with offering to devils.

And I have washed among the innocent my hands.

The divine expression was altogether gone, and that which remained, though in looking at her it was always pleasant, was hardly paternal.

Epicurus, however, who had said, What is above us is nothing to us, wished notwithstanding to have a peep at the sky, and found the sun to be a foot in diameter.

For as in our good works He is said to work in us, by whose gift we are enabled to work what is good, so in our rest He is said to rest by whose gift we rest.

“Like a celestial bird of Paradise. No one ever went better;—or I believe so well. You’ve been carried rather nicely yourself.”

Only let it remain undefeated, they say, only let it flourish and abound in resources; let it be glorious by its victories, or still better, secure in peace; and what matters it to us?

For the devil will not dare to attack me while supported by Your defence, as he brings both against me and You this objection and complaint, which he ever slanderously brings against Your champions, Does Job serve God for nought?

There is, I believe, nothing in her mentally, whatever may be her moral excellences.

He had been told that he ought not to spend above two thousand pounds a year, and had been reminded that there was a house for him to use both in town and in the country.

In the same way when he had learned the Jews' plot against him he appealed to Cæsar and sent his sister's son to the chief captain to report the designs hatched against him, not because he clung to this present life, but in obedience to the divine law.

He had not understood that the Duchess’s promise of her assistance at Silverbridge might be taken by him for what it was worth, and that her aid might be used as far as it went,—but, that in the event of its failing him, he was bound in honour to take the result without complaining, whatever that result might be.

He seems to be a stout old party, but I don’t think he’s the man for Polpenno.

“You will stay a month at Cheltenham?” he said.

He would show them what a boy would do.

Now the ladies at Turnover, who were much devoted to the Low Church, had heard and doubtless believed, that our friend, Mr. Fenwick, was little better than an infidel.

Accordingly, Homer, the best of the poets, who describes what usually took place, when, wishing to show us what most influenced the demons to grant an answer to the wishes of their votaries, introduces Chryses, who, for a few garlands and the thighs of bulls and goats, obtained an answer to his prayers for his daughter Chryseis, so that the Greeks were driven by a pestilence to restore her back to him.

And if it is not lawful to refuse to give, how is it lawful to deprive another?

He too had his strong feelings, perhaps his prejudices, about Bragton.

Let us then take heed to ourselves, that we may escape the punishment due to this offense, and be deemed worthy of the loving kindness of God, through the grace and mercies of His only-begotten Son, with Whom to the Father and the Holy Ghost be glory, power, and honor, now and ever, and world without end.

Conceited, perhaps, she was as to certain gifts of character.

Then he shuffled a cheque for a thousand pounds into Lord George’s hands.

“Government! Well; I suppose there must be government. But the less of it the better. I’m not against government;—nor yet against laws, Mr. Finn; though the less of them, too, the better. But what does these lords do in the Government? Lords indeed! I’ll tell you what they do, Mr. Finn. They wotes; that’s what they do! They wotes hard; black or white, white or black. Ain’t that true? When you’re a ‘lord,’ will you be able to wote against Mr. Mildmay to save your very soul?”

“No; we will have no more running away: I am sorry that you ever did so. It was my fault, altogether my fault; but it was foolish.”

“Would you like to have lived with him?” Thackeray asks.

“I could not do it. Think of Lucy, and how she stands with him. Besides, I have already had words with Lufton about Sowerby and his money matters. He thinks that I am to blame, and he would tell me so; and then there would be sharp things said between us. He would advance me the money if I pressed for it, but he would do so in a way that would make it impossible that I should take it.”

But Caroline Spalding had a spirit of her own, and had already made up her mind that she would not be talked down by Miss Petrie. “Uncle Jonas,” said she, “asks him because we like him; and would do so too if he kept the store in Broadway. But if he did keep the store perhaps we should not like him.”

MRS. HOGGETT, wife to Dan.

I must endeavour, O virgins, by a true exposition, to explain to you the mind of the Scripture according to its meaning.

Silverbridge listened in silence and with something of true admiration in his heart.

Then his son assured him that the two had never met since Fanny had gone to Hendon Hall.

First then we must put this question to the irreligious, why they consider Him ignorant?

“What is it?” said Lady Susanna, jumping up.

He was strongly convinced of her guilt, but by no means strongly convinced that her guilt could be proved.

I hope you ain’t going to sit on that stool again.

Therefore, the day after, they change places, and now he, the great man, gets the larger share in the dejection.

“I would have done nothing of the kind if I could have helped it. If you will believe me, Brotherton, my only object is to have all this so firmly settled that there may not be need of further enquiry at a future time.”

Again I was grave.

Is it not, then, plain to all what this blasphemy of a fighter against God would prove?

Chapter VII.

And although he was desirous to suffer, yet was he moved at the sight of the people praying, for they asked him to save himself for the instruction and strengthening of his people.

For if those who came over from the heretics were not baptized, as Cyprian asserts, they were not rightly admitted into the Church; and yet he himself did not despair of their obtaining pardon from the mercy of God in virtue of the unity of the Church.

For the rest amid our present miseries with the sword making havoc around us, he is rich enough who has bread sufficient for his need, and he is abundantly powerful who is not reduced to be a slave.

“Girls do such wonderful strange things. What an impudent ass he must be!”

“He says that no man has ever had a truer friend. He will swear to that in all companies. And I, when it was allowed to me to swear with him, swore it too. As his friend, let me tell you one thing,—one thing which I would never tell to any other man,—one thing which I know I may tell you in confidence. You are a gentleman, and will not break my confidence?”

“Suppose she had none?”

If she would make an appointment he would attend to it.

Why was he going?

Always to give thanks, this is a mark of a philosophic soul.

What advantage is it to them that they confess that baptism is necessary for all ages, while the Manicheans say that it is superfluous for every age, while they say that in infants it is false so far as it pertains to the forgiveness of sins?

Will you call this justice an evil, when it is all unfavourable to evil?

Thus chastity was sent down, as being most useful and helpful to men.

But then if this thing truth teaches not, it is not true; if not true, it is not meet to be learned; if not meet to be learned, never therefore is it meet to tell a lie.

Round him the hounds were clustered,—twenty-three couple in all,—some seated on their haunches, some standing obediently still, while a few moved about restlessly, subject to the voices and on one or two occasions to a gentle administration of thong from the attendant whips.

She sha’n’t escape me long.

“He will have to pay that one, because it was not included in the schedule. What do you think has turned up now?”

They will scarce strip before their own husbands affecting a plausible pretence of modesty; but any others who wish, may see them at home shut up naked in their baths.

For whatever things are set to the account of evil, have a compatibility with the condition of evil.

Like other people, and other countries the Transvaal should struggle hard to get what it wants, and if it struggles honestly no doubt will have its railway and will enjoy it when it has it.

As the white man generally dislikes the black races by whom he is surrounded and troubled in South Africa,—not averse by any means to the individual with whom he comes in immediate contact, but despising and almost hating the people,—Cetywayo and his subjects are as a rule evil spoken of among the Europeans of the adjacent Colony.

And this is not unreasonable, for the holy Athanasius spoke of all created things as having one nature forasmuch as they were all produced, expressing himself thus in his Oration against those who blasphemed the Holy Spirit: That the Holy Spirit is above all creation, and different from the nature of things produced and peculiar to divinity, we may again perceive.

Never before had he dwelt over it so tediously.

65. Now, did the Father say on that occasion, Let there be such light as I Myself have made, or Let there be light— light having as yet not existed; or did the Son ask what sort of light the Father made? Nay, the Son made light, according to His own Will, and so far in accordance with the Father's good pleasure, that He approved. It is of new, original work by the Son that the place speaks.

And the vessel is the flesh, because this was made of clay by the breath of the divine afflatus; and it was afterwards clothed with the coats of skins, that is, with the cutaneous covering which was placed over it.

“Because he is a lout and a beast,” said Ayala, jumping up. “I wonder you should ask me;—as if that had anything to do with it. Would you fall in love with a lout because you had no one else? I would rather live for ever all alone, even in Kingsbury Crescent, than have to think of becoming the wife of my cousin Tom.” At this Nina shrugged her shoulders, showing that her education in Italy had been less romantic than that accorded to Ayala in London.

from you— what is the cause, what the reason, that you offer them sacrifices; and then, what gain comes to the gods themselves from this, and remains to their advantage.

On the other hand He is appeased by the virtues of such as continue in faith and charity and holiness with chastity.

This, O Arete, is the discourse on virginity which you required of me, accomplished according to my ability; which I pray, O mistress, although it is mediocre and short, that you will receive with kindness from me who was chosen to speak last.

The things which are here considered evil are esteemed good in heaven.

He confessed his fault aloud, and vowed again that if his sight were given back he would perform what he had vowed.

“The parson may say what he pleases, grandfather. I can’t stop his saying of ‘em. It isn’t likely I shall try, neither. But no parson among ‘em all can marry me without I’m willing.”

“I wish, John, you wouldn’t talk to the girls in that strain,” said their mother. “It really isn’t becoming.”

For so shall we too be able, when we have attained this beauty, to obtain the good things eternal, whereof may all we partake, through the grace and love towards men of our Lord Jesus Christ, with Whom to the Father, with the Holy Spirit, be glory and might, for ever and ever.

Had he already written the book in which he most explicitly alleges that grace is bestowed on us according to our deserts— the very position which he without any reservation condemned at that Synod in the East?

“Open! To be sure you are,” said she, “and a yard of petticoat strings hanging out. I don’t know why I pay such high wages to Mrs. Richards if she can’t take the trouble to see whether or no you are fit to be looked at,” and Mrs. Proudie poked the strings here, and twitched the dress there, and gave her daughter a shove and a shake, and then pronounced it all right.

However, the manner of this way of knowledge and of that has already been declared in the Gospel; (Hom.

Then David, after being severely reproved by Nathan the prophet, although he confessed his sin, did not escape the punishment of God.

And as to the thing which you asked me to ask, I attended to it by letter as far as it seemed to me right to bring it forward; but with what result you may have seen.

“But you say he is the wickedest man the world ever produced.”

That Chosen Vessel has proclaimed in no weak or wavering voice that Christ is the Son of Him Who, as we believe, is the Father.

“And so should I,—so much! I suppose all these men here would think me an ass if they knew how little I care about the day’s work,—whether we find, or whether we run, or whether we kill,—just because the pony is not here. If the pony were here I should have that feeling of expectation of joy, which is so common to girls when some much-thought-of ball or promised pleasure is just before them.” Then Tony went off with his hounds, and Jonathan, mounting his horse, followed with the ruck.

Sophie once or twice muttered the word “disgrace!” but beyond that she remained silent.

Let me say that for a time your heart will be sore;—that you do in truth love this girl so as to feel that she is necessary to your happiness.

It would perhaps be wrong to say that he was handsome, but his face was nevertheless pleasant to look upon.

“It wouldn’t do for me,” she had said to him, “to be putting myself forward, as if I were giving a party myself, or anything of that sort;—would it now?”

Wherefore He says, You shall receive power, after that the Holy Ghost has come upon you, and you shall be My witnesses both in Jerusalem, and in all Judæa.

He Himself, accordingly, became a foundation to them, and supports them with joy, because they are not ashamed to bear His name.

For if you love, you ought to obey Him who is beloved.

Look at Jones with his wan, worn wife and his five children, Jones who is not yet thirty, of whom he happens to know that the wretched man cannot look his doctor in the face, and that the doctor is as necessary to the man’s house as is the butcher!

My message is this: Tell her ladyship, with my compliments, that it will be better for her to see me—better for her, and for me.

Besides mamma does not mean to go herself.

Wherefore we needed also that Teacher who knows these things perfectly; for the Spirit, [1 Corinthians 2:10-12] says he, searches all things, even the deep things of God.

“I was obliged to go and see a friend who has just come to town from my part of the country.”

Now the matter on which these few words occurred was a question of love—whether George Voss should fall in love with and marry his stepmother’s niece Marie Bromar.

On the Baptism of Heretics

If he could only get the promise of his mother’s sympathy for Grace it would be something.

They went to work at once to fill their trunks and baskets; and as the means of conveyance were then slow, de Lescure went out into the stables, and had the waggon prepared at once, and ordered that the oxen which were to draw it should be ready to start at three o’clock, in order that the load, if possible, might reach Durbellière the same night.

“Then I am a prisoner?”

Nay, would he not interfere and with some strong hand prevent so mean a deed on the part of his grandfather?

Now how does he meet this?

“Oh, Miss Lawrie, what do you think?” said Mr Blake.

3. Report says that he was sent from Syria to Rome, and became food for wild beasts on account of his testimony to Christ.

“Why, just this: that if we want to get rid of him, it won’t quite be the death of him.”

The Meager Family

If, on the other hand, the Divine nature is incapable of evil, unchangeable, unalterable, eternally permanent, to what end does it stand in need of a ruler, controlling as it does all creation, and itself by reason of its immutability needing no ruler to control it?

But what an absurdity this involves an examination of the saying will clearly show.

But you wish to ruin yourselves.

“If you will allow me, Lady Eustace, to give you advice,—really friendly advice—”

James also and John were sons of another aunt (3) of the Lord's.

Perhaps some momentary feeling of compassion, some twinge of conscience, came across his heart, as he thought of it all; but if so he checked it instantly, in accordance with the teachings of his whole life, He had made his reflections on all these things, and had tutored his mind to certain resolutions, and would not allow himself to be carried away by any womanly softness.

Mary told herself again and again that she was quite sure of Tregear;—but it was hard upon her that she could not be made certain that her certainty was well grounded.

Again, if Maximianus is not dead, why is a man baptized again who had been baptized by him?

Let the resolution be fixed and the struggle made, and women will become something very different from what they are now, — infinitely more satisfactory to themselves, better able to hold their own in coping with men, and free from those faults of frivolity and languor of which they are now as a body not unfrequently disposed to accuse themselves.

Who dared to exact payment of a debt from one who consumed his stores, or from any debtor whatsoever, that sought their assistance or protection?

‘Will you have my room?’ said the captain goodnaturedly; ‘any sofa does for me.’

It might be easy to pick holes in it; to show that some members have been corrupt, others quarrelsome, and others again impracticable.

This was a consolation to those also (to whom he wrote), when their master even is in such circumstances.

He is, moreover, the patentee for an egg-hatching machine, or incubator, which is now in use among many of the feather-growers of the district.

Eusebius, surnamed Pamphilus, writing the History of the Church in ten books, closed it with that period of the emperor Constantine, when the persecution which Diocletian had begun against the Christians came to an end.

What violence in not being led away by vain-glory?

And, after all that she had lately heard about her husband’s poverty, she could not understand how he should wish to incur the expense.

Written the day after the previous letter.

“Let us reward him, but for the moment let us be rid of him.” And then, too, he had in the same sentence called him a boy.

“I hope not. I hope not.”

There is not another Baptism, nor is there a second reconciliation again, but a certain fearful expectation of judgment which shall devour the adversaries.

Report always does deal unkindly with unmarried young women who have ceased to be girls.

For unto such a point of madness have some advanced as to say that there is nothing real in the whole of being: yea, they maintain positively that all things are contrary to what appears.

He heard his wife’s steps about the room as she shaded some window from his eyes, or crept to the door to give some household order to one of her girls outside; but he did not speak to her, nor she to him.

When that day dawned, in the eighth consulship of Diocletian and seventh of Maximian, suddenly, while it was yet hardly light, the prefect, together with chief commanders, tribunes, and officers of the treasury, came to the church in Nicomedia, and the gates having been forced open, they searched everywhere for an image of the Divinity.

And when she is departed out of his house, she may go and be another man's wife.

“Oh yes;—always.”

Should he now at once speak of the galley-slave, and, with expressions of regret, decline the alliance on that reason?

To call himself by a great name before the world, and then to be something infinitely less than that name, would be to him a degradation.

He separates from them, and in a very awful manner: and though he does not now say, It was need that the word should be spoken unto you, yet he darkly intimates it to them:— and when they opposed themselves, and blasphemed, he shook his raiment, and said unto them, Your blood be upon your own heads; I am clean: from henceforth I will go unto the Gentiles.

‘We shall all have liberty enough now,’ said Scatterall; ‘I wonder what they’ll do with us; eh, Charley?’

Nectarius was desirous of ordaining him deacon; but Martyrius refused the honor under the plea of his own unworthiness of such a divine service, and called upon Nectarius himself to witness as to the course of his past life.

“Of course I wasn’t there to see what you took,” said she; “but you were very bad when you came home last night;—very bad indeed. You couldn’t have got in at the door only for me.”

And observe, I pray you, his wisdom.

For he knew that, though there were some whose thoughts were able to recognize and understand his power, others there were whose brutish and senseless nature led them to rely exclusively on the testimony of their own senses.

Mrs. Broughton doubted and hesitated, made difficulties, and lifted up her hands in despair.

Is Hamlet true?

Whereas, who can be so poor among us, as to want water enough even for comfort?

So like you, you know.

“Might I stay the sun above us, good Sir Bishop?” Canute cried; “Could I bid the silver moon to pause upon her heavenly ride? If the moon obeys my orders, sure I can command the tide.

(3) Paul says that some shall be alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord; and that they shall be caught up to meet the Lord in the air [1 Thessalonians 4:15-17]. Are we to suppose this assumption to be corporeal and that those assumed will escape death? Yes, Jerome answers, but their bodies will be glorified.

She knew that this man at her side, this accomplished scholar, this practised orator, this great polemical combatant, was striving and striving in vain to tell her that his heart was no longer his own.

a week; in other parts of the islands a moderate carpenter would earn 2s.

If it is virtue to control the lust of the body, he must be free from virtue who has no lust which he may regulate.

If He shall say, He that has sent me is greater than I, adapt the voice to the economy.

That John, again, who reclined on the bosom of our Lord, and whom He greatly loved, [John 21:20] — he, too, was a holy person.

She has been put in prison by king John, and is in extremis when her first husband gets to her.

And when at last she did come forward she was very shy.

And certainly, if the goddess Virginiensis is present to loose the virgin's zone, if the god Subigus is present that the virgin may be got under the man, if the goddess Prema is present that, having been got under him, she may be kept down, and may not move herself, what has the goddess Pertunda to do there?

Lord Dumbello was a man who had a will of his own—as the Grantlys boasted amongst themselves.

Some conjectured that he was a Persian; others, that he was a Saracen.

“Oh, Lord Lufton; if I have done wrong—!” and poor Lucy almost started from her chair, and a deep flush came across her dark cheek.

“It shows a d—— bad feeling somewhere,” said the Master.

A man is said to have eaten food in the fancy of a dream, but we cannot call this fancy food, in the proper sense of the term.

She had wished to be taken to Naples, but Crosbie had made her understand at the first whispering of the word, that Naples was quite out of the question.

But what should he do down at Buston?

Whoever, therefore, has reduced those affections within their proper limits, which they who are ignorant of God cannot do, he is patient, he is brave, he is just.

Questions and arguments thence arose, and the meaning of the terms was exactly tested.

This then straightway made them perfect, the having all one heart and one soul.

Ver. 11, 12. Now may our God and Father Himself, and our Lord Jesus Christ direct our way unto you: and the Lord make you to increase and abound in love one toward another, and toward all men, even as we also do toward you.

Find in a woman your 'leader in this high emprise.'

Ver. 3. For we ourselves also were sometimes foolish.

He smiled and nodded at every one, now and then pointing back with his whip to Ruby when he met any of his specially intimate friends, as though he would have said, “see, I’ve got her at last in spite of all difficulties.” Poor Ruby, in her misery under this treatment, would have escaped out of the cart had it been possible.

Have you seen him in bonds?— for wealth is indeed bonds.

“She has deserved no friend,” said Mrs. Burton.

“And yet,” said he, “you were not glad to see me!”

“Sorrow to it for male,” said Mooney. “It’s the worst vittles iver a man tooked into the inside of him. Saving yer honer’s presence it’s as much as I can do to raise the bare arm of me since the day I first began with the yally male.”

Nevertheless it was conceded to him that he knew England as only an Englishman can know it.

“That is, when I’m told over and over again that I’m to be cut down and thrown into the oven—”

Now she had not only disobeyed him, but by most perverse obstinacy on her part had driven him to acts of forgery which had already been detected.

If these things belonged to nature and not to a bad moral choice, his expression, they practice, is inappropriate, it should be, they suffer.

He was filled at once with an unwonted pride.

For even so it is easily detected, it easily melts away.

“Yes; I do love you,” I say,—”but—” Then there’s a sigh.

“I did,” said Miss Boncassen.

Giving him up, therefore, they asked to have a certain cellarer, Maurus by name, to whose life and industry there are many testimonies, the late abbot Claudius also with certain others having spoken in his praise.

Whoever shall read these productions will be convinced of their excellence.

And I hope, sir, to be able to keep all these commandments which you have enjoined upon me, the Lord strengthening me.

Augusta followed her, dumfounded at her indignation; and Frank also followed, but not in silence. When his first surprise at Mary’s great anger was over, he felt himself called upon to say some word that might tend to exonerate his ladylove; and some word also of protestation as to his own purpose.

The Duchess always comes about half-past twelve, to complain generally of the guests.” She answered him quite at her ease, making arrangement for privacy if he should desire it, but doing so as though she thought that he wanted to talk to her about his trial, or about politics, or the place he had just refused.

Let none associate with the soul-destroying Manicheans, who by decoctions of chaff counterfeit the sad look of fasting, who speak evil of the Creator of meats, and greedily devour the daintiest, who teach that the man who plucks up this or that herb is changed into it.

“Oh,—to Vienna. I am there for a couple of months every year, minding my business. I wonder whether you would know me, if you saw me;—sometimes sitting on a stool in a counting-house, sometimes going about among old houses, settling what must be done to save them from tumbling down. I dress so differently at such times, and talk so differently, and look so much older, that I almost fancy myself to be another person.”

And thus the Saviour is, in one view of Him, speech, and John differs from Him; for as the Saviour is speech, John is voice.

But so behave that neither your humility be remiss nor your authority stiff, to the end that uprightness season humility, and humility render your very uprightness gentle.

For the fault is not laid to the suit of armor, but to those that use it to an ill end.

In a word, there is nothing which presents a standing point to my mind in these illustrations from which to consider the Object which I am trying to represent to myself, unless one may indulgently accept one point of the image while rejecting the rest.

“I am afraid it must be goodbye, for some long days to come.”

“My lord,” she said, “my lord, we were all so depressed when we heard of it.”

The father did not survive the disgrace of his bankruptcy, and the mother in process of time settled herself with her son in one of the Lancashire manufacturing towns, where John Johnson raised his head in business to some moderate altitude, Sir Joseph having afforded much valuable assistance.

Now because I am rich in friendships, perhaps I surpass in that kind of property even that great man who plumed himself upon that very thing.

How then is He good and merciful, and full of lovingkindness to man?

Its doors are open to almost all loungers and idlers; and the chances are that Billy Bawn, the cripple, or Judy Molloy, the deaf old hag, are more likely to know where to find the required utensil than the cook herself.

Could it be right for him to give his hand without his heart?

Does he not believe that Job was such as he was?

Chapter 18. On Love, and the Repressing of Our Desires

A man with such a tongue as that of Cicero will make the listener believe almost whatever he will; and the advocate is restrained by no horror of falsehood.

However, very little seemed to do for him, for he soon roused himself, and said, “I wonder how the devil, Dot, you do without borrowing?

What should you say?

He was therefore disposed to make himself very unpleasant to poor George if occasion should require.

Mr. Scarborough had determined that the property should go hither and thither according to his will, without reference to the established laws of the land, and had carried, and would carry his purpose.

I never heard of a mayor of Loring, but, nevertheless, there is no doubt as to its being a town.

“But did Mr Ball believe you when you told him the story?”

“Mr Rubb, I’m very happy to see you,” continued Miss Todd, accepting her guest’s hand, glove and all. “I hope they haven’t made you believe that you are going to have any dancing, for, if so, they have hoaxed you shamefully.” Then she introduced them to Mr and Mrs Wilkinson.

It was full of kisses and vows and ecstatic hopes but did not name a day.

“Oh, well; all that’s nothing to the question. The question is, whether this intruding fellow, and a lot of cheating attorneys and pestilent dissenters, are to interfere with an arrangement which everyone knows is essentially just and serviceable to the church. Pray don’t let us be splitting hairs, and that amongst ourselves, or there’ll never be an end of the cause or the cost.”

Then again He raises His discourse to high matters, saying, What things soever the Father does, these also does the Son likewise.

But observe them (Paul and Silas), how they do not answer, nor plead for themselves; (b) For when, says he, I am weak, then am I strong.

Upstairs she ate her meals, and upstairs she passed her time in packing and unpacking, and in requesting that telegrams might be sent repeatedly to Thompson Hall.

If any one deny that the Father made all things visible and invisible, through the Son who was made Flesh, and the Holy Spirit, let him be anathema.

He was a man who could never have suggested to himself that a woman loved him till the fact was there before him; but who having ascertained, as he might think, the fact, could never suggest to himself that her love would fail him.

And how, you say, is there no contradiction between the statements that he carried and did not carry?

“I wish it wasn’t Sunday,” he said at last, “because then I could go and do something. If I thought that no one would see me, I’d fill a dung-cart or two, even though it is Sunday. I’ll tell you what;—I’ll go and take a walk as far as Denvir Sluice; and I’ll be back to tea. You won’t mind?”

Nay rather, how is it possible to be vexed?

He will give his testimony by night; he will testify by day; by word, by life, by conduct, he will testify.

For if you look to these, you will gather hence many evil things, falling into remissness, into pride, into condemnation of others; but if you reckon over them that do right, you will lead yourself on unto humility, unto diligence, unto compunction, unto the blessings that are beyond number.

In these days she almost worshipped Mr. Bonteen, and could never be happy except in the presence of her dearest darling friend Mrs. Bonteen.

It must be the case that very many girls are not novices.

“And when he dies all will be gone?”

And are you to remain here, and to go down and down in the world till you become such a one as Pat Carroll?

to men so dead in heart, that such great works of Christ could not rouse them to the life of faith: for he does not say that wonders are not shown to them because they see them not, but because they do not profit them.

And we appoint that these, in the absence of the pontiff, shall have leave to sit anywhere in any assembly of clergy, and enjoy in all respects the privileges of their dignity.

See the worthlessness of your boasted manuscripts, numerous and valuable as you say they are!

Of course he, Sir Thomas, could do the same.

But observe this holy man— Barnabas, I mean— how he looked not to his own interests, but hasted to Tarsus.

“And now about my expenses out to England, on purpose to tell you all this. You can go and make her your wife now,—or can leave her, just as you please. You couldn’t have done neither if I hadn’t gone out to you.”

I was therefore to bring it down to the door.

Plato said that souls could not exist eternally without bodies; for it was on this account, he said, that the souls even of wise men must some time or other return to their bodies.

If his limbs could become thoroughly tired,—thoroughly tired so that he might wish to rest—then he might hope that for a moment he might cease to think of all this sorrow which encompassed him.

“Just a plain house on a moor.”

Thus it is said by the prophet: "Unless ye believe, you shall not understand."

The daughter during this time was sitting intent on her work, not lifting her face from the shirt she was sewing. But an observer might have seen from her forehead and eye that she was not only listening to what was said, but thinking and meditating on the scene before her.

“Then why did you mention it, aunt?”

As no one, he says, kept the Law, but all were under the curse, on account of transgression, an easy way was provided, that from Faith, which is in itself a strong proof that no man can be justified by the Law.

Or what more nearly connected than the Jews?

But he did not know Miss Dawkins. “Oh, Mr. Damer,” she said, and as she spoke her smile became almost blander than it was before; “oh, Mr. Damer, I could not think of suffering you to be so liberal; I could not, indeed. But I shall be quite content that you should pay everything, and let me settle with you in one sum afterwards.”

She would carry his message to Josephine, and he should have a further letter from that lady.

Let philosophers take for models Pythagoras, Socrates, Plato, and Aristotle.

“It is such a serious thing to do.”

For to be hushed to slumber here is nothing else but to be fixed and riveted to a thing.

But he was stiff and masterful, if you know what I mean.’

And yet there was a settled purpose of hatred in his words which frightened her, though she could not bring herself to oppose them.

Chapter 9. [Conceived in Sin.]

[Hebrews 10:24] On this account the assembly of the whole Church has more power: and what each cannot do by himself singly, he is able to do when joined with the rest.

To Abraham, in fine, they appeal; prohibited though they are to acknowledge any other father than God.

“But it was for mine. You had come first, and had won my poor heart. I was not worth the winning to either of you.”

She beheld also the sycamore tree [Luke 19:4] of Zacchæus, by which is signified the good works of repentance whereby he trod under foot his former sins of bloodshed and rapine, and from which he saw the Most High as from a pinnacle of virtue.

[1 Corinthians 6:12] No frizzled steward nor shapely foster brother nor fair and ruddy footman must dangle at your heels.

Though we have said that he was a false god, yet he was hardly to be blamed for the temple, and gems, and gold, with which he was endowed; not more so, perhaps, than the unconscious bud which is made so sacred on the banks of the Egyptian river.

For a while she thought with regret of what she was about to do, of the sacrifice to be made, of the sorrow to be endured, of the deathblow to be given to those dreams of love, which doubtless had arisen, though hitherto they were no more than dreams.

But perhaps the loudest complaint came from the side of Babington; and here two sets of enemies joined their forces together who were thoroughly hostile to each other.

About the Middle of the Treatise.

[Matthew 8:4] What these things prefigured the Lord Himself partly tells us, when He calls His own body the temple; and we learn also from the apostle, who says, "The temple of God is holy, which temple you are;" [1 Corinthians 3:17] and again, "I beseech you therefore by the mercies of God, that you present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable to God;" [Romans 12:1] and in similar passages.

And shops are erected and opened everywhere; and adepts at this meretricious fornication make a deal of money openly by those who plaster themselves, and give their hair to be pulled out in all ways by those who make it their trade, feeling no shame before the onlookers or those who approach, nor before themselves, being men.

And what are the laws?

What an opportunity was this of escape!

“Extravagance is a great vice.”

Poor Linda Tressel had not much taste for crushing herself, but Providence had supplied her with one who had always been willing to do that work for her.

Eight!

For thus he professes himself to be not only the eye-witness, but also the hearer; and besides that, the historian of all the wondrous facts concerning the Lord in their order.

For, should we learn that anything has been done or attempted by him against our will, let him know that he will incur no slight guilt and danger.

“I think she will,” said Mrs. Grantly, in a tone that expressed much satisfaction.

The consequence is that unless two of the elected members are staunch to the Government, every thing is liable to be brought to a stand still.

Therefore since they had seen all benefitted, while themselves had enjoyed no benefit, and were supine (for neither were they lame, nor had they any other such infirmity); and it was meet they should enjoy His benefits by their own perception: He permits the storm, that by their deliverance they might attain to a clearer perception of the benefit.

No pretext of ignorance now remains to plead on your behalf; in that, after acknowledging the Lord, and accepting His precepts — in short, after engaging in repentance of (past) sins— you again betake yourself to sins.

[Matthew 19:12] Vain, assuredly, are all men in whom the knowledge of God is not, and who could not, out of the good things which are seen, find out Him who is good.

I trust that nothing of the kind will be done with Kreli.

“I don’t doubt the money in the least,” said Phineas.

Your Name was little when they were enraged: it has become great; let them now confess.

I was very strong about these conversations, and saw my way to a great success,—if I could only get my friends to act in concert with me.

In Maryland and Delaware are men who hate slavery, who would be only too happy to enfranchise their slaves; but the negroes who have been slaves are not fit for freedom.

As to myself, I say that Peter did not doubt, and I do not think that so great a question can be burked by the questionable interpretation of a single word.

And Paul indeed prefers neither death, nor life, nor things present, nor things to come, nor any other creature, to the love which is towards Him; but we, if we see a little portion of gold, are fired, and trample on His laws.

The blasphemy of these theorists, which we have had to follow out in every step it takes, has caused us unwittingly to soil our discussion with the mud of their own imaginings.

She doesn’t get much of it anywhere else; does she, my dear?

Do not therefore abuse or bring into disgrace the appointment of God.

Those who had aspired to the bishopric, and been defeated in their expectations, were loud in their menaces, as is usual in such commotions.

However, when it was more minutely examined by the eyes or fingers, it seemed nothing else than a garment.

And so, perhaps, those who make a bad use of their hearing, and admit the hearing of vanities, will be rendered deaf by Him who said, Who has made the stone-deaf and the deaf, [Exodus 4:11] so that they may no longer lend an ear to vain things.

Independently of that angry father he would of course do for Mary Snow all that his circumstances would admit.

And what hell is there that this conduct would not deserve, when it is a brother, and one that has shared with yourself in blessings unutterable, and has been so highly honored by the Lord, whom you, in order that you may deck out stones, and floors, and the bodies of animals with neither reason, nor perception of these ornaments, are casting into countless calamities?

Of his sons none were present at his death.

“You’re very slow about it, Mr. Newton; that’s all I can say. But I wasn’t just talking of myself. After what’s passed between you and me I ain’t going to be hard upon you.”

“Josephine; dat’s my name. D’you like dat name?”

The prize was too great for him.

You, therefore, Ruler of Your creatures, what is the method by which Thou teachest souls those things which are future?

For what difference does it make whether one gives way to covetousness in the matter of large and splendid things, or in the matter of the merest trifles, except that we ought to think a man so far worse if he has made light of great things and then is a slave to little things?

How hard is this obstinacy of yours!

And yet we need not believe that they to whom it has been said, Not a hair of your head shall perish, shall, in the resurrection, want such of their members as they have been deprived of in their martyrdom.

Lucius Mason when he had read so far threw down the letter upon the table, and rising suddenly from his chair walked rapidly up and down the room.

But this little history of Miss Gushing’s future life is premature. Mr Oriel became engaged demurely, nay, almost silently, to Beatrice, and no one out of their own immediate families was at the time informed of the matter. It was arranged very differently from those two other matches—embryo, or not embryo, those, namely, of Augusta with Mr Moffat, and Frank with Mary Thorne. All Barsetshire had heard of them; but that of Beatrice and Mr Oriel was managed in a much more private manner.

And Jesus says to them: Render unto Cæsar the things that are Cæsar's, and to God the things that are God's.

“Which poor creature?”

No one doubted for a moment to what source Mr. Bonteen owed his dinner.

But, intimate as he was with the Altringhams, he did not dare to take a liberty with the Earl.

“I have made no proposition to her ladyship.”

“Yes, I have, Mr. Fenwick. Perhaps she hadn’t got no father, nor brothers, and sisters, and sisters-in-law, as would be pretty well brokenhearted when her vileness would be cast up again’ ‘em. Perhaps she hadn’t got no decent house over her head afore she begun. I don’t know how that was.”

“That is excellent philosophy, Lord George. And therefore I go out hunting, and break my bones, and fall into rivers, and ride about with such men as Mr. Price. One has to make the best of it, hasn’t one? But you, I see, have no regrets.”

“That is all over now, Sir Thomas. What I did I did for love. There is no good in crying over spilt milk. The question is as to the future happiness of the young lady.”

Chapter 17.— Origin of the Legend of the Nine Muses.

She is my wife;—my wife!

For he was working in the sons of disobedience, [Ephesians 2:2] of whose unbelief he made use to work his own will.

And if anyone thinks that this is too little for God, I know not what more he can look for.

See, therefore, how for our consolation all nature suggests a future resurrection.

[Matthew 5:19-20] For elsewhere He shows and proves of the Pharisees that they say and do not.

He will not crush, when He comes, that man whom He does not wound when He lies in a contemptible appearance

“You asked me to come and work with you.”

For this cause the child who was born is called Emmanuel, neither God separated from human nature nor man stripped of Godhead.

Mr. Daubeny conceived it to be his duty to inform the House, and through the House the country, that now, at last, had the day of ruin come upon the British Empire, because it had bowed itself to the dominion of an unscrupulous and greedy faction.

And as they went about to kill him, tidings came unto the tribune of the cohort, that all Jerusalem was in an uproar.

For these she received twelve guineas, and it seemed to her that she had found an El Dorado of literary wealth.

Testimony of the Holy Methodius, bishop and martyr, from his discourse on the martyrs:—

For if He is incorporeal and not subject to manual contact, nor apprehended by eyes of flesh, He undergoes no wound, He is not nailed by nails, He has no part in death, He is not hidden in the ground, He is not shut in a grave, He does not rise from a tomb.

“A very honest man,” said the Prime Minister in return.

This morning I have been to Aunt Emmeline, as you desired, and I must say that she was very cross.

Not another God in the kind of His substance, but the one God in virtue of the essence of His exactly similar substance.

Go down to see her, when she had treated him after this fashion!

“I don’t know why you should refuse.”

And, having been given to understand that Catella, a religious woman who has a son serving here in the holy Roman Church over which under God we preside, is being troubled by the exactions and molestations of certain persons, we think it needful to exhort your Fraternity by this letter not to refuse (saving justice) to afford your protection to this same woman, knowing that by things of this kind you both make the Lord your debtor and bind us to you the more in the bonds of charity.

Augustus was selfish and nothing else.

For although they are framed so as to be decent, yet no use is derived from them for worship, nor for amendment of morals.

This letter rendered those who constituted the Synod very fearful, wherefore most of them returned to their respective cities.

But I understand this, and you had better understand it too;—that she will never again enter a house of which I am the mistress; nor can I ever enter a house in which she is received.

Yet he merely thanks God because, by His mercy, he is not as other men: he execrates sin, and does not claim his righteousness as his own.

But if it is false, how could He be willing to give false impressions in order to prove the truth of His resurrection?

How greatly would she have increased the distance could she have guessed what had been said about her at Plumstead!

The monk exclaimed, in the presence of the rulers and the assembled people, I am not worthy of the honor of bearing the name and dignity of chief priest; but if, notwithstanding my unworthiness God destines me to this office, I take Him to witness who created the heavens and the earth, that I will not be ordained by the imposition of the hands of Lucius, which are defiled with the blood of holy men.

Alaric, however, showed no triumph. He was more submissive, more gracious than ever to his chief. It was only to himself that he muttered ‘Excelsior!

And yet it appeared as though he would have to endure it.

Kenneby also of course was there, but he was not in a happy frame of mind.

“Remember her position,” said Mrs. Dean to her son.

“You wouldn’t be ready.”

After frequently reconsidering what is in such a case conducive to the welfare of those whom we serve in Christ, and seek to nourish in Him, nothing has occurred to me which would alter my opinion that it is not right to give occasion for God's servants to think that promotion to a better position is more readily given to those who have become worse.

For the earth receiving its remains preserves them, and they, becoming as it were seed, and being wrapped up with the richer part of earth, spring up and bloom.

But see, even now, it is said, we love one another.

Sir Thomas raised no further objection, although it was clear to all the immediate family that he was by no means gratified at his son’s engagement.

'The demons, therefore, if they see all Christians, and monks especially, labouring cheerfully and advancing, first make an attack by temptation and place hindrances to hamper our way, to wit, evil thoughts.

You are, of course, possessed of a more religious spirit in the show of your gladiators, when your gods dance, with equal zest, over the spilling of human blood, (and) over those filthy penalties which are at once their proof and plot for executing your criminals, or else (when) your criminals are punished personating the gods themselves.

And so the marriage-bells rang on, with all their merriness, with all their joy.

For that is most properly said to appear, which is shown by sudden light manifesting it.

He therefore reminds them, showing that he speaks of nothing strange, but what he had always said.

That evening he was alone,—as, indeed, most of his evenings had been spent, and the minutes were minutes of agony to him.

Mrs. Grantly had spoken almost immediately upon their quitting Plumstead, and the silence was continued till the carriage had entered the suburbs of the city.

First Burgomaster.

Then they had spared the conquered, then they had shed no blood, except in the heat of battle; now they spared none; they had learnt a bloody lesson from their enemies, and massacred, without pity, the wretches who fell into their hands.

We are quits now, she had said, and she had repeated the words over and over again to herself as she walked up and down her room.

Nor yet was he a pedant; which word might, perhaps, more nearly have expressed his cousin’s meaning.

“Has Mr Henry Jones any friend to whom he can speak in Carmarthenshire?”

Some houses in the town were nearly empty, while others were crowded almost to suffocation.

[Ezekiel 36:20] I say, to have all these sacraments is possible even for a bad man; but to have charity, and to be a bad man, is not possible.

He would astound them by his display of Roman power, “thinking that, for the future, it would greatly affect the opinion of Gaul that the power of Italy should be seen to be so great that, if any reverse in war were suffered, not only could the injury be cured in a short time, but that the loss could be repaired even by increased forces.” He not only levies fresh troops, but borrows a legion which Pompey commands outside the walls of Rome.

But if you pray for them, even if you say nothing in your own sins' behalf, you have achieved all.

I will not give an acute critic any opportunity for telling me that the will, as detailed by me, was all illegal. I have not by me the ipsissima verba; nor can I get them now, as I am very far from Doctors’ Commons. So I will give no verbal details at all.

‘Try a bit o’ toast, sir,’ said boots.

All these documents became the subject of vehement controversy which found its expression in the letter of Jerome to his friends at Rome, and the Apologies of Rufinus and Jerome translated in this volume.

What must we think is seen by those who can live without seeing their fellow-creatures, though not without loving them?

All this was very pretty and very pleasant; and when Mrs. Cornbury, as she went away, made a special request that she might be invited to the wedding, Rachel was supremely happy.

On such subjects men must think long, and be sure that they have thought in earnest, before they are justified in saying that their opinions are the results of their own thoughts.

Moreover, the soul executes not all its operations with the ministration of the flesh; for the judgment of God pursues even simple cogitations and the merest volitions.

I will have none of it, and I will thank you to tell the archdeacon so, with my respectful acknowledgments of his consideration and condescension.

For he that wills may come even near unto him, and behold his valor, and imitate his heroism.

And an intelligent son will receive the commandments.

He speaks to the fat cattle that are in the mountain of Samaria, [Amos 4:1] and bears witness that the great house and the little house shall fall.

For before human judges, forasmuch as they may be deceived, it seems to profit somewhat for the time, to cleanse as it were what has been done amiss by any deceit whatever; but before God, Who cannot be deceived, we are to use, not a deceitful defense, but a true confession of sins.

I believe at this day it will go as far in Friday Street as any other.

And he told the date of the letter, only a day or two before the Squire’s return.

[4] [Arabic, p. 209] [Matthew 28:18b] Then said Jesus unto them, I have been given all authority in heaven [5] and earth; and as my Father has sent me, so I also send you.

They speak much, too, both regarding the angels of God and those who are opposed to the truth, but have been deceived; and who, in consequence of being deceived, call them gods or angels of God, or good demons, or heroes who have become such by the transference into them of a good human soul.

And they brought to Him, it is said, children, that He might put His hands on them and bless them; and when His disciples hindered them, Jesus said, Suffer the children, and forbid them not to come to Me, for of such is the kingdom of heaven.

Let him be a son to us.” Then Lady Scroope took the young man in her arms and kissed him.

And there were many others besides these who were known in those days, and who occupied the first place among the successors of the apostles.

Arius, both here and in the future world, will always remain banished and separate from the glory of the Son of God, Jesus Christ our Lord.

For those before the flood spoke after this manner, and mocked at Noah, but the flood came and swept away all those unbelievers, but preserved him who believed.

Impressed with these thoughts, he poured forth his supplications and confessions to God, kneeling on the pavement in the church itself, in which he also now for the first time received the imposition of hands with prayer.

On this occasion, however, Danny Lund became important, and every one listened to him.

For then only will you have an excuse, when you have not what [to give], when you possess nothing; but so long as you have, (though thou have given to ten thousand,) and there be others hungering, there is no excuse for you.

“Oh, George, don’t say so.”

And while we congratulate ourselves on the change that has been made, let us give thanks where thanks are due.

The question to be decided is whether, on public grounds, these men were justified in killing him—a question as to which I should be premature in expressing an opinion here.

“It’s in here, Muster Fenwick,—in here.”

All had its effect, though at the moment Maurice would shrug his shoulders and turn away his head from the torrent of the lady’s discourse. But Miss Jack, though she was not greatly liked, was greatly respected. Maurice would not own that she convinced him; but at last he did allow his name to be put up as candidate for his own parish, and in due time he became a member of the honourable House of Assembly in Jamaica.

Nor, as she thought of her own conduct back from one scene to another, did she condemn herself.

But as mind and soul govern everybody, so also does God govern the world.

It must be all over when she wrote to him a letter like that.

The Son of God, who made us, was made one of us: and He rules us as our King, because He is our Creator, who made us.

“Exactly,” said the bishop.

She had been,—so she had assured herself,—quite sure that that kind, loving response which she had solicited, would not be given to her.

She who had conferred upon suffering widows the help needful to live, deserved to be recalled to life by the widows' petition.

Were one to estimate the value of the whole of Pactolus, the fabulous river of gold, he would not have reckoned up a price equivalent to salvation.

[Luke 14:26] Non jubet odisse proprium genus: Honora enim, inquit, patrein et matrein, ut tibi bene sit: [Exodus 20:12] sed ne abducaris, inquit, per appetitiones a ratione alienas, sed neque civilibus moribus conformis fias.

He had always in her presence been called Mr Maguire.

harder, indeed, than for a camel to go through the eye of a needle.

when will you take me?

“Only Camilla might step out and forbid them,” said Aunt Stanbury. “I almost wish she would.”

He was aware, however, that there was a prejudice against such fulness of heart, and, therefore, resolved sternly that it was his duty to be constant to Miss Effingham.

Let us hope that it had been already effected.

For as in a good sense it is said, The zeal of Your house has consumed me, so in a bad sense it is said, Zeal has possessed the uninstructed people, and now fire shall consume the enemies.

And I knew Him not: but He that sent me to baptizewith water, the same said unto me, Upon whom you shall see the Spirit descending, and remaining on Him, the same is He which baptizes with the Holy Ghost?"

A worthy army joined in his assault, the evil rulers of the Churches, the bitter governors of his world-wide Empire.

“And Lucy?”

We therefore work, but God works in us to work also for His good pleasure.

“But oh, Miss Mountjoy, I am so glad to have a moment in which I can find you alone!” It must be understood that the amorous young gentleman had not yet been acquainted with the young lady for quite a fortnight.

Ver. 22. I Tertius, who wrote this Epistle, salute you.

The provisions for the Lord's way are the Lord's beatitudes.

[Malachi 1:6] In your case the bishop combines in himself many titles to your respect.

In talking of beauty to his sister he had spoken of himself as being ugly.

Aristotle varies, but nevertheless assigns a unity of power: for at one time he says that Mind, at another the World, is God; at another time he sets God above the world.

It was on the day before his departure that she went to the rectory, finding herself driven to this act of rebellion by his threat of Moor Hall.

They were all solemn and silent.

This had taken place just before Philip’s return.

For they passed through the gate, and were placed by the hands of the virgins in the building of the tower.

“And you will wrangle, as though your very soul were in it, for somebody’s twenty pounds?”

For punishment is equal to good and bad.

But in the case of all conclusions alleged to be found out, demonstration is applied in common, which is discourse ([λόγος]), establishing one thing from others.

Mr. Prosper did not exactly mention the sermons to himself, but there was present to him a feeling that his heir had been wilfully disobedient, and the sermons no doubt had been the cause.

Wherefore also Paul says, But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested; [Romans 3:21-22] and again, that you may better conceive of God, even the righteousness of God by the faith of Jesus Christ upon all that believe; for there is no difference.

Our pastoral charge constrains us to succour with anxious consideration any Churches that are deprived of the government of a priest.

I know all that you will feel, and you have my fullest sympathy; but even such sorrows as that are cured by time, and by the mercy of God, which is not only infinite, but all-powerful.

Did you not hear me, when I declared that I sought not that which profited myself [1 Corinthians 10:33], but my neighbor?

and why was he sent to Tarsus?

Accordingly, while the bishops understood him to mean the grace by which we have by adoption been made new creatures, not that by which we were created (for most plainly does Holy Scripture instruct us in the former sense of grace as the true one), ignorant of his being a heretic, they acquitted him as a catholic.

Adversity has tried thee in its crucible, and thou art found to be of virgin gold, unalloyed; hadst thou still been lapped in prosperity, the true ring of thy sterling metal would never have been heard.

For to admit him to our table, to treat him with civil speeches, with salutations, and with entertainments, these are no signal proofs of friendship.

He therefore excelled all who were at that time able to be righteous upon earth; and yet, because of this superiority over others in righteousness, he was not therefore altogether without sin.

For thus we shall sail into the tranquil haven, with much merchandise, and at the same time with great safety, and we shall obtain the blessings laid up for them that love Him, in Christ Jesus our Lord, with whom, to the Father, together with the Holy Spirit, be glory, power, honor, now and always and world without end.

If, in addition to this, they promise to mankind “ new epochs, new views, and unlimited horizons,” surely no further proof can be needed that they are vain, empty, and untrue.

In the meantime, while Liber is inspecting and examining carefully Styx, Cerberus, the Furies, and all other things, the informer passed from the number of the living, and was buried according to the manner of men.

“But, Peter, you really shouldn’t say such things of Harry. When all the police-officers themselves are looking about to catch up anything in their way, they would catch him up at a moment’s notice if they heard that a magistrate of the county had expressed such an opinion.”

“ I carried it through the Cabinet by a coup de main, taking them by surprise, and not leaving them time to make objections.” This is the spirit in which he looks at all his own doings as Minister for Foreign Affairs, and though we may be angry at the boasting, we cannot but acknowledge that it was this spirit which kept him up.

From what you know of me, do you think that my spirit could stoop so low?

“She says,” continued Miss Oriel, “that if a parson was away for a month, no one would miss him; but that a doctor is so precious that his very minutes are counted.”

Then since this is what he most of all wishes to provide for in the Corinthians' case, namely, the giving deliberately, he dwells especially upon it, saying, with much intreaty, and praying us.

what had she done?

For what should we deserve, when some clothe the ass on which He was set, and others strew the garments even under her feet; but we, seeing him naked, and not being even commanded to strip ourselves, but to spend of what is laid by, not even so are liberal?

What am I to say to the Gentile?

If by the title of Almighty he intends the Father, the language he uses is ours, and no strange language: but if he means some other God than the Father, let our patron of Jewish doctrines preach circumcision too, if he pleases.

My dear Duke,

Will she marry me knowing that I have nothing?

My tongue is the pen of a ready writer.

She had anticipated that the high rock was to be the altar at which the victim was to be sacrificed; but now he would not wait till he had taken her to the sacred spot.

But those, possessed by God from the beginning, what befell them?

And perhaps I shall appear to be telling things incredible, yet nevertheless are they true.

The spirit of the mind is, accordingly, nothing else than the mind, just as the body of the flesh is nothing but the flesh; thus it is written, In putting off the body of the flesh, [Colossians 2:11] where the apostle calls the flesh the body of the flesh.

They were now near the seat, confronted to each other; and the fury of her bosom, which for a while had been dominated by the tenderness of the love for her daughter, was again raging within her.

Will they confess that it is folly to choose days for such things, and to affirm that they do not come within the sphere of the celestial decree, while they subject men alone to the stars, on whom alone in the world God has bestowed free wills?

There were the two boxes laden with her wardrobe, such as it was.

Isaiah 1:2]

It is said that for a long period subsequently no one would make use of the seat on which he died.

On the one hand, He must have done the things which are pleasing; on the other, it is no merit to have done, yet not of oneself, what one does.

And if also you desire the third that unites the two, do not hesitate to say that it is the Holy Spirit, since the words of the wise, whether they be of those before the advent, or at the time of the advent, or after it, are as goads, and as nails firmly fixed, which were given by agreement from one shepherd.

What greater proof of the generosity of God, when from men without means He wills to supply the means for public affairs?

[Romans 8:21-22] We see, then, that between creation and its Lord there is a vast difference, for creation is enslaved, but the Lord is the Spirit, and where the Spirit of the Lord is, there is freedom.

On our behalf the Most High, who founded the city, addresses that city as a mother: and He was born in her, and the Most High has founded her.

Two men have honoured me with their choice, and out of the two I have chosen—Mr.

The Miss Stanbury of old was a stalwart lady who would play her rubber of whist five nights a week, and could hold her own in conversation against the best woman in Exeter,—not to speak of her acknowledged superiority over every man in that city.

But among those, because they are not true, there is no agreement.

But neither was He who died for the common good of mankind, nor they who suffered because of their religion, and alone of all men were persecuted because of what appeared to them the right way of honouring God, put to death in accordance with justice, nor was Jesus persecuted without the charge of impiety being incurred by His persecutors.

When, he says, not in all: there were evidently there some in whom was God well pleased; and although all the Sacraments were common, grace, which is the virtue of the Sacraments, was not common to all.

Acts IX. 10, 12

Mr Apjohn himself had not as yet looked anywhere round the books.

For even we also if we are weak in Him, yet we shall live with Him through the Power of God.

Amongst those very misfortunes wherein the soul, closely bound and shut up, can scarcely breathe, there is still found opportunity for men to be evil, and in such great dangers to judge not so much of themselves as of others.

I will give no opinion on the merits of the question, but simply say that blood ran very hot when it was discussed.

That was a horrid day, but the present seemed worse; she had now a greater sorrow than any of which she was then conscious, and she had to bear it alone, unpitied and uncomforted.

Also of those that refer to the period before the incarnation there are six modes: for some of them declare the union of nature and the identity in essence with the Father, as this, I and My Father are one [John 10:30]: also this, He that has seen Me has seen the Father : and this, Who being in the form of God [Philippians 2:6], and so forth.

By G——d, he couldn’t understand how a man, holding the position of a gentleman, could so far forget what he owed to his country and himself as to dirty his hands with such a filthy business as this, however absurd his general opinions on politics might be.

She did not doubt but that he was good, and true, and noble-minded; but it might be possible that a man good, true, and noble-minded, might have lived with so many indulgences around him as to be unable to achieve the constancy of heart which would be necessary for such a life as that which would be now before them if they married.

Here was a girl who, as far as he knew, was without a shilling, of whose birth and parentage nobody knew anything, who had nothing but her beauty to recommend her,—nothing but that and a certain capacity for carrying herself in the world as he thought ladies should carry themselves,—and she was to give herself airs with him, and expect him to propose to her half a dozen times!

But Mr. Price at Cross Hall must have a regular year’s notice, and that notice could not now be given till Lady-day next.

Behold, he says, one like the Son of man coming with the clouds of heaven.

But he had declared to himself that old Lady Fawn was a fool, and that to see Lucy again would be very pleasant.

[See Dict.

“He must be raving mad,” said Henri, “unlucky in love, and thwarted in ambition, he is unable to bear his griefs like a man.

So, on the same principle, the estate of matrimony is not to be refused, because, when enjoyed without moderation, it is fanned into a voluptuous flame.

She had said very little to her aunt of the nature of the misery which such a marriage seemed to offer to her,—not because her imagination made for her no clear picture on the subject, not because she did not foresee unutterable wretchedness in such a union.

So far as wonder goes, it is no less wonderful to be assured that a prisoner came out when the doors were closed, than it is to behold them set open.

‘What did she say to you?’

And he indeed was the inventor of earthenware images.

For God is not so much blasphemed by an impure heathen, as by a corrupt Christian.

After all, what was a fellowship to a man just about to be married?

“Indeed there has, Mr. Barry.”

And through the means by which it was supposed that it would be extinguished, by these very means it was kindled; and the Cross and bonds, which were thought to be an abomination, these are now become the symbols of salvation; and that iron was to us more precious than all gold, not by its intrinsic nature, but for this cause and ground!

After all, I believe it is better to dwell in cities than in the country,—better, at any rate, for a rich man.” Mr. Kennedy had now spoken more words than Phineas had heard to fall from his lips during the whole time that they had been acquainted with each other.

“And then Lord Alfred shoots,” continued Lady Elizabeth.

[John 11:35] The first question here is, What was there to weep for in the case of Lazarus?

[Joshua x] Again, when he fought against the Gibeonites and feared that night might stop him from gaining the victory, he called out with deep faith and high spirit: [Joshua 10:12] Let the sun stand still; and it stood still until the victory was complete.

And though she was by no means prepared to flirt with Captain De Baron, still she found in him something of the realisation of her dreams.

They went away by the path that led to Helpholme, and little was said between them till they had walked some mile together.

When last she had been over in the Old Town, within a short distance of the spot where she now stood, she had chanced to meet her lover.

Wide-stretching Earth, ever the throne secure of all

how should he act at once?

But they are mine;—and therefore I choose to keep them.

“I don’t care for the community. What has the community ever done for me? And now I have something else to tell you. Ever so many people came yesterday as well as that wretched policeman. Dear Lady Glencora was here again.”

“Ah dear axe!” he exclaims, apostrophising his weapon, “ah gentle steel!

[Isaiah 65:24] That she may at the same time also come to know, if they who do turn meet with so great difficulty, how great punishment is prepared for the ungodly, who will not turn to God: as it is written in another place, If the righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the sinner and ungodly appear?

And see their words too, teeming with flattery and dissimulation. For they thought to draw Him towards them in that way. And now they insult, now they flatter Him; now calling Him a demoniac, now again Master, both out of an evil mind, how contrary soever the words they speak.

These are the Capitol, the Post-office, the Patent-office, the Treasury, the President’s house, and the Smithsonian Institution.

Besides, it might be asked regarding the hair itself, whether all that the barber has cut off shall be restored?

Let us also hear Zeno, for he at times dreams of virtue.

Tractate 72 John 14:10-14

In like manner He declares, in the case of the man born blind, that He must do the works of the Father which had sent Him; [John 9:4] and after He had given the man sight, He said to him, Do you believe in the Son of God?

And yet, though just then I hated myself cordially, I could not quite bring myself to look at the matter as they looked at it.

The utterance is Hebrew, Emmanuel, of the prophet's own nation; but the meaning of the word, God with us, is by the interpretation made common property.

After what passed in our chambers the other day, we think it best to let you know that we have been instructed by the executor of the late Sir Florian Eustace to file a bill in Chancery against the widow, Lady Eustace, for the recovery of valuable diamonds. You will oblige us by making the necessary communication to her ladyship, and will perhaps tell us the names of her ladyship’s solicitors.

Could it be worth his while to run after a girl who was always running after Jonathan Stubbs?

“Nothing at all,” said Bertram, rather curtly.

that the idolatry which unbelievers follow, and every other noxious superstition, is fornication.

The task with Lady Glencora herself, bad as that would be, might be easier, and this task she at last undertook,—not without success.

He who does these things shall not be deserted by God, but shall be enrolled in the books of the living.

They were told that the conveyance was all coupé, but perversely would not believe the statement.

And the centurion having come, reported to the tribune.

“I hardly think we need discuss that,” he said, still with a heavy frown on his brow.

Just as here you have, from the face of my sins, so there also you have, the words of my offenses.

1 Corinthians 3:18-19

Neither is it the case, that whatever is to be done away is reduced thereby under all manner of circumstances to a condition of dishonour.

That is, with respect to that form which you see, why do you ask about good, and call me, according to what you see, Good Master?

It were better for such men to be blind; it were better to be diseased, than to abuse your eyes for these purposes.

Great and admirable is the dignity of an Apostle, and we find Paul constantly setting forth the causes of it, not as if he took the honor to himself, but as entrusted with it, and being under the necessity of so doing.

“But I can’t have any changes made, Mr. Belton,” said Mr. Amedroz, with some affectation of dignity in his manner. “I won’t have the fences moved, or anything of that kind.”

The earth was condemned to thorns and thistles: the true Vine sprang up out of the earth, that the saying might be fulfilled, Truth sprang up out of the earth, and righteousness looked down from heaven.

Still there were men, old stagers, who had know Moreton Bay before it was a colony—in the old days when convicts were common—who almost regarded the Brownbies as a part of the common order of things, and who were indisposed to persecute them.

[2 Timothy 1:10] And no longer in Adam are we all dying [1 Corinthians 15:22 but in Christ we are all reviving.

It was moved of its own accord; for at the presence of Christ the idols of Egypt were shaken, even as Isaiah the prophet had foretold.

Is there not some Proverb such as this, He that honors; honors himself?

“Well, what did he say besides?”

Of such a nature was Cicero’s courage.

And talking of the ladies, my aunt and cousins have come all the way from London to hear me make this speech, which certainly is not worth the trouble; but, all the same I am very much obliged to them.” And he looked round and made a little bow at the countess.

He was going to Colmar on the morrow with a horse and small cart, and would take with him what clothes he had ready.

Then she would go down without her bonnet and without her boots, and see whether any one would dare to stand in her way, as with her baby in her arms she would attempt to walk forth through the front door.

Of course she hoped that the time would not come;—but it might.

Mr Hall does do everything of this kind just as it should be.

If the ear take in a (too) loud voice, the sense is stunned: the mind, if it reason about things above itself, it is overpowered: and whatever is in excess, mars all.

We are therefore unable either to approve of or to blame their proceedings at that trial; for we cannot tell whether the proceedings were true, or even, if true, whether they do not really show that the man escaped by subterfuge, rather than that he cleared himself by entire truth.

You have sealed up my transgressions in a bag, and hast marked whatever I have done unwillingly.

The subject which they were now discussing was too important to her to allow her to dwell upon this trouble at the moment, and so she permitted him to go on with his speech.

Again, humanity does not enter at once into the exercise of its appointed life, and never fully lives that life, being always encumbered with a multitude of members which decay and are insensibly discarded.

Orth.— Yet the Holy Ghost also has Its subsistence of the Father and God.

To the emperor they could not have access, he being occupied in the Gauls with a war against the Sarmatæ; but they presented their letters to Liberius.

Far above all rule, he says.

He says: What shall we say, then?

“I make no new accusation.”

I make no secret of my feelings; this entire letter is written in tears.

Into His nature no element of any substance different in kind from that of His Author is introduced, for a nature which springs from one nature only must be entirely one with that nature which is its parent.

“Will the school go on? If the school goes on, he will go on, I suppose. About that you had better ask Mrs. Stantiloup.”

In ordinary times a man, or at any rate a lady, may live and die in his or her own house without much noticing the limits or peculiarities of each district.

Wrath is a fierce fire, it devours all things; it harms the body, it destroys the soul, it makes a man deformed and ugly to look upon; and if it were possible for an angry person to be visible to himself at the time of his anger, he would need no other admonition, for nothing is more displeasing than an angry countenance.

Tell me, O Blessed Mary, what it was that was conceived by you in the womb; what it was that was borne by you in a Virgin's womb. It was the Word of God, firstborn from Heaven, on you descending, and man firstborn being formed in a womb, that the first born Word of God might be shown united to a firstborn man.

For the saying, It is not a good tree which produces corrupt fruit, nor a corrupt tree which produces good fruit, [Matthew 7:18; Luke 6:43] is to be applied in this case.

Nor, it is pretty plain, will the meaning connected with an origin serve our purpose.

For when one has God also made his enemy, what hope shall there then be for him?

“Do you think Arthur likes it? He seemed to me to be hardly so much gratified as I should have thought he would have been. The living is a good one, and the marquis was certainly goodnatured about it.”

In fact, there was not a word to be said against us except that which referred to the feelings of the young and old.

Nothing else English is nice, but only these.” There were many rolls of money there before her in the drawer of the desk—some ten, perhaps, or twelve.

Hence, when you make the soul part of God, though you allow it to be corrupted as being foolish, and changed as having once been wise, and in want as needing health, and feeble as needing medicine, and miserable as desiring happiness, all these things you profanely attribute to God.

The diamond dealers whom I saw were the honest men, who keep their heads well above water, and live in the odour of diamond sanctity, dealing only with licensed diggers and loving the law.

Those did perceive that the name of Son implies equality of rank; these did know that He who drove them out was God, for they were convinced of it by their own experience.

They desired her to be silent, and to lay a false charge against the Bishop; and so when it was day, the matter was noised abroad, and all the city ran together; and those who came from the Palace were in great commotion, wondering at the report which had been spread abroad, and demanding that it should not be passed by in silence.

“I don’t. That’s the difference. And I don’t think that Augustus believes it.”

For: The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom.

137. The Lord Himself, when He was displeased with the three princes who had not deferred to holy Job, wished to pardon them through their friend, so that the prayer of friendship might win remission of sins. Therefore Job asked and God pardoned. Friendship helped them whom arrogance had harmed. [Job 42:7-8]

“She is in neither,” said La Mere Bauche, with her sternest voice; “nor is she in the house!”

He consulted his broker with his easiest air of common concern as to his money; and the broker gave him a dubious opinion. ‘They may go a little higher, sir; indeed I think they will. But they are ticklish stock, sir—uncommon ticklish. I should not like to hold many myself, sir.’ Alaric knew that the man was right; they were ticklish stock: but nevertheless he made up his mind to hold on a little longer.

But there were two Jameses: one called the Just, who was thrown from the pinnacle of the temple and was beaten to death with a club by a fuller, and another who was beheaded.

IV. To complete their acceptance by God, they must not neglect to lay all information against the Manichees who are in the city

“Have you been at Venice?”

For it is impossible for him who has surrounded himself with royal pomp, or loaded himself with riches, either to enter upon or to persevere in these difficulties.

It is not poverty which does this, but littleness of soul: for Lazarus also was poor, aye!

It is clear, then, that He has not said, No one has seen the Father, save the Son; but, No one knows the Father, save the Son.

And the same will be found to hold in the case of the ancient saints likewise.— But let us look over again what has been said.

[Galatians 4:22-27] The tropological sense is the moral explanation which has to do with improvement of life and practical teaching, as if we were to understand by these two covenants practical and theoretical instruction, or at any rate as if we were to want to take Jerusalem or Sion as the soul of man, according to this: Praise the Lord, O Jerusalem: praise your God, O Sion.

Now if even in this world when after punishment we fall into the same sins, we are chastised yet more severely then before, ought we not when after sinning we have not been punished at all, to be then very exceedingly afraid and to tremble, as being about to endure something irreparable?

Orth.— Consider now too this point. The divine Apostle calls the Son the image of the Father; for he says Who is the image of the invisible God?

“Why, Lucy, if he were your brother you could not be more eager about it.”

And how great the blessedness of seeing God, what mind can conceive, what tongue declare?

She got as far as “My dear Captain Aylmer,” and then she found that the letter was one which could not be written very easily.

When we read these in Greek they have some meaning; when in Latin they are utterly incoherent.

But now, as things had gone, that was the only branch of the family with which he seemed to be allied.

“Well, then, Mr Gresham, if you ask me, I must say, that I think you should abstain from any intercourse with Dr Thorne whatever.”

I am told that your mother is a religious woman, a widow of many years' standing; and that when you were a child she reared and taught you herself.

But we ought to do them good for their eternal salvation, not for our own temporal advantage.

“If you don’t mind, Mrs. Tappitt—” and Mrs. Rowan, as she again took the words out of her friend’s mouth, smiled upon her with a smile of great efficacy.

“Well, my men, this is bad work you’re doing here,” said he, walking into the drawing-room. Whereupon the cook curtsied low, and the bailiffs, knowing his lordship, stopped from their business and put their hands to their foreheads. “You must stop this, if you please,—at once. Come, let’s go out into the kitchen, or some place outside. I don’t like to see you here with your big boots and the pen and ink among the furniture.”

You may observe that in this matter the dispute between us is not so much about a question of doctrine as of interpretation.

For when One who had done no sin, who said that He came from God and was sent of God, who spoke the truth, and so spoke it as to challenge all to the proof, after this was not believed, it is clear that He was not believed because of their being carnal.

You attempt to prove, by a comparison of Christ and Moses, that they are unlike, and that therefore the words, "I will raise up a prophet like you," cannot be understood of Christ.

[Matthew 5:44] So far does He remove the desire of vengeance from the perfect that He commands charity towards those who injure them.

Since, then, the mystery of the Incarnation is to be adored, and the Incarnation is the work of the Spirit, as it is written, The Holy Spirit shall come upon you, and the power of the Most High shall overshadow you, and that Holy Thing Which shall be born of you shall be called the Son of God, [Luke 1:35] without doubt the Holy Spirit also is to be adored, since He Who according to the flesh was born of the Holy Spirit is adored.

Miss Broughton is still so young that I hope she may live to overcome her fault in this direction.

“There will be no good in going into that. I think we might as well sit down, Mr. Greenwood.” They did sit down, the chaplain as usual perching himself on the edge of a chair. “You have been here a great many years.”

[Matthew 26:53] Or, perchance, an executioner has come in.

Had Mr. Wharton seen the last article in the “People’s Banner” about the Duke?

Vowed celibacy was abominable to her, because it was the resource of the Roman Catholics; and because she had been taught to believe that convent-walls were screens for hiding unheard-of wickedness.

The man is made to be unfortunate enough, and the evil which he does is apparent.

But I speak not of mercy that is accompanied with covetousness.

And if it please you that I should state some of them— for I am to some extent acquainted with them— I shall do as you order me.]

And should he again urge her forlorn condition, do not thou even so expose his pretence, but say to him, Let nothing of this sort make you afraid: you will have an ample plea, the offense given to others: since not for indifference, but in care towards them, did you cease from this your purpose.

“Nine times nine is eighty-one,” repeated Robinson with confidence, “and we’ll put that fact up over the first-floor windows.”

It shows again the benevolence of the Lord: For he was numbered with us ([τοὕτο γὰρ αὐτοὺς μάλιστα ὡφέλειGod's grace and election, and reminding them of the old times, inasmuch as God chose him into His own lot or portion, as of old He took the Levites.

Meanwhile, in my efforts to escape from the dangers of this life and the abyss of sin, support me by your prayers, as by a plank, that from this world I may escape as one does from a shipwreck, leaving all behind.

“I have not done so since I was married. In former days I used to be fond of it.”

Then Mrs. Dobbs Broughton had told him, with much seriousness, that he was altogether wrong, and that were he to forget himself, or commit himself, or misbehave himself, there must be an end to their pleasant intimacy.

And having spoken to him concerning the love towards Himself, He foretells to him the martyrdom which he should undergo, showing that He said not to Him what he said as distrusting, but as greatly trusting him; wishing besides to point out a proof of love towards Him, and to instruct us in what manner especially we ought to love Him.

That, however, is not my difficulty.

For the devil said: Jesus, Son of the living God, why are You come to torment us before the time?

Nor can He who made all things be like in substance to the things which He has made.

But baptism is complete if one confess the Father, the Son, and the Holy Spirit.

Homily 28 on First Corinthians

They were not palatial people, but the very reverse, living in homely guise, pursuing homely duties, and satisfied with homely pleasures.

“Very tidy wine,” said Sir Damask.

“I think it makes all the difference in the world,” said Lady Susanna. “That piece of furniture will always be sacred to me, because I believe it did once afford rest and sleep to the gracious majesty of England.”

“But, ah! that I have lost your love.”

Topic 3

But it’s all in a box as one may say.

II. The presbyters, who gave way, to be degraded with the usurper to the bottom: the rest to keep their places.

There; you might as well read that note.” Then she put her hand back and brought Mr. Camperdown’s letter from under the Bible.

“Your husband is still angry with me,” he said one day to Mrs. Brattle.

‘What am I to do when you tell me that she is to marry a foreigner?’

In Britain, however, Constantine was proclaimed emperor, instead of his father Constantius, who died in the first year of the two hundred and seventy-first Olympiad, on the 25th of July.

[1 Samuel 12:3] Has my language been equivocal, or my eye wanton?

In guile is deceitfulness, in dissimulation, in seduction.

She went everywhere with her aunt, and allowed herself to be walked out at dances, and to be accosted when on horseback, and to be spoken to at parties; but she seemed hardly to trouble herself to talk;—and as for laughing, flirting, or giggling, one might as well expect such levity from a marble Minerva.

If it were good to have gold, Christ, who have the unutterable blessings, would have given this to His disciples.

“Yes,—about his son.”

Whatever sort of a home he would give her to live in, nobody would despise her in it because she was not grand enough for her place.

She never again allowed herself to entertain a gleam of hope, and she spoke of her sorrow as a thing accomplished.

All these things were of the mystery; and he sets them down together with lofty praise, saying, Which is Christ in you?

They were still on the same path,—that path which Kate and Alice had taken in the winter,—and now poor Kate could not but think of all that she had said that day on George’s behalf;—how had she mingled truth and falsehood in her efforts to raise her brother’s character in her cousin’s eyes!

Chapter 1 .— The Discovery of Truth is Difficult, But God Has Promised that He Who Seeks Shall Find.

He had been ill, and must still have been very ill indeed when he submitted to be driven by any one.

And how many animals on the land and in the water, of which it were impossible to tell the figures, forms, habitats, colour, food, senses, natures, multitude!

And again the days are not the same on which by the divinely appointed passage into Egypt He was withdrawn from wicked Herod, and on which He was recalled from Egypt into Galilee on His pursuer's death.

“I cannot ask him for anything,” said Walter.

In old times a lamb, a Calf was offered; now Christ is offered.

[1 Timothy 2:8] Dishonor not then your tongue, for how will it entreat for you, when it has lost its proper confidence?

“Dear Papa!” And now once again she leant upon his shoulder.

“I haven’t heard of any other harm that he has done, and perhaps he had some provocation for that.” Words were wanting to Mr. Runce, but not indignation.

It is indeed always fitting to admire those who pursue virtue, but especially when some are found to cling to it at a time when many are deserting it.

Fred Neville felt that he had not received from his brother the assistance or sympathy which he had required.

That she would not be quite pleased he knew; but if he were firm enough to show that he had a will of his own in this matter, she would probably not gainsay him.

But as to ask such questions is irreligious, and argues an ignorance of God, so it is not holy to venture such questions concerning the generation of the Son of God, nor to measure God and His Wisdom by our own nature and infirmity.

Even those without are of the same mind; if they say that a man can win no fairer prize than a good wife, nor a worse one than her opposite.

For although I be now in danger, yet nevertheless you will see me if you pray for it.

But the sacred history is opposed to this opinion; for Judith is described as having lived in the twelfth year of the king in question.

It was understood everywhere that the Prime Minister was bidding for greatness and popularity.

For again and again, men whom adversity could not overcome, have been cast down by freedom from care and by prosperity.

For you savour not the things which are of God, He says, but those things which are of man.

Yet what can be pleasanter than my sojourn here?

In addition to these matters, there is this also to be considered, so that nothing may escape us of things which are necessary, why He said that the queens were sixty, and the concubines eighty, and the virgins so numerous as not to be counted from their multitude, but the spouse one.

If you should understand unbelievers to be meant by the left hand, then it will seem to be no fault to wish to please believers; while nevertheless we are altogether prohibited from placing the fruit and end of our good deed in the praise of any men whatever.

is pointed out, and their great inconsideration.

“I hope it is not what occurred to-day at the picture-gallery.”

Cathelineau without uttering a word, seized his sword, and rushed out of the room without his cap; and followed by M. de Lescure, hurried through the farmyard, leapt a little gate, and got upon the road a few yards from the place where the waggons had been left.

For it was right that, as when they were in fault he rebuked them, so upon their amendment he should approve and commend them.

Now he had, alas, allowed it to get the better of him.

“Yes, he was there.”

For the Lord your God, says [the Scripture], is one Lord.

But all this did not bring her at all nearer to her object.

Now virtue, as we have shown, is the worship of the true God.

Sacrifice then not sheep and calves, but dedicate yourself to the Lord; make yourself a holocaust, this is to offer a living sacrifice.

‘Of course he will get a wife,’ said the father.

Such was Tiro, though still a slave, to the two brothers.

Do we hint at another?

But though the squire may be said to have come off on the whole as victor in these combats, they did not perhaps have, on that account, the less effect upon him.

“But Maryanne Puffie would be quite unendurable on a titlepage,” said the owner of the unfortunate appellation.

“You think, then, that I should refuse him?”

‘He wants to see the people around him all happy,’ said Emily.

Orth.— If then they are true, I suppose the Lord had a body.

He perceived the growth of the feeling from day to day.

For the Saturnian framed for men this law:

For what else would such a resistance to investigation have been construed to signify, than a confession of his crime?

“My dear fellow,” said he, when Bold had quite done speaking, “I really cannot answer for The Jupiter.”

Either to all these will it be your duty so to be, for blessed are the peacemakers; or else, if not to all, it will be your duty to range yourself on our side.

Taking these things to heart, let us do everything without murmuring and disputing.

D., This your saying hurts me not, rather it heals me: for Lazarus who rebelled against me, I again subdued.— 14.

Now where or from whom did he learn these terms?

And it would be sad giving up her old friends.

For a short time only?

He would do nothing till that time, and then he would call upon her to allow their banns to be published in Bloomsbury Church after the manner of the Church of England.

The woman is so iniquitous, and so tremendous in her iniquities, that she rises to tragedy.

It was imperative that she should have all her powers ready for thoroughly arousing him.

For horse and mule sometimes lift up their neck, and by their own fierceness throw off their rider.

Then was fought the battle in which Antony was beaten, and Pansa, one of the Consuls, so wounded that he perished soon afterward.

Her motherin-law was too much in awe of her own eldest daughter ever to scold anyone.

He told me the other day of the time when he gave up going into power for the sake of taking me abroad.

A great deal better, I dare say.

And God grant that all, both wives and husbands, may live according to His good pleasure, that we may all in that terrible day be counted worthy to enjoy the lovingkindness of our Master, and to attain those good things which are promised in Jesus Christ our Lord, with whom to the Father, together with the Holy Ghost, be glory, might, and honor, now and forever and ever.

You have already heard who they be.

Do you ask what course we must pursue?

And how can you but be yourself hurt, giving occasion to what goes on?

The society into which one falls there consists mostly of persons who are not permanently resident in the capital; but of those who were permanent residents I found none who spoke of their city with affection.

It may be thought that the bitterness of the moment was over with Norman as soon as he gave up; but such was not the case.

Thus he, who at a certain time had a desire to follow Christ, was rejected, when he had been told, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air nests.

She made him understand at once that there was no longer any doubt.

[At the request of Theophilus Anastasius, bishop of Rome, writes to Simplicianus, bishop of Milan, to inform him that he, like Theophilus, has condemned Origen whose blasphemies have been brought under his notice by Eusebius of Cremona. This latter had shown him a copy of the version by Rufinus of the treatise On First Principles. The date of the letter is 400 A.D.]

Yet no one gives a thought to these things, no one searches them out.

It was a very pretty, well-finished, water-coloured drawing, representing still the same bridge, but with more adjuncts. In Susan’s eyes it was a work of high art. Of pictures probably she had seen but little, and her liking for the artist no doubt added to her admiration. But the more she admired it and wished for it, the stronger was her feeling that she ought not to take it.

They are less shocked by dishonesty when they find it, and are less clear in their intellect as to that which constitutes honesty.

He went to Belgrave Square, to announce his fate to Lady Mabel Grex;—but Lady Mabel Grex was not there.

Such being the case, it is evident, from the high antiquity and perfect truth of the Church, that these later heresies, and those yet subsequent to them in time, were new inventions falsified [from the truth].

The fat aunt Crawley is a maiden lady, very rich, and Becky quite succeeds in gaining the rich aunt by her wiles.

What if fate should have sent to him as a daughter,—as a companion for his girls,—that fat, untidy, illbred looking young woman!

Immediately his genitals and rectum were corrupted; their flesh became putrescent, and was changed into worms.

He evinced unlimited friendship towards him, and avoided the society of his enemies and opponents.

He understood, however, quite clearly, that under no circumstances should money have been paid by an accused person to witnesses while that person’s guilt and innocence were in question.

He never considered whether the carriage belonged to her or to Mr. Slope, or to anyone else to whom they might both be mutually obliged without any concert between themselves.

Thither the generals of Constantius hastened in pursuit.

Where is that God who is able to help you when you come to life again, since he cannot help you while you are in this life?

Among others so did our Frau, and this she did knowing the nature of the man and of the counsel she might expect to receive from him.

But who are they that give the price of the redemption of their souls?

For the true is unapproachable by the false, and on the other side, the unapproachable is found to be in unsullied truth.

The far niente of her Italian life had entered into her very soul, and brought her to regard a state of inactivity as the only earthly good.

When we thirst, He satisfies us on the feast-day itself; standing and crying, 'If any man thirst, let him come to Me, and drink [John 7:37].'

With Him they live; with Him they converse; Him they handle by day and by night; to the Lord they assign their prayers as dowries; from Him, as oft as they desire it, they receive His approbation as dotal gifts.

“Shall you be there to answer him?” asked Miss Macnulty innocently.

Hebrews 13:18

“ So sinks the daystar in the ocean bed, And yet anon repairs his drooping head, And tricks his beams, and with new-spangled ore, Flames in the forehead of the morning sky!”

[1 Kings 19:21] We read in Ecclesiasticus: he that touches pitch shall be defiled therewith.

But let us no longer do this, but the reverse, and if you see any righteous man chastened, remember Job: for if any one be righteous, he will not be more righteous than that man, nor within a small distance of approaching him.

“I have promised to take my wife abroad.”

Tony knew well enough that the fox was at that moment in Littleton Gorse;—but he knew also that the gorse was only six acres, that such a fox as he had before him wouldn’t stay there two minutes after the first hound was in it, and that Dillsborough Wood,—which to his imagination was full of poison,—would then be only a mile and a half before him.

I’ll send Katty for the things.

We know how he made that leap, infinitely to the disgust of his aunt, who, when he refused obedience to her in the matter of withdrawing from the Daily Record, immediately withdrew from him, not only her patronage and assistance, but even her friendship and acquaintance.

“No, my dear, no;—not yet, Posy. When Posy is a great girl she can go to cathedral every day. Only then, perhaps, Posy won’t want to go.”

The meaning of that is that these wretched acres, which are now mortgaged to one millionaire, are to change hands and be mortgaged to another instead.

They had, he says, one mind and one heart God-wards.

Chapter IV. The Bishop’s Chaplain

Wherefore, as he has been welcomed into fellowship by us on the ground of his repentance, let him be welcomed by you on the ground of his letter, to which letter we have thought it right to adhibit our signatures attesting its genuiness.

But they repeat them separately and bit by bit, divided into two or three sections, according to the number of verses, with prayers in between.

For In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

It must become wise, not by the standard of human philosophy, but of that which mounts to God, before it can enter into His wisdom, and its eyes be opened to the folly of the world.

“Very well. I’d sooner it should be you than me; that’s all I can say.” Then he took up his newspaper, thereby showing that he had nothing further to say on the matter, and Alice left him alone.

“Not the Orley Farm case?” said Mrs. Dockwrath immediately.

It will be no small punishment to us that we were called to bear witness, but were not able to bear witness of the things that we have seen.

“Come, Brown, what is it? “ asked another male cousin.

For this, in fact, is just what this Book is: a Demonstration of the Resurrection: this being once believed, the rest would come in due course.

This we are taught in the Gospel: Be perfect even as your Father Who is in heaven is perfect.

He sauntered up into the billiard-room knowing that his friend would be there, and there he found Doodles with his coat off, the sleeves of his shirt turned back, and armed with his cue.

After sending his message to Crumb the old man still sat thinking, and at last made up his mind that he would go to his landlord. He held a part of his farm under Roger Carbury, and Roger Carbury would tell him what he ought to do. A great trouble had come upon him. He would fain have been quiet, but his conscience and his heart and his terrors all were at work together,—and he found that he could not eat his dinner. So he had out his cart and horse and drove himself off to Carbury Hall.

For if their mingling into one were not due to a higher authority, how could the heavy mingle and combine with the light, the wet with the dry, the round with the straight, fire with cold, or sea with earth, or the sun with the moon, or the stars with the heaven, and the air with the clouds, the nature of each being dissimilar to that of the other?

For how should he have both received perseverance, and not have persevered?

[1 Corinthians 12:2] Let the Church now say, how great things He has done to my soul.

You, however, who allege that the law of Moses comes from the prince of evil, and not from the good God, tell me who those were who withstood Moses to the face— I mean Jamnes and Mambres?

And then he rubbed his hands, and looked as though he were delighted.

Gaddanas and Azizus dwelt with Aones, and emulated his virtues.

D., Elijah who feared you not, O Satan: fled before Jezebel's face, because he feared me.— 13.

For the Word was made flesh, and did not manifest flesh together with Himself: but in the glory of Divinity joined Himself to human flesh.

On the other hand it is a sign of natural ability, if a man by the power of his mind can foresee the future, and put as it were before his eyes what may happen, and decide what he ought to do if it should take place.

In this respect he is more potent than any of his brethren of the negro race who have come in my way.

Then, also, according to the Septuagint interpretation (for it also is a prophetic meaning), shall come those who are elected of the Lord out of all nations.

Hexaemeron (Homily 4)

The Holy Ghost had even then foreseen that there would be in a certain virgin (called) Philumene an angel of deceit, transformed into an angel of light, [2 Corinthians 11:14] by whose miracles and illusions Apelles was led (when) he introduced his new heresy.

Then we forgive them, not without a consciousness of imperfection on our own part.

“I’m sick of Mr. Crawley, and I’m sorry I spoke of him,” said the archdeacon. “But look at Mrs. Proudie. You’ll agree that she was not the most charming woman in the world.”

And this may be perceived throughout the whole of creation, but in the case of the holy and superessential and incomprehensible Trinity, far removed from everything, it is quite the reverse.

Should it be proved that this living woman was the legitimate wife of the late Earl, not only would the right be barred of those two English ladies to whom all our sympathies are now given, but no portion of the property in dispute would go either to them or to my client.

She would have been quite willing to shew to her mother all these expressions of her lover’s love; but she felt that it would not be fair to him to expose his allusions to the “beastliness” at the stations.

Who that is receiving pardon for his sins continues of dejected look?

“I thought, sir, if you would say a word.”

Look at the temples and lanes of the gods by which the Roman city is both protected and armed: they are more august by the deities which are their inhabitants, who are present and constantly dwelling in them, than opulent by the ensigns and gifts of worship.

And, as for bashfulness, it seemed to her that the man spoke out his mind clearly enough.

He had learned that Florence and her mother were at the embassy there, and, though he hesitated, still he desired to go.

“I guess we have,” said Rachel, “so if you’ll wait here we’ll come to you when the cars are fixed.” So saying, Rachel put her hand on her lover’s arm and walked off with him along the platform.

Whenever any newcomer arrives, and falls into the hands of those who seize upon him, either by force or willingly, they observe this Attic law, of combined jest and earnest.

All this had been tendered to Frank,—and with it that worldly wealth which was so absolutely necessary to his career.

She said no more then; but it must not therefore be supposed that she was less determined than she had been that no part of Alice’s fortune should be sacrificed to her brother’s wants;—at any rate before Alice should become her brother’s wife.

For it is not according to their mind, but according to His truth that you will be judged.

“Indeed, Father John, when I do have one, I hope I shall manage better than to be talked about as much as she is, any way. I hardly think it would do to ask her at present, mother. You know Mr. Gayner is to be here the night of the race-ball, and we’ve only the one bed.”

Every one's bands were loosed, and the doors were opened.

“And you believe, then, that the South will beat the North?” I explained that I personally had never so thought, and that I did not believe that to be the general idea.

“Well, well; boiling mutton broth over a turf fire, in my cut decanter! ‘optat ephippia bos piger.’ That’ll do, Judy, that’ll do.”

For He calls and invites us, when He says: All the day long I stretched forth My hands to a disobedient and gainsaying people; [Romans 10:21] and He is invited by us when we say to Him: All the day long I have stretched forth My hands unto You.

What of the greater animals, when the small ones so affect you with pleasure or pain, that you cannot even in their case despise their Creator?

To die readily when death must come is but a little thing, and is done daily by the poorest of mankind.

“Yes, sir. Archdeacon Grantly lives at Plumstead.”

Come, my men,” said he, turning to the crowds who were clustering round them, “we will disturb the dreams of these republicans; the blues are not fond of fighting by night, but if they are asleep I think we will soon wake them,” and accompanied by his friend, he rushed down into the trenches, and the men followed him by hundreds, covered with dust, choked with thirst, breathless with their long run, and utterly ignorant what they were going to do, or how they were to for an entrance into the camp.

1 Corinthians 15:27

Accordingly, the true and divine philosophy admonishes us to check and subdue the love of these things as most dangerous and disastrous, in order that the mind, even while using this body, may be wholly occupied and warmly interested in those things which are ever the same, and which owe their attractive power to no transient charm.

I suppose you have always enough for everything.” It was well known that the present Mrs. Finn, as Madame Goesler, had been a wealthy woman.

On the other hand, when made man, He said, 'I will send to you the Paraclete, the Spirit of truth [John 15:26 and He sent Him, He, the Word of God, as being faithful.

And yet he could only act by advice.

No; he did not know what she was; but when he was alone, he carried on with her all manner of imaginary conversations, though when he was in her company he had hardly a word to say to her.

“Is Uncle Hatto inside?” she asked; and the answer was given to her by her own lover. Yes, he was within; but the old clerk was with him. Isa, however, signified her wish to see her uncle alone, and in a few minutes the ancient grey-haired servant of the house came out into the larger room.

Not Tacitus, as I think, but some author whose essay De Oratoribus was written about the time of Tacitus, and whose work has come to us with the name of Tacitus, has told us of Cicero that he was a master of logic, of ethics, and of physical science.

If you see a poor man, take pity on him!

One of his children had married a marquis.

“Hopkins,” he said, “why didn’t you ask for what you wanted, before you took it?” The old man put down the barrow on the ground, looked up in his master’s face, spat into his hands, and then again resumed his barrow. “Hopkins, that won’t do,” said the squire. “Stop where you are.”

I did like it in a way, and it makes me sad to think that the feeling can never come again.

I spared my enemies who desired to slay me, that these people might approve of my mercifulness, as worthy of being imitated.

“Some one has been speaking falsehoods of me behind my back.” No gleam of the real truth had yet come to him.

Mr. Scarborough had questions to ask about Mr. Prosper, and was anxious to know how his son had succeeded in his mission.

Then she became afraid lest others should see it,—afraid, though she often told herself that she would appeal to her aunt for protection.

The tourist in search of knowledge may of course be a man infinitely too strong to fall into any of these pitfalls.

Wherefore also he says, I shall not be put to shame, that is, I shall not be proved a liar or a boaster.

To this we reply, that there appears to us to be no good reason for our leaving this world, except when piety and virtue require it; as when, for example, those who are set as judges, and think that they have power over our lives, place before us the alternative either to live in violation of the commands of Jesus, or to die if we continue obedient to them.

“Egad, Thady, here’s another leg—come, my boy, we’ve still a leg to stand upon—Cullen has just finished one, and I could have sworn I ate the other yesterday. See, did Judy put one of her own in the hash—’ex pede Herculem’—you’d know it so any way by the toughness. Lend me your fork, Thady, or excuse my own. Well, when I get the cash from Denis’s marriage, I’ll get a carving-knife and fork from Garley’s; not but what I ought to have one. Judy, where’s the big fork?”

They parted my garments among them, and cast lots upon my vesture,'—was a prediction, as I said before, of the death to which the synagogue of the wicked would condemn Him, whom He calls both dogs and hunters, declaring that those who hunted Him were both gathered together and assiduously striving to condemn Him.

“Nor to any one, I hope, belonging to me.” She knew that it was all coming; that the whole subject of her future life must now be discussed; and she began to fear that the discussion might not be easy. But she did not know how to give it a direction. She feared that he would become angry, and yet she knew not why. He had accepted his own rejection tranquilly, and could hardly take it as an offence that she should now be engaged to Captain Aylmer.

And who are they who wish to prefer themselves to Christ?

I saw it all, I knew it.

Clara Amedroz had already got beyond this stage, and was beginning to think of herself rather than of the station-master, when at last there sounded, close to her ears, the bell of promise, and she knew that the train was at hand.

But Gergesa, from which the name Gergesenes is taken, is an old town in the neighbourhood of the lake now called Tiberias, and on the edge of it there is a steep place abutting on the lake, from which it is pointed out that the swine were cast down by the demons.

Do not then despair of the most perfect change.

“I think I might, perhaps, better refer you to your uncle.”

It was a grand grizzled beard, and I acknowledged at a moment that it added a singular dignity to the appearance of the stranger.

“What, the woman I wish to marry! No, Mark, I’m not quite come to that. I would sooner lose her than that.” Mark sat silent, gazing at the fire and wishing that he was in his own bedroom. He had an idea that Mr. Sowerby wished him to produce this £400, and he knew also that he had not £400 in the world, and that if he had he would be acting very foolishly to give it to Mr. Sowerby. But nevertheless he felt half fascinated by the man, and half afraid of him.

People flocked in for shirts and stockings, and young women came there to seek their gloves and ribbons, although but little was done to attract them, either in the way of advertisement or of excellence of supply.

True expediency does not therefore exist where virtue loses more than expediency gains.

And the Spirit bears witness to His Godhead, for he descends upon One that is like Him, as does the Voice from Heaven (for He to Whom the witness is borne came from thence), and like a Dove, for He honours the Body (for this also was God, through its union with God) by being seen in a bodily form; and moreover, the Dove has from distant ages been wont to proclaim the end of the Deluge.

When it is well with you, thou dost bless the Lord.

You have put us to shame not before our own consciences, but in the sight of men.

“You needn’t make me jump so, Mr Dale. I’m pretty well now, thank ye. I did have a twinge in the spring,—that cottage is so badly built for draughts! ‘I wonder you can live in it,’ my sister said to me the last time she was over. I suppose I should be better off over with her at Hamersham, only one doesn’t like to move, you know, after living fifty years in one parish.”

“So be it. You will find that I mean what I have said.”

The next process is that of the mill; the juice, that is, has to be squeezed out of it.

While they keep their eyes fixed upon the earth, they balance swelling words upon their tongues.

“I would be everything on earth to you that a man can be to a woman.”

I have come in My Father's name, and you receive Me not: if another shall come in His name , him you will receive.

“I doubt that. I have come to tell you that I love you.”

Whatever it may have been in the old time, Bragton Park was certainly not a cheerful place when Lady Ushant lived there.

“Fashionable people go to Scotland, but they won’t take one in there without money. We shan’t have £50 left when our debts are paid. And £50 would do nothing for us.”

How then does John speak of the Son?

For if man, made after the image and likeness of God, had retained the dignity of his own nature, and had not been deceived by the devil's wiles into transgressing through lust the law laid down for him, the Creator of the world would not have become a Creature, the Eternal would not have entered the sphere of time, nor God the Son, Who is equal with God the Father, have assumed the form of a slave and the likeness of sinful flesh.

The best real survey executed with reference to any kindred project was that made by Colonel Child, an officer of engineers belonging to the United States.

And twice after this banishment Reginald walked over.

What need is there to engage further with such men as this?

In private life Mr. Daubeny almost adulated his elder rival,—and Mr. Mildmay never omitted an opportunity of taking Mr. Daubeny warmly by the hand.

“But we must remember what he has to bear. It is not every one that can endure such a life as his without false pride and false shame.”

A written promise God sent unto us before the time, the time fulfilled He has repaid us.

Now by righteousness is meant universal virtue.

“And then your cousin was jealous because you went to the top of St. Peter’s, and because you would walk with Mr. Traffick on the Pincian. I was in Rome, and saw all about it.”

Let us speak in Him, let us speak through Him (for He Himself intercedes for us), and let us say, Forsake me not, O Lord my God.

[Preached at Constantinople Jan. 6, 381, being the day following the delivery of that on the Holy Lights.]

After this, says he, I, Nabuchodonosor, lifted up my eyes unto heaven, and I blessed the Most High, and to Him that lives for ever I gave praise and glory.

To merit pardon there must have been misconduct; and as this woman had known all her behaviour in that matter, what right had she to talk of pardon?

And having said this, the angels go away from the shepherds into heaven, leaving us to gather how the joy preached to us through the birth of Jesus Christ is glory in the highest to God; they humbled themselves even to the ground, and then returned to their place of rest, to glorify God in the highest through Jesus Christ.

Let your servants come, let them come, let them acknowledge in the stones your voice, let them pity the dust of Sion, let them be formed in your image: let the dust say, lest it perish, Remember that we are but dust.

For it would be indeed difficult to discover who among all those who have been celebrated for their eloquence he has had his eye on, in bringing himself to this pitch; for he is like those who produce effects upon the stage, adapting his argument to the tune of his rhythmical phrases, as they their song to their castenets, by means of parallel sentences of equal length, of similar sound and similar ending.

What is that of destruction, but that which Antiochus established there at the time?

“I don’t think it is a bad letter,” said Sir Harry.

For there are parts of it destroyed unto the foundations.

For he too was present proclaiming him, and saying, This is he who I said should come crying, and preaching throughout the whole wilderness with a clear voice.

Sometimes also you speak of Him as apprehensive, and sometimes as variable.

[2 Corinthians 3:18] But that with the Hebrews the first month was near the equinox, the teachings also of the Book of Enoch show.

[2 Corinthians 2:11] Owing to this did the devils flee not only at hearing him speak, but even at seeing his garments.

Why lean upon a blind guide, if you have eyes of your own?

Mr. Crawley sat down, not on the chair indicated, but on one further removed and at the other side of the table.

Of strictly personal attendance Black Daly wanted very little; but the discomforts of that home, while one pair of breeches were supposed to be at Daly’s Bridge, and the others at Ahaseragh, were presumed by the world at large to be very grievous.

I found him there at death’s door.

[Ephesians 2:6] Through Him who is the First-fruits, Cherubim and Seraphim adore you, with all the heavenly host, principalities and powers, thrones and dominions.

But from Sir Hugh she was divided now as widely as from the Ongar people, and, for any purposes of society, from her sister also.

Then the door was gently opened, and Rebecca Loth the Jewess stood before her.

Next it is necessary to have our hearts subdued by piety, and not to run in the face of Holy Scripture, whether when understood it strikes at some of our sins, or, when not understood, we feel as if we could be wiser and give better commands ourselves.

And when they had been there many days, Festus declared Paul's cause unto the king, saying, There is a certain man left in bonds by Felix: about whom, when I was at Jerusalem, the chief priests and the elders of the Jews informed me, desiring to have judgment against him.

“I used to know his wife before they were married.”

How many things did the rich man bewail then?

Hear, then, says he, foolish man, how grief crushes out the Holy Spirit, and on the other hand saves.

Lax, the Murderer

Let the earth produce a living creature.

Chapter 7. He Gives Thanks to God for the Remission of His Sins, and Reminds Every One that the Supreme God May Have Preserved Us from Greater Sins.

He knew himself to be a poor creature in comparison with Jonathan Stubbs.

They are the friendly bears, and they see the flies disturbing your comfort.

“You came to see me,—because you knew I should want you.” Surely this was malice prepense! Knowing what was his want, how could she exasperate it by talking thus of her own? “As for money, I have no claim on any one. No creature was ever more forlorn. But I will not talk of that.”

Yet we ought to despair of no man, whether he be one who shows himself to be of this nature within the pale of the Church, or whether he more openly opposes it from without.

Not a word more had been said between him and Clara as to their engagement, and he recognised it as a fact that he was no longer bound to her as her future husband.

The pause was but for a moment; he could not bear the ordeal of that look, but fixing his eyes to the ground, he struck his spurs into his horse, and hurried out of the sight of those on whom he did not dare to turn his face.

Or how could man, or any animal, have appeared upon earth, if the elements were mutually at strife, or if there were one that prevailed, and that one insufficient for the composition of bodies.

For God has given us eyes, not that we may look wantonly, but that, admiring his handi-work, we may worship the Creator.

[Luke 21:1-4] I may not sit in the presence of a presbyter; he, if I sin, may deliver me to Satan, for the destruction of the flesh that the spirit may be saved.

Steinmark. Marriage? An obsolete, sacerdotal ceremony! Indeed, my dear fellow, I will have no hand in it.

Why such a man, and especially why such a woman, should be at such a place it is difficult to understand.

That also is the Council of vanity which Donatus drew together throughout Africa, by charging the Church with traditorship (delivering up the sacred books), and with which Novatus disturbed men's minds by denying the grant of repentance to the lapsed, and condemning second marriages, though contracted possibly of necessity.

He knew all this because his mind was clear.

Whence certain men despising in themselves that peculiar and special thing which from their Maker they had received, the Maker Himself reproves, saying, Do not become like horse and mule, in which there is no understanding

“How dare you ask, Mr Neverbend?” she demanded, with indignation. “Am not I a Britannulist as well as you?” And as she walked away I could see that there was a tear in her eye.

But he would have to go out if the ministry went out.

“If I could do any good I should be so happy,” said Stanbury.

It is wonderful what love an innkeeper has for his bill in its entirety.

The word of truth is free, and carries its own authority, disdaining to fall under any skilful argument, or to endure the logical scrutiny of its hearers.

Mr. Plomacy knew better than this.

Once and once only he had been mounted; and then as the dusk of evening was coming on he had trotted over quickly to Desmond Court, as though he had in hand some purport of great moment; but if so he changed his mind when he came to the gate, for he walked on slowly for three or four hundred yards beyond it, and then turning his horse’s head, slowly made his way back past the gate, and then trotted quickly home to Hap House.

Yea, what clearing of yourselves, towards me. Yea, what indignation against him that had sinned. Yea, what fear. [2 Corinthians 7:11] For so great carefulness and very speedy reformation was the part of men who feared exceedingly. And that he might not seem to be exalting himself, see how quickly he softened it by saying,

For two presbyters came to the synod, who some time back had been attached to Meletius, and were afterwards received back by the blessed Alexander, bishop of Alexandria, and are now with Athanasius, protesting that he had never been ordained a presbyter, and that Meletius had never had any church, or employed any minister in Mareotis.

But he found that he could not do it.

You see that everywhere the Scripture calls sins thorns.

Did this form a prejudice against us, that between the Assyrians and Bactrians, under the leadership of Ninus and Zoroaster of old, a struggle was maintained not only by the sword and by physical power, but also by magicians, and by the mysterious learning of the Chaldeans?

And one might use the following line of argument.

And the prophecy, He shall be the expectation of the nations, signified that there would be some of all nations who should look for Him to come again.

He begins mildly enough, but warms with his subject as he goes on: “Should they send ambassadors to a traitor to his country?

But there was a twinkle of jest in the lady’s eyes all the while which he did not perceive, and which, had he perceived it, he could not have understood. Her anger was but simulated wrath. She, too, had thought that it might be well, under circumstances, if she were to marry Mr. Prosper, but had quite understood that those circumstances might not be forthcoming. “I don’t think it will do at all, my dear,” she had said to Miss Tickle. “Of course an old bachelor like that won’t want to have you.”

“It is unnecessary to speak of the drapery of the arms, which showed the elaborate lace of the sleeve beneath, and sometimes also the pearly whiteness of that rounded arm. This was a sight which would almost drive Macassar to distraction. At such moments as that the hopes of the patriotic poet for the good of the Civil Service were not strictly fulfilled in the heart of Macassar Jones. Oh, if the Lady Crinoline could but have known!

Mr. Slope, who was wide awake to what he hoped was his coming opportunity, was not much concerned in the interest of the moment.

He was not looking for money with his wife;—nor for fashion, nor countenance.

Even Miss Colza’s tongue had been silent, and Mr Rubb had found himself unable to carry on any further small talk with Miss Mackenzie.

If our minds are thus disposed, we shall never forget our own sins, but, always fearful and trembling lest we should have to pay the penalty, we shall readily recollect them.

But they who, following God, and in obedience to Him, have despised the desires of the body, and, preferring virtue to pleasures, have preserved innocence and righteousness, these God recognises as like to Himself.

Come and sit at table with us this evening, and make one of us.

I know that it will be expensive.

“I look on both of you and Eleanor as all one on the present occasion. I am considered to be falling over a precipice, and she has got hold of my coat tails. Of course you wouldn’t be Christians if you didn’t both of you seize a foot.”

The girl I am not judging.

When it was made I and his brother were apart; we were not even on speaking terms.

For he is held in a kind of stupor through anger and shame with which he is intoxicated; and thou, who art in health, must go your way to him that is ill, and make the tribunal private, and the remedy such as may be readily received.

He crossed the stile into the fields, however, without waiting,—without having waited for half a moment, and immediately saw the figure of a second man standing down, hidden as it were in the ditch; and though he could discover no more than the cap and shoulders of the man through the gloom, he was sure he knew who it was that owned the cap and shoulders.

For as, if He had said the reverse, 'The Lord begot me,' and went on, 'But before the hills He created me,' 'created' would certainly precede 'begot,' so having said first 'created,' and then added 'But before all the hills He begot me,' He necessarily shows that 'begot' preceded 'created.'

You are therefore only misleading yourself and others when you say, If one should affirm, either that there is free will in man, or that God is the Creator of those that are born, he is at once set down as a Cœlestian and a Pelagian; for the catholic faith says these things.

For although they did not as yet hold the right opinion concerning Him, still they gave heed unto Him as to some marvelous one, and paid Him much respect.

Aristobulus, who, by the right of ancient succession, had been up to that time both king and high priest, he sent with his children in chains to Rome; and gave to Hyrcanus, brother of Aristobulus, the high priesthood, while the whole nation of the Jews was made tributary to the Romans from that time.

[Hebrews 12:6] When therefore a man serves Him only in the season of ease, he gives proofs of no great love, and loves not Christ purely.

Now go and tell her that what I have said is false,—if you dare.” The woman was not there, and it did not seem to be his immediate duty to leave the room in order that he might denounce a lady whom he certainly had illused.

Who then are the children of men?

States as it stood in 1860,—

But should Mrs.

“Unless you should become his wife after all. He will never marry anybody else.”

If you were, you would bring forth from the treasure of the sacred Scriptures things old as well as new.

“Tifto says so.”

“If you think that it would pain me, you are mistaken. It pains me more that you should think that I could not bear it. He was welcome to his wife.”

Further, it is those who are perfect and purified from all faults who ought to seek the desert, and when they have thoroughly exterminated all their faults amid the assembly of the brethren, they should enter it not by way of cowardly flight, but for the purpose of divine contemplation, and with the desire of deeper insight into heavenly things, which can only be gained in solitude by those who are perfect.

[Matthew 25:39] And when saw we you sick, or imprisoned, and [52] cared for you?

Do you ask what bonds?

He turned away in disgust, and had himself driven to the Beargarden.

And each of these things indicates something useful to us.

That we must worship the crucified, and count Him as God, who was born of a Jewish woman.

Old Stanhope could not but feel that he had ill-performed his duties as a father and a clergyman, and could hardly look forward to his own death without grief at the position in which he would leave his family.

There he was, smiling and chatting, oily and amiable; getting a word in with any one he could; creeping into intimacy with those who were not sharp enough to see what he was after; jabbering of horses,—of which he considered himself a complete judge,—and of shooting, hunting, and racing, as if the sports of a gentleman had been his occupation from his youth upwards.

Nor indeed does it exist even now in those who are holy, nor does it in any way belong to their nature.

1 Cor. i. 25. The foolishness of God is wiser than men.

“If I had ever thought that you had expended a sovereign except for the object of furthering some plot of your own, I should have been grateful. As it is I do not know that we owe very much to each other.” Then he left the room, and, getting into a cab, went away to Lincoln’s Inn.

“At any rate, he’s off somewhere,” said Mr. Fenwick, “and his mother doesn’t know where he’s gone.

The Quadruple Alliance was a compact made between England, France, Spain, and Portugal, for preserving the thrones of Spain and Portugal on behalf of Isabella and Maria, and defending the two Princesses from the machinations of their uncles, Don Carlos and Don Miguel.

He is an impostor.

She had meant to be generous and trusting; but it might be that of all courses that which she had adopted was the least generous.

“Your affectionate friend,

Such an opinion from such a man on such a subject would be quite a compliment.

Dr. Thorne was an old bachelor, in whom both as a man and a doctor Miss Dunstable was inclined to place much confidence.

And yet I did not see it!

But what is, You have led captivity captive?

seeing that deep calls to deep, and after those sufferings severer ones are to be dreaded.

Lord Mount Thistle had found fault with him.

“Everybody wears a shirt, and no one wears more than one at a time. I don’t see that it does any good.”

According to Trigger’s views it was as clear as daylight that Glump had not been paid by them.

That will which the Father has to the Son, the Son has to the Father.

But let the universal names of crimes withdraw to the specialities of their own works; let idolatry remain in that which it is itself.

“Lord Lufton wants me to learn to ride,” said she.

Do not fear to be a penitent.

“What would you do?”

He fortified the city—or rather, he began to do so.

For let those who deny these things bark and drown their own voices with their clamour as much as they please; I will endeavour to persuade them to be quiet, and to suffer Your word to reach them.

Therefore, wishing the disciple to be exercised in godliness unto the end, and to contend for the faith, he counsels them, saying, 'Fight the good fight of faith, and lay hold on eternal life [1 Timothy 4:7].'

Then they dared to execute together something greater.

For in the case of the man who shall deny, Providence, as held by Basilides, is done away with.

Should I have passed over that engagement which had been in full existence during the last twelve months, and have said nothing of it?

But houses, and official residences, and baths, and tenements, how many are they?

“Stop, Godfrey,” she said. And they did stop in the path, for now she no longer thought of putting an end to her embarrassment by overtaking her companions. “If any such words are necessary for your comfort, it would hardly become me to forbid them. Were I to speak so harshly you would accuse me afterwards in your own heart. It must be for you to judge whether it is well to reopen a wound that is nearly healed.”

“How about getting married?” asked Dolly.

I have been mindful of the works of the Lord [Psalm 76:11].

“He used to draw his bishops very bitter, but now he draws them mild and creamy. I dare say Stumfold did his best, but he didn’t quite get his hay in while the sun shone.”

We think that we need hardly answer that question.

Then for the twentieth time she asked herself whether it would not be easier to turn it against her own bosom,—against her own brain; so that all might be over at once.

Almost hopelessly he had made his appeal to the man who had her promise.

(For our generation too begins from a sort of decay, even as that of the grain.)

I do not like to destroy the letter, though, perhaps, that would be best; but I would advise you to do so, if it be possible, without shewing it to Dorothy.

“What you must do for me is this,” she continued.

Mr. Crawley had been for a while in doubt how he should address his old friend in commencing this letter, understanding that its tone throughout must, in a great degree, be made conformable with its first words.

“I will be a lodger if you will have me,” said the Duke; “or if your wife should not like that, I will find a lodging elsewhere.” This had been in the sadness and tenderness which had immediately followed the death of the Duchess.

But the all-seeing eye did not permit Arsenius to remain long in concealment.

The intervening day was a Sunday, and on the Monday she must send her answer.

And wherefore, it may be said, did he not mention the signs and wonders which were straightway to be done by Him?

But when he saw the wind mighty, he feared; and then he began to sink, being troubled in his exercise.

We in our ignorance of Your greatness mourned over this, but our want of foresight was in error.

Looking about you, you begin to learn that you cannot describe your whereabouts.

“And I don’t see that it makes any difference. He isn’t my husband. You have said that yourself very often, Mrs. Bonteen.”

And those valiant and blessed three who were tried in Babylon, Hananiah, Mishael, and Azariah, when they were in safety and the fire became to them as dew, gave thanks, praising and 'saying words of glory to God. '

Therefore all things are upside down, all things are in confusion, and overthrown, and ruined.

But they gather that opinion of theirs from reading: She took of the fruit thereof, and did eat; and gave also unto her husband with her, and he did eat: and the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked.

But why, after saying, which lights every man, should he add, that comes into the world, [John 1:9] — the clause which has suggested the opinion that He enlightens the minds of newly-born babes while the birth of their bodies from their mother's womb is still a recent thing?

He smiled in the same way, though there was no one there to see the smile.

This latter was the Tree of Knowledge; not, however, because it was evil from the beginning when planted; nor was it forbidden because God grudged it to men— let not the enemies of God wag their tongues in that direction, or imitate the serpent.

For even the fornicator will praise chastity, and the covetous will condemn injustice, and the passionate will admire patience, and blame quarrelsomeness, and the wanton [will blame] wantonness.

Where chiefly

Away with such a thought!

This evil also Christ hints at, thus saying to the disciples, sufficient for the day is the evil thereof, that is to say the affliction, the misery.

Because he jokes about the augurship, we are told how miserably base he was, and how ready to sell his country!

This will also be shown by my conduct.

He shall deliver the Kingdom to God the Father, not in the sense that He resigns His power by the delivering, but that we, being conformed to the glory of His body, shall form the Kingdom of God.

The absurdity of them was ludicrous and gross.

Where in this passage do we find the power of free choice?

Chapter XXII. Lord De Guest at Home

Acts VII. 35

They had four days a week, with an occasional bye, and 2500l.

[Hebrews 10:20]), does the same again from the more gloomy ones, speaking thus.

And Epicharmus, saying:—

She will endeavour to comply with your wishes in all things reasonable.

For no one, however much he may wish, can obtain possession of all things, but any one can learn to despise, and so prove himself superior to, all things.

Its very grandeur is much more striking, that from each gable-end hangs another cabin, the same as those we have above described.

Now what a man does, is not the man himself, but his activity, and it is from his actions that he receives the title of evil.

A day or two after the interview which was described in the last chapter John Eames dined with his uncle Mr. Thomas Toogood, in Tavistock Square.

What is left unfulfilled, that the Jews should now disbelieve with impunity?

But what he says, In whom I trusted, does not suit the head but the body.

The Southern States were driven into rebellion by no wrongs inflicted on them; but their desire for secession is not on that account matter for astonishment.

“I do not regard in the least what Herr Steinmarc knows,” replied Linda.

But now how few musicians, logicians, and geometricians are there in the world!

For it is not for you, He says, to know times or seasons, which the Father has put in His own power.

Eleanor, however, certainly did feel herself to have been baffled as she returned home with all her news to her father.

‘No. I passed him; and I do not know even whether he recognised me. But he is here, in Cambridge.’

If it were left in the Bishop’s bosom, his parish, his school, and his character would all be made safe to him.

But what sort of being is this Ammon of Herodotus, whose words Celsus has quoted, as if by way of demonstrating how each one ought to keep his country's laws?

For no one will be able to make us miserable, if we do not make ourselves such; nor, on the other hand, blessed, if we do not make ourselves such, following up the grace of God.

Here I am.” And she came close to him.

She would fain have remained throughout the whole year at Framley Court, did not certain grave considerations render such a course on her part improper in her own estimation.

And yet these men by their calumnies against me, earnestly wish that I should suffer death.

For all men live, even unbelievers, and uninitiated, who eat not of that flesh.

When Jesus was crowned with thorns and bore our sins and suffered for us, it was to make the roses of virginity and the lilies of chastity grow for us out of the brambles and briers which have formed the lot of women since the day when it was said to Eve, in sorrow you shall bring forth children; and your desire shall be to your husband and he shall rule over you.

When old Mr. Bideawhile called upon her, her husband’s ancient family lawyer, she told that gentleman that if it was her husband’s will that they should live apart, it must be so.

And there being a doubt in reference to them, as was to be expected, Orontopagas the Chiliarch said that they were to resign the kingdom; taking dwellings to be meant by the mouse, waters by the frog, air by the bird, land by the plough, arms by the javelin.

Chapter 22.— The Necessity of Variety in Style.

Seek judgment.

During the greater portion of this part of the book the reader finds himself detained at the house of ill fame in company with women of the town whose conversation is given at length, — and is given as repeated by Clarissa to a gentleman who is the chief correspondent of Lovelace!

But let us now at last finish this book, after thus far treating of, and showing as far as seemed sufficient, what is the mortal course of the two cities, the heavenly and the earthly, which are mingled together from the beginning down to the end.

How in virtue of the hypostatic union of the two natures in Christ the Word is rightly termed the Saviour, or incarnate man, and the Son of God.

Who instituted the theatre but the state?

He would follow the Lord loosed and free, as did the apostles, and many in the times of the apostles, and many who forsook both their means and their relatives, and clave to Christ with undivided ties.

Her mind would revert to that hand-squeezing, to those muttered words, and to her mother’s caution.

At this moment a clerk entered the room and handed a card to his employer. “Here’s the heir himself,” said Mr. Green.

It was with great difficulty that he could quite make up his mind which was right,—the lady of fashion or his wife.

Even his voice had been stern at last, but yet, with the sternness, there had been something of compassion.

It was in vain that Lord George asked what they could do, and declared that the evil troubles which must probably arise would all rest on his brother’s head.

These are all quirks, as is evident, and quibbles with which they are wont to bolster up weak cases before a jury; nay, rather, to speak more truly, they are pretences, such as are used in sophistical reasonings, by which not the truth is sought after, but always the image, and appearance, and shadow of the truth.

“I will not have you speak to me respecting Lady Frances.”

Else, if it was Marcion's god who revealed the things which had been formerly hidden by the Creator, it follows that he did the Creator's work by setting forth His deeds.

The two letters were written in the book, and must remain there.

It is related that Eutychianus accordingly sent to the officers who held the man in custody, desiring them to loosen the chains; and that, on their refusal, he went himself to the prison, when the doors, though fastened, opened of their own accord, and the bonds of the prisoner fell off.

It was impossible to Pompey that the sweepings of Rome, even with Caesar and Caesar’s army to help them, should at last prevail over himself and over the Roman Senate.

Imagine what my sufferings must have been, encompassed as I was by such calamities, and oppressed by the fever, ignorant of the plans which had been made, but in terror of the barbarians and trembling.

He has changed, but I have not.

Nothing could avail her now.

In that work he also mentions several women, who practiced the same kind of austerities as the men that have been referred to.

I take for granted your strength of mind: therefore it is to myself that I say those things which I am now stating to you.

MRS. L. He is managing trustee of the school, a id he is chairman at the magistrates’ bench. No doubt you know what is going on at the school, and sometimes hear what is done at the bench.

She loved him now as well as ever she had loved him:—almost more as the thought of parting from him pressed upon her!

We then, who no longer serve them which by nature are no Gods , have come to the knowledge of Him Who by nature is God, to Whom every knee bows of things in heaven and things in earth and things under the earth [Philippians 2:10-11] .

[2 Corinthians 10:4] And Sisera's thirst was quenched with a bowl of milk, because he was overcome by wisdom, for what is healthful for us as food is deadly and weakening to the power of the enemy.

“And if you are, M. Chapeau, I’m sure I’m sorry enough I ever saw you;” and Annot again increased the distance between her and her lover.

I beg you therefore to go over it constantly, and if your health permits you, recite it aloud.

The Apostle Paul teaches us that we ought to have the eyes of our understanding enlightened that we may understand what is the height and breadth and depth.

So mighty an achievement, had it remained unknown and unrevealed, must have failed of its effect as regards the interests of men; whereas the same event, if openly declared and understood, would, from its wondrous character, redound to the common benefit of all.

“God knows that I want to do right, John. I want to do nothing else, John, but what’s right. As to this money, I care but little for it for myself.”

For the blessed Paul does not refuse to be their servant: We preach not ourselves, he says; but Christ Jesus the Lord; and ourselves your servants for Jesus' sake [2 Corinthians 4:5 and again, All things are yours, whether Paul or Apollos.

But, in course of time, his hair which had been cut off began to grow again, and his strength to return with it.

‘By the by, Norman,’ said Alaric, ‘when will it suit you to look through those Scotch papers with me?’

2 Corinthians 1:25

And then there was so much to say in favour of this young man who had lost it all, and so little to say against him!

Then we flee from Egypt, that is from sullen persecuting sin; and from Pharaoh the unseen tyrant, and the bitter taskmasters, changing our quarters to the world above; and are delivered from the clay and the brickmaking, and from the husks and dangers of this fleshly condition, which for most men is only not overpowered by mere husklike calculations.

The motive I think was bad;—but not the less beneficial to the population was the money spent in wages.

For that they are of later date than that calamity, the very cities in which they were born and died, nay, which they founded, bear ample testimony; for the cities could have no existence at this day unless as belonging to postdiluvian times.

The constable went so far as to swear that there wasn’t a man, woman, or child in all Barchester who was not talking of Mr. Crawley at that very moment.

You place this grievous stumbling-block in the way of your own mother's son, for whom Christ died, [1 Corinthians 8:11] and who is yet in feeble infancy, not ready to use strong meat, but requiring to be nursed on a mother's milk; [1 Corinthians 3:2] and you quote against me the works of Hilary, in order that you may deny the fact of the Church's increase among all nations; even unto the end of the world, according to the promise which God, in order to subdue your unbelief, confirmed with an oath!

He had pledged himself to abide by the verdict, and he could not but have a wish on the subject.

He was so earnestly affected toward Origen, that he urged him to come to that country for the benefit of the churches, and moreover he visited him in Judea, remaining with him for some time, for the sake of improvement in divine things. And Alexander, bishop of Jerusalem, and Theoctistus, bishop of Cæsarea, attended on him constantly, as their only teacher, and allowed him to expound the Divine Scriptures, and to perform the other duties pertaining to ecclesiastical discourse.

But has God a shape?

Chapter LXVII. Job’s Comforters

Or do you endeavor to add grace to it, as if forsooth you were the better artist?

So that the soul of the Lord being moved of its own free-will willed, but willed of its free-will those things which His divine will willed it to will.

“Oh, yes; I understand.”

“I quite agree with you that the silk gowns should be kept for their elders,” and so the conversation was ended.

On the first of August that interesting young lady was married to the man—shall we say of her heart or of her feet?

There is no good in crying after spilt milk.

Sir Simon put his questions so as almost to reassure the witness and very quickly,—only too quickly,—obtained from him all the information that was needed on the side of the prosecution.

I have read the six books of Hieronymus on that prophet; but he has not expounded the middle part.

And what can any one say of those men, who balancing a pole on the forehead, keep it just as steady as a tree rooted in the ground?

His zeal deserved a better success.

The room in which the two had been sitting was very poor; but nevertheless it was neat, and arranged with some attention to appearance.

Lady Ushant declared herself to have been more than satisfied with the visit and expressed a hope that it might be repeated in the next year. “I would ask you to come and make your home here while I have a home to offer you, only that you would be so much more buried here than at Dillsborough. And you have duties there which perhaps you ought not to leave. But come again when your papa will spare you.”

And what was the point under inquiry?

The old man travails, but the new man is born.

It hardly makes him unhappy.

I should like to consult with you as to whither I had better go.

With what offers of willing service, with what gifts, did he reconcile his brother to himself again, so that he should not remember the blessing which had been taken away from him, but should only remember the reparation now offered?

Although a very hardworking man he was a bit of a sportsman, and usually kept one or two well-trained horses, which, as he was too heavy to ride them himself, he was always willing, and usually able, to sell at remunerating prices.

A woman who has been taught by her religion that she is and must be a child of the Evil One, may become guilty of what most terrible crime you please without much increase of damage to her own cause,—without much damage according to her own views of life and death.

Its state was unknown to the sick heart itself: it was manifest to the physician.

He here accordingly labors at this very point, showing that they are no longer performed, even as a figure, for God does not accept them.

Near the surface and for some way down, the sides are light brown, and as blue is the , recognised diamond colour you will at first suppose that no diamonds were found near the surface;—but the light brown has been in all respects the same as the blue, the colour of the soil to a certain depth having been affected by a mixture of iron.

He must be seen who does not see you.

For not he who begins these things, but he who endures in them to the end, shall be saved.

I declare you are five years younger—we are both five years younger than when we were at Jerusalem.

Chapter 11. Justinus.

I have sometimes felt the same of young sportsmen at a Leicestershire or Northamptonshire meet.

But the Marchioness had known enough, and had communicated enough to her son to save him from any great astonishment when he got his brother’s letter.

“But as everybody now-a-days does belong to a club, you will soon get over that difficulty.” So said the editor.

The council was also attended by Pelagius of Laodicæa, Eulogius of Edessa, Acacius, our own Isidorus, Cyril of Jerusalem, Gelasius of Cæsarea in Palestine, who was renowned alike for lore and life and many other athletes of virtue.

To say that Tudor selected his companion because of his income would be to ascribe unjustly to him vile motives and a mean instinct.

The memory of those forty years had been strong upon her, and her heart was heavy because she could not see that old man once again.

And thus nothing else has been said than Ethiopia shall come before her hands to God, that is, by believing in God she shall come before her works.

Was not he who thus spoke clothed with flesh?

The earth is here to be taken as that steadfastness in God, with a view to which it is said, The Lord is the portion of mine inheritance, yea, I have a goodly heritage.

“How about his wife?”

Precious to God is that tongue which knows not to form words except about divine things, and holy is that mouth from which heavenly utterances continually flow forth.

And thou dost not mention the troubles, in which you shared with him, sometimes the fear of magistrates, sometimes the preference given to neighbors.

“For ever!” she replied.

For the dog, when he vomits, certainly casts forth the food which weighed upon his stomach; but, when he returns to his vomit, he is again loaded with what he had been relieved from.

He might have argued thus: That Saturn, being a very powerful king, in order that the memory of his parents might be preserved, gave their names to the heaven and earth, whereas these were before called by other names, for which reason we know that names were applied both to mountains and rivers.

“I’d have done anything for her,—anything! She might have had what settlements she pleased. I told Ned that he must go, if she made a point of it. I’d have gone abroad, or lived just anywhere. I’d come to that, that I didn’t mind the hunting a bit.”

For the Lord laid not hold of the seed of angels — those, I say, who fell not away from that beauteous order and rank that was assigned to them from the beginning.

Or do you say, I saw in him the bishop, I did not see in him the thief?

“He has gone, but she remains.” He repeated the words very distinctly, with a frown on his brow, as though to show that on that branch of the subject he intended to put up with no opposition,—hardly even with an adverse opinion.

And again in another place, Against whom have ye opened your mouth, and against whom have ye let loose your tongues?

And now that he was wealthy, the new dean did contrive to pay the debts of his poor friend, some lawyer of Camelford assisting him.

But when Mr Palliser came near to her she would turn herself slightly, ever so slightly, on her seat, and would allow her eyes to rest for a moment upon his face.

Here there are books, paintings, music, wine, a little dilettanti getting-up of subjects of the day, a little dilettanti thinking on great affairs, perhaps a little dilettanti religion; few domestic laws, and those easily broken; few domestic duties, and those easily evaded; breakfast when you will, with dinner almost as little binding, with much company and acknowledged aptitude for idle luxury.

Her uncle and aunt, though she disliked them, had been much to her.

“Do you mean that you don’t receive it?”

but that truth may be advanced by confirmation from whatever quarter.

But it will make them believe that there is something in it.

“In that matter you must allow me to judge for myself. I can easily understand that a young woman like her, especially with her sister to back her, should induce such a one as you to take her part.”

And this again is another question; why, after having spoken of fourteen generations, he has not in the third division maintained the number.

The three books together may be taken as religious discourses, and his purport seems to have been to show that it might be the duty of the State to foster observances, and even to punish their non-observance—for the benefit of the whole—even though they might not be in themselves true.

“But as for a home,—tell her you have one of your own,—at Belton Castle, from which no one can turn you out, and where no one can intrude on you. This house belongs to you.” Then, before she could answer him, he had left the room; and she listened to his heavy quick footsteps as he went across the hall and out of the front door.

A little afterwards it is added, I will see you again, and your heart shall rejoice, and your joy no man shall take from you (Ibid.

Homily 12 on the Gospel of John

“He is one of those poverty-stricken wheedling fellows that one meets about the world every day,” said the Squire to his cousin—”a fellow that rides horses that he can’t pay for, and owes some poor devil of a tailor for the breeches that he sits in. They eat, and drink, and get along heaven only knows how. But they’re sure to come to smash at last. Girls are such fools nowadays.”

But further, if personality is introduced along with energy, those who divine that neither one nor two energies of Christ are to be spoken of, do not maintain that either one or two persons of Christ are to be spoken of.

He could not divest his mind of the injury which had accrued to him from his wife’s conduct, nor could he help talking of the grief with which his mind was laden.

For as the Lord lives, Who has saved Israel, though the answer be against Jonathan my son, he shall surely die.

Her father had been a clergyman in Dorsetshire, burdened with a small income, and blessed with a large family.

For consider, I say, that righteous household I spoke of.

Blessed be the name of the Lord.” After that he was very angry with himself, and tried to pray that he might be forgiven.

At these centers the main avenues are supposed to cross each other, which avenues are called by the names of the respective States.

For how can it be credible that the Spirit should be divided by any parcelling out?

Athanaric resented that his subjects had become Christian under the persuasion of Ulphilas; and because they had abandoned the cult of their fathers, he subjected many individuals to many punishments; some he put to death after they had been dragged before tribunals and had nobly confessed the doctrine, and others were slain without being permitted to utter a single word in their own defense.

A week passed over Mr Crosbie’s head at Courcy Castle without much inconvenience to him from the well-known fact of his matrimonial engagement.

And if she could only get away from her mother that in itself would be something.

Though an ordained priest, he has done no priestly work, and has always been somewhat angry when any one has suggested to him that he should take a part in any clerical duties.

Destitute yourself, follow a destitute Christ.

Would not all hopes be over with Mr Melmotte should he ever learn that his daughter’s lover reached home and tumbled upstairs to bed between eight and nine o’clock in the morning?

[Luke 4:32] And they wondered because of his doctrine: [41] for his word was as if it were authoritative.

Had this been given, faith would carry with it no reward, for a necessity of will attached to us would also impose faith upon us.

What can be equal to this tenderness? On hearing these things let us hide our faces, to think that we are so far removed from Him whom we are commanded to imitate. Let us at least see how great the distance, that we may at any rate condemn ourselves, for warring with these, in behalf of whom Christ gave His life, and not being willing to be reconciled to them, whom that He might reconcile He refused not even to be slain; unless this too be some expense, and outlay of money, which you object in almsgiving.

For the first quarter of an hour after the Duke’s departure he thought more of his wife and of Burgo Fitzgerald than he did of Lord Brock and Mr Finespun.

Wherefore it should be our ambition that the Word of Christ dwell in us richly.

Concerning this same thing, according to Luke: Let your loins be girded, and your lamps burning; and you like men that wait for their lord, when he comes from the wedding; that, when he comes and knocks, they may open to him.

“Is Lord Chiltern in the house?” said the Earl, turning to the servant.

[19] [John 20:26] And after eight days, on the next First-day, the disciples were assembled again within, and Thomas with them.

This is, not uncertainly.

Chapter 12.— Concerning the Opinion of Those Who Have Thought that God is the Soul of the World, and the World is the Body of God.

‘I certainly think he might have gone to church,’ said Mrs. Woodward, when the hall-door closed behind the party, as they started to their place of worship.

Then crossed Dorothy’s mind, as she thought of this, a glimmering of an idea that no one can be entitled to issue commands who cannot enforce obedience.

We may understand the meaning of this from one single instance.

“Who are the ‘we,’ doctor?” said Mr. Walker.

All this was a great aggravation to his misery.

[Philippians 3:7-10]

This, also, was cause of vexation to Frank.

“Thank you, Mr Melmotte. On matters such as that I think that I can see my own way. I have been in fault in coming in to the Board without understanding what duties I should have to perform—.”

But now it appears to be advantageous that a certain number of soldiers should be sent to you, whom let your Glory be careful to admonish and exhort to be prepared for toil.

She was so afraid that the baby would annoy me, and I thought the baby was so much the best of it.

And moreover, the term ungenerate is not only employed of that which exists without a cause, but has also a proper application to that which is nonexistent.

And what says that old man?

Here he employed himself in collecting wood in the deserts and on the mountains, which he carried on his shoulders for sale in the cities, and, by these means, obtained sufficient food for the support of the body.

Then, as a final crushing blow, and old uncle, whose heir he was to have been, married and had a family!

They did come as they had promised, about half an hour after Rachel’s letter to Luke had been carried away by the postman.

This, he says, is the great and unspeakable mystery of the Eleusinian rites, Hye, Cye.

“I suppose he is asking her—to be—his wife.” Then Arabella threw herself in despair upon the bed, and wept without any further attempt at control over her feelings. It was a deathblow to her last hope, and all the world, as she looked upon the world then, was over for her. “If I could have arranged it the other way, you know that I would,” said the mother.

And the six men commanded stones to ascend out of a certain pit, and to go to the building of the tower.

Again Moses, having prophesied that the woman would bring forth in trouble and pain, on account of transgression, a poet not undistinguished writes:—

Elias states that they both became bishops.

“Clara! how can you say anything so wicked,—so abominably wicked!”

Bessy had been nearly an hour in her room before Mrs.

Every term, therefore, advanced for discussion is to be converted into an expression that is admitted by those that are parties in the discussion, to form the starting point for instruction, to lead the way to the discovery of the points under investigation.

On the Thursday and the Friday she managed to avoid Robinson. On the Saturday morning they met in her father’s room for a minute, and when he attempted to exercise a privilege to which his near approaching nuptials certainly entitled him, she repulsed him sullenly: “Oh, come; none of that.” “I shall require the more on Tuesday,” he replied, with his ordinary good-humour. She spoke nothing further to him then, but left the room and went away to her friend Mrs. Poppins.

“Oh! very well.”

“I’m sure it must be, aunt.”

‘If I understand her feelings, Greenmantle, she is very much set upon it.’

Behold actual experience has now proved that it is not only a runaway, and ungrateful servant, but also a murderous one, for it is this which has caused you now to fear and tremble.

For hear the Prophet saying, It is good for me, that You have humbled me.

As soon as Paula heard the bridegroom saying: Rise up my love my fair one, my dove, and come away: for, lo, the winter is past, the rain is over and gone, she answered joyfully the flowers appear on the earth; the time to cut them has come and I believe that I shall see the good things of the Lord in the land of the living.

The Lord's loving-kindness, no less than His mercy, is great in respect of our salvation, in that, not content to redeem us with His blood, He in addition also prayed for us.

You cannot do it.

“Oh, as to that,” said Handy, “we none of us never wanted to do Mr Harding no harm; if he’s going now, it’s not along of us; and I don’t see for what Mr Bunce speaks up agen us that way.”

by the manner of His inquiry they might be led up to a sublimer notion, and not fall into the same low view as the multitude.

Leslie had said.

Ver. 4. But after that the kindness and love of God our Saviour towards man appeared, Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to His mercy He saved us by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy Ghost, which He shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour, that being justified by His grace we should be made heirs according to the hope of eternal life.

Still there were many other senators who wore the badges of proconsular rank.

It was on his tongue to tell Johnny that he had better return to his former work in the outer office.

What a change had those few months in London made in her!

See what ardent lovers of that city were they by whom these words were composed, by whom they have been handed down to us; with how deep a feeling were they sung by those!

It was all drawn back by the croupier’s unimpassioned rake, and the rolls of gold were restored to the tray from whence they had been taken.

‘Let your tongue forget me. I have given you no cause to speak good of me, and you will be too kind to speak evil.’

If Ahab die in the city, the dogs shall eat him: but if he die in the field the birds of the air shall eat him, [1 Kings 21:21-24] and this which is threatened as the greatest threat of all: Your dead body shall not be brought to the sepulchre of your fathers.

But Mrs. Winterfield sent for her nephew, who had just left her, and herself gave her orders to him.

And, every man, love one another with an undivided heart.

I shall not speak to him again.

He delivered them both to the commander of the Egyptian forces, and they confessed that Arsenius was still alive, that he had been secretly concealed in their house, and that he was now living in Egypt.

The least respected man in that confraternity was Grendall, and yet it was in compliance with the persistency of his suggestion that they gave up the nobler game.

‘Alaric has not to attend from ten till four,’ said Gertrude, who could not endure the idea that her husband should be ranked with common clerks, like Fidus Neverbend.

He, born on the earth, is nourished with goats' milk.

Indeed, I know that it only requires that you and I should have a little cousinly talk on this matter to be quite in accord.

And because a miracle was about to be wrought, which had also been performed by the Prophets, although not in an equal degree, and because He would do it after first giving thanks, lest they should fall into any suspicion of weakness on His part, observe how by the very manner of His working He entirely raises their thoughts of it and shows them the difference (between Himself and others).

Mr. Bird’s object is to shew that Natal is not in a condition to he benefitted by a parliameniary form of government, and Lis arguments are well worthy of the attention of gentlemen in Downing Street.

Lynceus, as fable relates, used to see through a wall.

Incapable of entertaining about God one severe thought or anything above human reasoning?

Everything in their travels had been as yet delightful to Emily.

Under such circumstances, “his Margaret” would understand how imperative it was that he should receive an answer.

“To sacrifice herself is the special heroism which a woman can achieve.” Yes, she belie’ved that.

There was no smiling consciousness of the bestowal of joy on the countenance of the donor as he gave it, no exuberance of thanks from the recipient as she received it.

We are forgetful like travellers who unmindful of some important object, are obliged, although they be far on their road, to retrace their steps, punished for their negligence by the weariness of the journey.

“I don’t know that I can advise, my dear; but as far as we are concerned, we shall be very glad if you can stay.”

I would then undertake to use my best endeavours to effect a union with your ward.

“But, mamma, whom did you see except Mr. Goodall? I know you saw somebody, and you must tell me.”

Therefore the heart is right with God, when it does seek God for the sake of God.

He will lose the sense of one continued descent, and think that they are passing round him in their appointed courses.

Both during the storm when there was a cause he prophesied, not for the sake of prophesying, and here again in the first instance he lays on brushwood:— nothing for vain display, but (with a simple view) to their being preserved, and enjoying some warmth.

Belleroach. My heart, my own, my life, my love! What shall I say to you?

Runciman knew that the interest on the mortgage had been paid, and could only have been paid out of the produce; and Larry Twentyman knew that if Goarly took his 7s.

For this he had to sit, with his pen in his hand, seven hours seven days a week, and the very paper, pens, and ink came to fifteenpence out of the money.

For this same cause again in every one of the clauses He commands us to make our prayers common, saying, Our Father, and Your will be done in earth as it is in heaven, and Give us the bread, and forgive us our debts, and lead us not into temptation, and deliver us; everywhere commanding us to use this plural word, that we may not retain so much as a vestige of anger against our neighbor.

Some he convinced by argument, others he put to the blush; he commended those who had spoken well, and excited all to unanimity; until, at length, he reduced them all to oneness of mind and opinion on all the disputed points, so that they all agreed to hold the same faith, and to celebrate the festival of Salvation upon the same day.

And that our or rather all Christian people's affection for you may be stirred up in greater measure, we wish this that we have written to you, beloved, to come to all men's knowledge, that they who serve our God may give thanks for the consummation of the peace of the Apostolic See with you.

And even yet,—if he would only now say that he did not believe her to have been guilty, how great would be the change in her future life!

Hence it ensues that the proprietors of this island, deserting the pious republic, are forced to take refuge with that most wicked nation of the Lombards.

“Good gracious me, my love! I thought Lord Cashel had managed all that—I thought that was all settled. You know, he would keep those horrid horses, and all that kind of thing; and what more could you do than just let Lord Cashel settle it?”

A vote or two from their score was knocked off on grounds which did not touch the candidate or his agents.

The Vicar suggested that after all a muck of mud outside the house wouldn’t do much harm.

Perhaps if I were to say fashionably educated, I might be more strictly correct.

What good could any sermon do her while that bauble was dangling before her eyes?

To him afar off, as it were, and unlike, what said He?

The neighbourhood generally thought that Bessy was unreasonable and ungrateful.

There was, however, something of discrepancy between them as to matters of religion.

“You are satisfied at any rate, Mrs. Jones,” said the lawyer. But Mrs. Jones had hidden her face in her apron, and would not look up. She could not understand why this friend of the family should push the matter so dreadfully against them. If he would rise from his chair and destroy that wretch who stood before them, then indeed he might be called a friend!

These noble ladies adopted this suggestion, and presented themselves before the emperor in all their customary splendour of array, that so the sovereign, judging their rank from their dress, might count them worthy of being treated with courtesy and kindness.

Wherefore I entreat you to revolve these things.

Topic 6

At six o’clock there were some who suggested that his name should be withdrawn.

“May the Lord in His mercy give her light to see the right way,” said Madame Staubach.

“You’re enough to drive a man mad. I don’t know what it is you want, or you don’t want.”

was sufficient?

For he is the author of that rational and intelligent being which exists in man; and, being himself one with his Father's Divine nature, he sheds upon his offspring the out-flowings of his Father's bounty.

“I think he must be tipsy,” whispered Miss O’Conor, the maiden sister, who always sat at her brother’s left hand. But a whisper though it was, it was audible all down the table.

These are great mysteries, brethren.

“I never think much of them chaps.”

After that he walked on as silent as herself, still keeping close to her side; and other ladies, who had not the good fortune to have male companions, envied her happiness in being so attended.

“You mean about your profession?” said she.

In the words of the Prophet that follow in the same context, He says plainly, For then will I turn to the peoples a language : since, after the Resurrection, when the Holy Ghost was sent forth the gift of tongues was granted, that they might serve the Lord under one yoke.

[Acts 1:4] And this circumstance the Apostles themselves always put forth as an fallible token of the Resurrection; as where they say, Who ate and drank with Him.

And this also the Scripture says, Who for a season is smooth to your throat, but afterwards you shall find her more bitter than gall, and sharper than a two-edged sword.

Or if you think that we have been baptized in the name of Donatus, or in our own name, you are miserably deceived, and at the same time confess in your sacrilege that you on your part defile your wretched selves in the name of Cæcilianus."

With what words was he to begin it?

Ad Nationes

When, the Red Sea past and Pharaoh drowned with his host, Miriam, Aaron's sister, her timbrel in her hand, shall chant to the answering women: Sing ye unto the Lord, for he has triumphed gloriously; the horse and his rider has he thrown into the sea.

Melmotte dined at home that evening with no company but that of his wife and daughter.

“It was beyond measure good of you; but I did not dare to call you Marion then, though I knew your name as well as I do now, Marion! I have it here, written all round my heart.” What could she say to a man who spoke to her after this fashion? It was as though an angel from heaven were courting her! If only she could have gone on listening so that nothing further should come of it! “Find some name for me, and tell me that it shall be written round your heart.”

The reason why you, being guilty, are sought after by the innocent, is that you may cease to be guilty, and begin to be innocent.

Instead of doing so they had, almost unanimously, grovelled in the dust at their rich neighbour’s feet.

“Of course I don’t want to offend him for many reasons,” said the aunt, looking knowingly at her niece.

“I know them well, my lord. When I was young I was on the Maggiore almost alone. Some day I will tell you a history of what I was in those days.”

Let us bring it to a good tone, let us discipline it in true wisdom.

For when it became plain to me that he was ignorant of those arts in which I had believed him to excel, I began to despair of his clearing up and explaining all the perplexities which harassed me: though ignorant of these, however, he might still have held the truth of piety, had he not been a Manichæan.

“Miss Amedroz,” she said, “you must allow me to judge for myself in this matter.

Lady Cashel was quite overwhelmed. Fanny was usually so much more collected than herself, that her present prostration, both of feeling and body, was dreadful to see. Suppose she was to go into hysterics—there they would be alone, and Lady Cashel felt that she had not strength to ring the bell.

I do not mean the invisible beings—away with such a thought, O man —but the sculptured images, and the mercy-seat, in the midst of which God spoke with His voice.

For even when we wage a just war, our adversaries must be sinning; and every victory, even though gained by wicked men, is a result of the first judgment of God, who humbles the vanquished either for the sake of removing or of punishing their sins.

Let them therefore say, if they please, that, because similitudes for the exhibition of the mysteries of God's word are taken from the things which I have named, we are chargeable either with consulting the omens given by the flight of birds, or with concocting the poisons of the charmer, or with taking pleasure in the excesses of the theatre—a statement which would be the clime of absurdity.

I need hardly say that my friend did not betray her trust.

“Very dirty,” said Dorothy, looking round at Mr. Burgess as she spoke.

For He has not permitted all things to be unknown, lest you should say, that the things that exist are not of providence.

Girls who have to get themselves married without fortunes always know that they will have to wait.

“Something inferior?”

He took the first-fruits thereof out of the womb of the Virgin; and now that the first-fruits have been taken to Him, the rest shall follow, in order that the holocaust may be completed.

You have One whom you may satisfy, and Him willing.

[Habakkuk 2:4] For there is in the Church this order, some go before, others follow; and those who go before make themselves an example to those who follow; and those who follow imitate those who go before.

New brooms are proverbial for thorough work, and in this Committee work Phineas was as yet a new broom.

They had a house without the city, with a garden and a gardener and two boys, and they kept a brougham, which was the joint care of the gardener and the boy inside and the boy outside.

“I will go upstairs, mamma, and will tell you by-and-by.” Then she left the room with the letter unopened in her hand.

Such an offence is compatible with uniform kindness and most affectionate consideration.

And the angel says: As there were there the deeps of hospitality, O Lord, You showed Yourself there to Abraham at the door of the tent, and passed quickly by it, as He who fills all things.

But after a day or two she did tell Miss Baker, and she saw at once that Miss Baker did despise her.

“I can’t say, Muster Fenwick.”

Thus in the Old also, statements are plainly made concerning the Son; at the same time it is superfluous to argue the point; for if what is not stated in the Old is of later date, let them who are thus disputatious, say where in the Old is mention made of the Spirit, the Paraclete?

These wondrous castles in the air never get themselves well built when the mind, with premeditated skill and labour, sets itself to work to build them.

He was carried back to Leucopetra on the continent; and though he made another effort, he was, he says, again brought back.

To him there came no happy turning-point at which life loomed seriously on him, and then became prosperous.

For the more remote matters, the aged can relate to you but as many things as happened lately, and within our lifetime, these, I a young man will relate to you, I mean those after death, those after the burial of the martyr, those which happened while he remained in the suburbs of the city.

For the goodness and the loving-kindness of God, and His boundless riches, hold righteous and sinless the man who, as Ezekiel tells, repents of sins; and reckons sinful, unrighteous, and impious the man who fails away from piety and righteousness to unrighteousness and ungodliness.

The young men, and many of those who are no longer young, spend their evenings, and apparently a large portion of their days, in eating ices and playing billiards. The accommodation in the Havana for these amusements is on a very large scale.

What then, it might be said, were they all one with David? Why talk to me of dignity, where there seems to be a transgression of the law, even though it be the constraint of nature? Yea, and in this way too He has the more entirely acquitted them of the charges, in that he who is greater is found to have done the same.

Then there passed a month—a month without a line from Launay or from Philip.

In one, that of the Booth Company, it falls below seven per cent.

Given a story thus sad, and persons thus situated, and it is thus that the details would follow each other, and thus that the people would conduct themselves.

In the mean time Nina, chill and wretched, crept to her cold bed, all unconscious of the happiness that had been so near her.

In answer to all this, Miss Altifiorla had only laughed and smiled and declared that Cecilia had been served right, though she thought,—she said that she thought,—that Sir Francis had been almost too hard.

But sacrifice to God, and righteous be,

Moreover, the Pædagogue warns us most distinctly: Go not after your lusts, and abstain from your appetites; [Sirach 18:30] for wine and women will remove the wise; and he that cleaves to harlots will become more daring.

Mr. Brattle replied that he had heard of the chapel, but had never, as yet, been up to see it.

The fierce monster in alarm vomits forth the multitude whom he had swallowed up, and the Lamb withdraws the sheep from the jaw of the wolf.

But if this be a disfiguring of the face, to appear pale for vainglory, what should we say concerning the women who corrupt their faces with colorings and paintings to the ruin of the unchaste sort of young men?

He made up his mind that he was not so bound unless Lord Chiltern should demand from him that he should do so; but, nevertheless, he was uneasy in his position.

But then do not all despondent lovers hold that opinion of their own mistresses?

And I said to him, Sir, if any one has a wife who trusts in the Lord, and if he detect her in adultery, does the man sin if he continue to live with her?

And, to speak by way of example, in order that my meaning may be clearer to you: in wheat part is fine flour, part meal, part bran: now if the mill be able to grind (what is put in), it separates all these: but if you put in too much, all becomes mixed up together.

Nor was the Cross a shame, for it was His road from humiliation to glory ( 33), nor the descent to hell a degradation, for all the while He was in heaven.

His intellect they have admitted, and his industry; but his patriotism they have doubted, his sincerity they have disputed, and his courage they have denied.

Then there were the Blakes of Castletown.

And if it be the case that any one who has received his faith from one that is faithless, receives not faith but guilt, from what source is he to receive not guilt but faith, who is unwittingly baptized by one that is faithless?

It was always a sign of good-humour on the squire’s part, this rapping at the window.

Oh, most excellent God, when He restores in amnesty what He took away in wrath!

For thus does the prophet testify: The sea saw it and fled, Jordan was driven back.

And although they are always hostile toward the Christians they were roused to still greater opposition against them on account of the dancers.

A final deed for closing partnership, was it?

It was she, surely, who had spoken first, when she begged to be released from his pressure.

Therefore begin again to persecute, and support the heresy, for it accounts you its king.'

A man, however, is much deceived if, while consenting to the lust of his flesh, and then both resolving in his mind to do its desires and setting about it, he supposes that he has still a right to say, It is not I that do it, even if he hates and loathes himself for assenting to evil desires.

She by that time had confessed to herself that she loved him with all her heart; but she had made no such confession to him.

Yours ever and always,

For even unwillingly they were on your account forced to say many things by the Divine regard for mankind, especially those of them who were in Egypt, and profited by the godliness of Moses and his ancestry.

Were Lady Laura to hear at this moment that he had been over to Belgium, and had fought a duel with Lord Chiltern respecting Violet, she would probably feel herself obliged to quarrel with him; but no such obligation would rest on her, if in the course of six or nine months she should gradually have become aware that such an encounter had taken place.

Here, then, in the first place, we wish and ask to be told this by you: do they do this against their will— that is, do they enter the images as dwellings, dragged to them by the rite of dedication— or are they ready and willing?

“Oh shure, yer riverence, an’ he’ll do that too; won’t there be all the Ballycloran tenants, and the boys and girls from Drumleesh?”

Then the two men bowed slightly to each other, raising their hats.

Otherwise how could he have forbidden Him, saying, I have need to be baptized by You?

Another difficulty is apt to arise,—which I fear will now be found to be a difficulty in South Africa. If imperial troops be used in a Colony which enjoys parliamentary government, who is to be responsible for their employment? The Parliamentary Minister will expect that they shall be used as he may direct;—but so will not the authorities at home! In this way there can hardly fail to be difference of opinion between the Governor of the Colony and his responsible advisers.

And the judgment sat, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy it unto the end.

Tell me what shall your wages be.

“And Gresham will oppose it?” asked the Earl.

The disciples of this wicked man, whom you contemned, have been encouraged by Eudoxius, and promoted by him to clerical appointments, and Aëtius himself has been raised to the highest honor.

I can understand that Mountjoy should be induced to join with me and Augustus, so that in disposing of so large a sum of money the authority of all may be given, both of myself and of the heir, and also of him who a short time since was supposed to be the heir.

Lopez was in a very good humour when he took his wife down, and he walked her round the terraces and esplanades of that not sufficiently well-known marine paradise, now bidding her admire the sea and now laughing at the finery of the people, till she became gradually filled with an idea that as he was making himself pleasant, she also ought to do the same.

“Very often. But they never come true.”

By the second there are kindled the fiery darts of luxury and lasciviousness.

We could indeed have endured your departure from its rules with less equanimity, if you had received any previous rebuke by way of warning from us.

And since it is written: he that hates his brother is a murderer [1 John 3:15]: he has actually carried out what he was said already to have done in hate, as if he had never heard of this nor of that which the Lord says, learn of Me; for I am meek and lowly in heart, and you shall find rest unto your souls: for My yoke is easy and My burden is light [Matthew 11:29-30] .

[Mark 13:26] What is, from this time?

Let him consider the distinction which we employ in dealing with heretics.

If the truth is to be owned, Miss Stanbury gave the poor young woman no credit for her new simplicity, but put down the deficiency to the charge of domestic slatternliness.

If God were your Father, you would love Me; for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of Myself, but He sent Me. Why do ye not understand My speech? Even because ye cannot hear My word. You are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do: he was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth: when he speaks a lie, he speaks of his own.

Why, because in this case the haste was an injury; but in the other case, haste brought gain.

“I’m Stubbs, your worship, Bob Stubbs; and—and—and—”

She wants a Shakespeare that I have got here, and a volume of Tennyson.’ Then Dick retreated back into his berth, and snored again, while Caldigate dressed himself.

First he states that the assumed nature derives its descent from the loins of David; secondly that He took not a body only, but also an immortal soul, and thirdly that He delivered body and soul to death, and, after taking them again, raised them as He would.

But neither is that which is denoted by the name fœtus an animal. But that is incorporeal, and may be called a thing and a notion, and everything rather than an animal. The nature of an animal is different. For it was clearly shown respecting the very point in question, I mean the nature of the embryo, of what sort it is. The question respecting the meanings expressed by the name animal is different.

In whatever manner, therefore, this secret preconception of future things may be, nothing can be seen, save what is.

Therefore be kinder to me.

Of roes, stags, fallow-deer, boars, hares, and such like game?

“We didn’t read it all,” we said, “ but we read quite enough.”

Dollars, children, progress, education, and political rivalry all gave way to the one strong national desire for the thrashing and crushing of those who had rebelled against the authority of the stars and stripes.

For they gave up Jesus, bound in hard bonds, bruised by many buffets and blows, spat upon, already condemned by their shouts: so that amidst so many signs of their own verdict Pilate might not dare to acquit One Whom all desired to perish.

“I really had rather not have her just at present; that is, unless you have some very particular reason.”

Were it otherwise, it would be regarded a greater crime to fell a tree than to kill a man.

Was full of truth, as well as prophet's art.

But it was only at such moments that I was allowed to experience this feeling of triumph.

“Certainly not, if I am to be expected to take your part.”

“And another for—” began Bell, but she stopped herself.

My second son, Frederic, had very early in life gone to Australia, having resolved on a colonial career when he found that boys who did not grow so fast as he did got above him at school.

When the king saw how bold he was he drove him naked from the palace.

Who is such an one, to whom so great a prophet who was carried up into heaven, should be guided, especially at that time when the heaven was shut for three years and six months, when there was a great famine in the whole land?

Now there must be harm in it!

These events happened in the manner narrated.

Volume II Chapter XLI. “I Hope I’m Not Distrusted”

If, because God is one, Christ is not also by nature divine, then we cannot allow that the one God is Lord, because there is one Lord Christ: that is, on the supposition that by their oneness' is signified not the mystery, but an exclusive unity.

This interpretation, also, brethren, displeases me not, since it does not militate against the faith.

He indeed gave Himself up to those who judged according to an unjust law; because He was unserviceable to them, inasmuch as He was righteous: or, He committed to God those who judged unrighteously, and without cause insisted on His death, so that they might be instructed by suffering punishment.

“Nonsense,—my dear! Why should it be nonsense?”

Their state of mind is indicated by a restlessness which disdains excuses; they rend the veil of chastity and put it aside like a cobweb.

Come then let us go over what has been said from the beginning.

He feared security, that enemy of weak minds, and he perceived that a wholesome fear would be a fit guardian for the citizens.

37. Such objects of ridicule were they, that neither could Jupiter defend his garment, nor Æsculapius his beard, for Apollo had not yet begun to grow one; nor could all those who are esteemed gods keep the golden bowls which they were holding, not fearing the charge of theft so much as not having any feeling. Who, then, would worship them, who can neither defend themselves as gods nor hide themselves as men?

Chapter 7. The True Virgin.

Let him alone, that he may curse, according to the command of the Lord.

Who is he that with hands does handle the Word, except because The Word was made flesh, and dwelt in us?

“Sir Boreas can’t dismiss me for calling a nobleman by his right name,” Crocker had replied indignantly.

As he was driven up to the house at, Brook Park he knew that it was his destiny to marry either the one girl or the other; and he was afraid of himself,—that before he left the house he might be engaged to the one he did not love.

Now it must be understood that all the world knew that these lovers were lovers, and that all the world presumed that they were to become husband and wife.

At this crisis the whole thing was so important to her that she would have postponed her own ambition and would have curbed her temper had she thought that by doing so she might in any degree have benefited him.

And your Lord says unto you, What shall be given you, or what shall be set before you, against the deceitful tongue?

Let us give thanks: when we suffer affliction, let us give thanks.

“Certainly with a heart.”

Inflict on men things violent and wrong.

You cannot too closely imitate your grandmother, your mother, and your aunt; whose teaching and advice as to life will form for you a rule of virtue.

She learned to believe that it was probable that Captain Marrable should marry Miss Brownlow, and, of course, asked herself questions as to the effect such a marriage would have upon herself, which she answered more fully than she did those which were put to her by her aunt.

It seemed to him that Paul was bound to retire altogether, partly because he had got no income, partly because of Roger’s previous claim,—partly no doubt in gratitude, but of this last reason Roger never said a word.

But Roger had no confidence.

For the sermon itself is brought to a close in such a way, that it is clear there are in it all the precepts which go to mould the life.

Now had he been flattering them, he would not have called God to witness, for this cannot be done without peril.

Roden is at home,” said the maid, “but there are friends with her.” Nevertheless she showed the young lord up to the drawing-room.

[Acts 8:20] And so my advice is that we be on our watch against the beginning, and avoid little evils, for the great ones are gendered by these.

For you will not surely tell me, that when full of wine, and drunken, and looking at a woman who is dancing and uttering base words, thou dost not feel anything towards her, neither art hurried on to profligacy, overcome by your lust. Nay, that awful thing befalls you, that you makest the members of Christ members of an harlot. [1 Corinthians 6:15]

Though the eldest son and the moneylenders be spendthrifts and profligates alike, there will in that be something of fairness.

[John 1:50] And in the same manner He pronounced Peter to be blessed, inasmuch as flesh and blood had not revealed it to him— that he had perceived the Father— but the Father which is in heaven.

Even if a Ptolemy had closed the seas, King Attalus would still have sent you parchments from Pergamum, and so by his skins you could have made up for the want of paper.

What of the clouds of birds which covered the whole face of the earth by the number of their carcasses?

And if he gave himself up to death to attend on Paul, much more would he have endured this for the Gospel's sake.

“Oh, yes. Why should it not? If he is worth having, it will;—and I think he is worth having. He must wait till this horrid trial is over. It is clear to me that Grace thinks that her father will be convicted.”

Chapter LVI. Another Walk on the Fells

Gregory to Libertinus, etc.

But he was a very unhappy man when he put himself into a cab to be carried down to Fulham. How much better would it have been for him had he taken his daughter’s advice, and persistently refused to make this last journey to Tretton! He would have to acknowledge to his daughter that Mr. Scarborough had altogether got the better of him, and his unhappiness would consist in the bitterness of that acknowledgment.

Indeed, as human affairs go, this cause might even have given rise to some strife between themselves.

“You tell him I ain’t. You tell him I’ve a bad bilious headache, and that the air in the garden does it good. You tell him that I mean to have something to eat upstairs when my head is better; and do you mind and let me have it, and a bottle of claret.”

“She refused me,” he said to himself, “when the money was all hers.

“He will never come back again,” said Mrs. Mountjoy, mournfully.

Two hours elapsed before the horrorstricken women of the house could bring men to the place.

Old Lady Milborough was one of these, a daughter of a friend of hers having once admitted the serpent to her intimacy.

Wherein has chastity so highly deserved at our hands, and truth offended us?

“Let those laugh who win.” Then he rushed out into the Paragon, and absolutely did throw his hat up in the air in his triumph.

It was not possible.

Yet she [merely] heard what the men related, and immediately believed.

Again how if the Son is the Word and Wisdom of God, was there a period when he did not exist?

Hence it is that here good souls labor, serve, err, are corrupted: that they may see the need of a liberator, who should purge them from error, loose them from this commingling with evil, and liberate them from servitude.

For they are by no means to be listened to who suppose that in those times years were differently reckoned, and were so short that one of our years may be supposed to be equal to ten of theirs.

For that which was conceived in her, says Gabriel, is of the Holy Ghost.

It was ever by such stale, inefficient artifices as these that he sought success.

For it is no stranger who is to avenge the offense done to His disciples.

“What does my cousin want?”

And it was the last.

But after some ten days’ time the supply of meat from Brixen would cease, and something therefore must be done.

It was the last day of June, and the weather was very sultry; but the night was dark, and it was now near midnight.

I certainly learned along with you, by what right, and in what order, the husbandmen are demanded back, to whom a legal process is competent, and to whom the issue of a process is not competent.

For, though inferior to him in all other respects, I must needs be his equal in distress.

In this manner, then, through many varied signs of things to come, which it would be tedious to enumerate in complete detail, and which we now see in their fulfillment in the Church, that people were brought to the land of promise, in which they were to reign in a temporal and carnal way in accordance with their own longings: which earthly kingdom, nevertheless, sustained the image of a spiritual kingdom.

It wore none of those pretty smiles with which morning callers greet their friends before they begin their first gentle attempts at miscellaneous conversation.

“I’m to marry the girl whether she will or not?”

It had, perhaps, been found that in the state of things then existing, a ministry could be best kept together, not by parliamentary capacity, but by social arrangements, such as his Duchess, and his Duchess alone, could carry out.

For I know what the necessity of the present time, unto which marriages serve, compels, that the things of God be less thought of than is enough for the obtaining that glory, which shall not be of all, although they abide in eternal life and salvation: For star differs from star in brightness; so also the Resurrection of the dead.

But if He has done this not in judgment, but in mercy, as I confidently hope even now, when I have learned my infirmity, my duty is to study with diligence all the remedies which the Scriptures contain for such a case as mine, and to make it my business by prayer and reading to secure that my soul be endued with the health and vigour necessary for labours so responsible.

Under this pretext they therefore deposed him, although the law in question had been enacted by heretics; for the Arians, after having taken advantage of various calumnies to expel Athanasius from the church of Alexandria, enacted this law from the apprehension of a change in public affairs, for they struggled to have the decisions against him remain uninvestigated.

Why, if in the season of the conflicts they that confess are so glorious, imagine what they will be in the season of the crowns.

And quite alone she was sitting one morning, counting up her misery, feeling that the apples were, in truth, ashes, when a servant came to her, telling her that there was a gentleman in the hall desirous of seeing her.

“Having placed young Cedric at school at the Hall of Dotheboys, in Yorkshire, and arranged his family affairs, Sir Wilfrid of Ivanhoe quitted a country which had no longer any charm for him, as there was no fighting to be done, and in which his stay was rendered less agreeable by the notion that king John would hang him.” So he goes forth and fights again, in league with the Knights of St. John,—the Templars naturally having a dislike to him because of Brian de Bois Guilbert.

“And they have got the girl.”

She knew that it was this that had brought him there—there on to the foot-traces which they had made together.

But then it’s not nice to have to hear a woman swear that she’s your wife, when you’ve got another,—specially when she’s got three men as can swear the same.

[Judges 3:30] Be it far from us, therefore, that we should believe the times of Solomon are predicted in this promise, much less indeed those of any other king whatever.

As regards the examples of righteousness found among the acts of the saints, the propriety of recording these must be plain even to the ignorant.

For nothing hinders us from resuming the same things again.

If money has to be lost, of course he must do the same.” Lopez in stating his case omitted to say that whatever capital was now being used belonged to his partner.

“I really think you’d better ring the bell,” said Mrs Tom.

“Italy is not Kamptschatka, Miss Houghton.”

They had, of course, come from him.

Now it is very generally thought that M. Belly when he speaks of this canal means “ transit.” There can be no question but that a great carrying trade might be opened, much to the advantage of Nicaragua, and to the advantage of Costa Rica also though not to the same extent.

But there she stood, still waiting her doom, and it was necessary that that doom should be spoken by him.

And what, of all things, is the object of his request?

I know, indeed, that under their breath the tribunes whisper of my death with eager haste; but I will not from this circumstance open any communication with them, nor will I count my life more precious than myself.

The intelligence of the American, displayed through the nose, worries the Englishman.

The town knew very well that Mr. Masters, the attorney, had been sent for to Bragton on the previous Wednesday,—whence the deduction as to a new will, made of course under the auspices of Mrs. Morton,—would have been quite plain to the town, had not a portion of the town heard that the attorney had not been for a moment with the dying man during his visit.

And so it is well, that he who can become the eye of the whole body should be worthy of Christ and of the whole body; but if such an eye should ever change, and become a stumbling-block to the whole body, it is well to take it out and cast it outside the whole body, and that the rest of the body without that eye should be saved, rather than that along with it, when the whole body has been corrupted, the whole body should be cast into the hell of fire.

There was then a people of God even at that time.

Your lordship had known me and my character for, I think, a dozen years.

“Only you know, less,—less,—less, what shall I say?—less goodnatured, perhaps.”

If (here was) a ship in danger and suffering wreck, and prisoners were saved for Paul's sake, consider what a thing it is to have a holy man in a house: for many are the tempests which assail us also, tempests far more grievous than these (natural ones), but He can also give us to be delivered, if only we obey holy men as those (in the ship) did, if we do what they enjoin.

I was sitting in the cavernous chamber almost mad at the prospect of the week before me, when I heard a noise as of various feet in the passage leading from the quadrangle.

But since in this there is manifest perdition, let some one counsel these unhappy folk to turn to the only course which is left them, and, instead of setting themselves in open opposition to the truth, to allow that each of these terms has its own proper signification, such as may be seen still better from their contraries.

He had snubbed Mr. Butterwell, and Mr. Butterwell, driven to his wits’ ends, had tried a fall or two with him.

Wherefore we ought to minister to the Saints.

Then, still to Atticus, he defends himself.

And how straight to him that desires to walk in it?

Who, he says, knows not?

“How very well you are looking,” said the Duchess. “And I heard you had been so ill.” Of that midnight escapade among the ruins it was fated that Lady Glencora should never hear the last.

This Lady Ongar is treating me very bad.

But Moses says still further, You shall eat every animal that is cloven-footed and ruminant.

The preservation of a fox, he said, stood on a perfectly different basis.

“It is not enough to be innocent,” said the Bishop, “but men must know that we are so.”

But those who are ready to toil in the most excellent pursuits, will not desist from the search after truth, till they get the demonstration from the Scriptures themselves.

Then, again, trustees are so circumscribed nowadays that they are afraid to do anything.

‘Do not say so; pray do not say so. Do not think that we say so to ourselves. I grieve for your faults. Charley; I know they are grievous and wicked; but I know how much there is of good in you. I know how clever you are, how excellent your heart is, how sweet your disposition. I trust, I trust in God, you may reform, and be the pride of your friends. I trust that I yet may be proud of knowing you——’

And hence the giving up of the Lord to His Passion was as much of the Father's as of His own will, so that not only did the Father forsake Him, but He also abandoned Himself in a certain sense, not in hasty flight, but in voluntary withdrawal.

Wherefore guard them with the right hand of Your compassion; for neither Zacchæus nor any other man can be a sufficient guardian to them.]

At last words were extracted from him.

When, then, the man who chooses what is right, and is at the same time of thankful heart, makes his request in prayer, he contributes to the obtaining of it, gladly taking hold in prayer of the thing desired. For when the Giver of good things perceives the susceptibility on our part, all good things follow at once the conception of them. Certainly in prayer the character is sifted, how it stands with respect to duty.

But God, quite on the contrary, when He finds a sinner, considers not how He may make him pay the penalty, but how He may amend him, and make him better, and invincible for the future.

He had left her but a few minutes ago,—he thought of it now as being but a few minutes since,—telling her with almost his last word that she was specially bound, more bound than other women, to mind her own conduct,—and here she was walking in Kensington Gardens with a man whom all the world called Jack De Baron?

And I shall also send others with you, whom I think fit, who shall observe whatsoever I command them.

If you have anything to expend upon the poor, expend it there: better there than here.

I’ll stick to it, and do my best.

Colonel Osborne was at the present moment in Scotland.

“That when won by merit it leads to further success, for the gaining of which no merit is necessary.”

Tom’s Last Attempt

This was so terrible that the daughter could only hang around her mother’s neck, sobbing and kissing her at the same time, and then go without another word.

“You can do as you like about that,” said Kantwise; “but she has. And I’ll tell you what’s more: she and young Mason have already left Orley Farm and given it all up into Joseph Mason’s hands.”

When this was said Barty smiled instead of bowing, and Miss Stanbury felt that there might be something worse even than his silence.

During the months which had passed over him since he had sent his wife away from him, his very nature had been altered, and he himself was aware of the change.

Had she done anything improper on this her first entry into the world?

But he was a good-humored fellow, and he bore it without complaint.

You must give up all dinner engagements, for though there is not much to do, he’ll never let you go.

It was in vain that the magistrate pointed out to the learned gentleman that Lady Eustace had confessed her own false swearing, both at Carlisle and in London, a dozen times.

The denial of access to every place in the case of the godly alone?

66. That the discipline of God is to be observed in Church precepts

I suppose I must go and see what my father wants, or I shall be held to have neglected my duty to my affectionate parent.

When the man was going on such a journey it was natural that he should wish to see the girl he loved; and natural that she should wish to see him.

Chapter 13.— What Was the First Punishment of the Transgression of Our First Parents.

In fact I myself found him just such a person as Evagrius says the monks dwelling in the deserts ought to be; imitating them in continued fastings, silence, abstinence from animal food, and for the most part abstaining also from the use of oil and wine.

There would not, therefore, as I have said, be these evils on the earth, if there were by common consent a general observance of the law of God, if those things were done by all which our people alone perform.

Of no good to them indeed was their betrayal, and to David himself of no harm.

Whence these bits of timber have come it seems difficult to say.

Let us shut up their mouths, even as we close up pestiferous fountains; and let us turn them to a contrary course, and the evils which have taken hold of the city shall undoubtedly be stayed.

With any sort of carriage one was obliged to come from The Cleeve House down to the lodge on the Hamworth and Alston road, and then to drive through the town of Hamworth, and so back to the farm.

But it is not possible to make intelligible the present condition of any land without some reference to its antecedents.

“I would not.”

Matthew had said a few words to the cook as to a public-house at Stevenage.

“If I’m to be made to go abroad, what the devil are you to do?” he had said to Mrs. Morton.

But this very saving presence, so profitable, became an additional means of chastening to many.

Which things are an allegory: for these are the two covenants, and so on.

“Goodbye, Mr Bold; I hope we may have the pleasure of seeing you again before long; I am sure papa will always be glad to see you.”

Frank was gone, and she therefore could resume her place at Greshamsbury.

“You can’t alter him, my dear. He has his good qualities and his bad—and the bad ones are by far the more conspicuous.”

But however strong may be the purposes either of angels or of men, whether of good or bad, whether these purposes fall in with the will of God or run counter to it, the will of the Omnipotent is never defeated; and His will never can be evil; because even when it inflicts evil it is just, and what is just is certainly not evil.

He had fallen into a position in which neither he nor his wife could give anything, and from which, though some might be willing to accept him, he would be accepted only, as it were, by special favour.

“Don’t suppose that I am in the least aggrieved,” he had said. And now he spoke again to his wife in the same spirit. “Warburton clearly thinks that he will be offended, and Warburton, I suppose, knows his mind.”

Chapter 5. He Seeks Rest in God, and Pardon of His Sins.

Wherefore also very foolishly did that Hebrew say to him, Who made you a ruler and a judge over us?

The ignorance which we are told that we had expelled from our shores, has come back to us; and the poverty is about, I fear, to show its head.” Sir Ferdinando here arose and expostulated.

He contemplated the Lord with the greatest attention, and was told to own as his the robe which he had given.

From all this it will be seen that the ball was quite a success.

And thus the Son does nothing save what is approved of by the Father, praised by the Father, willed by the Father, because His whole Being is of the Father; and He is not as the created being, which commits many faults, ofttimes offending the Will of its Creator, in lusting after and falling into sin.

It is really too much.

We must note too the fact that the nature of the weak is always such that they are quick and ready to offer reproaches and sow the seeds of quarrels, while they themselves cannot bear to be touched by the shadow of the very slightest wrong, and while they are riding roughshod over us and flinging about wanton charges, they are not able to bear even the slightest and most trivial ones themselves.

Now these expressions good and evil are equivocal; they are used in two senses, one relating to mind and the other to sense; some classify as good whatever is pleasant to feeling: others are confident that only that which is perceptible by intelligence is good and deserves that name.

Should she be false to all her vows, and try whether happiness might not be gained in that way?

For he understood that the success of his views at Humblethwaite must postpone the payment by Sir Harry of those moneys for which Mr. Hart and Captain Stubber were so unreasonably greedy.

And thus divine providence admonishes us not foolishly to vituperate things, but to investigate their utility with care; and, where our mental capacity or infirmity is at fault, to believe that there is a utility, though hidden, as we have experienced that there were other things which we all but failed to discover.

Why should it not also suffice as regarded this new comer?

“Yes,—sir.”

But this, when he thought of it maturely, he attributed to innocence.

And surely your blood will I require at the hand of every man that sheds it; for in the image of God have I made man.

But nevertheless he did learn much; so much as to justify him, as he thought, in instructing his daughter to wear a widow’s cap.

“I am glad of this,” she said, with all the eagerness she could throw into her voice.

And then there certainly was a deterioration in the puddings.

This opinion is, indeed, flatly contradicted by the apostle who says of Jacob and Esau that before they were born they had done neither good nor evil.

She found Mrs. Askerton as usual alone in the little drawing-room, sitting near the window with a book in her hand; but Clara knew at once that her friend had not been reading,—that she had been sitting there looking out upon the clouds, with her mind fixed upon things far away.

The shares ain’t to be had.

Of those also who found Him, and held Him by the feet, it is foretold, in the same book, I will hold Him Whom my soul loves, and will not let Him go.

But though you exorcise any demon in the name of any of those who were among you—either kings, or righteous men, or prophets, or patriarchs—it will not be subject to you.

1. This only begotten Word of God reigns, from ages which had no beginning, to infinite and endless ages, the partner of his Father's kingdom. And [our emperor] ever beloved by him, who derives the source of imperial authority from above, and is strong in the power of his sacred title, has controlled the empire of the world for a long period of years.

Such, a one, at any rate, Charley Tudor was not.

[Judges 6:14-21] Now this sign seems to indicate that the rock was a type of the body of Christ, for it is written, 'They drank of that spiritual rock that followed them, and that rock was Christ.'

You and I have grown too old to swear a friendship.

“It cannot be well for him to be in suspense on such a matter; and, dear Mary, it cannot be well for you either. One always feels that when a girl bids a man to wait, she will take him after a while. It always comes to that. If you had been at home at Loring, the time would not have been much; but, being so near to him, and seeing him every day, must be bad. You must both be in a state of fever.”

Chapter 33. Origin of Impiety.

Only two conditions are to be insisted upon, that our hearer or companion should have an earnest desire to learn the truth, and should have capacity of mind to receive it in whatever form it may be communicated, the teacher not being so anxious about the eloquence as about the clearness of his teaching.

And His right hand is His aid in prosperity, for it is the right hand that we also use when making anything of beautiful shape or of great value, or where much strength is required.

But let not us grieve, for this is a mark of virtue.

Be not a declaimer or a ranter, one who gabbles without rhyme or reason; but show yourself skilled in the deep things and versed in the mysteries of God.

It would be very much to know that my brothers were again my friends.

Action is taken against the two sons, who indeed gain their case; but they gain it by a bribe so enormous that they are ruined men.

And truth may be vanquished by beauty of words.

If it always and everywhere implies ministry, let them tell us to what superior the God of glory and Father of the Christ is subordinate.

He certainly had not gone to Castlemorris with any idea of canvassing for his son, and yet he had canvassed for him most satisfactorily.

The Galilean Peter or Andrew spoke Persian or Median.

For God shows His power through men.

She escaped, utterly heedless of her mother’s little weak prayer that she would remain.

‘I forget the lad’s name; but he says that your father is well, and Madame Voss. He goes back early tomorrow with the roulage and some goods that his people have bought. I think he is at supper now.’

But he was convinced also that unless these oligarchs could be made to do their duty the Republic could not stand.

The next morning Lady Carbury was in her son’s bedroom before he was up, and with incredible weakness told him that his cousin Roger was coming to lecture him. “What the devil’s the use of it?” said Felix from beneath the bedclothes.

I hold also that it is my Christ who is meant by the bridegroom, of whom the psalm says: He is as a bridegroom coming out of his chamber; His going forth is from the end of the heaven, and His return is back to the end of it again.

For he acquired, he says, a field out of the reward of the iniquity.

“Had as much to do with it as if my footman had spoken,” said Sir Raffle.

The Archdeacon

Such a man has been rich, and where now is his wealth?

But that my argument may both be more forcible and more effective, I will take Paul for my comrade, and like him will discourse and say, Let each one of you lay by him in store, as he may prosper.

The trumpet gives the sign in heaven, the lion being taken away, and suddenly there is darkness with the din of heaven.

Under these well-understood arrangements, the duke and his heir showed to the world quite a pattern of a happy family.

“No; what the devil would she do with a house like this? She doesn’t know how to live in it now she has got it. I have provided for her; it matters not how. The house and the estate, and the remainder of my money, I have left to Louis Philippe.”

But what need is there of argument when Scripture clearly teaches that every moving creature, like herbs and vegetables, were given to us for food, and the Apostle cries aloud 'All things are clean to the clean, and nothing is to be rejected, if it be received with thanksgiving,' and [1 Timothy 4:3] tells us that men will come in the last days, forbidding to marry, and to eat meats, which God created for use?

He said nothing as to his probable return, or as to her future life; nor was there anything to indicate whither he was going.

“Why should you despise them?”

But to this Mrs Dale objected that she could not make a letter on such a subject clearly intelligible, and that therefore she would see the squire on the following morning.

So far everything was going well with our orator.

And hence it both lives, and is moved, and is in Him; and so it can remember Him.

Nor did the cannon shot come alone: a fearful fire from about five hundred muskets was poured from the hedge on either side, directly into the road: the assailants were within a few feet of their enemy at the moment they were firing, and every shot took effect.

“You don’t mean to say, archdeacon, that you think that Mr. Crawley—a clergyman—stole it!” said Mrs. Grantly.

“We will go through Switzerland,” he said to himself, “to Baden, and then we will get on to Florence and to Rome.

There are, no doubt, many to whom a seat in Parliament comes almost as the birthright of a well-born and well-to-do English gentleman.

A Sitting Room Madame Brudo and Jeannette (‘Madame Brudo is lying on the sofa. Enter Jeannette.)

Then Mr. Toogood went with the constable to the private house of the mayor, and had a little conversation with the mayor.

Not waiting for his asking you, for this is the part of a beggar.

But let us now pass to another sort of knowledge and doctrine. There are two ways of doctrine and authority, the one of light, and the other of darkness. But there is a great difference between these two ways. For over one are stationed the light-bringing angels of God, but over the other the angels [2 Corinthians 12:7] of Satan. And He indeed (i.e., God) is Lord for ever and ever, but he (i.e., Satan) is prince of the time of iniquity.

Choose then the last place, and then you will enjoy the first.

Of course I understood you.

“Besides, it’s such a deal; isn’t it?” said Augusta.

[Mark 2:10] That ye may know that the Son of man [21] is empowered on earth to forgive sins (and he said to the paralytic), [Mark 2:11] I say unto you, [22] Arise, take your bed, and go to your house.

So when the water failed them on their way, and the heat was very great, they all were in danger.

Moreover, from the neighbouring cities we have news daily of havocs and of mortality.

He had asked for no answer to this assurance, and then he had left her.

“They’ll never go and put anybody into Hogglestock, Annabella, over Mr. Crawley’s head,” said Anne.

But Apelles, a disciple of this heretic, was displeased at the statements advanced by his preceptor, as we have previously declared, and by another theory supposed that there are four gods.

And what was still more sad, they who thus took up arms against one another were members of one another, and belonged to one body.

For many have been found voluntarily to suffer both pains and amputations of some of their limbs that they might obtain other objects which they valued more highly.

For Nabuchodonosor had also set him over the kingdom, and Balthasar had presented him with a purple robe and a golden chain, while he also constituted him the third ruler in the kingdom.

He also wanted to part from her with some special expression of affection, but he did not know how to choose his words.

Christ also was ever wont to say unto those that came unto Him, Believest thou?

“Hampstead, do not talk to me in that way.”

Yet, to lay bare my own weakness, I know that I wish to do many things which I ought to do and yet cannot.

I know that as yet he himself has had no deep thoughts on the subject, that unfortunately he does not give himself much to thinking, and that in this matter he is being talked over by a young man whose position in life has hardly justified the great intimacy which has existed.

It had not been their fault that they had been brought to live in their uncle’s house, and made to ride on his ponies, and to eat partially of his bread.

“It comes from eating too much toffy,” said Georgina. “I told her it would.”

For they, when mortals have transgress'd or fail'd

Go into the Capitol.

If He has granted Him less, He either wished to give less, or could only give less.

[Matthew 9:20] What did she do?

And we do forgive her.

Upon the clergy of the church in Tauromenium deploring the destitution they were in from the bishop having squandered all its estates by selling, giving away, and otherwise disposing of them, the clergy of Panormus, who have lately had a new bishop, raised a similar complaint about the misgovernment of the former bishop in the holy synod, at which we were presiding.

The journey to the Grange and back, together with the time spent in the interview, took an hour,—and the time went very slowly with the marriage guests.

If love’s course be made to run too smooth it loses all its poetry, and half its sweetness.

These were Mr. Sextus Parker,—commonly called Sexty Parker,—and his clerk.

That the thing perceived, I replied, is not the same as the thing not perceived, I grant; but I do not discover any answer to our question in such a statement; it is not yet clear to me what we are to think that thing not-perceived to be; all I have been shown by your argument is that it is not anything material; and I do not yet know the fitting name for it. I wanted especially to know what it is, not what it is not.

She knew the story of every household,—what children each mother had reared and what she had lost, when each had been brought to affliction by a husband’s illness or a son’s misconduct.

Yes; he had run up from Aldershot a little earlier than he had intended.

“Indeed I can.”

A really good newspaper—one excellent at all points—would indeed be a triumph of honesty and of art.

[Judges 6:26] By doing which he most plainly showed that after the coming of the Lord all Gentile sacrifices should be done away, and that only the sacrifice of the Lord's passion should be offered for the redemption of the people.

“I have promised them each three hundred and fifty pounds on their wedding day,—three hundred pounds to go to their husbands, and fifty pounds for wedding expenses,—on condition that they marry with my approval. I shall not be so hard to please for them as for you.”

For if to stay here for Christ's sake were more needful than to depart to Him [Philippians 1:23-24], for the sake of the salvation of others; surely then to groan for others' sakes, is more needful even than to see Him.

“I knew very well what sort of things would happen when they brought such a man as Mr. Monk into the Cabinet,” Lady Cantrip had said to her husband.

What signifies his question, Who made man's spirit?

By God's ears and hearing is meant His readiness to be propitiated and to receive our petitions: for it is this sense that renders us also kind to suppliants, inclining our ear to them more graciously.

We therefore maintain that every soul, whatever be its age on quitting the body, remains unchanged in the same, until the time shall come when the promised perfection shall be realized in a state duly tempered to the measure of the peerless angels.

But if the spirit of Him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, He that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by His Spirit which dwells in you.

Had Tregear gone down to Richmond and asked for the young lady, and had Lady Cantrip at the time been out and the young lady at home, it would have depended altogether upon the young lady whether she would have seen her lover or not.

They thought to silence Him by their questions, although they had already received certain proof of this power in Him.

“Where do you want to go?” he asked sharply. In such establishments as that at Vavasor Hall the family horse is generally used for double duties. Though he draws the lady of the house one day, he is not too proud to draw manure on the next. And it will always be found that the master of the house gives a great preference to the manure over the lady. The squire at Vavasor had come to do so to such an extent that he regarded any application for the animal’s services as an encroachment.

For what took place was not the natural thing—their being injured by things profitable.

Now we beseech you the more earnestly to counteract this fine fellow's lies and confirm the comfort given to the unhappy poor.

Because He lighted a candle— His own Flesh— and swept the house, cleansing the world from sin; and sought the piece of money, the Royal Image that was covered up by passions.

Well then, we will leave to others who have worked upon this subject for us as well as for themselves, as we have worked upon it for them, the task of examining carefully and distinguishing in how many senses the word Spirit or the word Holy is used and understood in Holy Scripture, with the evidence suitable to such an enquiry; and of showing how besides these the combination of the two words—I mean, Holy Spirit—is used in a peculiar sense; but we will apply ourselves to the remainder of the subject.

‘I do not know why he should have done so, unless he wanted back his money.’

Why should she suffer thus?

[1 Corinthians 15:47] Then he assumes that that Man who came down from above is without a mind, but that the Godhead of the Only-begotten fulfils the function of mind, and is the third part of this human composite, inasmuch as soul and body are in it on its human side, but not mind, the place of which is taken by God the Word.

Since, if there is no end of His greatness [Psalm 145:3], and if of His wisdom there is no number [Psalm 147:5], it is clear that there cannot be any beginning in time to His Essence.

But since she has this certainty regarding no man, she prays for all her enemies who yet live in this world; and yet she is not heard in behalf of all.

What is the throne that is set apart upon the winds?

But the feeling, to me, as to the boy himself, comes uppermost.

But the Banquet, when you come to that, bears no resemblance to the Assembly of worshippers.

Amidst these uncertainties, where death alone is certain, while even of that the hour is uncertain, and while it alone is studiously guarded against, though at the same time it is in no way to be escaped, every man living disquiets himself in vain

“Abused! You do not think I wish to abuse her. I am awfully fond of her still. But I do not see why she and Western should not get on very well together. I suppose they’ve no secrets from each other,” he added after a pause. Upon this Miss Altifiorla remained silent. “They tell each other everything I should think.” Still Miss Altifiorla said nothing. “I should imagine that she would tell him everything.”

This was done by both Lady Ball and by her son.

In such an emergency she ought to do for Harry Annesley more than a girl in common circumstances would be justified in doing for her lover.

[1 Timothy 4:3] We know that in a large house there are vessels not only of silver and of gold, but of wood also and of earth.

But I understand that Mr. Crocker is about to be married almost immediately, and, perhaps, you will feel with me that a period in a man’s life which should beyond all others be one of satisfaction, of joy, and of perfect contentment, may be regarded with a feeling of mercy which would be prejudicial if used more generally.

The court can’t agree to a marriage.

Why will you again swallow what has disagreed with you?

If the wished-for two would come, her evening would be thoroughly successful; but if not, all her trouble would have been thrown away, and the thing would have been a failure; and there were circumstances connected with the present assembly which made Miss Dunstable very anxious that she should not fail.

Wherefore was He called the Rock?

But if any through fear of pain or death, or by their own perfidy, have deserted the heavenly oath, and have consented to deadly sacrifices, these they praise and load with honours, that by their example they may allure others.

He either says this, that he who is conscious to himself of no evil, shall suffer nothing dreadful; only he that does evil shall suffer, so that we need not fear, because we have done nothing worthy of death; or else that, he who 'sees the light of this world' is in safety; and if he that sees the light of this world is in safety, much more he that is with Me, if he separate not himself from Me.

The old housekeeper at Manchester Square must know something about it, and would, of course, tell what she knew, and the loss of the money and the watch must in all probability be made known.

Only I hate such interference.

It may be imagined, therefore, in what light he esteemed Lady Mason and her son, and how he regarded their residence at Orley Farm, seeing that he firmly believed that Orley Farm was his own, if all the truth were known.

The sum expected dwindled down to so paltry a sum that some of the farmers refused to accept what was due to them.

For as man did not make the blood of the vine, but God, so it was hereby intimated that the blood should not be of human seed, but of divine power, as we have said above.

“The message will be sent after him, and you will hear to-day no doubt.”

Who that Limentinus and Lima have the care of thresholds, and do the duties of their keepers, when every day we see the thresholds of temples and private houses destroyed and overthrown, and that the infamous approaches to stews are not without them?

Everything he held, he held as it were in trust for the enjoyment of others.

It is allowed him, if you will, to be a soldier in heaven, to enlist him in the ranks of that army.

Who are the enemies of God?

And if you wish, I will tell you also the cause of their insensibility.

The poor man, it may be objected, is oppressed.

As an actor will say of himself when he declines some proffered character, she could not see herself in that part.

“If you’re wrong about the money, and he shouldn’t come round, where should we be then?”

However, this were enough to convince us that He takes care for us, in that it is to Him we live, and to Him we die.

“That’s your opinion,” said Johnny.

“ But I must get rid of the tray first,” she said.

As Trypho was about to reply and contradict me, I said:

For the Lord Himself, although He never told a lie, yet showed that He was concealing certain truths, when He said, I have yet many things to say unto you, but you cannot bear them now.

“Oh, yes; I went in.”

“He will have gone back by this time,” said Sir Thomas.

So that to the foot also it is profitable that it should be so stationed, and not to the head only: and if it should invert the order and leaving its own place, should go to another, though it might seem to have bettered its condition, it would be the undoing and ruin of the whole.

He is evidently asking God not to be angry unto the end, that is, that this so great oppression and tribulation and devastation may not continue even unto the end; but that He moderate His chastening, according to that which is said in another Psalm, You shall feed us with the bread of tears, and You shall give us to drink of tears in measure.

I dare say he will be here before long, and I hope that he may meet with a happy reception.

It will not be worth our while to define the character of the child, or to point out in how far the faults of the father were redeemed within that little breast by the virtues of the mother.

There is affectation of humble talking enough and to spare, but humbleness of mind is nowhere to be found.

For a moment she sat silent, and then her face again resumed its usual happy smile. “Come, Mr Gresham, you are not going to quarrel with me, I hope, even if I did write a letter to your cousin. Why should I not write to him? I correspond with all manner of people. I’ll write to you some of these days if you’ll let me, and will promise to answer my letters.”

In the same way, when he says, Therefore we are always confident, and fully aware, that while we are at home in the body we are absent from the Lord; for we walk by faith, not be sight, [2 Corinthians 5:6-7] it is manifest that in this statement there is no design of disparaging the flesh, as if it separated us from the Lord.

The St. Lawrence and Atlantic took it from the southeastern side of the river at Montreal to the same point, viz., Island Pond.

As to the very pious and holy bishop Nestorius, be it known to your piety that we have tried to introduce a word about him, but have hitherto failed, because all are ill-affected toward him.

“Ill as my father is,” said he, “I cannot stay long; but I have thought it my duty to come over and tell you—tell you what has happened at Castle Richmond.”

And he told her also not to withdraw Susanna Mackenzie from her school at Littlebath—at any rate, not for the present; and intimated also that Mr Slow would pay the schoolmistress’s bill.

He was, no doubt, afraid that one of them might learn the lesson of his father's scythe.

Then, Lord Cashel agreed to put him in immediate possession of the sum of money he required, but would not hear of increasing his income.

For this betokens the true genuineness of the Son towards the Father; whereas, by the simple phrase 'from God,' only the Creator's will in framing is signified.

“Why, you are not going to leave us?” asked Eleanor.

Trypho: The utterances of God are holy, but your expositions are mere contrivances, as is plain from what has been explained by you; nay, even blasphemies, for you assert that angels sinned and revolted from God.

If I say what is untrue, do with me what you please.

we wouldn’t put sich a thing as a will into her head, and she so bad, for all the money the ould man their father iver had.

I address all generally, do you each individual privately and let each charge himself with the salvation of his neighbors.

Such being his birth, such his exercise of the priestly office, such the reputation which he won at the hands of all, what wonder if he was thought worthy of the miracles by which God establishes true religion?

What had he received from her that he should endure her commonplace conversation, and washed-out, dowdy prettinesses?

That, then, which is described in the words, The Lord turned and looked upon Peter, [Luke 22:61] was effected internally; it was wrought in the mind, wrought in the will.

“That is the worst of it,” said the bishop. “It would have been so much better for himself if he would have allowed me to provide quietly for the services till the trial be over.”

He wrought within; He held their hearts; He stirred their hearts, and drew them by their own wills, which He Himself wrought in them.

On the Saturday morning Captain Stubber was made temporarily happy by the most unexpected receipt of five hundred pounds.

In her bosom every other ambition had been swallowed up in that maternal ambition of seeing them and him and herself duly clad and properly fed.

“I do not regard that as possible.”

As de Lescure had said, the old soldiers of Valmy and of Jemappes were there.

“I wonder whether you would go abroad with my brother in the autumn? But I have no right to think of such a thing;—have I? At any rate I will not think of it yet. Goodbye,—I shall see you perhaps on Sunday if you are in town.”

“You’re very kind, Mr Cheesacre; but there’s no preventing such care as mine.”

That any one should any more presume to do this was prohibited by the servant of God, the deacon of our see, under the authority of our predecessor , in this way; that those who at that time had been coupled to wives should choose one of two things, that is, either to abstain from their wives, or on no account whatever presume to exercise their ministry.

And we desire you to ordain as abbot of the same monastery none other but him whom the whole congregation may by common consent demand as being worthy in character and apt for monastic discipline.

What force of atoms had been so great, that masses so incalculable should be collected from such minute elements?

“Your father certainly ought to have made some better provision,” continued Lord Stapledean. “But he has not done so; and it seems to me, that unless something is arranged, your mother and her children will starve. Now, you are a clergyman?”

But it was not probable that Hester herself would look upon their care of her in the same light.

8. But the above-mentioned epistle shows that he, too hastily and without proper discretion, had rushed forward with others to the tribunal, but when seized had furnished a clear proof to all, that it is not right for such persons rashly and recklessly to expose themselves to danger. Thus did matters turn out in connection with them.

But it is possible that each may have happened: that Uranus first began to be pre-eminent in power among the rest, and to have the chief place, but not the kingdom; and that afterwards Saturn acquired greater resources, and took the title of king.

And the second is like this, You shall love your neighbor as yourself.

The eve of the trial had now come, and still there had been no confidence between the mother and the son.

So the Apostle uttered this wish in prayer, and did not claim a right by any authority of his own; he desired to obtain, he did not presume to command.

He who obeys Him has the advantage in all things, follows God, obeys the Father, knows Him through wandering, loves God, loves his neighbour, fulfils the commandment, seeks the prize, claims the promise.

And he who has power receives mercy, and he that has exercised will is mighty.

For we are all naturally disposed to feel indignation along with those who are contemptuously treated, (whence it arises that we become the enemies of those who are insolent, though we ourselves may have suffered no part of the grievance,) and to sympathize in the pleasure of those who enjoy assistance and protection; and we are overcome by the calamities of others, as well as by mutual tenderness.

Why do we make our accusers judges?

As to the subject of your letter, these are my sentiments. I am not angry at being overlooked, but I am glad when I am honoured. The one is my own desert, the other is a proof of your respect. Pray for me. Excuse this short letter, for anyhow, though it is short, it is longer than silence.

“He is very nice, certainly,” said Ada, allowing herself not another word, to her sister.

Which would so often have gathered the chickens together under the shadow of His wings ?

No one asks counsel from a man tainted with vice, or from one who is morose or impracticable, but rather from one of whom we have a pattern in the Scriptures.

He complained that his efforts were hindered by the remissness of the bishops, whose assistance he required for success.

When she had once taken it as true that her lover had robbed his inferior by foul play at cards, there could be no good in alluding to this or that lie, in counting up this or that disreputable debt, in alluding to habits of brandy-drinking, or even in soiling her pure mind with any word as to Mrs. Morton.

Again, when it becomes necessary to stir and sway the hearer's mind by the majestic style (and this is always necessary when he admits that what you say is both true and agreeable, and yet is unwilling to act accordingly), you must, of course, speak in the majestic style.

[We] also [believe] in the Holy Spirit.

Wherefore also the true Prophet, when He was present with us, and saw some rich men negligent with respect to the worship of God, thus unfolded the truth of this matter: 'No one,' said He, 'can serve two masters; ye cannot serve God and mammon [Matthew 6:24] calling riches, in the language of His country, mammon.

The fatal billow breasting, and the inky flood

Of course, she departed from attendance on her mistress by the door which opened from the one room to the other; but this had no sooner been closed than Crabstick descended to complete the amusements of the evening.

If a wise Son makes a glad Father, [Proverbs 10:1] how much more does the honour of the Son become that of the Father!

What else is there but brick and tile?

Let Gabriel rejoice and be exceeding glad, with the company of all the angels, in You, the Good Shepherd, who on Your shoulders carried the maimed sheep, that that number of a hundred might be preserved.

That same evening her father called her into the office after the clerks were gone and spoke to her thus. “Your mamma is very unhappy, my dear,” he said.

The whole fabric rattled, and the boat resounded, but the noise he had made seemed to assist him.

So that he that is a Monk, if he be a Catechumen, is not a Brother, but the believer though he be in the world, is a Brother.

She had thought a good deal of her first interview with Lady Arabella, of her first return to the house; but she had resolved to carry herself as though the matter were easy to her.

“Let him come here and fetch me, and be friends with papa. He promised that he would come and stay here. Is he well, Sarah?”

Therefore I must quickly catch him up, lest the false accusation, through gaining time, wholly get hold of all men.

Or if this is not granted to them in your communion, because it could not possibly be that it should be granted to schismatics among schismatics, it is at any rate granted to you in the Catholic communion, not that you should receive baptism as though it were lacking in you, but that the baptism which you have actually received should be of profit to you.

But you will have mentioned nothing like it.

I fear he is,” Mr. Walker had said to his wife within ten minutes of the departure of the visitor.

But that fable would not die to me so oft as any of my friends died.

What impious anxiety on God's behalf!

“Sir William,” said I, after a minute’s consideration, “if you will apologise to me for the gross insults you have offered me, it shall be as you say.”

“People can’t always leave their houses and go away, Harry.”

How sweet had been that friendship with a woman pure in all her thoughts, graceful to the eye, and delicate in all her ways!

He was still willing to sacrifice himself, but his family honours he would not pollute.

For I have seen iniquity and contradiction in the city.

“Mr Crosbie, I congratulate you most sincerely,” said Mr Optimist.

Have you not read this which Isaiah says: 'Hearken unto Me, hearken unto Me, my people; and, you kings, give ear unto Me: for a law shall go forth from Me, and My judgment shall be for a light to the nations.

For this cause He left it to nature to provide her with a covering, that even of it she might learn this lesson and veil herself.

The next field was Goarly’s, but the hedge and ditch belonged to Twentyman.

When a man has travelled through a country under beneficent auspices, and has had everything shewn to him and explained to him with frank courtesy, he seems to be almost guilty of a breach of hospitality if, on his coming away, he speaks otherwise than in glowing terms of the country where he has been so received.

Are you old and near the predestined necessity?

He was no doubt a wonderful artist; but in nothing so wonderful as in this, that having reached the top of the tree himself in his very short life, he prepared absolute ruin for all who were to come after him.

I don’t quite know what they’ll have, but not more than that, I should think.

“I want to be of some use to you, if I can. I and my wife saw you leave the gaming-table just now.”

The Jew knew pretty well everything.

But by stating the praises particularly to each, he sets before us the virtue peculiar to each; so as neither to give birth to envy by honoring one and dishonoring another, nor to work in them listlessness and confusion, by giving them all the same dignity, though they did not deserve the same.

“I am afraid I am responsible for the delay,” said I.

But since you gape at these things, and idolize them, and are flattered by them, for this reason envy troubles you, and vain-glory; it all springs from idolizing the things of the present life.

Very well, then let something truer be said.

If there were such a formative mind as you speak of, and bodily elements capable of form, the word Hyle would properly be applicable to the bodily elements, which would be the matter to be formed by the mind, which you make the principle of evil.

And before the things to come, in this life present you will gain a great good [see on Romans 5:4, p. 397] from tribulation, that of becoming hardy and tried.

But how can they show both the statements to be true, that of Matthew and Mark, that it was because He heard that John was delivered up that He departed into Galilee, and that of John, found there, after a number of other transactions, subsequent to His stay at Capernaum, after His going to Jerusalem, and His journey from there to Judæa, that John was not yet cast into prison, but was baptizing in Ænon near Salim?

He did not know that there was anything that required much further immediate speech.

“Lean on yourself only. Be enough for yourself.”

He may pay the penalty of his inconsiderate oath, for why did he swear?

Here we left Miss Campbell at the wave-washed door of a friendly house, whence two young ladies came to greet us on the rock on which wee landed her.

“But a bit of cake?” And Mrs Eames by her look implored him to do her so much honour.

Since, however he has declared of men which are yet alive in the flesh, that they are not in the flesh, [Romans 8:9] meaning that they are not living in the works of the flesh, you ought not to subvert its form nor its substance, but only the works done in the substance (of the flesh), alienating us from the kingdom of God.

For the man who, having it in his power to escape from the violence of the enemy, chooses not to flee from it, lest in so doing he should abandon the ministry of Christ, without which men can neither become Christians nor live as such, assuredly finds a greater reward of his love, than the man who, fleeing not for his brethren's sake but for his own, is seized by persecutors, and, refusing to deny Christ, suffers martyrdom.

But then,—there must be no marriage with a penniless governess.

And again, Faith leads the way, fear upbuilds, and love perfects.

And apart from these things, we should consider another point also, that even if we do not choose to suffer any of the things that are painful for Christ's sake, we must in other ways most assuredly endure them.

“Rights are rights, and the truth is the truth. Can any one wish that such a property and such a title should go to the child of an Italian woman whom no one has seen or knows?”

Good days you seek, together let us seek them, seek not here Read the Scriptures

You’re the young lady, and you’re to have your own way.

Examples are again adduced from the history of the Three Children, and the Babylonian furnace.

[1 John 1:8] What shall the man do, who is pressed by both sayings out of the same Epistle?

[1 Corinthians 11:4] As, then, in the masculine sex, under the name of man even the youth is forbidden to be veiled; so, too, in the feminine, under the name of woman, even the virgin is bidden to be veiled.

For in one way we love our parents, in another our wives, in another our brothers, in another our children, and there is a wide difference in regard to the claims of these feelings of affection, nor is the love of parents towards their children always equal.

“And a word from you would go a long way with her,—as it ought. If she knows that you would like her to marry her cousin, it will make her think it her duty—”

He jumped upon his feet, and his eyes were full of fire.

There is no comparison between a stranger being struck with the hand, and the dishonor done to God by forsaking Him for an idol, when He had brought the people out of the bondage of Egypt, had led them through the sea, and had covered with the waters the enemy pursuing them.

“You did not use to think so,” said Mrs. Brownlow. Then the door was opened and Ralph was announced.

In the earliest times, the Holy Ghost fell upon them that believed: and they spoke with tongues, which they had not learned, as the Spirit gave them utterance.

The district is one rarely traversed.

If your best Venetian decanter be broken at table you are bound to look as though you liked it.

But Luke being last became first.

Because Jesus had not Himself revealed what had been done, but desired that the power of His miracles should be known gently, little by little.

We have reported, as a child before Him, as a root in a thirsty ground.

And thus Callistus was handed over to his master, and brought to Rome, and his master lodged him in the Pistrinum.

To whom I answered, It is not the manner of the Romans to deliver any man to die, before that he which is accused have the accusers face to face, and have license to answer for himself concerning the crime laid against him.

Now, while it was proper that this story, should be suppressed, and concealed, and forgotten in the lapse of time, the composition at the name published it, and, by a testimony which could not be got rid of, caused it to remain in men's minds, together with its causes, so long as it endured itself; and the state which is greatest of all, and worships all deities, did not blush in giving a name to the temple, to name it from the head of Olus Capitolium rather than from the name of Jupiter.

From these and such like passages of Scripture, it is sufficiently apparent that our Lord does not disapprove of it, when one looks after such things in the ordinary way that men do; but only when one enlists as a soldier of God for the sake of such things, so that in what he does he fixes his eye not on the kingdom of God, but on the acquisition of such things.

[John 18:23] If we look only to the words, He did not in this obey His own precept, for He did not present the other side of his face to him who had smitten Him but, on the contrary, prevented him who had done the wrong from adding thereto; and yet He had come prepared not only to be smitten on the face, but even to be slain upon the cross for those at whose hands He suffered crucifixion, and for whom, when hanging on the cross, He prayed, Father, forgive them, they know not what they do!

After leaving the fire, he had still a ride of seven or eight miles through the gloom of the forest—all alone.

Mr. Molescroft understands it all.

“Don’t let me take you in, Mr Moffat; but my boots are a little damp, and Dr Easyman will never forgive me if I do not hurry in as fast as I can.”

He had as yet taken to himself no wife, and as he had not hitherto made himself conspicuously useful in any special walk of life his family were beginning to regard him as a burden.

What folly, to hope for protection from those things which are unable to protect themselves!

Or else if good proceeded from evil matter, since it issued neither from nothing nor from God, it will follow that it must have proceeded from the conversion of Matter contrary to that unchangeable attribute which has been claimed for it, as an eternal being.

For a fire shall proceed before His face, and shall utterly burn His enemies; striking down not the body only, but the souls too, into hell.

The parent either of good, or evil, justly reaps the fruit of it first himself.

And here the word brother is to be understood for this reason, that the case of an enemy is spoken of afterwards, and how he also is to be treated under the greater righteousness.

And even to be ridiculed?

And thirdly, that he would aid and assist in all schemes of vengeance and punishment which would be entered into by those with whom he was now bound, against any who attempted to molest them, but especially against all Revenue officers and their men.

That he would hold himself as divided from the man by a perpetual and undying hostility he had determined.

This weapon then deliver from the enemies of Your hand, that is, of Your Power, that is, from Mine enemies.

Thus, then, Antiochus the great having died, his younger son Seleucus obtained the kingdom, under whom, as we have said, Onias the priest had an accusation brought against him by Simon.

97. Who is the man who has never beheld, as our duty is to behold it, the fair beauty of the Lord, nor has visited His temple, or rather, become the temple of God, [2 Corinthians 6:16] and the habitation of Christ in the Spirit?

A glass of wine, in season, he never refused.

And you know that He has been manifested to take away sins— henceforth, of course, to be no more incurred, if it is true, (as it is,) that he subjoins, Every one who abides in Him sins not; every one who sins neither has seen nor knows Him.

[Matthew 10:32] This, then, is our reward if we shall confess Him by whom we have been saved.

So placed, he had all the world at his back to feed him.

The Cedars, she thought, was altogether more pleasant than she had found the place before.

Surprised that she could have died, he fancies her to be still alive.

And if you are willing, it is not beyond your power to do this, for the sake of God; as also the nearest Churches have sent, in some cases bishops, and in others presbyters and deacons.

When he was ill it was natural that I should go to him,—after all that had passed between us.

“I told you that we ought to do something special in shirts,” said Jones, as though the whole merit of the transaction were his own.

All this want had been occasioned by the wretched rebels of the South.

‘It is the beastliest hole I ever put my foot in since I was born,’ said Dick, who had just stumbled and nearly came to the ground with his burden. ‘They told us that Nobble was a fine town.’

Though I am still young, I have written much for the press, and I believe I may boast that I have sometimes done so successfully.

The Month of December, first Indiction.

Each of these has twenty hands, twenty eyes, and as many feet.

She had laughed at Mrs Greenow before she went to Yarmouth, and had laughed at herself for going there.

But a deeper vengeance is taken on fiercer foes, and on those that are false as well as on those who have done greater wrongs, as was the case with the Midianites.

“I couldn’t be more in earnest,” said he.

Our most religious Emperor has also in his letter testified to the correctness of their faith, which he has ascertained from themselves, himself receiving the profession of it from them by word of mouth, and has now made manifest to us by subjoining to his own letters the men's orthodox opinion in writing.

Taking the name altogether, I don’t think there is anything higher in all Europe.

You sleep and snore, ye speak against God, as much as you are able.

[Romans 8:19-21] For the creation was made subject to vanity, he says, and he expects that it will be set free from such servitude, as he intends to call this world by the name of creation.

“Where is she to find a home till,—till she is married?” he said.

Madame Faragon was to be allowed to sit in the little room downstairs, to scold the servants, and to make the strangers from a distance believe that her authority was unimpaired.

“Oh, but I am in earnest. The greatest joy in all the world.”

“And what should come first, Clary?”

See then, brethren, how the vesture sprinkled with blood denoted in symbol the flesh, through which the impassible Word of God came under suffering, as also the prophets testify to me.

“I am sure that he meant not the slightest harm,—no more than she did.”

Nothing could be more untrue of him.

Now Mark Robarts would have talked with him the whole way from Hogglestock to Framley Court; discoursing partly as to horses and land, but partly also as to higher things.

By the beast, then, coming up out of the earth, he means the kingdom of Antichrist; and by the two horns he means him and the false prophet after him.

Which opinions indeed, in my judgment, are completely rejected by following out the reasoning explained above, and by which it was shown that the cause of the diversity and variety among these beings is due to their conduct, which has been marked either with greater earnestness or indifference, according to the goodness or badness of their nature, and not to any partiality on the part of the Disposer.

For by an ancient and divine order the angels are distributed among the nations.

In Ireland it is said of any man who is more than ordinarily persuasive, that he can “talk the devil out of the liver wing of a turkey!” Sir Lionel had always supposed himself to be gifted with this eloquence; but in that discourse at Hadley, the devil had been too stout for him, and he had gone away without any wing at all—liver or other.

“I think I am. At any rate let me look about me. Don’t give him an opportunity of breaking off till I have made up my mind. I can always break off if I like it. No one in London has heard of the engagement yet. Just leave me alone for this week to see what I think about it.” Then Lady Augustus threw herself back in her chair and went to sleep, or pretended to do so.

Asterius acted very prudently in sending for John before the citizens of Antioch knew what was about to occur; for they would probably have excited a sedition, and have inflicted injury on others, or subjected themselves to acts of violence, rather than have suffered John to be taken from them.

And in their time there shall be respect of them; they shall judge the nations, and shall rule over the people; and their Lord shall reign for ever.

She has declined already, I’m told; but he means to stick to the mission.” During all this time Mounser Green was smoking his cigar with his back to the fire, and the other clerks looked as though they had nothing to do but talk about the private affairs of ministers abroad and their friends.

For when I see the man who once was brave, now become a coward, I say that this latter feeling no longer belongs to nature, for what is natural is immutable.

“No, nor give you port wine, old boy, on cold winter nights! he won’t do that, will he?” asked Handy; and laughing at the severity of his own wit, he and his colleagues retired, carrying with them, however, the now powerful petition.

Her heart had of late been subject to many vicissitudes.

For who would show the way to change the body, but he who by wickedness transfigured man's spirit?

“You go into the kitchen and get something to eat, and wait for me. I shall be out before long now.”

Even when we die, our body is left.

‘Certainly I will. Nothing on earth shall make me leave this house till I am told by its owner to go.’

Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread and drink the cup of the Lord unworthily, shall be guilty of the Body and the Blood of the Lord.

They thought that education and good morals would even enhance the profit, and that they could compete with Great Britain by introducing a more cultivated class of operatives.

[1 John 1:8, 10] Further for a man who is anxious to reach the heights of perfection it will not greatly help him to have arrived at the end of penitence, i.e., to restrain himself from unlawful acts, unless he has always urged himself forward in unwearied course to those virtues whereby we come to the signs of satisfaction.

I would that it were possible so to tell a story that a reader should beforehand know every detail of it up to a certain point, or be so circumstanced that he might be supposed to know.

It was impossible that H.R.H should have heard of any engagement as yet.

And these things I have said, that those who have not succeeded to an inheritance from their forefathers may not be cast down, as if they had less than those who are wealthy.

For those who abide by the contrary view maintain that matter is co-eternal with God, and employ in support of their own doctrine some such arguments as these.

I would not lie at all.

Chapter XXX. What Came of the Meeting

In money-matters he was honest—for the times in which he lived, wonderfully honest; but in words he was not always equally trustworthy.

“I dare say he is right,” said Alice, not exactly knowing what to say, and not being able to forget what had been said about herself and Jeffrey Palliser when they first left the house. “Romance usually means nonsense, I believe.”

And would that, as your charges are either false or out of date, so the cudgels of those friends of yours would cease!

And now, after that announcement, he was assenting to her proposal that they should go out and amuse themselves together.

And if— what will never take place, yet I will state the supposition—

They all took their places with a lugubrious but business-like air, as aware that they were sacrificing themselves in the performance of a sad duty.

My first reason was, that I shrunk from this task, for I will say the truth, as priests do, who approach their sacred duties before being cleansed both in voice and mind.

It is He Himself who says, Little children, a little while I am still with you. [John 13:33] Since also God Himself remains blessed and immortal, neither molested nor molesting another; not in consequence of being by nature good, but in consequence of doing good in a manner peculiar to Himself. God being essentially, and proving Himself actually, both Father and good, continues immutably in the self-same goodness. For what is the use of good that does not act and do good?

Lord Palmerston knew, or asserted that he knew, where lay the real force which he had to encounter; and though he sounded his trumpet loudly on the occasion, and in the moment of his triumph forgot that his enemies still existed, he lived to remember their power.

Personal domestic attendance is so, and the attendance in shops.

Again, if He rose again as a precedent for our hope, how is it that nothing like it has been thought desirable (to happen) to ourselves?

“You can’t afford it, George; nor yet can’t I. What a man wants in a wife is some one to see to his cooking and his clothes; and what a woman wants is a man who can put a house over her head. Of course, if she have something of her own, she’ll have so much the better house. As for me, I’ve got nothing now.”

“Yes; he has cozened you as he has your father. I am only glad that he did not succeed in cozening you further than he did. But I ought to have known you better than to suppose you could give your heart of hearts to one who is—”

Belleroach. Madame, by this fair hand—

Nor were they anxious what they should say when questioned.

But if we are appointed to build up others also, what shall not be done to them who are first to make division?

In other words we are informed that the privilege belonging to the Palliser family at Silverbridge was exercised, not by the Duke himself, but by the Duchess;—and that the Duke paid the money when he found that the Duchess had promised more than she could perform.

“And, Mamma, don’t you think that there is a something,—I don’t know what,—something not at all like other men about him that compels one to love him? Oh, Mamma, do say something nice to me! To me he is everything that a man should be.”

He, too, was a conscientious and an affectionate man.

When they had assembled, they summoned Sabbatius, and asked him to state the cause of his grievance; and as he merely complained of the diversity prevailing in regard to the feast, they suspected that he made this a pretext to disguise his love of precedency, and made him declare upon oath that he would never accept the episcopal office.

“Oh, of course, gentlemen, if you prefer Charette, so be it! He, doubtless will be better able to assist your endeavours than I should; but you might have spared me the mortification of putting my name on your list of officers, merely to scratch it off again.”

He has subjoined the reason: for God it is that works in you both to will and to work according to good will.

In this also the world saw a stroke of good luck.

Their pertinacious contention is to show that the mention of Father, Son, and Holy Ghost is unlike, as though they will thence find it easy to demonstrate that there is a variation in nature.

I hold it to be natural that a man should wail to himself under a sense, not simply of misfortune, but of misfortune coming to him from the injustice of others, and specially from the ingratitude of friends.

He also divided the earth from the water which surrounds it, and fixed it upon the immovable foundation of His own will.

The Duke, as all the world knows, is on the very eve of success with the decimal coinage. But his hair is becoming grey, and his back is becoming bent; and men say that he will never live as long as his uncle. But then he will have done a great thing,—and his uncle did only little things. Of the Duchess no word need be said. Nothing will ever change the Duchess.

But then he don’t pay!

They were proud of their squire, though he had done nothing for them.

Chapter 22. Recapitulation. Definition of the Soul

Her strength, she said, had been sufficient to carry her thus far, but was now failing her.

But there was a certain man, called Simon, which before time in the same city used sorcery, and bewitched the people of Samaria.

Then the channels of water appeared, and the foundations of the world were laid bare.

“Lotta says it was the sausage, but I don’t think it was. I’m very fond of sausage, and everybody must be ill sometimes. She’ll be down here again directly;” and Ziska with his head nodded at the chair in which his mother was wont to sit.

51. The confession of the Apostles, for whom by a word of command the raging wind and troubled sea were restored to calm, was an opportunity for you. You might have confessed, as they did, that He is God's true Son; you might have borrowed their very words, Of a truth, this is the Son of God. [Matthew 14:33] But an evil spirit of madness is driving you on to shipwreck of your life; your reason is distracted and overwhelmed, like the ocean tormented by the fury of the storm.

The other man was sitting back, gazing at nothing as though the matter to him were indifferent.

And there came congratulations from Mr. Cox, in which no allusion whatever was made to the Squire’s somewhat uncivil conduct at their last meeting.

“I do love them; so I do. What else have I?”

They will pass away, and become instinct with beauty and grace.” A dim idea came upon her that when this happy time should arrive, no one would claim her necklace from her, and that the man at the stables would not be so disagreeably punctual in sending in his bill.

The unthankful man is a truce-breaker, he is without natural affection.

But, not to speak of my own feelings, or of the distress with which the rumour about you filled me (and let me say also the fear), I should have liked you, had it been possible, to have heard what was said by others, both relations and outsiders, who are any way acquainted with us (Christians I mean, of course,) about you and me; and not only some of them, but everyone in turn alike; for men are always more ready to philosophize about strangers than about their own relations.

To this latter suggestion the father made no reply, but went slowly into the house. He turned for a moment into Marie’s little office, and stood there hesitating whether he would tell her his mission. As she was to be made happy, why should she not know it?

For of that day it is said, that no man knows it, neither angels, nor powers, nor the Son of man.

In truth, he had done it very well—only that he should have known better than to make any such attempt at all.

“I guess he understood that quite well.”

But these words spoken by Cicero seem almost to ring in our ears as having come to us direct from a man’s lips.

Let Celsus then, or any one who will, show us who have been moved in this way in regard to eternal punishments by the teaching of heathen priests and mystagogues.

“Yes, you and I,” he continued. “Even though your eyes flash upon me so sternly. You mean to say that had it been ever so early, that prize would have been impossible for me. Speak out, Adela. That is what you mean?”

“I can only hope, aunt, that he won’t think of it at all for very long.”

Do you see not how great a share of honor God would have her enjoy, in that he has taken you away from your father, and has linked you to her? What then, a man may say, if our duty is done, and yet she does not follow the example? Yet if the unbelieving departs, let him depart; the brother or the sister is not under bondage in such cases. [1 Corinthians 7:15]

“I am late; am I not?” she said.

It was fit that they should first be brought to have a longing desire for that event, and so receive the grace.

He who planned all with weight and measure, He who, according to the word of Job, knows the number of the drops of rain, knew how long His work would last, and for how much consumption of fire He ought to allow.

For who does not know that he who is by nature a slave, and follows his avocation under the constraint imposed by a master, cannot be removed even from the emotion of fear?

“He didn’t—didn’t mention me then?”

[John 17:3] You heard above that the Word of God was sent to heal mankind: here you are told that He who was sent is Jesus Christ.

But this gross-hearted age has disunited us from our neighbour, and has made us welcome the serpent, and revel in his spotted scales.

He could dare to scold her and sometimes did do so, but he could not dare to take the slightest liberty.

Be it so, that the other Apostles favored (His pretensions ): what say you to this man?

It may, indeed, well be that an editor shall think it needful to repress the names of his contributors, because he finds it expedient to employ writers, whom he trusts probably for capacity experienced by himself, but as to whom he does not feel that public recognition has as, yet given value to their names.

and again, I live, yet not I, but Christ lives in me.

Orth.— I think that even a barbarian might easily make this distinction. The union of unlike natures being conceded, the person of Christ on account of the union receives both; to each nature its own properties are attributed; to the uncircumscribed immunity from weariness, to that which is capable of transition and travel weariness. For travelling is the function of the feet; of the muscles to be strained by over exercise.

“Come, sir, I must, and will have an answer; on your solemn oath were your eyes open when you walked by that field?”

One fact, then, which proves that Jesus was something divine and sacred, is this, that Jews should have suffered on His account now for a lengthened time calamities of such severity.

But mark Him arguing strongly not from the creation only, but also from His command. For He said not, that He made one man and one woman only, but that He also gave this command that the one man should be joined to the one woman. But if it had been His will that he should put this one away, and bring in another, when He had made one man, He would have formed many women.

Cicero, in his Laws, enjoining men to approach with holiness to the sacrifices, says, Let them put on piety, let them lay aside riches; if any one shall act otherwise, God Himself will be the avenger.

In love and war all things are fair.

‘You are just the same as our cousin. I am sure we think quite as much of you as of Harry. Even Gertrude said she hoped that you would get it.’

13. And of the latter some continued faithful until bonds and imprisonment, and some who had even been imprisoned for many days yet abjured the faith before they were brought to trial. Others having for a time endured great tortures finally retracted.

Observe now the insincerity of his character!

Helen. BE ready, girl, he’s coming. Margaret.

This counsel he took.

The Only-begotten God does not, therefore, separate Himself from God when He confesses God the Father; but, proclaiming by the word Father His relationship to God, He includes Himself in the honour due to God.

“Mr Jones,” said the lawyer, “I have thought it my duty to call upon you in respect to these articles in the Carmarthen Herald.”

Where are they who deny the Flesh?

“No, I will not refuse it. And may God give her and me grace so to use the riches of this world that they become not a stumbling-block to us, and a rock of offence. It is possible that the camel should be made to go through the needle’s eye. It is possible.”

The first is that by which as far as the body is concerned we make light of all the wealth and goods of this world; the second, that by which we reject the fashions and vices and former affections of soul and flesh; the third, that by which we detach our soul from all present and visible things, and contemplate only things to come, and set our heart on what is invisible.

For to what sort do you take the passionate man to belong, and to what the forbearing and meek?

“And isn’t he good?”

“I hope so,” said Mr. Ratler, as he passed on.

Ver. 13. Sharing with the necessity ([χρείαις], al. [μνείαις], memories) of the saints.

For it does not know that some other mind knows, but that itself does so.

Nevertheless, she especially stipulated that she should have a new armchair for her own use, and that the feather bed in her own chamber should be renewed.

But the truth is that which is approved by the Prophet, not that which is pleasant to each individual.

Is it not dust?

Whence, now, arises that power of forgetfulness itself which precedes recollection?

This was Mr. Thumble, who had ridden over to Hogglestock on a poor spavined brute belonging to the bishop’s stable, and which had once been the bishop’s cob.

“I will quite agree as to the hanging of Lax,” said Frank; “but for any millennium, I want something more strong than Irish feeling. You’ll excuse me, old fellow.”

For Simon Magus also was born of water and of the Spirit, [Acts 8:13] and yet he did not enter into the kingdom of heaven; and this may possibly be the case with heretics as well.

Because, although there are other festivals also to which much reverence is due in God's honour, yet we must rationally guard this principal and greatest sacrament as a deep mystery and not part of the ordinary routine : not, however, prohibiting the licence to succour those who are in danger by administering baptism to them at any time.

The Eunuch of Ethiopia indeed, though he understood not what he read [Acts 8:27], believed the words of Philip, when he taught him concerning the Saviour; but the eunuchs of Constantius cannot endure the confession of Peter , nay, they turn away when the Father manifests the Son, and madly rage against those who say, that the Son of God is His genuine Son, thus claiming as a heresy of eunuchs, that there is no genuine and true offspring of the Father.

What if he is poor?

“Not a doubt about that,” said the archdeacon. Then Mrs. Grantly interposed, strove to change the subject, and threw oil upon the waters.

Young Marcus—from whom Tiro has asked for some assistance which Marcus cannot give him—jokes with him as to his country life, telling him that he sees him saving the apple-pips at dessert.

But some, you say, could not endure widowhood, and have fallen into many misfortunes.

[Romans 6:14] And again in another place: Do you not know, brethren (for I speak to them that know the law), that the law has dominion over a man so long as he lives?

But he who is blessed through hope is not yet blessed: for he expects, through patience, a blessedness which he does not yet grasp.

You will say, was not the question about the resurrection of the flesh and the punishment of the devil?

And as if we were to say, What sorrow?

In reality, it is as absurd to call the one Hyle, as it is to call the other God.

But he very rarely made such occasion, perhaps feeling that he was more in his element at the workhouse and the hospital.

Who is the proud?

And in another passage he says, For our light affliction, which is but for a moment, works a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory [2 Corinthians 4:17]: it being the deeper sort of persons he was then speaking to.

But as regards the readers there can be no such equalization: the thousand copies cannot spread themselves as do the ten thousand.

For he says, In hope of eternal life, which God that cannot lie promised before the eternal times, but has in due times manifested His word.

Their very lust and passion and impure disease of soul, the members of the body which tempt to obscenity, and even the very uncontrol in shameful pleasure, they described under the titles of Cupid, Priapus, Venus, and other kindred terms.

It was something over a hundred a year to be deducted from her computed income, but she would still be able to live at the Paragon quite as well as she had intended, and be able also to educate Susanna.

“I understand all that,” said Johnny.

Charley had sworn to love her, and she had sworn to love Charley; and to give her her due, she had kept her word to him.

Chapter 60. Disciples of John Refuted.

Nor did he so think of himself, as to believe that his own personal gifts would bind her to him when opposed by those other personal gifts which he knew belonged to the lord.

Gregory to Amos, Bishop of Jerusalem.

We encroach, we add house to house, field to field, to enrich ourselves at the expense of our neighbour.

Baptize me with the fire of Divinity; why do you wait for water?

“And the company are all talking to him as though he were the prefet,” said the girl.

And so conversely, things that have the same nature have also the same energy, and things that have one and the same energy have also one and the same essence , which is the view of the Fathers, who declare the divine meaning.

“Well; yes;—perhaps it would,” said Phineas.

How would it be possible then for him to declare that he renounced the devil, if there was no devil in him?

“You’re a licensed offender,—though, upon my honour, I don’t know whether I ought to give a feed of oats to any one having a connection with Trumpeton Wood. And what is Phineas to ride?”

For the kingdom of Heaven is like a net, that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind; which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away.

The grandmother and the mother have planted, but it is I that water and the Lord that gives the increase.

By such assertions they cut themselves off not only from Christians, but from mankind.

But they, hearing this (you will say), would slay her, would search the house.

For there are two natures according to the method and manner of difference.

But Kenneby had promised to go to Bedford Row, merely stipulating for a day at some little distance of time.

But Mr. Gilmore’s blood was up. “You intended to convey to Sir Thomas Charleys, my lord, that Mr. Fenwick’s visits were of a disgraceful nature. If your words did not convey that, they conveyed nothing.”

Still, you too of old time wore your garments— your tunics— of another shape; and indeed they were in repute for the skill of the weft, and the harmony of the hue, and the due proportion of the size, in that they were neither prodigally long across the shins, nor immodestly scanty between the knees, nor niggardly to the arms, nor tight to the hands, but, without being shadowed by even a girdle arranged to divide the folds, they stood on men's backs with quadrate symmetry.

I do not deny that there is a difference in the language of their documents, in their precepts of virtue, and in their teachings of the law; but yet all this diversity is consistent with one and the same God, even Him by whom it was arranged and also foretold.

Then, when the others had withdrawn, Peter bathed in the reservoir that was there, with those who pleased; and then ordering a table to be spread on the ground under the thick foliage of the trees, for the sake of shade, he ordered us each to recline, according to our worth; and thus we partook of food.

“Yes; I shall start tomorrow,” he replied.

But she had been annoyed by what she had heard as to her friend.

If it be the creature of God, it is good.

Wherefore let us not be double-minded; neither let our soul be lifted up on account of His exceedingly great and glorious gifts.

As yet then, we are on the way; as yet, wherever we come, we must pass on, until we attain unto some end.

It is the part of levity to lift up the head, just as if he who lifts up his head had nothing to carry.

“I don’t think it can be right,” said Mrs. Brownlow; “and I must say that it seems to me that old Mr. Newton ought to be ashamed of himself.

I hate such cruelty; and I hate myself for having been cruel.

I think not that you are ignorant that the living church is the body of Christ (for the Scripture, says, God created man male and female; [Genesis 1:27; cf.

We will not follow him through the different periods of his somewhat irregular eloquence.

“What fools they are,” said Lizzie.

Twice during the time she had received letters from her husband, but each letter had been short, and, though not absolutely without affection in its language, each letter had been absolutely obdurate.

Tretton might prevail.

But fear has its origin in knowledge; for how will a man fear that of which he knows nothing?

“To tell you the truth, I think she’ll get over it. It won’t be mortal with her. But do tell me, Major Grantly, what are we to think about this poor Mr. Crawley? It was so good of you to be one of his bailsmen.”

“He’s aff now, Ruby,” said John.

(On the Passion, XVII.: delivered on the Wednesday.)

“They will never go away, Mademoiselle, as long as the breath is in the man’s body. They are angry now, and they care for no one, not even for M. Henri himself; and it’s no wonder for them to be angry. He that was so trusted, and so loved; one of the family as much as yourself, M. Henri. Why, if I were to turn traitor, and go over to the republicans, it could hardly be worse. If ever I did, I should expect them to pinch me to pieces with hot tweezers, let alone hanging.”

“Then I shall probably return this evening; but I will see you before I go.”

[Matthew 3:9] Surely by such means you not only compare the Lord with Matter, but you even put Him below it, since you affirm that the nature of Matter could not possibly be brought under control by Him, and trained to something better.

The post boy with unflinching impartiality refused to say which was the better, and we went to the wrong one,—that which mariners frequented.

Whence it is manifest that even if we are earnest and well trained, and have much zeal about hearing the holy scriptures this does not suffice for our salvation.

And what and how great is it?

And she had been true,—though Jack De Baron and Mrs. Houghton had been true also.

But the proselytes not only do not believe, but twofold more than yourselves blaspheme His name, and wish to torture and put to death us who believe in Him; for in all points they strive to be like you.

In the middle was the elder, a girl dressed in dark silk, and at her sides were two boys habited in black velvet.

‘Well, Caldigate, it isn’t the reason altogether,’ said the other. ‘If you would have allowed it to pass without further explanation so would I. But if the truth must be spoken in so many words, I will confess that I would rather not go out to Folking till I am sure we shall be no more troubled by your friends in Australia.’

Even as they who deliver oracles and the soothsayers say many and excellent things, but know nothing of what they utter.

Any one else would have saved his shilling, as Mrs. Harold Smith’s house was only just across Oxford Street, in the neighbourhood of Hanover Square; but Mr. Sowerby never thought of this.

“Leave me here,” she had said, when he insisted on going because of his friend at the Cottage.

It sets its head towards men, and casts them on hope.

Oh, Linda, shall I pray for you in vain?” She sank upon her knees as she spoke, and prayed with all her might that God would turn the heart of this child, so that even yet she might be rescued from the burning.

How, therefore, this came to pass, I will point out with all possible brevity.

About noon she did get her paper and ink, and very slowly wrote her letter. Though her heart was, in truth, yearning towards her daughter,—though at that moment she could have made any possible sacrifice for her child had her child been apart from the man she hated,—she could not in her sullenness force her words into a form of affection.

“You seem to think you couldn’t get it taken up in your own country,” said Melmotte.

Mrs. Thorne was very glad to see her, and told her all the Barsetshire news,—much more than Mrs. Arabin would have learned in a week at the deanery; for Mrs. Thorne had a marvellous gift of picking up news.

And I shall send nothing in to Mr.

So egregious was the squint that Miss Mackenzie could not keep herself from regarding it, even while Mr Stumfold was expounding.

Alas, for the brutish stupidity of this doctrine!

Ignorance is in the habit of styling this (power) Neptune, according to whose image was produced Glaucus, Melicertes, Ino, Nebroë.

Behold unjust men are happy, God does not care for things human.

“But he isn’t like other men, Henri. You know he is—he is rather impatient of refusal; he could not bear as well as some men any mortification to his pride.”

The young man is strong; wherefore let us also become strong for the performance of good actions.

The enemies of His people rage; of their rage He makes martyrs.

Moreover, you will persevere in doing these things, and things similar to these, until the end, if you have in your hearts an ineradicable remembrance of the judgment that is from God.

For whereas Ezekiel says to the people of the Jews: And you have grieved Me in all these things, says the Lord; [Ezekiel 16:43] Paul says to the new people in his Epistle: Grieve not the Holy Spirit of God, in Whom you were sealed.

What then avails it to gratify by words those who shall be punished by realities?

“I have not come,” said he, “to speak to you about any one but ourselves.”

For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.

These things I say to men and women and maidens, leaving it to their conscience to see exactly how many evils are produced from this source.

There was, to his thinking, something about Mary Masters that made it altogether unfit that she should pass her life as the mistress of Chowton Farm, and he honoured her for the persistence of her refusal.

And why were all these grand people at Stalham so good to her,—to her, a poor little girl, whose ordinary life was devoted to the mending of linen and to the furtherance of economy in the use of pounds of butter and legs of mutton?

What, therefore, becomes of his argument, If nature is the work of God, it will never do for the work of the devil to permeate the work of God?

Hence it is that even they who compel, or who persuade, are accustomed to say, Why don't you do what you have in your ability, in order to avoid this evil?

Would you not think he was in a feverish dream, or that he was seized with madness and ought to be put into the strait jacket which Hippocrates prescribed?

Would you have them in the order of their impiety, or of their dates?

In truth he verily loved the girl, and love with him was a serious thing.

He could not restrain himself, though he knew that every word he uttered would injure his cause, as regarded the property in Westmoreland, if ever he could make a cause.

It was then the custom, more generally than it is at present, to maintain anonymous writing in magazines.

In order, then, that these impious (heretics) may no longer belie Mariamne or James, or the Saviour Himself, let us come to the mystic rites (whence these have derived their figment),— to a consideration, if it seems right, of both the Barbarian and Grecian (mysteries)—and let us see how these (heretics), collecting together the secret and ineffable mysteries of all the Gentiles, are uttering falsehoods against Christ, and are making dupes of those who are not acquainted with these orgies of the Gentiles.

So much is confessed; but if I were to form an opinion from the language I heard in the streets of the town, I should say that nearly every man was either an Irishman or a German.

“We don’t care at all about that. Anybody can take in anybody.”

He was not dead, nor did he believe that he was like to die; but had she killed him,—what must have been the fate of the murderess!

For at even the disciples mourned our Lord Jesus Christ as dead, at dawn at Him rising again they exulted.

The fire then shall prove, not the work of one of them only, but of both.

Since Paul was under restraint, many of the unbelievers, willing to stir up more vehemently the persecution from the Emperor, themselves also preached Christ, in order that the Emperor's wrath might be increased at the spread of the Gospel, and all his anger might fall on the head of Paul.

I say nothing of the Greeks, since you boast of your knowledge of them, even to the extent of saying that, in attaching yourself to foreign literature, you have forgotten your own language.

For he could not say that he did this thing from love of money, (for he had in the bag sufficient to allay his desire,) but from excessive wickedness which Christ wished to restrain, using much condescension towards him.

Chapter XVIII. Props of the System

He said not, because you are an hungered, but, if Thou be Son of God; thinking to cheat Him with his compliments.

I soon died away into utter unrecognised insignificance, and the conversation, as I have before said, became feminine.

His head no sooner appeared, as about to leave the dock, than the whole court was filled with a yell of hatred.

Quintus divides all such followers into three kinds, and gives instructions as to the special treatment to be applied to each.

And this interpretation does not appear to me to cause dissolution of marriage, but to be an incitement to agreement, so that if the one wished to be pure, but the other did not desire it, and on this account he who willed and was able to fulfil the better part, condescended to the one who had not the power or the will, they would not both have the accomplishment from the Father in heaven of Jesus Christ, of anything whatever that they might ask.

For neither did he say, They which wait upon the altar receive of them which sacrifice, but, have their portion with the altar.

Chapter 38 [XX.]— The Power of God's Grace is Proved.

Chapter 3.— What Kings Reigned in Assyria and Sicyon When, According to the Promise, Isaac Was Born to Abraham in His Hundredth Year, and When the Twins Esau and Jacob Were Born of Rebecca to Isaac in His Sixtieth Year.

“Whose fault is that—who built it then, Mr. Keegan?—bad luck to it for a house!”

In every word that the banker spoke, it was evident that he thought that these thousands would be squandered instantly.

Answer me now, O Paul, in what way you give counsel for the present distress.

Pastoral Rule (Book II)

In his eightieth year, during the absence of Hesychius, he wrote by way of a will a short letter with his own hand, and left him all his riches (that is to say, a copy of the gospels, and his sack-cloth tunic, cowl and cloak), for his servant had died a few days before.

He felt that the order which had been given to him was very cruel.

All this was understood by Mrs. Moulder, who knew that it only signified that her husband was half tipsy, and that in all probability he would be whole tipsy before long.

Would you unnecessarily doom our dear Marie to that fate!

For names serve to remind us of several circumstances.

But perhaps He came down in the form of a dove, as some say, to exhibit a figure of that dove who is pure and innocent and undefiled, and also helps the prayers for the children she has begotten, and for forgiveness of sins ; even as it was emblematically foretold that Christ should be thus manifested in the appearance of His eyes; for in the Canticles she cries concerning the Bridegroom, and says, Your eyes are as doves by the rivers of water.

[Matthew 25:41, 46] Wherefore the blessed apostle says: I testify in the Lord, that you walk no longer as the Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind; having their understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the hardness of their heart: who, being past feeling, have given themselves over to lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness and concupiscence.

Now it was Rebecca’s turn to pause; but it was not for long. “I love him dearly,” she said; “with a love as warm as yours.”

It is that God may dwell in this temple.

It must be something to you that you should be able to put an end to all this trouble.

So truly did he fear God with all his house that forgetting his high position he spent all his time with monks and clergymen.

I will confess for myself that I should almost have preferred to have stuck to the territory without paying the money.

but then isn’t he a black Protestant, sorrow take them for Protestants!

Now dignified members of her far-famed senate wander all over the world, getting means of existence from the bounty of kindly strangers, moving the tears of beholders, and teaching the uncertainty and instability of the lot of man.

The next morning he chanced to hear that the account had been settled, but not, at the moment, duly marked off the books.

Wherefore of the deeds of those nothing is said; but these flourish and daily increase.

“And I suppose I should be too old to get in at the bottom. It seems a long way off for a man who is the owner of Bragton.”

What, moreover, when sometimes aid could be afforded by baptism to the children of unbelievers, that they should not go into perdition, and could not be afforded to the children of believers?

But he feared that he would be called upon to vote for the abolition of his own borough,—and for other points almost equally distasteful to him.

I observe many partaking of Christ's Body lightly and just as it happens, and rather from custom and form, than consideration and understanding.

For it is indeed a haven of safety, to swear not at all: whatever storms burst upon us, to be in no danger of sinking there: be it anger, be it insult, be it passion, be it what it may, the soul is stayed securely; yea, though one have vented some chance word or other that ought not, and had been better not, to be spoken, yet he has laid himself under no necessity, no law.

For so many would not have been suddenly changed, unless they had believed in the miracle.

If, now, that soul which was taken from the living child so as to cause his death, was itself afterwards restored to him so as to cause his restoration to life: where, I ask, is the pertinence of your remark when you say that no diminution accrued to Elisha, as if it could be imagined that anything had been transferred from the prophet to the child to cause his revival?

There is extant a letter addressed to Octavian—supposed to have been written by Cicero, and sometimes printed among his works—which, if written by him, must have been composed about this time.

Suggest to me to turn out my daughters!

On the following morning he consented to get into farmer Mangle’s cart, and was driven as far as Framley Mill. “I wouldn’t think nowt, your reverence, of running you over into Barchester,—that I wouldn’t. The powny is so mortial good,” said farmer Mangle in his foolish goodnature.

Then he shook hands with Madeline, and as he did so he observed that the judge was at the trouble to turn away, so that he should not watch the greeting.

They are uttered by the same voices, they are written in the same books— the same Spirit inspires them.

There was nothing objectionable in this letter,—excepting always the “Dear Emily,”—nothing which it was not imperative on Colonel Osborne to communicate to the person to whom it was addressed.

[Ephesians 4:14] For there are, he says, many unruly and vain talkers and deceivers.

[Matthew 7:6] Openly did the Lord speak, [John 18:20] without any intimation of a hidden mystery.

Therefore we love God and our neighbor from one and the same love; but we love God for the sake of God, and ourselves and our neighbors for the sake of God.

For it is no ordinary virtue nor one which can be freely gained by merely human efforts, unless they are aided by the Divine blessing, for we read that this is also reckoned among the noblest gifts of the Spirit by the Apostle: To one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom, to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit, to another faith by the same Spirit, to another the gift of healing by the same Spirit, and shortly after, to another the discerning of spirits.

Eran.— Death.

When I was at Pieter 3.1aritzburg a young lady who was much interested in the welfare of the Zulus and who had perhaps a stronger belief in the virtues of the black people than in the justice of the white, read to me a diary which had just been made by a Zulu who had travelled from Natal into Zululand to see Cetywayo, and had returned not only in safety but with glowing accounts of the King’s good conduct to him.

Though, dear, darling old father, he shall do that if he will talk like you.

Now it certainly was the case that the manner in which the legislative and executive authorities were intermingled in the affairs of these islands, did create a complication which it was difficult for any man to understand, and very difficult indeed for any man to explain to others.

Hear we therefore the voice of them: to their health smitten they were, being raised up let them speak.

The old horse should be left to graze out his last days, Ne peccet ad extremum ridendus.

He believed that it might be practicable for him to acknowledge the justice of the petition, to declare his belief that his own agents had betrayed him, and to acknowledge that his seat was indefensible.

But if any of those who worship me go astray, either committing adultery, or practising magic, or living impurely, or doing any other of the things which are not well-pleasing to me, then they will have to suffer something at your hands or those of others, according to my order.

On that evening Larry Twentyman did not attend the Dillsborough Club,—having in the course of the week notified to the attorney that he should be a defaulter. Mr. Masters himself went over earlier than usual, his own house having become very uncomfortable to him. Mrs. Masters for an hour sat expecting that Larry would come, and when the evening passed away without his appearance, she was convinced that the unusual absence was a part of the conspiracy against her.

On the following morning Mrs Greenow had recovered her composure, but Captain Bellfield was still in a rather disturbed state of mind.

It was intended, however, to be a thronged and noticeable affair, and preparations were made for receiving some hundreds.

“And why not, Mrs Marsham?” said Lady Glencora rising from her seat. “Why shouldn’t I waltz tonight? I rather think I shall, the more especially as Mr Fitzgerald waltzes very well.” Thereupon she put her hand upon Burgo’s arm.

His own house seemed to him a prison.

We mention this cursorily, as a fact related by others a long while ago.

Let your Charity believe me that I have been greatly saddened for your sadness, as though I had myself suffered wrong in you.

Lucy and her husband were away on their tour, as were Gertrude and hers on theirs.

When they had performed wonderful works in Lycaonia, the people of that country brought victims, and wished to sacrifice to them, calling Barnabas Jupiter, and Paul Mercury: they were not pleased.

All the common people, Caesar says, are serfs, or little better.

For when you say that you are a sinner— yet that a man may be without sin if he will, you wish it to be understood that you are a saint and free from all sin.

And what He did with respect to the Jews, by places, and times, and feasts, reminding them of His benefits, that He did in this case also, by the manner of the sacrifice bringing us to a perpetual remembrance of His bounty in these things.

As regards him, it will only remain for us to declare what was his will, and that shall be done in the next chapter.

He did not, of course, allude to it, but Lizzie was not so reticent.

2 Corinthians 1:15

Into the Church, which His apostles had not yet founded?

Friends, that is, friends according to Christ, surpass fathers and sons.

And it struggles to be released from bodies, and is not able to find liberation and an egress for itself For a very diminutive spark, a severed splinter from above like the ray of a star, has been mingled in the much compounded waters of many (existences), as, says he, (David) remarks in a psalm.

He will smite many heads when he causes them to fall, but He will fill them up and build them up again.

In truth, they are not as yet men, whatever the number may be of their years; and, as they are no longer boys, the world has found for them the ungraceful name of hobbledehoy.

It amuses me to imagine that blandishments of fair beauty and graceful lips are ascribed to one who had to gird on His sword for war!

For if the Son be a creature, by what word then and by what wisdom was He made Himself ?

Shall we not go over unto blessedness so great?

So the bishop went on learning.

“Only for somebody to love me,” said Marie, looking down.

“What, you think there’s something between her and Lord Kilcullen?” said Mrs Moore.

“Mr. Thorne never thought much of Flurry,” said Henry Grantly, with his mind intent upon Pau and his grievance.

For some procreate by the body, others by the soul; since also with the barbarian philosophers to teach and enlighten is called to regenerate; and I have begotten you in Jesus Christ, [1 Corinthians 4:15] says the good apostle somewhere.

The parts of the land are marked off for an inheritance and possession to him— that means the doctrine of the Lord.

The rector remained at home during the morning, and the whole service was performed by Mr. Saul.

Chapter 23

“You have heard all the calumny about Lady Laura Kennedy.”

This was very bad, but he would not make bad worse by giving up so much of Conduit Street as was still left to him.

But then she had been quite firm in her purpose to give him no encouragement that she could avoid.

There was a something in the Earl of which George was afraid; and, to tell the truth, he did not dare to go back to Castle Corry.

However, though it be so with myself, yet because I study your advantage, I wrote this same thing to you that I might not be made sorry, herein also again studying not my advantage, but yours; for I know, that were ye to see me sad, you also would be sorry; as also you are glad when you see me rejoicing.

[Hebrews 11:6] Faith is a shield; but wherever there are quibbles, and reasonings, and scrutinizings, then is it no longer a shield, but it impedes us.

“Oh, Silverbridge, you will wish me joy?”

What is the meaning of, the creation was made subject to vanity?

Their various plans for the future,—for the immediate future,—were very startling.

They say that dilectio is used of a good affection, amor of an evil love.

“It will be unseemly in us to show ourselves in a bad humour; moreover, we have no power in this matter, and it will therefore be bad policy to act as though we had.” ‘Twas thus the Master of Lazarus argued.

But whither am I going, in my immoderate grief, forgetful of my duty, mindful of kindness received?

Chapter 30.— The Number of Good Things in Those Natures Which Manichæus Places in the Region of Darkness

And it seems that the type and sign, which was erected to counteract the serpents which bit Israel, was intended for the salvation of those who believe that death was declared to come thereafter on the serpent through Him that would be crucified, but salvation to those who had been bitten by him and had betaken themselves to Him that sent His Son into the world to be crucified.

Linda did her best to say nothing evil of her aunt.

Joseph Emilius,—under which name it was thought proper that he should be tried,—was convicted and sentenced to penal servitude for five years.

After that such a man or woman might as well spare all speech as regards the hope of any effect on the mind of Sir Peregrine Orme.

And when the man comes before them, just for once or twice, to be judged and thought of at a single interview, the girl,—such as were these girls,—can hardly tell it to herself.

She has felt very grateful to him, and as yet she is only beginning to learn the difference between gratitude and love.

Those, again, who would make out that qualities are superimposed from without upon a certain underlying matter, make use of illustrations of this kind: e.g., Paul undoubtedly is either silent, or speaks, or watches, or sleeps, or maintains a certain attitude of body; for he is either in a sitting, or standing, or recumbent position.

I don’t in the least believe in him.

“What do you like, dear?”

“What does it matter, Lady Lovel? We have got to get a promise from her, somehow. Since she was much with him, she has seen people of another sort, and she will feel the difference. It may be that she wants to ask him to release her. At any rate she speaks as though she might be released by what he would say to her. Unless she thought it might be so herself, she would not make a conditional promise. I would let them meet.”

The rivers flow into the sea, and men of lust lapse into the world: these also the Church, which, when worldly lusts have been conquered by the grace of God, has been prepared by love for the reception of immortality, subdues.

Would Harry come down to Tretton and see the old governor?

And what other is there who is to come but Christ, the Son of God?

Melbourne which is just two hundred years younger than Capetown contains above a quarter of a million of inhabitants.

Mr. Grey condemns him, and all the world must condemn him.

For he glories in it, saying: But I chasten my body, and bring it into bondage, lest, after preaching to others, I myself should be found reprobate.

There could be no question that Miss Thoroughbung had annoyed him most excessively.

We also condemn whomsoever they condemn, and absolve whomsoever they absolve, smiting, with interposition of anathema, any one who presumes to add to or take away from the faith of the same four synods, and especially that of Chalcedon, with respect to which doubt and occasion of superstition has arisen in the minds of certain unskilled men.

For although it deserves praise to have lived temperately in the midst of abundance, yet the enticements of temptation are more frequent among riches and pleasures.

And this is manifest to those who are willing to peruse the Gospels in a spirit of fairness, by the parable of the publican, who said, Be merciful to me a sinner, and of the Pharisee who boasted with a certain wicked self-conceit in the words, I thank You that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican.

We must think for ourselves, and come to know the meaning of the words, I in the Father, and the Father in Me: but this will depend upon our success in grasping the truth that reasoning based upon Divine verities can establish its conclusions, even though they seem to contradict the laws of the universe.

She had never mentioned Mr. Prong’s offer in Rachel’s presence; nor did she do so now.

We see it, then, liberated from sin through grace, but we do not see how it deserved to be involved in sin.

“Yes; the whole truth.”

For what does it profit this one to be assured of the meaning of the author, whereas he has chosen him to himself not so as through him to escape error, but so as with him to err.

I say nothing as to the propriety or impropriety of his being out on bail, as it is no affair of ours.

“Sober as judges,” said Bellfield, who had himself been looking after the remains of Mr Cheesacre’s hampers, while that gentleman had been so much better engaged in the tent.

To many the holiness of the place in which the body of the blessed Felix is buried is well known, and to this place I desired them to repair; because from it we may receive more easily and more reliably a written account of whatever may be discovered in either of them by divine interposition.

Then they say among themselves, It is not lawful to cast them into the treasury, because it is the price of blood.

6. The king did not rebuke them, nor did he reject their impious flattery. But after a little, looking up, he saw an angel sitting above his head. And this he quickly perceived would be the cause of evil as it had once been the cause of good fortune, and he was smitten with a heart-piercing pain.

The City of God (Book XIX)

Why, except from their liking him?

Good workman! Who, in the doctrine of the Son of God,

For if you love these more than Him, you will not have Him.

I can explain it all to you in the carriage.” Then the clerk suggested that Madame had better postpone her journey a little.

The people I was describing know and observe these things; for they are Christians, not heretics.

How pray with fervency, when thus attired?

For when you blasphemously say that He is certainly not to be adored as God, but to be worshipped together with God, you thus grant to Him an union of nearness to Divinity, in order to get rid of the truth of His Divinity.

As a rule, they have meat twice a day.

Grey, when he perceived that his enemy was gone, turned round to look for the bullet or its mark.

[John 21:25] How then does the Evangelist here say, Of all?

And Mr. Phillips would emancipate these at a blow; would, were it possible for him to do so, set them loose upon the soil to tear their masters, destroy each other, and make such a hell upon the earth as has never even yet come from the uncontrolled passions and unsatisfied wants of men.

“I have to propose that you and your father shall come and dine with me down at Richmond to-day. There is old Mrs. Peacock, who used to sing bouffe parts at the Queen’s Theatre. She is a most respectable old party, and she shall come if you will let her.”

By this means he intended to ascribe the generation of offspring to a fit age, without diminishing the total sum of years ascribed to the lifetime of the individuals.

Because there was there a sacrifice after the order of Aaron, and afterwards He of His Own Body and Blood appointed a sacrifice after the order of Melchizedek; He changed then His Countenance in the Priesthood, and sent away the kingdom of the Jews, and came to the Gentiles.

They have thought against me; leave me not, lest perchance they be exalted.

“With a cream-jug in my hand, or else sewing buttons on to a shirt-collar. But he never forgave me about the mutton broth. He told me, in so many words, that I was a—storyteller. And for the matter of that, my dear, so I was.”

As they passed down the stairs and out of the doors she was astonished to find how weak were his footsteps,—how powerless he was against the slightest misadventure.

For this is the Mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus.

To the Learned Maranas.

Chapter XVIII. An Evening at the “Goose and Gridiron.”

Marvelous! That you quickly came unto it and believed; and straightway, from the very first, showed forth its fruits.

He shall judge the poor of the people, and shall save the sons of the poor [Psalm 71:4].

Yes, I shall tell mamma; but she won’t say anything to him.

“Miss Todd says he’s always talking about you.”

How then did He work other miracles without prayer?

These were now their established places, and great as was the crowd, they found no difficulty in reaching them.

“After all, a man with nothing to do in the world, with no profession, no occupation, with no money—”

“Well, at any rate, we must all say this: she hasn’t lost any time. I don’t know what Sir Henry may think of it; but it certainly does seem to me—”

Of whom shall we inquire?

Does he mean that which the Father and the Son execute, according to the word of the Lord Himself Who hitherto works man's salvation, or does he mean some other?

And round about the throne were four living creatures. The four living creatures are the four Gospels.

She had to face it,—and she did face it.

For as You are not a bodily image, nor the affection of a living creature, as when we rejoice, condole, desire, fear, remember, forget, or anything of the kind; so neither are You the mind itself, because You are the Lord God of the mind; and all these things are changed, but You remain unchangeable over all, yet vouchsafe to dwell in my memory, from the time I learned You.

“But we will take the music, my dear.”

He has added, And the Truth.

There is no writer of the present day who has so much puzzled me by his eccentricities, impracticabilities, and capabilities as Charles Reade.

“Of course when we are married you must go and see her.”

The new bishop lived all alone; not a soul looked at him, or exchanged a word with him.

Econtra autem pudicos admiratur:—

The knave, however, at that time succeeded in escaping detection from many; but now, being convicted (of the imposture), he will be forced to desist from it.

We remember, indeed, the words of the Lord, When they persecute you in one city, flee to another; [Matthew 10:23] but who can believe that the Lord wished this to be done in cases in which the flocks which He purchased with His own blood are by the desertion of their pastors left without that necessary ministry which is indispensable to their life?

Sir Lionel had also enjoined a speedy answer; and in order that she might not disappoint him in this matter, she resolved to put the question at once to Mr. Bertram.

Again, every one must be impressed, and be either enlightened or confirmed in the faith, by the blessing of the two sons who honored the nakedness of their father, though they turned away their faces, as displeased with the evil done by the vine.

For these will not be worthy of the Son and the Father's acknowledgment in whom the flesh of Christ awakens no respect: and they will prove themselves to have gained no virtue from the sign of the cross who blush to avow with their lips what they have consented to bear upon their brows.

Will not every just person break forth into lamentations at the sight or hearing of these things, at perceiving the arrogance and extreme injustice of these impious men?

And if there was to be babies, wouldn’t they be brought up to love you.

Whence there was that voice on the Cross, My God, My God, why have You forsaken Me?

Her mother had hitherto always been in his favor, and he had, in fact, been received almost as an Apollo in the house at Cheltenham.

“I do mean it. Mamma is, of course, attached to her nephew.”

I listened hard,—not from idle cur’osity, ma’am, as you, who know me, will believe, but just because it’s becoming to know what he’s about, as there might be an accident, you know, ma’am.” “You are very good, Mrs. Baxter, very good.” “Thank ye, ma’am, for saying so.

“And what will be said about this stall at Barchester?”

For if it were done for his own sake, one might fairly blame him; but if from the fervor of his zeal for the Gospel, it was not done reproachfully.

“I wonder that any woman should ever take upon herself the charge of a niece!” said Lady Baldock to her daughter in a despondent tone, as she held up her hands in dismay. In the meantime, Violet had gone downstairs with a quick step, and had then boldly entered the room in which her lover was waiting to receive her.

Chapter 2.— God, Although Incomprehensible, is Ever to Be Sought. The Traces of the Trinity are Not Vainly Sought in the Creature.

To use much speaking in prayer is to employ a superfluity of words in asking a necessary thing; but to prolong prayer is to have the heart throbbing with continued pious emotion towards Him to whom we pray.

He sees no resulting benefit of such knowledge.

Chapter XI. Isabel at Hereford

I told them to let us have tea in my dressingroom, as I thought you’d like that better than going into the drawing-room before you had taken off your things.

His friends who did see him urged him constantly to bestir himself, and Mr. Monk pressed him very much to come down to the House. “Walk in with me tonight, and take your seat as though nothing had happened,” said Mr. Monk.

The Strangers’ Gallery was filled to overflowing.

So he walked home slowly through the lanes, very meditative, with his hands behind his back.

Of course it was soon known in the vicarage that Mary Lowther had accepted the Squire’s hand.

“Then eat your breakfast, and hold your tongue.”

It was now a quarter of a century since she had seen the man who had so illused her.

But we have been taught from the first by that scholar of the Truth to be scholars of the Gospel ourselves, and therefore we will not take an eye for an eye, nor a tooth for a tooth; we know well that all the evil that happens admits of being annihilated by its opposite, and that no bad word and no bad deed would ever develope into such desperate wickedness, if one good one could only be got in to break the continuity of the vicious stream.

Eleanor hung back in the carriage as long as she well could, but she was nearest to the door, and when Mr. Slope, having alighted, offered her his hand, she had no alternative but to take it.

This was so settled, that the interest of his wife’s money paid the heavy insurance on his life which young Robarts effected, and there was left to him, over and above, sufficient to furnish his parsonage in the very best style of clerical comfort, and to start him on the road of life rejoicing.

Let that Fount overflow upon us, and not flow away.

For he knew that believers are strong while employed in thanksgiving, and that rejoicing they pass over the walls of the enemy, like those saints who said, 'Through You will we pierce through our enemies, and by my God I will leap over a wall. '

IV.— Comments on the Second Epistle of John.

“If you please, your reverence, there are two men outside,” said the footman. Two men! Mark knew well enough what men they were, but he could hardly take the coming of two such men to his quiet country parsonage quite as a matter of course.

If they refuse shun them as traitors to the faith.

A second time the robbery is committed, and she makes a third nest.

‘I guess you’ll pay for them yourself.’

[1 John 4:12] He tells us that he believes, and declares that he is filled with divine love, who believes that Jesus is the Son of God.

Such, however, is the present condition of mortal men, that the connubial intercourse and lust are at the same time in action; and on this account it happens, that as the lust is blamed, so also the nuptial commerce, however lawful and honourable, is thought to be reprehensible by those persons who either are unwilling or unable to draw the distinction between them.

Twice, as has been said before, words had seemed to tremble on his lips which might have settled the question for her for ever; and on both occasions, as she knew, she herself had helped to laugh off the precious word that had been coming.

He came to England in those days, and I remember being asked to dinner by a gushing friend.

“Something has happened to make him very unhappy,” said the boy. “He told me so even before this man came here. I don’t know any one whom I like so much as Mr. Peacocke.”

Perhaps there was some feeling that the coals of fire would be hot upon her head when she should think how much she had received from him and how little she had done for him.

A sick or a wounded man lies before you; respect your own health, and the wounds from which Christ delivered you.

What to take amiss?

Both Mr. and Miss Thorne were proud of this peculiarity of their dwelling, though the brother was once all but tempted by his friends to alter it.

Now you are proposing to yourself what you are moved to seek, but are not proposing to yourself what you desire to see: and yet I would discuss this very thing with you, what advance you think we have made.

‘No;—you are to tell him,’ said Greisse.

He, no doubt, would be generous enough to renew his offer.

But God in His great mercy, knowing how necessary was the terror inspired by these laws, and a kind of medicinal inconvenience for the cold and wicked hearts of many men, and for that hardness of heart which cannot be softened by words, but yet admits of softening through the agency of some little severity of discipline, brought it about that our envoys could not obtain what they had undertaken to ask.

These things are, without controversy, required of the servants of God, and comely and suitable for them.

They cannot contradict Christ, they cannot contradict the Gospel, Christ cannot be censured; the deceitful tongue turns itself to praise as an hindrance.

“And why is not your grandfather here to-day?” he said on this occasion to young Orme.

It was at that time then that the blessed Paul wrote these things.

But I retire from this huge act of folly into which I am suffering myself to fall on account of Germanus; and accordingly I forbear giving to the brethren, who already have full knowledge of these things, a particular and detailed narrative of all that happened.

“Fanny, if ever you whisper a word of this to any one, I will never speak to you again.”

I have now confirmed, as I imagine, the things which are thought false and incredible by those who are not instructed in the true knowledge of heavenly learning.

You see how worthy he was to be saved: for when he beheld the miracle, and was relieved from his terror, he did not forget what most concerned him, but even in the midst of so great peril, he was solicitous about that salvation which concerned his soul: and came before them in such a manner as it was meet to come before teachers: he fell down at their feet.

[James 2:13] For with the same purpose the Lord says: Forgive, and you shall be forgiven: give, and it shall be given unto you.

Is it possible then to purchase life for money?

After that the necessary payment was made, and the Vicar returned to the Railway Station.

There was a courtesy in this suggestion which induced Curlydown to ask his junior to come down and take pot-luck at Apricot Villa.

He took it in his hand and held it up, but made no immediate overture to return it. “And Mr. Harding has seen this?” said he.

He had stayed at his club till he was drunk, and had gambled away all his money.

[Romans 15:4] ...Why You?

Is that the lesson you have learned from that Samaritan who carried back the man that was half dead to the inn?

“We have asked him to come back,” she said to Adelaide, “in order that you may make up your mind.

But the points which were discussed in that way, and the strength of argumentation which was used on either side, would have surprised the clients, and the partner, and the clerks, and the eloquent barrister who was occasionally employed to support this side or the other.

The lawyer looks, probably for a return for his labours in a comfortable income, and the art tourist looks for his return in that sort of reputation which is now attached to the knowledge of the history of painting.

But her heart misgave her a little as she drew near to the house, and remembered how very slight was her acquaintance and how extremely delicate the mission on which she had come.

First, I came with the army, and rescued him: then also I brought him down unto them: and not even so did they find anything to lay to his charge: and when they ought to have been stricken with fear and shame for the former act, they again attempt to kill him, insomuch that again his cause became all the more clear.

However, this he would have to tell him; for the door was now open, and there stood the priest, with his eyes fixed on Thady’s sad face and soiled appearance.

What in the world is the reason that we should hesitate to call Him God, who in so many ways is acknowledged to be proved God?

She loved the man who was going to marry her very well,—or rather, she intended to do so.

Often again, as is the case with all attempts to present the thoughts of the ancient in a modern dress, a periphrasis must be used to explain the meaning of an idea which was instantly caught by the Greek or Roman ear.

“I will at any rate be kind to you,” she replied, as she sat upon the bank looking at the running water.

But if this does not seem to them to be a disgrace, this again is of their exceeding madness, for that they have no feeling of the unseemliness, but while they are ashamed of having their body naked, they bear about the soul naked, and glory in it.

Father Cullen’s redeeming point was his earnestness,—his reality; he had no humbug about him; whatever was there, was real; he had no possible appreciation for a joke, and he understood no ridicule.

“The committee look to that,” he murmured, and shook his head.

Who is the speaker?

Since (though Elymas) saw the rest attending to them, he looked only to this one object, that the proconsul might not be won over.

But at last even the Rattlers and Robys were fixed, if not satisfied, and a complete list of the ministry appeared in all the newspapers.

Leave, therefore, the care of protecting the body to Him by whose care you see it has come about that you have a body of such a stature.

‘I know the date very well.’

For why would it have been necessary to make mention of the flesh, since it was sufficient to say that He was mortal?

This power and this unstinted grace of His He has already sufficiently guaranteed in Christ; and has displayed Himself to us (in Him) not only as the restorer of the flesh, but as the repairer of its breaches.

Death honours not them that live in magnificence, nor with him are the good distinguished from the bad.

But now she was tempted to long that the newspaper might be found to be right.

So Saul, being a sinner, persecuted David, whereas David, though he had a good opportunity, did not kill Saul.

“He has not got another journey before him to South Africa.”

More grateful to Him shall be the sacrifice of praise than the sacrifice of a calf.

So, they say, when Felicitas is called a goddess, what is meant is not the thing itself which is given, but that deity by whom felicity is given.

He will hardly dignify the affair with the name of a war.

And Sexty, who had been in a manner magnetised by Ferdinand, was confident too—at certain periods of the day.

Dear, dearest Mary.

Mrs. Prime had promised to be his wife, but she had burdened her promise with certain pecuniary conditions which were distasteful to him,—which were much opposed to that absolute headship and perfect mastery, which, as he thought, should belong to the husband as husband.

Hear what says Peter, Why do you look so earnestly on us, as though by our own power or godliness we had made this man to walk?

There was no more question about them than as to one’s ordinary bread and butter at breakfast.

He who knows the hearts of men, who dwells in our thoughts, does He ask?

Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them tempted, and perished by the serpents.

Your father’s race are poor and proud, my Margaret, and men don’t seek such dowries with their wives as pride and poverty.

Wherefore it seemed good to excommunicate such persons, lest the wrath (of God) should come upon the whole people, and upon those first of all who are set over them in office, and yet fail to make inquiry.

In his ordinary way he was a quiet man, not often heard at much distance, and contented to be noted as Newton of Newton rather than as a man commanding attention by his conduct before other men.

Is not everything which happens in the universe, whether it be the work of God, of angels, of other demons, or of heroes, regulated by the law of the Most High God?

Is it because we have made for ourselves houses, by which we can avoid the cold of winter and heat of summer?

During the time of his expected apostasy Dr. Gwynne had not felt much predisposition in favour of the young fellow.

Nora, however, had come to a very absolute decision.

But at His Incarnation He began to have as Lord the God Who had been His Father eternally ( 13), and when He said that He was ascending to His God, He spoke as when He calls us His brethren ( 14, 15).

“Why should I be angry?”

Moreover, set at liberty, without any equivocation, according to the injunctions of the laws , whatever Christian slaves it shall appear that he has acquired; lest (which God forbid) the Christian religion should be polluted by being subjected to Jews.

Two of them came to Hippo, a brother and a sister, Paulus and Palladia, already known in many other places by the fame of their wretched lot.

“I haven’t got any troubles,—of that sort.”

We may answer, that what is here written, was sufficient for those who would attend, and that the sacred writers ever addressed themselves to the matter of immediate importance, whatever it might be at the time: it was no object with them to be writers of books: in fact, there are many things which they have delivered by unwritten tradition.

“No, dear. I don’t think he wants to quarrel with any one;—but above all he must not quarrel with me. Lord Fawn has quarrelled with him, and that’s a misfortune,—just for the present.”

I should have withdrawn to myself, prostrated myself before God, groaned aloud asking Him not to suffer me to halt in mid space, when I should have moved forward with assured arguments, asking Him that I might not be compelled by a doubtful question either to subordinate intelligible things to sensible, and to yield, or to call Himself the author of vices; since either of these alternatives would have been absolutely full of falsehood and impiety.

Nor when, on rare occasions, a visit was made, did he endeavour to make the house pleasant.

Let us discourse upon the second, which is now necessary for us, and which gives its name to the Feast of the Lights.

There was a stand, from which a tolerable view of the race could be obtained, admission one shilling; but few ascended it, and long before the start, the price had fallen to sixpence.

A man named Cogan, who had acted very successfully as a spy to Ussher, also offered his services to the new officer, by whom they were accepted.

Of course the matter had not decided itself in this way without very much absolute quarrelling between them.

If, however, Providence meantime plans anything different for the waters or wayfarers— for Providence can do this— the demons are deceived, and those who gave heed to them cheated.'

If Clara really loved Herbert—and she had declared that she did twenty times over—it would be absurd to expect her to give him up merely because he was not a ruined man.

Should she never know rest;—never have one draught of cool water between her lips?

If any words had been spoken between her and Hermione on the subject, the two sisters had been discreet enough to manage that they should go no further.

Now it so happened that, while we were reading this defence of Pelagius in the small paper which we received at first, there were present certain holy brethren, who said that they had in their possession some hortatory or consolatory works which Pelagius had addressed to a widow lady whose name did not appear, and they advised us to examine whether the words which he had abjured for his own occurred anywhere in these books.

Not for this is it a noble thing to be in bonds for Christ's sake that it procures for us a kingdom; it is that it is done for Christ's sake.

And as the Apostle makes mention in his Epistle of His being made man when mentioning His High Priesthood, so too he kept no long silence about His Godhead, but rather mentions it immediately, furnishing to us a safeguard on every side, and most of all when he speaks of His humility, that we may immediately know His loftiness and His majesty which is the Father's.

For he who grieves for his own faults, and confesses them, rejoices.

From Mr. Boltby he received no further communication.

And hence the things from the poets' writings, which the people ought not to follow, are the crimes of the gods; which, nevertheless, amuse both the people and the gods.

“Oh, yes; he is, my lord.”

While voluptuousness insulted over the fact that, after transfixing monsters, they should perchance sew a coronet!

“I shall not go till you send me,” he said, putting up his hand as though to protect his coat, and just touching her fingers as he did so.

Or how could I even let the servants think that I would treat him so badly?

“Senators with us wouldn’t have time for that,” said the Senator.

Once, indeed, He descended, and once He ascended,— not, however, through any change of nature, but only in the condescension of His philanthropic Christhood; and He is seated as the Word with the Father, and as the Word He dwells in the womb, and as the Word He is found everywhere, and is never separated from the God of the universe.

He let drop a few words to show that he was intimately acquainted with the whole course of Sir Marmaduke’s family affairs.

But forty years since a brat had been born at Bragton in opposition to her wishes,—by whose means she had been expelled from the place; and now it seemed to her to be simple justice that he should on this account be robbed of that which would otherwise be naturally his own.

White persons.

Yes, certainly.

He Himself tells us in what manner we ought to ask.

And, lest your letters should fail to carry conviction, you sent a copy of this translation, together with the Preface in which I was praised.

He Himself implants in us faith concerning temporal things, He Himself shows forth the truth concerning eternal things.

Florian’s murder had stirred all those who were against the League to feel that the Government should be supported.

Where then is there room for the Son's birth?

It should be here explained that Sir Magnus had no children of his own, and that Miss Abbott was the lady who was bound to smile and say pretty things on all occasions to Lady Mountjoy for the moderate remuneration of two hundred a year and her maintenance.

And the Jews were offended then and mocked, saying, 'Had He been Son of God, He had not endured the Cross and the Arians standing over against them, urge upon us, 'How dare ye say that He is the Word proper to the Father's Essence, who had a body, so as to endure all this?'

He had no pity for his tenants in regard to game, but he hesitated much as to raising their rent.

“He’s at Framley now, I know. I got a letter only yesterday from his wife, with a commission. He was there, and Lord Lufton had just left.”

But what kind of motion, tell me; for among us there are seven kinds; down, up, in, out, right, left, circular, or, if not this, increase, decrease, generation, destruction, alteration.

Victor Constantius Maximus Augustus to the Alexandrians.

You may say, however, since you excel all men in understanding, How comes it to pass, then, that some of the idols manifest power, if those to whom we erect the statues are not gods?

And just as an affectionate mother when she is about to spread out her table, grieves and laments when all her children are not there, thus also do I now suffer; and when I think of the absence of our brethren, I am reluctant to discharge my debt.

Such a courage!

These latter unanimously maintained the decrees of Nicæa, and urged Eleusius and his partisans to conform to these sentiments, reminding them, at the same time, of the embassy they had formerly deputed to Liberius, and of the confession they conveyed to him through the medium of Eustathius, Silvanus, and Theophilus, as has been narrated.

Are you unable to empty yourself of all your goods?

‘Of course we all know that you did your very best for him. He has said so himself when he has written. But you;—you have been fortunate.’

But, while a fitting time for the correction of subordinates is being sought, the patience of the prelate is exercised under the very weight of their offenses.

Herein we recognize the care of your Glory, how you take thought for the life of the soul and the stability of your kingdom, seeing that, fearing our Redeemer, and observing His precepts in all ways, you act in this case also so that the government of your kingdom may long subsist, and that after long courses of years you also may pass from an earthly to a heavenly kingdom.

II. The Virgin's conception explained

“Because you talked of soft words.”

And after all, sir, the Duke of Omnium is a respectable man, though he is a Liberal.

But the nature of the incarnation will render unnecessary any inquiry into the soul of Christ.

“Yes, Cathelineau, the postillion.”

In the human body there is a spirit which holds all together, though in different members.

It seems, moreover, to me to be an interpretation worthy of acceptance to regard the clause of the above quoted passage: Neither can he sin, as if it meant: He ought not to commit sin.

“But they were proved,” said Herbert.

2 Corinthians 10:8

And, as for concealed heretics, that, as we are not to find out concealed adulterers by committing of adulteries, nor murderers by committing of murders, nor practisers of black arts by practising of black arts, so neither must we seek to find out liars by telling lies or blasphemers by blaspheming: according to the reasonings which we have in this volume so copiously set forth, that unto the goal of the same, which we fixed to be in this place, we have with difficulty come at last.

On coming to the place, he is arrested by the robbers' outpost; neither fleeing nor entreating, but crying, It was for this I came.

Dismiss it all from your mind, father, and let things be as they were.

[Matthew 9:4] nor would He have given this charge by the prophet, saying: Take away the evil of your thoughts from my eyes; and How long shall wicked thoughts remain in you?

Is it not absurd, if the flesh, which the Word bore, itself is the Son, to say that the flesh from Mary is that by which the world was made?

“Ha, ha, ha!” laughed Cradell.

And yet, understanding her error as she had done with a full intelligence, she could have sworn that it should be so.

But she did not hear him, and smiled still as he went away, saying something to Mrs Conway Sparkes as to the great change for the better which had taken place in her nephew’s conduct.

My dear, it will be nothing without him.

Directly the sea was crossed she took in her hand a dry and sounding timbrel and conducted the women's dance.

For consider how great a thing it is, that a soul after departing there, should no longer look for an end of those good things, nor yet change, but increase, and life that has no end, and life set free from all danger, and from all despondency and care, full of cheerfulness and blessings innumerable.

“Oh, Mr Gresham; of course, if it is wished.”

24. Holy Joseph experienced the hatred of his brethren, the guile of those who envied him, the service of slavery, the mastership of merchantmen, the wantonness of his mistress, the ignorance of her husband, and the misery of prison.

It is an evil not to be restrained, not curable by any medicine, it destroys the whole frame. He shows that novelty of doctrine is a disease, and worse than a disease. And here he implies that they are incorrigible, and that they erred not weakly but willfully.

Having heard this, Antony arose and prayed, and received such strength that he perceived that he had more power in his body than formerly.

And from him no one— no, not one— has been delivered, or is being delivered, or ever will be delivered, except by the grace of the Redeemer.

“Such changes make quarrels,” said he.

And the cloud was bright. For while he yet spoke, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them; and, behold, a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye Him. [Matthew 17:5]

“Indeed, it was not that. But he was asked to preach, you know; and Mr. Harold Smith—” Poor Fanny was only making it worse. Had she been worldly wise, she would have accepted the little compliment implied in Lady Lufton’s first rebuke, and then have held her peace.

“What is it you mean?”

Mr. JON JONSSON (Sheriff of Reykjavik).

Mr. Crawley would probably hardly wish to come back.

These tell me that secretly night after night, though no one knew of it but the virgins dedicated to God in her mother's and grandmother's retinue, Demetrias, refusing sheets of linen and beds of down, spread a rug of goat's hair upon the ground and watered her face with ceaseless tears.

While they were being consumed, they said to the governor, Amachus (for that was his name), if you desire cooked flesh, give orders that our bodies may be turned with the other side to the fire, in order that we may not seem, to your taste, half cooked.

The Reformation in Europe was as much a movement to shake off political oppression as it was to give freedom to religious conscience, and similar causes are apt to produce similar effects.” Then there has come an attack upon him as Foreign Minister from Lord Aberdeen, whom he takes an opportunity of “ paying off,” as he calls it.

Well; as it is, it does not signify; but it might have been that I should have half broken my heart to find her so unfeeling.—More cause for thankfulness than complaint!

It is unnecessary to cross the ocean, or to undertake a long journey.

And he, who to his guilt previously feared not that the blood of dying soldiers should be shed, afterwards considered that, were he to drink the water, he would have shed the blood of living soldiers, saying, Shall I drink the blood of these men who have put their lives in jeopardy [1 Chronicles 11:19]?

For since, says he, we are composed of two parts, namely, mind and body, of which the former part, the mind, is the better, the body the worse; the highest good is the best of the better part, and the chiefest evil the worst of the inferior; now the best thing in the mind is wisdom, and the worst thing in the body is pain.

And so it was too in the Old Testament; by their trials the righteous flourished.

Be that as it may, here it is; he declares most explicitly that under no phasis of the affair whatever have you a leg to stand upon; that Mr Harding is as safe in his hospital as I am here in my rectory; that a more futile attempt to destroy a man was never made, than this which you have made to ruin Mr Harding.

“Untold sums.”

If Christ hung on the tree, He must have been fastened to it with nails, the marks of which He showed to His doubting disciple after His resurrection.

For the law of God is above all laws; it forbids even those things which are esteemed lawful, that it may fulfil justice.

The bishop conducts the ceremony, sheds tears, and prostrates himself in like manner; and all the people burst into tears, and groan aloud.

Accordingly, by investigation, the point proposed for inquiry and answer knocks at the door of truth, according to what appears. And on an opening being made through the obstacle in the process of investigation, there results scientific contemplation. To those who thus knock, according to my view, the subject under investigation is opened.

I may as well mention to you, should you consent to take charge of Ayala, that I have made some provision for her in my will, and that I shall not change it.

For how did iron, which was discovered for the benefit of agriculture and the arts, injure those who sharpened it for murderous battles?

He had his mission to perform and he would perform it, even if he were compelled to do so in the presence of Colonel Schmoff.

I am here in the midst of the turmoil of a contested election, and I cannot refrain from writing to tell you about it.

The men of Hartford are very proud of their charter, and regard it as the parent of their existing liberties quite as much as though no national revolution of their own had intervened.

Nevertheless, he considered that he had made a great sacrifice to his family, and he was received by Lady Pomona as though he were a bright example to other sons.

They were known to be friends of Mrs. Houghton’s who had been in Brothershire, and were therefore in some degree connected even with the Dean.

Now he that changes, has something to change.

When he had shaken off the dread of being the traitor, and was shown to be one of His own, he afterwards asked boldly himself, while the others held their peace.

The acres had come to him all his own, and now, before his death, every one of them would have gone bodily into that greedy maw.

Let him think of Jones.

The Scripture, indeed, loves to place these two words together; as, Righteousness and judgment are the habitation of His seat; and this, He shall make your righteousness as clear as the light, and your judgment as the noon-day; where there is apparently a repetition of the same sentiment.

Round senior had enjoyed the reputation of being a sound, honourable man, but was now considered by some to be not quite sharp enough for the practice of the present day.

On the day after this, Crosbie was to go. On the last afternoon, shortly before dinner, he was waylaid by Lady Julia, who had passed the day in preparing traps to catch him.

Since the giving of good advice is a great means of gaining men's affections, prudence and justice are much needed in every case.

You have repelled us unto the end.

There is nothing that a man may not do, nothing that he may not achieve, if he have only pluck enough to go through with it.

I was like a harmless lamb led to be slaughtered; did I not know it?

O happy feasts!

And this He says in express terms in another place, You believe in God, believe also in me: that is, in the same way as you believe in God, so also believe in me; because I and the Father are One God.

And yet he was gorgeous and florid.

Thus by artifice, or rather by such a system of wicked craft, the devil, devising destruction for the disobedient, and being unworthily honored by them, secretly excited and inflamed their understandings which had already become estranged from the true faith.

My dear Phineas,

For even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature; and likewise the men also, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly.

But Peter said to the assembled multitudes: If Simon can do no other injury to us in regard to God, he at least prevents you from listening to the words that can purify the soul.

And this gift again with an excellency. For as in that case he mentioned not tongues, but the tongues of all mankind, and as he proceeded, those of angels, and then signified that the gift was nothing without love: so also here he mentions not prophecy alone but the very highest prophecy: in having said, If I have prophecy, he added, and know all mysteries and all knowledge; expressing this gift also with intensity.

For an upright life is glorying in Christ.

But she had hardly left her mother’s house when this most pernicious cause of war was admitted to all the freedom of family intercourse!

For they loved not the present world, but him that died for our sakes and was raised by God for us.

Chapter 12. That the holyVirgin is the Mother of God: an argument directed against the Nestorians.

“I have heard so much about you,” said she, still keeping Kate’s hand, “and I know how good you’ve been;—and how wicked you have been,” she added in a whisper.

V. Abstinence not only from food but from other evil desires, especially from wrath, is required in Lent

“ I don’t suppose you will like it,” he replied; “ but it is at any rate a fair specimen of that which it has been my ambition to produce.” I assured him with enthusiasm that I was thoroughly prepared to approve, and that, too, without carping criticism.

And his enjoyment of the earth is no more than yours; for sure he fills not ten stomachs, and thou only one.

Now what sort of person is Apollo, who enjoined the Metapontines to treat Aristeas as a god?

But Paul also paid rent for the house wherein he abode at Rome.

Constantine acceded to her request, and soon after fulfilled his promise.

Because till you came in the way he was always thinking of Catherine Bailey.

If, however, the fact rather be that you are living in error and in impiety, and that in the Church to which you are called truth and piety are found, because there is Christian unity and the love (charitas) of the Holy Spirit, why do you labour any longer to be an enemy to yourself?

“You will dance with me?”

As if that faculty were infirm which God Himself placed in our nature; while the other two, which, as he would have it, are our own, are so strong and firm and self-sufficient as to require none of His help!

Twenty times during dinner she said some little word to Alice, attempting at first to make the time pleasant, and then, when the matter was too far gone for that, attempting to give some relief.

Rather than this, then, He who promises forgiveness, does correct you, saying, As I live, says the Lord, I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked; but that the wicked turn from his way and live.

Lest, moreover, these worshippers should think that our Scriptures intend only to declare that such affections of the human heart spring naturally from the worship of idols, it is written in the plainest terms, All the gods of the nations are devils.

Of all his counsellors, Madame Goesler was the only one who applauded him for what he was about to do.

There was nothing very difficult in the clambering, but, unfortunately, just as we got to the bottom the mist came pouring down upon us, and I could not but bethink me that I should find it very difficult to make my way up again without seeing any of the landmarks. I could still see all below me, but I could see nothing that was above. It seemed as though the mist kept at our own level, and that we dragged it with us.

2. Why need I speak of the multitude that wandered in the deserts and mountains, and perished by hunger, and thirst, and cold, and sickness, and robbers, and wild beasts? Those of them who survived are witnesses of their election and victory.

Chapter XIX. Peter's Speech Ended

If good, then already they had a good will.

How could one four days dead believe, and entreat the Redeemer on his own behalf?

But Mrs. Ray would not accept Mrs. Tappitt’s hand, nor would she vouchsafe any answer to Mrs. Tappitt’s amenities. “Goodbye, ma’am,” she said to Mrs. Rowan. “I suppose you mean to do the best you can by your own child.”

Why should they have the pain of knowing that he had been made wretched forever by blighted hopes?

He had soon given up his hunting, feeling himself ashamed, in his present nameless position, to ride Joshua Thoroughbung’s horses.

“I do trust. I trust in this—that He will do what is best. Oh, Adela! if you could know what the last month has been; since he came to the house!”

He ate six ounces of bread with a few vegetables daily, and drank nothing but water.

“Who wouldn’t dare? by the ‘tarnal, I’d dare it myself! Isn’t there two of us here, whose brothers is now in gaol along of him? Wouldn’t you dare, Jack, av he was up there again in the counthry, to tache him how to be sazing your people?”

But do you, having your foundation sure, even Jesus Christ our Lord, and the confession of the fathers concerning the faith, avoid those who wish to say anything more or less than that, and rather aim at the profit of the brethren, that they may fear God and keep His commandments, in order that both by the teaching of the fathers, and by the keeping of the commandments, they may be able to appear well-pleasing to the Lord in the day of judgment.

These estimable people assure me that you hasten to make her your wife on the instant.

The constant subject of discourse between them was Everett Wharton, who had not yet seen his father since the misfortune of their quarrel.

And where is it found true?

Frank Gresham, though then only twenty-four years of age, was a married man, and a father.

“And you, Foret,” said the Prince.

‘I do not regard what other people say.’

The book was undoubtedly clever, and men read it.

Chapter 6.— Why, When All Will to Be Blessed, that is Rather Chosen by Which One Withdraws from Being So.

“Oh, of course,” said Herbert; “I know how to talk Somers over.”

“You had spoken to me about her,” said Mr Whittlestaff.

On the next morning the miller was in his mill as usual in the morning.

The horse was run in his name.

Her back was turned to the front door, so that she could not see John Caldigate.

His wife was not even allowed to see her son, to receive his last words, to witness his dying struggles.

I first of all deny that any credible evidence, any evidence worthy of the slightest belief, has been brought before you to induce you to suppose that the prisoner had even joined any such conspiracy; instead of which you have strong circumstantial evidence that he had never done so.

‘Charley says you took to the water quite naturally, and swam like a duck,’ said Alaric.

And besides, lest any should suppose what was done to be mere acting, instead of distinctly believing that the devils had gone out; by the death of the swine this is rendered manifest.

If such were to be the case—if it were absolutely necessary that the engagement between you and Lord Ballindine should be broken off, the more decided the manner in which it were done, the better.

But, if your Excellency should perceive that the case is otherwise with him than it is said to be, allow him, I pray you, to return to his church, that he may fulfil his duty to the souls committed to his charge.

What right had he to suppose that she would be false to him,—he, who had never known her to lie to him?

Thus with spiritual things do I compare spiritual, and in no instance have I need of the Wisdom which is without— neither its reasonings nor its embellishments.

“You have given up Lord Rufford?”

For the nature of land that is long disturbed by a superabundance of water, is not thereby so much dissolved, as the force of the human frame is enfeebled, relaxed, and reduced to a state of exhaustion, by the continual swilling of wine.

Silverbridge at this moment was walking close to her side,—in good looks, in gracious manner, in high breeding her equal,—in worldly gifts infinitely her superior.

“Mr. Rattler and Mr. Roby.”

For how can the one be allowed and the other disallowed?

Justin: And in what would you be profited by philosophy so much as by your own lawgiver and the prophets?

And then there was an idea present to him through it all that abstract justice, if abstract justice could be reached, would declare that the property should be his.

It would be wrong to say that she was in any degree a hypocrite.

So far I have replied to the separate portions of his argument; I shall now address myself to the general question.

Lastly, brethren, as I think, he meant this; Bring my soul out of prison, bring it out of straitness.

“I have heard it for the last month,” said Pratt, “and it has been spoken of as a thing certain; and it is true; is it not?”

“You will find me better when you come back, though I shall never cease to regret all that I have lost.”

Before long Alice saw that Mr Palliser was yawning, and she began to understand how much he had given up in order that his wife might be secure.

You have been aware how great is the friendship I have felt for the unfortunate gentleman whose career is in question, and for the lady who bears his name.

But as she became aware of this a new trouble arose and harassed her very soul.

[Matthew 25:46] Now if the life be eternal, the punishment is eternal.

What took place between them no one knows, and, probably, no one ever will know.

“That’s about what you’ll have to do if all that you tell me is true.” There was again that tone of disappearing subjection. “I’ll be shot if I wouldn’t take the money.” Then there was a pause. “Couldn’t you do that and go to law with him afterward? That was what your father would have done.” Yes; but Augustus had to acknowledge that he was not as clever as his father.

But on account of the presence in the flesh the just have spoken of His mission.

“Are you going to rob the shop?” said he.

Now, as we have in a great number of other places spoken about humility, there is no need to repeat the same things here.

Mrs. Stistick sat herself down on an opposite sofa, and seemed to think that she did her duty to society by sitting there.

In the joints of these bones the marrow and fatty substances were still evident, showing but too plainly that many months had not elapsed since he met his fate.” This was as late as 1868.

To Lucy it was a new and most bitter experience.

“So that I shall only be shooting two days,” said the Vicar, “which will modify the aspect of my infidelity considerably.”

There was the shout of voices,—the quick passage of the boats,—the uprising, some half a dozen times, of the men’s hands above the surface; and then they were gone down the river, out of sight,—like morsels of wood thrown into a cataract, which are borne away instantly.

He would give over his house and furniture to Gazebee, allowing Gazebee to do as he would about that.

I would send you Mrs. Brownlow’s letter, only perhaps it would not be quite fair.

She had told him he would have her money: she had said it would come to him as a matter of course; and it was not the dread of losing that which prevented his saying a word in his own defence.

Sir Florian would no doubt pay the bill for his wife without any arguments as to the legality of the claim.

He is an unclean animal, leaving a scent upon his trail, which the nose of your acute law hound can pick up over almost any ground.

Thinking of all this, as a novelist surely must do,—as I certainly have done through my whole career,—it becomes to him a matter of deep conscience how he shall handle those characters by whose words and doings he hopes to interest his readers.

In India an army had mutinied, and that an army composed of a subdued, if not a servile race.

In the first part of the book he proves that the perseverance by which a man perseveres in Christ to the end is God's gift; for that it is a mockery to ask of God that which is not believed to be given by God.

Cousin George told a great many lies, but he told also much that was true.

But before all these, He foretells that persecutions and sufferings were to come upon them, which indeed were to turn for a testimony to them, and for their salvation.

Mr. Moss knows all about it, and has simply asked how much I wanted.

Herbert would go away and would gradually be forgotten.

I told him everything that I could tell him.

The bluebacks,—as the Orange Free State banknotes were called,—have been redeemed at par, and the Revenue of the country is amply sufficient for its modest wants.

“Ah; go into no other world but this,” said Herr Crippel, “lest I should not be able to follow you.” And then he went away again to his post.

For that which teems with astonishment, and is beyond hope and all expectation, is that God should become man.

It was from a mere acquaintance, who in the ordinary course of things would not have written to him.

“It’s easy knowing how he come by it,” said Bean.

To one fraulein after another she said a civil word.

For it is the way of the covetous, the more they heap up around them, the more to be sparing of it.

What does it mean?

But whenever an opinion is enunciated, the reader feels it to be unnecessary.

From this sinners, because it wearied them, are rightly cast out, and hear the words, 'Friend, how did you come in hither, not having a wedding garment [Matthew 22:12]?'

And in addition to the above, this Jew of Celsus afterwards addresses Jesus: What need, moreover, was there that you, while still an infant, should be conveyed into Egypt?

Longing to know more I began to question the man with much eagerness about the truth of what I heard, and learned as follows.

And I am sure that the work so done has had in it the best truth and the highest spirit that I have been able to produce.

Thus it is that God's grace not only shows what ought to be done, but also helps to the possibility of doing what it shows.

Mary did kiss him, and he did go. But as she was still lingering in the room, putting away a book, or a reel of thread, and then sitting down to think what the morrow would bring forth, the doctor again came into the room in his dressing-gown, and with the slippers on.

If Lady Eustace chose to entertain such a suitor, why should he not come?

Kate was an unmarried woman with a very small fortune, and therefore, of course, was desirous of being married with as little delay as possible.

But Serapion's arrogance no one could bear; for thus having won John's unbounded confidence and regard, he was so puffed up by it that he treated every one with contempt.

“But how about the girl, Newton?” asked his lordship.

He was willing to abide by that, or to go to the sacrifice at any earlier day of which Parliament would admit.

98. Augustine answered: Remember all of you who read this, it was Petilianus who quoted these words from the apostle. For who could have believed that he would have brought forward words which tell so much for us against himself?

[Matthew 6:10] For he that fears lest the kingdom of God should come, fears lest his prayer be heard.

For on the second day of the week, that is, the day after the first which we call the Lord's day, which also is called the second week-day, was made the firmament of Heaven.

We can see him as he waves his hand and passes on.

Santerre was of Flemish descent, and by trade a brewer.

John 6:19

Here is mention made of nations that were hostile to them, Cretans, Arabians, Egyptians, Persians: and that they would conquer them all was here made manifest.

Then shall He make answer to them, and say, You acknowledged me as Lord, but you kept not my words.

Once more he calls the Father only God, who employs the Only-begotten as an instrument for the production of the Spirit.

For if in anything I have gloried to him on your behalf.

And why do I speak of doctrines?

The feeding of the needy is the purchase money of the heavenly kingdom and the free dispenser of things temporal is made the heir of things eternal.

If you force such a writing on me against my will, and make a display of authority to drive me into belief, shall I, when I have a writing which I see spread far and wide for a length of time, and sanctioned by the concordant testimony of churches scattered over all the world, degrade myself by doubting, and, worse degradation, by doubting at your suggestion?

‘That’s as you thought,’ he replied.

I do not suppose that he had meditated any special line of policy during the119 years of hard work in Gaul, but I think that he was determined not to relinquish his power, and that he was ready for any violence by which he might preserve it.

And in the same way a clever man often sees that an inference is unsound more quickly than he apprehends the rules for it.

The intercourse between them and their grownup children is now almost that of equals.

We then advanced between two other mouths, and came to that which was nearest to the existing crater.

Steinmark. Twelve hours won’t hurt you, Belleroach. Van Hoppen.

Which of us, for instance, has not been careless in his prayers?

To Him terrible they offer gifts.

No man need cease to love without a cause.

“Well; I did. But don’t suppose I say that as a sort of threat. I’m safe enough to live for the next sixty years. It’s only the happy people and those that are some good in the world that die. Goodbye, Lady Staveley. I’ll come back next Christmas;—that is if it isn’t all settled before then; but I know it will be no good.” Then he got on his horse and rode very slowly home, along the high road to The Cleeve.

And accordingly this style must be used in alternation with the other two styles whenever questions of that sort turn up; just as we must use the temperate style, no matter what may be the general tone of the discourse, whenever praise or blame is to be given without any ulterior reference to the condemnation or acquittal of any one, or to obtaining the concurrence of any one in a course of action.

Then there came to her a memory of a certain day, in which she had been almost proud to think that Crosbie had admired her, in which she had almost hoped that it might be so; and as she thought of this she blushed, and struck her foot twice upon the floor.

“And carriage-horses and hacks?”

I must at the outset of my defence entreat you, illustrious emperors, to listen to me impartially: not to be carried away by the common irrational talk and prejudge the case, but to apply your desire of knowledge and love of truth to the examination of our doctrine also.

Exchange your love of necklaces and of gems and of silk dresses for earnestness in studying the scriptures.

For come, let us look at it in this way.

So the emperor having uttered disdainful expressions against the Christians in the presence of an unthinking multitude, through the same morbid condition of mind fell into Porphyry's blasphemies.

Chapter 46. That Eusebius afterwards delivered his Description of the Church of the Saviour, and a Tricennial Oration before Constantine himself.

Such a state of affairs is certainly one that has not uncommonly been reached by financiers; it has also often been experienced by gentlemen in the management of their private affairs.

He speaks here of the flesh [the human nature].

“Called to a fellow he had there with a knife in his hand, cutting leather, to turn me out of the shop. And the man would have done it, too, if I hadn’t gone.”

Phineas had come primed with his answer,—so ready with it that it did not even seem to be the result of any hesitation at the moment.

Again you say that Isaac gave a blessing to his son when satiated [Genesis 27:27].

Unless, indeed, Eunomius would maintain that Holy Scripture does so too, signifying as it does by the same idea the infinity of the Divine existence; David, for example, making mention of the kingdom from everlasting, and Moses, speaking of the kingdom of God as extending beyond all ages, so that we are taught by both that every duration conceivable is environed by the Divine nature, bounded on all sides by the infinity of Him Who holds the universe in His embrace.

They had taken Caldigate’s money, and had still gone on with the prosecution.

What was the nature of her plan, and how she effected it, will be seen in the letter which she wrote;—

She would rather go on for ever struggling than take some country Whitstable as her sister was about to do.

Others are said to have no head, and their eyes in their shoulders; and other human or quasi-human races are depicted in mosaic in the harbor esplanade of Carthage, on the faith of histories of rarities.

There are outgoings in morning, there are outgoings in the evening.

This then let us follow, that we may enjoy also the fruits thereof; unto which God grant we may all attain, by the grace and love towards man of our Lord Jesus Christ to whom be glory and might world without end. Amen.

Mr. Prosper Is Visited by His Lawyers

At the same time I have sent Benenatus the notary to occupy your place in the patrimony in the district of Panormus till such time as Almighty God may ordain what pleases Him.

It was the first piece of animation she had shown, and Lucy Robarts watched it all.

A few glasses of whisky have made all the difference!’

Multitudes then came together to hear Paul, and these, influenced by the truth which they were given to know, and by the miracles of the apostles, which they then so frequently performed, turned to the worship of God.

He was not to her now the bright and shining thing, the godlike Phœbus, which he had been in Wyndham Street and at Yoxham.

But the University is the glory of Toronto.

For those persons were carnal, not in a fleshly, but in a spiritual way, to whom the apostle said, I could not speak to you as unto spiritual, but as unto carnal.

“He used to be so particular about the foxes, and I don’t suppose that a country gentleman will change his ideas because he has given up hunting himself.”

For this Montanus, who was out of his mind and really mad (for he would not have said such things, had he not been mad), dared to say that he was himself the Holy Ghost—he, miserable man, and filled with all uncleanness and lasciviousness; for it suffices but to hint at this, out of respect for the women who are present.

Why, now, wretched man, do you come wandering alone over the mountain-tops?

Young Eames, though he lived in Burton Crescent and had as yet no connection with the West End, had already learned his lesson in this respect.

She did not doubt that Felix might be “made” by Mr Melmotte’s city influences, but then any perpetuity of such making must depend on qualifications in her son which she feared that he did not possess.

What is the end?

For only then will even the second stage of goodness, that which is displayed towards the stranger, be accounted rational, when it operates without wrong to him who has the first claim.

The Arians concentrate their attention on the humble conditions of Christ's human life, and so, from want of a comprehensive view, fail to discern His true Godhead.

Thackeray had himself intended to begin with one of his own great novels, but had put it off till it was too late.

Truly when I heard, I smiled at the puerile mind which could give vent to these words!

For when one of them through goodness of will returned thanks, the Lord looking for the nine, and praising the one, showed that He was ever anxious to help even those who were unmindful of His kindness.

“I suppose so,” said he, still blushing, but frowning at the same time.

There is then in philosophy, though stolen as the fire by Prometheus, a slender spark, capable of being fanned into flame, a trace of wisdom and an impulse from God.

Who was he that he should class himself among the big ones of the world?

If, then, water was scorned by the armed king, and turned into a sacrifice to God, we may estimate what manner of sacrifice to Almighty God has been offered by the king who for His love has scorned to receive, not water, but gold.

It is not because his opinion on church matters may be different from ours—with that one would not quarrel.

And as the blind, although they stand at high noon beneath the very central point of the heaven, receive not the light, their eyes being fast closed up; just so these also, though ten thousand doctrines of salvation sound in their ears from all quarters, having their soul preoccupied with this passion stop their ears against such discourses.

For I saw the table of the Lord's House, and mules standing around it on all sides in a ring, and kicking the things therein, just like a herd kicks when it leaps in confusion.

[2 Corinthians 5:19] It is absolutely impossible to separate one from the other.

So that this is the mystery of God, the being brought unto Him by the Son.

I know she did, Mr. Morton; and all that has to be undone,—and I have got the undoing of it.

It’s all very well to say that he had no right to do it; but he had done it.

“Where does she mean to go? She won’t live always in Keppel Street?”

I do not for a moment doubt that you would make a great picture of it.

There is not a letter among them that any girl could have written in any age.

Are ye not an evil generation, esteeming yourselves righteous, yet not washed from the guilt of your going forth [from the Church]?

It seems that whenever any slight act of rebellion on their parts was successful, the whole tribe and the neighbouring tribes would be so elated as to think that now had come the time for absolutely subduing the white strangers.

Although He died of weakness, yet He lives of the power of God.

But she could not bring herself to say that she would love him, and be his wife.

Then he put the book in his pocket.

I was always in trouble.

“I would thrash you if I could, for the pure pleasure.”

“It’s more than I could have said yesterday with truth.”

We thought it better that we should explain something of all this to her.

He had been sent to Paris to see something of the world, and learn to talk French instead of the patois of his valley; and having left Paris had come down south into Languedoc, and remained there picking up some agricultural lore which it was thought might prove useful in the valley farms of Vernet.

Now there is need of these signs which are on the earth, but those in Heaven are stored up against that time.

Laura and her brother probably saw each other daily,—but they never went into society together, and did not know the same sets of people.

‘Why are you so cross to this young man?’

Her letter took her long to write.

I like to hear that a girl has been true to her first kiss.

Petilianus said: "But what have you to do with the kings of this world, in whom Christianity has never found anything save envy towards her?

In this perfection it is possible for man and woman equally to share.

And the Holy Spirit is called the Spirit of God and so also is the soul of man, for, it is written, His breath goes forth, and O you spirits and souls of the righteous bless ye the Lord, and the Psalmist David called the angels spirits.

What is it to rejoice aright?

“Those nails are not large enough,” I had said; “nor nearly large enough.” But when the boots came home they struck even me as being too heavy, too metalsome.

“Amelia has done very well, my dear.”

But I feel my weakness, and I know that I can’t.

If you do not prove these charges, they tell against no one in the world; and if you prove them, they have no bearing upon us; just as those things have no bearing upon you which are daily done by the furious deeds of the insane, by the luxury of the drunken, by the blindness of the suicides, by the tyranny of robbers.

“I am here, ma’am,” said he, “to speak to you about my friend, Captain Clavering.”

For Phidias is found in Pisa making for the Eleians the Olympian Jupiter, and at Athens the Minerva of the Acropolis.

Of her own folly, she would speak very severely,—if he treated it lightly.

This he says, being about to narrate his former life, and sudden conversion, and to demonstrate clearly that it was sincere.

“Shall I tell the dear girl?” asked Mrs. French.

“Yes; I have to think of it, and do think of it; and because I do so I am not what I call a gentleman.”

For they would immediately have gone over to the worship of those demons which gave oracles and performed cures, and deserted the God who was believed, as far as words went, to assist them, but who never manifested to them His visible presence.

[18, 19] [Luke 11:16] And others requested of him a sign from heaven, to tempt him.

Each party knew the tricks of the other; and yet, taking it all in all, the widow got on very well with her children, and everybody said what a good mother she had been: she was accustomed to use deceit, and was therefore not disgusted by it in others. Whether the system of domestic manners which I have described is one likely to induce to sound restraint and good morals is a question which I will leave to be discussed by writers on educational points.

In this manner then was the genuine cross discovered.

Of course it would be conveyed under the seal of a sacred promise,—which no doubt would be broken as soon as she reached the Deanery.

On the Words, And Rose Again from the Dead on the Third Day, and Ascended into the Heavens, and Sat on the Right Hand of the Father.

“Come; you might show out a little to me. Isn’t it grand? We shall always have you among us now. Don’t tell me that you are indifferent.”

Lest they might be made haughty, that they might not be puffed up, that they might not grow more negligent, that they might not be more excited.

“Frank,” she said, and then stopped; not being able at the moment to get any further.

And the army of the Chaldeans seized all the treasure that was found in the house of the Lord, and all the vessels of gold and silver; and all the brass, Nebuzaradan, chief of the slaughterers, stripped off, and carried it to Babylon.

For I understand by myself how wonderful and incomprehensible is Your knowledge, by which You made me, when I cannot even comprehend myself whom You have made!

Medicine, the result of philosophy and laboriousness, was rendered necessary for him by his physical delicacy, and his care of the sick.

It released the captives.

Old Pickering then declared that in such circumstances he should withdraw all pecuniary assistance; and young Pickering upon this wrote an ungracious epistle, in which he expressed himself quite ready to take upon himself the burden of his own maintenance.

Therefore man carries not with him anything, nor does the dead take with him that which the burial takes.

And that He was sent Peter testifies, when he says to the centurion Cornelius: God sent His Word unto the children of Israel by the preaching of Jesus Christ.

These are the facts.

The public gardens, indeed, were open to her and to Anton Trendellsohn as they were to others; but she knew that she would not dare to be seen in public with her Jew lover till the thing was done and she and the Jew had become man and wife.

She was thinking of no other love; but her young heart was opening itself to a very different feeling.

What injury could any spiritual or material elevation do to God?

For the quality of the speech that is heard is the seed of the thought which follows, since, while speech is conceived through the ear, thought is engendered in the mind.

33. And now, O Emperor, I beg you not to disdain to hear me who am in fear both for yourself and for myself, for it is the voice of a Saint which says: Wherefore was I made to see the misery of my people? [1 Maccabbees 2:7] that I should commit an offense against God. I, indeed, have done what could be done consistently with honour to you, that you might rather listen to me in the palace, lest, if it were necessary, you should listen to me in the Church.

But the queen, forced by her sore need, and careless of her royal dignity, herself ran to the captive.

For every sin brings filth upon the soul.

Dear Florence!

He had sinned, and had repented; and now to her eyes he was again as pure as snow.

Worthy of very great honour, certainly, was the tyrant Bhalaris, who devoured sucklings, and accordingly is exhibited by the workmanship of Polystratus the Ambraciot, even to this day, as a very wonderful man!

“I certainly will not disturb him,” Reginald had said.

Sir Thomas smiled as he heard him, and, as he smiled, he resolved that, as soon as the Christmas festivities should be over, the Honourable Septimus Traffick should certainly be turned out of that house.

Young, you will say.

‘It has gone on very nicely, I think, Uncle Michel.’ She knew how worse than useless it would be now to try and make him understand that it would be better for them both that she should remain with him. She knew, to the moving of a feather, what she could do with him and what she could not. Her immediate wish was to enable him to draw all possible pleasure from his triumph of the day, and therefore she would say no word to signify that his glory was founded on her sacrifice.

He could not make a house to live in, nor could he coin a fortune.

“Oh, Ballindine, that’s nonsense. One can keep no common terms with such a blackguard as that. However, it’s done now; and I must say I think it was well done.”

DEAREST, DEAREST FLORENCE:—They will not let me out, or I would go to you at once. My mother has written, and though I have not seen her letter, I know what it contains. Indeed, indeed you may believe it all. May I not venture to return the parcel? I do send it back, and implore you to keep it. I shall be in town, I think, on Monday, and will go to Onslow Crescent—instantly.

“Yes, Caroline Waddington.”

You are of age, and can do as you please.

Whence are the worthless and evil?

For [1 Peter 2:11] we are sojourners and pilgrims.

This was written while he was dressing, and was put into the letterbox by himself as he came downstairs.

Ask the earth and she shall tell you that it is she which ought to mourn, outliving so many that grow upon her.

Once, and once only, he met Lady Anna alone, after his father’s departure, and before her interview with Lord Lovel. Then he met her on the stairs of the house while her mother was absent at the lawyer’s chambers.

They say that Thaddeus also was one of them, concerning whom I shall presently relate an account which has come down to us.

You can not requite them.

For it says: Remove not the bounds which your fathers have set.

“Oh yes, my dear.”

For flesh alone without the soul cannot see anything.

Caesar, having thus failed, returns south, as winter approaches, to Rheims,—Durocortorum; and just telling us in four -words how he had one Acco tortured to death because Acco had headed a conspiracy in the middle of Gaul among the Carnutes and Senones, and how he outlawed and banished others whom he could not catch, he puts his legions into winter quarters, and again goes back to Italy to hold assizes and look after his interests amid the great affairs of the Republic.

[Proverbs 16:5] And in the histories, the devil, and all the rest.

In the beginning He was, uncaused; for what is the Cause of God?

Moggs had petitioned on his own behalf, and two of the Liberals of the borough had also petitioned in the interest of Mr. Westmacott.

They, therefore, had been at hand to undertake their duties.

Those other laws are manifest to us; we know that the murderer and adulterer ought to be punished.

But it is so likely to ally itself, in the minds of some, with that on which I am talking, that I have found it difficult not to say that I at least, in advocating higher education for women, am not advising any woman to think herself qualified to do the work of a man.

And white colours well become gravity.

“More than anybody else in the world?”

For if to be is said in respect to Himself, but person relatively; in this way we should say three persons, the Father, Son, and Holy Spirit; just as we speak of three friends, or three relations, or three neighbors, in that they are so mutually, not that each one of them is so in respect to himself.

A long interval of time it was, dragged out as if it were in the blackness of night.

Not but what my heart has been yours and yours only all along, before the old lady so much as mentioned it.” Clara would give him no assistance, not even the aid of a negative, but stood there quite passive, with her hand on the door.

“The worst is that everything does seem to go against the poor governor.”

“I should be willing that they should do so. No;—if I pay this money I shall take the consequences. I shall not do it in any way under the rose. But I wish you would remember—”

[Luke 6:40] A disciple is not better than his master; [19] every perfect man shall be as his master.

“It isn’t easy to make crooked things straight, Carry, but we may try; and they do become straighter if one tries in earnest. Will you answer me one question more?”

Fitly, therefore, does Isaac, the child of promise, typify the children of grace, the citizens of the free city, who dwell together in everlasting peace, in which self-love and self-will have no place, but a ministering love that rejoices in the common joy of all, of many hearts makes one, that is to say, secures a perfect concord.

The first Schlessen whom the Frau had known in her youth, and who was then a very old man, had been almost as Conservative as the priest.

Book 11

Nay, often where he has not even borrowed anything from any one, but is only suspected, he has suffered the fate of a thief.

For as I do not think that the Word was a thing made, so I do not say that God was its Maker, but its Father.

A month or two back, before her ladyship went to Königsgraaf, she certainly would not have ventured to express a direct wish for the young man’s death, however frequently her thoughts might have travelled in that direction.

It was quite proper that he should learn that his wife had been engaged to the man whom he had so violently despised.

Morton looked at him as grim as death, just raised his hand, and then passed on with a quick step.

It will be remembered that Adolphe Denot left the council-room of the royalist leaders at Saumur in anger; and that, after a few words with Henri Larochejaquelin, departed no one knew whither, or for what purpose.

But to all these repentance, and that speedy, is open, in order that what they did not do in former times they may make up for in these days, and do some good, and they shall live unto God.

He opened the hall door without ringing the bell, and walking at once into the dining-room, threw himself into a large leathern chair which always stood near the fireplace.

There were many who were willing, for family considerations, to keep him in Parliament; but no one thought that he was fit to be there.

For this reason, the credit of religion and piety demanded the presence of the true Prophet, that He Himself might tell us respecting each particular, how the truth stands, and might teach us how we are to believe concerning each.

But, like a mighty wrestler, he will not relinquish his irresistible hold on us, and affirms in so many words, that these names are the work of human thought and conception, and that, by the exercise of this operation of the mind by some, results are arrived at which no Apostle or Evangelist has taught.

Then Peter, being delighted with the eagerness of his disciples, said: [Speak what you will.]

But the seven-robed nature, encircled and arrayed with seven mantles of ethereal texture— for so they call the planetary stars, allegorizing and denominating them ethereal robes—is as it were the changeable generation, and is exhibited as the creature transformed by the ineffable and unportrayable, and inconceivable and figureless one.

From the instant that the fire begins to be, that instant it begets the shining: neither fire before shining, nor shining after fire.

But of what sort is our Betrothed, who has loved one deformed, that he might make her fair?

There came something of a regret that fortune had placed her so utterly beyond his notice;—but she was sure of this, sure of this, that if the chance were offered to her, she would not mar his greatness by accepting the priceless boon of his love.

“Dolly, my dear, what do you think of Mr. Gibson?”

There are those who will say that English taste is taking the same direction.

But the remembrance of all this only made her firmer in her resolution.

Kate’s task was, therefore, difficult, both as regarded the temporal and spiritual wants of her grandfather.

Twenty times she had resolved that she would prevent it; but twenty times she had been forced to confess that she was powerless to do so.

“‘Deed an’ they won’t,” said Father Columb, having altogether laid aside his bland smile now that the time had come, as he thought, to speak up for the people. “They may bear it in England, but they won’t here.” And the sternness of his eye was almost invincible.

And then there came a time in which she was grown woman enough to understand that her father was being much talked about.

John 11:48

Unmarried ladies of a certain age, whatever may be their own feelings in regard to matrimony on their own behalf, seem always impressed with a conviction that other ladies in the same condition would certainly marry if they got an opportunity.

Could anything equal the virtue of this?

He, when he had settled the other matters on account of which he came, said, Come now, O bishop, restore to us the deposit which I and the Saviour committed to you in the face of the Church over which you preside, as witness.

Martin and John patiently and enduringly remained standing the whole day, till four o’clock; and then the latter had to effect his escape, in order to keep an appointment which he had made to meet Lord Ballindine.

How then shall we deliver him?

But Lucius Mason would have none of the law.

“No indeed. You know the old saying, ‘God disposes it all.’ I have to make the best of it,—and so no doubt do you.”

And fresh butter will be made.

If you be in sorrow for money, for reputation, for him that is departed, all these are worldly.

They depress my soul, and abase my mind, and fetter my tongue, and make me consider, not the position of a prelate, or the guidance and direction of others, which is far beyond my powers; but how I myself am to escape the wrath to come, and to scrape off from myself somewhat of the rust of vice.

Sophy, she knew, would have accepted it without scruple.

“No, dear Will; it is not mine. You know that.”

They were standing at the water’s-edge, while three long-boats were being prepared to take them off.

Nor, again, that this Trinity descended in the form of a dove upon Jesus when He was baptized; nor that, on the day of Pentecost, after the ascension of the Lord, when there came a sound from heaven, as of a rushing mighty wind, the same Trinity sat upon each of them with cloven tongues like as of fire, but only the Holy Spirit.

Let him accustom himself so to find in corporeal things the traces of things spiritual, that when he begins to ascend upwards from thence, under the guidance of reason, in order to attain to the unchangeable truth itself through which these things were made, he may not draw with himself to things above what he despises in things below.

Must we then enter minutely into this, and laboriously refute all his invectives by showing that Basil was not this monster of his imagination?

And the most divine Evangelist says the Word was made flesh.

For it is well-known what Plato's opinion was concerning scenic plays.

And then, perhaps, thoughts had come to her, when Herbert Fitzgerald was frequent about the place, a rich and thriving wooer, that Owen might come again to Desmond Court, when Clara had gone to Castle Richmond.

Now melt into sorrow, now madden to crime?

This was a marvelous feature in Martin that not only on this occasion to which I have specially referred, but on many occasions of the same kind, in fact as often as such things occurred, he perceived them long beforehand, and disclosed the things which had been revealed to him to the brethren.

And also pray for me, who have need of your love, along with the mercy of God, that I may be worthy of the lot for which I am destined, and that I may not be found reprobate.

Her mother should live with them if she wished it.

“Done nothing! but, indeed, you have, Michael. Have you not made pikes for us, and have not your sons fought for us like brave soldiers?”

But were it to be ordained otherwise,—should it be God’s will that he must die,—then, as he grew weaker, he would become more plastic in her hands, and she might still prevail.

On this account we should call no man happy, save him only who lives according to God.

The Major was fond of shooting, and would have been glad to accept the offer; but it was out of the question that he should allow himself to be taken in at Cobble Hall under a false pretext. And was it not incumbent on him to make this young man understand that he had no pretensions whatever to the hand of the second Miss Wanless? “ You are very good,” said he.

There was turned an enemy, as you will understand it.

For all that depends on that Am makes for my side, for it has neither beginning nor ending.

He shows that the gift is according to the will of the Father.

The Earl’s own room was at the back, or if the reader pleases, front of the house, near the door leading into the street, and was, of all rooms in the house, the gloomiest.

He asked for the Dean, and not for Lady George, and was shown into the library.

We have all come into this world, O virgins, endowed with singular beauty, which has a relationship and affinity to divine wisdom.

One mistake as to two drops out of a wrong bottle, made by an assistant, will ruin a man for ever.

“Except when imported from Christendom, Mrs. Hunter.”

How does he maintain it?

Wherefore also He says, Straining at the gnat, and swallowing the camel.

He was obliged to go to this special place and he hated staying.

The Lord Hampstead.”

“If I don’t, to whom shall I tell it? And how can I bear it without telling it to some one?”

[Revelation 2:6, 15] I do not now bring up to you the many virgins whom you are said to have seduced, or the noble matrons who have suffered death because violated by you, or the greedy profligacy with which you have hied through dens of sin.

The first to give in were those who had them withered and cut; and because they were found to be thus withered and cut, he commanded them to stand apart.

You know my mode of life, and what are my hopes and my chances of success.

Oddly enough after this, it is,—or it is not,—at this moment a portion of British territory.

When a clergyman has shown himself to be utterly unfit for clerical duties, he must not be held to be protected from ecclesiastical censure or from deprivation by the action of the common law.

The old lady was quite overcome with emotion, and prepared to lay at the feet of her eldest son, if he would only extend to her the slightest sign of affection.

On the shore the little Toxotius stretched forth his hands in entreaty, while Rufina, now grown up, with silent sobs besought her mother to wait till she should be married.

God's mercy and justice, dearly-beloved, has in loving-kindness disclosed to us through our Lord Jesus Christ's teaching, the manner of His retributions, as they have been ordained from the foundation of the world, that accepting the significance of facts we might take what we believe will happen, to have, as it were, already come to pass.

that, as it is said of that Word, All things were made by Him, where God is declared to have made the universe by His only-begotten Son, so there are no works of man that are not first spoken in his heart: whence it is written, A word is the beginning of every work.

Exhibit (to us) a third Adam, and him a digamist; and then you will be able to be what, between the two, you cannot.

For another hour after he had returned to his place, the Emperor sat solemn in his chair; and then, at some signal given by some one, he was withdrawn.

Let a committee of Irish landlords say how the rents are paid now, and what amount of arrears was due through the country when the famine came among them.

His services were wanted; and therefore, though he was ruined, men smiled on him.

Fear the Lord God, all you His saints: for there is no want to them that fear Him.

And we, considering the power and loving-kindness of Providence, think that the coming of Christ in the flesh was not impossible with God.

She was a little girl, about eight years of age, like her mother, only that her enormous eyes were black, and her hair quite jet.

Some, when they find themselves with child through their sin, use drugs to procure abortion, and when (as often happens) they die with their offspring, they enter the lower world laden with the guilt not only of adultery against Christ but also of suicide and child murder.

Almost incredible efforts had been made to obtain the cooperation of great people, and these efforts had at last been grandly successful.

There was a crisp, sharp enjoyment attached to a long walk with her father which Madeline always loved, and on the present occasion she was willing to be very happy; but as she started, with her arm beneath his, she feared she knew not what.

[Mark 7:9] This is a worse crime than that which the lapsed seem to have fallen into, who nevertheless, standing as penitents for their crime, beseech God with full satisfactions.

She therefore had no objection to leave Peregrine alone with her one ewe-lamb, and therefore the opportunity which he sought was at last found.

“But I want to speak to you first, my dear,” said Mrs. Clavering. “I have got a letter for you, or rather a parcel.” Harry held out his hand, and, taking the packet, at once recognized the writing of the address.

It has sometimes taken all the Courts a century to decide whether a marriage is a marriage or not.

As has been said already, the sacred record, like a faithful mirror, has no flattery in its portraits, and either itself passes sentence upon human actions as worthy of approval or disapproval, or leaves the reader to do so.

Now I am full of hope.

What meagre profits spread from pen and ink.”

Which accordingly He does here also; for through so many words as He has spent He ceases not to set Him before us, admiring His wisdom, His providence, His tender care extending through all things, both great and small.

They were to pray twelve times every day and as often during the evening, and were to offer up the same number of prayers during the night.

[John 1:47] But who are true Christians, save those of whom the same Lord said, "He that has my commandments, and keeps them, he it is that loves me?"

And the men do get rum, and drunkenness is .

His own law teaches you; but since you seek to wander, you disbelieve all things, and thence you shall go into hell.

“Thank you,—no. I will not trouble you. That will do, Mrs. Fuller. You have intended to do your duty, no doubt, and now you can go.” Whereupon Mrs. Fuller did go. “I am obliged for your care, Sir Marmaduke, but I can really do very well without troubling you.”

[Matthew 13:15] For where there is wilful wickedness, there is also a withholding of grace: for to him that has shall be given; but from him that has not shall be taken even that which he seems to have.

But many thoughts crowd around me. I know not which to utter first, and which second. Wherefore, let no one, I entreat, require order of me, for the subjects are closely allied.

Here you see that Saul had not innocence, and yet he had holiness—not the personal holiness of a holy life (for that no one can have without innocence), but the holiness of the sacrament of God, which is holy even in unrighteous men.

[Isaiah 45:11] Elsewhere too Scripture says: By whom also He made the ages, who is the brightness of His glory and the express Image of His Person.

[Romans 3:5] and again, "What shall we say then?

For no one can know better than he who suffered through them, what a wife or woman is.

For to you is the promise, and to your children and to all that are afar off, even as many as the Lord our God shall call unto Him.

What He says is of this kind: It is Moses who has been insulted more than I by your conduct towards Me, for you have disbelieved him rather than Me.

For suppose any one had conducted you into princely halls, and shown you the gold everywhere glittering on the walls, and all the rest of the glorious show; if from thence he had led you back afterward to a poor man's hut, and promised that in a short time he would bring you back to those palaces, and would there give you a perpetual mansion; tell me, would you not indeed languish with desire, and feel impatient, even at these few days?

For he commands holocausts to be skinned and divided into parts.

And then Adela Gauntlet came up to town for a month; and George, though he was on three or four occasions in Eaton Square, never saw Caroline alone; but he became used to seeing her and being with her. The strangeness of their meeting wore itself away: he could speak to her without reserve on the common matters of life, and found that he had intense delight in doing so.

Augustine answered: I might rather say, O wretched traditors!

For his mother’s sake he was open to a compromise.

But he was terribly anxious to exercise the power which the use of the threat might give him.

“It cannot be that you love me, or you would not joke now.”

What equal to this sublimity?

If the Lord says, 'As the Father knows Me, even so know I the Father [John 10:15],' and if the Father knows not the Son partially, are they not mad to say idly that the Son knows the Father only partially, and not fully?

He even confesses him to be still ruler.

They do not hold this from fear of making it seem equal to God.

The Queen is the head of the Church, and therefore sends down word to a chapter, which in truth as a chapter no longer exists, that it has permission to choose its bishop, the bishop having been already appointed by the Prime Minister, who is the nominee of the House of Commons!

For what would it have profited Lazarus, that he came forth from the tomb, unless it were said to him, loose him, and let him go?

And on account of the fixing of this term of six months, he calls to remembrance the annunciation made by Gabriel, in the sixth month of the conception of the Forerunner, in which the Lord was conceived.

“Don’t you think those two old priests are magnificent?” she said, pressing on his arm, in the obscurity of the darkened chamber.

Such was the spirit of madness with which these princes sacrificed to their demon deities men consecrated to the service of the King of kings.

Nothing difficult nor obscure, nor contrary to what went before, but rather very agreeable to it, if we give heed: viz., that prophecy is suitable to both, but then tongue not so.

At last the very three came down, in the centre of which was the volume containing the will.

No man could be so quick in the matter of a horse who spent as many hours with the poor and with the children as should be spent by a parish clergyman.

[Luke 12:8] Now they who shall confess Christ will have to be slain before men, but they will have nothing more to suffer after they have been put to death by them.

“It is he that shall be afraid of me,” said Lopez. “Let him give the borough up if he means what he says.”

On the 8th of November, the day after that on which the Consul was to have been murdered in his own house, he called a special meeting of the Senate in the temple of Jupiter Stator.

And I will pray my Father, and He shall give you another Comforter.

“Just go down to his cottage and tell him that you forgive him.”

He remarked that he hoped that would not be necessary.

If Tregear could be got out of the way, his father, he thought, might be reconciled to other things.

We anathematize also them that say that the Word of God is separated from the Father by extension and contraction, and blasphemously affirm that He is without essential being or is destined to die.

For instance, conversing with the Samaritan woman He said, I Am that speak unto you: and in like manner to the blind man, It is He that talks with you [John 9:37 and rebuking the Jews, You say, you blaspheme, because I said I am the Son of God.

But now what shall we say against the most plain speech of the Apostle, saying, Let her do what she will; she sins not, if she be married; and, If you shall have taken a wife, you have not sinned: and, if a virgin shall have been married, she sins not.

Until Your judgment come, be not far from Me, as You have promised, Lo, I am with you always, even unto the end of the world.

Of complexion it can hardly be said that she had any; so little was the appearance of her countenance diversified by a change of hue.

For all things whatsoever you have done shall be forgiven you, whether it be fornication, or adultery, or any other such form of licentiousness.

Wash your heart from wickedness, how long shall there be in you thoughts of your labors?

Why then did not God again take dust?

To have spoken hard, heartbreaking words to her, would have been like striking a child when it comes to kiss you.

Had the party been French the donkeys would have arrived only fifteen minutes before the appointed time.

The Huns, it is said, were unknown to the Thracians of the Ister and the Goths before this period; for though they were dwelling secretly near to one another, a lake of vast extent was between them, and the inhabitants on each side of the lake respectively imagined that their own country was situated at the extremity of the earth, and that there was nothing beyond them but the sea and water.

But as it had not been so, the vigour of the “Evening Pulpit” on this occasion was the more alarming and the more noticeable,—so that the short articles which appeared almost daily in reference to Mr Melmotte were read by everybody.

“The wonder is that Miss Vavasor should ever have brought herself to—to like him.” Then Mr Grey apologized for Alice, explaining that her love for her cousin had come from her early years; that the man himself was clever and capable of assuming pleasant ways, and that he had not been wholly bad till ruin had come upon him.

And the thing opposite to what he wishes, befalls him. For his wish is to be arrogant, that he may be honored; but the most contemned of all is this character. For these most of all are laughing stocks, foes and enemies to all men, the most easy to be subdued by their enemies, the men that easily fall into anger, the unclean before God.

[Colossians 2:3] But neither do you know what God is in His substance, though ten thousand times ye talk thus madly, neither is the Son ignorant of the day, but is even in full certainty thereof.

We can finish all the rest.

Come; you must take my ten pound note at any rate.

I allude to those in which an attempt is made to soar above the ordinary actions and ordinary language of life.

12. But when his father ended his life in martyrdom, he was left with his mother and six younger brothers when he was not quite seventeen years old.

Ursacius and Valens, with the eunuchs who sided with them, were the authors of this outrage.

He would trample upon them.

But that some step should be taken sooner or later she was resolved.

Why, for this reason they are brethren, because they are lowly, because they are poor, because they are outcast.

For as it says, As a servant that is continually beaten will not be clear of a bruise, so he that swears and names God continually will not be purified of his sin.

“I will tell you nothing.”

Marie Melmotte had declined a seat at the dinner-table.

He was half disposed to go by Hogglestock and look up his cousin, whom he had never seen, and his cousin’s husband, upon whose business he was now intent; but on reflection he feared that he might do more harm than good.

“Does he?”

For, The Lord is near unto them that have bruised the heart.

Madame Brudo. Nor take advantage of my woman’s kindness? Belleroach.

If then Isis be a goddess, and could not help Osiris her brother and lord, how can she help another?

For albeit it is subsequently that he is called a father of many nations, still it is of those (nations) who, as the fruit of the faith which precedes digamy, had to be accounted sons of Abraham.

Therefore Seneca deservedly laughs at the folly even of old men.

Or because I never gave up any good that I purposed, for any human cause, not even when I was a persecutor.

There was already a Lady Neville about the world whose existence was a torture to them; and if this young man chose also to marry a creature utterly beneath him and to degrade the family, no effort on their part could prevent him.

The bill, however, did pass, and at the time at which this history is supposed to commence, it had been ordained that there should be, as heretofore, twelve old men in Barchester Hospital, each with 1s.

He exchanged not one place for another; how should He?

Of Miss Dunstable herself Lady Lufton was not able openly to allege any evil.

We should not then say that He asserted that the moon was absolutely the sun, but like the sun.

But some keen hearer will say, Those men God rescued justly in that case: because they refused to commit idolatry, God gave them that power.

The thing had been tried more than once, and the wigging had been complete.

In the squire’s time the park itself had always been occupied by deer.

I will take the monarchy as it is, simply remarking that its recondite forms are very hard to be understood by foreigners, and that they seem to me to be for the most part equally dark to natives.

As for her,—I will not allow any woman to tell me my duty.

“I did not tell him that I was coming.”

“Then, after all, my wife was right and I was wrong,” said Fenwick.

“Poor fellow! I brought him here just because I thought it was a pity that a man born and bred like a gentleman should never see the inside of a comfortable house.”

“My name is Conway Dalrymple,” said the artist.

For He is more fully and clearly, and, so to speak, more openly in archangels than in other holy men.

The last expression of the old man’s thoughts upon that or upon any matter had been made to herself.

We do not separate the flesh from the Divinity; and all that is in Christ we believe is in God.

She was sure that she would be made to say what she had been before all that crowd of men.

Why should I delay with many words?

These things, therefore, the Holy Spirit foreseeing from the beginning, fore-chanted, through the most ancient prophet Enoch, that even entrances would come into superstitious use.

It always strikes me that the supporters of the Titans are in this respect much to be pitied.

But that he has been condemned through Me, they shall know who trample on him hereafter, and who clearly know My Resurrection, which is the mark of Him who condemns him.

George, however, and his friend remained there for a fortnight.

“I would have you keep all your love for her.”

Hence it was, in all likelihood, that as the scribes and lawyers had deduced the time from Holy Scripture and were expecting the Coming One, the idea was taken up by Theudas, who came forward as the Messiah and brought together a considerable multitude, and after him by the famous Judas of Galilee in the days of the taxing.

But if any man despise these chains, the time of judgment will come, which shall teach him.

While these few short days lasted it was all love.

For if the superiority of the Son compared with us, be the measure of the Father's compared with the Son, consider to what meanness you will bring Him.

Be careful therefore not to interpret the words the husband of one wife, that is, of one woman, as approving indiscriminate intercourse and condemning only contracts of marriage.

Wherefore also he introduces the saying in the manner of advice and calls it an image, here too again showing that he is speaking of conduct, not of nature.

“To Aughacashel.”

For thus He speaks: I came forth from the Father, and have come.

Well, yes;—after a fashion there has, I suppose.

What has my party done for me?

And after that he will build the temple in Jerusalem, and will restore it again speedily, and give it over to the Jews.

“Would you not buy them yourself, Blake?”

If you wish to hear of the wretch that was my husband, I will deluge you with stories.

He took up the article which he had come to seek, and kissing her again on the forehead, went away to his bedroom without further speech. “What can he mean by all this about money?” said Mary to herself. “It cannot be that by Sir Louis’s death he will get any of all this property;” and then she began to bethink herself whether, after all, she would wish him to be a rich man. “If he were very rich, he might do something to assist Frank; and then—”

For they are not [as it were] contributions gathered from bounty, but free-will gifts of natural love; for both Unity has its special property, and the special properties are bound together in unity.

“And Captain Aylmer is still there, I suppose?”

Lizzie, however, took one careful look at the iron box before the girl was sent away.

‘It is so all the same. I knew that when she became ill her father wouldn’t be able to stand his ground. There is no knowing what these delicate young ladies can do in that way. I wish I were delicate.’

Judas became his father, since he conceived him indeed, though he miscarried: for he did not present a perfect parturition there, since it was really a greater person who was assailed through Judas; and consequently, as I say, it proved an abortion.

Since He that was able to take away the sins of the whole race of men, much more was He Himself without sin.

So run, that you may obtain.

I went away and left him, certainly not dead, nor apparently much hurt.

For the greater the attention he enjoyed, the greater the punishment he will suffer.

He told them that he had himself dictated what they had heard from the deacon, that he had confirmed the promise by an oath, and would do the things promised, after which he immediately rehearsed all in the words which he had dictated.

Catechetical Lecture 20

But how is it that neither does the philosopher, nor the orator—no more does the judge,— adduce demonstration as a term that means nothing; nor is any of the contending parties ignorant of the fact, that the meaning does not exist?

But they then proceeded to another question, connected with the assertion made by Acacius in his exposition of the faith, 'that the Son was like the Father enquiring of one another in what this resemblance consisted.

“I will approve of anyone that you love; that is—”

Orpheus was the first who introduced the rites of father Liber into Greece; and he first celebrated them on a mountain of Bœotia, very near to Thebes, where Liber was born; and because this mountain continually resounded with the strains of the lyre, it was called Cithæron.

Everything might still be open to him,—except the love of another woman.

But this, setting aside reason, which (as we have often said) it is very hard for fools to understand pure, moves us two ways; in part by miracles, in part by multitude of followers: no one of these is necessary to the wise man; who denies it?

“My dear, if the law be—”

And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not God, nor regard man; yet because this widow troubles me, I will avenge her.

God, then, is One, without violation of the majesty of the eternal Trinity, as is declared in the instance set before us.

With Bell it was not so,—not so in absolute strictness.

“Then show him up,” said George.

For because many were the children of the mother of noble rule, yet the Hebrew woman, once blessed with many children, was made childless because of unbelief: the barren woman receives the husband, and the desert the husbandman; then both become mothers through the word, the one of fruits, the other of believers.

The Lord loved the Israelites, and as long as they were faithful and obedient, they prevailed against all their enemies.

There were copies to be written, and entries to be made, and books to be indexed.

As you begin the ascent from Ceres, near the road but just out of sight of it, there is a small cataract where the Breede runs deep through a narrow channel,—so narrow that a girl can jump from rock to rock.

Bands of women accompanied Nicolas of Antioch that deviser of all uncleanness.

But how this truth is to be understood the chosen vessel thus most clearly explains: what the law could not do in that it was weak through the flesh, God, sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh; [Romans 8:3] and again: by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified.

Greystock was the very man who had attacked him, Lord Fawn, in the House of Commons respecting the Sawab,—making the attack quite personal,—and that without a shadow of a cause!

‘But you must know so many people out there.’

For he who by his art forms at his will the material before him, surely in this operation acts; and the material, in receiving its form at the hand of him who exercises the art, is passively affected: for it is not by remaining unaffected and unimpressionable that the material receives its form.

“I shouldn’t think it a stroke of luck, John. I should think it the greatest misfortune in the world.”

They two were not cousins, but they were so connected, and had for some weeks been so thrown together, as to be almost as good as cousins.

Wherefore also after His resurrection He ate of a broiled fish, [Luke 24:42-43] having taken a part from the disciples, and having received that theology about the Father which they were in part able to declare to Him.

“As to that I can’t tell. You see I don’t at all know what is the price of a jacket covered all over with little brass buttons.”

Since they themselves too are miserable, are they wealthy?

It had happened that a title had been won in a lower branch of the family, and were this succession to take place the family title and the family property would go together.

“And is that to be all, John?” she said.

Let her also drink in with a willing heart the Acts of the Apostles and the Epistles.

He therefore Who came for this cause that He might seek and save that which was lost, (that which the shepherd in the parable calls the sheep,) both finds that which is lost, and carries home on His shoulders the whole sheep, not its skin only, that He may make the man of God complete, united to the deity in body and in soul.

With that I picked up his two shoes, took them to the? door, and chucked them out I heard them go rattling down the stairs, and I was glad that they made so much noise. He would see that I was quite in earnest.

“Marrying is cheaper than hunting.”

I postpone all remarks concerning those whom you worship in your oracles.

From which, certainly, I do not understand this, that because the hand moves, e.g., to punish unjustly, or to commit an act of theft, the act is of God, but only that the power of motion is from God; while it is our duty to turn those movements, the power of executing which we have from God, either to purposes of good or evil.

“I feel myself to be so,” said Mr. Kennedy. “Such a wife was all that was wanting to me, and such a wife is very hard to find. Will you remember, Finn, that Loughlinter will never be so full but what there will be a room for you, or so empty but what you will be made welcome? I say this on Lady Laura’s part and on my own.”

Those who wish to appear corrected must purge themselves of all suspicion: and by obeying us, prove themselves ours.

[Luke 16:15] And again it is written:— Everyone who exalts himself shall be abased, and everyone who humbles himself shall be exalted.

[19] [Matthew 13:36] Then Jesus left the multitudes, and came to the house.

“Yes; but as the heir. She has none of the feeling about you that I have, George.” Then she put out her hand to him, which he took and held. “I begin to think that I was wrong. I begin to know that I was wrong. We could have lived at any rate.”

And so the shares went on rising, rising, and rising, and Messrs.

But as for me, Nebuchadnezzar has brought me in chains to Babylon, to the babel that is of a distracted mind.

He was known before, predestinated before, elected before, not elected for his own merits, but found out, and gifted with life by the grace of God.

He looked at her uncomfortably, in a manner which seemed to show that he was annoyed by this intrusion, and Lucy was aware that she had disturbed him while at prayers by the bedside of his wife.

The Jews interpret this passage as proving the bare unity of God, because they are ignorant of the Only-begotten God.

Since the Psalm says, Behold, how good and how pleasant is it, that brethren should dwell together in one, why then should we not call Monks so?

What animal of the sea can show so much rancour and resentment as the camel?

That explanation we shall be able to discover in the subject-matter itself.

And at the same time, consider that she who has had two husbands, even though she be a widow, decrepit, and in want, is not a worthy recipient of the Church's funds.

Recognize, therefore, august and venerable Emperor, how that you are called by Divine providence to the guardianship of the whole world, and understand what aid you owe to your Mother, the Church, who makes special boast of you.

Or rather, he would have been in residence but for the butterflies and other such summer-day considerations; and the vicar-choral, who was to take his place in the pulpit, by no means objected to having his work done for him by Mr. Slope.

But what kind of excuse is there for us, when we do not even receive those whom we know, but shut our doors against all?

And to those who have assumed the lead in doing good, much experience is advantageous; so that none of the things which appear to be known necessarily and eruditely by others may escape their notice.

46, and how then could the treatise have been written in b.c.

I tried hard to escape.

But measure will be appropriately applied to a material body; and this measure, we are to believe, was created by God such as He knew would be sufficient for the adorning of the world.

[John 14:6] A way is the guide of those who go, the course marked out for those who hasten, the safeguard of the ignorant, a teacher, so to speak, of things unknown and longed for.

[Luke 7:16] What God?

Nor was he able in any way to see, that a man who gives way to grief and anger, and who indulges these affections, against which he ought rather to struggle, and who rushes wherever injustice shall have called him, does not fulfil the duty of virtue.

For if sin add to itself shamelessness and ingratitude, how will he who does not know that he sinned before be at all able to guard himself from falling again into the same [evils]?

A scholarship had been all in all to him when he left school; and, as he got it, a distant fellowship already loomed before his eyes.

On that day fortnight, he was destined to lead to the altar—the Lady Amelia.

Assuredly in every one of these heresies the devil has thus disguised himself, and has suggested to them words full of craftiness.

Loved by his friends he loved all the world.

[Matthew 5:9] It behooves the sons of God to be peacemakers, gentle in heart, simple in speech, agreeing in affection, faithfully linked to one another in the bonds of unanimity.

We have hitherto only looked on the worst side of his character; but bad as his character was, it had a better side.

“It is very dreadful,” she said; “very dreadful for Sarah and the children.”

“It will never be mine.”

And as to his doctrines being worse than those of idolatry, I can make that quite clear to any one who has understanding.

And, therefore, God Himself, upbraiding the Jews with this very circumstance, said, Fear ye not Me, which have placed the sand for the bound of the sea that it cannot pass it.

This joy is not contrary to that grief, but from that grief it too is born.

Getulia is thirsty, and it rains into the sea.

I myself have seen these marvels, and I have admired the wisdom of God in all things.

The external covering, which protected the building from the rain, was of brass instead of tiles; and this too was splendidly and profusely adorned with gold, and reflected the sun's rays with a brilliancy which dazzled the distant beholder.

What courage, think you, have the Corinthians now, or the Athenians or the Lacedæmonians or the Arcadians, or any of the Greeks over whom the barbarians bear sway?

But as there are two things (duo quædam), the mind and the love of it, when it loves itself; so there are two things, the mind and the knowledge of it, when it knows itself.

“The law allows me two years yet,” said he; that look of stubbornness which I had before observed again spreading itself over his face.

Who knew better the due proportions of sobriety and cheerfulness, so that her sobriety should not seem inhuman, nor her tenderness immodest, but prudent in one, gentle in the other, her discretion was marked by a combination of sympathy and dignity?

And, as Daniel saw, myriads of myriads, and thousands of thousands were ministering unto Him?

By a few soft words spoken to a poor girl whom he had chanced to find among the rocks he had so bound himself with vile manacles, had so crippled, hampered and fettered himself, that he was forced to renounce all the glories of his station.

“Go too—why shouldn’t she?”

This was Linda’s great resolve, and the strong hope, that in a very few weeks, Alaric would be promoted to a marrying income of £600 per annum, made the prospect of the task not so painful as it might otherwise have been.

Ver. 6. For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision avails any thing, nor uncircumcision; but faith working through love.

“And she has only one child.”

In the treatise of Solomon, moreover, on Wisdom, and on the events at the time of the confusion of languages, when the division of the earth took place, we find the following regarding Wisdom: Moreover, the nations in their wicked conspiracy being confounded, she found out the righteous, and preserved him blameless unto God, and kept him strong in his tender compassion towards his son.

But the unbelieving hardness of the human heart leads them to slight even their own teachers, otherwise approved and in high renown, whenever they touch upon arguments which are used in defence of Christianity.

All my old friends know that it is so, and ought not to have sent you to me.

Mrs. Hittaway, and her mother, and Andy were closeted together for half an hour, and Lady Fawn suffered grievously.

That Mrs.

And that this will happen endlessly again and again, recurring at fixed intervals, and in regularly returning periods?

‘It is considered a high position in this country, that of a member of Parliament,’ said Alaric. ‘A man in gaining that is generally supposed to have gained something.’

Yet he with a like certainty requested that a cock should be sacrificed to Æsculapius.

And then he came across allusions to the condition of the poor lady at Folking.

For what that Body suffered is said to have been suffered by the Word.

Submissive bend before the many spears

By the word unbegotten, therefore, it is declared that he is not son.

Because he has become a believer that had been an enemy.

And I will look for Your name, for it is pleasant.

Gertrude paused a moment in the bedroom to consider, and then followed him. ‘What is it you want?’ said he, as soon as he heard the handle turn, ‘do leave me alone for one moment. I am fagged with the heat, and I want one minute’s rest.’

It was pretty to hear the charming women of Boston, as they became learned in the law of nations: “Wheaton is quite clear about it,” one young girl said to me.

Stanbury paced the length of the terrace, and then stopped for a moment down under the blaze of the sun, in order that he might think how to address this philosopher. “Have you heard,” he said at last, “that I am going to marry your sister-in-law, Nora Rowley?”

You have chosen now, and I don’t doubt but what you have chosen right.

If at last he do never get it, and it has to be written off as bad, still there have been precautions made for that.

“Well, yes! I call it so. I call men in arms, when they are prepared to carry out any illegal purpose by violence, and these men have done that all through the County Galway.”

And one may well wonder, how, being so right-minded in his judgment, and withal learned in the law, he did not yet believe.

She watched for his appearance on the following day, and began at once on the subject.

On this account he said, may I have joy of your wild beasts, and much milder than the tongue of the tyrant did he consider the mouths of these; and very reasonably.

To Marcellina, His Sister.

It is true that an entrance for horses, cars, and carriages has been constructed, as it were through one end of the house itself; otherwise the mansion is but one house in the continuous street.

I don’t owe a sixpence to ere a man or ere a company in the world.

The Doctor had once said to Mrs. Wortle that he stood in awe of Mrs. Peacocke.

And if a Mediator became necessary that things originate might come to be, and you hold the Son to be originated, then must there have been some medium before Him, for His creation; and that Mediator himself again being a creature, it follows that he too needed another Mediator for his own constitution.

Because, so long as we are in our passions, we think virtue rugged and morose and arduous, vice desirable and most pleasing; but if we would stand off from these but a little, then both vice will appear abominable and unsightly, and virtue easy, mild, and much to be desired.

It is proved, therefore, by these witnesses, so numerous and of such authority, that the universe is governed by the power and providence of one God, whose energy and majesty Plato in the Timæus asserts to be so great, that no one can either conceive it in his mind, or give utterance to it in words, on account of His surpassing and incalculable power.

[Philippians 2:8] He loved, of course, the being whom He redeemed at so great a cost.

For we know how many animals whose food is flesh eat also vegetable products and fruits, especially figs and chestnuts.

You yourselves, however, are thoroughly acquainted with these matters, since you are versed in all departments of knowledge, and are beyond all other men familiar with the ancients.

“Are you so sure of yourself?”

[John 16:32] Here therefore also, the beginning is with You.

‘Just that, Sir John. It’s Mr. Smithers! Mr. Smithers has been at the work for the last twenty years. I knew it just as well as he from the first, because I attend to these sort of things; but I thought it best to go to the fountain-head.’

Eighty shillings a quarter, and seven and half per cent.

She herself had within the last few weeks refused to join her lot with that of a man she really liked, because her wicked son was so grievous a burden on her shoulders.

Nepos knows this, and Cassius in his history; and Thallus and Diodorus speak the same thing.

“Look here, Sophia. If you don’t like it, you need not talk about it. We shall always have a house in town, and you will not. If you don’t like to come to us, you needn’t. That’s about all.”

But why do I say, It will fall?

If heresy replies that the Father is sovereign over both the Son and the Holy Spirit, let them first show that the Son and the Holy Spirit are of mutable nature, and then over this mutability let them set its ruler, that by the help implanted from above, that which is so overruled may continue incapable of turning to evil.

And this we declare to be the mystery of the Lord according to the flesh, that He Who is immutable came to be in that which is mutable, to the end that altering it for the better, and changing it from the worse, He might abolish the evil which is mingled with our mutable condition, destroying the evil in Himself.

“Those fellows at Guinness’s make such a fuss about everything; and I don’t put my nose into that little back room, but what every word I say, by some means or other, finds its way down to Grey Abbey.”

He had been alone for twenty minutes when Mary came into the room.

Do you see how again to those who were desirous of seeing that surpassing glory, I mean that of Moses, he shows it flashing with added lustre ?

Now I say that Jesus Christ was a minister of the circumcision for the truth of God, to confirm the promises made unto the fathers.

Now it is necessary for him who is going to fight with both these enemies, to be fully conversant with this middle course.

to them was good enough and seemed to be clearly the intention of God Almighty.

I am not going into his antecedents.

“I should be glad to see you marry early,” said the Duke, speaking in a low voice, almost solemnly, but in his quietest, sweetest tone of voice. “You are peculiarly situated. Though as yet you are only the heir to the property and honours of our family, still, were you married, almost everything would be at your disposal. There is so much which I should only be too ready to give up to you!”

During the short evenings he could never get her attention.

“That depends entirely upon Sir Gregory. You may be sure of this, sir,—that I shall ask him for nothing. If the worst comes to the worst, I can go to the Jews as well as my father. I won’t, unless I am driven.”

For when all were interrogated in common, he stepped before the others and answered, You are the Christ, the Son of the living God.

Therefore that which is known of God He manifested to them when His invisible things were seen by them, being understood by those things which have been made; also His eternal power and Godhead by whom all visible and temporal things have been created.

Chapter 56. Destruction of the Temple of Æsculapius at Ægæ.

On the first occasion she had thought but little of it,—but little of Luke himself or of her acquaintance with him.

“You should, wait, at any rate, till you get an answer from Mrs. Clavering,” said Cecilia.

He had been on his knees, looked unutterable things with his eyes, and whispered honeyed words before this.

“No—no: he’s not idle. And he’s very clever—too clever, I’m afraid. But I think he’ll do well, though it may take him some time to settle.”

He Whose voice could not be borne by human weakness?

“Trouble, what trouble? Bah! You give me no trouble. It is you have the trouble to come here. You come early and I have not got my crinoline. If you are contented, so am I.” Then she smiled, and sat herself down suddenly, letting herself almost fall into her special corner in the sofa. “Take a chair, Mr. Harry; then we can talk more comfortable.”

And now, though she did not at all understand what might be the nature of those troubles, though she had derived no information whatever from her husband’s hints about the South American trade, though she was as ignorant as ever of his affairs, yet she felt that the troubles would come soon.

‘I think he is rather spooney, I must say,’ said Katie; whereupon

The day’s rest apparently did little to relieve Mrs. Arkwright’s sufferings.

But now I refrain from a discussion concerning that boundless light.

In the extreme heat of the month of July she was once attacked by a violent fever and we despaired of her life.

“It has been a bad business, Mrs. Crocket,” said Priscilla; “and all we can do now is to get out of it as well as we can.

Miss Grantly smiled graciously, bowed slightly, and then remarked in the lowest voice possible that it was exceedingly cold.

It either grants that something is true, that you are not to suspend your judgment on all things; or it persists in saying that there is nothing true.

“It wouldn’t have been at all wise after all that has been said. People would have been sure to suspect that I had got the things out of your desk.”

[1 Corinthians 9:27] If Paul is afraid, which of us can venture to be confident?

So thoroughly was there no man to seek after My soul, that he who had presumed on his own strength, denied My soul.

Let the humble hear, that Our Redeemer humbled himself, being made obedient even unto death [Philippians 2:8 let the haughty hear what is written concerning their head, He is king over all the sons of pride [Job 41:25].

That one and the same Adam is Abel's father and also God's handiwork is a truth; nevertheless it does not follow that, because he is both, he is both with respect to Abel.

They had triumphed over her.

From Mr. Puddleham they learned parish facts and parish fables, which would never have reached them but for his assistance.

And Mary Bonner had told him that he ought to ask.

George is shot at Waterloo, and then come fifteen years of widowhood,—fifteen years during which Becky is carrying on her manœuvres,—fifteen years during which Amelia cannot bring herself to accept the devotion of the old captain, who becomes at last a colonel.

He came into the house about twelve, and eat his dinner with his wife in the little chamber.

We are corrupt [Isaiah 64:6] — earthen vessels.

But to love genuinely is great labor.

And when He had given thanks, He broke it, and said, Take, eat: this is My Body, which is broken for you: this do in remembrance of me.

What is, according to appearance?

Go with him!

[Matthew 7:12] which seems to imply that evil or shameful things may be the object of desire, but not of will.

No praise elates him, no reproaches crush him.

The point also on which a doubt was previously raised in our argument, the declaring, that is, of the things that happen day by day, and the remembering to recount the things from everlasting, is, as it were, a condition of Wisdom's assertion that she was created by God.

There is not, however, such narrowness in the moral excellence of the Catholic Church as that I should limit my praise of it to the life of those here mentioned.

The reader, perhaps, will have understood Linda’s character so thoroughly as to be convinced that, though she had submitted to be dragged out of her window by her lover, and carried away to Augsburg in the night, still it was not probable that she should again be guilty of such indiscretion as that.

She was so nice that he almost thought that he might be rash enough for that, although he knew well the satisfaction of being a bachelor; but as the thought suggested itself to him, he was well aware that he was thinking of a thing quite distant from him.

“He says—. Oh, mamma! I could not help it.”

Chapter 15.— Of the Method in Which Our Address Should Be Adapted to Different Classes of Hearers

Though, in the matter of that, I should have been best pleased if they would have locked me up for ever, and kept me from the sight of the world.

“I fully agree with you there,” said Graham.

Mr. Neverbend did not know what to make of his companion; whether to admire the high tone of his official honesty, or to reprobate his idleness in refusing to make himself master of the report. While he was settling the question in his own mind, Tudor went to sleep, and did not wake till he was invited to partake of ten minutes’ refreshment at Swindon.

Let us vindicate it at any rate to ourselves.

Of what parts do we consist?

“Very well. That will do for the present.—I wouldn’t have had these letters delayed for twenty pounds.”

Chapter 22. These Exhortations are Confirmed by the Christian Faith, Which Proclaims the Misery of Sinful Conduct.

We can understand how Cæcilius cowered, and found consolation in being relieved from his task.

“No; neither of them will come. I wish they would; and oh, Miss Wortle, I do so wish you were going to be there too.” This is all that was said of peculiar tenderness between them on that walk home.

It was too hard to be told, after that, that her daughter had been “quite admired.” Such a phrase might suit a pretty little red-cheeked milkmaid of a girl.

In the meantime the election came on in the Chelsea districts, and the whole of the southwestern part of the metropolis was covered with posters bearing George Vavasor’s name.

For this one errs in two ways: both in that he believes a thing not to be believed, and also in that he, whom he reads, is not to be thought to have believed it.

“What have they said to you?” she asked.

And having risen again, did he not straightway call the Jews?

Chapter 10.— Of the Outer Limbs of Man, and Their Use.

And yet while it would mark a poor intellect, still it would not mark a man entirely undevout, if you had called Christ created, in order that men might recognise His impossible birth from God, as being that of One from One.

God arrives, and here is nakedness, and there was nakedness; there, however, one that had sinned was made naked, because he sinned, but here, one is made naked, that he may be set free.

“You won’t forget your old mother now that you are going to be so grand?” said Mrs. Burton, as Florence was leaving her.

The Prophet Malachi says, Behold the Lord Almighty shall come, and who shall abide the day of His coming, or who shall abide the sight of Him?

It is said he was led to secede from the Church from resentment at the contempt that was manifested towards him by Flavian, then one of his fellow presbyters, but who was afterwards raised to the bishopric of Antioch.

Indifference to appearances is there a matter of pride.

Then Simon said: [He sent God the creator to make the world; and he, when he had made it, gave out that himself was God.]

Of loose locks twined her temples with spring flowers.

[Deuteronomy 10:16] And again: Behold, says the Lord, all the nations are uncircumcised in the flesh, but this people are uncircumcised in heart.

He would not marry because he had his mother and sisters to support.

That this therefore may not always be so, and lest wave after wave receiving us should carry us out into the deep of miseries and altogether drown and destroy us; while there is time, let us bear up and standing upon the rock, I mean of the divine doctrines and words, let us look down upon the surge of this present life. For thus shall we both ourselves escape the same, and having drawn up others who are making shipwreck, we shall obtain the blessings which are to come, through the grace and mercy, etc.

But these, who were desirous to go, He hindered.

For knowledge is of what exists and foreknowledge is of what will surely exist in the future.

17. Silvanus, bishop of Thessalonica.

And he does not say, that to receive is bad, but that not to receive is better.

Nor did Ziska say a word, the proper words not being ready to his tongue.

“A good deal is going to happen. Are they here in this house, or in Grosvenor Square?”

But others, again, say that whatsoever a man does he does of his own will, in the exercise of the freedom which has been given to him, and that the faults and blemishes and other untoward things which befall him he receives as punishment from God.

For just as the soul is higher than the flesh, so is its salvation of more importance, and as its nature is more precious and excellent, so is its destruction more grievous and dangerous.

And they did not believe the law as prophesying, but the bare word; and they followed through fear, not through disposition and faith.

The faith of this Creed brought you to the fountain of life, to saving regeneration, to the grace of the Eucharist, to the Communion of the Lord: And what more!

But if the reader will either hold in remembrance and recollect what we have said of the human soul or mind in former books, and especially in the tenth, or will carefully re-peruse it in the passages wherein it is contained, he will not require here any more lengthy discourse respecting the inquiry into so great a thing.

And this is what Paul said to the Philippians likewise.

Further, Celsus termed the third an amphibious sort of animal, and one that hissed frightfully; while the diagram described the third as Raphael, the serpent-like.

Vagabonds are taken in almost every where throughout the bush.

Turn over Cicero's dialogues.

Together they were on all occasions.

“The life that you were living,—going out, being admired, and having the rich and dainty all around you.”

“It’s not the Bill that they’ll reject, but us. We have served our turn, and we ought to go.”

Against whom when the accusers stood up, they brought none accusation of such things as I supposed: but had certain questions against him of their own superstition, and of one Jesus, which was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be alive.

[Ezekiel 17:2-3] Here he calls the king of the Babylonians an eagle, and speaks of him as being great, and long-winged; and he calls him long-extended and full of claws, on account of the multitude of his army, and the greatness of his power, and the swiftness of his invasion.

But it were better for them to treat it with respect, that they also might rise again.

It will be your care, I doubt not, to distribute to such as are ashamed to beg, and not to those who through life have sought to feed themselves at others' expense.

“Have a bit more mutton, Phipps; and where do you like it?” How pleasant it sounds!

His hand became unsteady, and every instrument was more or less astray.

It is said that a dead person was, in the same way, restored to life.

“Do you know any reason? Sit down, or, if you please, I will get up and walk with you. He tells me that you have chosen to quarrel with him, and that I have made you do so. He says that you have confessed to him that I have asked you to quarrel with him.”

I know that I can be nothing to him now.

For we do not consider Jupiter and Sabaoth to be the same, nor Jupiter to be at all divine, but that some demon, unfriendly to men and to the true God, rejoices under this title.

Sir Marmaduke at Home

For it is not by taking vengeance upon those who wronged them that God shows the greatness of the Gospel: but in the wrong-doers themselves, without any harm happening to those, he shows what a mighty thing the afflictions in themselves are, that we may not seek in any wise deliverance from them, nor the avenging of our wrongs.

“Sorrow a lie is there in it at all, Father John,—I wish the tongue of me had been blistered this morning, before I said a word of it.”

There are indeed many different kinds of knowledge in this world, since there is as great a variety of them as there is of the arts and sciences.

Wherefore let us too, who, however unworthy, have undertaken the cultivation of the field of the Lord, hasten to render the grain pure from all offense of tares, that the field of the Lord may fructify with more abundant increase.

To father and mother and to the brothers, and to the brother’s wife, it was equally a catastrophe, terrible, limitless, like an earthquake, or the falling upon them of some ruined tower.

“She thought that there was. At any rate, she said so. I know that for certain. She told me so herself. But let that pass. Clara Van Siever is in every respect very different from Madalina. Clara, I think, is worthy of you. And Conway,—of course it is not for me to dictate to you; but this I must tell you—” Then she paused, as though she did not know how to finish her sentence.

First, he spoke of man and beast, then of the children of men; as though men were one, the children of men other.

For he was a Centurion having honour and power among men, he was a prince among the princes of the peoples.

“Well, yes; indeed they are. But still, you know, handsome girls very often do very well; and if this young man fancies Miss Rachel—”

For if Eternity is characterized by having no beginning and end, it is inevitable either that we must be impious and deny the Son Eternity, or that we must be led in our secret thoughts about Him into the idea of Ungeneracy.

Chapter 27. Other Objections Considered. God's Condescension in the Incarnation. Nothing Derogatory to the Divine Being in This Economy. The Divine Majesty Worthily Sustained by the Almighty Father, Never Visible to Man. Perverseness of the Marcionite Cavils.

“It don’t matter now, sir; only I thought I’d better come and tell you, along of your being the bail, sir.”

Not only had Mountjoy gone away, but no mention would probably be ever again made of Anderson or Grascour.

As though, because they have been able to understand the high and unchangeable substance by the things which are made, for this reason they had a claim to be consulted concerning the revolutions of mutable things, or concerning the connected order of the ages.

The fish—Mrs Mackenzie had feared greatly about her fish, having necessarily trusted its fate solely to her own cook—was very ragged in its appearance, and could not be very warm; the melted butter too was thick and clotted, and was brought round with the other condiments too late to be of much service; but still the fish was eatable, and Mrs Mackenzie’s heart, which had sunk very low as the unconsumed soup was carried away, rose again in her bosom.

For there are with the Lord both rewards and many mansions, corresponding to men's lives.

He had not even yet explained to her the most difficult part of his proposition; he had not told her that she was to be a party to the little deception which he intended to play off upon his sister. This suggestion had still to be made, and as it was absolutely necessary, he proceeded to make it.

“You’ll find, Æneas, he’ll have mass in his room in the morning instead of coming to family prayers,” said the wife.

We, too, have been cheated in horseflesh, but it has chiefly been in these private dealings.

“Is he—?”

For this was the point which on all occasions both He and John and the Apostles were studious to show.

The place seemed much more suitable to his requirements than the room in which he had dined: there was, to be sure, a strong smell of tobacco, to which he was not accustomed; but after the shellfish, the tobacco did not seem disagreeable.

“No better, nor yet no worse than that, sir,” said the attorney who did not in the least know what feudalism was.

But your inaccurate knowledge strives to lay a snare for me, under the guise of friendship.

Perhaps they spoke this saying, in reference to the word of Jesus, that because of the beheading of John both the law and the prophets who were until John had ceased.

For they say that flesh is unclean; and it follows that God, in the part which is detained by the flesh, is made unclean: for they declare that He must be cleansed, and that till this is done, as far as it can be done, He undergoes all the passions to which flesh is subject, not only in suffering pain and distress, but also in sensual gratification.

Domus enim constat ex genere, civitates autem ex domibus; quemadmodum Paulus quoque eos, qui occupantur in matrimonio, mundo dixit placere.

The streets of Washington were always full of soldiers.

It was whispered in County Galway that the people were about to rise and interfere with foxhunting!

The godly Aphraates was once passing along this thoroughfare on his way to the soldiers' training ground, in order to perform the duty of serving his flock.

[Matthew 23:5] These things He says, accusing them in respect of vainglory, which kind of thing was their ruin.

He was confident that she would tell him the entire truth.

The dervishes themselves appeared to take no notice of him. The dean stood tranquil under his tribune; those who had recovered from their exertions were dressing themselves, the others lay about collecting their breath. But the eyes of every stranger were on the still moving black-haired devotee.

“Then you know we must sell it for him.”

Then he is a man of spirit.

And then when the first week of February was past Arthur would be up in town, and she would be far away from him at Longbarns, whereas in London she would be close within his reach.

Yet neither is this labor and that the same. For in worldly pursuits are continual perils, and losses one upon another, and the hope uncertain; great is the servility, and the expenditure alike of wealth, and of bodies, and of souls; and then the return of the fruits is far below our expectation, if perchance it should grow up.

“If you were to marry there would, of course, be a new settlement as to your rights. Your father could do no harm except as your heir,—unless, indeed, he were heir to us all. My uncle John will outlive him, probably.”

They are a long-suffering race, who only now and then feel themselves stirred up to contest a point against their masters on the basis of starvation.

Clearly not to trouble those who are unwilling.

Since, then, men weary us with asking such questions, let us unfold to them, as we are able, whatever wisdom God's gift has bestowed upon our weakness on this subject; neither let us go on our way with consuming envy.

Then she filled it to the brim, frothing it in the manner in which he loved to have it frothed.

In like manner, bravery, if it shall undergo certain danger, without the compulsion of any necessity, or not for an honourable cause, is changed into rashness.

A persevering and steadfast chastity has protected us from anything like this: keeping as we do from adulteries and all post-matrimonial unfaithfulness, we are not exposed to incestuous mishaps.

“Then I’m too charitable to allow you to postpone your happiness for a day. We’ll look at it in that way.”

When we made the suggestion to Mary there came first a blush over all her face, and then there followed the well-known smile before the blush was gone.

That last apparition which he had encountered at his lady love’s door certainly had not tended to reassure him.

But if you say this, the inconsistency of your own statements will show how weak and feeble such a defence is.

For does he not rob his Master of His authority, who deprives himself of his relation to Him?

And when Urbicus ordered him to be led away to punishment, one Lucius, who was also himself a Christian, seeing the unreasonable judgment that had thus been given, said to Urbicus: What is the ground of this judgment?

And although not yet had He been scornfully given to drink, the Scripture says, In my thirst they gave me vinegar to drink.

He knew that it was wrong, and he abused himself for his own selfishness.

Jemima Curlydown thought that she also should be allowed to see Sydney, and was in favour of an immediate marriage with this object.

“Well, that’s a queer beginning, anyway. But perhaps you’ll come round by-and-by. She goes by Mrs. Peacocke?”

[Matthew 12:37] Now, although Adam was by reason of his condition under law subject to death, yet was hope preserved to him by the Lord's saying, Behold, Adam has become as one of us; that is, in consequence of the future taking of the man into the divine nature.

[Matthew 6:12] And do they prove this to be wrong which is written, In Your sight shall no man living be justified?

“Just as men think it grand not to know one tune from another,” said his wife.

No one of you is born perfectly.

“You’d have gone about like a broken-winged old hen, and have softened me that way.”

You must therefore either set aside the latter on account of sin, or admit the former on account of salvation.

And Staples’ Inn is an inn with pretensions, having a chapel of its own, or, at any rate, a building which, in its external dimensions, is ecclesiastical, having a garden and architectural proportions; and a façade towards Holborn, somewhat dingy, but respectable, with an old gateway, and with a decided character of its own.

Mime the Government Secretary from Bloemfontein, and was very courteously received.

For He wishes that He should be thus understood to be God, as the Son of God, and He would not wish to be understood to be the Father Himself.

In all this discussion poor Larry took no great part though he knew the country as well as any one.

Nor did he say, What have You to do with us?

He had struck such terror of himself into everybody, that he was laden with chains and dragged by ropes on all sides like a wild bull to the monastery.

An Eye for an Eye

But these, O Rhode, are but the cunning schemes

But if Judith had preferred her chastity to her religion, when her country had been lost, she would also have lost her chastity.

And then when he did not obtain his petition, having learned the benefit of the trial, he held his peace, and rejoiced at the things which happened unto him.

During those five minutes Lady Aylmer would deal round the letters to the several plates of the inmates of her house,—not without looking at the post-office marks upon them; and on this occasion she had dealt a letter from Clara to her son.

And can the flesh suggest good counsel to the soul?

He must bear some sorrow too, if there should be cause to him for grief.

Observe how far they have gone from bad to worse, when, unpunished for their foolish speaking, they talk at random, unrestrained by either fear or shame.

If they would put out their hands to him, why should he refuse to put out his own?

How then did He Himself enjoin it?

The carpet of the room was worn out, as were also the covers of the old chairs and the horsehair sofa which was never moved from its accustomed place along the wall.

Hearing this, Gennadius was persuaded of its truth, and in his reply declared that he believed it.

“There is no more about him in the will, is there?” said Margaret.

But, continues Celsus, Ammon in divine things would not make a worse ambassador than the angels of the Jews, so that there is nothing wrong in each nation observing its established method of worship.

18. Let the day of your deliverance, arouse you from sloth! When the wall was broken through, when the elephants pressed in, when the javelins showered, when men did valiantly, then was there a sight for the heavenly ones. Iniquity fought there; mercy triumphed there; lovingkindness prevailed below; the watchers shouted on high.

As the horse then may be good and nimble, and yet this is not shown without a rider; so also the flesh will then show her goodness, when we cut off her prancings.

Marion Fay knew that it was not so;—knew that it never could be so.

We have seen Miss O’Mahony taking a few liberties with her lover, but still very affectionate.

She smiled as she answered, ‘You want to discover all the little mean secrets of my life at once, and do not reflect that, in so far as they were mean, they are disagreeable as subjects of conversation. I was not mean myself.’

It may be necessary that to obtain the use of it you shall educate yourself with more precision than for any other purpose.

and Rev.

Copy of another imperial decree which they issued, indicating that the grant was made to the Catholic Church alone.

Perhaps it may almost suffice to say, that of all living men her father was the man best conversant with the antiquities of the county in which he lived.

Some said, (not all, but the more forward,) This man is not of God, because he keeps not the Sabbath day; others said, How can a man that is a sinner do such miracles?

“I have given it away, Mr. Greenwood.”

“Oh, dear no! I had a message to leave for him, which will do just as well in a note.”

I answer that in the beginning of that utterance in which it is said that the servants of the true God shall bless Him and swear by Him, we read this adoration by the prophet:— From everlasting we have not heard, nor have our eyes seen God, except You, and Your works which You will do for them that await Your mercy.

She was milder than usual with the servants and was almost too gentle in her usage of her husband.

“What can I do, Mrs. Finn?”

To Lady Eustace, wife of the Rev. Joseph Emilius.

“I don’t think it would have suited Dolly,” said Lady Pomona. “After all, why should not Dolly marry a lady?”

23. For these escaped the pestilence, that carried off their brethren. The vines though voiceless, wept when before them, a multitude was cut down and felled, of trees that they loved.

If they had told me to go into a convent or to be a nurse in a hospital I would have gone.

He saw His betrayer, and chose him the more to a necessary work.

I mean, that he is also to slay them that meet with him, to devour them, to fasten upon their flesh.

For we— but, perhaps, you c rob and deprive us of common-sense— feel and perceive that none of these has divine power, or possesses a form of its own; but that, on the contrary, they are the excellence of manhood, the safety of the safe, the honour of the respected, the victory of the conqueror, the harmony of the allied, the piety of the pious, the recollection of the observant, the good fortune, indeed, of him who lives happily and without exciting any ill-feeling.

The Acacian party produced an eighth at Seleucia.

Detestable baseness!

I am set to this: just as a severe schoolmaster is set to be hated by his scholars: so are we.

For Christ is our Bread; because Christ is Life, and bread is life.

[John 15:16] You did not choose me, but I chose I you, and appointed you, that you also should go and bear fruit, and that your fruit should [33] abide; and that all that you shall ask my Father in my name, he may give you.

Do not encircle my head with a crown, for in the springtime it is delightful to while away the time on the dewy meads, while soft and many-coloured flowers are in bloom, and, like the bees, enjoy a natural and pure fragrance.

Lady Glencora and Alice had determined that they would not leave the house throughout the day.

Oh, would that you might enter into some statue!

It is sent to her open that she may see what I say to you.

“Why did you not tell me before?” said Paul Montague in a hoarse voice.

But granting that this was once incredible, behold, now, the world has come to the belief that the earthly body of Christ was received up into heaven.

Had the North given to the South cause of provocation?

The party went off as such parties do.

For a general rule must be based not on exceptional instances, i.e., on the experience of a very few, but on what is within the power of the many or rather of all.

“But he has got none of the other things. What a pity it was that he was let to stay here after he first made a fool of himself.”

P.S.—I believe that a meeting between us at the present moment would only cause pain to both of us. It might drive you to speak of things which should be wrapped in silence. At any rate, I am sure that you will not press it on me.

The story goes that Brutus, descending from the platform on which Cæsar had been seated, and brandishing the bloody dagger in his hand, appealed to Cicero.

And has settled the obscurity of the Sacraments, and the hidden hope in the heart of believers, where He may lie hidden, and not abandon them.

Hence the Apostle also in giving precept for the putting off of the old man, under which name all sins are understood, says straightway, Wherefore putting away lying, speak ye truth.

“If Sam will stick to that it will be well for him.”

If Paul can say to Timothy, the younger widows refuse, [1 Timothy 5:11] and again love the elder women as mothers; the younger as sisters, with all purity, what plea can you urge for refusing to hear my admonitions?

Laïs was a prostitute, and Turnus made her a monument of prostitution.

His road to the Combe passed by the parsonage-gate, and had Patience sat even at her bedroom window she must have seen him.

They speak his praises, so as to persuade him that an Angel has in fact appeared unto him.

“Laugh at her! Indeed I do not do that; but when I’m told that I’m to be thrown into the oven and burned because I’m such a wornout old institution—”

Let us also then emulate this man, that we may not be confounded, but may with confidence stand at the judgment seat of Christ; that we may win Him to be with us, even as He was with His disciples.

252De Natura Deorum.

At any rate she did not mention it.

Of course he had said nothing in the train of those stern things which he had resolved to say.

C. I can put it off no longer; my patience is completely overcome by your iniquitous words.

“But is it odd that an utterly uneducated man, one whom his country has left to grow up in the ignorance of a brute, should have recourse to any measure, however objectionable, when the law will absolutely give him no redress against the trespass made by a couple of hundred horsemen?” Lord Rufford gave it up, feeling the Senator to be a man with whom he could not argue.

But this at least may be said of Caesar, that he took no delight in slaughter.

The fifth for him to try to cure any wrath which a brother may have conceived against him however unreasonably, in the same way that he would cure his own, knowing that the vexation of another is equally bad for him, as if he himself were stirred against another, unless he removes it, to the best of his ability, from his brother's mind.

And, moreover, the United States have had no outlying colonies or dependencies, such as an India and Canada are to us, as Cuba is and Mexico was to Spain, and as were the provinces of the Roman empire.

Nevertheless you are willing, I believe, to consider along with me how important and how difficult these things are.

“What on earth do you mean?” Then he paused a moment before he continued, which he did as though he had discovered suddenly the whole secret. “You have got another lover.”

“Well, to caution me. It is such a pleasant thing for a girl to be cautioned against falling in love with a gentleman, especially when the gentleman is very rich, and a lord, and all that sort of thing!”

It is not His human nature that raises up Lazarus from the dead, nor is it His divine power that sheds tears: for the shedding of tears is peculiar to human nature while the life is peculiar to the enhypostatic life.

But in that very reason he has rendered, he has left nothing for men to conjecture at will, and has sufficiently proved that he preferred men to the institutions of men, not the nature of men to the nature of the gods.

At the loss of every dear face, at the last going of every well-beloved one, we all doom ourselves to an eternity of sorrow, and look to waste ourselves away in an everrunning fountain of tears.

At about two Sam and Carry were told to go into Court, and way was made for the old man to accompany them.

How should there be, when every room in the building was heated up to the condition of an oven by those damnable hot-air pipes.

But the earth was invisible, and unarranged; and darkness was over the deep: and the Spirit of God was upon the waters.'

I am out of order in violating historical sequence, but I may point out that the same thing was said by [1 Samuel 21:4] Ahimelech the priest to David when he fled to Nob: If only the young men have kept themselves from women.

And this woman by her courage showed herself worthy of her religion, for she was a Christian, and she died thus mercifully; she handed down to time a record of herself, too strong for oblivion.

Not only had she never said a word of reproach to him, but she had sworn to herself that even in her own heart she would throw no blame upon him.

Looking for the blessed hope and glorious appearing of our great God and Saviour.

“I dare say;—particularly as she had some money.”

“She is; is she? As for me, I never have none of these private dealings. It don’t suit my book at all; nor it ain’t what I’ve been accustomed to. If a man’s wholesale, let him be wholesale.” And then, having enunciated this excellent opinion with much energy, he took a long pull at his brandy and water.

Therefore, they say that an age of six thousand years extends from Adam to our time.

And although she signed her mouth and her breast with the sign of the cross, and endeavoured thus to alleviate a mother's grief; her feelings overpowered her and her maternal instincts were too much for her confiding mind.

And where this takes place, he must of necessity fall into pathless tracts and error.

But on the wrongs arising from the want of Home Rule he was warmer even than on those which the land question had produced.

“Twelve months, Alice?”

It was very clear that the young gentleman who had only showed that he had forgotten his conic sections could not be supposed to have passed.

At Kingston there were collected many Haytians, who had either been banished by Soulouque in the plenitude of his power, or had run from him as he was now running from his subjects.

Abyss of sea, and towering height of hills,

Chapter 11. That Creatures are Mutable and God Alone Immutable.

By the bed is understood anything earthly.

How then could they have admitted that the invisible and separate Nature can be explained by divisible words?

When you have been weak enough to let it lie on your desk, or worse again, hidden in your breast-pocket, for a week or ten days, it will have become an enemy so strong and so odious that you will not dare to attack it.

By permitting, he hinders it, and more strongly than by an absolute prohibition. For he brings him out of the church and sends him to his house, hereby severely reprimanding and ridiculing them, as slaves to the belly and unable to contain themselves. For he said not, if any despise the poor, but, if any hunger, discoursing as with impatient children; as with brute beasts which are slaves to appetite. Since it would be indeed very ridiculous, if, because they were hungry they were to eat at home.

As she made this resolve she had a wicked satisfaction in feeling that it would be a trouble to her mother;—for though she was altogether in accord with Lady Carbury as to the iniquities of Paul Montague she was not the less angry with her mother for being so ready to expose those iniquities.

Chapter 39 [XXVI.]— The Conclusion Drawn, that All are Involved in Original Sin.

I wish I could get at what you really think.

But at this time, towards them unto whom it is said, if they contain not, let them be married, we must use not consolation, but exhortation.

But as to this point, let those discuss it whose business it is; and let them ascend as far as possible in the examination.

But here again you are most in error: for they dreaded slaughtering a relative in the animal; but you dread the slaughter of your god, for you hold even the souls of animals to be his members.

Well, then, after Jonathan, his brother Simon, as has been said above, ruled over the Hebrews with the power of high-priest.

She did not doubt but that it was all over with her now.

I will relinquish it in any way that may separate myself from it most thoroughly.

Some chance had brought them together, and they had lived in the same rooms for nearly two years.

If he went to her in person, should he make his visit a mere visit of business,—as he might call on his banker?

“Oh, I must see him again, whatever comes of it;” and then she paused for a considerable time, during which the bewildered old lady was thinking what she could do to relieve her sensitive niece. “Dear, dear aunt, I don’t want to deceive you!” and Fanny, springing up, knelt at her aunt’s feet, and looked up into her face. “I do love him—I always loved him, and I cannot, cannot quarrel with him.” And then she burst out crying vehemently, hiding her face in the countess’s lap.

The Fox in His Earth

For surely it comes of extreme lawlessness when your partner of life, she who in the most intimate relations and in the highest degree, is united with you; when she, like a base slave, is dishonored by you.

By the expulsion of their kings, the class from whom these men had been chosen showed their personal desire for honor, and the marvel is that through so many centuries those oligarchs should have flourished.

But to talk French well is not common to Englishmen; it is in truth a rare accomplishment.

For it was Himself that gave a law to His people, whom when delivered out of Egypt He gathered together, the which gathering together is properly named a Synagogue, which the word Asaph is interpreted to signify.

She had, however, come prepared to suffer much, and was endowed with considerable power of endurance in pursuit of her own objects.

And therefore, having given herself but two short minutes to weep over her Julie’s hardness, she applied her mind at once to the rectification of the error she had made.

“Swear what you like, if it will relieve you, only don’t think of keeping such an oath. I’ve known you before this to be depressed by circumstances quite as distressing as these, and to be certain that all hope was over;—but yet you have recovered.” This was the only allusion she had yet made to their former acquaintance. “And now we must think of getting out of the wood.”

“Oh dear!” said the widow.

“Psha! You do not think so. You know that she would not laugh. And are you the man to be afraid of a woman’s laughter? I think not.”

But even in them there was till quite of late a strong section so opposed to the Republican party as to give a material aid to the South.

IV. Christ's ascension has given us greater privileges and joys than the devil had taken from us

Then Abimelech said: 'Will you, O Lord, slay an innocent and righteous nation?

For to punish the guilty, and to exact the penalty for these deeds, were easy and open to any one; but to spare those who have insulted you, and to pardon those who have committed offenses undeserving of pardon, is an act of which only some one or two are capable; and especially so, where the person treated with indignity is the Emperor.

[1 Corinthians 15:21-22] For nobody doubts that the subject here referred to is the death of the body, because the apostle was with much earnestness dwelling on the resurrection of the body; and he seems to be silent here about sin for this reason, namely, because the question was not about righteousness.

“What condition, mamma?”

No one should feel surprise, and ask: Why does God's goodness create anything for the devil's malignity to take possession of?

“My face was, and I felt so odd. For about half a moment I had a sound of Ophelia in my ears. Then I was laughing at myself for being such a goose.”

[Luke 4:18] And elsewhere: I am the First, and I am also for ever, and Mine hand has founded the earth, and My right hand has established the heaven; I will call them and they shall stand up together, and shall all be gathered together and shall hear.

Then, when the thing was over, Lily, without any communion with her mother, took herself off, and was no more seen till the evening hours had come on, in which it was natural that they should be together again.

Into this room Mrs. Davis was shown, and there Charley found her.

And in this way men were very civil to each other.

She could not be longer angry with him.

To these I would have returned an immediate answer, had I not been hurried away by a constant succession of other matters urgently demanding attention.

“That would be saying very little for them,” said Charlotte. “I am for Dr. Whewell myself, for I do not think that men and women are worth being repeated in such countless worlds. There may be souls in other stars, but I doubt their having any bodies attached to them. But come, Mrs. Bold, let us put our bonnets on and walk round the close. If we are to discuss sidereal questions, we shall do so much better under the towers of the cathedral than stuck in this narrow window.”

And this same point, when he is writing to the Corinthians also, he insisted very strongly upon.

I wish I had believed you when you told me so.

And therefore he confirms the passage afresh, by putting on it the impress (of his own inspired authority), saying, For so it is written; [1 Corinthians 15:45] that you may not suppose that the being sown means anything else than you shall return to the ground, out of which you were taken; nor that the phrase for so it is written refers to any other thing that the flesh.

It flowed not from the body of irrational animals, but from the Body prepared by the Spirit.

I have been thinking of you as my possible wife for weeks past,—for months past.

“Of course, of course,” said the doctor.

And I thank your most sincere kindness to me that you have been unwilling that those letters of the enemies of God's grace should be hidden from me, seeing that in them you have found my name calumniously as well as openly expressed.

“I wouldn’t speak if I had not known you so long, and loved you so well. What she means is that you should work.”

But the roads have been made, and Mitchell’s Pass into the valley of Ceres is a triumph of engineering skill.

And therefore also the Apostle Paul says, In Christ Jesus neither circumcision avails anything, nor uncircumcision, but faith that works by love: so distinguishing it from that faith by which even the devils believe and tremble.

For though the Jews were right in practising these things, they were guilty of unbelief in not distinguishing the time of the New Testament when Christ came, from the time of the Old Testament.

My dear fellow, what’s the use of your flurrying yourself?

Chapter 14. Of Blasphemy. One of St. Paul's Sayings

What was the world to him if he could not have this thing on which he had set his heart?

Swine's flesh is not the only flesh I abstain from; nor is it the only flesh you eat.

I think it is from Mr. Stanbury.

For herself she would not have cared had it been necessary for her to hide herself in a hut,—for herself, as regarded any feeling as to her own standing in the village.

At last he proposes to leave the subject.

“What; at such a time as this; with these dreadful accusations running in her ears? Surely this was no time for marrying! And what has come of it? People now say that he has rejected her and sent her away.”

Once, on that night when the qualified consent of papa and mamma Heine had first been given, he had been allowed to touch her lips with his own; but since that day there had been for him no such delight as that.

“You see, Mr Eames, it’s all over now, and we understand each other; don’t we? It made me very unhappy when she was setting her cap at you; it did indeed. She is my own daughter, and I couldn’t go against her;—could I? But I knew it wasn’t in any way suiting. Laws, I know the difference. She’s good enough for him any day of the week, Mr Eames.”

Miss Stanhope, however, had tact enough to make herself and her father’s house very agreeable to Mrs.

Do they not often say, today I am about it, today I'll get them done?

For where he says,

And hence we infer that, whether she has been put away, or has put away her husband, it is necessary for her to remain unmarried, or be reconciled to her husband.

“One always has to go through that sort of thing,” said Johnny.

He who sets far from the Divine generation what belongs to passion and to man, and joins the Son impassibly to Him that begot Him?

Not so Black as he’s Painted; “—that was the name of the novel which it now became the duty of Mr. Brown to read.

The peasants of Clare, Limerick, and Tipperary are, in this way, much more comely than those of Cork and Kerry.

It was nearly nine when he got there.

A horrid Jew!

Indeed, he spoke of making a little tour as far as Brussels, in order that he might throw off the melancholy feelings which had been engendered.

In this really lay the law which did not exclude, but rather prove, human liberty by a spontaneous rendering of obedience, or a spontaneous commission of iniquity; so patent was the liberty of man's will for either issue.

I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life.

Chapter 15. Disputes between Eusebius, Bishop of Cæsarea, and Basil the Great. Hence the Arianstook courage and came to Cæsarea, and were repulsed.

“The very devil. Now, you see, I do do what I’m told pretty well,—don’t I, doctor?”

Marriage was instituted not for the purpose of sinning, but of producing children.

[Romans 4:5] Now if any man had it in his power confidently to declare, I justify you, it would necessarily follow that he could also say, Believe in me.

His father was Richmond Thackeray, son of W. M. Thackeray of Hadley, near Barnet, in Middlesex.

“Get out of this place as soon as we can. It is often hard to go back to the right path; but it may always be done,—or at least attempted.”

“I should think not, my dear,” said Mrs Lupex.

Exposition on Psalm 147

For if we were to express a certain fact by saying, The men will be liberated, the phrase would of course be understood as asserting that the liberation would accrue to those who were men already; but if we were to say, The men will be created, we should certainly not be understood as asserting that the creation would happen to those who were already in existence, but that they became men by the creation itself.

It would be possible for me also to paint you in your own colours, and to meet your insanity with a similar rage; to say what I know and add what I do not know; and with a license like yours, or rather fury and madness, to keep up things false and true alike, till I was ashamed to speak and you to hear: and to upbraid you in such a way as would condemn either the accused or the accuser; to force myself on the reader by mere effrontery, make him believe that what I wrote unscrupulously I wrote truly.

That which was formerly set as an object of terror, that men might not sin, is now to be undergone if we would not sin.

For if we being evil, when our children molest us, grieve on their account; much more is God, who can not so much as suffer insult, sore vexed on account of you, who hast committed it.

But the strongest-minded are, perhaps, those who are able to forgo themselves and their own fancies, and to refrain from any alliance that does not tend to the maintenance of high principles.

Unto what wages then?

This trial was, as has been said, a “causa publica,” a criminal accusation of such importance as to demand that it should be tried before a full bench of judges.

Nothing, he thought, could be more melancholy than such a home.

For a father afflicted with untimely mourning when he has made an image of his child soon taken away, now honoured him as a god which was then a dead man, and delivered to those that were under him ceremonies and sacrifices.

How is it then that Christ says, Go and tell him his fault between him and you alone, if one sin against you.

There were still moments in which he felt that he would be compelled at last to take to violence in reference to Colonel Stubbs.

If you do good, and restrain not yourself from it, you will live to God.

“Miscreant,” she said.

It is one of the most amazing, and one of the most comical, records of literary activity we have.

I am aware that by that criticism I was much raised in my position as an author. Whether such lifting up by such means is good or bad for literature is a question which I hope to discuss in a future chapter. But the result was immediate to me, for I at once went to Chapman & Hall and successfully demanded 600 for my next novel.

Pressed by such arguments as these, what could a weak old man do but yield?

What more brutal?

Sir Henry also was ready; but as he left the room he stooped over Mr. Bertram’s chair and whispered to him, “Could I speak to you a few words before dinner, sir; on business?

For what glory is it if we do not injure him who has not injured us?

Did He then break the Sabbath, or did He not?

On the other hand we know (and O!

He remained with her for a couple of hours, during which hardly a word was said to him about his marriage.

May we never have cause to suspect this of you.

The souls of Your poor forget Thou not unto the end.

“Was there any harm done?”

Those whom he had in his rough manner treated well, returned the compliment; and he perceived that, though he would probably be kept a prisoner, his life would not be in danger, and that the royalists were not inclined to treat him either with insult or severity.

It has been wrecked along with other privileges of men of birth.

At last they stopped at a door in a wall, which the dragoman pronounced to be the entrance of Z——’s hotel.

And yet this awful document seemed to her and to her sisters-in-law to be so imperative as to admit of no escape.

Why is the vine leaf serrated, if not that the bunches of grapes may at the same time resist the injuries of the air and receive through the openings all the rays of the sun?

She could bear all the rest, if only he might be ignorant of his mother’s disgrace;—he, for whom all had been done!

“You’ve made a pretty kettle of fish of it.”

For we do not fear them, seeing they cannot take away from us what we love; but we pity them rather, because the more they hate us the more are they separated from Him whom we love.

For he who knows the Scriptures as he ought, is not offended at anything that happens; he endures all things manfully, referring them partly to faith, and to the incomprehensible nature of the divine dispensation, and partly knowing reasons for them, and finding examples in the Scriptures.

Two kitchen chairs, and a round table, and an attenuated old poker and tongs, were, however, gathered round the fireplace, as was a saucepan over a feeble, sputtering fire. There was a bit of cheese and bread and a tin candlestick on the table, and a little black porter in a pint pot.

Our editor tried to explain to them that the sin of which he now complained did not consist in the intention, —foolish as that had been,—of putting such a name as Josephine de Montmorenci on the titlepage, but in having corresponded with him,—with him who had been so willing to be a friend,—under a false name. “ I really think you ought to have told me sooner,” he said.

On the next morning at an early hour he was awake thinking.

Well, then, is not this "Created" said in connection with a cause?

“Were the Earl to marry his cousin—”

But observe how he consoles them concerning what had passed.

Chapter VIII. Gatherum Castle

As the heavens have various meanings, so also has day.

For if He is good only while honouring us, and not good while punishing us, He were but half good.

Peregrine Orme would have done so, or Augustus Staveley, could it have been possible that they should have found themselves in that position.

Set this explanation side by side with the words of the Apostle, and you will understand the impassibility of the Godhead.

Some months since, after a severe battle, which cost him not a little money, he gained a victory over a certain old turnpike woman in the neighbourhood, of whose charges another old woman had complained to him.

“My dear Mr. Orme,” she said, “I am delighted to see you; but what made you run away from us so suddenly?” She had considered her words in that moment as she came across the hall, and had thought that in this way she might best enable him to speak.

Do you wish to keep aloof from drunkenness?

For it is said of human nature in itself, The man ought not to cover his head, because he is the image and glory of God.

Now, according to this view, animals, as flies, and gnats, and worms, and every species of serpent, as well as of birds and fishes, will be divine,— an assertion which would not be made even by those who maintain that the Cosmos is God.

[1 Corinthians 15:51] And again he said:— Concerning those that sleep, be not grieved.

He believes some of his work is good: at least it is honest, pure, sound work which has pleased millions of readers.

At length, when a familiar people began to be chosen by God to Himself, and the restoration of man was able to be essayed, then all the laws and disciplines were imposed, even such as curtailed food; certain things being prohibited as unclean, in order that man, by observing a perpetual abstinence in certain particulars, might at last the more easily tolerate absolute fasts.

This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that you no longer walk as the Gentiles also walk, in the vanity of their mind, being darkened in their understanding, alienated from the life of God because of the ignorance that is in them, because of the hardening of their heart.

The interview was at last over, and Mr. Scarborough, at one moment fainting, and in the next suffering the extremest agony, was left alone with his thoughts.

[Daniel 3:16-18] And Daniel, devoted to God, and filled with the Holy Spirit, exclaims and says: I worship nothing but the Lord my God, who founded the heaven and the earth.

Sir Felix went out of course, but Hetta Carbury spent most of her time at home with her mother in Welbeck Street.

Next we must enquire, what in this Psalm is meant by the obscure moon, in which sinners have prepared to shoot at the upright in heart?

Then, since he had made a strong assertion, he again confirms it from the Scripture.

If this should be allowed, occasion of infidelity will arise, and people will themselves incur the guilt which they would correct unwarily.

At last the unknown one could no longer endure that his honours should be hidden, and revealed the truth,—in opposition, I fear, to promises to the contrary, and instigated by a conviction that if known he could turn his honours to account.

But there were two causes which persuaded me that I had better go.

In which manner also, if, according to Moses, you should receive God to be fire, in saying that He is a creature, you will have declared what is ordained, you will not have taught who is its ordainer.

[Mark 11:30b] Tell me.

But it was not yet the time of judgment, so as to render to each according to his deserts.

If any one shall understand the words, The Lord rained from the Lord, not in relation to the Father and the Son, but shall say that he rained from himself, let him be anathema: for the Lord the Son rained from the Lord the Father.

To the Church of Alexandria which, by the grace of God, is great and holy, and to the beloved brethren in Egypt, Libya, and Pentapolis, the bishops who have been convened to the great and holy council of Nicæa, send greeting in the Lord.

This is not the place to describe the difficulties of marriage, and to revel in rhetorical commonplaces.

Her lips, alas!

For by this new connection they would not be guilty of adultery, if the previous matrimonial relation did not still continue.

And after him his sister Amessa, 21 years 1 month.

Offences are to be feared from two quarters, for there are two precepts upon which the whole Law hangs and the Prophets, the love of God and of our neighbour.

The hospitals are almost alluring.

When the new year commenced, Clodius was Tribune of the people, and immediately was active.

Let not the godly man, therefore, grieve; if for the present he suffer affliction, blessed is the time that awaits him there; rising up to life again with the fathers he will rejoice for ever without a grief.

But there was no reason why he should not write to her. “Shall I address here?” he had asked. “Oh yes,” said Sophia; “my letters are quite private.” And he had written very frequently, and she had answered him. His last letter before the trial I propose to publish, together with Sophia’s answer, giving it as my opinion that the gentleman’s production affords by no means a good type of a lover’s letter. But then his circumstances were peculiar. Miss Furnival’s answer was, I think, much better.

Come out, your master is calling and patiently waiting for you.

To her it was the thing of most importance, and she had no feelings which induced her to be silent on a matter so near to her.

When it had passed through the magazine, the subsequent use of it was sold to other publishers by Mr. Macmillan, and then I learned that it was to be brought out by them as a novel in two volumes.

Mrs. McKeon again put her off, telling her that it would be necessary first to consult the doctor, and that he would not be likely to call till the following day.

The ignorance can be nothing but concealment.

Chapter 2. Discovery of the Relics of Forty Holy Martyrs.

He was all astray even as to what duty required of him.

“This is not true,” said Hampstead, who was moved beyond his control by the double falseness of the accusation.

And, if He be not true God, how is He Truth?

But if, as the Duchess expected, no such marriage took place, then this ill-conducted niece should never be admitted within the house again.

“Oh, he will have received it, and I suppose he will come. You think he will come, eh?”

Did you see them at enmity?

“He is the head of our family,” said Mrs. Mountjoy, “and is the owner of Tretton.”

For if my coachman, in obedience to me, feeds and drives the horses he has charge of in the most satisfactory manner, himself enjoying the more of my bounty in proportion to his good conduct, can any one deny that the good condition of the horses, as well as that of the coachman, is due to me?

For that is: To keep silence even from good words; since one who has a good conscience ought not to be troubled by false words, nor ought he to make more of another's abuse than of the witness of his own heart.

These are, in all, five-and-thirty prophets.

It is written, say they, Get you no gold, nor silver, nor brass in your purses, neither two coats, nor yet staves [Matthew 10:9-10], while these men have three or four garments, and beds well spread.

Those things which are generally looked on as good are mostly hindrances to a blessed life, and those which are looked on as evil are the materials out of which virtues grow. What belongs to blessedness is shown by other examples.

Chapter 30— The Danger of Arguing from Silence.

And so the apostle, knowing the angels to be set over men as tutors and guardians, calls them to witness.

In short spurts, while the cherry-brandy prevails, they often have small successes; but even with the assistance of a spur in the head they never like it.

It may be said of him generally, that he had the gift of making himself pleasant to women.

Today, God, willing to crown the sacred heads of those whose pleasure is to hearken to Him, and who delight in His festivals, invites the lovers of unswerving faith as His called and His heirs; and the heavenly kingdom is urgent to summon those who mind celestial things to join the divine service of the incorporeal choirs.

Do you see that at present it is one for one, and not two for one.

“Ah! M. de Lescure,” said he, “there are so many more fitting than me.”

If you seek to know the how, why asked not you this in the matter of the loaves, how He extended five to so great a number? Because they then only thought of being satisfied, not of seeing the miracle. But, says some one, their experience then taught them. Then by reason of that experience these words ought to have been readily received. For to this end He wrought beforehand that strange miracle, that taught by it they might no longer disbelieve what should be said by Him afterwards.

But, when it was forbidden them by pain, they spoke with a dumb sign.

Why, in a word, do you treat so lightly the new moons, the baptisms, and the feast of tabernacles, and all the other carnal ordinances of the law and the prophets, if Christ did not destroy them?

Favour must be put out of sight, and the case be decided on its merits.

She was now alone with her Corsair; and she looked up timidly into his deep-set eyes, as he came and stood over her.

For if you had instructed him to look down upon these things, and to take delight in chastity, godly fear and humility, he would not have been so easily taken by the shafts of fornication.

As far as we can spare them, they shall be spared.

After the murder Mr. Emilius had been arrested, and had been kept in durance for a week.

If nothing evil happened to the boat, the child could not be more safe in the best cradle that was ever rocked.

For what things God wished to declare to all and to you, these are written in your hearts.

And instead of suffering, her heart was filled with all emotions of joy;

Had he been courteous and servile, and fit to take a place among themselves, the Russian lady and the French gentlemen would have loved the polished man of fashion well enough.

Divil a good.

Thus much for those matters.

She had, therefore, said very little in return to the lady’s eloquence, answering the letter on that matter very vaguely; but, having a purpose of her own, had begged that Count Pateroff might be asked to call upon Harry Clavering.

And again, 'There is one Lord Jesus Christ, through whom are all things, and we through Him [1 Corinthians 8:6].'

But lovemaking between young people cannot well take place unless they be brought together.

He foreknows the things that be; He is Holy, and Almighty, and excels all in goodness, and majesty, and wisdom: of Whom we can declare neither beginning, nor form, nor shape.

As, therefore, it is by death that He kills, it is by the resurrection that He will make alive.

“I was thinking that—if you would do so!”

For at one time he was light.

Indeed, Divine Scripture tells that both Adam and Eve were naked and were not ashamed.

Away, brother, I beseech you, away with this, I will not call it faith, but execrably impious error.

Beloved, now are we the sons of God, and it is not yet manifested what we shall be.

After a world of failures the Major would shoot no more,—but not the less did he go backwards and forwards with Georgiana when she changed from one end to the other, and found himself absolutely appointed to that task.

For so Balsam gathered that God's people could be by a sure method deceived, when he advised, that in that quarter, wherein he knew that the children of Israel were weak, the dangerous snares should be set for them, as he had no doubt that when a supply of women was offered to them, they would at once fall and be destroyed by fornication, because he was aware that the parts of their souls which were subject to desire were corrupted.

How, then, do all love so warmly what not all know?

Something is always left,—something dim and inaccurate,—but still something sufficient to preserve the taste for more.

But Gertrude’s new affair had had to be arranged from the beginning, and shocked him by its celerity.

“I don’t believe there is such a lord,” said Clara, as she took herself up to bed.

To your loss, or to your gain?

As I have gone on with my journey, I have gone on with my book, and have spoken here and there of American hotels as I have encountered them.

Yours, with sincere affection,

“Do you mean to say that it is what you wish them to do,—that you think it right that they should do it?”

We never pressed for our winnings, or declined to receive promissory notes in lieu of gold.

We are like the actors, who cannot bear to be away from the gaslights when once they have lived amidst their glare.” As she said this they were leaning together over one of the parapets of the great fortress, and the sadness of the words struck him as they bore upon herself.

Or Christ with Belial?

For God would not have made any perishable thing out of what was eternal, that is to say, out of Matter; neither out of greater things would He have created inferior ones, to whose character it would be more agreeable to produce greater things out of inferior ones—in other words, what is eternal out of what is perishable.

I don’t suppose I shall see Sir Harry before he starts.

The time of your departure is uncertain, the tenure of your possessions insecure, there are innumerable precipices, and billows on every side of you.

Here he raises up their thoughts, teaching them not to be riveted to things present, but to mind things greater than all that are in this present life, since the world is not worthy of them.

Popenjoy had gone away ill,—as many said, in a dying condition.

From one extremity, as far removed, to another poor Lucy had been conveyed; though all the laws were not exactly carried out in Kingsbury Crescent as they have been described at No.

How the BigWigs Doubted

There are body and soul, the five senses, speech, the power of reproduction— the intellectual or the spiritual faculty, or whatever you choose to call it.

He has next adduced that passage of ours, wherein we said: For there would have been none of this shame-producing concupiscence, which is impudently praised by impudent men, if man had not previously sinned; while as to marriage, it would still have existed, even if no man had sinned: for the procreation of children would have been effected without this disease.

What of the hare?

After the pompous interment of the remains of Meletius, Flavian was ordained in his stead, and that, too, in direct violation of the oath he had taken; for Paulinus was still alive.

“And you will obey her—always?”

‘If it’s inconvenient, or if you don’t like it,’ said Alaric, the blood mounting to his forehead, ‘it does not signify. I can do without it.’

We should therefore say that some have big heads, prominent brows, broad brows, thick lips; that others of them have long chins, moles, and high noses; that these have dilated nostrils, those are snub-nosed; some chubby from a swelling of their jaws or growth of their cheeks, dwarfed, tall, of middle size, lean, sleek, fat; some with crisped and curled hair, others shaven, with bald and smooth heads.

Let the young men also withdraw their attention from such institutions of men as are unnecessary and luxurious.

I too myself am very weak, and it is in all respects advantageous that you should, with the favour of God, return to your Church in health; or certainly, if you are to be called, that you should be called in the hands of your friends; and that I, who see myself to be very near death, if Almighty God should be pleased to call me before you, should pass away in your hands.

I do not of course know what you may have written to Captain Aylmer since our interview up here, but I beg that you will write to him now, and make him understand that he need have no fears in respect of me.

More grievous and painful is this persecution, which arises from within, which is ever with a man, and which the persecuted cannot escape; for he carries the enemy about everywhere in himself. Thus also burning which attacks from without works trial, but that from within produces death. War also made on one is easily put an end to, but that which is in the soul continues till death.

“Barry Lynch’s!” re-echoed Martin; “the divil you are! I wonder what’s in the wind with him now. I thought Blake always did his business?”

When, however, all things shall be subdued to Him, (with the exception of Him who did put all things under Him,) then shall the Son also Himself be subject unto Him who put all things under Him, that God may be all in all.

They do not lay to heart, they do not consider, that they are entering into the presence of God, that it is He who addresses them.

[Joel 1:17] Another prophet bewailing the evils of drought again speaks to this effect: The hinds calved in the fields and forsook it, because there was no grass.

For indeed we go with a friend into the wood as often as we betake ourselves to look into the delinquencies of subordinates.

Justus, Deacon, likewise

And what is to do in word or in deed?

For the Scripture says in another passage, that the Lord our God does declare, The heaven is My throne.

It was not worth the doctor’s while to aver that the testiness had all been on the other side, and that he had never lost his good-humour; so he merely smiled, and asked Sir Roger if he could do anything further for him.

“There’s no doubt as to what you’d better do; the question is what you’d rather do?”

Some woman or other devoted to continence has willed to marry: what has she willed?

How before himself?

Why, what man of judgment and reflection will believe that a viper was begotten by a god (thus Orpheus:—

“On the whole, well. At first he would not believe me.”

[Romans 6:4] And then he says, as if enjoying some earnest of the resurrection, We rose with Him, because He walks in a certain newness of life, though not yet risen in that blessed and perfect resurrection which is hoped for.

Sunday Morning

Nay, it will be only a firmer one, whereby they have exchanged pledges together, which will have to be kept by a special endearment and concord—not by the voluptuous links of bodies, but by the voluntary affections of souls.

It is, indeed, not incredible that any man who is in quest of wisdom may have gone so far, as a matter of curiosity, as to consult the very prophets; (but be this as it may), if you take the philosophers, you would find in them more diversity than agreement, since even in their agreement their diversity is discoverable.

Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers.

We may have to make a little trip or two, just to receive the English, who are coming to help us; we may have to go and meet them on the coast; or perhaps to Parthenay, to ask M. Santerre what he wants in that part of the world; but that is all, literally all; I tell you the rebels are clean beaten.

To this vanity, then, is the creature subject, that creature especially which, being assuredly the greatest in this world, holds also a distinguished principality of labour, i.e., the sun, and moon, and stars, are said to be subject to vanity, because they are clothed with bodies, and set apart to the office of giving light to the human race.

You eat lunch, I suppose.

For a man is evil in consequence of his actions.

Since I do not approve of his unadvised action in committing them to writing, I do not deem it unseasonable, however, to give some notice here of him and of his works.

He accepted it, though he by no means assured himself that the engagement was irrevocably annulled.

But if some being as a medium be found for Him, then again a fresh mediator is needed for that second, and thus tracing back and following out, we shall invent a vast crowd of accumulating mediators; and thus it will be impossible that the creation should subsist, as ever wanting a mediator, and that medium not coming into being without another mediator; for all of them will be of that originate nature which endures not to be made of God alone, as you say.

“Does it mean nothing.”

This is devotion, and it is this which a man owes to the woman who has once promised to be his wife, and has not forfeited her right.

And, in truth, I have had to pay constant visits to my cousin, who lives in a big castle on the seaside, ten miles from here, over the mountains, and who is in a peck of troubles;—in spite of her prosperity one of the unhappiest women, I should say, that you could meet anywhere.

For there was, as I have already said, the son of Zebedee also.

Pairs of birds also and of the different kinds of beasts were likewise received into it, while all the rest were cut off by a flood.

Bonteen and Mr. Ratler, with Mr. Palliser, the Chancellor of the Exchequer, and his wife,—and there was Violet Effingham, who, however, was not going to Loughlinter.

Since these, then, have also shown beforetime things not vet come to pass, and have declared the devices and deceits of wicked men, who are destined to be made manifest, come and let us bring forward Isaiah as our first witness, inasmuch as he instructs us in the times of the consummation.

He was left there standing, and it seemed as though she intended to take no further notice of him.

But all this was to be matter for deliberation.

“Nothing when I’m alone,—except a little cherry-brandy when I’m out. I never cared for drink;—never in my life. I do like excitement, and have been less careful than I ought to have been as to what it has come from. I could give up drink tomorrow, without a struggle,—if it were worth my while to make up my mind to do it. And it’s the same with gambling. I never do gamble now, because I’ve got no money; but I own I like it better than anything in the world. While you are at it, there is life in it.”

It was quite dusk at this time, the days being just at their shortest, and Colonel Askerton, according to his custom, would have been riding, or returning from his ride.

How then do you claim to obtain mercy, when you yourself dost nothing worthy of mercy?

Chapter 7. Other Beings Besides God are in Scripture Called God. This Objection Frivolous, for It is Not a Question of Names. The Divine Essence is the Thing at Issue. Heresy, in Its General Terms, Thus Far Treated.

Qui ergo propter odium uxorem non ducunt, vel propter concupiscentiam carne indifferenter abutuntur, non sunt in numero illorum qui servantur, cum quibus est Dominus.

And then, when as yet no one was king over that people, whence, if she did not prophesy, did she say what she puts at the end, He gives strength to our kings, and shall exalt the horn of His Christ?

And very soon she will only regret the reckless departure of the jet black dependant who had struck her at first with unmingled disgust.

And now they were off—at least seven of them; for when the important morning came, the Captain had in vain used every exertion to get a rider for Kickie-wickie.

And yet if their superiors were even more worthless and full of numberless evils, it would not be right for the disciple to disobey.

And so, when he is converted either to Catholic unity, or to a mode of living worthy of so great a sacrament, he begins to have not another and a lawful baptism, but that same baptism in a lawful manner.

And Simon said: I shall do as shall seem good to me.

Wherefore He said not, You have received the Holy Ghost, but, Receive the Holy Ghost.

With David be enlightened, who said to the Light, In Your Light shall we see Light, that is, in the Spirit we shall see the Son; and what can be of further reaching ray?

When, therefore, falling on his knees, he had prayed, and— fit advocate for the widows and poor— had brought to the Lord the prayers entrusted to him, turning to the body, which was now lying washed on the bier, he said, Tabitha, in the name of Jesus Christ, arise!

If he would but die, there might yet be a hope remaining of permanent success!

R. Of all these things which you have said that you know not: which do you most desire to know?

For they said, Forty and six years was this temple in building.

It was not simply the honour of the thing,—which was very great and would have been very dear to the Baroness,—but the American Doctor was making a rapid fortune out of the proceeds of the hall.

Has the nature of man, when desiring to walk along a rope extended in the air through the middle of the theatre, and to carry at the same time numerous and heavy weights, been able by practice and attention to accomplish such a feat; but when desiring to live in conformity with the practice of virtue, does it find it impossible to do so, although formerly it may have been exceedingly wicked?

Men there held tracts of ground, very often at their full value, paying for them such proportion of rent as a farmer could afford to pay in England and live.

He had not dreamed that in leaving him she had gone from him to her room, and taken out his picture—the same that she had with her now in Bolton Street—and had kissed it, bidding him farewell there with a passion which she could not display in his presence.

“Keep where you are,” said Amelia.

See how after mentioning the cause of His death, he makes the same cause likewise a demonstration of the resurrection.

But at that time she had been childish.

I covet not, he says, what is His.

It was Nora who told the innocent fib, and though she did not tell it well, she did her very best.

To have done a thing that he could talk about was the charm that Bottomley found in hunting.

“I am sorry that I must differ from you, my dear, because I think he is the fittest man in England for the place.”

“What does it matter? If a girl sets her heart on marrying a man, of course she will marry him. If he had no money it might be different. But if he’s well off, of course he’ll succeed. Well—; I suppose other men have borne the same sort of thing before and it hasn’t killed them.”

“Let her have Dumbello; she will make an excellent wife for him, just the wife that he will want. And you, you will have been so good to her in assisting her to such a matter.”

He knew, as well as did Mr. Waddle or Polly, that he was misbehaving himself.

Of this the whole Roman city is my witness.

“Ah, that’s because you’re a radical. I never will believe that kings are so much worse than other people. As for Charles the First, he was about the best man in history.”

I could not prevent the mad career which Mountjoy has run; but do you think that I am ashamed because the world knows what I have done?

Indeed I will not undertake that twenty-four hours may not see the close of his earthly troubles.

When the speech of Demosthenes against Æschines was recited before the latter during his exile at Rhodes, amid all the admiration and applause he sighed if you could but have heard the brute deliver his own periods!

She insisted that if he would make use of his genius he might employ his spare time to great profit by writing for magazines or periodicals; and, inspirited by so flattering a proposition, Charley had got himself introduced to the editor of a newly-projected publication.

But I am the person aggrieved, and if you have any excuse to make you can make it to me.

But if so, how should Harry Annesley know anything about it?

Chapter 25 [XXIV.]— God by His Wonderful Power Works in Our Hearts Good Dispositions of Our Will.

“That the Duke of Omnium offered to make her his wife, and that she refused him for your sake.”

What is it to all the earth, which sings a new song?

And what is in wars defeat, namely, for the combatant to fall; this with us is victory.

[Isaiah 28:14] and again, They that demand you shall rule over you.

Again at Sir John’s Chambers

For if you were to meet a beggar starving for want of food, by the law of God to refuse him food would be murder; while to give food would be murder by the law of Manichæus.

He read Alf’s speech, and consoled himself with thinking that Mr Alf had not dared to make new accusations against him.

Of course she was alone, Miss Macnulty having received a suggestion that it would be well that she should do a little gardening in the moat.

And yet he couldn’t do it.

“I’d rather marry her twice over than let my cousin have the title and the property,” said the Baronet with energy. “You needn’t tell her that,” said McCollop. “Of course when you’ve cleared the ground in this quarter you can begin again with another lady.”

He could not however go to his new Alma Mater till after the long vacation.

Father Jerome came, and she received him in the parlour.

“That won’t do at all,” said an old gentleman at the head of the firm.

“Ah, Wednesday. Well, tell him to come and dine up at the house on Wednesday. He’ll be in time, I suppose, and there shan’t be a word said about this horrid duke.”

Accordingly, in the case of these contraries which we call good and evil, the rule of thelogicians, that two contraries cannot be predicated at the same time of the same thing, does not hold.

But even at Lady Brabazon’s she might find an opportunity of saying what she wished to say.

“Quiet, M. Henri; pray be quiet for a moment, and I will explain.”

There ain’t a fox anywhere about the place now, Muster Daly.” Tom Daly turned round and sat on his big black horse, frowning at the world before him; a sorrowful man.

She would in such case have been all alone, and her severance from the Greshamsbury house and household, from the big family in which she had for so many years been almost at home, would have made such solitude almost unendurable.

Or cut him in pieces?

The mill should be completed; but the house should be left till next summer.

If it were not trusted then the offer might fall to the ground.

He had found even those he had most trusted opposed to him.

Hebrews 12:14

One might say that even the sense of smell in the expert is not incapable of detecting the kind of disorder, but that it notices the secret suffering of the vitals in the particular quality of the breath.

Therefore our bodies must be expected to resume the same conditions and the same ages, for it is these particulars which impart to bodies their special modes.

Certainly Lot was not Abraham's brother, but the son of Abraham's brother Aram.

But now a considerable sum was necessary.

Since by means of these arts wonders are done which quite surpass human power, what choice have we but to believe that these predictions and operations, which seem to be miraculous and divine, and which at the same time form no part of the worship of the one God, in adherence to whom, as the Platonists themselves abundantly testify, all blessedness consists, are the pastime of wicked spirits, who thus seek to seduce and hinder the truly godly?

And you, indeed, seem at such times to ignore the gods, and you neglect the temples, and make no recognition of the worship of God.

But he does not honour all, in order that you may learn that there is another season for rendering to all their recompense.

Mr. Mildmay, the while, was sitting with his hat low down over his eyes, and many men said that he did not like it.

Some one, however, of the Greeks, by accurate examination, perceiving the trick of the supposed god, by means of those same parrots not only refutes, but also utterly destroys, that boastful and tiresome fellow.

Here, we must carefully observe, we have two things which are one, and we have to define the difference between them.

But if the First Father has no cause transcending His own state, and the subsistence of the Son is invariably implied in the title of Father, why do they try to scare us, as if we were children, with these professional twistings of premisses, endeavouring to persuade or rather to decoy us into the belief that, if the property of not having been generated is acknowledged in the title of Father, we must sever from the Father any relation with the Son.

With him there could never be any better.

The apostle, too, bids us to become children again towards God, to be as children in malice by our simplicity, yet as being also wise in our practical faculties.

The housekeeper who received her was a stout, elderly, comfortable body, to whom she could perhaps say a few words beyond those which might be spoken to an ordinary servant; but she fancied at once that the housekeeper was cold to her, and solemn in her demeanor.

“Oh dear no. What should rankle with me?”

Anaxagoras of Clazomenæ said that the homogeneous parts are the first principles of all things.

For it could not possibly have deserved its alleged fate, unless it had been sinful; nor would it have been, unless it could have been, sinful,— so as, by committing sin previous to any evil desert, it might make for itself a position whence it might, under God's desertion, advance to the commission of other sins.

To those whom they separate from the peace of the whole earth.

There is a common saying, What you wish to perform abundantly, sometimes do not do at all.

To many in America the French theory of democracy not unnaturally endeared itself and foremost among these was Thomas Jefferson.

Who would understand the look of the man’s eye and the smile on his mouth?

But God did not lay down a rule concerning fasting or eating on the seventh day of the week, either at the time of His hallowing that day because in it He rested from His works, or afterwards, when He gave precepts to the Hebrew nation concerning the observance of that day.

In all things he was accustomed both to be full and to be hungry.

Would it not be better for him, in spite of the protestations which he had made, to dismiss the whole family from his mind?

Then, at considerable length, he strove to show that Mr. Chaffanbrass had been unjustly severe upon Lord Fawn.

Chapter 47.

You shall offer a sweet savour, an offering to the Lord, a continual burnt offering throughout your generations at the door of tent of witness before the Lord, where I will make myself known to you, to speak unto you.

“It is very kind of you, for she does not often see a friend, nowadays. Will you have the goodness to tell Mr. Robarts that I shall be here at the school, at eleven o’clock tomorrow?” And then he bowed, taking off his hat to them, and they drove on.

But the wise know well that the minute charges of a faultfinder furnish a strong argument for the righteousness of the accused; else, when eager to accuse, he would not have spared great faults and employed his malice on little ones.

He had become so accustomed to the life he led as to like to be disliked, and to be enamoured of unpopularity.

But when Paul perceived that the one part were Sadducees, and the other Pharisees, he cried out in the council, Men and brethren, I am a Pharisee, the son of a Pharisee: of the hope and resurrection of the dead I am called in question. And when he had so said, there arose a dissension between the Pharisees and the Sadducees: and the multitude was divided. For the Sadducees say that there is no resurrection, neither angel, nor spirit: but the Pharisees confess both.

But Christ chode not with them for calling Him a man, but waited to teach them by His signs, that their supposition was mistaken. But from what did they think Him a man? First from His appearance, then from His sleeping, and His making use of a ship. So on this account they were cast into perplexity, saying, What manner of man is this? since while the sleep and the outward appearance showed man, the sea and the calm declared Him God.

For I regard not the multitude, he means, nor does a race diffused so far distress me, but those only do I save that yield themselves worthy of it.

The letter bore the important signature of T. Beeswax on the corner of the envelope, and so disturbed Lord Nidderdale that he called at once for a glass of soda-and-brandy.

“You would not like me for a sister?”

2. For indeed most of the disciples of that time, animated by the divine word with a more ardent love for philosophy, had already fulfilled the command of the Saviour, and had distributed their goods to the needy. Then starting out upon long journeys they performed the office of evangelists, being filled with the desire to preach Christ to those who had not yet heard the word of faith, and to deliver to them the divine Gospels.

How can your piety avenge them, seeing it has commanded them to be excluded, and denied them permission to meet together?

“But it ain’t there any longer, John? He’s speaking of twenty years ago, Mrs. Smiley.”

Ver. 8. This is the commandment; for the darkness of perversion, that is, has passed away, and, lo, the true light has already shone,— that is, through faith, through knowledge, through the Covenant working in men, through prepared judgments.

Such storeys of the heavens you would imagine to be detached tenements in some happy isle of the blessed, I know not where.

He was sore now at his son’s coldness to him, and was disposed to believe that his son cared not at all for any one at Granpere.

They were now on a path close to the riverside, in which there were many loungers. “Would you mind coming up to the temple?” he said.

But he would not sit down.

“Now there is one thing I want you to promise me,” she said as she gave him her hand.

Yea, rather, He lays it on us no more at all.

Tidings now came in from the office that Dockwrath was there. “You’ll come round and eat a bit of dinner with us?” said she, hesitatingly. He felt that she hesitated, and hesitated himself in his reply. “He must say something in the way of asking you, you know, and then say you’ll come. His manner’s nothing to you, you know. Do now. It does me good to look at you, John; it does indeed.” And then, without making any promise, he left her and went round to the office.

Nor was he a bully, such as his predecessor.

But he tempts, not knowing whether he shall overthrow.

Owen was now walking up and down the room with rapid steps. “You have not the courage to fight me fairly,” said he.

Obedience in this world depends as frequently on the weakness of him who is governed as on the strength of him who governs.

She was Miss Field, and certainly not a widow in the literal sense of the word; but she was about to become a bride a few weeks after Christmas.

These are the Heavens, whereof in another Psalm is sung, The Heavens are telling forth the glory of God

“What row do you mean?”

“I will do it,” said Mr Palliser; and away he went, making his slow progress up through the crowd, ordering his carriage as he passed through the hall, and leaving Mr Bott still watching at the door.

But whereas God, as we have said, is in an improper sense the Father of men, of Christ alone He is the Father by nature, not by adoption: and the Father of men in time, but of Christ before all time, as He says, And now, O Father, glorify Thou Me with Your own self, with the glory which I had with You before the world was [John 17:5] .

The Old Testament is an old song, the New Testament a new song.

These men desire by your means to injure their enemy, and wish to make you the minister of their wickedness, in order that through your help they may sow the seeds of their accursed heresy in the Church.

She did not blame him; but it did appear to be hard upon her.

“Be quiet, Arthur, do not anger him,” whispered Agatha. “It is not generous, you know, to insult a fallen foe.”

“I don’t mean to go near the place,” he said, not at all conveying any purpose to which he had really come, but driven by the stress of the moment to say something that should express his general hatred of everybody.

Then truly were Diodorus, and all those who were present, filled with wonder at the dispensation of divine providence which thus provided that Archelaus should arrive among them at the very time when the question was just raised; for in reality, as must be confessed, Diodorus, with all his religiousness, had been somewhat afraid of the conflict.

And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him; but whosoever shall speak a word against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come.

It must do so, I think I am justified in saying; but its power of doing this is so hampered by constitutional enactment, that it would seem that the Constitution as regards this heading must be altered before any scheme can be arranged by which a moderately just income tax can be levied and collected.

The success of New Orleans as a city can be no more attributed to Louisianians than can that of the Havana to the men of Cuba, or of Calcutta to the natives of India.

In truth, however, the teaching of Sir Lionel and Harcourt had not been altogether without effect: at this present moment, having just paid to Mr. Neversaye Die his first yearly contribution, he was wellnigh penniless; and, after all, if a rich uncle have money to bestow, why should he not bestow it on a nephew?

“But Mr. Pryor has not got a wife.”

For it is an axiom with them that pearls ought not to be lightly cast before swine, nor that which is holy given to the dogs.

But she did not once allude to the possibility of a future marriage.

For the Father acts by mind and thought; while the Son, who is in the Father's mind and thought, gives effect and form to what He sees.

“I have thought about it a great deal. For some years I have always been thinking of it. I have set my heart upon it, and shall be very unhappy if it cannot be brought about. They are both very dear to me,—dearer than anybody else. If I could see them man and wife, I should not much care then how soon I left the old place to them.”

Now let us suppose a lady, prepossessing and lovely above her peers, and on that account wedded to a king, but besieged because of her beauty by profligate lovers.

He knew how to blind the eyes of members to the truth.

Further, the Lord shows very clearly of Himself, when, describing figuratively His manifold and in many ways serviceable culture,— He says, I am the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman.

“She was glad to leave St. Louis. Things happened there which made her life unhappy. It was on that account I came here, and gave up a position higher and more lucrative than I shall ever now get in England.”

In the general prosperity which distinguishes the present time, it seems right that the Catholic Church should likewise be exempt from trouble, and that the servants of Christ should be freed from every reproach.

She was going to make him some promise; to tell him something of her intention towards his son, and to make some tender of assistance to himself; being now in that mind to live on the smallest possible pittance, of which I have before spoken, when he ceased speaking or listening, and hurried her on to the attorney’s chambers.

Many of my readers no doubt know them well.

“Why not, Thorne?”

He paused a moment as though he thought that his last question must elicit a plain reply.

“I shan’t ask in the City, and if I did, I should not believe what people told me. I think there are sillier folks in the City than anywhere else. What did he give for that picture upstairs which the young man painted?”

The proofs against them were so convincing that they could not deny it.

She took it, and pressed it between both of hers, and looked up into his face, and stood so while the fast tears ran down her face. He must have been more or less than man had he not relented then. “And Owen,” she said, “dear Owen, may God in his mercy bless you also, and make you happy, and give you some one that you can love, and—and—teach you in your heart to forgive the injury I have done you.” And then she stooped down her head and pressed her lips upon the hand which she held within her own.

Gregory to Italica, etc.

But there is no one who contributes even his superabundance.

But beyond that, till he declared himself at the end to be hers affectionately, he made no further protestation of affection.

You can tell him that I say so if you please.

“It will take you the best part of the Session to get through it?”

The girl had gone off the moment she had ascertained that her friends were aware of her presence and situation.

I would learn of them who it was that put it into their hands?

He had grieved when Cæsar had usurped the functions of the government; but in his grief he had respected Cæsar, and had felt that he might best carry on the contest by submission.

'Because the rich man, even in the city, having gotten himself several plethra, raises up long fences round them; and in the country cuts off for himself many portions.'

He has given us a brief commandment, O you that love the Lord, see that you hate the thing which is evil!

“I did not know it,” said Owen; “but it makes no difference.”

“Oh, my blessed baby!” said Mrs. Price, as the nurse handed her the child—which, however, she immediately handed back. “How can I thank you enough, Mr. Wilkinson? What should we have done without you? I wonder whether it’s near tiffin. I am so faint.”

He scrawled upon his blotting-paper, and made no progress whatsoever toward the understanding of anything.

Clothe yourself with the spiritual armour, for we have a heavy warfare to wage with demons.

Having read this letter, we at last desired our clerk to send the lady up.

“Of course that’s true;—it’s true in one way. You might say the same of a man who was cozened into leaving every shilling away from his own children. I wasn’t in Exeter when the will was made. We none of us were here. But she was here; and when we came to see him die, there we found her. She had had her revenge upon him, and she means to have it on all of us. I don’t believe she’ll ever leave you a shilling, Brooke. You’ll find her out yet, and you’ll talk of her to your nephews as I do to you.”

[Exodus 34:30] And, to mention more Lights— it was Light that appeared out of Fire to Moses, when it burned the bush indeed, but did not consume it, to show its nature and to declare the power that was in it.

So again, the soul, devoting itself to divine and spiritual pursuits, and being united to the spirit, is said to fight against the flesh, by not permitting it to be relaxed by indulgence, and to become unsteady through the influence of those pleasures for which it feels a natural delight.

“If things go on as we hope they will between you and Marie, you can have pretty nearly any number of shares that you please;—that is, if your father consents to a proper settlement.”

For alone among men could truly say the God-Man, If you have found in Me sin, say.

It has now 170,000 inhabitants, but then it got an early start.

There you will remain, nursing your horse, listening to chaff, and hoping.

Since his boyhood he had looked forward to a life of ease, pleasure, and licence, and had longed for his father’s death that he might enjoy it.

Having been bound, He came from Caiaphas to Pilate—is this too written?

Why is this power over these things a natural power?

[Philippians 2:14-15] In like manner to the Ephesians he writes: 'Blessed be the God and father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ; according as He has chosen us in Him before the foundation of the world, that we should be holy and blameless before Him.'

Your grace enjoying; let me act and speak

It was for the advantage of them all that there should be such a marriage.

We were a melancholy set, the ladies appearing to be afflicted in this way worse than the gentlemen, on account of their enforced abstinence from tobacco.

There is none good save one, that is, God.'

What then is that great mystery which is signified under the name of the man and his wife?

“I was here with your grandfather.”

our minds, are not sensible things, that is, bodies, but intelligible things, since we are life.

I put my fingers into the prints of the wounds: and I declared of Christ my Lord, whom I had handled: 'My Lord and my God.'

“What;—after that cold letter?”

Water was the first to produce that which had life, that it might be no wonder in baptism if waters know how to give life.

I fancy that he now feels it to be his interest to get it all done before I die, as the men will be clamorous with their bonds as soon as the breath is out of my body.—

The doctor thanked him, and said that he would remember. So the conversation was ended, and the doctor went about the ordinary occupation of his life, apparently without any settled grief at his heart. He had done his duty by his son, and that sufficed,—or almost sufficed, for him.

And on this Christmas-day she was doomed to go through an ordeal of very peculiar severity.

But as you do not see the necessity of giving up the ancient error of your forefathers in obedience to these teachers [of ours], what teachers of your own do you maintain to have lived worthy of credit in the matter of religion?

For he would not have inflicted one slaughter in return for one; but, in return for many deaths, which Saul endeavoured to bring on him, having attempted to slay him not once or twice but many times, he would have brought only one death on Saul; and not only this, but if he had proceeded to avenge himself out of fear of the future, even this, combined with the things already mentioned, would procure him the reward of forbearance without any deduction.

He went through from the library to knock at Mary’s door, and in doing so, had to pass the room in which Mrs Baggett had slept tranquilly for fifteen years. There, in the doorway, was a big trunk, and in the lock of the door was a key. A brilliant idea at once occurred to Mr Whittlestaff. He shoved the big box in with his foot, locked the door, and put the key in his pocket. At that moment the heads of the gardener and the groom appeared up the back staircase, and after them Mrs Baggett.

“But I regret much that you should have borrowed a tradesman’s money, and more that you should have offered to pay the debt by marrying his daughter.” Through it all, however, there was a feeling present to Sir Thomas that he was, in truth, angry with the Squire of Newton, not so much for his misconduct in coming to propose to Mary so soon after the affair with Polly Neefit, but because he had not come to propose to Clarissa.

Lord George, when he got out of the lawyer’s office with his father-in-law, expressed himself as being very angry at what had been done. While discussing the matter within, in the presence of Mr. Battle, he had been unable to withstand the united energies of the Dean and the lawyer, but, nevertheless, even while he had yielded, he had felt that he was being driven.

How the devil always retained this notion of Christ's Divinity (because of His secret working which he experienced) even up to His Cross and Death.

‘Gammon—’

“I want you and your daughter, who I am sure is a very nice young lady, and good-looking too,—”

And seeing he had made mention of the things in the heavens, he shows, that all the enmity had its origin from hence, not thence.

“How can I tell about his ways? No; it is not in the same way. There! He went in a very different way.”

For everything going in at the mouth, is cast out into the draught.

But, in the case as it had occurred, a spot peculiarly traitorous had been selected, and the attack had too probably been made from behind.

Certainly in this view we have an attestation of the method of the first two formations, when the male was moulded and tempered in a completer way, for Adam was first formed; and the woman came far behind him, for Eve was the later formed.

Hebrews 9:27

“If I have ever felt it! Do I not feel it now, Mrs Greenow? There can be no longer any mask kept upon my feelings. I never could restrain the yearnings of my heart when they have been strong.”

Then her mind again went back to the troubles of Mrs. Parker, and her absolute inefficiency in that matter.

Even things impure became pure by contact with her.

For it had certainly been profitable not to circumcise Timothy, not to shave his head, not to undergo Jewish purification, not to practice going barefoot, not to pay legal vows; but he did all these things because he did not seek his own profit but that of the many.

He well knew his own strength and his own weakness.

For if none have baptism who entertain false views about God, it has been proved sufficiently, in my opinion, that this may happen even within the Church.

I’ll undertake to say, my lord, that there isn’t a person in the Court at this moment, except yourself, who wouldn’t be ready to express an opinion on his oath that Mr. Finn is a tall man.

“Did he say that too?”

And Mr Rubb got nearer to her on the sofa as he whispered the word money into her ear. It immediately struck her that her own brother Tom had said not a word to her about the money, although they had been together for the best part of an hour before they had gone up to dress.

However, as I have observed already, I have thoroughly examined and opened, in the first book of this treatise, all these words of the apostle's argument, as far as I was able, and as much as seemed necessary.

Were I possessed of a quick spasmodic style of narrative, I should have been able to include it all—Frank’s misbehaviour, Mary’s immediate anger, Augusta’s arrival, and keen, Argus-eyed inspection, and then Mary’s subsequent misery—in five words and half a dozen dashes and inverted commas.

And therefore, as to be is not to the Father from the Son, so neither is to know.

“Women do,” said Lord Chiltern. “Lady Glencora will be delighted to reign,—though I can hardly fancy her by any other name. By the bye, Adelaide, I have got a letter for you.”

Marcus, however, endured all these grievous sufferings and affirmed that he would consent to none of their demands.

With us (Christians), however, only that can receive a hearing which is suggested by contemplating God, the Author of all the things which we are now discussing.

And again, Not for our righteousness which we have done, for we have not done any.

The squire himself sat silent in his place, out of humour, knowing that the peculiar subject would be introduced, and determined to make himself disagreeable.

The water had been gathered into the reservoir assigned to it, the earth displayed its productions, it had caused many kinds of herbs to germinate and it was adorned with all kinds of plants.

There he stood gazing at the pale, cloudless, heat-laden, motionless sky, thinking of his own sorrows, and remembering too, doubtless, with the vanity of a madman, that he was probably being watched in his reverie.

This large open Place has a church in its centre, and around it are houses almost all large, built with gables turned towards the street, quaint, picturesque, and eloquent of much burghers’ wealth.

She would never quite yield, though she had then no strength of purpose sufficient to enable her to declare that she would not yield.

“But you didn’t think him beautiful,” said Nina.

Do we not see sheep, when winter is approaching, devouring grass with avidity as if to make provision for future scarcity?

“I have slept on it.”

of the oration and see how the speaker declares that he will avenge himself against the evil-doers whom he has denounced.

That he was to be punished he began to perceive too clearly.

Before she went, she kissed the Christian girl; but Nina did not remember that she had been kissed.

Not in a tempest of the sea, but in a tempest of the heart.

Certainly there never was a voice that brought home to the hearer so strong a sense of its own truth!

It was that from this again He might show the invariableness and exactness of the Equality, for the expression imputes not weakness to Him, but even shows His great power; since in another place Paul says of the Father, That by two immutable things in which it was impossible for God to lie [Hebrews 6:18]: and again, If we deny Him — He abides faithful, for He cannot deny Himself.

Henceforth in the rest we shall see, the Lord helping, of what sort are those crafty arguments of the heretics, and in what manner they may be confuted.

For the multitude did not know the prediction of the resurrection (and no wonder), inasmuch as even his disciples did not understand it; for we read they did not know that He must rise again from the dead.

So, as he sipped his whisky, he became confidential and comfortable.

In the meantime the Duke had gone out alone.

Hear how as Son of Man He has received the time of judging.

But further, God called the firmament also heaven [Genesis 1:8], which He commanded to be in the midst of the waters, setting it to divide the waters that are above the firmament from the waters that are below the firmament.

Why should I mention that the argument by which they infer that all the heavenly bodies are gods, tends to the opposite conclusion?

If the Pagan, in the next place, were to find fault with both Testaments as attributing jealousy to God and Christ, he would only show his own ignorance of literature, or his forgetfulness.

From the hall there were no less than four windows looking to the front; but they were all equally unapproachable.

And this is plainly to be regarded not as the opinion of Catulus, who perhaps did not utter this saying, but as that of Cicero, who wrote it.

how could you so far belie your opinion as to give expression to a sentiment utterly opposed to your own convictions!

“You may call it as you please,” said the other, “it is stupid and beastly.

We are told that Varro, at the age of eighty, had written 480 volumes, and that he went on writing for eight years longer.

Whoever you are that search into these mysteries, I do not bid you resume your exploration of height and breadth and depth; I ask you rather to acquiesce patiently in your ignorance of the mode of Divine generation, seeing that you know not how His creatures come into existence.

And being again questioned, he began to curse and to swear.

John 14:7

But the Saviour, being the light of the world, illuminates not bodies, but by His incorporeal power the incorporeal intellect, to the end that each of us, enlightened as by the sun, may be able to discern the rest of the things of the mind.

But hospitality in the bush can be stayed by no such considerations as that.

For whatsoever is more than these comes of evil; i.e., if you are compelled to swear, know that it comes of a necessity arising from the infirmity of those whom you are trying to persuade of something; which infirmity is certainly an evil, from which we daily pray to be delivered, when we say, Deliver us from evil.

But Mrs Pipkin told him with a laugh that he didn’t know anything about it, and when the 14th of August was named he only scratched his head and, muttering something about Thetford fair, agreed that he would, yet once again, allow love to take precedence of business.

Watt admitted the truth of this argument, and declared that they must again decide whether my story of “ The New Inmate” was or was not a novel in the sense intended when the previous vote was taken.

This is a cause of accusation!

It was vain to do so; for his god had no such authority!

Every public exposure of an honourable virgin is (to her) a suffering of rape: and yet the suffering of carnal violence is the less (evil), because it comes of natural office.

But they have been more at home in the moral world; as people say to-day they know their way about the conscience.

For such illustrations and such images has Scripture proposed, that, considering the inability of human nature to comprehend God, we might be able to form ideas even from these however poorly and dimly, and as far as is attainable.

As to that she had no doubt.

The Prophet Ezekiel too had predicted the miraculous manner of that birth, calling Mary figuratively the Gate of the Lord, the gate, namely, through which the Lord entered the world.

Would that he had some faults!

And yet again: 'Blessed are the blameless in the way, who walk in the law of the Lord.'

They established him at first in lodgings, where he was boarded with many others, having heard somewhat of his early youth.

“If he breaks down wind,” said Lord Chiltern, “we can’t be better than we are here.

Epistle to the Romans

“I am heartily glad, for you were very useful. I remember how Cantrip almost cried when he told me you were going to leave him. He had been rather put upon, I fancy, before.”

Wide, indeed, is the interval in all else that divides the human from the divine; experience cannot point here below to anything at all resembling in amount what we may guess at and imagine there.

For to those who keep the feast in purity, the Passover is heavenly food; but to those who observe it profanely and contemptuously, it is a danger and reproach.

He has made Him far above all created nature, far above all rule and authority.

She continued instant in prayer, allowing herself no softer bed than a sack spread upon the ground, and accounted fasting her highest luxury.

She would tell Mr Grey that she was not fit to be his wife—and she would beg him to pardon her and to leave her.

Many in the hall, indeed, were already going, and she could not quite understand why no one on the platform had as yet moved.

[1 Samuel 21:13] When the Apostle was read, You heard the same spittle, but running down over the beard.

It was a wonder to himself that he, a lawyer, a man of the world, a member of Parliament, one who had been steeped up to his shoulders in the ways of the world, should still be so pure as to be capable of such a sacrifice.

But Lopez himself, having with his friend’s assistance arranged his affairs comfortably for a month or two, had, as a first resolution, promised himself a fortnight’s freedom from all carking cares.

For wicked actions in effect do this, and every day we subject him to insults by our covetousness and our rapacity.

They thus supported themselves and were able to purchase a morsel of bread for any chance visitors.

We, who know the feeling of Englishmen generally better than Mr. Lopez did, would say—certainly not.

He explains how it is that concupiscence remains in the baptized in act though not in guilt.

It is of moment to a young man when entering life to decide whether he shall make hats or shoes; but not of half the moment that will be that other decision, whether he shall make good shoes or bad.

Wherefore the greatest and chiefest point of the instructions which relate to life must be implanted in the soul from the beginning—to know the eternal God, the giver of what is eternal, and by knowledge and comprehension to possess God, who is first, and highest, and one, and good.

But do not therefore wait for the other to come, since thus you have lost all.

For let any men whatever, if only no madness has broken them loose from the common sense of the human race, bring whatever zeal they like for judging, whatever ignorance, nay whatever slowness of mind, I should like to find out what they would have replied to me had I asked, whether a man would seem to them to have sinned by whose hand while he was asleep another should have written something disgraceful?

London, too, was becoming absolutely distasteful to her.

“Nevertheless you will not forget that I am suitor for your love?”

He shows, I think, by the relation of these elements to each other, or rather by their distance, how far the divine nature is above the speculations of human reason. For that nature which transcends all intelligence is as high above earthly calculation as the stars are above the touch of our fingers; or rather, many times more than that.

“Mrs. Baxter told me not to play this morning, because it’s cold for grandpa to sit up in bed,” said Posy.

note is St. Christopher, commonly known as St. Kitts, and Nevis is close to it.

But, while he had been exercising the duty of a stern master over them, and had been aware of his own extreme generosity in his efforts to forgive his nephew, that very nephew had been laughing at him, in conjunction with the nephew of her whom he had intended to make his wife!

Now His meaning is like this: He was not of himself a waverer; and this ye yourselves showed by your earnestness.

But what is most dreadful to the mind of any man of sound understanding, though characteristic of these miscreants, is this: When the virgins during the scourging called upon the Name of Christ, they gnashed their teeth against them with increased fury.

Uncle Reginald merely remarked that Tom was attending to his business, which was a great thing in a young man.

Say that you will give me five napoleons—oh my brother.” she was still hanging by his arm, and, as she did so, she looked up into his face with tears in her eyes.

On this account it is necessary by admonition to render the medicine sweet.

Tell us then for what reason you took out the bad things written by the heretics and left those written by Origen untouched.

Therefore to man unable to see the truth, authority is at hand, in order that he may be made fitted for it, and may allow himself to be cleansed; and, as I said a little above, no one doubts that this prevails, in part by miracles, in part by multitude.

This I know your heresy affirms, not indeed in the words that I now use; for when you are questioned you confess that God is incorruptible, and absolutely inviolable, and incontaminable; but when you begin to expound the rest of your system, we are compelled to declare Him corruptible, penetrable, contaminable.

Here, at the time of our story, lived Mr. Bergen, and here lived Mr. Bergen’s daughter.

All cry, No!

The evangelist may be charged with falsehood for having added the words I say unto you for the Hebrew is only Damsel arise.

Under no circumstances could she refuse her own child a home under her own roof.

“If you think it will be more comfortable, sir, I will leave The Cleeve for a time.”

But you, if you heed nothing else, reverence at least that book, which you reach forth in putting the oath; and open the Gospel, which you take in hand when you bid swear; and when thou hear what Christ there declares concerning oaths, shudder and desist!

“Oh, how I wish I could do that!” said Lady Glencora.

He feeds on fresh meat, while dried or salt flesh is sufficient for his neighbours.

When I am taking a walk through the fields and get one of my feet deeper than usual into the mud, I always endeavour to bear it as well as I may before the eyes of those who meet me rather than make futile efforts to get rid of the dirt and look as though nothing had happened.

It is here enough that they are also found in Christ.

When, therefore, the high priest asked for this, the same youths again appeared to Heliodorus, clad in the same garments, and said to him: Give thanks to Onias the high priest, for whose sake your life is granted you.

3. But since in that rescript, in which such liberty was granted them, many and various conditions seemed clearly added, some of them, it may be, after a little retired from such observance.

[2 Thessalonians 2:2] Neither by spirit, he says, glancing at the false prophets.

It would be a great match for Lucy, doubtless; but— Indeed, he could not bring himself to believe that Lucy could in truth become the absolute reigning queen of Framley Court.

Let us inquire, further, why there are one hundred and fifty psalms.

[Matthew 25:35-36] Every time that you hold out your hand, think of Christ.

And so they sauntered on, exchanging no further words.

And if one stow away (the chalice) when it has been filled, (what has been poured into it) will after no long time return to its natural dimensions, inasmuch as the potency of the drug becomes extinct by reason of the continuance of moisture.

Then she heard him at the foot of the stair, and with a low voice he called to her by her name.

For the psalm is a melodious and sober blessing.

But some suppose that the expressions, the feeble members, and less honorable, and necessary, and which enjoy more abundant honor, are used by Paul of eyes and feet, and that he speaks of the eye as more feeble, and necessary, because though deficient in strength, they have the advantage in utility: but of the feet as the less honorable: for these also receive from us great consideration.

She could look her best when other women look their worst, and could dare to be seen at all times.

One, self-begotten, and the only One,

Thus we are right in saying that it is impossible to find anything superfluous or wanting in creation.

(Basil the Great died Jan. 1, a.d. 379. Gregory of Nazianzus was prevented by very serious illness from attending his funeral, and therefore wrote as follows to Gregory of Nyssa.)

What therefore has he said?

It had, too, occurred to us that, as Mr. Molloy had paid his three shillings and sixpence for the Turkish Bath, he would not prove to be one of that class of visitors whose appeals to tender-hearted editors are so peculiarly painful.

“What do I think of Lucy Robarts?” she said, repeating her son’s words in a tone of evident dismay.

“He is saying that I am robbing you, and trying to cover the robbery by marrying you. Both my own lawyer, and Mr Slow, have told me that a plain statement of the whole case must be prepared, so that any one who cares to inquire may learn the whole truth, before I can venture to do anything which might otherwise compromise my character. You do not think of all this, Margaret, when you are angry with me.” Margaret, hanging down her head, confessed that she had not thought of it.

This condition has no doubt come chiefly from its good luck.

And they put at his side Pharia, whose name shows her to have been the king's daughter.

But if you enter the house of mourners, even though they are very rich, when you go away you will be rather refreshed.

Worthily was he considered to stand above all men.

On this subject Philo has composed a treatise which deserves the thoughtful and intelligent investigation of all lovers of truth.

Paul therefore linked the two persons by a twofold bond, the one depending on a benefit, the other on an act of vengeance.

Her chin was short and perhaps now verging to that size which we call a double chin, and marked by as broad a dimple as ever Venus made with her finger on the face of a woman.

As if he had said, Husbandmen, whatsoever they sow, this also do they receive; but we, sowing in your souls spiritual things, do reap carnal.

Though the delta of the Orinoco is still called Guiana, it belongs to the republic of Venezuela.

Since therefore God is one, there cannot be two incapable of birth: because God is one (although both the Father is God and the Son of God is God) for the very reason that incapability of birth is the only quality that can belong to one Person only.

Book IX, Letter 59

He had not interfered in the search.

“I will live on no man’s charity,” said Crawley, with an abruptness which amounted almost to an expression of anger.

And often out of vessels of dishonour, by merely changing the form, and making an image of the requisite shape, they make what they call a god; which we consider not only senseless, but to be even insulting to God, who, having ineffable glory and form, thus gets His name attached to things that are corruptible, and require constant service.

But the wise and holy Macarius, the president of the city, resolved this question in the following manner.

Not only was he weary, but his horse was so tired that he could hardly get him to canter for a furlong.

[2 Corinthians 6:10] If these things are small and unworthy of notice, I would fain learn what is greater and of more account.

That, perhaps, is not saying much, for he was only a few feet high; but what he wanted in quantity he fully made up in quality.

In front of the carriageway swings on two massive supports the old sign of the Bush, as to which it may be doubted whether even Mr. Runciman himself knows that it has swung there, or been displayed in some fashion, since it was the custom for the landlord to beat up wine to freshen it before it was given to the customers to drink.

The man cried out in prophetic rapture, The victory is yours, Sylla!

I was lodging at this period in a quiet and eligible street not far from Theobald’s Road.

Chapter VI. Hoff the Butcher

Or how can a man convert what he does not see?

I thought it very cruel, but it was of no use for me to say anything.” “No; he didn’t tell me what he was about; but I knew it was another will.

I ain’t a coming on my own hook as I did this time;—and wouldn’t now, only for Muster Fenwick.” Our friends left the police to settle this question with Sam, and then drove home to Bullhampton.

And with him he abides, and is not ashamed to abide, nay, for this very reason he does abide, as having a suitable lodging-place, for to him it was much more suitable than any king's palace.

For He must reign, till He has put all enemies under His feet.

“Quite impossible! One’s thoughts, I imagine, are always supposed to be one’s own.”

For, if the Spirit being already come, Christ had then departed, and the Spirit remained; the consolation would not have been so great as it was.

“He’d have a perfect right to take the shooting if he liked it,—that is always supposing that he and your father agreed about it.”

But I will set forth our views more distinctly.

She tripped over the stile with a light step and again walked on rapidly.

How then does this evangelist say, that their mother came to Him?

“No; I don’t think there are horses here,—not for visitors, that is. How did you get home? Did you have any adventures?”

If he had been acquainted with the nature of demons, and with their several operations, whether led on to them by the conjurations of those who are skilled in the art, or urged on by their own inclination to act according to their power and inclination; if, I say, he had thoroughly understood this subject, which is both wide in extent and difficult for human comprehension, he would not have condemned us for saying that those who worship the Supreme Being should not serve demons.

After breakfast he would open his letters in his study, but he liked her to be with him, and desired to discuss with her every application he got from a constituent.

For like as the grain cast into the ground shows luxuriant crops, so also many are the handfuls almsgiving produces of righteousness, and unspeakable the fruits it shows.

There was the Marquis of B——, and Sir C. D——, and the Dowager Countess of E——.

They are attracted not by food like animals, but, like spirits, by such symbols as suit their taste, various kinds of stones, woods, plants, animals, songs, rites.

33. Bring home mine that are far off, make glad mine that are near; and in the midst of our land shall be preached, good tidings of joy; and I shall render in return for peace, praise from every mouth!

This is why the Creator of all things, made the sun in addition to that glorious light, and placed it shining in the heavens.

For I know not whither he who spoke thus has passed.

When the Marquis was in his room, his courier, or the man so called, came to undress him. “Have you heard anything to-day?” he asked in Italian. The man said that he had heard. A letter had reached him that afternoon from London. The letter had declared that little Popenjoy was sinking. “That will do Bonni,” he said. “I will get into bed by myself.” Then he sat down and thought of himself, and his life, and his prospects,—and of the prospects of his enemies.

He would have described his own weakness as caused, perhaps, by a too thin-skinned sensitiveness.

A man whom he would not name, but who, he trusted, would never succeed in his ambition to occupy a seat in that House, had been brought forward, and certain tradesmen in Silverbridge had been asked to support him as the Duke’s nominee.

“Of course it’s imprudent, Sarah. It don’t require any thinking to be aware of that. It’s downright stupid;—two cousins with nothing a year between them, when no doubt each of them might do very well. They’re well-born, and well-looking, and clever, and all that. It’s absurd, and I don’t suppose it will ever come to anything.”

[Ι] Issuing forth, it destroys the terrible portals of hell.

But at Siena he and his courier together could obtain no information.

Chapter 9. The Christians have not believed groundless stories

Which we so joyfully applauded, which we so fearlessly made our boast of?

Many a Barchester apprentice made his appearance there that day and urged with piteous supplication that he had been working all the week in making saddles and boots for the use of Ullathorne, in compounding doses for the horses, or cutting up carcasses for the kitchen.

Those in the Civil Service are never called upon to do either.

“Your manifest duty,” said the Dean, unable to restrain his triumph.

If, therefore, while I expound and show you that this is the greatest sin, which is able to destroy you all, it occur to your mind that you are not destroyed, being great multitudes, you are deceived.

And he would have retreated had not Lady Laura called to him.

He shall meet those who do righteousness, and they shall remember Your ways.

[John 17:6] And on the mount the Father spoke, and said, This is my beloved Son.

If then they that deny the assumption of the soul, and maintain God the Word to be a creature, and assert that He was in the body in place of a soul, deny that He was delivered to death, how can they obtain pardon who while they confess one substance of the Trinity, and leave the soul in its own immortality, impudently dare to say that God the Word of one substance with the Father tasted death?

[1 Corinthians 10:12-13] For when he says Let him that stands take heed lest he fall he sets free will on its guard, as he certainly knew that, after grace had been received, it could either stand by its exertions or fall through carelessness.

But not such were the Three Children.

It was a snare, and they made it a fortification!

But whenever for the price of the goods which you are selling, thou not only liest, but even falsely swearest; how in your mouth all the day long is there the praise of God?

You will understand how terrible must have been the occasion when I found myself compelled to take such a step as this.

But do you wish to know of what sort love is?

Whence sometimes a man's mind is exalted into pride, and he despises as weak those whom he hears speaking.

What was he to do?

She waved aside the breastplate, declaring that the mourning ring which contained poor Greenow’s final grey lock of hair, was the last article from a jeweller’s shop which should ever find a place about her person.

Have you no fear, lest you too incur the same?

The present canons treat of those who have in the persecution denied the faith, and are doing penance.

Let any of my readers think of it, and then tell themselves whether it could be possible.

Mr. Glascock also was frequently in the same circles, and thus it came to pass that the two gentlemen saw each other almost daily.

“I know that you would forgive a man anything, and a woman nothing.” To this she submitted in silence, having probably heard the reproof before, and he went on to finish the letter. “Not defending himself!” he exclaimed—”then why does he not defend himself? When a man tells me that he does not, or cannot defend himself I know that he is a sorry fellow, without a spark of spirit.”

For, tell me, if you had entered into a palace, which would you choose, to be able to rearrange some of the things which have been fixed there, or so to make the king a familiar friend, as to persuade him to take up his abode with you?

Now, if you will sit up and listen to me, I will tell you what passed between me and the Doctor.” Then she raised herself from the ground and took her seat at the tea-table, and listened patiently as he began his tale.

He was always threatening her.

I am not quite sure whether some fault may not have lain on the other side; whether the Senate may not have been somewhat slack in exercising the protective privileges given to it by the Constitution.

It was two miles through the wood to Mr. Griggs’s farmyard, and more than three miles back by any route which the cart could take.

But his conscience told him that the journey was not necessary, and that the delay would be cruel.

This is very suitable to the matter in hand.

Whence it is said, If any man loves, he is known.

It is not for things abominable, as the tricks of jugglers and sorcerers.

And of the Greeks those who are more inclined to speak of God, and who approach nearest to us, have formed some conception of Him, as it seems to me, though they have differed as to His Name, and have addressed Him as the Mind of the World, or the External Mind, and the like.

The chance in his favour was doubtless small, but the world was nothing to him without this chance.

John records that the Baptist said he was not worthy, Mark that he was not sufficient, and these two are not the same.

However it will suffice, if even in this way I should be able to attain my purpose.

Of yourself personally I hear all that is good.

“He has been very lucky in his wife.”

Miserable comforters are you all [Job 16:2], he says.

For whom they used to worship, them they are deserting, and Whom they used to mock as one crucified, Him they worship as Christ, confessing Him to be God.

And, moreover, we have the witness of those for whom He wrought miracles, of devils, of the Jews, the Apostles in peril on the sea, of the centurion by the Cross, that Christ is truly the Son of God ( 47-52).

For there is no other reason why they who made frogs and serpents were not able to make the most minute flies, unless because the greater power of God was present prohibiting them, through the Holy Spirit; which even the magicians themselves confessed, saying, This is the finger of God.

And because temporal death follows temporal life, it follows that souls rise again to everlasting life, because temporal death has received an end.

“But to yourself!”

Her rank was allowed to her.

But the other on his return from the prison, released from all (bounds), will no longer think that he suffers any evil as comparing his own case with that of (those) others.

For who is so obtuse as either to slay victims in sacrifice to those who have no sense, or to think that they should be given to those who are removed far from them in their nature and blessed state?

“Yes, the estate can bear it,” said the attorney. “They should be paid what they have expended. That is my idea. Your son thinks that their silence will be worth the money.”

If it was worthy of God and of Christ to check hard-heartedness when the time (for its indulgence) was fully expired, why should it not be more worthy both of God and of Christ to shake off infirmity of the flesh when the time is already more wound up?

We do not intend to pit ourselves against you.

[Proverbs 3:18] Just as the one tree was for the bodily Paradise, the other is for the spiritual; the one affording a vigour to the senses of the outward man, the other to those of the inner man, such as will abide without any change for the worse through time.

Now, that men of the world should feel in this way, is indeed a grievous thing, yet it is not so very dreadful; but that those who are freed from the turmoils of busy life should be possessed by this distemper,— this is most grievous of all.

As she thought the matter over in her own room, long hour after hour, she became angry with herself for having been talked into a feeling of anger for him.

“And Mr. Thumble can go over with the letter the first thing in the morning.”

The prophet describes Him who sprang from the root of Jesse as possessing all the powers of the spirit.

She asked him no questions about the money, or as to the possibility of his exercising his memory, nor did she counsel him to plead that the false excuses given by him for his possession of the cheque had been occasioned by the sad slip to which sorrow had in those days subjected his memory and his intellect.

“He is the same as the others,” said Harry to himself.

He had accepted the kindness; but being fully alive to the purposes of matronly intrigue, had had his little jokes in reference to the young ladies.

“Having thus described the Lady Crinoline——”

What are these prodigies?

[Matthew 14:31] Only, observe that He did not say, O you without faith, but, O you of little faith, and that it was said, Wherefore did you doubt, as he had still a measure of faith, but also had a tendency towards that which was opposed to faith.

To her thinking, it was absurd in the highest degree that such men as Dr. Tempest and her Mr. Robarts should be asked to meet Mr. Thumble and Mr. Quiverful on a matter of ecclesiastical business.

A young writer, who will acknowledge the truth of what I am saying, will often feel himself tempted by the difficulties of language to tell himself that some one little doubtful passage, some single collocation of words, which is not quite what it ought to be, will not matter.

Then I said, How then is it possible to get it in the mind?

I know no other reason but that why you should be my wife.

Any one who can make no reply when questions are addressed to him, you say, will be regarded as illiterate and stupid.

[Luke 1:33] For it might also be said, "There shall be no measure," so that measure might be used in the sense of limit; for He who reigns in no measure, assuredly does not reign at all.

Therefore it is with reason that it is only sealed by the Lamb slain, who, as it were a lion, has broken death in pieces, and has fulfilled what had been foretold; and has delivered man, that is, the flesh, from death, and has received as a possession the substance of the dying person, that is, of the human members; that as by one body all men had fallen under the obligation of its death, also by one body all believers should be born again unto life, and rise again.

“Very hard, Mr Melmotte.”

It is a coarse tirade of abuse against a man whom we believe to have been bad, but as to whom we feel that we are not justified in supposing that we can get his true character here.

Our Vicar was very anxious not to disturb the chapel now that it was built; but he was quite as anxious to disturb the Marquis.

Nor did our people venture any longer to make opposition, desiring as they did in some way or other now to put an end to the business.

With your leave I will tell you what I would suggest.

They praise him who gave the command, and deny him who executed it!

The People’s Banner, though it prefaced each one of its daily paragraphs on the subject with a statement as to the manifest duty of an influential newspaper to abstain from the expression of any opinion on such a subject till the question had been decided by a jury, nevertheless from day to day recapitulated the evidence against the Member for Tankerville, and showed how strong were the motives which had existed for such a deed.

But if the divine Word took nothing of our nature, then the covenants made with the patriarchs by the God of all with oaths were not true, and the blessing of Judah was vain, and the promise to David was false, and the Virgin was superfluous, because she did not contribute anything of our nature to the Incarnate God.

VII.

For indeed the showing of mercy is a mystery. Shut therefore the doors, that none may see what it is not pious to display. For our mysteries too are above all things, a showing of God's mercy and loving-kindness. According to His great mercy, He had mercy on us being disobedient.

At nineteen Miss Furnival was in all respects a young woman.

And he had kissed her, and had afterwards parted from her as a dear friend.

There was bribery, no doubt, and intimidation, and a resort to those dirty arts of canvassing with which we English have been so familiar; but in Cicero’s time the male free inhabitants of Rome did generally carry the candidates to whom they attached themselves.

Therefore he was both right in saying that he did not please men, because in that very thing he aimed at pleasing God: and right in authoritatively teaching that we ought to please men, not in order that this should be sought for as the reward of our good deeds; but because the man who would not offer himself for imitation to those whom he wished to be saved, could not please God; but no man possibly can imitate one who has not pleased him.

According to Madame Staubach’s own ideas, Linda ought now to have been in the dust, dissolved in tears, wiping the floor with her hair, utterly subdued in spirit, hating herself as the vilest of God’s creatures.

Joshua the son of Nun took away the inheritance from his persecutors and gave it to his people; and Jesus our Redeemer took away the inheritance from His persecutors and gave it to strange nations.

And observe how prudently he introduces his testimony; for he does not only point Him out when He has appeared, but even before He appears, proclaims Him.

He stood there wondering and bewildered for some minutes of time, while she, with her face hidden, still clung round his knees. “What is it?” at last he said. “I do not understand.” But she had no answer to make to him. Her great resolve had been quickly made and quickly carried out, but now the reaction left her powerless. He stooped down to raise her; but when he moved she fell prone upon the ground; he could hear her sobs as though her bosom would burst with them.

How often do our own lives experience changes!

“It must not be,” she said to herself over and over again.

At another time, it is by the preaching of the Gospel; for He says, that He that reaps receives wages, and gathers fruit unto life eternal.

And then the light had been let in upon him by that letter from Sir Francis, in which Sir Francis had offered “such courtesies as are generally held to be pleasant in a neighbourhood!” The intention had been that this old friendship should be renewed under his roof, and be renewed without any information being given to him that it had ever previously existed.

So she went, and immediately afterwards the Duke followed her.

[1 Corinthians 15:52] But in the matter of believing, it is not thus, but how is it?

For thus he speaks: Bounty, which proceeds from our estate, drains the very source of our liberality; and thus liberality is destroyed by liberality: for the more numerous they are towards whom you practice it, the less you will be able to practice it towards many.

Very good, then, are all the works of our God and Saviour.

Let us fear them, beloved, let us fear the fountain of so great punishments, the insatiate madness, the destroyer of our salvation.

And to enjoy the bread his sweat has won.

Why, for that very reason has He come last, because you first have sickened.

“Love you, Annot! why yes, I do love you. If you’ll be a good girl, that is, I will love you.”

But when he had knelt on the rug between them, leaning just a little towards the girl, and had looked up into the girl’s face, smiling at his own little joke, but with his face full of love;—then she had known.

“Every word out of your mouth is like music to me. But there is one word which I am dying to hear.”

And let me recall to you the tragedy between Balfour of Burley and Bothwell, and repeat to you the final words of the scene.

For both the time is short, and the labor small, and yet we faint and are supine.

When M. Lacordaire regained the table the senior habitue, the junior garcon, and all the intermediate ranks of men at the Hotel des Ambassadeurs knew that they might congratulate him.

Some indeed there are, which are more especially principal members, others less so: for example, the head is more a principal member than all the rest of the body, as containing within itself all the senses, and the governing principle of the soul.

“It’s a blessing to Maryanne to have lost you; that’s what it is.”

Justin: I cannot tell.

Young men have been known to be driven not only out of County Galway, but out of Ireland itself, by the tone of Mr. Daly’s voice, and by the blackness of his frown.

But be not deceived.

It was his pleasure to be an Englishman.

For though the preacher may have great ability (and this one would only find in a few), not even in this case is he released from perpetual toil.

Augustine answered: In the first place, we reply without delay that we do not kill you, but you kill yourselves by a true death, when you cut yourselves off from the living root of unity.

Yea and Prophets and Apostles, in their promises: assure you that they like flowers, shall fade at the rising.— 7.

His mind was altogether filled with the wonderful words that had been spoken to him.

Hear also what Paul says: "The love of our neighbor," he says, "works no ill." [Romans 13:10] The testimonies here made use of are very short, but, if I mistake not, they are to the point, and sufficient for the purpose.

What would they have said if I had allowed her to jilt the tailor and marry the good-looking young lord?

It was actually from it that they were able to take rank, so as to be deemed— one the first, and the other the last man, or Adam.

The Emperor accordingly writes to Rome, and again Palatines, and Notaries, and Counts are sent off with letters to the Prefect, in order that either they may inveigle Liberius by stratagem away from Rome and send him to the Court to him, or else persecute him by violence.

Chapter 7. The Writer, Judas.

The Gospel of your salvation. And well does he call it the Gospel of salvation, intimating in the one word a contrast to the law, in the other, a contrast with punishment to come. For what is the message, but the Gospel of salvation, which forbears to destroy those that are worthy of destruction.

Under M. Esselin there is but one European master.

Their rest will be in hell, yours in heaven; their home in the grave, yours in paradise.

“My lord,” said the doctor, “you had better write to me as I proposed to you just now.”

There is the making of that railroad to be effected, and something done toward the union of those provinces.

How shall men know a fact unless they be told?

This very man, perhaps not having the means to pay, is ordered by the king to be sold along with his wife, by intercourse with whom he became the father of certain children.

In both respects he won a like distinction, and showed himself to be his own equal, and absolutely perfect.

It would have been the same.

The number then must be examined, what mean ten and seven: ten in commandments, seven in the grace of the Holy Spirit: by which grace the commandments are fulfilled.

“Exactly,” said Robinson.

When another cried out, and testified that he would not obey, he was struck in the mouth, and silenced by a large band of those who were drawn up for this purpose, and driven away by force, even though he had not sacrificed.

Hereby is excluded the assertion of those who wish to represent the relationship of Father and Son as a matter of names, inasmuch as every image is similar in species to that of which it is an image.

Lady Laura got up, and so also did Miss Effingham. “For what purpose?” said the latter. “It cannot be for any good purpose.”

And there were letters,—letters alleged to have been written by the Earl to the living wife in the old days, which were shown to Mr. Flick.

“Just for the present—for the next day or two—I think that you should do nothing. As soon as the first agony of this time is over at Castle Richmond, I think that Herbert should see you. It would be very desirable that he and you should take in concert such proceedings as will certainly become necessary. The absolute proof of the truth of this story must be obtained. You understand, I hope, Mr. Fitzgerald, that the case still admits of doubt.”

“If you mean that I have been looking to be married—”

What power?

But it was only the second Punic war that put an end on both sides to discord and strife.

Early in the year relief committees were formed, on one of which young Herbert Fitzgerald agreed to act. His father promised, and was prepared to give his best assistance, both by money and countenance; but he pleaded that the state of his health hindered him from active exertion, and therefore his son came forward in his stead on this occasion, as it appeared probable that he would do on all others having reference to the family property.

Could I be allowed to look forward and think that you would sit at my hearth, and that some child that should be my child should lie in your arms, then I could look forward to what you call a career.

Matt. XVI. 28.

It would be too much to say that any of them are masterly creations, unless it be Crawley and the Proudies, but they are absolutely truthful, real, living portraits.

He hardly knew that her hand was in his.

Now, what day will suit you, —or rather what day will suit the Cavalry generally?

And yet let those who make this charge understand that He whom we regard and believe to have been from the beginning God, and the Son of God, is the very Logos, and the very Wisdom, and the very Truth; and with respect to His mortal body, and the human soul which it contained, we assert that not by their communion merely with Him, but by their unity and intermixture, they received the highest powers, and after participating in His divinity, were changed into God.

But assuredly, because they contributed no advantage to life, they neither obeyed their own decrees, nor has any one been found, through so many ages, who lived in accordance with their laws.

And again he said:— That day there shall be cold and frost.

For, he says, the material body being fluid, and in no wise remaining in itself, but wearing out and being replaced around the appearance by which its shape is distinguished, and by which the figure is contained, it is necessary that the resurrection should be only that of the forth.

For the law, says he, of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has made me free from the law of sin and death, — that, surely, which he previously mentioned as dwelling in our members.

“Who is he, Lady Anna?”

And, it says, he slew James the brother of John with the sword: (taking him) at random and without selection.

As for those who insult over them in their trials, and when ills befall them say, Where is your God?

But now there had come to him no comfort from his corner of legal knowledge.

Hath He showed you, O man, what is good; and what does the Lord require of you, but to do justly, and to love mercy, and to walk humbly with your God?

A different condition of mind exists then, and a struggle is made to overcome the judgment of men which is not in itself painful.

And all the profane and disgraceful things which are found as well in their writings as in their secret traditions, we have disclosed and clearly proved to the eyes of the Christian laity that the people might know what to shrink from or avoid: so that he that was called their bishop was himself tried by us, and betrayed the criminal views which he held in his mystic religion, as the record of our proceedings can show you.

“I don’t think you have anything to complain of as yet,” said Lady Julia, who had in some sort perceived that Lily’s retreat had been on Grace’s account, and not on her own. “It seems to me that Lily was very glad to see you, and when I told her that you were coming to stay here, and would be near them for some days, she seemed to be quite pleased;—she did indeed.”

But he did it, say you, for His destruction, that he might refute them.

That in various places, cities, and nations, certain effects are brought about in the name of idols, we are far from denying.

What I want you to understand is this, that whatever you may judge to be right and best, I will agree to it, and will think that it is right and best.

“She wears cork soles to her boots and she thinks a good deal about them.”

Before the evening was over there occurred a further episode in our affairs which awakened me.

He was aware now that he would be held by all his natural friends to have ruined himself by such a marriage.

nay, what madness!

“Indeed I will, Anty,” said Martin, rather astonished, but with a look of solemn assurance; “anything that I can do, I will: you needn’t dread my not remembering, but I fear it isn’t much that I can do for you.”

But to Mrs. Stanbury, who was over sixty, Mr. Glascock seemed to be quite in the flower of his age.

Yet he knew Him not before or for a long time, and with good cause; for the marvels which took place when He was a child, as the circumstances of the Magi and others the like, had happened long before, while John himself was very young, and since much time had elapsed in the interval, He was naturally unknown to all.

For supposing some one were to call you a Catholic, am I to immediately give assent?

15. What shall we do, then? How shall we ascend unto heaven? There, powers are stationed, principalities drawn up in order, who keep the doors of heaven, and challenge him who ascends. Who shall give me passage, unless I proclaim that Christ is Almighty? The gates are shut—they are not opened to any and every one; not every one who will shall enter, unless he also believes according to the true Faith. The Sovereign's court is kept under guard.

She felt herself to be in such a nervous fright that she would willingly have been home again at Hampton if she could; but as this was utterly impossible, she had only to bethink herself of her steps, and get through the work as best she might.

It was not only in reference to Mr Longestaffe’s affairs that they knew Squercum.

Lord Augustus had shrugged his shoulders and had gone back to his whist, this interview having taken place in the strangers’ room of his club.

For they form the images of the sun and moon after the fashion of men; also those of fire, and earth, and sea, which they call Vulcan, Vesta, and Neptune.

Do not let persons on this account suppose that Mrs. Robarts was a tufthunter, or a toad-eater.

“Cecilia,” he said, attempting to approach her with his hand, without rising from his chair.

“Oh Frank, was it ever sweet to you?”

Their witness, then, appears to be the cleansing away of sins with glory.

If you are reluctant to imitate me, hinder me not.

And when he had spoken these things, and others of like kind, Thomas also held his peace.]

“No; maybe he gave me a Christmas-box or so; he’s very good to a poor boy like me in that way, is Mr. Keegan.”

No contemporary storyteller deals so much in letters; the modern English epistle (very happily imitated, for the most part), is his unfailing resource.

and remembered as he listened, that he had lost for ever that beauty which had cost him so dear?

At Loughlinter they were met for business.

Thus, strangely enough, this emotion not only fails to obey the legitimate desire to beget offspring, but also refuses to serve lascivious lust; and though it often opposes its whole combined energy to the soul that resists it, sometimes also it is divided against itself, and while it moves the soul, leaves the body unmoved.

And when after receiving the Duke’s money, he had kept also Mr. Wharton’s money, he had justified himself again by reminding himself that Mr. Wharton certainly owed him much more than that.

“Ralph Newton has made money difficulties,” said Sir Thomas. “If he had been careful with his own fortune there would have been no question as to the property between him and your father.”

“There’s not much fear she’ll look black on the wife, when you bring the money home with her. But where’ll you live, Martin? The little shop at Dunmore’ll be no place for Mrs Kelly, when there’s a lady of the name with £400 a-year of her own.”

Since perhaps some one might say, What then, if I am not able?

The words of Scripture which are under consideration seem to me of themselves to make this sufficiently plain to those who carefully attend to them: For Christ has died once for our sins, the Just for the unjust, that He might bring us to God; being put to death in the flesh, but quickened in the spirit: in which also He came and preached unto the spirits in prison, who sometime were unbelieving, when the long-suffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing.

“Ayala!” said Tom, hardly able to suppress a sob as he uttered the fatal name.

“You’ve got to endure that,” said he.

5. Now the commencement of Arius's Thalia and flippancy, effeminate in tune and nature, runs thus:—

Who answered, Give me a blessing, You have given me a South and dry land; give me also a watered land.

For not even doubt and criticism will satisfy them.

Here Linda Tressel lived with her aunt, and here also Linda had been born.

13. Be jealous over me who am Yours, and to You, O my Lord: am I betrothed! The Apostle who betrothed me to You, told me that You are jealous. For as a wall to chaste wives is the jealousy of their husbands.

And yet he is not a man of ancient blood, or of long established supremacy.

Of Thackeray it might be predicted that he certainly would do so.

They rarely get beyond Luchon; and in this they are right, as they thus end their peregrinations at the most lovely spot among these mountains, and are as a rule so deceived, imposed on, and bewildered by guides, innkeepers, and horse-owners, at this otherwise delightful place, as to become undesirous of further travel.

[Matthew 18:24] The sense of this appears to me to be as follows: The season of beginning the judgment is with the house of God, who says, as also it is written in Ezekiel, to those who are appointed to attend to punishments, Begin ye with My saints; [Ezekiel 9:6] and it is like the twinkling of an eye; but, the time of making a reckoning includes the same twinkling, ideally apprehended, for we are not forgetful of what has been previously said of those who owe more.

“And so good.”

Ayala the romantic; Ayala the poetic!

It seemed to him that from that moment all the explanations, and all the statements, and most of the assurances were made by her and not by him. After this first embrace he found himself seated beside her, holding her hand. “I do not know that I am right,” said he.

“You were there! then you can tell me of my husband. For God’s sake, speak, Father Jerome! Tell me the worst at once. I can bear it, for it can’t be worse than I expect. Is he—is he alive?”

Nor could she teach herself to think it possible that she should ever live with him again on friendly terms.

From all this it is plain that what He had as Word, that when He had become man and was risen again, He says that He received humanly ; that for His sake men might henceforward upon earth have power against demons, as having become partakers of a divine nature; and in heaven, as being delivered from corruption, might reign everlastingly.

What had been the result of that reference the reader already knows.

They were the first words he spoke to her, though since he had last seen her he had written to her that letter which even now she carried about her.

Neither will the second have power to harm us against our will; for though others be at war with us, we may be peaceable ourselves.

The drunkenness he here speaks of is not that from wine only, but that also which comes of all vices.

From which it appears that the Creator of all things admitted certain seeds and causes of variety and diversity, that He might create variety and diversity in proportion to the diversity of understandings, i.e., of rational creatures, which diversity they must be supposed to have conceived from that cause which we have mentioned above.

Nor did this merely mean that those named should be caught and killed by some miscalled officers of justice.

In the very step with which he passed in and out of his own door you could see that there was nothing that he was ashamed of about his household.

What is said is plain, but the question is how and in what sense it is to be understood.

“Dear, dear, dear! I’m sure, archdeacon, that you will believe me when I say that I knew nothing about it.”

He’ll come right again some day.

Caesar takes their public treasure and their ships, and reminding them that he spares them rather for their name and old character than for any merits of theirs shown towards him, leaves two legions among them, and goes to Rome.

What does it signify what I wear?

‘Sir Gregory has already told me that we are expected to be at

“I’m always delighted to see you, Mr. Camperdown,” said the Turtle Dove, bowing.

His bales of dirty indigo are his dice, his cards come up every year instead of every ten minutes, and the sea is his green-table.

We have been vouchsafed the same Spirit.

You have Paddywhack fresh for me about one.” Paddywhack was the old Irish horse which had carried him so long, and has been mentioned before.

And if the resurrection of the flesh is not found impossible on the principles even of unbelievers, how much more will it be found in accordance with the mind of believers!

Do you see how he has detached them from them, and drawn them to himself; having shown that even the Corinthians themselves are longing to get hold of some occasion, whereby they may have it in their power to speak on their behalf and to defend them unto their accusers.

[Psalm 139:7] How then can we flee from God?

You shall not kill; you shall not commit adultery; you shall not seduce boys; you shall not steal; you shall not bear false witness; you shall love the Lord your God.

[Philippians 1:22-24] Now it is uncertain whether we should read, ex duobus concupiscentiam habens [having a desire for two things], or compellor autem ex duobus [I am in a strait between two and so to add: concupiscentiam habens dissolvi, et esse cum Christo [having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ].

Alas!—she told herself, admitting in her misery all her weakness,—alas, she had no mother.

According to the traditions of the church and the teaching of the apostle Paul, the answer must be this; that we shall rise as perfect men in the measure of the stature of the fullness of Christ.

And hence it is the distinctive property of material bodies that they can be condensed and rarefied, contracted and dilated, crushed into small fragments and enlarged to great masses.

And if temperance be in its nature good, and licentiousness be opposed to temperance, and that which is opposed to good be evil, then licentiousness is evil.

They sat down to breakfast, and Mary gave him his tea in silence. “I am going over to Boxall Hill before dinner,” said he. “Have you any message to send to Lady Scatcherd?”

For since there were some among them who thought great things of themselves, and set themselves above the Apostle, and accused him as a boaster, and as being nothing, and teaching no sound doctrine; (now this was in itself the most certain evidence of their own corruptness;) see how he begins his rebuke of them; Now I Paul myself.

I often condemn her frivolity, but at the same time I condemn my own severity.

Dr Thorne wanted no one to tell him what was the matter with his ward. It was his liver; his liver, and his head, and his stomach, and his heart. Every organ in his body had been destroyed, or was in the course of destruction. His father had killed himself with brandy; the son, more elevated in his tastes, was doing the same thing with curaçoa, maraschino, and cherry-bounce.

It will probably occur to you that I should not thus intrude on you, unless I had that to say to you which may be of considerable moment. Pray therefore excuse me, even if you do not grant my request.

For if any that has a beloved wife does not perceive any of the vexations that come day by day, He that loves with this divine and pure love, only consider what great pleasure he will have to enjoy!

[Genesis 22:17] Therefore one star differs from another star in glory.

On few matters of moment to a man’s own heart can he speak out plainly the whole truth that is in him.

Frank found the task before him by no means an easy one. He had to make Miss Dunstable understand that he had never had the slightest idea of marrying her, and that he had made love to her merely with the object of keeping his hand in for the work as it were; with that object, and the other equally laudable one of interfering with his cousin George.

“Plantagenet has spoken to you?”

Of which city another psalm says, Mother Sion, shall a man say, and the man is made in her, and the Highest Himself has founded her.

“Well?” said the squire, looking at him earnestly.

From the very cutting off, which was predicted against Him; as when He says by Isaiah to the Jews, who were the instigators of hatred against Him: Because of you, my name is blasphemed among the Gentiles; [Isaiah 52:5] and in another passage: Lay the penalty on Him who surrenders His own life, who is held in contempt by the Gentiles, whether servants or magistrates.

If, however, they die and rest in the sleep of the saints (and I know that they desire that you should survive them); when your years are riper, and your will steadier, and your resolution stronger, you will do with your money what seems best to you, or rather what the Lord shall command, knowing as you will that hereafter you will have nothing save that which you have here spent on good works.

Wherefore David says: The Lord is the portion of mine inheritance and of my cup.

“If so the clown might as well spare the courtier,” not meaning the rebuke which his words implied.

Slow & Bideawhile by name, who had no scruple in detaining him for hours while they or their clerks talked to him about anything or about nothing.

“My dear,” the mother had replied, “unless you are married, I suppose your home must be with your parents.” Nora, having made her protest, did not think it necessary to persevere, and so the matter was dropped.

At this time she was very close to him, and though her words were severe, the glance from her eyes was soft.

I can force him to foreclose.

We produce, too, our remaining (evidences).

And if the departed one should have left a child, even if it be a girl, great anxiety will be caused to the mother, although free from much expense and fear: but a boy fills her with ten thousand alarms and many anxieties every day, to say nothing of the great expense which one is compelled to incur if she wishes to bring him up in a liberal way.

For He has not omitted any point for this Mastery, making out for Himself more claims than men do, and especially beside all other things in order to take care of us.

Here, without these things, the man appears naked.

“Yes, you are.”

But he was disheartened and disgusted by all the circumstances of the Carbury family.

[Mark 10:3] He said, What [30] did Moses command you?

Away with such a thought, but as attuning the rest by what he says of himself, and in his great care to speak modestly.

‘There’s that girl of mine up there is the biggest fool that ever was since the world began.’

Whatever offence there may have been, I think there can have been none personally from him to yourself.

It could not be that he should leave her thus,—he whose every word, whose every tone, whose every look, whose every touch had hitherto been so full of tenderness.

Her great grandmother was a Fiasco, and her great great grandmother a Disgrazia.

“They’re too ‘cute, my lord: they like to pick up the crumbs themselves—small blame to thim in that matther. No; a bright Irish nag, with lots of heart, like Brien Boru, is the hoss to stand on for the Derby; where all run fair and fair alike, the best wins;—but I won’t say but he’ll be the betther for a little polishing at Johnny Scott’s.”

If Mrs. Prime had not been with them in the house, Rachel little doubted but that she might have gone to the party.

“I never knew anything like it in my life before,” said Gadmire.

But then it might be that these reports were spread by Mr. Grimes, that the fanatical ardour of the Salisbury Baptist lent something to the rapidity of his operations, and that the Bullhampton feeling in favour of Mr. Fenwick and the Church Establishment added something to the bitterness of the prevailing criticisms.

Did he talk to God with a pure conscience?

So God made man; male and female He created them.

On showing me these visions, she wished to retire.

with most deep insight beholding that the priesthood of the Jews was already become such, that in name it outwardly was clean and fair, but within was foul with muddy lusts; which priesthood he saw in spirit to be ready to pass away through vengeance of the Lord, when he spoke those words: but yet he had his heart ready not only to receive other blows on the cheek, but also to suffer for the truth any torments whatever, with love of them from whom he should suffer the same.

And John the apostle says: No man has seen God at any time. The only-begotten God, who is in the bosom of the Father, He has declared Him, [John 1:18] — calling invisibility and ineffableness the bosom of God. Hence some have called it the Depth, as containing and embosoming all things, inaccessible and boundless.

To tell the truth, neither Sir Roger nor his son were favourites with these stern custodians.

A most amusing and clever young lady whom I met on my way up to Pretoria was kind enough to describe to me at length the proper way to engage or to attempt to engage the affections of a Boer’s daughter.

Within his bosom is the fire of patriotism, and within his mind the examples of all past time.

For as far as depended on the nature of the thing, they had perished, but God prevented it.

[1 Corinthians 3:1-3] For such are carried about with every wind of doctrine, of which kind he says, "That we be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine."

He had, so far, gained his aim; and, as we presumed, preferred to run the risk of too long a course of hot air to risking his object by seeing us again on that afternoon.

He was pleasant to her, and gracious;—and she had told herself that if it should be so that this great fortune might be hers, she would atone to him fully for that past romance by the wife-like devotion of her life.

And the Serjeant did not like it better than did his wife.

What is meant by fails me, forsakes me?

Mary Wortle took mostly after her father, being tall and comely, having especially her father’s eyes; but still they who had known Mrs. Wortle as a girl declared that Mary had inherited also her mother’s peculiar softness and complexion.

But who were these?

At eight o’clock Lord Silverbridge and his friend met in the dining-room of the Beargarden. “Have you been here before?” asked the Lord.

He would have called upon her for no hard replies.

Now that we have thus cleared up these matters, let us return to our former point—how it was that after the making of His image God contrived for His work the distinction of male and female.

We have shown, therefore, that nothing can possibly be done or remain stable unless belief precede.

There must be no delay, or that final chance of Patagonia would be gone.

“Bother Mr. Jones!” said Rachel, overcome by the absurdity of the occasion. “As you observed just now, Mr. Jones and I are two. Things have not turned out happily, though I am not obliged to explain all that to you. But Mr. Jones is to me all that a man should be; you, Mr. Moss, are not. Now, father, had he not better go?”

[John 13:35] So that this sign is greater surely than all signs, in that the disciple is recognised by it.

“I think,” he said, “that Frances will be happy with me at Hendon.”

Now the other Evangelists say, that the disciples came and asked and besought Him that He would not send them away fasting, while St. John says, that the question was put to Philip by Christ.

In so saying, had he spoken truth or falsehood?

[1 Corinthians 15:32] Now, when the apostle parenthetically inserted this, he censured flesh and blood because of their enjoyment in eating and drinking.

Chapter 17. In Order that he might not be thought Tyrannical, Julian proceeds artfully against the Christians. Abolition of the Sign of the Cross. He makes the Soldiery sacrifice, although they were Unwilling.

[Matthew 10:9-10] Thus, having shown it all forth in His actions, then after that He introduces the verbal enactment of it more determinately, the precept too having then become more easy of acceptance, confirmed as it had been previously by His own actions.

But in his own house he could at least be alone.

‘I wish he were at the Grange,’ said Mrs. Bolton. Then Hester shook her head; but feeling the security of her position, left the baby with its grandmother. ‘I wish he were at the Grange. It is the only fitting home for him at present.’

67. Philemon, bishop of Gaza.

They appointed two, it is said, Joseph called Barsabus, who was surnamed Justus, and Matthias.

Not however that the terrors shall with them proceed no further than mournings; but the mourning shall be, that they may bring forth their sentence from within, and condemn themselves.

He must explain to her that circumstances would not admit his marrying, and must offer to pay her any sum of money that she or her father might think fit to name.

There never was a Lovel but had that natural grace of appearance.

Surely no man was ever so sorely punished for the adequate performance of a most painful public duty as Sir Benjamin D’Urban.

‘I hope so. You and Mr. Jones will prepare the statement for the Secretary of State, and I will send it myself.’ With that Mr. Bagwax took his leave, and remained closeted with Mr. Jones for much of the remainder of the day.

But how long would he who misliked the fellowship of his own twin-brother endure a stranger?

And the earth was invisible, and without order; and darkness was over the abyss: and the Spirit of God moved over the waters.

For in being patient toward such persons, God has this end in view, namely, to exercise and confirm the faith and prudence of His elect by means of the perverseness of these others while at the same time He also takes account of the fact that many of their number make an advance, and are converted to the doing of the good pleasure of God with a great impetus, when led to take pity upon their own souls.

As to the personating of votes, that according to Mr.

I’m to be married next May, and am to spend the honeymoon at Curry Hall.

Who implanted so great power in seeds and vegetables?

But not long after there arose against it a tempestuous wind, called Euroclydon.

Antony was amazed, and thinking over what he had seen went on his way.

Towards the heretics, he means, I show much longsuffering; patience, that under persecution.

Or what room will there be for the God whom they suppose, if the one true God fills all things in the compass of heaven and earth?

Will ye that I show you a dead soul and a living?

“Oh, Roger, I am so glad to see you,” she said, escaping gently from his arms.

They gape upon possessions; they cultivate estates; they repose upon gold; they buy and sell; they study gain by every possible means.

This pernicious embrace the natives describe as “ The Scotchman hugging the Creole.” The metaphor is sufficiently satirical upon our northern friends, who are supposed not to have thriven badly in their visits to the Western islands.

The Carbury River,—so called, though at no place is it so wide but that an active schoolboy might jump across it,—runs, or rather creeps into the Waveney, and in its course is robbed by a moat which surrounds Carbury Manor House.

As regarded East Barsetshire itself, he was returned, and fêted, and sent home with his ears stuffed with eulogy, before the bucolic mind had discovered his purpose.

Eustathius, bishop of Antioch, accuses Eusebius Pamphilus of perverting the Nicene Creed; Eusebius again denies that he violates that exposition of the faith, and recriminates, saying that Eustathius was a defender of the opinion of Sabellius.

And so in their shameless obstinacy a shamefaced acknowledgment meets our view.

And I myself, brethren, am disposed to love you with an enduring affection, inspired both by religion, and by your own manner of life and zeal on my behalf.

He looks like living;—don’t he, Alice?” Then were perpetrated various mysterious ceremonies of feminine idolatry which were continued till there came a grandly dressed old lady, who called herself the nurse, and who took the idol away.

There’s nothing makes me so sick, as for two men like you and me, who know what’s what, to be talking about appearance sake, like two confounded parsons, whose business it is to humbug everybody, and themselves into the bargain.

“You know he didn’t. You know that he would be the last man in the world to do so?”

He wastes indeed with age, or is cut off by death; he undergoes change by lapse of time, or reaches the end allotted to the constitution of life, yet it is not in his power to cease to be what he is; I mean that he cannot make a new self by decrease from his old self, that is, become a child again from an old man.

Wherefore along with the perils and the toils he names these also, saying, By glory and dishonor.

The apostle draws from the fact that an idol is nothing in the world, the consequence that it is injurious to use things offered to idols; and he shows to those who have ears to hear on such subjects, that he who partakes of things offered to idols is worse than a murderer, for he destroys his own brethren, for whom Christ died.

In which of these classes, then, shall we reckon the gods?

It feels so strange to me to write to you in such language as this.

He would see Brehgert before any action could have been taken on the documents, and Brehgert would no doubt restore them to him.

“Muggeridge has been playing the very mischief.” Muggeridge was the second clerk in Cradell’s room. “We’re going to put him into Coventry and not speak to him except officially. But to tell you the truth, my hands have been so full here at home, that I haven’t thought much about the office. What am I to do about that woman?”

Now if the name of brother shame you, much more that of member.

Augustus sat for a while silent, for he did feel that the matter was serious.

Are you rushing down the stream to the headlong deep?

Lady Rowley had assented to her daughter’s wish, but had suggested that she should at least be allowed to go also,—at any rate, as far as the bottom of the hill.

But if this be so of our own politics; if it be so rare a thing to find a foreigner who understands them in all their niceties, why is it that we are so confident in our remarks on all the niceties of those of other nations?

He had purposed to be firm,—to yield to her in nothing, resolving to treat all that she might say as the hallucination of a sickened imagination,—as the effect of absolute want of health, for which some change in her mode of life would be the best cure.

To enable the student more easily to take note of these emendations, I propose, in the first place, to set out the true reading itself, as I am now able to do, and then, by bringing the later readings into comparison with it, to indicate what has been omitted or added or altered.

The little man, who was a distinguished officer named Captain Butler, of the West Bromwich, had a very good time of it, dancing with Ada when Captain Clayton was not doing so.

It is only ignorance that leads you to deny this resemblance.

But these feelings she was obliged, at any rate for the present, to keep to herself.

Mr. Barry

Lastly, Christ said not, They shall be angels, in order not to repeal their existence as men; but He said, They shall be equal unto the angels, that He might preserve their humanity unimpaired.

“And of course I’m anxious, if only out of respect for the family, that my wife’s cousin should pull through this little difficulty, if possible.”

As the chief magistrate of the community, nothing is so abhorrent to me as rebellion.

And they hearken not to that which the Scripture has said: Let not many be teachers among you, my brethren, and be not all of you prophets.

Even if this were to be the end of it all, men would at any rate remember him.

“They say the people in Siloam are the greatest thieves in Syria; and nobody dares to meddle with them.”

And now he came to know the perfidy of Daia; for he found the letters written to Maxentius, and saw the statues and portraits of the two associates which had been set up together.

Then she again lifted her head, and told him that that would have been impossible. Let things go as they might, she knew that she had been right in leaving her aunt’s house.

At the time when these words were said, Christ did not yet reign thus; had not yet sped on, nor proceeded prosperously.

Here is the reason why he that has been forgiven by the king may be seen with his soul yet impure, but the soul of the baptized no longer so, but purer than the very sun-beams, and such as it was originally formed, nay rather much better than that.

“We take them at par, of course,—and as we sell we shall pay for them. But of course we shall only sell at a premium. If we can run them up even to 110, there would be three hundred thousand dollars. But we’ll do better than that. I must try and see Melmotte at once. You had better write a letter now.”

But also the philosophers say that God is not angry, not knowing what they say.

It destroys serpents, and after the killing of serpents, it is inflamed with thirst yet more violent; having destroyed serpents, it runs to the water-brooks, with thirst more keen than before.

Chapter II. First Book of the War in Gaul.-Caesar Drives First the Swiss and Then the Germans Out of gaul-b.c. 58

I wish to be paid for my contribewtions to your paper.

Soon afterwards he was gathered to his fathers, leaving to his widow a comfortable, but not more than a comfortable, income.

Neither banishment, nor losses, nor death, nor crucifixion: for it was not death alone that they did not fear; but even crucifixion, a death than which none was thought more accursed.

For he who thinks this, may also in regard of tropical expressions of which there are so many, bring in upon all of them this calumny; so that even metaphor, as it is called, that is, the usurped transferring of any word from its proper object to an object not proper, may at this rate be called a lie.

Therefore the uninterrupted duration of virtue itself shows that the soul of man, if it has received virtue, remains permanent, because virtue is perpetual, and it is the human mind alone which receives virtue.

Is He Nowhere or Somewhere.

Eva was perfect in symmetry, in features, in complexion, and in simplicity of manners.

Sir Hugh, making such calculations as the moments allowed, determined that he would face the enemy, and pass on to his banquet over her prostrate body.

Let beauties of every kind pass before a youth just dead, and no impure desire arises.

“But I must really put you out, because papa is waiting for you. Dear, dear, dearest Harry. Though I am so patient I shall count the hours till you come for me. Dearest Harry!” Then she bore with him, as he pressed her close to his bosom, and kissed her lips, and her forehead, and her glossy hair. When he was gone, she sat down alone for a few minutes on the old sofa, and hugged herself in her happiness. What a happy wind that had been which had blown such a lover as that for her to Stratton!

“Don’t be stupid, Will. Who should have it but Lady Emily?”

But on the opposite side, others and Titus himself thought that the temple ought specially to be overthrown, in order that the religion of the Jews and of the Christians might more thoroughly be subverted; for that these religions, although contrary to each other, had nevertheless proceeded from the same authors; that the Christians had sprung up from among the Jews; and that, if the root were extirpated, the offshoot would speedily perish.

“And the letter?”

For the former gave a view of His patience; but the latter brings with it the crown of a divine kingdom.

If any such point out to us our follies, we at once claim those follies as the special evidences of our wisdom.

“Will you try?” demanded Ralph.

[John 3:13] Confess then how foolish and absurd your notion is that He could not ascend into heaven, who is said, although He had descended into earth, never to have been absent from heaven: and say whether to leave the regions below and ascend into heaven was possible for Him to whom it was easy when still on earth, ever to continue in heaven.

Thus then and for this cause the written Law came in, gathering us into Christ; and this is the account of the Sacrifices as I account for them.

If you will save yourself, and me, and all your family from the terrible disgrace with which you have threatened us,—I will not again mention your cousin’s name to you till it shall please you to hear it.

For observe how God by the mouth of His prophet blames this more than the other.

So, then, we infer that neither Jesus nor Moses has taught falsely.

He has meditated iniquity on his bed.

And, in truth, not long after that, he did dispatch to them a certain trustworthy and righteous and true man.

Because while they knew they spoke as though they knew not, and as if trying Him, He does not even deem them worthy of an answer.

“May I go now?” said Mrs Dale.

That is the termination of the contest to which I look forward.

Chapter 5 The author returns to his former argument, and shows that there was but one God announced by the law and prophets, Whom Christ confesses as His Father, and Who, through His Word, one living God with Him, made Himself known to men in both covenants.

Let us suppose, then, a conversation with a heathen inquirer, in which Faustus described us as making a poor appearance, though his own appearance was much more deplorable.

He had never known what it was to give himself up really to his love for one moment.

“Why not?” demanded the tyrant.

But her eloquence was all cut short in the bud.

Christ said to him, One of you is a devil [John 6:71 He said, Not all believe [John 6:65 He said, I speak not of all, and, I know whom I have chosen [John 13:18 and not one of these sayings does he feel.

Mrs. Dosett declared her conviction that that promised legacy from Uncle Tom would never be forthcoming, because he had been so much offended by the rejection of his own son.

I hear also that Mr. Harding has modified the objections he first felt to your lordship’s propositions.

[Malachi 4:2] And this again is said to go down at midday on sinners and false prophets, and those who are angry, when the prophet says, Their sun is gone down at noon.

“Don’t you like the young ladies? “ asked Mrs. Dugdale.

“But, George, we haven’t got ‘em. We couldn’t hold such a quantity. And if we had them, we should be ruined to sell them at such prices as that. I did want to do a genuine trade in stockings.”

Although a man may also deceive by feigning good will, and hiding malice: or, if he have no thought to do harm, yet by expecting some benefit from you, feigns, because he has not, love.

“Arabella, I do think you are the most ungrateful, hardhearted creature that ever lived.”

This could not well be done in the office, for it was crowded.

To Lord Brentford’s lawyer he had used a few very strong words.

Nothing of the kind.

Psalm 57

Who would dine with Mr. Jones in Woburn Terrace, unless he had known Mr. Jones all his days, or unless Jones were known as a top sawyer in some walk of life?

Now, from these words you seem to believe, that everything which lacks body is of an empty substance.

A young earl, handsome and well esteemed, may generally marry an heiress,—if not one heiress then another.

But why need we read any thing, in order to know this, if we ought already to know it by the very fact that we are different from cattle?

It would suffice to say, indeed, that there is not a soul that can at all procure salvation, except it believe while it is in the flesh, so true is it that the flesh is the very condition on which salvation hinges.

Ever the revealer of enigmas to the wise,

“A great many, Lord Hampstead;—nearly all my life;—before you were born, Lord Hampstead.” Then, as he sat gazing, there came before his eyes the phantom of Lord Hampstead being carried into the house as a corpse while he himself was struggling beneath a portion of the weight.

God is then said to remember, when He does an act: then to forget, when He does it not: for neither can God forget, as He never changes, nor remember, as He can never forget.

when the hand is again at work selecting, the odious ugly thing is left behind, till at last it becomes infested with strange terrors, with an absolute power of its own, and the guilty conscience will become afraid.

But will it be thus always, that the ungodly have power over the righteous?

But how should she carry herself now during the four days which remained to her at Stalham Park?

Should they be made to do so?

“I don’t know I ever did anything to make him unhappy.”

“Wrong!” said the archdeacon, speaking of the bishop’s intention of issuing a commission—”of course he is wrong.

I suppose then certainly that you remember the exposition; yet I will now again cursorily put you in mind of what was then said.

But the people of Syracuse are very much in earnest.

‘I am come to say goodbye,’ said Urmand.

Behold, these are still worse wounds of sinning; behold, these are greater crimes— to have sinned, and not to make atonement— to have committed crimes, and not to bewail your crimes.

But the pity of it, Mary; the pity of it!

But yet she could not absolutely consent; for was she not absolutely pledged to her own Adolphe? And therefore, when the great pecuniary advantages were, one by one, displayed before her, and when La Mere Bauche, as a last argument, informed her that as wife of the capitaine she would be regarded as second mistress in the establishment and not as a servant, she could only burst out into tears, and say that she did not know.

For the fact that the woman sinned on the serpent's persuasion, and the man at the woman's offer, did not make the transgression less, as if there were any one whom we ought rather to believe or yield to than God.

She literally could not understand it, and aggravated matters by appearing to think that her younger son had been wanting in respect to his elder brother.

Accordingly, when Moses had finished the writing of the law, he gave it to Joshua the son of Nun, and enjoined him to give it to the sons of Levi, the priests. Moses also enjoined and charged them to place the book of the law again within the ark of the covenant of the Lord, that it might remain there for a testimony for ever.

And inasmuch as we know that such was His practice, we ought also unceasingly to endeavour to set those right3 who prove careless, even although no actual good may seem to be effected by that counsel.

“You have been here a long time,” he said, “without our having had the pleasure of seeing you.”

And rather will a man endure a crowd of witnesses when he is unjustly venting his anger on some one, than the eye of one man when he innocently copulates with his wife.

At every point as to the evidence she interrupted him, striving to show that the arguments used were of no real weight.

To one man only, about five years before my visit, he was said to have granted an interview; and I believe that man obtained the favor through the power of his faith.

“No;—he never talks much. Every now and then he will give me a downright lecture, or he will write me a letter like that; but he never talks to any of us.”

Meanwhile Meletius returned from exile; and finding his followers holding their assemblies apart from the others, he set himself at their head.

The horrid thoughts of a few days had become so vague to himself that he doubted whether there had been any real intention as to the young lord’s removal even in his own mind.

“Oh, Mark, don’t look at me in that way. Do not turn away from me. What is to comfort us if we do not cling to each other now?”

This travelling through the desert under the protection of Bedouins was, in idea, pleasant enough; and I must here declare that I did not at all begrudge the forty shillings which I was told by our British consul that I must pay them for their trouble, in accordance with the established tariff.

“It’s a most infernal lie!” said Barry. “Where’s your evidence?—where’s your evidence? What’s the good of your all coming here with such a story as that? Where’s your evidence?”

This he did, thinking that he would appear to be of noble birth, if no one else could trace back his descent by the public register to the patriarchs or proselytes, and to that mixed race called georae.

Perhaps he liked it;—but any man endowed with that power of appreciation which we call sympathy, would have felt it to be as cold as though it had come from a figure on a glass window.

“May I ask her?”

Why,—what was his income?

“Fuel is so cheap that it would not pay,” he answered.

“We shall all have to go home, I suppose?” said Alice.

For if He had said, Whom in His own time the Father will show, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords; who only has immortality; not even so would it be necessarily understood that the Son is excluded.

The ring was the only element in which he seemed to enjoy himself; and while other boys were happy in the number of their friends, he rejoiced most in the multitude of his foes.

“He has wanted me to ask him to Gatherum.”

‘Tinker, tailor, soldier, sailor, gentleman, apothecary, ploughboy, thief,’ said Katie. ‘That would only be eight; what should the other four be, uncle?’

At the temple, we understand as, near the temple.

“I don’t care twopence about Walter.”

Whom had he robbed?

The arrangement of the words is as though you were walking simply along a road.

And these circumstances could never have arisen save through sin.

It will, however, be easy for those who, according to the Platonic dogma itself, adopt this distance to comprehend by numerical calculation (intervals) according to what is double and triple, as Plato requires, and the rest of the distances.

I do not think that the men of New England have ever been, as regards this matter, in the same boat with the New York Herald.

You can, therefore, if it so please you, station yourself with other patient long-suffering, mindful men at some corner, or at some central point amidst the rides, biding your time, consoling yourself with cigars, and not swearing at the vile perfidious, unfoxlike fox more frequently than you can help.

“But I may go with him?” said the wife, with frightened voice. “I may accompany my husband. He is not well, sir, and wants assistance.”

Reports had, of course, reached Mr. Camperdown of the true story of the Eustace diamonds.

Your God is your King, your King is also your Bridegroom.

If the law declared him a bigamist, she could not then be his wife.

How shall I give free utterance to a voice now habitually sinking to the pathetic tone of lamentations?

Fred certainly made for himself more than two glasses of punch, and he would have sworn that the priest had done so also.

His righteousness abides for ever.

1. After such noble acts of the distinguished martyrs of Christ, the flame of persecution lessened, and was quenched, as it were by their sacred blood, and relief and liberty were granted to those who, for Christ's sake, were laboring in the mines of Thebais, and for a little time we were beginning to breath pure air.

She was ten years older than her brother, and as strong as a horse.

For neither does the Paraclete receive anything from man, but the Paraclete offers knowledge to man; nor does the Paraclete learn things future from man, but instructs man concerning futurity.

For this reason I said before, and speak now and will not cease speaking, if any has not rectified the defects in his morals, nor furnished himself with easily acquired virtue, let him not be baptized.

“And resign, of course.”

But to me it seems that his putting off is also advantageous to us, so that more may come together, who may be either hearers or judges of our disputation.

As citizens, they share in all things with others, and yet endure all things as if foreigners.

Look at the countless number of the stars, look at all the many kind of seeds, all the different sorts of animals, all that swims in the water, creeps on the earth, flies in the sky, hovers in the air; how great are all these, how beautiful, how fair, how amazing!

“Of course I shall return to the synagogue.”

From God you may learn about that which you hold of God; but from none else will you get this knowledge, if you get it not from God.

What, therefore, prevents us from taking a precedent from them, that as they handed down to posterity their false inventions, so we who have discovered the truth may hand down better things to our posterity?

As You have sent Me into the world, even so have I also sent them into the world.

But things were not so bad with him as they had been before, because he had nothing to remember.

She told me that her husband, when he heard this, believed her, and sent her to Athens, with the twin children to be educated there; but that they were driven by a terrible tempest upon that island, where, when the ship had gone to pieces, she was lifted by a wave upon a rock, and delayed killing herself only for this, 'until,' said she, 'I could embrace at least the dead limbs of my unfortunate sons, and commit them to burial.

You will not object, my lord, to my seeing Miss Wyndham?

But as regarded his sister, he certainly would not be well pleased to see her marry a small squire with a small income.

For the man that has failed to make this examination, and has unwittingly received baptism from one that is faithless, from the very fact that he did not make the examination, and therefore did not know of the stain on the conscience of the giver, was incapacitated from receiving faith instead of guilt.

There had been a comfort to her in the conviction that Philip was no better than the major-general. “ I suppose it is so,” she said. “ That is, if one of them has means.”

We will not pretend to say that we think we are to be invaded.

"Groaning and trembling shall you be on the earth."

After that the two sat silent for a minute or two.

But from what point of view a clear manifestation of essence can be made by this appellation, this they are unable to say.

[John 1:14] So that, with these miserable creatures, it is not enough that they are sick, but they boast of their sickness, and are ashamed of the medicine which could heal them.

If she delivered the letter of course she would endeavour to dictate the answer;—but her girl could be stubborn as her mother; and how would it be with them if quite another letter should be written than that which the Countess would have dictated?

So he went down to the path by the river, and there he found her seated close by the water’s edge.

Is it a grievous thing for you to leave your wives and your children?—let no man presume to think that he will be happier than his neighbours, for that man shall assuredly be the most miserable.

For there are many who have fallen more terribly, from spiritual heights, than if they had never received grace at all from the Lord.

For when Moses desired to see the Lord, saying, If therefore I have found grace in Your sight, manifest Yourself to me, that I may see You distinctly, the sight which he desired to have was of that condition which he was to assume as man, and which as a prophet he knew was to occur.

And hence it appeared that he was a child of the devil, and hence also that the other was God's righteous one.

There he had had a pint of beer and some bread and cheese at Mrs. Crocket’s house, and had asked various questions, to which he did not receive very satisfactory answers.

Continue, my dear sir, your efforts, and fight for the doctrines of the Fathers.

As for herself, she had made up her mind to bear with this, if she found, as she felt sure she would find, that the trade was one which would not degrade either him or her.

For let your Love attend a little to what I am saying; and see an evil very pernicious, very much to be guarded against.

Put a stop to it! Yes, indeed, most expedient; nay, absolutely necessary—if it were only possible. Now, when it was too late, she began to perceive that she had not known of what material her own child was formed. At sixteen, Gertrude and Linda had in reality been little more than children. In manner, Katie had been more childish even than them, and yet—Mrs. Woodward, as she thought of these things, felt her heart faint within her.

If then I imputed nothing to any of those against whom I had a right to speak, how could I be so possessed with madness as to slander an Emperor before an Emperor, and to set a brother at variance with a brother?

John 10:6

Let there be a man who gets only dry bread, and let him be filled with gladness: is not this pleasure?

The king being alarmed by this terror, and seeing that there was a divine spirit in Joseph, set him over the department of food-supply, and made him equal with himself in the government.

He says not, Yea, I am greater, (for He would have seemed but to boast, since the proof did not as yet appear,) but by what He says He effects this.

For what fault have they to find with the vast creation of God?— they, who ought to have been struck with amazement on beholding the vaultings of the heavens: they, who ought to have worshipped Him who reared the sky as a dome, who out of the fluid nature of the waters formed the stable substance of the heaven.

“What is the meaning? Speak to me and explain it.”

For certainly in the saying, Blessed is he who fears the Lord, women also who fear the Lord are included.

Trigger, as he listened to this eloquence, could only sigh and shake his head.

Whence it is clear in this case, that even the disciples were weak; but not all; for the pillars [Galatians 2:9] were not present there. And see this man's want of consideration, from another circumstance again, how before the multitude he pleads to Jesus against His disciples, saying, I brought him to Your disciples, and they could not cure him.

And by this too he shows, that it is not of his own intrinsic merit that one has received more and another less, but that it is for the sake of others, as God Himself has measured it; since he says also elsewhere, But now has God set the members each one of them in the body, even as it pleased Him.

Do not think that I am blaming you, but I was very rash then in the answers which I made to him.

The Small House itself is so near the road that there is nothing between the dining-room windows and the iron rail but a narrow edge rather than border, and a little path made with round fixed cobble stones, not above two feet broad, into which no one but the gardener ever makes his way.

This is nearly all that is known of Cicero’s father and mother, or of his old home.

Associations of the tenderest kind must all give way to trade.

5. How the test 'Coessential' came to be adopted at Nicæa.

Should I find a good copyist, I will also send your holiness what I have written in the form of a dialogue, extending the argument, and strengthening my positions, by the teaching of the Fathers.

I hope that I may not be misunderstood as saying that we should not discuss foreign politics in our press, our parliament, our public meetings, or our private houses.

The same thing was repeated to me along my route, and even at King Williamstown.

Or what will they do in profane places, who commit the greatest crimes amidst the altars of the gods?

Adam indeed gave their several names to the animals, before he plucked the fruit of the tree; before he ate, he prophesied.

A. 0. voL iv.

To these must be added, to make up the population of the United

Therefore night shall be unto you, that you shall not have a vision; and it shall be dark unto you, that you shall not divine; and the sun shall not go down over the prophets, and the day shall be dark over them.

“I believe I have even consented to ten days.”

“He sends forth to his clergy either blessings or blowings-up, according to the state of his digestive organs. But Mrs. Proudie can explain all that to you with the greatest accuracy.”

As the dignity of their regions is diverse, so also is that of their natures; therefore the gods are better than men and demons.

“There is worse than that,—much worse. He is always—tipsy, and always gambling, and always— But it is quite unfit that I should speak a word more to you about such a man as Lord Chiltern. His name ought never to be mentioned.”

Cicero was the busybody who was attempting to stop the order of things which had, to his thinking, been specially ordained by all the gods for the sustenance of one so well born, and at the same time so poor, as himself.

“No;—I will go to my father’s house. I have already arranged it. Mr. Kennedy has my letter by this time, and I go from hence home with my father.”

That is to say, because He earnestly willed it.

It is the voice of the primary and principal Cause.

She had endeavoured to send to him when the piece was over; but he was gone, and she saw him no more.

“Of course you must see him,—at once,” said Mrs. Trevelyan.

For he was both a Christian and baptized, and often prostrated himself before You our God in the church, in constant and daily prayers.

Why then has this form of speech been employed?

THUMBLE. Just one moment, my dear Mrs. Crawley. I have just a little word to say, and there is no one to whom I can say it with so much propriety as to yourself. (lie pauses.)

“And then shoot him—be tried by your peers—and perhaps hung; is that it?”

He was well to do in the world, and could send his wife out in her carriage, with all becoming bravery of appurtenances.

“Yes; but you were not offending a father who could not keep himself from looking reproaches at you. I was like a boy at school who had been put into Coventry. And then they sent me to Lady Cantrip!”

“But if he consented, sir?”

179. Petilianus said: "But the holy apostle said this: ‘In any way, whatsoever it may be,' he says, ‘let Christ be preached.'"

But Caesar sends help, and even these three hundred are saved from disgrace.

But when the Lord says that God is a Spirit, I think that Christ spoke thus of the Father, as wishing that something still more should be understood than merely that God is a Spirit.

Why do I still delay to relate the sequel?

But as it was needful that the transfer of the young lady should be effected with some solemnity, Mrs Mackenzie had condescended to bring her to her future guardian’s lodgings on the day before that fixed for the journey to Littlebath.

For he who receives them, receives not them but Him, whose bishops they are.

“And she might be as good as the best of them, and I might be here to hand her into her own carriage,”—said he to himself,—”if it were not for that intruder!”

What then, I pray you, can be equal to this man?

From even her father she could get no sympathy; though with him her engagement had become so far a thing sanctioned, that he had ceased to speak of it in words of reproach.

[Letter CXXII. To Rusticus.]

Aemilianus, as prefect, said to them: I perceive that you are at once ungrateful to and insensible of the clemency of our princes.

As for love for her husband, certainly there was none now left in her bosom.

When he made use of such a phrase as that quoted above, it was to be presumed that he in some sort meant what he said; and so he did, and had intended to signify that Crosbie by his conduct had merited all such condemnation as was the fitting punishment for blackguardism of the worst description.

You must understand that I have not passed through this unscathed, and I must beg you to allow me some time for a cure.

Mr. Thumble was a little man, about forty years of age, who had a wife and children living in Barchester, and who existed on such chance clerical crumbs as might fall from the table of the bishop’s patronage.

There was a special merit in selecting a man who has united so true a spirit with a patience so exemplary and literary merit of such high character.

For which cause Paul bids us forgive, if any One has cause of complaint against any [Colossians 3:13], and not simply forgive, but so that not even any remnants be left behind.

And this Esaias tells us: Behold!

None of the Lady Janes and Lady Marys were at Matching when they arrived.

‘I need not say how much personal advantage it would be to me to have the benefit of your experience, but my conscience tells me that I should not do it—so I think I’ll go to sleep.’

After dinner, while the gentlemen were still in the dining-room, she got a book, and nobody disturbed her as she sat alone pretending to read it.

We would in that case descend to the lower parts, but we would not ascend to the upper.

Then let there be a council: let there be assembled there the godly bishops who are capable of judging: then let there be assembled those in office and in rank who have been instructed in divine lore.

[Wisdom 1:5] Was it that He was fleeing from him, but at the same time not deserting His sacraments, though ministered by him?

Fate bars the way: around their keep

“And it is Miss Ray?”

Well, then, does the infant, on opening its eyes, after issuing from the womb, immediately begin with crying, not with laughter.

It was not surprising that they were cold and hungry, listless and unhappy.

When nothing was said on the subject till late on the evening of the Tuesday, she had almost resolved that she would not put on her habit when the morning came.

For this reason he was unable to comprehend how there could be generation without a beginning, and how that which was begotten can be co-eternal with him who begot.

Others, who were perhaps not so well informed, gave him credit for a much more advanced success.

Georgiana was at first indignant, but she accepted the compromise.

For as long as we abide in the body of Christ, as long as we are united, it rises not again, but lies dead; or rather that former enmity never rises again at all.

Again, when he was speaking of the duty of not going to law before those courts, then also having fallen upon the admonition respecting covetousness, he discoursed at length concerning this subject likewise.

‘She has a will of her own,’ said the barrister.

Vetus stat mihi persuasio,

Grace’s life had hitherto been so destitute of those prettinesses and softnesses, which can hardly be had without money though money alone will not purchase them, that it seemed to her now that the heavens rained graciousness upon her.

“I really don’t think this can do any good,” said Mrs. French.

But it is well that they should believe that you have got them.

It is false, then, from the very nature of the case, to say that if all men wished to become Christians, the latter would not desire such a result.

They who made the Law were men, and therefore their legislation is hard on women, since they have placed children also under the authority of their fathers, while leaving the weaker sex uncared for.

‘Don’t turn from me, dearest Alaric; do not turn from me now at our last moments. To me at least you are the same noble Alaric that you ever were.’

And we do not assert this without ground, for we have learned the mind of your holiness from the letter written to the very godly and holy Julianus, bishop of Sardica, for that letter as is right charged the above named very godly bishop to fight for the Faith laid down by the blessed fathers assembled in council at Nicæa, and not to allow any corruption to be introduced into those invincible definitions which are sufficient at once to exhibit the truth and to refute falsehood.

And so our Christian orator, while he says what is just, and holy, and good (and he ought never to say anything else), does all he can to be heard with intelligence, with pleasure, and with obedience; and he need not doubt that if he succeed in this object, and so far as he succeeds, he will succeed more by piety in prayer than by gifts of oratory; and so he ought to pray for himself, and for those he is about to address, before he attempts to speak.

“We shall see,” said Livy. “I’m sure he’s in love with you. He looked to me just like a proper sort of lover for you, when I saw his long legs creeping up over our heads into the banquette.”

But why do you love those things, except because they are beautiful?

“Would you have me go to church with such a face as this?”

[Romans 11:32] When sin abounded grace did much more abound.

For I wish you withal to understand, that if it be your resolution to be reconciled, and to restore your former kindness to the city, and to remit this just displeasure, I shall go back with great confidence.

Et quomodo amplius hic in nostra examinetur oratione, cum legem et Evangelium perhæc aperte destruat?

And it is with a symbolic meaning that Apollo employs the hawk as his messenger, for the hawk is called the swift messenger of Apollo.

For these all thanks to God, who by means of such afflictions trained his servants and, according to the multitude of his mercies, brought us again to refreshment.

“There is something horrible to me in the idea of writing down men’s names for such a work as this, just as boys at school used to draw out the elevens for a cricket match.” The old stager turned round and stared at the younger politician. “The thing itself is so momentous that one ought to have aid from heaven.”

This district is now called the District of Columbia.

Still it is one thing, he says, (3) to admit a penitent neophyte, another to admit a man to be bishop and celebrate the Eucharist.

But we did not get our money at three per cent.

Because they of course would account the testimony of His deeds surer, and more above suspicion than that of His words.

The Lord is in His holy temple [Psalm 10:4], yea in such wise as the Apostle says, For the temple of God is holy, which temple you are.

On the next morning there came another application from Percycross.

Moreover, Hermes Trismegistus speaks of one God, and confesses that He is incomprehensible, and beyond our estimation.

Have You not made an hedge about him and about all that he has on every side?

For there, for the most part, as servants they were kept down by fear; but here mostly as free they were nourished by love.

“What, Jonas Brown’s name?”

And these women seemed to me to be fierce.

“I will make no such promise. You had better go now. You can have the carriage to Penrith as early as you please in the morning; or to Carlisle if you choose to go north. I will make your excuses to Lady Elizabeth. Good night.”

“Did he threaten you?”

For he who is not God, is not the God of those fathers.

None of these names represents the nature of the Only-begotten, or His Godhead, or the peculiar character of His essence.

But gradually the feeling about Ferdinand Lopez had died away, and his fate, though it had outlived the nominal nine days, had sunk into general oblivion before the end of the ninth week.

(c) whom all Asia and the world worships.

Clarissa had not heard him announced, and to her it seemed as though he had come down from the heavens,—as would have befitted his godship.

Therefore first encourage yourself, and say, Praise the Lord, O my soul.

He asks your age, and is very anxious to know how many children you have and what is their condition in the world.

For the Pelagians dare to say even this: that the righteous man in this life has no sin at all, and that in such men there is even at the present time a Church not having spot or wrinkle or any such thing, [Ephesians 5:27] which is the one and only bride of Christ; as if she were not His bride who throughout the whole earth says what she has learned from Him, Forgive us our debts.

[2 Maccabbees vii] God forbid!

And he had distinctly promised that he would give her another chance.

“I know’d it,” said young Cantor, clenching his fist almost in her face. “I was that sure of it I couldn’t hardly hold myself. To think of his leaving it in a book of sermons!”

As though there are not in the sea things which are nourished by rain; as though He made not fishes therein, as though He made not living creatures therein.

It teaches kindness, and inclines them to those who entreat them.

For so far as in them lies they destroy the very birthless and changeless essence of the Father by daring to attribute to Him in the birth of His Only-begotten an alteration and degeneration of His natural essence.

For whatever is incorporeal is incapable of being kept and guarded in any way; it is also exempt from either punishment or refreshment.

Hill Street, 9th July, 187—.

Loughton and the other six deadly sins were anathematized, exorcised, and finally got rid of out of the world by the voices of the gentlemen who had been proclaiming the beauty of such pleasant vices all their lives, and who in their hearts hated all changes that tended towards popular representation.

And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us (and we beheld His glory, the glory as of the only-begotten of the Father), full of grace and truth.

No; he must needs add very far, and say, They erred very far.

“Walker, what is it?” said his wife, before Walker had had time to make the contents of the document his own.

And when you hold their writings in your hand, they deny with their lips what their hands have written.

But he had won for himself reputation as a clever speaker, as a man who had learned much that college tutors do not profess to teach, as a hard-headed, ready-witted fellow, who, having the world as an oyster before him, which it was necessary that he should open, would certainly find either a knife or a sword with which to open it.

I stayed three or four days at the place and was made very comfortable; but what struck me most was the excellence of the Kafir servant who waited upon me.

After making these decisions, the bishops summoned the partisans of Eudoxius, and exhorted them to repentance; but as they would give no heed to these remonstrances, the decrees enacted by the council were sent to all the churches. Judging that Eudoxius would be likely to endeavor to persuade the emperor to side with him, and would calumniate them, they determined to be beforehand with him, and to send an account of their proceedings in Lampsacus to the court.

There is an ample supply of water.

Let me confess unto You whatsoever I shall have found in Your books, and let me hear the voice of praise, and let me imbibe You, and reflect on the wonderful things of Your law; even from the beginning, wherein You made the heaven and the earth, unto the everlasting kingdom of Your holy city that is with You.

What a thing to hear of him, on the one hand carrying off Ganymede and committing stealthy adulteries, on the other in panic and alarm lest the walls of the Trojans should be destroyed against his intentions!

‘Here I am once more a constituent part of the legislative wisdom of the United Kingdom, thanks to the patriotic discretion of the pot-wallopers, burgage-tenants, and ten-pound freeholders of these loyal towns.

“He may do that,—and yet quarrel with him. He’d quarrel with his own right hand, if he had nothing else to quarrel with. That makes the difficulty, you see. He’ll take nobody’s advice. He thinks that we’re all against him.”

For if the sun imparts to us his energies and yet does not participate in ours, how much the rather must this be true of the Creator and Lord of the Sun.

He is not, on the whole, a bad-tempered man; and though the children are rough, they’ll grow out of that.

If the will were found now, who could reasonably suggest that there had been guilt on his part?

Because he has been fool enough to plague himself with a wife—he who of all men ought to have kept himself free from such troubles.

It was so sweet to press the living toy to her breast, and feel that a human being existed who did owe, and was to owe, everything to her; whose daily food was drawn from herself; whose little wants could all be satisfied by her; whose little heart would first love her and her only; whose infant tongue would make its first effort in calling her by the sweetest name a woman can hear.

His hundred and second clause had been carried, with only nine divisions against him of any consequence.

Now I return to another subject which I had omitted.

“He must have the very best men,” said the Duchess.

Concerning the evil angels therefore in this Psalm, while he was speaking of those very plagues, there has been something inserted, which must not be passed over cursorily: He sent upon them, he says, an infliction through evil angels.

For he who makes scrupulous enquiry does so as being in dread: but he who, on hearing the fact, abstains, abstains as out of contempt and hatred and aversion.

But in carrying out my resolution I had gradually risen in my ambition, and had mounted from one stage of inquiry to another, till at last I had found myself burdened with the task of ascertaining whether or no the Americans were doing their work as a nation well or ill; and now, if ever, I must be prepared to put forth the result of my inquiry.

She that you have chosen to disburden lies there: she flies not, because you have taken off a weight: let there be given back the weight, and she flies.

Why therefore, leaving what is your own, do you work and be at cost in what is another's, so as to lose both your toil and your wages and to suffer the extremest punishment?

And yet she felt as she lay there weeping that she did in truth belong to him as part of his goods, and that her generosity had been foiled.

And one might see things strange and wonderful, such as with good cause the prophets desired to see, and saw not.

First then let there be laid as a foundation in your soul the doctrine concerning God; that God is One, alone unbegotten, without beginning, change, or variation ; neither begotten of another, nor having another to succeed Him in His life; who neither began to live in time, nor ends ever: and that He is both good and just; that if ever thou hear a heretic say, that there is one God who is just, and another who is good , you may immediately remember, and discern the poisoned arrow of heresy.

And they command it to be made sure for three days, as contending for doctrines, and being minded to prove that before that time also He was a deceiver, and they extend their malice even to His tomb.

“Oh, John, is it to be thus, after love such as ours?” And she clasped her hands together, and stood before him.

If the fates give the generations, why do you pray to the god?

Their argumentation, however, in regard of this matter, is extensive, yet it is not necessary in reference to the subject which we have taken in hand.

As he has them under his hand, he now strikes hard.

He was a simple-minded man, who kept his thoughts fixed for the most part on one object.

“Mr. Traffick is very much thought of in the House of Commons on all subjects affecting commerce.”

For the son of this David, Solomon by name, was caught by the same snare as his father, and out of complaisance to women fell away from the God of his fathers.

“No; one can’t have everything.”

Wherein Christ is shown to be the Son of God, Who created the world; to have been predicted by the prophets; to have taken human flesh like our own, by a real incarnation.

For by Him is the sand numbered, by whom the very hairs of our head are numbered.

And let no one annoy us with the objection that we have put this under the category of time, though it be the order of the things themselves, that make them first and second and so on, and even though there should have been no time when the things placed by the Logos third and fourth were not in existence.

And he went about telling everybody that it was an heirloom;—didn’t he?

At such a place as Kimberley the theory becomes more lively; but the good time is postponed till the capacity for enjoying it is too probably lost.

For had He been in the habit of spending it at home, Judas would not have come to the desert, but to the house, expecting there to find Him asleep.

For if they were destroyed from among men, and remained nowhere among the living, they could not see my people, he means, nor know my Church in its prosperity. Therefore scatter them everywhere on earth, where my Church is to be established, in order that when they see the Church rounded by me, they may be roused to emulate it in piety. And these things did the Saviour also ask on their behalf.

Now what is this thing?

There had been nothing of which she was ashamed.

Those among us who are most inclined at the present moment to declare that the institutions of the United States have failed, can at any rate only declare that they have failed in their finality; that they have shown themselves to be insufficient to carry on the nation in its advancing strides through all times.

“I like you ever so,—only marrying a person is different.”

He was going to tell you himself after dinner, in the politest way in the world, no doubt, and just as the servants were carrying away the apples.

What argument then allows, that He who is from the Father should know His own parent by comprehension?

Matthew 22:40] what is that same light burden, but that same love which in these two commandments is fulfilled?

If Priscilla were sitting there opposite to me, she would own as much.

Her gloves were on, and her parasol was up.

Chapter 8. That God is without a body, nor does he need difference of sex for procreation.

The one exception was very pellucid, very unanswerable, and very cold-blooded.

Who could have expected that a man in such a condition should have lived so long, and have been capable of a will so powerful?

“You have no right to say so because I am engaged to no man. But if I were so it is quite different. Unless I marry I can be nobody. I can have no existence that I can call my own. I have no other way of pushing myself into the world’s notice. You are a man.”

Urge the ship beyond that smoke and billow.

Mr. AVarner, from whose notes this account is taken, says that the professional rainmaker was not often a long lived man.

I am sure of this, and so is Amelia, that it will be better for you to give the matter up altogether, and to come here and recover the blow among friends who will be as kind to you as possible.

It was said of her that she cheated at cards.

“All the same, I saw him yesterday.”

“I like him so much! He is so much nicer than you told me—so much pleasanter and easier; and I have no doubt he is as clever, though I don’t think he shows that at once.”

As he was prevented from reaching the city with his ships, by a part of the land which separated it from the river, he judged that either he must pursue his journey by water, or quit his ships and go to Ctesiphon by land; and he interrogated the prisoners on the subject.

A. I wonder if there will turn out to be anything, except what is not so as it seems.

Now we, says he, have received not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of God, that we might know the things that are freely given to us of God.

Then we would say, What prevents the prediction from having been already accomplished?

Chapter 9. The antiquity of Moses proved by Greek writers

Emily had high-flown notions, and would not yield; he feared that she would not yield, let Cousin George’s delinquencies be shown to be as black as Styx.

If then, because the name of the Christ is common, we ought not to glorify the Christ as God, we shall equally shrink from worshipping Him as Son, since this also is a name which has been bestowed upon many.

He had merely a single question to ask; and, although he had asked it more than once,—as is the manner of people in asking such questions,—still, a sheet of notepaper loosely filled had sufficed.

And after a little: the words, It was made stand upon the feet as a man, and a man's heart was given to it, signify that Nebuchadnezzar, when he humbled himself, and acknowledged that he was but a man, in subjection under the power of God, and made supplication to the Lord, found mercy with Him, and was restored to his own kingdom and honour.

And verily I say unto you, In every place where this my gospel shall be proclaimed in all the world, what she did shall be told for a memorial of her.

He was quite alive to the fact that in this position he would in truth be the most miserable dog in existence,—that it would be infinitely better for him to turn his prospects into cash, and buy sheep in Australia, or cattle in South America, or to grow corn in Canada.

And she,—I think she’ll learn to love you as you would wish to be loved.

But you have an unction from the Holy One, etc.....that, when He shall appear, we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before Him at His coming.

If it had been found possible to accuse poor Mr. Fothergill, he would have been as certain that Mr. Fothergill committed the murder, because Mr. Fothergill thinks more of his shooting.

Was it harshly treated on another's account?

In the next verse he adds: "Therefore, if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature; old things are passed away; behold, all things have become new."

Why, therefore, do we not call these three together one person, as one essence and one God, but say three persons, while we do not say three Gods or three essences; unless it be because we wish some one word to serve for that meaning whereby the Trinity is understood, that we might not be altogether silent, when asked, what three, while we confessed that they are three?

Kate, his Kate, was not there, but Mrs. O’Hara was standing at the head of the sofa, far away from the window and close to the door.

And therefore we recognize more fully the Lord's passion when we do not confine ourselves to one interpretation, but combine both, and read both insulted and pierced.

Since however no one can produce a written command as an authority, it is evident that the apostles left each one to his own free will in the matter, to the end that each might perform what is good not by constraint or necessity.

If this were so, how could she possibly encourage Lord Hampstead in his desire to make Marion his wife?

And the better they are paid, within measure, the better they will be as judges and bishops.

Such was the reverend gentleman’s custom in the afternoon, and such also in the morning.

“After that I should not think of pressing it, Miss Dorothy,” said Mr. Gibson; “but, still, I do hope that I may have the privilege of seeing her yet once again in the flesh.

And then, added to all this, there was the terrible question of money!

But if they will not allow that the Son was addressed with the title Lord, we see that they do indeed seek to deny that He is Lord.

But still they did weigh, and drove her to ask herself whether, in truth, an unmarried life was not the safer for a woman.

As these thoughts passed through his mind, I think that he revelled in his wretchedness, and made much to himself of his misery.

For Lambda, when it attained unto, as it were, the investigation of what is similar to itself, and when it found such and snatched it away, filled up the place of the twelfth, the letter M, which is composed of two Lambdas.

He had become moody and discontented, and was generally seen going about the world alone.

But this assertion was met by so strong a torrent of contradiction, that the farmer was absolutely driven out of his own convictions.

Had her voice been left to her she would have found it to be very difficult to escape from the Castlewell difficulty.

The Two are One in name and One in nature.

“Why should you wish to get at them?” demanded Sir Thomas.

“His position would be distressing. I am bound to say that we should go into court to try the case with very great distrust. Mr. Flick quite agrees with me.”

Once again Mrs. Orme endeavoured to obtain permission from her to undertake that embassy to her son.

Things had not been going quite smoothly at the Examination Board.

“Though it does seem that no inquiry was made at all. Perhaps they don’t care about those things over there as we do here. He couldn’t have cared very much,—nor she.”

She was astonished at Mary’s weakness, and was indignant with Walter Marrable.

Do not then provoke God to anger; but propitiate Him.

“Papa dislikes her.”

That’s all very well;—very well indeed;—but, damme, what’s the meaning of it all?

14. And I perceived myself also that one event happens to them all.

The Registrar of State Records

For this affection of mine towards you I have many reasons.

Of what works was He made the seal?

And I the Lord will be their God, and My Servant David a prince among them.

But I’ll tell you why I sent for you, my dear: you know, I must go downstairs to receive Lord Ballindine, and tell him how glad I am that he’s come back; and I’m sure I am very glad that he’s coming; and your uncle will be there.

But she doubted whether Lord Fawn would do much in that way.

For, if He has in Himself all that is the Father's, there is nothing of the Father's that He cannot have.

And the ruler will treat you with greater respect, and he will glorify your Master owing to this, even if he be an unbeliever.

“Is he a man to care much for a girl’s love?”

What then could be more ungrateful than they, when being bidden to a marriage they rush away? For who would not choose to come to a marriage, and that a King's marriage, and of a King making a marriage for a Son?

Chapter 41. Those who have purchased Property belonging to the Church, or received it as a Gift, are to restore it.

The Duke had left her about two. She did not stir out of the house that day, but in the course of the afternoon she wrote a line to a friend who lived not very far from her. The Duchess dwelt in Carlton Terrace, and her friend in Park Lane. The note was as follows:—

For in order, straightway on man's entering existence, his life begins with sensations.

I know you will think that I was wrong, and perhaps I was; but what could I do when he sat opposite to me there for two hours, looking as though he thought himself the finest fellow in all London?

The great wave came and rushed over her as she lay almost prostrate, and when the water was gone from her eyes, and the tumult of the foam, and the violence of the roaring breaker had passed by her, she found herself at her length upon the rock, while his body had been lifted up, free from her hook, and was lying upon the slippery ledge, half in the water and half out of it.

Letter 205

Besides, there is that terrible curse pronounced upon those who abide not in all things that are written in the book of the law to do them.

Then, James the son of Zebedee, and John his brother.

Then begins the real battle of his life.

I knew that the man was older than myself, but I had not recognised him as being old enough to demand or enjoy personal protection by reason of his age.

But when they are gone over to Christ's faith and teaching, their contempt for death is so great that they even eagerly rush upon it, and become witnesses for the Resurrection the Saviour has accomplished against it.

In the first Epistle of Paul to the Corinthians: But to them that are married I command, yet not I, but the Lord, that the wife should not be separated from her husband; but if she should depart, that she remain unmarried or be reconciled to her husband: and that the husband should not put away his wife.

“Of course it would be very pleasant,” she answered smiling.

Come, you and I even now, shall give glory: to Him that brings to death and to life, that He may give aid.— 20.

Not be angry with Alaric!

Yet in this no trinity was yet manifest to us, because in that blaze of light we did not keep the eye of the mind steadfastly bent upon seeking it; only we discerned it in a sense, because there was no bulk wherein we must needs think the magnitude of two or three to be more than that of one.

With a heart no longer stony, you can see in these stone tablets a suitableness to that hard-hearted people; and at the same time you can find even there the stone, your Bridegroom, described by Peter as "a living stone, rejected by men, but chosen of God, and precious."

You shall remember the day of judgment, night and day.

Nay, would that it were enjoyment alone, and not mischief also with the enjoyment!

But the most striking peculiarity of the American hotels is in their public rooms.

You understand his moods; even I understand them well enough to know in what temper that last visit was made.

For when He shall have plucked up, then the fire is to be looked for.

Neither ought it to influence us— since we have said that the Holy Spirit is so called relatively, not the Trinity itself, but He who is in the Trinity— that the designation of Him to whom He is referred, does not seem to answer in turn to His designation.

I do not remember, however, that I was ever required to go upstairs,—except at the schools.

But besides the likely person he here speaks of is not this sort of man, but the man that works righteousness: that is, the man who in all points is virtuous and irreproachable, when he has the fear of God as he ought to have it.

Why should I speak of the aptly ordered peaks of the mountains, the slopes of the hills, the expanses of the plains?

He had been, he felt, badly treated; and, though he was very fond of Marie, it would be better for him perhaps to wash his hands of the whole affair.

When she was still about half a mile from the Rectory, she met Mr. Saul, who was on his way out to the Green.

Shall we not weep then, I pray you, for such a man and bewail him, until we have got him back again?

The fairest pearl of the land thrown to so gross a swine—a broken rebel—

And she was full of wrath against her husband.

These introductory remarks apply not only to Judah, but also to all the other cases where in the narrative of bad actions is contained a prophecy of good.

That if it were not for the Jews' sake, we should not have been called and saved at all?

you sharply rebuke you make a man fierce and impudent: but if you put him to shame, you bow down his neck, you check his confidence, you make him hang down his head.

But then the father-in-law had told him that he would be welcome to the young lady,—without a farthing.

And what of the other man?

Chapter 43. Novatus, his Manner of Life and his Heresy.

And, again, he brings forward an example from the Acts of the Apostles, saying that at Ephesus also Gaius and Aristarchus were apprehended in the stead of Paul, and that Paul was not blamed for this; nor was Peter, when he was brought forth out of prison by an angel, and escaped the danger, and the soldiers who guarded him were on his account punished.

Those fellows will never get along if they are not looked after.

What are the two wings of love?

It was published first in Macmillan’s Magazine, by the intelligent proprietor of which I have since been told that it did not make either his fortune or that of his magazine.

The house at which he was to lodge had been selected with considerable judgment.

Was he not as well born as they?

“Well, that’s where the stills are mostly at work now, an’ that’s where I was to be myself, tomorrow evening; but now we must both be there before the sun’s up, for no one must see us on the road. But, Mr. Thady, how’ll I do about taking you there, when you wouldn’t come to Mulready’s to take the oath, which all must do afore they’ll be allowed among the boys that is together, or as will be together there tomorrow evening?”

Some of them, after scrapings and rackings and severest scourgings, and numberless other kinds of tortures, terrible even to hear of, were committed to the flames; some were drowned in the sea; some offered their heads bravely to those who cut them off; some died under their tortures, and others perished with hunger.

She had been induced to say that if any power should come to her of bestowing the living of Appleslocombe she would bestow it on Mr. Greenwood.

They had derided his Christ with words of blasphemy: he assumed that as his safeguard against which they directed their blasphemies, and gloried in the symbol of the Saviour's passion.

“I think it matters very much,” said Mary.

With this swelling happiness round her heart, Dorothy read her aunt’s letter, and was infinitely softened.

‘Caelo tonantem credidimus Jovem Regnare; prresens Divus habebitur Augustus.

“And a widow. They have been married, you know, over twelve months; nearly two years, I believe.”

Then there came some one who undeceived him, and the paternal bosom of the doctor was dismayed.

“Perhaps you think that she would be right?” said Trevelyan.

“Of course. There must be a great deal to do between you.” Everybody who knew the affairs of the family was aware that the old Earl never thought of consulting his son; and Mrs. Montacute Jones knew everything.

But it would be better for them, when isolated, and perceiving that under examination they were at a loss and put to silence on all sides, rather to have turned back from the way of error and not to claim men whom they do not know, lest being confuted by them also they should carry off all the more disgrace.

R. If this world shall always abide, it is true that this world is always to abide?

On this account therefore we have taken thought to send to them the servant of God Augustine, the bearer of these presents, whose zeal and earnestness are well known to us, with other servants of God.

In those days he was very miserable.

We might, then, use the word fate in the sense it bears when derived from fari, to speak, had it not already come to be understood in another sense, into which I am unwilling that the hearts of men should unconsciously slide.

There is scope enough for all that manhood can do between the Atlantic and the Pacific, even though those hot, swampy cotton fields be taken away; even though the snows of the British provinces be denied to them.

And the very moment in which I was to become another man, the nearer it approached me, the greater horror did it strike into me; but it did not strike me back, nor turn me aside, but kept me in suspense.

“The fellow was in the act of doing it.”

Novels are in the hands of us all; from the Prime Minister down to the last-appointed scullery-maid.

It remains, therefore, to hasten on to the refutation of the heresies; but it is for the purpose of furnishing this (refutation) that we have put forward the statements already made by us.

It suggests a general state of tension.

Among all the works of God's mercy, dearly-beloved, which from the beginning have been bestowed upon men's salvation, none is more wondrous, and none more sublime, than that Christ was crucified for the world.

And like as the physician, to alarm the sick man says, that such a one died from the use of cold water; so does He also bring in the rich man, [Matthew 19:16] laboring indeed, and longing for life and health, but not able to attain thereto, because of having set his heart on covetousness, but going away empty.

What, then, shall we say to this, except that which the Apostle said: If God is for us, who is against us?

“I do not think that she would accept you now. She would feel,—I am sure she would feel, that these hours of her father’s sorrow are not hours in which love should be either offered or accepted. You shall, however, see her if you please.”

Her letters were most imprudent as written from the close vicinity of her aunt and cousin.

The thing had been managed so well that the tourist nuisance had been considerably abated.

Therefore, delivering ourselves both from evil report, and above all from the hell that is to come, and doing the things that are well-pleasing to God, let us put an end to this devilish custom, that both eating and drinking we may do all things to the glory of God, [1 Corinthians 10:31] and enjoy the glory that comes from Him; unto which may we all attain, by the grace and love towards man of our Lord Jesus Christ, to whom be glory and might, now and ever, and world without end. Amen.

[Isaiah 54:4] And perchance therefore is she a widow who has lost her Husband indeed in the suffering of His body, but in the day of judgment shall receive again the Son of Man Whom she seemed to have lost.

[Romans 2:17-23] Beware lest we also who make boast of the rightness of our faith dishonor God by not manifesting a life agreeable to the faith, causing Him to be blasphemed.

The cause of the failure of them all lay probably in this,—that there was no decided point which, if conceded, would have brought about a reconciliation.

That, therefore, which He made not of His own will must be understood to have been made from the fault of something, and that is from Matter, without a doubt.

Accordingly, the just punishment of the Sodomites became to men an image of the salvation which is well calculated for men.

we demanded.

The Story Is Told

is very hard to get from him a sanction for any increased expenditure. It would I think be impossible to get from him sanction for a measure which would put all control over expenditure out of his own hands. “We will guard as our choicest privilege that independence which Her Majesty some years since was pleased to bestow upon us.” It is thus that the Boer declares himself,—somewhat sarcastically,—when he is asked whether he does not wish to avail himself of the benefit of British citizenship.

But he was aware that he had much to do to recover his footing.

The apostle, however, says: It is sown a natural body; it is raised a spiritual body; because so perfect shall then be the harmony between flesh and spirit, the spirit keeping alive the subjugated flesh without the need of any nourishment, that no part of our nature shall be in discord with another; but as we shall be free from enemies without, so we shall not have ourselves for enemies within.

And his daughter was Marchioness of Brotherton.

Not all.

Are you again indignant?

And then Mrs. Arkwright told her. “People have been saying that Mr. Mason is again going to begin those law proceedings about the farm; but I for one don’t believe it.”

We shall not be indignant that judgment does not fall upon them, but we shall be more slow to commit wickedness ourselves.

“But her ladyship did not agree?”

Yet, whatever it shall be, it shall be eternal.

Anything left to her must in some sort be left to him, let it be tied up with ever so much care.

Now as they constantly returned with the same statement— for the angels of God always presented themselves in the same form— he came with a great multitude, and at length became himself a spectator of the prodigy.

But old age has no other period of this life to look forward to with expectation: how long old age may in any case be prolonged is uncertain, but it is certain that no other age destined to take its place lies beyond.

Hebrews 13:20-21

For what he had not himself taken away, he could not, as it were, restore, but of his own will to grant towards the expenses of superstition.

Lord Stanley, who, since 1844, had been in the Upper House, brought a direct motion against him, in which he was supported by Lord Aberdeen and Lord Canning; and he carried his resolution by a majority of thirty-seven.

Archie spoke a word or two to his uncle, and Sir Hugh vouchsafed to give one finger to his cousin Harry by way of shaking hands with him.

I exhort you not to be rapacious and grasping.

[Matthew 21:28] Jesus said unto them, Neither tell I you also by what power I work.

He still had round his waist the red scarf, of which he was so proud; but it was so soiled and dragged, as hardly to be recognized as the badge of the honourable corps to which he belonged, for he had, constantly since the morning, been up to his breast in the water, dragging women and children out of the river, heaving the boats ashore, or helping to push them off through the mud and rushes.

[Isaiah 33:13-19] Now it is evident, that in this prophecy [allusion is made] to the bread which our Christ gave us to eat, in remembrance of His being made flesh for the sake of His believers, for whom also He suffered; and to the cup which He gave us to drink, in remembrance of His own blood, with giving of thanks.

And Abram took Sarai his wife, and Lot his brother's son.

Yes, for if at the beginning He had introduced these high and most weighty commandments, men would not have received either these, or the others; but now ordaining them severally in their due time, He has by the two corrected the whole world.

We understand each other now—do we not?

To the multitude He shows not Himself walking upon the sea, for the miracle was too great to suit their infirmity. Indeed, even by the disciples He was not seen long doing this, but He appeared, and at once retired. Now this seems to me to be a different miracle from that found in Matthew xiv .; and that it is different is clear from many reasons. For He works often the same miracles, in order to cause the beholders not merely to count them very strange, but also to receive them with great faith.

“Is not Mr. Pogson within?”

Towards whom did Christ use violence?

He might, to be sure, allow the remainder of this Session to run, and stand, as he had intended, at the general election; but he knew that if he now allowed a Liberal to win the seat, the holder of the seat would be almost sure of subsequent success.

I have not a devil, but I honor Him that sent me.

“That’s just it. It’s about her money. Do you know, Grey, I’m beginning to think that I’ve been wrong in allowing you to advance what you have done on her account?”

He soon felt that no one addressed a word to him.

grace) crowned them first, and then led them to the contest.

“Why make her unhappy?” as he said to Mark.

And, as we said before, the devils put forward Marcion of Pontus, who is even now teaching men to deny that God is the maker of all things in heaven and on earth, and that the Christ predicted by the prophets is His Son, and preaches another god besides the Creator of all, and likewise another son.

Mr Maguire pressed for an early answer, and before she left the room she sat down and wrote it.

Commending ourselves to every man's conscience.

It was not that I cared so much for her,” he said.

“And Miss Julia Tristram is the lady that has excited it?”

“Gertrude?” demanded Captain Batsby.

No, nor will he be able to show that ungeneracy itself, which he excepts from the products of conception, is indissoluble and fixed when it has been uttered, for this expression of the voice through the lips does not abide in the air.

For his hearers were not in a state of indifference.

Nina was again silent, considering the proposition that had been made to her.

The reader, no doubt, has forgotten all he ever knew of Mr Jones, the pugilistic tailor.

In the first place, I cannot allow that the soul is capable of a failure of memory; because he has conceded to it so large an amount of divine quality as to put it on a par with God.

For we see and hear by their cries that animals die with pain, although man disregards this in a beast, with which, as not having a rational soul, we have no community of rights.

I would be so goodnatured.

But why have I, as if forgetting to whom I address myself, assumed the tone of a teacher in stating the question regarding which I wish to be instructed by you?

But of the threefold division, according to them, there is one principle, just like an immense fountain, capable of being by reason divided into infinite segments.

For what harm can result to them from their simplicity in regard to learning, when their thoughts are full of much wisdom?

‘No; we need not be like pigs,’ said Madame Voss. ‘Come into my room a moment, Marie. I want to speak to you. Your uncle won’t be up yet.’ Then she led the way, and Marie followed her. ‘Your uncle is becoming angry, Marie, because—’

If her deposition must be taken, she would make it in bed.

Nevertheless the preparations were going on, and, under Sir Thomas’s directions, the portmanteaus were already being packed.

“I dare say not. But if you feel it, how are you to help it? I shall do very well when I get away. Chowton Farm is not the only spot in the world.”

“But this would drive you mad. I wrote to her assuring her that it must be all over. Then she came here and sent for me. Was I not bound to go to her?”

Now although these things were spoken of human nature generally, they would nevertheless apply more properly to Christ according to the flesh. For this, You have put all things in subjection under his feet, belongs to Him rather than to us. For the Son of God visited us when we were nothing: and after having assumed our [nature], and united it to Himself, He became higher than all.

We cannot doubt, judging from the loud expression of the people’s joy at his election, that he had made himself beloved But, nevertheless, he omitted none of those cares which it was expected that a candidate should take.

And now, when he was proscribed, they were both proscribed with him.

In a memorandum prepared for the Cabinet, Lord Palmerston defended Napoleon as against Austria.

Her chief anxiety was, of course, on behalf of her brother.

There was some place to which she always went of a Friday morning, and at which she stayed for two or three hours.

And yet there, the children themselves contribute nothing, but their parents do all: and often have women had their children given them, though the children themselves contributed nothing.

Yes, truly, we will praise Him; for although it is natural to Him, He gave it to Himself, since God Himself is nature.

1. And first we must speak of Dionysius, who was appointed bishop of the church in Corinth, and communicated freely of his inspired labors not only to his own people, but also to those in foreign lands, and rendered the greatest service to all in the catholic epistles which he wrote to the churches.

But nevertheless, when the last moment came, there was some little attempt at glory. Who does not know the way in which a lately married couple’s little dinner-party stretches itself out from the pure simplicity of a fried sole and a leg of mutton to the attempt at clear soup, the unfortunately cold dish of round balls which is handed about after the sole, and the brightly red jelly, and beautifully pink cream, which are ordered, in the last agony of ambition, from the next pastrycook’s shop?

And that He also raised the dead, and that it is no fiction of those who composed the Gospels, is shown by this, that if it had been a fiction, many individuals would have been represented as having risen from the dead, and these, too, such as had been many years in their graves.

There is one thing in which wealth seems to have an advantage over poverty, viz.

And now let us select an illustration from our own experience.

Mr. Outhouse was forced to acknowledge that nothing could be done.

“I managed nothing, sir,” said Ralph, smiling.

“Do you not regret our mountains and our prairies,” said the poet; “our great waters and our green savannahs?” “I think more perhaps of Fifth Avenue,” said Miss Boncassen.

At your approach the monks instead of trembling rejoice.

‘Would you mind coming back?’

They will shine and run about as sparks in a place set with reeds.

He took but little notice of Phineas as he resumed his charge of Miss Effingham; but the two ladies wished him good night.

Mrs. Roby, thinking that she ought to check him, remarked that Mrs. Lopez’s return was a great thing for Mr. Wharton.

But her husband had stayed her.

For this to them is the way— as these affirm— of their drawing their breath in an act of respiration.

If we fit the bases of the two together we know from the tops the extra length of the one; from the end of the lesser lying alongside of it we measure this excess, supplementing the deficiency of the shorter ruler by a calculation, and so bringing it up to the end of the longer; a cubit for instance, or whatever be the distance of the one end from the other.

“Mr. Chaffanbrass no doubt is a very clever man, and it may be wise in such a case as this to have the services of a barrister who is perhaps unequalled in his power of cross-examining a witness.”

Was she so absolutely the property of her aunt that she was bound to do everything her aunt desired to the utter annihilation of all her hopes, to the extermination of her promised joys?

Not in hatred or revenge for a wicked life, to my thinking, does God bring upon sinners those painful dispensations; He is only claiming and drawing to Himself whatever, to please Him, came into existence.

He regarded the wife and children of his friend with something like envy; he all but coveted the pleasant drawing-room, with its pretty windows opening on to lawns and flower-beds, the apparel of the comfortable house, and—above all—the air of home which encompassed it all.

She was at last disturbed by feeling a man’s hand upon her shoulder.

Are the reprobate Jews to be supposed to keep the Passover now, seeing that they are without a temple, outside Jerusalem, and Christ, who was formerly prefigured, having been crucified by them?

But what I was going to say is this: you know how much we have at stake with Mr. Tudor—what a very large sum of Clementina’s money lies in his hands.

“Don’t separate yourself from me, Henri!” said she; “don’t let us be separated in anything, even in thought; not but that I should be delighted to see a dearer friendship between you and Marie, even than that between Marie and myself; but don’t plan any separate alliance for me. I hope you have not been doing so—tell me, Henri, that you have not.” And then she added, blushing deeply up to her pale forehead, “You have not proposed to Adolphe that I should be his wife?”

And, moreover, the father knew well enough that were his girl once to tell him that she had set her heart upon the gasfitter, or upon Ontario Moggs, he would not have the power to contradict her.

[Matthew 23:2] And again in another place, Go your way, show yourself to the priest.

All souls, therefore, are shut up within Hades: do you admit this?

Of these ages the first is from the beginning of the human race, that is, from Adam, who was the first man that was made, down to Noah, who constructed the ark at the time of the flood.

There is One Lord Jesus Christ, a wondrous name, indirectly announced beforehand by the Prophets.

But even yet might there not be hope?

But he was a sly old fox was Mr Tombe, and was considering all this time how much it would be well that he should tell Mr Vavasor, and how much it would be well that he should conceal.

[23] [Matthew 26:31] Then said Jesus unto them, You all shall desert me this night: it is written, I [24] will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered.

A risk is attached to its use, but there is no risk if we understand it to mean that the Father is unbegotten and the Son derives His being from the Father, and is like Him in power, and honour, and nature.

This was not the birth of the divinity, but the creating of the flesh; the new Man taking the title of the race, and being created according to God Who was born before the ages.

“Fred doesn’t know, do you mean?”

Now this is a good thing for those who are mature, but an evil thing for the immature and those whose appetites are too strong , being like solid food to tender babes still in need of milk.

But who can find fault with these judgments, except one who does not consider that, neither on the one hand ought all offenses to be left unpunished, nor on the other ought all to be punished in one way.

“You asked me once whether I loved her,” he said one day. “I did; but I am astonished now that it should have been so. She was very lovely.”

But whence, you demand, are evils?

As to the Quaker father, he thought altogether well of him too,—an industrious, useful, intelligent man, of whose quaint manners and manly bearing he would not be ashamed in any society.

How great would be the ignominy to him should he be driven to own to himself that she had not betrayed him!

Matt. VII. 28.

Up to this time however we have produced not the slightest effect, our hearers being carried now in one direction and now in another.

But he’s the sharpest chap of the whole twelve, and no end of a boy afther the girls.

Evidently the devil who stripped him of all.

For the earth itself, from which we are all taken, when it is not worked and cultivated, seems to be desert; and the field dies to the vines or olive-trees with which it was planted, and yet it does not lose its own nutritive power, which is, as it were, its life.

And indeed He is not far from every one of us, as the apostle says, who adds, For in Him we live, and are moved, and have our being.

220His address on this occasion to the people was not made public, and has not been preserved.

At all events let us prefer the simplicity of faith to the demonstrations of reason.

Eudoxius was moved to offer this advice both by his knowledge that the diocese was sound in the faith and his experience of the anger manifested by Constantius against the party who asserted the only begotten Son of God to be a created being.

But if some should still contend that he speaks of priests, What sort of priests? let us ask. Those whose walk in life has been worldly, of course. In what sense then does he say, We shall judge angels, much more things that relate to this life? He mentions the angels, in contradistinction to things relating to this life: likely enough; for they are removed from the need of these things, because of the superior excellence of their nature.

He was very clear in his opinion that the Marquis had the law on his side in giving the land for the purpose in question, even if it could be shown that he was simply the lord of the manor, and not so possessed of the spot as to do what he liked in it for his own purposes.

What further harm could any such doing on his part bring upon him Did we think that were he brought out to stand at the gallows’ foot with the knowledge that ten minutes would usher him into what folks called eternity, his sense of suffering would be as great as it had been when he conducted that woman out of court and along the streets to his home, amidst the jeering congratulations of his neighbours?

Does he enclose God in place?

The clock tower which is the work of the energetic Dean was when I was there,—not finished indeed for there was the spire to come,—but still so far erected as to be a conspicuous and handsome object to all the country round.

Do we not know the elephantine tread of The Saturday, and the precise toe of The Spectator?

They retired as soon as it was possible, and then Arabella at once went up to her bedroom.

For thus says God: Let us make man in our image, and after our likeness.

What was it to me?

Or who can bear to hear it maintained, that this mighty habitation, which is constituted of heaven and earth, and which is called Cosmos on account of the magnitude and the plenitude of the wisdom which has been brought to bear upon it, has been established in all its order and beauty by those atoms which hold their course devoid of order and beauty, and that that same state of disorder has grown into this true Cosmos, Order?

He evidently took a good deal of pains with his aristocracy; it makes its first appearance, if I remember right, in Doctor Thorne, in the person of the Lady Arabella de Courcy.

Few people at Holloway knew either her or her son.

“Mr. Nokes says he is a little stronger, my Lord,” said the butler coming into the room. Mr. Nokes had gone home and had returned again.

On the Holy Trinity

The Vicarage, Friday.

You are nice-looking,”—Dorothy blushed beneath her hat even at her sister’s praise,—”and good-tempered, and lovable in every way.

The prefect, finding that he could not prevail upon her to hold communion with Arsacius, dismissed her that she might consult the advocates.

Some years since the Americans thought that Canada might shine in the Union firmament as a new star; but that delusion is, I think, over.

When therefore the banker was sitting in his own more private room, Philip passed through from the bank into the house and made his way upstairs with no one to announce him.

But there is no Priest without a sacrifice.

Were he to place her in a reformatory, she would not stay there.

It is not without a reason that the Evangelist says, After the manner of the purifying of the Jews, but in order that none of the unbelievers might suspect that lees having been left in the vessels, and water having been poured upon and mixed with them, a very weak wine had been made.

So long, however, as its form exists in its proper order, you may seek and discuss as much as you please, and give full rein to your curiosity, in whatever seems to you to hang in doubt, or to be shrouded in obscurity.

As he did so he stood in the middle of the room, looking down upon her with a gaze under which she had often suffered, but which she did not in the least understand.

It is indeed a monstrous thing to refuse to confess this in the case of the Spirit; monstrous, because of the incongruity, as applied to Him, of the terms which in the list of opposites correspond to the above terms.

A large sum of money was expended,—no doubt justified by the high position which poor Mr. Bonteen had filled in the counsels of the nation; but it was expended in vain.

Eran.— There is no need of argument. The Lord distinctly teaches that He does not wish to be called Son of David.

And to show that our faith is effective, so now we are supported by faith in Christ, but you by professional logomachies.

For the evils we have once perpetrated cannot provoke Him so much as our being unwilling to make any change in the future.

And how standing in God's presence, do you laugh and throw yourself back, and not conceive fear and dread?

But I am weak, she replies, and cannot bear the fear of God.

If the things which He has made are beautiful, how much more beautiful is He who made them.

For by the word [ξένον], used here, he means a host, not a guest.

The punishment which God appointed was in itself, a just, and therefore a good thing; but man's experience of it is not good.

“Time and the hour run through the roughest day.” In this way that dinner at Kingsbury House did come to an end at last.

Gradually came the conviction on Miss Lawrie’s mind of Mr Whittlestaff’s purpose.

For in that which is above, He shall spare the helpless and poor man, there is understood from usuries: but in that which there he says, and the souls of the poor He shall save; there seems to have been implied, from iniquity: so that the words He shall redeem, are understood with both.

“Yes, she has told me about it.”

The words which we read were probably much polished before they were published, but how far this was done we do not know.

“Mr Crosbie,” she said, in a low voice, as they were standing together over one of the distant tables, with their backs to the rest of the company, “I want you to tell me something about Miss Lilian Dale.”

I should not have ventured to trouble you with a letter on this subject, nor should I myself have been disposed to write about it at present, were it not that I feel it to be an imperative duty to refer without delay to my last letter to you, and to your very flattering reply.

The imitation of her provides us with a principle of training, and gives us a pattern of virtue.

Of her early life, or their early lives, we know nothing; but the unfortunate circumstances which brought us into contact with Mrs. Brumby, made us also acquainted with the lieutenant.

[Mark 15:3a] And [16] the chief priests and the elders accused him of many things.

In whom also we were made a heritage, having been foreordained according to the purpose of Him who works all things after the counsel of his will.

It is but a dream after all, and I would not have you repeat what I have said to any one.

Of all those to whom the fate of the two brothers had hitherto been matter of moment, I think that Lady Ongar felt more than any other for the fate of poor Archie.

“I have called this morning, Mrs. Proudie,” said he, “because I wish to ask a favour from you.” Whereupon Mrs. Proudie bowed.

Wherefore as if by His prophetic warnings He would seal up His instructions in our hearts as His own peculiar treasure, the Lord said, 'Take heed that no man deceive you: for many shall come in My name, saying, I am he; and the time draws near; and they shall deceive many: go ye not therefore after them [Luke 21:8].'

We did reach the town about sunset, and I found myself once again restored to the delights of tubs, telegrams, and bed linen.

“And here, Mr Eames, is to your very good health,” said Lupex, raising to his mouth a steaming goblet of gin-and-water, “and wishing you many years to enjoy your official prosperity.”

“Now I must introduce you to Mr Alf,” said the lady.

There’s that infernal scoundrel sitting in Parliament just as if he had not robbed me of my property, and forged my name, and—and—by George!

He had, however, just seen Carry Brattle and her father seated side by side on a bench in a little outside room appropriated to the witnesses, and there had been a constable there seeming to stand on guard over them.

[Isaiah 58:7, Septuagint] For if a man deserts those who are united by ties of kindred and affinity, how shall he be affectionate towards others?

Then he wiped away a tear as he sat down to sign the huge batch of letters.

Beautiful Switzerland!

There was nothing to allure him, nothing to tempt him to such a marriage, but a simple appreciation of her personal merits.

Chapter LXXV. P. P. C.

The German made a motion with his arms intended to signify his utter indifference. One place was the same as another to him. Jacko uttered his usual ejaculation, and then, having hitched his horse to the fence, threw himself on his back upon the grass.

[Archelaus (a.d. 280), Bishop of Carrha in Mesopotamia, classes his countryman Tatian with Marcion, Sabellius, and others who have made up for themselves a peculiar science, i.e., a theology of their own.— Routh: Reliquiæ, tom. v. p. 137. But see Edinburgh Series of this work, vol. xx. p. 267.]

Chapter 1. The Events which preceded the Persecution in our Times.

Here again Palmerston had not his fingers very deep in the pie.

What do the heresies say to this utterance, seeing Scripture proclaims the Almighty God to be good, and not the author of evil and wrong, if indeed ignorance arises from one not knowing?

It was as follows: The most celebrated philosophers among the Greeks explored unknown cities and regions.

She had sworn it and would keep her oath.

Wherefore it is understood to be said prophetically, and not of ill will; when this is said, which must necessarily happen to such as chose to persevere in those sins, which have been mentioned.

“We’ll not give it up till we’ve seen it all at any rate,” said Mr. Glascock. And so they went round to the other front.

What is the riches of His Goodness?

Michel Voss at this time was a very unhappy man.

Nothing could be more unjust, nothing more cruel; but still there were the facts.

3. One of the Alexandrian deputies was Apion, who uttered many slanders against the Jews; among other things saying that they neglected the honors due to Cæsar. For while all other subjects of Rome erected altars and temples to Caius, and in all other respects treated him just as they did the gods, they alone considered it disgraceful to honor him with statues and to swear by his name.

The cross has broken our bond, it has made the prison of death ineffectual, it is the demonstration of the love of God.

“Think how young I am, and,—by comparison,—how old you are. You are eight years older than I am. Remember;—after all that I have gone through, I am but twenty-two. At my age other girls have their friends to tell them. I have no one,—unless you will tell me.”

For fightings belong to the rich, not to the poor; to the rich, who have many causes to force them to war.

He is going to marry your aunt in order that he may have a lot of children, and cut me out.

He had been congratulated by scores of men who had heard that he had fallen.

It has been before observed that he lacked something in delicacy, but what he did so lack he made up in persistency.

On the former subject I can say nothing to you.

“I will do so,” said Madame Heine. And then the younger member of the firm was informed as to the step which was to be taken; and he, though he said nothing to forbid the attempt, held out no hope that it would be successful.

Lord Grasslough, who had not many good gifts, was, at least, not suspicious, and repudiated the idea.

As then the imperial throne had descended to him from his father, so, by the law of nature, was it reserved for his children and their descendants, and perpetuated, like some paternal inheritance, to endless generations.

But he who has not freed himself from this monster, involves his soul in struggles of various kinds, and perpetual agitation, and the burden both of despondency and of other passions.

“It’s as well for her not to go out before the trial,” whispered Mrs. McKeon to her daughters. “Poor girl; she has a great deal, a great deal, indeed, to go through yet.” Indeed she had a very great deal to go through; a very heavy atonement to pay for her folly and her crime.

I am not very much surprised, though I was a little, that you should have accepted Lord Castlewell; but I had not quite known the ins and outs of it, not having been there to see.

And he said not, Lest I destroy my brother, but simply, That I make not my brother to stumble.

“And what would you like?”

On the whole, the lecture was excellent, and that little advice about the peacock was in itself worth an hour’s attention.

Whether he was right or wrong in supposing that he would disgrace his family were he to marry the daughter of a convicted thief, it is hardly necessary to discuss here.

I refer not to other treatises where a more particular description is given—for perhaps, because they are in the hands of only a few, there might not be so much difficulty with them—but to this Fundamental Epistle which we are now considering, with which all of you who are called enlightened are usually quite familiar.

Hearken O daughter.

“That the connection would be personally agreeable to myself, I need hardly say,” said the Dean.

Ralph himself found it to be impossible even to look as though things were going right.

Their other deities we arrange in two classes: those which have become gods from human beings, and those which have had their origin in some other way.

For if the sight only of a dead body so depresses the mind, how much more must hell and the fire unquenchable, how much more the worm that never dies.

“Sit down, Linda, when I ask you.” Then Linda did sit down; but she had altogether lost that look of quiet, passive endurance which her face and figure had borne when she was first asked to listen to her aunt’s words.

Tell me, will he be able to endure his despair when he sees him who was [ranked] with himself ascended even to the very highest dignities, and made thus glorious, and master of the world, while he himself still remains below, and has not even been freed from punishment with honor, but through the grace and kindness of the King?

And in addition to the well-known translations of Aquila, Symmachus, and Theodotion, he discovered certain others which had been concealed from remote times—in what out-of-the-way corners I know not—and by his search he brought them to light.

It occurred to Lord George afterwards that the interview had certainly been arranged.

For with all these gifts, and with all else that is good, we must be mindful of that Day: and there is need of many labors to be able to come unto the end.

“But you did change.”

What I said to him I will say aloud to the whole county.

“Yes; I know,” said he, “it has all been my fault.

Like as the arrows in the hand of the mighty one, even so are the children of those that are shot out [Psalm 126:4].

After dinner Mr. Cockey proposed a glass of toddy and a cigar, remarking that he would move a bill for dispensing with the smoking rule for that night only, and to this also Gilmore assented.

When it had been suggested to her that she should go and live with her brother’s wife as her servant, that idea had been hard to bear.

Johnny Bold, by the help either of Mr. Rerechild or else by that of his coral and carrot-juice, got through his teething troubles.

“Ah, yes; I am not thinking of individuals exactly. His want of generosity is to large masses,—to a party, to classes, to a people; whereas his generosity is for mankind at large. He assumes the god, affects to nod, and seems to shake the spheres. But I have nothing against him. He has asked me here tonight, and has talked to me most familiarly about Ireland.”

But he would have nothing further to do with a penniless lover, let his position in the world of fashion, or even in the world of politics, be what it might.

Let it, however, not go on to wonder incredulously at the attributes of the Deity without first wondering in like manner at the mysteries within itself; let it, if possible, raise itself for a little above the body, and above those things which it is accustomed to perceive by the bodily organs, and let it contemplate what that is which uses the body as its instrument.

For this, He says, is to be a disciple; so shall all men praise you, when they see you imitating My Love.

You have said everything now.

[Ephesians 4:24] For if the garment of salvation is one, and that is Christ, one cannot say that the new man, which after God is created, is any other than Christ, but it is clear that he who has put on Christ has put on the new man which after God is created.

When Harry had read and had digested this, he became aware that he was again fluttered. “Poor creature!” he said to himself; “it is sad to think how much she is in want of a friend.”

“If I have a fever, I will get rid of it if I can; in such case I must do so, or die.”

But neither, as we see, did He in this sentence show any sign of condemning her who was the wife of so many husbands.

But we may declare that the book has caught a hold of the reading public of all countries which nothing yet has shaken, and that it has made a stronger claim to immortality than any other work of English Prose Fiction.

Epidaurus and all the region roundabout tell the story to this day, and mothers teach their children to hand down the remembrance of it to posterity.

Behold with what arguments human infirmity, possessed with vanity, contradicts the omnipotence of God!

In like manner they declare that the relationship between the Father and the Son resembles that between the Father and the universe, so that the names Father and Son are rather titular than real.

She went direct to her own room, that, womanlike, she might consult her own face as to the effects of the insult she had received, and then having, as it were, steadied herself, and prepared herself for the scene that was to follow, she descended to the sitting-room and encountered her friend.

But when he said, 'I demand the young man and the soul of the brother,' the old man, groaning deeply and at the same time bursting into tears, said, 'He is dead.'

But in the Apocalypse of John, too, He says, [Revelation 1:18] I am the first and the last, and the living One, and I was dead.

Who the vulture?

It is the duty, then, of the interpreter and teacher of Holy Scripture, the defender of the true faith and the opponent of error, both to teach what is right and to refute what is wrong, and in the performance of this task to conciliate the hostile, to rouse the careless, and to tell the ignorant both what is occurring at present and what is probable in the future.

After Constantius, who was a brave and able general, had destroyed the tyrant Constantine, the emperor rewarded him by giving him his sister in marriage; he also bestowed upon him the ermine and purple, and admitted him to a share in the government.

Then Jacob, being desirous of returning to his father, when Laban his father-in-law had given him a portion of the flock as a reward for his service, and Jacob the son-in-law, thinking him not to be acting justly in that matter, while he [also] suspected deceit on his part, privately departed about the thirtieth year after his arrival.

Your share would be quite enough for you and me.

Reginald will go over and see your father about your proposition. As far as I myself am concerned nothing would give me so much pleasure. This is quite sincere. But the matter is in other respects very important. Of course I have kept your letter all to myself, and in writing to Reginald I have mentioned no names.

At least when they had set false witness, wherefore, having nothing to say, did they still urge their point?

That he would listen to her she was sure,—and then if he chose to cast her out, she would endure his wrath.

May the Lord cause all things to pass peaceably.

In the heat of discussion a word or two was spoken by Lady Susanna,—who entertained special objections to all things low,—which made Mary very angry.

The beginning, then, of this sermon is introduced as follows: And when He saw the great multitudes, He went up into a mountain: and when He was set, His disciples came unto Him: and He opened His mouth, and taught them, saying.

The postponement of the explanation which is asked for.

As he thought of all this he became somewhat in love with a small income, and imagined to himself what honours would be done to him by the Mrs. Thornes of the county, when they should come to know in what way he had sacrificed himself to his love.

“I am sorry,” he said, “that you and I cannot agree about a matter that is of such vital concern to both of us; but as it is so, we can only act as each thinks best, you for yourself and I for myself.

He had over and over again tried to convince himself that this was his own fault, and that he had no right to accuse Mrs. Woodward of ingratitude.

“Why, miss, they all be delivered; you know that,” said Mrs Crump, the postmistress.

we shall decline to speak of first and second, for the Divinity is above number, and the succession of times.

It was not that he doubted in the least his own purpose, but he did not know how to gainsay her as to this small request.

It is not lawful for you to love little Him, for Whose sake you have not loved even what were lawful.

And cares crowd round him, for travelling with him are his wife, children and servants, whom he has brought with him from no motives but those of humanity, for he cannot think it right to dismiss them when they refuse to abandon him.

And for the present He makes them physicians of bodies, dispensing to them afterwards the cure of the soul, which is the principal thing.

The visit was now out of its order, only nine months having elapsed,—of which irregularity Beetham took due notice.

To him it seemed to be an absurd degree of caution that two young people should not be brought together in the same house lest one should fall in love with the other.

“Will it not be well that we should be friends?”

‘Thomas Snape, Esq., &c.,

But on this subject there has arisen a feud which is now being fought out by all the weapons of rebellion on one side, and on the other by the force of a dominating Government, restrained, as it is found to be, by the self-imposed bonds of a democratic legislature.

[Matthew 5:39] If then our enemy say what is not true, let us on this account even pity him, because he draws down upon him the punishment and vengeance of the accusers, being unworthy even to read the Scriptures.

A piece of flat ground is selected by the roadside, about half an acre in size, and close to a river or some running water.

He was vicious, and—he was dying.

Consider and observe, my hearer, that if God had given a hope to Sodom and to her fellows, He would not have overthrown them with fire and brimstone, the sign of the last day of the world, but would have delivered them over to one of the kingdoms to be chastised.

When in the early spring the Duke of Omnium first knocked at Madame Max Goesler’s door, he was informed that she was not at home.

It crushed his sons also.

“I’ll do my best, ma’am, and I can’t say no more. And if you scolds me afterwards, ma’am,—why, of course, I must put up with it.”

John then speaks thus: And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns, like a lamb, and he spoke as a dragon.

Argument 2.— He Essays to Speak of the Well-Nigh Divine Endowments of Origen in His Presence, into Whose Hands He Avows Himself to Have Been Led in a Way Beyond All His Expectation

Was she quick-tempered?

They make Vulcan to be the fire of the world; Neptune the waters of the world; Father Dis, that is, Orcus, the earthy and lowest part of the world.

But far be (the repetition of such catastrophes)!

“Do you remember old Twentyman of Chowton?”

Lord bless you, no!

“Oh, Papa, don’t joke. It’s not a nice place for you. You say you are growing old, though I am sure you are not.”

Others followed us, and we settled ourselves with great prosperity.

Would you see His altar also?

And again, among human things, what man himself is, and what he has naturally or preternaturally; and how, again, it becomes him to do or to suffer; and what are his virtues and what his vices; and about things good, bad, and indifferent; also about fortitude, and prudence, and self-restraint, and the virtue which is in all respects complete, namely, righteousness.

In a plain and short phrase he taught the secret of this great mystery, through this confidence by which he realized that in what refers to God his statements had no need of lengthened arguments, and that the Divinity added faith to his utterances.

“I don’t understand that kind of power,—how any man can have it with any girl.”

“Is it fair that she should be sacrificed because she is rich, and because she is so winning and so fascinating that Lord Brentford would receive even his son for the sake of receiving also such a daughter-in-law?” Phineas also liked Lord Chiltern; had seen or fancied that he had seen fine things in him; had looked forward to his regeneration, hoping, perhaps, that he might have some hand in the good work.

Thus, whoever he be by whose mouth the Spirit of prophecy has spoken, the whole purpose of his words is our instruction concerning the glory and power of the coming, the Incarnation, the Passion, the kingdom of our Lord Jesus Christ, and of our resurrection.

Of which may we all be thought worthy, through the grace and lovingkindness of our Lord Jesus Christ, with whom to the Father, together with the Holy Ghost, be glory, power, and honor, now and for ever and ever.

He heard as much from Lord Hampstead, who advised him to go to Castle Hautboy, and make himself acquainted with Fanny’s family friends.

“No more it would. If Mr. Tappitt began it first, it wasn’t his fault.”

One is in a free country, and has come from a country in which one has been brought up to hug one’s chains—so at least the English traveler is constantly assured—and yet in an American inn one can never do as one likes.

Is not capable of knowing itself.

The beauty of woman is the greatest snare.

Praise ye the Lord from heaven [Psalm 148:1].

That will give you ample for life.

Prove me, O Lord, and try me [Psalm 25:2].

What could I say to a man who behaved to me in such a manner?

Chapter 2. The System of Basilides Derived from Aristotle.

For neither now, if all shall have been continent, will they give the honor of the continent to those who have already borne into the garners of the Lord the fruit thirty-fold, if that be understood of married good.

6. They had accompanied the confessors in Cilicia to the mines there and were returning to their homes. At the entrance of the gates of Cæsarea, the guards, who were men of barbarous character, questioned them as to who they were and whence they came. They kept back nothing of the truth, and were seized as malefactors taken in the very act. They were five in number.

It ain’t above forty miles to the southwest, and there’s a rail goes within fifteen miles of it.

And the Lord is pleased to purify him by stripes.

To all such questions Mrs. Roden found it very difficult to make any reply.

And as this phrase is utterly unreal, unless it rests upon the signification of time, it would be foolish and idle to say that nothing was before the Son, and yet to maintain that the Son did not always exist.

Why have our stuff jackets prevailed against their steel armour; because they covered honest hearts that were fighting honestly for their King.

But as Mr. Nogo’s numbers were so respectable, it was necessary to oppose him in a respectable parliamentary steady manner.

And then, lest reflection on this unity entangle you in the delusion of a solitary and self-contained God, take to heart the mystery of the faith manifested in these words, He that honours not the Son honours not the Father Which has sent Him.

“Because you have not known him as I have done. He does not say much, but no one’s eye is so accurate and so severe.” All this arose from a certain passage which dwelt in her remembrance, when he had praised the fit of her gown, and had told her with a kiss that no woman ever dressed so well as she did.

But it is one question, whether he could exist; and another question, whether he does exist.

They were offering birds and pine cones in sacrifice, singing the praises of their idols, and blaspheming even in the very churches our Lord and Saviour Jesus-Christ, the Son of the living God.

That’s just what a young man like you has no business to know.

It is one thing not to fight, and to be in true and lasting peace; another to fight and overcome; another to fight and to be overcome; another not to fight at all, but to be carried away

And he should also consider how, when an elected prelate undertakes the cause of the people, he goes, as it were, as a physician to one that is sick.

Thus also the Comic poet said that man is graceful, so long as he is man.

How, then, could that creator's law teach me that which the creator himself did not know, since neither did the law itself know it, that it might teach it?]

Moreover, as every being is capable of attracting its like, and humanity is, in a way, like God, as bearing within itself some resemblances to its Prototype, the soul is by a strict necessity attracted to the kindred Deity.

There is nothing more terrible than this turn of his discourse.

He was not so bad as Mr. Cameron, the Minister for War; that was the best his own party could say for him, even in his own State of New York.

But when one who has a husband and children, and presides over a household, sees you, who ought to be crucified to the world, more devoted to the world than herself, will she not ridicule and despise you?

[Luke 12:47-48] What is there to excite surprise, if, in the Christian dispensation, the world, like that servant, knowing the will of the Lord, and refusing to do it, is beaten with many stripes?

In his heart he did not love Kantwise, but he dealt by him with the utmost justice in the great affair of the turkey’s breast.

To that only had he made up his mind.

Two other youths also appeared in glorious might and wondrous beauty, in splendour and glory and beauteous array.

For at that time even most truly and most fully there shall be fulfilled the name Israel itself, which is one seeing God: for we shall see Him as He is.

When they were made, I was there: and now has the Lord and His Spirit sent Me.

Where there is no war.

We rise from these considerations to a higher level when we take the words before our minds, I live, says the Lord.

Mary found the letter and did read it before she left her husband’s dressing room,—and the letter was as follows:—

Nor did they manifestly take steps to leave the two alone together.

Of this same thing in Hosea: I desire mercy rather than sacrifice, and the knowledge of God more than whole burnt-offerings.

For by these He justifies Himself, saying, If I do not the works of My Father, believe Me not; but if I do, if you believe not Me, believe the works.

“Yes, you would, and would be right too. If he would say he’d pay me a hundred pounds tomorrow, or a thousand, I would have his word as soon as any other man’s bound. And yet he has utterly got the better of me, and made me believe that a marriage took place, when there was no marriage. I think I’ll have a cup of tea.”

Luke made known the doings of the apostles up to the time when Paul was brought to Rome under the emperor Nero.

To John Bishop of Scyllacium.

So far he had been mercenary; but he had learned to love the girl, and to care more for her than for her money, and when the day of disappointment came upon him,—the day on which she had told him that all between them was to be over for ever,—he had, for a few hours, felt the loss of his love more than the loss of his money.

[1 John 4:7] Therefore to do justice and judgment is of God.

One stone shall not remain upon another.

She had given him almost unasked the only promise which duty required her to give, but at the same time she had assured him by her countenance, as well as by her words, that she would be as faithful to her lover as she was prepared to be obedient to her father.

And that is what I am doing now, sir.

This would take place soon after luncheon.

If Felix Graham chose to take her, of course she was there for him to take.

Chapter X. The Dean as a Sporting Man

We had little to say as to the matter, except that we had known the man to be industrious and capable, and that we had, alas!

Phineas declared his purpose of waiting for them, and requested that Mr. Low might be asked to join him in the dining-room immediately on his return.

Hence his conversation had a peculiar charm, but he was not equally happy with his pen.

O holy soul, which here does sing and groan!

So the people sat silent at their hearths, or crawled miserably about their potato patches, speaking not at all of the life around them.

They could not believe, it says, because that Esaias said, You shall hear with your ears, and not understand. These things he said, when he saw His glory, and spoke of Him.

You wrote before this: Accept the document which I send which you wished to buy at a great price; but now you speak with the pretence of humility.

Mr. Grey went down to Tretton with a great bag of papers. In fact, though he told his daughter that he had to examine them all before he started, and had taken them to Fulham for that purpose, he had not looked at them. And, as another fact, the bag was not opened till he got home again. They had been read;—at any rate, what was necessary. He knew his subject. The old squire knew it well.

Only, where shall we find an example of such perfection?

With reason he is not pleasing to alien sons, that are put afar off from holy men, because they have not the light of the living, whence they may see that which to God is pleasing.

Or who but Thou, our God, made for us that firmament [Genesis 1:6] of authority over us in Your divine Scripture?

Then Bessy came down with her hat, and they started for their walk. “ Now tell me all about it,” she said, in a fever of expectation, as soon as the front door was closed behind them.

“I should think that he probably may,” said the archdeacon.

“You can’t throw yourself on the public pity as a woman might,” said the Vicar.

Him, Who knew no sin, He made to be sin on our behalf.

On the following morning he was relieved from his immediate difficulty by the arrival of a letter from Mr Apjohn.

All his old comforts of course he would not have,—nor the old esteem and regard of men.

Ajax and Ulysses contended at the funeral games.

For they both dishonored nature, and trampled on the laws.

If purity be not added to the service of God, you would roll pleasantly like the dung-flies.

For if there was a time when the things that are made did not exist, then, as there were no things which had been made, so there was no maker; which you see to be an impious conclusion.

This testimony is incontrovertible; the (unbelief) of the Jews (is left) without excuse.

[Matthew 5:38-39] In those days men said to the warrior: gird your sword upon your thigh, O most mighty; now it is said to Peter: put up again your sword into his place: for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword.

Consequently even this our conflict, in which we are exposed to peril, and from which we hope to be delivered by a final victory, belongs to the ills of this life, which is proved by the witness of so many grave evils to be a life under condemnation.

On inquiry, however, he found that the message had been sent, and that the paper had been put into the Signore’s own hand by the Sienese messenger.

For as what is beside purpose is contrary to will, so what is according to nature transcends and precedes counselling.

Mrs. Connop Green marvelled at her coolness knowing how much must depend on the answer which her mother had brought back from London, and knowing nothing of the contents of the letter which Arabella had received that morning from the lawyer.

And He says that it pollutes by defiling the soul: wherefore He prescribes the cure with all speed, advising the head to be instantly shaven; that is, counselling the locks of ignorance which shade the reason to be shorn clean off, that reason (whose seat is in the brain), being left bare of the dense stuff of vice, may speed its way to repentance.

To lose him would be to die!

The servant knows, of course, from whom the letter comes, and sees that I have been forbidden to open it.” Then the man returned to the room, and the remainder of the dinner passed off almost in silence.

So, then, if these things are so.

So far then as pleasure is concerned, this [table of mine] has the advantage. For if honor has more pleasure than dishonor, if authority than subjection, and if manly confidence than trembling and fear, and if enjoyment of what is enough, than to be plunged out of depth in the tide of luxury; on the score of pleasure this table is better than the other. It is besides better in regard of expense; for the other is expensive, but this, not so.

The mother did not for a moment pretend that her son was an honest man, getting his bread after an honest fashion.

So many robbers have at all times perished, and do perish daily, and you yourself have certainly condemned many: which of them after his crucifixion was called, I will not say a God, but a man?

It is of such a master as this, a master of the good old English sort, and not of an itinerant contractor for hunting, that I here intend to speak.

It had to be done, and he would do it.

“It is two o’clock, Felix,” said his mother.

There could be no need of any such caution with her.

This we have already often said before.

“Promise me, promise me,” said Eleanor; “say that my father is safe;—one word will do. I know how true you are; say one word, and I will let you go.”

All had been settled beforehand, so that Sir Felix really had no need to think about anything.

For man, too, is lord of the wood at one time, and at another he is lord of the chest, although fabricated of that same wood; which he certainly was not at the time when he was already the lord of the wood.

It may be as well to state here that England is bound by a treaty with Honduras, made in 1836, to assist in furthering the execution of this work by our countenance, aid, and protection, on condition that when made, we Britishers are to have the full use of it; as much so, at least, as any other people or nation.

“He will be, in a month or two.”

I suppose you will go too before long.

“Why won’t he leave me alone, then?”

Chapter 25 [XIII.]— As The Law is Not, So Neither is Our Nature Itself that Grace by Which We are Christians.

Rebellion

“Like a mountebank, I suppose,” said de Lescure.

See what obstacles he still attempts to break through, if possible, in order to introduce his own opinion.

The Word, then, permits them a finger-ring of gold. Nor is this for ornament, but for sealing things which are worth keeping safe in the house in the exercise of their charge of housekeeping.

82. For how is the Holy Spirit separated from the Son, since the Spirit Himself bears witness with our spirit that we are sons of God, and if sons, also heirs, heirs, indeed, of God and joint-heirs with Christ. [Romans 8:16-17] Who, then, is so foolish as to wish to dissever the eternal conjunction of the Spirit and Christ, when the Spirit by Whom we are made joint-heirs with Christ conjoins even what is severed.

For it is by the path of life and health that we learn gnosis.

I say not, Let there not offer Me this any one that is evil; but no one does offer Me this, that is evil.

“I am, of course, prepared to hear you say so. Well; goodbye, and may God bless you.”

So that what you consider a cause for your being anxious, this I say is sufficient to draw you from such anxiety.

‘Therefore the ungodly shall not stand in the judgment, nor sinners in the congregation of the righteous.

And then it was that, saying 'Go,' He 'delivered' to Him man, that the Word Himself might be made Flesh, and by taking the Flesh, restore it wholly.

Everything about him was black except his neck, and that was always scrupulously white.

Wherefore you ought rather to be amazed that you still possess something, than that there is something which you have lost.

“I tell you I think they are both at Framley together.”

[41] [Luke 2:33] And Joseph and his mother were marvelling at the things which were being said [42] concerning him.

He was to be carried in a cab by one constable to Bartholomew Hospital, who would then take his address so that he might be produced and bound over to prosecute.

See how all partook also at Paul's table.

What is without doubting?

That the Empire should be governed according to the old oligarchical forms which had been in use for more than four centuries, and had created the power of Rome—that was his political creed.

“Yes; altogether.”

“I almost feel as though I could walk, too.”

Up and down by this steamer Ada and Edith Jones had frequently gone to visit their friend, and as frequently that friend had come to visit them.

For it is the same Wisdom, the same doctrine and discipline that every language preaches.

But he also had been an eager, I may also say, a malicious antagonist.

“Mary—”

Added to the message were these words: “We are all well at the parsonage”—words evidently added in thoughtfulness.

Now this would all be over, and she would be driven again to beg him to send her away, that she might become a household drudge elsewhere.

Truth between woman and woman should have prevented that.

How am I to count up all her traits, or pass over most of them without injury to those who know them not?

Gifts like the latter might be given to a mere girl, like herself,—were to be so given.

Eran.— Jews give erroneous interpretations of prophecies of this kind, but I am a Christian; I trust in the Divine word; and I receive the prophecies without doubt.

For they attempt, by praising the Godhead of the Father only, to deprive the Son of His Divinity, pleading that it is written, Hear, O Israel, the Lord your God is One [Deuteronomy 6:4], and that the Lord repeats this in His answer to the doctor of the Law who asked Him what was the greatest commandment in the Law;— Hear, O Israel, the Lord your God is One.

“He said it in words which made me feel that I must part from him.”

I would not have father believe that my health has aught to do with it.

Chapter 10. Continuation: audacity of Satan

They also wear double scarves woven of woollen yarn which the Greeks call [ἀνάλαβοι], but which we should name girdles or strings, or more properly cords.

I wish I might;—a Merle Park of my own for instance.

“Spake?—why, what would you have me spake?”

“No, no; I will not be severe.”

[Luke 2:38] And she also rose in that hour and thanked the Lord, and she [47] spoke of him with every one who was expecting the deliverance of Jerusalem.

“I didn’t say anything of the kind,” said Sir Raffle. “I thought it right to make you understand that it was my opinion, given, of course, officially, which prevailed with the Chancellor of the Exchequer. Well, gentlemen, as I shall be wanted in the city, I will say good morning to you. Is my carriage ready, Boggs?” Upon which the attendant messenger opened the door, and the great Sir Raffle Buffle took his final departure from the scene of his former labours.

It was to her a terrible outrage.

And then I looked to the multitude, and said: 'I and my tribe have had handed down to us from our ancestors the worship of God, and we have a commandment to give no heed to Genesis, I mean to the science of astrology; and therefore I gave no attention to it.

Judging from what we know of his character, we think that he would have distrusted its success.

If you are so honest, why did you waste your money to-day in going to Chiswick, instead of paying some portion of your debts?

She no doubt had used various names, had called herself sometimes Mrs. Caldigate, sometimes Mrs. Smith, but generally, in such documents as she had to sign in reference to her mining shares, Euphemia Cettini.

But I pities the young lady and the poor little bastard.’

The half of the week Nero held sway, and in the holy city Jerusalem placed the abomination; and in the half of the week he was taken away, and Otho, and Galba, and Vitellius.

Whence is it that we are Christians?

The titular bishop never interfered, and Mrs. Proudie not often.

Now that perjury and lying enter into their mysteries and form a bond between them appears most clearly from the sixth book of Origen's Miscellanies, in which he harmonizes the Christian doctrine with the conceptions of Plato.

Through want of solidity and firmness of character.

And there are diversities of ministrations, and the same Lord.

The most direct way of all for Mr. Bonteen would have been that followed by Lord Fawn; but as he had not turned down this street, and had not been seen by Lord Fawn, who was known to walk very slowly, and had often been seen to go by Berkeley Square,—it was presumed that he had now taken that road.

But she succeeded in making one resolve.

Do not let them down to selfish appliances.

For although, for the most part, the two virtues of benevolence and severity are at variance and opposed to each other, the one being gentle but without practical qualities, the other practical but unsympathetic, in his case there was a wonderful combination of the two, his action being as energetic as that of a severe man, but combined with gentleness; while his readiness to yield seemed unpractical but was accompanied with energy, in his patronage, his freedom of speech, and every kind of official duty.

But that Tellus is the origin of the goddesses,— the great mother, to wit, beside whom there is continually the noise of the mad and abominable revelry of effeminates and mutilated men, and men who cut themselves, and indulge in frantic gesticulations,— how is it, then, that Janus is called the head of the gods, and Tellus the head of the goddesses?

All these and the like affections entered man's composition by reason of the animal mode of generation.

How much better, then, had it been for me to have been cured at once; and then, by my own and my friends' diligence, my soul's restored health had been kept safe in Your keeping, who gavest it!

“I have never called him so;—never. I have always declared my belief and my wishes to be in his favour.”

It is no good my pretending to be contented, and all that sort of thing.

87, 86.

Are not you of more value than they?

When a matter so great is considered, how is a man to trouble himself as to an individual who may die any day, or cease from any accident to be of weight?

Nor, indeed, is it a slight cause that the unclean spirits of demons, having received permission, throw themselves into the bodies of many; and when these have afterwards been driven out, they who have been healed cling to the religion, the power of which they have experienced.

On this account he is wicked both because of such an opinion and such a purpose.

In this respect also he must pay for his comfort; but if he have not trained himself to such self-indulgence, he may undoubtedly save £10 out of £40 by having himself measured at a cooperative store.

God does it differently from you, although He calls it by the name of repentance; for thou dost it, because you had erred; while He does it, because He avenges, or frees.

But then in doing so she must own from whence her information had come.

It lasted, however, for two or three days, during which he had frequent consultations with Mrs. Brownlow, and had one conversation with Edith.

But punishments lead us back to God.

“You have first to believe the story as I tell it you, and get out of your head altogether the story as you have conceived it.” This was said by Lady Grant to her brother when she had travelled all the way to Dresden with the purpose of inducing him to take his wife back.

But the entire reason of this phenomenon is in the body, and arises from the body.

And I, standing midway between the desire and the Spirit, and not knowing to which of the two I should rather yield, will impart to you what seems to me the best and safest course, that you may test it with me and take part in my design.

“There’s nothing on earth I should like better,” said Johnny.

“I believe he is here still.”

It may be as well to mention that he was not driven to the stern necessity of selling all his furniture: he had been quite in earnest in his intention to do so, but it was soon made known to him that the claims of Messrs Cox and Cummins made no such step obligatory.

I shall cry if I find that you are to be married first.

And I think that she was right in her belief.

She had said how indifferent he was to her pleasures, and how vainly she strove to interest herself in his pursuits.

He and the Duchess had a secret together.

He could play cards; and could amuse himself with women,—the lower the culture of the women, the better the amusement.

Margaret. Is’t but a week? So short a time since we were standing there? My own, my chosen lover! Where did I find the cruel strength to break his happy hopes, and send him from me beggared?

I’d tire out all the judges and juries in London.

The blood of a silly sheep gave salvation; and shall not the Blood of the Only-begotten much rather save?

As it was, you accused me of having been dishonest to my party, and of having “scuttled the ship.” On the occasion to which you alluded I acted with much consideration, greatly to the detriment of my own prospects,—and as I believed with the approbation of all who knew anything of the subject.

But the committee shook its heads, not thinking it possible that the club could be re-established on a basis of three Miles Grendalls.

Now, to know what is in the heart of men belongs to God alone, who has fashioned hearts one by one [Psalm 33:15, Septuagint], for, says Solomon, You, even Thou only, know the hearts [1 Kings 8:39 He therefore needed not witnesses to learn the thoughts of His own creatures, and so He felt no confidence in them because of their mere, temporary belief.

There is, perhaps, no greater hardship at present inflicted on mankind in civilized and free countries than the necessity of listening to sermons.

They have not supposed stocks and stones to be images of the gods, like the Greeks; nor ibises and ichneumons, like the Egyptians; but fire and water, as philosophers.

To have spoken about her lover was in itself much; and to have spoken about him as she had done seemed almost to have brought him once more near to her.

The parable would therefore have failed in the person of the Lord, if He were not a Being to whom a wedding is consistent.

There are, says he; and many of them, too, from which the servant of God must restrain himself— theft, lying, robbery, false witness, overreaching, wicked lust, deceit, vainglory, boastfulness, and all other vices like to these.

“Shure, and why wouldn’t I—and I just married? A purty thing for me just now, to be took up among a lot of blackguard ruffians for murthering a king’s officer.”

For sometimes the meek, when they are in authority, suffer from the torpor of sloth, which is a kindred disposition, and as it were placed hard by.

Because they were not of faith.

Chapter 41.— What Kind of Spirit is Required for the Study of Holy Scripture.

Any man might be got rid of silently, and there need be no injurious results.

If any one calls the Son of God the internal or uttered word, let him be anathema.

We shall find that the latter is the case.

How a monk should not look for the blessing of patience in his own case as a result of the virtue of others, but rather as a consequence of his own longsuffering.

He looked on those fifty-three Trojans who, as Mr. Dod tells us, censured free trade in November, 1852, as the only patriots left among the public men of England.

For whose resentment would not be stirred within him at such profanity, when he remembers how the Apostle proclaims that every angelic nature is subject to the Lord, and in witness of his doctrine invokes the sublime utterances of the prophets:— When He brings the first-begotten into the world, He says, And let all the angels of God worship Him, and, Your throne, O God, is for ever and ever, and, You are the same, and Your years shall not fail ?

Surely the vehemence of joy could not make him so rash, especially seeing that he is a man to whose judgment I well know so much weight is to be attached.

He then who thus vituperated the disciple, and poured such an invective upon him as actually to call him Satan (after having bestowed such great praise on him), because he said avoid crucifixion, how could He desire not to be crucified?

What now could be a heavier burden than such transactions?

For our homely language says that things which correspond to contradictories differ from one another even as their originals do.

He that is seized with this passion is careless even of his own interests.

And since Christ, Who in His own person wills according to either nature, is one, we shall postulate the same object of will in His case, not as though He wills only those things which He willed naturally as God (for it is no part of Godhead to will to eat or drink and so forth), but as willing also those things which human nature requires for its support , and this without involving any opposition in judgment, but simply as the result of the individuality of the natures.

Although, therefore, they are not the supreme good, for God is a greater good, yet those mutable things which can adhere to the immutable good, and so be blessed, are very good; for so completely is He their good, that without Him they cannot but be wretched.

So she hid the slip within her desk, and left the matter open to consideration.

Barry also saw this happy escape from the grand difficulty of jumping, and, ignorant that if he rode the gap at all, he should let the hounds go first, made for it right among them, in spite of Frank’s voice, now raised loudly to caution him.

Blessed shall be those men upon the earth

That we should obtain any such accommodation along the road astonished me, and of such as we got we were very glad.

And all this in Antioch, where men were first called Christians, wherein are bred the most civilized of mankind, where in old time the fruit of charity flourished so abundantly. For not only to those at hand but also to those very far off, they used to send, and this when famine was expected.

The words would be civil, but there would be so much of scorn in the man’s intention as to make you feel that you must either leave him or beg his pardon.

If these (decorations) are now good, and of God, they will then also present themselves to the rising bodies, and will recognise their several places.

If they who deny shall not be guilty of a crime, neither shall they who confess receive the reward of a virtue.

I learned all this, indeed, without being urged by any pressure of punishment, for my own heart urged me to bring forth its own conceptions, which I could not do unless by learning words, not of those who taught me, but of those who talked to me; into whose ears, also, I brought forth whatever I discerned.

He was a man, and as a man had a right to expect that she would confess it.

Does He not send him from the altar to the other, and so after the reconciliation invite him to the table?

All the savings of the Squire’s life would be his,—enough, as the opposing lawyer told him with eager pressing words, to give him an estate of over a thousand a year at once.

“Of course not; they are a set of miserable ruffians. I’m sorry to say that there are a lot of my tenants among them. But it’s no use discussing that now.”

The language which the Marquis had used to his brother they were last together had been such as to render any friendly intercourse almost impossible.

The French have done so in Algeria, in some of the West India islands, and quite as essentially into Lower Canada, where their language and laws still prevail.

“Damnable, Lizzie!”

“I don’t see why you should go away at all. Frederic doesn’t come here so very often, and when he does come he doesn’t say much to any one. I suppose it’s all Amelia’s doing.”

I myself highly esteem the individual whom you judge worthy of your respect and affection: notwithstanding, it cannot be right that those principles should be entirely disregarded which should be authoritative and binding on all alike, so that each should not be content with his own circumstances, and all enjoy their proper privileges: nor can it be right, in considering the claims of rival candidates, to suppose but that not one only, but many, may appear worthy of comparison with this person.

How full of beauty was the face of that American female,—how rich and glorious her voice in spite of a slight taint of the well-known nasal twang;—and above all how powerful and at the same time how easy and how gracious was her manner!

“It isn’t very nice, I fancy. It just borders on the Potteries, and the population is heavy. As he must marry the bookseller’s daughter also, the union, I fear, won’t be very grateful.”

It is the same which says to her Spouse: Tell me where You feed, where You rest at noon: for why should I be as one veiled beside the flocks of Your companions?

These were the objects of her prayers and hopes, in the fervour of faith rather than of youth.

Would he bring forward Manichæus as a witness to Christ?

Yet, although he has terrified them again, he suffers them not to fall into despair; but as before he said not He has raised up, but He is able to raise up children to Abraham (at once both alarming and comforting them); even so here also he did not say that it has touched the root, but it is laid to the root, and is now hard by it, and shows signs of no delay.

The women are idle—many of them.

And assuredly he cannot discharge this who is ignorant of God, since ignorance of Him from whom good things proceed must thrust a man unawares into vices.

But that which in the former verse is, and there was not; the same in the following verse is, and I found not.

“You should have told him nothing.” At this reply Bessy shook her head. “ It cannot be that you should think that in such a matter there should be no restraint. Did you expect that I should give my consent to such a marriage? I want to hear from yourself what you thought of my feelings.”

They was nigh a-hanging o’ me; and if those chaps had thought o’ bringing t’old man’s box nigh the mill, instead of over by t’old woman’s cottage, they would a hung me;—outright.

While things were in this state with him he received a letter from Messrs. Norton and Flick, the attorneys, asking him to call on Mr. Flick at their chambers in Lincoln’s Inn.

Yet they had the boldness to attack this great man, simply because, from his knowledge of the impiety of their calumnies, he refused to affix his signature to their artful accusations against us.

“ I suppose I may understand,” she said, “ that you will leave Launay early after breakfast tomorrow.”

But which of us, amid so many truths which occur to inquirers in these words, understood as they are in different ways, shall so discover that one interpretation as to confidently say that Moses thought this, and that in that narrative he wished this to be understood, as confidently as he says that this is true, whether he thought this thing or the other?

Hopkins doesn’t like mixings.” And then when the game was over, they sauntered about, out of the small garden into the larger one, and through the shrubberies, and out upon the fields, where they found the still lingering remnants of the haymaking.

Chapter XXXVIII. Crummie-Toddie

Or, rather, I will, answer it fully.

“But I want you to go,” said he.

It was after Saul died, that they hanged his body and those of his sons on the wall of Bethshan.

We can hardly say which was the most surprising to us, the loyalty of Mrs. Grimes or the patience of John.

I had to reject the ballot because at that period of my life I had, in fact, hardly studied the subject.

Neville, as he made his way down to Liscannor, where his gig was waiting for him, did ask himself some serious questions about his adventure.

“I should rather think it is,” said the earl. “I was lucky enough to get it early, and it hasn’t been moved for thirty years. I like to give it to a man who knows it, as you do, at the first glance. Now there’s my friend Johnny there; it’s thrown away upon him.”

It was a spacious, lofty apartment, well fitted up for a library, and furnished for that purpose with exceeding care;—such a room as one does not find in the flashy new houses in the west, where the dining-room and drawing-room occupy all of the house that is visible.

With care precise he places every card, weighs well the value of each mighty ace, each guarded king, and comfort-giving queen; speculates on knave and ten, counts all his suits, and sets his price upon the whole.

Again he has put that, in the Lord, at once laying down the laws of obedience, and shaming them, and casting them down. For this, says he, is well-pleasing to the Lord. See how he would have us do all not from nature only, but, prior to this, from what is pleasing to God, that we may also have reward.

I walked and walked, and nobody came to me, and I perceived by my watch that it was seven o’clock.

Nor need we inquire at more length concerning that matter, since in days bygone all the prophets have prophesied of it; as Isaiah: Thus says the Lord God to my Christ (the) Lord, whose right hand I have holden, that the nations may hear Him: the powers of kings will I burst asunder; I will open before Him the gates, and the cities shall not be closed to Him.

He’s been at it more or less all his life.

But He made man— reason being granted to him, and the power of perceiving and speaking being given to him— destitute of those things which are given to the other animals, because wisdom was able to supply those things which the condition of nature had denied to him.

But yet he had no aptitude for throwing the law altogether on one side, and making such a coup-de-main as was now and again within his power.

“Four thousand a year is a very great consideration, Lucy.” Lucy for a while said nothing. She was making up her mind that she would say nothing;—that she would make no reply indicative of any feeling on her part. But she was not sufficiently strong to keep her resolution. “I wonder, Mr. Greystock,” she said, “that you did not attempt to win the great prize yourself. Cousins do marry.”

But when Mrs. Butler Cornbury had been gracious, and when the fiddles and horn had become a fact to be accomplished, when Mrs. Rowan and Mary began to loom large on her imagination and a regular supper was projected, then Mrs. Tappitt felt the necessity of superior aid, and found herself called upon to reconcile her lord.

Let us now attend to the Psalm.

The attempt, however, was frequently made, and thus there used to be occasionally a little noise round the bureau at St. Michael.

This Jerome, then, with his ragged herd and shabby following, did he dare to give any answer to Isidore and his thunderbolts?

“But, for God’s sake, don’t go and destroy it all by such mad perversity as this. They mean to do something next session. Morrison is going to take it up.” Sir Walter Morrison was at this time Secretary for Ireland. “But of course we can’t let a fellow like Monk take the matter into his own hands just when he pleases. I call it d––––d treachery.”

It can hardly be accounted a fault in him that at this time he felt sure of her love.

Nay, all these bonds he bursts asunder; and if any one come to set him free, he adjures him that he may not be freed, accounting it the greatest torture not to be in torture: than which what can be more wretched?

“He is so;—though I do not know that I wish to hear him called such a name by your lips. Let him be what he may he was your friend.”

The servants had been told that they were to be his servants.

Although we are not sensible of it, it really begins at some point where the draughtsman has begun to draw it at a certain radius from the centre.

And now we will say farewell to her, and as we do so the chief interest of our tale will end.

“Oh no,” he said.

Therefore the way of justice, which leads to life, is to be held by us.

But such was not her lot.

Of this, however, she said nothing.

I am bound by the very nature of my undertaking to say whether, according to such view as I have enabled myself to take of them, the Americans have succeeded as a nation politically and socially; and in doing this I ought to be able to explain how far slavery has interfered with such success.

That is also true eternity by which God is unchangeable, without beginning, without end; consequently also incorruptible.

And Apollo, folding his flute into his pocket, felt that he had acquitted himself with honour; and the archdeacon pleasantly jingled his gains; but the meagre doctor went off without much audible speech, muttering ever and anon as he went, “three and thirty points!” “three and thirty points!”

Also in a certain exhortation he says, For the rest, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are holy, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are pure, whatsoever things are most dear, whatsoever things are of good report; if any virtue, if any praise, these things think on, which you have both learned, and received, and heard, and seen in me.

“My dear Fred, you can’t change the accidents of birth.”

How much nobler was this than that which the Greeks once did!

Mr. Thorne, when he saw his lady guest, repressed his anxiety.

But he did stay, and Michel would have been very much surprised indeed if he had heard that he had gone.

‘As a gentleman?’

“If she will come here I will speak to her. I cannot do it there. I cannot go down to your grandfather’s house with such an object as that.”

Chapter 1.— Whether, Since It is Evident that Deity is Not to Be Found in the Civil Theology, We are to Believe that It is to Be Found in the Select Gods.

([ἀνεσκολοπίσθη]) How could it have entered the minds of men who came after the events had taken place to foretell, for instance, that the Gospel should be preached in every part of the whole world?

Epistle 56

As regarded herself she was proud of the thing she had accomplished; but how should she tell her child that it was done?

The books which tell of these things you profess to receive, that you may maintain a delusive appearance of Christianity; but when anything is quoted against you, you say that the books have been tampered with.

He had taken his little vessel bravely out into the deep waters, and had sailed her well while fortune stuck close to him.

When they were lying in wait for the Lord.

Nor can anything be begun, or made, or completed, unless it shall have been foreseen by reason how it shall be made before it exists, and how it shall endure after it has been made.

[1 Thessalonians 5:11] For tell me, has any loss befallen the family?

How shall we become lovely?

Chapter 12.— The Mind is an Image of the Trinity in Its Own Memory, and Understanding, and Will.

It might be that she might be spared where others had not been spared.

And to the Jews who do [not] receive the announcement of the New Testament there are present wings; but they do not fly, that is, they bring a vain prophesying to men, not adjusting facts to their words.

They cultivate much of it, growing mealies, or maze, and Kafir corn.

If he would only sit down near her for awhile,—very near,—and not speak to her, she thought that she would be happy.

‘Oh, Linda,’ she had said, ‘I don’t think I will, after all; it is such a little thing.’

Their weapon shall enter into their own heart [Psalm 36:15].

Make the best he could of it, the news was fearfully bad.

This you ought to enquire into closely.

If he goes about in the dark, or with his eyes shut, he’s safe to get a fall.

And she, though in the midst of her new efforts she was good-humoured herself,—as is the case with many people while they have faith in the efforts they are making,—had become the cause of much unhappiness among others.

For I keep the passover, He says, with my disciples.

Nevertheless, because it began to be in the mind, which was a mind also before these things began to be in it, it seems to be somewhat adventitious, and will be reckoned among things past, when sight shall have succeeded, and itself shall have ceased to be.

“And what may be your business with me, Mr Second Lieutenant?”

Sir, sir, do not move, do not stir, do not scream.

“If that be so,” said she, coldly, “if George and I are his only near connections, and if he does not disapprove of our marriage, he ought to give us an income on which we can live.” It is astonishing how different are the views of grandfathers and grandchildren on such matters!

But now I was in search of the picturesque.

Those souls, then, that through the grace of compunction have a fountain in themselves have no need of rain from another's tongue.

He was a Protestant—as opposed to a Roman Catholic.

Tecum et adulterium est, tecum coitusque nefandus,

In the reign of Balæus, the ninth king of Assyria, and Mesappus, the eighth of Sicyon, who is said by some to have been also called Cephisos (if indeed the same man had both names, and those who put the other name in their writings have not rather confounded him with another man), while Apis was third king of Argos, Isaac died, a hundred and eighty years old, and left his twin-sons a hundred and twenty years old.

And again: if we should hold that Christ has but one energy, this must be either divine or human, or neither.

Such an argument does not befit a wise man; it is frivolous to accept it.

[Luke 24:37-39] Now Marcion was unwilling to expunge from his Gospel some statements which even made against him— I suspect, on purpose, to have it in his power from the passages which he did not suppress, when he could have done so, either to deny that he had expunged anything, or else to justify his suppressions, if he made any.

Sir Cosmo was a man with whom it was quite necessary that such an aspirant as Mr Palliser should stand well, and therefore Mr Palliser came to Monkshade, although Lady Glencora was unable to accompany him.

Much of all this had been his own fault.

He then asserted that fresh emigrants would not flock into a land governed under a European crown as they would have done into a Republic.

Chapter 6. The Word of God is Also the Wisdom of God. The Going Forth of Wisdom to Create the Universe, According to the Divine Plan

Do you see, how the woman indeed He healed with so much delay, but these immediately?

Upon the sides of your house.

“If you are to be one of them, Messrs. Round and Crook cannot be the others. I think I explained that to you before. It now remains for Mr. Mason to say whether he wishes to employ our firm in this matter or not. And I can tell him fairly,” Mr. Round added this after a slight pause, “that we shall be rather pleased than otherwise if he will put the case into other hands.”

But while the devil is bound, the saints reign with Christ during the same thousand years, understood in the same way, that is, of the time of His first coming.

It must not on this account be taken as proved that Dr. Proudie was a man of great mental powers, or even of much capacity for business, for such qualities had not been required in him.

We do not realize the miseries of sickness till returning health reveals them to us.

He had declared to himself, after writing that letter to his brother, that the thing was settled by the very declaration made by him therein.

The little Chevalier had no intention of saving himself, and deserting his friends, when, on Santerre’s approach, he ran off, leaving Agatha and the Marquis at the garden door of the château.

“A very fine colony for a young man, no doubt. But, seeing how well you are established here—.”

Who and what the Woodwards were shall be told in a subsequent chapter. As they have to play as important a part in the tale about to be told as our two friends of the Weights and Measures, it would not be becoming to introduce them at the end of this.

‘Yes,—alone.’

And the world passes away, and the lust thereof: but he that does the will of God abides for ever, even as He abides for ever.

“Which of them was most like their father?”

2. Let the husband pay the wife the honor due to her: in like manner the wife the husband.

They are the Secretary of State, who is supposed to have the direction of foreign affairs; the Secretary of the Treasury, who answers to our Chancellor of the Exchequer; the Secretaries of the Army and of the Navy; the Minister of the Interior; the Attorney-General; and the Postmaster-General.

If you and Papa tell me not to see him or write to him,—much less to marry him,—of course I shall obey you.

war,—and.

[John 6:67] But you have neglected to remark, that at that time the Church was only beginning to burst into life from the recently planted seed, and that there was not yet fulfilled in her the prophecy: All kings shall fall down before Him; yea, all nations shall serve Him; and it is in proportion to the more enlarged accomplishment of this prophecy that the Church wields greater power, so that she may not only invite, but even compel men to embrace what is good.

“Committed him,” said Miss Prettyman, correcting her sister with scorn.

For what do we call enjoyment but having at hand the objects of love?

If our enemy is not the first to strike us, we are wounded by the comrade at our side.

Therefore I tell them to go to the receiving house.

And also barren Sea begot the surge-tossed

He was unlike other men in other things; and especially unlike other men in being the eldest son of the Marquess of Hartletop.

Here there had been as yet no church vow, and therefore her duty was still due to her father.

But wherefore, one may say, did He not make them manifest, but set us on the search for them? That we might watch, and be ever prepared for conflict, guarding against our disguised as well as against our open enemies: which kind indeed Paul also was intimating, when he said, that by their good words they deceive the hearts of the simple. Let us not be troubled therefore, when we see many such even now. Nay, for this too Christ foretold from the beginning.

“But the other would show worse,” said the widow; “and if you finedraw it, not one person in ten will notice it.

Not a fortnight since!

Marat, the foulest birth of the revolution, whose licentious heat generated venom and rascality, as a dunghill out of its own filth produces adders’ eggs—Marat was no more.

He knew it was necessary that Dr. Proudie should recover from his surprise, and he knew also that he must give him the opportunity of appearing to have been persuaded by argument.

For sometimes so much is brought that it cannot easily be eaten up by a few; and as it is considered sacrilege to give what is left to others, or, at least, to throw it away, you are obliged to eat to excess, from the desire to purify, as you call it, all that is given.

“Indeed,” said Fanny, “I like him very much.”

If Lord Kingsbury speaks to you on the subject you should make him understand that.” Poor Mr. Greenwood felt that there were thorny paths before him, in which it might be very difficult to guard his feet from pricks.

“If what?”

Then a small house was taken and furnished in Curzon Street, Mayfair, and the Rowleys went back to the seat of their government, leaving Nora, the second girl, in charge of her elder sister.

If God has a Son, has He also a womb?

For might not God have made these contributions compulsory?

Letter 77 (A.D. 404)

One Artorius, in his book On Long Life (for so I remember), thinks that drink should be taken only till the food be moistened, that we may attain to a longer life.

As Bertram thought in this way concerning Lady Harcourt—the Caroline Waddington that had once belonged to himself—he proposed to himself no scheme of infamy, no indulgence of a disastrous love, no ruin for her whom the world now called so fortunate; but he did think that, if she still loved him, it would be pleasant to sit and talk with her; pleasant to feel some warmth in her hand; pleasant that there should be some confidence in her voice.

And this meaning we see is neatly expressed in a figure in Ecclesiastes.

She had gone on her knees to Mr. Gresham to get a place for her friend’s favourite, and Mr. Gresham had refused.

At the end of the third volume I have stated what were his intentions with regard to certain people in the story; but beyond what is there said I know nothing.

Chapter X. Simon's Intention

8. But he who had once been her husband, being no longer able to prosecute her, directed his attacks against a certain Ptolemæus, who had been her teacher in the doctrines of Christianity, and whom Urbicius had punished. Against him he proceeded in the following manner:

And doubtless for this it was that you yourselves despised the love of kinsfolk, and scorned your fatherland, and the delights of this world, and passed through so many countries, in order that you might come to us, plain and simple folk as we are, living in this wretched state in the desert.

“I suppose I shall be likely to find him at home tomorrow, if I call?”

Harry, at any rate, was shown up, and in two minutes’ time was standing over his uncle’s sick-chair.

A sum was named.

As, however, God and Son, He is glorified with and together with the Father, in that at, the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of things in heaven, and things in earth, and things under the earth; and that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father.

The species of power in young ladies which Lady Lufton most admired was the vis inertiæ belonging to beautiful and dignified reticence; of this poor Lucy had none.

But why is it, that having mentioned Abraham, and having said that he begot Isaac, and Isaac, Jacob; and not having made any mention of his brother; when he has come to Jacob, he remembers both Judah, and his brethren?

But love generally comes easily enough.

Afterwards He was seen on earth, and conversed among men.

For Lady Lufton, though she did dress old herself, as Lucy had said, delighted to see those around her neat and pretty, jaunty and graceful.

For did not the disciples of Jesus see, when they ventured to prove not only to the Jews from their prophetic Scriptures that this is He who was spoken of by the prophets, but also to the other heathen nations, that He who was crucified yesterday or the day before underwent this death voluntarily on behalf of the human race—that this was analogous to the case of those who have died for their country in order to remove pestilence, or barrenness, or tempests?

These members assuredly were necessary to men, but not to God, because man's design would be ineffectual if the body did not fulfil the thought.

Let us then give our attention and observe Him as He performs the cure.

And when a man worships a stone, and thinks it a god, he both keeps feasts to it, and spends money on it, and shows much fear towards it, and in no case becomes listless from his simpleness.

If you ask anything in truth and faith of one who is so rich, believe that you receive from Him from whom you ask, what you ask.

For thrice ten thousand are there in the all-nourishing earth

1 Corinthians 9:16-18

Were not both Aristippus and Antisthenes there, two noble philosophers and both Socratic?

It is of no advantage to you to be the means of a most illustrious martyr being condemned as a heretic: of one who shed his blood for Christ being proud to be an enemy of the Christian faith.

“I should like a lover to think of the things that I think about. It is all very well being steady when you have got babies of your own; but that should be after ever so long. I should like to keep my lover as a lover for two years. And all that time he should like to dance with me, and to hear music, and to go about just where I would like to go.”

You have the case of Job, whom the devil, unless he had received authority from God, could not have visited with trial, not even, in fact, in his property, unless the Lord had said, Behold, all that he has I put at your disposal; but do not stretch out your hand against himself.

And where is such a life as this to be found?

We confess Father, Son, and Spirit, understanding in a perfect Trinity both fullness of Divinity and unity of power.

But it is very difficult for a young lady to have done with her family!

In agreement, therefore, stand the attributes of Father and Son, that none may suppose any diversity, or doubt but that they are of one Majesty.

Bravely you have resisted the world: you have afforded a glorious spectacle in the sight of God; you have been an example to your brethren that shall follow you.

Letters for him were to be sent to Oban, and might, or might not, reach him in the course of a month.

For it is deserving of the greatest praise for those to confer benefit from whom no one expected such conduct.

But we who are Barbarians have the things.

Mrs. Fenwick’s opinion was, upon the whole, rather in favour of the second expedition to Pycroft Common, as she declared that the mother should at any rate be allowed to see her child. She indeed would not submit to the idea of the miller’s indomitable powers. If she were Mrs. Brattle, she said, she’d pull the old man’s ears, and make him give way.

[1 John 3:15] Yea, but I do verily love God, however I hate my brother.

But Wellington was a long time before he had beaten the French, and Polly thought that there might be some trouble also for her.

11. And being questioned again repeatedly what and where the city was of which he spoke, he said that it was the country of the pious alone, for no others should have a place in it, and that it lay toward the far East and the rising sun.

If so it be, I betake myself to Donatus's party: I will be a heathen.

“If I don’t pull him down first, so as to get the old brewery. I was obliged to buy your bit of ground now, as I might not have been able to get any just when I wanted it. You’ve sold it a deal too cheap. You tell Mr. Goodall I say so.”

“What did he say, Dolly?”

Cicero writes back at much greater length to defend himself, and to prove that he had behaved as a most obliging friend to his correspondent, though he had received a gross affront from his correspondent’s brother Nepos.

“I’m very poorly, Will;—very,” said the squire, putting out his hand as though he were barely able to lift it above his knee. Now it certainly was the fact that half an hour before he had been walking across the passage.

He is on the other hand rather startled to find how like his strange brother is to him in many things.

Yet had they been wise, though it seemed to them at the time incredible, still when He wrought His many miracles they would then have come and questioned Him, would then have intreated that the difficulty might be resolved to them; but because they were foolish, they gave no heed at all to part of what was said, and part they heard with evil frame of mind.

Throughout all the earth the Gospel of the knowledge of God has been preached; no wars or weapons or armies being used to rout the enemy, but only a few, naked, poor, illiterate, persecuted and tormented men, who with their lives in their hands, preached Him Who was crucified in the flesh and died, and who became victors over the wise and powerful.

Some have large, well-kept lawns, stretching down to the rocks, and these, to my taste, give the charm to Newport.

For always and without intermission it is a duty to pray, both for him who is in affliction, and him who is in dangers, and him who is in prosperity— for him who is in relief and much prosperity, that these may remain unmoved and without vicissitude, and may never change; and for him who is in affliction and his many dangers, that he may see some favourable change brought about to him, and be transported into a calm of consolation.

For the name of Divinity is given for the highest honour in the world, and with whomsoever God is well pleased, He applies it to him.

But Caesar suffered under this disadvantage, that his works, being much the longest, required the greatest number of men to erect them and prolong them and keep them in order; whereas Pompey, who in this respect had the least to do, having the inner line, was provided with much the greater number of men to do it.

Therefore, in a word, it is appropriate to call you, according to Homer, more regal than the kings who preceded you; for we have heard of some who acquired nothing worthy of admiration, and others who adorned their reign with scarcely one or two deeds.

1 Corinthians 11:18

In Isaiah: Seek the Lord; and when you have found Him, call upon Him.

Chap. ii. ver. 1. But speak thou the things that become sound doctrine.

Divine Scripture asserts this, when it says, She spoke in her heart, and her lips moved, and her voice was not heard; and God did hear her.

Theophilus resented this avowal as a calumny, and ejected both him and Peter from the Church.

If only Camilla could be got out of Exeter for a few months,—how good a thing it would be for them all!

Then came the direct question as to which he was called upon for a direct answer.

“But does he love her?”

O holy mother of God, remember us, I say, who make our boast in you, and who in hymns august celebrate the memory, which will ever live, and never fade away.

And then Marie was asked. It was all one to her, she said. Whatever Maman Bauche liked, that she would do; only she would not name a day herself. Indeed she would neither do nor say anything herself which tended in any way to a furtherance of these matrimonials. But then she acquiesced, quietly enough if not readily, in what other people did and said; and so the marriage was fixed for the day week after Adolphe’s return.

“She wanted it thin, and she wants it now, and will do as long as she’s fool enough to put herself in the way of such as you; but, by G——d, as long as I’m with her, she shall have it!” and he dragged her along by the arm.

And, oh dear, there’s Mrs. Rowan and Mrs. Tappitt!

And he had a special gallantry of which it is hard to say whether it is or is not to be admired.

He read it, and putting it down by his side very gently, went back to his maps as though the thing would not so trouble his mind as to disturb his work.

“That’s all very well, George. I know you don’t want me to stand here. I know you don’t want to see me ever again.”

Lord, where are Your old loving-kindnesses which You sworest unto David in Your truth?

“Do not believe it, Trevelyan,” said Stanbury.

Defend their substance for the sake of Almighty God as if it were your own: and, if it is still possible, see to all opportunity for wrong being removed with regard to the will of the aforesaid lord Venantius.

If it is prudence through which the merciful are blessed, inasmuch as they shall obtain mercy; let us forgive their debts to our debtors, and let us pray that ours may be forgiven to us.

When she was found by her friend she was told at length the story of all the circumstances which had brought Lady Ushant to Bragton.

Then even before the good things hoped for, he gives another reward again.

Shall we not do everything, and take every trouble, so that the men who have been thus valued may enjoy every solicitude at our hands?

These things, truly, are of small importance, but they arise from the same falsehood.

For in truth there ought to be but one voice in the church always, even as there is but one body.

Though the father and the two young men were living together they did not see very much of each other.

Poor Augusta prayed very hard for her husband; but she prayed to a bosom that on this subject was as hard as a flint, and she prayed in vain.

And now she would not endure to be cross-examined on the subject by Miss Altifiorla.

But the son had absolutely refused to believe for a moment in the story, and had declared that his father and Mr. Grey had conspired together to rob him of his inheritance and good name.

For myself, I think it as well that clergymen should not hunt; but had I been the parson of Clavering, I should, under those circumstances, have hunted double.

Twenty years of tuition is not uncommonly needed; for everything has to be learned by heart.

How can one be a virgin who loves adulterers?

“But why does she lie on a sofa?” asked Lady De Courcy.

Dearest Clara,

But he knew that Clara would not be able to carry out any such pretence; and he reflected also that it might be just as well that Lady Desmond should know the whole at once.

This I bold to be the real and unanswerable excuse for what we have done in Griqualand West and not our treaty with Waterboer.

She had been notably religious, but that was gradually wearing off as she advanced in years.

And it is the same word in the Greek, as is elsewhere read, The Lord shall show sweetness: which some have translated felicity, others bounty.

Book IV, Letter 46

Mr Harding gave a deep, long-drawn sigh. He did object, very strongly object, to discuss any such subject with John Bold; but he had not the business tact of Mr Chadwick, and did not know how to relieve himself from the coming evil; he sighed sadly, but made no answer.

He commanded them that they should not depart from Jerusalem, but wait for the promise of the Father.

But as he, with imperfect insight into the mystery, was careful to preserve charity with all courage and humility and faith, he deserved to come to the crown of martyrdom; so that, if any cloud had crept over the clearness of his intellect from his infirmity as man, it might be dispelled by the glorious brightness of his blood.

“As for the estate, it’s devilish little I spend on it; as for my mother, she has her own jointure; as for the hounds, they eat my own potatoes; and as for the title, I don’t support it. But I haven’t your luck, Dot. You’d never want for money, though the mint broke.”

The father had rejoined with animation that unless “half a quid”—or ten shillings—were given him as his contribution to the keep of the animal, he would inform against his son to the squatter on the Darnley Downs, and had shown him that he knew the very run from which the horse had been taken.

Your testimonies, O Lord, are very surely believed [Psalm 92:5].

To tell him all the little details of her adventures with Lord Rufford would have been neither useful nor pleasant; but, as to the chief facts, reticence would have been foolish.

Nor was there any will made either by Sir Hugh or his brother.

But even as he walked, he could not think of it.

For a child often will not submit to its father when it is called, but continues obstinate.

The following, then, are his words: It is folly on their part to suppose that when God, as if He were a cook, introduces the fire (which is to consume the world), all the rest of the human race will be burnt up, while they alone will remain, not only such of them as are then alive, but also those who are long since dead, which latter will arise from the earth clothed with the self-same flesh (as during life); for such a hope is simply one which might be cherished by worms.

Trigger proved that twenty votes alone could have been of no service, and would not certainly have been purchased in a manner so detrimental.

For as there were many priests, because they were mortal, so [here is] The One, because He is immortal.

Let it be attributed to the abandoned character of the man, and not to your habits.

We were of course accommodated with two checked towels; and, having in vain attempted to show that we were to the manner born by fastening the larger of them satisfactorily round our own otherwise naked person, had obtained the assistance of one of those very skilful eastern boys who glide about the place and create envy by their familiarity with its mysteries.

[1 Timothy 5:24] How many murderers have escaped!

“Oh, thank you;—not tomorrow, because my sister is coming out from Baslehurst, to spend the evening with us.”

x. 2. Christ is the end of the law to every one that believes.

Both Lady Amelia and Mr Gazebee had long since discovered the bitterness of his heart and the fact of his repentance, and Gazebee had ventured to suggest to his wife that his noble sister-in-law was preparing for herself a life of misery.

“There I’m afraid I can’t help you,” said Mr. Quickenham. “Good law is not defined very clearly here in England; but good manners have never been defined at all.”

But take the case of Splendonius, whom Petilianus ordained priest after he had been condemned in the Catholic Church, and rebaptized by himself, whose condemnation in Gaul, communicated to us by our brethren, our colleague Fortunatus caused to be publicly read in Constantina, and whom the same Petilianus afterwards cast forth on experience of his abominable deceit.

He could not quite make up his mind whether the lady was or was not in love with him,—or whether, if she were, it was incumbent on him to indulge her;—and if so, in what manner.

And then by degrees the meaning of her words began to break upon him.

Or was there any good in it at all?

“But it seems to me,” said Crosbie, finding that it was necessary to dash at once headlong into the water, “that something ought to be said as to my means of supporting her properly.”

“You will convince me in no other. You have not spoken to your father of this as yet?”

Let me say this to every generation that is to come, that there is no strength of mine, no righteousness of mine; but Your strength and Your righteousness, O God, even unto the most high mighty works which You have made.

‘Ah well, I don’t believe you would have been impatient to put the old fellow under the sod.

Not content with assuring her own salvation she has sought yours also, in former days at home and now in the holy places.

The debate began, and if the leisure afforded by a long and tedious speech could have served him, he might have had leisure enough.

You must also shun those who are widows from necessity and not from choice.

Nay, I entreat, let no man seek this consolation; for this is no refreshment at all.

Had he been ill, she would have nursed him with all her care.

70. I shall say nothing of the snapping of fingers, or the naked dancing of the heir, at entering on an inheritance. These are well-known things. Nor will I speak of the mass of fishes gathered up at a pretended fishing expedition to excite the buyer's desires. For why did he show himself so eager for luxuries and delicacies as to allow a fraud of this character?

Accordingly [the Lord] rebukes certain men, saying, Why will you contend with me in judgment?

Lucy, as I have said, became mistress of the house at Hogglestock, and made herself absolutely ascendant over Mr. Crawley.

I think that she was irrational; but to her it seemed that the offence against herself,—the offence against her own dignity as a woman,—was too great to be forgiven.

He felt a weary, dragging soreness at his heart, and told himself that he must be miserable forever—not so miserable but what he would work, but so wretched that the world could have for him no satisfaction.

At the present day, unfortunately, public affairs will allow of no martyrs, and therefore it is that there is such a deficiency of zeal.

“Then I was full of wrath,” he continued.

Shall we say they are brethren by race?

After I learned that all your cooks had given up your kitchen (I believe because they felt indignant at having to fulfill the duty towards cheap dishes of pulse ), I sent a little boy to you out of our own workshop.

“But that you barely saw a figure. You did not form any opinion of your own as to the man’s identity.”

He promises to show us the special likeness of the Son to the Father, and proceeds by his definition to establish the position that we ought not to conceive of Him as being like.

Introductory Discourse

“It was a mean letter. The whole thing was mean! He should have starved in the street before he had taken your money. He should have given up Parliament, and everything else! I had doubted much about him before, but it was that which first turned my heart against him. I had begun to fear that he was not such a man as I had always thought him,—as I had spoken of him to you.”

They wished to bring It down as if from Heaven, and to the lower places to weigh It down: They have bowed My Soul: they have dug before My face a pit and themselves have fallen into it.

I will worship toward Your holy temple, in Your fear: Lord, lead me in Your righteousness.

Just so do wrestlers also: when teaching their pupils how to prevail and overcome, they voluntarily in the lists engage with others, to afford these in the persons of their antagonists the means of seeing and learning the mode of conquest.

“I thought you were to call me Mary. What I mean is this. Suppose that Silverbridge loves you better than all the world.”

[2 Corinthians 8:9] It is He that makes rich those who are the true poor; and makes poor those who are falsely rich.

[Isaiah 66:7-8] Paul the persecutor of the church, that ravening wolf out of Benjamin, [Genesis 49:27] bows his head before Ananias one of Christ's sheep, and only recovers his sight when he applies the remedy of baptism.

“He’ll think it comes from as pretty a young woman as he ever clapped his eyes on,” said Mr. Neefit, who was not at all reticent in the matter of compliments to his daughter.

‘Who are they, John?

Then, as for Faustus' objection to the spoiling of the Egyptians, he knows not what he says.

Now these are understood to be various erroneous opinions, whereby as with swords he destroys souls.

And which is better, faith which comes through the inworking (of God) or demonstration by arguments?'

Mr Bott’s eyes were odious to her as they watched her; but her husband’s glance she could meet without quailing before it.

What infinite variety in the different kinds!

Why do you flee?

But by degrees their refinement came up to their cruelty; for these human wild beasts could not find pleasure exquisite enough, save in the spectacle of men torn to pieces by wild beasts.

It was not that she thought that she might meet him there,—there rather than elsewhere,—but there is present to us often an idea that when some object has passed from us that we have desired then it may be seen again.

At present it is enough to demonstrate that men of the highest genius touched upon the truth, and almost grasped it, had not custom, infatuated by false opinions, carried them back; by which custom they both deemed that there were other gods, and believed that those things which God made for the use of man, as though they were endowed with perception, were to be held and worshipped as gods.

Orth.— How, then, does not the complete union, and the mixture universally diffused, change the iron's nature?

“He’s not likely to come in my way,” said Joe; “but if he does, he’ll get as good as he brings. That’s all.”

When this was reported to Gaïnas, it seemed to him quite incredible— for he knew that the greatest part of the Roman army was at a distance, dispersed as a garrison over the Eastern cities— and he sent others on the following night and repeatedly afterwards.

She would not be coy in speaking of her love.

For each of these titles understood in its natural sense becomes for Christians a rule of truth and a law of piety.

But he never laments or moans for such a loss.

He chooses rather to be blasphemed by you through these words, than to commit your affairs to the Demons and persuade you by the reality how Demons administer.

“Yes; if one could believe. A Jew, when he drags his dying limbs to the valley of Jehoshaphat, he can believe. He, in his darkness, knows nothing of these laws of nature. But we will go to people who are not in darkness. If I ask your mother what she means when she says—’Not by confusion of substance; but by unity of person,’ what will she answer me?”

With one exception,—which shall be mentioned as I come to it,—I have never consulted a friend as to a plot, or spoken to any one of the work I have been doing.

And when he had formed man in his own likeness, the noblest of earthly creatures, and dearest to himself, a creature gifted with intellect and knowledge, the child of reason and wisdom, he gave him dominion over all other animals which move and live upon the earth.

From offenses in the sun, from offenses in the moon, from all evil shall He preserve you, who is your defence upon the hand of your right hand, who will not sleep nor slumber.

Whether then it is in this sense or that, it is fitting to speak so of the Lord's body.

proclaim and make known that from and after the publication hereof the territory heretofore known as the South African Republic … .

For faith indeed and hope, when the good things believed and hoped for have come, cease.

The Dean was strong and imperious; and then the Dean was rich.

Have you ordained this law?

‘Then you should not be downhearted, you know.’

Though she could not be made happy in England, might not a prosperous life be opened for him in the far West?

It will be a great career, and no doubt you’ll find it satisfactory.

poor woman!” Then Peregrine felt sure that she had been guilty, and was sure also that his grandfather was aware of it.

Thus David's betrayal by the Ziphims awaits for its interpretation the end.

Could he take to his heart one who had been pressed close in so vile a grasp?

Hezekiah said:— Peace and truth shall be in my days; [2 Kings 20:19] and Jesus said to His disciples:— My peace I leave with you.

He said not, her first; or, second; or, third; or, fourth; but, A woman, says he, is bound, so long as her husband lives; but if her husband shall be dead, she is set free; let her be married to whom she will, only in the Lord: but she shall be more blessed, if she shall have so continued.

I cannot do anything unless it is as he bids me.

This reply I reported to my mother, and it satisfied her, so that she scrupled not to comply with it; and I have myself followed the same rule.

I’m going to tell you of my heart, and I hope you won’t think it silly.

We had indeed heard that of Mrs. Molloy which might make it very expedient that she should seek the accommodation of an hospital, but we could not understand that in such circumstances she should be able to come home regularly at seven o’clock in the evening.

And if in Peter's case there was need of the Lord's help that it might not fail, who will be so presumptuous and blind as to fancy that he has no need of daily assistance from the Lord in order to preserve it?

It is my secret.

Objection that some were baptized unto Moses and believed in him, and an answer to it; with remarks upon types.

It was not written till a day or two after the arrival of Sir Theophilus Sliepstone at Pretoria,—to which place he had then gone up as British Commissioner, and could hardly have been handed to the President much before the final overthrow of his authority.

She had desired him to free her,—and he had gone.

But let those who err in this case, and refuse to give up to the more weighty authority, tell us whether they find this text also varied in the mss.

MRS. G, Of course it needs an apology.

But if any one, on hearing that the Father and the Son are two, misrepresent us as preaching two Gods (for this is what some feign to themselves, and immediately mock, saying, 'You hold two God.

Now what is the meaning of the due honor? The wife has not power over her own body; but is both the slave and the mistress of the husband. And if you decline the service which is due, you have offended God. But if you wish to withdraw yourself, it must be with the husband's permission, though it be but a for short time. For this is why he calls the matter a debt, to show that no one is master of himself but that they are servants to each other.

“Yes;—it is all over now.”

For he who is the slave of his wife cannot be the Lord's soldier.

Jeffrey Wortle, D.D., was a man much esteemed by others,—and by himself.

It was so hard to resolve; so hard to be deserted; and so hard to dare to wish that she might not be deserted!

In addition to all these things, there is also this evil, that the priests of the devil dare to celebrate the Eucharist; or else let those who stand by them say that all these things concerning heretics are false.

I heard that the Englishmen were not to go till another week had elapsed.

It is as I have said ragged, the roadways are uneven and the pavements are so little continuous that the walker by night had better even keep the road.

Moreover, by His own power He not only performed those miraculous deeds which have been detailed by us in summary, and not as the importance of the matter demanded; but, what was more sublime, He has permitted many others to attempt them, and to perform them by the use of His name.

“If the ears be too delicate to hear the truth, the mind will be too perverse to profit by it.” And then Mr. Crawley got up to take his leave.

For He was neither without reason, nor wisdom, nor power, nor counsel And all things were in Him, and He was the All.

But he always dressed with care, and consequently with expense, for careful dressing is ever expensive.

[This letter (probably earlier in date than the three preceding) commends to Jerome the monk Theodore, who, having come from Rome to declare the condemnation of Origenism by the church there, had visited the monasteries of Nitria now purged of heresy, and wished before returning to the West to see the Holy Places as well. The date of the letter is 400 A.D.]

But, in truth, He has even called the flesh to the resurrection, and promises to it everlasting life.

Still, indeed, they alike oppose the grace of Christ, they alike make His baptism of no account, they alike dishonour His flesh; but, moreover, they do these things in different ways and for different reasons.

Most of them were clothed in garments of camels' hair.

With a bishop indeed who thought much of his own dignity it was possible that he might fail, but hardly with a young and pretty woman.

Wherefore the proposed punishment and vengeance both induces the one who has been wronged to benefit him who has annoyed him, and it deters and checks him who has given the provocation, and impels him to reconciliation with the man who gives him meat and drink.

Who is addressed, and who is the speaker?

But even by thus imitating You they acknowledge You to be the Creator of all nature, and so that there is no place whither they can altogether retire from You.

I have left myself but little space in which to speak of the other rooms of our Gallery; and have left my readers but little patience for a prolongation of the subject.

“We’ve all of us daughters,” said Mrs. Rowan.

During this time Anna spoke more than once to Mrs. Lovel as to her going. “I have been a long time here,” she said, “and I’m sure that I am in Mr. Lovel’s way.”

What is, More and more wash?

“I wish it were otherwise. I tell you so plainly to your face. I wish it were otherwise. Jews and Christians have married in Prague, I know, but good has never come of it. Anton should find a wife among his own people; and you — it would be better for you to take that other offer of which you spoke.”

That which was made in Him is life.

For all things in that place are most high, are true, are holy, are everlasting.

For His words that He will send from the Father must imply one or other of these modes of sending.

For He does not fail in making what is good, nor defers it, nor is incapable of it; but He has the power to act how and when He pleases, inasmuch as He is Himself power.

Celsus, however, appears to have had in view in employing these expressions, not a rational object, but one of a most irrational kind, arising out of his hatred towards us, which is so unlike a philosopher.

the piety of the audience— on this subject involves difficulty and danger.

We subjoin to this letter a copy of the formulary of faith adopted by the bishops assembled at Nicæa, which we also cherish.

“Am I to work my very nails off, and push that perambulator about all day till my legs won’t carry me,—and then I ain’t to go out, not once in a week?”

Whence Peter, after saying to a man, "You have dared to lie to the Holy Ghost," immediately went on to add what was the nature of the Holy Ghost, saying, "You have not lied unto men, but unto God."

“I was so sorry to hear it.” This, however, as the reader knows, was a fib.

Thus at first honey is liquid; time thickens it and gives it its sweetness.

For showers fall for the sake of fruits, that man may partake of them, and that animals may be fed, that they may be useful to men.

“Mamma,” said Hetta jumping up, “how can you talk to me in that way? As soon as one man doesn’t suit, I am to give myself to another! Oh, mamma, how can you propose it? Nothing on earth will ever induce me to be more to Roger Carbury than I am now.”

But the sacred history testifies that even beforehand an eagle had sat upon his head, and portended to him the kingdom.

For then they still interchanged the titles, and the Bishop was called a Deacon.

When he had finished, failing on his knees, he prayed with them.

For it is no longer a flying sickle, nor the taking down of a hedge, nor the treading under foot of the vineyard; [Isaiah 5:5] but an axe exceeding sharp, and what is worse, it is even at the doors.

Observe this; creation was to be, yet not all at once; man and woman were to be created, yet not even these together; mankind were to be condemned to death, and there was to be a resurrection, yet the interval between the two was to be great; the law was to be given, but not grace with it, each was to be dispensed at its proper time.

But they, since they expected to enjoy a carnal feast, were not disturbed until they gave up their hope.

It is better for us to serve the Egyptians than to die in this wilderness.

“Very likely,—very likely.”

He considered himself to have been so injured by the world, to have been the victim of so cruel a conspiracy among those who ought to have been his friends, that there remained nothing for him but to flee away from them and remain in solitude.

Then, says one, He is not Father, but brother.

Inactivity, sloth, laziness, negligence, are vices which shun labor, since labor, though useful, is itself a punishment.

Chapter 2. He Begs of God that Through the Holy Scriptures He May Be Led to Truth.

xi. 9. I will not enter into the city. Only the Holy One is not joined to the mass of ungodliness.

The Duchess seemed to think a great deal of it; but what can one do?

“We are leaving this in a week’s time,” said Mr Palliser.

The primacy of knowledge the apostle shows to those capable of reflection, in writing to those Greeks of Corinth, in the following terms: But having hope, when your faith is increased, that we shall be magnified in you according to our rule abundantly, to preach the Gospel beyond you.

And when he had come there, at once he sought out our own monastery which was at no great distance from the cave in which our Lord vouchsafed to be born of a virgin.

Because, he says, You have made my judgment, and my cause: that is, the judgment in which I seemed to be judged, You have made mine; and the cause in which men condemned me just and innocent, You have made mine.

Liberius .— O Emperor, it is a thing hitherto unheard of, that a judge should accuse the absent of impiety, as if he were his personal enemy.

Clara had but two bridesmaids, and they were Mary and Emmeline Fitzgerald.

“You think it will go to a jury, then?”

Neither then was the advance the Word's, nor was the flesh Wisdom, but the flesh became the body of Wisdom.

If to hear the voice of God speaking is a cause of death, how shall not the sight of God Himself bring death?

We hold the promise; who shall break it?

When there is a separation the children belong to the father.

But how water is changed into earth or into air, and air again into fire, or fire into air, or air into water, although not difficult to explain, yet on the present occasion it is enough merely to mention them, as our object is to discuss the nature of bodily matter.

Look at me and my position.

Praise therefore Him who has mercy

But these and other matters of the same kind are taught in the art of elocution.

They do not get drunk, nor do they gamble at the public tables.

“But you’re going to have her down at Caversham. I can’t think what made you dream of going to Caversham just now, knowing as you do how hard papa is to manage.”

Having resolved upon this she at once wrote to her aunt to that effect.

But as circumstances had gone, honour and even honesty demanded that Mr Whittlestaff should not be allowed to suffer. He at least had been straightforward in his purpose, and had spoken as soon as he had been assured of his own mind. Mr Whittlestaff should at any rate have his reward.

Nor would she ever stoop to take aught from her aunt, or from Ziska.

Such were we when we fell into this heresy, and adhered to it.

We have an example of the calm, subdued style in the Apostle Paul, where he says: Tell me, you that desire to be under the law, do ye not hear the law?

Caesar was not slow to mount, and when once in the saddle, certainly did not mean to leave it.

But now that they were to meet again, they were no longer children.

In the first place, because all things were made by the Word of God, and without Him was nothing made.

And verily they that are of the sons of Levi who receive the office of Priesthood, have a commandment to take tithes of the people according to the law, that is, of their brethren, though they come out of the loins of Abraham.

Thus in another place he says, that God is Light [1 John 1:5], and elsewhere (it is said), that He dwells in light unapproachable [1 Timothy 6:16 yet these expressions are used not that we may suppose a compounded nature, but that little by little we may be led up to the highest doctrines.

The great sin of total absence would be better than making an appearance before Mr. Jerningham in his present telltale condition.

I was looking for him that should save me from weakness of mind and tempest [Psalm 54:8].

And the souls are all those forms that have been laid hold on by each of the thirty Aeons; and each of these is so constituted as to discern Jesus, who is of a nature (similar to their own).

Such was the soul of Paul; it had taken possession of a place higher than any fortress, the seat of spiritual wisdom, that is, true philosophy.

And yet he is unable to please those who are ignorant of the mystery except by his words; inasmuch as the things which he spoke are mystical, and prepared with this object, that they may be heard by the faithful only: in short, he is accustomed to be derided by the learned men of this age, to whom his writings have happened to be known.

So it was with this man when he spoke to himself in his solitude of his purpose of resigning the titled heiress.

‘Of course, my dear. If the Secretary of State were to say that I was his wife, I suppose I should have to take it as a fact.’

a most eloquent Athenian philosopher, and a disciple of Christ while yet retaining his philosopher's garb, presented a work to Hadrian at the same time that Quadratus presented his. The work contained a systematic statement of our doctrine, that is, an Apology for the Christians, which is still extant and is regarded by philologians as a monument to his genius.

As if also it were said with regard to husbandry what also is actually recorded: I planted, Apollos watered; and God gave the increase.

That was her ‘Excelsior.’

“It’s between me and my uncle, and I pay him rent for his part. He’s a clergyman you know, and he has a living in Lincolnshire,—not far off.”

Had he not children?

Since these names are used by our Lord, will he not allow that they are names, or appellations, or words expressive of ideas?

“Then, when he’s in the middle of the hottest of the fight,” said the first, “he halloos out ‘Now for Saumur—here’s for Saumur—now for the bridge of Saumur!’ To be sure he talks a deal about Saumur, and I think myself he must have been wounded there badly, somewhere near the brain.”

The acknowledgement of a mistake and the asking for grace is almost too much for any woman to expect from such a man as Mr Palliser.

“I hope you find yourself better than when I last saw you,” he said, after a pause of five minutes.

For as soon as I told the false dream to my husband, he being alarmed, sent me off by ship to Athens with my two sons, and with slaves, maids, and abundance of money, to educate the boys, until, said he, it shall please the giver of the oracle that you return to me.

And now how can it appear otherwise than absurd, that when God possessed none of those things which it was befitting for Him to possess, He should afterwards, by a kind of progress, come into the possession of them?

His debts had all been paid, except the money due to the moneylenders.

[1 Corinthians 2:9] For I will says our Saviour, that they also may be with Me, where I am, that they may behold My glory, which You have given Me.

But Peter, knowing nothing of this, being asked by us to partake of food, said that he would not himself partake until those who had come with him were settled.

Then they circumscribe His nature, shutting Him off within certain limits of the power which made Him: the amount of this productive energy is a sort of measure within which they enclose Him: they have devised it as a sort of cloak to muffle Him up in.

But pity or praise from any man had been distasteful to him.

This is the spotless way, where we understand when the Lord comes unto us.

We landed at Tyre.

“Renounce her, false harpy! Ay, with all my heart.”

But some, as Heraclius says, marked with fire the ears of those who were sealed; understanding so the apostolic saying, For His fan is in His hand, to purge His floor: and He will gather the wheat into the garner; but the chaff He will burn with fire unquenchable.

And these things perhaps should be otherwise explained; but now again we must hear the words of the Saviour Himself concerning the Holy Ghost.

In this manner, and for our profit, the end of this world (age)— that is to say, this present life— is a thing of which we are ignorant.

The difficulty was so great that he could not see his way out of it.

Stemm at once told him, with a candour that was almost marvellous, that Sir Thomas was out of town.

Captain Aylmer did not often spend a Sunday at Perivale, but when he did, he went to church three times, and submitted himself to the yoke.

And the Lord's day Plato prophetically speaks of in the tenth book of the Republic, in these words: And when seven days have passed to each of them in the meadow, on the eighth they are to set out and arrive in four days.

“Certainly not. Why should you?”

It may be surmised that Miss Altifiorla in discussing the matter with herself did not use the word Providence.

Would it not be in the end the same if Arthur should keep the money himself?

What great labors did Plato endure, and his followers, discoursing to us about a line, and an angle, and a point, and about numbers even and odd, and equal unto one another and unequal, and such-like spiderwebs; (for indeed those webs are not more useless to man's life than were these subjects;) and without doing good to any one great or small by their means, so he made an end of his life.

Every man should, he thought, be made to pass through some ‘go.’ The greengrocer’s boy should not carry out cabbages unless his fitness for cabbage-carrying had been ascertained, and till it had also been ascertained that no other boy, ambitious of the preferment, would carry them better.

He wishes him to come with auspicious foot; that is to say, he wishes Hercules to come as a Namphanio, the name about which you are pleased to make much mirth at our expense.

Soon after that Mr. Masters left the room and Larry Twentyman followed him. There was something almost ridiculous in the way the young man would follow the attorney about on these Saturday evenings,—as though he could make love to the girl by talking to the father. But on this occasion he had something special to say. “So Mary’s going to Cheltenham, Mr. Masters.”

But to many their own destruction was not sufficient.

And now that the fourth period has commenced, and the time of his reign is still further prolonged, he desires to extend his imperial authority by calling still more of his kindred to partake his power; and, by the appointment of the Cæsars, fulfills the predictions of the holy prophets, according to what they uttered ages before: And the saints of the Most High shall take the kingdom.

And, His indignation will rest upon sinners.

Solomon, the wisest king of Israel, who reigned in Jerusalem, thus commences the book called Ecclesiastes, which the Jews number among their canonical Scriptures: Vanity of vanities, said Ecclesiastes, vanity of vanities; all is vanity.

He himself too becomes a mover of ridicule, that he may delight the spectator: has another one who is earnest minded, and practises self-government?

There was not a stableboy about the place who did not know and feel that their Mr. Ralph was now to take his place in the hunting-field as the heir to Newton Priory.

“Yes, indeed. I ought not to have brought Sir Louis Scatcherd here: I ought to have known that he would have disgraced himself.”

The poor old lady did not seem to be made very unhappy by them.

The general cheerfulness of this woman had often been cause of wonder to Clara, who knew how many of her hours were passed in solitude; but there did occasionally come upon her periods of melancholy in which she was unable to act up to the settled rule of her life, and in which she would confess that the days and weeks and months were too long for her.

Settlements must be drawn for the satisfaction of Lord Nidderdale and his father.

You would not then be the object of any ill will.

And then at last Owen Fitzgerald entered the room.

This accounts for the apostle's precise words.

Three divisions were made on the debate, and thrice did the Fixed-Periodists beat the old party by a majority of fifteen in a House consisting of eighty-five members.

Certainly among them that have been born of women, there has not arisen a greater than John the Baptist.

That’s his secret.

“If she should, tell her that I will go to her at once. It will be much to have a new daughter;—very much that you should have a wife. Where would she like to live?”

“Who wants to know?”

Finally, the authority of this book condemns those like Aratus or Eudoxus, or any others who boast that they have found out and written down the complete number of the stars.

But now, what things soever I might seek to recognize you by, I find you in all points distinguished by the contraries of the same.

And yet as he sat there on the gate, while the rain came down heavily upon him, even when admitting the justice of the bishop, and the truth of the verdict which the jury would no doubt give, and the propriety of the action which that cold, reasonable, prosperous man at Silverbridge would take, he pitied himself with a tenderness of commiseration which knew no bounds.

He was changed from temporal to eternal life: He was changed from the Jews to the Gentiles; He was changed from earth to heaven.

For the Passion of our Lord in this Psalm we perceive.

His rules were severe as compared with the habits of the time.

[Isaiah 14:13] Isaiah said concerning him:— Because your heart has thus exalted you, therefore you shall be brought down to Sheol, and all that look upon you shall be astonished at you.

For indeed no one was then bringing suit or charge against him that he needed to defend himself, but he said those things in order to make him better.

For to suffer thus for Christ adds to one's love, and is as it were an earnest to high-souled men of further conflicts.

For as in the cobweb there is the appearance of something woven, but no substantiality in the appearance—for he who touches it touches nothing substantial, as the spider's threads break with the touch of a finger—just such is the unsubstantial texture of idle phrases.

“Oh, I hope not. Do you think that early marriages are good for young men?”

[Galatians 4:9] Why should I do what I see another blamed for doing?

Long ago this wealthy proprietor and still wealthier father was made by a sudden stroke destitute and bereaved.

Does any one ever venture to use them for any other?

Thus he walked on till he found himself among the fields,—those first fields which greet the eyes of a Londoner, in which wheat is not grown, but cabbages and carrots for the London market; and here seating himself upon a gate, he gave his mind up to a close study of the subject. First he took from his pocket a short list which he always carried, and once more read over the names and figures which it bore.

If the dropping should be put an end to by outward circumstances before the stone had been impressed that would not be his fault.

“What is he then, my lord?”

But what is the sun or what is the moon but elements of visible creation and material light: one of which is of greater brightness and the other of lesser light?

“I don’t see why I shouldn’t. Gentlemen’s hearts are things very much to be doubted as far as I’ve seen ‘em. I don’t think many of ‘em have ‘em at all.”

No; it was not possible.

“Perhaps it’s not the same shade of grey, Lord Fawn. You see, my lord, we are most anxious not to impute guilt where guilt doesn’t lie. You are a witness for the Crown, and, of course, you will tell the Crown lawyers all that passes here. Were it possible, we would make this little preliminary inquiry in their presence;—but we can hardly do that. Mr. Finn’s coat was a very much smaller coat.”

Helen. How angry were you that I said as much, when first the Count came hither with his suit! It’s now too late and you must be his slave.

[Exodus 20:14] But we find that that first word of David bears on this very sort of thing: Blessed, he says, is the man who has not gone into the assembly of the impious, nor stood in the way of sinners, nor sat in the seat of scorners.

The days were still almost at their longest, and he did not scruple to present himself before Lady Fawn between eight and nine in the evening.

Mrs Eames, their mother, was a widow, living in a small house in Guestwick, whose husband had been throughout his whole life an intimate friend of our squire.

For what purpose should I inquire into myself when the object of such inquiry has already been obtained?

For, tell me, whether is more worthy of credit, your reasoning and calumny, or the perfection of the thing?

No, Edouard.

For this cause we dwell in cities, and have public places, that we may converse with one another.

That parapet it is which keeps from falling those who go up on the house of the Word; for people only fall off those houses which have no parapet, so that the buildings themselves are to blame for their fall and for their death.

Excesses and defects we will omit, neither making the Unity a confusion, nor the division a separation.

And then on Saturday afternoon they all went over to Barchester.

[2 Thessalonians 1:3] This he said lest they should make a boast of the great good which they were enjoying from God, as if they had it of their own mere selves.

He had acknowledged most solemnly to himself that, whether for good or for ill, he was bound to her; and could it be that he was already calculating as to the practicability of disowning her?

You must wait awhile.

But even Mr. Outhouse was moved to pleasantry by this suggestion, as he explained the nature of the tenements which were common at St. Diddulph’s.

[God forbid.]

Deus Creator omnium; this verse of eight syllables alternates between short and long syllables.

Of the same from his interpretation of the 92nd Psalm:—

For then we read that the fear of evil loathes contamination: The fear of the Lord hates evil.

The geographical configuration here is remarkable as at the point of contact between Natal and the Transvaal the boundary of the Orange Free State is not above two or three miles distant, and that of Zulu Land, which is at present but ill defined, not very far off;—so that in the event of the Transvaal being joined to Natal the combined Colonies would hang together by a very narrow neck of land.

“Yes;—for half nothing; and then go and tell the whole story and get money from the other side. You can’t trust Benjamin.”

It may be doubted whether he knew himself the extent of his own strength, but such as it was he resolved that he must now use it.

Take care that you allow no debts to the injury of the Republic.

Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father.

It’s all very well wanting to be prime minister; but if you can’t be prime minister, you must do without being prime minister.” Then he attempted to sing the old song—”Shall I, sighing in despair, die because a woman’s fair?

This proceeded from pure faith.

[Matthew 5:3-9] Behold, I have told unto You many things, which I could and which I would, for You first would have me confess unto You, the Lord my God, for You are good, since Your mercy endures for ever.

He laid aside his usual melancholy manner and brought forth little quiet jokes from the inmost mirth of his heart; he poked his fun at the archdeacon about Mr. Slope’s marriage, and quizzed him for his improper love for Mrs. Proudie.

“We’ll be away at once now,” said Lord George with utmost earnestness; “follow me close, but not too close.

“And now about you.”

For it is written, Rescue them that are drawn unto death, and forbear not to deliver them that are ready to be slain [Proverbs 24:11].

It was explained to Sir Timothy that the old rule,—or rather custom,—of offering certain high positions to the law officers of the Crown had been abrogated.

They both undertake to do the same thing — to depict French and English manners; but the English writer (with his unsurpassed industry) is so occasional, so accidental, so full of the echoes of voices that are not the voice of the muse.

With respect to Meletius, however, an exception has been made, both on account of his former insubordination, and of the rashness and impetuosity of his disposition; for if the least authority were accorded to him, he might abuse it by again exciting confusion.

Wish him your equal, that you both may be under the One Lord, on whom nothing can be bestowed.

cannot you even yet call to mind that only those are sought after who have perished?

That which is not in every respect the same, cannot be 'one' with him whose nature thus varies from it.

Mrs. Bolster was a prudent woman, and, acting doubtless under advice, had written to him, saying that she had been summoned to the office of Messrs.

That wretched old man in Westmoreland!

For as cures, and prophecies, and signs are performed by the agency of men, God working in them, so also is Gnostic teaching.

“Speak, Adolphe,” said Henri, “have they decreed—has it come to the vote?”

So something surprising and startling has happened; for the death, which they thought to inflict as a disgrace, was actually a monument of victory against death itself.

This is witnessed by the law and the prophets; in other words, the law and the prophets each afford it testimony.

It is very doubtful, whether, in making this concession, Valens acted according to his own inclination.

So long, then, as this people treasured up nourishment for the light, supplying oil by their works, the light of continence was not extinguished among them, but was ever shining and giving light in the lot of their inheritance.

Cairo and Camp Wood

3. This Antipater, having been taken a prisoner while a boy by Idumean robbers, lived with them, because his father, being a poor man, was unable to pay a ransom for him. Growing up in their practices he was afterward befriended by Hyrcanus, the high priest of the Jews. A son of his was that Herod who lived in the times of our Saviour.

She knew that he would hang on there till the season was over.

I however called shares in the booty, and laughed about it.

They still hold by their houses, though they were in the very thick of the war, because there they had shelter for their families, and elsewhere they might seek it in vain.

3. Day unto day utters word [Psalm 18:2]. To the spiritual the Spirit gives out the fullness of the unchangeable Wisdom of God, the Word which in the beginning is God with God. [John 1:1] And night unto night announces knowledge. And to the fleshly, as to those afar off, the mortality of the flesh, by conveying faith, announces future knowledge.

“Thank you, Ayala. Thank you. I daresay I shall. They tell me I shall get over it. I don’t feel like getting over it now.”

You closed the doors to save the righteous one; You opened the floods to destroy the unclean.

See, for instance, what astonishing things are done, preludes of those which were to come; for it is no more paradise, but Heaven that is opened.

But this must appear paradoxical and impossible.

Mr. Slide hardly doubted that Phineas Finn had himself sent the paragraph to an adverse paper, with the express view of adding to the injury inflicted upon the Banner.

Llanfeare had belonged to Indefer Joneses for many generations.

Now, however, it was necessary that he should do so.

After this he passed over to Illyricum, and thence to Italy, where he pursued a similar course.

Now I will say farewell, and may God bless you; and remember this—that my only earthly wish and ambition is in your hands.” Then he went on his way toward his own lodgings, and she entered the parsonage garden by herself.

On what grounds a dispute can arise among spiritual persons.

The nights, moreover, are nearly as hot as the days; but this great heat does not last for any very long period, and it seems that white men are able to work throughout the year.

Again: what is indeed the marvellous part of love; all the other good things have their evils yoked with them: as he that gives up his possessions is oftentimes puffed up on this account: the eloquent is affected with a wild passion for glory; the humble-minded, on this very ground, not seldom thinks highly of himself in his conscience.

For if there was reason and some natural fitness that expiatory sacrifice for that which was struck with lightning should have been made with a man's head, I do not see why the proposal of an onion's was made by the king; but if it could be performed with an onion also, there was a greedy lust for human blood.

What, then, would he do?

Or if she has been engaged as a bride there has been no secret about it.

The two men were seated together in Mr. Mason’s lodgings at Alston, late on the morning after the verdict had been given, and Mr. Dockwrath was speaking out his mind with sufficient freedom.

On the whole, the southwestern portion of the island is by no means equal to the northern.

Could she have lied to him, and have sworn that she did not love him?

For in each individual, as I have already said, there is first of all that which is reprobate, that from which we must begin, but in which we need not necessarily remain; afterwards is that which is well-approved, to which we may by advancing attain, and in which, when we have reached it we may abide.

She likes her husband’s silken vest, she likes his adherence to the rubric, she specially likes the eloquent philosophy of his sermons, and she likes the red letters in her own prayerbook.

Why, then, is the ether given to Jove, the air to Juno?

Eusebius voluntarily shut himself up in a cell to philosophize, near Carræ.

He had heard the bustle of the arrival, and had at once gone into the saloon prepared for the reception of the great man.

To him to whom you have entrusted the consecration of the Saviour's blood, to whom you have granted fellowship in partaking of the Sacraments, to him do you refuse a part in your death?

Chapter 2.— Who are the Select Gods, and Whether They are Held to Be Exempt from the Offices of the Commoner Gods.

After reading it once she hardly knew what it contained beyond a statement that Phineas Finn was in Newgate.

The Saviour, then, is the first and the last, not that He is not what lies between, but the extremities are named to show that He became all things.

And this man, after having entertained me for the first few days, requested me to settle the fee, in order that our intercourse might not be unprofitable.

Gorgonia's parents, and the speaker himself, although known to them, are not spoken of in terms implying intimacy such as we find in Orations known to have been delivered at Nazianzus.

If that which profits is altogether good, and temperance is profitable to one's house and life and friends, then temperance is good.

It could hardly be said that Linda assented to this, because she accepted all that was done for her as a child might accept it.

Now, this same Hilarius, having instituted him in the office of the diaconate, endeavored still more closely to attach him to himself, and to bind him by leading him to take part in Divine service.

Mr. Seward’s reply, on the other hand, by its length of argumentation, by a certain sharpness of diction, to which that gentleman is addicted in his State papers, and by a tone of satisfaction inherent through it all, seemed to demand more than he conceded.

He lay, his thick neck bent aside; and him

He said illnatured things of all his neighbours, and had never earned any reputation for doing goodnatured acts.

“ I hope thin,” said he as we shook hands with him, “ ye’ll not take amiss the little ruse by which we caught ye.”

So he walked up and down under the towers of the cathedral, and cooled himself, and looked up at the pleasant plate-glass in the windows of the house of his friend the dean, and told himself how, in their college days, he and the dean had been quite equal,—quite equal, except that by the voices of all qualified judges in the university, he, Mr. Crawley, had been acknowledged to be the riper scholar.

Military riders galloped over one at every turn, splashing about through the mud, and reminding one not unfrequently of John Gilpin.

Can any one not regard with horror the young Consul, as he sat there in the privacy of the island, with Antony on one side and Lepidus on the other, and then in the first days of his youth, with the down just coming on his cheeks, sending forth his edict for slaughtering the old friend of the Republic?

I saw him myself.

It was true that he had made his own bed, and he understood the justice which required him to lie upon it.

Some young men from that and neighbouring parishes had joined themselves to the colony, allured by wages, and disregarding the menaces of the neighbouring farmers; but they were all in appearance and manners nearer akin to the race of navvies than to ordinary rural labourers.

And as he came out a little after, bringing nothing with him, he must have thrown it into the sea.

In like manner as to what he added, that I say, that Christ even was not free from sins, but that, from the necessity of the flesh, He spoke falsely, and was stained with other faults, he should see from whom he heard these things, or in whose letters he read them; for that, indeed, he perchance did not understand them, and turned them by the deceitfulness of malice into calumnious meanings.

In this creation, had no one sinned, the world would have been filled and beautified with natures good without exception; and though there is sin, all things are not therefore full of sin, for the great majority of the heavenly inhabitants preserve their nature's integrity.

“It’s all very well to say gammon; but his money has been took,—and there’s more to come.”

He had seen a man in a grey coat, and for the future would confine himself to that.

“Well, Reddypalm,” said Mr Romer, shaking hands with him. Mr Romer had not been equally cautious as Nearthewinde, and had already drunk sundry glasses of ale at the Brown Bear, in the hope of softening the stern Bear-warden. “How is it to be to-day? Which is to be the man?”

According, then, to this extraordinary regulation the august name of our God and Saviour, Jesus Christ, ought to be omitted from the mystic writings.

“I shall not,” said Owen; “and if you know any one who will take a lease of Hap House for ten or twelve years, I shall be glad to find a tenant.”

She had revelled in kisses and soft touches.

Catechetical Lecture 7

Then gradually there was heard through the court the gurgling sounds of irrepressible sobs,—and with them there came a moan from the old man, who was only divided from his daughter by the few steps,—which was understood by the whole crowd.

And that this may not appear incredible to any one, let Evagrius, who is here, furnish you with a testimony of its truth; for the thing took place in his very presence.

Don’t you take trouble about that.

Thus alone will the destroyer of Egypt find no place to attack you; thus alone will the first-born of your soul escape the fate of the first-born of the Egyptians; thus alone will you be able with the prophet to say: my heart is fixed, O God, my heart is fixed; I will sing and give praise.

But Nina hated her Christian lover, cousin though he was, as warmly as she loved the Jew.

Observe how in renouncing He excites them to follow Him. You hear Me not, He says, for neither are you sheep, but they who follow, these are of the flock. This He said, that they might strive to become sheep. Then by mentioning what they should obtain, He makes these men jealous, so as to rouse them, and cause them to desire such things.

Dr Thorne soon perceived that he was to be driven into litigation, not only with Mr Finnie, the Barchester attorney, but with the squire himself.

Make him wise.

Be that as it may, two years at Eton, and three terms at Cambridge, did not make a gentleman of Louis Philippe Scatcherd.

34. Polianus of Mileum said: "It is right that a heretic should be baptized in the holy Church."

I asked him to dine here, but he refused.

We may doubt, however, whether she had ever realized how terribly her scourges would wale him.

“Fred, tell me; tell me.” And Kate rose up, with her knees upon the sofa, bending over him, gazing into his countenance and imploring him.

In the matter of the books [Περὶ ᾿Αρχῶν], I have even a claim upon your gratitude.

Whether Frank thought that he might still have a chance through want of firmness on the part of the girl; or whether he considered that in keeping his brother away from home he could at least do himself no good; or whether, again, he resolved that he would act by his brother as a brother should act, without reference to Ada Forster, I will not attempt to say.

Joseph was then thirty-nine, if we add seven years of plenty and two of famine to the thirty he reckoned when honored by the king.

And then, of course, the conversation was carried further.

She had bided her time even there, but now she meant to show her friends that she had got a house of her own.

Chapter 34. The Prophets Enjoined Holiness of Life.

Hamel was an Englishman, who, however, had been carried very early to Rome and had been bred there.

For the only ones extant are Proverbs, and Wisdom, and Ecclesiastes, and the Song of Songs.

Young ladies of five-and-twenty, when they marry gentlemen of four-and-fifty, make up their minds for well-understood and well-recognised old age.

“Always ready money,” said Miles shaking his head, as though in reprobation of so abominable an institution.

11. But if any one shall be seen without the place which I have commanded, or be found in any assembly, he will bring peril on himself. For suitable punishment shall not fail. Go, therefore where you have been ordered.'

Then the musical games were instituted for the Delphic Apollo, to appease his anger, through which they thought the regions of Greece were afflicted with barrenness, because they had not defended his temple which Danaos burnt when he invaded those lands; for they were warned by his oracle to institute these games.

“Nevertheless, papa, pray let us ask him to dinner on Thursday.” It was for the purpose of making this request that Patience had come to Southampton Buildings, braving her father’s displeasure.

For by showing what a difference there is between the rulers, he casts out of all excuse the soldier that leaves God, and desires to serve under the dominion of sin.

He was the Leader of the House of Commons, and it had become an almost recognised law of the Constitution that the Leader of the House of Commons should be the First Minister of the Crown.

But Lady Rowley would not be talked down, even by Nora, in this fashion.

The apostle explains this when he quotes the text about not muzzling the ox that is treading out the grain.

“Well; they are not. And he has nothing of his own, as far as I can learn. It would be just the thing for her to do,—to give the money to his friend. At any rate she will tell you whether it was so or not.”

They both then sat silent for a while; though Robespierre had ventured to express to the girl, whom he knew to be so entirely devoted to him, a feeling somewhat akin to that of pity for his victims, he could not bear that even she should appear to throw a shadow of an imputation on the propriety and justness of his measures, although she only did so by repeating and appealing to the kindly expressions which had fallen from himself.

And he sells his produce,—anything which he can grow and does not eat himself.

[Psalm 39:6] Such is vanity of vanities, your splendid buildings, your vast and overflowing riches, the herds of slaves that bustle along the public square, your pomp and vainglory, your high thoughts, and your ostentation.

Harry was light-haired, with long, silken beard, and bright eyes; but there was usually present to his face a look of infinite joy, which was comfortable to all beholders.

I should say that those who, led by reason, apart from all agencies of sense, have beheld incorporeal things, the things which Paul speaks of as invisible, or not seen, that they are ruled by the leading nature of the Only-begotten, but that those who have only advanced as far as the reason which is conversant with sensible things, and on account of these glorify their Maker, that these also are governed by the Word, by Christ.

Then, when the shouting, and the holloaing, and the flinging up of the ball were still going on, I remembered that, after it, he would have his consolation with Eva.

Yea, for this, says he, is perfection.

He wishes himself to appear just, God unjust.

Chapter XXXI. Freshwater Gate

And let none of you say: If His Father wished Him to suffer this, in order that by His stripes the human race might be healed, we have done no wrong.

But he used no such reasonings.

Larry received a shock from the tone of the lady’s voice.

I again passed through Pittsburg, and over the Alleghany Mountains by Altoona, and down to Baltimore—back into civilization, secession, conversation, and gastronomy.

We think, too, that we had a conscience; and, perhaps, the heap was cleared as frequently as are the heaps of other editors.

Why contend you that the kingdom of heaven, for the sake of which holy eunuchs have made themselves eunuchs, is to be understood in this life only?

For I could never have entertained concerning you the idea that you had not felt yourself offended by me if you so framed your reply as to offend me in return.

But Frank had known himself and his own qualities too well to follow his father’s advice.

“Oh, of course, Feemy; I was making love to the three Miss Cassidys, and Jane Thompson, and old widow Brennan at once. But why was I there, you say? why then, I was just buying this for Mary Cassidy, and I wanted your opinion, my pet;” and he took from his pocket some article of finery he had bought for his mistress.

Mamma, it will be as though one came unto him from the dead.’

“I trust that you will acknowledge that we have shown our good will towards you, our desire to cultivate a Christian friendship with you, and that you will therefore excuse me if I ask you a question which might otherwise have the appearance of interference. Miss Mackenzie, is there anything between you and my husband’s curate, Mr Maguire?”

Would they betray her?

Yet let them read again and again, and consider, and find out for themselves, not what the sound of those words is, but what they mean.

Of Him also he tells: Now the Spirit speaks plainly, that in the last times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, doctrines of demons, who speak lies in hypocrisy, having their conscience cauterized.

To what a punishment was he not dooming her!

And for this reason the God of all said to the prophet The just shall live by his faith, and if any man draw back, my soul shall have no pleasure in him.

“Is that your calmness, Adolphe?”

He made them one Body.

Was it not the virginal Elias?

Mr Palliser was here five minutes since.” Then Lady Monk was obliged to get to her door again and Lady Glencora found herself standing close to Lady Hartletop.

It is a sacrifice of self, a martyrdom, a giving up on the part of him who strikes of himself, his little ones, and his wife, for the sake of others who can only thus be rescued from the grasp of tyranny.

Now, my lord most excellent and worthy of all esteem, this town has fallen disastrously by a grievous misdemeanour on the part of her citizens, which must be punished with very great severity, if we are dealt with according to the rigour of the civil law.

She would not run in debt to make herself fit for his notice, because such debts would have been debts to be paid by him. But if she could squeeze from her food what should supply her with garments fit at any rate to stand with him at the altar it should be done.

And he observed the iron gates, and the steps, and the shape of the trees, and the old pigeon-house-looking fabric in which the clock used to be placed.

She had never as yet been used to snubbing.

Second and third editions of that wonderful port had been produced on the previous evening, and the two warriors had played their parts with it manfully.

[Matthew 7:14] But perhaps also not even few but two or three make a symphony as Peter and James and John, to whom as making a symphony the Word of God showed His own glory.

This He now made good to Him when He said: I have both glorified You, and will glorify You again.

Dick Roby’s wine was no doubt good, but he was not prepared to purchase it at such a price as this.

In consequence of this wound he died.

“Merely a poor Norfolk farmer,” said Cheesacre. “I never want to put myself beyond my own place. There has been some talk about the Commission of the Peace, but I don’t think anything of it.”

He lived to old age, mighty in signs and miracles.

He was much with me both at home and in the forum, having often employed me as his defender with my father, and as his advocate before the judge.

Had not the John Bright steamed into your harbour yesterday, one of your most valued citizens would have been already—deposited.” When he had so spoken, he turned round to Mr Crasweller, who was sitting on my right hand, and bowed to him.

When Mr. Slide left me I called on Mr. Kennedy, whom I found in a miserable little hotel, in Judd Street, kept by Scotch people named Macpherson. They had come from the neighbourhood of Loughlinter, and knew Mr. Kennedy well. This was yesterday afternoon, Sunday, and I found some difficulty in making my way into his presence. My object was to induce him to withdraw the letter;—for at that time I doubted whether the law could interfere quickly enough to prevent the publication.

Isadore Hamel

An incident had happened early in the year which had served greatly to strengthen it.

John 12:38

Clavering, what is it?” she exclaimed, as he entered with tidings of death written on his visage.

For then after a thousand years they are delivered over to Gehenna; and he whose work they were, with them are burnt up.

“His heart, at any rate, has been very kind.” And then again they looked over the document, and talked of the wedding which must now be near at hand. But still they had not as yet decided how Herbert should be informed.

And in strolling about the place afterwards, and in going up through the wood, she was at great pains to attach herself to some other person, so that there should be no such attaching between her and the owner of Oileymead.

There would be no need of any transaction in absolute cash.

Another Januarius of Vicus Caesaris said: If error does not obey truth, much more truth does not consent to error; and therefore we stand by the Church in which we preside, that, claiming her baptism for herself alone, we should baptize those whom the Church has not baptized.

You are a girl, whereas I am a woman,—and he likes your youth.

Your lordship, probably, when sending me one copy, kept another.

“But what a very wicked man that other Mr. Mason must be!” said Mrs. Furnival.

Then, in his “ Veni, vidi, vici “ style, he tells us that, having in one summer finished off two wars, he is able to put his army into winter quarters even before the necessary time, so that he himself may go into his other Gaul across the Alps, —” ad conventus agendos,”— to hold some kind of session or assizes for the government of his province, and especially to collect more soldiers.

45. That hope is of future things, and therefore that our faith concerning those things which are promised ought to be patient

“She’s in London now.”

Why linger over these and not hurry on to events more urgent?

“Money’s never dirty,” she said, “nor yet what makes money.” She talks of taking lodgings in Norwich for the winter, saying that in her widowed state she will be as well there as anywhere else, and she wants me to stay with her up to Christmas.

After this shall we not meet together and consult how we shall drive away this pest?

He knows that he is not.

He returned, therefore, a victor from the dead, leading with Him the spoils of hell.

“Yes,” said Adolphe, unwilling not to reply when spoken to, and yet ashamed to speak to de Lescure, “yes, that is Henri. I wish I were with him.”

The grander they are, the clearer should be their announcement, in order that their superior greatness might be believed.

For if even any other had fulfilled the commandments (contained) in the law, he would have been that Christ.

I do so wish that all this might be stopped altogether.

He was now staying at the house of his niece, Mrs. Gresham; but the chief reason of his coming up had been a desire expressed by Miss Dunstable, that he should do so.

Of course she’ll find it out sooner or later; but I don’t care about that.” Conway Dalrymple said nothing as the two ladies were thus excusing themselves.

“Then you are foolish. I am bound to tell you so, as I have inveigled you here.”

It alone distinguishes the sons of the eternal kingdom and the sons of eternal perdition.

For even the sparrow has found her a house, and, The Lord has become a refuge to the poor.

Now that you had a concubine we find to be manifestly true, with regard to whom also an adverse suspicion has arisen in the minds of some.

As the Apostle says: It bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things; love never fails.

There was one Heraclius, the son of Hiero, a nobleman of Syracuse, who received a legacy amounting to 3,000,000 sesterces—we will say £24,000—from a relative, also a Heraclius.

But not on that account was she prepared to shape her conduct in accordance with her friend Sophie’s advice, and especially not so when that advice had reference to Sophie’s brother.

And then the spurs! He would not forget the spurs. She should know that he wore a spur, and that, if necessary, he would use it. Then he, too, gave a little click with his tongue, and an acute observer might have seen the motion of his heel.

Yes, indeed; that is the name he gave me; and because I consented to take it from him, he treated me—O heavens!

“And yet I did everything I could to please her; and I don’t think any boy ever loved an old woman better than I did her.”

“Oh, yes, I shall read,” said Mr Gogram; “and I say that it is as valid a will as ever a man signed.”

What the gain, when the horse indeed has his paces beautifully ordered, more like dancing than stepping, while the rider, together with his choral train and adorned with more than bridal ornaments, is more crooked than the lame, and has no more command over hands and feet than drunkards and madmen?

“I know a trick worth two of that, Sir Thomas. If you like to give me your daughter Hemmeline for my wife, whatever her fortin’s to be, I’ll take it as part of my half of the forty thousand pounds. There now.” And then Aby again waited for a reply.

This passage is sometimes very narrow; but in the narrowest parts an iron chain is affixed into the rock.

The Medes alone in all the world, with the greatest care, throw men still breathing to be devoured by dogs; yet they have not Mars with the Moon placed in Cancer all through their daily Genesis .

The teeth within it, however, were never excelled by any that ever graced the face of a woman.

And in the form of a bear he lay with Amalthea the daughter of Phocus; and in a golden shower he fell upon Danae, the daughter of Acrisius, of whom sprang Perseus.

And as to Ayala’s attractions, they were not at all of a nature to be serviceable to such a family as hers.

Heal and open my eyes, that I may behold Your significations of command.

1007

After Darius came Xerxes, and he is said to have reigned twenty-one years, although I have found that the length of his rule is, in most copies, set down at twenty and five years.

In the former it is grace, in the latter virtue, that is crowned.

She was endeavouring to realize to herself the idea that her lover was going away, and then trying in her mind to comprehend whether it must follow naturally, as a consequence from this, that he was going away from her, as well as from Ballycloran.

When the Duchess learned the truth she quite approved of the expulsion, only hinting to Barrington Erle that the act of kicking out should have been more absolutely practical.

Towers of “The Jupiter” and his brethren occupied themselves with other names, and the undying fame promised to our friend was clearly intended to be posthumous.

From that occasion a beginning was made ill the correct perception of the strength of sin on the part of these persons through the instrumentality of the law of Moses, and for that reason the law has been called the strength of sin.

There is no husband ready for Cammy French.

Your summons to the Council reached me on the fifth day before the Ides of November, in the evening, and found me very much indisposed, so that I could not possibly attend.

What could be more illustrious than the cities of Sodom?

There will be an end to the wood even on the spurs of the ‘Outiniqua range, if no care be taken to assist the reproduction of nature.

“That’s very unkind to poor Mr. Harold Smith.”

“But how is my cousin concrete? He is always abstracted when I speak to him, I know.”

Let us therefore serve God with a pure heart, and we shall be righteous; but if we do not serve Him, because we believe not the promise of God, we shall be miserable.

If the Son of God was baptized, what godly man is he that despises Baptism?

What will you answer your brother?

“You must not think of it yet, Mr. Medlicot. It seems almost a wonder that you shouldn’t have to be in bed, and you with your collarbone broken only last night! I don’t know how you can bear it as you do.”

I fear that unfortunate man is guilty.

“I didn’t mean to find fault with mamma. Perhaps it will come all right.”

Let no one say to himself, There have been troubles in our fathers' time, in our time there are not.

But consider how all things occur to you according to your wish by God's providence; for, behold, not only have the objects of proper affection been restored to you by the appointment of God, but also the presence of your friends is arranged for you.]

Maybe he will turn out all right.

Are you sad because all did not perish, that you might gather gold?

“No indeed, ma’am,” said Lotta Luxa.

Covetousness he trampled under foot.

He took away the gift from those who became unworthy of it.

For I know what the Catholic Church is.

[Matthew 10:32-33] He also introduces a parable of the mission to the vineyard of the Son (not the Father), who was sent after so many servants, [Matthew 21:33-41] and slain by the husbandmen, and avenged by the Father.

He was crucified without as a condemned person: neither let us then be ashamed to go forth out [of the world].

“I don’t ask her to pay anything for me.”

And what was he to gain by it?

Deep quiet shall be there; all toilsome work, that necessity demands, will cease: the necessity being dead, its works will perish too.

Thus the blessed martyr was honoured after the pattern of Christ.

My dearest Clara,

This is the way one ought to attend to God's servants.

O the marvel!

“Nor yet don’t I neither, Mrs. Smiley,” said the wife.

For faith and godliness are allied to each other, and sisters; and he who believes in Him is godly, and he also who is godly, believes the more.

And because He is not a creature, without doubt He is the Creator Who produces all things together with the Father and the Son.

The news of Shand’s return was soon common in Cambridge.

Indeed I do not care about it as much as a man should do.

Again, what a want of sense does it show to distribute good and evil without regard to personal merit; to say that a star is beneficent because it occupies a certain place; that it becomes evil, because it is viewed by another star; and that if it moves ever so little from this figure it loses its malign influence.

At last, however, Mary got her hands ready for action; the ring was in the plate with the two halfcrowns; Father John was standing between the two matrimonial aspirants; Ussher and Feemy were close behind Mary, and Brady was sitting down on the right hand of Denis; and the priest opened his book and began.

Such is our doctrine of punishment; and the inculcation of this doctrine turns many from their sins.

Since, therefore, in the six books preceding this, we have explained previous (heretical opinions), it now seems proper not to be silent respecting the (doctrines) of Basilides, which are the tenets of Aristotle the Stagyrite, not (those) of Christ.

And mamma and Camilla have gone out to Mrs. Camadge’s.” Mr. Gibson muttered some word to the effect that he hoped he had kept nobody at home; and, as he did so, he remembered that he had distinctly said that he would come on this evening.

How, therefore, do I measure this very time itself?

Hitherto there had been little between them but weeping for their father.

For Levi begot Kohath, Kohath begot Amminadab, Amminadab begot Korah, Korah begot Assir, Assir begot Elkanah, Elkanah begot Zuph, Zuph begot Tahath, Tahath begot Eliel, Eliel begot Jeroham, Jeroham begot Elkanah, Elkanah begot Samuel.

He was still straight; did not fumble much in his walk; and had that decent look of military decorum which, since the days of Cæsar and the duke, has been always held to accompany a hook-nose.

Hence, as we know, it has been publicly read in churches, and I have found that some of the most ancient writers used it.

My wife, getting me apart as I walked round the circle distributing viands, remarked that “the woman was a fool, and would disgrace herself.” But I observed that after the disposal of that bumper she worshipped the rosy god in theory only, and therefore saw no occasion to interfere.

At any rate we must all of us make the best of him for Fanny’s sake.

4. We, also being on the spot ourselves, have observed large crowds in one day; some suffering decapitation, others torture by fire; so that the murderous sword was blunted, and becoming weak, was broken, and the very executioners grew weary and relieved each other.

If, then, you deny that Christ was cursed, you must deny that He died; and then you have to meet, not Moses, but the apostles.

And since this engagement with Sir Francis had become a fact, her manner had become perhaps a little more humble.

What is corrupt speech?

Chapter XIII. A Communication of Importance

She was tall and well-made, we may almost say robust.

“I suppose you will marry soon now. You ought to be married,” said Gregory, in a melancholy tone, in which was told something of the disappointment of his own passion.

“I have told you enough, Lord Hampstead.”

But there was no reason why he should not have done so.

[2 Samuel 12:8] Whenever then you see a young man that has received a paternal inheritance without labor and continues wicked, be assured that his punishment is increased and the vengeance is made more intense.

And He affirms that they act with satanic spirit who divide the Church of God, so that He includes the heretics and schismatics of all times, to whom He denies forgiveness, for every other sin is concerned with single persons, this is a sin against all.

For to your statement, this was equally a fault, we at once give direct contradiction.

“At any rate, you must understand,” continued Mrs. Mountjoy, “that I will not permit it.

She stood for a moment trembling, with her hands clenched, and with a look of scorn upon her lips and brow that he had never seen before; and then she threw herself on a sofa, and, burying her face, sobbed aloud, while her whole body was shaken as with convulsions.

If Crosbie would but illtreat her,—illtreat her with some antenuptial barbarity,—and if only he could be called in to avenge her wrongs!

I have sometimes wished to see during my lifetime a combined republication of those tales which are occupied with the fictitious county of Barsetshire.

For they saw that all desire for honourable conduct was removed, all marriage-ties undone, and the Divine and the human law simultaneously undermined, if it were allowed for men of this kind to live anywhere under such a creed.

If she were to declare plainly that nothing could bring about such a marriage, would not her mother desist?

But if it is said that only in the glorious advent of Christ war will be waged with Amalek, how great will the fulfilment of Scripture be which says, 'God will wage war against Amalek with concealed hand!'

“What is the good of all that, mamma?”

And even to him, changing places as it were, he often acted as though, while really master, he had been inferior; to such a degree that, for the most part, he drew off his [servant's] boots and cleaned them with his own hand; while they took their meals together, the real master, however, generally acting the part of servant.

Chapter 8. Other Arts Made Subservient to Idolatry. Lawful Means of Gaining a Livelihood Abundant

And each man shall sit under his vine and under his fig tree; and there shall be none to terrify: for the mouth of the Lord of hosts has spoken it.

“Thank you; that’s very kind,” said Mr. Prendergast; but the sarcasm was altogether lost upon his hearer. “Some lawyers, as I was saying, would in such a case have advised their clients to keep all their suspicions, nay all their knowledge, to themselves. Why play the game of an adversary? they would ask. But I have thought it better that we should have no adversary.”

Perhaps there had been questionings among them concerning the Resurrection, and there were many who troubled them, not by temptations, nor by dangers, but by acting the part of teachers.

Ep. IX.

You desire to live under idols.

As to its truth,—of course the letter was gospel to her.

And see wisdom and moderation of mind.

But this was certain,—that no one could be put into possession of the property till the court had decided to whom it belonged.

It cannot be as you propose.

For I have heard many rebuking me, in the pilgrimage of this world near me, following the circuit of time, and refusing to return with me to the eternal country.

But he used to be left by the demon and if he remained outside the oratory, he would suffer no harm; but, if he attempted to enter it, he was at once delivered to the evil spirit and vexed.

“I am very glad you have come back, Godfrey,” said the Major, meeting him in the hall.

“Of course he must come if he will,” she said to herself when she received his note. “It can make no matter. He will say nothing half so hard to me as what I say to myself all day long.” But when the morning came, and the hour came, and the knock at the door for which her ears were on the alert, her heart misgave her, and she felt that the present moment of her punishment, though not the heaviest, would still be hard to bear.

Because he repented not as he ought.

Moreover there is this by the great favour of Almighty God; that among those who are divided from the doctrine of Holy Church there is no unity, since every kingdom divided against itself shall not stand [Luke 11].

If he did not look after the cart, somebody else would.

Under such an arrangement a man may be excused for a desire to put away childish things very early in life.

And so also in those who fail to receive the Gift, some are altogether animal or bestial, according as they are either foolish or wicked; and this, I think, has to be added to their other sins, that they have no reverence at all for this Gift, but look upon it as a mere gift— to be acquiesced in if given them, and if not given them, then to be neglected.

Firstly, it may be understood to deny the personal distinctions in the Trinity.

[Romans 8:24-25] Full righteousness, therefore, will only then be reached, when fullness of health is attained; and this fullness of health shall be when there is fullness of love, for love is the fulfilling of the law; [Romans 13:10] and then shall come fullness of love, when we shall see Him even as He is.

Thus, when you have kept silence I have kept silence too, and have not cared to remonstrate with you, lest I should be thought more anxious to conciliate a person of influence than to cultivate a friend.

In her troubles and her poverty,—especially in her solitude, she had often thought of that other older man who had wanted to make her his wife,—sometimes almost with regret: There would have been duties for her and a home, and a mode of life more fitting to her feminine nature than this solitary tedious existence.

Let them say by what sacrifice they have been reconciled, by what blood-shedding brought back.

Of his lower limbs the lost use had not returned to him, so that in all his efforts at vehemence he was controlled by his own want of vitality.

The Boer’s house consists of a large middle chamber in which the family live and eat and work,—but do not cook.

That terrible sadness had already told greatly upon him.

also a woolwashing establishment which had just been set up with new fashioned machinery, and then we had seen all that The Paarl had to shew us in the way of its productions.

“John went last night. We do not quite know how ill he is. He does not write, and we doubt whether we get at the truth. I was very nearly going with him; and then, sir, you would not have seen me—at all.”

‘Oh, mamma, I would not abuse him for worlds—I know how good he is, I know how you love him, but, but—-’ and Gertrude, though very little given to sobbing moods, burst into tears.

For if He who has this attribute is the Most Good, you will have first to relinquish that position of yours, that the very contact with evil is incompatible with such a Being, that is, with the most good God.

And whither do we go after death, unless there is a depth deeper than this depth in which we are in the flesh and in this mortal state?

Chapter IX. The Election at Baslehurst

“He always wants that when he comes home. I’ve got a bit of money, and he thinks there’s some one to earn a morsel of bread for him—or rayther a glass of gin. I must go this time.”

“I must see her the last thing,—about nine, but I can look up again afterwards, for a minute or so. I don’t stay long with her now: it’s better not.”

For if this distinction exists, your theory becomes fatal to itself.

She had felt sure that he had despised her from the moment in which she had told him of her engagement.

At Abraham's birth, then, the second kings of Assyria and Sicyon respectively were Ninus and Europs, the first having been Belus and Ægialeus.

“That’s because people don’t understand,” said Tom. “It is because I am so earnest about it, and because I can’t bear the disappointment! There isn’t one at Travers and Treason who doesn’t know that if I’d married Ayala I should have settled down as quiet a young man as there is in all London. You ask the governor else himself. As long as I thought there was any hope I used to be there steady as a rock at half-past nine. Everybody knew it. So I should again, if she’d only come round.”

For in the first place indeed we do not wish to be brought into this necessity; but if we are so brought, we fulfill our own part, we cast around the chains.

That some remnant of Puritan ascetism should be found in the writings of a novelist from Concord, in Massachusetts, would seem natural to an English reader, — though I doubt whether there be much of the flavor of the Mayflower left at present to pervade the literary parterres of Boston.

We have deemed it proper to subjoin to these letters a copy of this their declaration, lest we should leave any pretext to the heretics for entering into a fresh conspiracy, by which they might stir up the smouldering embers of their own malice, and according to their custom, rekindle the flames of discord.

I am not come to do My own will, but the will of Him that sent Me [John 6:38]: and again, Therefore has the Father loved Me because I do all things that are pleasing unto Him : and, Father, Your will be done.

“It doesn’t sound at all ugly to me,” said Bell.

He did the same to other nations, having sent before him Holofernes whom he had appointed master of his host, with a hundred and twenty thousand foot-soldiers, and twelve thousand cavalry.

‘Say that I am not a curse to you, George!’

Though she would still defend her late husband if any attack were made upon his memory, not the less did she feel that hers had been the fault, though the punishment had come upon them all.

If you strike with your fist upon a pillar, you are hurt: and do you think that where you strike God with your blasphemy, you are not yourself broken?

Since then the danger in fasting is so great to those who do not know how they ought to fast, we should learn the laws of this exercise, in order that we may not run uncertainly, nor beat the air, nor while we are fighting contend with a shadow.

Where is the preaching of the resurrection?

This is the very question which the blessed apostle thus answers to those who propose it with more curiosity than propriety, O man, who are you that repliest against God?

Have you seen a storm risen up against you?

You can not, then, heretic, build up a false doctrine from the custom of human procreation, nor yet gather the wherewithal for such work from our discourse, for we cannot compass the greatness of infinite Godhead, of Whose greatness there is no end, in our straitened speech.

The day before she came he was over at the palace with the pretence of asking permission to come and see his cousin soon after her arrival, but in truth with the idea of talking about Hetta to the only friend to whom he had looked for sympathy in his trouble.

Of these two blessings, then, which we have said flow from God's goodness, as from a fountain, towards our nature, vitiated by sin and condemned to punishment, the one, propagation, was conferred by God's benediction when He made those first works, from which He rested on the seventh day.

Then the Marchioness saw that a compromise was necessary.

Augusta Gresham had perceived early in life that she could not obtain success either as an heiress, or as a beauty, nor could she shine as a wit; she therefore fell back on such qualities as she had, and determined to win the world as a strong-minded, useful woman. That which she had of her own was blood; having that, she would in all ways do what in her lay to enhance its value. Had she not possessed it, it would to her mind have been the vainest of pretences.

Indeed such, he said, was his interest in the case that he had already gone further than he ought to have done out of his own pocket.

Those few words about “various sets” and the “mixing of things” had stabbed her to the very heart,—as had been intended.

Colburn’s “ was an old affair in those days, and I doubt whether “ Bentley’s “ was not already in existence.

Mr. Glascock was in truth very much disturbed.

“You think he would have a better career in London?” said Lily, speaking under the influence of her superior presence of mind.

Therefore this passage has been opened for the purpose of speaking.

“But we cannot tell how long he may mean it; nor can we tell as yet whether such a connection would be good for Rachel, even if he should remain stedfast in such meaning. If you ask me, Mrs. Ray—”

Now this being the case, you have both the clay made glorious by the hand of God, and the flesh more glorious still by His breathing upon it, by virtue of which the flesh not only laid aside its clayey rudiments, but also took on itself the ornaments of the soul.

There can be no doubt that foundations, especially among the hills, belong to some city.

It is on this account that the apostle says, The letter kills, but the Spirit gives life.

For the law of sin is really what the fall of its first father brought on mankind by that fault of his, against which there was uttered this sentence by the most just Judge: Cursed is the ground in your works; thorns and thistles shall it bring forth to you, and in the sweat of your brow shall you eat bread.

In what manner, therefore, has the revelation been made?

The “filing of his mind” only occurred to him because the words were otherwise apt.

We must always stand under arms and in battle array, ready to engage the foe.

Hating him as she had learned to do, hating him as she acknowledged to herself that she did, still she had endeavoured to do her duty by him.

Angry as she was with the man, ready as she was to complain of him, to rebel against him—perhaps to separate herself from him forever, nevertheless she found it to be a cruel grievance that she should not sit at table with him on the morning of his going.

“Where is she?” asked Lizzie, thinking that she would like to see her own predecessor.

The two lovers were alone for one moment, during which Marie lifted up her face, and Sir Felix kissed her lips.

He had almost taught himself to believe that it would be a good deed to squeeze what remained of life out of that violent old throat.

It was in vain that Norman’s last word was still ringing in his ears.

It was well that there should be poor gentry, in order that they might act as satellites to those who, like himself, had money.

He was her husband, and she would be true to him.

I know what I am, and what I am like to become.

I speak here of my opinion as to the ultimate success of secession and the folly of the war, repudiating any concurrence of my own in the ignoble but natural sentiment alluded to in the last paragraph.

These we divide into two issues: some will be remissible, some irremissible: in accordance wherewith it will be doubtful to no one that some deserve chastisement, some condemnation.

Ver. 6. Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with Him, that the body of sin might be destroyed.

For often when the recollection of outrageous men has come over me, and of the deeds done by them, it makes my heart swell.

I pass by the things relating to the work itself with which they find fault, in which matter they are ridiculously mad; I assume that which belongs to the subject of which we are now treating.

For those things which agreeably to the common opinion are believed to perish, the nature either of our faith or of the truth will not permit us to suppose to be destroyed.

Melmotte kept his seat steadily till seven, at which hour the House adjourned till nine.

The truth of God, in the Scripture of God, is better than virginity of man in the mind or flesh of any.

Now the Gnostic must be erudite.

“John will be down here next week,” said the par

For what says Paul?

The idea had come simply from the kaplan without consultation with any one, but to the Frau it seemed as though the whole valley were already preparing for her departure.

And the third day He rose again according to the Scriptures; and ascended into heaven: and shall come again to judge the quick and the dead, etc.

But no idea comes across the reader’s mind of sinful love.

But when He says, saving for the cause of fornication, He has not said of which of them, whether the man or the woman.

And what more helpful to wisdom than the night ?

But the innkeeper’s mind was at present too full of trouble to allow of his going off either to the woodcutting or to the farm.

Hear, for instance, Abraham saying, [Genesis 18:27] But I am but dust and ashes; and again, God [saying] of Moses, that [Numbers 12:3] he was the meekest of all men.

“Oh, no. Would you like to dine alone with him?”

He had four horses there, and must sell at least three of them.

When he went back to his old seat, she only smiled again.

He that honours not the Son, honours not the Father who has sent Him.

“What horrible things, Mr Cheesacre?”

Thus, therefore, she strove after holiness, and was declared a holy and wonderful temple fit for the most high God.

George Hotspur’s lie was believed.

Baptism, therefore, washes away indeed all sins— absolutely all sins, whether of deeds or words or thoughts, whether original or added, whether such as are committed in ignorance or allowed in knowledge; but it does not take away the weakness which the regenerate man resists when he fights the good fight, but to which he consents when as man he is overtaken in any fault; on account of the former, rejoicing with thanksgiving, but on account of the latter, groaning in the utterance of prayers.

The bridegroom was not, indeed, quite a lord as yet, but it was known to all men that he must be a lord in a very short time, and the bride was treated with more than usual bridal honours because she belonged to a legation.

Who that is acquainted with the mystery of God could so significantly relate the law of God, as a man far removed from the knowledge of the truth has set forth that law?

Sir Harry frowned, and answered him very shortly, “Yes, we shall go there in June.”

[Matthew 17:25] And when Cephas entered the house, Jesus anticipated him, and said unto him, What do you think, Simon?

It is natural that a mother should be as proud when her daughter marries an Earl’s heir as when her son becomes Senior Wrangler; and when we meet a lady in Mrs. Spalding’s condition who purposely abstains from mentioning the name of her titled daughter, we shall be disposed to judge harshly of the secret workings of that lady’s thoughts on the subject.

People, you know, may have too much genius, or may have too little.” Which of the two he thought was our case he did not say; but he did promise to hear my story of “ The New Inmate “ read, with reference to its possible insertion in another periodical publication with which he had lately become connected.

Chapter 15. Of Folly, Wisdom, Piety, Equity, and Justice.

For however much a man be justified, yet so long as he remains in this life, he can always be more approved and better.

On Repentance

Let me therefore say in a few words to your Charity, that the presbyter Boniface has not been discovered by me to be guilty of any crime, and that I have never believed, and do not yet believe, any charge brought against him.

What then say those boasters?

But the word has come to signify a vast flowery plain, which in seasons of drought is terribly arid, over which the weary traveller has often to be dragged day after day without seeing a tree, or a green blade of grass; but which in spring becomes covered.

And thus it is not the things signified, but the qualities and peculiarities of words, which possess a certain power for this or that purpose.

The man can become God, and a child of God.

Let us not therefore drive away grace.

From night and Erebus sprung air and morn.

Let then our Lord speak; let Christ with us, whole Christ, speak.

He next says also why He died once [only]: because He became a ransom by one death.

He names as his adversaries, Philogonius, bishop of Antioch, Hellanicus, of Tripolis, and Macarius, of Jerusalem.

This also is from that vein of friendship.

Who knows anything about it?

Early in the winter he had gone to Chaldicotes and to Gatherum Castle, consorting with gamblers, Whigs, atheists, men of loose pleasure, and Proudieites.

For the mystery of iniquity does already work; only he who now hinders must hinder, until he be taken out of the way.

There was no single object of interest before her.

Abimelech is preserved from touching Rebecca and so sinning against God.

Saturn, as you again hand down by your books and teachers?

And he did speak to his nephew about it, and even wrote to him more than once.

And in the West Indies it is absolutely necessary that these people should be treated with dignity; and it is not always very easy to reach the proper point of dignity.

But this also he adds; behold the rather.

Wherefore they began the battle, not by preparing weapons, nor arms, nor bugles; for such preparation is hateful to them, on account of the God they bear about in their conscience.

For when that king had asked the man what he meant by keeping hostile possession of the sea, he answered with bold pride, What you mean by seizing the whole earth; but because I do it with a petty ship, I am called a robber, while you who does it with a great fleet are styled emperor.

No charge was brought of an improper hankering after any special female, because Lady Scroope found herself bound in conscience not to commit her correspondent; but very heavy injunctions were laid upon him as to his general conduct, and he was eagerly entreated to remember his great duty and to come home and settle himself in England.

We will go, Marion.

For a man may do no work, and (yet) lay up treasure for the morrow; and a man may work, yet be careful for nothing; for carefulness and work are not the same thing; it is not as trusting to his work that a man works, but, that he may impart to him that needs.

But sympathy in tastes will not carry the two far together, as, little as may be their capacity for fathoming depths, each will be able to fathom the depth of the other.

Then in what capacity, if you are ashamed to tell us?

I believe I need make no secret of having known that your niece Lilian is engaged to Mr Crosbie, of London.

He had come there for a purpose, and he intended to go on with it.

Flee from that yoke of slavery, which riches impose.

A huge blue volume was then published, containing, among other things, all Mr. Nogo’s 2,250 questions and their answers; and so the Limehouse and Rotherhithe bridge dropped into oblivion and was forgotten.

I shall keep my own necklace, and Mr. Camperdown may do anything he pleases.

Will you tell my uncle that I think you had better get Lady Anna to stay at the rectory as long as possible. I’ll let you know all about it very soon. Best love to aunt Jane.

Him God the Father wished to be loved by all, and accordingly He has been pleased wholly to extinguish those opinions which have originated with men, and in regard to which there is nothing like certainty— that He the true Prophet might be the more sought after, and that He whom they had obscured should show to men the way of truth.

Yet these are just as much toys as those; but the other are the causes of life, and glory, and repose.

Now Lady Carbury, when she was released from her thraldom at the age of forty, had no idea at all of passing her future life amidst the ordinary penances of widowhood.

For when I was about to enter the region of Cappadocia, having escaped from that man of Galatia, who nearly threatened me with death, many persons met me on the way saying the lord Pharetrius is awaiting you, and going about in all directions for fear of missing the pleasure of meeting you, and making every possible endeavour to see you, and embrace you, and show you all manner of affectionate regard; and he has set the monasteries of men and women in motion for this purpose.

She obtained a son.

The last enemy, moreover, who is called death, is said on this account to be destroyed, that there may not be anything left of a mournful kind when death does not exist, nor anything that is adverse when there is no enemy.

He sat at his ease in a comfortable chair, and amused himself by watching her different little plots.

And again the prophet says, The sinner being an hundred years old is accursed [Isaiah 65:20].

And when she met Canon Pountner and stopped a moment in the street while that worthy divine shook hands with her husband, that was an additional pleasure to her.

I don’t like being alone, so I get you to come and live with me.

“I’m pretty well, thank ye, Mr. Heathcote. I hope you’re the same, and the ladies. The master’s about somewhere, I take it.—Picky, go and find the master.” Picky was one of the Polynesians, who at once started on his errand.

He who was begotten from the principle of that fire took six roots, and those primary ones, of the originating principle of generation.

The Purification.

But that by the question He may make them more familiar, and impart to them greater boldness, and show them that they are worthy to hear Him; for it was probable that they would blush and be afraid, as being unknown to him, and as having heard such accounts of Him from the testimony of their teacher.

And then, after a while, she felt that were she to do so,—should she now deliberately determine to throw herself into Mrs. Askerton’s arms,—she must at the same time give up all idea of becoming Captain Aylmer’s wife.

But whomsoever your Fraternity has perceived to be worthy of so great a ministry, having ascertained that their manners and actions fit them for ordination, them, by permission of our authority, you may freely promote to the aforesaid office.

Wherefore, returning abundant thanks, we beg that you will deign to afford your support in full measure to these monks also who have been sent to him, and to aid them on their onward journey, so that the more amply you show your kindness to them, the greater return you may expect from Almighty God, whom they serve.

In some things his life had been successful; but these were matters in which the world does not write down a man’s good luck as being generally conducive to his happiness.

There was nothing too monstrous for him to suggest to himself as soon as the attorney had left him.

Now, while the passage actually denies that He was born of the will of the flesh, how is it that it did not also deny (that He was born) of the substance of the flesh?

A novel, she knew well, was most unlike a rose, which by any other name will smell as sweet.

Mr Palliser felt that there was nothing peculiarly gracious in this.

Chapter 4 [IV.]— Victor's Simile to Show that God Can Create by Breathing Without Impartation of His Substance.

Do they ever rise in opposition?

Mrs. Grantly was determined that, unless provoked, she would say nothing to him till the following morning.

Homily 89

He paid his visit to Mr. Jones, the curate, feeling no qualms of conscience there, as he rather boasted of all the members of Parliament he was going to meet, and of the bishop who would be with them.

The declaration of Apostolic teaching then somehow rises, as it were to greater heights, and though it is self-consistent throughout, yet it supports the mystery of the perfect faith, with a still more express statement, and says: And though we have known Christ according to the flesh, yet now we know Him so no longer, i.e., as formerly we knew Him as man as well as God, yet now only as God.

These things I meditated upon, and You were with me; I sighed, and You heard me; I vacillated, and You guided me; I roamed through the broad way [Matthew 7:13] of the world, and You did not desert me.

Germanus: And how is it that we see them not only scorned and shunned by everybody, but actually always kept away from the Lord's communion in our provinces, in accordance with these words of the gospel: Give not that which is holy to the dogs, neither cast your pearls before swine; [Matthew 7:6] while you tell us that somehow we ought to hold that the humiliation of this temptation is brought upon them with a view to their purification and profit?

“Well;—yes. I owe next to nothing, but I’ll be hanged if I can get anything done for me without being dunned up to my very eyes. You know that chap of Neefit’s? I’m blessed if he didn’t ask me whether I meant to settle last year’s bill, before he should send me home a couple of cords I ordered! Now I don’t owe Neefit twenty pounds if all was told.”

But why did He appear not to all, but to the Apostles only?

Therefore it is not a priest's duty to interfere in money affairs.

And He requires not faith here. For both by coming to Him, and by leaving their cities, and by diligently seeking Him, and by abiding with Him even when hunger was pressing, they display their own faith.

Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they might entangle Him in His talk.

I have here a very wide gulf of expunged Scripture to leap across; however, I alight on the place where the apostle bears record of Israel that they have a zeal of God— their own God, of course— but not according to knowledge.

“He himself is honest.”

You are fairer, says (the Psalmist), than the children of men; grace is poured into Your lips; therefore God has blessed You for ever.

If you have children already, why do you want to marry?

[Matthew 12:48] In this manner heretics either wrest plain and simple words to any sense they choose by their conjectures, or else they violently resolve by a literal interpretation words which imply a conditional sense and are incapable of a simple solution, as in this passage.

No one is wise, no one is faithful, no one excels in dignity, but the Christian; and no one is a Christian but he who perseveres even to the end.

Could the servant of God stand there, and speak and renounce Christ, when he had already renounced the devil and the world?

“Who was it, Carry?”

Nor, however, let any one imagine that souls are immediately judged after death.

If, however, a continuous fast is to be concluded within a week, there is no day upon which it may more suitably be concluded than the Lord's day; but if the body is not refreshed until more than a week has elapsed, the Lord's day is not in that case selected as a day of fasting, but is found occurring within the number of days for which it had seemed good to the person to make a vow.

Wherefore we beseech your piety, most devout emperor, that we who are persons consecrated to the ministry, and holding the faith and sentiments of the church and of the holy Scriptures, may by your pacific and devoted piety be reunited to our mother, the Church, all superfluous questions and disputings being avoided: that so both we and the whole church being at peace, may in common offer our accustomed prayers for your tranquil reign, and on behalf of your whole family.'

2. Then he again mentions St. Peter's word, made, and the passage in the Epistle to the Hebrews, which says that Jesus was made by God an Apostle and High Priest: and, after giving a sufficient answer to the charges brought against him by Eunomius, shows that Eunomius himself supports Basil's arguments, and says that the Only-begotten Son, when He had put on the flesh, became Lord.

As well might a robber accuse others of covetousness.

“You have been keeping yourself up for the ball,” said Rowan. “Precious people are right to make themselves scarce. And now what vacancies have you got for me?”

Chapter XIII. Saulsby Wood

Luke Rowan Declares His Plans as to the Brewery

For on what account would ye kill Me?

Looking, however, from their office windows into the Thames, one might be tempted to imagine that the infernal navigation with which they are connected is not situated so far distant from the place of their labours.

On leaving Henri in the streets of Saumur, he went to his lodging, took with him what money he had, got upon his horse, and rode out of the town by the temporary bridge which had been put up for the transit of the shaved prisoners.

First, that being for a short time forsaken by the Lord, and observing with all humility the weakness of our own heart, we may not be puffed up on account of the previous purity of heart.

“Not for an hour,” said the Marquis.

And why speak I of the things in heaven?

She swore to herself, over and over again, scores and scores of oaths, that it was so; but each time that she swore, some lowest corner in the depth of her conscience seemed to charge her with a falsehood.

They were both truly sorry for their aunt, in the common parlance of the world; but their sorrow was of that modified sort which does not numb the heart, and make the surviving sufferer feel that there never can be a remedy.

I laugh often enough at the little coteries of gods in each municipality, which have their honours confined within their own city walls.

The elder girl was so much shocked by all this that there came upon her gradually a feeling of doubt whether their joint life could be continued.

He will be able to explain to us—and I trust I may be able to induce him to do so, for it is possible that he may be a little coy—he will be able to explain to us why my client, who is in no way connected either with the Scotts, or the Golightlys, or the Figgs, or the Jaquêtanàpes, why he was made the lady’s trustee; and he will also, perhaps, tell us, after some slight, gentle persuasion, whether he has himself handled, or attempted to handle, any of this lady’s money.’

If He ordained these events otherwise, why do they not come to pass otherwise than He ordained them, that is, as He ordained them?

He had an Irish property in County Sligo, partly in the town, but chiefly on the sea-coast.

I’ll go this very moment to Pickering.” Mr. Pickering at this time was one of the three Vice-Chancellors.

But He who is the most merciful Lord of faith has both secured the Church in the citadel of authority by most famous œcumenical Councils and the Apostolic sees themselves, and furnished her with the abundant armour of equally invincible reason by means of a few men of pious erudition and unfeigned spirituality.

Who can be afraid of Antony conquered who did not fear him in his strength?

Pooh, pooh!

Squares should arise around the Chelsea barracks, with sides open to the water, for which Belgravia would be deserted.

Indeed!

As regards our own belief, it is no more true that Jesus died than that Elias is immortal.

Three in Individualities or Hypostases, if any prefer so to call them, or persons, for we will not quarrel about names so long as the syllables amount to the same meaning; but One in respect of the Substance— that is, the Godhead.

For in every act of mercy on the lost, of justification of the unrighteous, what do we praise but the wondrous works of God?

They’re all good, and he’ll give you ten per cent.

Good-morning, sir.

On the other hand, what have these persons to show us from the infamous Thalia?

He was sure, on the contrary, that were he to do so, he and his father would go back to the hotel as enemies.

With such a prospect before us, are you angry that our nature is advancing to its goal along the path appointed for us?

Chapter 25. Plato an Imitator of Moses in Framing Laws

“But I don’t think that I have a right to be in a man’s house without his leave. I don’t think I am justified in staying there against his will because he is my brother.” Mr. Knox could only shrug his shoulders.

It would be difficult to state the idea of this slow but excellent story, which is a capital example of interest produced by the quietest conceivable means.

As to the spiritual meaning of the different stones—what is their nature, and to what kind of soul the name of each precious stone especially applies—we cannot at present stay to examine.

The pistol was dropped on the floor of the court house.

And hence he himself became the sacrifice of God, whose spiritual love inflamed him, and into whose ineffable and incorporeal embrace he yearned to cast himself.

Van Hoppen. Have you?

But she would not talk of love, or hold his hand, or turn her cheek to his.

But it was stated in the census taken in 1844 that there were sixteen thousand white people in the island, and about three hundred thousand blacks.

6. If any one should assert that all those who have enjoyed the testimony of righteousness, from Abraham himself back to the first man, were Christians in fact if not in name, he would not go beyond the truth.

He has to thank himself for it, and we are not now accountable, for it was not possible to spare him without hurt (to ourselves).

His short, dark, curly hair—that was always kept clipped round his head—was beginning to show a tinge of gray, but the huge moustache on his upper lip was still of a thorough brown, as was also the small morsel of beard which he wore upon his chin.

Did not Paul care for them that were without as well?

With down o'erspreads the bloom of changing skin;

In the town, but not of it, within the walls, but forbidden all ingress to the streets, there they dwell, a race of mournfullest Pariahs.

If it is your wish, be also initiated; and you shall join the choir along with angels around the unbegotten and indestructible and the only true God, the Word of God, raising the hymn with us.

For wherein does the cross, that typifies the Lord, differ from a cross that does not do so?

Chapter 6.— Concerning the Covetousness of Ninus, Who Was the First Who Made War on His Neighbors, that He Might Rule More Widely.

Members of Parliament, and the friends of Members of Parliament, are apt to teach themselves that it means nothing; that Lord This does not hate Mr That, or think him a traitor to his country, or wish to crucify him; and that Sir John of the Treasury is not much in earnest when he speaks of his noble friend at the “Foreign Office” as a god to whom no other god was ever comparable in honesty, discretion, patriotism, and genius.

Therefore He shows that this very thing is the act of men opposing God.

She had made up her little speech. “I hope they are quite well at Yoxham,” she said, in that low, soft, silver voice which he had told himself would so well befit the future Countess Lovel.

I spoke not thus to testify that my power and the Father's are equal; but now He does quite the contrary, and confirms their suspicion, and clenches it, and that too when they were exasperated.

Observe how bitterly he speaks here against their deceivers.

And since also the Holy Spirit equally is truly, the Father and Son together are not anything greater than He, since neither are they more truly.

We are one body under one Head, so that you share our toils, and we share your repose: for if one member suffer, all the members suffer with it; or if one member be honoured, all the members rejoice with it.

“I heard nothing as to her thoughts of living,” said John Gordon “Nor in the interview which I had with her yesterday did I hear a word fall from her as to herself. We have got to form our ideas as to that from circumstances which shall certainly not be made to appear by her own speech. When you speak against me—”

With this faith all the churches throughout the world are in agreement, in Spain, in Britain, in Gaul, in all Italy and Campania, in Dalmatia and Mysia, in Macedonia, in all Hellas, in all the churches throughout Africa, Sardinia, Cyprus, Crete, Pamphylia and Isauria, and Lycia, those of all Egypt and Libya, of Pontus, Cappadocia and the neighbouring districts and all the churches of the East except a few who have embraced Arianism.

Not even thus is it to be despaired of Your mercy.

This was proved to the world by the choice of his house for a meeting of the party on the 30th of March.

Nor is the earth alone ignorant, but the sun also : for the sun was created on the fourth day, without knowing what had been made in the three days before him; and he who knows not the things made in the three days before him, cannot tell forth the Maker Himself.

For as wicked deeds, and words, and thoughts have already passed away, and cease to exist, so far as regards the mere movements of the mind and the body, and yet their guilt remains after they have passed away and no longer exist, unless it be done away by the remission of sins; so, contrariwise, in this law of concupiscence, which is not yet done away but still remains, its guilt is done away, and continues no longer, since in baptism there takes place a full forgiveness of sins.

She had nevertheless been anxious to hear what guests were expected at the Manor House. Sir Felix had promised to come down on Saturday, with the intention of returning on Monday, and Lady Carbury had hoped that some visiting might be arranged between Caversham and the Manor House, so that her son might have the full advantage of his closeness to Marie Melmotte.

And so the Blessed Apostles after Him from such words of His conceived so great a contempt of death, as not even to care for those who questioned them, but to answer, 'We ought to obey God rather than men [Acts 5:29].'

But of what use was it now?

For they are called philosophers, not Christians.

“Did you hear the news about Ussher?” continued Joe without moving, and in a whisper which the old woman could not hear. “That blackguard Ussher has escaped out of the counthry afther all, without paying any of us the debt that he owed us, for all the evils he’s done. He went away out of Mohill this night, an’ he’s not to be back agin; av I’d known it afore he started I’d have stopped him in the road, an’ by G——d he should niver have got alive out of the barony.”

“But you must tell me what he has said, and what it is he wants us to do. For your sake, if you ask us, Miss Mackenzie, we’ll do anything. We’ll sell the coats off our backs, if you wish it. You shall never lose one shilling by Rubb and Mackenzie as long as I have anything to do with the firm. But I’m sure you will excuse me if I say that we can do nothing at the bidding of that old cormorant.”

For, were the Son created, either he would not have worshipped Him, or he would have refrained from classing those who worship the creature along with idolaters, lest he himself should appear to be an idolater, in offering adoration to the created.

After this not a word was spoken between the two all the morning.

But what at all he will suffer, who at first did not hear, but required witnesses, or even refused to hear these, but was brought to the church, God knows; for we do not declare it, according to the precept, Judge not that you be not judged, [Matthew 7:1] until the Lord come, who will both bring to light the hidden things of darkness and make manifest the counsels of the hearts.

“He’ll be a clever chap who’ll undertake to look after Rachel’s conduct. I guess she’ll conduct herself mostly.”

“Did you tell him at the same time what his future income was to be?”

And how is it possible that he who saves shall not be good?

He carried the House with him throughout.” But at that time he was not yet twenty-four.

Let us inquire, therefore, whether tradition, unless it be written, should not be admitted.

[Matthew 23:37] For what advantage, I ask, does a multitude bring, if their system of living be vicious?

Then, at last, they came to another subject, as to which Lady Macleod declared that she had specially come on this special morning, forgetting, probably, that she had already made the same assertion with reference to the concert.

Gentlemen, she thought, certainly did do things which gentlemen would not have done forty years ago; and as for ladies,—they, doubtless, were changed altogether.

For there are virgins without the Temple of the King, the nuns among the heretics: they are virgins, it is true; but what will that profit them, unless they be led into the Temple of the King?

Nor let us think that we should, because of His grace, continue in the same sins as of old; but against that very pride, on account of which we are humiliated in them, let us, above all things, both vigilantly strive and ardently pray Him, knowing at the same time that it is by His gift that we have the power thus to strive and thus to pray; so that in every case, while we look not at ourselves, but raise our hearts above, we may render thanks to the Lord our God, and whenever we glory, glory in Him alone.She tried it, and her daughter had referred her prayer,—or had said that she would refer it,—to the decision of her hated lover; and the mother had at once lost all command of her temper.

Now if he had said, Go ye away unto Him, He is better than I, he would not have persuaded them, minded as they were not easily to be separated from him, but rather he would have been thought to say it out of modesty, and they would have been the more rivetted to him; or if he had held his peace, then again nothing was gained.

Since each of these terms, used by itself, has a meaning of its own, we must also suppose the relative conjunction in which they stand to be appropriate and germane to the terms.

I have suffered much, and of course I know that I must suffer more; but I am determined that I will face the worst of it at once.

“I have never known what was the precise nature of your father’s marriage settlement,” said he.

After Church the ladies returned in the carriage, and Lord George went to the house according to his appointment.

Chapter 5. The Time of his Appearance among Men.

And this was his mother!

That is the date on which in fact Natal did first become a British possession.

By raising the flesh He has given the promise of resurrection to us all, after giving the resurrection of His own precious body as a worthy pledge of ours.

For even among men one would not call a workman perfect if he were unable to finish his work, a single piece, by himself and without the aid of several others.

Florence, as she went home in the fly with her mother after the party at which Harry had spoken to her so openly, did not find the little journey very happy.

They went first to Vienna, and then back into Italy, and were unheard of by their English friends for nearly six months.

Hence it is that Christ is not only God, but very God indeed— very God of very God, insomuch that He Himself is the Truth.

But pretty women are capricious, and neither Mrs. Price nor Mrs. Cox were willing to abide by any such arrangement.

I can divorce Hampstead and his sister from my heart; but they will still be in some sort brother and sister to my poor boys.

It would take me too long to enumerate one by one the men who at their own self-impulse have put an end to themselves.

Now it is settled.

Even though no treaty should ever be refused its sanction by the Senate, the protecting power of the Senate in that matter would not on that account have been less necessary or less efficacious.

If, that is, neither men nor plants nor cattle can be born unless some soul from above has fallen into them, and if this fall is owing to some tendency to evil, then they evidently think that evil controls the creation of all beings.

Why should there have been pressure, unless there were reasons against her marrying him?

O the shame they were put to!

These were supported by the Government of the day, but the late Government in its ambitious desire to effect great things, discontinued this allowance.

“I’m not much troubled with either one or the other, I fancy. Things are being brought to such a pass with me that I am better without them.”

“And what have you settled on since you last spoke to me?”

For what they had no knowledge of, but expressed in words, that he confessed to be true.

He could not assure her that it would be so, but he had no doubt of it.

15. There was neither weeping nor lamentation under these misfortunes; but the famine stifled the natural affections. Those that were dying a lingering death looked with dry eyes upon those that had gone to their rest before them. Deep silence and death-laden night encircled the city.

You must abstain from all fornication; Because, he says, the Lord is an avenger in all these things.

For some such meaning seems to be indicated by John the Baptist, when he said to the multitude in the bodily absence of Jesus, There stands one among you whom you know not: He it is who comes after me, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to unloose.

Taking the easiest mode of reaching the capital of the Free State the traveller must be kept going six weary days in a Cobb’s coach, being an average of about thirteen hours a day upon the road.

For what is it that you suffer?

Battheus, for instance, by excessive abstinence and fasting, had worms crawl from his teeth; Halas, again, had not tasted bread for eighty years; and Heliodorus passed many nights without yielding to sleep, and added thereto seven days of fasting.

It would in fact appear that the Constitution as at present framed is fatal to all direct taxation.

The young Earl could not look him in the face as he stammered out his explanation and proposal.

And what is it we search for, except our own selves?

“What a thing it is to be a great lady,” said the maid, who may probably have reflected that the Duke of Omnium did not come here so often for nothing.

[Matthew 10:28] And since this does not happen before the soul is so joined to its body that they cannot be separated at all, it may be matter of wonder how the body can be said to be killed by that death in which it is not forsaken by the soul, but, being animated and rendered sensitive by it, is tormented.

So great is the privilege which impurity obtains at the hands of philosophers!

But the poor man when released from his daily labours, having his limbs completely tired, falls almost before he can lie down into a slumber that is sound, and sweet, and genuine, enjoying this reward, which is not a small one, of his fair day's toils.

The silence of the bush, and the feeling of great distances, and the dread of calamity almost crushed them.

When they wills they shall have nay,’

But He who cannot see the whole is offended by the deformity of the part, because he is blind to that which balances it, and to which it belongs.

O brother in Christ, beloved, venerable, and ardently longed for, we desire that the grace of God, as it is with you, may abide for ever.

“If I were you,” said the father, glad to catch the glimmer of assent which was hereby implied,—”if I were you I would do it thoroughly whilst I was about it. Had I seen so much when I was young I should have been a better man of business.”

Have not I chosen you twelve, and one of you is a devil?

Mrs. Woodward’s heart melted within her when she heard that Harry was really ill. She had gone on waiting day after day for an answer to her letter, but no answer came. No answer came, but in lieu thereof she heard that Harry was laid up at Normansgrove. She heard it, and Gertrude heard it, and in spite of the coming wedding there was very little joy at Surbiton Cottage.

And there came upon her a feeling of contempt for his cruelty.

Seeing that by being first he does not therefore receive any more of the grace (for the same gift is bestowed both on this person and that,) but the first is an honor in order of time only.

He had thought that it was so himself, and now from day to day he was becoming more assured of his own deficiency.

“I will take a lodging in Taunton.”

[Matthew 5:22] Nor again did He abolish all desire, but only that which is unlawful, for he says, Nevertheless, because of desires , let every man have his own wife.

I am ready and willing of my own accord to give myself to them Bid them come this night to the rereward of the house of this prison, and in the spot in which they shall hear a signal given on the wall from within, there let them make an excavation, and take me and do with me as they have been commanded.

Why should he trouble all those wigged counsellors, when one word from him would set all at rest?

“Papa,” said Gertrude, having followed him into a little sitting-room where he digested and arranged his telegrams when at Merle Park, “I wish something could be settled about Mr. Houston.”

‘I’d better take myself off to the inn,’ said Charley, ‘and get some clean clothes; that’s all I want. But how is Katie—and how is Linda?’

For this, according to my view, is the subjection of Christ; namely, the fulfilling of the Father's Will.

You are worthy of the quickening first-fruits.

The boiler of their large steamer had burst, scattering destruction far and near.

He heard that others also were being afflicted for his sake,

“If the chamber will allow me to wander away from paper for a moment, and to open the sores of a bleeding heart—”

The test as far as it was carried certainly supported my friend’s view.

There is a fixed number that belongs to that heavenly Jerusalem.

Blessed is he that knows how to be full in Christ.

But he did not assert this, which was far greater, but the lesser.

“Could not you tell her?” he had said to his mother, with very little of that manliness in his face on which his mother now so prided herself. But La Mere Bauche explained to him that it was a part of the general agreement that Marie was to hear his decision from his own mouth.

Hence after having said that we were justified, and having shown it from the Patriarch, and from the Spirit, and from the dying of Christ (for He would not have died unless He intended to justify), he next confirms from other sources also what he had at such length demonstrated.

And a fourth in addition to time is the way which leads to the truth.

Then she turned round slowly and made her way out at the churchyard gate, which opened on to the road close to the front door of the Small House.

I have finished the bread, by eating it: the coat, by making it.

But, as it is, we have been relieved from this apprehension, and we are firmly persuaded that in the great day he will appear in much radiance, shining forth near the King, and going with the angels in advance of Christ and clad with the robe of unutterable glory, and standing by the side of the King as he gives judgment, and acting as one of His chief ministers.

For, should any one allow that these were so applied by God, it must follow that the names of the idol gods of Greece were applied by Him also to the stars, and we must regard as true all the tales from mythological history that are told about those starry names, as though God Himself sanctioned their utterance.

Will you therefore dare to say that the deceiver, or the robber, or the oppressor of the fatherless and widows, or the sunderer of marriages, or the betrayer, the seller, the divider of the patrimony of other men, was a man of pure conscience?

And this the man has showed that owed ten thousand talents; from whom payment was at one time not demanded, at another time again demanded; not demanded, because of the lovingkindness of God; but demanded, because of his own wickedness, and because of his malice toward his fellow-servant.

A wet blanket of so terrible a size was in itself pernicious to the Cabinet, and heartrending to the poor Duke.

Frank was thoroughly out of breath: nothing came from his lips but half-muttered expletives and unintelligible denunciations of the iniquity of his foe.

And one and the same wine inclines some to rage, and others to merriment.

How, then, shall we act, being but ignorant dwellers set among these fresh tares in the old-standing harvest field?

And having committed unto us the word of reconciliation.

Chronicles of her early life have been written, at any rate copiously.

I do not say that in other respects the two cases were parallel.

Eloquence, if it be too easy, may become almost a curse.

If then he is a saint, but not in need, give not; for this were no gain.

Therefore in all the remaining days, let us persevere in virtuous conduct, repenting as is our duty, of all that we have neglected, whatever it may be; for there is no one free from defilement, though his course may have been but one hour on the earth, as Job, that man of surpassing fortitude, testifies.

A farmer in England does not grow the wheat, then grind it, and then make the bread.

There is no reason why I should, and I will not encourage false hopes.

At one time, she absolutely thought of asking her cousin, Kilcullen, about it:—this was just before his leaving Grey Abbey; he seemed so much more civil and kind than usual.

And she saw Madame Zamenoy no more, nor her uncle Karil, nor her cousin Ziska. Though she lived in the same city with them for three months after the night on which she had been taken to Rebecca’s house, she never again was brought into contact with her relations. Lotta she once saw, when walking in the street with Ruth; and Lotta too saw her, and endeavoured to address her; but Nina fled, to the great delight of Ruth, who ran with her; and Lotta Luxa was left behind at the street corner.

That Roden was intimate with Lord Hampstead had become known to his fellow-clerks.

For when we gather, as it were, into the form of a name the conception of any subject that arises in us, we declare our concept by words that vary at different times, not making, but signifying, the thing by the name we give it.

“Goodbye, then, George,” said Sir Lionel. “I suppose I shall see you before I leave town. I must say, you have made a bad affair of this will.”

If this person whoever he is is of the same age with yourself, he should honour your mother as though she were his own; and, if he is older, he should love you as a daughter and subject you to a mother's discipline.

Let us not thus pass over the praise of the Lord.

The time was when the privilege was mine of beginning my letters to you with a warmer show of love than the above word contains,—when I might and did call you dearest; but I lost that privilege through my own folly, and since that it has been accorded to another.

Major Tifto was present, and requested that your Lordship’s opinion should be asked as to his guilt. I do not know myself that we are warranted in troubling your Lordship on the subject. I am, however, commissioned by the majority of the gentlemen who were present to ask you whether you think that Major Tifto’s conduct on that occasion was of such a nature as to make him unfit to be the depositary of that influence, authority, and intimacy which ought to be at the command of a Master of Hounds.

He swore by all his gods that of course he meant to take them up.

It had been already made, only in its invisible condition it was then waiting to appear.

You were going to whip all creation the other day; and it has come to this!

Further, faith is assent free from all meddlesome inquisitiveness.

The reward offered to him was the thing which in all the world he liked best.

2 Corinthians 8:2

In a word, these, following out their dogmas in words, became enslaved to pleasures; some using concubines, some mistresses, and the most youths.

Some god comes out of a theatrical cloud and leaves the poor devil ten thousand a-year and a title.

And see with me, his lovingkindness.

They ran back instantly to years gone by,—over long years, as her few years were counted, and settled themselves on certain halcyon days, in which she had dreamed that he had loved her, and had fancied that she had loved him.

John Vavasor asked no further questions then, but declared at first that he should go to Westmoreland on the following day.

He dashed briskly up to the door, and rang the bell as though he feared neither Adelaide nor Lord Chiltern any more than he did his own servants at Spoon Hall.

Then up comes Bibulus, determined to 92be as good as I am; but he loses his whole cohort.” The failure made by Bibulus at soldiering is quite as much to him as his own success.

“Fiddlestick! But mind, I do not want you to be a lawyer. You must choose for yourself. If you don’t like that way of earning your bread, there are others.”

[440 v. 16] But what if one be falsely accused, and from peculiar circumstances be slandered?

“What is it? What has she done that she should be thus punished? Tell me, man, that she shall be your lawful wife.” As she said this she caught him roughly by the collar of his coat and shook him with her arm.

She was just allowed to join them when old Primero rode, and was obliged even to ask for that assistance.

And yet how easily can it be obscured and disguised by their ambiguous statements!

There was something of nobility in her gait, and she seemed thus to be taller than her inches.

The Prophets and Apostles then all preached Him absent; the Prophets before His coming according to the flesh, the Apostles after He was taken up; John alone proclaimed Him present.

For by conceding mild ailments he drew off keener ones; that, since the mind could not rise all at once to the relinquishing of all its vices, it might, while left in familiarity with some one of them, be taken off without difficulty from another.

Chapter 11. The Knowledge Which Comes Through Faith the Surest of All

For he is found to have not even spared the Roman Christians, whose custom he seems to himself to defend; but he is not aware how the force of his invectives recoils upon them, for it has escaped his observation.

Mrs. French shewed her brother’s letter to Bella,—and poor Bella was again sore-hearted, seeing that nothing was said in it of her claims. “It will be dreadful scandal to have it all in the papers!” said Bella.

What worse could any persecutor have done, if he had known that this (garb) had been chosen by a virgin?

Augustine answered: See what a difference there is between your calumnious words and our truthful assertions.

Well;—it was Green put me up to it.

He was a melancholy, proud, ignorant man, who could not endure a personal liberty, and who thought the assertion of social equality on the part of men of lower rank to amount to the taking of personal liberty;—who read little or nothing, and thought that he knew the history of his country because he was aware that Charles I had had his head cut off, and that the Georges had come from Hanover.

Hence it was that Crates the famous Theban, after throwing into the sea a considerable weight of gold, exclaimed, Go to the bottom, you evil lusts: I will drown you that you may not drown me.

Or who is Christ?

Then it occurred to the lady that as Melmotte was a name which might be too well known in New York, and which it therefore might be wise to change, Croll would do as well as any other.

Tell me, I pray you, is eternity worth it?

The third, who survived by the artifice of his mother Rhea, she put upon a she-goat and sent into heaven.

And she shall bring forth a Son, and you shall call His name Jesus.

For the Lord says, "Whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do; but do not ye after their works."

Let them tell you if it be commanded to adore the gods; for they are ignored in respect of that which they are especially able to do.

This circumstance by no means lowers the admiration due to the Creator's workmanship, but rather increases it; for the meanness of the substance, manifests the resource and adaptiveness of His art; since He has introduced such a harmony of parts in clay and ashes, and senses so various and manifold and capable of such spiritual wisdom.

[1 Peter 2:4] They shall be led into the Temple of the King.

For what good thing did not that mouth effect?

What is, Vainly?

Out of that hill which Daniel saw grow out of a small stone, and break all the kingdoms of the earth; and cover all the face of the earth.

Mr. Collins makes a surmise, by which the character of Cicero for honesty is impugned—without evidence.

It was rumored of him that he had a wife at home, whom he kept in moderate comfort on his winnings.

Or, how will you love Him who has first so loved you?

But they were surmounted by the most wonderfully pencilled eyebrows that ever nature unassisted planted on a woman’s face.

If the American gentleman should find out the fact and turn upon her, and ask her why he was charged more than others, how would she be able to answer him?

But how can a man born to save a nation, and to lead a people, be content to fill the chair of an under-secretary?

And you may tell him that I don’t defend myself, only I shall always think that he ought not to have said that Mr. Greystock wasn’t a gentleman before me.” When Lady Fawn left Lucy the matter was so far settled that Lucy had neither been asked to come down to dinner, nor had she been forbidden to seek another home.

How then will you be able to propitiate Him?

“And if she should accept me you’ll have her down here, Rosalind?” Here was a difficulty, as it was already understood that Ayala was to be again brought down to Stalham on the Colonel’s account; but Lady Albury could make the promise, as, should the Captain be accepted, no harm would in that case be done to the Colonel.

To be sure, Nus, so far as in him lay, both wished and tried to impart to the others also all that he had learned about the greatness and incomprehensibility of the Father; but his mother, Sige, interposed— she who (you must know) imposes silence even on her own beloved heretics; although they affirm that this is done at the will of the Father, who will have all to be inflamed with a longing after himself.

Remember then, it means, that day wherein they willed to overthrow Jerusalem.

“You had to come away pretty quick, I take it.”

Moreover an imperial mandate had been issued to Palladius, the governor of Egypt, enjoining him to aid them with a military force.

I could not find that Coltman meant lizard either in Hottentot language or in Dutch.

Could it be endured that such a one as he should enter upon matrimony amidst the din of public trumpets and under a halo of romance?

The farm was large, but away from the house, and on it there were only a few cattle.

But there came two angels to Sodom at even.

LETTER 6

Or will not those rather be beyond our immediate apprehension and to be contemplated in a blessed immortality, while ours are earthern, and to dissolve to earth?

Early in March he heard that Lady Laura was up in town, and of course he was bound to go to her.

Suppose it proved that the passage refers to the Son, of whom will be found applicable to the Son.

“Will you listen, dear Louis? We knew that it was our duty to bring you home; and as you would not let me come to you, and serve you, and assist you to come here where you are safe,—unless I owned that you had been right, I said that you had been right.”

For this is shown from the Scripture, Take no thought what things you shall eat, or what things you shall drink.

For who can deny that Abraham was buried in the double cave at Hebron, as well as Isaac and Jacob, and each of their wives?

“But her son is. However,—if you will allow me, I will go on. Having this communication to make, I thought it expedient for your own sake that it should be done in the presence of your own legal adviser and friend.”

Upon this the people shouted, attesting the truth of the king's faith, and hymning the praise of the God of the captive.

4. And the same author again relates that about the same time there sprang up in Jerusalem a certain kind of robbers, who by day, as he says, and in the middle of the city slew those who met them.

Could he really be in possession of his rents, the Sick and Healthy would of course see no more of him; but were he to throw up his position and then to lose Llanfeare, how sad, how terrible, how cruel would be his fate!

Does the law then which conducts to Christ appear humane and mild?

For what we say is, that the God who, even according to Plato, does impossible things, will do this.

He took not the smallest part in the war against us, but preserved the pious that were under him unharmed and unabused.

To mankind, says he.

But if I were worthy of your sufferings and of your conflicts for Christ and through Christ I should have been counted worthy also to come to you, to embrace Your Piety, and to take example by your patience in your sufferings.

But God is good and wise, and does what is best.

You had better put aside your love for Miss Effingham.

It is a lottery.

And as the scavenger before mentioned not even on being made a king will reap any cheerfulness, so neither will this man ever vex himself if he become a prisoner.

For if God, when He wills, takes away the stony hearts, and implants hearts of flesh, so that His precepts are obeyed and His commandments are observed, it is not in our power to put away wickedness.

This great wrong was regarded with special detestation by the bishops of Europe, who separated themselves from communion with the guilty parties.

A housemaid, not long since, who was known in the family in which she lived to be affianced to a neighbouring gardener, came weeping to her mistress.

Ransack not heaven, but earth.

But she could do nothing till that question was settled; and how was she to settle it? Every word that had passed between her and Cecilia Burton had been turned over and over in her mind, and she could only declare to herself; as she had then declared to her visitor, that it must be as Harry should please. She would submit if he required her submission, but she could not bring herself to take steps to secure her own misery.

Of what he did in this respect he boasts in a letter to Crassus, which, regarded from our point of view, would no doubt be looked upon as base.

John wouldn’t pretend to answer that question, but was quite sure that his brother would not be tempted into other matrimonial arrangements by anything that could be said against Emily Lopez.

Thus also the durations of wars are determined by Him as He may see meet, according to His righteous will, and pleasure, and mercy, to afflict or to console the human race, so that they are sometimes of longer, sometimes of shorter duration.

He had not been abashed, nor had he become sulky, nor had he tried to melt her by mention of his own misery.

“And has he not justified that want of confidence?”

An enemy can be avoided; a friend cannot, if he desires to lay a plot.

All human things are easily seen through, and rotten, and quickly melt away and perish; these were not such, therefore not human.

We have found from the report of many that a custom has of old obtained among you, for subdeacons to be allowed to have intercourse with their wives.

He continued to ride to the end of his life: he liked the exercise, and I think it would have distressed him not to have had a horse in his stable.

Since on the one hand, he who merely silences, confounds the hearer, and he, on the contrary, who accustoms him to demand reasons for all things, injures him in the matter of faith; for this cause then Paul is continually practising both the one and the other, that they may both believe and may not be confounded; and after silencing them, he again gives a reason likewise.

But Mr. Western had been kept specially in the dark, and was of all men the least able to endure such treatment.

That by the grace of God, he says. And He indeed because of the grace of God towards us suffered these things. He who spared not His Own Son, he says, but delivered Him up for us all. [Romans 8:32] Why? He did not owe us this, but has done it of grace. And again in the Epistle to the Romans he says, Much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace which is by one man Jesus Christ, has abounded unto many. [Romans 5:15]

For man made them; and he who has borrowed his breath, he fashioned them.

[John 11:14] Then Jesus said unto them plainly, [60] Lazarus is dead.

AQUILA: Girded, he shall gird himself; that means that as a man of arms and war he shall arm himself.

But what that kind of life we have been speaking of is, and what those sins are which prevent a man from winning the kingdom of God by himself, but yet permit him to avail himself of the merits of the saints, it is very difficult to ascertain, very perilous to define.

“As for that, you can do as you like.”

Dinomachus and Callipho said that the chief end was for one to do what he could for the attainment and enjoyment of pleasure; and Hieronymus the Peripatetic said the great end was to live unmolested, and that the only final good was happiness; and Diodorus likewise, who belonged to the same sect, pronounces the end to be to live undisturbed and well.

Owen Fitzgerald, the heir to Castle Richmond, Sir Owen as he would soon be, should have her daughter.

“I hope there is nothing to complain of,” said Fanny, speaking by no means in a defiant tone, but humbly as it were, and deprecating her ladyship’s wrath. Fanny had gained one signal victory over Lady Lufton, and on that account, with a prudence equal to her generosity, felt that she could afford to be submissive. It might, perhaps, not be long before she would be equally anxious to conquer again.

Thus was it of old.

And this custom has been turned into a nature, according to mortal generation, by the sin of the first man.

“I only meant that of course they will stumble across each other in London.”

He was shortsighted, too, and would tumble about in his unnecessary hurry, barking his shins, bruising his knuckles, and breaking most things that were breakable,—but caring nothing for his sufferings either in body or in purse so that he was not reminded of his awkwardness by his wife.

And again, So then I myself with the mind serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin.

I did offer once to make Madame Socani my wife.

Man appears to resemble a ship which has been constructed by the builder and launched into the deep, which, however, it is impossible to navigate without the rudder, by which it can be kept under command, and turned in whatsoever direction its steersman may wish to sail.

“Lady Mary used to ride?”

A far nobler foundation might he have laid for the knowledge of himself in some evidences of a creation of his own, especially when he had to become known in opposition to Him in whose territory he had remained unknown by any works from the beginning.

Accordingly, He who died without any sin, original or actual, said in the passage I have already quoted: Behold, the prince of this world, that is, the devil, who had the power of death, comes and finds nothing in me,— meaning, he shall find no sin in me, because of which he has caused men to die.

Therefore he has added, and fulfill every desire of goodness.

Why, say they, does He not teach all men?

Even if his friend were to send the letter to her husband, it could not do him any harm.

Surely now, in her deep sorrow, in her solitude, he would come to her.

The legion, or legion and a half, with its two commanders, is altogether destroyed.

Whence it is well said through the Prophet, Be ashamed, O Sidon, says the sea [Isaiah 23:4].

Whether he would have said as much had the facts concerned the families of Mr. Joseph Smith and his son-in-law Mr. John Jones, instead of the Earl of Brentford and the Right Honourable Robert Kennedy, some readers will perhaps doubt, and may doubt also whether an application coming from some newly-fledged barrister would have been received as graciously as that made by Mr. Low, Q.C.

Driven from their cabins and little holdings, their crops and cattle taken from them, they were everywhere around desperate with poverty, and discontented equally with their own landlords and the restraints put upon them by government.

“You won’t call me Bella,—because you say the little birds will hear it. If I don’t care for the little birds, why should you?”

For when their teacher dares do any thing, no marvel that the disciples also follow.

For that it is He who forgives the sins of all men, He declared both in the case of the paralytic, saying, Your sins are forgiven [Mark 2:5 and also in that of Baptism: for He says to the disciples, Go ye and teach all nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.

May I enjoy your prayers!

New gods and strange came up, whom your fathers knew not; the God that begot you you deserted. '

Are the darkness of men, and death, such as they are by nature?

The third rule relates to the promises and the law, and may be designated in other terms as relating to the spirit and the letter, which is the name I made use of when writing a book on this subject.

“About Florian?”

When, after some half hour of conversation, he declared that he did not want to answer any more questions, I was not sorry to shake hands with the prominent half dozen, so as to bring the meeting to a close.

“Suppose he denies himself to us?” said Frank, as the four walked across the street together, to the great astonishment of the whole population.

The son did not write from Melbourne, nor from Nobble,—nor from Ahalala till gold had been found.

When it was known that he was to be pitted against Hortensius as an advocate, and that he intended to defy Hortensius as the coming Consul, then surely Rome would be awake to the occasion; and if Rome could be made to awake herself, then would this beautiful scheme of wealth from provincial plunder be brought to an end.

“But why did you come to that place in the accursed island? I am ruined by that journey. Yes, I am ruined. You will not help me to get a shilling from her—not even for my expenses.”

And should we not all be able to obtain the crown, let us at least come near to it.

After a while the servant came to show him to his chamber.

Say at least the Church of Donatus.

Alice had had a week allowed to her to write her answer; but she sent it off before the full week was past.

It was true, in one sense, that she had fallen, and it was true that she had not herself known how severe had been the injury done to her till he had gone beyond the reach of her voice.

“What can be the good?” Ayala said to her aunt when the hour named for the interview was told her, “as I can tell him everything just as well without his coming at all.” But all that had been settled.

You find money, you lose righteousness.

Why then is baptism, given by men like these, held valid among you, and the same baptism of Christ not held valid, by whatsoever men it may be administered throughout the world?

In consequence of this sinfulness, the law of God is erased out of their hearts; and therefore, when, the sin being healed, it is written there, the prescriptions of the law are done by nature,— not that by nature grace is denied, but rather by grace nature is repaired.

That romance was over.

In one word, He freely bestows life on you.

Nevertheless I am sure that the two stories are good.

Such mistakes do generally produce misery and ruin to all who are concerned.

Who would not judge that you were either jesting or wast mad?

He felt it to be hard upon him that he should be compelled, by the exigencies of his position, to descend so low in literature; but it did not occur to him to reflect that in fact he was not compelled, and that he was quite at liberty to break stones, or to starve honestly, if no other honest mode of carrying on his career was open to him.

He did not in the least understand the nature of such dislike as she exhibited.

The ass knows a familiar voice, he knows the road which he has often trodden, and even, if man loses his way, he sometimes serves him as a guide.

But He did not permit men to make supplication to the lesser gods.

“I intend to do so.”

To be added to these is the scorn, perhaps the ridicule, of his opponents.

He had not often been in cathedrals of late years, and now looked about him with something of awe.

For shaken were the mountains, that is, the powers of this world.

And if Nora did not go out to the Islands, what was to become of her unless she married this man?

Chapter III. Maine, New Hampshire, and Vermont

“All the men say so, but I never can see it. They have been saying ever so long that the old Duke of Omnium means to marry her on his deathbed, but I don’t suppose there can be anything in it.”

But to dine at four is almost worse than not to dine at all.

Ver. 37. Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through Him that loved us.

I must now indeed but slightly touch on this class, of which a fuller view will be taken in the proper place.

“Nor young either, I sometimes think. But now you must promise me this. You will do all that you can to induce him to make Carbury his residence.”

Those sainted martyrs, accordingly, who were once with us, and who now are seated with Christ, and are sharers in His kingdom, and partakers with Him in His judgment, and who act as His judicial assessors, received there certain of the brethren who had fallen away, and who had become chargeable with sacrificing to the idols.

He knew that he had not given the world much; yet he had received largely, and no one had begrudged it to him.

But still he would fight it on, as he would have done any losing match,—to the last.

Friends have interceded, but such intercession has only made matters worse.

But I shall have wasted my thoughts, and in vain poured out my eloquence as to the Fixed Period, if, in the course of years, it does not again spring to the front, and prove itself to be necessary before man can accomplish all that he is destined to achieve.

Christ, then, is no created being; for created beings are, as the Apostle has said, given over to vanity.

I never read of such a one in none of the books.

[Daniel vi] As for those who drink to excess at the feasts of the martyrs, we of course condemn their conduct; for to do so even in their own houses would be contrary to sound doctrine.

For the pride of the ancient foe not undeservedly made good its despotic rights over all men, and with no unwarrantable supremacy tyrannized over those who had been of their own accord lured away from God's commands to be the slaves of his will.

She had thought often, she said, as she had been making that journey, that her strength would not serve her to reach the house of her relative.

And now, if you can persuade or constrain the brethren to come to be of one mind again, your uprightness will be superior to your error; and the latter will not be charged against you, while the former will be commended in you.

We need not pursue the interview any further.

You have seen the measure of obedience, hear also the measure of love.

If he can do this efficiently, if he can make virtue alluring and vice ugly, while he charms his readers instead of wearying them, then I think Mr. Carlyle need not call him distressed, nor talk of that long ear of fiction, nor question whether he be or not the most foolish of existing mortals.

There were many things which I wanted to send you, by the perusal whereof you would have been able to gain a more exact and full knowledge of all that has been done by the bishops in their councils against these Pelagian heretics.

And if not even so were they awakened, much more, had all been plain and clear.

And after him reigned Abimelech in Gerar; and after him another Abimelech.

his daughter!

Just at this moment she was summoned by Miss Baker, and looking up she perceived that Mr and Mrs Fuzzybell were already leaving the room.

Maintain your position with all care, both in the flesh and spirit.

And elsewhere: They shall not be in the counsel of My people, nor shall they be written in the writing of the house of Israel, neither shall they enter into the land of Israel.

“But in the ordinary sense? is it not so? When you talk of going to Baden-Baden for an unlimited number of months, have you any idea of coming back again?”

“In politics one should always look forward,” he said, as he held up to the light the glass of old port which he was about to sip; “in real life it is better to look back,—if one has anything to look back at.” Mr.

Belleroach. By-bye, burgomaster! Come early tomorrow—

On the Wednesday and the Friday Lady Eustace made an excuse of going up to town, and insisted on taking the unfortunate Augusta with her.

Having spoken these words, he said to me, Let us go, and after two days let us come and clean these stones, and cast them into the building; for all things around the tower must be cleaned, lest the Master come suddenly and find the places about the tower dirty, and be displeased, and these stones be not returned for the building of the tower, and I also shall seem to be neglectful towards the Master.

Yet we should by no means say that the man in so doing busies himself with a trinity of the interior man, but rather of the exterior; because he remembers, and when he wills, contemplates as much as he wills, that alone which belongs to the sense of the body, which is called hearing.

After breakfast he fidgeted about in the parlour, being unable to contrive for himself a mode of escape, and was absolutely thrown upon his beam-ends when the widow asked him what he meant to do with himself between that and dinner.

The whole line of defence was indicated by the gentlemen who moved and seconded the Address.

[Psalm 103:32] And if you enquire the use of the night, this too may thou learn, and know from him.

United to the Son by the bond of uncreatedness, and of deriving His existence from the Supreme, He is parted again from Him by the characteristic of not being the Only-begotten of the Father, and of having been manifested by means of the Son Himself.

The author does not so call them; he professes to do his work without any such appendages to his story—heroism there may be, and he hopes there is—more or less of it there should be in a true picture of most characters; but heroes and heroines, as so called, are not commonly met with in our daily walks of life.

This also is what takes place in the case of baptism: for He conducts the man to the pool of water without disclosing his sins to any one; yet He publicly presents the boon and makes it manifest to all, while the sins of the man are known to no one save God Himself and him who receives the forgiveness of them.

Lord George in going to his brother, hoped that even after all that had passed he might be of use to the Marquis.

“Exactly. And there are so many reasons why you and I should join our fortunes together.”

He had fortunately come armed with an Austrian passport,—as was necessary in those bygone days of Venetia’s thraldom.

We praise the God of all for the harmony of divine faith.

For him;—I certainly would not willingly injure him.

For no good can be diminished or increased, except that which is good from some other good.

But we, out of the charity wherewith we are bound to you, desist not from admonishing you to do what will be for your good repute, knowing that, though this exhortation saddens you for the time, it will afterwards cause you joy, when the animosity of contention has passed away.

She had done her duty to him well, at any rate since the time when she had been enabled to come near him in Italy.

Hush-sh, Mr. Mason.

It was well that the argument was used behind the dean’s back, as, had it been made in his hearing, the dean would have upset it at once.

n. 22), it is clear that nature produced all men equal; but, through variation in the order of their merits, guilt puts some below others.

It is no small thing, especially in the case of a king, so to perform humble duties as to make oneself like the very lowest.

“There was no search, I suppose?”

There was hardly a Native to be seen, the country having been desolated by the King of the Zulus.

“I wish you had been there instead of me,” said the archdeacon, angrily.

He had had his political ideas, and had expressed them very strongly in that matter of the judges, which, in the condition of Rome, was certainly a political question of great moment.

But it was not to be a positive message, but one which would signify what might possibly take place.

“But you can’t think I was wrong to go when I felt it to be right.”

In order, therefore, that we return not to our former vomit, let us henceforward discipline ourselves.

And here a few remarks shall be addressed to this Celsus, who professes both to be a philosopher, and to be acquainted with all our system.

As to the first, I have denied it altogether, and my denial is now submitted to the reader for his judgment It seems to have been brought against him not in order to make him appear guilty, but because it bas appeared to be impossible that, when others were so deeply in fault, he should have been innocent.

“Of course he will not come to my house, nor should I think of going to his, if you disapproved.”

The first is about the Lord and His body, and it is this, that, knowing as we do that the head and the body— that is, Christ and His Church— are sometimes indicated to us under one person (for it is not in vain that it is said to believers, You then are Abraham's seed, [Galatians 3:29] when there is but one seed of Abraham, and that is Christ), we need not be in a difficulty when a transition is made from the head to the body or from the body to the head, and yet no change made in the person spoken of.

I will, however, come down to humbler objects.

“My lord,” he said, “I do not know that there is anything to be gained by my sitting down again.”

I pity the boys possessed by the slave-dealers, that are decked for dishonour.

After this, God, desiring to show that He had not given up the Jews through weakness, but because of the sins of those who were given up, sent lions against the foreigners, who ravaged all their nation.

“Oh, of course it is,” said Dot: “I’ll draw out the agreement, and give you a cheque for the money tonight.”

Was she really learning to believe that she could grow upwards by their sunlight?

[Matthew 13:57] But, turning from you, since you have already acknowledged that your profession of Christianity obliges you to believe the Gospel, I address myself to the Jew, who enjoys the poor privilege of liberty from the yoke of Christ, and who therefore thinks it allowable to say: Your Christ spoke falsely; Moses wrote nothing of him.

5. Then because he had vehemently scourged them, he quietly again relaxes the vehemence of his rebuke, saying,

“Of course I shall. After all that’s come and gone, I shall think nothing of running down, if it were only to make a morning call.”

It is that young Clavering to whom your little heart wishes to render itself—not the captain who is a fool—such a fool!

Unable to find anything worth saying, and at the same time unwilling to suspend his disputatious propensity, without measuring his strength at all, in order to avoid saying nothing, he boldly affirmed that the soul deserved to be polluted by the flesh, and that the soul deserved to become sinful; though previous to its incarnation he was unable to discover any merit in it, whether good or evil.

Let every one come, then, and hear the divine song without any fear.

When I look forward and see what it might be if you were with me, how green it all looks and how lovely, in spite of all the vows I have made, I cannot help coming back again.” She was now again near the window, and he had not followed her.

But still he was far from being at ease.

What shall I speak of first?

What the Lord there added, after He had thus spoken of John and of Himself; But wisdom, says He, has been justified of her children.

But in such a matter the mind will vacillate.

He was very soon about to leave the world, and meant to do the best he could for his son Augustus.

But then, especially, danger's impended over him from his youthful lusts.

They must have known that the man was alive.

“My brother-in-law will do something for her.”

For great is the crowd that keep to the things of sense, as if they were the only things in existence.

For when (the apostle) says, We were by nature the children of wrath, inasmuch as the Jews were not the Creator's children by nature, but by the election of their fathers, he (must have) referred their being children of wrath to nature, and not to the Creator, adding this at last, even as others, [Ephesians 2:3] who, of course, were not children of God.

[John 8:58] Before Abraham, say we?

“I shall not consider myself bound to learn all that unless they elect me,” said Sir Thomas; “but I don’t think there were Percys in the days of the Crusaders.”

His officers performed the imperial behests and then the great Basil came to the palace.

It may therefore be imagined what were now his feelings as to Lady Mason.

But that residence at Casalunga had been so terrible,—the circumstances of it, including the solitude, sickness, madness, and habits of life of the wretched hermit, had been so dangerous,—the probability of interference on the part of some native authority so great, and the chance of the house being left in Trevelyan’s possession so small, that it had seemed to him that they had no other alternative; and yet, how would it be if they were killing him by the toil of travelling?

You enter to implore mercy.

Or if there be neither the one nor the other?

Hitherto she had failed in everything, but now she would try if some mode of success might not be open to her.

“What is it you mean?” said he, allowing his eyes to rise to her face over the top of his book.

“You know that I love you. I think, surely, that never love was stronger than mine. If you can love me say but the one word, and you will make me absolutely happy. To have you for my wife is all that the world can give me now. Why do you go from me? Is it to tell me that you cannot love me, Marion? Do not say that, or I think my heart will break.”

131. Petilianus said: "It is written, ‘You shall not bear false witness against your neighbor.' When you falsely declare to the kings of this world that we hold your opinions, do you not make up a falsehood?"

Is it not evident to all that they are stones, as is the veritable Hermes himself?

Much o'er the stalwart dead.

That night before they went to sleep Melmotte required from his weary wife an account of the ball, and especially of Marie’s conduct.

“Yes,” said he, “I told both my father and my mother. What she says to you, you must hear, and bear it quietly for my sake.”

Those who knew her were aware that no better behaved young woman could exist.

Now what is their wise reasoning?

Pray,—pray, send me an answer. I cannot reach you except by writing, as I was told by your aunt not to come to the house again.

For they could not have endured His nature, which was untempered splendour, even that of the Father, unless condescending by the Father's love for man He had supported them and taken hold of them and brought them into existence ; and next, because, by this condescension of the Word, the creation too is made a son through Him, that He might be in all respects 'First-born' of it, as has been said, both in creating, and also in being brought for the sake of all into this very world.

Their intelligence has been appreciated, and their conduct has been respected.

Lady Rowley had been very much in favour of meeting Mr. Trevelyan without any one to assist her in the conference.

“Not that at all.”

Charlie Fairstairs and Mr Cheesacre were watching her narrowly, and she knew that they were watching her.

It is necessary that this woman’s name should be mentioned, and it may appear here as she was one of the causes of that hatred which burnt between Clodius and Cicero, till Clodius was killed in a street row.

Homily 19 on Romans

"Many years," he says, "and much time has passed away since, under Agrippinus of honored memory, a large assembly of bishops determined this point."

The novels may be bad novels, and yet the lessons taught may be in the right direction.

Six months afterwards she arrived at her father’s house a cripple, and a mother.

“That was what I supposed. They will return a Conservative at any rate.”

That salvation— and not (the salvation) of women only, but likewise of men— consists in the exhibition principally of modesty.

Sucklings praise His Divinity, while seniors utter blasphemies; children piously offer the sacrifice of praise, while profane priests are impiously indignant.

And it is here especially that the working of the United States system of government seems to me deficient—appears as though it wanted something to make it perfect and round at all points.

For, says he, Adam begot him by the power of his members, not by diversity of merits.

By saying to these last, Go farther back than your grandfather, and immediate ancestors, and you will find perchance many cooks, and drivers of asses, and shopkeepers: but to the former, that are puffed up by the meanness of their forefathers, the contrary again; And thou again, if you proceed farther up among your forefathers, wilt find many far more illustrious than you are.

I was introduced to them all, one after the other; but their names did not abide in my memory one moment.

The dead are not a pollution, a most wicked demon, but a wicked intention is an abomination.

“I don’t know how long I shall stay,” said he; “but I cannot say that my visit will be influenced one way or the other by such a rumour as that.”

This course was, no doubt, artificial, and the water ran more rapidly in it than it did in the neighbouring streamlets.

For ask those Jews who still continue in their state of unbelief whether they know or believe in God.

I shall be alone, and yet not master of myself.

But what must be her opinion as to the whole transaction?

“How should I take it? What I say is true. And what you say is true also. I will speak to Daniel.” But she knew well, as he left her, that his heart was bitter against her.

Not because they were unclean, but to check excessive luxury.

That idiot of a keeper of his had been unable to keep Mountjoy from the gambling-house.

At last, when Dorothy had made about five attempts to go, Mr. Gibson’s name was mentioned.

For in that case all would have obeyed the heavenly precepts, if the influence and power of God enjoining them had been united with them.

Since, then, these kinds of generation, those, I mean, which arise as the result of some cause, and are recognized in our every-day experience, are also employed by Holy Scripture to convey its teaching concerning transcendent mysteries in such wise as each of them may reasonably be transferred to the expression of divine conceptions, we may now proceed to examine Eunomius' statement also, to find in what sense he accepts the meaning of generation.

“No; yesterday—Sunday. I can not make out whether they come by themselves. They certainly are not all made by incendiaries.”

That there is a Resurrection, that there is a retribution: that there are good things innumerable; that Christ is God, that the Faith is right.

When they had entered in with Daniel, what prayed they?

She was a woman, too, who by no means despised rank, and who considered that much reverence was due to those who were privileged to carry titles.

105. Petilianus said: "But if these are the parties, the name of member of a party is no prejudice against us. For there are two ways, the one narrow, in which we walk; the other is for the impious, wherein they shall perish. And yet, though the designations be alike, there is a great difference in the reality, that the way of righteousness should not be defiled by fellowship in a name. "

If this plan might be carried out, he would take her to the mill-house and seat her in the room in which the family lived, and then bring the old man in from his work.

Then said I: [Since you say, therefore, that good things are produced by good stars— by Jupiter and Venus, for example— let us see what is the product where any one of the evil stars is mixed with the good, and let us understand that that is evil.

All that we loved and all that we valued had been taken away from us.

If so, I ask how I can express the equality of one Person with the other except by such a word?

“You will not allow me to answer for myself?”

By what denomination should the fifth part of a penny be hereafter known?

But from those who love Him He receives all that is honourable.

He is before you, and cannot be hidden from you, but to Him you can do no injury.

“Mr. Dunn, don’t,” she said. But he did kiss it. “God bless you, my own dearest, dearest girl! I’ll just open the door as I come down. Perhaps Mrs. Bell will be here.” And then he rushed up stairs.

“Not since the Sunday afther father’s death.”

“Would you have a woman submit to insult without passion? I at any rate am not such a woman.” Then there was a pause for a moment. “If you have nothing else to say to me, you had better leave me. I am far from well, and my head is throbbing.”

But Fimbria from the first gave orders that not a life should be spared, and burnt up together the city and all its inhabitants.

For in God's estimation he is not a Jew who is called a Jew among men (nor is he a Gentile that is called a Gentile), but he who, believing in God, fulfils His law and does His will, though he be not circumcised.

“But how did he know it, Æneas?”

Where I am, there is My servant also.

The lists were filled, and the names were drawn.

The mob salutes us as Greeks and impostors if our tunics are fresh and clean.

You see, you’d get clear—let me see how much.’ And Scatterall went to work with a sheet of foolscap paper, endeavouring to make some estimate of what amount of ready cash Charley might have in his pocket on completion of this delicate little arrangement.

Miss Tickle,—and a pair of ponies!

When he came that evening to see the last of you at the theatre, taking, as I knew he did, considerable trouble to release himself from other engagements, I was pretty sure how it was going to be.

He and I meet about on neutral ground, and are the best friends in the world.

Ufford County, England,

For, inasmuch as they pilfer from one another, they establish the fact that they are thieves; and although against their will, they are detected, clandestinely appropriating to those of their own race the truth which belongs to us.

It is the employment of his life to fit in his amusements so that he may not have a dull day.

“But you won’t keep him here long, Miss Lynch—eh? And you won’t excite yourself?—indeed, you mustn’t. You’ll allow them fifteen minutes, Mrs Kelly, not more, and then you’ll come up;” and with these cautions, the doctor withdrew.

“Shall I stay?” asked Isabel.

“It is a mistake. But what can I do? I fear that he regards the rich as his enemies. He is pining for the solace of some friend to whom he could talk—for some equal, with a mind educated like his own, to whose thoughts he could listen, and to whom he could speak his own thoughts. But such a friend must be equal, not only in mind, but in purse; and where can he ever find such a man as that?”

One false step in his political novitiate may cost him everything.

But then if he did not play with him, where should he find another gambling table?

“I ought to break my heart;—oughtn’t I?”

Deriving his instructions, therefore, from hence, the apostle too says: I wrote to you in the Epistle, not to be mingled up with fornicators: not, of course, with the fornicators of this world— and so forth— else it behooved you to go out from the world.

“He should be made to understand that from the moment in which I heard of the engagement I was urgent with you and with Mr. Tregear that he should be informed of it. You will remember what passed.”

“I will see the Duchess and tell her that you are all right,—but very tired. If she goes up to you you had better see her.”

[Acts 7:23] Forty years he was there, and was not found out from his being circumcised.

Gideon was not great enough to claim this mystery for himself, but the Son of Man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister.

[Ecclesiastes 1:2] For I saw both this and another oracle fulfilled in every deed, which says, All the glory of man is as the flower of grass.

You have most of you, no doubt, heard, on various occasions, from different learned judges seated on that bench, that a crown approver’s evidence is to be taken with the greatest caution, and only to be believed in detail, when corroborated by other evidence or by circumstances.

The body of man is divided into thirty-six parts, and as many demons of the air are appointed to the care of it, each having charge of a different part, although others make the number much larger.

For I will not see you now by the way; but I trust to tarry a while with you, if the Lord permit.

A sudden disruption had broken up all that.

“How he will hate me.”

“And that is all I am to expect from you in return for as true a love as man ever bore to woman?”

And under this rule must be brought also the understanding of the sacred Scripture, in order that its statements may be judged not according to the worthlessness of the letter, but according to the divinity of the Holy Spirit, by whose inspiration they were caused to be written.

“I feel for you through it all,—I do,” said Dolly.

I acquiesced in it, because mamma did so.

“No, by heavens then,” said he, following her, and catching her hand; “no man in Ireland is this moment more in earnest: no man more anxiously, painfully in earnest. Oh, Fanny! why should you suppose that I am not so? How can you think I would joke on such a subject? No: hear me,” he said, interrupting her, as she prepared to answer him, “hear me out, and then you will know how truly I am in earnest.”

Could anything be more preposterous than for a just man, when doing any such good act, to seek glory of the many— as if an artist of consummate skill, employed upon an Emperor's portrait, should wish to have the praises of the ignorant!

“You are only saying what the Duke will think.”

“Yes, very frank,” said Arthur.

For one who attains to a sacred dignity tainted in the very root of his promotion is himself the more prepared to sell to others what he has bought.

With these also agree the following: These things have I spoken to you, that My joy might be fulfilled: and this is My commandment, That you love one another, as I have loved you.

Dr. Grantly desired to be driven to his father-in-law’s lodgings in the High Street, and hearing from the servant that Mr. Harding was at his daughter’s, followed him to Mrs. Bold’s house, and there found him. The archdeacon was fuming with rage when he got into the drawing-room, and had by this time nearly forgotten the pusillanimity of the bishop in the villainy of the chaplain.

“So would you be out of sorts if you’d lost your run and had to pick a young woman out of the water. I don’t like young women when they’re damp and smell of mud.”

He is never a hunting man unalloyed, unadulterated, and unmixed, a class of man which is perhaps of all classes the most tedious and heavy in hand.

“It’s an amicable lawsuit,” said Miss Mackenzie.

The tree is made manifest by its fruit; [Matthew 12:33] so those that profess themselves to be Christians shall be recognised by their conduct.

Now not even the following Him proves any man a disciple of Christ so completely as the loving one another.

2 was as follows;—

He mentions one as written, and then another; but at last this latter appears before the former.

Miss Mackenzie had perceived, when she first came to the Cedars, that he was a cross old man, and that he had to be endured as such by any one who chose to go into that house.

The demons too have the plotters among men to help them, to such an extent that if they had no such aid, the greater part of their wiles against us would be done away: but these, when such as they have spitefully entreated are vying with them, still try to be more spiteful then they.

What need have I of these plaudits, these cheers and tumultuous signs of approval?

The mother would simply refer to the daughter, and Mary would declare that they could manage to see the twelvemonth through and go back to Cornboro, without becoming absolute beggars.

But he like a man filled with rage and grief turned his thoughts to the threatened fire and the gnawing worm, and setting these in array against his adversary, passed through the temptation unscathed.

If it be so called, who in the world is not a hypocrite?

For it is necessary that the word of truth should be imprinted and stamped upon the souls of the regenerate.

This is another sort of wideness.

96. Who is the man, whose heart has never been made to burn, [Luke 24:32] as the Scriptures have been opened to him, with the pure words of God which have been tried in a furnace; who has not, by a triple inscription of them upon the breadth of his heart, attained the mind of Christ; [1 Corinthians 2:16] nor been admitted to the treasures which to most men remain hidden, secret, and dark, to gaze upon the riches therein?

These words are human, but they have a meaning which becomes the nature of God.

2. But what is this vestibule? The book of the generation of Jesus Christ, Son of David, Son of Abraham.

LETTER 26

And then follows, Let the sinners be turned into hell [Psalm 9:17]: that is, let them be given into their own hands, when they are spared, and let them be ensnared in deadly delight.

I now come to those things which are either doubtful or obscure.

For the blessed Job relates that even the angels and every creature can sin.

Here is prophesied that creation of which the Apostle says: Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature; old things are passed away; behold, all things have become new.

Virtue is increased when you seize upon it, while temporal goods are lessened when they are seized upon.

“Indeed I shall. I will not be frightened by bugbears. And I will not be driven to confess to any man on earth that I am afraid to see him. Why should I be afraid of Colonel Osborne? I will not submit to acknowledge that there can be any danger in Colonel Osborne. Were I to do so I should be repeating the insult against myself. If my husband wished to guide me in such matters, why did he not stay with me?”

The hall and front door as it now stood, very prominent but quite at the end of the house, had been erected in the reign of Queen Anne, and the modern drawing-rooms with the best bedrooms over them, projecting far out into the modern gardens, had been added by the present baronet’s father.

Thus since among us there is agreement in the faith and Christian charity has been established, we shall cease to use the phrase condemned by the apostles, 'I am of Paul and I of Apollos and I of Cephas,' and all appearing as Christ's, who in us is not divided, by God's grace we will keep the body of the church unrent, and will boldly stand at the judgment seat of the Lord.

They go up even to the heavens, in daring; They go down even into the deeps [Psalm 106:26], in fearing.

But his own statement of the law is a reproach to him that the mystery of the law has escaped him, that he does not know Christ the Lord, the Son of God, by the nature of His birth to be included in the confession of the one God.

That is to say, Miss Altifiorla was persisting in the discussion, whereas Mrs. Western was positively refusing to make it a subject of conversation.

But there must be the question of compensation.

To Callinicus, Exarch of Italy .

I have accepted him.

And as he knew by experience what he had said a little before, in many things we offend all, he suggests a sovereign remedy, to be applied, as it were day by day, to those less serious but real wounds which the soul suffers day by day, for he says: He shall have judgment without mercy that has showed no mercy.

Why do I fear the seas?

And what are we to expect, if not only a very few agree, as at present, but the whole of the empire of Rome?

This is the reason, indeed, why of even the just and lawful marriages of the children of God are born, not children of God, but children of the world; because also those who generate, if they are already regenerate, beget children not as children of God, but as still children of the world.

'Surely then it was because all were lost,' says he.

Mr Vavasor found fault with nearly everything.

God forbid that I should ask you to break an oath, even for the sake of that young mother.

He doubted very much whether Colonel Stubbs could keep a carriage in London for his wife, while it had been already arranged that he was to be allowed to do so should he succeed in marrying Ayala.

In 1854 we got rid of our Orange River Sovereignty, Sir George Clerk having been sent over from England to make the transfer;—and we congratulated ourselves that we had uow two independent Republics between us and the swarming hordes of the north.

“I think not,” said Mr. Monk, “and I think that the circumstances, when explained, will bear you harmless.”

“I should think that you will have everything to do with it. There, Miss Burton, I brought you here to show you this very spot, and to make to you my confession here, and to get from you, here, one word of confidence, if you will give it me.” Florence was trembling now outwardly as well as inwardly. “You know my story—as far, I mean, as I had a story once, in conjunction with Harry Clavering?”

After the manifest appearance of the things thus signified, we are not required to observe the types; but we read them to see their meaning.

Alice held her ground, and avoided all further conversation with Lady Midlothian. A message came to her through Lady Glencora imploring her to give way, but she was quite firm.

These things then here also consider, and with this mind receive thou the expressions.

When therefore he has placed his hearers above, near the throne, he then says, Mortify your members which are upon the earth.

They intend to offer something which shall soften and not aggravate the sorrow that they have caused.

But in that instance it was done with more severity, in this with more gentleness.

For I suppose that in this place He speaks of Capernaum as His country.

As she thought of it all,—and by degrees she took great pleasure in thinking of it,—her mind bestowed upon him all manner of eulogies.

“You have your profession. You are a soldier. I am nothing.”

[Acts 10:29] Wherefore also— that they may not think the affair a breach of the law on his part, nor (Cornelius) suppose that because he was in a station of command therfore he had complied, but that they may ascribe all to God—wherefore also I came without gainsaying as soon as I was sent for: (though) not only to keep company, but even to come unto (him) was not permitted.

Here I find perfection apprehended variously in relation to Him who excels in every virtue.

[Genesis 49:10] It is yours to make accurate inquiry, and ascertain up to whose time the Jews had a lawgiver and king of their own.

Then she looked round, to see if there were any eyes watching him.

“But I have one for you,” she said, throwing her arm round his neck. He bore her embrace for a minute, returning it with the pressure of his arm; and then, escaping from it, seized his hat and left her standing in the room.

“If he gives you a kiss now you needn’t pretend to mind,” said the other.

What then shall we say?

An author can hardly hope to be popular unless he can use popular language.

For if when liable for so many sins we were freed from all by Christ, much more shall we be able through Him to abide in the estate wherein we are.

He also might have some part here, if he himself might be called Empire, just as she is called Victory.

He commenced his acquaintance with Eleanor by praising her father.

It was the Council of vanity when Paul of Samosata and his successor Photinus afterwards taught, that Christ was not born of the Father before the world, but had His beginning from Mary, and believed not that being God He was born man, but that of man He was made God.

He knew enough of Dalrymple’s ways of life, and of the ways of his friend’s chambers and studio, to care nothing for the lateness of the hour, and in a very few minutes he was sitting in Dalrymple’s armchair.

For, behold, the Jews are enemies, whom this Psalm seems to imply; the law of God they hold, and therefore of them has been said, Slay not them, lest sometime they forget Your law: in order that the nation of Jews might remain, and by it remaining the number of Christians might increase.

“Well;—you won’t find ‘em. I knows nothing about ‘em, in course, except just what I’m told. You know my line of life, Mr. ‘Oward?”

“That would make you just twenty-five,” said Johnny, feeling perfectly sure as he said so that the lady whom he was addressing was at any rate past thirty!

Things had now come to that point between him and his father, and between him and his creditors, that he must either do so, or leave Barchester; either do that, or go back to his unwashed associates, dirty lodgings, and poor living at Carrara.

I have no brother, no sister.

And when they amended not themselves, therefore He said concerning them:— As men shall you die, and as one of the princes shall you fall.

But at Rivas he was attacked by the soldiery of Costa Rica, under the command of a brother of Don Juan Mora. This was in 1856, and it seems that some three thousand Costa Ricans were taken as far as Rivas. But few of them returned. They were attacked by cholera, and what with that, and want, and the intense heat, to which of course must be added what injuries the filibusters could do them, they were destroyed, and a remnant only returned.

Was it not his duty to be gentle and to give way, if by any giving way he could lessen the evil which he had occasioned.

The mother knows that it is good that her child should love some man better than all the world beside, and that she should be taken away to become a wife and a mother.

But the Jews, not understanding this, and supposing that the words were spoken of the Jewish Temple, said, Forty and six years was this temple in building, and will You rear it up in three days?

He was so richly endowed with miraculous gifts that he restored a dead man to life, and performed other signs as wonderful as those wrought by the apostles.

And My sheep have eaten the trampled (herbage) which your feet have trampled, and they have drunk the waters which your feet have defiled.

“Of course. That is natural. It would have been a great misfortune if you had loved him before you had reason to know that he loved you;—a great misfortune. But now,—now that you cannot but think of him, now that you know what his wishes are, perhaps you may learn—”

“And how do you mean to pay it?”

So also out of the fees paid for boxes at the window he receives any amount forthcoming not exceeding 400l.

It must not be presumed that she has a taste for candles, or that she is at all astray about the real presence, but she has an inkling that way.

After mentioning a noble action of the Romans, the writer shows from the deeds of Moses that he had the greatest regard for what is virtuous.

“May the —— go along with you!” said Larry, wishing his neighbour a very unpleasant companion.

In America, however, it is not so.

“You’d better just see him, Mrs Kelly,” whispered the, doctor. “You’ll find him quiet enough, now; just take him fair and asy; keep him downstairs a moment, while Jane gives her the medicine. She’d better take it just before he goes to her, and don’t let him stay long, whatever you do. I’ll be back before the evening’s over; not that I think that she’ll want me to see her, but I’ll just drop in.”

For whereas, as has been said, the words is seated and is not seated are not equivalent in meaning (the one expression being contradictory of the other), they pretend that this formal contradiction in expression indicates an essential difference, ascribing generation to the Son and non-generation to the Father as their essential attributes.

Chapter 17. Conclusion of the first part of the epistle

In order then that all who dwell in Rome might learn that these things are a reality, God allowed that there the saint should be perfected, and that this was the reason I will guarantee from the very manner of his death.

Guestwick Cottage, –– December, 186––.

“They’ll not come this way—there’s another way in for them: tho’ they are traversers now, they didn’t dare but let them go in at the same door as the judges themselves.”

Now, we having already laid down that the Father and the Son are of one image and likeness, it remains for us to show that They are also of one majesty.

True friendship can harbour no suspicion; a friend must speak to his friend as freely as to his second self.

And in my desire to defend His religion and divine worship, to whom can I rather appeal, whom can I address, but him by whom justice and wisdom have been restored to the affairs of men?

And now therefore I could believe, content with his sole opinion, if he expressed any opinion; and this is what I shall do at last.

[Genesis 1:1] Under the name of heaven he did not indicate that spiritual or intellectual creature which always beholds the face of God; nor under the name of earth, that shapeless matter.

She must return to the office that afternoon, of course, if only for the sake of explaining her wish to absent herself the rest of the day.

The statue of St John Nepomucene is a single figure, standing in melancholy weeping posture on the balustrade of the bridge, without any of that ponderous strength of widespread stone which belongs to the other groups.

And he, though he hated Mr. Puddicombe for his cold logic, could not but acknowledge that all the man had said was true.

It never occurred to him to doubt the correctness of the policeman’s information, and he regarded Stanbury’s assertion of incredulity as being simply of a piece with his general obstinacy in the matter.

Do you see not that the hands minister, and the mouth softens, and the stomach receives?

From this time forward if she wanted to separate herself from him she must ask him for an allowance.

But neither when He says, These ought ye to have done, and not to leave the others undone, does He say it as introducing a legal observance; away with the thought; neither with regard to the platter and the cup, when He said, Cleanse that which is within the cup and platter, that the outside of them may be clean also, does He bring us unto the old regard for little things, but on the contrary indeed, He does all things to show it to be superfluous.

He did not complain that her voice was not loving.

[1 Timothy 1:13] Surely You would not have pity upon all men that work iniquity: this in two ways may be understood: either that in fact not any sins does God leave unpunished; or that there is a sort of iniquity, on the workers whereof God has indeed no pity.

Nor did he say, Make known these things to people everywhere, but, to the brethren.

The husband when he does come knows at any rate that he has no ground of complaint, and is not kept specially in the dark when he takes his wife.

I am sure you have not;—and I’m sure that he deserves no such thought;—but the higher that are his deserts, the greater should be his reward.

All the children of light are without fear of him, because the darkness flies from before the light.

The Englishman likes to have a neighbour near him; the Dutchman cannot bear to see the smoke of another man’s chimney from his own front door.

For it is the Spirit of grace that does it, in order to restore in us the image of God, in which we were naturally created.

[1 Corinthians 15:47] I spoke of a difference as great as that between clay and gold; but greater still do I find the difference between heavenly and earthy; not so widely do clay and gold differ, as do things earthy and heavenly.

And after this to the decease of Alexander, twelve years.

“Does he order you about?”

India Office, 28th March, 18––.

Orth.— Answer I beseech you more reverently. Perhaps some of the uninitiated are within hearing.

“I think I can guess,” said Lady Chiltern, laughing. She had guessed rightly, but Adelaide Palliser was still altogether in the dark when Lord Chiltern took a letter from his pocket and handed it to her. As he did so he left the room, and his wife followed him. “I shall be upstairs, Adelaide, if you want advice,” said Lady Chiltern.

“Well I was, no doubt. It is a silly thing to talk of, I dare say.”

“I think there must have been some mistake,” said Dorothy. “I don’t see how he could do it.”

He says "that I slide in slippery places, but am held up; that I neither destroy nor confirm the objections that I make; that I devise uncertain things in the place of certainty; that I do not permit my readers to believe what is true, but cause them to look with increased suspicion on what is doubtful."

No one but a ruined man would attempt to raise money on the family estate!

So far all was good; but the test by which he was to be tried was now approaching him.

He had told himself over and over again that it must be good for him to have such a one for his wife, whether she were Jew or Christian.

But he was quite willing to give this up for the good of his family.

But if he choose rather to die than to inflict violence upon another, in this case he is just, but foolish, in not sparing his own life while he spares the life of another.

And just in the same way, too, on this other occasion, when a certain person came in with the inconsiderate message about His mother, He did not embrace the occurrence as an opportunity for leaving His Father's commission unattended to even for the sake of having His mother with Him.

For they are knowable also before they are known, and beget in the learner a knowledge of themselves.

“I have felt that at the present moment I could not do so with any success. It has not come of any want of respect either for him or for you. Of course, Grace, you know why I am here?” He paused, and then remembering that he had no right to expect an answer to such a question, he continued, “I have come here, dearest Grace, to ask you to be my wife, and to be a mother to Edith. I know that you love Edith.”

For every body exposed to the light reflects, and casts a shadow in the opposite direction.

And what am I to do now, if he still loves me?

A Tale of a Turbot

Goodness gave him dominion over all things, which he was to enjoy and rule over, and even give names to.

“Bella, darling;—don’t you know?” said the mother.

Capetown would lose half its glory and more than half its importance if it were put simply on a par with Grahamstown, which is the capital of the East.

With them Langalibalele was established in a small house on the sea shore near to Capetown, and there he is now living at an expense of £500 per annum to the Government.

For all who first received Him spoke with tongues; [Acts ii] and in this sign there was a promise that in all tongues, or in all nations, the Church of after times would faithfully proclaim the doctrine of the Spirit as well as of the Father and of the Son.

Like a city walled on every side is this man, the other as a city unwalled.— Great wisdom, to be able to be a creator of friendship!

He had told her that she tempted him, and she stood before him now as a temptress.

“It behoves a frontier man to be smart, sir.” Such, in that or other language, has been the prevailing idea.

“Why, sir, the commission was £100 or so, and I took the remainder in paving-stones and rocking-horses.”

“That’s what I call a happy Christmas,” said Harry, as the party finally parted for the night.

[Isaiah 35:4] Be strong is not vainly repeated, nor is fear not vainly added; because with the renewal of the limbs there was to be, according to the promise, a restoration also of bodily energies: Arise, and take up your couch; and likewise moral courage not to be afraid of those who should say, Who can forgive sins, but God alone?

“My dear, the truth must be spoken. I declare I don’t think I ever saw a young woman so improvident as you are. When are you to begin to think about getting married if you don’t do it now?”

What followed was even far more admirable.

‘Gothic!’ said Katie, looking up at him with all her eyes. ‘Will

Chapter 11. Description of the Gnostic's Life

“He’s not of much account,” said the baronet.

The countess herself was arrayed in an elaborate morning wrapper of figured silk, but the simple Alexandrina wore a plain white muslin peignoir, fastened with pink ribbon.

To an Anonymous Correspondent.

To have thrust upon him as his son-in-law, as the husband of his favourite child, the only man in the world whom he really positively disliked, would be a misfortune which he felt he would not know how to endure patiently.

Who dreams of birth in the case of Him Who is the unborn and eternal?

But when her ladyship and Mrs. Stistick had retreated—Oh, my readers, fancy what that next hour must have been to Caroline Harcourt!—How Gothic, how barbarous are we still in our habits, in that we devote our wives to such wretchedness as that!

How then is this effected?

‘If Secretaries of State and judges of the Court of Queen’s Bench only had their wits about them, the postage-stamp ought to have been quite sufficient,’ said Bagwax, sententiously.

of fish on his head, hurrying along as though all the dinner-tables in London depended on his haste, is not a pleasant person to meet in a passage barely broad enough for one.

“God bless ‘ee, Miss Mary,” said he—he always did bid God bless her when he saw her.

Blessed are you, when men shall revile you and persecute you, and say all manner of evil against you falsely, for my sake. Rejoice, and be exceeding glad. [Matthew 5:11-12]

But why should I describe him whom you know?

Then there would be ample room for the practice of that virtue which Hoggett had taught him.

For a work could never be Son and Word; nor could the Son be a work.

It renders a man a demon, insolent, blasphemous, perjured, and makes him desirous of deaths and murders.

“John ain’t here, and ain’t like; but it’s all as one.”

Book IV, Letter 34

He sought assistance, therefore, from the Christian emperor, not so much with any desire of revenging himself, as with the view of defending the Church entrusted to his charge.

Much more pardonably might you have rendered divine honors to Scipio than to such gods as these.

For the blood of your brother has cried aloud to Me to heaven.

She too desired your eternal welfare and is content to forego seeing you for a time that she may see you for ever with Christ.

These were Mr. Cameron, the Secretary of War, and Mr. Welles, the Secretary of the Navy.

As every man who fails, does not descend, but falls: so every one who profits does ascend: but if he so profit, as to avoid pride: if he so ascend as not to fall: but if while he profits he become proud, in ascending he again falls.

In the Greek the meaning is still plainer, for the word used is [επισκοποῦντες], that is to say, overseeing, and this is the origin of the name overseer or bishop.

‘She will hate me for ever, but yet it ought to be done,’ said William Bolton; who was a good man, an excellent husband and father, and regarded in his own profession as an honourable trustworthy man.

[Amos 5:23] But instead of these I will have mercy and not sacrifice.

But it is impossible for any one of these to subsist itself by itself; but it must inhere in something else.

He had once been tried by them as a traveller, but in that line he had failed.

Is it because of past sins, in order that they may be forgiven, since they cannot be undone?

But to us the things that are behind are the goods of the present world, which we leave behind us; but the things that are before are those which are eternal and permanent, to which we are called, as Paul bears witness, saying, Forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth to those things which are before [Philippians 3:13].

“And the four children are all here in the house?”

“He will be sure to have some stupid notion,” said her father, smiling.

It was th e pride of this woman’s heart to give all that was necessary for good living, to those who would come and submit themselves to her, for four shillings a day.

He still carried his arm in a sling, and was obliged to be somewhat slow in his movements, but otherwise he was again well.

And you admit that the whole of the world, which is called heaven and earth, had God and a good God for its author and maker.

Imitate what He wrought: love what He loved, and finding in you the Grace of God, love in Him your nature in return, since as He was not dispossessed of riches in poverty, lessened not glory in humility, lost not eternity in death, so do ye, too, treading in His footsteps, despise earthly things that you may gain heavenly: for the taking up of the cross means the slaying of lusts, the killing of vices, the turning away from vanity, and the renunciation of all error.

We see these works of God in His creation.

He knew very well that comfortable words would be spoken to him at Harrington Hall, and that then the gloom would go.

He was thoroughly wet through, jaded, wretched, and in want of sustenance.

It had got into the air, and had floated round dining-rooms and over toilet-tables.

What is of virtue is our own possession.

Yes, and the weak person is the worse, even if there be no devil.

Since then the wisdom from without is hurtful, and the spiritual gifts were not given by you, what have you wherein to boast?

Therefore bodily peculiarity, with its manifold varieties, will not become the cause of an effect which is an invariable one.

The husband should be to her in all respects the first and foremost.

“I do not know. I don’t think I did love him,—though now I may. It is so horrible that he should die, and die while all this is going on. That softens one you know. Have you ever heard of Lord Rufford?”

There was something in the tone of his voice which Fanny did not like.

But when, according as He willed, He also formed (objects), He called them by names, and thus notified His creative effort.

Chapter 6. Idolatry Condemned by Baptism. To Make an Idol Is, in Fact, to Worship It

Was she not constant in her assurance to herself that her whole life should be devoted to him?

For what was there deserving of death?

It must be understood that the Stickin-the-Mud claim was an almost infinitesimal portion of soil in the Great Kimberley mine.

But since these are not unjust, and their Father teaches them by the word to do the same things as Himself, they who agree with them are not unjust.

He remembers his Father, God; he returns to Him when he has been satisfied; he receives again the pristine garment,— the condition, to wit, which Adam by transgression had lost.

In no other case, except Framley Parsonage, did my father publish even the first number of any novel before he had fully completed the whole tale.

Captain Val retreated a step—he could retreat no more—and wiped his moustache with both hands at once. Mrs. Val screamed. Victoire took hold of the back of a chair, as though he thought it well that he should be armed in the general battle that was to ensue; and Alaric, without further speech, walked out of the room, and went away to his office.

“For anything they may fetch so that we may get clear of this dirt. And the Major?”

Her idea was to place herself by the sick woman’s bedside, and to send the four children away;—with their father’s consent if it might be; but certainly without it if that consent were withheld.

Restore, therefore, to Christ, His faith; believe that He who willed to walk the earth as a man exhibited even a soul of a thoroughly human condition, not making it of flesh, but clothing it with flesh.

But if the Novensiles are those who have deserved to be raised to the stars after passing through the life of men, there are no dii Novensiles at all.

“Because of papa? But I am not preaching against the turf. If I were such as you are I would have a horse or two myself. A man in your position should do a little of everything. You should hunt and have a yacht, and stalk deer and keep your own trainer at Newmarket.”

[Mark 9:50c] Have ye salt in yourselves, and be in peace one with another.

There had been no word spoken of George returning to Colmar on that morning.

“They tell me that Mr. Mildmay will abandon the custody of the bill to Mr. Gresham after his first speech.”

Exposition of the Faith

I cannot, however, understand why they should be kept at Capetown, to the safety of which they are no more necessary than they would be to that of Sydney or Melbourne.

Or is there some difference between hands and fingers?

“All that I know of.”

And, had it chanced that he had visited Dunripple before he had gone to Loring, how might it have been between him and this other girl?

There was a scene in the private room of Mr. Wickerby, the attorney in Hatton Garden, which was very distressing indeed to the feelings of Lord Fawn, and which induced his lordship to think that he was being treated without that respect which was due to him as a peer and a member of the Government.

“You think he has committed forgery?”

To all these four parts was sent the Word, so that in the Trinity all might be called.

Of course the Kellys would force her to make a will, if she didn’t do it of her own accord; if not, they’d forge one.

Let them wait till I ask for anything again.” Dr. Finn, who knew all about Dick Morris’s debts, and who had heard of his modes of preaching, was not surprised at the decision of the Conservative bestower of Irish Church patronage; but on this subject he said nothing.

“How virtuous! Is it coming to that,—that when the House sits you will never be absent?”

This also was tiled, and the rooms were nearly as low; but there were three stories, and the building therefore was considerably higher.

With all the ladies with whom he had hitherto been connected he had become aware that, in marrying them, he must more or less alter his manner of life.

I tell it to you, and I shall tell it to no one else.

For we cannot say that the demons, being rational animals, are neither blessed nor wretched, as we say of the beasts and plants, which are void of feeling and reason, or as we say of the middle place, that it is neither the highest nor the lowest.

Copious in language, comprehensive in thought, sublime and elevated in his views of divine Scripture, Philo has produced manifold and various expositions of the sacred books.

The obedience of Abbot John by which he was exalted even to the grace of prophecy.

But he was angry with her because she hesitated.

But on another view what [shall we say]?

As for himself, he would do anything but leave his friend Norman.’ To tell the truth, Alaric thought much, perhaps too much, of the respectability of those with whom he consorted.

“I want no help.”

And in the fifth book of the Republic, he says, 'Shall we then call all these, and the others which study such things, and those who apply themselves to the meaner arts, philosophers?'

His father declared of him now that he would do fairly well in the world.

Lord Nidderdale was there also, and his lordship’s old father, the Marquis of Auld Reekie, whom Felix, when he entered the room, did not know.

And vanished all the abyss of ocean's waves,

How then is it possible to conceive that the judgment is accomplished without the Holy Spirit, wherein the word points out that He is Himself the prize [Philippians 3:14] of the righteous, when instead of the earnest is given that which is perfect, and the first condemnation of sinners, when they are deprived of that which they seem to have?

“Oh, I know. Indeed all the town knows it now.”

She had performed her part of the bargain, and now the price was paid to her into her hands.

My donna primissima will be another guess sort of lady altogether.

“I am most unwilling,” she said, “to make mischief or to give unnecessary pain to you or to Lord Scroope; but I think it my duty to let you know that the general opinion about here is that Mr. Neville shall make Miss O’Hara his wife,—if he has not done so already.

No man is born of water and the Spirit, [John 3:5] except he be willing.

On the 10th of April he established himself at his new rooms in Spring Gardens, and was careful in seeing that there was a comfortable little bedroom for his brother Greg.

He was desirous of letting the lord know all that he knew.

In the interpretations of Hebrew names, we find Sina interpreted commandment: and some other interpretations it has, but I think this to be more agreeable to the present passage.

He would still stand before her with his flabby hands hanging listlessly by his side, and with eyes apparently full of hesitation, and would seem to tremble as though he feared the effect of his own words; but still the words that fell from him were felt to be bonds from which she could not escape.

She was thinking of the letter which she knew that she must write, but she did not rise to get pen and ink, nor did she even propose to herself that the letter should be written then.

Was not your Lord made weak on the Cross?

In another passage, too, [Leviticus 23:2] we find it said, These are the feasts of the Lord, which you shall call chosen, holy.

“She says you owe him money.”

And what means above all, what is the expression intended to show to us?

But Lady Laura wanted to meddle with high politics, to discuss reform bills, to assist in putting up Mr.

Thou dost not see Christ sitting at the right hand of the Father: yet you can see this, how His enemies are made His footstool.

We are baptized, and begin to fight again.

Was He perchance about to speak of the idols of the Gentiles, that we might despise them all?

Beginning with Ennius, the Roman poet, he simply spoke of the spacious saloons of heaven,— either on account of their elevated site, or because in Homer he had read about Jupiter banqueting therein.

What women, what children, what princes did the Conqueror throw into chains?

As soon as he reached Lancaster Gate he went into the park, and under the doubtful glimmer of the lamps trudged on through the mud and slush, not regarding his path, hardly thinking of the present moment in the full appreciation of his real misery.

It might be that if he showed himself to be very poor, his father-in-law would see the necessity of assisting him at once; or, it might be, that unless he could show himself to be in prosperous circumstances, his father-in-law would not assist him at all.

Now the work of healing or preserving is not proper to man, but to God.

In nothing is procrastination so tempting as in thought.

Knowing therefore the fear of the Lord, we persuade men but we are made manifest unto God; and I hope that we are made manifest also in your consciences.

This was a little thing, completed within my twenty-one allotted pages.

The work had not yet been examined, and he must call again after three days.

“Not a word further. I will not hear a word further. If you talk till midnight you cannot improve what you have said.”

But Herbert himself would exact the use of his own Christian name, for the delight of his own ears; that was a matter of course; that, doubtless, had been already done.

As for Mrs. G.-!

I thought then that everything was at an end!

What novelty is that, unless he is speaking of the Son of God?— and one is born to us the beginning of whose government has been made on His shoulder.

For if we did not partake Him, He had not said, 'I have begotten but if He Himself begot us, no other than He is our Father.

Already there was the Servant speaking thus, and bearing witness to the Father; the Servant born in that tribe from which God's elect was to spring.

Well, now, we will grant that the flesh is innocent, in so far as bad actions will not be charged upon it: what, then, is there to hinder its being saved on the score of its innocence?

“What I mean is, that the duchess and her people make no difference to me. I hope you had a pleasant time; that’s all.”

Caldigate was forced to confess that apparently the lawyer did not believe him.

There has been, no doubt, for many years a something in the traffic of horses provocative of deceit and cheating.

What is His hill?

“Is Fanny naughty?” Lord Frederic asked one day.

Now His being the Way, they both understood and allowed, but the rest they knew not.

For when Jesus said to him Will you be made whole?

On this principle the apostle says: The good that I would I do not; but the evil which I would not, that I do.

By this exchange I may possibly obtain the benefit of having a house to live in for the next twelve months, but no other.

Thus joyfully was the festival of dedication celebrated in the thirtieth year of our emperor's reign.

In answer to this she only shook her head, promising, however, that she would be ready to give Tom an audience when he should be brought to the Crescent on the following day.

Why do you not address Him, and hear His voice?

Then, afterwards finding it rent, he has sung: O Lord, you have possessed my reins.

Nor is it with reference to anything else that he understands the Scripture, Who shall boast that he has a pure heart?

Light thrice repeated; but One Light and One God.

For this commandment I have received from my Father.

“Of course it is. But about Brisket. Immediately after that, the very next day, he went out to Gogham,—where he was always going, you know, with that cart of his, to buy sheep. Sheep, indeed!”

R. If therefore we shall have proved that we are always to live, it will follow also that we are always to be.

She understood better than did any one else the peculiarity of mind which made her mistress specially anxious that none of the Stanbury family should enjoy any portion of the Burgess money, beyond that which she herself had saved out of the income.

From thence a path led slanting to the house, of which the door was shut, and all the front windows blocked with shutters.

And perhaps excessive piety and supplication shall even be delivered from punishment, ignorance being admitted as a reason for the pardon of sin after repentance.

After what you have said to me it is impossible that I should return to your house. I shall meet my father at the Duke of Omnium’s, and have already asked him to give me an asylum. It is my wish to remain wherever he may be, either in town or in the country. Should I change my purpose in this, and change my residence, I will not fail to let you know where I go and what I propose to do. You I think must have forgotten that I was your wife; but I will never forget it.

Would that at least that Gospel dresser of the vineyard, perhaps already bidden to cut down my fig-tree, would let it alone this year also, until he dig about it and dung it, that he may perchance lift the helpless out of the dust, and lift the poor out of the mire.

To enjoy a well-prepared banquet and a pleasant meal is a general habit; but to fast or to use self-restraint is the practice of but few, and not to be desirous of another's goods is a virtue rarely found.

But yet it is also a general law that He is laying down on these matters.

This Dialogue was written about 379, seven years after the death of Lucifer, and very soon after Jerome's return from his hermit life in the desert of Chalcis.

When I supposed that he intended, on the ground of his authority alone, and without supporting it by any argument, to recommend us to give up fasting on Saturday, he followed me, and said: When I visit Rome, I fast on Saturday; when I am here, I do not fast.

Thus the reason of one contemplating nature prompts very different judgments from those dictated by the necessity of the needy, or the desire of the voluptuous; for the former considers what value a thing in itself has in the scale of creation, while necessity considers how it meets its need; reason looks for what the mental light will judge to be true, while pleasure looks for what pleasantly titilates the bodily sense.

Then she started up. “To-day!”

For the restraint which human laws could not effect, the Word, inasmuch as He is divine, would have effected, had not the wicked demons, taking as their ally the lust of wickedness which is in every man, and which draws variously to all manner of vice, scattered many false and profane accusations, none of which attach to us.

For that there will be another world after this, is taught by Isaiah, who says, There will be new heavens, and a new earth, which I shall make to abide in my sight, says the Lord; and that before this world others also existed is shown by Eccelesiastes, in the words: What is that which has been?

And first of all He says, Be not angry; and after that, revile not. For indeed both these are augmented, the one by the other: from enmity is reviling, from reviling enmity. On this account then He heals now the root, and now the fruit; hindering indeed the evil from ever springing up in the first instance: but if perchance it may have sprouted up and borne its most evil fruit, then by all means He burns it down the more.

Ver. 3. For even Christ pleased not Himself.

Whence He said to the Jews also: Except a man be born again, not meaning, as they thought, birth from woman, but speaking of the soul born and created anew in the likeness of God's image.

The emperors then in power, observing his manly and vigorous figure and superior mind, were moved with feelings of jealousy and fear, and thenceforward carefully watched for an opportunity of inflicting some brand of disgrace on his character.

‘He feels a little sore, you know. I was always sure there was something. But it was wise of him to come and see her, and it will go off in this way.’

‘Not if it be a trouble, M. Adolphe;’ and the proud girl still held her hands upon her bosom, and still looked towards the mountain.

For when Dionysius was spoiling him of his very ample beard, which was of great weight and philosophic thickness, he said that it was not right that a son sprung from Apollo, a father smooth and beardless, and very like a mere boy, should be formed with such a beard that it was left uncertain which of them was father, which son, or rather whether they were of the same race and family.

The next question we have to ask, says he, is this: If man cannot be without sin, whose fault is it—man's own, or some one's else? If man's own, in what way is it his fault if he is not that which he is unable to be? We reply, that it is man's fault that he is not without sin on this account, because it has by man's sole will come to pass that he has come into such a necessity as cannot be overcome by man's sole will.

Again, when it is assumed in that form which is not an angel in his own proper being; sometimes in this case it is a body itself already existing, assumed after some kind of change, in order to make that message manifest; sometimes it is one that comes into being for the purpose, and that being accomplished, is discarded.

And if you have any remembrance of what is good, be mindful of me, meditating on these things, in order that both my desire and watchfulness may result in some good.

This was written on Friday night, and was posted on the Saturday morning by the faithful hand of Joseph Stemm;—who, however, did not hesitate to declare to himself, as he read the address, that his master was a fool for his pains.

And repeatedly showing his affection, he urges him by the very period of his new birth, I have begotten him in my bonds, he says, so that on this account also he was worthy to obtain much honor, because he was begotten in his very conflicts, in his trials in the cause of Christ.

Louis Napoleon at last refused to join with us in any attempt to be made on behalf of the Danes.

Then at that moment she heard her son’s voice, as, in his solitude, the child began to cry.

For she who was so divinely perfect was Mrs. Cox, and she of the soft, lustrous eyes was Mrs. Price.

On the next morning, Friday morning, Colonel Osborne, doubtless having heard something of Mrs. Crocket from his friend at Cockchaffington, was up early, and had himself driven over to Nuncombe Putney before breakfast.

Beyond these selfish motives of wishing to withdraw from the business, he really pitied Anty, and felt a great repugnance at being the means of adding to her troubles; and he was aware of the scandalous shame of subjecting her again to the illtreatment of such a wretch as her brother, by threatening proceedings which he knew could never be taken.

Because, he said, these apostles and teachers who preached the name of the Son of God, after falling asleep in the power and faith of the Son of God, preached it not only to those who were asleep, but themselves also gave them the seal of the preaching.

Had Cecilia not treated Sir Francis so unceremoniously he certainly would not have dared so to treat her.

Mamma says that because of them I ought to give up my engagement, and my uncle, Sir Magnus, has taken upon himself to advise me to do so.

“It was because I knew ye was of that sort that I followed ye in yonder,” he said, with a tear in his eye.

“Try to explain yourself, Mary.”

“The house is for your private comfort,” said the prebendary.

But lest this difficulty perhaps should be supposed to exist only in the language of the prophets, seeing the prophetic style is allowed by all to abound in figures and enigmas, what do we find when we come to the Gospels?

So, again, I will make an interpretation of the two goats which were habitually offered on the fast-day.

“I say,” continued the earl, after a short pause, “that I cannot but be surprised that an event of so much importance, of so painful a nature, and, doubtless, already so publicly known, should not before this have reached the ears of one to whom, I presume, Miss Wyndham’s name was not always wholly indifferent. But, as you have not heard it, my lord, I will communicate it to you,” and again he paused, as though expecting another assurance of Lord Ballindine’s ignorance.

“As if there could be anything elegant in this war,” demands Cicero.

Let us also imitate him, and let us neither say nor do evil to our enemies, but benefit them according to our power: for we shall do more good to ourselves than to them.

I know nothing about it.

Chapter 10.— How We are to Discern Whether a Phrase is Figurative.

John 3:19

Could he guess who was in the vehicle?

Not a minute too early.

So, again, we find a conditional threat of the sword: If you shall have been unwilling, and shall not have been obedient, the glaive shall eat you up.

A certain sum of money,—by no means illiberal as a present,—he had already extracted from the old man.

We only lay to their charge the sin of schism, in which they are all most thoroughly involved—not the offenses of certain of their party, which some of them declare to be displeasing to themselves.

What then is it of which he was then accusing the Corinthians?

And the illusion of demons has come to nought, and He only who is really God is worshipped in the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Now if you are unwilling that such a practice should be adopted in your own case, though it is of ancient standing, and has been noticed and recommended by the great Council, your refusal is not becoming; for it is unreasonable that a custom which had once obtained in the Church, and been established by councils, should be set aside by a few individuals.

[Genesis 39:7] She wished to catch him with her words.

“But he prevents me from touching it. What they give me only comes by a sort of favour from the lawyer. I almost wish that I had compromised.”

She was not a woman endowed with a very high mind or with very noble feelings.

For if a man, being a pre-eminently good painter, and superior to all in his art, sees the portrait which he has drawn with great accuracy held up to ridicule, he ought not to be dejected, and to consider the picture poor, because of the judgment of the ignorant; as he would not consider the drawing that is really poor to be something wonderful and lovely, because of the astonishment of the inartistic.

I have, therefore, appointed the Rev.

“Come,—as what, sir?” Rebecca gasped out.

Very soon after this there came a special invitation from Mr. and Mrs. Roby, asking the Whartons, father and daughter, to dine with them round the corner.

He says this not to take away, but to confirm, His Equality.

But, as he had been unable, she had taken Mr. Houghton without a notion on her part of making even an attempt to love him.

The up-jump was higher, and the ditch which must be first cleared was broader.

Are you sporting?

He still knew that any such consummation as that was quite out of the question.

All this was told in his monthly letters which came to be expected at Folking, till each letter was regarded as the rising of a new sun.

He learnt that Denot had been above two months in Brittany; that he had first appeared in the neighbourhood of Laval with about two hundred men, who had followed him thither out of that province, and that he had there been joined by as many more belonging to Maine, and that since that time he had been backwards and forwards from one town to another, chiefly in the Morbihan; and that he had succeeded in almost every case in driving the republican garrison from the towns which he attacked.

The Prisoner’s Defence

“Ah me! you will have killed him among you!”

Then he told the whole story. Roger expressed his satisfaction, recalling however the pledge which he had given as to his return. “Let her follow you, and bear it,” he said. “Of course you must suffer the effects of your own imprudence.” On that evening Paul Montague returned to London by the mail train, being sure that he would thus avoid a meeting with Mrs Hurtle in the railway-carriage.

When I was there the new dome was still in progress; and an ugly column of woodwork, required for internal support and affording a staircase to the top, stood in this hall.

He is to be a gentleman, a soldier, and an officer.

Chapter XLIII. The City Road

17. How the Incarnation did not limit the ubiquity of the Word, nor diminish His Purity. (Simile of the Sun.)

But such a course of compromise was now at a discount in Boston, and Mr. Everett was speaking to a Boston audience.

“It is lucky;—I know that I’m lucky. The very first day I saw you I thought what a happy fellow I was to meet you. Then, of course, I was only thinking of your beauty.”

II. The wise men from the East are typical fulfilments of God's promise to Abraham

Perhaps I am stupid; but the argument appears to me somewhat foolish and pointless.

But in most of the States the power of appointing has been claimed by the people, and the judges are voted in by popular election, just as the President of the Union and the Governors of the different States are voted in.

That it could not be her duty to take a present of money from the man whom she believed to be robbing her of the estate she felt quite sure.

But the title happy cannot, in my opinion, belong either to him who has not what he loves, whatever it may be, or to him who has what he loves if it is hurtful or to him who does not love what he has, although it is good in perfection.

After that she was allowed to escape into the grounds with her lover, and was made happy with half-an-hour of unalloyed bliss.

And while we say these things not from mere hearsay, nor from probable conjectures and sophistical reasoning, but using words of a certain diviner speech, do you who are willing hasten to learn.

For how can it be otherwise than strange, if Christ bore such things for your sake, and thou often canst not endure even words?

“She was there so short a time, Mr. Morton; and Lady Ushant would be the last person in the world to let such a thing as that go on without telling her parents.”

Woe unto the prosperity of this world, once and again, from fear of misfortune and a corruption of joy!

Men of all classes were openmouthed in their denunciation of the meanness of Lopez,—though no one but Mr. Wharton knew half his villainy, as he alone knew that the expenses had been paid twice over.

That had been very mean, and the meanness had shocked her.

Lady Cantrip when asked had at once consented.

Then Peter: [Are not you making use of long preambles, as you accused us of doing, because you have no truth to bring forward?

They receive many insults from fear of us, and endure them in silence with the patience of philosophers.

Would she have been more honest, more fit to grace an honest man’s hearthstone, had she been the legitimate descendant of a score of legitimate duchesses?

“I shall think you a coward if you don’t come. Oh, Jack, do come.”

“You shouldn’t have swore at her, George,” said Mr. Brown.

MRS. G. What does all this mean, Mrs. Lofty?

“How am I to keep myself from cursing when I see what he has brought upon you?”

Somebody ought to write a book about it,—indeed they ought.” Then he told the whole story of Dan Stringer, and how he had found Dan out, looking at the top of Dan’s hat through the little aperture in the wall of the inn parlour.

At the same time, how much more fittingly they are called and counted brothers who have been led to the knowledge of God as their common Father, who have drunk in one spirit of holiness, who from the same womb of a common ignorance have agonized into the same light of truth!

Christ, suddenly; and just as suddenly, John!

For these things let us give thanks to God.

It is an idea that comes to very many men and women, old as well as young,—to many thousands who at last are crushed by it, of whom the world knows nothing.

“What news, my dear?” Lady Tringle as she asked the question seemed to become more solemn than ever.

What kind of gold would beam from His head, had He not judged the glory of the world to be alien both to Himself and to His?

“I am the only man who does not mean to make any change.”